THE COMPLETE WORKS OF WILLIAM SHAKESPEARE
PRINTED IN ENGLAND
AT THE OXFORD UNIVERSITY PRESS
THE OXFORD SHAKESPEARE

THE COMPLETE WORKS OF WILLIAM SHAKEPEARE

EDITED, WITH A GLOSSARY, BY

W. J. CRAIG, M.A.
TRINITY COLLEGE, DUBLIN

HUMPHREY MILFORD
OXFORD UNIVERSITY PRESS
LONDON, EDINBURGH, GLASGOW, NEW YORK
TORONTO, MELBOURNE, AND BOMBAY
1916.
PREFACE

There is no proof that Shakespeare personally superintended the printing of any of his plays. Although sixteen came separately from the press in small quarto volumes during his lifetime, many, if not all, of these were published without the consent or supervision of the author from copies often surreptitiously obtained from the playhouse. At the time of Shakespeare's death in 1616, no less than twenty-one plays remained in manuscript. Six years later, in 1622, one of these, 'Othello,' was issued to the public in quarto. It was not until 1623 that Shakespeare's actor friends, John Heming and Henry Condell, brought together the previously printed and unprinted dramas of which they knew him to be the author, and published them in a folio volume in order 'to keep' (as they wrote) 'the memory of so worthy a friend and fellow alive.' Thirty-six plays were thus claimed for Shakespeare. The thirty-seventh, 'Pericles,' had been first printed separately in quarto in 1609, but was not added to the collection until the third folio appeared in 1664.

The text alike of the first folio and the quartos was doubtless supplied by playhouse copies which often embodied the ill-conditioned interpolations and alterations of actors and theatrical managers. As a rule the editors of 1623 followed where they could the text of the quartos, but in a few cases they unwisely had recourse to less correct copies. Moreover, the printers of both Elizabeth's and James I's reigns were very liable to typographical error, and they introduced much that is unintelligible into the original editions of Shakespeare's works. But in the absence of Shakespeare's manuscripts, the seventeen early quartos and the folio of 1623 jointly present, despite defect of copyist and printer, the sole authorized version of the Shakespearean text. From that version I have only ventured to deviate where it seemed to me that
the carelessness of either copyist or printer deprived a word or sentence wholly of meaning. Editors of Shakespeare have sometimes denounced as corrupt and have partially altered passages which owe their difficulty of interpretation to the presence of some word or phrase rare in Shakespeare's day and long since obsolete. It has been my endeavour to avoid this danger. I have only adopted a change after convincing myself that the characteristics of Shakespeare's vocabulary or literary style failed to justify the original reading.

For the uncertain orthography of the old editions I have substituted the recognized orthography of the present day. But metrical considerations occasionally render the retention of the older spelling necessary, and I have deemed it desirable to adhere to the older forms of a few words which modern orthography has practically shaped anew. The punctuation has been thoroughly revised, and, to increase facilities of reference, I have numbered the lines at shorter intervals than have been adopted hitherto.

In seeking to emend corrupt passages I have carefully considered the suggestions of my many predecessors, and from few of those who have already laboured in the field of textual criticism have I failed to derive some enlightenment. Of the older editors, Theobald, whose edition of Shakespeare appeared in 1733, and Capell, whose edition appeared in 1768, have proved most helpful. Among more modern editions I am chiefly indebted to the work of Delius, Dyce, and the Cambridge editors. A very few of the emendations which I have adopted are now introduced into the text for the first time. My thanks are due to my friend Mr. P. A. Daniel for many useful suggestions.

I have appended a short glossary, which I trust will adequately explain the meaning of the obsolete words which Shakespeare employed.

W. J. CRAIG.
## CONTENTS

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Title</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><em>The Tempest</em></td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>The Two Gentlemen of Verona</em></td>
<td>26</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>The Merry Wives of Windsor</em></td>
<td>51</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Measure for Measure</td>
<td>82</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>The Comedy of Errors</em></td>
<td>114</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Much Ado about Nothing</em></td>
<td>136</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Love’s Labour’s Lost</td>
<td>165</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>A Midsummer-Night’s Dream</em></td>
<td>196</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>The Merchant of Venice</em></td>
<td>220</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>As You Like It</td>
<td>249</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>The Taming of the Shrew</em></td>
<td>279</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>All’s Well that Ends Well</td>
<td>310</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Twelfth-Night; or, What You Will</em></td>
<td>343</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>The Winter’s Tale</em></td>
<td>371</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>The Life and Death of King John</em></td>
<td>407</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>The Tragedy of King Richard II</em></td>
<td>437</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>The First Part of King Henry IV</em></td>
<td>470</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>The Second Part of King Henry IV</em></td>
<td>504</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>The Life of King Henry V</em></td>
<td>541</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>The First Part of King Henry VI</em></td>
<td>578</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>The Second Part of King Henry VI</em></td>
<td>611</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>The Third Part of King Henry VI</em></td>
<td>649</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>The Tragedy of King Richard III</em></td>
<td>687</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>The Famous History of the Life of King Henry VIII</em></td>
<td>732</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Troilus and Cressida</em></td>
<td>769</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Coriolanus</em></td>
<td>809</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Titus Andronicus</em></td>
<td>852</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Romeo and Juliet</em></td>
<td>882</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Timon of Athens</em></td>
<td>919</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
## CONTENTS

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Play</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Julius Caesar</td>
<td>948</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Macbeth</td>
<td>978</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hamlet, Prince of Denmark</td>
<td>1006</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>King Lear</td>
<td>1050</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Othello, the Moor of Venice</td>
<td>1091</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Antony and Cleopatra</td>
<td>1131</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cymbeline</td>
<td>1172</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pericles, Prince of Tyre</td>
<td>1214</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

## POEMS

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Title</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Venus and Adonis</td>
<td>1244</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>The Rape of Lucrece</td>
<td>1259</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sonnets</td>
<td>1281</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>A Lover's Complaint</td>
<td>1305</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>The Passionate Pilgrim</td>
<td>1309</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sonnets to Sundry Notes of Music</td>
<td>1311</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>The Phoenix and the Turtle</td>
<td>1314</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### INDEX

- Index of Characters                        | 1315 |
- Index of First Lines of Songs. Etc.        | 1321 |

- Glossary                                   | 1323 |
# LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Illustration</th>
<th>Painter</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><strong>SHAKESPEARE, from the Chandos Portrait</strong></td>
<td>Frontispiece</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Merry Wives of Windsor</strong></td>
<td>R. Smirke</td>
<td>51</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Shakespeare's Birthplace</strong></td>
<td>W. W. Quatremain</td>
<td>80</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Much Ado about Nothing</strong></td>
<td>F. Wheatley</td>
<td>151</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Love's Labour's Lost</strong></td>
<td>F. Wheatley</td>
<td>175</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>The Taming of the Shrew</strong></td>
<td>I. I. Ibbetson</td>
<td>282</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Twelfth-Night</strong></td>
<td>E. A. Abbey</td>
<td>351</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Henry VI. Part 2</strong></td>
<td>W. Hamilton</td>
<td>622</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Richard III</strong></td>
<td>R. Westall</td>
<td>710</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Henry VIII</strong></td>
<td>T. Stothard</td>
<td>740</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Romeo and Juliet</strong></td>
<td>W. Miller</td>
<td>890</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Macbeth</strong></td>
<td>R. Westall</td>
<td>993</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Hamlet</strong></td>
<td>Henrietta Rae</td>
<td>1039</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>King Lear</strong></td>
<td>R. Smirke</td>
<td>1071</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>The Shakespeare Memorial Theatre,</strong></td>
<td>W. W. Quatremain</td>
<td>1242</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Stratford-on-Avon</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Ann Hathaway's Cottage</strong></td>
<td>W. W. Quatremain</td>
<td>1280</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
THE TEMPEST

DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

ALONSO, King of Naples.
SEBASTIAN, his Brother.
PROSPERO, the right Duke of Milan.
ANTONIO, his Brother, the usurping Duke of Milan.
FERDINAND, Son to the King of Naples.
GONZALO, an honest old Counsellor.
ADRIAN, Lords.
FRANCISCO, Lords.
CALIBAN, a savage and deformed Slave.
TRINCULO, a Jester.

STEPHANO, a drunken Butler.
Master of a Ship, Boatswain, Mariners.
MIRANDA, Daughter to Prospero.
ARIEL, an airy Spirit.
IRIS.
CERES.
JUNO.
Nymphs.
Reapers.

Other Spirits attending on Prospero.

SCENE.—The Sea, with a Ship; afterwards an Island.

ACT I.

SCENE I.—On a Ship at Sea. A tempestuous noise of thunder and lightning heard.

Enter a Shipmaster and a Boatswain severally.

Mast. Boatswain!
Boats. Here, master: what cheer?
Mast. Good, speak to the mariners: fall to't yarely, or we run ourselves aground: bestir, bestir.

[Exit.]

Enter Mariners.

Boats. Heigh, my hearts! cheerly, cheerly, my hearts! Yare, yare! Take in the topsail. Tend to the master's whistle.—Blow, till thou burst thy wind, if room enough!

Enter ALONSO, SEBASTIAN, ANTONIO, FERDINAND, GONZALO, and others.

Alon. Good boatswain, have care. Where's the master? Play the men.
Boats. I pray now, keep below.
Ant. Where is the master, bosun?
Boats. Do you not hear him? You mar our course: keep your cabins: you do assist the tempest in the breach.

Gon. Nay, good, be patient.
Boats. When the seas is. Hance! What cares the roarsers for the name of king? To cabin: silence trouble us not.
Gon. Good, yet remember thou hast 'st."—rd.
Boats. None that I more love than myself. You are a counsellor: if you can command the elements to silence, and work the peace of the present, we will not hand a rope more; use your authority: if you cannot, give thanks you have lived so long, and make yourself ready in your cabin for the mischance of the hour, if it so hap.—Cheerly, good hearts!—Out of our way, I say. [Exit.]

Gon. I have great comfort from this fellow: methinks he hath no drowning mark upon him; his complexion is perfect gallows. Stand fast, good Fate, to his hanging! make the rope of his destiny our cable, for our own doth little advantage! If he be not born to be hanged, our case is miserable. [Exeunt.]

Re-enter Boatswain.

Boats. Down with the topmast! yare, lower, lower! Bring her to try with main-course. [A cry within.] A plague upon this howling! they are louder than the weather, or our office.—

Re-enter SEBASTIAN, ANTONIO, and GONZALO.

Yet again? what do you here? Shall we give o'er, and drown? Have you a mind to sink?
Seb. A pox o' your throat, you bawling, blasphemous, incharitable dog!
Boats. Work you, then.
Ant. Hang, cur, hang! you whoreson, insolent noisemaker, we are less afraid to be drowned than thou art.

Gon. I'll warrant him for drowning; though the ship were no stronger than a nutahell, and as leaky as an unstanch'd wench.

Boats. Lay her a-hold, a-hold! Set her two courses; off to sea again; lay her off.

B
Enter Mariners, wet.

Mar. All lost! to prayers, to prayers! all lost! [Exeunt.

Boats. What, must our mouths be cold? 58

Gon. The king and prince at prayers! let us assist them,

For our case is as theirs.

Seb. I am out of patience. 60

Ant. We are merely cheated of our lives by drunkards.—

This wide-chapp'd rascal,—would thou might'st lie drowning,
The washing of ten tides!

Gon. He'll be hang'd yet,

Though every drop of water swear against it, 64
And gape at wid'st to glut him.

[A confused noise within,—’Mercy on us!’—

‘We split, we split!’—’Farewell, my wife and children!’—

‘Farewell, brother!’—’We split, we split, we split!’—]

67

Ant. Let’s all sink wi' the king. [Exit.

Seb. Let’s take leave of him. [Exit.

Gon. Now would I give a thousand furlongs of sea for an acre of barren ground; long heath, brown furze, any thing. The wills above be done! but I would fain die a dry death. [Exit.

SCENE II.—The Island: before the Cell of PROSPERO.

Enter Prospero and Miranda.

Mira. If by your art, my dearest father, you have
Put the wild waters in this roar, allay them.
The sky, it seems, would pour down stinking pitch,

But that the sea, mounting to th' welkin's cheek,
Dashes the fire out. O! I have suffer'd
With those that I saw suffer: a brave vessel,
Who had, no doubt, some noble creatures in her,
Dash'd all to pieces. O! the cry did knock
Against my very heart. Poor souls, they perish'd.

Had I been any god of power, I would
Have sunk the sea within the earth, or e'er
It should the good ship so have swallow'd and
The fraughting souls within her.

Pro. Be collected: No more amazement. Tell your piteous heart
There's no harm done.

Mira. 0, woe the day!

Pro. No harm.

I have done nothing but in care of thee,—

Of thee, my dear one! thee, my daughter!—who
Art ignorant of what thou art, nought knowing
Of whence I am: nor that I am more better
Than Prospero, master of a full poor cell,

And thy no greater father.
THE TEMPEST

Act I, Sc. II.

By foul play, as thou say'st, were we heav'd thence;
But blessedly hopp'd hither.

Mira. Of my heart bleeds
To think o' the teen that I have turn'd you to,
Which is from my remembrance. Please you, further. 65

Pro. My brother and thy uncle, call'd Anto-

nio,--
I pray thee, mark me,—that a brother should
Be so perfidious!—he whom next thyself, 68
Of all the world I lov'd, and to him put
The manage of my state; as at that time,
Through all the signatories it was the first,
And Prospero the prime duke; being so reputed
In dignity, and for the liberal arts,
Without a parallel: those being all my study,
The government I cast upon my brother,
And to my state grew stranger, being trans-

ported
And rapt in secret studies. Thy false uncle—
Dost thou attend me?

Mira. Sir, most heedfully.

Pro. Being once perfected how to grant suits,
How to deny them, who t'advance, and who 80
To trash for over-topping; new created
The creatures that were mine, I say, or chang'd
'em,
Or else new form'd 'em: having both the key
Of officer and office, set all hearts i' the state
To what tune pleas'd his ear; that now he was
The ivy which had bid my princely trunk,
And suck'd my verdure out on't.—Thou attend-

ast not.

Mira. O, good sir! I do.

Pro. I pray thee, mark me. 88
I, thus neglecting worldly ends, all dedicated
To closeness and the bettering of my mind
With that, which, but by being so retir'd, 91
'Erpriz'd all popular rate, in my false brother
Awak'd an evil nature; and my trust,
Like a good parent, did beget of him
A falsehood in its contrary as great
As my trust was; which had, indeed no limit,
A confidence sans bound. He being thus lorded,
Not only with what my revenue yielded,
But what my power might else exact,—like one
Who having, into truth, by telling of it, 100
Made such a sinner of his memory,
To credit his own lie,—he did believe
He was indeed the duke; out o' the substitution,
And executing th' outward face of royalty, 104
With all prerogative:—Hence his ambition
Growing,—
Dost thou hear?

Mira. Your tale, sir, would cure deafness.

Pro. To have no screen between this part he
play'd
And him he play'd it for, he needs will be
Absolute Milan. Me, poor man,—my library
Was dukedom large enough: of temporal royal-
ties
He thinks me now incapable; confederates,—
So dry he was for sway,—wi' the king of Naples
To give him annual tribute, do him homage;
Subject his coronet to his crown, and bend
The dukedom, yet unbow'd,—alas, poor Milan!—
To most ignoble stooping.

Mira. O the heavens! 116

Pro. Mark his condition and the event; then
tell me
If this might be a brother.

Mira. I should sin
To think but nobly of my grandmother:
Good wombs have borne bad sons.

Pro. Now the condition. 120
This King of Naples, being an enemy
To me inveterate, hearkens my brother's suit;
Which was, that he, in lieu o' the premises
Of homage and I know not how much tribute,
Should presently extirpate me and mine
Out of the dukedom, and confer fair Milan,
With all the honours on my brother: whereon
A treacherous army levied, one midnight
Fated to the purpose did Antonio open
The gates of Milan; and, i' the dead of darkness,
The ministers for the purpose hurried thence
Me and thy crying self.

Mira. Alack, for pity! 132
I, not remembring how I cried out then,
Will cry it o'er again: it is a hint,
That wrings mine eyes to 't.

Pro. Hear a little further,
And then I'll bring thee to the present business
Which now's upon us; without the which this
Were most impertinent.

Mira. Wherefore did they not
That hour destroy us?

Pro. Well demanded, wench:
My tale provokes that question. Dear, they

durst not, 140
So dear the love my people bore me, nor set
A mark so bloody on the business; but
With colours fairer painted their foul ends.
In few, they hurried us aboard a bark, 144
Bore us some leagues to sea; where they prepar'd
A rotten carcass of a boat, not rigg'd,
Nor tackle, sail, nor mast; the very rats
Instinctively have quit it: there they hoist us,
To cry to the sea that roar'd to us; to sigh 149
To the winds whose pity, sighing back again,
Did us but loving wrong.

Mira. Alack! what trouble
Was I then to you!
THE TEMPEST

Act I, Sc. II.

Pro. O, a cherubin! Thou wast, that didst preserve me! Thou didst smile,
Infused with a fortitude from heaven,
When I have deck'd the sea with drops full salt,
Under my burden groan'd; which rais'd in me
An undergoing stomach, to bear up
Against what should ensue.

Mira. How came we ashore?

Pro. By Providence divine.

Some food we had and some fresh water that
A noble Neapolitan, Gonzalo,
Out of his charity,—who being then appointed
Master of this design,—did give us; with
Rich garments, linens, stuffs, and necessaries,
Which since have steaded much; so, of his
gentleness,
Knowing I lov'd my books, he furnish'd me,
From mine own library with volumes that
I prize above my dukedom.

Mira. Would I might

But ever see that man!

Pro. Now I arise:—

[Resumes his mantle.

Sit still, and hear the last of our sea-sorrow.
Here in this island we arriv'd; and here
Have I, thy schoolmaster, made thee more profit
Than other princes can, that have more time
For vainer hours and tutors not so careful.

Mira. Heavens thank you for't! And now, I pray you, sir,—
For still 'tis beating in my mind,—your
reason

For raising this sea-storm?

Pro. Know thus far forth.
By accident most strange, bountiful Fortune,
Now my dear lady, hath mine enemies
Brought to this shore; and by my presence
I find my zenith doth depend upon
A most auspicious star, whose influence
If now I court not but omit, my fortunes
Will ever after droop. Here cease more ques-
tions;

Thou art inclin'd to sleep; 'tis a good dulness,
And give it way;—I know thou canst not choose.—

[MIRANDA SLEEPS.

Pro. Come away, servant, come! I'm ready now.
Approach, my Ariel; come!

Enter Ariel.

Ari. All hail, great master! grave sir, hail!
I come
To answer thy best pleasure; be't to fly,
To swim, to dive into the fire, to ride
On the curl'd clouds: to thy strong bidding task
Ariel and all his quality.

Hast thou, spirit,
And are upon the Mediterranean flote,
Bound sadly home for Naples,
Supposing that they saw the king’s ship
wreck’d,
And his great person perish.

Pro. Ariel, thy charge
Exactly is perform’d: but there’s more work:
What is the time o’ th’ day?

Ari. Past the mid season.

Pro. At least two glasses. The time ’twixt
six and now

Must by us both be spent most preciously.

Ari. Is there more toil? Since thou dost
give me pains,
Let me remember thee what thou hast promis’d
Which is not yet perform’d me.

Pro. How now! moody?

What is’t thou canst demand?

Ari. My liberty.

Pro. Before the time be out? no more!

Ari. I prithee
Remember, I have done thee worthy service;
Told thee no lies, made no mistakings, serv’d
Without or grudge or grumblings: thou didst
promise
To bate me a full year.

Pro. Dost thou forget
From what a torment I did free thee?

Ari. No.

Pro. Thou dost; and think’st it much to
tread the ooze
Of the salt deep,
To run upon the sharp wind of the north,
To do me business in the veins o’ th’ earth
When it is bak’d with frost.

Ari. I do not, sir.

Pro. Thou liest, malignant thing! Hast thou
forgotten
The foul witch Sycorax, who with age and envy
Was grown into a hoop? hast thou forgot her?

Ari. No, sir.

Pro. Thou hast. Where was she
born? speak; tell me.

Ari. Sir, in Argier.

Pro. O! was she so? I must,
Once in a month, recount what thou hast been,
Which thou forget’st. This damn’d witch, Sycorax,

For mischiefs manifold and sorceries terrible
To enter human hearing, from Argier,
Thou know’st, was banish’d: for one thing she did
They would not take her life. Is not this true?

Ari. Ay, sir.

Pro. This blue-eye’d hag was hither brought
with child
And here was left by the sailors. Thou, my slave,

As thou report’st thyself, wast then her servant:
And, for thou wast a spirit too delicate
To act her earthy and abhor’d commands,
Refusing her grand hests, she did confine thee,
By help of her more potent minions,
And in her most unmitigable rage,
Into a cloven pine; within which rift
Imprison’d, thou diest painfully remain
A dozen years; within which space she died
And left thee there, where thou diest vent thy
groans
As fast as mill-wheels strike. Then was this
island,—

Save for the son that she did litter here,
A freckled whelp hag-born,—not honour’d with
A human shape.

Ari. Yes; Caliban her son.

Pro. Dull thing, I say so; he that Caliban,
Whom now I keep in service. Thou best know’st
What torment I did find thee in; thy groans
Did make wolves howl and penetrate the breasts
Of ever angry bears: it was a torment
To lay upon the damn’d, which Sycorax
Could not again undo; it was my art,
When I arriv’d and heard thee, that made gape
The pine, and let thee out.

Ari. I thank thee, master.

Pro. If thou more murmur’st, I will rend an
oak
And peg thee in his knotty entrails till
Thou hast howl’d away twelve winters.

Ari. Pardon, master; I will be correspondent to command,
And do my spiritung gently.

Pro. Do so; and after two days
I will discharge thee.

Ari. That’s my noble master!
What shall I do? say what? what shall I do?

Pro. Go make thyself like a nymph of the
sea: be subject
To no sight but thine and mine; invisible
To every eyeball else. Go, take this shape,
And hither come in’t: go, hence with diligence!

[Exeunt ARIEL.

Awake, dear heart, awake! thou hast slept well;
Awake!

Mira. [Waking.] The strangeness of your
story put
Heaviness in me.

Pro. Shake it off. Come on;
We will visit Caliban my slave, who
Yields us kind answer.

Mira. ’Tis a villain, sir,
I do not love to look on.

Pro. But, as ‘tis,
We cannot miss him: he does make our fire,
Fetch in our wood; and serves in offices

5
That profit us.—What hol slave! Caliban!
Thou earth, thou speak.
Cal. [Within.] There's wood enough within.
Pro. Come forth, I say; there's other business for thee:
Come, thou tortoise! when?

Re-enter Ariel, like a water-nymph.
Fine apparition! My quaint Ariel,
Hark in thine ear.
Ari. My lord, it shall be done. [Exit.
Pro. Thou poisonous slave, got by the devil himself
Upon thy wicked dam, come forth!

Enter Caliban.
Cal. As wicked dew as e'er my mother
brush'd
With raven's feather from unwholesome fen
Drop on you both! a south-west blow on ye,
And blister you all o'er!
Pro. For this, be sure, to-night thou shalt
have cramps,
Side-stitches that shall pen thy breath up;
urchins
Shall forth at vast of night, that they may work
All exercise on thee: thou shalt be pinch'd
As thick as honeycomb, each pinch more
stinging
Than bees that made them.
Cal. I must eat my dinner.
This island's mine, by Sycorax my mother,
Which thou tak'st from me. When thou camest
first,
Thou strok'dst me, and mad'st much of me;
wouldst give me
Water with berries in't; and teach me how
To name the bigger light, and how the less,
That burn by day and night: and then I lov'd thee
And show'd thee all the qualities o' th' isle,
The fresh springs, brine-pits, barren place, and
fertile.
Cursed be I that did so!—All the charms
Of Sycorax, toads, beetles, bats, light on you!
For I am all the subjects that you have.
Which first was mine own king; and here you
sty me
In this hard rock, whiles you do keep from me
The rest o' th' island.
Pro. Thou most lying slave,
Whom stripes may move, not kindness! I have
us'd thee,
Fist th' art, with human care; and lodg'd thee
In mine own cell, till thou didst seek to violate
The honour of my child.

Cal. Oh ho! Oh ho!—would it had been done!
Thou didst prevent me; I had peoples else
This isle with Calibans.
Pro. Abhorred slave,
Which any print of goodness will not take,
Being capable of all ill! I pitted thee,
Took pains to make thee speak, taught thee each
hour
One thing or other: when thou didst not, savage,
Know thine own meaning, but wouldst gabble
like
A thing most brutish, I endow'd thy purposes
With words that made them known: but thy
vile race,
Though thou didst learn, had that in't which
good natures
Could not abide to be with; therefore wast thou
Deservedly confin'd into this rock,
Who hadst deserve'd more than a prison.
Cal. You taught me language: and my profit
on't
Is, I know how to curse: the red plague rid you,
For learning me your language!
Pro. Hag-seed, hence!
Fetch us in fuel; and be quick, thou'rt best,
To answer other business. Shrug'st thou, malice?
If thou neglect'st, or dost unwillingly
What I command, I'll rack thee with old cramps,
Fill all thy bones with aches; make thee roar,
That beasts shall tremble at thy din.
Cal. No, pray thee!—
Aside.] I must obey; his art is of such power,
It would control my dam's god, Setebos,
And make a vassal of him.
Pro. So, slave; hence!
[Exel Caliban.

Re-enter Ariel invisible, playing and singing:
Ferdinand following.

Ariel's Song.
Come unto these yellow sands,
And then take hands:
Curteys when you have, and kiss'd,—
The wild waves whist,—
Foot it feely here and there;
And, sweet sprites, the burden bear.
Hark, hark! [Burden Bow, wow, dispersedly.
The watch-dogs bark:
[Burden Bow, wow, dispersedly.
Hark, hark! I hear
The strain of strutting Chanticleer.
[Oy, cockpit-diddle-dow.

Fer. Where should this music be? i' th' air,
or th' earth?
It sounds no more:—and sure, it waits upon
Some god o' th' island. Sitting on a bank,
Weeping again the king my father's wrack, 388
This music crept by me upon the waters,
Allaying both their fury, and my passion,
To hear thee speak of Naples. He does hear me;
And, that he does, I weep: myself am Naples,
Who with mine eyes,—ne'er since at sea,—beheld
The king, my father wrack'd.

_Mira._

Alack, for mercy!

_Fer._ Yes, faith, and all his lords; the Duke
of Milan,
And his brave son being twain.

_Pro._ [Aside.] The Duke of Milan,
And his more braver daughter could control thee,
If now 'twere fit to do't.—At the first sight

[Aside.]

They have changed eyes:—delicate Ariel,
I'll set thee free for this!—[To FER.] A word,
good sir;
I fear you have done yourself some wrong: a
word.

_Mira._ [Aside.] Why speaks my father so
ugently? This
Is the third man that e'er I saw; the first
That e'er I sigh'd for: pity move my father
To be inclin'd my way!

_Fer._ [Aside.] O! if a virgin,
And your affection not gone forth, I'll make you
The Queen of Naples.

_Pro._ Soft, sir: one word more—

[Aside.] They are both in either's powers: but
this swift business
I must uneasy make, lest too light winning
Make the prize light.—[To FER.] One word
more: I charge thee
That thou attend me. Thou dost here usurp
The name thou ow'st not; and hast put thyself
Upon this island as a spy, to win it

From me, the lord on't.

_Fer._ No, as I am a man.

_Mira._ There's nothing ill can dwell in such a
temple:
If the ill spirit have so fair a house,
Good things will strive to dwell with't.

_Pro._ [To FER.] Follow me.—

[To MIRA.] Speak not you for him; he's a
traitor.—[To FER.] Come;
I'll manacle thy neck and feet together:
Sea-water shalt thou drink; thy food shall be
The fresh-brook muscles, wither'd roots and
husks

Wherein the scorn cradled. Follow.

_Fer._ No;
I will resist such entertainment till
Mine enemy has more power.

_[He draws, and is charmed from moving._

_Mira._

O dear father!

Make not too rash a trial of him, for

He's gentle, and not fearful.

_Pro._ What! I say,
My foot my tutor?—Put thy sword up, traitor;
THE TEMPEST

Who mak'st a show, but dar'st not strike, thy conscience
Is so possess'd with guilt: come forth to thy ward,
For I can here disarm thee with this stick 469
And make thy weapon drop.

Mira. Beshooch you, father!
Pro. Hence! hang not on my garments.
Mira. Sir, have pity:
I'll be his surety.

Pro. Silence! one word more 472
Shall make me chide thee, if not hate thee.

What!
An advocate for an impostor? hush!
Thou think'st there is no more such shapes as he,
Having seen but him and Caliban: foolish wench!

To the most of men this is a Caliban
And they to him are angels.

Mira. My affections
Are then most humble; I have no ambition
To see a goodlier man.

Pro. [To Fer.] Come on; obey: 480
Thy nerves are in their infancy again,
And have no vigour in them.

Fer. So they are:
My spirits, as in a dream, are all bound up.
My father's loss, the weakness which I feel, 484
The wrack of all my friends, or this man's threats,
To whom I am subdued, are but light to me,
Might I but through my prison once a day
Behold this maid: all corners else o' th' earth
Let liberty make use of; space enough 489
Have I in such a prison.

Pro. [Aside.] It works.—[To Fer.] Come on.—
Thou hast done well, fine Ariel!—[To Fer.]
Follow me.—
[To Ariel.] Hark, what thou else shalt do me.

Mira. Be of comfort; 492
My father's of a better nature, sir,
Than he appears by speech: this is unwonted,
Which now came from him.

Pro. Thou shalt be as free
As mountain winds; but that exactly do 496
All points of my command.

Ari. To the syllable.

Pro. [To Fer.] Come, follow.—Speak not for him. [Exeunt.

ACT II.

SCENE I.—Another Part of the Island.

Enter ALONSO, SEBASTIAN, ANTONIO, GONZALO, ADRIAN, FRANCISCO, and others.

Gon. Beshooch you, sir, be merry: you have cause,
So have we all, of joy; for our escape
Is much beyond our loss. Our hint of woe
Is common: every day some sailor's wife,
The masters of some merchant and the merchant,
Have just our theme of woe; but for the miracle,
I mean our preservation, few in millions
Can speak like us: then wisely, good sir, weigh
Our sorrow with our comfort.

Alon. Prithee, peace.
Seb. He receives comfort like cold porridge.
Ant. The visitor will not give him o'er so.
Seb. Look, he's winding up the watch of his wit; by and by it will strike.

Gon. Sir,—
Seb. One: tell.

Gon. When every grief is entertain'd that's offer'd, 16

Comes to the entertainer—
Seb. A dollar.
Gon. Dole of comes to him, indeed: you have
spoken truer than you purposed.
Seb. You have taken it wiser than I meant
you should.

Gon. Therefore, my lord,—
Ant. Fie, what a spendthrift is he of his tongue!

Alon. I prithee, spare.
Gon. Well, I have done: but yet—
Seb. He will be talking.

Ant. Which, of he or Adrian, for a good
wager, first begins to crow?
Seb. The old cock.
Ant. The cockrel.

Seb. Done. The wager?
Ant. A laughter.

Seb. A match!

Adr. Though this island seem to be desert, —
Seb. Ha, ha, ha! So you're paid.

Adr. Uninhabitable, and almost inaccessible,—

Seb. Yet—
Adr. Yet—

Ant. He could not miss it.

Adr. It must needs be of subtle, tender, and
delicate temperance.

Ant. Temperance was a delicate wench.

Seb. Ay, and a subtle; as he most learnedly
delivered.

Adr. The air breathes upon us here most
sweetly.

Seb. As if it had lungs, and rotten ones.
Ant. Or as 'twere perfumed by a fen.
Gon. Here is everything advantageous to life.
Ant. True; save means to live.

Seb. Of that there's none, or little.

Gon. How lush and lusty the grass looks!

Ant. The ground indeed is tawny.
Seb. With an eye of green in't.
Ant. He misses not much.
Seb. No; he doth but mistake the truth totally. 61
Gon. But the rarity of it is,—which is indeed almost beyond credit,—
Seb. As many vouch'd rarities are. 64
Gon. That our garments, being, as they were, drenched in the sea, hold notwithstanding their freshness and glosses; being rather new-dyed than stain'd with salt water. 68
Ant. If but one of his pockets could speak, would it not say he lies?
Seb. Ay, or very falsely pocket up his report.
Gon. Methinks, our garments are now as fresh as when we put them on first in Afric, at the marriage of the king's fair daughter Claribel to the King of Tunis. 75
Seb. 'Twas a sweet marriage, and we prosper well in our return.
Adr. Tunis was never graced before with such a paragon to their queen.
Gon. Not since widow Dido's time. 80
Ant. Widow! a pox o' that! How came that widow in? Widow Dido!
Seb. What if he had said, widow Æneas too? Good Lord, how you take it! 84
Adr. Widow Dido, said you? You make me study of that: she was of Carthage, not of Tunis.
Gon. This Tunis, sir, was Carthage.
Adr. Carthage?
Gon. I assure you, Carthage.
Ant. His word is more than the miraculous harp.
Seb. He hath rais'd the wall, and houses too.
Ant. What impossible matter will he make easy next?
Seb. I think he will carry this island home in his pocket, and give it his son for an apple. 96
Ant. And, sowing the kernels of it in the sea, bring forth more islands.
Alon. Ay?
Ant. Why, in good time. 100
Gon. [To Alon.] Sir, we were talking that our garments seem now as fresh as when we were at Tunis at the marriage of your daughter, who is now queen.
Ant. And the rarest that e'er came there.
Seb. Bate, I beseech you, widow Dido.
Ant. O! widow Dido; ay, widow Dido.
Gon. Is not, sir, my doublet as fresh as the first day I wore it? I mean, in a sort. 109
Ant. That sort was well fish'd for.
Gon. When I wore it at your daughter's marriage? 112
Alon. You cram these words into mine ears, against

The stomach of my sense. Would I had never Married my daughter there! for, coming thence, My son is lost; and, in my rate, she too, 116 Who is so far from Italy remov'd, I ne'er again shall see her. O thou, mine heir Of Naples and of Milan! what strange fish Hath made his meal on thee?
Fran. Sir, he may live: 120
I saw him beat the surges under him, And ride upon their backs: he trod the water, Whose enmity he flung aside, and breasted The surge most swoln that met him: his bold head 124 'Bove the contentious waves he kept, and oar'd Himself with his good arms in lusty stroke To the shore, that o'er his wave-worn basis bow'd, As stooping to relieve him. I not doubt 128 He came alive to land.
Alon. No, no; he's gone.
Seb. Sir, you may thank yourself for this great loss, That would not bless our Europe with your daughter, But rather lose her to an African; 132 Where she at least is banish'd from your eye, Who hath cause to wet the grief on't.
Alon. Prithee, peace.
Seb. You were kneel'd to, and importun'd otherwise By all of us; and the fair soul herself 136 Weigh'd between loathness and obedience, at Which end o' the beam should bow. We have lost your son, I fear, for ever: Milan and Naples have More widows in them of this business' making, Than we bring men to comfort them: the fault's 141 Your own.
Alon. So is the dearest of the loss.
Gon. My lord Sebastian,
The truth you speak doth lack some gentleness And time to speak it in; you rub the sore, 145 When you should bring the plaster.
Seb. Very well.
Ant. And most chirurgeonly.
Gon. It is foul weather in us all, good sir, 148 When you are cloudy.
Seb. Foul weather?
Ant. Very foul.
Gon. Had I plantation of this isle, my lord,— 152
Ant. He'd sow't with nettle-seed.
Seb. Or docks, or mallows.
Gon. And were the king on't, what would I do? 153
Seb. 'Scape being drunk for want of wine. 155
Gon. I' the commonwealth I would by contraries Execute all things; for no kind of traffic
Would I admit; no name of magistrate; 156
Letters should not be known; riches, poverty, And use of service, none; contract, succession, Bourn, bound of land, tilth, vineyard, none; No use of metal, corn, or wine, or oil; 160 No occupation; all men idle, all;
And women too, but innocent and pure;
No sovereignity,—

Seb. Yet he would be king on 't.

Ant. The latter end of his commonwealth forgets the beginning. 165

Gon. All things in common nature should produce
Without sweat or endeavour: treason, felony, Sword, pike, knife, gun, or need of any engine, Would I not have; but nature should bring forth,

Of its own kind, all poison, all abundance, To feed my innocent people.

Seb. No marrying 'mong his subjects? 172
Ant. None, man; all idle; whores and knaves.

Gon. I would with such perfection govern, sir,

To excel the golden age

Seb. Save his majesty!

Ant. Long live Gonzalo!

Gon. And,—do you mark me, sir? 176

Alon. Prithhee, no more: thou dost talk nothing to me.

Gon. I do well believe your highness; and did it to minister occasion to these gentlemen, who are of such sensible and nimble lungs that they always use to laugh at nothing.

Ant. 'Twas you we laughed 'at.

Gon. Who in this kind of merry fooling am nothing to you; so you may continue and laugh at nothing still.

Ant. What a blow was there given!

Seb. An it had not fallen flat-long. 188

Gon. You are gentlemen of brave mettle: you would lift the moon out of her sphere, if she would continue in it five weeks without changing.

Enter Ariel, invisible, playing solemn music.

Seb. We would so, and then go a-bat-fowling.

Ant. Nay, good my lord, be not angry.

Gon. No, I warrant you; I will not adventure my discretion so weakly. Will you laugh me asleep, for I am very heavy? 197

Ant. Go sleep, and hear us.

[All sleep but ALON., SEB., and ANT.

Alon. What! all so soon asleep! I wish mine eyes
Would, with themselves, shut up my thoughts: I find
They are inclin'd to do so.

Seb. Please you, sir,

Do not omit the heavy offer of it: It seldom visits sorrow; when it doth It is a comforter.

Ant. We two, my lord, 204
Will guard your person while you take your rest, And watch your safety.

Alon. Thank you. Wondrous heavy.

[ALONSO SLEEPS. Exil ARTEL.

Seb. What a strange drowsiness possesses them!

Ant. It is the quality o' the climate.

Seb. Why 208
Doth it not then our eyelids sink? I find not Myself dispos'd to sleep.

Ant. Nor I: my spirits are nimble. They fell together all, as by consent; They dropp'd, as by a thunder-stroke. What might, 212
Worthy Sebastian? O! what might?—No more:— And yet methinks I see it in thy face, What thou should'st be. The occasion speaks thee; and My strong imagination sees a crown 216
Dropping upon thy head.

Seb. What! art thou waking?

Ant. Do you not hear me speak?

Seb. I do; and surely, It is a sleepy language, and thou speak'st Out of thy sleep. What is it thou didst say? 220
This is a strange repose, to be asleep With eyes wide open; standing, speaking, moving, And yet so fast asleep.

Ant. Noble Sebastian, 223
Thou let'st thy fortunes sleep—die rather; wink'st Whiles thou art waking.

Seb. Thou dost snore distinctly:

There's meaning in thy snores.

Ant. I am more serious than my custom: you Must be so too, if heed me; which to do 228
Troubles thee o'er.

Seb. Well; I am standing water.

Ant. I'll teach you how to flow.

Seb. Do so: to ebb,

Hereditary sloth instructs me.

Ant. O! 231
If you but knew how you the purpose cherish Whiles thou mock it! how, in stripping it, You more invest it! Ebbing men, indeed, Most often do so near the bottom run By their own fear or sloth.

Seb. Prithhee, say on: 236

The setting of thine eye and cheek proclaim A matter from thee, and a birth indeed Which throes thee much to yield.

Ant. Thus, sir:

Although this lord of weak remembrance, this
Who shall be of as little memory
When he is earth'd, hath here almost persuaded,—
For he's a spirit of persuasion, only
Professes to persuade,—the king, his son's alive,
'Tis as impossible that he's undrown'd
As he that sleeps here swims.

Seb. I have no hope
That he's undrown'd.

Ant. O! out of that 'no hope'
What great hope have you! no hope that way is
Another way so high a hope that even
Ambition cannot pierce a wink beyond,
But doubts discovery there. Will you grant
with me
That Ferdinand is drown'd?

Seb. He's gone.

Ant. Then tell me
Who's the next heir of Naples?

Seb. Claribel.

Ant. She that is Queen of Tunis; she that
dwells
Ten leagues beyond man's life; she that from Naples
Can have no note, unless the sun were post—
The man i' th' moon's too slow—till new-born
chins
Be rough and razorable: she that, from whom?
We all were sea-swallow'd, though some cast
again,
And by that destiny to perform an act
Whereof what's past is prologue, what to come
In yours and my discharge.

Seb. What stuff is this!—How say you?
'Tis true my brother's daughter's Queen of Tunis;
So is she heir of Naples; 'twixt which regions
There is some space.

Ant. A space whose every cubit
Seems to cry out, 'How shall that Claribel
Measure us back to Naples?—Keep in Tunis,
And let Sebastian wake!'—Say, this were death
That now hath seiz'd them; why, they were no
worse
Than now they are. There be that can rule Naples
As well as he that sleeps; lords that can prate
As amply and unnecessarly
As this Gonzalzo; I myself could make
A chough of as deep chat. O, that you bore
The mind that I do! what a sleep were this
For your advancement! Do you understand me?

Seb. Methinks I do.

Ant. And how does your content
Tender your own good fortune?

Seb. I remember
You did supplant your brother Prospero.

Ant. True:
And look how well my garments sit upon me;

Much feather than before; my brother's servants
Were then my fellows; now they are my men.

Seb. But, for your conscience,—

Ant. Ay, sir; where lies that? if it were a kibe,
'Twould put me to my slipper; but I feel not
Thus deity in my bosom: twenty consciences,
That stand 'twixt me and Milan, candied be they,
And melt ere they molest! Here lies your brother,

No better than the earth he lies upon,
If he were that which now he's like, that's dead;
Whom I, with this obedient steel,—three inches
of it,—
Can lay to bed for ever; whiles you, doing thus,
To the perpetual wunk for aye might put
This ancient morsel, this Sir Prudence, who
Should not upbraid our course. For all the rest,
They'll take suggestion as a cat laps milk;
They'll tell the clock to any business that
We say betifs the hour.

Seb. Thy case, dear friend,
Shall be my precedent: as thou got'st Milan,
I'll come by Naples. Draw thy sword: one stroke
Shall free thee from the tribute which thou pay'st,
And I the king shall love thee.

Ant. Draw together;
And when I rear my hand, do you the like,
To fall it on Gonzalo.

Seb. O! but one word. [They converse apart.

Music. Re-enter ARIEL, invisible.

Ari. My master through his art foresees the danger
That you, his friend, are in; and sends me forth—
For else his project dies—to keep thee living.

[Sings in GONZALO'S ear.

While you here do soining he,
Open-e'y'd Conspiracy
His time doth take.
If of life you keep a care,
Shake off slumber, and beware
Awake! awake!

Ant. Then let us both be sudden.

Gon. Now, good angels
Preserve the king! [They wake.

Alon. Why, how now! ho, awake! Why are
you drawn?

Wherefore this ghastly looking?

Gon. What's the matter?

Seb. Whiles we stood here securing your repose,
Even now, we heard a hollow burst of bellowing
Like bulls, or rather lions; did 't not wake you?
It struck mine ear most terribly.

Alon. I heard nothing.

Ant. O! 'twas a din to fright a monster's ear,
To make an earthquake: sure it was the roar
Of a whole herd of lions.
Alon. Heard you this, Gonzalo? 324
Gon. Upon mine honour, sir, I heard a humming,
And that a strange one too, which did awake me.
I shak’d you, sir, and cry’d; as mine eyes open’d,
I saw their weapons drawn:—there was a noise,
That’s verily. ’Tis best we stand upon our guard,
Or that we quit this place: let’s draw our weapons.
Alon. Lead off this ground, and let’s make further search
For my poor son. 332
Gon. Heavens keep him from these beasts!
For he is, sure, i’ the island.
Alon. Lead away. [Exit with the others.
Ari. Prospero my lord shall know what I have done:
So, king, go safely on to seek thy son. [Exit.

SCENE II.—Another Part of the Island.

Enter CALIBAN, with a burden of wood.
A noise of thunder heard.

Cal. All the infections that the sun sucks up
From bogs, fens, flats, on Prosper fall, and make him
By inch-meal a disease! His spirits hear me,
And yet I needs must curse. But they’ll nor
punch,
Fright me with urchin-shows, pitch me i’ the mire,
Nor lead me, like a firebrand, in the dark
Out of my way, unless he bid ’em; but
For every trifle are they set upon me:
Sometime like apes, that mow and chatter at me
And after bite me; then like hedge-hogs, which
Lie tumbling in my bare-foot way and mount
Their pricks at my foot-fall; sometime am I 12
All wound with adders, who with cloven tongues
Do hiss me into madness.—

Enter TRINCULO.

Lo now! lo! lo!
Here comes a spirit of his, and to torment me
For bringing wood in slowly: I’ll fall flat; 16
Perchance he will not mind me.

Trin. Here’s neither bush nor shrub to bear off
any weather at all, and another storm brewing; I hear it sing i’ the wind: yond same black
cloud, yond huge one, looks like a foul bombard
that would shed his liquor. If it should thunder
as it did before, I know not where to hide my head: yond same cloud cannot choose but fall
by pailfuls.—What have we here? a man or a fish? Dead or alive? A fish: he smells like a fish; a very ancient and fish-like smell; a kind of not of the newest Poor-John. A strange fish!
Were I in England now,—as once I was,—and had but this fish painted, not a holiday fool there
but would give a piece of silver: there would this monster make a man; any strange beast
there makes a man. When they will not give a doit to relieve a lame beggar, they will lay out
ten to see a dead Indian. Leg’d like a man! and his fins like arms! Warm, o’ my troth! I do now
let loose my opinion, hold it no longer; this is no fish, but an islander, that hath lately suffered
by a thunderbolt. [Thunder.] Alas! the storm is come again: my best way is to creep
under his gaberdine; there is no other shelter
hereabout: misery acquaints a man with strange
bedfellows. I will here shroud till the dregs of
the storm be past. 44

Enter STEPHANO, singing: a bottle in his hand.
Ste. I shall no more to sea, to sea,
Here shall I die a-shore:—
This is a very scurvy tune to sing at a man’s
funeral:
Well, here’s my comfort. [Drinks.
The master, the swabber, the boatswain and I,
The gunner and his mate,
Lov’d Mall, Meg, and Marian and Margery,
But none of us card for Kate;
For she had a tongue with a tang.
Would cry to a sailor, ‘Go hang!’
She lov’d not the savour of tar nor pitch,
Yet a tailor might scratch her where’er she did itch:
Then to sea, boys, and let her go hang. 57
This is a scurvy tune too: but here’s my com-
fort. [Drinks.

Cal. Do not torment me: O!
Ste. What’s the matter? Have we devils here?
Do you put tricks upon us with savages and
men of Ind? Ha! I have not ’scaped drowning,
to be afraid now of your four legs; for it hath
been said, As proper a man as ever went on four
legs cannot make him give ground: and it shall
be said so again while Stephano breathes at’s
nostrils.

Cal. The spirit torments me: O! 68
Ste. This is some monster of the isle with
four legs, who hath got, as I take it, an ague.
Where the devil should he learn our language?
I will give him some relief, if it be but for that:
if I can recover him and keep him tame and
get to Naples with him, he’s a present for any
emperor that ever trod on neat’s leather. 75
Cal. Do not torment me, prithee: I’ll bring
my wood home faster.
Ste. He’s in his fit now and does not talk
after the wisest. He shall taste of my bottle: if
he have never drunk wine afore it will go near
to remove his fit. If I can recover him, and
keep him tame, I will not take too much for
him: he shall pay for him that hath him, and that soundly.

Cal. Thou dost me yet but little hurt; thou wilt anon, I know it by thy trembling: now Prosper works upon thee.

Ste. Come on your ways: open your mouth; here is that which will give language to you, cat. Open your mouth: this will shake your shaking, I can tell you, and that soundly: you cannot tell who's your friend; open your chaps again.

Trin. I should know that voice: it should be—but he is drowned, and these are devils. O! defend me.

Ste. Four legs and two voices; a most delicate monster! His forward voice now is to speak well of his friend; his backward voice is to utter foul speeches, and to detract. If all the wine in my bottle will recover him, I will help his ague. Come. Amen! I will pour some in thy other mouth.

Trin. Stephano!

Ste. Doth thy other mouth call me? Mercy! mercy! This is a devil, and no monster: I will leave him; I have no long spoon.

Trin. Stephano!—if thou beest Stephano, touch me, and speak to me; for I am Trinculo:—be not afraid—thy good friend Trinculo.

Ste. If thou beest Trinculo, come forth. I'll pull thee by the lesser legs: if any be Trinculo's legs, these are they. Thou art very Trinculo indeed! How can'st thou be the siege of this moon-calf? Can he vent Trinculos?

Trin. I took him to be killed with a thunder-stroke. But art thou not drowned, Stephano? I hope now thou art not drowned. Is the storm overblown? I hid me under the dead moon-calf's gaberline for fear of the storm. And art thou living, Stephano? O Stephano! two Neapolitans scaped!

Ste. Prithee, do not turn me about: my stomach is not constant.

Cal. [Aside.] These be fine things an if they be not sprites.

That's a brave god and bears celestial liquor: I will kneel to him.

Ste. How didst thou 'scape? How cam'st thou hither? swear by this bottle, how thou cam'st hither. I escaped upon a butt of sack, which the sailors heaved overboard, by this bottle! which I made of the bark of a tree with mine own hands, since I was cast ashore.

Cal. I'll swear upon that bottle, to be thy true subject; for the liquor is not earthly.

Ste. Here: swear then, how thou escapedst.

Trin. Swam ashore, man, like a duck: I can swim like a duck, I'll be sworn.
Cal. Farewell, master; farewell, farewell
[Sings drunkenly.

Trin. A howling monster, a drunken monster.
Cal. No more dams I'll make for fish,
Nor fetch in firing
At requirings,
Nor scrape trenchering, nor wash dish, 196
'Ban, 'Ban, Ca—Caliban,
Has a new master—Get a new man.

Freedom, high-day! high-day, freedom! freedom! high-day, freedom!

Ste. O brave monster! lead the way. [Exeunt.

ACT III.

SCENE I.—Before Prospero's Cell.

Enter Ferdinand, bearing a log.

Fer. There be some sports are painful, and their labour
Delight in them sets off: some kinds of baseness
Are nobly undergone, and most poor matters
Point to rich ends. This my mean task
Would be as hea'ry to me as odious; but
The mistress which I serve quickens what's dead
And makes my labours pleasures: O! she is
Ten times more gentle than her father's crabbed,
And he's compos'd of harshness. I must remove
Some thousands of these logs and pile them up,
Upon a sore injunction: my sweet mistress
Weeps when she sees me work, and says such baseness
Had never like executor. I forget:
But these sweet thoughts do even refresh my labours,
Most busy when I do it.

Enter Miranda; and Prospero behind.

Mira. Alas! now, pray you, work not so hard: I would the lightning had burnt up those logs that you are enjoin'd to pile!
Pray, set it down and rest you: when this burns, 'Twill weep for having wearied you. My father is hard at study; pray now, rest yourself:
He's safe for these three hours.

Fer. O most dear mistress, the sun will set, before I shall discharge what I must strive to do.

Mira. If you'll sit down, I'll bear your logs the while. Pray, give me that;
I'll carry it to the pile.

Fer. No, precious creature: I had rather crack my sinews, break my back, than you should such dishonour undergo, whilst I sit lazy by.

Mira. It would become me
As well as it does you: and I should do it
With much more ease; for my good will is to it, and yours it is against.

Pro. [Aside.] Poor worm! thou art infected:
This visitation shows it.

Mira. You look weary. 32
Fer. No, noble mistress; 'tis fresh morning with me
When you are by at night. I do beseech you—
Chiefly that I might set it in my prayers—
What is your name?

Mira. Miranda.—O my father! 36
I have broke your hest to say so.

Fer. Adm'r'd Miranda! Indeed, the top of admiration; worth
What's dearest to the world! Full many a lady
I have ey'd with best regard, and many a time
The harmony of their tongues hath into bondage
Brought my too diligent ear: for several virtues
Have I lik'd several women; never any
With so full soul but some defect in her
Did quarrel with the noblest grace she ow'd,
And put it to the foil: but you, O you!
So perfect and so peerless, are created
Of every creature's best.

Mira. — I do not know
One of my sex; no woman's face remember,
Save, from my glass, mine own; nor have I seen
More that I may call men than you, good friend,
And my dear father: how features are abroad,
I am skill-less of; but, by my modesty,—
The jewel in my dower,—I would not wish
Any companion in the world but you;
Nor can imagination form a shape,
Besides yourself, to like of. But I prattle
Something too wildly and my father's precepts
I therein do forget.

Fer. I am in my condition
A prince, Miranda; I do think, a king;—
I would not so!—and would no more endure
This wooden slavery than to suffer
The flesh-fly blow my mouth.—Hear my soul speak:—
The very instant that I saw you did
My heart fly to your service; there resides,
To make me slave to it; and for your sake
Am I this patient log-man.

Mira. Do you love me?
Fer. O heaven! O earth! bear witness to this sound,
And crown what I profess with kind event
If I speak true: if hollowly, invert
What best is boded me to mischief! I,
Beyond all limit of what else 'tis the world,
Do love, prize, honour you.

Mira. I am a fool
To weep at what I am glad of.
THE TEMPEST

Act III, Sc. II.

Pro. [Aside.] Fair encounter
Of two most rare affections! Heavens rain grace
On that which breeds between them!

Fer. Wherefore weep you? 76

Mira. At mine unworthiness, that dare not
offer
What I desire to give; and much less take
What I shall die to want. But this is trifling;
And all the more it seeks to hide itself
80
The bigger bulk it shows. Hence, bashful cunning!

And prompt me, plain and holy innocence!
I am your wife, if you will marry me;
If not, I'll die your maid: to be your fellow
94
You may deny me; but I'll be your servant
Whether you will or no.

Fer. My mistress, dearest;
And I thus humble ever.

Mira. My husband then?

Fer. Ay, with a heart as willing
98
As bondage e'er of freedom: here's my hand.

Mira. And mine, with my heart in't: and
now farewell
Till half an hour hence.

Fer. A thousand thousand!
[Exeunt Fer. and Mira severally.

Pro. So glad of this as they, I cannot be,
Who are surpris'd withal; but my rejoicing
At nothing can be more. I'll to my book;
For yet, ere supper time, must I perform
Much business appertaining. [Exil.

SCENE II.—Another Part of the Island

Enter Caliban, with a bottle, Stephano, and
Trinculo.

Ste. Tell not me:—when the butt is out, we
will drink water; not a drop before: therefore
bear up, and board'em.—Servant-monster, drink
to me.

Trin. Servant-monster! the folly of this
island! They say there's but five upon this isle:
we are three of them: if th' other two be brained
like us, the state totters.

Ste. Drink, servant-monster, when I bid thee:
thy eyes are almost set in thy head.

Trin. Where should they be set else? he
were a brave monster indeed, if they were set
in his tail.

Ste. My man-monster hath drowned his tongue
in sack: for my part, the sea cannot drown
me; I swam, ere I could recover the shore, five
and-thirty leagues, off and on, by this light.
Thou shalt be my lieutenant, monster, or my
standard.

Trin. Your lieutenant, if you list; he's no
standard.

Ste. We'll not run, Monsieur monster.

Trin. Nor go neither: but you'll lie, like
dogs; and yet say nothing neither.

Ste. Moon-calf, speak once in thy life, if thou
beest a good moon-calf.

Cal. How does thy honour? Let me lick thy
shoe. I'll not serve him, he is not valiant.

Trin. Thouliest, most ignorant monster:
I am in case to justify a constable. Why, thou
deboched fish thou, was there ever a man a
coward that hath drunk so much sack as I
to-day? Wilt thou tell a monstrous lie, being
but half a fish and half a monster?

Cal. Lo, how he mocks me! wilt thou let
him, my lord?

Trin. 'Lord' quoth he—that a monster
should be such a natural!

Cal. Lo, lo, again! bite him to death, I
pridhee.

Ste. Trinculo, keep a good tongue in your
head: if you prove a mutineer, the next tree!
The poor monster's my subject, and he shall
not suffer indignity.

Cal. I thank my noble lord. Wilt thou be
pleasd
To hearken once again the suit I made thee?

Ste. Marry, will I; kneel, and repeat it: I will
stand, and so shall Trinculo.

Enter Ariel, invisible.

Cal. As I told thee before, I am subject to a
tyrant, a sorcerer, that by his cunning hath
cheated me of the island.

Ari. Thou liest.

Cal. Thou liest, thou jesting monkey thou;
I would my valiant master would destroy thee;
I do not lie.

Ste. Trinculo, if you trouble him any more in
his tale, by this hand, I will supplant some of
your teeth.

Trin. Why, I said nothing.
Ste. Mum then and no more.—[To Cali-
ban.] Proceed.

Cal. I say, by sorcery he got this isle;
From me he got it: if thy greatness will,
Revenge it on him,—for, I know, thou dar'st;
But this thing dare not,—

Ste. That's most certain.

Cal. Thou shalt be lord of it and I'll serve
thee.

Ste. How now shall this be compassed? Canst
thou bring me to the party?

Cal. Yes, yea, my lord: I'll yield him thee
asleep,
Where thou may'st knock a nail into his head.

Ari. Thou liest; thou canst not.

Cal. What a pied ninny's this! Thou scurvy
patch!
I do beseech thy greatness, give him blows,  
And take his bottle from him: when that's gone  
He shall drink nought but brine; for I'll not  
show him  

Where the quick freshest are.  

Ste. Trinculo, run into no further danger: inter-  
rupt the monster one word further, and, by  
this hand, I'll turn my mercy out of doors and  
make a stock-fish of thee.  

Trin. Why, what did I? I did nothing. I'll  
go further off.  

Ste. Didst thou not say he lied?  

Ari. Thou liest.  

Ste. Do I so? take thou that. [Strikes Trin.]  
As you like this, give me the lie another tune.  

Trin. I did not give thee the lie:—Out  
o' your wits and hearing too?—A pox o' your  
bottle! this can sack and drinking do.—A murrain  
on your monster, and the devil take your  

Cal. Ha, ha, ha!  

Ste. Now, forward with your tale.—Prithhee  
stand further off.  

Cal. Beat him enough: after a little time  
I'll beat him too.  

Ste. Stand further.—Come, proceed.  

Cal. Why, as I told thee, 'tis a custom with  

I' the afternoon to sleep: there thou may'st  

brain him,  

Having first seiz'd his books; or with a log  
Batter his skull, or paunch him with a stake,  
Or cut his weazand with thy knife. Remember  
First to possess his books; for without them  
He's but a sot, as I am, nor hath not  

One spirit to command: they all do hate him  
As rootedly as I. Burn but his books;  
He has brave utensils,—for so he calls them,—  
Which, when he has a house, he'll deck withal:  
And that most deeply to consider is  

The beauty of his daughter; he himself  
Calls her a nonpareil: I never saw a woman,  
But only Sycorax my dam and she;  

But she as far surpasseth Sycorax  

As great'st does least.  

Ste. Is it so brave a lass?  

Cal. Ay, lord; she will become thy bed, I  
warrant,  

And bring thee forth brave brood.  

Ste. Monster, I will kill this man: his daugh- 
ter and I will be king and queen,—save our  
graces! and Trinculo and thyself shall be vice- 
roys. Dost thou like the plot, Trinculo?  

Trin. Excellent.  

Ste. Give me thy hand: I am sorry I beat 
thee; but, while thou livest, keep a good tongue  
in thy head.  

Cal. Within this half hour will he be asleep;  
Wilt thou destroy him then?  

Ste. Ay, on mine honour.  

Ari. This will I tell my master.  

Cal. Thou mak'st me merry: I am full of  
pleasure.  

Let us be jocund: will you troll the catch  
You taught me but while-ere?  

Ste. At thy request, monster, I will do reason,  
any reason: Come on, Trinculo, let us sing.  

[Sings.  

Flout 'em, and scout 'em; and scout 'em, and  
flout 'em;  

Thought is free.  

Cal. That's not the tune.  

[ARIEL plays the tune on a Tabor and Pipe.  

Ste. What is this same?  

Trin. This is the tune of our catch, played by  
the picture of Nobody.  

Ste. If thou beest a man, show thyself in thy  
likeness: if thou beest a devil, take'st as thou  
list.  

Trin. O, forgive me my sins!  

Ste. He that dies pays all debts: I defy thee.  

—Mercy upon us!  

Cal. Art thou afeard?  

Ste. No, monster, not I.  

Cal. Be not afeard: the isle is full of noises,  

Sounds and sweet airs, that give delight, and  
hurt not.  

Sometimes a thousand twangling instruments  
Will hum about mine ears; and sometime voices,  
That, if I then had wak'd after long sleep,  
Will make me sleep again: and then, in dreaming,  
The clouds methought would open and show  
riches  

Ready to drop upon me; that, when I wak'd  
I cried to dream again.  

Ste. This shall prove a brave kingdom to me,  
where I shall have my music for nothing.  

Cal. When Prospero is destroyed.  

Ste. That shall be by and by: I remember  
the story.  

Trin. The sound is going away: let's follow  
it, and after do our work.  

Ste. Lead, monster; we'll follow.—I would I  
could see this taborer! he lays it on. Wilt come?  

Trin. I'll follow, Stephano.  

[Exeunt.  

SCENE III.—Another Part of the Island.  

Enter ALONSO, SEBASTIAN, ANTONIO, GONZALO,  
ADRIAN, FRANCISCO, and others.  

Gen. By'r lakin, I can go no further, sir;  
My old bones ache: here's a maze trod indeed,  
Through forth-rights, and meanders! by your  
patience,
I needs must rest me.

Alon. Old lord, I cannot blame thee, 4
Who am myself attach'd with weariness,
To the dulling of my spirits: sit down, and rest.
Even here I will put off my hope, and keep it
No longer for my flatterer: he is drown'd 8
Whom thus we stray to find; and the sea mocks
Our frustrate search on land. Well, let him go.

Ant. [Aside to SEB.] I am right glad that
he's so out of hope.

Do not, for one repulse, forego the purpose 12
That you resolv'd to effect.

Seb. [Aside to ANT.] The next advantage
We will take throughly.

Ant. [Aside to SEB.] Let it be to-night;
For, now they are oppress'd with travel, they
Will not, nor cannot, use such vigilance 16
As when they are fresh.

Seb. [Aside to ANT.] I say to-night: no more.

Solemn and strange music; and PROSPERO above, invisible. Enter below several strange Shapes, bringing in a banquet: they dance about it with gentle actions of salutation; and, inviting the King, &c., to eat, they depart.

Alon. What harmony is this? my good friends, hark!

Gon. Marvellous sweet music!

Alon. Give us kind keepers, heavens! What
were these? 20

Seb. A living drollery. Now I will believe
That there are unicorns; that in Arabia
There is one tree, the phœnix' throne; one phœnix
At this hour reigning there.

Ant. I'll believe both; 24
And what does else want credit, come to me,
And I'll be sworn 'tis true: travellers ne'er did lie,
Though fools at home condemn them.

Gon. If in Naples I should report this now, would they believe me?
If I should say I saw such islanders,— 29
For, certes, these are people of the island,—
Who, though they are of monstrous shape, yet,
Their manners are more gentle-kind than of 32
Our human generation you shall find
Many, nay, almost any.

Pro. [Aside.] Honest lord,
Thou hast said well; for some of you there present
Are worse than devils.

Alon. I cannot too much muse, 36
Such shapes, such gesture, and such sound, expressing,—
Although they want the use of tongue,—a kind

Of excellent dumb discourse.

Pro. [Aside.] Praise in departing.

Fran. They vanish'd strangely.

Seb. No matter, since 40
They have left their viands behind; for we have
stomachs.—

Will't please you to taste of what is here?

Alon. Not I.

Gon. Faith, sir, you need not fear. When we
were boys,
Who would believe that there were mountaineers
44
Dew-lapp'd like bulls, whose throats had hanging at them
Wallets of flesh? or that there were such men
Whose heads stood in their breasts? which now we find
Each puffer-out of five for one will bring us 48
Good warrant of.

Alon. I will stand to and feed,
Although my last; no matter, since I feel
The best is past.—Brother, my lord the duke,
Stand to and do as we.

Thunder and lightning. Enter ARIEL like a harpy; claps his wings upon the table; and, with a quaint device, the banquet vanishes.

Ant. You are three men of sin, whom Destiny—
That hath to instrument this lower world
And what is in't,—the never-surfeited sea 55
Hath caused to belch up you; and on this island
Where man doth not inhabit; you 'mongst men
Being most unfit to live. I have made you mad;
[Seeing ALON., SEB., &c., draw their swords.
And even with such-like valour men bang and drown
Their proper selves. You fools! I and my fellows 60
Are ministers of fate: the elements
Of whom your swords are temper'd, may as well
Wound the loud winds, or with bemoock'd-at stabs
Kill the still-closing waters, as diminish 64
One dowel that's in my plume; my fellow-ministers
Are like invulnerable. If you could hurt,
Your swords are now too massy for your strengths,
And will not be uplifted. But, remember,— 68
For that's my business to you,—that you three
From Milan did supplant good Prospero;
Expos'd unto the sea, which hath requit it,
Him and his innocent child: for which foul deed
72
The powers, delaying, not forgetting, have
Incess'd the seas and shores, yea, all the creatures,
Against your peace. Thee of thy son, Alonso,
They have bereft; and do pronounce, by me, 76
Lingering perdition,—worse than any death
Act III, Sc. III.

THE TEMPEST

Can be at once,—shall step by step attend
You and your ways; whose wrath to guard
you from—

Which here in this most desolate isle, else falls
Upon your heads,—is nothing but heart-sorrow
And a clear life ensuing.

He vanishes in thunder then, to soft music,
Enter the Shapes again, and dance with mocks
and mows, and carry out the table.

Pro. [Aside.] Bravely the figure of this harpy
hast thou
Perform’d, my Ariel; a grace it had, devouring:
Of my instruction hast thou nothing bated
In what thou hast to say: so, with good life
And observation strange, my meaner ministers
Their several kinds have done. My high charms
work,

And these mine enemies are all knit up
In their distractions: they now are in my power;
And in these fits I leave them, while I visit
Young Ferdinand,—whom they suppose is
drown’d,—
And his and mine lov’d darling. [Exit above.

Gon. I the name of something holy, sir, why
stand you
In this strange stare?

Alon. O, it is monstrous! monstrous!
Methought the billows spoke and told me of it;
The winds did sing it to me; and the thunder,
That deep and dreadful organ-pipe, pronounc’d
The name of Prosper: it did bass my trespass.
Therefore my son i’ th’ ooze is bedded; and 100
I’ll seek him deeper than e’er plummet sounded,
And with him there lie muddied. [Exit.

Seb. But one fiend at a time,
I’ll fight their legions o’er.

Ant. I’ll be thy second.

[Exeunt Seb. and Ant.

Gon. All three of them are desperate; their
great guilt,
Like poison given to work a great time after,
Now ’gins to bite the spirits. I do beseech you
That are of suppler joints, follow them swiftly
And hinder them from what this ecstasy
May now provoke them to.

Adr. Follow, I pray you. [Exeunt.

ACT IV.

SCENE I.—Before Prospero’s Cell.

Enter Prospero, Ferdinand, and Miranda.

Pro. If I have too austerely punish’d you,
Your compensation makes amends; for I
Have given you here a thirld of mine own life,
Or that for which I live; whom once again
I tender to thy hand: all thy vexations

Were but my trials of thy love, and thou
Hast strangely stood the test: here, afore
Heaven,
I ratify this my rich gift. O Ferdinand!

Do not smile at me that I boast her off,
For thou shalt find she will outstrip all praise,
And make it halt behind her.

Fer. I do believe it
Against an oracle.

Pro. Then, as my gift and thine own acquisi-
tion
Worthily purchas’d, take my daughter: but
If thou dost break her virgin knot before
All sanctimonious ceremonies may
With full and holy rite be minister’d,
No sweet aspersion shall the heavens let fall
To make this contract grow; but barren hate,
Sour-ey’d disdain and discord shall bestrew
The union of your bed with weeds so loathly
That you shall hate it both: therefore take heed,
As Hymen’s lamps shall light you.

Fer. As I hope
For quiet days, fair issue and long life,

With such love as ‘tis now, the merkliest den,
The most opportune place, the strangest sug-
gestion
Our worser genius can, shall never melt
Mine honour into lust, to take away
The edge of that day’s celebration
When I shall think, or Phœbus’ steeds are
founder’d,
Or Night kept chain’d below.

Pro. Fairly spoke:
Sit then, and talk with her, she is thine own.
What, Ariel! my industrious servant Ariel! 33

Enter Ariel.

Ari. What would my potent master? here
I am.

Pro. Thou and thy meaner fellows your last
service
Did worthily perform; and I must use you
36
In such another trick. Go bring the rabbit,
O’er whom I give thee power, here to this place:
Incite them to quick motion; for I must
Bestow upon the eyes of this young couple
40
Some vanity of mine art: it is my promise,
And they expect it from me.

Ari. Presently?

Pro. Ay, with a twink.

Ari. Before you can say, ‘Come,’ and ‘Go,’

And breathe twice; and cry, ’so, so,’

Each one, tripping on his toe,

Will be here with mop and mow.

Do you love me, master? no?

Pro. Dearly, my delicate Ariel. Do not ap
proach.
Till thou dost hear me call.
Ari. Well, I conceive. [Exit.
Pro. Look, thou be true; do not give daliance
Too much the rein: the strongest oaths are straw 52
To the fire i’ the blood: be more abstemious,
Or else good night your vow!
Fer. I warrant you, sir.
The white cold virgin snow upon my heart
Abates the ardour of my liver.
Pro. Well.— 56
Now come, my Ariel! bring a corollary,
Rather than want a spirit: appear, and pertly.
No tongue! all eyes! be silent. [Soft music.

A Masque. Enter Iris.
Iris. Ceres, most bounteous lady, thy rich
leas
Of wheat, rye, barley, vetches, oats, and peas;
Thy turf mountains, where live nibbling sheep,
And flat meads thatch’d with stover, them to keep;
Thy banks with pioned and twilled brims,
Which spongy April at thy best betrims,
To make cold nymphs chaste crowns; and thy broom groves,
Whose shadow the dismissed bachelor loves,
Being lass-lorn; thy pole-clip vineyard;
And thy sea-marge, sterile and rocky-hard,
Where thou thyself dost air: the queen o’ the sky,
Whose watery arch and messenger am I,
Bid thee leave these; and with her sovereign grace,
Here on this grass-plot, in this very place,
To come and sport; her peacocks fly amain:
Approach, rich Ceres, her to entertain.

Enter Ceres.
Cer. Hail, many-colour’d messenger, that ne’er
Dost disobey the wife of Jupiter;
Who with thy saffron wings upon my flowers
Diffusest honey-drops, refreshing showers:
And with each end of thy blue bow dost crown
My boaky acres, and my unshrub’d down;
Rich scarf to my proud earth; why hath thy queen
Summon’d me hither, to this short-grass’d green?
Iris. A contract of true love to celebrate,
And some donation freely to estate
On the bless’d lovers.
Cer. Tell me, heavenly bow,
If Venus or her son, as thou dost know,
Do now attend the queen? since they did plot
The means that dusky Dian my daughter got, 89
Her and her blind boy’s scandal’d company
I have forsworn.
Iris. Of her society
Be not afraid; I met her deity
Cutting the clouds towards Paphos and her son
Dove-drawn with her. Here thought they to have done
Some wanton charm upon this man and maid,
Whose vows are, that no bed-rite shall be paid
Till Hymen’s torch be lighted; but in vain: 97
Mars’s hot minion is return’d again;
Her wapish-headed son has broke his arrows,
Swears he will shoot no more, but play with sparrows,
And be a boy right out.
Cer. Highest queen of state,
Great Juno comes; I know her by her gait.

Enter Juno.
Juno. How does my bounteous sister? Go with me
To bless this twain, that they may prosperous be,
And honour’d in their state.

SONG.
Juno. Honour, riches, marriage-blessing,
Long continuance, and increasing,
Hourly joys be still upon you!
Juno sings her blessings on you.
Cer. Earth’s increase, foodon plenty,
Barns and garner never empty;
Vines, with clust’ring bunches growing;
Plants with goodly burden bowing;
Spring come to you at the farthest
In the very end of harvest;
Scarcity and want shall shun you;
Ceres’ blessing so is on you.

Fer. This is a most majestic vision, and
Harmonious charmingly: May I be bold
To think these spirits?
Pro. Spirits, which by mine art
I have from their confines call’d to enact
My present fancies.
Fer. Let me live here ever:
So rare a wonder’d father and a wise,
Makes this place Paradise.

Juno and Ceres whisper, and send Iris on employment.

Pro. Sweet, now, silence!
Juno and Ceres whisper seriously,
There’s something else to do: hush, and be mute,
Or else our spell is marr’d.
Iris. You nymphs, call’d Naiades, of the winding brooks,
With your sedg’d crowns, and ever-harmless looks,
Leave your crisp channels, and on this green land
Answer your summons: Juno does command.
Enter certain Nymphs.
You sun-burn’d sicklemen, of August weary,
Come hither from the furrow, and be merry:
Make holiday: your rye-straw hats put on,
And these fresh nymphs encounter every one
In country footing.

Enter certain Reapers, properly habit’d: they
join with the Nymphs in a graceful dance;
towards the end whereof Prospero starts
suddenly, and speaks; after which, to a
strange, hollow, and confused noise, they
heavily vanish.

Pro. [Aside.] I had forgot that foul conspiracy
Of the beast Caliban, and his confederates
Against my life: the minute of their plot
Is almost come.—[To the Spirits.] Well done! avoid; no more!
Fer. This is strange: your father’s in some passion
That works him strongly.

Mira. Never till this day saw I him touch’d with anger so distemper’d.

Pro. You do look, my son, in a mov’d sort,
As if you were dismay’d: be cheerful, sir:
Our revels now are ended. These our actors, 148
As I foretold you, were all spirits and
Are melted into air, into thin air:
And, like the baseless fabric of this vision,
The cloud-capp’d towers, the gorgeous palaces,
The solemn temples, the great globe itself, 153
Yea, all which it inherit, shall dissolve
And, like the insubstantial pageant faded,
Leave not a rack behind. We are such stuff
As dreams are made on, and our little life
Is rounded with a sleep.—Sir, I am vex’d:
Bear with my weakness; my old brain is troubled.
Be not disturb’d with my infirmity.
If you be pleas’d, retire into my cell
And there repose: a turn or two I’ll walk,
To still my beating mind.

Fer. Mira. We wish your peace.

Pro. Come with a thought!—[To them.] I thank thee: Ariel, come!

Enter Ariel.
Ari. Thy thoughts I cleave to. What’s thy pleasure?

Pro. Spirit,
We must prepare to meet with Caliban.
Ari. Ay, my commander; when I presented
Ceres,
I thought to have told thee of it; but I fear’d 168
Lest I might anger thee.

Pro. Say again, where didst thou leave these varlets?

Ari. I told you, sir, they were red-hot with drinking;
So full of valour that they smote the air 172
For breathing in their faces; beat the ground
For kissing of their feet; yet always bending
Towards their project. Then I beat my tabor;
At which, like unback’d colts, they prick’d their ears, 176
Advanc’d their eyelids, lifted up their noses
As they smelt music: so I charm’d their ears
That, calf-like, they my lowest follow’d through
Tooth’d briers, sharp furzes, prickling goss and thorns, 180
Which enter’d their frail shins: at last I left them
I the filthy-mantled pool beyond your cell,
There dancing up to the china, that the foul lake
O’erstunk their feet.

Pro. This was well done, my bird. 184
Thy shape invisible retain thou still:
The trumpery in my house, go bring it hither,
For stale to catch these thieves.

Ari. I go, I go. [Exeunt.

Pro. A devil, a born devil, on whose nature
Nurture can never stick; on whom my pains, 189
Huminely taken, are all lost, quite lost;
And as with age his body uglier grows,
So his mind cankers. I will plague them all, 192
Even to roaring.

Re-enter Ariel, loaden with glistening apparel, &c.

Come, hang them on this line.

Prospero and Ariel remain invisible. Enter
Caliban, Stephano, and Trinculo, all wet.

Cal. Pray you, tread softly, that the blind mole may not
Hear a foot fall: we now are near his cell. 195
Ste. Monster, your fairy, which you say is a
harmless fairy, has done little better than played
The Jack with us.

Trin. Monster, I do smell all horse-piss; at
which my nose is in great indignation. 200
Ste. So is mine.—Do you hear, monster? If I
should take a displeasure against you, look you,—
Trin. Thou wert but a lost monster.
Cal. Good my lord, give me thy favour still:
Be patient, for the prize I’ll bring thee to 205
Shall hoodwink this mischance: therefore speak
softly;
All’s bush’d as midnight yet.

Trin. Ay, but to lose our bottles in the pool,—
THE TEMPEST

Act V, Sc. I.

Ste. There is not only disgrace and dishonour in that, monster, but an infinite loss.

Trin. That’s more to me than my wetting: yet this is your harmless fairy, monster. 213

Ste. I will fetch off my bottle, though I be o’er ears for my labour.

Cal. Pr thee, my king, be quiet. Seest thou here, 216
This is the mouth o’ the cell: no noise, and enter.
Do that good mischief, which may make this island Thine own for ever, and I, thy Caliban,
For eye thy foot-licker.

Ste. Give me thy hand: I do begin to have bloody thoughts.

Trin. O king Stephano! O peer! O worthy Stephano! look, what a wardrobe here is for thee! 225

Cal. Let it alone, thou fool; it is but trash.

Trin. O, ho, monster! we know what belongs to a frippery.—O king Stephano! 228

Ste. Put off that gown, Trinculo; by this hand, I’ll have that gown.

Trin. Thy grace shall have it.

Cal. The dropsy drown this fool! what do you mean? 232

To dote thus on such luggage? Let’s along,
And do the murder first: if he awake,
From toe to crown he’ll fill our skins with pinches;
Make us strange stuff.

Ste. Be you quiet, monster.—Mistress line, is not this my jerkin? Now is the jerkin under the line: now, jerkin, you are like to lose your hair and prove a bald jerkin.

Trin. Do, do: we steal by line and level,
An’t like your grace.

Ste. I thank thee for that jest; here’s a garment for’t: wit shall not go unrewarded while I am king of this country: ‘Steal by line and level,’ is an excellent pass of pate; there’s another garment for’t. 247

Trin. Monster, come, put some lime upon your fingers, and away with the rest.

Cal. I will have none on’t: we shall lose our time, And all be turn’d to barnacles, or to apes With foreheads villainous low.

Ste. Monster, lay-to your fingers: help to bear this away where my hogsherd of wine is, or I’ll turn you out of my kingdom. Go to; carry this. 256

Trin. And this.

Ste. Ay, and this.

A noise of hunters heard. Enter divers Spirits, in shape of hounds, and hunt them about; Prospero and Ariel setting them on.

Pro. Hey, Mountain, hey!

Ari. Silver! there it goes, Silver!

Pro. Fury, Fury! there, Tyrant, there! hark, hark!

[Cal., Ste., and Trin. are driven out]

Go, charge my goblins that they grind their joints
With dry convulsions; shorten up their sinews
With aged cramps, and more pinch-spotted

Than pard, or cat o’ mountain.

Ari. Hark! they roar. 264

Pro. Let them be hunted soundly. At this hour

Lie at my mercy all mine enemies:
Shortly shall all my labours end, and thou
Shalt have the air at freedom: for a little, 268
Follow, and do me service.  [Exeunt.

ACT V.

SCENE I.—Before the Cell of Prospero.

Enter Prospero in his magic robes; and Ariel.

Pro. Now does my project gather to a head:
My charms crack not; my spirits obey, and time
Goes upright with his carriage. How’s the day?

Ari. On the sixth hour; at which time, my lord,

You said our work should cease.

Pro. I did say so,

When first I rais’d the tempest. Say, my spirit,

How fares the king and his followers?

Ari. Confin’d together
In the same fashion as you gave in charge,
Just as you left them: all prisoners, sir,
In the line-grove which weather-fends your cell;

They cannot budge till your release. The king,
His brother, and yours, abide all three distracted,
And the remainder mourning over them,
Brimful of sorrow and dismay; but chiefly

Him, that you term’d, sir, ‘The good old lord Gonzalo:’

His tears run down his beard, like winter’s drops
From eaves of reeds; your charm so strongly

works them,

That if you now behold them, your affections
Would become tender.

Pro. Dost thou think so, spirit?

Ari. Mine would, sir, were I human.

Pro. And mine shall. 20

Hast thou, which art but air, a touch, a feeling
Of their afflictions, and shall not myself,
One of their kind, that relish all as sharply,

Passion as they, be kindlier mov’d than thou art? 24
Though with their high wrongs I am struck to
the quick,
Yet with my nobler reason 'gainst my fury
Do I take part: the rarer action is
In virtue than in vengeance: they being peni-
tent,
The sole drift of my purpose doth extend
Not a frown further. Go, release them, Ariel.
My charms I'll break, their senses I'll restore,
And they shall be themselves.
Ari. I'll fetch them, sir. [Exit. Pro. Ye elves of hills, brooks, standing lakes,
And groves; And ye, that on the sands with printless foot
Do chase the ebbing Neptune and do fly him
When he comes back; you demi-puppets, that
By moonshine do the green sour ringlets make
Whereof the ewe not bites; and you, whose
pastime
Is to make midnight mushrooms; that rejoice
To hear the solemn curfew; by whose aid,—
Weak masters though ye be—I have bedimm'd
The noontide sun, call'd forth the mutinous
winds,
And 'twixt the green sea and the azur'd vault
Set roaring war: to the dread-rattling thunder
Have I given fire and rifted Jove's stout oak
With his own bolt: the strong-bos'd promontory
Have I made shake; and by the spurs pluck'd up
The pine and cedar: graves at my command
Have wak'd their sleepers, op'd, and let them forth
By my so potent art. But this rough magic
I here abjure; and, when I have requir'd
Some heavenly music,—which even now I do,—
To work mine end upon their senses that
This airy charm is for, I'll break my staff,
Bury it certain fathom in the earth,
And, deeper than did ever plummet sound,
I'll drown my book. [Solemn music.

Re-enter Ariel: after him, Alonso, with a
frantic gesture, attended by Gonzalo; Sebastian
and Antonio in like manner, attended by
Adrian and Francisco: they all enter the
circle which Prospero had made, and there stand charmed; which Prospero observing, speaks.

A solemn air and the best comforter
To an unsettled fancy, cure thy brains,
Now useless, boil'd within thy skull! There stand,

For you are spell-stopp'd.
Holy Gonzalo, honourable man,
Mine eyes, even sociable to the show of thine,
Fall fellowly drops. The charm dissolves space;
And as the morning steals upon the night,

Melting the darkness, so their rising senses
Begin to chase the ignorant fumes that mantle
Their clearer reason.—O good Gonzalo! My true preserver, and a loyal sir
To him thou followst, I will pay thy graces
Home, both in word and deed.—Most cruelly Didst thou, Alonso, use me and my daughter? Thy brother was a furtherer in the act;—Thou 'rt pinch'd for 't now, Sebastian.—Flesh and blood,
You, brother mine, that entertain'd ambition,
Expell'd remorse and nature; who, with Se-
bastian,— Whose inward pinches therefore are most strong.—Would here have kill'd your king; I do forgive thee,
Unnatural though thou art!—Their under-
standing
Belongs to swell, and the approaching tide
Will shortly fill the reasonable shores
That now lie foul and muddy. Not one of them
That yet looks on me, or would know me.—Ariel,
Fetch me the hat and rapier in my cell;—
[Exit. ARIEL. I will discourse, and myself present,
As I was sometime Milan.—Quickly, spirit;
Thou shalt ere long be free.

ARIEL re-enters, singing, and helps to attire
PROSPERO.

Ari. Where the bee sucks, there suck I
In a cowslip’s bell I lie:
There I couch when owls do cry.
On the bat’s back I do fly
After summer merrily.
Merrily, merrily shall I live now
Under the blossom that hangs on the bough

Pro. Why, that’s my dainty Ariel! I shall miss thee;
But yet thou shalt have freedom;—so, so, so.
—To the king’s ship, invisible as thou art:
There shalt thou find the mariners asleep
Under the hatches; the master and the boat-
swain Being awake, enforce them to this place,
And presently, I prithee.

Ari. I drink the air before me, and return
Or e’er your pulse twice beat. [Exit.

Gon. All torment, trouble, wonder, and
amazement
Inhabits here: some heavenly power guide us Out of this fearful country!

Pro. Behold, sir king,
The wronged Duke of Milan, Prospero.
For more assurance that a living prince
Does now speak to thee, I embrace thy body; And to thee and thy company I bid
A hearty welcome.
THE TEMPEST

ACT V, SC. I.

Alon. Where thou beest he or no,
Or some enchanted trifle to abuse me,
As late I have been, I not know: thy pulse
Beats, as of flesh and blood; and, since I saw thee,
Th' affliction of my mind amends, with which,
I fear, a madness held me: this must crave,—
An if this be at all—a most strange story.
 Thy dukedom I resign, and do entreat
Thou pardon me my wrongs.—But how should
Prospero
Be living, and be here?

Pro. First, noble friend,
Let me embrace thine age; whose honour cannot
Be measur'd, or confin'd.

Gon. Whether this be,
Or be not, I'll not swear.

Pro. You do yet taste
Some subtleties o' the isle, that will not let you
Believe things certain.—Welcome! my friends all—

[Aside to SEB. and ANT.] But you, my brace of
lords, were I so minded,
I here could pluck his highness' from upon you,
And justify you traitors: at this time
I will tell no tales.

Seb. [Aside.] The devil speaks in him.

Pro. No.

For you, most wicked sir, whom to call brother
Would even infect my mouth, I do forgive
Thy rankest fault; all of them; and require
My dukedom of thee, which, perforce, I know,
Thou must restore.

Alon. If thou beest Prospero,
Give us particulars of thy preservation;
How thou hast met us here, who three hours
since
Were wrack'd upon this shore; where I have lost,—
How sharp the point of this remembrance is—
My dear son Ferdinand.

Pro. I am woe for't, sir.

Alon. Irreparable is the loss, and patience
Says it is past her cure.

Pro. I rather think

You have not sought her help; of whose soft
grace,
For the like loss I have her sovereign aid,
And rest myself content.

Alon. You the like loss!

Pro. As great to me, as late; and, supportable
To make the dear loss, have I means much
weaker
Than you may call to comfort you, for I
Have lost my daughter.

Alon. A daughter?

O heavens! that they were living both in Naples,
The king and queen there! that they were, I wish

Myself were muddied in that oozy bed
Where my son lies. When did you lose your
daughter?

Pro. In this last tempest. I perceive, these
lords
At this encounter do so much admire
That they devour their reason, and scarce think
Their eyes do offices of truth, their words
Are natural breath: but, howsoever you have
Been justled from your senses, know for certain
That I am Prospero and that very duke
Which was thrust forth of Milan; who most
strangely
Up on this shore, where you were wrack'd, was
landed,
To be the lord on't. No more yet of this;
For 'ts a chronicle of day by day,
Not a relation for a breakfast nor
Befitting this first meeting. Welcome, sir;
This cell's my court: here have I few attendants
And subjects none abroad: pray you, look in.
My dukedom since you have given me again,
I will requite you with as good a thing;
At least bring forth a wonder, to content ye
As much as me my dukedom.

The entrance of the Cell opens, and discovers
Ferdinand and Miranda playing at chess.

Mira. Sweet lord, you play me false.

Fer. No, my dearest love.

Mira. I would not for the world.

Fer. Yes, for a score of kingdoms you should
wrangle,
And I would call it fair play.

Alon. If this prove
A vision of the island, one dear son
Shall I twice lose.

Seb. A most high miracle!

Fer. Though the seas threaten, they are merciful;
I have curs'd them without cause.

[Kneels to ALON.

Of all the blessings
Of a glad father compass thee about!

Mira. O, wonder!
How many goodly creatures are there here!
How beauteous mankind is! O brave new world,
That has such people in't!

Pro. Tis new to thee.

Alon. What is this maid, with whom thou
wast at play?
Your el'dest acquaintance cannot be three hours:
Is she the goddess that hath sever'd us,
And brought us thus together?

Fer. Sir, she is mortal;
But by immortal Providence she's mine;
I chose her when I could not ask my father
For his advice, nor thought I had one. She
Is daughter to this famous Duke of Milan,
Of whom so often I have heard renown,
But never saw before; of whom I have RECEIV’d a second life; and second father
This lady makes him to me.
Alon. I am hers. 
But O! how oddly will it sound that I
Must ask my child forgiveness!
Pro. There, sir, stop:
Let us not burden our remembrances
With a heavi ness that’s gone.
Gon. I have inly wept, or should have spoke ere this. Look down, you
And on this couple drop a blessed crown;
For it is you that have chalk’d forth the way
Which brought us hither!
Alon. I say, Amen, Gonzalo! Was Milan thrust from Milan, that his
Should become kings of Naples? O, rejoice
Beyond a common joy, and set it down
With gold on lasting pillars. In one voyage
Did Claribel her husband find at Tunis,
And Ferdinand, her brother, found a wife
Where he himself was lost; Prospero his duke-
In a poor isle; and all of us ourselves,
When no man was his own.
Alon. [To FER. and MIRA.] Give me your
hands:
Let grief and sorrow still embrace his heart
That doth not wish you joy!
Gon. Be it so: Amen!
Re-enter Ariel, with the Master and Boatswain
amazedly following.
O look, sir! look, sir! here are more of us.
I prophesied, if a gallows were on land,
This fellow could not drown. Now, blasphemy,
That swearst grace o’erboard, not an oath on
Hast thou no mouth by land? What is the news?
Boats. The best news is that we have safely
Our king and company: the next, our ship,
Which but three glasses since we gave out
Is tight and yare and bravely rigg’d as when
We first put out to sea.
Ari. [Aside to Pro.] Sir, all this service
Have I done since I went.
Pro. [Aside to Ari.] My tricksey spirit!
Alon. These are not natural events; they strengthen
From strange to stranger.—Say, how came you
hither?
Boats. If I did think, sir, I were well awake,
I’d strive to tell you. We were dead of sleep,
And, how we know not,—all clapp’d under
hatches,
Where, but even now, with strange and several
noises
Of roaring, shrieking, howling, jingling chains,
And mo diversity of sounds, all horrible,
We were awak’d; straightway, at liberty:
Where we, in all her trim, freshly beheld
Our royal, good, and gallant ship; our master
Capering to eye her: on a trice, so please you,
Even in a dream, were we divided from them,
And were brought moping hither.
Ari. [Aside to Pro.] Was’t well done?
Pro. [Aside to Ari.] Bravely, my diligence!
Thou shalt be free.
Alon. This is as strange a maze as e’er men
stood;
And there is in this business more than nature
Was ever conduct of: some oracle
Must rectify our knowledge.
Pro. Sir, my liege,
Do not infest your mind with beating on
The strangeness of this business: at pick’d pleasure
Which shall be shortly, single I’ll resolve you,—
Which to you shall seem probable,—of every
These happen’d accidents; till when, be cheerful,
And think of each thing well.—[Aside to Ari.]
Come hither, spirit;
Set Caliban and his companions free;
Untie the spell. [Exit Ari.] How fares my
gracious sir?
There are yet missing of your company
Some few odd lads that you remember not.
Re-enter Ariel, driving in Caliban, Stephano,
and Trinculo, in their stolen apparel.
Ste. Every man shift for all the rest, and let
no man take care for himself, for all is but
fortune.—Coragio! bully-monster, Coragio!
Trin. If these be true spies which I wear in
my head, here’s a goodly sight.
Cal. O Setebos! these be brave spirits, indeed.
How fine my master is! I am afraid
He will chastise me.
Seb. Ha, ha!
What things are these, my lord Antonio?
Willy money buy them?
Ant. Very like; one of them
Is a plain fish, and, no doubt, marketable.
Pro. Mark but the badges of these men, my
lords,
Then say, if they be true.—This mis-shapen
knave,—
His mother was a witch; and one so strong
That could control the moon, make flows and
 ebbs,
And deal in her command without her power.
These three have robb’d me; and this demi
 devil,—
272
For he’s a bastard one,—had plotted with them
To take my life: two of these fellows you
Must know and own; this thing of darkness I
Acknowledge mine.

Cal. I shall be pinch’d to death 276
Alon. Is not this Stephano, my drunken
 butler?
Seb. He is drunk now: where had he wine?
Alon. And Trinculo is reel’d-ripe: where
 should they
Find this grand liquor that hath gilded them?
How cam’st thou in this pickle? 283
Trin. I have been in such a pickle since I
saw you last that, I fear me, will never out of
my bones: I shall not fear fly-blowing. 284
Seb. Why, how now, Stephano!
Sta. Of touch me not: I am not Stephano,
but a cramp.
Pro. You’d be king of the isle, sirrah?
Sta. I should have been a sore one then. 288
Alon. This is a strange thing as e’er I look’d
 on.
[Pointing to Cal.
Pro. He is as disproportion’d in his manners
As in his shape.—Go, sirrah, to my cell;
Take with you your companions: as you look
To have my pardon, trim it handsomely. 293
Cal. Ay, that I will; and I’ll be wise hereafter,
And seek for grace. What a thrice-double ass
Was I, to take this drunkard for a god, 296
And worship this dull fool!
Pro. Go to; away!
Alon. Hence, and bestow your luggage where
you found it.
Seb. Or stole it, rather.
[Exeunt Cal., Sta., and Trin.

Pro. Sir, I invite your highness and your
train
To my poor cell, where you shall take your rest
For this one night; which—part of it—I’ll waste
With such discourse as, I not doubt, shall make it
Go quick away; the story of my life 304
And the particular accidents gone by
Since I came to this isle: and in the morn
I’ll bring you to your ship, and so to Naples,
Where I have hope to see the nuptial 308
Of these our dear-beloved solemniz’d;
And thence retire me to my Milan, where
Every third thought shall be my grave.
Alon. I long
To hear the story of your life, which must 312
Take the ear strangely.
Pro. I’ll deliver all;
And promise you calm seas, auspicious gales
And sail so expeditious that shall catch
Your royal fleet far off.—[Aside to Ari.] My
Ariel, chick, 316
That is thy charge: then to the elements
Be free, and fare thou well!—Please you, draw
near.
[Exeunt.

EPILOGUE.

Spoken by Prospero.

Now my charms are all o’erthrown,
And what strength I have’s mine own;
Which is most firm: now, ’tis true,
I must be here confin’d by you,
Or sent to Naples. Let me not,
Since I have my dukedom got
And pardon’d the deceiver, dwell
In this bare island by your spell;
But release me from my bands
With the help of your good hands.
Gentle breath of yours my sails
Must fill, or else my project fails,
Which was to please. Now I want
Spirit to enforce, art to enchant;
And my ending is despair,
Unless I be relieve’d by prayer.
Which pierces so that it assails
Mercy itself and frees all faults.
As you from crimes would pardon’d be,
Let your indulgence set me free.

20
THE TWO GENTLEMEN OF VERONA

DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

DUKE OF MILAN, Father to Silvia.
VALENTINE, the Two Gentlemen.
PROTEUS, the Two Gentlemen.
ANTONIO, Father to Proteus.
THURIO, a foolish rival to Valentine.
EGLAMOUR, Agent for Silvia, in her escape.
SPEED, a clownish Servant to Valentine.
LAUNCE, the like to Proteus.

PANTHINO, Servant to Antonio.
HOST, where Julia lodges in Milan.
OUTLAWS with Valentine.

JULIA, beloved of Proteus.
SILVIA, beloved of Valentine.
LUCETTA, waiting woman to Julia.

Servants, Musicians.

SCENE.—Verona; Milan; and the frontiers of Mantua.

ACT I.

SCENE I.—Verona. An open place.

Enter VALENTINE and PROTEUS.

Val. Cease to persuade, my loving Proteus: Home-keeping youth have ever homely wits.
Weren't not affection chains thy tender days 
To the sweet glances of thy honour'd love, 
I rather would entreat thy company To see the wonders of the world abroad Than, living dully sluggardiz'd at home, Wear out thy youth with shapeless idleness. 
But since thou lov'st, love still, and thrive therein, Even as I would when I to love begin.

Pro. Wilt thou be gone? Sweet Valentine, adieu! 
Think on thy Proteus, when thou haply seest: 
Some rare note-worthy object in thy travel: 
Wish me partaker in thy happiness 
When thou dost meet good hap; and in thy danger, 
If ever danger do environ thee, 
Command thy grievance to my holy prayers, 
For I will be thy beadsman, Valentine.

Val. And on a love-book pray for my success?

Pro. Upon some book I love I'll pray for thee.

Val. That's on some shallow story of deep love, 
How young Leander cross'd the Hellespont.

Pro. That's a deep story of a deeper love; 
For he was more than over shoes in love. 

Val. 'Tis true; for you are over boots in love, 
And yet you never swum the Hellespont.

Pro. Over the boots? nay, give me not the boots.

Val. No, I will not, for it boots thee not.

Pro. What? 

Val. To be in love, where scorn is bought with groans; 
Coy looks with heart-sore sighs; one fading 
moment's mirth 
With twenty watchful, weary, tedious nights: 
If haply won, perhaps a hapless gain; 
If lost, why then a grievous labour won: 
However, but a folly bought with wit, 
Or else a wit by folly vanquished.

Pro. So, by your circumstance, you call me fool.

Val. So, by your circumstance, I fear you'll prove.

Pro. 'Tis love you cavil at: I am not Love. 

Val. Love is your master, for he masters you; 
And he that is so yoked by a fool, 
Methinks, should not be chronicled for wise.

Pro. Yet writers say, as in the sweetest bud The eating canker dwells, so eating love Inhabits in the finest wits of all. 

Val. And writers say, as the most forward bud Is eaten by the canker ere it blow, 
Even so by love the young and tender wit 
Is turned to folly; blasting in the bud, 
Losing his verdure even in the prime, 
And all the fair effects of future hopes. 
But wherefore waste I time to counsel thee That art a votary to fond desire? 

Once more adieu! my father at the road 
Expect my coming; there to see me shipp'd. 

Pro. And thither will I bring thee, Valentine.

Val. Sweet Proteus, no; now let us take our leave.

To Milan let me hear from thee by letters Of thy success in love, and what news else
Betideth here in absence of thy friend; And I likewise will visit thee with mine.

Pro. All happiness bechance to thee in Milan!

Val. As much to you at home! and so, farewell. [Exit.

Pro. He after honour hunts, I after love: He leaves his friends to dignify them more; I leave myself, my friends and all, for love. Thou, Julia, thou hast metamorphos’d me;— Made me neglect my studies, lose my time, War with good counsel, set the world at nought; Made wit with musing weak, heart sick with thought.

Enter SPEED.

Speed. Sir Proteus, save you! Saw you my master?

Pro. But now be parted hence, to embark for Milan.

Speed. Twenty to one, then, he is shipp’d already, And I have play’d the sheep, in losing him.

Pro. Indeed, a sheep doth very often stray, An if the shepherd be a while away.

Speed. You conclude that my master is a shepherd, then, and I a sheep?

Pro. I do.

Speed. Why then my horns are his horns, whether I wake or sleep.

Pro. A silly answer, and fitting well a sheep.

Speed. This proves me still a sheep.

Pro. True, and thy master a shepherd.

Speed. Nay, that I can deny by a circumstance.

Pro. It shall go hard but I’ll prove it by another.

Speed. The shepherd seeks the sheep, and not the sheep the shepherd; but I seek my master, and my master seeks not me: therefore I am no sheep.

Pro. The sheep for fodder follow the shepherd, the shepherd for food follows not the sheep; thou for wages followest thy master, thy master for wages follows not thee: therefore thou art a sheep.

Speed. Such another proof will make me cry ‘baa.’

Pro. But, dost thou hear? gavest thou my letter to Julia?

Speed. Ay, sir: I, a lost mutton, gave your letter to her, a laced mutton; and she, a laced mutton, gave me, a lost mutton, nothing for my labour.

Pro. Here’s to small a pasture for such store of muttions.

Speed. If the ground be overcharged, you were best stick her.

Pro. Nay, in that you are astray; ’twere best pound you.

Speed. Nay, sir, less than a pound shall serve me for carrying your letter.

Pro. You mistake: I mean the pound,—a palfold.

Speed. From a pound to a pin? fold it over and over, ’Tis threefold too little for carrying a letter to your lover.

Pro. But what said she? [SPEED nods.] Did she nod?

Speed. Ay.


Speed. You mistook, sir: I say she did nod; and you ask me if she did nod; and I say, Ay.

Pro. And that set together is—noddly.

Speed. Now you have taken the pains to set it together, take it for your pains.

Pro. No, no; you shall have it for bearing the letter.

Speed. Well, I perceive I must be fain to bear with you.

Pro. Why, sir, how do you bear with me?

Speed. Marry, sir, the letter very orderly; having nothing but the word ‘noddly’ for my pains.

Pro. Beshrew me, but you have a quick wit.

Speed. And yet it cannot overtake your slow purse.

Pro. Come, come; open the matter in brief: what said she?

Speed. Open your purse, that the money and the matter may be both at once delivered.

Pro. Well, sir, here is for your pains [giving him money]. What said she?

Speed. Truly, sir, I think you’ll hardly win her.

Pro. Why? couldst thou perceive so much from her?

Speed. Sir, I could perceive nothing at all from her; no, not so much as a ducat for delivering your letter. And being so hard to me that brought your mind, I fear she’ll prove as hard to you in telling your mind. Give her no token but stones, for she’s as hard as steel.

Pro. What! said she nothing?

Speed. No, not so much as ‘Take this for thy pains.’ To testify your bounty, I thank you, you have testerned me; in requital whereof, henceforth carry your letters yourself. And so, sir, I’ll commend you to my master.

Pro. Go, go, be gone, to save your ship from wreck;
Which cannot perish, having thee aboard,
Being destin’d to a drier death on shore.— [Exit SPEED.

I must go send some better messenger:
I fear my Julia would not deign my lines,
Receiving them from such a worthless post. 163
[Exit.

SCENE II.—The Same. The Garden of JULIA’s House.

Enter JULIA and LUCETTA.

Jul. But say, Lucetta, now we are alone,
Wouldst thou then counsel me to fall in love?
Luc. Ay, madam, so you stumble not unheedfully.
Jul. Of all the fair resort of gentlemen
That every day with parle encounter me,
In thy opinion which is worthiest love?
Luc. Please you repeat their names, I’ll show my mind
According to my shallow simple skill. 8
Jul. What think’st thou of the fair Sir Egla-
mour?
Luc. As of a knight well-spoken, neat and fine;
But, were I you, he never should be mine. 11
Jul. What think’st thou of the rich Mercatio?
Luc. Well of his wealth; but of himself, so so.
Jul. What think’st thou of the gentle Proteus?
Luc. Lord, Lord! to see what folly reigns in us!
Jul. How now! what means this passion at
his name? 16
Luc. Pardon, dear madam; ’tis a passing shame
That I, unworthy body as I am,
Should censure thus on lovely gentlemen.
Jul. Why not on Proteus, as of all the rest?
Luc. Then thus,—of many good I think him best. 21
Jul. Your reason?
Luc. I have no other but a woman’s reason:
I think him so because I think him so. 24
Jul. And wouldst thou have me cast my love
on him?
Luc. Ay, if you thought your love not cast
away.
Jul. Why, be, of all the rest hath never
mov’d me.
Luc. Yet be of all the rest, I think, best
loves ye. 28
Jul. His little speaking shows his love but small.
Luc. Fire that’s closest kept burns most of all.
Jul. They do not love that do not show their
love.
Luc. O! they love least that let men know
their love. 32
Jul. I would I knew his mind.
Luc. Peruse this paper, madam. 34
[Gives a letter.
Jul. ‘To Julia.’—Say from whom?

Luc. That the contents will show.
Jul. Say, say, who gave it thee?
Luc. Sir Valentine’s page, and sent, I think,
from Proteus. 36
He would have given it you, but I, being in
the way,
Did in your name receive it; pardon the fault,
I pray.
Jul. Now, by my modesty, a goodly broker!
Dare you presume to harbour wanton lines? 40
To whisper and conspire against my youth?
Now, trust me, ’tis an office of great worth
And you an officer fit for the place.
There, take the paper: see it be return’d;
Or else return no more into my sight.
Luc. To plead for love deserves more fee
than hate.
Jul. Will ye be gone?
Luc. That you may ruminate. [Exit. 48
Jul. And yet I would I had o’erlook’d the
letter.
It were a shame to call her back again
And pray her to a fault for which I chid her.
What fool is she, that knows I am a maid,
And would not force the letter to my view! 52
Since maids, in modesty, say ‘No’ to that
Which they would have the profferer construe
‘Ay.’
Fie, fie! how wayward is this foolish love
That, like a testy babe, will scratch the nurse
And presently all humbled kiss the rod!
How curiously I chid Lucetta hence,
When willingly I would have had her here:
How angrily I taught my brow to frown,
When inward joy enforce’d my heart to smile.
My penance is, to call Lucetta back
And ask remission for my folly past.
What ho! Lucetta!

Re-enter LUCETTA.

Luc. What would your ladyship? 64
Jul. Is it near dinner-time?
Luc. I would it were;
That you might kill your stomach on your meat
And not upon your maid.
Jul. What is’t that you took up so gingerly?
Luc. Nothing. 59
Jul. Why didst thou stoop, then?
Luc. To take a paper up
That I let fall.
Jul. And is that paper nothing?
Luc. Nothing concerning me. 72
Jul. Then let it lie for those that it concerns.
Luc. Madam, it will not lie where it concerns,
Unless it have a false interpreter.
Jul. Some love of yours hath writ to you
in rime.
THE TWO GENTLEMEN OF VERONA

Act I, Sc. III.

Luc. That I might sing it, madam, to a tune: Give me a note: your ladyship can set.

Jul. As little by such toys as may be possible; Best sing it to the tune of 'Light o' Love.' 80

Luc. It is too heavy for so light a tune.

Jul. Heavy! belike it hath some burden, then? Luc. Ay; and melodious were it, would you sing it.

Jul. And why not you?

Luc. I cannot reach so high. 84

Jul. Let's see your song. [Taking the letter.] How now, minion!

Luc. Keep tune there still, so you will sing it out:
And yet methinks, I do not like this tune.

Jul. You do not?

Luc. No, madam; it is too sharp. 88

Jul. You, minion, are too saucy.

Luc. Nay, now you are too flat
And mar the concord with too harsh a descant:
There wanteth but a mean to fill your song. 92

Jul. The mean is drownd with your unruly bass.

Luc. Indeed, I bid the base for Proteus.

Jul. This babble shall not henceforth trouble me.

Here is a coil with protestation!— 96

[ Tears the letter. Go, get you gone, and let the papers lie:
You would be fingering them, to anger me.

Luc. She makes it strange; but she would be best pleas'd
To be so anger'd with another letter. [Exit.

Jul. Nay, would I were so anger'd with the same!

Look, here is writ 'kind Julia:' unkind Julia!

As in revenge of thy ingratitude,
I throw thy name against the bruising stones,
Trampling contemptuously on thy disdain. 109

And here is writ 'love-wounded Proteus:'
Poor wounded name! my bosom, as a bed
Shall lodge thee till thy wound be thoroughly heal'd;

And thus I search it with a sovereign kiss.

But twice or thrice was 'Proteus' written down:
Be calm, good wind, blow not a word away
Till I have found each letter in the letter, 116

Except mine own name; that some whirlwind bear
Unto a ragged, fearful-hanging rock,

And throw it thence into the raging sea!

Lol here in one line is his name twice writ, 120

'Poor forlorn Proteus, passionate Proteus,'

To the sweet Julia':—that I'll tear away;
And yet I will not, sith so prettily
He couples it to his complaining names: 124
Thus will I fold them one upon another:
Now kiss, embrace, contend, do what you will.

Re-enter Lucetta.

Luc. Madam,

Dinner is ready, and your father stays. 128

Jul. Well, let us go.

Luc. What! shall these papers lie like tell-tales here?

Jul. If you respect them, best to take them up.

Luc. Nay, I was taken up for laying them down; 132

Yet here they shall not lie, for catching cold.

Jul. I see you have a month's mind to them.

Luc. Ay, madam, you may say what sights you see;

I see things too, although you judge I wink. 136

Jul. Come, come; will't please you go?

[Exeunt

SCENE III.—The Same. A Room in Anthony's House.

Enter Anthony and Panthino.

Ant. Tell me, Panthino, what sad talk was that

Wherewith my brother held you in the cloister?

Panth. 'Twas of his nephew Proteus, your son.

Ant. Why, what of him?

Panth. He wonder'd that your lordship 4
Would suffer him to spend his youth at home,
While other men, of slender reputation,
Put forth their sons to seek preferment out:
Some to the wars, to try their fortune there; 8
Some to discover islands far away;
Some to the studious universities.
For any or for all these exercises
He said that Proteus your son was meet, 12
And did request me to importune you
To let him spend his time no more at home,
Which would be great impeachment to his age,
In having known no travel in his youth. 16

Ant. Nor need'st thou much importune me to that

Whereon this month I have been hammering.
I have consider'd well his loss of time,
And how he cannot be a perfect man, 20
Not being tried and tutor'd in the world:
Experience is by industry achiev'd
And perfected by the swift course of time.
Then tell me, whither were I best to send him?

Panth. I think your lordship is not ignorant

How his companion, youthful Valentine, 26

Attends the emperor in his royal court.
Ant. I know it well.  

Pant. 'Twere good, I think, your lordship sent him thither;
There shall he practise tilts and tournaments,
Hear sweet discourse, converse with noblemen,
And be in eye of every exercise
Worthy his youth and nobleness of birth.
Ant. I like thy counsel, well hast thou advis’d:
And that thou mayst perceive how well I like it
The execution of it shall make known.
Even with the speediest expedition
I will dispatch him to the emperor’s court.

Pant. To-morrow, may it please you, Don Alphonso
With other gentlemen of good esteem,
Are journeying to salute the emperor
And to commend their service to his will.
Ant. Good company; with them shall Proteus go:
And in good time:—now will we break with him.

Enter Proteus.

Ant. Look, what thou want’st shall be sent after thee:
No more of stay; to-morrow thou must go.
Come on, Panthino: you shall be employ’d
To hasten on his expedition.

[Exeunt ANTONIO and PANTHINO.

Pro. Thus have I shunn’d the fire for fear of burning,
And drench’d me in the sea, where I am drown’d.
I fear’d to show my father Julia’s letter,
Lest he should take exceptions to my love;
And with the vantage of mine own excuse
Hath he excepted most against my love.
O! how this spring of love resembleth
The uncertain glory of an April day,
Which now shows all the beauty of the sun,
And by and by a cloud takes all away!

Re-enter PANTHINO.

Pant. Sir Proteus, your father calls for you.
He is in haste; therefore, I pray you, go.
Pro. Why, this it is: my heart accords therefor,
And yet a thousand times it answers, ‘no.’
[Exeunt.

ACT II.


Enter VALENTINE and SPEED.

Val. Speed. Sir, your glove. [Offering a glove.
Val. Not mine; my gloves are on.
Speed. Why, then this may be yours, for this
is but one.
Val. Ha! let me see: ay, give it me, it’s mine;
Sweet ornament that decks a thing divine!
Ah Silvia! Silvia!
Speed. [Calling.] Madam Silvia! Madam Silvia!

Val. How now, sirrah?
Speed. She is not within hearing, sir.
Val. Why, sir, who bade you call her?
Speed. Your worship, sir; or else I mistook.
Val. Well, you’ll still be too forward.
Speed. And yet I was last chidden for being too slow.

Val. Go to, sir. Tell me, do you know
Madam Silvia?

Speed. She that your worship loves?
Val. Why, how know you that I am in love?
Speed. Marry, by these special marks: first,
you have learned, like Sir Proteus, to wreathe
your arms, like a malecontent; to relish a love-song, like a robin-redbreast; to walk alone, like
one that had the pestilence; to sigh, like a
schoolboy that had lost his A B C; to weep, like
a young wench that had buried her grandam;
to fast, like one that takes diet; to watch, like
one that fears robbing; to speak puling, like a
beggar at Hallowmas. You were wont, when
you laughed, to crow like a cock; when you
walked, to walk like one of the lions; when you
fasted, it was presently after dinner; when you
looked sadly, it was for want of money: and now
you are metamorphosed with a mistress, that,
when I look on you, I can hardly think you my
master.

Val. Are all these things perceived in me? 36
Speed. They are all perceived without ye.
Val. Without me? they cannot.
Speed. Without you? nay, that's certain;
for, without you were so simple, none else would;
but you are so without these follies, that these
follies are within you and shine through you
like the water in an urinal, that not an eye that
sees you but is a physician to comment on your
malady. 45
Val. But tell me, dost thou know my lady
Silvia?
Speed. She that you gaze on so as she sits at
supper?
Val. Hast thou observed that? even she, I
mean.
Speed. Why, sir, I know her not. 52
Val. Dost thou know her by my gazing on
her, and yet knowest her not?
Speed. Is she not hard-favoured, sir?
Val. Not so fair, boy, as well-favoured. 56
Speed. Sir, I know that well enough.
Val. What dost thou know?
Speed. That she is not so fair, as of you, well-
favoured.
Val. I mean that her beauty is exquisite,
but her favour infinite.
Speed. That's because the one is painted
and the other out of all count. 64
Val. How painted? and how out of count?
Speed. Marry, sir, so painted to make her
fair, that no man counts of her beauty.
Val. How esteemest thou me? I account of
her beauty.
Speed. You never saw her since she was
deformed.
Val. How long hath she been deformed? 72
Speed. Ever since you loved her.
Val. I have loved her ever since I saw her,
and still I see her beautiful.
Speed. If you love her you cannot see her. 76
Val. Why?
Speed. Because Love is blind. O! that you
had mine eyes; or your own eyes had the lights
they were wont to have when you chid at Sir
Proteus for going ungarpered! 81
Val. What should I see then?

Speed. Your own present folly and her pass-
ing deformity: for he, being in love, could not
see to garter his hose; and you, being in love,
cannot see to put on your hose. 86
Val. Belike, boy, then, you are in love; for
last morning you could not see to wipe my
shoes.
Speed. True, sir; I was in love with my
bed. I thank you, you swung me for my love,
which makes me the bolder to chide you for
yours. 93
Val. In conclusion, I stand affected to her.
Speed. I would you were set, so your affec-
tion would cease. 96
Val. Last night she enjoined me to write
some lines to one she loves.
Speed. And have you?
Val. I have. 100
Speed. Are they not lamely writ?
Val. No, boy, but as well as I can do them.
Peace! here she comes.

Enter Silvia.

Speed. [Aside.] O excellent motion! O ex-
ceeding puppet! now will he interpret to her.
Val. Madam and mistress, a thousand good
mornings.
Speed. [Aside.] O! give ye good even: Lere's
a million of manners.
Sil. Sir Valentine and servant, to you two
thousand.
Speed. [Aside.] He should give her interest,
and she gives it him.
Val. As you enjoin'd me, I have writ your
letter
Unto the secret nameless friend of yours;
Which I was much unwilling to proceed in
But for my duty to your ladyship. [Gives a letter.
Sil. I thank you, gentle servant. 'Tis very
clerily done.
Val. Now, trust me, madam, it came hardly
off;
For, being ignorant to whom it goes
I writ at random, very doubtfully.
Sil. Perchance you think too much of so
much pains?
Val. No, madam; so it stead you, I will write,
Please you command, a thousand times as much.
And yet— 128
Sil. A pretty period! Well, I guess the sequel;
And yet I will not name it; and yet I care not;
And yet take this again; and yet I thank you,
Meaning henceforth to trouble you no more. 139
Speed. [Aside.] And yet you will; and yet
another yet.
Val. What means your ladyship? do you
not like it?
Act II, Sc. I.  THE TWO GENTLEMEN OF VERONA

Sil. Yes, yes: the lines are very quaintly writ,
But since unwillingly, take them again:
Nay, take them.  [Gives back the letter.
Val. Madam, they are for you.
Sil. Ay, ay; you writ them, sir, at my request,
But I will none of them; they are for you.  
I would have had them writ more movingly.
Val. Please you, I'll write your ladyship
another.
Sil. And when it's writ, for my sake read it over:
And if it please you, so; if not, why, so.
Val. If it please me, madam, what then?
Sil. Why, if it please you, take it for your labour:
And so, good morrow, servant.  [Exit.
Speed. O jest unseen, inscrutable, invisible,
As a nose on a man's face, or a weathercock on
a steeple!
My master sues to her, and she hath taught her
suitor,
He being her pupil, to become her tutor.
O excellent device! was there ever heard a better,
That my master, being scribe, to himself should
write the letter?
Val. How now, sir! what are you reasoning
with yourself?
Speed. Nay, I was riming: 'tis you that have
the reason.
Val. To do what?
Speed. To be a spokesman from Madam
Silvia.
Val. To whom?
Speed. To yourself. Why, she wooes you by a
figure.
Val. What figure?
Speed. By a letter, I should say.
Val. Why, she hath not writ to me?
Speed. What need she, when she hath made
you write to yourself? Why, do you not perceive
the jest?
Val. No, believe me,
Speed. No believing you, indeed, sir. But did
you perceive her earnest?
Val. She gave me none, except an angry word.
Speed. Why, she hath given you a letter.
Val. That's the letter I writ to her friend.
Speed. And that letter hath she delivered, and
there an end.
Val. I would it were no worse.
Speed. I'll warrant you, 'tis as well:
'For often have you writ to her, and she, in
modesty,
Or else for want of idle time, could not again
reply;
Or fearing else some messenger that might her
mind discover,

Herself hath taught her love himself to write
unto her lover.'  
All this I speak in print, for in print I found it.
Why muse you, sir? 'tis dinner-time.
Val. I have dined.
Speed. Ay, but hearken, sir: though the
chameleon Love can feed on the air, I am one
that am nourished by my viuitals and would
fain have meat! O! be not like your mistress:
be moved, be moved.  [Exeunt.

SCENE II.—Verona. A Room in JULIA'S House.

Enter PROTEUS and JULIA.

Pro. Have patience, gentle Julia.
Jul. I must, where is no remedy.
Pro. When possibly I can, I will return.
Jul. If you turn not, you will return the
sooner.

Keep this remembrance for thy Julia's sake.  
[Give him a ring.

Pro. Why, then, we'll make exchange: here, take you this.  
[Give her another.
Jul. And seal the bargain with a holy kiss.
Pro. Here is my hand for my true constancy;
And when that hour o'erslips me in the day
Wherin I sigh not, Julia, for thy sake,
The next ensuing hour some soul miscanmise
Torment me for my love's forgetfulness!

My father stays my coming; answer not.
The tide is now: nay, not thy tide of tears;
That tide will stay me longer than I should.
Julia, farewell.  [Exit JULIA.

What! gone without a word?  
Ay, so true love should do: it cannot speak;
For truth hath better deeds than words to
grace it.

Enter PANTHINO.

Pant. Sir Proteus, you are stay'd for.
Pro. Go; I some, I come.

Alas! this parting strikes poor lovers dumb.  
[Exeunt.

SCENE III.—The Same. A Street.

Enter LAUNCE, leading a dog.

Launce. Nay, 'twill be this hour ere I have done
weeping: all the kind of the Launces have this
very fault. I have received my proportion, like the
prodigious son, and am going with Sir Proteus
to the imperial's court. I think Crab my dog be
the sourest-natured dog that lives: my mother
weeping, my father wailing, my sister crying, our
maid howling, our cat wringing her hands, and
all our house in a great perplexity, yet did not
this cruel-hearted cur shed one tear. He is a
stone, a very pebble stone, and has no more pity

32
THE TWO GENTLEMEN OF VERONA  Act II, Sc. IV.


Enter Valentine, Silvia, Thurio, and Speed.

Sil. Servant!
Val. Mistress?
Speed. Master, Sir Thurio frowns on you.
Val. Ay, boy, it's for love.
Speed. Not of you.
Val. Of my mistres', then.
Speed. 'Twere good you knock'd him.
Sil. Servant, you are sad.
Val. Indeed, madam, I seem so.
Thu. Seem you that you are not?
Val. Haply I do.
Thu. So do counterfeits.
Val. So do you.
Thu. What seem I that I am not?
Val. Wise.
Thu. What instance of the contrary?
Val. Your folly.
Thu. And how quote you my folly?
Val. I quote it in your jerkin.
Thu. My jerkin is a doublet.
Val. Well, then, I'll double your folly.
Thu. How?
Sil. What, angry, Sir Thurio! do you change colour?
Val. Give him leave, madam; he is a kind of chameleon.
Thu. That hath more mind to feed on your blood than live in your air.
Val. You have said, sir.
Thu. Ay, sir, and done too, for this time.
Val. I know it well, sir: you always end ere you begin.
Sil. A fine volley of words, gentlemen, and quickly shot off.
Val. 'Tis indeed, madam; we thank the giver.
Sil. Who is that, servant?
Val. Yourself, sweet lady; for you gave the fire. Sir Thurio borrows his wit from your ladyship's looks, and spends what he borrows kindly in your company.
Thu. Sir, if you spend word for word with me, I shall make your wit bankrupt.
Val. I know it well, sir: you have an exchequer of words, and, I think, no other treasure to give your followers; for it appears by their bare liveries that they live by your bare words.
Sil. No more, gentlemen, no more. Here comes my father.

Enter Duke.

Duke. Now, daughter Silvia, you are hard beset.
Sir Valentine, your father's in good health:
ACT II, SC. IV.  THE TWO GENTLEMEN OF VERONA

What say you to a letter from your friends Of much good news?
Val. My lord, I will be thankful To any happy messenger from thence.
Duke. Know ye Don Antonio, your countryman?
Val. Ay, my good lord; I know the gentleman To be of worth and worthy estimation, And not without desert so well reputed.
Duke. Hath he not a son?
Val. Ay, my good lord; a son that well deserves The honour and regard of such a father.
Duke. You know him well?
Val. I know him as myself; for from our infancy We have convers'd and spent our hours together: And though myself have been an idle truant, Omitting the sweet benefit of time To clothe mine age with angel-like perfection, Yet hath Sir Proteus,—for that's his name,— Made use and fair advantage of his days: His years but young, but his experience old; His head unmellow'd, but his judgment ripe; And, in a word,—for far behind his worth Come all the praises that I now bestow,— He is complete in feature and in mind With all good grace to grace a gentleman.
Duke. Beshrew me, sir, but if he make this good,
He is as worthy for an empress' love As meet to be an emperor's counsellor. Well, sir, this gentleman is come to me With commendation from great potentates; And here he means to spend his time awhile: I think, 'tis no unwelcome news to you.
Val. Should I have wish'd a thing, it had been he.
Duke. Welcome him then according to his worth.
Silvia, I speak to you; and you, Sir Thurio:—
Val. For Valentine, I need not cite him to it. I'll send him hither to you presently. [Exit Val.
Sed. This is the gentleman I told your ladyshipHad come along with me, but that his mistress Did hold his eyes lock'd in her crystal looks. 'Sil. Belike that now she hath enfranchis'd them Upon some other pawn for fealty.
Val. Nay, sure, I think she holds them prisoners still.
Sil. Nay, then he should be blind; and, being blind,
How could he see his way to seek out you?
Val. Why, lady, Love hath twenty pairs of eyes.
Thu. They say that Love hath not an eye at all.
Val. To see such lovers, Thurio, as yourself: Upon a homely object Love can wink.
Sil. Have done, have done. Here comes the gentleman.

Enter Proteus.
Val. Welcome, dear Proteus! Mistress, I beseech you, Confirm his welcome with some special favour. Sil. His worth is warrant for his welcome hither, If this be he you oft have wish'd to hear from. Val. Mistress, it is: sweet lady, entertain him To be my fellow-servant to your ladyship. Sil. Too low a mistress for so high a servant. Pro. Not so, sweet lady; but too mean a servant To have a look of such a worthy mistress. Val. Leave off discourse of disability: Sweet lady, entertain him for your servant. Pro. My duty will I boast of, nothing else. Sil. And duty never yet did want his need. Servant, you are welcome to a worthless mistress. Pro. I'll die on him that says so but yourself. Sil. That you are welcome?
Pro. That you are worthless.

Enter a Servant.
Ser. Madam, my lord your father would speak with you.
Sil. I wait upon his pleasure. [Exit Servant.]
Come, Sir Thurio,
Go with me. Once more, new servant, welcome: I'll leave you to confer of home-affairs; When you have done, we look to hear from you. Pro. We'll both attend upon your ladyship. [Exeunt Silvia, Thurio, and Speed.
Val. Now, tell me, how do all from whence you came?
Pro. Your friends are well and have them much commended.
Val. And how do yours?
Pro. I left them all in health.
Val. How does your lady and how thrives your love?
Pro. My tales of love were wont to weary you; I know you joy not in a love-discourse.
Val. Ay, Proteus, but that life is alter'd now: I have done penance for contemning love; Whose high imperious thoughts have punish'd me With bitter fasts, with pitiamentious groans, With nightly teares and daily heart-sore sighs; For, in revenge of my contempt of love, Love hath chas'd sleep from my enthralled eyes,

34
And made them watchers of mine own heart's sorrow.

0, gentle Proteus! Love's a mighty lord,
And hath so humbled me as I confess,
There is no woe to his correction,
Nor to his service no such joy on earth.

Now no discourse, except it be of love;
Now can I break my fast, dine, sup and sleep.
Upon the very naked name of love.

Pro. Enough; I read your fortune in your eye.

Was this the idol that you worship so?

Val. Even she; and is she not a heavenly saint?

Pro. No; but she is an earthly paragon.

Val. Call her divine.

Pro. I will not flatter her.

Val. O! flatter me, for love delights in praises.

Pro. When I was sick you gave me bitter pills,
And I must minister the like to you.

Val. Then speak the truth by her; if not divine,
Yet let her be a principality,
Sovereign to all the creatures on the earth.

Pro. Except my mistress.

Val. Sweet, except not any,
Except thou wilt except against my love.

Pro. Have I not reason to prefer mine own?

Val. And I will help thee to prefer her too.

She shall be dignified with this high honour,—
To bear my lady's train, lest the base earth
Should from her vesture chance to steal a kiss,
And, of so great a favour growing proud,
Dusky to root the summer-swelling flower,
And make rough winter everlasting.

Pro. Why, Valentine, what braggardism is this?

Val. Pardon me, Proteus: all I can is nothing
To her whose worth makes other worthies nothing.

She is alone.

Pro. Then, let her alone.

Val. Not for the world: why, man, she is mine own,
And I as rich in having such a jewel
As twenty seas, if all their sand were pearl,
The water nectar, and the rocks pure gold.

Forgive me that I do not dream on thee,
Because thou see'st me dote upon my love.
My foolish rival, that her father likes
Only for his possessions are so huge,

Is gone with her along, and I must after,
For love, thou knowest, is full of jealousy.

Pro. But she loves you?

Val. Ay, and we are betroth'd: nay, more,
Our marriage-hour,

With all the cunning manner of our flight,
Determin'd: how I must climb her window,
The ladder made of cords, and all the means
Plotted and 'greed on for my happiness.

Good Proteus, go with me to my chamber,
In these affairs to aid me with thy counsel.

Pro. Go on before, I shall inquire you forth:
I must unto the road, to disembark
Some necessaries that I needs must use,
And then I'll presently attend you.

Val. Will you make haste?

Pro. I will.

[Exit Valentine.

Even as one heat another heat expels,
Or as one nail by strength drives out another,
So the remembrance of my former love
Is by a newer object quite forgotten.

Is it mine eye, or Valentine's praise,
Her true perfection, or my false transgression,
That makes me reasonless to reason thus?
She's fair; and so is Julia that I love,—

That I did love, for now my love is thaw'd,
Which, like a waxen image 'gainst a fire,
Bears no impression of the thing it was.

Methinks my zeal to Valentine is cold,
And that I love him not as I was wont:
O! but I love his lady too-too much;
And that's the reason I love him so little.

How shall I dote on her with more advice,
That thus without advice begin to love her?
'Tis but her picture I have yet beheld,
And that hath dazzled my reason's light;
But when I look on her perfections,
There is no reason but I shall be blind.

If I can check my erring love, I will;
If not, to compass her I'll use my skill. [Exit.

SCENE V.—The Same. A Street.

Enter Speed and Launce.

Speed. Launce! by mine honesty, welcome to Milan!

Launce. Forswear not thyself, sweet youth, for I am not welcome. I reckon this always that a man is never undone till he be hanged; nor never welcome to a place till some certain shot be paid and the hostess say, 'Welcome!' 7

Speed. Come on, you madcap, I'll to the alehouse with you presently; where, for one shot of five pence, thou shalt have five thousand welcomes. But, sirrah, how did thy master part with Madam Julia?

Launce. Marry, after they closed in earnest, they parted very fairly in jest.

Speed. But shall she marry him?

Launce. No.

Speed. How then? Shall he marry her?

Launce. No, neither.

Speed. What, are they broken?

Launce. No, they are both as whole as a fish.
THE TWO GENTLEMEN OF VERONA

ACT II, SC. V.

Speed. Why then, how stands the matter with them?
Launce. Marry, thus; when it stands well with him, it stands well with her.

Speed. What an ass art thou! I understand thee not.
Launce. What a block art thou, that thou canst not! My staff understands me.

Speed. What thou sayest?
Launce. Ay, and what I do too: look thee, I'll but lean, and my staff understands me.

Speed. It stands under thee, indeed.
Launce. Why, stand-under and stand-under is all one.

Speed. But tell me true, will't be a match?
Launce. Ask my dog: if he say ay, it will; if he say no, it will; if he shake his tail and say nothing, it will.

Speed. The conclusion is, then, that it will.
Launce. Thou shalt never get such a secret from me but by a parable.

Speed. 'Tis well that I get it so. But, Launce, how sayest thou, that my master be become a notable lover?

Launce. I never knew him otherwise.

Speed. Than how?
Launce. A notable lubber, as thou reportest him to be.

Speed. Why, thou whoreson ass, thou mistakest me.

Launce. Why, fool, I meant not thee; I meant thy master.

Speed. I tell thee, my master is become a hot lover.

Launce. Why, I tell thee, I care not though he burn himself in love. If thou wilt go with me to the alehouse so; if not, thou art a Hebrew, a Jew, and not worth the name of a Christian.

Speed. Why?

Launce. Because thou hast not so much charity in thee as to go to the ale with a Christian. Wilt thou go?

Speed. At thy service.

[Exeunt.

SCENE VI.—THE SAME. A Room in the Duke’s Palace.

Enter Proteus.

Pro. To leave my Julia, shall I be forsworn; To love fair Silvia, shall I be forsworn; To wrong my friend, I shall be much forsworn; And even that power which gave me first my oath Provokes me to this threefold perjury: Love bade me swear, and Love bids me forswear.

O sweet-suggesting Lovel if thou hast sinn’d, Teach me, thy tempted subject, to excuse it. At first I did adore a twinkling star, But now I worship a celestial sun. Unheedful vows may heedfully be broken; And he who waits that wants resolved will To learn his wit to exchange the bad for better. Pie, tie, unrevenerate tongue! call her bad, Whose sovereignty so oft thou hast preferr’d With twenty thousand soul-confirming oaths. I cannot leave to love, and yet I do; But there I leave to love where I should love. Julia I lose and Valentine I lose: If I keep them, I needs must lose myself; If I lose them, thus find I by their loss, For Valentine, myself; for Julia, Silvia. I to myself am dearer than a friend, For love is still most precious in itself; And Silvia—witness heaven that made her fair!—

Shows Julia but a swarthy Ethiop. I will forget that Julia is alive, Remembering that my love to her is dead; And Valentine I’ll hold an enemy, Aiming at Silvia as a sweeter friend. I cannot now prove constant to myself Without some treachery us’d to Valentine: This night he meaneth with a corded ladder To climb celestial Silvia’s chamber-window, Myself in counsel, his competitor. Now presently, I’ll give her father notice Of their disguising and pretended flight; Who, all enrag’d, will banish Valentine; For Thurio, he intends, shall wed his daughter; But, Valentine being gone, I’ll quickly cross, By some sly trick blunt Thurio’s dull proceeding. Love, lend me wings to make my purpose swift, As thou hast lent me wit to plot this drift!

[Exit.

SCENE VII.—Verona. A Room in Julia’s House

Enter Julia and Lucetta.

Jul. Counsell, Lucetta; gentle girl, assist me: And e’en in kind love do conjure thee, Who art the table wherein all my thoughts Are visibly character’d and engrav’d, To lesson me and tell me some good mean How, with my honour, I may undertake A journey to my loving Proteus.

Luc. Alas! the way is wearisome and long. Jul. A true-devoted pilgrim is not weary To measure kingdoms with his feeble steps; Much less shall she that hath Love’s wings to fly, And when the flight is made to one so dear, Of such divine perfection, as Sir Proteus.
Luc. Better forbear till Proteus make return.
Jul. O! know'st thou not his looks are my soul's food?
Pity the dearth that I have pined in,
By longing for that food so long a time.
Didst thou but know the iny touch of love,
Thou wouldst as soon go kindle fire with snow
As seek to quench the fire of love with words.
Luc. I do not seek to quench your love's hot fire,
But qualify the fire's extreme rage,
Lest it should burn above the bounds of reason.
Jul. The more thou damm'st it up, the more it burns.
The current that with gentle murmur glides,
Thou know'st, being stopp'd, impatiently doth rage;
But when his fair course is not hindered,
He makes sweet music with th' enamell'd stones,
Giving a gentle kiss to every sedge.
He overthoroketh in his pilgrimage;
And so by many winding nooks he strays
With willing sport, to the wild ocean.
Then let me go and hinder not my course:
I'll be as patient as a gentle stream
And make a pastime of each weary step,
Till the last step have brought me to my love;
And there I'll rest, as after much turmoil
A blessed soul doth in Elysium.
Luc. But in what habit will you go along?
Jul. Not like a woman; for I would prevent
The loose encounters of lascivious men.
Gentle Lucetta, fit me with such weeds
As may beseech some well-reputed page.
Luc. Why, then, your ladyship must cut your hair.
Jul. No girl; I'll knit it up in silken strings
With twenty odd-conceited true-love knots:
To be fantastic may become a youth
Of greater time than I shall show to be.
Luc. What fashion, madam, shall I make your breeches?
Jul. That fits as well as 'Tell me, good my lord,
What compass will you wear your farthingale?'
Why, even what fashion thou best lik'st, Lucetta.
Luc. You must needs have them with a cod-piece, madam.
Jul. Out, out, Lucetta! that will be ill-favour'd.
Luc. A round hose, madam, now's not worth a pin,
Unless you have a cod-piece to stick pins on.
Jul. Lucetta, as thou lovest me, let me have
What thou think'st meet and is most mannerly.
But tell me, wench, how will the world repute me
For undertaking so unstaied a journey?
I fear me, it will make me scandaliz'd.

Luc. If you think so, then stay at home and go not.
Jul. Nay, that I will not.
Luc. Then never dream on infamy, but go.
If Proteus like your journey when you come,
No matter who's displease'd when you are gone.
I fear me, he will scarce be pleas'd withal.
Jul. That is the least, Lucetta, of my fear.
A thousand oaths, an ocean of his tears,
And instances of infinite of love
Warrant me welcome to my Proteus.
Luc. All these are servants to deceitful men.
Jul. Base men, that use them to so base effect;
But truer stars did govern Proteus' birth:
His words are bonds, his oaths are oracles,
His love sincere, his thoughts immaculate.
His tears pure messengers sent from his heart,
His heart as far from fraud as heaven from earth.
Luc. Pray heaven he prove so when you come to him!
Jul. Now, as thou lovest me, do him not that wrong
To bear a hard opinion of his truth:
Only deserve my love by loving him,
And presently go with me to my chamber,
To take a note of what I stand in need of.
To furnish me upon my longings journey.
All that is mine I leave at thy dispose,
My goods, my lands, my reputation;
Only, in lieu thereof, dispatch me hence.
Come, answer not, but to it presently!
I am impatient of my tardiance.

[Exeunt.

ACT III.


Enter Duke, Thurio, and Proteus.

Duke. Sir Thurio, give us leave, I pray, awhile;
We have some secrets to confer about.

[Exit Thurio.

Now tell me, Proteus, what's your will with me?
Pro. My gracious lord, that which I would discover
The law of friendship bids me to conceal;
But when I call to mind your gracious favours
Done to me, undeserving as I am,
My duty pricks me on to utter that
Which else no worldly good should draw from me.
Know, worthy prince, Sir Valentine, my friend,
This night intends to steal away your daughter:
Myself am one made privy to the plot.
I know you have determin'd to bestow her
On Thurio, whom your gentle daughter hates;
And should she thus be stol'n away from you
It would be much vexation to your age.
Thus, for my duty’s sake, I rather chose
To cross my friend in his intended drift,
Than, by concealing it, heap on your head
A pack of sorrows which would press you down,
Being unprepared, to your timeless grave.

Duke. Proteus, I thank thee for thine honest care,
Which to requite, command me while I live.
This love of theirs myself have often seen,
Haply, when they have judg’d me fast asleep,
And oftentimes have purpos’d to forbid
Sir Valentine her company and my court;
But fearing lest my jealous aim might err
And so unworthily disgrace the man,—
A rashness that I ever yet have shunn’d,—
I gave him gentle looks, thereby to find
That which itself hast now disclos’d to me.
And, that thou mayst perceive my fear of this,
Knowing that tender youth is soon suggested,
I nightly lodge her in an upper tower,
The key whereof myself have ever kept;
And thence she cannot be convey’d away.

Pro. Know, noble lord, they have devis’d a mean
How her chamber-window will ascend
And with a cored ladder fetch her down;
For which the youthful lover now is gone
And this way comes he with it presently;
Where, if it please you, you may intercept him.

But, good my lord, do it so cunningly
That my discovery be not aimed at;
For love of you, not hate unto my friend,
Hath made me publisher of this prudence.

Duke. Upon mine honour, he shall never know
That I had any light from thee of this.

Pro. Adieu, my lord: Sir Valentine is coming.

Enter Valentine.

Duke. Sir Valentine, whither away so fast?
Val. Please it your Grace, there is a messenger
That stays to bear my letters to my friends,
And I am going to deliver them.

Duke. Be they of much import?
Val. The tenour of them doth but signify
My health and happy being at your court.

Duke. Nay then, no matter: stay with me awhile;
I am to break with thee of some affairs
That touch me near, wherein thou must be secret.

‘Tis not unknown to thee that I have sought
To match my friend Sir Thurio to my daughter.

Val. I know it well, my lord; and sure, the match
Were rich and honourable; besides, the gentleman
Is full of virtue, bounty, worth, and qualities
Beseeing such a wife as your fair daughter.
Cannot your Grace win her to fancy him?

Duke. No, trust me: she is peevish, sullen, froward,
Proud, disobedient, stubborn, lacking duty;
Neither regarding that she is my child,
Nor fearing me as if I were her father:
And, may I say to thee this pride of hers,
Upon advice, hath drawn my love from her;
And, where I thought the remnant of mine age
Should have been cherished by her child-like duty,
I now am full resolv’d to take a wife
And turn her out to who will take her in:
Then let her beauty be her wedding-dower;
For me and my possessions she esteems not.

Val. What would your Grace have me to do in this?

Duke. There is a lady of Verona here,
Whom I affect; but she is nics and coy
And nought esteem my aged eloquence:
Now therefore, would I have thee to my tutor,
For long ago I have forgot to court;
Besides, the fashion of the time is chang’d,
How and which way I may bestow myself
To be regarded in her sun-bright eye.

Val. Win her with gifts, if she respect not words:
Dumb jewels often in their silent kind
More than quick words do move a woman’s mind.

Duke. But she did scorn a present that I sent her.

Val. A woman sometime scorrs what best contents her.

Send her another; never give her o’er,
For scorn at first makes after-love the more.
If she do frown, ’tis not in hate of you,
But rather to beget more love in you;
If she do chide, ’tis not to have you gone;
For why the fools are mad if left alone.
Take no repulse, whatever she doth say;
For, ‘get you gone,’ she doth not mean, ‘away!’
Flatter and praise, commend, extol their graces;
Though ne’er so black, say they have angels’ faces.

That man that hath a tongue, I say, is no man,
If with his tongue he cannot win a woman.

Duke. But she I mean is promis’d by her friends
Unto a youthful gentleman of worth,
And kept severely from resort of men, 168
That no man hath access by day to her.
  Val. Why then, I would resort to her by night.
  Duke. Ay, but the doors be lock'd and keys kept safe,
That no man hath recourse to her by night. 112
  Val. What lets but one may enter at her window?
  Duke. Her chamber is aloft, far from the ground,
And built so shelving that one cannot climb it
Without apparent hazard of his life. 116
  Val. Why then, a ladder quainly made of cords,
To cast up, with a pair of anchoring hooks,
Would serve to scale another Hero's tower,
So bold Leander would adventure it. 120
  Duke. Now, as thou art a gentleman of blood,
Advise me where I may have such a ladder.
  Val. When would you use it? pray, sir, tell me that.
  Duke. This very night; for Love is like a child, 124
That longs for everything that he can come by.
  Val. By seven o'clock I'll get you such a ladder.
  Duke. But hark thee; I will go to her alone:
How shall I best convey the ladder thither? 128
  Val. It will be light, my lord, that you may bear it
Under a cloak that is of any length.
  Duke. A cloak as long as thine will serve the turn?
  Val. Ay, my good lord.
  Duke. Then let me see thy cloak: 132
I'll get me one of such another length.
  Val. Why, any cloak will serve the turn, my lord.
  Duke. How shall I fashion me to wear a cloak?
  Val. Pray thee, let me feel thy cloak upon me. 136
  [Pulls open Valentine's cloak.
What letter is this same? What's here?—To Silvia!
And here an engine fit for my proceeding!
I'll be so bold to break the seal for once.

My thoughts do harbour with my Silvia nightly: 140
And slaves they are to me that send them flying.
0! could their master come and go as lightly,
Himself would lodge where senseless they are flying!
My herald thoughts in thy pure bosom rest them;
While I, their king, that stibher them importune,
Do curse the grace that with such grace hath bless'd them,
Because myself do want my servants' fortune:
I curse myself, for they are sent by me, 148
That they should harbour where their lord would be.

What's here?
  Silvia, this night I will enfranchise thee
'Tis so; and here's the ladder for the purpose.
Why, Phaethon,—for thou art Merops' son,—
Wilt thou aspire to guide the heavenly car
And with thy dazzling folly burn the world?
Wilt thou reach stars, because they shine on thee?

Go, base intruder! overweening slave!
Bestow thy fawning smiles on equal mates,
And think my patience, more than thy desert,
Is privilege for thy departure hence. 160
Thank me for this more than for all the favours
Which all too much I have bestow'd on thee.
But is thou linger in my territories
Longer than swiftest expedition 164
Will give thee time to leave our royal court,
By heaven! my wrath shall far exceed the love
I ever bore my daughter or thyself.
Be gone! I will not hear thy vain excuse; 168
But, as thou lov'st thy life, make speed from hence.

  Val. And why not death rather than living torment?
To die is to be banish'd from myself;
And Silvia is myself: banish'd from her
Is self from self,—a deadly banishment!
What light is light, if Silvia be not seen?
What joy is joy, if Silvia be not by?
Unless it be to think that she is by
And feed upon the shadow of perfection.
Except I be by Silvia in the night,
There is no music in the nightingale;
Unless I look on Silvia in the day,
There is no day for me to look upon.
She is my essence; and I leave to be,
If I be not by her fair influence
Foster'd, illumin'd, cherish'd, kept alive. 184
I fly not death, to fly his deadly doom:
Tarry I here, I but attend on death;
But, fly I hence, I fly away from life.

Enter Proteus and Launce.

  Pro. Run, boy; run, run, and seek him out.
  Launce. Soho! sohol
  Pro. What seeest thou?
  Launce. Him we go to find: there's not a
hair on's head but 'tis a Valentine.
  Pro. Valentine?
  Val. No.
  Pro. Who then? his spirit?
  Val. Neither.
  Pro. What then?
  Val. Nothing.
  Launce. Can nothing speak? Master, shall I strike?
  Pro. Who would'st thou strike?
Launce. Nothing.
Pro. Villain, forbear.
Launce. Why, sir, I'll strike nothing: I pray you,—
Pro. Sirrah, I say, forbear.—Friend Valentine, a word.
Val. My ears are stopp'd and cannot hear good news,
So much of bad already hath possess'd them.
Pro. Then in dumb silence will I bury mine,
For they are harsh, untuneable and bad.
Val. Is Silvia dead?
Pro. No, Valentine.
Val. No Valentine, indeed, for sacred Silvia!
Hath she forsworn me?
Pro. No, Valentine.
Val. No Valentine, if Silvia have forsworn me!
What is your news?
Launce. Sir, there is a proclamation that you are vanished.
Pro. That thou art banished, O, that's the news,
From hence, from Silvia, and from my thy friend.
Val. O, I have fed upon this wo already,
And now excess of it will make me surfeit.
Doth Silvia know that I am banished?
Pro. Ay, ay; and she hath offer'd to the doom—
Which, unrev'rs'd, stands in effectual force—
A sea of melting pearle, which some call tears:
Those at her father's churlish feet she tender'd;
With them, upon her knees, her humble self;
Wringing her hands, whose whiteness so became them
As if but now they waxed pale for woe:
But neither bended knees, pure hands held up,
Sad sighs, deep groans, nor silver-shedding tears,
Could penetrate her uncompassionate sire;
But Valentine, if he be ta'en, must die.
Besides, her intercession chaf'd him so,
When she for thy repeal was suppliant;
That to close prison he commanded her,
With many bitter threats of biding there.
Val. No more; unless the next word that thou speak'st
Have some malignant power upon my life:
If so, I pray thee, breathe it in mine ear,
As ending anthem of my endless dole.
Pro. Cease to lament for that thou canst not help,
And study help for that which thou lament'st.
Time is the nurse and breeder of all good.
Here if thou stay, thou canst not see thy love;
Besides, thy staying will abridge thy life.
Hope is a lover's staff; walk hence with that
And manage it against despairing thoughts.
Thy letters may be here, though thou art hence;
Which, being writ to me, shall be deliver'd
Even in the milk-white bosom of thy love.
The time now serves not to expostulate:
Come, I'll convey thee through the city-gate,
And, ere I part with thee, confer at large
Of all that may concern thy love-affairs.
As thou lov'st Silvia, though not for thyself,
Regard thy danger, and along with me!
Val. I pray thee, Launce, and if thou seest my boy,
Bid him make haste and meet me at the North-gate.
Val. O my dear Silvia! hapless Valentine!
[Exit Valentine and Proteus.
Launce. I am but a fool, look you; and yet I have the wit to think my master is a kind of a knave: but that's all one, if he be but one knave. He lives not now that knows me to be in love: yet I am in love; but a team of horse shall not pluck that from me, nor who 'tis I love; and yet 'tis a woman; but what woman, I will not tell myself; and yet 'tis a milkmaid; yet 'tis not a maid, for she hath had gossips; yet 'tis a maid, for she is her master's maid, and serves for wages. She hath more qualities than a water-spaniel,—which is much in a bare Christian. [Pulling out a paper.] Here is the catalog of her condition. Imprimis, She can fetch and carry. Why, a horse can do no more: nay, a horse cannot fetch, but only carry; therefore, is she better than a jade. Item, She can milk; look you, a sweet virtue in a maid with clean hands.

Enter Speed.

Speed. How now, Signior Launce! what news with your mastership?
Launce. With my master's ship? why, it is at sea.
Speed. Well, your old vice still; mistake the word. What news, then, in your paper?
Launce. The blackest news that ever thou hearest.
Speed. Why, man, how black?
Launce. Why, as black as ink.
Speed. Let me read them.
Launce. Fie on thee, jolthead! thou canst not read.
Speed. Thou liest; I can.
Launce. I will try thee. Tell me this: who begot thee?
Speed. Marry, the son of my grandfather.
Launce. O, illiterate loiterer! it was the son of thy grandmother. This proves that thou canst not read.
THE TWO GENTLEMEN OF VERONA  ACT III, Sc. II.

Speed. Come, fool, come: try me in thy paper.
    Launce. There; and Saint Nicholas be thy speed! 304
    Speed. Imprimis, She can milk.
    Launce. Ay, that she can.
    Speed. Item, She brews good ale.
    Launce. And thereof comes the proverb, 'Blessing of your heart, you brew good ale.' 309
    Speed. Item, She can sew.
    Launce. That's as much as to say, Can she so?
    Speed. Item, She can knit.
    Launce. What need a man care for a stock with a wench, when she can knit him a stock? 312
    Speed. Item, She can wash and scour.
    Launce. A special virtue; for then she need not be washed and scoured.
    Speed. Item, She can spin.
    Launce. Then may I set the world on wheels, when she can spin for her living.
    Speed. Item, She hath many nameless virtues.
    Launce. That's as much as to say, bastard virtues; that, indeed, know not their fathers, and therefore have no names.
    Speed. Here follow her vices.
    Launce. Close at the heels of her virtues. 328
    Speed. Item, She is not to be kissed fasting, in respect of her breath.
    Launce. Well, that fault may be mended with a breakfast. Read on.
    Speed. Item, She hath a sweet mouth.
    Launce. That makes amends for her sour breath.
    Speed. Item, She doth talk in her sleep.
    Launce. It's no matter for that, so she sleep not in her talk.
    Speed. Item, She is slow in words.
    Launce. O villain, that set this down among her vices! To be slow in words is a woman's only virtue: I pray thee, out with 't, and place it for her chief virtue.
    Speed. Item, She is proud.
    Launce. Out with that too: it was Eve's legacy, and cannot be ta'en from her.
    Speed. Item, She hath no teeth.
    Launce. I care not for that neither, because I love crusts.
    Speed. Item, She is curt.
    Launce. Well; the best is, she hath no teeth to bite.
    Speed. Item, She will often praise her liquor.
    Launce. If her liquor be good, she shall: if she will not, I will; for good things should be praised.
    Speed. Item, She is too liberal.

Launce. Of her tongue she cannot, for that's writ down she is slow of: of her purse she shall not, for that I'll keep shut: now, of another thing she may, and that cannot I help. Well, proceed.

    Speed. Item, She hath more hair than wit, and more faults than hairs, and more wealth than faults.
    Launce. Stop there; I'll have her: she was mine, and not mine, twice or thrice in that last article. Rehearse that once more.
    Speed. Item, She hath more hair than wit.—
    Launce. More hair than wit it may be; I'll prove it: the cover of the salt hides the salt, and therefore it is more than the salt; the hair, that covers the wit is more than the wit, for the greater hides the less. What's next?
    Speed. And more faults than hairs.—
    Launce. That's monstrous! O, that that were out!
    Speed. And more wealth than faults.
    Launce. Why, that word makes the faults gracious. Well, I'll have her; and if it be a match, as nothing is impossible,—
    Speed. What then?
    Launce. Why, then will I tell thee,—that thy master stays for thee at the North-gate.
    Speed. For me?
    Launce. For thee! ay; who art thou? he hath stayed for a better man than thee.
    Speed. And must I go to him?
    Launce. Thou must run to him, for thou hast stayed so long that going will scarce serve the turn.
    Speed. Why didst not tell me sooner? pox of your love-letters! [Exit.
    Launce. Now will he be swing'd for reading my letter. An unmannishly slave, that will thrust himself into secrets. I'll alter, to rejoice in the boy's correction. [Exit.

SCENE II.—The Same. A Room in the Duke's Palace.

    Enter DUKE and THURIO.

Duke. Sir Thurio, fear not but that she will love you.
    Now Valentine is banish'd from her sight.
    Thu. Since his exile she hath despis'd me most;
    Forsworn my company and rail'd at me, 4
    That I am desperate of obtaining her.
    Duke. This weak impress of love is as a figure
    Trenched in ice, which with an hour's heat
    Dissolves to water and doth lose his form. 8
A little time will melt her frozen thoughts,
And worthless Valentine shall be forgot.

Enter Proteus.

How now, Sir Proteus! Is your countryman
According to our proclamation gone?

Pro. Gone, my good lord.

Duke. My daughter takes his going grievously.

Pro. A little time, my lord, will kill that grief.

Duke. So I believe; but Thurio thinks not so.

Proteus, the good conceit I hold of thee,—
For thou hast shown some sign of good desert,—
Makes me the better to confer with thee.

Pro. Longer than I prove loyal to your Grace
Let me not live to look upon your Grace. 21

Duke. Thou know’st how willingly I would effect
The match between Sir Thurio and my daughter.

Pro. I do, my lord.

Duke. And also, I think, thou art not ignorant
How she opposes her against my will.

Pro. She did, my lord, when Valentine was here.

Duke. Ay, and perversely she perseveres so. 28
What might we do to make the girl forget
The love of Valentine, and love Sir Thurio?

Pro. The best way is to slander Valentine
With falsehood, cowardice, and poor descent,
Three things that women highly hold in hate.

Duke. Ay, but she’ll think that it is spoken in hate.

Pro. Ay, if his enemy deliver it:
Therefore it must with circumstance be spoken
By one whom she esteemeth as his friend. 37

Duke. Then you must undertake to slander him.

Pro. And that, my lord, I shall be loath to do: ‘Tis an ill office for a gentleman, 40
Especially against his very friend.

Duke. Where your good word cannot advantage him,
Your slander never can endanger him:
Therefore the office is indifferent,
Being entreated to it by your friend.

Pro. You have prevail’d, my lord. If I can do it,
By aught that I can speak in his dispraise,
She shall not long continue love to him. 48
But say this weed her love from Valentine,
It follows not that she will love Sir Thurio.

Thur. Therefore, as you unwind her love from him,
Lest it should ravel and be good to none,
You must provide to bottom it on me;
Which must be done by praising me as much
As you in worth dispraise Sir Valentine.

Duke. And, Proteus, we dare trust you in this kind,
Because we know, on Valentine’s report,
You are already Love’s firm votary
And cannot soon revolt and change your mind.
Upon this warrant shall you have access
Where you with Silvia may confer at large;
For she is lumpish, heavy, melancholy,
And, for your friend’s sake, will be glad of you;
Where you may temper her, by your persuasion
To hate young Valentine and love my friend. 65

Pro. As much as I can do I will effect.
But you, Sir Thurio, are not sharp enough;
You must lay time to tangle her desires
By waffilful sonnets, whose composed rimes
Should be full fraught with serviceable vows.

Duke. Ay,
Much is the force of heaven-bred poesy. 72

Pro. Say that upon the altar of her beauty
You sacrifice your tears, your sighs, your heart.
Write till your ink be dry, and with your tears
Moist it again, and frame some feeling line
That may discover such integrity:
For Orpheus’ lute was estrung with poets’ sinews,
Whose golden touch could soften steel and stones,
Make tigers tame and huge leviathans 80
Forsake unsounded deeps to dance on sands.
After your dire-lamenting elegies,
Visit by night your lady’s chamber-window
With some sweet consort: to their instruments
Tune a deploring dump; the night’s dead silence
Will well become such sweet-complaining grievance.

This, or else nothing, will inherit her.

Duke. This discipline shows thou hast been in love.

Thur. And thy advice this night I’ll put in practice.

Therefore, sweet Proteus, my direction-giver,
Let us into the city presently
To sort some gentlemen well skil’d in music.
I have a sonnet that will serve the turn
To give the onset to thy good advice.

Duke. About it, gentlemen!

Pro. We’ll wait upon your grace till after-supper,
And afterward determine our proceedings.

Duke. Even now about it! I will pardon you.

[Exeunt.

ACT IV.

SCENE I.—A Forest between Milan and Verona.

Enter certain Outlaws.

First Out. Fellows, stand fast; I see a passenger.

Sec. Out. If there be ten, shrink not, but down with ’em.
Enter Valentine and Speed.  

Third Out. Stand, sir, and throw us that you have about ye;  
If not, we'll make you sit and rifle you.  
Speed. Sir, we are undone: these are the villains  
That all the travellers do fear so much.  
Val. My friends,—  
First Out. That's not so, sir; we are your enemies.  
Sec. Out. Peace! we'll hear him.  
Third Out. Ay, by my beard, will we, for he is a proper man.  
Val. Then know, that I have little wealth to lose.  

A man I am cross'd with adversity:  
My riches are these poor habiliments,  
Of which if you should here disturbish me,  
You take the sum and substance that I have.  
Sec. Out. Whither travel you?  
Val. To Verona.  
First Out. Whence came you?  
Val. From Milan.  
Third Out. Have you long sojourn'd there?  
Val. Some sixteen months; and longer might have stay'd  
If crooked fortune had not thwarted me.  
Sec. Out. What! were you banish'd thence?  
Val. I was.  
Sec. Out. For what offence?  
Val. For that which now torments me to rehearse.  
I kill'd a man, whose death I much repent;  
But yet I slew him manfully, in fight,  
Without false vantage or base treachery.  
First Out. Why, ne'er repent it, if it were done so.  
But were you banish'd for so small a fault?  
Val. I was, and held me glad of such a doom.  
Sec. Out. Have you the tongues?  
Val. My youthful travel therein made me happy,  
Or else I often had been miserable.  
Third Out. By the bare scalp of Robin Hood's fat fruur,  
This fellow were a king for our wild faction!  
First Out. We'll have him: Sirs, a word.  
Speed. Master, be one of them;  
It is an honourable kind of thievishness.  
Val. Peace, villain!  
Sec. Out. Tell us this: have you anything to take to?  
Val. Nothing, but my fortune.  
Third Out. Know then, that some of us are gentlemen,  
Such as the fury of ungovern'd youth  
Thrust from the company of awful men:  
Myself was from Verona banished  
For practising to steal away a lady,  
An heir, and near allied unto the duke.  
Sec. Out. And I from Mantua, for a gentleman,  
Who, in my mood, I stabb'd unto the heart.  
First Out. And I for such like petty crimes  
As these.  
But to the purpose; for we cite our faults,  
That they may hold excuse'd our lawless lives;  
And, partly, seeing you are beautified  
With goodly shape, and by your own report  
A linguist, and a man of such perfection  
As we do in our quality much want——  
Sec. Out. Indeed, because you are a banish'd man,  
Therefore, above the rest, we parley to you.  
Are you content to be our general?  
To make a virtue of necessity  
And live, as we do, in this wilderness?  
Third Out. What say'st thou? wilt thou be of our consort?  
Say 'ay,' and be the captain of us all:  
We'll do thee homage and be rul'd by thee,  
Love thee as our commander and our king.  
First Out. But if thou scorn our courtesy,  
Thou diest.  
Sec. Out. Thou shalt not live to brag what we have offer'd.  
Val. I take your offer and will live with you,  
Provided that you do no outrages  
On silly women, or poor passengers.  
Third Out. No; we detest such vile, base practices.  
Come, go with us; we'll bring thee to our crews,  
And show thee all the treasure we have got,  
Which, with ourselves, all rest at thy dispose.  

[Exeunt.  


Enter Proteus.  

Pro. Already have I been false to Valentine,  
And now I must be as unjust to Thurio.  
Under the colour of commending him,  
I have access my own love to prefer:  
But Silvia is too fair, too true, too holy,  
To be corrupted with my worthless gifts.  
When I protest true loyalty to her,  
She twits me with my falsehood to my friend;  
When to her beauty I commend my vows,  
She bids me think how I have been forsworn  
In breaking faith with Julia whom I lov'd:  
And notwithstanding all her sudden quips,  
The least whereof would quell a lover's hope,  
Yet, spaniel-like, the more she spurns my love,  
The more it grows, and fawneth on her still.
But here comes Thurio: now must we to her window, 16
And give some evening music to her ear.

Enter Thurio, and Musicians.

Thu. How now, Sir Proteus! are you crept before us? 20
Pro. Ay, gentle Thurio; for you know that love
Will creep in service where it cannot go.

Thu. Ay; but I hope, sir, that you love not here.
Pro. Sir, but I do; or else I would be hence.

Thu. Who? Silvia?
Pro. Ay, Silvia, for your sake.

Thu. I thank you for your own. Now, gentlemen,
Let's tune, and to it lustily a while.

Enter Host and Julia behind. Julia in boy's clothes.

Host. Now, my young guest, methinks you're allysholly: I pray you, why is it? 28
Jul. Marry, mine host, because I cannot be merry.

Host. Come, we'll have you merry. I'll bring you where you shall hear music and see the gentleman that you asked for.

Jul. But shall I hear him speak?

Host. Ay, that you shall.
Jul. That will be music. 33

[Music plays.

Host. Hark! hark!

Jul. Is he among these?

Host. Ay; but peace! let's hear 'em.

SONG.

Who is Silvia? what is she?
That all our swelling come and her?
Holy, fair, and wise is she;
The heaven such grace did lend her,
That she might admired be.

Is she kind as she is fair?
For beauty lives with kindness:
Love doth to her eyes repair,
To help him of his blindness;
And, being help'd, inhabit there.

Then to Silvia let us sing;
That Silvia is excellent;
She excels each mortal thing;
Upon the dull earth dwelling;
To her let us garlands bring.

Host. How now! are you sadder than you were before? How do you, man? the music likes you not.

Jul. You mistake; the musician likes me not.
Host. Why, my pretty youth?
Jul. He plays false, father.

Host. How? out of tune on the strings?
Jul. Not so; but yet so false that he grieves my very heart-strings.

Host. You have a quick ear.

Jul. Ay; I would I were deaf; it makes me have a slow heart.
Host. I perceive you delight not in music.

Jul. Not a whit,—when it jars so.

Host. Hark! what fine change is in the music! 68
Jul. Ay, that change is the spite.
Host. You would have them always play but one thing?

Jul. I would always have one play but one thing.

But, host, doth this Sir Proteus that we talk on Often resort unto this gentlewoman?
Host. I will tell you what Launce, his man, told me: he lov'd her out of all nick.

Jul. Where is Launce?
Host. Gone to seek his dog; which, to-morrow, by his master's command, he must carry for a present to his lady.


Pro. Sir Thurio, fear not you: I will so plead That you shall say my cunning drift excels.

Thu. Where meet we?

Pro. At Saint Gregory's well.

Thu. Farewell.

[Exeunt Thurio and Musicians.

Enter Silvia above, at her window.

Pro. Madam, good even to your ladyship. 88
Sil. I thank you for your music, gentlemen.

Who is that that spake?

Pro. One, lady, if you knew his pure heart's truth,
You would quickly learn to know him by his voice.

Sil. Sir Proteus, as I take it.

Pro. Sir Proteus, gentle lady, and your servant.

Sil. What is your will?

Pro. That I may compass yours.

Sil. You have your wish; my will is even this:
That presently you lie you home to bed.
Thou subtle, perjur'd, false, disloyal man!
Thinkst thou I am so shallow, so conceitless,
To be seduced by thy flattery.

That hast deceiv'd so many with thy vows?
Return, return, and make thy love amends.
For me, by this pale queen of night I swear,
I am so far from granting thy request
That I despise thee for thy wrongful suit,
And by and by intend to chide myself
Even for this time I spend in talking to thee.

Pro. I grant, sweet love, that I did love a lady; But she is dead.

Jul. [Aside.] Twere false, if I should speak it;
For I am sure she is not buried.

Sil. Say that she be; yet Valentine thy friend Survive: to whom, thyself art witness.
I am betroth'd: and art thou not ashamed
to wrong him with thy importunity?
  Pro. I likewise hear that Valentine is dead.
  Sil. And so suppose am I; for in his grave,
  Assurance myself my love is buried.
  Pro. Sweet lady, let me take it from the earth.
  Sil. Go to thy lady's grave and call her thence;
  Or, at the least, in hers sepulchre thine.
  Jul. [Aside.] He heard not that.
  Pro. Madam, if your heart be so obdurate,
  Vouchsafe me yet your picture for my love,
The picture that is hanging in your chamber:
  To that I'll speak, to that I'll sigh and weep;
  For since the substance of your perfect self
  Is else devoted, I am but a shadow,
  And to your shadow will I make true love.
  Jul. [Aside.] If 'twere a substance, you would,
sure, deceive it,
  And make it but a shadow, as I am.
  Sil. I am very loath to be your idol, sir;
  But, since your falsehood shall become you well
To worship shadows and adore false shapes, 133
  Send to me in the morning and I'll send it.
  And so, good rest.
  Pro. As wretches have o'er night
  That wait for execution in the morn.
  [Exeunt Proteus, and Silvia, above.
  Jul. Host, will you go?
  Host. By my halidom, I was fast asleep.
  Jul. Pray you, where lies Sir Proteus?
  Host. Marry, at my house. Trust me, I think
  'tis almost day.
  Jul. Not so; but it hath been the longest
  night
  That e'er I watch'd and the most heaviest.
  [Exeunt.] Scene III.—The Same.

  Enter Eglamour.

  Egl. This is the hour that Madam Silvia
Entreated me to call, and know her mind:
There's some great matter she'd employ me in.
  Madam, Madam!
  Enter Silvia above, at her window.
  Sil. Who calls?
  Egl. Your servant, and your friend;
One that attends your ladyship's command.
  Sil. Sir Eglamour, a thousand times good
  morrow.
  Egl. As many, worthy lady, to yourself.
According to your ladyship's impose,
I am thus early come to know what service
It is your pleasure to command me in.
  Sil. O Eglamour, thou art a gentleman—
  Think not I flatter, for I swear I do not—
  Valiant, wise, remorseful, well-accomplish'd.
  Thou art not ignorant what dear good will
  I bear unto the banish'd Valentine,
  Nor how my father would enforce me marry
  Vain Thurio, whom my very soul abhors.
  Thyself hast lov'd; and I have heard thee say
  No grief did ever come so near thy heart
  As when thy lady and thy true love died,
  Upon whose grave thou vow'dst pure chastity.
  Sir Eglamour, I would to Valentine,
To Mantua, where, I hear he makes abode;
  And, for the ways are dangerous to pass,
  I do desire thy worthy company,
Upon whose faith and honour I repose.
  Urge not my father's anger, Eglamour,
  But think upon my grief, a lady's grief,
  And on the justice of my flying hence,
  To keep me from a most unholy match,
Which heaven and fortune still rewards with plagues.
  I do desire thee, even from a heart
  As full of sorrows as the sea of sands,
  To bear me company and go with me:
  If not, to hide what I have said to thee,
  That I may venture to depart alone.
  Egl. Madam, I pity much your grievances;
  Which since I know they virtuously are plac'd,
  I give consent to go along with you,
  Recking as little what betideth me
  As much I wish all good beforsome you.
  When will you go?
  Sil. This evening coming.
  Egl. Where shall I meet you?
  Sil. At Friar Patrick's cell,
  Where I intend holy confession.
  Egl. I will not fail your ladyship.
  Good morrow, gentle lady.
  Sil. Good morrow, kind Sir Eglamour.
  [Exeunt severally.]

Scene IV.—The Same.

  Enter Launce with his dog.

  Launce. When a man's servant shall play the cur with him, look you, it goes hard; one that
  I brought up of a puppy; one that I saved from drowning, when three or four of his blind
  brothers and sisters went to it. I have taught him, even as one would say precisely, 'Thus would I
  teach a dog.' I was sent to deliver him as a present to Mistress Silvia from my master, and
  I came no sooner into the dining-chamber but he steps me to her trencher and steals her
  capon's leg! O! 'tis a foul thing when a cur cannot keep himself in all companies. I would
  have, as one should say, one that takes upon him to be a dog indeed, to be, as it were, a dog
  at all things. If I had not had more wit than he, to take a fault upon me that he did, I think
  verily he had been hanged for't: sure as I live,
he had suffered for’t: you shall judge. He thrusts me himself into the company of three or four gentleman-like dogs under the duke's table: he had not been there—bless the mark—a pissing-while, but all the chamber smelt him. 'Out with the dog!' says one; 'What cur is that?' says another; 'Whip him out,' says the third; 'Hang him up,' says the duke. I, having been acquainted with the smell before, knew it was Crab, and goes me to the fellow that whips the dogs: 'Friend,' quoth I, 'you mean to whip the dog?' 'Ay, marry, do I,' quoth he. 'You do him the more wrong,' quoth I; 'twas I did the thing you wot of.' He makes me no more ado, but whips me out of the chamber. How many masters would do this for his servant? Nay, I'll be sworn, I have sat in the stocks for puddings he hath stolen, otherwise he had been executed; I have stood on the pillory for geese he hath killed, otherwise he had suffered for’t; thou thinkest not of this now. Nay, I remember the trick you served me when I took my leave of Madam Silvia: did not I bid thee still mark me and do as I do? When didst thou see me heave up my leg and make water against a gentlewoman's farthingale? Didst thou ever see me do such a trick?

Enter Proteus, and Julia in boy's clothes.

Pro. Sebastian is thy name? I like thee well And will employ thee in some service presently.

Jul. In what you please: I will do what I can.

Pro. I hope thou wilt. [To Launce.] How now, you whoreson peasant!

Where have you been these two days loitering?

Launce. Marry, sir, I carried Mistress Silvia the dog you bade me.

Pro. And what says she to my little jewel?

Launce. Marry, she says, your dog was a cur, and tells you, currish thanks is good enough for such a present.

Pro. But she received my dog?

Launce No, indeed, did she not: here have I brought him back again.

Pro. What! didst thou offer her this from me?

Launce. Ay, sir: the other squirrel was stolen from me by the hangman boys in the marketplace; and then I offered her mine own, who is a dog as big as ten of yours, and therefore the gift the greater.

Pro. Go, get thee hence, and find my dog again,

Or ne'er return again into my sight.

Away, I say! Stay'st thou to vex me here?

A slave that still an end turns me to shame.

[Exit Launce.

Sebastian, I have entertained thee

Partly, that I have need of such a youth,

That can with some discretion do my business,

For't is no trusting to yond foolish lout;

But chiefly for thy face and thy behaviour,

Which, if my augury deceive me not,

Witness good bringing up, fortune, and truth:

Therefore, know thou, for this I entertain thee.

Go presently, and take this ring with thee. 77

Deliver it to Madam Silvia:

She lov'd me well deliver'd it to me.

Jul. It seems, you lov'd not her, to leave her token.

She's dead, belike?

Pro. Not so: I think, she lives.

Jul. Alas!

Pro. Why dost thou cry 'alas'?

Jul. I cannot choose

But pity her.

Pro. Wherefore should'st thou pity her?

Jul. Because methinks that she lov'd you as well

As you do love your lady Silvia.

She dreams on him that has forgot her love;

You dote on her, that cares not for your love.

'Tis pity, love should be so contrary;

And thinking on it makes me cry, 'alas'!

Pro. Well, well, give her that ring and there-

This letter: that's her chamber. Tell my lady

I claim the promise for her heavenly picture.

Your message done, die home unto my chamber,

Where thou shalt find me sad and solitary. [Exit.

Jul. How many women would do such a message?

Alas, poor Proteus! thou hast entertain'd

A fox to be the shepherd of thy lambs.

Alas, poor fool! why do I pity him?

That with his very heart despiseth me?

Because he loves her, he despiseth me;

Because I love him, I must pity him.

This ring I gave him when he parted from me,

To bind him to remember my good will;

And now am I—unhappy messenger—

To plead for that which I would not obtain,

To carry that which I would have refus'd,

To praise his faith which I would have disprais'd.

I am my master's true-confirmed love,

But cannot be true servant to my master,

Unless I prove false traitor to myself.

Yet will I woo for him; but yet so coldly

As heaven it knows, I would not have him speed.

Enter Silvia, attended.

Gentlewoman, good day! I pray you, be my mean

To bring me where to speak with Madam Silvia.

Sil. What would you with her, if that I be she?
THE TWO GENTLEMEN OF VERONA  

ACT V, Sc. 1.

Jul. If you be she, I do entreat your patience.  
To hear me speak the message I am sent on.  
S1t. From whom? 120

Jul. From my master, Sir Proteus, madam.  
S1t. 0! he sends you for a picture?  

Jul. Ay, madam.  
S1t. Ursula, bring my picture there. 124

[A picture brought.

Go, give your master this: tell him from me,  
One Julia, that his changing thoughts forget,  
Would better fit his chamber than this shadow.  

Jul. Madam, please you peruse this letter.—  
Pardon me, madam, I have unadvis’d 129  
Deliver’d you a paper that I should not:  
This is the letter to your ladyship.  

S1t. I pray thee, let me look on that again.  
Jul. It may not be: good madam, pardon me.  
S1t. There, hold.  

I will not look upon your master’s lines:  
I know, they are stuff’d with protestations 136  
And full of new-found oaths, which he will break  
As easily as I do tear his paper.  

Jul. Madam, he sends your ladyship this ring.  
S1t. The more shame for him that he sends it me; 140  
For, I have heard him say a thousand times,  
His Julia gave it him at his departure.  

Though his false finger have profan’d the ring,  
Mine shall not do his Julia so much wrong. 144  
Jul. She thanks you.  
S1t. What say’st thou?  

Jul. I thank you, madam, that you tender her.  
Poor gentlewoman! my master wrongs her much. 148  
S1t. Dost thou know her?  
Jul. Almost as well as I do know myself:  
To think upon her woes, I do protest  
That I have wept a hundred several times. 152  
S1t. Belike, she thinks, that Proteus hath for-  

sought her.  
Jul. I think she doth, and that’s her cause  
of sorrow.  
S1t. Is she not passing fair? 155  
Jul. She hath been fairer, madam, than she is.  
When she did think my master lov’d her well,  
She, in my judgment, was as fair as you;  
But since she did neglect her looking-glass  
And threw her sun-expelling mask away, 160  
The air hath starv’d the roses in her cheeks  
And pinch’d the lily-tincture of her face,  
That now she is become as black as I.  

S1t. How tall was she? 164  
Jul. About my stature; for, at Pentecost,  
When all our pageants of delight were play’d,  
Our youth got me to play the woman’s part,  
And I was trimm’d in Madam Julia’s gown, 168

Which served me as fit, by all men’s judgments,  
As if the garment had been made for me:  
Therefore I know she is about my height.  
And at that time I made her weep agood; 172  
For I did play a lamentable part.  
Madam, ’twas Arisande passioning  
For Theseus’ perjury and unjust flight;  
Which I so lively acted with my tears 176  
That my poor mistress, moved therewithal,  
Wep’t bitterly, and would I might be dead  
If I in thought felt not her very sorrow!  
S1t. She is beholding to thee, gentle youth.—  
Alas, poor lady, desolate and left! 181  
I weep myself to think upon thy words.  
Here, youth, there is my purse: I give thee this  
For thy sweet mistress’ sake, because thou lov’st  
her. 184  
Farewell.

Jul. And she shall thank you for’t, if e’er you  
know her.—[Exit S1V1A, with Attendants.  
A virtuous gentlewoman, mild and beautiful.  
I hope my master’s suit will be but cold, 188  
Since she respects my mistress’ love so much.  
Alas, how love can trifle with itself!  
Here is her picture: let me see; I think,  
If I had such a tire, this face of mine 192  
Were full as lovely as is this of hers;  
And yet the painter flatter’d her a little,  
Unless I flatter with myself too much.  
Her hair is auburn, mine is perfect yellow: 196  
If that be all the difference in his love  
I’ll get me such a colour’d periwig.  
Her eyes are grey as glass, and so are mine:  
Ay, but her forehead’s low, and mine’s as high.  
What should it be that he respects in her 201  
But I can make respective in myself,  
If this fond Love were not a blinded god?  
Come, shadow, come, and take this shadow up,  
For ’tis thy rival. O thou senseless form! 205  
Thou shalt be worshipp’d, kiss’d, lov’d, and  
ador’d,  
And, were there sense in his idolatry,  
My substance should be statue in thy stead. 208  
I’ll use thee kindly for thy mistress’ sake,  
That us’d me so; or else, by Jove I vow,  
I should have scratch’d out your unseeing eyes,  
To make my master out of love with thee. [Exit.

ACT V.


Enter Eglamour.

Egl. The sun begins to gild the western sky,  
And now it is about the very hour  
That Silvia at Friar Patrick’s cell should meet  
me.
Enter DUKE.

Duke. How now, Sir Proteus! how now, Thurio!

Which of you saw Sir Eglamour of late? 32
Thu. Not I.
Pro. Nor I.
Duke. Saw you my daughter? 34
Pro. Neither.

Duke Why then, she's fled unto that peasant Valentine, And Eglamour is in her company. 36
'Tis true; for Fair Laurence met them both, As he in pence walk'd through the forest; Him he knew well, and guess'd that it was she, But, being mask'd, he was not sure of it; 40
Besides, she did intend confession
At Patrick's cell this even, and there she was not. These likelihoods confirm her flight from hence. Therefore, I pray you, stand not to discourse, 44
But mount you presently and meet with me
Upon the rising of the mountain-foot,
That leads towards Mantua, whither they are fled. Dispatch, sweet gentlemen, and follow me. [Exit.

Thu. Why, this it is to be a peevish girl, That flies her fortune when it follows her. 50
I'll after, more to be reveng'd on Eglamour Than for the love of reckless Silvia. [Exit.

Pro. And I will follow, more for Silvia's love Than hate of Eglamour that goes with her. [Exit.

Jul. And I will follow, more to cross that love Than hate for Silvia that is gone for love. [Exit.

SCENE III.—Frontiers of Mantua. The Forest.

Enter Outlaws with SILVIA.

First Out. Come, come,
Be patient; we must bring you to our captain.
Sil. A thousand more mischances than this one
Have learn'd me how to brook this patiently. 4
Second Out. Come, bring her away.
First Out. Where is the gentleman that was with her?
Third Out. Being nimble-footed, he hath outrun us;
But Moyzes and Valerius follow him. 8
Go thou with her to the west end of the wood; There is our captain. We'll follow him that's fled:
The thicket is beset; he cannot 'scape. 24

[Exeunt all except the First Outlaw and SILVIA.

First Out. Come, I must bring you to our captain's cave. 12
Fear not; he bears an honourable mind,
And will not use a woman lawlessly.
Sil. O Valentine! this I endure for thee. [Exeunt.
SCENE IV.—Another Part of the Forest.

Enter Valentine.

Val. How use doth breed a habit in man! This shadowy desert, unrequited woods, I better brook than flourishing peopled towns. Here can I sit alone, unseen of any, And to the nightingale’s harmonious notes Tune my distresses and record my woes. O thou that dost inhabit in my breast, Leave not the mansion so long tenantless, Lest, growing ruinous, the building fall And leave no memory of what it was! Repair me with thy presence, Silvia! Thou gentle nymph, cherish thy forlorn swain! [Noise within.

What halloing and what stir is this to-day? These are my mates, that make their wills their law, Have some unhappy passenger in chase. They love me well; yet I have much to do To keep them from unceasing outrages. Withdraw thee, Valentine: who’s this comes here? [Steps aside.

Enter Proteus, Silvia, and Julia.

Pro. Madam, this service I have done for you— Though you respect not aught your servant doth— To hazard life and rescue you from him That would have forc’d your honour and your love. Vouchsafe me, for my meed, but one fair look; A smaller boon than this I cannot beg, And less than this, I am sure, you cannot give.

Val. [Aside.] How like a dream is this I see and hear! Love, lend me patience to forbear awhile.

Sil. O, miserable, unhappy that I am! Unhappy were you, madam, ere I came; But by my coming I have made you happy.

Sil. By thy approach thou mak’st me most unhappy.

Jul. [Aside.] And me, when he approacheth to your presence.

Sil. Had I been seized by a hungry lion, I would have been a breakfast to the beast, Rather than have false Proteus rescue me. O! heaven be judge how I love Valentine, Whose life’s as tender to me as my soul, And full as much—for more thare cannot be—I do detest false perjur’d Proteus. Therefore be gone, solicit me no more.

Pro. What dangerous action, stood it next to death, Would I not undergo for one calm look!

O, ’tis the curse in love, and still approv’d, When women cannot love where they’re belov’d! When Proteus cannot love where he’s belov’d. Read over Julia’s heart, thy first best love, For whose dear sake thou didst then rend thy faith Into a thousand oaths; and all those oaths Descended into perjury to love me. Thou hast no faith left now, unless thou ’dst two, And that’s far worse than none: better have none Than plural faith which is too much by one. Thou counterfeit to thy true friend!

Pro. In love Who respects friend?

Sil. All men but Proteus.

Pro. Nay, if the gentle spirit of moving words Can no way change you to a milder form, I’ll woo you like a soldier, at arms’ end, And love you ’gainst the nature of love,— force ye.

Sil. O heaven!

Pro. I’ll force thee yield to my desire.

Val. [Coming forward.] Russian, let go that rude uncivil touch;

Thou friend of an ill fashion!

Pro. Valentine!

Val. Thou common friend, that’s without faith or love— For such is a friend now—treach’rous man! Thou hast beguil’d my hopes: naught but mine eye Could have persuaded me. Now I dare not say I have one friend alive: thou wouldst disprove me.

Who should be trusted now, when one’s right hand Is perjur’d to the bosom? Proteus, I am sorry I must never trust thee more, But count the world a stranger for thy sake. The private wound is deep;’tis time most curst!

'Mongst all foes that a friend should be the worst!

Pro. My shame and guilt confound me.

Forgive me, Valentine. If hearty sorrow Be a sufficient ransom for offence, I tender’t here: I do as truly suffer As e’er I did commit.

Val. Then, I am paid; And once again I do receive thee honest. Who by repentance is not satisfied Is nor of heaven, nor earth; for these are pleas’d. By penitence the Eternal’s wrath’s appeas’d: And, that my love may appear plain and free, All that was mine in Silvia I give thee.
Act V, Sc. IV.  THE TWO GENTLEMEN OF VERONA

Jul. O me unhappy!  [Swoons.
Pro. Look to the boy.  85
Val. Why, boy! why, wag! how now! what's the matter?

Look up; speak.
Jul. O good sir, my master charg'd me 88
To deliver a ring to Madam Silvia,
Which out of my neglect was never done.
Pro. Where is that ring, boy?
Jul. Here 'tis: this is it. [Gives a ring.
Pro. How! let me see.  92
Why this is the ring I gave to Julia.
Jul. O, cry you mercy, sir; I have mistook:
This is the ring you sent to Silvia.
[Shows another ring.
Pro. But how camest thou by this ring?  96
At my depart I gave this unto Julia.
Jul. And Julia herself did give it me;
And Julia herself hath brought it hither.
Pro. How! Julia!  100
Jul. Behold her that gave aim to all thy oaths,
And entertain'd them deeply in her heart:
How oft hast thou with perjury cleft the root!
O Proteus! let this habit make thee blush.  104
Be thou asham'd that I have took upon me
Such an immodest raiment; if shame live
In a disguise of love.
It is the lesser blot, modesty finds,  108
Women to change their shapes than men their minds.
Pro. Than men their minds! 'tis true. O heaven! were man
But constant, he were perfect: that one error
Fills him with faults; makes him run through
all the sins:
Inconstancy falls off ere it begins.
What is in Silvia's face, but I may spy
More fresh in Julia's with a constant eye?
Val. Come, come, a hand from either.  116
Let me be blest to make this happy close:
'Twere pity two such friends should be long foes.
Pro. Bear witness, heaven, I have my wish
for ever.
Jul. And I mine.

Enter Outlaws with DUKE and THURIO.
Out. A prize! a prize! a prize!
Val. Forbear, forbear, I say; it is my lord
the duke.
Your Grace is welcome to a man disgrac'd,
Banished Valentine.
Duke. Sir Valentine!  124
Thu. Yonder is Silvia; and Silvia's mine.
Val. Thurio, give back, or else embrace thy death;

Come not within the measure of my wrath;
Do not name Silvia thine; if once again,
Verona shall not hold thee. Here she stands;
Take but possession of her with a touch;
I dare thee but to breathe upon my love.
    Thu. Sir Valentine, I care not for her, I.  132
I hold him but a fool that will endanger
His body for a girl that loves him not:
I claim her not, and therefore she is thine.  135
Duke. The more degenerate and base art thou,
To make such means for her as thou hast done,
And leave her on such slight conditions.
Now, by the honour of my ancestry,
I do applaud thy spirit, Valentine,  140
And think thee worthy of an empress' love.
Know then, I here forget all former griefs,
Cancel all grudge, repeal thee home again,
Plead a new state in thy unrival'd merit;
To which I thus subscribe: Sir Valentine,
Thou art a gentleman and well deriv'd;
Take thou thy Silvia, for thou hast deserv'd her.
Val. I thank your Grace; the gift hath made
me happy.  148
I now beseech you, for your daughter's sake,
To grant one boon that I shall ask of you.
Duke. I grant it, for thine own, what'er
it be.
Val. These banish'd men, that I have kept
withal  152
Are men endu'd with worthy qualities:
Forgive them what they have committed here,
And let them be recall'd from their exile.
They are reformed, civil, full of good,
And fit for great employment, worthy lord.
Duke. Thou hast prevail'd; I pardon them,
and thee:
Dispose of them as thou know'st their deserts.
Come, let us go: we will include all jars  160
With triumphs, mirth, and rare solemnity.
Val. And as we walk along, I dare be bold
With our discourse to make your Grace to smile.
What think you of this page, my lord?  164
Duke. I think the boy hath grace in him: he
blushes.
Val. I warrant you, my lord, more grace
than boy.
Duke. What mean you by that saying?
Val. Please you, I'll tell you as we pass along,
That you will wonder what hath fortune.
    169
Come, Proteus; 'tis your penance, but to hear.
The story of your loves discovered:
That done, our day of marriage shall be
yours;
One feast, one house, one mutual happiness.  173
    [Exeunt.

50
THE MERRY WIVES OF WINDSOR

DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

SIR JOHN FALSTAFF.
FENTON, a young Gentleman.
SHALLOW, a Country Justice.
SLENDER, Cousin to Shallow.
FORD, &c., two Gentlemen dwelling at Windsor.
PAGE, &c., William Page, a Boy, Son to Page.
SIR HUGH EVANS, a Welsh Parson.
DOCTOR CAIUS, a French Physician.
HOST of the Garter Inn.
BARDOLPH, PISTOL, NYM, Followers of Falstaff.

ROBIN, Page to Falstaff.
SIMPLE, Servant to Slender.
RUGBY, Servant to Doctor Caius.
MISTRESS FORD.
MISTRESS PAGE.
ANNE PAGE, her Daughter, in love with Fenton.
MISTRESS QUICKLY, Servant to Doctor Caius.

Servants to Page, Ford, &c.

SCENE.—Windsor; and the Neighbourhood.

ACT I.


Enter JUSTICE SHALLOW, SLENDER, and SIR HUGH EVANS.

Shal. Sir Hugh, persuade me not; I will make a Star-chamber matter of it; if he were twenty Sir John Falstaffs he shall not abuse Robert Shallow, esquire.

Slen. In the county of Gloster, justice of peace, and coram.

Shal. Ay, cousin Slender, and cust-alorum.

Slen. Ay, and rate-olorum too; and a gentleman born, Master Parson; who writes himself armigero, in any bill, warrant, quittance, or obligation,—armigero.

Shal. Ay, that I do; and have done any time these three hundred years.

Slen. All his successors gone before him hath done't; and all his ancestors that come after him may: they may give the dozen white luces in their coat.

Shal. It is an old coat.

Eva. The dozen white louses do become an old coat well; it agrees well, passant; it is a familiar beast to man, and signifies love.

Shal. The luse is the fresh fish; the salt fish is an old coat.

Slen. I may quarter, coz?

Shal. You may, by marrying.

Eva. It is marrying indeed, if he quarter it.

Shal. Not a whit.

Eva. Yes, py'r lady; if he has a quarter of your coat, there is but three skirts for yourself, in my simple conjectures: but that is all one.

If Sir John Falstaff have committed disparagements unto you, I am of the Church, and will be glad to do my benevolence to make atonements and compromises between you.

Shal. The Council shall hear it; it is a riot.

Eva. It is not meet the Council hear a riot; there is no fear of Got in a riot. The Council, look you, shall desire to hear the fear of Got, and not to hear a riot; take your vizaments in that.

Shal. Hal o' my life, if I were young again, the sword should end it.

Eva. It is petter that friends is the sword, and end it; and there is also another device in my prain, which, peradventure, prongs goat discretion with it. There is Anne Page, which is daughter to Master Thomas Page, which is pretty virginity.

Slen. Mistress Anne Page? She has brown hair, and speaks small like a woman.

Eva. It is that very person for all the orld, as just as you will desire; and seven hundred pound of money, and gold and silver, is her grandsire, upon his death's-bed,—Got deliver to a joyful resurrections!—give, when she is able to overtake seventeen years old. It were a goat motion if we leave our pribbles and prabbles, and desire a marriage between Master Abraham and Mistress Anne Page.

Shal. Did her grandsire leave her seven hundred pound?

Eva. Ay, and her father is make her a petter penny.

Shal. I know the young gentlewoman; she has good gifts.

Eva. Seven hundred pounds and possibilities is goat gifts.
Fal. I will answer it straight: I have done all this. That is now answered. 120
Shal. The Council shall know this.
Fal. 'Twere better for you if it were known in counsel: you'll be laughed at.
Eva. Pauca verba, Sir John; good worts. 124
Fal. Good worts! good cabbage. Slender, I broke your head: what matter have you against me?
Slen. Marry, sir, I have matter in my head against you; and against your cony-catching rascals, Bardolph, Nym, and Pistol. They carried me to the tavern, and made me drunk, and afterwards picked my pocket.
Bard. You Banbury cheese!
Slen. Ay, it is no matter.
Pist. How now, Mephistophilus!
Slen. Ay, it is no matter. 136
Nym. Slice, I say! pauca, pauca; slice! that's my humour.
Slen. Where's Simple, my man? can you tell, cousin?
Eva. Peace, I pray you. Now let us understand: there is three umbries in this matter, as I understand: that is—Master Page, Idelici; Master Page; and there is myself, Idelici, myself; and the third party is, lastly and finally, mine host of the Garter.
Page. We three, to hear it and end it between them.
Eva. Fery goot: I will make a prief of it in my note-book; and we will afterwards ork upon the cause with as great discreetly as we can.
Fal. Pistol!
Pist. He hears with ears.
Eva. The tevil and his tam! what phrase is this, 'He hears with ear'? Why, it is affectations.
Fal. Pistol, did you pick Master Slender's purse?
Slen. Ay, by these gloves, did he,—or I would I might never come in mine own great chamber again else,—of seven groats in mill-sixpences, and two Edward shovell-boards, that cost me two shilling and two pence a-piece of Yead Miller, by these gloves.
Fal. Is this true, Pistol?
Eva. No; it is false, if it is a pick-purse.
Pist. Ha, thou mountain foreigner!—Sir John and master mine,
I combat challenge of this latter bilbo.
Word of denial in thy labras here! 158
Word of denial: froth and scum, thou liest.
Slen. By these gloves, then, 'twas he.
Nym. Be aised, sir, and pass good humours. I will say, 'marry trap,' with you, if you run the nuthook's humour on me: that is the very note of it.

Enter Sir John Falstaff, Bardolph, Nym, and Pistol.

Fal. Now, Master Shallow, you'll complain of me to the king?
Shal. Knight, you have beaten my men, killed my deer, and broke open my lodge. 116
Fal. But not kissed your keeper's daughter?
Shal. Tut, a pity! this shall be answered.
Sten. By this hat, then, he in the red face had it; for though I cannot remember what I did when you made me drunk, yet I am not altogether an ass.

Fal. What say you, Scarlet and John?

Bard. Why, sir, for my part, I say, the gentleman had drunk himself out of his five sentences.

Eva. It is his 'five senses;' fie, what the ignorance is!

Bard. And being fap, sir, was, as they say, cashier'd; and so conclusions pass'd the careires.

Sten. Ay, you speak in Latin then too; but 'tis no matter. I'll ne'er be drunk whilst I live again, but in honest, civil, godly company, for this trick: if I be drunk, I'll be drunk with those that have the fear of God, and not with drunken knaves.

Eva. So God judge me, that is a virtuous mind.

Fal. You hear all these matters denied, gentlemen; you hear it.

Enter Anne Page, with Wine; Mistress Ford and Mistress Page.

Page. Nay, daughter, carry the wine in; we'll drink within.

[Exit Anne Page.

Sten. O heaven! this is Mistress Anne Page.

Page. How now, Mistress Ford!

Fal. Mistress Ford, by my troth, you are very well met: by your leave, good mistress.

[Kissing her.

Page. Wife, bid these gentlemen welcome. Come, we have a hot venison pasty to dinner: come, gentlemen, I hope we shall drink down all unkindness.

[Execut all but Shallow, Slender, and Evans.

Sten. I had rather than forty shillings I had my Book of Songs and Sonnets here.

Enter Simple.

How now, Simple! Where have you been? I must wait on myself, must I? You have not the Book of Riddles about you, have you?

Sim. Book of Riddles! why, did you not lend it to Alice Shortcake upon All-Hallowmas last, a fortnight afore Michaelmas?

Shal. Come, coz; come, coz; we stay for you. A word with you, coz; marry, this, coz: there is, as 'twere a tender, a kind of tender, made afar off by Sir Hugh here: do you understand me?

Sten. Ay, sir, you shall find me reasonable: if it be so, I shall do that which is reason.

Shal. Nay, but understand me.

Sten. So do I, sir.

Eva. Give ear to his motions, Master Slender: I will description the matter to you, if you please capacity of it.

Sten. Nay, I will do as my cousin Shallow says. I pray you pardon me; he's a justice of peace in his country, simple though I stand here.

Eva. But that is not the question; the question is concerning your marriage.

Shal. Ay, there's the point, sir.

Eva. Marry, is it, the very point of it; to Mistress Anne Page.

Sten. Why, if it be so, I will marry her upon any reasonable demands.

Eva. But can you affection the 'oman? Let us command to know that of your mouth or of your lips; for divers philosophers hold that the lips is parcel of the mouth: therefore, precisely, can you carry your good will to the maid?

Shal. Cousin Abraham Slender, can you love her?

Sten. I hope, sir, I will do as it shall become one that would do reason.

Eva. Nay, Got's lords and his ladies! you must speak possible, if you can carry her your desires towards her.

Shal. That you must. Will you, upon good dowry, marry her?

Sten. I will do a greater thing than that, upon your request, cousin, in any reason.

Shal. Nay, conceave me, conceave me, sweet coz: what I do, is to pleasure you, coz. Can you love the maid?

Sten. I will marry her, sir, at your request; but if there be no great love in the beginning, yet heaven may decrease it upon better acquaintance, when we are married and have more occasion to know one another: I hope, upon familiarity will grow more contempt: but if you say, 'Marry her,' I will marry her; that I am freely dissolved, and dissolutely.

Eva. It is a very discretion answer; save, the fault is in the ort 'dissolutely': the ort is, according to our meaning, 'resolutely.' His meaning is goot.

Shal. Ay, I think my cousin meant well.

Sten. Ay, or else I would I might be hanged, la!

Shal. Here comes fair Mistress Anne.

Re-enter Anne Page.

Would I were young for your sake, Mistress Anne.

Anne. The dinner is on the table; my father desires your worship's company.

Shal. I will wait on him, fair Mistress Anne.

Eva. Od's plessed will! I will not be absence at the grace.

[Execut Shallow and Evans.
Anne. Will't please your worship to come in, sir?
Slen. No, I thank you, forsooth, heartily; I am very well.
Anne. The dinner attends you, sir.
Slen. I am not a-hungry, I thank you forsooth. Go, sirrah, for all you are my man, go wait upon my cousin Shallow. [Exit SIMPLE.] A justice of peace sometime may be beholding to his friend for a man. I keep but three men and a boy yet, till my mother be dead; but what though? yet I live like a poor gentleman born.
Anne. I may not go in without your worship: they will not sit till you come.
Slen. I' faith, I'll eat nothing; I thank you as much as though I did.
Anne. I pray you, sir, walk in.
Slen. I had rather walk here, I thank you. I bruised my shin th' other day with playing at sword and dagger with a master of fence; three veneyes for a dish of stewed prunes;—and, by my troth, I cannot abide the smell of hot meat since. Why do your dogs bark so? be there bears i' the town?
Anne. I think there are, sir; I heard them talked of.
Slen. I love the sport well; but I shall as soon quarrel at it as any man in England. You are afraid, if you see the bear loose, are you not?
Anne. Ay, indeed, sir.
Slen. That's meat and drink to me, now: I have seen Sackerson loose twenty times, and have taken him by the chain; but, I warrant you, the women have so cried and shrieked at it, that it passed: but women, indeed, cannot abide 'em; they are very ill-favoured rough things.

Re-enter PAGE.

Page. Come, gentle Master Slender, come; we stay for you.
Slen. I'll eat nothing, I thank you, sir.
Page. By cock and pie, you shall not choose, sir! come, come.
Slen. Nay, pray you, lead the way.
Page. Come on, sir.
Slen. Mistress Anne, yourself shall go first.
Anne. Not I, sir; pray you, keep on.
Slen. Truly, I will not go first: truly, la! I will not do you that wrong.
Anne. I pray you, sir.
Slen. I'll rather be unmannerly than troublesome. You do yourself wrong, indeed, la!

Scene III.—A Room in the Garter Inn.
Enter Falstaff, Host, Bardolph, Nym, Pistol, and Robin.

Fal. Mine host of the Garter!
Host. What says my bully-rook? Speak scholarly and wisely.
Fal. Truly, mine host, I must turn away some of my followers.
Host. Discard, bully Hercules; cashier: let them wag; trot, trot.
Fal. I sit at ten pounds a week.
Host. Thou'rt an emperor, Caesar, Keiser, and Pheezar. I will entertain Bardolph; he shall draw, he shall tap: said I well, bully Hector?
Fal. Do so, good mine host.
Host. I have spoke; let him follow. [To BARD.] Let me see thee froth and lime: I am at a word; follow.

Fal. Bardolph, follow him. A tapster is a good trade: an old cloak makes a new jerkin; a withered serving-man, a fresh tapster. Go; adieu.

Bard. It is a life that I have desired. I will thrive.

Pist. O base Hungarian wight! wilt thou the spigot wield? [Exit BARD.

Nym. He was gotten in drink; is not the humour conceived?

Fal. I am glad I am so acquit of this tinder-box; his thefts were too open; his filching was like an unskilful singer; he kept not time.

Nym. The good humour is to steal at a minium's rest.

Pist. 'Convey,' the wise it call. 'Steal!' foh! a fico for the phrase!

Fal. Well, sirs, I am almost out at heels.
Pist. Why, then, let kibes ensue.
Fal. There is no remedy; I must cony-catch, I must shift.
THE MERRY WIVES OF WINDSOR

Act I, Sc. IV.

Fal. Which of you know Ford of this town?

Pist. I ken the wight: he is of substance good.

Fal. My honest lads, I will tell you what I am about.

Pist. Two yards, and more.

Fal. No quips now, Pistol! Indeed, I am in the waist two yards about; but I am now about no waste; I am about thrift. Briefly, I do mean to make love to Ford’s wife: I spy entertainment in her; she discourses, she carves, she gives the leer of invitation: I can construe the action of her familiar style; and the hardest voice of her behaviour, to be Englished rightly, is, ‘I am Sir John Falstaff’s.’

Pist. He hath studied her well, and translated her well, out of honesty into English.

Nym. The anchor is deep: will that humour pass?

Fal. Now, the report goes she has all the rule of her husband’s purse; he hath a legion of angels.

Pist. As many devils entertain, and ‘To her, boy,’ say I.

Nym. The humour rises; it is good: humour me the angels.

Fal. I have writ me here a letter to her; and here another to Page’s wife, who even now gave me good eyes too, examined my parts with most judicious coillades: sometimes the beam of her view gilded my foot, sometimes my portly belly.

Pist. Then did the sun on dunghill shine.

Nym. I thank thee for that humour.

Fal. Of she did so course o’er my exteriors with such a greedy intention, that the appetite of her eye did seem to scorched me up like a burning-glass. Here’s another letter to her: she bears the purse too; she is a region in Guiana, all gold and bounty. I will be ‘cheater to them both, and they shall be exchequers to me: they shall be my East and West Indies, and I will trade to them both. Go bear thou this letter to Mistress Page; and thou this to Mistress Ford. We will thrive, lads, we will thrive.

Pist. Shall I Sir Pandarus of Troy become, And by my side wear steel? then, Lucifer take all!

Nym. I will run no base humour: here, take the humour-letter. I will keep the haviour of reputation.

Fal. [To Robin.] Hold, sirrah, bear you these letters tightly:

Sail like my pinnace to these golden shores.

Rogues, hence! avaunt! vanish like hailstones, go;

Trudge, plod away o’ the hoof; seek shelter, pack!

Falstaff will learn the humour of this age,

French thrift, you rogues: myself and skirted page. [Exit Falstaff and Robin.

Pist. Let vultures gripe thy guts! for gourd and fullam holds,

And high and low beguile the rich and poor.

Tester I’ll have in pouch when thou shalt lack,

Base Phrygian Turk!

Nym. I have operations in my head, which be humours of revenge.

Pist. Wilt thou revenge?

Nym. By welkin and her star!

Pist. With wit or steel?

Nym. With both the humours, I:

I will discuss the humour of this love to Page.

Pist. And I to Ford shall eke unfold

How Falstaff, varlet vile,

His dove will prove, his gold will hold,

And his soft couch defile.

Nym. My humour shall not cool: I will incense Page to deal with poison; I will possess him with yourliness, for the revolt of mine is dangerous: that is my true humour.

Pist. Thou art the Mars of malcontents: I second thee; troop on. [Exeunt.

SCENE IV.—A Room in Doctor Caius’s House.

Enter Mistress Quickly and Simple.

Quick. What, John Rugby!—

Enter Rugby.

I pray thee, go to the casement, and see if you can see my master, Master Doctor Caius, coming: if he do, I faith, and find anybody in the house, here will be an old abusing of God’s patience and the king’s English.

Rug. I’ll go watch.

Quick. Go; and we’ll have a posset for’t soon at night, in faith, at the latter end of a sea-coal fire. [Exit Rugby.] An honest, willing, kind fellow, as ever servant shall come in house withal; and, I warrant you, no tell-tale, nor no breed-bate: his worst fault is, that he is given to prayer; he is something peevish that way, but nobody but has his fault; but let that pass. Peter Simple you say your name is? 16

Sim. Ay, for fault of a better.

Quick. And Master Slender’s your master?

Sim. Ay, forsooth.

Quick. Does he not wear a great round beard like a Glover’s paring-knife?

Sim. No, forsooth: he hath but a little whey-face, with a little yellow beard—a cane-coloured beard.

Quick. A softly-sprigged man, is he not?

Sim. Ay, forsooth; but he is as tall a man of
his hands as any is between this and his head: he hath fought with a warrener. 28

Quick. How say you?—O! I should remember him: does he not hold up his head, as it were, and strut in his gait?
Sim. Yes, indeed, does he. 32
Quick. Well, heaven send Anne Page no worse fortune! Tell Master Parson Evans I will do what I can for your master: Anne is a good girl, and I wish— 36

Re-enter RUGBY.

Rug. Out, alas! here comes my master.
Quick. We shall all be shent. Run in here, good young man; go into this closet. [Shuts SIMPLE in the closet.] He will not stay long. What, John Rugby! John, what, John, I say! Go, John, go inquire for my master; I doubt he be not well, that he comes not home. [Exit RUGBY.] [Sings.]

‘And down, down, adown-a,’ &c. 44

Enter Doctor CAIUS.

Caius. Wilt thou sing? I do not like these toys. Pray you, go and vetch me in my closet une boitaine verde; a box, a green-a box: do intend vat I speak? a green-a box. 48
Quick. Ay, forsooth; I'll fetch it you. [Aside.] I am glad he went not in himself: if he had found the young man, he would have been horn-mad. 54
Caius. Fe, fe, fe, fe; ma jou, il faut fort chaud. Je m'en vais à la cour,—la grande affaire.
Quick. Is it this, sir?
Caius. Oui; mettez le au mon pocket; dépêchez, quickly.—Vere is dat knave Rugby?
Quick. What, John Rugby! John! 58

Re-enter RUGBY.

Rug. Here, sir.
Caius. You are John Rugby, and you are Jack Rugby: come, take-a your rapier, and come after my heel to de court.

Rug. Tis ready, sir, here in the porch. 62
Caius. By my trott, I tarry too long.—Od'a me! Qu'ay j'oublie? dere is some simples in my closet, dat I will not for de varld I shall leave behind.
Quick. [Aside.] Ay me! he'll find the young man there, and be mad.
Caius. O diable! diable! vat is in my closet?—Villain! larron! [Pulling SIMPLE out.] Rugby, my rapier!
Quick. Good master, be content.
Caius. Verefore shall I be content-a?
Quick. The young man is an honest man.
Caius. Vat shall de honest man do in my closet? dere is no honest man dat shall come in my closet. 78

Quick. I beseech you, be not so phlegmatic. Hear the truth of it: he came of an errand to me from Parson Hugh. 81
Caius. Veil.
Sim. Ay, forsooth, to desire her to—
Quick. Peace, I pray you. 84
Caius. Peace-a your tongue!—Speak-a your tale.

Sim. To desire this honest gentlewoman, your maid, to speak a good word to Mistress Anne Page for my master in the way of marriage. 89
Quick. This is all, indeed, I al but I'll ne'er put my finger in the fire, and need not.
Caius. Sir Hugh send-a you?—Rugby, balitze me some paper: tarry you a little-a while. 93
[Writes.]
Quick. I am glad he is so quiet: if he had been throughly moved, you should have heard him so loud, and so melancholy. But, notwithstanding, man, I'll do your master what good I can; and the very yea and the no is, the French doctor, my master,—I may call him my master, look you, for I keep his house; and I wash, wring, brew, bake, scour, dress meat and drink, make the beds, and do all myself,— 102
Sim. 'Tis a great charge to come under one body's hand.

Quick. Are you avis'd o' that? you shall find it a great charge: and to be up early and down late; but notwithstanding,—to tell you in your ear,—I would have no words of it,—my master himself is in love with Mistress Anne Page: but notwithstanding that, I know Anne's mind, that's neither here nor there. 111
Caius. You jack'nape, give-a dis letter to Sir Hugh; by gar, it is a challenge: I will cut his trot in de Park; and I will teach a scurvy jack'nape priest to meddle or make. You may be gone; it is not good you tarry here: by gar, I will cut all his two stones; by gar, he shall not have a stone to trow at his dog. [Exit SIMPLE.
Quick. Alas! he speaks but for his friend. 119
Caius. It is no matter-a for dat:—do not you tell-a me dat I shall have Anne Page for myself? By gar, I will kill de Jack priest; and I have appointed mine host of de Jartiere to measure our weapon. By gar, I will myself have Anne Page.
Quick. Sir, the maid loves you, and all shall be well. We must give folks leave to prate: what, the good-jeer! 127
Caius. Rugby, come to the court wit me. By gar, if I have not Anne Page, I shall turn your head out of my door. Follow my heels, Rugby. [Exeunt CAIUS and RUGBY.
Quick. You shall have An fool's-head of your
own. No, I know Anne’s mind for that: never a woman in Windsor knows more of Anne’s mind than I do; nor can do more than I do with her, I thank heaven.

Fent. [Within.] Who’s within there? hol! 136
Quick. Who’s there, I trow? Come near the house, I pray you.

Enter FENTON.

Fent. How now, good woman! how dost thou?
Quick. The better, that it pleases your good worship to ask. 141
Fent. What news? how does pretty Mistress Anne?
Quick. In truth, sir, and she is pretty, and honest, and gentle; and one that is your friend, I can tell you that by the way; I praise heaven for it.

Fent. Shall I do any good, thinkest thou?
Shall I not lose my suit? 149
Quick. Troth, sir, all is in his hands above; but notwithstanding, Master Fenton, I’ll be sworn on a book, she loves you. Have not your worship a wart above your eye?

Fent. Yes, marry have I; what of that?
Quick. Well, thereby hangs a tale. Good faith, it is such another Nan; but, I detest, an honest maid as ever broke bread: we had an hour’s talk of that wart. I shall never laugh but in that maid’s company;—but, indeed, she is given too much to alcholy and musing. But for you—well, go to. 153

Fent. Well, I shall see her to-day. Hold, there’s money for thee; let me have thy voice in my behalf: if thou seest her before me, commend me. 161
Quick. Will I? i’ faith, that we will: and I will tell your worship more of the wart the next time we have confidence; and of other wooers.

Fent. Well, farewell; I am in great haste now.
Quick. Farewell to your worship.—[Exit FENTON.] Truly, an honest gentleman: but Anne loves him not; for I know Anne’s mind as well as another does. Out upon’t! what have I forgot? [Exit.

ACT II.

SCENE I.—Before PAGE’S HOUSE.

Enter MISTRESS PAGE, with a Letter.

Mrs. Page. What! have I ’scaped love-letters in the holiday-time of my beauty, and am I now a subject for them? Let me see.

Ask me no reason why I love you; for though Love use Reason for his physician, he admits him not for his counsellor. You are not young, no more am I; go to then, there’s sympathy; you are merry, so am I, ha! ha! then, there’s more sympathy, you love sack, and so do I, would you desire better sympathy? Let it suffice thee, Mistress Page, at the least, if the love of a soldier can suffice, that I love thee I will not say, pity me,—’s not a soldier-like phrase; but I say, love me. By me,

Thine own true knight,
By day or night,
Or any kind of light,
With all his might
For thee to fight,

JOHN FALSTAFF.

What a Herod of Jewry is this! O wicked, wicked world! one that is well-nigh worn to pieces with age, to show himself a young gallant! What an unweighed behaviour hath this Flemish drunkard picked, with the devil’s name! out of my conversation, that he dares in this manner assay me? Why, he hath not been thrice in my company! What should I say to him? I was then frugal of my mirth:—heaven forgive me! Why, I’ll exhibit a bill in the parliament for the putting down of men. How shall I be revenged on him? for revenged I will be, as sure as his guts are made of puddings.

Enter MISTRESS FORD.

Mrs. Ford. Mistress Page! trust me, I was going to your house.

Mrs. Page. And, trust me, I was coming to you. You look very ill. 36
Mrs. Ford. Nay, I’ll ne’er believe that: I have to show to the contrary.

Mrs. Page. Faith, but you do, in my mind.

Mrs. Ford. Well, I do then; yet, I say I could show you to the contrary. O, Mistress Page! give me some counsel.

Mrs. Page. What’s the matter, woman?

Mrs. Ford. O woman, if it were not for one trifling respect, I could come to such honour! 45

Mrs. Page. Hang the trifles; take the honour. What is it?—dispense with trifles;—what is it?

Mrs. Ford. If I would but go to hell for an eternal moment or so, I could be knighted.

Mrs. Page. What? thou liest. Sir Alice Ford! These knights will hack; and so thou shouldst not alter the article of thy gentry. 53

Mrs. Ford. We burn daylight; here, read, read; perceive how I might be knighted. I shall think the worse of fat men as long as I have an eye to make difference of men’s liking; and yet he would not swear; praised women’s modesty; and gave such orderliness and well-behaved reproof to all uncomeliness, that I would have sworn his disposition would have gone to the truth of his words; but they do no more
adhere and keep place together than the Hundredth Psalm to the tune of ‘Green Sleeves.’ What tempest, I trow, threw this whale, with so many tun’s oil in his belly, ashore at Windsor? How shall I be revenged on him? I think, the best way to entertain him with hope, till the wicked fire of lust have melted him in his own grease. Did you ever hear the like? Mrs. Page. Letter for letter, but that the name of Page and Ford differs! To thy great comfort in this mystery of ill opinions, here’s the twin brother of thy letter: but let thine inherit first; for, I protest, mine never shall. I warrant, he hath a thousand of these letters, writ with blank space for different names, sure more, and these are of the second edition. He will print them, out of doubt; for he cares not what he puts into the press, when he would put us two: I had rather be a giantess, and lie under Mount Pelion. Well, I will find you twenty lascivious turtles ere one chaste man.

Mrs. Ford. Why, this is the very same; the very hand, the very words. What doth he think of us?

Mrs. Page. Nay, I know not: it makes me almost ready to wrangle with mine own honesty. I’ll entertain myself like one that I am not acquainted withal; for, sure, unless he know some strain in me, that I know not myself, he would never have bored me in this fury.

Mrs. Ford. Boarding call you it? I’ll be sure to keep him above deck.

Mrs. Page. So will I: if he come under my hatches, I’ll never to sea again. Let’s be revenged on him: let’s appoint him a meeting; give him a show of comfort in his suit, and lead him on with a fine-baited delay, till he hath pawned his horses to mine host of the Garter.

Mrs. Ford. Nay, I will consent to act any villain against him, that may not sully the chariness of our honesty. O, that my husband saw this letter! it would give eternal food to his jealousy.

Mrs. Page. Why, look, where he comes; and my good man too: he’s as far from jealousy, as I am from giving him cause; and that, I hope, is an unmeasurable distance.

Mrs. Ford. You are the happier woman.

Mrs. Page. Let’s consult together against this greedy knight. Come hither. [They retire.]

Enter Ford, Pistol, Page, and Nym.

Ford. Well, I hope it be not so.

Pistol. Hope is a curtail dog in some affairs:

Ford. Why, sir, my wife is not young.

Pistol. He woos both high and low, both rich and poor,

Both young and old, one with another, Ford. He loves the galimaufry; Ford, perpend.

Ford. Love my wife!

Pistol. With liver burning hot: prevent, or go thou,

Like Sir Acteon he, with Ringwood at thy heels.—O! odious is the name!

Ford. What name, sir?

Pistol. The horn, I say. Farewell:

Take heed; have open eye, for thieves do foot by night:

Take heed, ere summer comes or cuckoo-birds do sing.

Away, sir Corporal Nym! Believe it, Page; he speaks sense. [Exit.

Ford. [Aside.] I will be patient: I will find out this.

Nym. [To Page.] And this is true; I like not the humour of lying. He hath wronged me in some humours: I should have borne the humoured letter to her, but I have a sword and it shall bite upon my necessity. He loves your wife; there’s the short and the long. My name is Corporal Nym; I speak, and I avouch ’tis true: my name is Nym, and Falstaff loves your wife. Adieu. I love not the humour of bread and cheese; and there’s the humour of it. Adieu. [Exit.

Page. [Aside.] ‘The humour of it,’ quoth’a! here’s a fellow frights humour out of his wits.

Ford. I will seek out Falstaff.

Page. I never heard such a dawling, affecting rogue.

Ford. If I do find it: well.

Page. I will not believe such a Catanian, though the priest o’ the town commanded him for a true man.

Ford. ’Twas a good sensible fellow: well.

Page. How now, Meg!

Mrs. Page. Whither go you, George?—Hark you.

Mrs. Ford. How now, sweet Frank! why art thou melancholy?

Ford. I melancholy! I am not melancholy. Get you home, go.

Mrs. Ford. Faith, thou hast some crotchets in thy head now. Will you go, Mistress Page?

Mrs. Page. Have with you. You’ll come to dinner, George? [Aside to Mrs. Ford.] Look, who comes yonder: she shall be our messenger to this paltry knight.

Mrs. Ford. Trust me, I thought on her: she’ll fit it. [Enter Mistress Quickly.

Mrs. Page. You are come to see my daughter Anne?
Quick. Ay, forsooth; and, I pray, how does good Mistress Anne?

Mrs. Page. Go in with us, and see: we'd have an hour's talk with you.

[Exeunt Mistress Page, Mistress Ford, and Mistress Quickly.

Page. How now, Master Ford!

Ford. You heard what this knave told me, did you not?

Page. Yes; and you heard what the other told me?

Ford. Do you think there is truth in them?

Page. Hang 'em, slaves! I do not think the knight would offer it: but these that accuse him in his intent towards our wives, are a yoke of his discarded men; very rogues, now they be out of service.

Ford. Were they his men?

Page. Marry, were they.

Ford. I like it never the better for that.

Does he lie at the Garter?

Page. Ay, marry, does he. If he should intend this voyage towards my wife, I would turn her loose to him; and what he gets more of her than sharp words, let it lie on my head.

Ford. I do not misdoubt my wife, but I would be loth to turn them together. A man may be too confident: I would have nothing 'lie on my head.' I cannot be thus satisfied.

Page. Look, where my ranting host of the Garter comes. There is either liquor in his pate or money in his purse when he looks so merrily.

Enter Host and Shallow.

How now, mine host!

Host. How now, bully-rook! thou'rt a gentleman. Cavaliro-justice, I say!

Shal. I follow, mine host, I follow. Good even and twenty, good Master Page! Master Page, will you go with us? we have sport in hand.

Host. Tell him, cavaliro-justice; tell him, bully-rook.

Shal. Sir, there is a fray to be fought between Sir Hugh the Welsh priest and Caius the French doctor.

Ford. Good mine host o' the Garter, a word with you.

Host. What sayest thou, my bully-rook? [They go aside.

Shal. [To Page.] Will you go with us to behold it? My merry host hath had the measuring of their weapons, and, I think, hath appointed them contrary places; for, believe me, I hear the parson is no jester. Hark, I will tell you what our sport shall be. [They go aside.

Host. Hast thou no suit against my knight, my guest-cavalier?

Ford. None, I protest: but I'll give you a potful of burnt sack to give me recourse to him and tell him my name is Brook, only for a jest.

Host. My hand, bully; thou shalt have egress and regress; said I well? and thy name shall be Brook. It is a merry knight. Will you go, myheers?

Shal. Have with you, mine host.

Page. I have heard, the Frenchman hath good skill in his rapier.

Shal. Tut, sir! I could have told you more. In these times you stand on distance, your passes, stoccadoes, and I know not what: 'tis the heart, Master Page; 'tis here, 'tis here. I have seen the time with my long sword I would have made you four tall fellows slip like rats.

Host. Here, boys, here, here! shall we wag?

Page. Have with you. I had rather hear them scold than fight.

[Exeunt Host, Shallow, and Page.

Ford. Though Page be a secure fool, and stands so firmly on his wife's frailty, yet I cannot put off my opinion so easily. She was in his company at Page's house, and what they made there, I know not. Well, I will look further into't; and I have a disguise to sound Falstaff. If I find her honest, I lose not my labour; if she be otherwise, 'tis labour well bestowed. [Exit.

SCENE II.—A Room in the Garter Inn.

Enter Falstaff and Pistol.

Fal. I will not lend thee a penny.

Pist. Why, then the world's mine oyster, Which I with sword will open.

I will retort the sum in equipage.

Fal. Not a penny. I have been content, sir, you should lay my countenance to pawn: I have grated upon my good friends for three reprieves for you and your coach-fellow Nym; or else you had looked through the grate, like a geminy of baboons. I am damned in hell for swearing to gentlemen my friends, you were good soldiers and tall fellows; and when Mistress Bridget lost the handle of her fan, I took 't upon mine honour thou hadst it not.

Pist. Didst thou not share? hadst thou not fifteen pence?

Fal. Reason, you rogue, reason: thinkest thou, I'll endanger my soul gratis? At a word, hang no more about me; I am no gibbon for you: go: a short knife and a throng—to your manor of Picht-hatch! go. You'll not bear a letter for me, you rogue!—you stand upon your honour!
Why, thou unconfinable baseness, it is as much as I can do to keep the terms of mine honour precise. I, I, I, myself sometimes, leaving the fear of God on the left hand and hiding mine honour in my necessity, am fain to shuffle, to hedge and to lurch; and yet you, rogue, will ensconce your rags, your cat-a-mountain looks, your red-lattice phrases, and your bold-beating oaths, under the shelter of your honour! You will not do it, you!

_Pist._ I do relent: what wouldst thou more of man?

_Enter ROBIN._

_Rob._ Sir, here's a woman would speak with you.

_Fal._ Let her approach.

_Enter MISTRESS QUICKLY._

_Quick._ Give your worship good morrow.

_Fal._ Good morrow, good wife.

_Quick._ Not so, an't please your worship.

_Fal._ Good maid, then.

_Quick._ I'll be sworn! As my mother was, the first hour I was born.

_Fal._ Do I believe the sweare. What with me?

_Quick._ Shall I vouchsafe your worship a word or two?

_Fal._ Two thousand, fair woman; and I'll vouchsafe thee the hearing.

_Quick._ There is one Mistress Ford, sir,—I pray, come a little nearer this ways:—I myself dwell with Master Doctor Caius.

_Fal._ Well, on: Mistress Ford, you say,—

_Quick._ Your worship says very true:—I pray your worship, come a little nearer this ways.

_Fal._ I warrant thee, nobody hears; mine own people, mine own people.

_Quick._ Are they so? God bless them, and make them his servants!

_Fal._ Well: Mistress Ford; what of her?

_Quick._ Why, sir, she's a good creature. Lord, Lord! your worship's a wanton! Well, heaven forgive you, and all of us, I pray!

_Fal._ Mistress Ford; come, Mistress Ford,—

_Quick._ Marry, this is the short and the long of it. You have brought her into such a canaries as 'tis wonderful: the best courtier of them all, when the court lay at Windsor, could never have brought her to such a canary; yet there has been knights, and lords, and gentlemen, with their coaches, I warrant you, coach after coach, letter after letter, gift after gift; smelling so sweetly—all musk, and so rushing, I warrant you, in silk and gold; and in such allitigant terms; and in such wine and sugar of the best and the fairest, that would have won any woman's heart; and, I warrant you, they could never get an eye-wink of her. I had myself twenty angels given me this morning; but I defy all angels, in any such sort, as they say, but in the way of honesty: and, I warrant you, they could never get her so much as sip on a cup with the proudest of them all; and yet there has been ears, nay, which is more, pensioners; but, I warrant you, all is one with her.

_Fal._ But what says she to me? be brief, my good she-Mercury.

_Quick._ Marry, she hath received your letter; for the which she thanks you a thousand times; and she gives you to notify that her husband will be absence from his house between ten and eleven.

_Fal._ Ten and eleven?

_Quick._ Ay, forsooth; and then you may come and see the picture, she says, that you wot of: Master Ford, her husband, will be from home. Alas! the sweet woman leads an ill life with him: he's a very jealousy man; she leads a very frumpoid life with him, good heart.

_Fal._ Ten and eleven. Woman, commend me to her; I will not fail her.

_Quick._ Why, you say well. But I have another messenger to your worship: Mistress Page hath her hearty commendations to you too: and let me tell you in your ear, she's as fartuous a civil modest wife, and one, I tell you, that will not miss you morning nor evening prayer, as any is in Windsor, who'er be the other: and she bade me tell your worship that her husband is seldom from home; but, she hopes there will come a time. I never knew a woman so dote upon a man: surely, I think you have charms, la; yes, in truth.

_Fal._ Not I, I assure thee: setting the attraction of my good parts aside, I have no other charms.

_Quick._ Blessing on your heart for't! I pray thee, tell me this: has Ford's wife and Page's wife acquainted each other how they love me?

_Quick._ That were a jest indeed! they have not so little grace, I hope: that were a trick, indeed! But Mistress Page would desire you to send her your little page, of all loves: her husband has a marvellous infection to the little page; and, truly, Master Page is an honest man. Never a wife in Windsor leads a better life than she does: do what she will, say what she will, take all, pay all, go to bed when she list, rise when she list, all is as she will: and, truly she deserves it; for if there be a kind woman in Windsor, she is one. You must send her your page; no remedy.

_Fal._ Why, I will.
Quick. Nay, but do so, then: and, look you, he may come and go between you both; and in any case have a nay-word, that you may know one another’s mind, and the boy never need to understand any thing; for ‘tis not good that children should know any wickedness: old folks, you know, have discretion, as they say, and know the world. 137

Fal. Fare thee well: commend me to them both. There’s my purse; I am yet thy debtor.—Boy, go along with this woman.—[Exit Mistress Quickly and Robin.] This news distresses me. 142

Pist. This punk is one of Cupid’s carriers. Clap on more sails; pursue; up with your fights; Give fire! she is my prize, or ocean whelm them all! [Exit.]

Fal. Sayest thou so, old Jack? go thy ways; I’ll make more of thy old body than I have done. Will they yet look after thee? Wilt thou, after the expense of so much money, be now a gainer? Good body, I thank thee. Let them say ‘tis grossly done; so be it fairly done, no matter. 151

Enter Bardolph, with a cup of Sack.

Bard. Sir John, there’s one Master Brook below would fain speak with you, and be acquainted with you: and hath sent your worship a morning’s draught of sack.

Fal. Brook is his name? 156

Bard. Ay, sir.

Fal. Call him in. [Exit Bardolph.] Such Brooks are welcome to me, that o’erflow such liquor. Ah, ha! Mistress Ford and Mistress Page, have I encompassed you? go to; via! 161

Re-enter Bardolph, with Ford disguised.

Ford. Bless you, sir!

Fal. And you, sir; would you speak with me? Ford. I make bold to press with so little preparation upon you. 165

Fal. You’re welcome. What’s your will?—Give us leave, drawer. [Exit Bardolph.

Ford. Sir, I am a gentleman that have spent much: my name is Brook. 169

Fal. Good Master Brook, I desire more acquaintance of you.

Ford. Good Sir John, I sue for yours: not to charge you; for I must let you understand I think myself in better plight for a lesser than you are: the which hath something emboldened me to this unseasoned intrusion; for, they say, if money go before, all ways do lie open. 177

Fal. Money is a good soldier, sir, and will on.

Ford. Troth, and I have a bag of money here troubles me: if you will help to bear it, Sir John, take all, or half, for easing me of the carriage. 183

Fal. Sir, I know not how I may deserve to be your porter.

Ford. I will tell you, sir, if you will give me the hearing.

Fal. Speak, good Master Brook; I shall be glad to be your servant. 189

Ford. Sir, I hear you are a scholar,—I will be brief with you, and you have been a man long known to me, though I had never so good means, as desire, to make myself acquainted with you. I shall discover a thing to you, wherein I must very much lay open mine own imperfection; but, good Sir John, as you have one eye upon my follies, as you hear them unfolded, turn another into the register of your own, that I may pass with a reproof the easier, sith you yourself know how easy it is to be such an offender. 200

Fal. Very well, sir; proceed.

Ford. There is a gentlewoman in this town, her husband’s name is Ford.

Fal. Well, sir. 204

Ford. I have long loved her, and, I protest to you, bestowed much on her; followed her with a doting observance; engrossed opportunities to meet her; fee’d every slight occasion that could but niggardly give me sight of her; not only bought many presents to give her, but have given largely to many to know what she would have given. Briefly, I have pursued her as love hath pursued me; which hath been on the wing of all occasions. But whatsoever I have merited, either in my mind or in my means, meed, I am sure, I have received none; unless experience be a jewel that I have purchased at an infinite rate; and that hath taught me to say this,

Love like a shadow flies when substance love pursues;

Pursuing that flies, and flying what pursues.

Fal. Have you received no promise of satisfaction at her hands? 220

Ford. Never.

Fal. Have you importuned her to such a purpose? Ford. Never.

Fal. Of what quality was your love, then? 228

Ford. Like a fair house built upon another man’s ground; so that I have lost my edifice by mistaking the place where I erected it.

Fal. To what purpose have you unfolded this to me? 233

Ford. When I have told you that, I have told you all. Some say, that though she appear honest
Act II, Sc. II. THE MERRY WIVES OF WINDSOR

Ford. I would you knew Ford, sir, that you might avoid him, if you saw him.

Fal. Hang him, mechanical salt-butter rogue! I will stare him out of his wits; I will awe him with my cudgel: it shall hang like a meteor o'er the cuckold's horns. Master Brook, thou shalt know I will predominate over the peasant, and thou shalt tie with his wife. Come to me soon at night. Ford's a knave, and I will aggravate his style; thou, Master Brook, shalt know him for knave and cuckold. Come to me soon at night.

Ford. What a damned Epicurean rascal is this! My heart is ready to crack with impatience. Who says this is improvident jealousy? my wife hath sent to him, the hour is fixed, the match is made. Would any man have thought this? See the hell of having a false woman! My bed shall be abused, my coffers ransacked, my reputation gawn at; and I shall not only receive this villainous wrong, but stand under the adoption of abominable terms, and by him that does me this wrong. Terms! names! Aaimon sounds well; Lucifer, well; Barbason, well; yet they are devils' additions, the names of fiends: but Cuckold! Wittol!—Cuckold! the devil himself hath not such a name. Page is an ass, a secure ass: he will trust his wife; he will not be jealous. I will rather trust a Fleming with my butter, Parson Hugh the Welshman with my cheese, an Irishman with my aqua-vite bottle, or a thief to walk my ambling gelding, than my wife with herself: then she plots, then she ruminates, then she devises; and what they think in their hearts they may effect, they will break their hearts but they will effect. God be praised for my jealousy! Eleven o'clock the hour: I will prevent this, detect my wife, be revenged on Falstaff, and laugh at Page. I will about it; better three hours too soon than a minute too late. Fie, fie, fie! cuckold! cuckold! cuckold!

[Exit.

SCENE III.—A Field near Windsor.

Enter Caius and Rugby.

Caius. Jack Rugby!

Rug. Sir?

Caius. What is the clock, Jack?

Rug. 'Tis past the hour, sir, that Sir Hugh promised to meet.

Caius. By gar, he has save his soul, dat he is no come: he has pray his Pible veil, dat he is no come. By gar, Jack Rugby, he is dead already, if he be come.

Rug. He is wise, sir; he knew your worship would kill him, if he came.

Caius. By gar, de herring is no dead so as I
THE MERRY WIVES OF WINDSOR

Act III, Sc. 1.

vill kill him. Take your rapier, Jack; I will tell you how I will kill him.

Rug. Alas, sir! I cannot fence.

Caius. Villany, take your rapier.

Rug. Forbear; here's his company.

Enter Host, SHALLOW, SLENDER, and PAGE.

Host. Bless thee, bully doctor!

Shal. Save you, Master Doctor Caius!

Page. Now, good Master doctor!

Slen. Give you good morrow, sir.

Caius. Vat be all you, one, two, tree, four, come for?

Host. To see thee fight, to see thee fain, to see thee traverse; to see thee here, to see thee there; to see thee pass thy puno, thy stock, thy reverse, thy distance, thy presentant. Is he dead, my Ethiopian? is he dead, my Francisco? ha, bully! What says my Æsculapius? my Galen? my my of elder? ha! is he dead, bully stale? is he dead?

Caius. By gar, he is a coward Jack priest of the world; he is not show his face.

Host. Thou art a Castilian King Urinal! Hector of Greece, my boy!

Caius. I pray you, bear witness that I have stay six or seven, two, tree hours for him, and he is no come.

Shal. He is the wiser man, Master doctor: he is a curer of souls, and you a curer of bodies; if you should fight, you go against the hair of your professions. Is it not true, Master Page?

Page. Master Shallow, you have yourself been a great fighter, though now a man of peace.

Shal. Bodykins, Master Page, though I now be old and of the peace, if I see a sword out, my finger itches to make one. Though we are justices and doctors and churchmen, Master Page, we have some salt of our youth in us; we are the sons of women, Master Page.

Page. 'Tis true, Master Shallow.

Shal. It will be found so, Master Page. Master Doctor Caius, I am come to fetch you home. I am sworn of the peace: you have showed yourself a wise physician, and Sir Hugh hath shown himself a wise and patient churchman. You must go with me, Master doctor.

Host. Pardon, guest-justice.—A word, Monsieur Mockwater.

Caius. Mock-water! vat is dat?

Host. Mock-water, in our English tongue, is valour, bully.

Caius. By gar, den, I have as mush mock-water as de Englishman. — Seurvy jack-dog priest! by gar, me vill cut his ears.

Host. He will clapper-claw thee tightly, bully.

Caius. Clapper-de-claw! vat is dat?

Host. That is, he will make thee amends.

Caius. By gar, we do look, he shall clapper-de-claw me; for, by gar, me will have it.

Host. And I will provoke him to't, or let him wag.

Caius. Me tank you for dat.

Host. And moreover, bully,—But first, Master guest, and Master Page, and eke Cavaliero Slender, go you through the town to Frogmore. [Aside to them.]

Page. Sir Hugh is there, is he?

Host. He is there: see what humour he is in; and I will bring the doctor about by the fields. Will it do well?

Shal. We will do it.

Page, Shal., and Slen. Adieu, good Master doctor. [Exeunt Page, Shal., and Slen.

Caius. By gar, we vill kyll de priest; for he speak for a jack-an-ape to Anne Page.

Host. Let him die. Sheathe thy impatience; throw cold water on thy choler: go about the fields with me through Frogmore: I will bring thee where Mistress Anne Page is, at a farmhouse a-feasting; and thou shalt woo her. Cried I aim? said I well?

Caius. By gar, me tank you for dat: by gar, I love you; and I shall procure-a you de good guest, de earl, de knight, de lords, de gentlemen, my patients.

Host. For the which I will be thy adversary toward Anne Page: said I well?

Caius. By gar, 'tis good; vell said.

Host. Let us wag, then.

Caius. Come at my heels, Jack Rugby.

[Exeunt.

ACT III.

SCENE I.—A Field near Frogmore.

Enter SIR HUGH EVANS and SIMPLE.

Eva. I pray you now, good Master Slender's serving-man, and friend Simple by your name, which way have you looked for Master Caius, that calls himself doctor of physie? 4

Sim. Marry, sir, the pittie-ward, the parkward, every way; old Windsor way, and every way but the town way.

Eva. I most vehemently desire you will also look that way.

Sim. I will, sir. [Exit.

Eva. Pless my soul! how full of chollors I am, and trembling of mind! I shall be glad if he have deceived me. How melancholies I am! I will knog his urinals about his knave's costard
when I have good opportunities for the 'ork:  
[Chorus:]  
Pless my soul!  

To shallow rivers, to whose falls  
Melodious birds sing madrigals;  
There will we make our peds of roses,  
And a thousand fragrant posies.  
To shallow—  

Mercy on me! I have a great disposition to cry.  
[Chorus:]  

Melodious birds sing madrigals,—  
When as I sat in Pabylon,—  
And a thousand vagrant posies.  
To shallow,—  

Re-enter SIMPLE.  

Sim. Yonder he is coming, this way, Sir Hugh.  
Eva. He's welcome.  
[Page:]  

To shallow rivers, to whose falls—  

Heaven prosper the right!—what weapons is he?  
Sim. No weapons, sir. There comes my master, Master Shallow, and another gentleman, from Frogham; over the stile, this way.  

Eva. Pray you, give me my gown; or else keep it in your arms.  

[Reads a book.]  

Enter PAGE, SHALLOW, and SLINDER.  

Shal. How now, Master Parson! Good morrow, good Sir Hugh. Keep a gamester from the dice, and a good student from his book, and it is wonderful.  

Slen. [Aside.] Ah, sweet Anne Page!  

Page. Save you, good Sir Hugh!  

Eva. Pless you from His mercy sake, all of you!  

Shal. What, the sword and the word? Do you study them both, Master Parson?  

Page. And youthful still in your doubt; and hose! this raw rheumatic day?  

Eva. There is reasons and causes for it.  

Page. We are come to you to do a good office, Master parson.  

Eva. Fery well: what is it?  

Page. I think you know him; Master Doctor Caius, the renowned French physician.  

Eva. Got's will, and his passion of my heart! I had as lief you would tell me of a mess of porridge.  

Page. Why?  

Eva. He has no more knowledge in Hippocrates and Galen,—and he is a knave besides; a cowardly knave as you would desires to be acquainted withal.  

Page. I warrant you, he's the man should fight with him.  

Slen. [Aside.] O, sweet Anne Page!  

Shal. It appears so, by his weapons. Keep them asunder: here comes Doctor Caius.  

Enter Host, CAIUS, and RUGBY.  

Page. Nay, good Master parson, keep in your weapon.  

Shal. So do you, good Master doctor.  

Host. Disarm them, and let them question: let them keep their limbs whole and hack our English.  

Caius. I pray you, let me speak a word with your ear: verest will you not meet a me?  

Eva. [Aside to Caius.] Pray you, use your patience: in good time.  

Caius. By gar, you are de coward, de Jack dog, John ape.  

Eva. [Aside to Caius.] Pray you, let us not be laughing-stogs to other men's humours; I desire you in friendship, and I will one way or other make you amends: [Aloud.] I will knock your urinals about your knife's cogscorn for missing your meetings and appointments.  

Caius. Diable!—Jack Rugby,—mine host de Jarretiere,—have I not stay for him to kill him? have I not, at de place I did appoint?  

Eva. As I am a Christians soul, now, look you, this is the place appointed: I'll be judgment by mine host of the Garter.  

Host. Peace, I say, Gallia and Guallia; French and Welsh, soul-curer and body-curer!  

Caius. Ay, dat is very good; excellent.  

Host. Peace, I say! hear mine host of the Garter. Am I politic? am I subtle? am I a Machiavel? Shall I lose my doctor? no; he gives me the potions and the motions. Shall I lose my parson, my priest, my Sir Hugh? no; he gives me the proverbs and the no-verbs. Give me thy hand, terrestrial; so,—give me thy hand celestial; so. Boys of art, I have deceived you both; I have directed you to wrong places: your hearts are mighty, your skins are whole, and let burnt sack be the issue. Come, lay their swords to pawn. Follow me, lads of peace; follow, follow, follow.  

Shal. Trust me, a mad host!—Follow, gentlemen, follow.  

Slen. [Aside.] O, sweet Anne Page!  

[Exeunt SHALLOW, SLINDER, PAGE, and Host.  

Caius. Hal do I perceive dat? have you make-a de sot of us, ha, ha?  

Eva. This is well; he has made us his vounting-stog. I desire you that we may be friends
and let us knog our prains together to be revenge on this same scall, scurvy, coag companion, the host of the Garter.

Caius. By gar, vit all my heart. He promise to bring me vere is Anne Page: by gar, he deceive me too.

Eva. Well, I will smile his noddles. Pray you, follow. [Exeunt.

**Scene II. — A Street in Windsor.**

**Enter Mistress Page and Robin.**

Mrs. Page. Nay, keep your way, little gallant: you were wont to be a follower, but now you are a leader. Whether you rather lead mine eyes, or eye your master’s heels?

Rob. I had rather, forsooth, go before you like a man than follow him like a dwarf.

Mrs. Page. Oh! you are a flattering boy: now I see you ’ll be a courtier.

**Enter Ford.**

Ford. Well met, Mistress Page. Whither go you?

Mrs. Page. Truly, sir, to see your wife: is she at home?

Ford. Ay; and as idle as she may hang together, for want of company. I think, if your husbands were dead, you two would marry.

Mrs. Page. Be sure of that,—two other husbands.

Ford. Where had you this pretty weathercock?

Mrs. Page. I cannot tell what the dickens his name is my husband had him of. What do you call your knight’s name, sirrah?

Rob. Sir John Falstaff.

Ford. Sir John Falstaff!

Mrs. Page. He, he; I can never hit on his name. There is such a league between my good man and he! Is your wife at home indeed?

Ford. Indeed she is.

Mrs. Page. By your leave, sir: I am sick till I see her. [Exeunt Mistress Page and Robin.]

Ford. Has Page any brains? hath he any eyes? hath he any thinking? Sure, they sleep; he hath no use of them. Why, this boy will carry a letter twenty mile, as easy as a cannon will shoot point-blank twelve score. He pieces out his wife’s inclination; he gives her folly motion and advantage: and now she’s going to my wife, and Falstaff’s boy with her. A man may hear this shower sing in the wind: and Falstaff’s boy with her! Good plots! they are laid; and our revoluted wives share damnation together. Well; I will take him, then torture my wife, pluck the borrowed veil of modesty from the so seeming Mistress Page, divulge Page himself for a secure and wilful Acteon; and to these violent proceedings all my neighbours shall cry aim. [Clock strikes.] The clock gives me my cue, and my assurance bids me search; there I shall find Falstaff. I shall be rather praised for this than mocked; for it is as positive as the earth is firm, that Falstaff is there: I will go.

**Enter Page, Shallow, Slender, Host, Sir Hugh Evans, Caius, and Rugby.**


Ford. Trust me, a good knot. I have good cheer at home; and I pray you all go with me.

Shal. I must excuse myself, Master Ford.

Slen. And so must I, sir: we have appointed to dine with Mistress Anne, and I would not break with her for more money than I’ll speak of.

Shal. We have lingered about a match between Anne Page and my cousin Slender, and this day we shall have our answer.

Slen. I hope I have your good will, Father Page.

Page. You have, Master Slender; I stand wholly for you: but my wife, Master doctor, is for you altogether.

Caius. Ay, by gar; and de maid is love-a-me: my nursh-a Quickly tell me so mush.

Host. What say you to young Master Fenton? he capers, he dances, he has eyes of youth, he writes verses, he speaks holiday, he smells April and May: he will carry’t, he will carry’t; ’tis in his buttons; he will carry’t.

Page. Not by my consent, I promise you. The gentleman is of no having: he kept company with the wild prince and Pointz; he is of too high a region; he knows too much. No, he shall not knit a knot in his fortunes with the finger of my substance: if he take her, let him take her simply; the wealth I have waits on my consent, and my consent goes not that way.

Ford. I beseech you heartily, some of you go home with me to dinner: besides your cheer, you shall have sport; I will show you a monster. Master doctor, you shall go; so shall you, Master Page; and you, Sir Hugh.

Shal. Well, fare you well: we shall have the freer wooring at Master Page’s.

[Exeunt Shallow and Slender.

Caius. Go home, John Rugby; I come anon.

[Exit Rugby.

Host. Farewell, my hearts: I will to my honest knight Falstaff, and drink canary with him.

[Exit Host.

Ford. [Aside.] I think I shall drink in pipe-
wine first with him; I’ll make him dance. Will you go, gentle?
All. Have with you to see this monster. [Exeunt.

SCENE III.—A Room in Ford’s House.

Enter Mistress Ford and Mistress Page.
Mrs. Page. Come, come, come.
Mrs. Ford. Here, set it down.
Mrs. Page. Give your men the charge; we must be brief.
Mrs. Ford. Marry, as I told you before, John, and Robert, be ready here hard by in the broughouse; and when I suddenly call you, come forth, and without any pause or staggering, take this basket on your shoulders: that done, trudge with it in all haste, and carry it among the whitesters in Datchet-mead, and there empty it in the muddy ditch, close by the Thames side. Mrs. Page. You will do it? Mrs. Ford. I have told them over and over; they lack no direction. Be gone, and come when you are called. [Exeunt Servants.
Mrs. Page. Here comes little Robin.

Enter ROBIN.
Mrs. Ford. How now, my eyes-musket! what news with you?
Rob. My master, Sir John, is come in at your back-door, Mistress Ford, and requests your company.
Mrs. Page. You little Jack-a-Lent, have you been true to us? 
Rob. Ay, I’ll be sworn. My master knows not of your being here, and hath threatened to put me into everlasting liberty if I tell you of it; for he swears he’ll turn me away. Mrs. Page. Thou’rt a good boy; this secrecy of thine shall be a tailor to thee, and shall make thee a new doublet and hose. I’ll go hide me.
Mrs. Page. I warrant thee; if I do not act it, hiss me. [Exit.
Mrs. Ford. Go to, then: we’ll use this unwholesome humidity, this gross watery pumision; we’ll teach him to know turtles from jays.

Enter Falstaff.

Fal. ‘Have I caught my heavenly jewel?’ Why, now let me die, for I have lived long enough: this is the period of my ambition; O this blessed hour!
Mrs. Ford. O, sweet Sir John!
Fal. Mistress Ford, I cannot cog, I cannot prate, Mistress Ford. Now shall I sin in my wish: I would thy husband were dead. I’ll speak it before the best lord, I would make thee my lady.
Mrs. Ford. I your lady, Sir John! alas, I should be a pitiful lady.
Fal. Let the court of France show me such another. I see how thine eye would emulate the diamond: thou hast the right arched beauty of the brow that becomes the ship-tire, the tire-valiant, or any tire of Venetian admittance. Mrs. Ford. A plain kerchief, Sir John: my brows become nothing else; nor that well neither.
Fal. By the Lord, thou art a traitor to say so: thou wouldst make an absolute coutier; and the firm fixture of thy foot would give an excellent motion to thy gait in a semi-circled farthingale. I see what thou wert, if fortune thy foe were not, Nature thy friend. Come, thou canst not hide it.
Mrs. Ford. Believe me, there’s no such thing in me.
Fal. What made me love thee? let that persuade thee there’s something extraordinary in thee. Come, I cannot cog and say thou art this and that, like a many of these lisping hawthorn-buds, that come like women in men’s apparel, and smell like Bucklersbury in simple-time; I cannot; but I love thee; none but thee; and thou deservest it.
Mrs. Ford. Do not betray me, sir. I fear you love Mistress Page.
Fal. Thou mightst as well say, I love to walk by the Counter-gate, which is as hateful to me as the reek of a lime-kiln.
Mrs. Ford. Well, heaven knows how I love you; and you shall one day find it.
Fal. Keep in that mind; I’ll deserve it.
Mrs. Ford. Nay, I must tell you, so you do, or else I could not be in that mind.
Rob. [Within.] Mistress Ford! Mistress Ford! here’s Mistress Page at the door, sweating and blowing and looking wildly, and would needs speak with you presently.
Fal. She shall not see me: I will ensconce me behind the arras.
Mrs. Ford. Pray you, do so: she’s a very tattling woman. [Falstaff hides himself.
THE MERRY WIVES OF WINDSOR  Act III, Sc. III.

Re-enter MISTRESS PAGE and ROBIN.

What's the matter? how now! 100

Mrs. Page. O Mistress Ford! what have you done? You're shamed, you are overthrown, you're undone for ever!

Mrs. Ford. What's the matter, good Mistress Page?

Mrs. Page. O well-a-day, Mistress Ford! having an honest man to your husband, to give him such cause of suspicion! 105

Mrs. Ford. What cause of suspicion?

Mrs. Page. What cause of suspicion! Out upon you! how am I mistook in you!

Mrs. Ford. Why, alas, what's the matter? 112

Mrs. Page. Your husband's coming hither, woman, with all the officers of Windsor, to search for a gentleman that he says is here now in the house by your consent, to take an ill advantage of his absence: yo' are undone. 117

Mrs. Ford. [Aside.] Speak louder.—'Tis not so, I hope.

Mrs. Page. Pray heaven it be not so, that you have such a man here! but 'tis most certain your husband's coming with half Windsor at his heels, to search for such a one. I come before to tell you. If you know yourself clear, why, I am glad of it; but if you have a friend here, convey, convey him out. Be not amazed; call all your senses to you: defend your reputation, or bid farewell to your good life for ever. 128

Mrs. Ford. What shall I do?—There is a gentleman, my dear friend; and I fear not mine own shame so much as his peril: I had rather than a thousand pound he were out of the house. 132

Mrs. Page. For shame! never stand 'you had rather' and 'you had rather;' your husband's here at hand; bethink you of some conveyance: in the house you cannot hide him. O, how have you deceived me! Look, here is a basket: if he be of any reasonable stature, he may creep in here; and throw foul linen upon him, as if it were going to bucking: or—it is whiting-time—send him by your two men to Datchet-mead.

Mrs. Ford. He's too big to go in there. What shall I do?

Fal. [Coming forward.] Let me see't, let me see't, O, let me see't! I'll in, I'll in. Follow your friend's counsel. I'll in.

Mrs. Page. What, Sir John Falstaff? Are these your letters, knight? 149

Fal. I love thee, and none but thee; help me away: let me creep in here. I'll never—

[He gets into the basket; they cover him with foul linen.

Mrs. Page. Help to cover your master, boy.

Call your men, Mistress Ford. You dissembling knight! 154


Re-enter Servants.

Go take up these clothes here quickly; where's the cowl-staff? look, how you drumble! carry them to the laundress in Datchet-mead; quickly, come.

Enter FORD, PAGE, CAIUS, and SIR HUGH EVANS.

Ford. Pray you, come near: if I suspect without cause, why then make sport at me; then let me be your jest; I deserve it. How now! what goes here? whither bear you this?

Serv. To the laundress, forsooth. 163

Mrs. Ford. Why, what have you to do whither they bear it? You were best meddle with buck-washing.

Ford. Buck! I would I could wash myself of the buck! Buck, buck, buck! Ay, buck; I warrant you, buck; and of the season too, it shall appear. [Exeunt Servants with the basket.] Gentleman, I have dreamed to-night; I'll tell you my dream. Here, here, here be my keys: ascend my chambers; search, seek, find out: I'll warrant we'll unkennel the fox. Let me stop this way first. [Locking the door.] So, now uncase.

Page. Good Master Ford, be contented: you wrong yourself too much. 177

Ford. True, Master Page. Up, gentlemen; you shall see sport anon: follow me, gentlemen. [Exit.

Eva. This is very fantastical humours and jealousies.

Caius. By gar, 'tis no de fashion of France; it is not jealous in France.

Page. Nay, follow him, gentlemen; see the issue of his search. 185

[Exeunt Page, Caius, and Evans.

Mrs. Page. Is there not a double excellency in this?

Mrs. Ford. I know not which pleases me better; that my husband is deceived, or Sir John. Mrs. Page. What a taking was he in when your husband asked who was in the basket! 191

Mrs. Ford. I am half afraid he will have need of washing; so throwing him into the water will do him a benefit.

Mrs. Page. Hang him, dishonest rascal! I would all of the same strain were in the same distress.

Mrs. Ford. I think my husband hath some special suspicion of Falstaff's being here; for I never saw him so gross in his jealousy till now.

Mrs. Page. I will lay a plot to try that; and
we will yet have more tricks with Falstaff: his dissolute disease will scarce obey this medicine.

Mrs. Ford. Shall we send that foolish carrion Mistress Quickly to him, and excuse his throwing into the water; and give him another hope, to betray him to another punishment? 207

Mrs. Page. We will do it: let him be sent for to-morrow, eight o’clock, to have amends. 209

Re-enter Ford, Page, Caius, and Sir Hugh Evans.

Ford. I cannot find him: may be the knave bragged of that he could not compass.

Mrs. Page. [Aside to Mrs. Ford.] Heard you that? 213

Mrs. Ford. [Aside to Mrs. Page.] Ay, ay, peace.—You use me well, Master Ford, do you?

Ford. Ay, I do so. 216

Mrs. Ford. Heaven make you better than your thoughts!

Ford. Amen!

Mrs. Page. You do yourself mighty wrong, Master Ford. 221

Ford. Ay, ay; I must bear it.

Eva. If there pe any body in the house, and in the chambers, and in the coffers, and in the presses, heaven forgive my sins at the day of judgment!

Caius. By gar, nor I too, dere is no bodies.

Page. Fie, fie, Master Ford! are you not ashamed? What spirit, what devil suggests this imagination? I would not ha’ your distemper in this kind for the wealth of Windsor Castle.

Ford. Tis my fault, Master Page: I suffer for it.

Eva. You suffer for a par conscience: your wife is as honest a ‘romans as I will desires among five thousand, and five hundred too. 235

Caius. By gar, I see tis an honest woman.

Ford. Well; I promised you a dinner. Come, come, walk in the Park: I pray you, pardon me; I will hereafter make known to you why I have done this. Come, wife; come, Mistress Page. I pray you, pardon me; pray heartily, pardon me.

Page. Let’s go in, gentlemen; but, trust me, we’ll mock him. I do invite you to-morrow morning to my house to breakfast; after, we’ll a-birding together: I have a fine hawk for the bush. Shall it be so? 246

Ford. Any thing.

Eva. If there is one, I shall make two in the company.

Caius. If dere be one or two, I shall make-a de turd.

Ford. Pray you go, Master Page. 252

Eva. I pray you now, remembrance tomorrow on the lousy knave, mine host.

Caius. Dat is good; by gar, vit all my heart.

Eva. A lousy knave! to have his gibes and his mockeries! 256

Exeunt.

SCENE IV.—A Room in Page’s House.

Enter Fenton, Anne Page, and Mistress Quickly. Mistress Quickly stands apart.

Fent. I see I cannot get thy father’s love;
Therefore no more turn me to him, sweet Nan.
Anne. Alas! how then?

Fent. Why, thou must be thyself.
He doth object, I am too great of birth, 4
And that my state being gall’d with my expense,
I seek to heal it only by his wealth.
Besides these, other bars he lays before me,
My riots past, my wild societies;
And tells me ‘tis a thing impossible
I should love thee but as a property.
Anne. May be he tells you true.

Fent. No, heaven so speed me in my time to come! 12
Albeit I will confess thy father’s wealth
Was the first motive that I woo’d thee, Anne;
Yet, wooing thee, I found thee of more value
Than stamps in gold or sums in sealed bags; 16
And ‘tis the very riches of thyself
That now I aim at.

Anne. Gentle Master Fenton,
Yet seek my father’s love; still seek it, sir:
If opportunity and humble suit 20
Cannot attain it, why, then,—bark you hither.

[They converse apart.

Enter Shallow and Slender.

Shal. Break their talk, Mistress Quickly: my kinsman shall speak for himself.

Slent. I’ll make a shaft or a bolt on’t. ’Slid, ’tis but venturing. 25

Shal. Be not dismayed.

Slent. No, she shall not dismay me: I care not for that, but that I am afraid. 28

Quick. Hark ye; Master Slender would speak a word with you.

Anne. I come to him. [Aside.] This is my father’s choice.

O, what a world of vile ill-favour’d faults 32
Looks handsome in three hundred pounds a year!

Quick. And how does good Master Fenton?

Pray you, a word with you.

Shal. She’s coming; to her, coz. O boy, thou hadst a father! 37

Slent. I had a father, Mistress Anne; my uncle can tell you good jests of him. Pray you, uncle, tell Mistress Anne the jest, how my father stole two geese out of a pen, good uncle. 41

Shal. Mistress Anne, my cousin loves you.
Sten. Ay, that I do; as well as I love any woman in Glos|tershire.

Shal. He will maintain you like a gentle|woman.

Sten. Ay, that I will, come cut and long-tail, under the degree of a squire.

Shal. He will make you a hundred and fifty pounds jointure.

Anne. Good Master Shallow, let him woo for himself.

Shal. Marry, I thank you for it; I thank you for that good comfort. She calls you, coz: I'll leave you.

Anne. Now, Master Slender.

Sten. Now, good Mistress Anne.—

Anne. What is your will?

Sten. My will? od's heartlings! that's a pretty jest, indeed! I ne'er made my will yet, I thank heaven; I am not such a sickly creature, I give heaven praise.

Anne. I mean, Master Slender, what would you with me?

Sten. Truly, for mine own part, I would little or nothing with you. Your father and my uncle have made motions: if it be my luck, so; if not, happy man be his dole! They can tell you how things go better than I can: you may ask your father; here he comes.

Enter PAGE and MISTRESS PAGE.

Page. Now, Master Slender: love him, daughter Anne.

Why, how now! what does Master Fenton here? You told me, sir, thus still to haunt my house:

I told you, sir, my daughter is dispos'd of.

Fent. Nay, Master Page, be not impatient.

Mrs. Page. Good Master Fenton, come not to my child.

Page. She is no match for you.

Fent. Sir, will you hear me?

Page. No, good Master Fenton. Come, Master Shallow; come, son Slender, in. Knowing my mind, you wrong me, Master Fenton.

[Exeunt PAGE, SHALLOW, and SLENDER.

Quick. Speak to Mistress Page.

Fent. Good Mistress Page, for that I love your daughter
In such a righteous fashion as I do,
Perforce, against all checks, rebukes and manners,
I must advance the colours of my love
And not retire: let me have your good will.

Anne. Good mother, do not marry me to yond fool.

Mrs. Page. I mean it not; I seek you a better husband.

Quick. That's my master, Master doctor.

Anne. Alas! I had rather be set quick i' the earth,
And blow'd to death with turnips.

Mrs. Page. Come, trouble not yourself. Good Master Fenton,
I will not be your friend nor enemy:
My daughter will I question how she loves you,
And as I find her, so am I affected.
'Till then, farewell, sir: she must needs go in;
Her father will be angry.

Fent. Farewell, gentle mistress. Farewell,
Nan. [Exeunt MISTRESS PAGE and ANNE.

Quick. This is my doing, now: 'Nay,' said I,
'will you cast away your child on a fool, and a physician? Look on Master Fenton.' This is my doing.

Fent. I thank thee: and I pray thee, once to-night
Give my sweet Nan this ring. There's for thy pains.

Quick. Now heaven send thee good fortune!
[Exit FENTON.] A kind heart he hath: a woman would run through fire and water for such a kind heart. But yet I would my master had Mistress Anne; or I would Master Slender had her; or, in sooth, I would Master Fenton had her. I will do what I can for them all three, for so I have promised, and I'll be as good as my word; but specially for Master Fenton. Well, I must of another errand to Sir John Falstaff from my two mistresses: what a beast am I to slack it!

[Exit.

SCENE V.—A Room in the Garter Inn.

Enter FALSTAFF and BARDOLPH.

Fal. Bardolph, I say,—

Bard. Here, sir.

Fal. Go fetch me a quart of sack; put a toast in't. [Exit BARD.] Have I lived to be carried in a basket, and to be thrown in the Thames like a barrel of butcher's offal? Well, if I be served such another trick, I'll have my brains ta'en out, and buttered, and give them to a dog for a new year's gift. The rogues slighted me into the river with as little remorse as they would have drowned a blind bitch's puppies, fifteen i' the litter; and you may know by my size that I have a kind of alacrity in sinking: if the bottom were as deep as hell, I should down. I had been drowned but that the shore was shelvy and shallow; a death that I abhor, for the water swells a man, and what a thing should I have been when I had been swelled! I should have been a mountain of mummy.
Re-enter BARDOLPH, with the sack.

Bard. Here's Mistress Quickly, sir, to speak with you. 21

Fal. Come, let me pour in some sack to the Thames water, for my belly's as cold as if I had swallowed snowballs for pills to cool the reins. Call her in. 25

Bard. Come in, woman.

Enter MISTRESS QUICKLY.

Quick. By your leave. I cry you mercy: give your worship good morrow. 28

Fal. Take away these chalices. Go brew me a potle of sack finely.

Bard. With eggs, sir? 41

Fal. Simple of itself; I'll no pullet-sperm in my brewage. [Exit BARDOLPH.]—How now! 53

Quick. Marry, sir, I come to your worship from Mistress Ford.

Fal. Mistress Ford! I have had ford enough; I was thrown into the ford; I have my belly full of ford. 38

Quick. Alas the day! good heart, that was not her fault: she does so take on with her men; they mistook their erection. 41

Fal. So did I mine, to build upon a foolish woman's promise.

Quick. Well, she laments, sir, for it, that it would yearn your heart to see it. Her husband goes this morning a-birding: she desires you once more to come to her between eight and nine. I must carry her word quickly: she'll make you amends, I warrant you. 49

Fal. Well, I will visit her: tell her so; and bid her think what a man is: let her consider his frailty, and then judge of my merit. 52

Quick. I will tell her.

Fal. Do so. Between nine and ten, sayest thou? 60

Quick. Eight and nine, sir.

Fal. Well, be gone: I will not miss her. 56

Quick. Peace be with you, sir. [Exit.

Fal. I marvel! I hear not of Master Brook; he sent me word to stay within. I like his money well. Oh here he comes. 60

Enter FORD.

Ford. Bless you, sir!

Fal. Now, Master Brook, you come to know what hath passed between me and Ford's wife? 64

Ford. That, indeed, Sir John, is my business.

Fal. Master Brook, I will not lie to you: I was at her house the hour she appointed me. 68

Ford. And how sped you, sir?

Fal. Very ill-favouredly, Master Brook.

Ford. How so, sir? did she change her determination? 72

Fal. No, Master Brook; but the peaking cornuto her husband, Master Brook, dwelling in a continual larum of jealousy, comes me in the instant of our encounter, after we had embraced, kissed, protested, and, as it were, spoke the prologue of our comedy; and at his heels a rabble of his companions, thither provoked and instigated by his distemper, and, forsooth, to search his house for his wife's love. 81

Ford. What! while you were there?

Fal. While I was there.

Ford. And did he search for you, and could not find you? 85

Fal. You shall hear. As good luck would have it, comes in one Mistress Page; gives intelligence of Ford's approach; and in her invention, and Ford's wife's distraction, they conveyed me into a buck-basket. 90

Ford. A buck-basket!

Fal. By the Lord, a buck-basket! rammed me in with foul shirts and smocks, socks, foul stockings, greasy napkins; that, Master Brook, there was the rankest compound of villainous smell that ever offended nostril. 96

Ford. And how long lay you there?

Fal. Nay, you shall hear, Master Brook, what I have suffered to bring this woman to evil for your good. Being thus crammed in the basket, a couple of Ford's knaves, his hinds, were called forth by their mistress to carry me in the name of foul clothes to Datchet-lane: they took me on their shoulders; met the jealous knave their master in the door, who asked them once or twice what they had in their basket. I quaked for fear lest the lunatic knave would have searched it; but Fate, ordaining he should be a cuckold, held his hand. Well; on went he for a search, and away want I for foul clothes. But mark the sequel, Master Brook: I suffered the pangs of several deaths: first, an intolerable fright, to be detected with a jealous rotten bell-wether; next, to be compassed, like a good bilbo, in the circumference of a peck, hilt to point, heel to head; and then, to be stopped in, like a strong distillation, with stinking clothes that fretted in their own grease: think of that, a man of my kidney, think of that, that am as subject to heat as butter; a man of continual dissolution and thaw: it was a miracle to escape suffocation. And in the height of this bath, when I was more than half stewed in grease, like a Dutch dish, to be thrown into the Thames, and cooled, glowing hot, in that surge, like a horse-shoe; think of that, hissing hot, think of that, Master Brook! 127
Ford. In good sadness, sir, I am sorry that for my sake you have suffered all this. My suit then is desperate; you'll undertake her no more?

Fal. Master Brook, I will be thrown into Etna, as I have been into Thames, ere I will leave her thus. Her husband is this morning gone a-birding: I have received from her another embassy of meeting; 'twixt eight and nine is the hour, Master Brook.

Ford. 'Tis past eight already, sir.

Fal. Is it? I will then address me to my appointment. Come to me at your convenient leisure, and you shall know how I speed, and the conclusion shall be crowned with your enjoying her: adieu. You shall have her, Master Brook; Master Brook, you shall cuckold Ford.

[Exit.

Ford. Hum! ha! is this a vision? is this a dream? do I sleep? Master Ford, awake! awake, Master Ford! there's a hole made in your best coat, Master Ford. This 'tis to be married: this 'tis to have linen and buck-baskets! Well, I will proclaim myself what I am: I will now take the lecher; he is at my house; he cannot 'scape me; 'tis impossible he should; he cannot creep into a half-penny purse, nor into a pepper-box; but, lest the devil that guides him should aid him, I will search impossible places. Though what I am I cannot avoid, yet to be what I would not, shall not make me tame: if I have horns to make me mad, let the proverb go with me; I'll be horn-mad.

[Exit.

ACT IV.

SCENE I.—The Street.

Enter Mistress Page, Mistress Quickly, and William.

Mrs. Page. Is he at Master Ford's already, thinkest thou?

Quick. Sure he is by this, or will be presently; but truly, he is very courageous mad about his throwing into the water. Mistress Ford desires you to come suddenly.

Mrs. Page. I'll be with her by and by: I'll but bring my young man here to school. Look, where his master comes; 'tis a playing-day, I see.

Enter Sir Hugh Evans.

How now, Sir Hugh! no school to-day?

Eva. No; Master Slender is get the boys leave to play.

Quick. Blessing of his heart!

Mrs. Page. Sir Hugh, my husband says my son profits nothing in the world at his book: I pray you, ask him some questions in his accident.

Eva. Come hither, William; hold up your head; come.

Mrs. Page. Come on, sirrah; hold up your head; answer your master, be not afraid.

Eva. William, how many numbers is in nouns?

Will. Two.

Quick. Truly, I thought there had been one number more, because they say, 'Cd's nouns.'

Eva. Peace your tattings! What is fair, William?

Will. Pulcher.

Quick. Polecats! there are fairer things than polecats, sure.

Eva. You are a very simplicity 'oman: I pray you peace. What is lapis, William?

Will. A stone.

Eva. And what is a stone, William?

Will. A pebble.

Eva. No, it is lapis: I pray you remember in your prais.

Will. Lapis.

Eva. That is a good William. What is he, William, that does lend articles?

Will. Articles are borrowed of the pronoun, and be thus declined, Singulariter, nominativo, hic, hae, hoc.

Eva. Nominitativo, hig, hag, hog; pray you, mark: gentativo, hujus. Well, what is your accusative case?

Will. Accusativo, hic.

Eva. I pray you, have your remembrance, child; accusativo, hung, hang, hog.

Quick. Hang hog is Latin for bacon, I warrant you.

Eva. Leave your prabbles, 'oman. What is the locative case, William?

Will. O vocativo, O.

Eva. Remember, William; locative is caret.

Quick. And that's a good root.

Eva. 'Oman, forbear.

Mrs. Page. Peace!

Eva. What is your genitive case plural, William?

Will. Genitive case?

Eva. Ay.

Will. Genitive, horum, harum, hormum.

Quick. Vengeance of Jenny's case! fie on her! Never name her, child, if she be a whore.

Eva. For shame, 'oman!

Quick. You do ill to teach the child such words. He teaches him to hick and to hack, which they'll do fast enough of themselves, and to call 'horum?' fie upon you!

Eva. 'Oman, art thou lunatics? hast thou no understandings for thy cases and the numbers
and the genders? Thou art as foolish Christian creatures as I would desires.

Mrs. Page. Prithie, hold thy peace. 76

Eva. Show me now, William, some declensions of your pronouns.

Will. Forsooth, I have forgot.

Eva. It is qui, qua, quod; if you forget your qui, your quæ, and your quods, you must be preeches. Go your ways and play; go.

Mrs. Page. He is a better scholar than I thought he was. 84

Eva. He is a sprig smack memory. Farewell, Mistress Page.


[Exeunt.

SCENE II.—A Room in Ford's House.

Enter Falstaff and Mistress Ford.

Fal. Mistress Ford, your sorrow hath eaten up my sufferance. I see you are obsequious in your love, and I profess requital to a hair's breadth; not only, Mistress Ford, in the simple office of love, but in all the accoutrement, complement and ceremony of it. But are you sure of your husband now?

Mrs. Ford. He's a-birding, sweet Sir John. 8

Mrs. Page. [Within.] What ho! gossip Ford! what ho!

Mrs. Ford. Step into the chamber, Sir John. 11

[Exit Falstaff.

Enter Mistress Page.

Mrs. Page. How now, sweetheart! who's at home besides yourself? 13

Mrs. Ford. Why, none but mine own people.

Mrs. Page. Indeed!

Mrs. Ford. No, certainly.—[Aside to her.] Speak louder.

Mrs. Page. Truly, I am so glad you have nobody here.

Mrs. Ford. Why?

Mrs. Page. Why, woman, your husband is in his old lunes again: he so takes on yonder with my husband; so rails against all married mankind; so curses all Eve's daughters, of what complexion soever; and so buffets himself on the forehead, crying, 'Peer out, peer out!' that any madness I ever yet beheld seemed but tameness, civility and patience, to this his distemper he is in now. I am glad the fat knight is not here.

Mrs. Ford. Why, does he talk of him?

Mrs. Page. Of none but him; and swears he was carried out, the last time he searched for him, in a basket; protests to my husband he is now here, and hath drawn him and the rest of their company from their sport, to make another experiment of his suspicion. But I am glad the knight is not here; now he shall see his own foole.

Mrs. Ford. How near is he, Mistress Page? 40

Mrs. Page. Hard by; at street end; he will be here anon.

Mrs. Ford. I am undone! the knight is here.

Mrs. Page. Why then you are utterly shamed, and he's but a dead man. What a woman are you! Away with him, away with him! better shame than murder. 47

Mrs. Ford. Which way should he go? how should I bestow him? Shall I put him into the basket again?

Re-enter Falstaff.

Fal. 'No, I'll come no more i' the basket. May I not go out ere he come? 52

Mrs. Page. Alas! three of Master Ford's brothers watch the door with pistols, that none shall issue out; otherwise you might slip away ere he came. But what make you here? 56

Fal. What shall I do? I'll creep up into the chimney.

Mrs. Ford. There they always use to discharge their birding-pieces.

Mrs. Page. Creep into the kiln-hole.

Fal. Where is it?

Mrs. Ford. He will seek there, on my word. Neither press, coffer, chest, trunk, well, vault, but he hath an abstract for the remembrance of such places, and goes to them by his note: there is no hiding you in the house.

Fal. I'll go out, then. 68

Mrs. Page. If you go out in your own semblance, you die, Sir John. Unless you go out disguised,—

Mrs. Ford. How might we disguise him? 72

Mrs. Page. Alas the day! I know not. There is no woman's gown big enough for him; otherwise, he might put on a hat, a muffler, and a kerchief, and so escape. 76

Fal. Good hearts, devise something: any extremity rather than a mischief.

Mrs. Ford. My maid's aunt, the fat woman of Brainford, has a gown above.

Mrs. Page. On my word, it will serve him; she's as big as he is: and there's her thrummed hat and her muffler too. Run up, Sir John.

Mrs. Ford. Go, go, sweet Sir John: Mistress Page and I will look some linen for your head.

Mrs. Page. Quick, quick! we'll come dress you straight; put on the gown the while. 87

Fal. [Exit Falstaff.

Mrs. Ford. I would my husband would meet
him in this shape: he cannot abide the old woman of Brainford; he swears she's a witch; forbade her my house, and hath threatened to beat her.

Mrs. Page. Heaven guide him to thy husband's cudgel, and the devil guide his cudgel afterwards!

Mrs. Ford. But is my husband coming?

Mrs. Page. Ay, in good sadness, is he; and talks of the basket too, howsoever he hath had intelligence.

Mrs. Ford. We'll try that; for I'll appoint my men to carry the basket again, to meet him at the door with it, as they did last time.

Mrs. Page. Nay, but he'll be here presently: let's go dress him like the witch of Brainford.

Mrs. Ford. I'll first direct my men what they shall do with the basket. Go up; I'll bring linen for him straight. [Exit.

Mrs. Page. Hang him, dishonest varlet! we cannot misuse him enough.

We'll leave a proof, by that which we will do, Wives may be merry, and yet honest too: We do not act that often jest and laugh; 'Tis old, but true, 'Still swine eats all the draft.' [Exit.

Re-enter Mistress Ford, with two Servants.

Mrs. Ford. Go, sirs, take the basket again on your shoulders: your master is hard at door; if he bid you set it down, obey him. Quickly; dispatch. [Exit.

First Serv. Come, come, take it up. Sec. Serv. Pray heaven, it be not full of knight again.

First Serv. I hope not; I had as lief bear so much lead.

Enter Ford, Page, Shallow, Caius, and Sir Hugh Evans.

Ford. Ay, but if it prove true, Master Page, have you any way then to unfool me again? Set down the basket, villains. Somebody call my wife. Youth in a basket! O you panderly rascals! there's a knot, a ging, a pack, a conspiracy against me: now shall the devil be shamed. What, wife, I say! Come, come forth! Behold what honest clothes you send forth to bleaching!

Page. Why, this passes! Master Ford, you are not to go loose any longer; you must be pinioned.

Eva. Why, this is lunatics! this is mad as a mad dog!

Shal. Indeed, Master Ford, this is not well, indeed.

Ford. So say I too, sir.—

Re-enter Mistress Ford.

Come hither, Mistress Ford, the honest woman, the modest wife, the virtuous creature, that hath the jealous fool to her husband! I suspect without cause, mistress, do I?

Mrs. Ford. Heaven be my witness, you do, if you suspect me in any dishonesty.

Ford. Well said, brazen-face! hold it out. Come forth, sIRRah! [Pulls the clothes out of the basket.

Page. This passeth!

Mrs. Ford. Are you not ashamed? let the clothes alone.

Ford. I shall find you anon.

Eva. 'Tis unreasonable. Will you take up your wife's clothes? Come away.

Ford. Empty the basket, I say!

Mrs. Ford. Why, man, why?

Ford. Master Page, as I am an honest man, there was one conveyed out of my house yesterday in this basket: why may not he be there again? In my house I am sure he is; my intelligence is true; my jealousy is reasonable. Pluck me out all the linen.

Mrs. Ford. If you find a man there he shall die a flea's death.

Page. Here's no man.

Shal. By my fidelity, this is not well, Master Ford; this wrongs you.

Eva. Master Ford, you must pray, and not follow the imaginations of your own heart: this is jealousies.

Ford. Well, he's not here I seek for.

Page. No, nor nowhere else but in your brain.

[Servants carry away the basket.

Ford. Help to search my house this one time: if I find not what I seek, show no colour for my extremity; let me for ever be your table-sport; let them say of me, 'As jealous as Ford, that searched a hollow walnut for his wife's leman.' Satisfy me once more; once more search with me.

Mrs. Ford. What ho, Mistress Page! come you and the old woman down; my husband will come into the chamber.

Ford. Old woman! What old woman's that?

Mrs. Ford. Why, it is my maid's aunt of Brainford.

Ford. A witch, a queen, an old cozening queen! Have I not forbid her my house? She comes of errands, does she? We are simple men; we do not know what's brought to pass under the profession of fortune-telling. She works by charms, by spells, by the figure, and such daubery as this is, beyond our element: we know nothing. Come down, you witch, you hag, you; come down, I say!
Act IV, Sc. II.  THE MERRY WIVES OF WINDSOR

Mrs. Ford. Nay, good, sweet husband! good gentlemen, let him not strike the old woman.

Enter Falstaff in women’s clothes, led by
Mistress Page.

Mrs. Page. Come, Mother Prat; come, give me your hand. 196

Ford. I’ll ‘prat’ her.—[Beats him.] Out of my door, you witch, you rag, you baggage, you polecat, you ronyon! out, out! I’ll conjure you, I’ll fortune-tell you. [Exit Falstaff.

Mrs. Page. Are you not ashamed? I think you have killed the poor woman.

Mrs. Ford. Nay, he will do it. ’Tis a goodly credit for you. 204

Ford. Hang her, witch!

Eva. By yea and no, I think the ’oman is a witch indeed: I like not when a ’oman has a great peard; I spy a great peard under her muffler.

Ford. Will you follow, gentlemen? I beseech you, follow: see but the issue of my jealousy. If I cry out thus upon no trall, never trust me when I open again. 209

Page. Let’s obey his humour a little further. Come, gentlemen.

[Exeunt Ford, Page, Shallow, Caius, and Evans.

Mrs. Page. Trust me, he beat him most pitifully.

Mrs. Ford. Nay, by the mass, that he did not; he beat him most unpitifully methought.

Mrs. Page. I’ll have the cudgel hallowed and hung o’er the altar: it hath done meritorious service.

Mrs. Ford. What think you? May we, with the warrant of womanhood and the witness of a good conscience, pursue him with any further revenge?

Mrs. Page. The spirit of wantonness is, sure, scared out of him: if the devil have him not in see-simple, with fine and recovery, he will never, I think, in the way of waste, attempt us again.

Mrs. Ford. Shall we tell our husbands how we have served him?

Mrs. Page. Yes, by all means; if it be but to scrape the figures out of your husband’s brains. If they can find in their hearts the poor unvirtuous fat knight shall be any further afflicted, we two will still be the ministers. 226

Mrs. Ford. I’ll warrant they’ll have him publicly shamed, and methinks there would be no period to the jest, should be not be publicly shamed.

Mrs. Page. Come, to the forge with it then; shape it: I would not have things cool. [Exeunt.

Scene III.—A Room in the Garter Inn.

Enter Host and Bardolph.

Ford. Sir, the Germans desire to have three of your horses: the duke himself will be to-morrow at court, and they are going to meet him. 3

Host. What duke should that be comes so secretly? I hear not of him in the court. Let me speak with the gentlemen; they speak English?

Bard. Ay, sir; I’ll call them to you. 8

Host. They shall have my horses, but I’ll make them pay; I’ll sauce them: they have had my house a week at command; I have turned away my other guests: they must come off; I’ll sauce them. Come. [Exeunt.

Scene IV.—A Room in Ford’s House.

Enter Page, Ford, Mistress Page, Mistress Ford, and Sir Hugh Evans.

Eva. ’Tis one of the pest discretions of a ’oman as ever I did look upon.

Page. And did he send you both these letters at an instant?

Mrs. Page. Within a quarter of an hour.

Ford. Pardon me, wife. Henceforth do what thou wilt;

I rather will suspect the sun with cold
Than thee with wantonness: now doth thy honour stand,

In him that was of late an heretic,

As firm as faith.

Page. ’Tis well, ’tis well; no more.

Be not as extreme in submission
As in offence;

But let our plot go forward: let our wives
Yet once again, to make us public sport,

Appoint a meeting with this old fat fellow,

Where we may take him and disgrace him for it.

Ford. There is no better way than that they spoke of.


Eva. You say he has been thrown into the rivers, and has been grievously peatoned as an old ’oman: methinks there should be terrors in him that he should not come; methinks his flesh is punished, he shall have no desires.

Page. So think I too.

Mrs. Ford. Devise but how you’ll use him when he comes,
And let us two devise to bring him thither. 28

Mrs. Page. There is an old tale goes that Herne the hunter,
Sometime a keeper here in Windsor forest,
Doth all the winter-time, at still midnight,
Walk round about an oak, with great ragg’d horns;
And there he blasts the tree, and takes the cattle,
And makes milch-kine yield blood, and shakes a chain
In a most hideous and dreadful manner:
You have heard of such a spirit, and well you know
The superstitious idle-headed eld
Receiv’d and did deliver to our age
This tale of Herne the hunter for a truth.

Page. Why, yet there want not many that do fear .

In deep of night to walk by this Herne’s oak.
But what of this?

Mrs. Ford. Marry, this is our device;
That Falstaff at that oak shall meet with us,
Disguis’d like Herne with huge horns on his head.

Page. Well, let it not be doubted but he’ll come,
And in this shape when you have brought him thither,
What shall be done with him? what is your plot?

Mrs. Page. That likewise have we thought upon, and thus:

Nan Page my daughter, and my little son,
And three or four more of their growth, we’ll dress
Like urchins, ouphs and fairies, green and white,
With rounds of waxes tapers on their heads, 52
And rattles in their hands. Upon a sudden,
As Falstaff, she, and I, are newly met,
Let them from forth a sawpitt rush at once
With some diffusèd song: upon their sight,
We two in great amazedness will fly:
Then let them all encircle him about,
And, fairy-like, to-pinch the unclean knight;
And ask him why, that hour of fairy revel,
In their so sacred paths he dares to tread
In shape profane.

Mrs. Ford. And till he tell the truth,
Let the supposed fairies pinch him sound
And burn him with their tapers.

Mrs. Page. The truth being known, 64
We’ll all present ourselves, dis-horn the spirit,
And mock him home to Windsor.

Ford. The children must be practis’d well to this, or they’ll ne’er do’t.

Eva. I will teach the children their behaviours; and I will be like a jack-an-apes also, to burn the knight with my taber.

Ford. That will be excellent. I’ll go buy them vizards.

Mrs. Page. My Nan shall be the queen of all the fairies,
Finely attired in a robe of white.

Page. That silk will I go buy:—[Aside] and in that time
Shall Master Slender steal my Nan away,
And marry her at Eton. Go, send to Falstaff straight.

Ford. Nay, I’ll to him again in name of Brook;
He’ll tell me all his purpose. Sure, he’ll come.

Mrs. Page. Fear not you that. Go, get us properties,
And tricking for our fairies.

Eva. Let us about it: it is admirable pleasures and very honest knavery.

[Exeunt Page, Ford, and Evans.

Mrs. Page. Go, Mistress Ford,
Send quickly to Sir John, to know his mind.

[Exit Page.

Mrs. Ford. I’ll to the doctor: he hath my good will,
And none but he, to marry with Nan Page.
That Slender, though well landed, is an idiot; 88
And him my husband best of all affects:
The doctor is well money’d, and his friends
Potent at court: he, none but he, shall have her,
Though twenty thousand worthier come to crave her.

Exit. 

Scene V.—A Room in the Garter Inn.

Enter Host and Simple.

Host. What wouldst thou have, boor? what, thick-skinned speak, breathe, discuss; brief, short, quick, snap.

Simple. Marry, sir, I come to speak with Sir John Falstaff from Master Slender.

Host. There’s his chamber, his house, his castle, his standing-bed and truckle-bed: ‘tis painted about with the story of the Prodigal, fresh and new. Go knock and call: he’ll speak like an Anthropophagin unto thee: knock, I say.

Simple. There’s an old woman, a fat woman, gone up into his chamber: I’ll be so bold as stay, sir, till she come down; I come to speak with her, indeed.

Host. Hal a fat woman! the knight may be robbed: I’ll call. Bully knight! Bully Sir John! speak from thy lungs military: art thou there? it is thine host, thine Ephesian, calls.

Ford. [Above.] How now, mine host!

Host. Here’s a Bohemian-Tartar terries the coming down of thy fat woman. Let her descend, bully; let her descend; my chambers are honourable: fiel privacy? fiel
Enter Falstaff.

Fal. There was, mine host, an old fat woman even now with me, but she's gone.

Sim. Pray you, sir, was't not the wise woman of Brainford? 28

Fal. Ay, marry, was it, muscle-shell: what would you with her?

Sim. My Master, sir, Master Slender, sent to her, seeing her go through the streets, to know, sir, whether one Nym, sir, that beguiled him of a chain, had the chain or no. 34

Fal. I spake with the old woman about it.

Sim. And what says she, I pray, sir? 36

Fal. Marry, she says that the very same man that beguiled Master Slender of his chain cozened him of it.

Sim. I would I could have spoken with the woman herself. I had other things to have spoken with her too, from him.

Fal. What are they? let us know.

Host. Ay, come; quick. 44

Sim. I may not conceal them, sir.

Host. Conceal them, or thou diest.

Sim. Why, sir, they were nothing but about Mistress Anne Page; to know if it were my master's fortune to have her or no. 49

Fal. 'Ts, 'ts his fortune.

Sim. What, sir?

Fal. To have her, or no. Go; say the woman told me so. 53

Sim. May I be bold to say so, sir?

Fal. Ay, Sir Tike; who more bold?

Sim. I thank your worship: I shall make my master glad with these tidings. [Exit. 59

Host. Thou art clerkly, thou art clerkly, Sir John. Was there a wise woman with thee? 59

Fal. That there was, mine host; one that hath taught me more wit than ever I learned before in my life: and I paid nothing for it neither, but was paid for my learning. 63

Enter Bardolph.

Bard. Out, alas, sir! cozenage, mere cozenage!

Host. Where be my horses? speak well of them, varletto. 66

Bard. Run away, with the cozeners; for so soon as I came beyond Eton, they threw me off, from behind one of them, in a slough of mire; and set spurs and away, like three German devils, three Doctor Faustuses. 71

Host. They are gone but to meet the duke, villain. Do not say they be fled: Germans are honest men.

Enter Sir Hugh Evans.

Eva. Where is mine host?

Host. What is the matter, sir? 76
THE MERRY WIVES OF WINDSOR

Act V, Sc. I.

warrant, to your content. Here is a letter will say somewhat. Good hearts! what ado here is to bring you together! Sure, one of you does not serve heaven well, that you are so crossed.

Fal. Come up into my chamber. [Exeunt.

SCENE VI.—Another Room in the Garter Inn.

Enter Fenton and Host.

Host. Master Fenton, talk not to me: my mind is heavy; I will give over all.

Fent. Yet hear me speak. Assist me in my purpose, And, as I am a gentleman, I'll give thee A hundred pound in gold more than your loss.

Host. I will hear you, Master Fenton; and I will, at the least, keep your counsel.

Fent. From time to time I have acquainted you With, dear love I bear to fair Anne Page; who, mutually hath answer'd my affection, So far forth as herself might be her chooser, Even to my wish. I have a letter from her Of such contents as you will wonder at; The mirth whereof so larded with my matter, That neither singly can be manifested, Without the show of both; wherein Falstaff Hath a great scare: the image of the jest I'll show you here at large [Pointing to the Letter]. Hark, good mine host: To-night at Herne's oak, just 'twixt twelve and one,

Must my sweet Nan present the Fairy Queen; The purpose why, is here: in which disguise, While other jests are something rank on foot, Her father hath commanded her to slip Away with Slender, and with him at Eton Immediately to marry; she hath consented: Now, sir, Her mother, even strong against that match And firm for Doctor Caius, hath appointed That he shall likewise shuffle her away, While other sports are tasking of their minds; And at the deanery, where a priest attends, Straight marry her: to this her mother's plot She, seemingly obedient, likewise hath Made promise to the doctor. Now, thus it rests:

Her father means she shall be all in white, And in that habit, when Slender sees his time To take her by the hand and bid her go, She shall go with him: her mother hath intended, The better to denote her to the doctor,— For they must all be mask'd and vizarded— That quaint in green she shall be loose enrob'd, With ribands pendent, flattering about her head; And when the doctor spies his vantage ripe,

To pinch her by the hand; and on that token The maid hath given consent to go with him.

Host. Which means she to deceive, father or mother?

Fent. Both, my good host, to go along with me:

And here it rests, that you'll procure the vicar To stay for me at church 'twixt twelve and one, And, in the lawful name of marrying, To give our hearts united ceremony.

Host. Well, husband your device; I'll to the vicar.

Bring you the maid, you shall not lack a priest.

Fent. So shall I evermore be bound to thee; Besides, I'll make a present recompense. [Exeunt.

ACT V.

SCENE I.—A Room in the Garter Inn.

Enter Falstaff and Mistress Quickly.

Fal. Prithee, no more prattling; go: I'll hold. This is the third time; I hope good luck lies in odd numbers. Away! go. They say there is divinity in odd numbers, either in nativity, chance or death. Away!

Quick. I'll provide you a chain, and I'll do what I can to get you a pair of horns.

Fal. Away, I say; time wears: hold up your head, and mine. [Exit Mistress Quickly.

Enter Ford.

How now, Master Brook! Master Brook, the matter will be known to-night, or never. Be you in the Park about midnight, at Herne's oak, and you shall see wonders.

Ford. Went you not to her yesterday, sir, as you told me you had appointed?

Fal. I went to her, Master Brook, as you see, like a poor old man; but I came from her, Master Brook, like a poor old woman. That same knave Ford, her husband, hath the finest mad devil of jealousy in him, Master Brook, that ever govern'd frenzy. I will tell you: he beat me grievously, in the shape of a woman; for in the shape of a man, Master Brook, I fear not Goliath with a weaver's beam, because I know also life is a shuttle. I am in haste: go along with me; I'll tell you all, Master Brook. Since I plucked geese, played truant, and whipped top, I knew not what it was to be beaten till lately. Follow me: I'll tell you strange things of this knave Ford, on whom to-night I will be revenged, and I will deliver his wife into your hand.
ACT V, SC. I.

THE MERRY WIVES OF WINDSOR

Follow. Strange things in hand, Master Brook!
Follow. [Exeunt.

SCENE II.—Windsor Park

Enter PAGE, SHALLOW, and SLENDER.

PAGE. Come, come; we'll couch i' the castle-ditch till we see the light of our fairies. Remember, son Slander, my daughter.

SLEN. Ay, forsooth; I have spoke with her and we have a mayword how to know one another. I come to her in white, and cry, 'mum,' she cries, 'budget,' and by that we know one another.

SHAL. That's good too: but what needs either your 'mum,' or her 'budget,' the white will decipher her well enough. It hath struck ten o'clock.

PAGE. The night is dark; light and spirits will become it well. Heaven prosper our sport! No man means evil but the devil, and we shall know him by his horns. Let's away; follow me. [Exeunt.

SCENE III.—The Street in Windsor.

Enter MISTRESS PAGE, MISTRESS FORD, and DR. CAIUS.

MRS. PAGE. Master Doctor, my daughter is in green: when you see your time, take her by the hand, away with her to the deanery, and dispatch it quickly. Go before into the Park: we two must go together.

CAIUS. I know 'tis I have to do. Adieu.

MRS. PAGE. Fare you well, sir. [Exit CAIUS.]
My husband will not rejoice so much at the abuse of Falstaff, as he will chafe at the doctor's marrying my daughter: but 'tis no matter; better a little chiding than a great deal of heart break.

MRS. FORD. Where is Nan now and her troop of fairies, and the Welsh devil, Hugh?

MRS. PAGE. They are all couched in a pit hard by Herne's oak, with obscured lights; which, at the very instant of Falstaff's and our meeting, they will at once display to the night.

MRS. FORD. That cannot choose but amaze him.

MRS. PAGE. If he be not amazed, he will be mocked; if he be amazed, he will every way be mocked.

MRS. FORD. We'll betray him finally.

MRS. PAGE. Against such lewdsters and their lechery,

Those that betray them do no treachery.

MRS. FORD. The hour draws on: to the oak, to the oak! [Exeunt.

SCENE IV.—Windsor Park.

Enter SIR HUGH EVANS, disguised, and others as Fairies.

EVA. Trib, trib, fairies: come; and remember your parts. Be bold, I pray you; follow me into the pit, and when I give the watch-ords, do as I bid you. Come, come; trib, trib. [Exeunt.

SCENE V.—Another part of the Park.

Enter FALSTAFF disguised as Herne, with a buck's head on.

FAL. The Windsor bell hath struck twelve; the minute draws on. Now, the hot-blooded gods assist me! Remember, Jove, thou wast a bull for thy Europa; love set on thy horns. O powerful Jove! that, in some respects, makes a beast a man; in some other, a man a beast. You were also, Jupiter, a swan for the love of Leda; O omnipotent Jove! how near the god drew to the complexion of a goose! A fault done first in the form of a beast; O Jove, a beastly fault! and then another fault in the semblance of a fowl: think on 't, Jove; a foul fault! When gods have hot backs, what shall poor men do? For me, I am here a Windsor stag; and the fattest, I think, 'tis the forest: send me a cool rut-time, Jove, or who can blame me to piss my tallow? Who comes here? my doe?

Enter MISTRESS FORD and MISTRESS PAGE.

MRS. FORD. Sir John! art thou there, my deer? my male deer?

FAL. My doe with the black scut! Let the sky rain potatoes; let it thunder to the tune of 'Green Sleeves;' hail kissing-comfits and snow eringoes; let there come a tempest of provocation, I will shelter me here. [Embracing her.

MRS. FORD. Mistress Page is come with me, sweetheart.

FAL. Divide me like a brib'd buck, each a haunch: I will keep my sides to myself, my shoulders for the fellow of this walk, and my horns I bequeath your husbands. Am I a woodman, ha? Speak I like Herne the hunter? Why, now is Cupid a child of conscience; he makes restitution. As I am a true spirit, welcome! [Noise within.

MRS. PAGE. Alas! what noise?

MRS. FORD. Heaven forgive our sins! 36

FAL. What should this be?

MRS. FORD. Away, away! [They run off.

MRS. PAGE. Fal. I think the devil will not have me damned, lest the oil that is in me should set
hell on fire; he would never else cross me thus.

Enter Sir Hugh Evans, like a Satyr; Pistol as Hobgoblin; Anne Page, as the Fairy Queen, attended by her Brother and Others, as Fairies, with waxen tapers on their heads.

Anne. Fairies, black, grey, green, and white,
You moonshine revellers, and shades of night,
You orphan heirs of fixed destiny,
Attend your office and your quality.
Crier Hobgoblin, make the fairy eyes.

Pist. Elves, list your names: silence, you airy toys!
Cricket, to Windsor chimneys shalt thou leap:
Where fires thou find'st unrak'd and hearths unswept,
There pinch the maids as blue as bilberry:
Our radiant queen hates sluts and slutttery.

Fal. They are fairies; he that speaks to them shall die:
I'll wink and cough: no man their works must see.

Eva. Where's Bede? Go you, and where you find a maid
That, ere she sleeps, has thrice her prayers said,
Rein up the organs of her fantasy.

Sleep she as sound as careless infancy;
But those that sleep and think not on their sins,
Pinch them, arms, legs, backs, shoulders, sides,
And shins.

Anne. About, about!
Search Windsor castle, elves, within and out:
Strew good luck, cuphs, on every sacred room,
That it may stand till the perpetual doom,
In state as wholesome as in state 'tis fit,
Worthy the owner, and the owner it.

The several chairs of order look you scour
With juice of balm and every precious flower;
Each fair instalment, coat, and several crest,
With loyal blazon, ever more be blest!
And nightly, meadow-fairies, look you sing,
Like to the Garder's compass, in a ring:

The expression that it bears, green let it be,
More fertile-fresh than all the field to see;
And, Ho! soit qui mal y pense write
In emerald tufts, flowers purple, blue, and white;
Like sapphire, pearl, and rich embroidery;
Buckled below fair knighthood's bending knee:
Fairies use flowers for their charactery.

Away! disperse! But, till 'tis one o'clock,
Our dance of custom round about the oak
Of Herne the hunter, let us not forget.

Eva. Pray you, lock hand in hand; yourselves in order set;
And twenty glow-worms shall our lanterns be,
To guide our measure round about the tree.

But, stay; I smell a man of middle-earth.
Fal. Heavens defend me from that Welsh fairy, lest he transform me to a piece of cheese!
Pist. Vile worm, thou wast o'erlook'd even in thy birth.
Anne. With trial-fire touch me his finger-end:
If he be chaste, the flame will back descend
And turn him to no pain; but if he start,
It is the flesh of a corrupted heart.
Pist. A trial come.

Eva. Come, will this wood take fire?
[They burn him with their tapers.

Fal. Oh, oh, oh!
Anne. Corrupt, corrupt, and tainted in desire!

About him, fairies, sing a scornful rime;
And, as you trip, still pinch him to your time.

SONG.
Fie on sinful fantasy!
Fie on lust and luxury!
Lust is but a bloody fire,
Kindled with unchaste desire,
Fed in heart, whose flames aspire,
As thoughts do blow them higher and higher.
Pinch him, fairies, mutually;
Pinch him for his villany;
Pinch him, and burn him, and turn him about,
Till candles and star-light and moonshine be out.

During this song, the Fairies pinch Falstaff.
Doctor Caius comes one way, and steals away a Fairy in green; Slender another way, and takes off a Fairy in while; and Fenton comes, and steals away Anne Page. A noise of hunting is heard within. The Fairies run away. Falstaff pulls off his buck's head, and rises.

Enter Page, Ford, Mistress Page and Mistress Ford. They lay hold on Falstaff.

Page. Nay, do not fly: I think we have watch'd you now.
Will none but Herne the hunter serve your turn?
Mrs. Page. I pray you, come, hold up the jest no higher.

Now, good Sir John, how like you Windsor wives?

See you these, husband? do not these fair yokes Become the forest better than the town?
Ford. Now sir, who's a cuckold now? Master Brook, Falstaff's a knave, a cuckoldly knave; here are his horns, Master Brook: and, Master Brook, he hath enjoyed nothing of Ford's but his buck-basket, his cudgel, and twenty pounds of money, which must be paid too, Master Brook; his horses are arrested for it, Master Brook.

Mrs. Ford. Sir John, we have had ill luck; we could never meet. I will never take you for
Act V, Sc. V.  
THE MERRY WIVES OF WINDSOR

my love again, but I will always count you my deer.

Fal. I do begin to perceive that I am made an ass.

Ford. Ay, and an ox too; both the proofs are extant.

Fal. And these are not fairies? I was three or four times in the thought they were not fairies; and yet the guiltiness of my mind, the sudden surprise of my powers, drove the grossness of the folly into a received belief, in despite of the teeth of all rime and reason, that they were fairies. See now how wit may be made a Jack-a-lent, when 'tus upon ill employment!

Eva. Sir John Falstaff, serve Got, and leave your desires, and fairies will not pine you. Ford. Well said, fairy Hugh.

Eva. And leave you your jealousies too, I pray you.

Ford. I will never mistrust my wife again, till thou art able to woo her in good English.

Fal. Have I laid my brain in the sun and dried it, that it wants matter to prevent so gross o'er-reaching as this? Am I ridden with a Welsh goat too? shall I have a corrob of frize? 'Tis time I was chocked with a piece of toasted cheese.

Eva. Seese is not goot to give putter: your pelly is all putter.

Fal. 'Seeze' and 'putter!' have I lived to stand at the taunt of one that makes fritters of English? This is enough to be the decay of lust and late-walking through the realm.

Mrs. Page. Why, Sir John, do you think, though we would have thrust virtue out of our hearts by the head and shoulders, and have given ourselves without scruple to hell, that ever the devil could have made you our delight?

Ford. What, a hodge-pudding? a bag of flap?

Mrs. Page. A puffed man?

Ford. And one that is as slanderous as Satan?

Page. Old, cold, withered, and of intolerable entrails?

Ford. And as wicked as his wife?

Eva. And given to fornications, and to taverns, and sack and wine and methaglinis, and to drinkings and swearings and starings, pribbles and prabbles?

Fal. Well, I am your theme: you have the start of me; I am dejected; I am not able to answer the Welsh flannel. Ignorance itself is a plummet o'er me: use me as you will.

Ford. Marry, sir, we'll bring you to Windsor, to one Master Brook, that you have cozened of money, to whom you should have been a pandent:

over and above that you have suffered, I think, to repay that money will be a biting affliction.

Mrs. Ford. Nay, husband, let that go to make amends;

Forgive that sum, and so we'll all be friends.

Ford. Well, here's my hand: all is forgiven at last.

Page. Yet be cheerful, knight: thou shalt eat a posset to-night at my house; where I will desire thee to laugh at my wife, that now laughs at thee. Tell her, Master Slender hath married her daughter.

Mrs. Page. [Aside.] Doctors doubt that: if Anne Page be my daughter, she is, by this Doctor Caius' wife.

Enter SLENDER.

Sten. Whoa, ho! ho! father Page!

Page. Son, how now! how now, son! have you dispatched?

Sten. Dispatched! I'll make the best in Glos-ter-shire know on't; would I were hanged, la, else!

Page. Of what, son?

Sten. I came yonder at Eton to marry Mistress Anne Page, and she's a great lubberly boy: if it had not been i' the church, I would have swung him, or he should have swung me. If I did not think it had been Anne Page, would I might never stir! and 'tus a postmaster's boy.

Page. Upon my life, then, you took the wrong.

Sten. What need you tell me that? I think so, when I took a boy for a girl. If I had been married to him, for all he was in woman's apparel, I would not have had him.

Page. Why, this is your own folly. Did not I tell you how you should know my daughter by her garments?

Sten. I went to her in white, and cried, 'mum,' and she cried 'budget,' as Anne and I had appointed; and yet it was not Anne, but a postmaster's boy.

Eva. Jesum! Master Slender, cannot you see put marry pows?

Page. O I am vexed at heart: what shall I do?

Mrs. Page. Good George, be not angry: I knew of your purpose; turned my daughter into green; and, indeed, she is now with the doctor at the deanery, and there married.

Enter DOCTOR CAIUS.

Caius. Vere is Mistress Page? By gar, I am cozened: I ha' married un garçon, a boy; un paysan, by gar, a boy; it is not Anne Page: by gar, I am cozened.

Mrs. Page. Why, did you not take her in green?
Caius. Ay, by gar, and 'tis a boy: by gar, I'll raise all Windsor.

Ford. This is strange. Who hath got the right Anne?

Page. My heart misgives me: here comes Master Fenton.

A thousand irreligious cursed hours,
Which forced marriage would have brought upon her.

Ford. Stand not amaz'd: here is no remedy:
In love the heavens themselves do guide the state:

Money buys lands, and wives are sold by fate.

Fal. I am glad, though you have ta'en a special stand to strike at me, that your arrow hath glanced.

Page. Well, what remedy?—Fenton, heaven give thee joy!

What cannot be eschew'd must be embrac'd.

Fal. When night dogs run all sorts of deer are chas'd.

Mrs. Page. Well, I will muse no further.

Master Fenton,

Heaven give you many, many merry days!
Good husband, let us every one go home,
And laugh this sport o'er by a country fire;

Sir John and all.

Ford. Let it be so. Sir John,
To Master Brook you yet shall hold your word;
For he to-night shall lie with Mistress Ford.
MEASURE FOR MEASURE

DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

VINCENTIO, the Duke.
ANGELO, Lord Deputy in the Duke’s absence.
ESCALUS, an Ancient Lord, joined with Angelo in the deputation.
CLAUDIO, a young Gentleman.
LUCIO, a Fantastick.
Two other like Gentlemen.
VARRIUS, a Gentleman attending on the Duke.
PROVOST.
THOMAS, two Friars.
PETER, A Justice.
ELBOW, a simple Constable.
FROTH, a foolish Gentleman.
POMPEY, Tapster to Mistress Overdone.
ABHORSON, an Executioner.
BARNARDINE, a dissolute Prisoner.
ISABELLA, sister to Claudio.
MARIANA, betrothed to Angelo.
JULIET, beloved of Claudio.
FRANCISCA, a Nun.
MISTRESS OVERDONE, a Bawd.
Lords, Officers, Citizens, Boy, and Attendants.

SCENE.—Vienna.

ACT I.


Enter DUKE, ESCALUS, Lords, and Attendants.


Escal. My lord?

Duke. Of government the properties to unfold,

Would seem in me to affect speech and discourse,

Since I am put to know that your own science

Exceeds, in that, the lists of all advice

My strength can give you: then no more remains,

But that, to thine sufficiency, as thy worth is able,

And let them work. The nature of our people,

Our city’s institutions, and the terms

For common justice, you’re as pregnant in,

As art and practice hath enriched any

That we remember. There is our commission,

[Giving it.]

From which we would not have you warp. Call hither,

I say, bid come before us Angelo.

[Exit an Attendant.

What figure of us think you he will bear?

For you must know, we have with special soul

Elected him our absence to supply,

Lent him our terror, drest him with our love,

And given his deputation all the organs

Of our own power: what think you of it?

Escal. If any in Vienna be of worth

To undergo such ample grace and honour,

It is Lord Angelo.

Duke. Look where he comes.
Measure for Measure

Our haste from hence is of so quick condition. That it prefers itself, and leaves unquestion'd Matters of needful value. We shall write to you, As time and our concernings shall importune, How it goes with us; and do look to know What doth befall you here. So, fare you well: To the hopeful execution do I leave you Of your commissions.

Ang. Yet, give leave, my lord, That we may bring you something on the way.

Duke. My haste may not admit it; Nor need you, on mine honour, have to do With any scruple: your scope is as mine own, So to enforce or qualify the laws As to your soul seems good. Give me your hand; I'll privily away: I love the people, But do not like to stage me to their eyes. Though it do well, I do not relish well Their loud applause and Aves vehement, Nor do I think the man of safe discretion That does affect it. Once more, fare you well.

Ang. The heavens givesafety to your purposes! EscaL Lead forth and bring you back in happiness!

Duke. I thank you. Fare you well. [Exit. EscaL I shall desire you, sir, to give me leave To have free speech with you; and it concerns me To look into the bottom of my place: A power I have, but of what strength and nature I am not yet instructed.

Ang. 'Tis so with me. Let us withdraw together, And we may soon our satisfaction have Touching that point.

Esca. I'll wait upon your honour. [Exeunt.

Scene II.—A Street.

Enter Lucio and two Gentlemen.

Lucio. If the Duke with the other dukes come not to composition with the King of Hungary, why then, all the dukes fall upon the king.

First Gent. Heaven grant us its peace, but not the King of Hungary's!

Second Gent. Amen.

Lucio. Thou conclust like the sanctimonious pirate, that went to sea with the Ten Commandments, but scraped one out of the table.

Second Gent. 'Thou shalt not steal?'

Lucio. Ay, that he razed.

First Gent. Why, 'twas a commandment to command the captain and all the rest from their functions: they put forth to steal. There's not a soldier of us all, that, in the thanksgiving before meat, doth relish the petition well that prays for peace.

Second Gent. I never heard any soldier dislike it.

Lucio. I believe thee, for I think thou never wast where grace was said.

Second Gent. No? a dozen times at least.

First Gent. What, in metre?

Lucio. In any proportion or in any language.

First Gent. I think, or in any religion.

Lucio. Ay; why not? Grace is grace, despite of all controversy: as, for example, thou wast a wicked villain, despite of all grace.

First Gent. Well, there went but a pair of shears between us.

Lucio. I grant; as there may between the lists and the velvet: thou art the list.

First Gent. And thou the velvet: thou art good velvet; thou art a three-piled piece, I warrant thee. I had as lief be a list of an English kersey as be piled, as thou art piled, for a French velvet. Do I speak feelingly now?

Lucio. I think thou dost; and, indeed, with most painful feeling of thy speech: I will, out of thine own confession, learn to begin thy health; but, whilst I live, forget to drink after thee.

First Gent. I think I have done myself wrong, have I not?

Second Gent. Yes, that thou hast, whether thou art tainted or free.

Lucio. Behold, behold, where Madam Mitigation comes! I have purchased as many diseases under her roof as come to—

Second Gent. To what, I pray?

Lucio. Judge.

Second Gent. To three thousand dolours a year.

First Gent. Ay, and more.

Lucio. A French crown more.

First Gent. Thou art always figuring diseases in me; but thou art full of error: I am sound.

Lucio. Nay, not as one would say, healthy; but so sound as things that are hollow: thy bones are hollow; impiety has made a feast of thee.

Enter Mistress Overdone.

First Gent. How now! which of your hips has the most profound sciatica?

Mrs. Ov. Well, well; there's one yonder arrested and carried to prison was worthy five thousand of you all.

Second Gent. Who's that, I pray thee?

Mrs. Ov. Marry, sir, that's Claudio, Signior Claudio.

First Gent. Claudio to prison! 'tis not so.

Mrs. Ov. Nay, but I know 'tis so: I saw him arrested; saw him carried away; and, which is
Enter Provost, Claudio, Juliet, and Officers.

Claud. Fellow, why dost thou show me thus to the world?

Prov. I do it not in evil disposition, but from Lord Angelo by special charge.

Claud. Thus can the demi-god Authority make us pay down for our offence by weight.

The words of heaven; on whom it will, it will; on whom it will not, so: yet still 'tis just.

Re-enter Lucio and two Gentlemen.

Lucio. Why, how now, Claudio! Whence comes this restraint?

Claud. From too much liberty, my Lucio, liberty:

As surfeit is the father of much fast,

So every scope by the immoderate use

Turns to restraint. Our natures do pursue—

Like rats that ravine down their proper bane,—

A thirsty evil, and when we drunk we die.

Lucio. If I could speak so wisely under an arrest, I would send for certain of my creditors.

And yet, to say the truth, I had at last lief have the foppery of freedom as the morality of imprisonment.

What's thy offence, Claudio?

Claud. What but to speak of would offend again.

Lucio. What, is't murder?

Claud. No.

Lucio. Lechery?

Claud. Call it so.

Prov. Away, sir! You must go.

Claud. One word, good friend. Lucio, a word with you.

[Takes him aside.]

Lucio. A hundred, if they 'll do you any good.

Is lechery so looked after?

Claud. Thus stands it with me: Upon a true contract

I got possession of Juliet's bed:

You know the lady; she is fast my wife,

Save that we do the denunciation lack

Of outward order: This we came not to,

Only for propagation of a dower.

Remaining in the coffer of her friends,

From whom we thought it meet to hide our love

Till time had made them for us. But it chances

The stealth of our most mutual entertainment

With character too gross is writ on Juliet.

Lucio. With child, perhaps?

Claud. Unhappily, even so.

And the new deputy now for the duke,—

Whether it be the fault and glimpse of newness,

Or whether that the body public be

A horse whereon the governor doth ride,
Who, newly in the seat, that it may know
He can command, lets it straight feel the spur;
Whether the tyranny be in his place,
Or in his eminence that fills it up,
I stagger in:—but this new governor
Awakes me all the enrolled penalties
Which have, like unsour’d armour, hung by the wall
So long that nineteen zodiacs have gone round,
And none of them been worn; and, for a name,
Now puts the drowsy and neglected act
Freshly on me: ‘tis surely for a name.

Lucio. I warrant it is: and thy head stands so tickle on thy shoulders that a milkmaid, if she be in love, may sigh it off. Send after the duke and appeal to him.

Claud. I have done so, but he’s not to be found.

I prithee, Lucio, do me this kind service.
This day my sister should the cloister enter, and there receive her approbation: Acquaint her with the danger of my state; Implore her, in my voice, that she make friends To the strict deputy; bid herself assay him: I have great hope in that; for in her youth There is a prone and speechless dialect, Such as move men; beside, she hath prosperous art When she will play with reason and discourse, And well she can persuade.

Lucio. I pray she may: as well for the encouragement of the like, which else would stand under grievous imposition, as for the enjoying of thy life, who I would be sorry should be thus foolishly lost at a game of tick-tack. I’ll to her.

Claud. I thank you, good friend Lucio.

Lucio. Within two hours.

Claud. Come, officer, away!

[Exeunt.

SCENE III.—A Monastery.

Enter Duke and Friar Thomas.

Duke. No, holy father; throw away that thought:
Believe not that the dribbling dart of love Can pierce a complete bosom. Why I desire thee To give me secret harbour, hath a purpose
More grave and wrinkled than the aims and ends Of burning youth.

Fri. T. May your Grace speak of it?
Duke. My holy sir, none better knows than you
How I have ever lov’d the life remov’d,
And held in idle price to haunt assemblies
Where youth, and cost, and witless bravery keeps. I have deliver’d to Lord Angelo—

A man of stricture and firm abstinence—
My absolute power and place here in Vienna,
And he supposes me travel’d to Poland;
For so I have strew’d it in the common ear,
And so it is receiv’d. Now, pious sir,
You will demand of me why I do this?

Fri. T. Gladly, my lord.

Duke. We have strict statutes and most biting laws,—
The needful bits and curbs to headstrong steeds,—
Which for this fourteen years we have let sleep;
Even like an o’ergrown lion in a cave,
That goes not out to prey. Now, as fond fathers,
Having bound up the threat’ning twigs of birch,
Only to stick it in their children’s sight
For terror, not to use, in time the rod
Becomes more mock’d than fear’d; so our de-

crees,
Dead to infiction, to themselves are dead,
And liberty plucks justice by the nose;
The baby beats the nurse, and quite athwart Goes all decorum.

Fri. T. It rested in your Grace
’T unloose this tied-up justice when you pleas’d;
And it in you more dreadful would have seem’d Than in Lord Angelo.

Duke. I do fear, too dreadful:
Sith ’twas my fault to give the people scope,
’Twould be my tyranny to strike and gall them For what I bid them do: for we bid this be done,
When evil deeds have their permissive pass
And not the punishment. Therefore, indeed,
my father,
I have on Angelo impos’d the office,
Who may, in the ambush of my name, strike home,
And yet my nature never in the sight
To do it slander. And to behold his away, I will, as ’twere a brother of your order, Visit both prince and people: therefore, I prithee,
Supply me with the habit, and instruct me How I may formally in person bear me Like a true friar. Moe reasons for this action At our more leisure shall I render you;
Only, this one: Lord Angelo is precise;
Stands at a guard with envy; scarce confesses That his blood flows, or that his appetite
Is more to bread than stone: hence shall we see, If power change purpose, what our seemers be.

[Exeunt.

SCENE IV.—A Nunnery.

Enter Isabella and Francisca.

Isab. And have you nuns no further privileges?
Fran. Are not these large enough?
Isab. Yes, truly: I speak not as desiring more,
But rather wishing a more strict restraint
Upon the sisterhood, the votarists of Saint Clare.
Lucio. [Within.] Ho! Peace be in this place!
Isab. Who's that which calls?
Fran. It is a man's voice. Gentle Isabella,
Turn you the key, and know his business of him:
You may, I may not; you are yet unsworn.
When you have vow'd, you must not speak with men
But in the presence of the prioress:
Then, if you speak, you must not show your face,
Or, if you show your face, you must not speak.
He calls again; I pray you, answer him. [Exit.
Isab. Peace and prosperity! Who's that which calls?

Enter Lucio.

Lucio. Hail, virgin, if you be, as those cheek-
Proclaim you are no less! Can you so stead me
As bring me to the sight of Isabella,
A novice of this place, and the fair sister
To her unhappy brother Claudio?
Isab. Why 'her unhappy brother?' let me ask;
The rather for I now must make you know
I am that Isabella and his sister.
Lucio. Gentle and fair, your brother kindly greets you:
Not to be weary with you, he's in prison.
Isab. Woe me! for what?
Lucio. For that which, if myself might be his judge,
He should receive his punishment in thanks:
He hath got his friend with child.
Isab. Sir, make me not your story.
Lucio. It is true. I would not, though 'tis my familiar sin
With maids to seem the lapwing and to jest,
Tongue far from heart, play with all virgins so:
I hold you as a thing ensky'd and sainted;
By your renouncement an immortal spirit,
And to be talk'd with in sincerity,
As with a saint.
Isab. You do blaspheme the good in mocking me.
Lucio. Do not believe it. Fewness and truth,
'tis thus:
Your brother and his lover have embrac'd:
As those that feed grow full, as blossoming time
That from the seedness the bare fallow brings
To teeming foison, even so her plenteous womb
Expresseth his full tilth and husbandry.

Isab. Some one with child by him? My cousin Juliet?
Lucio. Is she your cousin?
Isab. Adopted; as school-maids change their names
By vain, though apt affection.
Lucio. She it is.
Isab. O! let him marry her.
Lucio. This is the point.
The duke is very strangely gone from hence;
Bore many gentlemen, myself being one,
In hand and hope of action; but we do learn
By those that know the very nerves of state,
His givings out were of an infinite distance
From his true-meant design. Upon his place,
And with full line of his authority,
Govern Lord Angelo; a man whose blood
Is very snow-broth; one who never feels
The wanton stings and motions of the sense,
But doth rebate and blunt his natural edge
With profits of the mind, study and fast.
He,—to give fear to use and liberty,
Which have for long run by the hideous law,
As mice by lions, hath pick'd out an act,
Under whose heavy sense your brother's life
Falls into forfeit: he arrests him on it,
And follows close the rigour of the statute,
To make him an example. All hope is gone,
Unless you have the grace by your fair prayer
To soften Angelo; and that's my pith of business
Twixt you and your poor brother.
Isab. Doth he so seek his life?
Lucio. He's censur'd him
Already; and, as I hear, the provost hath
A warrant for his execution.
Isab. Alas! what poor ability's in me
To do him good?
Lucio. Assay the power you have.
Isab. My power? alas! I doubt—
Lucio. Our doubts are traitors,
And make us lose the good we oft might win,
By fearing to attempt. Go to Lord Angelo,
And let him learn to know, when maidens sue,
Men give like gods; but when they weep and kneel,
All their petitions are as freely theirs
As they themselves would owe them.
Isab. I'll see what I can do.
Lucio. But speedily.
Isab. I will about it straight;
No longer staying but to give the Mother
Notice of my affair. I humbly thank you:
Commend me to my brother; soon at night
I'll send him certain word of my success.
Lucio. I take my leave of you.
Isab. Good sir, adieu. [Exeunt.
ACT II.

SCENE I.—A Hall in Angelo’s House.

Enter Angelo, Escalus, a Justice, Provost, Officers, and other Attendants.

Ang. We must not make a scarecrow of the law, Setting it up to fear the birds of prey, And let it keep one shape, till custom make it Their perch and not their terror.

Escal. Ay, but yet 4 Let us be keen and rather cut a little, Than fall, and bruise to death. Alas! this gentleman, Whom I would save, had a most noble father. Let but your honour know,— 8 Whom I believe to be most strait in virtue,— That, in the working of your own affections, Had time coher’d with place or place with wishing, Or that the resolute acting of your blood 12 Could have attain’d the effect of your own purpose, Whether you had not, some time in your life, Err’d in this point which now you censure him, And pull’d the law upon you. 16

Ang. ’Tis one thing to be tempted, Escalus, Another thing to fall. I do not deny, The jury, passing on the prisoner’s life, May in the sworn twelve have a thief or two 20 Guiltier than him they try; what’s open made to justice, That justice seizes: what know the laws That thieves do pass on thieves? ’Tis very pregnant, The jewel that we find, we stoop and take it 24 Because we see it; but what we do not see We tread upon, and never think of it. You may not so extenuate his offence For I have had such faults; but rather tell me, When I, that censure him, do so offend, 29 Let mine own judgment pattern out my death, And nothing come in partial. Sir, he must die.

Escal. Be it as your wisdom will.

Ang. Where is the provost?

Prov. Here, if it like your honour.

Ang. See that Claudio Be executed by nine to-morrow morning: Bring him his confessor, let him be prepar’d; For that’s the utmost of his pilgrimage. 36 [Exit Provost.

Escal. Well, heaven forgive him, and forgive us all!

Some rise by sin, and some by virtue fall:
Some run from brakes of ice, and answer none, And some condemned for a fault alone. 40

Enter Elbow and Officers, with Froth and Pompey.

Elb. Come, bring them away: if these be good people in a common weal that do nothing but use their abuses in common houses, I know no law: bring them away. 44

Ang. How now, sir! What’s your name, and what’s the matter?

Elb. If it please your honour, I am the poor duke’s constable, and my name is Elbow: I do lean upon justice, sir; and do bring in here before your good honour two notorious benefactors.

Ang. Bonefactors! Well; what benefactors are they? are they not malefactors?

Elb. If it please your honour, I know not well what they are; but precise villains they are, that I am sure of, and void of all profanation in the world that good Christians ought to have. 57

Escal. This comes off well: here’s a wise officer.

Ang. Go to: what quality are they of? Elbow is your name? why dost thou not speak, Elbow? Pom. He cannot, sir: he’s out at elbow. 62

Ang. What are you, sir?

Elb. He, sir! a tapster, sir; parcel-bawd; one that serves a bad woman, whose house, sir, was, as they say, plucked down in the suburbs; and now she professes a hot-house, which, I think, is a very ill house too. 68

Escal. How know you that?

Elb. My wife, sir, whom I detest before heaven and your honour,— 72

Escal. How! thy wife?

Elb. Ay, sir; whom, I thank heaven, is an honest woman,—

Escal. Dost thou detest her therefore?

Elb. I say, sir, I will detest myself also, as well as she, that this house, if it be not a bawd’s house, it is pity of her life, for it is a naughty house. 79

Escal. How dost thou know that, constable?

Elb. Marry, sir, by my wife; who, if she had been a woman cardinally given, might have been accused in fornication, adultery, and all uncleanliness there. 84

Escal. By the woman’s means?

Elb. Ay, sir, by Mistress Overdone’s means; but as she spit in his face, so she defied him.

Pom. Sir, if it please your honour, this is not so. 89

Elb. Prove it before these varlets here, thou honourable man, prove it.

Escal. [To Angelo.] Do you hear how he misplaces?

Pom. Sir, she came in, great with child, and longing,—saving your honour’s reverence,—for
stewed prunes. Sir, we had but two in the house, which at that very distant time stood, as it were, in a fruit-dish, a dish of some tres-

pence; your honours have seen such dishes; they are not China dishes, but very good dishes. 

Escal. Go to, go to: no matter for the dish, sir. 

Pom. No, indeed, sir, not of a pin; you are therein the right: but to the point. As I say, this Mistress Elbow, being, as I say, with child, and being great-bellied, and longing, as I said, for prunes, and having but two in the dish, as I said, Master Froth here, this very man, having eaten the rest, as I said, and, as I say, paying for them very honestly; for, as you know, Master Froth, I could not give you three-
pence again.

Froth. No, indeed. 112

Pom. Very well: you being then, if you be remembered, cracking the stones of the foresaid prunes,—

Froth. Ay, so I did, indeed. 116

Pom. Why, very well: I telling you then, if you be remembered, that such a one and such a one were past cure of the thing you wot of, unless they kept very good diet, as I told you,— 120

Froth. All this is true.

Pom. Why, very well then.—

Escal. Come, you are a tedious fool: to the purpose. What was done to Elbow's wife, that he hath cause to complain of? Come me to what was done to her.

Pom. Sir, your honour cannot come to that yet.

Escal. No, sir, nor I mean it not.

Pom. Sir, but you shall come to it, by your honour's leave. And, I beseech you, look into Master Froth here, sir; a man of fourscore pound a year, whose father died at Hallowmas. Was't not at Hallowmas, Master Froth? 134

Froth. All-hallownd eve.

Pom. Why, very well: I hope here be truths. He, sir, sitting, as I say, in a lower chair, sir; 'twas in the Bunch of Grapes, where indeed, you have a delight to sit, have you not? 139

Froth. I have so, because it is an open room and good for winter.

Pom. Why, very well then: I hope here be truths.

Ang. This will last out a night in Russia, 144

When nights are longest there: I'll take my leave,

And leave you to the hearing of the cause,

Hoping you'll find good cause to whip them all.

Escal. I think no less. Good morrow to your lordship.  [Exit ANGELO.

Now, sir, come on: what was done to Elbow's wife, once more?

Pom. Once, sir? there was nothing done to her once.

Elb. I beseech you, sir, ask him what this man did to my wife.

Pom. I beseech your honour, ask me.

Escal. Well, sir, what did this gentleman to her?

Pom. I beseech you, sir, look in this gentle-

man's face. Good Master Froth, look upon his honour; 'tis for a good purpose. Doth your honour mark his face?

Escal. Ay, sir, very well.

Pom. Nay, I beseech you, mark it well.

Escal. Well, I do so.

Pom. Doth your honour see any harm in his face?

Escal. Why, no.

Pom. I'll be supposed upon a book, his face is the worst thing about him. Good, then; if his face be the worst thing about him, how could Master Froth do the constable's wife any harm? I would know that of your honour. 172

Escal. He's in the right. Constable, what say you to it?

Elb. First, an' it like you, the house is a respected house; next, this is a respected fellow, and his mistress is a respected woman. 177

Pom. By this hand, sir, his wife is a more respected person than any of us all.

Elb. Varlet, thou liest: thou liest, wicked varlet. The time is yet to come that she was ever respected with man, woman, or child. 182

Pom. Sir, she was respected with him before he married with her.

Escal. Which is the wiser here? Justice, or Iniquity? Is this true?

Elb. O thou caiffist! O thou varlet! O thou wicked Hannibal! I respected with her before I was married to her? If ever I was respected with her, or she with me, let not your worship think me the poor duke's officer. Prove this, thou wicked Hannibal, or I'll have mine action of battery on thee. 193

Escal. If he took you a box o' th' ear, you might have your action of slander too.

Elb. Marry, I thank your good worship for it. What is't your worship's pleasure I shall do with this wicked caiffist? 198

Escal. Truly, officer, because he hath some offences in him that thou wouldst discover if thou couldst, let him continue in his courses till thou knowest what they are. 202

Elb. Marry, I thank your worship for it. Thou seest, thou wicked varlet, now, what's come upon thee: thou art to continue now, thou varlet, thou art to continue.

Escal. Where were you born, friend?
Froth. Here in Vienna, sir.

Escal. Are you of fourscore pounds a year?

Froth. Yes, an't please you, sir.

Escal. So. [To POMPEY.] What trade are you of, sir?

Pom. A tapster; a poor widow's tapster.

Escal. Your mistress' name?

Pom. Mistress Overdone.

Escal. Hath she had any more than one husband?

Pom. Nine, sir; Overdone by the last.

Escal. Nine!—Come hither to me, Master Froth. Master Froth, I would not have you acquainted with tapsters; they will draw you, Master Froth, and you will hang them. Get you gone, and let me hear no more of you.

Froth. I thank your worship. For mine own part, I never come into any room in a taphouse, but I am drawn in.

Escal. Well: no more of it, Master Froth: farewell. [Exit FROTH.]—Come you hither to me, Master tapster. What's your name, Master tapster?

Pom. Pompey.

Escal. What else?

Pom. Bum, sir.

Escal. Froth, and your bum is the greatest thing about you, so that, in the beastliest sense, you are Pompey the Great. Pompey, you are partly a bawd, Pompey; howsoever you colour it in being a tapster, are you not? come, tell me true: it shall be the better for you.

Pom. Truly, sir, I am a poor fellow that would live.

Escal. How would you live, Pompey? by being a bawd? What do you think of the trade, Pompey? is it a lawful trade?

Pom. If the law would allow it, sir.

Escal. But the law will not allow it, Pompey; nor it shall not be allowed in Vienna.

Pom. Does your worship mean to geld and splay all the youth of the city?

Escal. No, Pompey.

Pom. Truly, sir, in my humble opinion, they will to't then. If your worship will take order for the drabs and the knaves, you need not to fear the bawds.

Escal. There are pretty orders beginning, I can tell you: it is but heading and hanging.

Pom. If you head and hang all that offend that way but for ten year together, you'll be glad to give out a commission for more heads. If this law hold in Vienna ten year, I'll rent the fairest house in it after threepence a bay. If you live to see this come to pass, say, Pompey told you so.

Escal. Thank you, good Pompey; and, in requital of your prophecy, hark you: I advise you, let me not find you before me again upon any complaint whatsoever; no, nor for dwelling where you do: if I do, Pompey, I shall beat you to your tent, and prove a shrewd Caesar to you. In plain dealing, Pompey, I shall have you whipt. So, for this time, Pompey, fare you well.

Pom. I thank your worship for your good counsel;—[Aside.] but I shall follow it as the flesh and fortune shall better determine.

Whip me! No, no; let carman whip his jade; The valiant heart's not whipt out of his trade.

[Exit.

Escal. Come hither to me, Master Elbow; come hither, Master constable. How long have you been in this place of constable?

Elb. Seven year and a half, sir.

Escal. I thought, by your readiness in the office, you had continued in it some time. You say, seven years together?

Elb. And a half, sir.

Escal. Alas! it hath been great pains to you! They do you wrong to put you so oft upon't. Are there not men in your ward sufficient to serve it?

Elb. Faith, sir, few of any wit in such matters. As they are chosen, they are glad to choose me for them: I do it for some piece of money, and go through with all.

Escal. Look you bring me in the names of some six or seven, the most sufficient of your parish.

Elb. To your worship's house, sir?

Escal. To my house. Fare you well.

[Exit ELBOW.

What's o'clock, think you?

Just. Eleven, sir.

Escal. I pray you home to dinner with me.

Just. I humbly thank you.

Escal. It grieves me for the death of Claudio; But there is no remedy.

Just. Lord Angelo is severe.

Escal. It is but needful: Mercy is not itself, that oft looks so;
Pardon is still the nurse of second woe.
But yet, poor Claudio! There's no remedy.

Come, sir.

[Exeunt.

SCENE II.—Another Room in the Same.

Enter Provost and a Servant.

Serv. He's hearing of a cause: he will come straight:
I'll tell him of you.

Prov. Pray you, do. [Exit Serv.] I'll know His pleasure; may be he will relent. Alas!
He hath but as offended in a dream:
All sects, all ages smack of this vice, and he
To die for it!

Enter ANGELO.

Ang. Now, what's the matter, provost? Prov. Is it your will Claudio shall die to
morrow?
Ang. Did I not tell thee, yea? hadst thou not order?
Why dost thou ask again?
Prov. Lest I might be too rash.
Under your good correction, I have seen,
When, after execution, Judgment hath Repented o'er his doom.

Ang. Go to; let that be mine:
Do you your office, or give up your place,
And you shall well be spar'd.

Prov. I crave your honour's pardon.
What shall be done, sir, with the groaning Juliet?

Ang. She's very near her hour.

Prov. Dispose of her
To some more fitter place; and that with speed.

Re-enter Servant.

Serv. Here is the sister of the man condemn'd
Desires access to you.

Ang. Hath he a sister?
Prov. Ay, my good lord; a very virtuous maid,
And to be shortly of a sisterhood,
If not already.

Ang. Well, let her be admitted.

[Exit Servant.

See you the fornicate be remov'd:
Let her have needful, but not lavish, means;
There shall be order for 't.

Enter ISABELLA and LUCIO.

Prov. God save your honour!

Ang. Stay a little while.—[To ISAB.] You're welcome: what's your will?
Isab. I am a woful suitor to your honour,
Please but your honour hear me.

Ang. Well; what's your suit? 28
Isab. There is a vice that most I do abhor,
And most desire should meet the blow of justice,
For which I would not plead, but that I must;
For which I must not plead, but that I am
At war 'twixt will and will not.

Ang. Well; the matter?
Isab. I have a brother is condemn'd to die:
I do beseech you, let it be his fault,
And not my brother.

Prov. [Aside.] Heaven give thee moving
graces!

Ang. Condemn the fault, and not the actor
of it?
Why, every fault's condemn'd ere it be done.
Mine were the very cipher of a function,
To fine the faults whose fine stands in record,
And let go by the actor.

ISAB. O just, but severe law!
I had a brother, then.—Heaven keep your honour!

[Retiring.

LUCIO. [Aside to ISAB.] Give 't not o'er so:
to him again, entreat him;
Kneel down before him, hang upon his gown;
You are too cold; if you should need a pin, 45
You could not with more tame a tongue desire it.
To him, I say!

Isab. Must he needs die?

Ang. Maiden, no remedy.

Isab. Yes; I do think that you might pardon him,
And neither heaven nor man grieve at the mercy.

Ang. I will not do.

Isab. But can you, if you would?

Ang. Look, what I will not, that I cannot do.

Isab. But might you do't, and do the world no wrong,
If so your heart were touch'd with that remorse As mine is to him?

Ang. He's sentenced: 'tis too late.

LUCIO. [Aside to ISAB.] You are too cold. 56

Isab. Too late? why, no; I, that do speak a word,
May call it back again. Well, believe this,
No ceremony that to great ones 'longs,
Not the king's crown, nor the deputed sword, 60
The marshal's truncheon, nor the judge's robe,
Become them with one half so good a grace As mercy does.

If he had been as you, and you as he,
You would have slipt like him; but he, like you,
Would not have been so stern.

Ang. Pray you be gone.

Isab. I would to heaven I had your potency,
And you were Isabell! should it then be thus? 68
No; I would tell what 'twere to be a judge,
And what a prisoner.

LUCIO. [Aside to ISAB.] Ay, touch him; there's the vein.

Ang. Your brother is a forfeit of the law,
And you but waste your words.

Isab. Alas! alas! 72

Why, all the souls that were forfeit once;
And He that might the vantage best have took,
Found out the remedy. How would you be,
If He, which is the top of judgment, should?
But judge you as you are? O! think on that,
And mercy then will breathe within your lips,
Like man new made.

Ang. Be you content, fair maid;
It is the law, not I, condemn your brother: 80
Were he my kinsman, brother, or my son,
It should be thus with him: he must die to-
morrow.

Isab. To-morrow! O! that's sudden! Spare
him, spare him!
He's not prepar'd for death. Even for our
kitchens 84
We kill the fowl of season: shall we serve heaven
With less respect than we do minister
To our gross selves? Good, good my lord, be-
think you:
Who is it that hath died for this offence? 88
There's many have committed it.

Lucio. [Aside to Isab.] Ay, well said.
Ang. The law hath not been dead, though it
hath slept:
Those many had not dar'd to do that evil,
If that the first that did th' edict infringe 92
Had answer'd for his deed: now 'tis awake,
Takes note of what is done, and, like a prophet,
Looks in a glass, that shows what future evils,
Either new, or by remissness new-conceiv'd, 96
And so in progress to be hatch'd and born,
Are now to have no successive degrees,
But, ere they live, to end.

Isab. Yet show some pity.

Ang. I shew it most of all when I show justice;
For then I pity those I do not know, 101
Which a dismiss'd offence would after gall,
And do him right, that, answering one foul
wrong,
Lives not to act another. Be satisfied: 104
Your brother dies to-morrow: be content.

Isab. So you must be the first that gives this
sentence,
And he that suffers. O! it is excellent
To have a giant's strength, but it is tyrannous
To use it like a giant.

Lucio. [Aside to Isab.] That's well said. 109

Isab. Could great men thunder
As Jove himself does, Jove would ne'er be quiet,
For every pelting, petty officer 112
Would use his heaven for thunder; nothing
but thunder.

Merciful heaven!
Thou rather with thy sharp and sulphurous bolt
Splitst the unwedgeable and gnarled oak 116
Than the soft myrtle; but man, proud man,
Drest in a little brief authority,
Most ignorant of what he's most assur'd,
His glassy essence, like an angry ape, 120
Plays such fantastic tricks before high heaven

As make the angels weep; who, with our spleens,
Would all themselves laugh mortal.

Lucio. [Aside to Isab.] O, to him, to him,
whench! He will relent: 124

He's coming: I perceive 't.

Prov. [Aside.] Pray heaven she win him!
Isab. We cannot weigh our brother with our-
self:
Great men may jest with saints; 'tis wit in
them,
But, in the less foul profanation. 128

Lucio. [Aside to Isab.] Thou'rt in the right,
girl: more o' that.
Isab. That in the captain's but a choleric
word,
Which in the soldier is flat blasphemy.

Lucio. [Aside to Isab.] Art advis'd o' that? 132
more on 't.

Ang. Why do you put these sayings upon me?
Isab. Because authority, though it err like
others,
Hath yet a kind of medicine in itself,
That skins the vice o' the top. Go to your bosom;
Knock there, and ask your heart what it doth
know 137
That's like my brother's fault: if it confess
A natural guiltiness such as is his,
Let it not sound a thought upon your tongue 140
Against my brother's life.

Ang. She speaks, and 'tis
Such sense that my sense breeds with it. Fare
you well.

Isab. Gentle my lord, turn back.

Ang. I will bethink me. Come again to-
morrow. 144

Isab. Hark how I'll bribe you. Good my
lord, turn back.

Ang. How! bribe me?
Isab. Ay, with such gifts that heaven shall
share with you.

Lucio. [Aside to Isab.] You had marr'd all
else. 148

Isab. Not with fond sicles of the tested gold,
Or stones whose rates are either rich or poor
As fancy values them; but with true prayers
That shall be up at heaven and enter there 152
Ere sun-rise: prayers from preserved souls,
From fasting maids whose minds are dedicate
To nothing temporal.

Ang. Well; come to me to-morrow.

Lucio. [Aside to Isab.] Go to; 'tis well: away!

Isab. Heaven keep your honour safe!

Ang. [Aside.] Amen:

For I am that way going to temptation,
Where prayers cross.

Isab. At what hour to-morrow

Shall I attend your lordship?
Enter JULIET.

**Duke.** When must he die?

**Prov.** As I do think, to-morrow.

[To JULIET.] I have provided for you: stay a while,

And you shall be conducted.

**Duke.** Repent you, fair one, of the sin you carry?

**Juliets.** I do, and bear the shame most patiently.

**Duke.** I'll teach you how you shall arraign your conscience,

And try your penitence, if it be sound,

Or hollowly put on.

**Juliets.** I'll gladly learn.

**Duke.** Love you the man that wrong'd you?

**Juliets.** Yes, as I love the woman that wrong'd him.

**Duke.** So then it seems your most offensive act

Was mutually committed?

**Juliets.** Mutually.

**Duke.** Then was your sin of heavier kind than his.

**Juliets.** I do confess it, and repent it, father.

**Duke.** 'Tis meet so, daughter: but lest you do repent,

As that the sin hath brought you to this shame,

Which sorrow is always toward ourselves, not heaven,

Showing we would not spare heaven as we love it,

But as we stand in fear,—

**Juliets.** I do repent me, as it is an evil,

And take the shame with joy.

**Duke.** There rest.

Your partner, as I hear, must die to-morrow,

And I am going with instruction to him.

God's grace go with you! Benedicite! [Exit.

**Juliets.** Must die to-morrow! O injurious love,

That respite me a life, whose very comfort

Is still a dying horror!

**Prov.** 'Tis pity of him. [Exeunt.

**SCENE IV.—A Room in ANGELO'S House.**

Enter ANGELO.

**Ang.** When I would pray and think, I think and pray

To several subjects: heaven hath my empty words,

Whilst my invention, hearing not my tongue,

Anchors on Isabel; heaven in my mouth,

As if I did but only chew his name,

And in my heart the strong and swelling evil

Of my conception. The state, whereon I studied,

Is like a good thing, being often read,

Grown fear'd and tedious; yes, my gravity,
Wherein, let no man hear me, I take pride,
Could I with boot change for an idle plume,
Which the air beats for vain. O place! O form!
How often dost thou with thy case, thy habit, 13
Wrench awe out of fools, and tie the wiser souls
To thy false seeming! Blood, thou art blood:
Let’s write good angel on the devil’s horn, 16
’Tis not the devil’s crest.

Enter a Servant.
How now! who’s there?
Serv. One Isabel, a sister,
Desires access to you.
Ang. Teach her the way.
[Exit Servant.
O heavens!
Why does my blood thus muster to my heart,
Making both it unable for itself,
And dispossess all my other parts
Of necessary fitness?
20
So play the foolish throngs with one that
swounds;
Come all to help him, and so stop the air
By which he should revive: and even so
The general, subject to a well-wish’d king, 28
Quit their own part, and in obsequious fondness
Crowd to his presence, where their untaught love
Must needs appear offence.

Enter Isabella.
How now, fair maid!
Isab. I am come to know your pleasure.
Ang. That you might know it, would much
better please me,
Than to demand what ’tis. Your brother cannot
live.
Isab. Even so. Heaven keep your honour!
Ang. Yet may he live awhile; and, it may be,
As long as you or I: yet he must die.
37
Isab. Under your sentence?
Ang. Yea.
Isab. When, I beseech you? that in his re-
prieve,
40
Longer or shorter, he may be so fitted
That his soul sicken not.
Ang. Ha! fie, these filthy vices! It were as
good
To pardon him that hath from nature stolen
44
A man already made, as to remit
Their saucy sweetness that do coin heaven’s
image
In stamps that are forbid: ’tis all as easy
Falsely to take away a life true made,
48
As to put metal in restrained means
To make a false one.
Isab. ’Tis set down so in heaven, but not in
earth.

Ang. Say you so? then I shall pose you
quickly.
Which had you rather, that the most just law
Now took your brother’s life; or, to redeem him,
Give up your body to such sweet uncleanness
As she that he hath stain’d?
Isab. Sir, believe this,
I had rather give my body than my soul.
Ang. I talk not of your soul. Our compell’d
sins
Stand more for number than for accompt.
Isab. How say you?
Ang. Nay, I’ll not warrant that; for I can speak
Against the thing I say. Answer to this:
I, now the voice of the recorded law,
Pronounce a sentence on your brother’s life:
Might there not be a charity in sin
To save this brother’s life?
Isab. Please you to do’t,
I’ll take it as a peril to my soul;
It is no sin at all, but charity.
Ang. Pleas’d you to do’t, at peril of your soul,
Were equal poise of sin and charity.
Isab. That I do beg his life, if it be sin,
Heaven let me bear it! you granting of my suit,
If that be sin, I’ll make it my morn prayer
To have it added to the faults of mine,
And nothing of your answer.
Ang. Nay, but hear me.
Your sense pursues not mine: either you are
ignorant,
Or seem so craftily; and that’s not good.
Isab. Let me be ignorant, and in nothing good,
But graciously to know I am no better.
Ang. Thus wisdom wishes to appear most
bright
When it doth tax itself; as these black masks
Proclaim an ensihed beauty ten times louder
Than beauty could, display’d. But mark me;
To be received plain, I’ll speak more gross:
Your brother is to die.
Isab. So.
Ang. And his offence is so, as it appears
Accountant to the law upon that pain.
Isab. True.
Ang. Admit no other way to save his life,—
As I subscribe not that, nor any other,
But in the loss of question,—that you, his sister,
Finding yourself desir’d of such a person,
Whose credit with the judge, or own great place,
Could fetch your brother from the manacles
Of the all-building law; and that there were
No earthly mean to save him, but that either
You must lay down the treasures of your body
To this suppos’d, or else to let him suffer;
What would you do?
Act II, Sc. IV.

MEASURE FOR MEASURE

Isab. As much for my poor brother, as myself:
That is, were I under the terms of death, 
Th' impression of keen whips I'd wear as rubies,
And strip myself to death, as to a bed
That, longing, have been sick for, ere I'd yield
My body up to shame.

Ang. Then must your brother die.

Isab. And 'twere the cheaper way:
Better it were a brother died at once,
Than that a sister, by redeeming him,
Should die for ever.

Ang. Were you not then as cruel as the sentence
That you have slander'd so?

Isab. Ignomy in ransom and free pardon
Are of two houses: lawful mercy
Is nothing kin to foul redemption.

Ang. You seem'd of late to make the law a tyrant;
And rather prov'd the sliding of your brother
A merriment than a vice.

Isab. O, pardon me, my lord! it oft falls out,
To have what we would have, we speak not what we mean.

I something do excuse the thing I hate,
For his advantage that I dearly love.

Ang. We are all frail.

Isab. Else let my brother die,
If not a feedary, but only he
Owe and succeed thy weakness.

Ang. Nay, women are frail too.

Isab. Ay, as the glasses where they view themselves,
Which are as easy broke as they make forms.
Women! Help heaven! men their creation mar
In profiting by them. Nay, call us ten times frail,
For we are soft as our complexions are,
And crenulous to false prints.

Ang. I think it well:
And from this testimony of your own sex,—
Since I suppose we are made to be no stronger
Than faults may shake our frames,—let me be bold;
I do arrest your words. Be that you are,
That is, a woman; if you be more, you're none;
If you be one, as you are well express'd
By all external warrants, show it now,
By putting on the destin'd livery.

Isab. I have no tongue but one: gentle my lord,
Let me entreat you speak the former language.

Ang. Plainly conceive, I love you.

Isab. My brother did love Julast; and you tell me
That he shall die for't.

Ang. He shall not, Isabel, if you give me love.

Isab. I know your virtue hath a licence in't.

Which seems a little fouler than it is,
To pluck on others.

Ang. Believe me, on mine honour,
My words express my purpose.

Isab. Ha! little honour to be much believ'd,
And most pernicious purpose! Seeming, seem-
ing!
I will proclaim thee, Angelo; look for't: 
Sign me a present pardon for my brother,
Or with an outstretch'd throat I'll tell the world aloud
What man thou art.

Ang. Who will believe thee, Isabel?
My unsoul'd name, the austereness of my life,
My vouch against you, and my place 't the state,
Will so your accusation overweigh,
That you shall stifle in your own report
And smell of calumny. I have begun; 
And now I give my sensual race the rein:
Fit thy consent to my sharp appetite;
Lay by all nicety and prolixious blushes,
That banish what they sue for; redeem thy brother
By yielding up thy body to my will,
Or else he must not only die the death,
But thy unkindness shall his death draw out
To lingering sufferance. Answer me to-morrow,
Or, by the affection that now guides me most,
I'll prove a tyrant to him. As for you,
Say what you can, my false o'erweighs your true.

[Exil.]

Isab. To whom should I complain? Did I tell this,
Who would believe me? O perilous mouths!
That bear in them one and the self-same tongue,
Either of condemnation or approf, 
Bidding the law make curt'sy to their will; 
Hooking both right and wrong to th' appetite,
To follow as it draws. I'll to my brother:
Though he hath fallen by prompture of the blood,
Yet hath he in him such a mind of honour,
That, had he twenty heads to tender down
On twenty bloody blocks, he'd yield them up,
Before his sister should her body stoop
To such abhor'd pollution.

Then, Isabel, live chaste, and, brother, die:
More than our brother is our chastity.
I'll tell him yet of Angelo's request,
And fit his mind to death, for his soul's rest.

[Exil.]

ACT III.

SCENE I.—A Room in the Prison.

Enter Duke, as a friar, Claudio, and Provost.

Duke. So then you hope of pardon from Lord Angelo?
Claud. The miserable have no other medicine
But only hope:
I have hope to live, and am prepr’d to die. 4
Duke. Be absolute for death; either death
or life
Shall thereby be the sweeter. Reason thus with
life:
If I do lose thee, I do lose a thing
That none but fools would keep: a breath thou
art,
Servile to all the skye influences,
That dost this habitation, where thou keep’st,
Hourly afflict. Merely, thou art death’s fool;
For him thou labour’st by thy flight to shun, 12
And yet run’st toward him still. Thou art not
noble:
For all th’ accommodations that thou bear’st
Are nurs’d by baseness. Thou art by no means
valiant;
For thou dost fear the soft and tender fork 16
Of a poor worm. Thy best of rest is sleep
And that thou oft provok’st; yet grossly fear’st
Thy death, which is no more. Thou art not
thyself;
For thou exist’st on many a thousand grains 20
That issue out of dust. Happy thou art not;
For what thou hast not, still thou striv’st to get,
And what thou hast, forget’st. Thou art not
certain;
For thy complexion shifts to strange effects, 24
After the moon. If thou art rich, thou’rt poor;
For, like an ass whose back with ingots bows,
Thou bear’st thy heavy riches but a journey,
And death unloads thee. Friend hast thou none;
For thine own bowels, which do call thee sire,
The mere effusion of thy proper loins,
Do curse the gout, serpigo, and the rheum,
For ending thee no sooner. Thou hast nor
youth nor age; 32
But, as it were, an after-dinner’s sleep,
Dreaming on both; for all thy blessed youth
Becomes as aged, and doth beg the alms
Of palsied eld; and when thou art old and rich,
Thou hast neither heat, affection, limb, nor
beauty, 37
To make thy riches pleasant. What’s yet in this
That bears the name of life? Yet in this life
Lie hid moe thousand deaths: yet death we fear,
That makes these odds all even.
Claud. I Humbly thank you.
To sue to live, I find I seek to die,
And, seeking death, find life: let it come on.
Isab. [Within.] What hol Peace here; grace
and good company!
Prov. Who’s there? come in: the wish de-
serves a welcome.
Duke. Dear sir, ere long I’ll visit you again.

Claud. Most holy sir, I thank you. 47
Enter Isabella.
Is. My business is a word or two with Claudio.
Prov. And very welcome. Look, signior; here’s your sister.
Duke. Provost, a word with you.
Prov. As many as you please.
Duke. Bring me to hear them speak, where I
may be conceal’d. 52
[Exeunt Duke and Provost.
Claud. Now, sister, what’s the comfort?
Isab. Why, as all comforts are; most good,
most good indeed.
Lord Angelo, having affairs to heaven,
Intends you for his swift ambassador,
Where you shall be an everlasting leiger:
Therefore, your best appointment make with
speed;
To-morrow you set on.
Claud. Is there no remedy?
Isab. None, but such remedy, as to save a
head 60
To cleave a heart in twain.
Claud. But is there any?
Isab. Yes, brother, you may live:
There is a devilish mercy in the judge,
If you’ll implore it, that will free your life, 64
But feter you till death.
Claud. Perpetual durance?
Isab. Ay, just; perpetual durance, a restraint,
Though all the world’s vastidity you had,
To a determin’d scope.
Claud. But in what nature? 68
Isab. In such a one as, you consenting to’t,
Would bark your honour from that trunk you
bear,
And leave you naked.
Claud. Let me know the point.
Isab. O, I do fear thee, Claudio; and I quake,
Lest thou a feverous life shouldst entertain,
And six or seven winters more respect
Than a perpetual honour. Dar’st thou die?
The sense of death is most in apprehension, 76
And the poor beetle, that we tread upon,
In corporal sufferance finds a pang as great
As when a giant dies.
Claud. Why give you me this shame?
Think you I can a resolution fetch 80
From flowery tenderness? If I must die,
I will encounter darkness as a bride,
And hug it in mine arms.
Isab. There spake my brother: there my
father’s grave
Did utter forth a voice. Yes, thou must die:
Thou art too noble to conserve a life
In base appliances. This outward-sainted de-
puty,
Whose settled visage and deliberate word
Nips youth i' the head, and follies doth ennue
As falcon doth the fowl, is yet a devil;
His flith within being cast, he would appear
A pond as deep as hell.

Claud. The prentie Angelo? 92
Isab. O, 'tis the cunning livery of hell,
The damned'st body to instruct and cover
In prentice guards! Dost thou think, Claudio?
If I would yield him my virginity, 96
Thou mightest be freed.
Claud. O heavens! it cannot be.
Isab. Yes, he would give 't thee, from this
rank offence,
So to offend him still. This night's the time
That I should do what I abhor to name, 100
Or else thou diest to-morrow.

Isab. Thou shalt not do't.
Claud. O! were it but my life,
I'd throw it down for your deliverance
As frankly as a pin.

Claud. Thanks, dear Isabel. 104
Isab. Be ready, Claudio, for your death to-morrow.

Claud. Yes. Has he affections in him,
That thus can make him bite the law by the nose,
When he would force it? Sure, it is no sin; 108
Or of the deadly seven it is the least.

Isab. Which is the least?
Claud. If it were damnable, he being so wise,
Why would he for the momentary trick
Be perdurable fin'd? O Isabel!

Isab. What says my brother?
Claud. Death is a fearful thing.

Isab. And shamed life a hateful.

Claud. Ay, but to die, and go we know not
where;

To lie in cold obstruction and to rot;
This sensible warm motion to become
A kneaded clod; and the delighted spirit
To bathe in fiery floods, or to reside
In thrilling region of thick-ribbed ice;
To be imprison'd in the viewless winds,
And blown with restless violence round about
The pendant world; or to be worse than worst
Of those that lawless and uncertain thoughts
Imagine howling: 'tis too horribles!
The weariest and most loathed worldly life
That age, ache, penury and imprisonment
Can lay on nature is a paradise
To what we fear of death.

Isab. Alas! alas!

Claud. Sweet sister, let me live:
What sin you do to save a brother's life, 132
Nature dispenses with the deed so far
That it becomes a virtue.

Isab. O you beast!

O faithless coward! O dishonest wretch!
Wilt thou be made a man out of my vice? 136
Is't not a kind of incest, to take life
From thine own sister's shame? What should I think?

Heaven shield my mother play'd my father fair;
For such a warped slp of wilderness
Ne'er issu'd from his blood. Take my defiance;
Die, perish! Might but my bending down
Reprieve thee from thy fate, it should proceed.
I'll pray a thousand prayers for thy death, 144
No word to save thee.

Claud. Nay, hear me, Isabel.

Re-enter DUKE.

Duke. Vouchsafe a word, young sister, but one word.

Isab. What is your will?

Duke. Might you dispense with your leisure,
I would by and by have some speech with you:
the satisfaction I would require is likewise your own benefit.

Isab. I have no superfluous leisure: my stay
must be stolen out of other affairs; but I will
attend you a while.

Duke. [Aside to CLAUDIO.] Son, I have over-heard
what hath past between you and your sister. Angelo had never the purpose to corrupt
her; only he hath made an assay of her virtue
to practise his judgment with the disposition
of natures. She, having the truth of honour in her,
hath made him that gracious denial which he is
most glad to receive: I am confessor to Angelo,
and I know this to be true; therefore prepare
yourself to death. Do not satisfy your resolution
with hopes that are fallible: to-morrow you must
die; go to your knees and make ready.

Claud. Let me ask my sister pardon. I am
so out of love with life that I will sue to be rid
of it.

[Exit CLAUDIO.

Re-enter PROVOST.

Provost, a word with you.

Prov. What's your will, father?

Duke. That now you are come, you will be
gone. Leave me awhile with the maid: my mind
promises with my habit no loss shall touch her
by my company.

Prov. In good time.
[Exit.

Duke. The hand that hath made you fair
Isab. What a merit were it in death to take this poor maid from the world! What corruption in this life, that it will let this man live! But how out of this can she avail? 243

Duke. It is a rupture that you may easily heal; and the cure of it not only saves your brother, but keeps you from dishonour in doing it.

Isab. Show me how, good father. 248

Duke. This forenamed maid hath yet in her the continuance of her first affection: his unjust unkindness, that in all reason should have quenched her love, hath, like an impediment in the current, made it more violent and unruly. Go you to Angelo: answer his requiring with a plausible obedience: agree with his demands to the point; only refer yourself to this advantage, first, that your stay with him may not be long, that the time may have all shadow and silence in it, and the place answer to convenience. This being granted in course, and now follows all, we shall advise this wronged maid to steal up your appointment, go in your place; if the encounter acknowledge itself hereafter, it may compel him to her recompense; and here by this is your brother saved, your honour untainted, the poor Mariana advantaged, and the corrupt deputy scaled. The maid will frame and make fit for his attempt. If you think well to carry this, as you may, the doublessness of the benefit defends the deceit from reproof. What think you of it? 271

Isab. The image of it gives me content already, and I trust it will grow to a most prosperous perfection.

Duke. It lies much in your holding up. Haste you speedily to Angelo: if for this night he entreat you to his bed, give him promise of satisfaction. I will presently to St. Luke’s; there, at the moated grange, resides this dejected Mariana: at that place call upon me, and dispatch with Angelo, that it may be quickly. 281

Isab. I thank you for this comfort. Fare you well, good father. [Exeunt.

SCENE II.—The Street before the Prison.

Enter DUKE, as a friar; to him ELBOW, POMPEY, and Officers.

Elb. Nay, if there be no remedy for it, but that you will needs buy and sell men and women like beasts, we shall have all the world drink brown and white bastard. 4

Duke. O heavens! what stuff is here?

Pom. ’Twas never merry world, since, of two usuries, the merriest was put down, and the worser allowed by order of law a furred gown
to keep him warm; and furred with fox and lamb skins too, to signify that craft, being richer than innocency, stands for the facing.

Elb. Come your way, sir. Bless you, good father friar.

Duke. And you, good brother father. What offence hath this man made you, sir?

Elb. Marry, sir, he hath offended the law: and, sir, we take him to be a thief too, sir; for we have found upon him, sir, a strange picklock, which we have sent to the deputy.

Duke. Fie, sirrah: a bawd, a wicked bawd! 20 The evil that thou causest to be done, That is thy means to live. Do thou but think What 'tis to cram a maw or clothe a back From such a filthy vice: say to thyself, 24 From their abominable and beastly touches I drink, I eat, array myself, and live. Canst thou believe thy living is a life, So slinkingly depending? Go mend, go mend. 28

Pom. Indeed, it does sink in some sort, sir; but yet, sir, I would prove—

Duke. Nay; if the devil have given thee proofs for sin,

Thou wilt prove his. Take him to prison, officer; 32 Correction and instruction must both work Ere this rude beast will profit.

Elb. He must before the deputy, sir; he has given him warning. The deputy cannot abide a whoresoner: if he be a whoresoner, and comes before him, he were as good go a mile on his errand.

Duke. That we were all, as 'some would seem to be, 40 From our faults, as faults from seeming free!

Elb. His neck will come to your waist, a cord, sir.

Pom. I spy comfort: I cry, hail. Here's a gentleman and a friend of mine.

Enter Lucio.

Lucio. How now, noble Pompey! What, at the wheels of Caesar? Art thou led in triumph? What, is there none of Pygmalion's images, newly made woman, to be had now, for putting the hand in the pocket and extracting it clutched? What reply? ha? What say'st thou to this tune, matter and method? Is not drowned 't the last rain, ha? What say'st thou, Trot? Is the world as it was, man? Which is the way? Is it sad, and few words, or how? The trick of it?

Duke. Still thus, and thus, still worse!

Lucio. How doth my dear mistress, thy mistress? Procure she still, ha?

Pom. Troth, sir; she hath eaten up all her beef, and she is herself in the tub. 61

Lucio. Why, 'tis good; it is the right of it; it must be so: ever your fresh whore and your powdered bawd: an unshunned consequence; it must be so. Art going to prison, Pompey?

Pom. Yes, faith, sir.

Lucio. Why, 'tis not amiss, Pompey. Farewell. Go, say I sent thee thither. For debt, Pompey? or how?

Elb. For being a bawd, for being a bawd. 70 Lucio. Well, then, imprison him. If imprisonment be the due of a bawd, why, 'tis his right: bawd is he, doubtless, and of antiquity too; bawd-born. Farewell, good Pompey. Command me to the prison, Pompey. You will turn good husband now, Pompey; you will keep the house.

Pom. I hope, sir, your good worship will be my bail.

Lucio. No, indeed will I not, Pompey; it is not the wear. I will pray, Pompey, to increase your bondage: if you take it not patiently, why, your mettle is the more. Adieu, trusty Pompey. Bless you, friar.

Duke. And you.

Lucio. Does Bridget paint still, Pompey, ha?

Elb. Come your ways, sir; come.

Pom. You will not bate me then, sir? 88

Lucio. Then, Pompey, nor now. What news abroad, friar? What news?

Elb. Come your ways, sir; come.

Lucio. Go to kennel, Pompey; go.

[Extant Elbow, Pompey and Officers.

What news, friar, of the duke?

Duke. I know none. Can you tell me of any?

Lucio. Some say he is with the Emperor of Russia; other some, he is in Rome: but where is he, think you?

Duke. I know not where; but whereasover, I wish him well.

Lucio. It was a mad fantastical trick of him to steal from the state, and usurp the beggary he was never born to. Lord Angelo duke it well in his absence; he puts transgression to't.

Duke. He does well in't.

Lucio. A little more lenity to lechery would do no harm in him: something too crabb'd that way, friar.

Duke. It is too general a vice, and severity must cure it.

Lucio. Yes, in good sooth; the vice is of a great kindred; it is well allied; but it is impossible to extirp it quite, friar, 'till eating and drinking be put down. They say this Angelo was not made by man and woman after this downright way of creation: is it true, think you?
Duke. How should he be made, then? 116
Lucio. Some report a sea-maid spawn'd him; some that he was begot between two stock-fishes. But it is certain that when he makes water his urine is congealed ice; that I know to be true; and he is a motion generative; that's infallible.
Duke. You are pleasant, sir, and speak apace.
Lucio. Why, what a ruthless thing is this in him, for the rebellion of a cod-piece to take away the life of a man! Would the duke that is absent have done this? Ere he would have hanged a man for the getting a hundred bastards, he would have paid for the nursing a thousand: he had some feeling of the sport; he knew the service, and that instructed him to mercy.
Duke. I never heard the absent duke much detected for women; he was not inclined that way.
Lucio. O, sir, you are deceived.
Duke. 'Tis not possible.
Lucio. Who? not the duke? you, your beggar of fifty, and his use was to put a ducaet in her clack-dish; the duke had erotchets in him. He would be drunk too; that let me inform you.
Lucio. Sir, I was an inward of his. A shy fellow was the duke; and, I believe I know the cause of his withdrawing.
Duke. What, I prithee, might be the cause?
Lucio. No, pardun; 'tis a secret must be locked within the teeth and the lips; but this I can let you understand, the greater file of the subject held the duke to wise.
Duke. Wise! why, no question but he was.
Lucio. A very superficial, ignorant, unwielding fellow.
Duke. Either this is envy in you, folly, or mistaking: the very stream of his life and the business he hath helmed must, upon a warranted need, give him a better proclamation. Let him be but testimoni'd in his own bringings forth, and he shall appear to the envious a scholar, a statesman and a soldier. Therefore you speak unskilfully; or, if your knowledge be more, it is much darkened in your malice.
Lucio. Sir, I know him, and I love him.
Duke. Love talks with better knowledge, and knowledge with dearer love.
Lucio. Come, sir, I know what I know.
Duke. I can hardly believe that, since you know not what you speak. If, but ever the duke return,—as our prayers are he may,—let me desire you to make your answer before him: if it be honest you have spoke; you have courage to maintain it. I am bound to call upon you; and, I pray you, your name?
Lucio. Sir, my name is Lucio, well known to the duke.
Duke. He shall know you better, sir, if I may live to report you.
Lucio. I fear you not.
Duke. O! you hope the duke will return no more, or you imagine me too unhurtful an opposite. But indeed I can do you little harm; you'll forswear this again.
Lucio. I'll be hanged first: thou art deceived in me, friar. But no more of this. Canst thou tell if Claudio die to-morrow or no?
Duke. Why should he die, sir?
Lucio. Why? for filling a bottle with a tun-dish. I would the duke we talk of were returned again: this ungenitured agent will unpeople the province with continency; sparrows must not build in his house-eaves, because they are lecherous. The duke yet would have dark deeds darkly answered; he would never bring them to light: would he were returned! Marry, this Claudio is condemned for untrussing. Farewell, good friar; I prithee, pray for me. The duke, I say to thee again, would eat mutton on Fridays. He's not past it yet, and I say to thee, he would mouth with a beggar, though she smelt brown bread and garlic: say that I said so. Farewell.

[Exit.]

Duke. No might nor greatness in mortality
Can censure 'scape: back-wounding calumny
The whitest virtue strikes. What king so strong
Can tie the gall up in the slanderous tongue?
But who comes here?

Enter Escalus, Provost, and Officers with
Mistress Overdone.

Escal. Go; away with her to prison!
Mrs. Ov. Good my lord, be good to me; your honour is accounted a merciful man; good my lord.

Escal. Double and treble admonition, and
still forfeit in the same kind? This would make mercy swear, and play the tyrant.

Prov. A bawd of eleven years' continuance,
may it please your honour.

Mrs. Ov. My lord, this is one Lucio's information against me. Mistress Kate Keepdown was with child by him in the duke's time; he promised her marriage; his child is a year and a quarter old, come Philip and Jacob: I have kept it myself, and see how he goes about to abuse me.

Escal. That fellow is a fellow of much licence:
lend him be called before us. Away with her to prison! Go to; no more words. [Exeunt Officers with Mistress Overdone.] Provost, my brother Angelo will not be altered; Claudio
must die to-morrow. Let him be furnished with
divines, and have all charitable preparation: if
my brother wrought by my pity, it should not
be so with him. 239
Prov. So please you, this friar hath been with
him, and advised him for the entertainment of
death. 232

Escal. Good even, good father.
Duke. Bliss and goodness on you!
Escal. Of whence are you?
Duke. Not of this country, though my chance
is now 236
To use it for my time: I am a brother
Of gracious order, late come from the See,
In special business from his Holiness.

Escal. What news abroad i' the world? 240
Duke. None, but there is so great a fever on
goodness, that the dissolution of it must cure
it: novelty is only in request; and it is as
dangerous to be aged in any kind of course, as
it is virtuous to be constant in any undertaking:
there is scarce truth enough alive to make
societies secure, but security enough to make
fellowships accursed. Much upon this riddle
runs the wisdom of the world. Thus news is old
enough, yet it is every day's news. I pray you,
sir, of what disposition was the duke? 251

Escal. One that, above all other strifes, con-
tended especially to know himself.
Duke. What pleasure was he given to? 254
Escal. Rather rejoicing to see another merry,

than merry at anything which professed to make
him rejoice: a gentleman of all temperance.
But leave we him to his events, with a prayer
they may prove prosperous; and let me desire
to know how you find Claudio prepared. I am
made to understand, that you have lent him
visitation.

Duke. He professes to have received no sinis-
ter measure from his judge, but most willingly
humbles himself to the determination of justice;
yet had he framed to himself, by the instruction
of his frailty, many deceiving promises of life,
which I, by my good leisure have accredited to
him, and now is he resolved to die. 269

Escal. You have paid the heavens your
function, and the prisoner the very debt of
your calling. I have laboured for the poor
gentleman to the extremest shore of my modes-
ty; but my brother justice have I found so severe,
that he hath forced me to tell him he is indeed
Justice.

Duke. If his own life answer the strictness of
his proceeding, it shall become him well; wherein
if he chance to fail, he hath sentenced himself.

Escal. I am going to visit the prisoner. Fare
you well.
ance a little; may be I will call upon you anon, for some advantage to yourself.  

Mai. I am always bound to you.  [Exit.

Enter Isabella.

Duke. Very well met, and well come.  

What is the news from this good deputy?  

Isab. He hath a garden circumvent’d with brick,  

Whose western side is with a vineyard back’d;  

And to that vineyard is a planched gate,  

That makes his opening with this bigger key;  

This other doth command a little door  

Which from the vineyard to the garden leads;  

There have I made my promise  

Upon the heavy middle of the night  

to call upon him.  

Duke. But shall you on your knowledge find this way?  

Isab. I have ta’en a due and wary note  

With whispering and most guilty diligence,  

In action all of precept, he did show me  

The way twice o’er.  

Duke. Are there no other tokens  

Between you ’greed concerning her observance?  

Isab. No, none, but only a repair ’t the dark;  

And that I have possess’d him my most stay  

Can be but brief; for I have made him know  

I have a servant comes with me along.  

That stays upon me, whose persuasion is  

I come about my brother.  

Duke. ’Tis well borne up.  

I have not yet made known to Mariana  

A word of this. What hol within! come forth.

Re-enter Mariana.

I pray you, be acquainted with this maid;  

She comes to do you good.  

Isab. I do desire the like.  

Duke. Do you persuade yourself that I respect you?  

Mai. Good friar, I know you do, and oft have found it.  

Duke. Take then your companion by the hand,  

Who hath a story ready for your ear.  

I shall attend your leisure: but make haste;  

The vaporous night approaches.  

Mai. Will ’t please you walk aside?  

[Exit Mariana and Isabella.

Duke. O place and greatness! millions of false eyes  

Are stuck upon thee: volumes of report  

Run with these false and most contrarious quests  

Upon thy doings: thousand escapes of wit

Make thee the father of their idle dream,  

And rack thee in their fancies!

Re-enter Mariana and Isabella.

Welcome! How agreed?  

Isab. She’ll take the enterprise upon her, father,  

If you advise it.  

Duke. It is not my consent,  

But my entreaty too.  

Isab. Little have you to say  

When you depart from him, but, soft and low,  

‘Remember now my brother.’  

Mai. Fear me not.  

Duke. Nor, gentle daughter, fear you not at all.  

He is your husband on a pre-contract:  

To bring you thus together, ‘tis no sin,  

Sith that the justice of your title to him  

Doth flourish the deceit. Come, let us go:  

Our corn’s to reap, foryet our tithe’s to sow.  

[Exeunt.

Scene II. — A Room in the Prison.

Enter Provost and Pompey.

Prov. Come hither, sirrah. Can you cut off a man’s head?  

Pom. If the man be a bachelor, sir, I can;  

but if he be a married man, he is his wife’s head,  

and I can never cut off a woman’s head.  

Prov. Come, sir, leave me your snatches, and  

yield me a direct answer. To-morrow morning  

are to die Claudio and Barnardine. Here is in  

our prison a common executioner, who in his  

office lacks a helper: if you will take it on you  

to assist him, it shall redeem you from your  

gyves; if not, you shall have your full time of  

imprisonment, and your deliverance with an  

unpitied whipping, for you have been a notorious  

bawd.  

Pom. Sir, I have been an unlawful bawd time  

out of mind; but yet I will be content to be a  

lawful hangman. I would be glad to receive  

some instruction from my fellow partner.  

Prov. What ho, Abhorson! Where’s Abhorson, there?  

Enter Abhorson.

Abhor. Do you call, sir?  

Prov. Sirrah, here’s a fellow will help you  

to-morrow in your execution. If you think it  

meet, compound with him by the year, and let  

him abide here with you; if not, use him for the  

present, and dismiss him. He cannot plead his  

estimation with you; he hath been a bawd.  

Abhor. A bawd, sir? Fie upon him! he will  

discredit our mystery.
Enter DUKE, disguised as before.

Duke. The best and wholesom’st spirits of the night

Enter Provost. Welcome, father.

Prov. None since the curfew rung.

Duke. Not Isabel?

Prov. No.

Duke. They will, then, ere’t be long.

Prov. What comfort is for Claudio?

Duke. There’s some in hope.

Prov. Is it a bitter deputy.

Duke. Not so, not so: his life is parallel’d.

Even with the stroke and line of his great justice:
He doth with holy abstinence subdue
That in himself which he spurs on his power
To qualify in others: were he meal’d with that
Which he corrects, then were he tyrannous;
But this being so, he’s just.

[Knocking within.]

Now are they come.

[Exit Provost.

This is a gentle provost: seldom when
The steeded gaoler is the friend of men.

[Knocking.

How now! What noise? That spirit’s possess’d
With haste
That wounds the unsisting postern with these

Re-enter Provost.

Prov. There he must stay until the officer
Arose to let him in; he is call’d up.

Duke. Have you no countermand for Claudio
yet,

But he must die to-morrow?

Prov. None, sir, none.

Duke. As near the dawning, provost, as it is,
You shall hear more ere morning.

Prov. Happily
You something know; yet, I believe there comes
No countermand: no such example have we.
Besides, upon the very siege of justice,
Lord Angelo hath to the public ear
Profess’d the contrary.

Enter a Messenger.

This is his lordship’s man.

Duke. And here comes Claudio’s pardon.

Mes. [Giving a paper.] My lord hath sent
you this note; and by me this further charge,
that you swerve not from the smallest article of
it, neither in time, matter, or other circumstance.
Good morrow; for, as I take it, it is almost day.

Prov. I shall obey him.

Duke. [Aside.] This is his pardon, purchased
by such a sin

Enter Claudio.

Prov. Go to, sir; you weigh equally; a feather
will turn the scale.

Pom. Pray, sir, by your good favour—for
surely, sir, a good favour you have, but that you
have a hanging look,—do you call, sir, your
occupation a mystery?

Abhor. Ay, sir; a mystery.

Pom. Painting, sir, I have heard say, is a
mystery; and your whores, sir, being members
of my occupation, using painting, do prove my
occupation a mystery: but what mystery there
should be in hanging, if I should be hanged, I
cannot imagine.

Abhor. Sir, it is a mystery.

Pom. Proof?

Abhor. Every true man’s apparel fits your thief.

Pom. If it be too little for your thief, your
ture man thinks it big enough; if it be too big
for your thief, your thief thinks it little enough:
so, every true man’s apparel fits your thief.

Re-enter Provost.

Prov. Are you agreed?

Pom. Sir, I will serve him; for I do find that
your hangman is a more penitent trade than
your bawd, he doth often ask forgiveness.

Prov. You, sirrah, provide your block and
your axe to-morrow four o’clock.

Abhor. Come on, bawd; I will instruct thee
in my trade; follow.

Pom. I do desire to learn, sir; and, I hope, if
you have occasion to use me for your own turn,
you shall find me yare; for, truly, sir, for your
kindness I owe you a good turn.

Prov. Call hither Barnardine and Claudio:

[Exit FopPEY and Abhorson.

The one has my pity; not a jot the other.

Being a murderer, though he were my brother.

Enter Claudio.

Look, here’s the warrant, Claudio, for thy death:
’Tis now dead midnight, and by eight to-morrow
Thou must be made immortal. Where’s Barnardine?

Claud. As fast lock’d up in sleep as guiltless
labour
When it lies starkly in the traveller’s bones;
He will not wake.

Prov. Who can do good on him?

Well, go; prepare yourself. [Knocking within.]

But hark! what noise?

Heaven give your spirits comfort!—[Exit Clau-
dio.]

By and by.

I hope it is some’pardon or reprieve!

For the most gentle Claudio.
MEASURE FOR MEASURE  
ACT IV, SC. II.

For which the pardon'cr himself is in;  
Hence hath offence his quick celerity,  
When it is borne in high authority.  
When vice makes mercy, mercy’s so extended,  
That for the fault’s love is the offender  
friended.

Now, sir, what news?  
Prov. I told you; Lord Angelo, belie thinking  
me remiss in mine office, awakens me with  
this unwonted putting on; methinks strangely,  
for he hath not used it before.

Duke. Pray you, let’s hear.  
Prov. Whosoever you may hear to the contrary, let Claudio be executed by four of the  
clock; and, in the afternoon, Barnardine.  
For my better satisfaction, let me have Claudio’s  
head sent me by five. Let this be duly performed;  
with a thought that more depends on it than we must yet deliver.  
Thus fail not to do your office, as you will answer it at your peril.  
What say you to this, sir?  

Duke. What is that Barnardine who is to be  
executed this afternoon?  
Prov. A Bohemian born, but here nursed up  
and bred; one that is a prisoner nine years old.  
Duke. How came it that the absent duke had  
ot rendered him to his liberty or executed him? I have heard it was ever his manner  
to do so.

Prov. His friends still wrought reprieves for  
him; and, indeed, his fact, till now in the  
government of Lord Angelo, came not to an  
undoubtful proof.

Duke. It is now apparent?  
Prov. Most manifest, and not denied by himself.  
Duke. Hath he borne himself penitently in  
prison? How seems he to be touched?  
Prov. A man that apprehends death no more  
dreadfully but as a drunken sleep; careless, reck-  
less; and fearless of what, a past, present, or to  
come; insensible of mortality, and desperately  
mortal.

Duke. He wants advice.  
Prov. He will hear none. He hath evermore  
had the liberty of the prison: give him leave to  
escape hence, he would not; drunk many times  
a day, if not many days entirely drunk. We  
have very oft awaked him, as if to carry him to  
execution, and showed him a seeming warrant  
for it; he hath not moved him at all.

Duke. More of him anon. There is written  
in your brow, protest, honesty and constancy;  
if I read it not truly, my ancient skill betrays  
me; but, in the boldness of my cunning I will  
lay myself in hazard. Claudio, whom here you  
have warrant to execute, is no greater forfeit  
to the law than Angelo who hath sentenced  

him. To make you understand this in a mani- 
fested effect, I crave but four days’ respite,  
for which you are to do me both a present and  
a dangerous courtesy.

Prov. Pray, sir, in what?  
Duke. In the delaying death.

Prov. Alack! how may I do it, having the  
hour limited, and an express command, under  
penalty, to deliver his head in the view of Angelo?  
I may make my case as Claudio’s to cross this  
in the smallest.

Duke. By the vow of mine order I warrant  
you, if my instructions may be your guide. Let  
this Barnardine be this morning executed, and  
his head borne to Angelo.

Prov. Angelo hath seen them both, and will  
discover the favour.

Duke. O! death’s a great discounter, and you  
may add to it. Shave the head, and tie the  
beard; and say it was the desire of the penitent  
to be so bared before his death: you know the  
course is common. If anything fail to you upon  
this, more than thanks and good fortune, by the  
character whom I profess, I will plead against it  
with my life.

Prov. Pardon me, good father; it is against  
my oath.

Duke. Were you sworn to the duke or to the  
deputy?

Prov. To him, and to his substitutes.

Duke. You will think you have made no  
offence, if the duke avouch the justice of your  
dealing?

Prov. But what likelihood is in that?

Duke. Not a resemblance, but a certainty.  
Yet since I see you fearful, that neither my  
coat, integrity, nor persuasion can with ease at-  
tempt you, I will go further than I meant; to  
pluck all fears out of you. Look you, sir; here  
is the hand and seal of the duke: you know the  
character, I doubt not, and the signet is not  
strange to you.

Prov. I know them both.

Duke. The contents of this is the return of  
the duke: you shall anon over-read it at your  
pleasure, where you shall find within these two  
days, he will be here. This is a thing that  
Angelo knows not, for he this very day receives  
letters of strange tenour; perchance of the duke’s  
death; perchance his entering into some monastery;  
but, by chance, nothing of what is writ.  
Look, the unfolding star calls up the shepherd.  
Put not yourself into amazement how these  
things should be: all difficulties are but easy  
when they are known. Call your executioner,  
and off with Barnardine’s head: I will give him  
a present shrift and advise him for a better
place. Yet you are amaz’d, but this shall absolutely resolve you. Come away; it is almost clear dawn.  

[Exit.

SCENE III.—Another Room in the Same.

Enter POMPEY.

Pom. I am as well acquainted here as I was in our house of profession: one would think it were Mistress Overdone’s own house, for here be many of her old customers. First, here’s young Master Rash; he’s in for a commodity of brown paper and old ginger, nine-score and seventeen pounds, of which he made five marks, ready money: marry, then ginger was not much in request, for the old women were all dead. Then is there here one Master Caper, at the suit of Master Three-pile the Mercer, for some four suits of peach-colour’d satin, which now praises him a beggar. Then have we young Dizy, and young Master Deep-vow, and Master Copperspur, and Master Starve-lackey the rapier and dagger man, and young Drop-heir that kill’d lusty Pudding, and Master Forthlight, the tilter, and brave Master Shoe-tie the great traveller, and wild Half-can that stabbed Pots, and, I think, forty more; all great doers in our trade, and are now ‘for the Lord’s sake.’

Enter ABHORSON.

Abhor. Sirrah, bring Barnardine hither.

Pom. Master Barnardine! you must rise and be hanged, Master Barnardine.

Abhor. What ho! Barnardine!

Barnar. [Within.] A pox o’ your throats! Who makes that noise there? What are you?

Pom. Your friends, sir; the hangman. You must be so good, sir, to rise and be put to death.

Barnar. [Within.] Away! you rogue, away! I am sleepy.

Abhor. Tell him he must awake, and that quickly too.

Pom. Pray, Master Barnardine, awake till you are executed, and sleep afterwards.

Abhor. Go in to him, and fetch him out.

Pom. He is coming, sir; he is coming; I hear his straw rustle.

Abhor. Is the axe upon the block, sirrah?

Pom. Very ready, sir.

Enter BARNARDINE.

Barnar. How now, Abhorson! what’s the news with you?

Abhor. Truly, sir, I would desire you to clap into your prayers; for, look you, the warrant’s come.
Put them in secret holds, both Barnardine and Claudio: Ere twice the sun hath made his journal greeting To the under generation, you shall find Your safety manifested. Prov. I am your free dependant. Duke. Quick, dispatch, And send the head to Angelo. [Exit Provost. Now will I write letters to Angelo,— The provost, shall bear them,—whose contents Shall witness to him I am near at home, And that, by great injunctions, I am bound To enter publicly: him I'll desire To meet me at the consecrated fount A league below the city; and from thence, By cold gradation and well-balanced form, We shall proceed with Angelo.

Re-enter Provost.

Prov. Here is the head; I'll carry it myself. Duke. Convenient is it. Make a swift return, For I would commune with you of such things That want no ear but yours. Prov. I'll make all speed. [Exit. Isab. [Within.] Peace, ho, be here! Duke. The tongue of Isabel. She's come to know If yet her brother's pardon be come hither; But I will keep her ignorant of her good, To make her heavenly comforts of despair, When it is least expected.

Enter Isabella.

Isab. Hol! by your leave. Duke. Good morning to you, fair and gracious daughter. Isab. The better, given me by so holy a man. Hath yet the deputy sent my brother's pardon? Duke. He hath releas'd him, Isabel, from the world:

His head is off and sent to Angelo.

Isab. Nay, but it is not so. Duke. It is no other: show your wisdom, daughter, In your close patience. Isab. O! I will to him and pluck out his eyes! Duke. You shall not be admitted to his sight. Isab. Unhappy Claudio! Wretched Isabel! Injurious world! Most damned Angelo! Duke. This nor hurts him nor profits you a jot; Forbear it therefore; give your cause to heaven. Mark what I say, which you shall find By every syllable a faithful verity. The duke comes home to-morrow; nay, dry your eyes:

One of our covent, and his confessor, Gives me this instance: already he hath carried Notice to Escalus and Angelo, Who do prepare to meet him at the gates, There to give up their power. If you can, pace your wisdom In that good path that I would wish it go, And you shall have your bosom on this wretch, Grace of the Duke, revenges to your heart, And general honour.

Isab. I am directed by you. Duke. This letter then to Friar Peter give; 'Tis that he sent me of the duke's return: Say, by this token, I desire his company At Mariana's house to-night. Her cause and yours, I'll perfect him withal, and he shall bring you Before the duke; and to the head of Angelo Accuse him home, and home. For my poor self, I am combined by a sacred vow And shall be absent. Wendi you with this letter. Command these fretting waters from your eyes With a light heart: trust not my holy order, If I pervert your course. Who's here?

Enter Lucio.

Lucio. Good even. Friar, where is the provost?

Duke. Not within, sir.

Lucio. O pretty Isabella, I am pale at mine heart to see thine eyes so red: thou must be patient. I am fain to dine and sup with water and bran; I dare not for my head fill my belly; one fruitful meal would set me to't. But they say the duke will be here to-morrow. By my troth, Isabel, I loved thy brother: if the old fantastical duke of dark corners had been at home, he had lived. [Exit Isabella.

Duke. Sir, the duke is marvellous little beholding to your reports; but the best is, he lives not in them.

Lucio. Friar, thou knowest not the duke so well as I do: he's a better woodman than thou takest him for.

Duke. Well, you'll answer this one day. Fare ye well.

Lucio. Nay, tarry; I'll go along with thee: I can tell thee pretty tales of the duke. Duke. You have told me too many of him already, sir, if they be true; if not true, none were enough.

Lucio. I was once before him for getting a wench with child.

Duke. Did you such a thing?
Lucio. Yes, marry, did I; but I was fain to forswear it: they would else have married me to the rotten medlar.

Duke. Sir, your company is fairer than honest. Rest you well.

Lucio. By my troth, I'll go with thee to the lane's end. If bawdy talk offend you, we'll have very little of it. Nay, friar, I am a kind of burl; I shall stick. [Exeunt.

SCENE IV.—A Room in Angelo's House.

Enter Angelo and Escalus.

Escal. Every letter he hath writ hath disvouched other.

Ang. In most uneven and distracted manner, His actions show much like to madness: pray heaven his wisdom be not tainted! And why meet him at the gates, and redeem our authorities there?

Escal. I guess not.

Ang. And why should we proclaim it in an hour before his entering, that if any crave redress of injustice, they should exhibit their petitions in the street?

Escal. He shows his reason for that: to have a dispatch of complaints, and to deliver us from devices hereafter, which shall then have no power to stand against us.

Ang. Well, I beseech you, let it be proclaimed: Betimes I'll the morn I'll call you at your house; Give notice to such men of sort and suit As are to meet him.

Escal. I shall, sir: fare you well. [Exit Escalus.

Ang. Good night.—[Exit Angelo.}

This deed unshapes me quite, makes me unpregnant
And dull to all proceedings. A deflower'd maid,
And by an eminent body that enforce'd
The law against it! But that her tender shame
Will not proclaim against her maiden losses,
How might she tongue me! Yet reason dares her no:
For my authority bears so credent bulk,
That no particular scandal once can touch:
But it confounds the breather. He should have liv'd,
Save that his riotous youth, with dangerous sense,
Might in the times to come have ta'en revenge,
By so receiving a diabolour'd life.
With ransom of such shame. Would yet he had liv'd!

Also! when once our grace we have forgot, 36
Nothing goes right: we would, and we would not.

SCENE V.—Fields without the Town.

Enter Duke, in his own habit, and Friar Peter.

Duke. These letters at fit time deliver me.

Friar Peter. [Giving letters.]

The provost knows our purpose and our plot.
The matter being afoot, keep your instruction, And hold you ever to our special drift.

Though sometimes you do blemish from this to that,
As cause doth minister. Go call at Flavius' house,
And tell him where I stay: give the like notice To Valentinus, Rowland, and to Craseus,
And bid them bring the trumpets to the gate;
But send me Flavius first.

F. Peter. It shall be speeded well. [Exit.

Enter Varrius.

Duke. I thank thee, Varrius; thou hast made good haste.
Come, we will walk. There's other of our friends Will greet us here anon, my gentle Varrius. 13

[Exeunt.

SCENE VI.—Street near the City Gate.

Enter Isabella and Mariana.

Isab. To speak so indirectly I am loath: I would say the truth; but to accuse him so, That is your part: yet I'm advis'd to do it;
He says, to veil full purpose.

Mari. Be rul'd by him. 4

Isab. Besides, he tells me that if peradventure He speak against me on the adverse side, I should not think it strange; for 'tis a physic That's bitter to sweet end.

Mari. I would, Friar Peter—

Isab. O, peace! the friar is come.

Enter Friar Peter.

F. Peter. Come; I have found you, out a stand most fit,
Where you may have such vantage on the duke,
He shall not pass you. Twice have the trumpets sounded:
The generous and grave citizens
Have hent the gates, and very near upon
The duke is ent'ring: therefore hence, away!

[Exeunt.
ACT V.

SCENE I.—A public Place near the City Gate.

MARIANA, veiled, ISABELLA, and FRIAR PETER, at their stand. Enter DUKE, VARRIUS, Lords, ANGELO, ESCALUS, LUCIO, PROVOST, Officers, and Citizens at several doors.

Duke. My very worthy cousin, fairly met!
Our old and faithful friend, we are glad to see you.

Ang. | Happy return be to your royal Grace!
Esca. | Many and hearty thankings to you both.

We have made inquiry of you; and we hear
Such goodness of your justice, that our soul
Cannot but yield you forth to public thanks,
Forerunning more requital.

Ang. | You make my bonds still greater. 8
Duke. Of your desert speaks loud; and I should wrong it,
To lock it in the wards of covert bosom,
When it deserves, with characters of brass,
A fortified residence 'gainst the tooth of time
And rasure of oblivion. Give me your hand,
And let the subject see, to make them know
That outward courtesies would fain proclaim
Favours that keep within. Come, Escalus, 16
You must walk by us on our other hand;
And good supporters are you.

FRIAR PETER and ISABELLA come forward.

F. Peter. Now is your time: speak loud and
kneel before him.

Isab. Justice, O royal duke! Vail your regard
Upon a wrong'd, I'd fain have said, a maid! 21
O worthy prince! dishonour not your eye
By throwing it on any other object
Till you have heard me in my true complaint
And given me justice, justice, justice, justice!

Here is Lord Angelo, shall give you justice:
Reveal yourself to him.

Isab. | O worthy duke! 28
You bid me seek redemption of the devil.
Hear me yourself; for that which I must speak
Must either punish me, not being believ'd,
Or wring redress from you. Hear me, O, hear me, here! 32

Ang. | My lord, her wits I fear me, are not firm:
She hath been a suitor to me for her brother,
Cut off by course of justice,

Isab. | By course of justice!
Ang. | And she will speak most bitterly and strange.

Isab. Most strange, but yet most truly, will I speak.
That Angelo's forsworn, is it not strange?
That Angelo's a murderer, is't not strange?
That Angelo is an adulterous thief,
A hypocrite, a villain-violator;
Is it not strange, and strange?

Duke. | Nay, it is ten times strange.

Isab. It is not true he is Angelo
Than this is all as true as it is strange;
Nay, it is ten times true; for truth is truth
To the end of reckoning.

Duke. | Away with her! poor soul,
She speaks this in the infirmity of sense.

Isab. O prince, I conjure thee, as thou believ'st
There is another comfort than this world,
That thou neglect me not, with that opinion
That I am touch'd with madness. Make not impossible
That which but seems unlike. 'Tis not impossible
But one, the wickedest caitiff on the ground,
May seem as shy, as grave, as just, as absolute
As Angelo; even so may Angelo,
In all his dressings, charactors, titles, forms,
Be an arch-villain. Believe it, royal prince:
If he be less, he's nothing; but he's more,
Had I more name for badness.

Duke. | By mine honesty,
If she be mad,—as I believe no other,— 60
Her madness hath the oddest frame of sense,
Such a dependency of thing on thing,
As e'er I heard in madness.

Isab. | O gracious duke!
Harp not on that; nor do not banish reason
For inequality; but let your reason serve
To make the truth appear where it seems hid,
And hide the false seems true.

Duke. | Many that are not mad
Have, sure, more lack of reason. What would you say?

Isab. | I am the sister of one Claudio,
Condemn'd upon the act of fornication
To lose his head; condemn'd by Angelo.
I, in probation of a sisterhood,
Was sent to by my brother; one Lucio
As then the messenger,

Lucio. | That's I, an't like your Grace:
I came to her from Claudio, and desir'd her
To try her gracious fortune with Lord Angelo
For her poor brother's pardon.

Isab. | That's he indeed.

Duke. You were not bid to speak.

Lucio. | No, my good lord;
Nor wish'd to hold my peace.

Duke. I wish you now, then;
Pray you, take note of it; and when you have
A business for yourself, pray heaven you then
Be perfect.

Lucto. I warrant your honour.

Duke. The warrant's for yourself: take heed to it.

Isab. This gentleman told somewhat of my tale,—

Lucto. Right.

Duke. It may be right; but you are in the wrong
To speak before your time. Proceed.

Isab. I went

To this pernicious caitiff deputy.

Duke. That's somewhat madly spoken.

Isab. Pardon it;

The phrase is to the matter.

Duke. Mended again: the matter; proceed.

Isab. In brief, to set the needless process by,

How I persuaded, how I pray'd, and kneel'd,
How he revel'd me, and how I replied,—

For this was of much length,—the vile conclusion

I now begin with grief and shame to utter.

He would not, but by gift of my chaste body
To his concupiscible intemperate lust,
Release my brother; and, after much debate-
ment,

My sisterly remorse confutes mine honour,
And I did yield to him. But the next morn betimes,

His purpose surfeiting, he sends a warrant
For my poor brother's head.

Duke. This is most likely.

Isab. O, that it were as like as it is true!

Duke. By heaven, fond wretch! thou know'st not what thou speak'st,

Or else thou art suborn'd against his honour

In hateful practice. First, his integrity

Stands without blemish; next, it imports no reason

That with such vehemency he should pursue
Faults proper to himself: if he had so offended,
He would have weigh'd thy brother by himself,
And not have cut him off. Some one hath set you on:

Confess the truth, and say by whose advice
Thou cam'st here to complain.

Isab. And is this all?

Thou blessed ministers above,

Keep me in patience; and, with ripen'd time
Unfold the evil which is here wrap't up
In countenance! Heaven shield your Grace from woe,

As I, thus wrong'd, hence unbeliev'd go!

Duke. I know you'd fain be gone. An officer!

To prison with her! Shall we thus permit
A blasting and a scandalous breath to fall
On him so near us? This needs must be a practice.

Who knew of your intent and coming hither?

Isab. One that I would were here, Friar Lodowick.

Duke. A ghostly father, belike. Who knows that Lodowick?

Lucto. My lord, I know him; 'tis a meddling friar;

I do not like the man: had he been lay, my lord,
For certain words he spake against your Grace
In your retirement, I had swing'd him soundly.

Duke. Words against me! This's a good friar, belike!

And to set on this wretched woman here
Against our substitute! Let this friar be found.

Lucto. But yesternight, my lord, she and that friar,

I saw them at the prison: a saucy friar,

A very scurvy fellow.

F. Peter. Bless'd be your royal Grace!

I have stood by, my lord, and I have heard
Your royal ear abus'd. First, hath this woman
Most wrongfully accus'd your substitute,

Who is as free from touch or soul with her,
As she from one ungot.

Duke. We did believe no less.

Know you that Friar Lodowick that she speaks of?

F. Peter. I know him for a man divine and holy;

Not scurvy, nor a temporary meddler,
As he's reported by this gentleman;
And, on my trust, a man that never yet

Did, as he vouches, misreport your Grace.

Lucto. My lord, most villainously; believe it.

F. Peter. Well; he in time may come to clear himself,

But at this instant he is sick, my lord,

Of a strange fever. Upon his mere request,

Being come to knowledge that there was complaint

Intended 'gainst Lord Angelo, came I hither,

To speak, as from his mouth, what he doth know

Is true and false; and what he with his oath

And all probation will make up full clear,

Whenceover he's convented. First, for this woman,

To justify this worthy nobleman,

So vulgarly and personally accus'd,

Her shall you hear disapprov'd to her eyes,

Till she herself confess it.
Duke. Good friar, let's hear it.  
[ISABELLA is carried off guarded; and MARIANA comes forward.

Do you not smile at this, Lord Angelo?—
O heaven, the vanity of wretched fools! 164
Give us some seats. Come, cousin Angelo;
In this I'll be impartial; be you judge
Of your own cause. Is this the witness, friar?
First, let her show her face, and after speak. 168

Mari. Pardon, my lord; I will not show my face
Until my husband bide me.

Duke. What, are you married?

Mari. No, my lord.

Duke. Are you a maid?

Mari. No, my lord.

Duke. A widow, then?

Mari. Neither, my lord.

Duke. Why, you are nothing, then: neither maid, widow, nor wife?

Lucio. My lord, she may be a punk; for many of them are neither maid, widow, nor wife.

Duke. Silence that fellow: I would he had some cause
To prattle for himself.

Lucio. Well, my lord.

Mari. My lord, I do confess I ne'er was married; 180
And I confess besides I am no maid:
I have known my husband yet my husband
knows not
That ever he knew me.

Lucio. He was drunk then my lord: it can be no better. 184

Duke. For the benefit of silence, would thou wert so too!

Lucio. Well, my lord.

Duke. This is no witness for Lord Angelo.

Mari. Now I come to't, my lord: 188
She that accuses him of fornication,
In self-same manner doth accuse my husband;
And charges him, my lord, with such a time,
When, I'll depose, I had him in mine arms, 192
With all th' effect of love.

Ang. Charges she moe than me?

Mari. Not that I know.

Duke. No? you say your husband.

Mari. Why, just, my lord, and that is Angelo,
Who thinks he knows that he ne'er knew my body 197
But knows he thinks that he knows Isabel's.

Ang. This is a strange abuse. Let's see thy face.

Mari. My husband bide me; now I will unmask. [Unveiling.

This is that face, thou cruel Angelo, 201
Which once thou swor'st was worth the looking on:
This is the hand which, with a vow'd contract,
Was fast belock'd in thine: this is the body 204
That took away the match from Isabel,
And did supply thee at thy garden-house
In her imagin'd person.

Duke. Know you this woman?

Lucio. Carnally, she says.

Duke. Sirrah, no more! 208

Lucio. Enough, my lord.

Ang. My lord, I must confess I know this woman; 210
And five years since there was some speech of marriage
Betwixt myself and her, which was broke off,
Partly for that her promised proportions
Came short of composition; but, in chief
For that her reputation was disvalu'd
In levity: since which time of five years 216
I never spake with her, saw her, nor heard from her,

Upon my faith and honour.

Mari. Noble prince,
As there comes light from heaven and words from breath,
As there is sense in truth and truth in virtue,
I am affianced this man's wife as strongly 221
As words could make up vows: and, my good lord,
But Tuesday night last gone in 's garden-house
He knew me as a wife. As this is true, 224
Let me in safety raise me from my knees
Or else for ever be confixed here,
A marble monument.

Ang. I did but smile till now:
Now, good my lord, give me the scope of justice;
My patience here is touch'd. I do perceive 229
These poor informal women are no more
But instruments of some more mightier member
That sets them on. Let me have way, my lord,
To find this practice out.

Duke. Ay, with my heart; 233
And punish them unto your height of pleasure.

Thou foolish friar, and thou pernicious woman,
Compact with her that's gone, think'st thou thy oaths, 236
Though they would swear down each particular saint,
Were testimonies against his worth and credit
That's seal'd in approbation? You, Lord Escalus,
Sit with my cousin; lend him your kind paims
To find out this abuse, whence 'tis deriv'd. 241
There is another friar that set them on;

109
Let him be sent for.

_F. Peter._ Would he were here, my lord; for he indeed

Hath set the women on to this complaint:
Your provost knows the place where he abides
And he may fetch him.

_Duke._ Go do it instantly. [Exit PROVOST.
And you, my noble and well-warranted cousin,
Whom it concerns to hear this matter forth,
Do with your injuries as seems you best,
In any chastisement: I for awhile will leave
But stir not you, till you have well determin'd
Upon these slanderers.

_Escal._ My lord, we'll do it throughly.—

[Exit DUKE.

_Signior Lucio._ Did not you say you knew that
Friar Lodowick to be a dishonest person? 256

_Lucio._ Cucullus non facit monachum: honest in nothing, but in his clothes; and one
that hath spoke most villainous speeches of the
duke.

_Escal._ We shall entreat you to abide here
till he come and enforce them against him. We
shall find this friar a notable fellow.

_Lucio._ As any in Vienna, on my word. 264

_Escal._ Call that same Isabel here once again:
I would speak with her. [Exit an Attendant.
Pray you, my lord, give me leave to question;
you shall see how I'll handle her. 268

_Lucio._ Not better than he, by her own report.

_Escal._ Say you?

_Lucio._ Marry, sir, I think, if you handled her
privately, she would sooner confess: perchance,
publicly, she'll be ashamed.

_Escal._ I will go darkly to work with her. 274

_Lucio._ That's the way: for women are light
at midnight.

_Re-enter Officers with ISABELLA._

_Escal._ [To ISAB.] Come on, mistress: here's
a gentlewoman denies all that you have said.

_Lucio._ My lord, here comes the rascal I spoke
of; here with the provost.

_Escal._ In very good time: speak not you to
him, till we call upon you. 282

[Enter DUKE, disguised as a friar, and

_PROVOST._

_Lucio._ Mum.

_Escal._ Come, sir. Did you set these women
on to slander Lord Angelo? they have confessed
you did.

_Duke._ 'Tis false.

_Escal._ How! know you where you are? 288

_Duke._ Respect to your great place! and let
the devil

Be sometime honour'd for his burning throne.
Where is the duke? 'tis he should hear me
speak.

_Escal._ The duke's in us, and we will hear
you speak;

Look you speak justly.

_Duke._ Boldly, at least. But, O, poor souls!
Come you to seek the lamb here of the fox?
Good night to your redress! Is the duke
gone?
Then is your cause gone too. The duke's un-
just,
Thus to retort your manifest appeal,
And put your trial in the villain's mouth
Which here you come to accuse. 300

_Lucio._ This is the rascal: this is he I spoke
of.

_Escal._ Why, thou unreverend and unhallow'd
friar!

Is't not enough thou hast suborn'd these women
To accuse this worthy man, but, in foul mouth,
And in the witness of his proper ear,
To call him villain?
And then to glance from him to the duke him-
self,
To tax him with injustice? take him hence; 308
To the rack with him! We'll touse you jont
by joint,
But we will know his purpose. What! 'unjust'?

_Duke._ Be not so hot; the duke
Dare no more stretch this finger of mine than he
Dare rack his own: his subject am I not.
Nor here provincial. My business in this state
Made me a looker-on here in Vienna,
Where I have seen corruption boil and bubble
Till it o'er-run the stew: laws for all faults,
But faults so countenanced, that the strong

Statutes
Stand like the forfeits in a barber's shop,
As much in mock as mark.

_Escal._ Slander to the state! Away with him
to prison!

_Ang._ What can you vouch against him,
Signior Lucio?

Is this the man that you did tell us of?

_Lucio._ 'Tis he, my lord. Come hither, good-
man bald-pate: do you know me? 325

_Duke._ I remember you, sir, by the sound of
your voice: I met you at the prison, in the
absence of the duke.

_Lucio._ 'O! did you so? And do you remem-
ber what you said of the duke?

_Duke._ Most notably, sir.

_Lucio._ Do you so, sir? And was the duke a
flesh-monger, a fool, and a coward, as you then
reported him to be?

_Duke._ You must, sir, change persons—

110
me, ere you make, that my report: you, indeed, spoke so of him; and much more, much worse.

Lucio. O. thou damnable fellow! Did not I pluck thee by the nose for thy speeches?

Duke. I protest I love the duke as I love myself. 340

Ang. Hark how the villain would close now, after his reasonable abuses!

Escal. Such a fellow is not to be talk’d withal.

Away with him to prison! Where is the provost?

Away with him to prison! Lay bolts enough on him, let him speak no more. Away with these giglota too, and with the other confederate companion!


Duke. Stay, sir; stay awhile.


Lucio. Come, sir; come, sir; come, sir; foh! sir. Why, you bally-pated, lying rascal, you must be hooded, must you? show your knave’s visage, with a pox to you! show your sheep-biting face, and be hanged an hour! Will’t not off?

[Duke. ——]

Duke. Thou art the first knave that e’er made a duke.

First, provost, let me bail these gentle three.

[To Lucio.] Sneak not away, sir; for the friar and you.

Must have a word anon. Lay hold on him. 360

Lucio. This may prove worse than hanging.

Duke. [To Escalus.] What you have spoke

Ang. I pardon; sit you down:

We’ll borrow place of him. [To Angelo.] Sir, by your leave.

Hast thou word, or wit, or impudence, 364

That yet can do thee office? If thou hast,

Rely upon it till my tale be heard,

And hold no longer out.

Ang. O my dread lord!

I should be guiltier than my guiltiness, 368

To think I can be undiscernible

When I perceive your Grace, like power divine, Hath look’d upon my passe. Then, good prince, No longer session hold upon my shame, 372

But let my trial be mine own confession:

Immediate sentence then and sequent death
Is all the grace I beg.


Say, what thou e’er contracted to this woman? 377

Ang. I was, my lord.

Duke. Go take her hence, and marry her instantly.

Do you the office, friar; which consummate,

Return him here again. Go with him, provost.

[Exeunt Angelo, Mariana, Friar Peter, and Provost.

Escal. My lord, I am more amaz’d at his dishonour

Than at the strangeness of it.


Your friar is now your prince: as I was then Advertising and holy to your business,

Not changing heart with habit, I am still Attorney’d at your service.

Isab. O, give me pardon,

That I, your vassal, have employ’d and pain’d

Your unknown sovereignty!

Duke. You are pardon’d, Isabel:

And now, dear maid, be you as free to us,

Your brother’s death, I know, sits at your heart;

And you may marvel why I obscur’d myself,

Labouring to save his life, and would not rather Make rash remonstrance of my hidden power

Than let him so be lost. O most kind maid!

It was the swift celerity of his death,

Which I did think with slower foot came on,

That brain’d my purpose: but, peace be with him!

That life is better life, past fearing death,

Than that which lives to fear: make it your comfort,

So happy is your brother.

Isab. I do, my lord. 400

Re-enter Angelo, Mariana, Friar Peter, and Provost.

Duke. For this new-married man approaching here,

Whose salt imagination yet hath wrong’d

Your well-defended honour, you must pardon

For Mariana’s sake. But as he adjudging your brother,—

Being criminal, in double violation

Of sacred chastity, and of promise-break,

Thereon dependent, for your brother’s life,—

The very mercy of the law cries out

Most audible, even from his proper tongue,

An Angelo for Claudio, death for death!

Haste still pays haste, and leisure answers leisure,

Like doth quit like, and Measure still for Measure.

Then, Angelo, thy fault’s thus manifested,

Which, though thou wouldst deny, denies thee vantage.

We do condemn thee to the very block

Where Claudio stoop’d to death, and with like haste.

Away with him!

Marti. O, my most gracious lord!
I hope you will not mock me with a husband.

_Duke._ It is your husband mock'd you with a husband.

Consenting to the safeguard of your honour, I thought your marriage fit; else imputation, For that he knew you, might reproach your life And choke your good to come. For his possessions,
Although by confiscation they are ours, We do instate and widow you withal, To buy you a better husband.

_Mari._ O my dear lord! I crave no other, nor no better man.

_Duke._ Never crave him; we are definitive. 

_Mari._ [Kneeling.] Gentle my liege,—

_Duke._ You do but lose your labour. Away with him to death! [To Lucio.] Now, sir, to you.

_Mari._ O my good lord! Sweet Isabel, take my part: Lend me your knees, and, all my life to come, I'll lend you all my life to do you service. 

_Duke._ Against all sense you do importune her: Should she kneel down in mercy of this fact, Her brother's ghost his paved bed would break, And take her hence in horror.

_Mari._ Isabel, Sweet Isabel, do yet but kneel by me: Hold up your hands, say nothing, I'll speak all. They say best men are moulded out of faults, And, for the most, become much more the better For being a little bad: so may my husband. O, Isabel! will you not lend a knee? 

_Duke._ He dies for Claudio's death.

_Isab._ [Kneeling.] Most bounteous sir, Look, if it please you, on this man condemn'd, As if by my brother liv'd. I partly think A due sincerity govern'd his deeds, Till he did look on me: since it is so, Let him not die. My brother had but justice, In that he did the thing for which he died: For Angelo, His act did not o'ertake his bad intent; And must be burn'd but as an intent That perish'd by the way. Thoughts are no subjects; Intents but merely thoughts.

_Mari._ Merely, my lord. 

_Duke._ Your suit's unprofitable: stand up, I say.

I have bethought me of another fault. Provost, how came it Claudio was beheaded At an unusual hour?

_Prov._ It was commanded so.

_Duke._ Had you a special warrant for the deed?

_Prov._ No, my good lord; it was by private message.

_Duke._ For which I do discharge you of your office:

Give up your keys.

_Prov._ Pardon me, noble lord: I thought it was a fault, but knew it not; Yet did repent me, after more advice; For testimony whereof, one in the prison, That should by private order else have died I have reserv'd alive.

_Duke._ What's he?

_Prov._ His name is Barnardine.

_Duke._ I would thou hadst done so by Claudio. Go, fetch him hither: let me look upon him. 

[Exeunt Provost. 

_Escal._ I am sorry, one so learned and so wise As you, Lord Angelo, have still appear'd, Should slip so grossly, both in the heat of blood, And lack of temper'd judgment afterward. 

_Ang._ I am sorry that such sorrow I procure; And so deep sticks it in my penitent heart That I crave death more willingly than mercy: 'Tis my deserving, and I do entreat it.

_Re-enter Provost, with Barnardine, Claudio muffled, and Juliet._

_Duke._ Which is that Barnardine?

_Prov._ This, my lord. 

_Duke._ There was a friar told me of this man. Sirrah, thou art said to have a stubborn soul, That apprehends no further than this world, And squar'st thy life according. Thou'rt condemn'd: But, for those earthly faults, I quit them all, And pray thee take this mercy to provide For better times to come. Friar, advise him: I leave him to your hand.—What muffled fellow's that?

_Prov._ This is another prisoner that I saw'd, That should have died when Claudio lost his head, As like almost to Claudio as himself. 

[Unmuffs Claudio. 

_Duke._ [To Isabella.] If he be like your brother, for his sake Is he pardon'd; and, for your lovely sake Give me your hand and say you will be mine, He is my brother too. But fit time for that: By this, Lord Angelo perceives he's safe: Methinks I see a quickening in his eye. Well, Angelo, your evil quits you well: Look that you love your wife; her worth worth yours.— I find an apt remission in myself, And yet here's one in place I cannot pardon.—

112
[To Lucio.] You, sirrah, that knew me for a
fool, a coward,
One all of luxury, an ass, a madman:
Wherein have I so deserv'd of you,
That you extol me thus?  

Lucio. Faith, my lord, I spoke it but according
to the trick. If you will hang me for it, you
may; but I had rather it would please you I
might be whipped.

Duke. Whipp'd first, sir, and hang'd after.
Proclaim it, provost, round about the city,
If any woman's wrong'd by this lewd fellow,--
As I have heard him swear himself there's one
Whom he begot with child, let her appear, 513
And he shall marry her: the nuptial finish'd,
Let him be whipp'd and hang'd.

Lucio. I beseech your highness, do not marry
me to a whore. Your highness said even now,
I made you a duke: good my lord, do not re-
compense me in making me a cuckold.

Duke. Upon mine honour, thou shalt marry
her.

Thy slanders I forgive; and therewithal

Remit thy other forfeits. Take him to prison,
And see our pleasure herein executed.

Lucio. Marrying a punk, my lord, is pressing
to death, whipping, and hanging.

Duke. Slander a prince deserves it.
She, Claudio, that you wrong'd, look you restore.
Joy to you, Marian! love her, Angelo:
I have confess'd her and I know her virtue.
Thanks, good friend Escalus, for thy much
goodness:
There's more behind that is more gratulate.
Thanks, provost, for thy care and secrecy; 532
We shall employ thee in a worthier place.
Forgive him, Angelo, that brought you home
The head of Ragozine for Claudio's:
The offence pardons itself. Dear Isabel, 536
I have a motion much imports your good;
Where'so if you'll a willing ear incline,
What's mine is yours, and what is yours is
mine.

So, bring us to our palace; where we'll show540
What's yet behind, that's meet you all should
know.

[Exeunt.]
THE COMEDY OF ERRORS

DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

SOLINUS, Duke of Ephesus.
ÆGEON, a Merchant of Syracuse.
ANTIPHOLUS of Ephesus, Twin Brothers, sons to Ægeon and Æmilia.
ANTIPHOLUS of Syracuse, Twin Brothers, attendants on the two Antipholuses.
DROMIO of Ephesus, DROMIO of Syracuse, BALTHAZAR, a Merchant.
ANGELO, a Goldsmith.

Merchant, Friend to Antipholus of Syracuse. A Second Merchant, to whom Angelo is a debtor.
PINCH, a Schoolmaster and a Conjurer.
ÆMILIA, Wife to Ægeon, an Abbess at Ephesus.
ADRIANA, Wife to Antipholus of Ephesus,
LUCIANA, her Sister.
LUCE, Servant to Adriana, A Courtezan.
Gaoler, Officers, and other Attendants.

SCENE.—Ephesus.

ACT I.

Enter DUKE, ÆGEON, Gaoler, Officers, and other Attendants.

Æge. Proceed, Solinus, to procure my fall,
And by the doom of death end woes and all.
Duke. Merchant of Syracuse, plead no more. I am not partial to infringe our laws:
The enmity and discord which of late
Sprung from the rancorous outrage of your duke
To merchants, our well-dealing countrymen,
Who, wanting gilders to redeem their lives, 8
Have seal'd his rigorous statutes with their bloods,
Excludes all pity from our threat'ning looks. For, since the mortal and intestine jars
Twixt thy seditious countrymen and us, 12
It hath in solemn synods been decreed,
Both by the Syracusians and ourselves,
T'admit no traffic to our adverse towns:
Nay, more, if any, born at Ephesus 16
Be seen at Syracuseian marts and fairs;
Again, if any Syracusian born
Come to the bay of Ephesus, he dies,
His goods confiscate to the duke's dispose; 20
Unless a thousand marks be levied,
To quit the penalty and to ransom him.
Thy substance, valu'd at the highest rate,
Cannot amount unto a hundred marks; 24
Therefore, by law thou art condemn'd to die.
Æge. Yet this my comfort: when your words are done,
My woes end likewise with the evening sun.
Duke. Well, Syracusan; say, in brief the cause
Why thou departest from thy native home, And for what cause thou cam'st to Ephesus.
Æge. A heavier task could not have been impos'd
Than I to speak my griefs unspeakable; 32
Yet, that the world may witness that my end
Was wrought by nature, not by vile offence,
I'll utter what my sorrow gives me leave. In Syracuse was I born, and wed 36
Unto a woman, happy but for me,
And by me too, had not our hap been bad.
With her I liv'd in joy: our wealth increas'd
By prosperous voyages I often made 40
To Epidamnum; till my factor's death,
And the great care of goods at random left,
Drew me from kind embracings of my spouse:
From whom my absence was not six months old,
Before herself,—almost at fainting under 45
The pleasing punishment that women bear,—
Had made provision for her following me,
And soon and safe arrived where I was. 48
There had she not been long but she became
A joyful mother of two goodly sons;
And, which was strange, the one so like the other,
As could not be distinguish'd but by names. 52
That very hour, and in the self-same inn,
A meaner woman was delivered
Of such a burden, male twins, both alike.
Those,—for their parents were exceeding poor,— I bought, and brought up to attend my sons. 57
My wife, not meanly proud of two such boys,
Made daily motions for our home return:
Unwilling I agreed; alas! too soon
We came aboard.
A league from Epidamnum had we sail'd,
Before the always-wind-obeying deep
gave any tragic instance of our harm:
but longer did we not retain much hope;
for what obscured light the heavens did grant
Did but convey unto our fearful minds
A doubtful warrant of immediate death;
which, though myself would gladly have embrac’d,
yet the incessant weepings of my wife,
weeping before for what she saw must come,
and piteous plainings of the pretty babes,
that morn’d for fashion, ignorant what to fear,
for’d me to seek delays for them and me.
and this it was, for other means was none:
the sailors sought for safety by our boat,
and left the ship, then sinking-ripe, to us:
my wife, more careful for the latter-born,
had fasten’d him unto a small spare mast,
such as seafaring men provide for storms;
to him one of the other twins was bound,
whereas had been like heedful of the other.
the children thus dispos’d, my wife and i,
fixing our eyes on whom our care was fix’d,
fasten’d ourselves at either end the mast;
and floating straight, obedient to the stream,
were carried towards corinth, as we thought.
at length the sun, gazing upon the earth,
dispers’d those vapours that offended us,
and, by the benefit of his wished light
the seas wax’d calm, and we discovered
two ships from far making amain to us;
of corinth that, of epidaurus this:
but ere they came,—o! let me say no more;
gather the sequel by that went before.

duke. nay, forward, old man; do not break off so;
for we may pity, though not pardon thee.
æge. o! had the gods done so, i had not now
worthily term’d them merciless to us!
for, ere the ships could meet by twice five
leagues,
we were encounter’d by a mighty rock;
which being violently borne upon,
our helpful ship was splitted in the midst;
so that, in this unjust divorce of us
fortune had left to both of us alike
what to delight in, what to sorrow for.
her part, poor soul! seeming as burdened
with lesser weight, but not with lesser woe,
was carried with more speed before the wind,
and in our sight they three were taken up
by fishermen of corinth, as we thought.
at length, another ship had seiz’d on us;
and, knowing whom it was their hap to save,
gave healthful welcome to their ship-wrack’d guests;
and would have reft the fishers of their prey,
had not their bark been very slow of sail;
and therefore homeward did they bend their course.
thus have you heard me sever’d from my bliss,
that by misfortune was my life prolong’d,
to tell sad stories of my own mishaps.

duke. and, for the sake of them thou sorrowest for,
do me the favour to dilate at full
what hath befalln of them and thee till now.
æge. my youngest boy, and yet my eldest care,
at eighteen years became inquisitive
after his brother; and importun’d me
that his attendant—for his case was like,
reft of his brother, but retain’d his name—
might bear him company in the quest of him;
whom whilst i labour’d of a love to see,
i hazarded the loss of whom i lov’d.
five summers have i spent in furthest greece,
roaming clean through the bounds of asia,
and, coasting homeward, came to epheus,
hopeless to find, yet loath to leave unsought
or that or any place that harbours men.
but here must end the story of my life;
and happy were i in my timely death,
could all my travels warrant me they live.

duke. hapless ægeon, whom the fates have mark’d

to bear the extremity of dire mishap!
now, trust me, were it not against our laws,
against my crown, my oath, my dignity,
which princes, would they, may not disannul,
my soul should sue as advocate for thee.

yet though thou art adjudged to the death
and passed sentence may not be recall’d
but to our honour’s great disparagement,
yet will i favour thee in what i can:
therefore, merchant, i’ll limit thee this day
to seek thy life by beneficial help.

try all the friends thou hast in epheus;

beg thou, or borrow, to make up the sum,
and live; if no, thou art doom’d to die.
gaoler, take him to thy custody.

gaol. i will, my lord.
æge. hopeless and helpless doth ægeon wend,
but to procrastinate his lifeless end.

scene ii.—the mart.

enter antipholus of syracuse, dromio of syracuse, and a merchant.

mer. therefore, give out you are of epidamnum,
lest that your goods too soon be confiscate.
this very day, a syracusan merchant
is apprehended for arrival here;
Act I, Sc. II.  

THE COMEDY OF ERRORS

And, not being able to buy out his life,  
According to the statute of the town  
Diss eke the weary sun set in the west.  
There is your money that I had to keep.  

Ant. S. Go bear it to the Centaur, where we  
host,  
And stay there, Dromio, till I come to thee.  
Within this hour it will be dinner-time:  
Till that, I'll view the manners of the town,  
Peruse the traders, gaze upon the buildings,  
And then return and sleep within mine inn,  
For with long travel I am stiff and weary.  
Get thee away.  

Dro. S. Many a man would take you at your  
word,  
And go indeed, having so good a mean. [Exit.  
Ant. S. A trusty villain, sir, that very oft,  
When I am dull with care and melancholy,  
Lightens my humour with his merry jests.  
What, will you walk with me about the town,  
And then go to my inn and dine with me?  

Mer. I am invited, sir, to certain merchants,  
Of whom I hope to make much benefit;  
I crave your pardon. Soon at five o'clock,  
Please you, I'll meet with you upon the mart,  
And afterward consort you till bed-time.  
My present business calls me from you now.  
Ant. S. Farewell till then: I will go lose my-  
self,  
And wander up and down to view the city.  

Mer. Sir, I commend you to your own con-  
tent.  
[Exit.  
Ant. S. He that commands me to mine own  
content,  
Commends me to the thing I cannot get.  
I to the world am like a drop of water  
That in the ocean seeks another drop;  
Who, falling there to find his fellow forth,  
Unseen, inquisitive, confounds himself:  
So I, to find a mother and a brother,  
In quest of them, unhappy, lose myself.  

Enter DROMIO of Ephesus.  

Here comes the almanack of my true date.  
What now? How chance thou art return'd so  
soon?  

Dro. E. Return'd so soon! rather approach'd  
too late:  
The capon burns, the pig falls from the spit,  
The clock hath stricken twelve upon the bell;  
My mistress made it one upon my cheek:  
She is so hot because the meat is cold;  
The meat is cold because you come not home;  
You come not home because you have no  
stomach;  
You have no stomach, having broke your fast;  
But we, that know what 'tis to fast and pray,

Are penitent for your default to-day.  

Ant. S. Stop in your wind, sir: tell me this,  
I pray:  
Where have you left the money that I gave you?  

Dro. E. O!—sixpence, that I had o' Wednes- 
day last  
To pay the saddler for my mistress' crupper;  
The saddler had it, sir; I kept it not.  
Ant. S. I am not in a sportive humour now.  
Tell me, and daily not, where is the money?  
We being strangers here, how dar'st thou trust  
So great a charge from thine own custody?  

Dro. E. I pray you, jest, sir, as you sit at  
dinner.  
I from my mistress come to you in post;  
If I return, I shall be post indeed,  
For she will score your fault upon my pate.  
Methinks your maw, like mine, should be your  
clock  
And strike you home without a messenger.  
Ant. S. Come, Dromio, come; these jests are  
out of season;  
Reserve them till a merrier hour than this.  
Where is the gold I gave in charge to thee?  

Dro. E. To me, sir? why, you gave no gold  
to me.  
Ant. S. Come on, sir knife, have done your  
foolishness,  
And tell me how thou hast dispos'd thy charge.  

Dro. E. My charge was but to fetch you from  
the mart  
Home to your house, the Phoenix, sir, to dinner:  
My mistress and her sister stays for you.  

Ant. S. Now, as I am a Christian, answer me,  
In what safe place you have bestowed my money;  
Or I shall break that merry sconce of yours  
That stands on tricks when I am undispos'd;  

Where is the thousand marks thou hast of me?  

Dro. E. I have some marks of yours upon my  
pate,  
Some of my mistress' marks upon my shoulders,  
But not a thousand marks between you both.  
If I should pay your worship those again,  
Perchance you will not bear them patiently.  
Ant. S. Thy mistress' marks! what mistress,  
slave, hast thou?  

Dro. E. Your worship's wife, my mistress at  
the Phoenix;  
She that doth fast till you come home to dinner,  
And prays that you will give you home to dinner.  
Ant. S. What! wilt thou flout me thus unto  
my face,  
Being forbid? There, take you that, sir knife.  

[Strikes him.  

Dro. E. What mean you, sir? for God's sake,  
hold your hands!  
Nay, an you will not, sir, I'll take my heels. [Exit.
Ant. S. Upon my life, by some device or other
The villain is o'er-raught of all my money. 96
They say this town is full of covenage;
As, nimble jugglers that deceive the eye,
Dark-working sorcerers that change the mind,
Soul-killing witches that deform the body, 100
Dissguised cheaters, cheating mountebanks,
And many such-like liberties of sin:
If it prove so, I will be gone the sooner.
I'll to the Centaur, to seek this slave: 104
I greatly fear my money is not safe. [Exit.

ACT II.

SCENE I.—The House of Antipholus of Ephesus.

Enter ADRIANÀ and LUCIANA.

Adr. Neither my husband, nor the slave
return'd,
That in such haste I sent to seek his master!
Sure, Luciana, it is two o'clock.
Luc. Perhaps some merchant hath invited
him,
And from the mart he's somewhere gone to
dinner.
Good sister, let us dine and never fret:
A man is master of his liberty:
Time is their master, and, when they see time, 8
They'll go or come: if so, be patient, sister.

Adr. Why should their liberty than ours be
more?

Luc. Because their business still lies out
o' door.

Adr. Look, when I serve him so, he takes
it ill. 12

Luc. O! know he is the bridle of your will.

Adr. There's none but asses will be bridled so.

Luc. Why, headstrong liberty is lash'd with
woe.

There's nothing situate under heaven's eye 16
But hath his bound, in earth, in sea, in sky:
The beasts, the fishes, and the winged fowls,
Are their males' subjects and at their controls.
Men, more divine, the masters of all these, 20
Lords of the wide world, and wild wat'ry seas,
Indu'd with intellectual sense and souls,
Of more pre-eminence than fish and fowls,
Are masters to their females and their lords: 24
Then, let your will attend on their accords.

Adr. This servitude makes you to keep unwed.
Luc. Not this, but troubles of the marriage-
bed.

Adr. But, were you wedded, you would bear
some sway. 28

Luc. Ere I learn love, I'll practise to obey.

Adr. How if your husband start some other
where?

Luc. Till he come home again, I would for-
bear.

Adr. Patience unmoved! no marvel though
she pause; 32
They can be meek that have no other cause.
A wretched soul, bruised with adversity,
We bid be quiet when we hear it cry;
But were we burden'd with like weight of
pain, 36
As much, or more we should ourselves complain:
So thou, that hast no unkind mate to grieve thee,
With urging helpless patience wouldst re-
lieve me:
But if thou live to see like right bereft. 40
This fool-beg'd patience in thee will be left.

Luc. Well, I will marry one day, but to try.
Here comes your man: now is your husband
nigh.

Enter DROMIO of Ephesus.

Adr. Say, is your tardy master now at
hand? 44

Dro. E. Nay, he's at two hands with me, and
that my two ears can witness.

Adr. Say, didst thou speak with him?

Know'st thou his mind?

Dro. E. Ay, ay, he told his mind upon mine
ear. 48

Beshrew his hand, I scarce could understand it.

Luc. Spake he so doubtfully, thou couldst not
feel his meaning?

Dro. E. Nay, he struck so plainly, I could too
well feel his blows; and withal so doubtfully,
that I could scarce understand her.

Adr. But say, I prithee, is he coming home?

It seems he hath great care to please his wife. 50

Dro. E. Why, mistress, sure my master is
horn-mad.

Adr. Horn-mad, thou villain!

Dro. E. I mean not cuckold-mad; but, sure,
he is stark mad.

When I desir'd him to come home to dinner, 60
He ask'd me for a thousand marks in gold:
'Tis dinner time,' quothe I; 'my gold!' quothe he:
'Your meat doth burn,' quothe I; 'my gold!' quothe
he:
'Will you come home?' quothe I; 'my gold!' quothe he:
'Where is the thousand marks I gave thee, 64
villain?'
'The pig,' quothe I, 'is burn'd;' 'my gold!' quothe
he:
'My mistress, sir,' quothe I: 'hang up thy mist-
tress!
I know not thy mistress: out on thy mistress!

Luc. Quoth who?

Dro. E. Quoth my master:
"I know," quoth he, "no house, no wife, no mistress."
So that my errand, due unto my tongue, I thank him, I bear home upon my shoulders; For, in conclusion, he did beat me there.

_Adr._ Go back again, thou slave, and fetch him home.

_Dro. E._ Go back again, and be new beaten home? For God's sake, send some other messenger.

_Adr._ Back, slave, or I will break thy pate across.

_Dro. E._ And he will bless that cross with other beating:
Between you, I shall have a holy head.

_Adr._ Hence, prating peasant! fetch thy master home.

_Dro. E._ Am I so round with you as you with me,
That like a football you do spurn me thus?
You spurn me hence, and he will spurn me hither:
If I last in this service, you must case me in leather.

Luc. Fie, how impatience loureth in your face!

_Adr._ His company must do his minions grace,
Whilst I at home starve for a merry look.
Hath homely age the alluring beauty took
From my poor cheek? then, he hath wasted it:
Are my discourses dull? barren my wit?
If volatile and sharp discourse be marr'd,
Unkindness blunts it more than marble hard:
Do their gay vestments his affections bate?
That's not my fault; he's master of my state:
What ruins are in me that can be found
By him not ruin'd? then is he the ground
Of my defeatures. My decayed fair
A sunny look of his would soon repair;
But, too unruly deer, he breaks the pale
And feeds from home: poor I am but his stale.

Luc. Self-harming jealousy! fiel! beat it hence.

_Adr._ Unfeeling fools can with such wrongs dispense.
I know his eye doth homage otherwhere,
Or else what lets it but he would be here?
Sister, you know he promis'd me a chain:
Would that alone, alone he would detain,
So he would keep fair quarter with his bed.

I see, the jewel best enamelled
Will lose his beauty; and though gold bides still
That others touch, yet often touching will
Wear gold; and no man that hath a name,
By falsehood and corruption doth it shame.
Since that my beauty cannot please his eye,
I'll weep that's left away, and weeping die.

Luc. How many fond fools serve mad jealousy!

_SCENE II._—A public Place.

_Enter Antipholus of Syracuse.

_Ant. S._ The gold I gave to Dromio is laid up Safe at the Centaur; and the heedful slave Is wander'd forth, in care to seek me out. By computation, and mine host's report, I could not speak with Dromio since at first I sent him from the mart. See, here he comes.

_Enter Dromio of Syracuse._

How now, sir! is your merry humour alter'd? As you love strokes, so jest with me again.

You know no Centaur? You receiv'd no gold? Your mistress sent to have me home to dinner? My house was at the Phoenix? Wast thou mad, That thus so madly thou didst answer me? 

_Dro. S._ What answer, sir? when spake I such a word?

_Ant. S._ Even now, even here, not half-an-hour since.

_Dro. S._ I did not see you since you sent me hence,
Home to the Centaur, with the gold you gave me.

_Ant. S._ Villain, thou didst deny the gold's receipt,
And told'st me of a mistress and a dinner;
For which, I hope, thou felt'st at I was displeas'd.

_Dro. S._ I am glad to see you in this merry vein:

What means this jest? I pray you, master, tell me.

_Ant. S._ Yea, dost thou jeer, and flout me in the teeth?

Think'st thou I jest? Hold, take thou that, and that. 

_Beating him._

_Dro. S._ Hold, sir, for God's sake! now your jest is earnest!

Upon what bargain do you give it me?

_Ant. S._ Because that I familiarly sometimes Do use you for my fool, and chat with you, Your sauciness will jest upon my love, And make a common of my serious hours.

When the sun shines let foolish gnats make sport,
But creep in crannies when he hides his beams. If you will jest with me, know my aspect, And fashion your demeanour to my looks; Or I will beat this method in your sconce.

_Dro. S._ Sconce, call you it? so you would leave battering, I had rather have it a head: an you use these blows long, I must get a sconce for my head and insconce it too; or else I shall
Ant. S. Dost thou not know?
Dro. S. Nothing, sir, but that I am beaten.
Ant. S. Shall I tell you why?
Dro. S. Ay, sir, and wherefore; for they say every why hath a wherefore.
Ant. S. Why, first,—for flouting me; and then, wherefore,—
For urging it the second time to me.
Dro. S. Was there ever any man thus beaten out of season,
When, in the why and the wherefore is neither rime nor reason?
Well, sir, I thank you.
Ant. S. Thank me, sir! for what?
Dro. S. Marry, sir, for this something that you gave me for nothing.
Ant. S. I'll make you amends next, to give you nothing for something. But say, sir, is it dinner-time?
Dro. S. No, sir: I think the meat wants that I have.
Ant. S. In good time, sir; what’s that?
Dro. S. Basting.
Ant. S. Well, sir, then ’twill be dry.
Dro. S. If it be, sir, I pray you eat none of it.
Ant. S. Your reason?
Dro. S. Lest it make you cholerick, and purchase me another basting.
Ant. S. Well, sir, learn to jest in good time: there’s a time for all things.
Dro. S. I durst have denied that, before you were so cholerick.
Ant. S. By what rule, sir?
Dro. S. Marry, sir, by a rule as plain as the plain bale pate of Father Time himself.
Ant. S. Let’s hear it.
Dro. S. There’s no time for a man to recover his hair that grows bald by nature.
Ant. S. May he not do it by fine and recovery?
Dro. S. Yes, to pay a fine for a periwig and recover the lost hair of another man.
Ant. S. Why is Time such a niggard of hair, being, as it is, so plentiful an excrement?
Dro. S. Because it is a blessing that he bestows on beasts: and what he hath scanted men in hair, he hath given them in wit.
Ant. S. Why, but there’s many a man hath more hair than wit.
Dro. S. Not a man of those but he hath the wit to lose his hair.
Ant. S. Why, thou didst conclude hairy men plain dealers without wit.
Dro. S. The plainer dealer, the sooner lost: yet he loseth it in a kind of jollity.
My blood is mingled with the crime of lust: 148
For if we two be one and thou play false,
I do digest the poison of thy flesh,
Being smutted up by thy contagion.
Keep then fair league and truce with thy true
bed;
I live unstain'd, thou undishonoured.
Ant. S. Plead you to me, fair dame? I know you not:
In Ephesus I am but two hours old,
As strange unto your town as to your talk;
Who, every word by all my wit being scann'd,
Want wit in all one word to understand.
Luc. Fie, brother: how the world is chang'd
with you!
When were you wont to use my sister thus?
She sent for you by Dromio home to dinner.
Ant. S. By Dromio?
Dro. S. By me?
Adr. By thee; and this thou didst return
from him,
That he did buffet thee, and in his blows,
Denied my house for his, me for his wife.
Ant. S. Did you converse, sir, with this gentle-
woman? 164
What is the course and drift of your compact?
Dro. S. I, sir? I never saw her till this time.
Ant. S. Villain, thou liest; for ever her very
words
Didst thou deliver to me on the mart.
Dro. S. I never spake with her in all my life.
Ant. S. How can she thus then, call us by
our names,
Unless it be by inspiration?
Adr. How ill agrees it with your gravity 172
To counterfeit thus grossly with your slave,
Abetting him to thwart me in my mood!
Be it my wrong you are from me exempt,
But wrong not that wrong with a more con-
tempt.
Come, I will fasten on this sleeve of thine;
Thou art an elm, my husband, I a vine,
Whose weakness, married to thy stronger state,
Mak'st me with thy strength to communicate:
If aught possess thee from me, it is dress,
Usurping ivy, brier, or idle moss;
Who, all for want of pruning, with intrusion
Inflict thy sap and live on thy confusion.
Ant. S. To me she speaks; she moves me for
her theme!
What! was I married to her in my dream?
Or sleep I now and think I hear all this?
What error drives our eyes and ears amiss?
Until I know this sure uncertainty,
I'll entertain the offer'd fallacy.
Luc. Dromio, go bid the servants spread for
dinner
Dro. S. O, for my beads! I cross me for a
sinner.
This is the fairy land: O! spite of sprites.
We talk with goblins, owls, and elvish sprites:
If we obey them not, this will ensue,
They'll suck our breath, or pinch us black and
blue.
Luc. Why prat'st thou to thyself and an-
swer'st not?
Dromio, thou drone, thou snail, thou slug, thou
sot!
Dro. S. I am transformed, master, am not I?
Ant. S. I think thou art, in mind, and so am I.
Dro. S. Nay, master, both in mind and in my
shape.
Ant. S. Thou hast thine own form.
Dro. S. No, I am an ape.
Luc. If thou art chang'd to aught, 'tis to an
ass.
Dro. S. 'Tis true; she rides me and I long
for grass.
'Tis so, I am an ass; else it could never be
But I should know her as well as she knows me.
Adr. Come, come; no longer will I be a fool,
To put the finger in the eye and weep,
Whilst man and master laugh my woes to scorn.
Come, sir, to dinner. Dromio, keep the gate.
Husband, sir, I'll dine above with you to-day,
And shrive you of a thousand idle pranks.
Sirrah, if any ask you for your master,
Say he dines forth, and let no creature enter.
Come, sister. Dromio, play the porter well.
Ant. S. [Aside.] Am I in earth, in heaven, or
in hell?
Sleeping or waking? mad or well-advis'd?
Knows unto these, and to myself disguis'd!
I'll say as they say, and persevere so,
And in this mist at all adventures go.
Dro. S. Master, shall I be porter at the gate?
Adr. Ay; and let none enter, lest I break
your pate.
Luc. Come, come, Antipholus; we dine too
late.
[Exeunt.

ACT III.

SCENE I.—Before the House of ANTIPHOLUS of
Ephesus.

Enter ANTIPHOLUS of Ephesus, DROMIO of
Ephesus, ANGELO, and BALTHAZAR.

Ant. E. Good Signior Angelo, you must ex-
cuse us all;
My wife is shrewish when I keep not hours;
Say that I linger'd with you at your shop
To see the making of her carnket,
And that to-morrow you will bring it home.
But here's a villain, that would face me down
He met me on the mart, and that I beat him,
And charg’d him with a thousand marks in
gold.
And that I did deny my wife and house.
Thou drunkard, thou, what didst thou mean by
this?
Dro. E. Say what you will, sir, but I know
what I know;
That you beat me at the mart, I have your hand
to show:
If the skin were parchment and the blows you
gave were ink,
Your own handwriting would tell you what I
think.
Ant. E. I think thou art an ass.
Dro. E. Marry, so it doth appear
By the wrongs I suffer and the blows I bear.
I should kick, being kick’d; and, being at that
pass,
You would keep from my heels and beware of
an ass.
Ant. E. You are sad, Signior Balthazar: pray
God, our cheer
May answer my good will and your good wel-
come here.
Bal. I hold your dainties cheap, sir, and your
welcome dear.
Ant. E. O, Signior Balthazar, either at flesh
or fish,
A table-full of welcome makes scarce one dainty
dish.
Bal. Good meat, sir, is common; that every
churl affords.
Ant. E. And welcome more common, for
that’s nothing but words.
Bal. Small cheer and great welcome makes a
merry feast.
Ant. E. Ay, to a niggardly host and more
sparing guest:
But though my cates be mean, take them in
good part;
Better cheer may you have, but not with better
heart.
But soft! my door is lock’d. Go bid them let
us in.
Dro. E. Maud, Bridget, Marian, Cicely, Gil-
lian, Ginn!
Dro. S. [Within.] Mome, malm-horse, capon,
coxcomb, idiot, patch!
Either get thee from the door or sit down at the
hatch.
Dost thou conjure for wenches, that thou call’st
for such store,
When one is one too many? Go, get thee from
the door.
Dro. E. What patch is made our porter?—
My master stays in the street.
Dro. S. [Within.] Let him walk from whence
he came, lest he catch cold on ‘s feet.
Ant. E. Who talks within there? hol open
the door.
Dro. S. [Within.] Right, sir; I’ll tell you
when, an you’ll tell me wherefore.
Ant. E. Wherefore? for my dinner: I have
not din’d to-day.
Dro. S. Nor to-day here you must not; come
again when you may.
Ant. E. What art thou that keep’st me out
from the house I owe?
Dro. S. [Within.] The porter for this time,
sir, and my name is Dromio.
Dro. E. O villain! thou hast stolen both mine
office and my name:
The one ne’er got me credit, the other mickle
blame.
If thou hadst been Dromio to-day in my place,
Thou wouldst have chang’d thy face for a name,
or thy name for an ass.
Luce. [Within.] What a coil is there, Dromio
who are those at the gate?
Dro. E. Let my master in, Luce.
Luce. [Within.] Faith, no; he comes too late;
And so tell your master.
Dro. E. O Lord! I must laugh.
Have at you with a proverb: Shall I set in my
staff?
Luce. [Within.] Have at you with another:
that’s—when? can you tell?
Dro. S. [Within.] If thy name be call’d Luce,
—Luce, thou hast answer’d him well.
Ant. E. Do you hear, you minion? you’ll let
us in, I trow?
Luce. [Within.] I thought to have ask’d you.
Dro. S. [Within.] And you said, no.
Dro. E. So come, help: well struck! there
was blow for blow.
Ant. E. Thou baggage, let me in.
Luce. [Within.] Can you tell for whose sake?
Dro. E. Master, knock the door hard.
Luce. [Within.] Let him knock till it ache.
Ant. E. You’ll cry for this, minion, if I beat
the door down.
Luce. [Within.] What needs all that, and a
pair of stocks in the town?
Addr. [Within.] Who is that at the door that
keeps all this noise?
Dro. S. [Within.] By my troth your town is
troubled with unruly boys.
Ant. E. Are you there, wife? you might have
come before.
Addr. [Within.] Your wife, sir knave! go, get
you from the door.
Dro. E. If you went in pain, master, this
‘knave’ would go sore.
Ang. Here is neither cheer, sir, nor welcome:
we would fain have either.
Bal. In debating which was best, we shall
part with neither.
Dro. E. They stand at the door, master: bid
them welcome hither.
Ant. E. There is something in the wind, that
we cannot get in.
Dro. E. You would say so, master, if your
garments were thin.
Your cake here is warm within; you stand here
in the cold:
It would make a man mad as a buck to be so
bought and sold.
Ant. E. Go fetch me something: I’ll break
ope the gate.
Dro. S. [Within.] Break any breaking here,
and I’ll break your knave’s pate.
Dro. E. A man may break a word with you,
sir, and words are but wind:
Ay, and break it in your face, so he break it not
behind.
Dro. S. [Within.] It seems thou wastest
breaking: out upon thee, hind!
Dro. E. Here’s too much ‘out upon thee!’ I
pray thee, let me in.
Dro. S. [Within.] Ay, when fowls have no
feathers, and fish have no fin.
Ant. E. Well, I’ll break in. Go borrow me
a crow.
Dro. E. A crow without feather? Master,
mean you so?
For a fish without a fin, there’s a fowl without
a feather:
If a crow help us in, sirrah, we’ll pluck a crow
together.
Ant. E. Go get thee gone: fetch me an iron
crow.
Bal. Have patience, sir; O! let it not be so;
Herein you war against your reputation,
And draw within the compass of suspect
The unviolated honour of your wife.
Once this,—your long experience of her wisdom,
Her sober virtue, years, and modesty,
Plead on her part some cause to you unknown;
And doubt not, sir, but she will well excuse
Why at this time the doors are made against
you.
Be rul’d by me: depart in patience,
And let us to the Tiger: all to dinner;
And about evening come yourself alone,
To know the reason of this strange restraint.
If by strong hand you offer to break in
Now in the stirring passage of the day,
A vulgar comment will be made of it,
And that supposed by the common rout
Against your yet unguiled estimation,
That may with foul intrusion enter in
And dwell upon your grave when you are dead;
For slander lives upon succession,
For ever housed where it gets possession.
Ant. E. You have prevail’d: I will depart in
quiet.
And, in despite of mirth, mean to be merry.
I know a wench of excellent discourse,
Pretty and witty, wild and yet, too, gentle:
There will we dine: this woman that I mean,
My wife,—but, I protest, without desert,—
Hath oftentimes upbraided me withal:
To her will we to dinner. [To ANGELO.] Get you
home,
And fetch the chain: by this I know ‘tis made:
Bring it, I pray you, to the Porpentine;
For there’s the house: that chain will I bestow,
Be it for nothing but to spite my wife,
Upon mine hostess there. Good sir, make haste.
Since mine own doors refuse to entertain me, I’ll
 knock elsewhere, to see if they’ll disdain me.
Ang. I’ll meet you at that place some hour
hence.
Ant. E. Do so. This jest shall cost me some
expense.
[Exeunt.

SCENE II.—The Same.

Enter Luciana and Antipholus of Syracuse.
Luc. And may it be that you have quite forgot
A husband’s office? Shall, Antipholus,
Even in the spring of love, thy love-springs rot?
Shall love, in building, grow so ruinous?
If you did wed my sister for her wealth,
Then, for her wealth’s sake use her with more
kindness:
Or, if you like elsewhere, do it by stealth;
Muffle your false love with some show of
blindness:
Let not thy sister read it in thy eye;
Be not thy tongue thy own shame’s orator;
Look sweet, speak fair, become disloyalty;
Appeal vice like virtue’s harbinger;
Bear a fair presence, though your heart be
tainted;
Teach’s the carriage of a holy saint;
Be secret-false: what need she be acquainted?
What simple thief brag of his own attain’d?
’Tis double wrong to truant with your bed,
And let her read it in thy looks at board:
Shame hath a bastard fame, well managed;
’Til deeds are doubled with an evil word.
Alas! poor woman, make us but believe,
Being compact of credit, that you love us;
Though others have the arm, show us the sleeve;
We in your motion turn, and you may move
us.
THE COMEDY OF ERRORS  Act III, Sc. II.

Then, gentle brother, get you in again;  
Comfort my sister, cheer her, call her wife:  
'Tis holy sport to be a little vain,  
When the sweet breath of flattery conquers strife.  

Ant. S. Sweet mistress,—what your name is else, I know not,  
Nor by what wonder you do hit of mine,—  
Less in your knowledge and your grace you show not  
Than our earth’s wonder; more than earth divine.  

Teach me, dear creature, how to think and speak:  
Lay open to my earthy-gross conceit,  
Smother’d in errors, feeble, shallow, weak,  
The folded meaning of your words’ deceit.  
Against my soul’s pure truth why labour you  
To make it wander in an unknown field?  
Are you a god? would you create me new?  
Transform me then, and to your power I’ll yield.  

But if that I am, then well I know  
Your weeping sister is no wife of mine,  
Nor to her bed no homage do I owe:  
Far more, far more, to you do I decline.  
O! train me not, sweet mermaid, with thy note,  
To drown me in thy sister flood of tears:  
Sing, siren, for thyself, and I will dote:  
Spread o’er the silver waves thy golden hairs,  
And as a bed I’ll take them and there lie;  
And, in that glorious supposition think  
He gains by death that hath such means to die:  
Let Love, being light, be drowned if she sink!  
Luc. What! are you mad, that you do reason so?  
Ant. S. Not mad, but mated; how, I do not know.  
Luc. It is a fault that springeth from your eye.  
Ant. S. For gazing on your beams; fair sun,  
being by.  
Luc. Gaze where you should, and that will clear your sight.  
Ant. S. As good to wink, sweet love, as look on night.  
Luc. Why call you me love? call my sister so.  
Ant. S. Thy sister’s sister.  
Luc. That’s my sister.  
Ant. S. No;  
It is thyself, mine own self’s better part;  
Mine eye’s clear eye, my dear heart’s dearer heart;  
My food, my fortune, and my sweet hope’s aim,  
My sole earth’s heaven, and my heaven’s claim.  
Luc. All this my sister is, or else should be.  
Ant. S. Call thyself sister, sweet, for I am thee.

Thee will I love and with thee lead my life:  
Thou hast no husband yet nor I no wife.  
Give me thy hand.  
Luc.  
O! soft, sir; hold you still:  
I’ll fetch my sister, to get her well.  

Enter Dromio of Syracuse, hastily.  
Ant. S. Why, how now, Dromio! where run’st thou so fast?  
Dro. S. Do you know me, sir? am I Dromio?  
am I your man? am I myself?  
Ant. S. Thou art Dromio, thou art my man,  
thou art thyself.  
Dro. S. I am an ass, I am a woman’s man  
and besides myself.  
Ant. S. What woman’s man? and how besides thyself?  
Dro. S. Marry, sir, besides myself, I am due to a woman; one that claims me, one that haunts me, one that will have me.  
Ant. S. What claim lays she to thee?  
Dro. S. Marry, sir, such claim as you would lay to your horse; and she would have me as a beast: not that, I being a beast, she would have me; but that she, being a very beastly creature, lays claim to me.  
Ant. S. What is she?  
Dro. S. A very reverent body; aye, such a one as a man may not speak of, without he say, ‘Sir-reverence.’ I have but lean luck in the match, and yet is she a wondrous fat marriage.  
Ant. S. How dost thou mean a fat marriage?  
Dro. S. Marry, sir, she’s the kitchen-wench,  
and all grease; and I know not what use to put her to but to make a lamp of her and run from her by her own light. I warrant her rags and the tallow in them will burn a Poland winter; if she lives till doomsday, she’ll burn a week longer than the whole world.  
Ant. S. What complexion is she of?  
Dro. S. Swart, like my shoe, but her face nothing like so clean kept: for why she sweats; a man may go over shoes in the grime of it.  
Ant. S. That’s a fault that water will mend.  
Dro. S. No, sir, ’tis in grain; Noah’s flood could not do it.  
Ant. S. What’s her name?  
Dro. S. Nell, sir; but her name and three quarters,—that is, an ell and three quarters,—will not measure her from hip to hip.  
Ant. S. Then she bears some breadth?  
Dro. S. No longer from head to foot than from hip to hip: she is spherical, like a globe; I could find out countries in her.  
Ant. S. In what part of her body stands Ireland?
Dro. S. Marry, sir, in her buttocks: I found it out by the bogs.

Ant. S. Where Scotland?

Dro. S. I found it by the barrenness; hard in the palm of the hand.

Ant. S. Where France?

Dro. S. In her forehead; armed and reverted, making war against her heir.

Ant. S. Where England?

Dro. S. I looked for the chalky cliffs, but I could find no whiteness in them: but I guess it stood in her chin, by the salt rheum that ran between France and it.

Ant. S. Where Spain?

Dro. S. Faith, I saw not; but I felt it hot in her breath.

Ant. S. Where America, the Indies?

Dro. S. O, sir! upon her nose, all o'er embellished with rubies, carbuncles, sapphires, declining their rich aspect to the hot breath of Spain, who sent whole armadoes of caracks to be ballast at her nose.

Ant. S. Where stood Belgia, the Netherlands?

Dro. S. O, sir! I did not look so low. To conclude, this drudge, or diviner, laid claim to me; call’d me Dromio; swore I was assured to her; told me what privy marks I had about me, as the mark of my shoulder, the mole in my neck, the great wart on my left arm, that I, amazed, ran from her as a witch.

And, I think, if my breast had not been made of faith and my heart of steel, She had transform’d me to a curtail dog and made me turn i’ the wheel.

Ant. S. Go hie thee presently post to the road: An if the wind blow any way from shore, I will not harbour in this town to-night: If any bark put forth, come to the mart, Where I will walk till thou return to me.

If every one knows us and we know none, ’Tis time, I think, to trudge, pack, and be gone.

Dro. S. As from a bear a man would run for life, So fly I from her that would be my wife. [Exit.

Ant. S. There’s none but witches do inhabit here, And therefore ’tis high time that I were hence. She that doth call me husband, even my soul Doth for a wife abhor; but her fair sister, Possess’d with such a gentle sovereign grace, Of such enchanting presence and discourse, Hath almost made me traitor to myself:

But, lest myself be guilty to self-wrong, I’ll stop mine ears against the mermaid’s song.

Enter Angelo.

Ang. Master Antipholus!

Ant. S. Ay, that’s my name.

Ang. I know it well, sir; lo, here is the chain.

I thought to have ta’en you at the Porpentine; The chain unfinish’d made me stay thus long.

Ant. S. What is your will that I shall do with this?

Ang. What please yourself, sir; I have made it for you.

Ant. S. Made it for me, sir! I bespeak it not.

Ang. Not once, nor twice, but twenty times you have.

Go home with it and please your wife withal; And soon at supper-time I’ll visit you, And then receive my money for the chain.

Ant. S. I pray you, sir, receive the money now, For fear you ne’er see chain nor money more.

Ang. You are a merry man, sir; fare you well. [Exit, leaving the chain.

Ant. S. What I should think of this, I cannot tell:

But this I think, there’s no man is so vain That would refuse so fair an offer’d chain. I see, a man here needs not live by shifts, When in the streets he meets such golden gifts.

I’ll to the mart, and there for Dromio stay: If any ship put out, then straight away. [Exit.

ACT IV.

SCENE I.—A Public Place.

Enter Second Merchant, Angelo, and an Officer.

Mer. You know since Pentecost the sum is due, And since I have not much importun’d you; Nor now I had not, but that I am bound To Persia, and want guilders for my voyage: Therefore make present satisfaction,

Or I’ll attach you by this officer.

Ang. Even just the sum that I do owe to you Is growing to me by Antipholus;

And in the instant that I met with you He had of me a chain: at five o’clock I shall receive the money for the same.

Pleseth you walk with me down to his house, I will discharge my bond, and thank you too.

Enter Antipholus of Ephesus and Dromio of Ephesus from the Countezan’s.

Off. That labour may you save: see where he comes.

Ant. E. While I go to the goldsmith’s house, go thou

And buy a rope’s end, that I will bestow Among my wife and her confederates,

For locking me out of my doors by day.

But soft! I see the goldsmith. Get thee gone;

Buy thou a rope, and bring it home to me.

Dro. E. I buy a thousand pound a year:

I buy a rope.

[Exeunt.
THE COMEDY OF ERRORS
Act IV, Sc. I.

Ant. E. A man is well holp up that trusts to you:
I promised your presence and the chain;
But neither chain nor goldsmith came to me. 24
Belike you thought our love last too long,
If it were chain’d together, and therefore came not.
Ang. Saving your merry humour, here’s the note

How much your chain weighs to the utmost carat.

The fineness of the gold, and chargeful fashion,
Which doth amount to three odd ducats more
Than I stand debted to this gentleman:
I pray you see him presently discharg’d, 32
For he is bound to sea and stays but for it.
Ant. E. I am not furnish’d with the present money;
Besides, I have some business in the town.
Good signior, take the stranger to my house, 36
And with you take the chain, and bid my wife
Disburse the sum on the receipt thereof:
Perchance I will be there as soon as you.
Ang. Then, you will bring the chain to her yourself?
Ant. E. No; bear it with you, lest I come not time enough.
Ang. Well, sir, I will. Have you the chain about you?
Ant. E. An if I have not, sir, I hope you have,
Or else you may return without your money. 44
Ang. Nay, come, I pray you, sir, give me the chain:
Both wind and tide stays for this gentleman,
And I, to blame, have held him here too long.
Ant. E. Good Lord! you use this dalliance to excuse
Your breach of promise to the Porpentine.
I should have chid you for not bringing it,
But, like a shrew, you first begin to brawl.

Mer. The hour steals on; I pray you, sir, dispatch.
Ang. You hear how he importunes me: the chain!
Ant. E. Why, give it to my wife and fetch your money.
Ang. Come, come; you know I gave it you even now.
Either send the chain or send by me some token.
Ant. E. Fie! now you run this humour out of breath.
Come, where’s the chain? I pray you, let me see it.

Mer. My business cannot brook this dalliance.
Good sir, say whe’r you’ll answer me or no: 60
If not, I’ll leave him to the officer.
Ant. E. I answer you! what should I answer you?

Ang. The money that you owe me for the chain.
Ant. E. I owe you none till I receive the chain.
Ang. You know I gave it you half an hour since.
Ant. E. You gave me none: you wrong me much to say so.
Ang. You wrong me more, sir, in denying it:
Consider how it stands upon my credit.
Mer. Well, officer, arrest him at my suit.
Off. I do;
And charge you in the duke’s name to obey me.
Ang. This touches me in reputation.
Either consent to pay this sum for me,
Or I attach you by this officer.
Ant. E. Consent to pay thee that I never had!
Arrest me, foolish fellow, if thou dar’st.
Ang. Here is thy fee: arrest him, officer.
I would not spare my brother in this case,
If he should scorn me so apparently.
Off. I do arrest you, sir: you hear the suit. 80
Ant. E. I do obey thee till I give thee bail.
But, sirrah, you shall buy this sport as dear
As all the metal in your shop will answer.

Ang. Sir, sir, I shall have law in Ephesus, 84
To your notorious shame, I doubt it not.

Enter Dromio of Syracuse.

Dro. S. Master, there is a bark of Epidamnum
That stays but till her owner comes aboard,
And then she bears away. Our fraughtage, sir,
I have convey’d aboard, and I have bought
The oil, the balsamum, and aqua-vita.
The ship is in her trim; the merry wind
Blows fair from land; they stay for nought at all.

But for their owner, master, and yourself.
Ant. E. How now! a madman! Why, thou peevish sheep,
What ship of Epidamnum stays for me?

Dro. S. A ship you sent me to, to hire waftage.

Ant. E. Thou drunken slave, I sent thee for a rope;
And told thee to what purpose, and what end.
Dro. S. You sent me for a rope’s end as soon:
You sent me to the bay, sir, for a bark.

Ant. E. I will debate this matter at more leisure,
And teach your ears to list me with more heed.

To Adriana, villain, hie thee straight;
Give her this key, and tell her, in the desk
That’s cover’d o’er with Turkish tapestry,
There is a purse of ducats: let her send it.
Tell her I am arrested in the street,
And that shall bail me. Hie thee, slave, be gone!
The Comedy of Errors

Scene II. — A Room in the House of
Antipholus of Ephesus.

Enter Adriana and Luciana.

Adr. Ah! Luciana, did he tempt thee so? Might'st thou perceive austere in his eye That he did plead in earnest? yea or no? Look'd he or red or pale? or sad or merrily? What observation mad'st thou in this case Of his heart's meteors tilting in his face? Luc. First he denied you had in him no right. Adr. He meant he did me none; the more my spite. 8 Luc. Then swore he that he was a stranger here. Adr. And true he swore, though yet forsworn he were. Luc. Then pleaded I for you. Adr. And what said he? Luc. That love I begg'd for you he begg'd of me. 12 Adr. With what persuasion did he tempt thy love? Luc. With words that in an honest suit might move. First, he did praise my beauty, then my speech. Adr. Didst speak him fair? Luc. Had patience, I beseech. Adr. I cannot, nor I will not hold me still: My tongue, though not my heart, shall have his will. He is deformed, crooked, old and aere, Ill-look'd, worse bodied; shapeless every where; 20 Vicious, ungentle, foolish, blunt, unkind, Stigmatical in making, worse in mind. Luc. Who would be jealous then, of such a one? No evil lost is wail'd when it is gone. 24 Adr. Ah! but I think him better than I say, And yet would herein others' eyes were worse. Far from her nest the lapwing cries away: My heart prays for him, though my tongue do curse. 28

Enter Dromio of Syracuse.

Dro. S. Here, go; the desk! the purse! sweet, now, make haste.

Luc. How hast thou lost thy breath?

Dro. S. By running fast.

Adr. Where is thy master, Dromio? is he well?

Dro. S. No, he's in Tartar limbo, worse than hell. 32 A devil in an everlasting garment hath him, One whose hard heart is button'd up with steel; A fiend, a fairy, pitiless and rough; A wolf, nay, worse, a fellow all in buff; 36 A back-friend, a shoulder-clapper, one that countermands The passages of alleys, creeks and narrow lands; A hound that runs counter and yet draws dry-foot well; One that, before the judgment, carries poor souls to hell. 40 Adr. Why, man, what is the matter? Dro. S. I do not know the matter: he is 'rested on the case. Adr. What, is he arrested? tell me at whose suit. Dro. S. I know not at whose suit he is arrest ed well; 44 But he's in a suit of buff which 'rested him, that can I tell. Will you send him, mistress, redemption, the money in his desk? Adr. Go fetch it, sister. — [Exit Luciana.] This I wonder at: That he, unknown to me, should be in debt: 48 Tell me, was he arrested on a band? Dro. S. Not on a band, but on a stronger thing; A chain, a chain. Do you not hear it ring? 52 Adr. What, the chain? Dro. S. No, no, the bell: 'tis time that I were gone: It was two ere I left him, and now the clock strikes one. Adr. The hours come back! that did I never hear.

Dro. S. O yes; if any hour meet a sergeant, a' turns back for very fear. 56 Adr. As if Time were in debt! how fondly dost thou reason! Dro. S. Time is a very bankrupt, and owes more than he's worth to season. Nay, he's a thief too: have you not heard men say, That Time comes stealing on by night and day? 60 If Time be in debt and theft, and a sergeant in the way, Hath he not reason to turn back an hour in a day?
THE COMEDY OF ERRORS

Act IV, Sc. III.

Re-enter Luciana.

Adr. Go, Dromio; here's the money, bear it straight,
And bring thy master home immediately. 64
Come, sister; I am press'd down with conceit;
Conceit, my comfort and my injury. [Exeunt.

Scene III.—A Public Place.

Enter Antipholus of Syracuse.

Ant. S. There's not a man I meet but doth salute me,
As if I were their well acquainted friend;
And every one doth call me by my name.
Some tender money to me; some invite me;
Some other give me thanks for kindnesses;
Some offer me commodities to buy:
Even now a tailor call'd me in his shop
And shew'd me silks that he had bought for me,
And therewithal, took measure of my body.
Sure these are but imaginary wiles,
And Lapland sorcerers inhabit here.

Enter Dromio of Syracuse.

Dro. S. Master, here's the gold you sent me for.
What! have you got the picture of old Adam
new apparelled?
Ant. S. What gold is this? What Adam dost thou mean?

Dro. S. Not that Adam that kept the Paradise,
but that Adam that keeps the prison: he that goes in the calf's skin that was killed for the Prodigal: he that came behind you, sir, like an evil angel, and bid you forsake your liberty.
Ant. S. I understand thee not.

Dro. S. No? why, 'ts a plain case: he that went, like a base-viole, in a case of leather; the man, sir, 'that, when gentlemen are tired, gives them a fob, and rests them; he, sir, that takes pity on decayed men and gives them suits of durance; he that sets up his rest to do more exploits with his mace than a morris-pike.

Ant. S. What, thou meanest an officer?

Dro. S. Ay, sir, the sergeant of the band; he that brings any man to answer it that breaks his band; one that thinks a man always going to bed, and says, 'God give you good rest!' 32

Ant. S. Well, sir, there rest in your jollery.
Is there any ship puts forth to-night? may we be gone?

Dro. S. Why, sir, I brought you word an hour since that the dark Expedition puts forth to-night; and then were you hindered by the sergeant to tarry for the hoy Delay. Here are the angels that you sent for to deliver you. 40

Ant. S. The fellow is distract, and so am I;
And here we wander in illusions:
Some blessed power deliver us from hence!

Enter a Courtisan.

Cour. Well met, well met, Master Antipholus.
I see, sir, you have found the goldsmith now:
Is that the chain you promis'd me to-day?
Ant. S. Satan, avoid! I charge thee tempt me not!

Dro. S. Master, is this Mistress Satan?

Ant. S. It is the devil.

Dro. S. Nay, she is worse, she is the devil's dam, and here she comes in the habit of a light wench: and thereof comes that the wenches say, 'God damn me; that's as much as to say, 'God make me a light wench.' It is written, they appear to men like angels of light: light is an effect of fire, and fire will burn; ergo, light wenches will burn. Come not near her.

Cour. Your man and you are marvellous merry, sir. Will you go with me? we'll mend our dinner here.

Dro. S. Master, if you do, expect spoon-meat,
so bespeak a long spoon.

Ant. S. Why, Dromio?

Dro. S. Marry, he must have a long spoon that must eat with the devil.

Ant. S. Avoid thee, fiend! what tell'st thou me of supping?

Thou art, as you are all, a sorceress:
I conjure thee to leave me and be gone.

Cour. Give me the ring of mine you had at dinner,
Or, for my diamond, the chain you promis'd,
And I'll be gone, sir, and not trouble you.

Dro. S. Some devils ask but the parings of one's nail,
A rush, a hair, a drop of blood, a pin,
A nut, a cherry-stone;
But she, more covetous, would have a chain.
Master, be wise: an if you give it her,
The devil will shake her chain and fright us with it.

Cour. I pray you, sir, my ring, or else the chain:
I hope you do not mean to cheat me so.

Ant. S. Avaunt, thou witch! Come, Dromio,
let us go.

Dro. S. 'Fly pride,' says the peacock: mistress, that you know.

[Exeunt Antipholus of Syracuse and Dromio of Syracuse.

Cour. Now, out of doubt, Antipholus is mad,
Else would he never so demean himself.
A ring's his hat; of mine worth forty ducats,
And for the same he promis'd me a chain:
Both one and other he denies me now.  The reason that I gather he is mad, Beside this present instance of his rage, Is a mad tale he told to-day at dinner, Of his own doors being shut against his entrance Belike his wife, acquainted with his fits, On purpose shut the doors against his way.  My way is now to his house to his house, And tell his wife, that, being lunatic, He rush'd into my house, and took performance My ring away.  This course I fittest choose, For forty ducats is too much to lose.  [Exit.

**SCENE IV. — A Street.**

*Enter* ANTIPHOLUS of Ephesus and the Officer.

**Ant.** E. Fear me not, man; I will not break away: I'll give thee, ere I leave thee, so much money, To warrant thee, as I am 'rested for.  My wife is in a wayward mood to-day, And will not lightly trust the messenger. That should I be attach'd in Ephesus, I tell you, 'twill sound harshly in her ears.

*Enter DROMIO of Ephesus with a rope's end.*

Here comes my man: I think he brings the money.

**How now, sir! have you that I sent you for?**

**Dro.** E. Here's that, I warrant you, will pay them all.  **Ant.** E. But where's the money?  **Dro.** E. Why, sir, I gave the money for the rope.  **Ant.** E. Five hundred ducats, villain, for a rope?  **Dro.** E. I'll serve you, sir, five hundred at the rate.  **Ant.** E. To what end did I bid thee his thee home?  **Dro.** E. To a rope's end, sir; and to that end am I return'd.  **Ant.** E. And to that end, sir, I will welcome you.  [Beats him.  **Off.** Good sir, be patient.  **Dro.** E. Nay, 'tis for me to be patient; I am in adversity.  **Off.** Good now, hold thy tongue.  **Dro.** E. Nay, rather persuade him to hold his hands.  **Ant.** E. Thou whoreson, senseless villain!  **Dro.** E. I would I were senseless, sir, that I might not feel your blows.  **Ant.** E. Thou art sensible in nothing but blows, and so is an ass.

**Dro.** E. I am an ass indeed; you may prove it by my long ears.  I have served him from the hour of my sativity to this instant, and have nothing at his hands for my service but blows.  When I am cold, he beats me with beating; when I am warm, he cools me with beating.  I am waked with it when I sleep; raised with it when I sit; driven out of doors with it when I go from home; welcomed home with it when I return; nay, I bear it on my shoulders, as a beggar wont her brat; and, I think, when he hath lamed me, I shall beg with it from door to door.  [Exit.

**Ant.** E. Come, go along; my wife is coming yonder.

*Enter ADRIANA, LUCIANA, the Courtezan, and PINCH.*

**Dro.** E. Mistress, respice finem, respect your end; or rather, to prophesy like the parrot, 'Beware the rope's end.'  **Ant.** E. Wilt thou still talk?  [Beats him.  **Cour.** How say you now? is not your husband mad?  **Adr.** His incivility confirms no less.  Good Doctor Pinch, you are a conjurer; Establish him in his true sense again, And I will please you what you will demand.  **Luc.** Alas! how fiery and how sharp he looks.  **Cour.** Mark how he trembles in his ecstasy!  **Pinch.** Give me your hand and let me feel your pulse.  **Ant.** E. There is my hand, and let it feel your ear.  [Strikes him.  **Pinch.** I charge thee, Satan, hou'd within this man,

To yield possession to my holy prayers, And to thy state of darkness thee straight: I conjure thee by all the saints in heaven.  **Ant.** E. Peace, doting wizard, peace! I am not mad.  **Adr.** O! that thou wert not, poor distressed soul!  **Ant.** E. You minion, you, are these your customers?

Did this companion with the saffron face  Revel and feast it at my house to-day,  Whilst upon me the guilty doors were shut  And I denied to enter in my house?  **Adr.** O husband, God doth know you din'd at home; Where would you had remain'd until this time.  Free from these slanders and this open shame!  **Ant.** E. Din'd at home! Thou villain, what say'st thou?  **Dro.** E. Sir, soothe to say, you did not dine at home.

128
Ant. E. Were not my doors lock'd up and I shut out? 72
Dro. E. Perdy, your doors were lock'd and you shut out.
Ant. E. And did not she herself revile me there?
Dro. E. Sans fable, she herself revil'd you there.
Ant. E. Did not her kitchen-maid rail, taunt, and scorn me? 76
Dro. E. Certes, she did; the kitchen-vestal scorn'd you.
Ant. E. And did not I in rage depart from thence?
Dro. E. In verity you did: my bones bear witness,
That since have felt the vigour of his rage. 80
Adr. Is't good to soothe him in these contraries?
Pinch. It is no shame: the fellow finds his vein,
And, yielding to him humours well his frenzy.
Ant. E. Thou hast suborn'd the goldsmith to arrest me. 84
Adr. Alas! I sent you money to redeem you,
By Dromio here, who came in haste for it.
Dro. E. Money by me! heart and good will you might;
But surely, master, not a rag of money. 88
Ant. E. Went'st not thou to her for a purse of ducats?
Adr. He came to me, and I deliver'd it.
Luc. And I am witness with her that she did.
Dro. E. God and the rope-maker bear me witness 92
That I was sent for nothing but a rope!
Pinch. Mistress, both man and master is possess'd:
I know it by their pale and deadly looks.
They must be bound and laid in some dark room. 96
Ant. E. Say, wherefore dost thou lock me forth to-day?
And why dost thou deny the bag of gold?
Adr. I did not, gentle husband, lock thee forth.
Dro. E. And, gentle master, I receiv'd no gold; 100
But I confess, sir, that we were lock'd out.
Astr. Dissembling villain! thou speak'st false in both.
Ant. E. Dissembling harlot! thou art false in all;
And art confederate with a damned pack
To make a loathsome abject scorn of me;
But with these nails I'll pluck out those false eyes
That would behold in me this shameful sport.
Astr. O! bind him, bind him, let him not come near me. 108
Pinch. More company! the fiend is strong within him.
Luc. Ay me! poor man, how pale and wan he looks!
Enter three or four and bind ANTIPHOLUS of Ephesus.
Ant. E. What, will you murder me? Thou gaoler, thou,
I am thy prisoner: wilt thou suffer them 112
To make a rescue?
Off. Masters, let him go:
He is my prisoner, and you shall not have him.
Pinch. Go bind this man, for he is frantic too.
[They bind DROMIO of Ephesus.
Astr. What wilt thou do, thou peevish officer?
Hast thou delight to see a wretched man
Do outrage and displeasure to himself?
Off. He is my prisoner: if I let him go,
The debt he owes will be requir'd of me. 120
Astr. I will discharge thee ere I go from thee:
Bear me forthwith unto his creditor,
And, knowing how the debt grows, I will pay it.
Good Master doctor, see him safe convey'd 124
Home to my house. O most unhappy day!
Ant. E. O most unhappy strumpet!
Dro. E. Master, I am here enter'd in bond for you.
Ant. E. Out on thee, villain! wherfore dost thou mad me? 128
Dro. E. Will you be bound for nothing? be mad, good master; cry, 'the devil'
Luc. God help, poor souls! how idly do they talk.
Astr. Go bear him hence. Sister, go you with me.— 132
[Exeunt PINCH and Assistants with ANTIPHOLUS of Ephesus and DROMIO of Ephesus.
Say now, whose suit is he arrested at?
Off. One Angelo, a goldsmith; do you know him?
Astr. I know the man. What is the sum he owes?
Off. Two hundred ducats.
Astr. Say, how grows it due? 136
Off. Due for a chain your husband had of him.
Astr. He did bespeak a chain for me, but had it not.
Cour. When as your husband all in rage, to-day
Came to my house, and took away my ring,—
The ring I saw upon his finger now,— 142
Straight after did I meet him with a chain.
Astr. It may be so, but I did never see it.
Enter ANTIPHOLUS of Syracuse and DROMIO of Syracuse, with rapiers drawn.

Luc. God, for thy mercy! they are loose again.

Adr. And come with naked swords. Let's call more help

To have them bound again.

Off. A way! they'll kill us.

[Exeunt Adriana, Luciana, and Officer.

Ant. S. I see, these witches are afraid of swords.

Dro. S. She that would be your wife now ran from you.

Ant. S. Come to the Centaur; fetch our stuff from thence:

I long that we were safe and sound aboard.

Dro. S. Faith, stay here this night, they will surely do us no harm; you saw they speak us fair, give us gold: methinks they are such a gentle nation, that, but for the mountain of mad flesh that claims marriage of me, I could find in my heart to stay here still, and turn witch.

Ant. S. I will not stay to-night for all the town; Therefore away, to get our stuff aboard. [Exeunt.

ACT V.

SCENE I.—A Street before an Abbey.

Enter Merchant and Angelo.

Ang. I am sorry, sir, that I have hinder'd you; But, I protest, he had the chain of me, Though most dishonestly he doth deny it. Mer. How is the man esteem'd here in the city?

Ang. Of very reverend reputation, sir, Of credit infinite, highly belov'd, Second to none that lives here in the city: His word might bear my wealth at any time. Mer. Speak softly: yonder, as I think, he walks.

Enter ANTIPHOLUS of Syracuse and DROMIO of Syracuse.

Ang. 'Tis so; and that self chain about his neck Which he forswore most monstrously to have. Good sir, draw near to me, I'll speak to him. Signior Antipholus, I wonder much That you would put me to this shame and trouble;

And not without some scandal to yourself, With circumstance and oaths so to deny

This chain which now you wear so openly: Beside the charge, the shame, imprisonment, You have done wrong to this my honest friend, Who, but for staying on our controversy, Had hoisted sail and put to sea to-day.

This chain you had of me; can you deny it?

Ant. S. I think I had: I never did deny it. Mer. Yes, that you did, sir, and forswore it too.

Ant. S. Who heard me to deny it or forswear it?

Mer. These ears of mine, thou know'st, did hear thee.

Fie on thee, wretch! 'tis pity that thou liv'st To walk where any honest men resort.

Ant. S. Thou art a villain to impeach me thus:

I'll prove mine honour and mine honesty Against thee presently, if thou dar'st stand.

Mer. I dare, and do defy thee for a villain. [They draw.

Enter Adriana, Luciana, Courtisan, and Others.

Adr. Hold! hurt him not, for God's sake! he is mad.

Some get within him, take his sword away Bind Dromio too, and bear them to my house.

Dro. S. Run, master, run; for God's sake, take a house!

This is some priory: in, or we are spoil'd.

[Exeunt Antipholus of Syracuse and Dromio of Syracuse to the Abbey.

Enter the Abbess.

Abb. Be quiet, people. Wherefore throng you hither?

Adr. To fetch my poor distracted husband hence.

Let us come in, that we may bind him fast, And bear him home for his recovery.

Ang. I knew he was not in his perfect wits. Mer. I am sorry now that I did draw on him. Abb. How long hath this possession held the man?

Adr. This week he hath been heavy, sour, sad, And much different from the man he was;

But, till this afternoon his passion Ne'er brake into extremity of rage.

Abb. Hath he not lost much wealth by wrack of sea?

Buried some dear friend? Hath not else his eye Stray'd his affection in unlawful love? A sin prevailing much in youthful men, Who give their eyes the liberty of gazin. Which of these sorrows is he subject to?

Adr. To none of these, except it be the last; Namely, some love that drew him oft from home.
THE COMEDY OF ERRORS

Act V, Sc. I.

Abb. You should for that have reprehended him. 57

Adr. Why, so I did.

Abb. Ay, but not rough enough.

Adr. As roughly as my modesty would let me.

Abb. Haply, in private.

Adr. And in assemblies too. 60

Abb. Ay, but not enough.

Adr. It was the copy of our conference: In bed, he slept not for my urging it; At board, he fed not for my urging it; Alone, it was the subject of my theme; In company I often glanced it: Still did I tell him it was vile and bad.

Abb. And thereof came it that the man was mad: 68

The venom clamours of a jealous woman Poison more deadly than a mad dog's tooth. It seems, his sleeps were hinder'd by thy railing, And thereof comes it that his head is light. Thou say'st his meat was sauc'd with thy up- braiding:
Unquiet meals make ill digestions; Thereof the raging fire of fever bred: And what's a fever but a fit of madness? Thou say'st his sports were hinder'd by thy brows:
Sweet recreation barr'd, what doth ensue But moody moping, and dull melancholy, Kimdism to grim and comfortless despair. And at her heels a huge infectious troop Of pale distemperatures and foes to life? In food, in sport, and life-preserving rest To be disturb'd, would mad or man or beast: The consequence is then, thy jealous fits Have scar'd thy husband from the use of wits.

Luc. She never reprehended him but mildly When he demean'd himself rough, rude, and wildly. Why bear you these rebukes and answer not? Adr. She did betray me to my own reproof. Good people, enter, and lay hold on him.

Abb. No; not a creature enters in my house.

Adr. Then, let your servants bring my husband forth.

Abb. Neither: he took this place for sanctuary, And it shall privilege him from your hands Till I have brought him to his wits again, Or lose my labour in assaying it.

Adr. I will attend my husband, be his nurse, Dift his sickness, for it is my office, And will have no attorney but myself; And therefore let me have him home with me.

Abb. Be patient; for I will not let him stir Till I have us'd the approved means I have, With wholesome syrups, drugs, and holy prayers,

To make of him a formal man again. 105

It is a branch and parcel of mine oath, A charitable duty of my order; Therefore depart and leave him here with me.

Adr. I will not hence and leave my husband here; And ill it doth beseech your holiness To separate the husband and the wife.

Abb. Be quiet, and depart: thou shalt not have him. 109

[Exit. Luc. Complain unto the duke of this indignity.

Adr. Come, go: I will fall prostrate at his feet, And never rise until my tears and prayers Have won his Grace to come in person hither, And take perforce my husband from the abbess.

Sec. Mer. By this, I think, the dial points at five:

Anon, I'm sure, the duke himself in person Comes this way to the melancholy vale, The place of death and sorry execution, Behind the ditches of the abbey here.

Ang. Upon what cause?

Sec. Mer. To see a reverend Syracuse merchant,

Who put unluckily into this bay Against the laws and statutes of this town, Beheaded publicly for his offence.

Ang. See where they come: we will behold his death.

Luc. Kneel to the duke before he pass the abbey.

Enter DUKE attended; AEGEON bare-headed; with the Headsman and other Officers.

Duke. Yet once again proclaim it publicly, If any friend will pay the sum for him, He shall not die; so much we tender him. 132

Adr. Justice, most sacred duke, against the abbess!

Duke. She is a virtuous and a reverend lady: It cannot be that she hath done thee wrong.

Adr. May it please your Grace, Antipholus, my husband,

Whom I made lord of me and all I had, At your important letters, this ill day A most outrageous fit of madness took him, That desperately he hurried through the street,— With him his bondman, all as mad as he,— Doing displeasure to the citizens By rushing in their houses, bearing hence Rings, jewels, anything his rage did like. 144

Once did I get him bound and sent him home, Whilst to take order for the wrongs I went That here and there his fury had committed. Anon, I wot not by what strong escape, 148

He broke from those that had the guard of him,
And with his mad attendant and himself,
Each one with iringal passion, with drawn swords
Met us again, and, madly bent on us 152
Chas’d us away, till, raising of more aid
We came again to bind them. Then they fled
Into this abbey, whither we pursu’d them;
And here the abbess shuts the gates on us, 156
And will not suffer us to fetch him out,
Nor send him forth that we may bear him hence.
Therefore, most gracious duke, with thy com-
mand
Let him be brought forth, and borne hence for help. 160

Duke. Long since thy husband serv’d me in
my wars,
And I to thee engag’d a prince’s word,
When thou didst make him master of thy bed,
To do him all the grace and good I could. 164
Go, some of you, knock at the abbey gate
And bid the lady abbess come to me.
I will determine this before I stir.

Enter a Servant.

Serv. O mistress, mistress! shift and save
yourself! 168
My master and his man are both broke loose,
Beaten the maids a-row and bound the doctor,
Whose beard they have sing’d off with brands of
fire;
And ever as it blaz’d they threw on him 172
Great pails of puddled mire to quench the hair.
My master preaches patience to him, and the
while
His man with scissors nicks him like a fool;
And sure, unless you send some present help,
Between them they will kill the conjurer. 177

Adr. Peace, fool! thy master and his man
are here,
And that is false thou dost report to us.

Serv. Mistress, upon my life, I tell you true;
I have not breath’d almost, since I did see it. 181
He cries for you and vows, if he can take you,
To sotch your face, and to disfigure you.

[Cry within.

Hark, hark! I hear him, mistress: fly, be gone!

Duke. Come, stand by me; fear nothing.

Guard with halberds! 185

Adr. Ay me, it is my husband! Witness you,
That he is borne about invisible:
Even now we hous’d him in the abbey here, 188
And now he’s here, past thought of human
reason.

Enter ANTIPHOLUS of Ephesus and DROMIO
          of Ephesus.

Ant. E. Justice, most gracious duke! O! grant me justice,

Even for the service that long since I did thee,
When I bestrid thee in the wars and took 192
Deep scars to save thy life; even for the blood
That then I lost for thee, now grant me justice.

Æge. Unless the fear of death doth make me
dote,
I see my son Antipholus and Dromio! 196

Ant. E. Justice, sweet prince, against that
woman there!
She whom thou gavest to me to be my wife,
That hath abused and dishonour’d me,
Even in the strength and height of injury! 200
Beyond imagination is the wrong
That she this day hath shameless thrown on me.

Duke. Discover how, and thou shalt find me
just.

Ant. E. This day, great duke, she shut the
doors upon me,
While she with harlots feasted in my house.

Duke. A grievous fault! Say, woman, didst
thou so?

Adr. No, my good lord: myself, he, and my
sister
To-day did dine together. So befall my soul 208
As this is false he burdens me withal!

Luc. Ne’er may I look on day, nor sleep on
night,
But she tells to your highness simple truth!

Ang. O perjur’d woman! They are both for-
sworn:

In this the madman justly chargeth them!

Ant. E. My liege, I am advised what I say:
Neither disturb’d with the effect of wine,
Nor heady-rash, provok’d with raging ire, 216
Albeit my wrongs might make one wiser mad.
This woman lock’d me out this day from dinner:
That goldsmith there, were he not pack’d with her,
Could witness it, for he was with me then; 220
Who parted with me to go fetch a chain,
Promising to bring it to the Porpentine,
Where Balthazar and I did dine together.
Our dinner done, and he not coming thither, 224
I went to seek him: in the street I met him,
And in his company that gentleman.
There did this perjur’d goldsmith swear me down
That this day of him receiv’d the chain, 228
Which, God he knows, I saw not; for the which
He did arrest me with an officer.
I did obey, and sent my peasant home
For certain ducats: he with none return’d. 232
Then fairly I besoke the officer
To go in person with me to my house.
By the way we met
My wife, her sister, and a rabble more 236
Of vile confederates: along with them
They brought one Pinch, a hungry lean-face'd villain,
A mere anatomy, a mountebank,
A threadbare juggler, and a fortune-teller, 240
A needy, hollow-eyed, sharp-looking wretch,
A living-dead man. This perrnicious slave,
Forsooth, took on him as a conjurer,
And, gazing in mine eyes, feeling my pulse, 244
And with no face, as 'twere, out-facing me,
Cries out, I was possess'd. Then, altogether
They fell upon me, bound me, bore me thence,
And, in a dark and dankish vault at home 248
There left me and my man, both bound to-
gether;
Till, gnawing with my teeth my bonds in sunder,
I gain'd my freedom; and immediately
Ran hither to your Grace; whom I beseech 252
to give me ample satisfaction
For these deep shames and great indignities.

Ang. My lord, in truth, thus far I witness
with him,
That he din'd not at home, but was lock'd out.
Duke. But had he such a chain of thee, or no?
Ang. He had, my lord; and when he ran in
here,
These people saw the chain about his neck.
Sec. Mer. Besides, I will be sworn these ears of
mine 260
Heard you confess you had the chain of him
After you first forswore it on the mart;
And thereupon I drew my sword on you;
And then you fled into this abbey here, 264
From whence, I think, you are come by miracle.

Ant. E. I never came within these abbey walls;
Nor ever didst thou draw thy sword on me;
I never saw the chain, so help me heaven! 268
And this is false you make me withal.
Duke. Why, what an intricate impleaste is this!
I think you all have drunk of Circe's cup.
If here you hous'd him, here he would have been;
272
If he were mad, he would not plead so coldly;
You say he din'd at home; the goldsmith here
Denies that saying. Sirrah, what say you?

Dro. E. Sir, he din'd with her there, at the
Porpentine. 276
Cour. He did, and from my finger snatch'd that ring.
Ant. E. 'Tis true, my liege; this ring I had
of her.

Duke. Saw'st thou him enter at the abbey here?
Cour. As sure, my liege, as I do see your
Grace. 280

Duke. Why, this is strange. Go call the
abbess hither. [Exit an Attendant.
I think you are all mated or stark mad.

Æge. Most mighty duke, vouchsafe me speak
a word:
Haply I see a friend will save my life, 284
And pay the sum that may deliver me.
Duke. Speak freely, Syracusan, what thou
wilt.
Æge. Is not your name, sir, called Antipholus?
And is not that your bondman Dromio? 288
Dro. E. Within this hour I was his bondman,
sir;
But he, I thank him, gnaw'd in two my cords:
Now am I Dromio and his man, unbound.
Æge. I am sure you both of you remember me.
292
Dro. E. Ourselves we do remember, sir, by you;
For lately we were bound, as you are now.
You are not Pinch's patient, are you, sir?
Æge. Why look you strange on me? you
know me well. 296
Ant. E. I never saw you in my life till now.
Æge. Of grief hath chang'd me since you saw me
last,
And careful hours, with Time's deformed hand,
Have written strange defeatures in my face: 300
But tell me yet, dost thou not know my voice?
Ant. E. Neither.
Æge. Dromio, nor thou?
Dro. E. No, trust me, sir, not I. 304
Æge. I am sure thou dost.
Dro. E. Ay, sir; but I am sure I do not;
And whatsoever a man denies, you are now bound
to believe him. 308
Æge. Not know my voice! O, time's extremity,
Hast thou so crack'd and splitted my poor
tongue
In seven short years, that here my only son
Knows not my feeble key of untun'd care? 312
Though now this grained face of mine be hid
In sap-consuming winter's drizzled snow,
And all the conduits of my blood froze up,
Yet hath my night of life some memory, 316
My wasting lamps some fading glimmer left,
My dull deaf ears a little use to hear:
All these old witnesses, I cannot err,
Tell me thou art my son Antipholus. 320
Ant. E. I never saw my father in my life.
Æge. But seven years since, in Syracusa, boy,
Thou know'st we parted: but perhaps, my son,
Thou shamm'st to acknowledge me in misery.
Ant. E. The duke and all that know me in
the city 325
Can witness with me that it is not so:
I ne'er saw Syracusa in my life.
Duke. I tell thee, Syracusan, twenty years
Have I been patron to Antipholus, 329
During which time he ne'er saw Syracusa.
I see thy age and dangers make thee dote.
THE COMEDY OF ERRORS

Act V, Sc. I.

Re-enter Abbess, with ANTIPHOLUS of Syracuse and DROMIO of Syracuse.

Abb. Most mighty duke, behold a man much wrong’d. [All gather to see him. Adr. I see two husbands, or mine eyes deceive me! 333

Duke. One of these men is Genius to the other;
And so of these: which is the natural man,
And which the spirit? Who deciphers them?

Dro. S. I, sir, am Dromio: command him away. 337

Dro. E. I, sir, am Dromio: pray let me stay.

Ant. S. Ægeon art thou not? or else his ghost?

Dro. S. O! my old master; who hath bound him here?

Abb. Whoever bound him, I will loose his bonds,
And gain a husband by his liberty.
Speak, old Ægeon, if thou be’st the man
That hast a wife once call’d Æmilia,
That bore thee at a burden two fair sons.
O! if thou be’st the same Ægeon, speak,
And speak unto the same Æmilia!

Æge. If I dream not, thou art Æmilia: 348
If thou art she, tell me where is that son
That floated with thee on the fatal raft?

Abb. By men of Epidamnum, he and I,
And the twin Dromios, one in semblance, 356
Besides her urging of her wrack at sea;
These are the parents to these children,
Which accidently are met together.

Antipholus, thou cam’st from Corinth first? 364

Ant. S. No, sir, not I; I came from Syracuse.
Duke. Stay, stand apart; I know not which is which.

Ant. E. I came from Corinth, my most gracious lord,—

Dro. E. And I with him. 368

Ant. E. Brought to this town by that most famous warrior,

Duke. Menaphon, your most renowned uncle.

Adr. Which of you two did dine with me to-day?

Ant. S. I, gentle mistress. 372

Adr. And are not you my husband?

Ant. E. No; I say nay to that.

Ant. S. And so do I; yet did she call me so;
And this fair gentlewoman, her sister here, 376
Did call me brother. [To Luciana.] What I told you then,
I hope I shall have leisure to make good,
If this be not a dream I see and hear.

Ang. That is the chain, sir, which you had of

Ant. S. I think it be, sir; I deny it not.

Ant. E. And you, sir, for this chain arrested me.

Ang. I think I did, sir; I deny it not.

Adr. I sent you money, sir, to be your bail,
By Dromio; but I think he brought it not. 385

Dro. E. No, none by me.

Ant. S. This purse of ducats I receiv’d from you,
And Dromio, my man, did bring them me. 388
I see we still did meet each other’s man,
And I was ta’en for him, and he for me,
And thereupon these errors are arose.

Ant. E. These ducats pawn I for my father here. 392

Duke. It shall not need: thy father hath his life.

Cour. Sir, I must have that diamond from you.

Ant. E. There, take it; and much thanks for
my good cheer.

Abb. Renowned duke, vouchsafe to take the pains
To go with us into the abbey here,
And hear at large discoursed all our fortunes;
And all that are assembled in this place,
That by this sympathized one day’s error 400
Have suffer’d wrong, go keep us company,
And we shall make full satisfaction.

Thirty-three years have I but gone in travail
Of you, my sons; and, till this present hour 404
My heavy burdens ne’er delivered.

The duke, my husband, and my children both,
And you the calendars of their nativity,
Go to a gossip’s feast, and joy with me: 408

After so long grief such festivity!

Duke. With all my heart I’ll gossip at this feast.

[Exeunt DUKE, Abbess, Ægeon, Courtezan,
Merchant, Angelo, and Attendants.
Dro. S. Master, shall I fetch your stuff from shipboard?

Ant. E. Dromio, what stuff of mine hast thou
embark’d?

Dro. S. Your goods that lay at host, sir, in
the Centaur.

Ant. S. He speaks to me. I am your master,
Dromio:

Come, go with us; we’ll look to that anon:
Embrace thy brother there; rejoice with him.

[Exeunt ANTIPHOLUS of Syracuse and
ANTIPHOLUS of Ephesus, ADRIANA
and LUCIANA.

Dro. S. There is a fat friend at your master's
house,
That kitchen'd me for you to-day at dinner:
She now shall be my sister, not my wife.

Dro. E. Methinks you are my glass, and not
my brother: 420

I see by you I am a sweet-fac'd youth.
Will you walk in to see their gossiping?

Dro. S. Not I, sir; you are my elder.

Dro. E. That's a question: how shall we try it?

Dro. S. We'll draw cuts for the senior: till
then lead thou first.

Dro. E. Nay, then, thus:

We came into the world like brother and brother;
And now let's go hand in hand, not one before
another. 425

[Exeunt.]
MUCH ADO ABOUT NOTHING

DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

DON PEDRO, Prince of Arragon.
DON JOHN, his bastard Brother.
CLAUDIO, a young Lord of Florence.
BENEDICK, a young Lord of Padua.
LEONATO, Governor of Messina.
ANTONIO, his Brother.
BALTHAZAR, Servant to Don Pedro.
BORACHIO, followers of Don John.
CONRADE, followers of Don John.
DOGBERRY, a Constable.

VERGES, a Headborough.
PRIEST FRANCIS.
A Sexton.
A Boy.
HERO, Daughter to Leonato.
BEATRICE, Niece to Leonato.
MARGARET, Waiting-gentlewomen attending
URSULA, on Hero.

Messengers, Watch, Attendants, &c.

SCENE.—Messina.

ACT I.

SCENE I.—Before LEONATO’S HOUSE.

Enter LEONATO, HERO, BEATRICE and others, with a Messenger.

Leon. I learn in this letter that Don Pedro of Arragon comes this night to Messina.

Mess. He is very near by this: he was not three leagues off when I left him.

Leon. How many gentlemen have you lost in this action?

Mess. But few of any sort, and none of name.

Leon. A victory is twice itself when the achiever brings home full numbers. I find here that Don Pedro hath bestowed much honour on a young Florentine called Claudio.

Mess. Much deserved on his part and equally remembered by Don Pedro. He hath borne himself beyond the promise of his age, doing in the figure of a lamb the feats of a lion: he hath indeed better bettered expectation than you must expect of me to tell you how.

Leon. He hath an uncle here in Messina will be very much glad of it.

Mess. I have already delivered him letters, and there appears much joy in him; even so much that joy could not show itself modest enough without a badge of bitterness.

Leon. Did he break out into tears?

Mess. In great measure.

Leon. A kind overflow of kindness. There are no faces truer than those that are so washed: how much better is it to weep at joy than to joy at weeping!

Beat. I pray you is Signior Mountanto returned from the wars or no?

Mess. I know none of that name, lady: there was none such in the army of any sort.

Leon. What is he that you ask for, niece?

Hero. My cousin means Signior Benedick of Padua.

Mess. O! he is returned, and as pleasant as ever he was.

Beat. He set up his bills here in Messina and challenged Cupid at the flight; and my uncle’s fool, reading the challenge, subscribed for Cupid, and challenged him at the bird-bolt. I pray you, how many hath he killed and eaten in these wars? But how many hath he killed? for, indeed, I promised to eat all of his killing.

Leon. Faith, niece, you tax Signior Benedick too much; but he’ll be meet with you, I doubt it not.

Mess. He hath done good service, lady, in these wars.

Beat. You had musty victual, and he hath holp to eat it: he is a very valiant trencherman; he hath an excellent stomach.

Mess. And a good soldier too, lady.

Beat. And a good soldier to a lady; but what is he to a lord?

Mess. A lord to a lord, a man to a man, stuffed with all honourable virtues.

Beat. It is so, indeed; he is no less than a stuffed man; but for the stuffing,—well, we are all mortal.

Leon. You must not, sir, mistake my niece. There is a kind of merry war betwixt Signior Benedick and her: they never meet but there’s a skirmish of wit between them.

Beat. Alas! he gets nothing by that. In our last conflict four of his five wits went halting off,
and now is the whole man governed with one so that if he have wit enough to keep himself warm, let him bear it for a difference between himself and his horse; for it is all the wealth that he hath left to be known a reasonable creature. Who is his companion now? He hath every month a new sworn brother.

Mess. Is't possible?

Beat. Very easily possible: he wears his faith but as the fashion of his hat; it ever changes with the next block.

Mess. I see, lady, the gentleman is not in your books.

Beat. No; an he were, I would burn my study. But, I pray you, who is his companion? Is there no young squatter now that will make a voyage with him to the devil?

Mess. He is most in the company of the right noble Claudio.

Beat. O Lord! he will hang upon him like a disease: he is sooner caught than the pestilence, and the taker runs presently mad. God help the noble Claudio! if he have caught the Benedick, it will cost him a thousand pound ere a' be cured.

Mess. I will hold friends with you, lady.

Beat. Do, good friend.

Leon. You will never run mad, niece.

Beat. No, not till a hot January.

Mess. Don Pedro is approached.

Enter DON PEDRO, DON JOHN, CLAUDIO, BENE

D. Pedro. Good Signior Leonato, you are come to meet your trouble: the fashion of the world is to avoid cost, and you encounter it.

Leon. Never came trouble to my house in the likeness of your Grace, for trouble being gone, comfort should remain; but when you depart from me, sorrow abides and happiness takes his leave.

D. Pedro. You embrace your charge too willingly. I think this is your daughter.

Leon. Her mother hath many times told me so.

Bene. Were you in doubt, sir, that you asked her?

Leon. Signior Benedick, no; for then you were a child.

D. Pedro. You have it full, Benedick: we may guess by this what you are, being a man. Truly, the lady fathers herself. Be happy, lady, for you are like an honourable father.

Bene. If Signior Leonato be her father, she would not have his head on her shoulders for all Messina, as like him as she is.

Beat. I wonder that you will still be talking, Signior Benedick: nobody marks you.

Bene. What! my dear Lady Disdain, are you yet living?

Beat. Is it possible Disdain should die while she hath such meet food to feed it as Signior Benedick? Courtesy itself must convert to disdain, if you come in her presence.

Bene. Then is courtesy a turncoat. But it is certain I am loved of all ladies, only you excepted; and I would I could find in my heart that I had not a hard heart; for, truly, I love none.

Beat. A dear happiness to women; they would else have been troubled with a pernicious suitor. I thank God and my cold blood, I am of your humour for that: I had rather hear my dog bark at a crow than a man swear he loves me.

Bene. God keep your ladyship still in that mind; so some gentleman or other shall scape a predestinate scratched face.

Beat. Scratching could not make it worse, an 'twere such a face as yours were.

Bene. Well, you are a rare parrot teacher.

Beat. A bird of my tongue is better than a beast of yours.

Bene. I would my horse had the speed of your tongue, and so good a continuing. But keep your way, 'tis God's name; I have done.

Beat. You always end with a jape's trick: I know you of old.

D. Pedro. This is the sum of all, Leonato: Signior Claudio, and Signior Benedick, my dear friend Leonato hath invited you all. I tell him we shall stay here at the least a month, and he heartily prays some occasion may detain us longer: I dare swear he is no hypocrite, but prays from his heart.

Leon. If you swear, my lord, you shall not be forsworn. [To DON JOHN.] Let me bid you welcome, my lord: being reconciled to the prince your brother, I owe you all duty.

D. John. I thank you: I am not of many words, but I thank you.

Leon. Please it your Grace lead on?

D. Pedro. Your hand, Leonato; we will go together.

[Execut all but BENVIE and CLAUDIO.]

Claud. Benedick, didst thou note the daughter of Signior Leonato?

Bene. I noted her not; but I looked on her.

Claud. Is she not a modest young lady?

Bene. Do you question me, as an honest man should do, for my simple true judgment; or
would you have me speak after my custom, as being a professed tyrant to their sex? 276

Claud. No; I pray thee speak in sober judgment.

Bene. Why, 't faith, methinks she's too low for a high praise, too brown for a fair praise, and too little for a great praise: only this commendation I can afford her, that were she other than she is, she were unhandsome, and being no other but as she is, I do not like her. 184

Claud. Thou think'st I am in sport: I pray thee tell me truly how thou likest her.

Bene. Would you buy her, that you inquire after her?

Claud. Can the world buy such a jewel?

Bene. Yea, and a case to put it into. But speak you this with a sad brow, or do you play the frowning Jack, to tell us Cupid is a good hare-finder, and Vulcan a rare carpenter? Come, in what key shall a man take you, to go in the song?

Claud. In mine eye she is the sweetest lady that ever I looked on. 197

Bene. I can see yet without spectacles and I see no such matter: there's her cousin an she were not possessed with a fury, exceeds her as much in beauty as the first of May doth the last of December. But I hope you have no intent to turn husband, have you?

Claud. I would scarce trust myself, though I had sworn to the contrary, if Hero were my wife.

Bene. Is't come to this, 't faith? Hath not the world one man but he will wear his cap with suspicion? Shall I never see a bachelor of three-score again? Go to, 't faith; an thou wilt needs thrust thy neck into a yoke, wear the print of it, and sigh away Sundays. Look! Don Pedro is returned to seek you. 213

Re-enter DON PEDRO.

D. Pedro. What secret hath held you here, that you followed not to Leonato's? 217

Bene. I would your Grace would constrain me to tell.

D. Pedro. I charge thee on thy allegiance.

Bene. You hear, Count Claudio: I can be secret as a dumb man; I would have you think so; but on my allegiance, mark you this, on my allegiance: he is in love. With who? now that is your Grace's part. Mark how short his answer is: with Hero, Leonato's short daughter. 224

Claud. If this were so, so were it uttered.

Bene. Like the old tale, my lord: 'it is not so, nor 'twas not so; but, indeed, God forbid it should be so.' 228

Claud. If my passion change not shortly, God forbid it should be otherwise.

D. Pedro. Amen, if you love her; for the lady is very well worthy. 232

Claud. You speak this to fetch me in, my lord.

D. Pedro. By my troth, I speak my thought.

Claud. And in faith, my lord, I spoke mine.

Bene. And by my two faiths and troths, my lord, I spoke mine. 237

Claud. That I love her, I feel.

D. Pedro. That she is worthy, I know.

Bene. That I neither feel how she should be loved nor know how she should be worthy, is the opinion that fire cannot melt out of me: I will die in it at the stake.

D. Pedro. Thou wast ever an obstinate heretic in the despite of beauty. 245

Claud. And never could maintain his part but in the force of his will.

Bene. That a woman conceived me, I thank her; that she brought me up, I likewise give her my humble thanks: but that I will have a recheat winded in my forehead, or hang my bugle in an invisible baldric, all women shall pardon me. Because I will not do them the wrong to mistrust any, I will do myself the right to trust none; and the fine is,—for the which I may go the finer,—I will live a bachelor. 256

D. Pedro. I shall see thee ere I die, look pale with love.

Bene. With anger, with sickness, or with hunger, my lord; not with love: prove that ever I lose more blood with love than I will get again with drinking, pick out mine eyes with a ballad-maker's pen, and hang me up at the door of a brothel-house for the sign of blind Cupid. 264

D. Pedro. Well, if ever thou dost fall from this faith, thou wilt prove a notable argument.

Bene. If I do, hang me in a bottle like a cat and shoot at me; and he that hits me, let him be clapped on the shoulder, and called Adam.

D. Pedro. Well, as time shall try: 270

'Re time the savage bull doth bear the yoke.'

Bene. The savage bull may; but if ever the sensible Benedick bear it, pluck off the bull's horns and set them in my forehead; and let me be vilely painted, and in such great letters as they write, 'Here is good horse to hire,' let them signify under my sign 'Here you may see Benedick the married man.' 276

Claud. If this should ever happen, thou wouldst be horn-mad.

D. Pedro. Nay, if Cupid have not spent all his quiver in Venice, thou wilt quake for this shortly.

Bene. I look for an earthquake too then.

D. Pedro. Well, you will temporize with the hours. In the meantime, good Signior Benedick,

138
repair to Leonato's: commend me to him and tell him I will not fail him at supper; for indeed he hath made great preparation. 288

Bene. I have almost matter enough in me for such an embassage; and so I commit you—

Claud. To the tuition of God: from my house, if I had it,— 292

D. Pedro. The sixth of July: your loving friend, Benedick.

Bene. Nay, mock not, mock not. The body of your discourse is sometime guarded with fragments, and the guards are but slightly basted on neither: ere you flout old ends any further, examine your conscience: and so I leave you. [Exit.

Claud. My liege, your highness now may do me good.

D. Pedro. My love is thine to teach: teach it but how,

And thou shalt see how apt it is to learn
Any hard lesson that may do thee good.

Claud. Hast Leonato any son, my lord? 304

D. Pedro. No child but Hero; she's his only heir.

Dost thou affect her, Claudio?

Claud. O! my lord,
When you went onward on this ended action,
I looked upon her with a soldier's eye,
That lik'd, but had a rougher task in hand
Than to drive liking to the name of love;
But now I am return'd, and that war thought
Have left their places vacant, in their rooms
Come thronging soft and delicate desires,
All prompting me how fair young Hero is,
Saying, I lik'd her ere I went to wars.

D. Pedro. Thou wilt be like a lover presently,
And tire the hearer with a book of words.

If thou dost love fair Hero, cherish it,
And I will break with her, and with her father,
And thou shalt have her. Was't not to this end
That thou began'st to twist so fine a story? 327

Claud. How sweetly do you minister to love,
That know love's grief by his complexion!
But lest my liking might too sudden seem,
I would have saly'd it with a longer treatise.

D. Pedro. What need the bridge much broader than the flood?
The fairest grant is the necessity.
Look, what will serve is fit: 'tis once, thou lov'st,
And I will fit thee with the remedy. 329

I know we shall have revelling to-night:
I will assume thy part in some disguise,
And tell fair Hero I am Claudio;
And in her bosom I'll unclasp my heart,
And take her hearing prisoner with the force
And strong encounter of my amorous tale:
Then, after to her father will I break;

And the conclusion is, she shall be thine.
In practice let us put it presently. [Exeunt.

SCENE II.—A Room in Leonato's House.

Enter Leonato and Antonio, meeting.

Leon. How now, brother! Where is my cousin, your son? Hath he provided this music?

Ant. He is very busy about it. But, brother, I can tell you strange news that you yet dream not of.

Leon. Are they good?

Ant. As the event stamps them: but they have a good cover; they show well outward. The prince and Count Claudio, walking in a thick-pleached alley in my orchard, were thus much overheard by a man of mine: the prince discovered to Claudio that he loved my niece your daughter, and meant to acknowledge it this night in a dance; and, if he found her accordant, he meant to take the present time by the top and instantly break with you of it. 17

Leon. Hath the fellow any wit that told you this?

Ant. A good sharp fellow: I will send for him; and question him yourself.

Leon. No, no; we will hold it as a dream till it appear itself: but I will acquaint my daughter withal, that she may be the better prepared for an answer, if peradventure this be true. Go you, and tell her of it. [Several persons cross the stage.] Cousins, you know what you have to do. O! I cry you mercy, friend; go you with me, and I will use your skill. Good cousin, have a care this busy time. [Exeunt.

SCENE III.—Another Room in Leonato's House.

Enter Don John and Conrade.

Con. What the good-year, my lord! why are you thus out of measure sad?

D. John. There is no measure in the occasion that breeds; therefore the sadness is without limit. 5

Con. You should hear reason.

D. John. And when I have heard it, what blessing brings it?

Con. If not a present remedy, at least a patient sufferance.

D. John. I wonder that thou, being,—as thou say'st thou art,—born under Saturn, goest about to apply a moral medicine to a mortifying mischief. I cannot hide what I am: I must be sad when I have cause, and smile at no man's jests; eat when I have stomach, and wait for no man's
leisure; sleep when I am drowsy, and tend on no man’s business; laugh when I am merry, and claw no man in his humour. 19

Con. Yea; but you must not make the full show of this till you may do it without controul. You have of late stood out against your brother, and he hath ta’en you newly into his grace; where it is impossible you should take true root but by the fair weather that you make yourself: it is needful that you frame the season for your own harvest. 27

D. John. I had rather be a canker in a hedge than a rose in his grace; and it better fits my blood to be disowned of all than to fashion a carriage to rob love from any: in this, though I cannot be said to be a flattering honest man, it must not be denied but I am a plain-dealing villain. I am trusted with a muzzle and enchafished with a clod; therefore I have decreed not to sing in my cage. If I had my mouth, I would bite; if I had my liberty, I would do my liking: in the meantime, let me be that I am, and seek not to alter me. 39

Con. Can you make no use of your discontent?
D. John. I make all use of it, for I use it only. Who comes here?

Enter Borachio.

What news, Borachio? 42
Bora. I came yonder from a great supper: the prince, your brother, is royally entertained by Leonato; and I can give you intelligence of an intended marriage. 47
D. John. Will it serve for any model to build mischief on? What is he for a fool that betroths himself to unquietness?
Bora. Marry, it is your brother’s right hand.
D. John. Who? the most exquisite Claudio?
Bora. Even he. 53
D. John. A proper squire! And who, and who? which way looks he?
Bora. Marry, on Hero, the daughter and heir of Leonato. 57
D. John. A very forward March-chick! How came you to this?
Bora. Being entertained for a perfumer, as I was smoking a musty room, comes me the prince and Claudio, hand in hand, in sad conference: I whipt me behind the arras, and there heard it agreed upon that the prince should woo Hero for himself, and having obtained her, give her to Count Claudio. 66
D. John. Come, come; let us thither: this may prove food to my displeasure. That young start-up hath all the glory of my overthrow: if I can cross him any way, I bless myself every way. You are both sure, and will assist me?

Con. } To the death, my lord. 72
Bora. } D. John. Let us to the great supper: their cheer is the greater that I am subdued. Would the cock were of my mind! Shall we go prove what’s to be done?
Bora. We’ll wait upon your lordship. [Exeunt.

ACT II.

SCENE I.—A Hall in LEONATO’S House.

Enter Leonato, Antonio, Hero, Beatrice, and Others.

Leon. Was not Count John here at supper?
Ant. I saw him not.
Beat. How tardy that gentleman looks! I never can see him but I am heart-burned an hour after.

Hero. He is of a very melancholy disposition.
Beat. He were an excellent man that were made just in the middle-way between him and Benedick: the one is too like an image, and says nothing; and the other too like my lady’s eldest son, evermore tattling.

Leon. Then half Signior Benedick’s tongue in Count John’s mouth, and half Count John’s melancholy in Signior Benedick’s face,—

Beat. With a good leg and a good foot, uncle, and money enough in his purse, such a man would win any woman in the world, if a’ could get her good will.

Leon. By my troth, niece, thou wilt never get thee a husband, if thou be so shrewd of thy tongue.

Ant. In faith, she’s too curst.

Beat. Too curst is more than curst: I shall lessen God’s sending that way; for it is said, ‘God sends a curst cow short horns;’ but to a cow too curst he sends none.

Leon. So, by being too curst, God will send you no horns?

Beat. Just, if he send me no husband; for the which blessing I am at him upon my knees every morning and evening. Lord! I could not endure a husband with a beard on his face: I had rather lie in the woolen. 33

Leon. You may light on a husband that hath no beard.

Beat. What should I do with him? dress him in my apparel and make him my waiting-gentlewoman? He that hath a beard is more than a youth, and he that hath no beard is less than a man; and he that is more than a youth is not for me; and he that is less than a man, I am not for him: therefore I will even take sixpence in
earnest of the bear-ward, and lead his apes into hell.

Leon. Well then, go you into hell?

Beat. No; but to the gate; and there will the devil meet me, like an old cuckold, with horns on his head, and say, 'Get you to heaven, Beatrice, get you to heaven; here's no place for you maids:' so deliver I up my apes, and away to Saint Peter for the heavens; he shows me where the bachelors sit, and there live we as merry as the day is long.

Ant. [To Hero.] Well, niece, I trust you will be ruled by your father.

Beat. Yes, faith; it is my cousin's duty to make curtsy, and say, 'Father, as it please you:'—but yet for all that; cousin, let him be a handsome fellow, or else make another curtsy, and say, 'Father, as it please me.'

Leon. Well, niece, I hope to see you one day fitted with a husband.

Beat. Not till God make men of some other metal than earth. Would it not grieve a woman to be over-mastered with a piece of valiant dust? to make an account of her life to a clod of wayward marl? No, uncle, I'll none: Adam's sons are my brethren; and truly, I hold it a sin to match in my kindred.

Leon. Daughter, remember what I told you: if the prince do solicit you in that kind, you know your answer.

Beat. The fault will be in the music, cousin, if you be not wooed in good time: if the prince be too important, tell him there is measure in everything, and so dance out the answer. For, hear me, Hero: wooing, wedding, and repenting, is as a Scotch jig, a measure, and a cinque-pace: the first suit is hot and hasty, like a Scotch jig, and full as fantastical; the wedding, mannerly-modest, as a measure, full of state and scenery; and then comes Repentance, and, with his bad legs, falls into the cinque-pace faster and faster, till he sink into his grave.

Leon. Cousin, you apprehend passing shrewdly.

Beat. I have a good eye, uncle: I can see a church by daylight.

Leon. The revellers are entering, brother: make good room.

Enter DON PEDRO, CLAUDIO, BENEDICK, BALTHAZAR, DON JOHN, BORACHIO, MARGARET, URSULA, and Others, masked.

D. Pedro. Lady, will you walk about with your friend?

Hero. So you walk softly and look sweetly and say nothing, I am yours for the walk; and especially when I walk away.

D. Pedro. With me in your company?
**MUCH ADO ABOUT NOTHING**

**Act II, Sc. I.**

_Bene._ When I know the gentleman, I'll tell him what you say.

_Beat._ Do, do: he'll but break a comparison or two on me; which, peradventure not marked or not laughed at, strikes him into melancholy; and then there's a partridge wing saved, for the fool will eat no supper that night. [Music within.] We must follow the leaders.

_Bene._ In every good thing. 160

_Beat._ Nay, if they lead to any ill, I will leave them at the next turning.

[Dance. Then exsunt all but DON JOHN, BORACHIO, and CLAUD.]

_D. John._ Sure my brother is amorous on Hero, and hath withdrawn her father to break with him about it. The ladies follow her and but one visor remains.

_Bora._ And that is Claudio: I know him by his bearing.

_D. John._ Are you not Signior Benedick?

_Claud._ You know me well; I am he.

_D. John._ Signior, you are very near my brother in his love: he is enamoured on Hero; I pray you, dissuade him from her; she is no equal for his birth: you may do part of the apparent man in it.

_Claud._ How know you he loves her? 176

_D. John._ I heard him swear his affection.

_Bora._ So did I too; and he swore he would marry her to-night.

_D. John._ Come, let us to the banquet. 180

[Exeunt DON JOHN and BORACHIO.]

_Claud._ Thus answer I in name of Benedick, But hear these ill news with the ears of Claudio. 'Tis certain so; the prince woes for himself. Friendship is constant in all other things 184

Save in the office and affairs of love:

Therefore all hearts in love use their own tongues;

Let every eye negotiate for itself
And trust no agent; for beauty is a witch 188

Against whose charms faith melteth into blood.

This is an accident of hourly proof,

Which I mistrusted not. Farewell, therefore, Hero!

Re-enter BENEDEICK.

_Bene._ Count Claudio?

_Claud._ Yea, the same.

_Bene._ Come, will you go with me?

_Claud._ Whither?

_Bene._ Even to the next willow, about your own business, count. What fashion will you wear the garland of? About your neck, like a usurer's chain? or under your arm, like a lieutenant's scarf? You must wear it one way, for the prince hath got your Hero.

_Claud._ I wish him joy of her.

_Bene._ Why, that's spoken like an honest drovier: so they sell bullocks. But did you think the prince would have served you thus? 195

_Claud._ I pray you, leave me.

_Bene._ Hai! now you strike like the blind man: 'twas the boy that stole your meat, and you'll beat the post.

_Claud._ If it will not be, I'll leave you. [Exit.]

_Bene._ Alas! poor hurt fowl. Now will he creep into sedges. But, that my lady Beatrice should know me, and not know me! The prince's fool! Hai! it may be I go under that title because I am merry. Yea, but so I am apt to do myself wrong; I am not so reputed: it is the base though bitter disposition of Beatrice that puts the world into her person, and so gives me out. Well, I'll be revenged as I may. 219

Re-enter DON PEDRO.

_D. Pedro._ Now, signior, where's the count? Did you see him?

_Bene._ Troth, my lord, I have played the part of Lady Fame. I found him here as melancholy as a lodge in a warren. I told him, and I think I told him true, that your Grace had got the good will of this young lady; and I offered him my company to a willow tree, either to make him a garland, as being forsaken, or to bind him up a rod, as being worthy to be whipped. 229

_D. Pedro._ To be whipped! What's his fault?

_Bene._ The flat transgression of a school-boy, who, being overjoy'd with finding a bird's nest, shows it his companion, and he steals it. 233

_D. Pedro._ Will thou make a trust a transgression? The transgression is in the stealer.

_Bene._ Yet it had not been amiss the rod had been made, and the garland too; for the garland he might have worn himself, and the rod he might have bestowed on you, who, as I take it, have stolen his bird's nest. 240

_D. Pedro._ I will but teach them to sing, and restore them to the owner.

_Bene._ If their singing answer your saying, by my faith, you say honestly. 244

_D. Pedro._ The Lady Beatrice hath a quarrel to you: the gentleman that danced with her told her she is much wronged by you.

_Bene._ O! she misused me past the endurance of a block: an oak but with one green leaf on it, would have answered her: my very visor began to assume life and scold with her. She told me, not thinking I had been myself, that I was the prince's jester; that I was duller than a great thaw; huddling jest upon jest with such impossible conveyance upon me, that I stood like a man at a mark, with a whole army shooting at
me. She speaks poniards, and every word stabs: if her breath were as terrible as her terminations, there were no living near her; she would infect to the north star. I would not marry her, though she were endued with all that Adam had left him before he transgressed: she would have made Hercules have turned spit, ye, and have clift his club to make the fire too. Come, talk not of her; you shall find her the infernal Ate in good apparel. I would to God some scholar would conjure her; for certainly, while she is here, a man may live as quiet in hell as in a sanctuary; and people sin upon purpose because they would go thither; so, indeed, all disquiet, horror and perturbation follow her. 271

Re-enter CLAUDIO, BEATRICE, HERO, and LEONATO.

D. Pedro. Look! here she comes.

Bene. Will your Grace command me any service to the world’s end? I will go on the slightest errand now to the Antipodes that you can devise to send me on; I will fetch you a toothpiker now from the furthest inch of Asia; bring you the length of Prester John’s foot; fetch you a hair off the Great Cham’s beard; do you any embassage to the Pigmies, rather than hold three words’ conference with this harpy. You have no employment for me? 282

D. Pedro. None, but to desire your good company.

Bene. O God, sir, here’s a dish I love not: I cannot endure my Lady Tongue. [Exit.

D. Pedro. Come, lady, come; you have lost the heart of Signior Benedick. 288

Beat. Indeed, my lord, he lent it me awhile; and I gave him use for it, a double heart for a single one: marry, once before he won it of me with false dice, therefore your Grace may well say I have lost it. 293

D. Pedro. You have put him down, lady, you have put him down.

Beat. So I would not he should do me, my lord, lest I should prove the mother of fools. I have brought Count Claudio, whom you sent me to seek.

D. Pedro. Why, how now, count! wherefore are you sad?

Claud. Not sad, my lord.

D. Pedro. How then? Sick?

Claud. Neither, my lord.

Beat. The count is neither sad, nor sick, nor merry, nor well; but civil count, civil as an orange, and something of that jealous complexion.

D. Pedro. I faith, lady, I think your blazon to be true; though, I’ll be sworn, if he be so, his conceit is false. Here, Claudio, I have wooed in thy name, and fair Hero is won; I have broke with her father, and, his good will obtained; name the day of marriage, and God give thee joy!

Leon. Count, take of me my daughter, and with her my fortunes: his Grace hath made the match, and all grace say Amen to it! 317


Claud. Silence is the perfectest herald of joy: I were but little happy, if I could say how much. Lady, as you are mine, I am yours: I give away myself for you and dote upon the exchange. 322

Beat. Speak, cousin; or, if you cannot, stop his mouth with a kiss, and let not him speak neither.

D. Pedro. In faith, lady, you have a merry heart.

Beat. Yea, my lord; I thank it, poor fool, it keeps on the windy side of care. My cousin tells him in his ear that he is in her heart. 339

Claud. And so she doth, cousin.

Beat. Good Lord, for alliance! Thus goes every one to the world but I, and I am sunburnt. I may sit in a corner and cry heigh-ho for a husband!

D. Pedro. Lady Beatrice, I will get you one. Beat. I would rather have one of your father’s getting. Hath your Grace ne’er a brother like you? Your father got excellent husbands, if a maid could come by them. 340

D. Pedro. Will you have me, lady?

Beat. No, my lord, unless I might have another for working days: you are too costly to wear every day. But, I beseech your Grace, pardon me; I was born to speak all mirth and no matter.

D. Pedro. Your silence most offends me, and to be merry best becomes you; for, out of question, you were born in a merry hour.

Beat. No, sure, my lord, my mother cried; but then there was a star danced, and under that was I born. Cousins, God give you joy! 352

Leon. Niece, will you look to those things I told you of?

Beat. I cry you mercy, uncle. By your Grace’s pardon. [Exit.

D. Pedro. By my troth, a pleasant-spirited lady.

Leon. There’s little of the melancholy element in her, my lord: she is never sad but when she sleeps; and not ever sad then, for I have heard my daughter say, she hath often dreamed of unhappiness and waked herself with laughing.

D. Pedro. She cannot endure to hear tell of a husband.

Leon. O! by no means: she mocks all her wooers out of suit.
D. Pedro. She were an excellent wife for Benedick. 369
Leon. O Lord! my lord, if they were but a week married, they would talk themselves mad.
D. Pedro. Count Claudio, when mean you to go to church? 372
Claud. To-morrow, my lord. Time goes on crutches till love have all his rites.
Leon. Not till Monday, my dear son, which is hence a just seven-night; and a time too brief too, to have all things answer my mind. 378
D. Pedro. Come, you shake the head at so long a breathing; but, I warrant thee, Claudio, the time shall not go dullly by us. I will in the interim undertake one of Hercules' labours, which is, to bring Signior Benedick and the Lady Beatrice into a mountain of affection the one with the other. I would faint have it a match; and I doubt not but to fashion it, if you three will but minister such assistance as I shall give you direction. 388
Leon. My lord, I am for you, though it cost me ten nights' watchings.
Claud. And I, my lord.
D. Pedro. And you too, gentle Hero? 392
Hero. I will do any modest office, my lord, to help my cousin to a good husband.
D. Pedro. And Benedick is not the unhopefullest husband that I know. Thus far can I praise him; he is of a noble strain, of approved valour, and confirmed honesty. I will teach you how to humour your cousin, that she shall fall in love with Benedick; and, I with your two helps, will so practise on Benedick that, in despite of his quick wit and his queasy stomach, he shall fall in love with Beatrice. If we can do this, Cupid is no longer an archer: his glory shall be ours, for we are the only love-gods. Go in with me, and I will tell you my drift. 406
[Exeunt.

SCENE II.—Another Room in Leonato’s House.

Enter DON JOHN and BORACHIO.

D. John. It is so; the Count Claudio shall marry the daughter of Leonato.

Bora. Yea, my lord; but I can cross it.

D. John. Any bar, any cross, any impediment will be medicinable to me: I am sick in displeasure to him, and whatsoever comes athwart his affection ranges evenly with mine. How canst thou cross this marriage? 8

Bora. Not honestly, my lord; but so covertly that no dishonesty shall appear in me.

D. John. Show me briefly how.

Bora. I think I told your lordship, a year since, how much I am in the favour of Margaret, the waiting-gentlewoman to Hero. 14


Bora. I can, at any unseasonable instant of the night, appoint her to look out at her lady’s chamber-window.

D. John. What life is in that, to be the death of this marriage? 20

Bora. The poison of that lies in you to temper. Go you to the prince your brother; spare not to tell him, that he hath wronged his honour in marrying the renowned Claudio,—whose estimation do you mightily hold up,—to a contaminated stale, such a one as Hero. 26

D. John. What proof shall I make of that?

Bora. Proof enough to misuse the prince, to vex Claudio, to undo Hero, and kill Leonato.

Look you for any other issue?

D. John. Only to despite them, I will endeavour any thing. 32

Bora. Go, then; find me a meet hour to draw Don Pedro and the Count Claudio alone: tell them that you know that Hero loves me; intend a kind of zeal both to the prince and Claudio, as—in love of your brother’s honour, who hath made this match, and his friend’s reputation, who is thus like to be cozened with the semblance of a maid,—that you have discovered thus. They will scarcely believe this without trial: offer them instances, which shall bear no less likelihood than to see me at her chamber-window, hear me call Margaret Hero; hear Margaret term me Claudio; and bring them to see this the very night before the intended wedding: for in the meantime I will so fashion the matter that Hero shall be absent; and there shall appear such seeming truth of Hero’s disloyalty, that jealousy shall be called assurance, and all the preparation overthrown. 51

D. John. Grow this to what adverse issue it can, I will put it in practice. Be cunning in the working this, and thy fee is a thousand ducats.

Bora. Be you constant in the accusation, and my cunning shall not shame me. 57

D. John. I will presently go learn their day of marriage. [Exeunt.

SCENE III.—LEONATO’S GARDEN.

Enter BENEDICK.

Bene. Boy!

Enter a Boy.

Boy. Signior?

Bene. In my chamber-window lies a book; bring it hither to me in the orchard. 4

Boy. I am here already, sir.
Bene. I know that; but I would have thee hence, and here again. [Exit Boy.] I do much wonder that one man, seeing how much another man is a fool when he dedicates his behaviours to love, will, after he hath laughed at such shallow follies in others, become the argument of his own scorn by falling in love: and such a man is Claudio. I have known, when there was no music with him but the drum and the fife; and now had he rather hear the tabor and the pipe: I have known, when he would have walked ten mile afoot to see a good armour; and now will he lie ten nights awake, carving the fashion of a new doublet. He was wont to speak plain and to the purpose, like an honest man and a soldier; and now is he turned orthographer; his words are a very fantastical banquet, just so many strange dishes. May I be so converted, and see with these eyes? I cannot tell; I think not: I will not be sworn but love may transform me to an oyster; but I'll take my oath on it, till he have made an oyster of me, he shall never make me such a fool. One woman is fair, yet I am well; another is wise, yet I am well; another virtuous, yet I am well; but till all graces be in one woman, one woman shall not come in my grace. Rich she shall be, that's certain; wise, or I'll none; virtuous, or I'll never cheapen her; fair, or I'll never look on her; mild, or come not near me; noble, or not I for an angel; of good discourse, an excellent musician, and her hair shall be of what colour it please God. Hal the prince and Monsieur Love! I will hide me in the arbour. [Withdraws.

Enter DON PEDRO, LEONATO, and CLAUDIO, followed by BAITHAZAR and MUSICIANS.

D. Pedro. Come, shall we hear this music? 40
Claud. Yea, my good lord. How still the evening is,
As hush'd on purpose to grace harmony!
D. Pedro. See you where Benedick hath hid himself?
Claud. O! very well, my lord: the music ended,
We'll fit the kid-fox with a penny-worth.
D. Pedro. Come, Balthazar, we'll hear that song again.
Balth. O! good my lord, tax not so bad a voice
To slander music any more than once. 48
D. Pedro. It is the witness still of excellency,
To put a strange face on his own perfection.
I pray thee, sing, and let me woo no more.
Balth. Because you talk of wooing, I will sing;
Since many a wooer doth commence his suit
To her he thinks not worthy; yet he woos;
Yet will he swear he loves.

D. Pedro. Nay, pray thee, come;
Or if thou wilt hold longer argument,
Do it in notes.
Balth. Note this before my notes;
There's not a note of mine that's worth the noting.
D. Pedro. Why these are very crotchets that he speaks;
Notes, notes, forsooth, and nothing! [Music.
Bene. Now, divine air! now is his soul ravished! Is it not strange that sheeps' guts should hale souls out of men's bodies? Well, a horn for my money, when all's done. 64

BAITHAZAR sings.
Sigh no more, ladies, sigh no more,
Men were deceivers ever;
One foot in sea, and one on shore,
To one thing constant never.
Then sigh not so,
But let them go,
And be you blithe and bonny,
Converting all your sounds of woe
Into Hey nonny, nonny.
Sing no more ditties, sing no mo
Of dumps so dull and heavy;
The fraud of men was ever so,
Since summer first was heavy.
Then sigh not so,
But let them go,
And be you blithe and bonny,
Converting all your sounds of woe
Into Hey nonny, nonny.

D. Pedro. By my troth, a good song.
Balth. And an ill singer, my lord. 84
D. Pedro. Ha, no, no, faith; thou singest well
enough for a shift.

Bene. [Aside.] An he had been a dog that should have howled thus, they would have hanged him; and I pray God his bad voice bore no mischief. I had as lief have heard the night-raven, come what plague could have come after it. 91
D. Pedro. Yea, marry; dost thou hear, Balthazar? I pray thee, get us some excellent music, for to-morrow night we would have it at the Lady Hero's chamber-window.

Balth. The best I can, my lord. 96
D. Pedro. Do so: farewell. [Exeunt BAITHAZAR and MUSICIANS.] Come hither, Leonato: what was it you told me of to-day, that your niece Beatrice was in love with Signior Benedick? 100
Claud. O! ay:—[Aside to D. PEDRO.] Stalk on, stalk on; the fowl sits. I did never think that lady would have loved any man.

Leon. No, nor I neither; but most wonderful
that she should so dote on Signior Benedick,
whom she hath in all outward behaviours
seemed ever to abhor. 107
Bene. [Aside.] Is't possible? Sits the wind in that corner?
Leon. By my troth, my lord, I cannot tell
what to think of it but that she loves him with
an enraged affection: it is past the infinite of
thought.

D. Pedro. May be she doth but counterfeit.

Claud. Faith, like enough.

Leon. O God! counterfeit! There was never
counterfeit of passion came so near the life of
passion as she discovers it.

D. Pedro. Why, what effects of passion shows
she?

Claud. [Aside.] Bait the hook well: this fish
will bite.

Leon. What effects, my lord? She will sit you;
[To CLAUDIO.] You heard my daughter tell you
how.

Claud. She did, indeed.

D. Pedro. How, how, I pray you? You amaze
me: I would have thought her spirit had been
invincible against all assaults of affection.
Leon. I would have sworn it had, my lord;
especially against Benedick.

Bene. [Aside.] I should think this a gull, but
that the white-bearded fellow speaks it: knavery
cannot, sure, hide itself in such reverence.

Claud. [Aside.] He hath ta'en the infection:
hold it up.

D. Pedro. Hath she made her affection known
to Benedick?

Leon. No; and swears she never will: that's
her torment.

Claud. 'Tis true, indeed; so your daughter
says: 'Shall I,' says she, 'that have so oft en-
countered him with scorn, write to him that I
love him?'

Leon. This says she now when she is begin-
ing to write to him; for she'll be up twenty
times a night, and there she will sit in her smoke
till she have writ a sheet of paper: my daughter
tells us all.

Claud. Now you talk of a sheet of paper, I
remember a pretty jest your daughter told us of.
Leon. O! when she had writ it, and was read-
ing it over, she found Benedick and Beatrice be-
tween the sheet?

Claud. That.

Leon. O! she tore the letter into a thousand
halfpence; railed at herself, that she should be
so inmodest to write to one that she knew would
flout her: 'I measure him,' says she, 'by my own
spirit; for I should flout him, if he writ to me;
yea, though I love him, I should.'

Claud. Then down upon her knees she falls,
weepes, sobes, beats her heart, tears her hair,
prays, curses; 'O sweet Benedick! God give me
patience!'

Leon. She doth indeed; my daughter says
so; and the ecstasy hath so much overborne her,
that my daughter is sometimes afraid she will
do a desperate outrage to herself. It is very
true.

D. Pedro. It were good that Benedick knew
of it by some other, if she will not discover it. 127

Claud. To what end? he would but make a
sport of it and torment the poor lady worse.

D. Pedro. An he should, it were an alms to
hang him. She's an excellent sweet lady, and,
out of all suspicion, she is virtuous.

Claud. And she is exceeding wise.

D. Pedro. In everything but in loving Bene-
dick.

Leon. O! my lord, wisdom and blood com-
bating in so tender a body, we have ten proofs to
one that blood hath the victory. I am sorry for
her, as I have just cause, being her uncle and
her guardian.

D. Pedro. I would she had bestowed this
dottage on me; I would have daffed all other
respects and made her half myself. I pray you,
tell Benedick of it, and hear what 'a' will say.

Leon. Were it good, think you?

Claud. Hero thinks surely she will die; for
she says she will die if he love her not, and she
will die ere she make her love known, and she
will die if he woo her, rather than she will bate
one breath of her accustomed crossness.

D. Pedro. She doth well: if she should make
tender of her love, 'tis very possible he'll scorn
it; for the man,—as you know all,—hath a con-
temptible spirit.

Claud. He is a very proper man.

D. Pedro. He hath indeed a good outward
happiness.

Claud. 'Fore God, and in my mind, very wise.

D. Pedro. He doth indeed show some sparks
that are like wit.

Leon. And I take him to be valiant.

D. Pedro. As Hector, I assure you: and in
the managing of quarrels you may say he is
wise; for either he avoids them with great dis-
cretion, or undertakes them with a most Christ-
ian-like fear.

Leon. If he do fear God, a' must necessarily
keep peace: if he break the peace, he ought to
enter into a quarrel with fear and trembling.

D. Pedro. And so will he do; for the man
doth fear God, howsoever it seems not in him by
some large jests he will make. Well, I am sorry
for your niece. Shall we go seek Benedick, and
tell him of her love?

Claud. Never tell him, my lord: let her wear
it out with good counsel.

Leon. Nay, that's impossible: she may wear
her heart out first.
D. Pedro. Well, we will hear further of it by your daughter: let it cool the while. I love Benedick well, and I could wish he would modestly examine himself, to see how much he is unworthy to have so good a lady.

Leon. My lord, will you walk? dinner is ready.

Claud. [Aside.] If he do not dote on her upon this, I will never trust my expectation.

D. Pedro. [Aside.] Let there be the same net spread for her; and that must your daughter and her gentlewoman carry. The sport will be, when they hold one an opinion of another’s dotage, and no such matter: that’s the scene that I would see, which will be merely a dumb-show. Let us send her to call him in to dinner.

[Exeunt Don Pedro, Claudio, and Leonato.]

Bene. [Advancing from the arbour.] This can be no trick: the conference was badly borne. They have the truth of this from Hero. They seem to pity the lady: it seems, her affections have their full bent. Love me! why, it must be requited. I hear how I am censured: they say I will bear myself proudly, if I perceive the love come from her; they say too that she will rather die than give any sign of affection. I did never think to marry: I must not seem proud: happy are they that bear their detractions, and can put them to mending. They say the lady is fair: ‘tis a truth, I can bear them witness: and virtuous: ‘tis so, I cannot reprove it; and wise, but for loving me: by my troth, it is no addition to her wit, nor no great argument of her folly, for I will be horribly in love with her. I may chance have some odd quirks and remnants of wit broken on me, because I have railed so long against marriage; but doth not the appetite alter? A man loves the meat in his youth that he cannot endure in his age. Shall quips and sentences and these paper bullets of the brain awe a man from the career of his humour? No; the world must be peopled. When I said I would die a bachelor, I did not think I should live till I were married. Here comes Beatrice. By this day! she’s a fair lady: I do spy some marks of love in her.

[Enter Beatrice.]

Beat. Against my will I am sent to bid you come in to dinner.

Bene. Fair Beatrice, I thank you for your pains.

Beat. I took no more pains for those thanks than you take pains to thank me: if it had been painful, I would not have come.

Bene. You take pleasure then in the message?

Beat. Yes, just so much as you may take upon a knife’s point, and choke a daw withal. You have no stomach, signior: fare you well. [Exit.

Bene. Ha! ‘Against my will I am sent to bid you come in to dinner,’ there’s a double meaning in that. ‘I took no more pains for those thanks than you took pains to thank me,’ that’s as much as to say, Any pains that I take for you is as easy as thanks. If I do not take pity of her, I am a villain; if I do not love her, I am a Jew. I will go get her picture. [Exit.

ACT III.

SCENE I.—LEONATO’S GARDEN.

Enter HERO, MARGARET, and URSULA.

Hero. Good Margaret, run thee to the parlour; There shalt thou find my cousin Ursula proposing with the prince and Claudio:

Whisper her ear, and tell her, I and Ursula walk in the orchard, and our whole discourse is all of her; say that thou overheard’st us, and bid her steal into the pleached bower, Where honey-suckles, ripen’d by the sun, forbid the sun to enter; like favourites, Made proud by princes, that advance their pride against that power that bred it. There will she hide her;

To listen our propose. This is thy office; bear thee well in it and leave us alone.

Marg. I’ll make her come, I warrant you, presently. [Exit.

Hero. Now, Ursula, when Beatrice doth come, as we do trace this alley up and down, our talk must only be of Benedick: when do I name him, let it be thy part to praise him more than ever man did merit. My talk to thee must be how Benedick is sick in love with Beatrice: of this matter is little Cupid’s crafty arrow made, that only wounds by hearsay. [Enter Beatrice, behind.

Now begin;

For look where Beatrice, like a lapwing, runs close by the ground, to hear our conference.

Urs. The pleasant’st angling is to see the fish cut with her golden oars the silver stream, and greedily devour the treacherous bait:

So angle we for Beatrice; who even now is couched in the woodbine coverture. Fear not you not my part of the dialogue.

Hero. Then go we near her, that her ear lose nothing of the false sweet bait that we lay for it.

[They advance to the bower.]

No, truly, Ursula, she is too disdainful; I know her spirits are as coy and wild as haggard of the rock.

Urs. But are you sure?
That Benedick loves Beatrice so entirely?
  Hero. So says the prince, and my new-brothed lord.
  Urs. And did they bid you tell her of it, madam?
  Hero. They did entreat me to acquaint her of it;
  But I persuaded them, if they lov’d Benedick,
  To wish him wrestle with affection,
  And never to let Beatrice know of it.
  Urs. Why did you so? Dost not the gentleman
  Deserve as full as fortunate a bed
  As ever Beatrice shall couch upon?
  Hero. O god of love! I know he doth deserve
  As much as may be yielded to a man;
  But nature never frâm’d a woman’s heart
  Of prouder stuff than that of Beatrice;
  Disdain and scorn ride sparkling in her eyes,
  Misprizing what they look on, and her wit—
  Valued itself so highly, that to her
  All matter else seems weak. She cannot love,
  Nor take no shape nor project of affection,
  She is so self-endear’d.
  Urs. Sure, I think so;
  And therefore certainly it were not good
  She knew his love, lest she make sport at it.
  Hero. Why, you speak truth. I never yet
  saw man,
  How wise, how noble, young, how rarely featur’d,
  But she would spell him backward: if fair-fac’d,
  She would swear the gentleman should be her sister;
  If black, why, Nature, drawing of an antick,
  Made a foul blot; if tall, a lance ill-headed;
  If low, an agate very vilely cut;
  If speaking, why, a vane blown with all winds;
  If silent, why, a block moved with none.
  So turns she every man the wrong side out,
  And never gives to truth and virtue that
  Which simplicity and merit purchaseth.
  Urs. Sure, sure, such carping is not commendable.
  Hero. No; not to be so odd and from all
  fashions
  As Beatrice is, cannot be commendable.
  But who dare tell her so? If I should speak,
  She would mock me into air: O! she would
  laugh me
  Out of myself, press me to death with wit.
  Therefore let Benedick, like crown’d fire,
  Consume away in sighs, waste inwardly:
  It were a better death than die with mocks,
  Which is as bad as die with tickling.
  Urs. Yet tell her of it: hear what she will say.
  Hero. No; rather I will go to Benedick,
  And counsel him to fight against his passion.
  And, truly, I’ll devise some honest slanders

To stain my cousin with. One doth not know
How much an ill word may empoison liking.
  Urs. O! do not do your cousin such a wrong.
  She cannot be so much without true judgment,—
  Having so swift and excellent a wit
  As she is priz’d to have,—as to refuse
  So rare a gentleman as Signior Benedick.
  Hero. He is the only man of Italy,
  Always excepted my dear Claudio.
  Urs. I pray you, be not angry with me, madam,
  Speaking my fancy: Signior Benedick,
  For shape, for bearing, argument and valour,
  Goes foremost in report through Italy.
  Hero. Indeed, he bath an excellent good name.
  Urs. His excellence did earn it, ere he had it.
  When are you married, madam?
  Hero. Why, every day, to-morrow. Come, go in:
  I’ll show thee some attires, and have thy counsel
  Which is the best to furnish me to-morrow.
  Urs. She’s lim’d, I warrant you: we have
cought her, madam.
  Hero. If it prove so, then loving goes by haps:
  Some Cupid kills with arrows, some with traps.
  [Exit. Hero and Ursula.

Beat. [Advancing.] What fire is in mine ears?
  Can this be true?
  Stand I condemn’d for pride and scorn so much?
  Contempt, farewell! and maiden pride, adieu!
  No glory lives behind the back of such.
  And, Benedick, love on; I will requite thee,
  Taming my wild heart to thy loving hand:
  If thou dost love, my kindness shall incite thee
  To bind our loves up in a holy band;
  For others say thou dost deserve, and I
  Believe it better than reportingly.

Scene II.—A Room in Leonato’s House.

Enter Don Pedro, Claudio, Benedick, and Leonato.

D. Pedro. I do but stay till your marriage be
  consummated, and then go I toward Arragon.
  Claudio. I’ll bring you thither, my lord, if you’ll
  vouchsafe me.

D. Pedro. Nay, that would be as great a soal
  in the new gloss of your marriage, as to show a
  child his new coat and forbid him to wear it. I
  will only be bold with Benedick for his company;
  for, from the crown of his head to the sole of his
  foot, he is all mirth: he hath twice or thrice cut
  Cupid’s bow-string, and the little hangman dare
  not shoot at him. He hath a heart as sound as a
  bell, and his tongue is the clapper; for what
  his heart thinks his tongue speaks.

Bene. Gallants, I am not as I have been.
Leon. So say I: methinks you are sadder.
Claud. I hope he be in love.

D. Pedro. Hang him, truant! there's no true drop of blood in him, to be truly touched with love. If he be sad, he wants money.

Bene. I have the tooth-ache.

D. Pedro. Draw it.

Bene. Hang it.

Claud. You must hang it first, and draw it afterwards.

D. Pedro. What! sigh for the tooth-ache?

Leon. Where is but a humour or a worm?

Bene. Well, every one can master a grief but he that has it.

Claud. Yet say I, he is in love.

D. Pedro. There is no appearance of fancy in him, unless it be a fancy that he hath to strange disguises; as, to be Dutchman-to-day, a Frenchman to-morrow, or in the shape of two countries at once, as a German from the waist downward, all slops, and a Spaniard from the hip upward, no doubt. Unless he have a fancy to this foolery, as it appears he hath, he is no fool for fancy, as you would have it appear he is.

Claud. If he be not in love with some woman, there is no believing old signs: a' brushes his hat a mornings; what should that bode?

D. Pedro. Hath any man seen him at the barber's?

Claud. No, but the barber's man hath been seen with him; and the old ornament of his cheek hath already stuffed tennis-balls.

Leon. Indeed he looks younger than he did, by the loss of a beard.

D. Pedro. Nay, a' rubs himself with civet: can you small him out by that?

Claud. That's as much as to say the sweet youth's in love.

D. Pedro. The greatest note of it is his melancholy.

Claud. And when was he wont to wash his face?

D. Pedro. Yea, or to paint himself? for the which, I hear what they say of him.

Claud. Nay, but his jesting spirit; which is now crept into a lute-string, and new-governed by stops.

D. Pedro. Indeed, that tells a heavy tale for him. Conclude, conclude he is in love.

Claud. Nay, but I know who loves him.

D. Pedro. That would I know too: I warrant, one that knows him not.

Claud. Yes, and his ill conditions; and in despite of all, dies for him.

D. Pedro. She shall be buried with her face upwards.

Bene. Yet is this no charm for the tooth-ache. Old signior, walk aside with me: I have studied eight or nine wise words to speak to you, which these hobby-horses must not hear.

[Exeunt Beneck and Leonato.

D. Pedro. For my life, to break with him about Beatrice.

Claud. 'Tis even so. Hero and Margaret have by this played their parts with Beatrice, and then the two bears will not bite one another when they meet.

Enter Don John.

D. John. My lord and brother, God save you!

D. Pedro. Good den, brother.

D. John. If your leisure served, I would speak with you.

D. Pedro. In private?

D. John. If it please you; yet Count Claudia may hear, for what I would speak of concerns him.

D. Pedro. What's the matter?

D. John. [To Claudio.] Means your lordship to be married to-morrow?

D. Pedro. You know he does.

D. John. I know not that, when he knows what I know.

Claud. If there be any impediment, I pray you discover it.

D. John. You may think I love you not: let that appear hereafter, and aim better at me by that I now will manifest. For my brother, I think he holds you well, and in dearness of heart hath holf to effect your ensuing marriage; surely suit ill-spent, and labour ill bestowed!

D. Pedro. Why, what's the matter?

D. John. I came hither to tell you; and circumstances shortened,—for she hath been too long a talking of,—the lady is disloyal.

Claud. Who, Hero?

D. John. Even she: Leonato's Hero, your Hero, every man's Hero.

Claud. Disloyal?

D. John. The word's too good to paint out her wickedness; I could say, she were worse: think you of a worse title, and I will fit her to it. Wonder not till further warrant: go but with me to-night, you shall see her chamber-window entered, even the night before her wedding-day: if you love her then, to-morrow wed her; but it would better fit your honour to change your mind.

Claud. May this be so?

D. Pedro. I will not think it.

D. John. If you dare not trust that you see, confess not that you know. If you will follow me, I will show you enough; and when you have seen more and heard more, proceed accordingly.

Claud. If I see any thing to-night why I
should not marry her to-morrow, in the congregation, where I should wed, there will I shame her.

_D. Pedro._ And, as I wooed for thee to obtain her, I will join with thee to disgrace her.

_D. John._ I will disparage her no further till you are my witnesses: bear it coldly but till midnight, and let the issue show itself.

_D. Pedro._ O day untowardly turned!

_Claud._ O mischief strangely thwarting!

_D. John._ O plague right well prevented! So will you say when you have seen the sequel.

[Exeunt.

_SCENE III._—_A Street._

_Enter __Dogberry__ and __Verges__, with the Watch._

__Dogb._ Are you good man and true?

__Verg._ Yea, or else it were pity but they should suffer salvation, body and soul.

__Dogb._ Nay, that were a punishment too good for them, if they should have any allegiance in them, being chosen for the prince's watch.

__Verg._ Well, give them their charge, neighbour __Dogberry__.

__Dogb._ First, who think you the most desertless man to be constable?

_First Watch._ Hugh Oatcake, sir, or George Seacoal; for they can write and read.

__Dogb._ Come hither, neighbour Seacoal. God hath blessed you with a good name: to be a well-favoured man is the gift of fortune; but to write and read comes by nature.

_Sec. Watch._ Both which, Master constable,—

__Dogb._ You have: I knew it was your answer. Well, for your favour, sir, why, give God thanks, and make no boast of it; and for your writing and reading, let that appear when there is no need of such vanity. You are thought here to be the most senseless and fit man for the constable of the watch; therefore bear you the lantern. This is your charge: you shall comprehend all vagrom men; you are to bid any man stand, in the prince's name.

_Sec. Watch._ How, if a' will not stand?

__Dogb._ Why, then, take no note of him, but let him go; and presently call the rest of the watch together, and thank God you are rid of a knave.

__Verg._ If he will not stand when he is hidden, he is none of the prince's subjects.

__Dogb._ True, and they are to meddle with none but the prince's subjects. You shall also make no noise in the streets: for, for the watch to babble and to talk is most tolerable and not to be endured.

_Sec. Watch._ We will rather sleep than talk: we know what belongs to a watch.

__Dogb._ Why, you speak like an ancient and most quiet watchman, for I cannot see how sleeping should offend; only have a care that your bills be not stolen. Well, you are to call at all the alehouses, and bid those that are drunk get them to bed.

_Sec. Watch._ How if they will not?

__Dogb._ Why then, let them alone till they are sober: if they make you not then the better answer, you may say they are not the men you took them for.

_Sec. Watch._ Well, sir.

__Dogb._ If you meet a thief, you may suspect him, by virtue of your office, to be no true man; and, for such kind of men, the less you meddle or make with them, why, the more is for your honesty.

_Sec. Watch._ If we know him to be a thief, shall we not lay hands on him?

__Dogb._ Truly, by your office, you may; but I think they that touch pitch will be defiled. The most peaceable way for you, if you do take a thief, is, to let him show himself what he is and steal out of your company.

__Verg._ You have been always called a merciful man, partner.

__Dogb._ Truly, I would not hang a dog by my will, much more a man who hath any honesty in him.

__Verg._ If you hear a child cry in the night, you must call to the nurse and bid her still it.

_Sec. Watch._ How if the nurse be asleep and will not hear us?

__Dogb._ Why, then, depart in peace, and let the child wake her with crying; for the ewe that will not hear her lamb when it baes, will never answer a calf when he bleats.

__Verg._ 'Tis very true.

__Dogb._ This is the end of the charge. You constable, are to present the prince's own person: if you meet the prince in the night, you may stay him.

__Verg._ Nay, by 'r lady, that I think, a' cannot.

__Dogb._ Five shillings to one on't, with any man that knows the statues, he may stay him: marry, not without the prince be willing; for, indeed, the watch ought to offend no man, and it is an offence to stay a man against his will.

__Verg._ By 'r lady, I think it be so.

__Dogb._ Ha, ah, ha! Well, masters, good night: an there be any matter of weight chances, call up me: keep your fellows' counsels and your own, and good night. Come, neighbour.

_Sec. Watch._ Well, masters, we hear our charge: let us go sit here upon the church-bench till two, and then all go to bed.

__Dogb._ One word more, honest neighbours. I pray you, watch about Signior Leonato's door;
for the wedding being there to-morrow, there is a great coil to-night. Adieu; be vigilant, I beseech you. [Exeunt DOGBERRY and VERGES.

Enter BORACHIO and CONRADE.

Bora. What, Conrade!

Con. Here, man, I am at thy elbow.

Bora. Mass, and my elbow itched; I thought there would a scab follow.

Con. I will owe thee an answer for that; and now forward with thy tale. Bora. Stand thee close then under this penthouse, for it drizzles rain, and I will, like a true drunkard, utter all to thee.

Bora. Therefore know, I have earned of Don John a thousand ducats.

Con. Is it possible that any villainy should be so dear?

Bora. Thou shouldst rather ask if it were possible any villainy should be so rich; for when rich villains have need of poor ones, poor ones may make what price they will.

Con. I wonder at it.

Bora. That shows thou art unconfirmed. Thou knowest that the fashion of a doublet, or a hat, or a cloak, is nothing to a man.

Con. Yes, it is apparel.

Bora. I mean, the fashion.

Con. Yes, the fashion is the fashion.

Bora. Tush! I may as well say the fool's the fool. But seest thou not what a deformed thief this fashion is?

Watch. [Aside.] I know that Deformed; a' has been a vile thief this seven years; a' goes up and down like a gentleman: I remember his name.

Bora. Didst thou not hear somebody?

Con. No: 'twas the vane on the house.

Bora. Seest thou not, I say, what a deformed thief this fashion is? how giddily he turns about all the hot bloods between fourteen and five and thirty? sometime fashioning them like Pharaoh's soldiers in the reechy painting; sometime like God Bel's priests in the old church-window; sometime like the shaven Hercules in the amirched worm-eaten tapestry, whose cod-piece seems as massy as his club?

Con. All this I see, and I see that the fashion wears out more apparel than the man. But art not thou thyself giddy with the fashion too, that thou hast shifted out of thy tale into telling me of the fashion?

Bora. Not so, neither; but know, that I have to-night wooed Margaret, the Lady Hero's gentlewoman, by the name of Hero: she leans me out at her mistress' chamber-window, bids me a thousand times good night,—I tell this tale vilely:—I should first tell thee how the prince, Claudio, and my master, planted and placed and possessed by my master Don John, saw afar off in the orchard this amiable encounter. Con. And thought they Margaret was Hero?

Bora. Two of them did, the prince and Claudio; but the devil my master, knew she was Margaret; and partly by his oaths, which first possessed them, partly by the dark night, which did deceive them, but chiefly by my villany, which did confirm any slander that Don John had made, away went Claudio enraged; swore he would meet her, as he was appointed, next morning at the temple, and there, before the whole congregtion, shame her with what be saw o'er night, and send her home again without a husband.

First Watch. We charge you in the prince's name, stand!

Sec. Watch. Call up the right Master constable. We have here recovered the most dangerous piece of lechery that ever was known in the commonswealth.

First Watch. And one Deformed is one of them: I know him, a' wears a lock.

Con. Masters, masters!

Sec. Watch. You'll be made bring Deformed forth, I warrant you.

Con. Masters,—

First Watch. Never speak: we charge you let us obey you to go with us.

Bora. We are like to prove a goodly commodity, being taken up of these men's bills.

Con. A commodity in question, I warrant you. Come, we'll obey you. [Exeunt.

SCENE IV.—A Room in LEONATO'S House.

Enter HERO, MARGARET, and URSULA.

Hero. Good Ursula, wake my cousin Beatrice, and desire her to rise.

Urs. I will, lady.

Hero. And bid her come hither.

Urs. [Exit. Well.

Marg. Troth, I think your other rabato were better.

Hero. No, pray thee, good Meg, I'll wear this.

Marg. By my troth's not so good; and I warrant your cousin will say so.

Hero. My cousin's a fool, and thou art another: I'll wear none but this.

Marg. I like the new tire within excellently,
if the hair were a thought browner; and your gown's a most rare fashion, i' faith. I saw the Duchess of Milan's gown that they praise so. 16

Her. O! that exceeds, they say.

Marg. By my troth's but a night-gown in respect of yours: cloth o' gold, and cuts, and laced with silver, set with pearls, down sleeves, side sleeves, and skirts round, underborne with a bluish tinsel; but for a fine, quaint, graceful, and excellent fashion, yours is worth ten on't.

Her. God give me joy to wear it! for my heart is exceeding heavy.

Marg. 'Twill be heavier soon by the weight of a man.

Her. Fie upon thee! art not ashamed? 28

Marg. Of what, lady? of speaking honourably? is not marriage honourable in a beggar? Is not your lord honourable without marriage? I think you would have me say, 'saving your reverence, a husband;' an bad thinking do not wrest true speaking, I'll offend nobody. Is there any harm in 'the heavier for a husband?' None, I think, an it be the right husband and the right wise; otherwise 'tis light, and not heavy: ask my Lady Beatrice else; here she comes.

Enter Beatrice.

Her. Good morrow, coz.

Beat. Good morrow, sweet Her.

Her. Why, how now! do you speak in the sick tune?

Beat. I am out of all other tune, methinks.

Marg. Clap's into 'Light o' love;' that goes without a burden: do you sing it, and I'll dance it.

Beat. Ye light o' love with your heels! then, if your husband have stables enough, you'll see he shall lack no barns.

Marg. O illegitimate construction! I scorn that with my heels.

Beat. 'Tis almost five o'clock, cousin; 'tis time you were ready. By my troth, I am exceeding ill. Heigh-ho!

Marg. For a hawk, a horse, or a husband?

Beat. For the letter that begins them all, H.

Marg. Well, an you be not turned Turk, there's no more sailing by the star.

Beat. What means the fool, trow?

Marg. Nothing I; but God send every one their heart's desire!

Her. These gloves the count sent me; they are an excellent perfume.

Beat. I am stuffed, cousin, I cannot smell.

Marg. A maid, and stuffed! there's godly catching of cold.

Beat. O, God help me! God help me! how long have you professed apprehension?
**ACT IV.**

**SCENE I.—The Inside of a Church.**

*Enter Don Pedro, Don John, Leonato, Friar Francis, Claudio, Benedick, Hero, Beatrice, &c.*

**Leon.** Come, Friar Francis, be brief: only to the plain form of marriage, and you shall recount their particular duties afterwards.

**Friar.** You come hither, my lord, to marry this lady?

**Claud.** No.

**Leon.** To be married to her, friar; you come to marry her.

**Friar.** Lady, you come hither to be married to this count?

**Her.** I do.

**Friar.** If either of you know any inward impediment, why you should not be conjoined, I charge you, on your souls, to utter it.

**Claud.** Know you any, Hero?

**Her.** None, my lord.

**Friar.** Know you any, count?

**Leon.** I dare make his answer; none.

**Claud.** O! what men dare do! what men may do! what men daily do, not knowing what they do!

**Bene.** How now! Interjections? Why then, some be of laughing, as ah! ha! ha!

**Claud.** Stand thee by, friar. Father, by thy leave:

Will you with free and unconstrained soul
Give me this maid, your daughter?

**Leon.** As freely, son, as God did give her me.

**Claud.** And what have I to give you back whose worth
May counterpoise this rich and precious gift?

**D. Pedro.** Nothing, unless you render her again.

**Claud.** Sweet prince, you learn me noble thankfulness.

There, Leonato, take her back again:
Give not this rotten orange to your friend: she's but the sign and semblance of her honour. Behold! how like a maid she blushes here. O! what authority and show of truth can cunning sin cover itself withal.

**Claud.** Comes not that blood as modest evidence to witness simple virtue? Would you not swear, All you that see her, that she were a maid, by these exterior shows? But she is none:

She knows the heat of a luxurious bed; her blush is guiltiness, not modesty.

**Leon.** What do you mean, my lord?

**Claud.** Not to be married, not to knit my soul to an approved wanton.

**Leon.** Dear my lord, if you, in your own proof, have vanquish'd the resistance of her youth,
And made defeat of her virginity,—

Claud. I know what you would say: if I have known her,

You'll say she did embrace me as a husband, And so extenuate the 'forehand sin:

No, Leonato,

I never tempted her with word too large; 52
But, as a brother to his sister, show'd Bashful sincerity and comely love.

Hero. And seem'd I ever otherwise to you?

Claud. Out on thee! Seeming! I will write against it:

You seem to me as Dian in her orb,
As chaste as is the bud ere it be blown;
But you are more intemperate in your blood

Than Venus, or those pamper'd animals That rage in savage sensuality.

Hero. Is my lord well, that he doth speak so wide?


What should I speak?

I stand discon't, that have gone about To link my dear friend to a common stale.

Leon. Are these things spoken, or do I but dream?

D. John. Sir, they are spoken, and these things are true.

Bene. This looks not like a nuptial.

Hero. True! O God!

Claud. Leonato, stand I here?

Is this the prince? Is this the prince's brother? Is this face Hero's? Are our eyes our own?

Leon. All this is so; but what of this, my lord?

Claud. Let me but move one question to your daughter; And by that fatherly and kindly power

That you have in her, bid her answer truly.

Leon. I charge thee so, as thou art my child.

Hero. O, God defend me! how am I beset!

What kind of catechizing call you this?

Claud. To make you answer truly to your name.

Hero. Is it not Hero? Who can blot that name

With any just reproach?

Claud. Marry, that can Hero:

Hero itself can blot out Hero's virtue.

What man was he talk'd with you yesternight Out at your window, betwixt twelve and one? Now, if you are a maid, answer to this.

Hero. I talk'd with no man at that hour, my lord.

D. Pedro. Why, then are you no maiden.

Leonato,

I am sorry you must hear: upon mine honour, Myself, my brother, and this grieved count,

Did see her, hear her, at that hour last night, Talk with a ruffian at her chamber-window; 92

Who hath indeed, most like a liberal villain, Confess'd the vile encounters they have had A thousand times in secret.

D. John. Fie, fie! they are not to be nam'd, my lord,

Not to be spoke of;

There is not chastity enough in language Without offence to utter them. Thus, pretty lady, I am sorry for thy much misgovernment.

Claud. O Hero! what a Hero hadst thou been, If half thy outward graces had been plac'd About thy thoughts and counsels of thy heart! If but thee well, most foul, most fair! farewell, Thou pure impiety, and impious purity!

For thee I'll lock up all the gates of love, And on my eyelids shall conjecture hang, To turn all beauty into thoughts of harm, And never shall it more be gracious.

Leon. Hath no man's dagger here a point for me?

[HERO swoons.

Beat. Why, how now, cousin! wherefore sink you down?

D. John. Come, let us go. These things, come thus to light,

Smother her spirits up.

[Exeunt DON PEDRO, DON JOHN and CLAUDIO.

Bene. How doth the lady?

Beat. Dead, I think! help, uncle! Hero! why, Hero! Uncle! Signior Benedick!

Friar! 116

Leon. O Fate! take not away thy heavy hand:

Death is the fairest cover for her shame That may be wish'd for.

Beat. How now, cousin Hero!

Friar. Have comfort, lady.

Leon. Dost thou look up?

Friar. Yea; wherefore should she not?

Leon. Wherefore! Why, doth not every earthly thing Cry shame upon her? Could she here deny The story that is printed in her blood?

Do not live, Hero; do not ope thine eyes;

For, if I think thou wouldest not quickly die,

Thought I thy spirits were stronger than thy shades,

Myself would, on the rearward of reproaches, Strike at thy life. Grief'd I, I had but one?

Chid I for that at frugal nature's frame?

Of one too much by thee. Why had I one?

Why ever wast thou lovely in mine eyes?

Why had I not with charitable hand Took up a beggar's issue at my gates, Who smirched thus, and mir'd with infamy, I might have said, 'No part of it is mine;

This shame derives itself from unknown loins'.
But mine, and mine I lov'd, and mine I prais'd,
And mine that I was proud on, mine so much
That I myself was to myself not mine, 140
Valuing of her; why, she—Oh! she is fallen
Into a pit of ink, that the wide sea
Hath drops too few to wash her clean again,
And salt too little which may season give 144
To her foul-tainted flesh.

Bene. Sir, sir, be patient.
For my part, I am so attir'd in wonder,
I know not what to say.

Beat. Oh, on my soul, my cousin is belied!
Bene. Lady, were you her bedfellow last night?
Beat. No, truly; not; although, until last night,
I have this twelvemonth been her bedfellow.

Leon. Confirmed, confirmed! Oh! that is stronger made,
Which was before barr'd up with ribs of iron.
Would the two princes lie? and Claudio lie,
Who lov'd her so, that, speaking of her foulness,
Wash'd it with tears? Hence from her! let her die.

Friar. Hear me a little;
For I have only been silent so long,
And given way unto this course of fortune,
By noting of the lady; I have mark'd
A thousand blushings appuritions
To start into her face; a thousand innocent shames
In angel whiteness bear away those blushes;
And in her eye there hath appear'd a fire,
To burn the errors that these princes hold
Against her maiden truth. Call me a fool;
Trust not my reading nor my observations,
Which with experimental seal doth warrant.
The tenour of my book; trust not my age,
My reverence, calling, nor divinity,
If this sweet lady lie not guiltless here
Under some biting error.

Leon. Friar, it cannot be. 172
Thou seest that all the grace that she hath left,
Is that she will not add to her damnation
A sin of perjury: she not denies it.
Why seekst thou then to cover with excuse
That which appears in proper nakedness?

Friar. Lady, what man is he you are accus'd of?

Hero. They know that do accuse me, I know none;
If I know more of any man alive
Than that which maiden modesty doth warrant,
Let all my sins lack mercy! O, my father!
Prove you that any man with me convers'd
At hours unmeet, or that I yesternight
Maintain'd the change of words with any creature,
Refuse me, hate me, torture me to death.

Friar. There is some strange misprision in
the princes.

Bene. Two of them have the very bent of
honour;
And if their wisdoms be misled in this,
The practice of it lives in John the bastard,
Whose spirits toil in frame of villanies.

Leon. I know not. If they speak but truth
of her,
These hands shall tear her; if they wrong her
honour,
The proudest of them shall well hear of it.
Time hath not yet so dried this blood of mine.
Nor age so eat up my invention,
Nor fortune made such havoc of my means,
Not my bad life reft me so much of friends,
But they shall find, awak'd in such a kind,
Both strength of limb and policy of mind,
Ability in means and choice of friends,
To quit me of them thoroughly.

Friar. Pause awhile,
And let my counsel sway you in this case.
Your daughter here the princes left for dead;
Let her awhile be secretly kept in,
And publish it that she is dead indeed:
Maintain a mourning ostentation;
And on your family's old monument
Hang mournful epitaphs and do all rites
That appertain unto a burial.

Leon. What shall become of this? What will
this do?

Friar. Marry, this well carried shall on her behal'
Change slander to remove; that is some good:
But not for that dream I on this strange course,
But on this travail look for greater birth.
She dying, as it must be so maintain'd,
Upon the instant that she was accus'd,
Shall be lamented, pitied and excus'd
Of every hearer; for it so falls out
That what we have we prize not to the worth
Whiles we enjoy it, but being lack'd and lost,
Why, then we rack the value, then we find
The virtue that possession would not show us
Whiles it was ours. So will it fare with Claudio:
When he shall hear she died upon his words,
The idea of her life shall sweetly creep
Into his study of imagination,
And every lovely organ of her life
Shall come apparell'd in more precious habit,
More moving-delicate, and full of life
Into the eye and prospect of his soul,
Than when she liv'd indeed: then shall he
mourn, —
If ever love had interest in his liver,—
And wish he had not so accused her,
No, though he thought his accusation true.
Let this be so, and doubt not but success 236
Will fashion the event in better shape
Than I can lay it down in likelihood.
But if all aim but this be levell’d false,
The supposition of the lady’s death 240
Will quench the wonder of her infamy:
And if it sort not well, you may conceal her,—
As best befits her wounded reputation,—
In some reclusive and religious life, 244
Out of all eyes, tongues, minds, and injuries.
Bene. Signior Leonato, let the friar advise you:
And though you know my inwardness and love
Is very much unto the prince and Claudio, 248
Yet, by mine honour, I will deal in this
As secretly and justly as your soul
Should with your body.
Leon. Being that I flow in grief,
The smallest twine may lead me. 252
Friar. ’Tis well consented: presently away;
For to strange sores strangely they strain the cure.
Come, lady, die to live: this wedding day
Perhaps is but prolong’d: have patience and endure.

[Exeunt Friar, Hero, and Leonato.
Bene. Lady Beatrice, have you wept all this while?
Beat. Yea, and I will weep a while longer.
Bene. I will not desire that. 260
Beat. You have no reason; I do it freely.
Bene. Surely I do believe your fair cousin is wronged.
Beat. Ah! how much might the man deserve
of me that would right her. 265
Bene. Is there any way to show such friendship?
Beat. A very even way, but no such friend.
Bene. May a man do it? 269
Beat. It is a man’s office, but not yours.
Bene. I do love nothing in the world so well
as you: is not that strange? 272
Beat. As strange as the thing I know not.
It were as possible for me to say I loved nothing
so well as you; but believe me not, and yet I lie not;
I confess nothing, nor I deny nothing. I am sorry for my cousin.
Bene. By my sword, Beatrice, thou lov’st me.
Beat. Do not swear by it, and eat it.
Bene. I will swear by it that you love me;
and I will make him eat it that says I love
not you.
Beat. Will you not eat your word?
Bene. With no sauce that can be devised to it. I protest I love thee. 285
Beat. Why then, God forgive me!
Bene. What offence, sweet Beatrice?

Beat. You have stayed me in a happy hour:
I was about to protest I loved you.
Bene. And do it with all thy heart.
Beat. I love you with so much of my heart
that none is left to protest. 292
Bene. Come, bid me do anything for thee.
Beat. Kill Claudio.
Bene. Ha! not for the wide world.
Beat. You kill me to deny it. Farewell. 296
Bene. Tarry, sweet Beatrice.
Beat. I am gone, though I am here: there is
no love in you: nay, I pray you, let me go.
Bene. Beatrice,— 300
Beat. In faith, I will go.
Bene. We’ll be friends first.
Beat. You dare easeer be friends with me
than fight with mine enemy. 304
Bene. Is Claudio thine enemy?
Beat. Is he not approved in the height a
villain, that hath slandered, scorned, dishonour-
ed my kinswoman? O! that I were a man.
What! bear her in hand until they come to take
hands, and then, with public accusation, un-
covered slander, unmitigated rancour,—O God,
that I were a man! I would eat his heart in the
market-place.
Bene. Hear me, Beatrice,—
Beat. Talk with a man out at a window! a
proper saying! 316
Bene. Nay, but Beatrice,—
Beat. Sweet Hero! she is wronged, she is
slandered, she is undone.
Bene. Beat—
Beat. Princes and counties! Surely, a princely
testimony, a goodly Count Comfect; a sweet
gallant, surely! O! that I were a man for his
sake, or that I had any friend would be a man
for my sake! But manhood is melted into
curtseys, valour into compliment, and men are
only turned into tongue, and trim ones too: he
is now as valiant as Hercules, that only tells a
lie and swears it. I cannot be a man with wish-
ing, therefore I will die a woman with grieving.
Bene. Tarry, good Beatrice. By this hand,
I love thee.
Beat. Use it for my love some other way than
swearing by it.
Bene. Think you in your soul the Count
Claudio hath wronged Hero? 336
Beat. Yea, as sure as I have a thought or
a soul.
Bene. Enough! I am engaged, I will challenge
him. I will kiss your hand, and so leave you.
By this hand, Claudio shall render me a dear
account. As you hear of me, so think of me.
Go, comfort your cousin: I must say she is
dead; and so, farewell.

[Exeunt.]
SCENE II.—A Prison.

Enter Dogberry, Verges, and Sexton, in

gowns; and the Watch, with Conrade and

Borachio.

Dogb. Is our whole disassembly appeared? 4
Verg. O! a stool and a cushion for the

sexton.

Sexton. Which be the malefactors? 12
Dogb. Marrv, that am I and my partner.
Verg. Nay, that's certain: we have the ex-
hibition to examine.

Sexton. But which are the offenders that are
to be examined? let them come before Master

constable.

Dogb. Yea, marry, let them come before me.
What is your name, friend? 17
Bora. Borachio.

Dogb. Pray write down Borachio. Yours,
sirrah?
Con. I am a gentleman, sir, and my name is

Conrade.

Dogb. Write down Master gentleman Con-
rade. Masters, do you serve God?
Con. 1 Yea, sir, we hope.
Bora. 20

Dogb. Write down that they hope they serve
God: and write God first; for God defend but
God should go before such villains! Masters, it
is proved already that you are little better than
false knaves, and it will go near to be thought so
shortly. How answer you for yourselves? 26
Con. Marrv, sir, we say we are none.

Dogb. A marvellous witty fellow, I assure
you; but I will go about with him. Come you
hither, sirrah; a word in your ear: sir, I say to
you, it is thought you are false knaves.
Bora. Sir, I say to you we are none.
Dogb. Well, stand aside. Fore God, they are
both in a tale. Have you writ down, that they
are none?

Sexton. Master constable, you go not the
way to examine: you must call forth the watch
that are their accusers. 36

Dogb. Yea, marry, that's the efllest way. Let
the watch come forth. Masters, I charge you, in
the prince's name, accuse these men.
First Watch. This man said, sir, that Don
John, the prince's brother, was a villain. 43

Dogb. Write down Prince John a villain.
Why, this is flat perjury, to call a prince's
brother villain.
Bora. Master constable,—
Dogb. Pray thee, fellow, peace: I do not like
thy look, I promise thee.

Sexton. What heard you him say else? 50
Sec. Watch. Marrv, that he had received a
thousand ducats of Don John for accusing the
Lady Hero wrongfully.

Dogb. Flat burglary as ever was committed.
Verg. Yea, by the mass, that it is.
Sexton. What else, fellow? 56
First Watch. And that Count Claudio did
mean, upon his words, to disgrace Hero before
the whole assembly, and not marry her.

Dogb. O villain! thou wilt be condemned into
everlasting redemption for this. 61
Sexton. What else?
Sec. Watch. This is all.
Sexton. And this is more, masters, than you
can deny. Prince John is this morning secretly
stolen away: Hero was in this manner accused,
in this very manner refused, and, upon the grief
of this, suddenly died. Master constable, let
these men be bound, and brought to Leonato's:
I will go before and show him their examina-

[Exit.

Dogb. Come, let them be opinioned.
Verg. Let them be in the hands—
Con. Off, coxcomb!

Dogb. God's my life! where's the sexton? let
him write down the prince's officer coxcomb.
Come, bind them. Thou naughty varlet!
Con. Away! you are an ass; you are an ass.

Dogb. Dost thou not suspect my place?
Dost thou not suspect my years? O that he
were here to write me down an ass! but,
masters, remember that I am an ass; though it
be not written down, yet forget not that I am an
ass. No, thou villain, thou art full of piety, as
shall be proved upon thee by good witness. I
am a wise fellow; and, which is more, an officer;
and, which is more, a householder; and, which
is more, as pretty a piece of flesh as any in Mes-
sina; and one that knows the law, go to; and a
rich fellow enough, go to; and a fellow that
hath had losses; and one that hath two gowns,
and everything handsome about him. Bring him
away. O that I had been writ down an ass! 93

[Exeunt.

ACT V.

SCENE I.—Before Leonato's House.

Enter Leonato and Antonio.

Ant. If you go on thus, you will kill yourself;
And 'tis not wisdom thus to second grief
Against yourself.

Leon. I pray thee, cease thy counsel,
Which falls into mine ears as profitless
As water in a sieve: give not me counsel;
Nor let no comforter delight mine ear
But such a one whose wrongs do suit with mine:
Bring me a father that so lov'd his child,
Whose joy of her is overwhelm'd like mine,
Act V, Sc. I.

MUCH ADO ABOUT NOTHING

And bid him speak of patience; Measure his woe the length and breadth of mine, And let it answer every strain for strain, As thus for thus and such a grief for such, In every lineament, branch, shape, and form: If such a one will smile, and stroke his beard; Bid sorrow wag, cry ‘hem’ when he should groan, Patch grief with proverbs; make misfortune drunk With candle-wasters; bring him yet to me, And I of him will gather patience. But there is no such man; for, brother, men Can counsel and speak comfort to that grief Which they themselves not feel; but, tasting it, Their counsel turns to passion, which before Would give preceptual medicine to rage, Fetter strong madness in a silken thread, Charm ache with air and agony with words. No, no; ‘tis all men’s office to speak patience To those that wring under the load of sorrow, But no man’s virtue nor sufficiency To be so moral when he shall endure The like himself. Therefore give me no counsel: My griefs cry louder than advertisement.

Ant. Therein do men from children nothing differ.

Leon. I pray thee, peace! I will be flesh and blood; For there was never yet philosopher That could endure the toothache patiently, However they have writ the style of gods And made a push at chance and sufferance. Yet bend not all the harm upon yourself; Make those that do offend you suffer too. There thou speak’st reason: nay, I will do so. My soul doth tell me Hero is belied; And that shall Claudio know; so shall the prince, And all of them that thus disown her. Enter DON PEDRO and CLAUDIO.

D. Pedro. Good den, good den.

Claud. Good day to both of you.

Leon. Hear you, my lords,—

D. Pedro. We have some haste, Leonato.

Leon. Some haste, my lord! well, fare you well, my lord: Are you so hasty now?—well, all is one.

D. Pedro. Nay, do not quarrel with us, good old man.

Ant. If he could right himself with quarrelling,

Some of us would lie low.

Claud. Who wrongs him? 52

Leon. Marry, thou dost wrong me; thou dissembler, thou.

Nay, never lay thy hand upon thy sword; I fear thee not.

Claud. Marry, beshrew my hand, If it should give your age such cause of fear. In faith, my hand meant nothing to my sword.

Leon. Tush, tush, man! never fleer and jest at me:

I speak not like a dotard nor a fool, As, under privilege of age, to brag What I have done being young, or what would do, Were I not old. Know, Claudio, to thy head, Thou hast so wrong’d mine innocent child and me That I am fore’d to lay my reverence by, And, with grey hairs and bruise of many days, Do challenge thee to trial of a man.

I say thou hast belied mine innocent child: Thy slander hath gone through and through her heart, And she lies buried with her ancestors; O! in a tomb where never scandal slept, Save this of hers, fram’d by thy villany!

Claud. My villany?

Leon. Thine, Claudio; thine, I say. 72

D. Pedro. You say not right, old man.

Leon. My lord, my lord, I’ll prove it on his body, if he dare, Despite his nice fence and his active practice, His May of youth and bloom of lusthhood.

Claud. Away! I will not have to do with you. Canst thou so daff me? Thou hast kill’d my child; If thou kill’st me, boy, thou shalt kill a man. He shall kill two of us, and men indeed: But that’s no matter; let him kill one first: Win me and wear me; let him answer me. Come, follow me, boy; come, sir boy, come, follow me.

Sir boy, I’ll whip you from your faining fence; Nay, as I am a gentleman, I will.

Leon. Brother,—

Ant. Content yourself. God knows I lov’d my niece; And she is dead, slander’d to death by villains, That dare as well answer a man indeed As I dare take a serpent by the tongue.

Boys, apes, braggers, Jacks, milksops!

Ant. Hold you content. What, man! I know them, yea, And what they weigh, even to the utmost scruple, Scrambling, out-facing, fashion-monging boys, That lie and cog and stout, deprave and slander, 89

158
Go antickly, show outward hideousness, and speak off half a dozen dangerous words, how they might hurt their enemies, if they durst; and this is all!

Leon. But, brother Antony,—

Ant. Come, 'tis no matter: do not you meddle, let me deal in this.

D. Pedro. Gentlemen both, we will not wake your patience.

My heart is sorry for your daughter’s death; but, on my honour, she was charg’d with nothing. But what was true and very full of proof.

Leon. My lord, my lord—

D. Pedro. I will not hear you.

Leon. No?

Come, brother, away. I will be heard.—

Ant. And shall, or some of us will smart for it. [Exeunt Leonato and Antonio.

Enter Benedick.

D. Pedro. See, see; here comes the man we went to seek.

Claud. Now, signior, what news?

Bene. Good day, my lord.

D. Pedro. Welcome, signior: you are almost come to part almost a fray.

Claud. We had like to have had our two noses snapped off with two old men without teeth.

D. Pedro. Leonato and his brother. What think’st thou? Had we fought, I doubt we should have been too young for them.

Bene. In a false quarrel there is no true valour. I came to seek you both.

Claud. We have been up and down to seek thee; for we are high-proof melancholy, and would fain have it beaten away. Wilt thou use thy wit?

Bene. It is in my scabbard; shall I draw it?

D. Pedro. Dost thou wear thy wit by thy side?

Claud. Never any did so, though very many have been beside their wit. I will bid thee draw, as we do the minstrels; draw, to pleasure us.

D. Pedro. As I am an honest man, he looks pale. Art thou sick, or angry?

Claud. What, courage, man! What though care killed a cat, thou hast mettle enough in thee to kill care.

Bene. Sir, I shall meet your wit in the career, an you charge it against me. I pray you choose another subject.

Claud. Nay then, give him another staff: this last was broke cross.

D. Pedro. By this light, he changes more and more: I think he be angry indeed.
D. Pedro. He is in earnest.
Claud. In most profound earnest; and, I'll warrant you, for the love of Beatrice.
D. Pedro. And hath challenged thee?
Claud. Most sincerely.
D. Pedro. What a pretty thing man is when he goes in his doublet and hose and leaves off his wit!
Claud. He is then a giant to an ape; but then is an ape a doctor to such a man.
D. Pedro. But, soft you; let me be: pluck up, my heart, and be sad! Did he not say my brother was fled?

Enter Dogberry, Verge, and the Watch, with Conrade and Borachio.

Dogb. Come, you, sir: if justice cannot tame you, she shall ne'er weigh more reasons in her balance. Nay, an you be a cursing hypocrite once, you must be looked to.
D. Pedro. How now! two of my brother's men bound! Borachio, one!
Claud. Hearken after their offence, my lord.
D. Pedro. Officers, what offence have these men done?
Dogb. Marry, sir, they have committed false report; moreover, they have spoken untruths; secondarily, they are slanders; sixth and lastly, they have belied a lady; thirdly, they have verified unjust things and to conclude, they are lying knaves.
D. Pedro. First, I ask thee what they have done; thirdly, I ask thee what's their offence; sixth and lastly, why they are committed; and, to conclude, what you lay to their charge?
Claud. Rightly reasoned, and in his own division; and, by my troth, there's one meaning well suited.
D. Pedro. Who have you offended, masters, that you are thus bound to your answer? this learned constable is too cunning to be understood. What's your offence?
Bora. Sweet prince, let me go no further to mine answer: do you hear me, and let this count kill me. I have deceived even your very eyes: what your wisdoms could not discover, these shallow fools have brought to light; who, in the night overheard me confessing to this man how Don John your brother incensed me to slander the Lady Hero; how you were brought into the orchard and saw me court Margaret in Hero's garments; how you disgraced her, when you should marry her. My villainy they have upon record; which I had rather seal with my death than repeat over to my shame. The lady is dead upon mine and my master's false accusation; and, briefly, I desire nothing but the reward of a villain.
D. Pedro. Runs not this speech like iron through your blood?
Claud. I have drunk poison whiles he utter'd it.
D. Pedro. But did my brother set thee on to this?
Bora. Yea; and paid me richly for the practice of it.
D. Pedro. He is compos'd and fram'd of treachery;
And fled he is upon this villany.
Claud. Sweet Hero! now thy image doth appear
In the rare semblance that I lov'd it first.
Dogb. Come, bring away the plaintiffs: by this time our sexton hath reformed Signior Leonato of the matter. And masters, do not forget to specify, when time and place shall serve, that I am an ass.
Verg. Here, here comes Master Signior Leonato, and the sexton too.

Re-enter Leonato, Antonio, and the Sexton.

Leon. Which is the villain? Let me see his eyes,
That, when I note another man like him, I may avoid him. Which of these is he?
Bora. If you would know your wronger, look on me.
Leon. Art thou the slave that with thy breath hast kill'd
Mine innocent child?
Bora. Yea, even I alone.
Leon. No, not so, villain; thou beliest thyself:
Here stand a pair of honourable men;
A third is fled, that had a hand in it.
I thank you, princes, for my daughter's death:
Record it with your high and worthy deeds.
'Twas bravely done, if you bethink you of it.
Claud. I know not how to pray your patience;
Yet I must speak. Choose your revenge yourself;
Impose me to what penance your invention
Can lay upon my sin: yet sinn'd I not
But in mistaking.
D. Pedro. By my soul, nor I:
And yet, to satisfy this good old man, I would bend under any heavy weight
That he'll enjoin me to.
Leon. I cannot bid you bid my daughter live;
That were impossible: but, I pray you both, 296  
Possess the people in Messina here  
How innocent she died; and if your love  
Can labour sought in sad invention,  
Hang her an epitaph upon her tomb,  
And sing it to her bones: sing it to-night.  
To-morrow morning come you to my house,  
And since you could not be my son-in-law, 300  
Be yet my nephew. My brother hath a daughter,  
Almost the copy of my child that's dead,  
And she alone is heir to both of us:  
Give her the right you should have given her  
cousin, 304  
And so dies my revenge.  

Claud.  
Your over-kindness doth wring tears from me!  
I do embrace your offer; and dispose  
For henceforth of poor Claudio. 308  

Leon. To-morrow then I will expect your  
coming;  
To-night I take my leave. This naughty man  
Shall face to face be brought to Margaret,  
Who, I believe, was pack'd in all this wrong, 312  
Hir'd to it by your brother.  

Bona. No, by my soul she was not;  
Nor knew not what she did when she spoke  
to me;  
But always hath been just and virtuous  
In anything that I do know her. 316  

Dogb. Moreover, sir,—which, indeed, is not  
under white and black,—this plaintiff here, the  
offender, did call me ass: I beseech you, let it  
be remembered in his punishment. And also,  
the watch heard them talk of one Deformed:  
they say he wears a key in his ear and a lock  
hanging by it, and borrows money in God's  
name, the which he hath used so long and never  
paid, that now men grow hard-hearted, and will  
send nothing for God's sake. Pray you, examine  
him upon that point. 327  

Leon. I thank thee for thy care and honest  
pains.  

Dogb. Your worship speaks like a most  
thankful and reverend youth, and I praise God  
for you. 332  

Leon. There's for thy pains.  

Dogb. God save the foundation!  

Leon. Go, I discharge thee of thy prisoner,  
and I thank thee. 336  

Dogb. I leave an arrant knave with your  
worship; which I beseech your worship to cor-  
rect yourself, for the example of others. God  
keep your worship! I wish your worship well;  
God restore you to health! I humbly give you  
leave to depart, and if a merry meeting may be  
wished, God prohibit it! Come, neighbour. 343  

[Exeunt DOGBERRY and VERGES.

Leon. Until to-morrow morning, lords, farewell.  

Ant. Farewell, my lords: we look for you  
to-morrow.  

D. Pedro. We will not fail.  

Claud. To-night I'll mourn with Hero.  

[Exeunt DON PEDRO and CLAUDIO.  

Leon. [To the Watch.] Bring you these fel-  
low sons. We'll talk with Margaret, 347  
How her acquaintance grew with this lewd  
fellow.  

[Exeunt.

SCENE II.—LEONATO'S Garden

Enter BENEDECK and MARGARET, meeting.

Bene. Pray thee, sweet Mistress Margaret,  
deserve well at my hands by helping me to the  
speech of Beatrice.  

Marg. Will you then write me a sonnet in  
praise of my beauty? 5  

Bene. In so high a style, Margaret, that no  
man living shall come over it; for, in most  
comely truth, thou deservest it. 8  

Marg. To have no man come over me! why,  
shall I always keep below stairs?  

Bene. Thy wit is as quick as the greyhound's  
mouth; it catches. 12  

Marg. And yours as blunt as the fencer's  
foils, which hit, but hurt not.  

Bene. A most manly wit, Margaret; it will  
not hurt a woman: and so, I pray thee, call  
Beatrice. I give thee the bucklers. 17  

Marg. Give us the swords, we have bucklers  
of our own.  

Bene. If you use them, Margaret, you must  
put in the pikes with a vice; and they are  
dangerous weapons for maids.  

Marg. Well, I will call Beatrice to you, who I  
think hath legs. 24  

Bene. And therefore will come.  

[Exit MARGARET.

The god of love,  
That site above,  
And knows me, and knows me, 28  
How pitiful I deserve,—  

I mean, in singing; but in loving, Leander  
the good swimmer, Troilus the first employer  
of pandars, and a whole book full of these quondam  
carpet-mongers, whose names yet run smoothly  
in the even road of a blank verse, why, they were  
ever so truly turned over and over as my poor  
self, in love. Marry, I cannot show it in rime; I  
have tried: I can find out no rime to 'lady' but  
'baby,' an innocent rime; for 'scorn,' 'horn,'  
a hard rime; for 'school,' 'fool,' a babbling  
rime; very ominous endings: no, I was not born
Enter Beatrice.

Sweet Beatrice, wouldst thou come when I called thee?

Beat. Yea, signior; and depart when you bid me.

Bene. O, stay but till then!

Beat. 'Then' is spoken; fare you well now: and yet, ere I go, let me go with that I came for; which is, with knowing what hath passed between you and Claudio.

Bene. Only foul words; and thereupon I will kiss thee.

Beat. Foul words is but foul wind, and foul wind is but foul breath, and foul breath is noise; therefore I will depart unkissed.

Bene. Thou hast frightened the word out of his right sense, so forcible is thy wit. But I must tell thee plainly, Claudio undergoes my challenge, and either I must shortly hear from him, or I will subscribe him a coward. And, I pray thee now, tell me, for which of my bad parts didst thou first fall in love with me?

Beat. For them all together; which maintained so politic a state of evil that they will not admit any good part to intermingle with them. But for which of my good parts did you first suffer love for me?

Bene. 'Suffer love,' a good epithet! I do suffer love indeed, for I love thee against my will.

Beat. In spite of your heart, I think. Alas, poor heart! If you spite it for my sake, I will spite it for yours; for I will never love that which my friend hates.

Bene. Thou and I are too wise to woo peaceably.

Beat. It appears not in this confession: there's not one wise man among twenty that will praise himself.

Bene. An old, an old instance, Beatrice, that lived in the time of good neighbours. If a man do not erect in this age his own tomb ere he dies, he shall live no longer in monument than the bell rings and the widow weeps.

Beat. And how long is that think you?

Bene. Question: why, an hour in clamour and a quarter in rheum: therefore it is most expedient for the wise,—if Don Worm, his conscience, find no impediment to the contrary,—to be the trumpet of his own virtues, as I am to myself. So much for praising myself, who, I myself will bear witness, is praiseworthy. And now tell me, how doth your cousin?

Beat. Very ill.


Bene. Serve God, love me, and mend. There will I leave you too, for here comes one in haste.

Enter Ursula.

Urs. Madam, you must come to your uncle. Yonder's old coil at home: it is proved, my Lady Hero hath been falsely accused, the prince and Claudio mightily abused; and Don John is the author of all, who is fled and gone. Will you come presently?

Beat. Will you go hear this news, signior?

Bene. I will live in thy heart, die in thy lap, and be buried in thy eyes; and moreover I will go with thee to thy uncle's.

[Exeunt.

Scene III.—The Inside of a Church.

Enter Don Pedro, Claudio, and Attendants, with music and tapers.

Claud. Is this the monument of Leonato? A Lord. It is, my lord.

Claud. [Reads from a scroll.] Done to death by slanderous tongues Was the Hero that here lies: Death, in guerdon of her wrongs, Gives her fame which never dies. So the life that died with shame Lives in death with glorious fame.

Hang thou there upon the tomb, Praising her when I am dumb.

Now, music, sound, and sing your solemn hymn.

SONG.

Pardon, goddess of the night, Those that slew thy virgin knight; For which, with songs of woe, Round about her tomb they go. Midnight, assist our moan; Help us to sigh and groan, Heavily, heavily. Graves, yawn and yield your dead, Till death be uttered, Heavily, heavily.

Claud. Now, unto thy bones good night! Yearly will I do this rite.

D. Pedro. Good morrow, masters: put your torches out.

The wolves have prey'd; and look, the gentle day, Before the wheels of Phoebus, round about Dapples the droway east with spots of grey. Thanks to you all, and leave us: fare you well.

Claud. Good morrow, masters: each his several way.

D. Pedro. Come, let us hence, and put on other weeds; And then to Leonato's we will go.
MUCH ADO ABOUT NOTHING

Act V, Sc. IV.

Claud. And Hymen now with luckier issue
speed's,
Than this for whom we render'd up this woe!
[Exeunt.

SCENE IV. — A Room in Leonato's House.

Enter Leonato, Antonio, Benedick, Beatrice, Margaret, Ursula, Friar Francis,
and Hero.

Friar. Did I not tell you she was innocent?
Leon. So are the prince and Claudio, who
accus'd her
Upon the error that you heard debated:
But Margaret was in some fault for this,
Although against her will, as it appears
In the true course of all the question.
Ant. Well, I am glad that all things sort so well.
Bene. And so am I, being else by faith enforce'd
To call young Claudio to a reckoning for it.
Leon. Well, daughter, and you gentlewomen all,
Withdraw into a chamber by yourselves,
And when I send for you, come hither mask'd:
The prince and Claudio promis'd by this hour
To visit me.
[Exeunt ladies.

You know your office, brother;
You must be father to your brother's daughter,
And give her to young Claudio.

Ant. Which I will do with confirm'd countenance.

Bene. Friar, I must entreat your pains, I think.
Friar. To do what, signior?

Bene. To bind me, or undo me; one of them.

Signior Leonato, truth it is, good signior,
Your niece regards me with an eye of favour.
Leon. That eye my daughter lent her: 'tis
most true.

Bene. And I do with an eye of love requite her.
Leon. The sight whereof I think, you had
from me,
From Claudio, and the prince. But what's your
will?

Bene. Your answer, sir, is enigmatical:
But, for my will, my will is your good will.
May stand with ours, this day to be conjoin'd
In the state of honourable marriage:
In which, good friar, I shall desire your help.
Leon. My heart is with your liking.

Friar. And my help. 

Here come the prince and Claudio.

Enter Don Pedro and Claudio, with
Attendants.

D. Pedro. Good morrow to this fair assembly.
Leon. Good morrow, prince; good morrow,
Claudio:
We here attend you. Are you yet determin'd

To-day to marry with my brother's daughter?
Claud. I'll hold my mind, were she an Ethiop.

Leon. Call her forth, brother: here's the friar ready.

[Exit Antonio.

D. Pedro. Good morrow, Benedick. Why,
what's the matter?

That you have such a February face,
So full of frost, of storm and cloudiness?
Claud. I think he thinks upon the savage bull.

Tush! fear not, man, we'll tip thy horns with gold,
And all Europa shall rejoice at thee,
As once Europa did at lusty Jove,
When he would play the noble beast in love.

Bene. Bull Jove, air, had an amiable low:

And some such strange bull leap'd your father's
cow,

And got a calf in that same noble feat,

Much like to you, for you have just his beat.
Claud. For this I owe you: here come other
reckonings.

Re-enter Antonio, with the ladies masked.

Which is the lady I must seize upon?
Ant. This same is she, and I do give you her.
Claud. Why, then she's mine. Sweet, let me
see your face.
Leon. No, that you shall not, till you take her
hand
Before this friar, and swear to marry her.
Claud. Give me your hand: before this holy
friar,
I am your husband, if you like of me.

Hero. And when I liv'd, I was your other wife:

[Unmasking.

And when you lov'd, you were my other
husband.

Claud. Another Hero!

Hero. Nothing certain:

One Hero died defil'd, but I do live,
And surely as I live, I am a maid.

D. Pedro. The former Hero! Hero that is dead!
Leon. She died, my lord, but whilst her slan-
der liv'd.

Friar. All this amazement can I qualify:

When after that the holy rites are ended,
I'll tell you largely of fair Hero's death:

Meantime, let wonder seem familiar,
And to the chapel let us presently.

Bene. Soft and fair, friar. Which is Beatrice?
Beat. [Unmasking] I answer to that name.

What is your will?

Bene. Do not you love me?

Beat. Why, no; no more than reason.

Bene. Why, then, your uncle and the prince
and Claudio
Have been deceived; for they swore you did.

Beat. Do not you love me?
Bene. Trich, no; no more than reason.  
Beat. Why, then, my cousin, Margaret, and  
Ursula,  
Are much deceiv’d; for they did swear you did.  
Bene. They swore that you were almost sick  
for me.  
Beat. They swore that you were well-nigh  
dead for me.  
Bene. ‘Tis no such matter. Then, you do not  
love me?  
Beat. No, truly, but in friendly recompense.  
Leon. Come, cousin, I am sure you love the  
gentleman.  
Claud. And I’ll be sworn upon ’t that he loves  
her;  
For here’s a paper written in his hand,  
A halting sonnet of his own pure brain,  
Fashion’d to Beatrice.  
Hero. And here’s another,  
Writ in my cousin’s hand, stolen from her  
pocket,  
Containing her affection unto Benedick.  
Bene. A miracle! here’s our own hands against  
our hearts. Come, I will have thee; but, by this  
light, I take thee for pity.  
Beat. I would not deny you; but, by this good  
day, I yield upon great persuasion, and partly  
to save your life, for I was told you were in a  
consumption.  
Bene. Peace! I will stop your mouth.  
[Kisses her.  
D. Pedro. How dost thou, Benedick, the mar-  
rried man?  
Bene. I’ll tell thee what, prince; a college of  
witcrackers cannot flout me out of my humour.  
Dost thou think I care for a satire or an epi-  
gram? No; if a man will be beaten with brains,  
a’ shall wear nothing handsome about him. In  
brief, since I do purpose to marry, I will think  
nothing to any purpose that the world can say  
against it; and therefore never flout at me for  
what I have said against it, for man is a giddy  
thing, and this is my conclusion. For thy part,  
Claudio, I did think to have beaten thee; but, in  
that thou art like to be my kinsman, live un-  
bruised, and love my cousin.  
Claud. I had well hoped thou wouldst have  
denied Beatrice, that I might have cudgelled  
thee out of thy single life, to make thee a double-  
dealer; which, out of question, thou wilt be, if  
my cousin do not look exceeding narrowly to  
thee.  
Bene. Come, come, we are friends. Let’s have  
a dance ere we are married, that we may lighten  
our own hearts and our wives’ heels.  
Leon. We’ll have dancing afterward.  
Bene. First, of my word; therefore play,  
music! Prince, thou art sad; get thee a wife,  
get thee a wife: there is no staff more reverend  
than one tipped with horn.  

Enter a Messenger.  
Mes. My lord, your brother John is ta’en in  
flight,  
And brought with armed men back to Messina.  
Bene. Think not on him till to-morrow: I’ll  
deviser thee brave punishments for him. Strike  
up, pipers!  

[Dance. Exit B."
LOVE'S LABOUR'S LOST

DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

FERDINAND, King of Navarre.
BEROWNE, Lords, attending on the King.
LONGAVILLE, Lords, attending on the Princess
DUMAINE, of France.
BOYET, Lords, attending on the Princess
MARCADE, of France.
DON ADRIANO DE ARMADO, a fantastical Spaniard.
SIR NATHANIEL, a Curate.
HOLOPHERNES, a Schoolmaster.
DULL, a Constable.

COSTARD, a Clown.
MOTH, Page to Armado.
A Forester.
The PRINCESS of France.
ROSALINE,
MARIA, Ladies, attending on the Princess.
KATHARINE,
JAQUENETTA, a country Wench.
Officers and Others, Attendants on the King and Princess.

SCENE.—Navarre.

ACT I.

SCENE I.—The King of Navarre's Park.

Enter the King, Berowne, Longaville, and Dumaine.

King. Let fame, that all hunt after in their lives,
Live register'd upon our brazen tombs,
And then grace us in the disgrace of death;
When, spite of cormorant devouring Time,
The endeavour of this present breath may buy
That honour which shall bate his scythe's keen edge,
And make us heirs of all eternity.
Therefore, brave conquerors,—for so you are,
That war against your own affections
And the huge army of the world's desires,—
Our late edict shall strongly stand in force:
Navarre shall be the wonder of the world;
Our court shall be a little academe,
Still and contemplative in living art.
You three, Berowne, Dumaine, and Longaville,
Have sworn for three years' term to live with me,
My fellow-scholars, and to keep those statutes
That are recorded in this schedule here.
Your oaths are pass'd; and now subscribe your names,
That his own hand may strike his honour down
That violates the smallest branch herein.
If you are arm'd to do, as sworn to do,
Subscribe to your deep oaths, and keep it too.

Long. I am resolv'd; 'tis but a three years' fast:
The mind shall banquet, though the body pine:
Fat paunches have lean pates, and dainty bits
Make rich the ribs, but bankrupt quite the wits.

Dum. My loving lord, Dumaine is mortified:
The grosser manner of these world's delights
He throws upon the gross world's baser slaves:
To love, to wealth, to pomp, I pine and die;
With all these living in philosophy.

Ber. I can but say their protestation over;
So much, dear liege, I have already sworn,
That is, to live and study here three years.
But there are other strict observances;
As, not to see a woman in that term,
Which I hope well is not enrolled there:
And one day in a week to touch no food,
And but one meal on every day beside:
The which I hope is not enrolled there:
And then, to sleep but three hours in the night,
And not be seen to wink of all the day,—
When I was wont to think no harm all night
And make a dark night too of half the day,—
Which I hope well is not enrolled there.
Of these are barren tasks, too hard to keep.
Not to see ladies, study, fast, not sleep.

King. Your oath is pass'd to pass away from these.

Ber. Let me say no, my liege, as if you please.
I only swore to study with your Grace,
And stay here in your court for three years' space.

Long. You swore to that, Berowne, and to the rest.

Ber. By yea and nay, sir, then I swore in jest.
What is the end of study? let me know.

King. Why, that to know which else we should not know.

Ber. Things hid and barr'd, you mean, from common sense?
King. Ay, that is study’s god-like recompense.

Ber. Come on then; I will swear to study so,
To know the thing I am forbid to know;
As thus: to study where I well may dine,
When I to feast expressly am forbid;
Or study where to meet some mistress fine,
When mistresses from common sense are hid;
Or, having sworn too hard a-keeping oath
Study to break it, and not break my troth.
If study’s gain be thus, and this be so,
Study knows that which yet it doth not know.
Swear me to this, and I will ne’er say no.

King. These be the stops that hinder study quite,
And train our intellects to vain delight.

Ber. Why, all delights are vain; but that
most vain
Which, with pain purchas’d doth inherit pain:
As, painfully to pore upon a book,
To seek the light of truth; while truth the while
Doth falsely blind the eyesight of his look:
Light seeking light doth light of light beguile:
So, ere you find where light in darkness lies,
Your light grows dark by losing of your eyes.
Study me how to please the eye indeed,
By fixing it upon a fairer eye,
Who dazzling so, that eye shall be his head,
And give him light that it was blinded by.
Study is like the heaven’s glorious sun,
That will not be deep-search’d with saucy looks;
Small have continual plodders ever won,
Save base authority from others’ books.
These earthly godfathers of heaven’s lights
That give a name to every fixed star,
Have no more profit of their shining nights
Than those that walk and not what they are.
Too much to know is to know nought but fame;
And every godfather can give a name.

King. How well he’s read, to reason against reading!

Dum. Proceeded well, to stop all good proceeding!

Long. He weeds the corn, and still lets grow
the weeding.
Ber. The spring is near, when green geese are
a-breeding.

Dum. How follows that?

Ber. Fit in his place and time.

Dum. In reason nothing.

Ber. Something then, in rime.

King. Berowne is like an envious sneaping
frost
That bites the first-born infants of the spring.
Ber. Well, say I am: why should proud sum-
mer boast

Before the birds have any cause to sing?
Why should I joy in an abortive birth?
At Christmas I no more desire a rose
Than wish a snow in May’s new-fangled mirth;
But like of each thing that in season grows.
So you, to study now it is too late,
Climb o’er the house to unlock the little gate.

King. Well, sit you out: go home, Berowne:
adieu!

Ber. No, my good lord; I have sworn to stay
with you.
And though I have for barbarism spoke more
Than for that angel knowledge you can say,
Yet confident I’ll keep to what I swore,
And bide the penance of each three years’ day.
Give me the paper; let me read the same;
And to the strictest decree’s I’ll write my name.

King. How well this yielding rescues thee from shame!

Ber. Item, That no woman shall come with-
in a mile of my court. Hath thus been pro-
claimed?

Long. Four days ago.
Ber. Let’s see the penalty. On pain of losing
her tongue. Who devised this penalty?

Long. Marry, that did I.

Ber. Sweet lord, and why?

Long. To fright them hence with that dread
penalty.

Ber. A dangerous law against gentility!

Item. If any man be seen to talk with a wo-
man within the term of three years, he shall
endure such public shame as the rest of the
court can possibly devise.

This article, my liege, yourself must break;
For well you know here comes in embassy
The French king’s daughter with yourself to
speak—
A maid of grace and complete majesty—
About surrender up of Aquitaine
To her decrepit, sick, and bed-ridden father:
Therefore this article is made in vain,
Or vainly comes th’ admired princess hither.

King. What say you, lords? why, this was
quite forgot.

Ber. So study evermore is overshot:
While it doth study to have what it would,
It doth forget to do the thing it should;
And when it hath the thing it hunting most,
’Tis won as towns with fire; so won, so lost.

King. We must of force dispense with this
decree;
She must lie here on mere necessity.

Ber. Necessity will make us all forsworn

Three thousand times within this three years’
space;
For every man with his affect is born,  
Not by might master'd, but by special grace.  
If I break faith this word shall speak for me,  
I am forsworn ‘on mere necessity.’  
So to the laws at large I write my name:

[Subscribe]

And he that breaks them in the least degree  
Stands in attainer of eternal shame:  
Suggestions are to others as to me;  
But I believe, although I seem so loath,  
I am the last that will last keep his oath.  
But is there no quick recreation granted?

King. Ay, that there is. Our court, you know,  
is haunted

With a refined traveller of Spain;  
A man in all the world’s new fashion planted,  
That hath a mint of phrases in his brain;  
One whom the music of his own vain tongue  
Doth ravish like enchanting harmony;  
A man of complements, whom right and wrong  
Have chose as umpire of their mutiny:

This child of fancy, that Armado high,  
For interim to our studies shall relate

In high-born words the worth of many a knight  
From tawny Spain lost in the world’s debate.  
How you delight, my lords, I know not, I;  
But, I protest, I love to hear him lie,  
And I will use him for my minstrelsy.

Ber. Armado is a most illustrious wight,  
A man of fire new words, fashion’s own knight.

Long. Costard the swain and he shall be our sport;

And, so to study, three years is but short.

Enter DULL, with a letter, and COSTARD.

Dull. Which is the duke’s own person?  
Ber. This, fellow. What wouldst?

Dull. I myself reprehend his own person, for  
I am his Grace’s tharbourgh: but I would see  
his own person in flesh and blood.

Ber. This is he.

Dull. Signior Arm—Arm—commends you.  
There’s villany abroad: this letter will tell you more.

Cost. Sir, the contems thereof are as touching me.

King. A letter from the magnificent Armado.

Ber. How long soever the matter, I hope in God for high words.

Long. A high hope for a low heaven: God grant us patience!

Ber. To hear, or forbear laughing?

Long. To hear meekly, sir, and to laugh moderately; or to forbear both.

Ber. Well, sir, be it as the style shall give us cause to climb in the merriness.

Cost. The matter is to me, sir, as concerning Jaquenetta. The manner of it is, I was taken with the manner.

Ber. In what manner?

Cost. In manner and form following, sir; all those three: I was seen with her in the manor-house, sitting with her upon the form, and taken following her into the park; which, put together,  
is, in manner and form following. Now, sir, for the manner,—it is the manner of a man to speak to a woman, for the form,—in some form.

Ber. For the following, sir?

Cost. As it shall follow in my correction; and God defend the right!

King. Will you hear this letter with attention?

Ber. As we would hear an oracle.

Cost. Such is the simplicity of man to hearken after the flesh.

King. Great deputy, the welkin’s vicegerent,  
and sole dominator of Navarre, my soul’s earth’s  
God, and body’s fostering patron,

Cost. Not a word of Costard yet.

King. So it is,

Cost. It may be so; but if he say it is so, he is, in telling true, but so.—

King. Peace!

Cost. Be to me and every man that dares not fight.

King. No words!

Cost. Of other men’s secrets, I beseech you.

King. So it is, besieged with sable-coloured melancholy, I did commend the black-oppressing humour to the most wholesome physic of thy health-giving air; and, as I am a gentleman, bestook myself to walk. The time when? About the sixth hour; when beasts most graze, birds best peck, and men sit down to that nourishment which is called supper: so much for the time when. Now for the ground which; which, I mean, I walked upon: it is yclept thy park. Then for the place where; where, I mean, I did encounter that most obscene and preposterous event, that dreweth from my snow-white pen the ebon-coloured ink, which herc thou viewest, beheldest, surveyest, or seest. But to the place where, it standeth north-north-east and by east from the west corner of thy curious-knotted garden: there did I see that low-spirited swain, that base minnow of thy mirth,—

Cost. Me.

King. that unlettered small-knowing soul,—

Cost. Me.

King. that shallow vessel,—

Cost. Still me.

King. which, as I remember, hight Costard,—

Cost. O me.
King, sorted and consorted, contrary to thy established proclaimed edict and continent canon, with— with,— O! with but with this I passion to say wherewith,—
Cost. With a wench.
King. With a child of our grandmother Eve, a female; or, for thy more sweet understanding, a woman. Him, I,— as my ever-esteemed duty pricks me on,— have sent to thee, to receive the need of punishment, by thy sweet Grace's officer, Antony Dull; a man of good repute, carriage, bearing, and estimation.
Dull. Me, an't please you; I am Antony Dull.
King. For Jaquenetta,— so is the weaker vessel called which I apprehended with the aforesaid swain,— I keep her as a vessel of thy law's fury; and shall, at the least of thy sweet notice, bring her to trial. Thine, in all compliments of devoted and heart-burning heat of duty,

DON ADRIANO DE ARMADO.

Ber. This is not so well as I looked for, but the best that ever I heard.
King. Ay, the best for the worst. But, sirrah, what say you to this?
Cost. Sir, I confess the wench.
King. Did you hear the proclamation?
Cost. I do confess much of the hearing it, but little of the marking of it.
King. It was proclaimed a year's imprisonment to be taken with a wench.
Cost. I was taken with none, sir: I was taken with a damosel.
King. Well, it was proclaimed 'damosel.'
Cost. This was no damosel neither, sir: she was a 'virgin.'
King. It is so varied too; for it was proclaimed 'virgin.'
Cost. If it were, I deny her virginity: I was taken with a maid.
King. This maid will not serve your turn, sir.
Cost. This maid will serve my turn, sir.
King. Sir, I will pronounce your sentence: you shall fast a week with bran and water.
Cost. I had rather pray a month with mutton and porridge.
King. And Don Armado shall be your keeper.
My Lord Berowne, see him deliver'd o'er:
And go we, lords, to put in practice that
Which each to other hath so strongly sworn.
[Execut KING, LONGAVILLE, and DUMAINE.
Ber. I'll lay my head to any good man's hat,
These oaths and laws will prove an idle scorn.
SIRRAH, come on.
Cost. I suffer for the truth, sir: for true it is I was taken with Jaquenetta, and Jaquenetta is a true girl; and therefore welcome the sour cup of prosperity! Affliction may one day smile again; and till then, sit thee down, sorrow!

SCENE II.—The Same.

Enter ARMADO and MOTH.

Arm. Boy, what sign is it when a man of great spirit grows melancholy?

Moth. A great sign, sir, that he will look sad.

Arm. Why, sadness is one and the self-same thing, dear imp.

Moth. No, no; O Lord, sir, no.

Arm. How canst thou part sadness and melancholy, my tender juvenal?

Moth. By a familiar demonstration of the working, my tough senior.

Arm. Why tough senior? why tough senior?

Moth. Why tender juvenal? why tender juvenal?

Arm. I spoke it, tender juvenal, as a congruent epitheton appertaining to thy young days, which we may nominate tender.

Moth. And I, tough senior, as an appertinent title to thy old time, which we may name tough.

Arm. Pretty, and apt.

Moth. How mean you, sir? I pretty, and my saying apt? or I apt, and my saying pretty? 21

Arm. Thou pretty, because little.

Moth. Little pretty, because little. Wherefore apt?

Arm. And therefore apt, because quick.

Moth. Speak you this in my praise, master?

Arm. In thy condign praise.

Moth. I will praise an eel with the same praise.

Arm. What! that an eel is ingenious?

Moth. That an eel is quick.

Arm. I do say thou art quick in answers: thou hearest my blood.

Moth. I am answered, sir.

Arm. I love not to be crossed.

Moth. [Aside.] He speaks the mere contrary; crosses love not him.

Arm. I have promised to study three years with the duke.

Moth. You may do it in an hour, sir.

Arm. Impossible.

Moth. How many is one thrice told?

Arm. I am ill at reckoning; it fitteth the spirit of a tapster.

Moth. You are a gentleman and a gamester, sir.

Arm. I confess both: they are both the varnish of a complete man.

Moth. Then, I am sure you know how much the gross sum of deuce-ace amounts to.

Arm. It doth amount to one more than two.
Moth. Which the base vulgar do call three.
Arm. True. 53
Moth. Why, sir, is this such a piece of study?
Now, here's three studied, ere you'll thrice wink;
and how easy it is to put 'years' to the word
'three,' and study three years in two words, the
dancing horse will tell you.
Arm. A most fine figure!
Moth. To prove you a cipher. 60
Arm. I will hereupon confess I am in love;
and as it is base for a soldier to love, so am I
in love with a base wench. If drawing my sword
against the humour of affection would deliver
me from the reprobate thought of it, I would
take Desire prisoner, and ransom him to any
French courtier for a new devised curtsy. I
think scorn to sigh: methinks I should out-
swear Cupid. Comfort me, boy: what great men
have been in love?
Moth. Hercules, master.
Arm. Most sweet Hercules! More authority,
dear boy, name more; and, sweet my child, let
them be men of good repute and carriage. 74
Moth. Samson, master: he was a man of good
carriage, great carriage, for he carried the tow-
gates on his back like a porter; and he was in love.
Arm. O well-knit Samson! strong-jointed
Samson! I do excel thee in my rapier as much as
thou didst me in carrying gates. I am in love
too. Who was Samson's love, my dear Moth?
Moth. A woman, master. 82
Arm. Of what complexion?
Moth. Of all the four, or the three, or the
two, or one of the four.
Arm. Tell me precisely of what complexion.
Moth. Of the sea-water green, sir.
Arm. Is that one of the four complexions?
Moth. As I have read, sir; and the best of
them too. 90
Arm. Green indeed is the colour of lovers;
but to have a love of that colour, methinks
Samson had small reason for it. He surely
affected her for her wit. 94
Moth. It was so, sir, for she had a green wit.
Arm. My love is most immaculate white and
red. 98
Moth. Most maculate thoughts, master, are
masked under such colours. 99
Arm. Define, define, well-educated infant.
Moth. My father's wit, and my mother's
tongue, assist me!
Arm. Sweet invocation of a child; most pretty
and pathetical! 104
Moth. If she be made of white and red,
Her faults will ne'er be known,
For blushing cheeks by faults are bled,
And fears by pale white shown: 108
Then if she fear, or be to blame,
By this you shall not know,
For still her cheeks possess the same
Which native she doth owe. 112
A dangerous rime, master, against the reason of
white and red.
Arm. Is there not a ballad, boy, of the King
and the Beggar? 116
Moth. The world was very guilty of such a
ballad some three ages since; but I think now'tis not to be found; or, if it were, it would
neither serve for the writing nor the tune. 120
Arm. I will have that subject newly writ o'er,
that I may example my digression by some
mighty precedent. Boy, I do love that country
girl that I took in the park with the rational
hinds Costard; she deserves well. 125
Moth. [Aside.] To be whipped; and yet a
better love than my master.
Arm. Sing, boy: my spirit grows heavy in
love.
Moth. And that's great marvel, loving a light
wench.
Arm. I say, sing.
Moth. Forbear till this company be past.

Enter DULL, COSTARD, and JAQUENETTA.
Dull. Sir, the duke's pleasure is, that you
keep Costard safe: and you must let him take
delight no nor penance, but a' must fast three
days a week. For this damsels, I must keep her
at the park; she is allowed for the day-woman.
Fare you well. 130
Arm. I do betray myself with blushing. Maid!
Jaq. Man?
Arm. I will visit thee at the lodge.
Jaq. That's hereby.
Arm. I know where it is situate.
Jaq. Lord, how wise you are!
Arm. I will tell thee wonders.
Jaq. With that face?
Arm. I love thee. 148
Jaq. So I heard you say.
Arm. And so farewell.
Jaq. Fair weather after you!
Dull. Come, Jaquenetta, away! 152

[Exeunt Dull and Jaquenetta.
Arm. Villain, thou shalt fast for thy offences
ere thou be pardoned.
Cost. Well, sir, I hope, when I do it, I shall
do it on a full stomach. 156
Arm. Thou shalt be heavily punished.
Cost. I am more bound to you than your
fellows, for they are but lightly rewarded.
Arm. Take away this villain: shut him up.
Moth. Come, you transgressing slave: away!

169
Cost. Let me not be pent up, sir: I will fast, 163
    being loose.
Moth. No, sir; that were fast and loose: thou
    shalt to prison.
Cost. Well, if ever I do see the merry days of 168
    desolations that I have seen, some shall see—
Moth. What shall some see?
Cost. Nay, nothing, Master Moth, but what
    they look upon. It is not for prisoners to be
    too silent in their words; and therefore I will
    say nothing: I thank God I have as little pa-
    tience as another man, and therefore I can be
    quiet.
[Exeunt Moth and Costard.
Arm. I do affect the very ground, which is
    base, where her shoe, which is baser, guided by
    her foot, which is basest, doth tread. I shall be
    forewarned,—which is a great argument of false-
    hood,—if I love. And how can that be true love
    which is falsely attempted? Love is a familiar;
    Love is a devil: there is no evil angel but Love.
Yet was Samson so tempted, and he had an
    excellent strength; yet was Solomon so seduced,
and he had a very good wit. Cupid’s butt-shaft
    is too hard for Hercules’ club, and therefore too
much odds for a Spaniard’s rapier. The first
    and second clause will not serve my turn; the
passado he respects not, the duello he regards
    not: his disgrace is to be called boy, but his
    glory is, to subdue men. Adieu, valour! rust,
    rapier! be still, drum! for your manager is in
    love; yea, he loveth. Assist me someextemporal
    god of rime, for I am sure I shall turn sonneter.
Devised, wit; write, pen; for I am for whole
    volumes in folio.
[Exit.

ACT II.

SCENE I.—The King of Navarre’s Park. A
    Pavilion and Tents at a distance.

Enter the Princess of France, Rosaline,
    Maria, Katharine, Boyet, Lords, and
    other Attendants.

Boyet. Now, madam, summon up your
    dearest spirits:
Consider whom the king your father sends,
    To whom he sends, and what’s his embassy:
Yourself, held precious in the world’s esteem,
    To parley with the sole inheritor
Of all perfections that a man may owe,
    Matchless Navarre; the plea of no less weight
Than Aquitaine; a dowry for a queen.
    Be now as prodigal of all dear grace
As Nature was in making graces dear
    When she did starve the general world beside,
And prodigally gave them all to you.

Prin. Good Lord Boyet, my beauty, though
    but mean,
Needs not the painted flourish of your praise:
    Beauty is bought by judgment of the eye,
Not utter’d by base sale of chapmen’s tongues.
I am less proud to hear you tell my worth 17
    Than you much willing to be counted wise
In spending your wit in the praise of mine.
But now to task the tasker: good Boyet,
    You are not ignorant, all-telling fame
Doth noise abroad, Navarre hath made a vow,
    Till painful study shall out-wear three years,
No woman may approach his silent court: 24
    Therefore to us seemeth it a needful course,
Before we enter his forbidden gates,
    To know his pleasure; and in that behalf,
Bold of your worthiness, we sing unto 28
    As our best-moving fair solicitor.
Tell him, the daughter of the King of France,
    On serious business, craving quick dispatch,
Importunes personal conference with his Grace.
Haste, signify so much; while we attend,
    Like humble-visag’d suitors, his high will.

Boyet. Proud of employment, willingly I go.

Prin. All pride is willing pride, and yours
    is so.
[Exit BOYET.

Who are the volataries, my loving lords,
    That are vow-fellows with this virtuous duke?
First Lord. Lord Longaville is one.

Prin. Know you the man?
Mar. I know him, madam: at a marriage
    feast,
Between Lord Perigord and the beauteous heir
    Of Jacques Falconbridge, solemnized
In Normandy, saw I this Longaville.
A man of sovereign parts he is esteem’d; 44
    Well fitted in the arts, glorious in arms:
Nothing becomes him ill that he would well.
The only soil of his fair virtue’s gloss,—
    It virtuous’ gloss will stain with any soil,—
Is a sharp wit match’d with too blunt a will:
Whose edge hath power to cut, whose will still
    It should nonspare that come within his power.
Prin. Some merry mocking lord, belike; is’t 52
    so?
Mar. They say so most that most his humours
    know.

Prin. Such short-liv’d wits do wither as they
    grow.
Who are the rest?

Kath. The young Dumaine, a well-accom-
    plish’d youth,
Of all that virtue love for virtue lov’d:
    Most power to do most harm, least knowing ill,
For he hath wit to make an ill shape good,
And shape to win grace though he had no wit.
LOVE’S LABOUR’S LOST

Act II, Sc. I.

I saw him at the Duke Alencog’s once;
And much too little of that good I saw
Is my report to his great worthiness.

*Ros.* Another of these students at that time
Was there with him, if I have heard a truth: 65
Berowne they call him; but a merrier man,
Within the limit of becoming mirth,
I never spent an hour’s talk withal.

His eye begets occasion for his wit;
For every object that the one doth catch
The other turns to a mirth-moving jest,
Which his fair tongue, conceit’s expositor,
Delivers in such apt and gracious words,
That aged ears play truant at his tales,
And younger hearings are quite ravished;
So sweet and voluble is his discourse.

*Prin.* God bless my ladies! are they all in
love,
That every one her own hath garnished
With such beedeeing ornaments of praise?

*First Lord.* Here comes Boyet.

**Re-enter Boyet.**

*Prin.* Now, what admittance, lord?

*Boyet.* Navarre had notice of your fair approach;

And he and his competitors in oath
Were all address’d to meet you, gentle lady,
Before I came. Marry, thus much I have learnt;
He rather means to lodge you in the field,
Like one that comes here to besiege his court,
Than seek a dispensation for his oath,
To let you enter his unpeeled house.

Here comes Navarre. [The Ladies mask.

**Enter King, Longaville, Dumaine, Berowne, and Attendants.**

*King.* Fair princess, welcome to the court of
Navarre.

*Prin.* ‘Fair,’ I give you back again; and
‘welcome’ I have no yet: the roof of this court
is too high to be yours, and welcome to the wide
fields too base to be mine.

*King.* You shall be welcome, madam, to my
court.

*Prin.* I will be welcome, then: conduct me
thither.

*King.* Hear me, dear lady; I have sworn an
oath.

*Prin.* Our Lady help my lord! he’ll be forsworn.

*King.* Not for the world, fair madam, by my
will.

*Prin.* Why, will shall break it; will, and no-
thing else.

*King.* Your ladyship is ignorant what it is.

*Prin.* Were my lord so, his ignorance were
wise,

Where now his knowledge must prove ignorance.
I hear your grace hath sworn out house-keeping:
’Tis deadly sin to keep that oath, my lord,
And sin to break it.

But pardon me, I am too sudden-bold:
To teach a teacher ill besee meth me.

Vouchsafe to read the purpose of my coming,
And suddenly resolve me in my suit.

[**Gives a paper.**

*King.* Madam, I will, if suddenly I may.

*Prin.* You will the sooner that I were away,
For you’ll prove perjur’d if you make me stay.

*Ber.* Did not I dance with you in Brabant
once?

*Ros.* Did not I dance with you in Brabant
once?

*Ber.* I know you did.

*Ros.* How needless was it then

To ask the question!

*Ber.* You must not be so quick.

*Ros.* ’Tis ’long of you that spur me with such
questions.

*Ber.* Your wit’s too hot, it speeds too fast,
’twill ture.

*Ros.* Not till it leave the rider in the mure.

*Ber.* What time o’ day?

*Ros.* The hour that fools should ask.

*Ber.* Now fair befall your mask!

*Ros.* Fair fall the face it covers!

*Ber.* And send you many lovers!

*Ros.* Amen, so you be none.

*Ber.* Nay, then I will be gone.

*King.* Madam, your father here doth intimate

The payment of a hundred thousand crowns;
Being but the one half of an entire sum
Disbursted by my father in his wars.

But say that he, or we,—as neither have,—
Receiv’d that sum, yet there remains unpaid
A hundred thousand more; in surety of the
which,

One part of Aquitaine is bound to us,
Although not valu’d to the money’s worth.
If then the king your father will restore
But that one half which is unsatisfied,
We will give up our right in Aquitaine,
And hold fair friendship with his majesty.

But that it seems, he little purposeth,
For here he doth demand to have repaid
A hundred thousand crowns; and not demands,
On payment of a hundred thousand crowns,
To have his title live in Aquitaine;
Which we much rather had depart withal,
And have the money by our father lent,

Than Aquitaine, so gelded as it is.
Dear princess, were not his requests so far
From reason's yielding, your fair self should make
A yielding 'gainst some reason in my breast,
And go well satisfied to France again. 152

Prin. You do the king my father too much wrong
And wrong the reputation of your name,
In so unseeming to confess receipt
Of that which hath so faithfully been paid. 156

King. I do protest I never heard of it;
And if you prove it, I'll repay it back
Or yield up Aquitaine.

Prin. We arrest your word.
Boyet. You can produce acquaintances 160
For such a sum from special officers
Of Charles his father.

King. Satisfy me so.
Boyet. So please your Grace, the packet is not come
Where that and other specialties are bound: 164
To-morrow you shall have a sight of them.

King. It shall suffice me: at which interview
All liberal reason I will yield unto.
Meantime, receive such welcome at my hand 168
As honour, without breach of honour, may
Make tender of to thy true worthiness.

You may not come, fair princess, in my gates;
But here without you shall be so receiv'd, 172
As you shall deem yourself lodg'd in my heart,
Though so denied fair harbour in my house.
Your own good thoughts excuse me, and fare-well:

Boyet. You will come again. 176
Prin. Sweet health and fair desires consort
your Grace!

King. Thy own wish wish I thee in every place!
[Exeunt KING and his Train.

Ber. Lady, I will commend you to mine own heart.

Ros. Pray you, do my commendations; I
would be glad to see it. 180

Ber. I would you heard it groan.
Ros. Is the fool sick?
Ber. Sick at the heart.
Ros. Alack! let it blood.
Ber. Would that it do good?
Ros. My physic says, 'ay.'
Ber. Will you prick't with your eye?
Ros. No point, with my knife. 188
Ber. Now, God save thy life!
Ros. And yours from long living!

Ber. I cannot stay Thanksgiving. [Retiring.

Dum. Sir, I pray you, a word: what lady is
that same? 192

Boyet. The heir of Alançon, Katharine her
name.


Long. I beseech you a word: what is she in
the white?

Boyet. A woman sometimes, an you saw her
in the light. 196

Long. Perchance light in the light. I desire
her name.

Boyet. She hath but one for herself; to desire
that, were a shame.

Long. Pray you, sir, whose daughter?
Boyet. Her mother's, I have heard.

Long. God's blessing on your beard!
Boyet. Good sir, be not offended.

She is an heir of Falconbridge.

Long. Nay, my choler is ended. 204
She is a most sweet lady.

Boyet. Not unlike, sir; that may be. [Exit LONGAVILLE.

Ber. What's her name, in the cap?

Boyet. Rosaline, by good hap. 208

Ber. Is she wedded or no?

Boyet. To her will, sir, or so.

Ber. You are welcome, sir. Adieu.

Boyet. Farewell to me, sir, and welcome to
you. [Exit BEROWNE.—Ladies unmask.

Mar. That last is Berowne, the merry mad-cap lord: 213

Not a word with him but a jest.

Boyet. And every jest but a word.

Prin. It was well done of you to take him at
his word.

Boyet. I was as willing to grapple, as he was to
board. 216

Mar. Two hot sheeps, marry!

Boyet. And wherefore not ships?

No sheep, sweet lamb, unless we feed on your lips.

Mar. You sheep, and I pasture: shall that
finish the jest?

Boyet. So you grant pasture for me.

[Offering to kiss her.

Mar. Not so, gentle beast. 220

My lips are no common, though several they be.

Boyet. Belonging to whom?

Mar. To my fortunes and me.

Prin. Good wits will be jangling; but, gentles,
agree.

This civil war of wits were much better us'd 224
On Navarre and his book-men, for here 'tis
abus'd.

Boyet. If my observation,—which very sel-dom
lies,—

By the heart's still rhetoric disclosed with eyes,

Deceive me not now, Navarre is infected. 228

Prin. With what?

Boyet. With that which we lovers entitle
affected.
LOVE'S LABOUR'S LOST

Act III, Sc. I.

Prin. Your reason.
Boyet. Why, all his behaviours did make their retire
To the court of his eye, peeping thorough desire;
His heart, like an agate, with your print impress'd,
Proud with his form, in his eye pride express'd:
His tongue, all impatient to speak and not see,
Did stumble with haste in his eyesight to be;
All senses to that sense did make their repair,
To feel only looking on fairest of fair,
Methought all his senses were lock'd in his eye,
As jewels in crystal for some prince to buy; 241
Who, tend'ring their own worth from where they were glass'd,
Did point you to buy them, along as you pass'd,
His face's own margent did quote such amazes,
That all eyes saw his eyes enchanted with gazes,
I'll give you Aquitaine, and all that is his, 246
An' you give him for my sake but one loving kiss.

Prin. Come to our pavilion: Boyet is dispos'd.
Boyet. But to speak that in words which his eye hath disclos'd.
I only have made a mouth of his eye,
By adding a tongue which I know will not lie.
Ros. Thou art an old love-monger, and speak'st skilfully. 252
Mar. He is Cupid's grandfather and learns news of him.
Ros. Then was Venus like her mother, for her father is but grim.
Boyet. Do you hear, my mad wenches?
Mar. No.
Boyet. What, then, do you see?
Ros. Ay, our way to be gone.
Boyet. You are too hard for me. 256

[Exeunt.

ACT III.

SCENE I.—The King of Navarre's Park.

Enter Armado and Mocht.

Arm. Warble, child; make passionate my sense of hearing.
Mocht. [Singing.] Consolinel,— 3
Arm. Sweet air! Go, tenderness of years;
take this key, give enlargement to the swain,
bring him festinately hither; I must employ him in a letter to my love.
Mocht. Master, will you win your love with a French brawl?
Arm. How meanest thou? brawling in French?
Mocht. No, my complete master; but to jig off a tune at the tongue's end, canary to it with your feet, humour it with turning up your eyelids,
sigh a note and sing a note, sometime through the throat, as if you swallowed love by singing love, sometime through the nose, as if you snuffed up love by smelling love; with your hat pent-house-like o'er the shop of your eyes; with your arms crossed on your thin belly-doublet like a rabbit on a spit; or your hands in your pocket like a man after the old painting; and keep not too long in one tune, but a snip and away. These are complements, these are humours, these betray nice wenches, that would be betrayed without these; and make them men of note,—do you note me?—that most are affected to these. 27

Arm. How hast thou purchased this experience?
Mocht. By my penny of observation.
Arm. But O—but O,—
Mocht. 'The hobby-horse is forgot.' 32
Arm. Callest thou my love 'hobby-horse'?
Mocht. No, master; the hobby-horse is but a colt, and your love perhaps, a hackney. But have you forgot your love?
Arm. Almost I had.
Mocht. Negligent student! learn her by heart.
Arm. By heart, and in heart, boy.
Mocht. And out of heart, master: all those three I will prove. 41
Arm. What wilt thou prove?
Mocht. A man, if I live; and thus, by, in, and without, upon the instant: by heart you love her, because your heart cannot come by her; in heart you love her, because your heart is in love with her; and out of heart you love her, being out of heart that you cannot enjoy her. 48
Arm. I am all these three.
Mocht. And three times as much more, and yet nothing at all.
Arm. Fetch hither the swain: he must carry me a letter. 53
Mocht. A message well sympathized: a horse to be ambassador for an ass.
Arm. Ha, ha! what sayest thou? 56
Mocht. Marry, sir, you must send the ass upon the horse, for he is very slow-gaited. But I go. Arm. The way is but short: away!
Mocht. As swift as lead, sir. 60
Arm. Thy meaning, pretty ingenuous?
Is not lead a metal heavy, dull, and slow?
Mocht. Minime, honest master; or rather, master, no.
Arm. I say, lead is slow.
Mocht. You are too swift, sir, to say so:
Is that lead slow which is fir'd from a gun? 65
Arm. Sweet smoke of rhetoric!
He reputes me a cannon; and the bullet, that's he:
I shoot thee at the swain.

173
Act III, Sc. I.

**Moth.** Thump then, and I flee. [Exit. 71]  
**Arm.** A most acute juvenile; voluble and free of grace!  
By thy favour, sweet welkin, I must sigh in thy face:  
Most rude melancholy, valour gives thee place.  
My herald is return'd. 72

**Re-enter Moth with Costard.**

**Moth.** A wonder, master! here's a costard broken in a shin. 73

**Arm.** Some enigma, some riddle: come, thy l'envoy; begin. 74

**Cost.** No egma, no riddle, no l'envoy; no salve in the mail, sir. O! sir, plantain, a plain plantain: no l'envoy, no l'envoy: no salve, sir, but a plantain. 78

**Arm.** By virtue, thou enforc'est laughter; thy silly thought, my spleen; the heaving of my lungs provokes me to ridiculous smiling: O! pardon me, my stars. Doth the inconsiderate take salve for l'envoy, and the word l'envoy for a salve? 84

**Moth.** Do the wise think them other? is not l'envoy a salve?

**Arm.** No, page: it is an epilogue or discourse, to make plain

Some obscure precedence that hath tofore been sain. 88

I will example it:  
The fox, the ape, and the humble-bee  
Were still at odds, being but three.

There's the moral. Now the l'envoy. 92

**Moth.** I will add the l'envoy. Say the moral again.

**Arm.** The fox, the ape, and the humble-bee,  
Were still at odds, being but three. 96

**Moth.** Until the goose came out of door,  
And stay'd the odds by adding four. 98

Now will I begin your moral, and do you follow with my l'envoy.

The fox, the ape, and the humble-bee,  
Were still at odds, being but three.

**Arm.** Until the goose came out of door,  
Staying the odds by adding four. 104

**Moth.** A good l'envoy, ending in the goose. Would you desire more?

**Cost.** The boy hath sold him a bargain, a  
goose, that's flat.

Sir, your pennyworth is good an your goose be fat. 108

To sell a bargain well is as cunning as fast and loose:  
Let me see; a fat l'envoy; ay, that's a fat goose.

**Arm.** Come hither, come hither. How did this argument begin?

**Moth.** By saying that a costard was broken in a shin. 112

Then call'd you for the l'envoy.

**Cost.** True, and I for a plantain: thus came your argument in;

Then the boy's fat l'envoy, the goose that you bought;

And he ended the market. 116

**Arm.** But tell me; how was there a costard broken in a shin?

**Moth.** I will tell you sensibly.

**Cost.** Thou hast no feeling of it, Moth: I will speak that l'envoy: 121

I, Costard, running out, that was safely within,  
Fell over the threshold and broke my shin. 122

**Arm.** We will talk no more of this matter. 124

**Cost.** Till there be more matter in the shin. 125

**Arm.** Sirrah Costard, I will enfranchise thee. 126

**Cost.** O! marry me to one Frances: I smell some l'envoy, some goose, in thus. 128

**Arm.** By my sweet soul, I mean setting thee at liberty, enfreeding thy person: thouwert immured, restrained, captivated, bound.

**Cost.** True, true, and now you will be my purgation and let me loose. 133

**Arm.** I give thee thy liberty, set thee from durance; and in lieu thereof, impose upon thee nothing but this:—[Giving a letter.] Bear this significant to the country maid Jaquenetta. 137

[Giving money.] There is remuneration; for the best ward of mine honour is rewarding my dependents. Moth, follow. 141

[Exit. Moth. Like the sequel, I. Signior Costard, adieu.

**Cost.** My sweet ounce of man's flesh! my inexion Jew! 144

[Exit MOTH.

Now will I look to his remuneration. Remuneration! O! that's the Latin word for three farthings: three farthings, remuneration. 'What's the price of this inkle? 'One penny. 'No, I'll give you a remuneration:' why, it carries it. Remuneration! why, it is a fairer name than French crown. I will never buy and sell out of this word.

**Enter BROWNE.**

**Ber.** O! my good knave Costard, exceedingly well met. 152

**Cost.** Pray you, sir, how much carnation riband may a man buy for a remuneration?

**Ber.** What is a remuneration?

**Cost.** Marry, sir, halfpenny farthing. 156

**Ber.** Why then, three-farthings-worth of silk.

**Cost.** I thank your worship. God be wi' you! 160

**Ber.** Stay, slave; I must employ thee: As thou wilt win my favour, good my knave,
Do one thing for me that I shall entreat.
Cost. When would you have it done, sir?
Ber. O, this afternoon. 164
Cost. Well, I will do it, sir! fare you well.
Ber. O, thou knowest not what it is.
Cost. I shall know, sir, when I have done it.
Ber. Why, villain, thou must know first. 168
Cost. I will come to your worship to-morrow morning.
Ber. It must be done this afternoon. Hark, slave, it is but this:
The princess comes to hunt here in the park,
And in her train there is a gentle lady:
When tongues speak sweetly, then they name her name,
And Rosaline they call her: ask for her 176
And to her white hand see thou do command
This seal'd-up counsel. [Gives him a shilling.]
There's thy gerdon: go.
Cost. Garden, O sweet garden! better than remuneration; a 'leven-pence farthing better.
Most sweet garden! I will do it, sir, in print
Garden! remuneration! [Exit. 178
Ber. And I,—
Forsooth, in love! I, that have been love's whip;
A very beadle to a humorous sigh;
A critic, nay, a night-watch constable,
A domineering pedant o'er the boy,
Than whom no mortal so magnificent!
This wimpled, whining, purblind, wayward boy,
This senior-junior, giant-dwarf, Dan Cupid;
Regent of love-rimes, lord of folded arma,
The anointed sovereign of sighs and groans,
Lieber of all loiterers and malecontents,
Dread prince of plackets, king of codpieces,
Solo imperator and great general
Of trotting partors: O my little heart!
And I to be a corporal of his field,
And wear his colours like a tumbler's hoop!
What! I love! I sue! I seek! I write!
A woman that is like a German clock,
Still a-repairing, ever out of frame,
And never going aright, being a watch,
But being watch'd that it may still go right!
Nay, to be perjur'd, which is worst of all; 204
And, among three, to love the worst of all;
A wighty wanton with a velvet brow,
With two pitch balls stuck in her face for eyes;
Ay, and, by heaven, one that will do the deed
Though Argus were her eunuch and her guard:
And I to sigh for her! to watch for her!
To pray for her! Go to; it is a plague
That Cupid will impose for my neglect
Of his almighty dreadful little might.
Well, I will love, write, sigh, pray, sue, and groan:
Some men must love my lady, and some Joan.
[Exit. 212

ACT IV.

SCENE I.—The King of Navarre's Park.
Enter the PRINCESS, ROSALINE, MARIA, KATHARINE, BOYET, Lords, Attendants, and a Forester.

Prin. Was that the king, that spurr'd his horse so hard
Against the steep uprising of the hill?
Boyet. I know not; but I think it was not be.
Prin. Whoe'er a' was, a' show'd a mounting mind.
For. Hereby, upon the edge of yonder coppice;
A stand where you may make the fairest shoot.
Prin. I thank my beauty, I am fair that shoot,
And thereupon thou speak'st the fairest shoot.
For. Pardon me, madam, for I meant not so.
Prin. What, what? first praise me, and again
say no?
O short-lived prude! Not fair? allack for woe!
For. Yes, madam, fair.
Prin. Nay, never paint me now: 16
Where fair is not, praise cannot mend the brow.
Here, good my glass:—[Gives money.] Take this
for telling true:
Fair payment for foul words is more than due.
For. Nothing but fair is that which you inherit.
Prin. See, see! my beauty will be sav'd by
merit.
O hersay in fair, fit for these days!
A giving hand, though foul, shall have fair
praise.
But come, the bow: now mercy goes to kill,
And shooting well is then accounted ill.
Thus will I save my credit in the shoot:
Not wounding, pity would not let me 'do';
If wounding, then it was to show my skill,
That more for praise than purpose meant to
kill.
And out of question so it is sometimes,
Glory grows guilty of detested crimes,
When, for fame's sake, for praise, an outward
part,
32
We bend to that the working of the heart;
As I for praise alone now seek to spill
The poor deer's blood, that my heart means no
ill.
Boyet. Do not curst wives hold that self-
sovereignty
Only for praise' sake, when they strive to be
Lords o'er their lords?
Prin. Only for praise; and praise we may afford
To any lady that subdues a lord. 40

Enter Costard.

Boy. Here comes a member of the common-wealth.

Cost. God dig-you-den all! Pray you, which is the head lady?

Prin. Thou shalt know her, fellow, by the rest that have no heads.

Cost. Which is the greatest lady, the highest?

Prin. The thickest, and the tallest.

Cost. The thickest, and the tallest! it is so; truth is truth. 48

An your waist, mistress, were as slender as my wit.

One o' these maids' girdles for your waist should be fit.

Are not you the chief woman? you are the thickest here.

Prin. What's your will, sir? what's your will?

Cost. I have a letter from Monsieur Berowne to one Lady Rosaline. 53

Prin. O! thy letter, thy letter; he's a good friend of mine.

Stand aside, good bearer. Boyet, you can carve;
Break up this capon.

Boyet. I am bound to serve. 56

This letter is mistook; it importeth none here:
It is writ to Jaquenetta.

Prin. We will read it, I swear.

Break the neck of the wax, and every one give ear.

Boyet. By heaven, that thou art fair, is most infaillible; true, that thou art beauteous; truth itself, that thou art lovely. More fairer than fair, beautiful than beauteous, truer than truth itself, have commiseration on thy heroidal vessel! The magnanimous and most illustrate king Cophetua set eye upon the pernicious and indigitate beggar Zenopphon, and he it was that might rightly say veni, vidi, vici; which to anatomize in the vulgar—O base and obscure vulgar!—videolaet, he came, and saw, and overcame: he came, one; saw, two; overcome, three. Who came? the king: Why did he come? to see: Why did he see? to overcome: To whom came he? to the beggar: What saw he? the beggar. Whom overcame he? the beggar. The conclusion is victory: on whose side? the king's; the captive is enriched: on whose side? the beggar's. The catastrophe is a nuptial: on whose side? the king's, no, on both in one, or one in both. I am the king, for so stands the comparison; thou the beggar, for so witnesseth thy lowliness. Shall I command thy love? I may: Shall I enforce thy love? I could: Shall I entreat thy love? I will. What shall thou exchange for rags? robes; for titles? titles; for thyself? me. Thus, expecting thy reply, I profane my lips on thy foot, my eyes on thy picture, and my heart on thy every part. 88

Thine, in the dearest design of Industry,

DON ADRIANO DE ARMADO.

Thus dost thou hear the Nemean lion roar
'Gainst thee, thou lamb, that standest as his prey:

Submit your princely feet before,
And he from forage will incline to play.
But if thou strive, poor soul, what art thou then?
Food for his rage, repasture for his den. 96

Prin. What plume of feathers is he that indited this letter?

What vane? what weathercock? did you ever hear better?

Boyet. I am much deceiv'd but I remember the style.

Prin. Else your memory is bad, going o'er it erewhile.

Boyet. This Armado is a Spaniard, that keeps here in court;

A phantasm, a Monarch, and one that makes sport
To the prince and his book-mates.

Prin. Thou, fellow, a word.

Who gave thee this letter?

Cost. I told you; my lord. 104

Prin. To whom shouldst thou give it?

Cost. From my lord to my lady.

Prin. From which lord, to which lady?

Cost. From my lord Berowne, a good master of mine,

To a lady of France, that he call'd Rosaline. 108

Prin. Thou hast mistaken his letter. Come, lords, away.

Here, sweet, put up this: 'twill be thine another day. [Exeunt PRINCESS and Train.

Boyet. Who is the suitor? who is the suitor?

Ros. Shall I teach you to know?

Boyet. Ay, my continent of beauty.

Ros. Why, she that bears the bow.

Finely put off!

Boyet. My lady goes to kill horns; but, if thou marry,

Hang me by the neck if horns that year mis-
carry.

Finely put on!

Ros. Well then, I am the shooter.

Boyet. And who is your deer?

Ros. If we choose by the horns, yourself: come not near.

Finely put on, indeed!
Love's Labour's Lost

Act IV, Sc. II.

Mar. You still wrangle with her, Boyet, and she strikes at the brow. 120

Boyet. But she herself is hit lower: have I hit her now?

Ros. Shall I come upon thee with an old saying, that was a man when King Pepin of France was a little boy, as touching the hit it?

Boyet. So may I answer thee with one as old, that was a woman when Queen Guinevere of Britain was a little wench, as touching the hit it. 128

Ros. Thou canst not hit it, hit it, hit it,

Thou canst not hit it, my good man.

Boyet. An I cannot, cannot, cannot,

An I cannot, another can. 132

[Execut ROSALINE and KATHARINE.

Cost. By my troth, most pleasant: how both did fit it!

Mar. A mark marvellous well shot, for they both did hit it.

Boyet. A mark! 0! mark but that mark; a mark, says my lady!

Let the mark have a prick in’t, to mete at, if it may be. 136

Mar. Wide o’ the bow hand! i’ faith your hand is out.

Cost. Indeed a’ must shoot nearer, or he’ll ne’er hit the clout.

Boyet. An’ if my hand be out, then belike your hand is in.

Cost. Then will she get the upshoot by cleaving the pin. 140

Mar. Come, come, you talk jestly; your lips grow foul.

Cost. She’s too hard for you at pricks, sir: challenge her to bowl.

Boyet. I fear too much rubbing. Good night, my good owle. [Execut BOYET and MARIA.

Cost. By my soul, a swain! a most simple clown!

Lord, lord how the ladies and I have put him down! 0’ my troth, most sweet jests! most incony vulgar wit!

When it comes so smoothly off, so obliviously, as it were, so fit,

Armado, o’ the one side, O! a most dainty man!

Tose him walk before a lady, and to bear her fan!

To see him kiss his hand! and how most sweetly a’ will swear! 146

And his page o’ t’other side, that handful of wit! Ah! heavens, it is a most pathetical nit.

[Shouting within.] Sola, sola! [Exit running.

Scene II.—The Same.

Enter HOLOFERNES, SIR NATHANIEL, and DULL.

Nath. Very reverend sport, truly: and done in the testimony of a good conscience.

Hol. The deer was, as you know, sanguis, in blood; ripe as a pomewater, who now hangeth like a jewel in the ear of caelo, the sky, the welkin, the heaven; and anon falleth like a crab on the face of terra, the soil, the land, the earth. 7

Nath. Truly, Master Holofernes, the epithets are sweetly varied, like a scholar at the least: but, sir, I assure ye, it was a buck of the first head.

Hol. Sir Nathaniel, haud credo. 11

Dull. 'Twas not a haud credo; ’twas a pricket.

Hol. Most barbarous intimation! yet a kind of insinuation, as it were, in via, in way, of explication; facere, as it were, replication, or, rather, ostentare, to show, as it were, his inclination,—after his undressed, unpolished, uneducated, unpruned, untrained, or, rather, unlettered, or, ratherest, unconfirmed fashion,—to insert again my haud credo for a deer. 20

Dull. I said the deer was not a hand credo; ’twas a pricket.

Hol. Twice sod simplicity, bis coccus!

O! thou monster Ignorance, how deformed dost thou look! 24

Nath. Sir, he hath not fed of the dainties that are bred of a book;

he hath not eat paper, as it were; he hath not drunk ink: his intellect is not replenished; he is only an animal, only sensible in the duller parts:

And such barren plants are set before us, that we thankful should be,

Which we of taste and feeling are, for those parts that do fructify in us more than he;

For as it would ill become me to be vain, indiscreet, or a fool:

So, were there a patch set on learning, to see him in a school: 32

But, omne bene, say I; being of an old Father’s mind,

Many can brook the weather that love not the wind.

Dull. You two are book-men: can you tell by your wit,

What was a month old at Cain’s birth, that’s not five weeks old as yet? 36

Hol. Dictynna, goodman Dull: Dictynna, goodman Dull.

Dull. What is Dictynna?

Nath. A title to Phoebe, to Luna, to the moon.

Hol. The moon was a month old when Adam was no more; 40

And raught not to five weeks when he came to five-score.

The allusion holds in the exchange.

Dull. ’Tis true indeed: the collusion holds in the exchange.

Hol. God comfort thy capacity! I say, the allusion holds in the exchange. 45

Dull. And I say the pollution holds in the
exchange, for the moon is never but a month old; and I say beside that 'twas a pricket that the princess killed.

Hol. Sir Nathaniel, will you hear an extem- 
poral epitaph on the death of the deer? and, to 
humour the ignorant, I have call'd the deer the 
princess killed, a pricket.

Nath. Perge, good Master Holofernes, perge; 
so it shall please you to abrogate scurrility.

Hol. I will something affect the letter; for it 
argues facility.

The preyful princess pierc'd and prick'd a pretty 
pleasing pricket;

Some say a sore; but not a sore, till now 
made sore with shooting.
The dogs did yell; put 1 to sore, then sorel jumps 
from thicket;

Or pricket, sore, or else sorel; the people fall a 
hooting.

If sore be sore, then L to sore makes fifty sores 
one sore!

Of one sore I a hundred make, by adding but 
one more L.

Nath. A rare talent!

Dull. [Aside.] If a talent be a claw, look how 
he claws him with a talent.

Hol. This is a gift that I have, simple, simple; a foolish extravagant spirit, full of forms, figures, 
shapes, objects, ideas, apprehensions, motions, 
revolutions: these are begot in the ventricle of 
memory, nourished in the womb of pia mater, 
and delivered upon the mellowing of occasion. 
But the gift is good in those in whom it is acute, 
and I am thankful for it.

Nath. Sir, I praise the Lord for you, and so 
may my parishioners; for their sons are well 
tutored by you, and their daughters profit very 
greatly under you: you are a good member of 
the commonwealth.

Hol. Mehercle! if their sons be ingenuous, they 
shall want no instruction; if their daughters be 
capable, I will put it to them. But, vir sapit qui 
pauca loquitur. A soul feminine saluteth us.

Enter JAQUENETTA and COSTARD.

Jaq. God give you good morrow, Master parson.

Hol. Master parson, quasi pers-on. An if 
one should be pierced, which is the one?

Cost. Marry, Master schoolmaster, he that is 
likest to a hoghead.

Hol. Piercing a hoghead! a good lustre of 
conceit in a turf of earth; fire enough for a flint, 
pearl enough for a swine: 'tis pretty; it is well.

Jaq. Good Master parson [giving a letter to 
NATHANIEL], be so good as read me this letter: 
it was given me by Costard, and sent me from 
Don Armado: I beseech you, read it.

Hol. Fauste, precor gelida quando pecus 
Omne sub umbra Ruminal, and so forth. Ah! 
good old Mantuan. I may speak of thee as the 
traveller doth of Venice:

—Venetia, Veneta, 
Chi non te vede, non te pretia.

Old Mantuan! old Mantuan! Who under-
standeth thee not, loves thee not. Ut, re, sol, 
la, mi, fa. Under pardon, sir, what are the con-
tents? or, rather, as Horace says in his—What 
my soul, verses?

Nath. Ay, sir, and very learned.

Hol. Let me hear a staff, a stanza, a verse: 
lege, domine.

Nath. If love make me forsworn, how shall I 
swear to love?

Ah! never faith could hold, if not to beauty 
vow'd;

Though to myself forsworn, to thee I'll faithful 
prove;

Those thoughts to me were oaks, to thee like 
seisers how'd

Study his bins leaves and makes his book thine eyes.
Where all those pleasures live that art would 
comprehend:

If knowledge be the mark, to know thee shall suffice
Well learned is that tongue that well can thee 
command;

All ignorant that soul that sees thee without 
won'der;

Which is to me some praise that I thy parts 
admire

Thy eye Jove's lightning bears, thy voice his 
dreadful thunder,

Which, not to anger bent, is music and sweet 
fire.

Celestial as thou art, O! pardon love this wrong.
That sings heaven's praise with such an earthly 
tongue!

Hol. You find not the apostrophas, and so 
miss the accent: let me supervise the canzonet. 
Here are only numbers ratified; but, for the 
elegancy, facility, and golden cadence of poesy, 
care. Ovidius Naso was the man: and why, 
indeed, Naso, but for smelling out the odorifer-
ous flowers of fancy, the jerks of invention? 
Imitari is nothing; so doth the hound his 
master, the ape his keeper, the 'tired horse his 
rider. But, damosella virgin, was this directed 
to you?

Jaq. Ay, sir; from one Monsieur Berowne, 
one of the strange queen's lords.

Hol. I will overglance the superscript. To 
the snow-white hand of the most beauteous 
Lady Rosaline. I will look again on the intel-
lect of the letter, for the nomination of the party 
writing to the person written unto: Your lady-
ship's, in all desired employment, BEROWNE. —
Sir Nathaniel, this Berowne is one of the notaries 
with the king; and here he hath framed a letter 
to a sequent of the stranger queen's, which, acci-
Enter the King, with a paper.

King. Ah me!

Ber. [Aside.] Shot, by heaven! Proceed, sweet Cupid: thou hast thumped him with thy bird-bolt under the left pap. In faith, secrets!

King. So sweet a kiss the golden sun gives not To those fresh mornings drops upon the rose, As thy eye-beams, when their fresh rays have smote The night of dew that on my cheeks down flows: Nor shines the silver moon one half so bright Through the transparent bosom of the deep, As doth thy face through tears of mine give light, Thou shin'st in every tear that I do weep. No drop but as a coach doth carry thee; So ridest thou triumphing in my woe. Do but behold the tears that swell in me, And they thy glory through my grief will show. But do not love thyself, then thou wilt keep My tears for glasses, and still make me weep. O queen of queens! how far thou dost excel, No thought can think, nor tongue of mortal tell How shall she know my griefs? I'll drop the paper:

Sweet leaves, shade folly. Who is he comes here?

[Steps aside. What, Longaville! and reading! listen, ear.]

Enter LONGAVILLE, with a paper.

Ber. Now, in thy likeness, one more fool appear!

Long. Ay me! I am forsown.

Ber. Why, he comes in like a perjurie, wearing papers.

King. In love, I hope: sweet fellowship in shame!

Ber. One drunkard loves another of the name.

Long. Am I the first that have been perjur'd so?

Ber. I could put thee in comfort: not by two that I know:

Thou mak'st the triumph, the corner-cap of society,
The shape of love's Tyburn, that hangs up simplicity.

Long. I fear these stubborn lines lack power to move.

O sweet Maria, empress of my love!

These numbers will I tear, and write in prose.

Ber. O! rimes are guards on wanton Cupid's hose:

Disfigure not his slop.

Long. This same shall go.

Did not the heavenly rhetoric of thine eye, 'Gainst whom the world cannot hold argument, Persuade my heart to this false perjury? Vows for these broke deserve not punishment. A woman I forswore; but I will prove,

Thou being a goddess, I forswore not thee:
ACT IV, SC. III.

LOVE'S LABOUR'S LOST

My vow was earthly, thou a heavenly love;
Thy grace, being gain'd, cures all disgrace in me.
Vows are but breath, and breath a vapour is: 68
Then thou, fair sun, which on my earth dost shine,
Exhal'st this vapour-vow; in thee it is:
If broken, then, it is no fault of mine:
If by me broke, what fool is not so wise 72
To lose an oath to win a paradise!

Ber. This is the liver-vein, which makes flesh a deity;
A green goose a goddess; pure, pure idolatry.
God amend us, God amend! we are much out o' the way. 76

Long. By whom shall I send thus?—Company! stay.  [Steps aside.

Ber. All hid, all hid; an old infant play.
Like a demi-god here sit I in the sky,
And wretched fools' secrets heedfully o'er-eye. 80
More sacks to the mill! O heavens! I have my wish.

Enter DUMAINE, with a paper.

Dumaine transform'd: four woodcocks in a dish!

Dum. O most divine Kate!
Ber. O most profane coxcomb! 84

Dum. By heaven, the wonder of a mortal eye!
Ber. By earth, she is but corporal; there you lie.

Dum. Her amber hairs for soul have amber quoted.
Ber. An amber-colour'd raven was well noted.

Dum. As upright as the cedar.

Ber. Stoop, I say; 89

Her shoulder is with child.

Dum. As fair as day.

Ber. Ay, as some days; but then no sun must shine.

Dum. O! that I had my wish.

Long. And I had mine! 92

King. And I mine too, good Lord!
Ber. Amen, so I had mine. Is not that a good word?

Dum. I would forget her; but a fever she Reigns in my blood, and will remember'd be. 96

Ber. A fever in your blood! why, then incision
Would let her out in saucers: sweet misprision!

Dum. Once more I'll read the ode that I have writ.

Ber. Once more I'll mark how love can vary wit.

Dum. On a day, slack the day!

Love, whose month is ever May,
Spied a blossom passing fair
Playing in the wanton air; 104

Through the velvet leaves the wind,
All unseen, 'gan passage find;
That the lover, sick to death,
Wish'd himself the heaven's breath. 108

Air, quoth he, thy cheeks may blow;
Air, would I might triumph so!
But alack! my hand is sworn
Ne'er to pluck thee from thy thorn:
Vow, alack! for youth unmet,
Youth so apt to pluck a sweet.
Do not call it sin in me,
That I am forsworn for thee;
Thou for whom e'en Jove would swear
June but an Ethlop were;
And deny himself for Jove,
Turning mortal for thy love. 120

This will I send, and something else more plain,
That shall express my true love's fasting pain.
O! would the King, Berowne, and Longaville
Were lovers too. Ill, to example ill,

Would from my forehead wipe a perjur'd note;
For none offend where all alike do dote.

Long. [Advancing.] Dumaine, thy love is far from charity,
That in love's grief desir'd society:
You may look pale, but I should blush, I know,
To be o'errheard and taken napping so.

King. [Advancing.] Come, sir, you blush: as his your case is such;
You chide at him, offending twice as much: 132
You do not love Maria; Longaville
Did never sonnet for her sake compile,
Nor never lay his wreathed arms athwart
His loving bosom to keep down his heart. 136
I have been closely shrouded in this bush,
And mark'd you both, and for you both did blush.
I heard your guilty rimes, observ'd your fashion,
Saw sighs reek from you, noted well your passion:
Ay me! says one; O Jove! the other cries; 141
One, her hairs were gold, crystal the other's eyes:

[To LONGAVILLE.] You would for paradise break faith and troth;
[To DUMAINE.] And Jove, for your love, would infringe an oath. 144

What will Berowne say, when that he shall hear
A faith infringed, which such zeal did swear?
How will he scorn! how will he spend his will!
How will he triumph, leap and laugh at it! 148

For all the wealth that ever I did see,
I would not have him know so much by me.

Ber. Now step I forth to whip hypocrisy.

[Descends from the tree.

Ah! good my liege, I pray thee, pardon me: 152
Good heart! what grace hast thou, thus to repro

These worms for loving, that art most in love?
Your eyes do make no coaches; in your tears
There is no certain princess that appears:

'Though not to perjur'd, 'tis a hateful thing:
Tush! none but minstrels like of sonneting.
But are you not ashamed? nay, are you not,
All three of you, to be thus much o'ershout? 150
You found his mote; the king your mote did see;
But I a beam do find in each of three.
O! what a scene of foolery have I seen,
Of sighs, of groans, of sorrow, and of teen; 164
O me! with what strict patience have I sat,
To see a king transformed to a gnat;
To see great Hercules whipping a gig,
And profound Solomon to tune a jig; 168
And Nestor play at push-pin with the boys,
And critic Timon laugh at idle toys!
Where lies thy grief? O! tell me, good Dumaine,
And, gentle Longaville, where lies thy pain? 172
And where my liege's? all about the breast:
A caudle, ho!

King. Too bitter is thy jest.
Are we betray'd thus to thy over-view?

Ber. Not you to me, but I betray'd by you:
I, that am honest; I, that hold it sin
To break the vow I am engaged in;
I am betray'd, by keeping company
With men like men, men of inconstancy. 180
When shall you see me write a thing in rime?
Or groan for Joan? or spend a minute's time
In prunning me? When shall you hear that I
Will praise a hand, a foot, a face, an eye,
A gait, a state, a brow, a breast, a waist,
Leg, a limb?—

King. Soft! Whither away so fast?
true man or a thief that gallops so?
Ber. I post from love; good lover, let me go.

Enter Jaquenetta and Costard.

Jaq. God bless the king!

King. What present hast thou there?
Cost. Some certain treason.

King. What makes treason here?
Cost. Nay, it makes nothing, sir.

King. If it mar nothing neither,
The treason and you go in peace away together.

Jaq. I beseech you, Grace, let this letter be read:
[Give the letter to him.

Ber. Where hast thou it?

Jaq. Of Costard.

King. Where hast thou it?
Cost. Of Dun Adramadio, Dun Adramadio.

[BEROWNE TEARS THE LETTER.

King. How now! what is in you? why dost
thou tear it?

Ber. A toy, my liege, a toy: your Grace needs
not fear it.

Long. It did move him to passion, and therefore
let's hear it.

Dum. [Picking up the pieces.] It is Berowne's
writing, and here is his name.

Ber. [To Costard.] Ah, you whoreson logger-
head, you were born to do me shame. 204
Guilty, my lord, guilty; I confess, I confess.

King. What?

Ber. That you three fools lack'd me fool to
make up the mess;
He, he, and you, and you my liege, and I, 208
Are pick-purses in love, and we deserve to die.
Ol' dismiss this audience, and I shall tell you
more.

Dum. Now the number is even.

Ber. True, true; we are four.

Will these turtles be gone?

King. Hence, sirs; away! 212
Cost. Walk aside the true folk, and let the
traitors stay.

[Exeunt Costard and Jaquenetta.

Ber. Sweet lords, sweet lovers, O! let us em-
brace.

As true we are as flesh and blood can be:
The sea will ebb and fowl, heaven show his face;
Young blood doth not obey an old decree: 217
We cannot cross the cause why we were born;
Therefore, of all hands must we be forsworn.

King. What! did these rent lines show some
love of thine?

Ber. 'Did they,' quoth you? Who sees the
heavenly Rosaline,
That, like a rude and savage man of Inde,
At the first opening of the gorgeous east,
Bows not his vassal head, and, stricken blind,
Kisses the base ground with obedient breast?
What peremptory eagle-sighted eye
Dares look upon the heaven of her brow,
That is not blinded by her majesty? 228

King. What zeal, what fury hath inspir'd thee
now?

My love, her mistress, is a gracious moon;
She, an attending star, scarce seen a light.

Ber. My eyes are then no eyes, nor I Berowne:
Ol' but for my love, day would turn to night.

Of all complexions the cull'd sovereignty
Do meet, as at a fair, in her fair cheek;

Where several worthies make one dignity, 236
Where nothing wants that want itself doth seek.

Lend me the flourish of all gentle tongues,—
Flé, painted rhetoric! O! she needs it not:

To things of sale a seller's praise belongs; 240
She passes praise; then praise too short doth blot.

A wither'd hermit, five-score winters worn,
Might shake off fifty, looking in her eye:
Beauty doth varnish age, as if new-born, and gives the crutch the cradle’s infancy. 244
O! 'tis the sun that maketh all things shine.

King. By heaven, thy love is black as ebony.

Ber. Is ebony like her? O wood divine! 248
A wife of such wood were felicity.

O! who can give an oath? where is a book?
That I may swear beauty doth beauty lack,
If that she learn not of her eye to look:
No face is fair that is not full so black.

King. O paradox! Black is the badge of hell,
The hue of dungeons and the scowl of night;
And beauty’s crest becomes the heavens well. 256

Ber. Devils soonest tempt, resembling spirits of light.
O! if in black my lady’s brows be deck’d,
It mourns that painting and usurping hair
Should ravish doters with a false aspect;
And therefore is she born to make black fair.
Her favour turns the fashion of the days,
For native blood is counted painting now;
And therefore red, that would avoid dispraise,
Paints itself black, to imitate her brow. 265

Dum. To look like her are chimney-sweepers black.

Long. And since her time are colliers counted bright.

King. And Ethiops of their sweet complexion crack. 268

Dum. Dark needs no candles now, for dark is light.

Ber. Your mistresses dare never come in rain,
For fear their colours should be wash’d away.

King. 'Twere good yours did; for, sir, to tell you plain,
I'll find a fairer face not wash’d to-day.

Ber. I'll prove her fair, or talk till doomsday here.

King. No devil will fright thee then so much as she.

Dum. I never knew man hold vile stuff so dear.

Long. Look, here’s thy love: [showing his shoe.] my foot and her face see. 277

Ber. O! if the streets were paved with thine eyes,
Her feet were much too dainty for such tread.

Dum. O vile! then, as she goes, what upward lies
The street should see as she walk’d over head.

King. But what of this? Are we not all in love?
Ber. Nothing so sure; and thereby all forsworn.

King. Then leave this chat; and good Berowne, now prove
Our loving lawful, and our faith not torn.

Dum. Ay, marry, there; some flattery for this evil.

Long. O! some authority how to proceed;
Some tricks, some quillets, how to cheat the devil.

Dum. Some salve for perjury.

Ber. O, 'tis more than need. 289
Have at you, then, affection’s men-at-arms:
Consider what you first did swear unto,
To fast, to study, and to see no woman; 292
Flat treason ‘gainst the kingly state of youth.
Say, can you fast? your stomachs are too young,
And abstinence engenders maladies.
And where that you have vow’d to study, lords,
In that each of you hath forsworn his book, 297
Can you still dream and pore and thereon look?
For when would you, my lord, or you, or you,
Have found the ground of study’s excellence
Without the beauty of a woman’s face?
From women’s eyes this doctrine I derive:
They are the ground, the books, the academes,
From whence doth spring the true Promethean fire. 304

Why, universal plodding poisons up
The nimble spirits in the arteries,
As motion and long-during action tires
The sinewy vigour of the traveller. 308
Now, for not looking on a woman’s face,
You have in that forsworn the use of eyes,
And study too, the causer of your vow;
For where is any author in the world
Teaches such beauty as a woman’s eye?
Learning is but an adjunct to ourself,
And where we are our learning likewise is:
Then when ourselves we see in ladies’ eyes, 316
Do we not likewise see our learning there?
O! we have made a vow to study, lords,
And in that vow we have forsworn our books:
For when would you, my liege, or you, or you,
In leaden contemplation have found out
Such fiery numbers as the prompting eyes
Of beauty’s tutors have enrich’d you with?
Other slow arts entirely keep the brain,
And therefore, finding barren practisers,
Scarcely show a harvest of their heavy toil;
But love, first learned in a lady’s eyes,
Lives not alone immersed in the brain, 328
But, with the motion of all elements,
Courses as swift as thought in every power,
And gives to every power a double power,
Above their functions and their offices. 332
It adds a precious seeing to the eye;
A lover’s eyes will gaze an eagle blind;
A lover’s ear will hear the lowest sound,
When the suspicious head of theft is stopp’d. 336
Love’s feeling is more soft and sensible
Than are the tender horns of cockled snails:
Love’s tongue proves dainty Bacchus gross in taste.
For valour, is not Love a Hercules,
Still climbing trees in the Hesperides?
Subtle as Sphinx; as sweet and musical
As bright Apollo’s lute, strung with his hair;
And when Love speaks, the voice of all the gods
Makes heaven drowse with the harmony.
Never durst poet touch a pen to write
Until his ink were temper’d with Love’s
sighs;
Or then his lines would ravish savage ears,
And plant in tyrants mild humility.
From women’s eyes this doctrine I derive:
They sparkle still the right Prometheus fire;
They are the books, the arts, the academies,
That show, contain, and nourish all the world;
Else none at all in aught proves excellent.
Then fools you were these women to forswear,
Or, keeping what is sworn, you will prove
fools.
For wisdom’s sake, a word that all men love,
Or for love’s sake, a word that loves all men,
Or for men’s sake, the authors of these women;
Or women’s sake, by whom we men are men,
Let us once lose our oaths to find ourselves,
Or else we lose ourselves to keep our oaths.
It is religion to be thus forsworn;
For charity itself fulfils the law;
And who can sever love from charity?
King. Saint Cupid, then! and, soldiers, to the
field!
Ber. Advance your standards, and upon them,
lords!
Pell-mell, down with them! but he first advis’d,
In conflict that you get the sun of them.
Long. Now to plain-dealing; lay these glozes
by;
Shall we resolve to woo these girls of France?
King. And win them too: therefore let us
devise
Some entertainment for them in their tents.
Ber. First, from the park let us conduct them
thither;
Then homeward every man attach the hand
Of his fair mistress: in the afternoon
We will with some strange pastime solace them,
Such as the shortness of the time can shape;
For revels, dances, masks, and merry hours,
For their fair Love, strewing her way with flowers.
King. Away, away! no time shall be omitted,
That will betime, and may by us be fitted.
Ber. Allons! allons! Sow’d cockle reap’d no
corn;
And justice always whirrs in equal measure:
Light wenches may prove plagues to men for-
sworm;
If so, our copper buys no better treasure.

[Exeunt.]
Moth. Yes, yes; he teaches boys the hornbook. What is a, b, spell backward, with the horn on his head? 52
Hol. Ba, puellula, with a horn added.
Moth. Ba! most silly sheep with a horn. You hear his learning.
Hol. Quis, quis, thou consonant? 56
Moth. The third of the five vowels, if you repeat them; or the fifth, if I.
Hol. I will repeat them,—a, e, i,—
Moth. The sheep; the other two concludes it,—o, u.
Arm. Now, by the salt wave of the Mediterranean, a sweet touch, a quick venem of wit! snip, snap, quick and home! it rejoiceth my intellect: true wit! 65
Moth. Offered by a child to an old man; which is wit-old.
Hol. What is the figure? what is the figure?
Moth. Horns. 69
Hol. Thou disputest like an infant; go, whip thy gig.
Moth. Lend me your horn to make one, and I will whip about your infamy circum circa. A gig of a cuckold’s horn. 74
Cost. An I had but one penny in the world, thou shouldst have it to buy gingerbread. Hold, there is the very remuneration I had of thy master, thou halfpenny purse of wit, thou pigeon-egg of discretion. Of! an the heavens were so pleased that thou wert but my bastard, what a joyful father wouldst thou make me. Go to; thou hast it ad dunghill, at the fingers’ ends, as they say. 83
Hol. O! I smell false Latin; dunghill for unguem.
Arm. Arts-man, praebula: we will be singled from the barbarous. Do you not educate youth at the charge-house on the top of the mountain? 89
Hol. Or mons, the hill.
Arm. At your sweet pleasure, for the mountain. 92
Hol. I do, sans question.
Arm. Sir, it is the king’s most sweet pleasure and affection to congratulate the princess at her pavilion in the posterior of this day, which the rude multitude call the afternoon. 97
Hol. The posterior of the day, most generous sir, is liable, congruent, and measurable for the afternoon: the word is well culled, chose, sweet and apt, I do assure you, sir; I do assure.
Arm. Sir, the king is a noble gentleman, and my familiar, I do assure ye, very good friend. For what is inward between us, let it pass: I do beseech thee, remember thy curtesy; I beseech thee, apparel thy head: and among other importunate and most serious designs, and of great import indeed, too, but let that pass: for I must tell thee, it will please his Grace, by the world, sometime to lean upon my poor shoulder, and with his royal finger, thus daily with my excrement, with my mustachio: but, sweet heart, let that pass. By the world, I recount no fable: some certain special honours it pleaseth his greatness to impart to Armado, a soldier, a man of travel, that hath seen the world: but let that pass. The very all of all is, but, sweet heart, I do implore secrecy, that the king would have me present the princess, sweet chuck, with some delightful ostentation, or abow, or pageant, or antick, or fire-work. Now, understanding that the curate and your sweet self are good at such eruptions and sudden breaking out of mirth, as it were, I have acquainted you withal, to the end to crave your assistance. 126
Hol. Sir, you shall present before her the Nine Worthies. Sir Nathanial, as concerning some entertainment of time, some show in the posterior of this day, to be rendered by our assistance, at the king’s command, and this most gallant, illustrate, and learned gentleman, before the princess; I say, none so fit as to present the Nine Worthies.
Nath. Where will you find men worthy enough to present them? 136
Hol. Joshua, yourself; myself, or this gallant gentleman, Judas Maccabœus; this swain, because of his great limb, or joint, shall pass Pompey the Great; the page, Hercules,— 140
Arm. Pardon, sir; error: he is not quantity enough for that Worthy’s thumb: he is not so big as the end of his club.
Hol. Shall I have audience? he shall present Hercules in minority: his enter and exit shall be strangling a snake; and I will have an apology for that purpose. 147
Moth. An excellent device! so, if any of the audience hisse, you may cry, ‘Well done, Hercules! now thou crushest the snake!’ that is the way to make an offence gracions, though few have the grace to do it. 152
Arm. For the rest of the Worthies?—
Hol. I will play three myself.
Moth. Thrice-worthy gentleman!
Arm. Shall I tell you a thing? 156
Hol. We attend.
Arm. We will have, if this fadge not, an antick. I beseech you, follow.
Hol. Viu, goodman Dull! thou hast spoken no word all this while. 161
Dull. Nor understood none neither, sir.
Hol. Allons! we will employ thee.
Dull. I'll make one in a dance, or so; or I
will play the tabor to the Worthies, and let them
dance the hay. 166
Hol. Most dull, honest Dull, to our sport,
away!  [Exeunt.

Scene II.—The same. Before the Princess’s
Pavilion.

Enter the Princess, Katharine, Rosaline,
and Maria.

Prin. Sweet hearts, we shall be rich ere we
depart,
If fairings come thus plentifully in:
Lady wall’d about with diamonds!
Look you what I have from the loving king. 4
Rosal. Madam, came nothing else along with
that?
Prin. Nothing but this! yes, as much love in
rime.
As would be cram’d up in a sheet of paper,
Writ o’ both sides the leaf, margent and all, 8
That he was fair to seal on Cupid’s name.
Rosal. That was the way to make his godhead
wax;
For he hath been five thousand years a boy.
Kath. Ay, and a shrewd unhappy gallows too.
Rosal. You’ll ne’er be friends with him; a
kill’d your sister.
Kath. He made her melancholy, sad, and
heavy;
And so she died: had she been light, like you,
Of such a merry, nimble, stirring spirit. 16
She might ha’ been a grandam ere she died;
And so may you, for a light heart lives long.
Rosal. What’s your dark meaning, mouse, of
this light word?
Kath. A light condition in a beauty dark. 20
Rosal. We need more light to find your mean-
ing out.
Kath. You’ll mar the light by taking it in
snuff;
Therefore, I’ll darkly end the argument.
Rosal. Look, what you do, you do it still i’ the
dark.
Kath. So do not you, for you are a light
wrench.
Rosal. Indeed I weigh not you, and therefore
light.
Kath. You weigh me not. 0! that’s you
care not for me.
Rosal. Great reason; for, ‘past cure is still
past care.’
Prin. Well banded both; a set of wit well
play’d.
But Rosaline, you have a favour too:
Who sent it? and what is it?

Rosal. I would you knew:
An if my face were but as fair as yours, 32
My favour were as great; be witness this.
Nay, I have verses too, I thank Berowne:
The numbers true; and, were the numb’ring too,
I were the fairest goddess on the ground: 36
I am compar’d to twenty thousand fairs.
O! he hath drawn my picture in his letter.
Prin. Anything like?
Rosal. Much in the letters, nothing in the praise.
Prin. Beauteous as ink; a good conclusion.
Rosal. ‘Ware pencils! how? let me not die
your debtor.
My red dominical, my golden letter: 44
O, that your face were not so full of O’s!
Kath. A pox of that jest! and beshrew all
shrovs!
Prin. But what was sent to you from fair
Dumaine?
Kath. Madam, this glove.
Prin. Did he not send you twain? 48
Kath. Yes, madam; and moreover,
Some thousand verses of a faithful lover:
A huge translation of hypocrisy,
Vilely compil’d, profound simplicity. 52
Mar. This, and these pearls to me sent
Longaville:
The letter is too long by half a mile.
Prin. I think no less. Dost thou not wish in
heart
The chain were longer and the letter short? 56
Mar. Ay, or I would these hands might never
part.
Prin. We are wise girls to mock our lovers so.
Rosal. They are worse fools to purchase mock-
ing so.
That same Berowne I’ll torture ere I go. 60
O that I knew he were but in by the week!
How I would make him fawn, and beg, and seek,
And wait the season, and observe the times,
And spend his prodigal wits in bootless rimes, 64
And shape his service wholly to my bests,
And make him proud to make me proud that
jests!
So perttaunt-like would I o’ersway his state
That he should be my fool, and I his fate. 68
Prin. None are so surely caught, when they
are catch’d,
As wit turn’d fool: folly, in wisdom hatch’d,
Hath wisdom’s warrant and the help of school
And wit’s own grace to grace a learned fool. 72
Rosal. The blood of youth burns not with such
excess
As gravity’s revolt to wantonness.
Mar. Folly in fools bears not so strong a note
As foolery in the wise, when wit doth dote; 76
Since all the power thereof it doth apply
To prove, by wit, worth in simplicity.

Enter Boyet.

Prin. Here comes Boyet, and mirth is in his face.

Boyet. O! I am stabb'd with laughter. Where's her Grace?

Prin. Thy news, Boyet?

Boyet. Prepare, madam, prepare!—
Arm, wenches, arm! encounters mounted are
Against your peace: Love doth approach disguis'd,
Armed in arguments; you'll be surpris'd:
Muster your wits; stand in your own defence;
Or hide your heads like cowards, and fly hence.

Prin. Saint Denis to Saint Cupid! What are they that charge their breath against us? say, scout, say.

Boyet. Under the cool shade of a sycamore
I thought to close mine eyes some half an hour,
When, lo! to interrupt my purpose rest,
Toward that shade I might behold addrest
The king and his companions: warily
I stole into a neighbour thicket by,
And overheard what you shall overhear;
That, by and by, disguis'd they will be here.

Their herald is a pretty knavish page,
That well by heart hath conn'd his embassage:
Action and accent did they teach him there;
'Thus must thou speak, and thus thy body bear.'
And ever and anon they made a doubt
Presence majestical would put him out;
'For,' quoth the king, 'an angel shalt thou see;
Yet fear not thou, but speak audaciously.'
The boy replied, 'An angel is not evil;
I should have fear'd her had she been a devil.'
With that all laugh'd and clapp'd him on the shoulder,
Making the bold wag by their praises bolder.
One rubb'd his elbow thus, and fleer'd, and swore
A better speech was never spoke before;
Another, with his finger and his thumb,
Cry'd 'Via! we will do't, come what will come;'
The third he caper'd and cried, 'All goes well;
The fourth turn'd on the toe, and down he fell.
With that, they all did tumble on the ground,
With such a zealous laughter, so profound,
That in this spleen ridiculous appears,
To check their folly, passion's solemn tears.

Prin. But what, but what, come they to visit us?

Boyet. They do, they do; and are apparell'd thus,

Like Muscovites or Russians, as I guess.
Their purpose is to parle, to court and dance;
And every one his love-feat will advance

Unto his several mistress, which they'll know
By favours several which they did bestow.

Prin. And will they so? the gallants shall be task'd:
For, ladies, we will every one be mask'd,
And not a man of them shall have the grace,
Despite of suit, to see a lady's face.
Hold, Rosaline, this favour thou shalt wear,
And then the king will court thee for his dear:
Hold, take thou this, my sweet, and give me thine,
So shall Berowne take me for Rosaline,
And change you favours too; so shall your loves Woo contrary, decry'd by these removes.

Ros. Come on, then; wear the favours most in sight.

Kath. But in this changing what is your intent?

Prin. The effect of my intent is, to cross theirs:
They do it but in mocking merriment;
And mock for mock is only my intent.

Their several counsels they unbosom shall
To loves mistook and so be mock'd withal
Upon the next occasion that we meet,
With visages display'd, to talk and greet.

Ros. But shall we dance, if they desire us to 't?

Prin. No, to the death, we will not move a foot:
Nor to their penn'd speech render we no grace;
But while 'tis spoke each turn away her face.

Boyet. Why, that contempt will kill the speaker's heart,
And quite divorce his memory from his part.

Prin. Therefore I do it; and I make no doubt,
The rest will ne'er come in, if he be out.

There's no such sport as sport o'erthrown,
To make theirs ours and ours none but our own:
So shall we stay, mocking intended game,
And they, well mock'd, depart away with shame.

[Trumpets sound within.

Boyet. The trumpet sounds: be mask'd; the maskers come.

[The Ladies mask.

Enter Blackamoors with music; Moth; the King, Berowne, Longaville, and Du-Maine in Russian habits, and masked.

Moth. All hail, the richest beauties on the earth!

Boyet. Beauties no richer than rich taffeta.

Moth. A holy parcel of the fairest dames,

[The Ladies turn their backs to him.

That ever turn'd their—backs—to mortal views!
Ber. Their eyes, villain, 'their eyes.'
Moth. That ever turn'd their eyes to mortal views!

Out—

Boyet. True; 'out,' indeed.

Out—

Boyet. True; 'out,' indeed.

186
Moth. 'Out of your favours, heavenly spirits, vouchsafe
Not to behold'—
Ber. 'Once to behold,' rogue. 168
Moth. 'Once to behold with your sun-beamed eyes,
— with your sun-beamed eyes'—
Boya. They will not answer to that epithet;
You were best call it 'daughter-beamed eyes.' 172
Moth. They do not mark me, and that brings me out.
Ber. Is this your perfectness? be gone, you rogue! 176
[Exit Moth.
Ros. What would these strangers? know their minds, Boya.
If they do speak our language, 'tis our will:
That some plain man recount their purposes:
Know what they would.
Boya. What would you with the princess?
Ber. Nothing but peace and gentle visitation.
Ros. What would they, say they? 181
Boya. Nothing but peace and gentle visitation.
Ros. Why, that they have; and bid them so be gone.
Boya. She says, you have it, and you may be gone. 184
King. Say to her, we have measured many miles,
To tread a measure with her on this grass.
Boya. They say, that they have measured many a mile,
To tread a measure with you on this grass. 188
Ros. It is not so. Ask them how many inches
Is in one mile: if they have measured many,
The measure then of one is easily told.
Boya. If to come hither you have measured miles,
And many miles, the princess bids you tell
How many inches do fill up one mile.
Ber. Tell her we measure them by weary steps.
Boya. She hears herself.
Ros. How many weary steps,
Of many weary miles you have o'ergone, 197
Are number'd in the travel of one mile?
Ber. We number nothing that we spend for you:
Our duty is so rich, so infinite, 200
That we may do it still without accomplish.
Vouchsafe to show the sunshine of your face,
That we, like savages, may worship it.
Ros. My face is but a moon, and clouded too.
King. Blessed are clouds, to do as such clouds do!
Vouchsafe, bright moon, and these thy stars, to shine,
Those clouds remov'd, upon our wat'ry eye.
Ros. O vain petitioner! beg a greater matter;
Thou now request'st but moonshine in the water.

King. Then, in our measure but vouchsafe one change. 210
Thou bidst me beg; this begging is not strange.
Ros. Play, music, then! Nay, you must do it soon.
[Music plays.
Not yet! no dance! thus change I like the moon.
King. Will you not dance? How come you thus estrang'd? 214
Ros. You took the moon at full, but now she's chang'd.
King. Yet still she is the moon, and I the man.
The music plays; vouchsafe some motion to it.
Ros. Our ears vouchsafe it.
King. But your legs should do it.
Ros. Since you are strangers, and come here by chance,
We'll not be nice: take hands: we will not dance. 220
King. Why take we hands then?
Ros. Only to part friends.
Curtsy, sweet hearts; and so the measure ends.
King. More measure of this measure: be not nice.
Ros. We can afford no more at such a price.
King. Prize you yourselves? what buys your company? 225
Ros. Your absence only.
King. That can never be.
Ros. Then cannot we be bought: and so, adieu;
Twice to your visor, and half once to you! 228
King. If you deny to dance, let's hold more chat.
Ros. In private, then.
King. I am best pleas'd with that. 232
[They converse apart.
Ber. White-handed mistress, one sweet word
with thee.
Prin. Honey, and milk, and sugar; there are three.
Ber. Nay then, two treys, an if you grow so nice,
Methergin, wort, and malmsye: well run, dice!
There's half a dozen sweets.
Prin. Seventh sweet, adieu:
Since you can cog, I'll play no more with you.
Ber. One word in secret.
Prin. Let it not be sweet. 237
Ber. Thou griev'st my gall.
Prin. Gall! bitter.
Ber. Therefore meet. 237
[They converse apart.
Dum. Will you vouchsafe with me to change a word?
Mar. Name it.
Dum. Fair lady,—
Mar. Say you so? Fair lord,
Take that for your fair lady.
Dum. Please it you, 241
As much in private, and I’ll bid adieu.
[They converse apart.

Kath. What! was your visor made without a
tongue?
Long. I know the reason, lady, why you ask.
Kath. O! for your reason; quickly, sir; I
long. 245
Long. You have a double tongue within your
mask,
And would afford my speechless visor half.
Kath. ‘Veal,’ quoth the Dutchman. Is not
‘veal’ a calf? 248
Long. A calf, fair lady!
Kath. No, a fair lord calf.
Long. Let’s part the word.
Kath. No, I’ll not be your half:
Take all, and wean it: it may prove an ox.
Long. Look, how you butt yourself in these
sharp mocks. 252
Will you give horns, chaste lady? do not so.
Kath. Then die a calf, before your horns do
grow.
Long. One word in private with you, ere I die.
Kath. Bleat softly then; the butcher hears
you cry. [They converse apart.

Boyet. The tongues of mocking wenches are
as keen 257
As is the razor’s edge invisible,
Cutting a smaller hair than may be seen,
Above the sense of sense; so sensible 260
Seemeth their conference; their conceits have
wings
Fleeter than arrows, bullets, wind, thought,
swifter things.
Ros. Not one word more, my maids: break
off, break off.
Ber. By heaven, all dry-beaten with pure
scuff!
King. Farewell, mad wenches: you have
simple wits.
Prin. Twenty adieus, my frozen Muscovits.
[Exeunt KING, LORDS, Music, and Attendants.
Are these the breed of wits so wonder’d at?

Boyet. Tapers they are, with your sweet
breaths puff’d out. 268
Ros. Well-liking wits they have; gross, gross;
fat, fat.
Prin. O poverty in wit, kingly-poor flout!
Will they not, think you, hang themselves to
ight?
Or ever, but in visors, show their faces? 272
This pert Berowne was out of countenance quite.
Ros. O! they were all in lamentable cases.
The king was weeping-ripe for a good word.
Prin. Berowne did swear himself out of all
suit.
Mar. Dumaine was at my service, and his
sword:
‘No point,’ quoth I: my servant straight was
mute.
Kath. Lord Longaville said, I came o’er his
heart;
And trow you what he call’d me?
Prin. Qualm, perhaps. 280
Kath. Yes, in good faith.
Prin. Go, sickness as thou art!
Ros. Well, better wits have worn plain statute-
caps.
But will you hear? the king is my love sworn.
Prin. And quick Berowne hath plighted faith
to me. 284
Kath. And Longaville was for my service born.
Mar. Dumaine is mine, as sure as bark on
tree.

Boyet. Madam, and pretty mistresses, give
ear:
Immediately they will again be here 288
In their own shapes; for it can never be
They will digest this harsh indignity.
Prin. Will they return?
Boyet. They will, they will, God knows;
And leap for joy, though they are lame with
blows:
Therefore change favours; and, when they re-
pair,
Blow like sweet roses in this summer air.
Prin. How blow? how blow? speak to be
understood.
Boyet. Fair ladies mask’d, are roses in their
bud: 296
Dismask’d, their damask sweet commixture
shown,
Are angels vailing clouds, or roses blown.
Prin. Avaunt perplexity! What shall we do
If they return in their own shapes to woo 390
Ros. Good madam, if by me you’ll be advis’d,
Let’s mock them still, as well known as disguis’d.
Let us complain to them what fools were here,
Disguis’d like Muscovites, in shapeless gear; 394
And wonder what they were, and to what end
Their shallow shows and prologue vilely penn’d,
And their rough carriage so ridiculous,
Should be presented at our tent to us. 398
Boyet. Ladies, withdraw: the gallants are at
hand.
Prin. Whip to your tents, as roses run over
land.

[Exeunt PRINCESS, ROS., KATH., AND MARIA.

Enter the KING, BEROWNE, LONGAVILLE, AND
DUMAINE in their proper habits.

King. Fair sir, God save you! Where is the
princess?
Boyet. Gone to her tent. Please it your ma-
  jesty, 312
Command me any service to her thither?
King. That she vouchsafe me audience for
  one word.
Boyet. I will; and so will she, I know, my
  lord. [Exit.
Ber. This fellow pecks up wit, as pigeons
  pease, 316
And utters it again when God doth please:
He is wit's pedlar, and retails his wares
At wakes and wassails, meetings, markets, fairs;
And we that sell by gross, the Lord doth know,
Have not the grace to grace it with such show.
This gallant pens the wenchens on his sleeve;
Had he been Adam, he had tempted Eve:
He can carve too, and lisp: why, this is he 324
That kiss'd his hand away in courtesy;
This is the ape of form, monsieur the nice,
That, when he plays at tables, chides the dice
In honourable terms: nay, he can sing
A mean mostmeanly, and in ushering
Mend him who can: the ladies call him, sweet;
The stanks, as he treads on them, kiss his feet.
This is the flower that smiles on every one, 332
To show his teeth as white as whales-bone;
And consciences, that will not die in debt,
Pay him the due of honey-tongued Boyet.
King. A blister on his sweet tongue, with my
  heart, 336
That put Armado's page out of his part!
Re-enter the Princess, ushered by Boyet; Rosaline, Maria, Katharine, and Attendants.
Ber. See where it comes! Behaviour, what
  wert thou,
Till this man show'd thee? and what art thou
  now?
King. All hail, sweet madam, and fair time of
day! 340
Prin. 'Fair,' in 'all hail,' is foul, as I conceive.
King. Construe my speeches better, if you may.
Prin. Then wish me better: I will give you
  leave.
King. We came to visit you, and purpose now
  To lead you to our court: vouchsafe it then.
Prin. This field shall hold me, and so hold your
  vow:
Nor God, nor I, delights in perjur'd men.
King. Rebuke me not for that which you pro-
 voke:
The virtue of your eye must break my oath.
Prin. You nick-name virtue; vice you should
  have spoke;
For virtue's office never breaks man's troth.
Now, by my maiden honour, yet as pure 352
As the unsullied lily, I protest,
A world of torments though I should endure,
I would not yield to be your house's guest;
So much I hate a breaking cause to be 356
Of heavenly oaths, vow'd with integrity.
King. O! you have liv'd in desolation here,
Unseen, unvisited, much to our shame.
Prin. Not so, my lord: it is not so, I swear;
We have had pastime here and pleasant game.
A mess of Russians left us but of late.
King. How, madam! Russians?
Prin. Ay, in truth, my lord;
Trim gallants, full of courtship and of state. 364
Ros. Madam, speak true. It is not so, my
  lord:
My lady, to the manner of the days,
In courtesy gives undeserving praise.
We four, indeed, confronted were with four 368
In Russian habit: here they stay'd an hour,
And talk'd apace; and in that hour, my lord,
They did not bless us with one happy word.
I dare not call them fools; but this I think, 372
When they are thirsty, fools would fain have
drink.
Ber. This jest is dry to me. Fair gentle sweet,
Your wit makes wise things foolish: when we
  meet,
With eyes best seeing, heaven's fiery eye, 376
By light we lose light: your capacity
Is of that nature that to your huge store
Wise things seem foolish and rich things but
poor.
Ros. This proves you wise and rich, for in my
  eye— 380
Ber. I am a fool, and full of poverty.
Ros. But that you take what doth to you be-
  long,
It were a fault to snatch words from my tongue.
Ber. O! I am yours, and all that I possess.
Ros. All the fool mine?
Ber. I cannot give you less.
Ros. Which of the visors was it that you wore?
Ber. Where? when? what visor? why de-
  mand you this?
Ros. There, then, that visor; that superfluous
  case 388
That hid the worse, and show'd the better face.
King. We are despaired: they'll mock us now
downright.
Dum. Let us confess, and turn it to a jest.
Prin. Amaz'd, my lord? Why looks your
  highness sad? 392
Ros. Help! hold his brows! he'll swound.
Why look you pale?
Sea-sick, I think, coming from Muscovy.
Ber. Thus pour the stars down plagues for
  perjury.
Can any face of brass hold longer out?— 396
Here stand I, lady; dart thy skill at me;
Bruske me with scorn, confound me with a
flout;
Thrust thy sharp wit quite through my igno-
rance;
Cut me to pieces with thy keen conceit; 400
And I will wish thee never more to dance,
Nor never more in Russian habit wait.
Or never will I trust to speeches penn'd,
Nor to the motion of a school-boy's tongue,
Nor never come in visor to my friend, 405
Nor woo in rime, like a blind harper's song,
Taffeta phrases, silken terms precise,
Three-pil'd hyperboles, spruce affectation, 408
Figures pedantical; these summer flies
Have blown me full of maggot ostentation:
I do forswear them; and I here protest,
By this white glove,—how white the hand, 412
God knows,—
Henceforth my wooing mind shall be express'd
In russet yeas and honest kersey noes:
And, to begin, wench,—so God help me, la!—
My love to thee is sound, sans crack or flaw. 416
Ros. Sans 'sans,' I pray you.
Ber. Yet I have a trick
Of the old rage: bear with me, I am sick;
I'll leave it by degrees. Soft! let us see:
Write, 'Lord have mercy on us' on those three;
They are infected, in their hearts it lies; 421
They have the plague, and caught it of your
eyes:
These lords are visited; you are not free,
For the Lord's tokens on you do see. 424
Prin. No, they are free that gave these tokens
to us.
Ber. Our states are forfeit: seek not to undo
us.
Ros. It is not so. For how can this be true,
That you stand forfeit, being those that sue? 428
Ber. Peace! for I will not have to do with you.
Ros. Nor shall not, if I do as I intend.
Ber. Speak for yourselves: my wit is at an
end.
King. Teach us, sweet madam, for our rude
transgression 432
Some fair excuse.
Prin. The fairest is confession.
Were you not here, but even now, disguis'd?
King. Madam, I was.
Prin. And were you well advis'd? 437
King. I was, fair madam.
Prin. When you then were here,
What did you whisper in your lady's ear? 437
King. That more than all the world I did
respect her.
Prin. When she shall challenge this, you will
reject her.
King. Upon mine honour, no.
Prin. Peace! peace! forbear; 440
Your oath once broke, you force not to forswear.
King. Despise me, when I break this oath of
mine.
Prin. I will; and therefore keep it. Rosaline,
What did the Russian whisper in your ear? 444
Ros. Madam, he swore that he did hold me
dear
As precious eyesight, and did value me
Above this world; adding thereto, moreover,
That he would wed me, or else die my lover. 448
Prin. God give thee joy of him! the noble lord
Most honourably doth uphold his word.
King. What mean you, madam? by my life,
my troth,
I never swore this lady such an oath. 452
Ros. By heaven you did; and to confirm it
plain,
You gave me this: but take it, sir, again.
King. My faith and this the princess I did
give:
I knew her by this jewel on her sleeve. 456
Prin. Pardon me, sir, this jewel did she wear;
And Lord Berowne, I thank him, is my dear.
What, will you have me, or your pearl again?
Ber. Neither of either; I remit both twain.
I see the trick on't: here was a consent, 461
Knowing aforehand of our merriment,
To dash it like a Christmas comedy.
Some carry-tale, some please-man, some slight
zany,
Some mumble-news, some trencher-knight,
some Dick,
That smiles his cheek in years, and knows the
trick
To make my lady laugh when she's dispos'd,
Told our intents before; which once disclos'd,
The ladies did change favours, and then we, 469
Following the signs, woo'd but the sign of she.
Now, to our perjury to add more terror,
We are again forsworn, in will and error. 472
Much upon this it is: [To BOYET.] and might
not you
Forestell our sport, to make us thus untrue?
Do not you know my lady's foot by the squire,
And laugh upon the apple of her eye? 476
And stand between her back, sir, and the fire,
Holding a trencher, jesting merrily?
You put our page out: go, you are allow'd;
Die when you will, a smock shall be your shroud.
You leer upon me, do you? there's an eye 481
Wounds like a leaden sword.
Boyet. Full merrily
Hath this brave manage, this career, been run.
Ber. Lo! he is tilting straight. Peace! I have
done.

190
Welcome, pure wilt thou partake a fair fray.

Cost. O Lord, sir, they would know

Whether the three Worthies shall come in or no.

Ber. What, are there but three?

Cost. No, sir; but it is vara fine, 488

For every one pursents three.

Ber. And three times thrice is nine.

Cost. Not so, sir; under correction, sir, I hope, it is not so.

You cannot beg us, sir, I can assure you, sir;
we know what we know:

I hope, sir, three times thrice, sir,—

Ber. Is not nine, 492

Cost. Under correction, sir, we know where until it doth amount.

Ber. By Jove, I always took three threes for nine.

Cost. O Lord, sir! it were pity you should get your living by reckoning, sir. 497

Ber. How much is it?

Cost. O Lord, sir! the parties themselves, the actors, sir, will show where until it doth amount:
for mine own part, I am, as they say, but to perfect one man in one poor man, Pompion the Great, sir.

Ber. Art thou one of the Worthies? 504

Cost. It pleased them to think me worthy of Pompion the Great: for mine own part, I know not the degree of the Worthy, but I am to stand for him. 508

Ber. Go, bid them prepare.

Cost. We will turn it finely off, sir; we will take some care. [Exit.

King. Berowne, they will shame us; let them not approach.

Ber. We are shame-proof, my lord; and 'tis some policy

To have one show worse than the king's and his company.

King. I say they shall not come.

Prin. Nay, my good lord, let me o'errule you now.

That sport best pleasest that doth least know how;
Where zeal strives to content, and the contents
Die in the zeal of those which it presents;
Their form confounded makes most form in mirth,

When great things labouring perish in their birth.

Ber. A right description of our sport, my lord.

Enter ARMADO.

Arm. Anointed, I implore so much expense of thy royal sweet breath as will utter a brace of words. 524

[ARMADO converses with the KING, and delivers a paper to him.

Prin. Doth this man serve God?

Ber. Why ask you?

Prin. He speaks not like a man of God's making.

Arm. That's all one, my fair, sweet, honey monarch; for, I protest, the schoolmaster is exceeding fantastical; too-too vain; too-too vain: but we will put it, as they say, to fortuna de la guerra. I wish you the peace of mind, most royal couplement! [Exit.

King. Here is like to be a good presence of Worthies. He presents Hector of Troy; the swain, Pompey the Great; the parish curate, Alexander; Armado's page, Hercules; the pedant, Judas Maccabeus:

And if these four Worthies in their first show thrive,

These four will change habits and present the other five. 540

Ber. There is five in the first show.

King. You are deceived, 'tis not so.

Ber. The pedant, the braggart, the hedge-priest, the fool, and the boy:— 544

Abate throw at novum, and the whole world again cannot pick out five such, take each one in his vein.

King. The ship is under sail, and here she comes again.

Enter COSTARD armed, for Pompey.

Cost. I Pompey am,—

Boyel. You lie, you are not he. 548

Cost. I Pompey am,—

Boyel. With libbard's head on knee.

Ber. Well said, old mocker: I must needs be friends with thee.

Cost. I Pompey am, Pompey surnam'd the Big,—

Dum. 'The Great.'

Cost. It is 'Great,' sir; Pompey surnam'd the Great;

That oft in field, with large and shield, did make my foe to sweat:
And travelling along this coast, I here am come by chance,
And lay my arms before the legs of this sweet lass of France. 556

If your ladyship would say, 'Thanks, Pompey,' I had done.

Prin. Great thanks, great Pompey.

Cost. 'Tis not so much worth; but I hope I was perfect. I made a little fault in 'Great.'

Ber. My hat to a halfpenny, Pompey proves the best Worthy.

Enter SIR NATHANIEL armed, for Alexander.

Nath. When in the world I liv'd, I was the world's commander;
By east, west, north, and south, I spread my conquering might:

My scateon plain declares that I am Aliander.

Boyet. Your nose says, no, you are not; for it stands too right.

Ber. Your nose smells 'no,' in this, most tender-smelling knight.

Prin. The conqueror is dismay'd. Proceed, good Alexander.

Nath. When in the world I liv'd, I was the world's commander:

Boyet. Most true; 'tis right: you were so, Aliander.

Ber. Pompey the Great.

Cost. Your servant, and Costard.

Ber. Take away the conqueror, take away Aliander.

Cost. [To Nathaniel.] O, sir, you have overthrown Aliander the conqueror! You will be scraped out of the painted cloth for this: your lion, that holds his poll-axe sitting on a close-stool, will be given to Ajax: he will be the ninth Worthy. A conqueror, and afear'd to speak! run away for shame, Aliander! [Nathaniel retires.] There, an't shall please you: a foolish mild man; an honest man, look you, and soon dashed! He is a marvellous good neighbour, faith, and a very good bowler; but, for Aliander,—alas, you see how 'tis,—a little o'erparted. But there are Worthies a-coming will speak their mind in some other sort.

Prin. Stand aside, good Pompey.

Enter Holofernes armed, for Judas; and Moth armed, for Hercules.

Hol. Great Hercules is presented by this imp,

Whose club kill'd Cerberus, that three-headed canis;

And, when he was a babe, a child, a shrimp,

Thus did he strangle serpents in his manus.

Quomiam, he seemed in minority,

Erugo, I come with this apology.

Keep some state in thy exit, and vanish.—

[Moth retires.

Judas I am.

Dum. A Judas!

Hol. Not Iscariot, sir.

Judas I am, clypeal Maccabaeus.

Dum. Judas Maccabaeus clipt is plain Judas.

Ber. A kissing traitor. How art thou prov'd Judas?

Hol. Judas I am.

Dum. The more shame for you, Judas.

Hol. What mean you, sir?

Boyet. To make Judas hang himself.

Hol. Begin, sir; you are my elder.

Ber. Well follow'd: Judas was hanged on an elder.

Hol. I will not be put out of countenance.

Ber. Because thou hast no face.

Hol. What is this?

Boyet. A citron-head.

Dum. The head of a bodkin.

Ber. A death's face in a ring.

Long. The face of an old Roman coin, scarce seen.

Boyet. The pommel of Cæsar's falchion.

Dum. The carved-bone face on a flask.

Ber. Saint George's half-cheek in a brooch.

Dum. Ay, and in a brooch of lead.

Ber. Ay, and worn in the cap of a tooth-drawer.

And now forward; for we have put thee in countenance.

Hol. You have put me out of countenance.

Ber. False: we have given thee faces.

Hol. But you have outfaced them all.

Ber. An thou wert a lion, we would do so.

Boyet. Therefore, as he is an ass, let him go.

And so adieu, sweet Jude! nay, why dost thou stay?

Dum. For the latter end of his name.

Ber. For the ass to the Jude? give it him:—

Jud-as, away!

Hol. This is not generous, not gentle, not humble.

Boyet. A light for Monsieur Judas! it grows dark, he may stumble.

Prin. Alas! poor Maccabæus, how hath he been bated.

Enter Armado armed, for Hector.

Ber. Hide thy head, Achilles: here comes Hector in arms.

Dum. Though my mocks come home by me, I will now be merry.

King. Hector was but a Trojan in respect of this.

Boyet. But is this Hector?

King. I think Hector was not so clean-timbered.

Long. His calf is too big for Hector.

Dum. More calf, certain.

Boyet. No; he is best indued in the small.

Ber. This cannot be Hector.

Dum. He's a god or a painter; for he makes faces.

Arm. The armipotent Mars, of lances the almighty,

Gave Hector a gift,—

Dum. A gilt nutmeg.

Ber. A lemon.

Long. Stuck with cloves.
Dum. No, cloven. 652
Arm. Peace!
The armipotent Mars, of lances the almighty,
Gave Hector a gift, the heir of Ilion;
A man so breath'd, that certain he would fight ye
From morn till night, out of his pavilion.
I am that flower,—
Dum. That mint.
Long. That columbia.
Arm. Sweet Lord Longaville, rein thy tongue.
Long. I must rather give it the rein, for it runs against Hector. 661
Dum. Ay, and Hector's a greyhound.
Arm. The sweet war-man is dead and rotten;
sweet chucks, beat not the bones of the buried;
when he breathed, he was a man. But I will forward with my device. [To the Princess:] Sweet royalty, bestow on me the sense of hearing. 667
Prin. Speak, brave Hector; we are much delighted.
Arm. I do adore thy sweet Grace's slipper.
Boyet. [Aside to DUMAINE.] Loves her by the foot. 672
Dum. [Aside to BOYET.] He may not by the yard.
Arm. This Hector far surmounted Hannibal,—
Cost. The party is gone; fellow Hector, she is gone; she is two months on her way. 677
Arm. What meanest thou?
Cost. Faith, unless you play the honest Trojan, the poor wench is cast away: she's quick; the child brags in her belly already: 'tis yours.
Arm. Dost thou infamously me among potentates? Thou shall die. 683
Cost. Then shall Hector be whipped for Jaquenetta, that is quick by him, and hanged for Pompey that is dead by him.
Dum. Most rare Pompey! 688
Boyet. Renowned Pompey!
Ber. Greater than great, great, great, great Pompey! Pompey the Huge!
Dum. Hector trembles.
Ber. Pompey is moved. More Ates, more Ates! stir them on! stir them on! 693
Dum. Hector will challenge him.
Ber. Ay, if a have no more man's blood in's belly than will sup a flea. 696
Arm. By the north pole, I do challenge thee.
Cost. I will not fight with a pole, like a northern man: I'll slash; I'll do it by the sword. I bepray you, let me borrow my arms again.
Dum. Room for the incensed Worthies! 701
Cost. I'll do it in my shirt.
Dum. Most resolute Pompey! 704
Moth. Master, let me take you a button-hole lower. Do you not see Pompey is uncasing for the combat? What mean you? you will lose your reputation. 708
Arm. Gentlemen and soldiers, pardon me; I will not combat in my shirt.
Dum. You may not deny it; Pompey hath made the challenge. 712
Arm. Sweet bloods, I both may and will.
Ber. What reason have you for 't?
Arm. The naked truth of it is, I have no shirt. I go woordward for penance. 716
Boyet. True, and it was enjoined him in Rome for want of linen; since when, I'll be sworn, he wore none but a dish-clout of Jaquenetta's, and that a' wears next his heart for a favour. 720
Enter Monsieur MARCADE, a Messenger.
Mar. God save you, madam!
Prin. Welcome, Marcade;
But that thou interrupt'st our merriment.
Mar. I am sorry, madam; for the news I bring
Is heavy in my tongue. The king your father—
Prin. Dead, for my life!
Mar. Even so: my tale is told.
Ber. Worthies, away! The scene begins to cloud. 729
Arm. For my own part, I breathe free breath.
I have seen the day of wrong through the little hole of discretion, and I will right myself like a soldier. [Exeunt Worthies.
KING. How fares your majesty?
Prin. Boyet, prepare: I will away towight.
KING. Madam, not so: I do beseech you, stay. 736
Prin. Prepare, I say. I thank you, gracious lords,
For all your fair endeavours; and entreat,
Out of a new-sad soul, that you vouchsafe
In your rich wisdom to excuse or hide
The liberal opposition of our spirits,
If over-boldly we have borne ourselves
In the converse of breath; your gentleness
Was guilty of it. Farewell, worthy lord! 740
A heavy heart bears not a nimble tongue,
Excuse me so, coming so short of thanks
For my great suit so easily obtain'd.
KING. The extreme part of time extremely forms
All causes to the purpose of his speed,
And often, at his very loose, decides
That which long process could not arbitrate:
And though the mourning brow of progeny
Forbid the smiling courtesy of love
The holy suit which fain it would convince;
Yet, since love's argument was first on foot,
Let not the cloud of sorrow justle it
From what it purpos’d; since, to wait friends lost
Is not by much so wholesome profitable
As to rejoice at friends but newly found.

Prin. I understand you not: my griefs are
double.

Ber. Honest plain words best pierce the ear of
grief;
And by these badges understand the king.
For your fair sakes have we neglected time,
Play’d foul play with our oaths. Your beauty,
ladies,
Hath much deform’d us, fashioning our humours
Even to the opposed end of our intents;
And what in us hath seem’d ridiculous,—
As love is full of unbetitting strains;
All wanton as a child, skipping and vain;
Form’d by the eye, and, therefore, like the eye,
Full of stray shapes, of habits and of forms,
Varying in subjects, as the eye doth roll
To every varied object in his glance:
Which parti-coated presence of loose love
Put on by us, if, in your heavenly eyes,
Have misbecome our oaths and gravities,
Those heavenly eyes, that look into these faults,
Suggested us to make. Therefore, ladies,
Our love being yours, the error that love makes
Is likewise yours: we to ourselves prove false,
By being once false for ever to be true
To those that make us both,—fair ladies, you:
And even that falsehood, in itself a sin,
Thus purifies itself and turns to grace.

Prin. We have receiv’d your letters full of
love;
Your favours, the ambassadors of love;
And, in our maiden council, rated them
At courtship, pleasant jest, and courtesy,
As bombast and as lining to the time.
But more devout than this in our respects
Have we not been; and therefore met your loves
In their own fashion, like a merriment.

Dum. Our letters, madam, show’d much
more than jest.

Long. So did our looks.

Ros. We did not quote them so.

King. Now, at the latest minute of the hour,
Grant us your loves.

Prin. A time, methinks, too short
To make a world-without-end bargain in.
No, no, my lord, your Grace is perjur’d much,
Full of dear guiltiness; and therefore this:
If for my love,—as there is no such cause,—
You will do aught, this shall you do for me:
Your oath I will not trust; but go with speed
To some forlorn and naked hermitage,
Remote from all the pleasures of the world.

There stay, until the twelve celestial signs

Have brought about their annual reckoning.
If this austere insociable life
Change not your offer made in heat of blood;
If frosts and fasts, hard lodging and thin weeds,
Nip not the gaudy blossoms of your love.
But that it bear this trial and last love;
Then, at the expiration of the year,
Come challenge me, challenge me by these de-
serts,
And, by this virgin palm now kissing thine,
I will be thine; and, till that instant, shut
My woful self up in a mourning house.
Raining the tears of lamentation
For the remembrance of my father’s death.
If this thou do deny, let our hands part;
Neither untitled in the other’s heart.

King. If this, or more than this, I would den-
y, To flatter up these powers of mine with rest,
The sudden hand of death close up mine eye!
Hence ever then my heart is in thy breast.

Ber. And what to me, my love? and what to
me?

Ros. You must be purged too, your sins are
rack’d:
You are attain’d with faults and perjury;
Therefore, if you my favour mean to get,
A twelvemonth shall you spend, and never rest,
But seek the weary beds of people sick.

Dum. But what to me, my love? but what to
me?

Kath. A wife! A beard, fair health, and
honesty;
With three-fold love I wish you all these three.

Dum. O! shall I say, I thank you, gentle wife?
Kath. Not so, my lord. A twelvemonth and a
day
I’ll mark no words that smooth-fa’d wooers
say:
Come when the king doth to my lady come,
Then, if I have much love, I’ll give you some.

Dum. I’ll serve thee true and faithfully till
then.

Kath. Yet swear not, lest you be forsworn
again.

Long. What says Maria?

Mar. At the twelvemonth’s end
I’ll change my black gown for a faithful friend.
Long. I’ll stay with patience; but the time
is long.

Mar. The liker you; few taller are so young.

Ber. Studies my lady? mistress, look on me.
Behold the window of my heart, mine eye,
What humble suit attends thy answer there;
Impose some service on me for thy love.

Ros. Oft have I heard of you, my Lord
Berowne,
Before I saw you, and the world’s large tongue
Proclaims you for a man replete with mocks;
Full of comparisons and wounding flouts,
Which you on all estates will execute
That lie within the mercy of your wit:
To weed this wormwood from your fruitful brain,
And therewithal to win me, if you please,—
Without the which I am not to be won,—
You shall this twelvemonth term, from day to
day,
Visit the speechless sick, and still converse
With groaning wretches; and your task shall be,
With all the fierce endeavour of your wit 861
To enforce the pained impotent to smile.

Ber. To move wild laughter in the throat of
death?
It cannot be; it is impossible:
Mirth cannot move a soul in agony.

Ros. Why, that's the way to choke a gibing
spirit,
Whose influence is begot of that loose grace
Which shall laughing hearers give to fools.
A jest's prosperity lies in the ear
Of him that hears it, never in the tongue
Of him that makes it: then, if sickly ears,
Deal'd with the clamours of their own dear groans,
Will hear your idle scorns, continue them,
And I will have you and that fault withal;
But if they will not, throw away that spirit,
And I shall find you empty of that fault,
Right joyful of your reformation.

Ber. A twelvemonth! well, befall what will
befall,
I'll jest a twelvemonth in a hospital.

Prin. [To the King.] Ay, sweet my lord; and
so I take my leave.

King. No, madam; we will bring you on your
way.

Ber. Our wooing doth not end like an old
play;
Jack hath not Jill; these ladies' courtesy
Might well have made our sport a comedy.

King. Come, sir, it wants a twelvemonth and
a day,
And then 'twill end.

Ber. That's too long for a play.

Enter Armado.

Arm. Sweet majesty, vouchsafe me,—

Prin. Was not that Hector?

Dum. The worthy knight of Troy.

Arm. I will kiss thy royal finger, and take
leave. I am a votary; I have vowed to Jaquenetta
to hold the plough for her sweet love three

years. But, most esteemed greatness, will you hear the dialogue that the two learned men have compiled in praise of the owl and the cuckoo? it should have followed in the end of our show. 896

King. Call them forth quickly; we will do so.

Arm. Holla! approach.

Re-enter Holofernes, Nathaniel, Moth,
Costard, and others.

This side is Hfemis, Winter; this Ver, the Spring;
the one maintained by the owl, the other by the
cuckoo. Ver, begin.

SPRING.

I
When daisies pied and violets blue
And lady-smocks all silver-white
And cuckoo-buds of yellow hue
Do paint the meadows with delight,
The cuckoo then, on every tree,
Mocks married men; for thus sings he,
Cuckoo,
Cuckoo, cuckoo: O, word of fear,
Unpleasing to a married ear!

II.
When shepherds pipe on oaten straws,
And merry larks are ploughmen's clocks, 912
When turtles tread, and rooks, and daws,
And maddens bleach their summer smocks,
The cuckoo then, on every tree,
Mocks married men; for thus sings he,
Cuckoo;
Cuckoo, cuckoo: O, word of fear,
Unpleasing to a married ear!

WINTER.

III.
When icicles hang by the wall,
And Dick the shepherd blows his nail,
And Tom bears logs into the hall,
And milk comes frozen home in pail,
When blood is nipp'd, and ways be foul,
Then nightly sings the staring owl,
Tu-who;
Tu-who, tu-who—A merry Note,
While greasy Joan doth keel the pot.

IV
When all a loud the wind doth blow,
And coughing drouns the parson's saw,
And birds sit brooding in the snow,
And Marian's nose looks red and raw,
When roasted crabs hiss in the bowl,
Then nightly sings the staring owl,
Tu-who;
Tu-who, tu-who—a merry note,
While greasy Joan doth keel the pot.

Arm. The words of Mercury are harsh after
the songs of Apollo. You, that way: we, this
way.

[Exeunt.
A MIDSUMMER-NIGHT’S DREAM

DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

THESEUS, Duke of Athens.
EGEUS, Father to Hermia.
LYSANDER, in love with Hermia.
DEMETRIUS, in love with Hermia.
PHILOSTRATE, Master of the Revels to Theseus.
QUINCE, a Carpenter.
SNUG, a Joiner.
BOTTOM, a Weaver.
FLUTE, a Bellows-mender.
SNOUT, a Tinker.
STARVELING, a Tailor.

HERMIA, Daughter to Egeus, in love with Lysander.
HELENA, in love with Demetrius.

OBERON, King of the Fairies.
TITANIA, Queen of the Fairies.
PUCK, or Robin Goodfellow.

PEASE-BLOSSOM, COBWEB, Moth, MUSTARD-SEED,

Fairies.

HIPPOLYTA, Queen of the Amazons, betrothed to Theseus.

Other Fairies attending their King and Queen, Attendants on Theseus and Hippolyta.

SCENE.—Athens, and a Wood near it.

ACT I.

SCENE I.—Athens. The Palace of THESEUS.

Enter THESEUS, HIPPOLYTA, PHILOSTRATE, and Attendants.

The. Now, fair Hippolyta, our nuptial hour Draws on apace: four happy days bring in Another moon; but O! methinks how slow This old moon wanes; she lingers my desires, Like to a step dame, or a dowager Long withering out a young man’s revenue. Hip. Four days will quickly steep themselves in night; Four nights will quickly dream away the time; And then the moon, like to a silver bow New-bent in heaven, shall behold the night Of our solemnities.

The. Go, Philostrate, Stir up the Athenian youth to merriments; Awake the pert and nimble spirit of mirth; Turn melancholy forth to funerals; The pale companion is not for our pomp.

[Exit PHILOSTRATE.

Hippolyta, I woo’d thee with my sword, And won thy love doing thee injuries; But I will wed thee in another key, With pomp, with triumph, and with reveling.

Enter EGEUS, HERMIA, LYSANDER, and DEMETRIUS.

Ege. Happy be Theseus, our renowned duke! The. Thanks, good Egeus: what’s the news with thee?

Ege. Full of vexation come I, with complaint Against my child, my daughter Hermia. Stand forth, Demetrius. My noble lord, This man hath my consent to marry her. Stand forth, Lysander: and, my gracious duke, This man hath bewitch’d the bosom of my child: Thou, thou, Lysander, thou hast given her rimes, And interchang’d her love-tokens with my child; Thou hast by moonlight at her window sung, With feigning voice, verses of feigning love; And stol’n the impression of her fantasy With bracelet of thy hair, rings, gawds, conceits, Knacks, trifles, nosegays, sweetmeats, messengers Of strong prevailment in unharden’d youth; With cunning hast thou filch’d my daughter’s heart; Turn’d her obedience, which is due to me, To stubborn harshness. And, my gracious duke, Be it so she will not here before your Grace Consent to marry with Demetrius, I beg the ancient privilege of Athens, As she is mine, I may dispose of her; Which shall be either to this gentleman, Or to her death, according to our law Immediately provided in that case.

The. What say you, Hermia? be advis’d, fair maid. To you, your father should be as a god; One that compos’d your beauties, yea, and one To whom you are but as a form in wax By him imprinted, and within his power To leave the figure or disfigure it. Demetrius is a worthy gentleman. So is Lysander.
Why should I then prosecute my right?
Demetrius, I'll avouch it to his head,
Made love to Nedar's daughter, Helena,
And won her soul; and she, sweet lady, dotes,
Devoutly dotes, dotes in idolatry,
Upon this spotted and inconstant man.

The. I must confesse that I have heard so much,
And with Demetrius thought to have spoke thereof;
But, being over-full of self-affairs,
My mind did lose it. But, Demetrius, come;
And come, Egeus; you shall go with me,
I have some private schooling for you both.

For you, fair Hermia, look you arm yourself
To fit your fancies to your father's will,
Or else the law of Athens yields you up,
Which by no means we may extenuate,
To death, or to a vow of single life.

Come, my Hippolyta: what cheer, my love?
Demetrius and Egeus, go along:
I must employ you in some business
Against our nuptial, and confer with you
Of something nearly that concerns yourselves.

Egeus. With duty and desire we follow you.

[Exeunt Theseus, Hippolyta, Egeus,
Demetrius, and Train.

Lys. How now, my love! Why is your cheek
so pale?

How chance the roses there do fade so fast?

Hermia. Belike for want of rain, which I could
well
Betemn them from the tempest of mine eyes.

Lys. Ay me! for aught that ever I could
read,
Could ever hear by tale or history,
The course of true love never did run smooth;
But, either it was different in blood,—

Hermia. O cross! too high to be enthrall'd to
low.

Lys. Or else misgrafted in respect of years,—

Hermia. O spite! too old to be engag'd to young.

Lys. Or else it stood upon the choice of
friends,—

Hermia. O hell! to choose love by another's
eye.

Lys. Or, if there were a sympathy in choice,
War, death, or sickness did lay siege to it,
Making it momentary as a sound,
Swift as a shadow, short as any dream,
Brief as the lightning in the collid night,
That, in a spleen, unfolds both heaven and earth,
And ere a man hath power to say, 'Behold!'
The jaws of darkness do devour it up:
So quick bright things come to confusion.

Hermia. If then true lovers have been ever cross'd,
It stands as an edict in destiny:
Then let us teach our trial patience,
Because it is a customary cross,
As due to love as thoughts and dreams and sighs,
Wishes and tears, poor fancy's followers.

**Lys.** A good persuasion: therefore, hear me,
**Hermia.**

I have a widow aunt, a dowager
Of great revenue, and she hath no child:
From Athens is her house remote seven leagues;
And she respects me as her only son.

There, gentle Hermia, may I marry thee,
And to that place the sharp Athenian law
Cannot pursue us. If thou lov'st me then,
Steal forth thy father's house to-morrow night,
And in the wood, a league without the town,
Where I did meet thee once with Helena,
To do observance to a morn of May,
There will I stay for thee.

**Her.** My good Lysander!

I swear to thee by Cupid's strongest bow,
By his best arrow with the golden head,
By the simplicity of Venus' doves,
By that which knitteth souls and prospers loves,
And by that fire which burn'd the Carthage queen,

When the false Trojan under sail was seen,
By all the vows that ever men have broke,—
In number more than ever women spoke,—

In that same place thou hast appointed me,
To-morrow truly will I meet with thee.

**Lys.** Keep promise, love. Look, here comes Helena.

Enter **HELENA.**

**Her.** God speed fair Helena! Whither away?

**Hermia.** Call you me fair? that fair again unsay.

Demetrius loves your fair: O happy fair!
Your eyes are lode-stars! and your tongue's sweet air
More tuneful than lark to shepherd's ear.

When wheat is green, when hawthorn buds appear,
Sickness is catching: O! were favour so,
Yours would I catch, fair Hermia, ere I go;
My ear should catch your voice, my eye your eye,
My tongue should catch your tongue's sweet melody.

Were the world mine, Demetrius being bated,
The rest I'd give to be to you translated.

O! teach me how you look, and with what art
You sway the motion of Demetrius' heart.

**Her.** I frown upon him, yet he loves me still.

**Hermia.** O! that your frowns would teach my smiles such skill.

**Her.** I give him curses, yet he gives me love.

**Hermia.** O! that my prayers could such affection move.

**Her.** The more I hate, the more he follows me.

**Hermia.** The more I love, the more he hateth me.

**Her.** His folly, Hermia, is no fault of mine.

**Hermia.** None, but your beauty: would that fault were mine!

**Her.** Take comfort: he no more shall see my face;

Lysander and myself will fly this place.
Before the time I did Lysander see,
Seem'd Athens as a paradise to me:
O' then, what graces in my love do dwell,
That he hath turn'd a heaven unto a hell.

**Lys.** Helen, to you our minds we will unfold,
To-morrow night, when Phæbe doth behold
Her silver visage in the wat'ry glass,
Docking with liquid pearl the bladed grass,—
A time that lovers' flights doth still conceal,—
Through Athens' gates have we devis'd to steal.

**Hermia.** And in the wood, where often you and I
Upon faint primrose-beds were wont to lie,
Emptying our bosoms of their counsel sweet,
There my Lysander and myself shall meet;
And thence from Athens turn away our eyes,
To seek new friends and stranger companies.
Farewell, sweet playfellow: pray thou for us;
And good luck grant thee thy Demetrius!

Keep word, Lysander: we must starve our night
From lovers' food till morrow deep midnight.

**Lys.** I will, my Hermia.—[Exit **HEMIA.**]

**Hermia.** adieu:

As you on him, Demetrius dote on you! [Exit **HEMIA.**

**Hermia.** How happy some o'er other some can be! Through Athens I am thought as fair as she; But what of that? Demetrius thinks not so; He will not know what all but he do know; And as he errs, doing on Hermia's eyes, So I, admiring of his qualities, Things base and vile, holding no quantity, Love can transpose to form and dignity. Love looks not with the eyes, but with the mind, And therefore is wing'd Cupid painted blind. Nor hath Love's mind of any judgment taste; Wings and no eyes figure unbeasty haste: And therefore is Love said to be a child, Because in choice he is so oft beguil'd. As wagish boys in game themselves forswear, So the boy Love is perjur'd every where; For ere Demetrius look'd on Hermia's eye, He hail'd down oaths that he was only mine; And when this hail some heat from Hermia felt, So he dissolv'd, and showers of oaths did melt. I will go tell him of fair Hermia's flight: Then to the wood will he to-morrow night Pursue her; and for this intelligence If I have thanks, it is a dear expense: But herein mean I to enrich my pain, To have his sight thither and back again. [Exit.
SCENE II.—The Same. A Room in Quince’s House.

Enter Quince, Snug, Bottom, Flute, Snout, and Starveling.

Quin. Is all our company here?
Bot. You were best to call them generally, man by man, according to the script.

Quin. Here is the scroll of every man’s name, which is thought fit, through all Athens, to play in our interlude before the duke and the duchess on his wedding-day at night.

Bot. First, good Peter Quince, say what the play treats on; then read the names of the actors, and so grow to a point.

Quin. Marry, our play is, The most lamentable comedy, and most cruel death of Pyramus and Thisby.

Bot. A very good piece of work, I assure you, and a merry. Now, good Peter Quince, call forth your actors by the scroll. Masters, spread yourselves.

Quin. Answer as I call you. Nick Bottom, the weaver.

Bot. Ready. Name what part I am for, and proceed.

Quin. You, Nick Bottom, are set down for Pyramus.

Bot. What is Pyramus? a lover, or a tyrant?
Quin. A lover, that kills himself most gallantly for love.

Bot. That will ask some tears in the true performing of it: if I do it, let the audience look to their eyes; I will move storms, I will condole in some measure. To the rest: yet my chief humour is for a tyrant. I could play Hercules rarely, or a part to tear a cat in, to make all split.

   The raging rocks
   And shivering shocks
   Shall break the locks
   Of prison gates:
   And Phobus’ car
   Shall shine from far
   And make and mar
   The foolish Fates.

This was lofty! Now name the rest of the players. This is Hercules’ vein, a tyrant’s vein; a lover is more condoling.

Quin. Francis Flute, the bellows-mender.

Flute. Here, Peter Quince.

Quin. You must take Thisby on you.

Flute. What is Thisby? a wandering knight?
Quin. It is the lady that Pyramus must love.

Flute. Nay, faith, let not me play a woman; I have a beard coming.

Quin. That’s all one: you shall play it in a mask, and you may speak as small as you will.

Bot. An I may hide my face, let me play Thisby too. I’ll speak in a monstrous little voice, ‘Thesne, Thiane!’ ‘Ah, Pyramus, my lover dear; thy Thisby dear, and lady dear!’

Quin. No, no; you must play Pyramus; and Flute, you Thisby.

Bot. Well, proceed.

Quin. Robin Starveling, the tailor.

Star. Here, Peter Quince.

Quin. Robin Starveling, you must play Thisby’s mother. Tom Snout, the tinker.

Snout. Here, Peter Quince.

Quin. You, Pyramus’s father; myself, Thisby’s father; Snug, the joiner, you the lion’s part: and, I hope, here is a play fitted.

Snug. Have you the lion’s part written? pray you, if it be, give it me, for I am slow of study.

Quin. You may do it extempore, for it is nothing but roaring.

Bot. Let me play the lion too. I will roar, that I will do any man’s heart good to hear me; I will roar, that I will make the duke say, ‘Let him roar again, let him roar again.’

Quin. An you should do it too terribly, you would fright the duchess and the ladies, that they would shriek; and that were enough to hang us all.

All. That would hang us, every mother’s son.

Bot. I grant you, friends, if that you should fright the ladies out of their wits, they would have no more discretion but to hang us; but I will aggravate my voice so that I will roar you as gently as any sucking dove; I will roar you as ‘ware any nightingale.

Quin. You can play no part but Pyramus; for Pyramus is a sweet-faced man; a proper man, as one shall see in a summer’s day; a most lovely, gentleman-like man; therefore, you must needs play Pyramus.

Bot. Well, I will undertake it. What beards were I best to play it in?

Quin. Why, what you will.

Bot. I will discharge it in either your straw-colour beard, your orange-tawny beard, your purple-in-grain beard, or your French-crown colour beard, your perfect yellow.

Quin. Some of your French crowns have no hair at all, and then you will play bare-faced. But masters, here are your parts; and I am to entreat you, request you, and desire you, to con them by to-morrow night, and meet me in the palace wood, a mile without the town, by moonlight: there will we rehearse; for if we meet in the city, we shall be dogged with company, and our devices known. In the meantime I will draw a bill of properties, such as our play wants. I pray you, fail me not.
Bot. We will meet; and there we may rehearse more obscenely and courageously. Take pains; be perfect; adieu.

Quin. At the duke’s oak we meet.

Bot. Enough; hold, or cut bow-strings.

[Exeunt.

ACT II.

SCENE I.—A Wood near Athens.

Enter a Fairy on one side, and Puck on the other.

Puck. How now, spirit! whither wander you?

Fai. Over hill, over dale,

Thorough bush, thorough brier,

Over park, over pale,

Thorough flood, thorough fire,

I do wander everywhere,

Swifter than the moon’s sphere;

And I serve the fairy queen,

To dew her orbs upon the green:

The cowslips tall her pensioners be;

In their gold coats spots you see;

Those be rubies, fairy favours,

In their freckles live their savours:

I must go seek some dew-drops here,

And hang a pearl in every cowslip’s ear.

Farewell, thou lobe of spirits: I’ll be gone;

Our queen and all her elves come here anon.

Puck. The king doth keep his revels here tonight.

Take heed the queen come not within his sight; For Oberon is passing fell and wrath, Because that she as her attendant hath A lovely boy, stol’n from an Indian king; She never had so sweet a changeling; And jealous Oberon would have the child Knight of his train, to trace the forests wild; But she, perforse, withholds the loved boy, Crowns him with flowers, and makes him all her joy.

And now they never meet in grove, or green, By fountain clear, or spangled starlight sheen, But they do square; that all their elves, for fear,

Creep into acorn-cups and hide them there.

Fai. Either I mistake your shape and making quite, Or else you are that shrewd and knavish sprite Call’d Robin Goodfellow: are you not he That frights the maidens of the villagery; Skim milk, and sometimes labour in the quern, And bootless make the breathless housewife churn;

And sometime make the drink to bear no barm; Mislead night-wanderers, laughing at their harm? Those that Hobgoblin call you and sweet Puck,

You do their work, and they shall have good luck:

Are you not he?

Puck. Fairy, thou speake’st aright; I am that merry wanderer of the night. I jest to Oberon, and make him smile When I a fat and bean-fed horse beguile, Neighing in likeness of a silly foal: And sometime lurk I in a gossip’s bowl, In very likeness of a roasted crab; And, when she drinks, against her lips I bob And on her wither’d dewlap pour the ale. The wisest aunt, telling the saddest tale, Sometime for three-foot stool mistake me; Then slip I from her bum, down topples she, And ‘tis she cries, and falls into a couch; And then the whole quire hold their hips and loof; And waxen in their mirth, and neeze, and swear A merrier hour was never wasted there. But, room, fairy! here comes Oberon.

Fai. And here my mistress. Would that he were gone!

Enter Oberon from one side, with his Train; and Titania from the other, with hers.

Obe. I’ll met by moonlight, proud Titania. Tita. What! jealous Oberon. Fairies, skip hence:

I have forsworn his bed and company.

Obe. Tarry, rash wanton! am not I thy lord?

Tita. Then, I must be thy lady; but I know When thou hast stol’n away from fairy land, And in the shape of Corin sat all day, Playing on pipes of corn, and versing love To amorous Phillida. Why art thou here, Come from the furthest steppe of India? But that, forsooth, the bouncing Amazon, Your buskin’d mistress and your warrior love, To Theseus must be wedded, and you come To give their bed joy and prosperity.

Obe. How canst thou thus for shame, Titania, Glance at my credit with Hippolyta, Knowing I know thy love to Theseus? Didst thou not lead him through the glimmering night From Perigouna, whom he ravished? And make him with fair Æggle break his faith, With Ariadne, and Antiopa?

Tita. These are the forgeries of jealousy: And never, since the middle summer’s spring, Met we on hill, in dale, forest, or mead, By paved fountain, or by rushy brook, Or in the beached margent of the sea, To dance our ringlets to the whistling wind, But with thy brawls thou hast disturb’d our sport.
Therefore the winds, piping to us in vain, 88
As in revenge, have suck’d up from the sea
Contagious fogs; which, falling in the land,
Have every pelting river made so proud
That they have overborne their continents: 92
The ox hath therefore stretch’d his yoke in vain,
The ploughman lost his sweat, and the green corn
Hath rotted ere his youth attest’d a beard:
The fold stands empty in the drowned field, 96
And cows are fatted with the murrian flock;
The nine men’s morris is fill’d up with mud,
And the quaint mazes in the wanton green
For lack of tread are indistinguishable: 100
The human mortals want their winter here:
No night is now with hymn or carol blest:
Therefore the moon, the governess of floods,
Pale in her anger, washes all the air, 104
That rheumatic diseases do abound:
And thorough this distemper we see
The seasons alter: hoary-headed frosts
Fall in the fresh lap of the crimson rose, 108
And on old Huems’ thin and icy crown
An odorous chaplet of sweet summer buds
Is, as in mockery, set.
The spring, the summer,
The chiding autumn, angry winter, change
Their wonted livery, and the mazed world,
By their increase, now knows not which is which.
And this same progeny of evil comes
From our debate, from our dissension: 116
We are their parents and original.

Obe. Do you amend it then; it lies in you.
Why should Titania cross her Oberon?
I do but beg a little changeling boy,
To be my henchman.

Tita. Set your heart at rest;
The fairy land buys not the child of me.
His mother was a votessa of my order:
And, in the spiced Indian air, by night,
Full often hath she gossip’d by my side,
And sat with me on Neptune’s yellow sands,
Marking the embark’d traders on the flood;
When we have laugh’d to see the sails conceive
And grow big-bellied with the wanton wind;
Which she, with pretty and with swimming gait
Following,—her womb then rich with my young
squire,—
Would imitate, and sail upon the land, 124
To fetch me trifles, and return again,
As from a voyage, rich with merchandize.
But she, being mortal, of that boy did die;
And for her sake I do rear up her boy,
And for her sake I will not part with him.

Obe. How long within this wood intend you
stay?

Tita. Perchance, till after Theseus’ wedding-
day.
If you will patiently dance in our round, 140
And see our moonlight revels, go with us;
If not, shun me, and I will spare your haunts.
Obe. Give me that boy, and I will go with thee.

Tita. Not for thy fairy kingdom. Fairies, 144
away!
We shall chide downright, if I longer stay.

[Exit TITANIA with her Train.
Obe. Well, go thy way: thou shalt not from
this grove
Till I torment thee for this injury.
My gentle Puck, come hither. Thou remember’st
Since once I sat upon a promontory, 149
And heard a mermaid on a dolphin’s back
Uttering such dulcet and harmonious breath,
That the rude sea grew civil at her song, 152
And certain stars shot madly from their spheres
To hear the sea-maid’s music.

Puck. I remember.

Obe. That very time I saw, but thou couldst not,
Flying between the cold moon and the earth, 156
Cupid all arm’d: a certain aim he took
At a fair vestal throne’d by the west,
And loo’d his love-shaft smartly from his bow,
As it should pierce a hundred thousand hearts;
But I might see young Cupid’s fiery shaft 161
Quench’d in the chaste beams of the wat’ry
moon,
And the imperial votaress pass’d on,
In maiden meditation, fancy-free.
Yet mark’d I where the bolt of Cupid fell:
It fell upon a little western flower,
Before milk-white, now purple with love’s
wound,
And maidens call it, Love-in-idleness. 168
Fetch me that flower; the herb I show’d thee
once:
The juice of it on sleeping eyelids laid
Will make or man or woman madly dote
Upon the next live creature that it sees. 172
Fetch me this herb; and be thou here again
Ere the levathan can swim a league.

Puck. I’ll put a girdle round about the earth
In forty minutes.

Obe. Having once this juice 175
I’ll watch Titania when she is asleep,
And drop the liquor of it in her eyes:
The next thing then she waking looks upon,
Be it on lion, bear, or wolf, or bull, 180
On meddling monkey, or on busy ape,
She shall pursue it with the soul of love:
And ere I take this charm off from her sight,
As I can take it with another herb, 184
I’ll make her render up her page to me.
But who comes here? I am invisible,
And I will overhear their conference.
Enter DEMETRIUS, HELENA following him.

Dem. I love thee not, therefore pursue me not. 188

Where is Lysander and fair Hermia?
The one I'll slay, the other slayeth me.
Thou told'st me they were stol'n into this wood;
And here am I, and wood within this wood, 192
Because I cannot meet my Hermia.
Hence! get thee gone, and follow me no more.

Hel. You draw me, you hard-hearted adaman:
But yet you draw not iron, for my heart 196
Is true as steel: leave you your power to draw,
And I shall have no power to follow you.

Dem. Do I entice you? Do I speak you fair?
Or, rather, do I not in plainest truth 200
Tell you I do not nor I cannot love you?

Hel. And even for that do I love you the more.
I am your spaniel; and, Demetrius,
The more you beat me, I will fawn on you: 204
Use me but as your spaniel, spurn me, strike me,
Neglect me, lose me; only give me leave,
Unworthy as I am, to follow you.

What worse place can I beg in your love, 208
And yet a place of high respect with me,
Than to be used as you use your dog?

Dem. Tempt not too much the hatred of my spirit,
For I am sick when I do look on you. 212

Hel. And I am sick when I look not on you.

Dem. You do impeach your modesty too much,
To leave the city, and commit yourself
Into the hands of one that loves you not; 216
To trust the opportunity of night
And the ill counsel of a desert place
With the rich worth of your virginity.

Hel. Your virtue is my privilege: for that 220
It is not night when I do see your face,
Therefore I think I am not in the night;
Nor doth this wood lack worlds of company,
For you in my respect are all the world: 224
Then how can it be said I am alone,
When all the world is here to look on me?

Dem. I'll run from thee and hide me in the brakes,
And leave thee to the mercy of wild beasts. 228

Hel. The wildest hath not such a heart as you.
Run when you will, the story shall be chang'd;
Apollo flies, and Daphne holds the chace;
The dove pursues the griffin; the mild hind 232
Makes speed to catch the tiger: bootless speed,
When cowardice pursues and valour flies.

Dem. I will not stay thy questions: let me go;
Or, if thou follow me, do not believe 236

But I shall do thee mischief in the wood.

Hel. Ay, in the temple, in the town, the field,
You do me mischief. Fie, Demetrius!
Your wrongs do set a scandal on my sex. 240
We cannot fight for love, as men may do;
We should be woo'd and were not made to woo.

[Exit DEMETRIUS.]
I'll follow thee and make a heaven of hell,
To die upon the hand I love so well. 245

[Exit.]

Obe. Fare thee well, nymph: ere he do leave this grove,
Thou shalt fly him, and he shall seek thy love.

Re-enter PUCK.

Hast thou the flower there? Welcome, wanderer.

Puck. Ay, there it is.

Obe. I pray thee, give it me. 248
I know a bank whereon the wild thyme blows,
Where oxlips and the nodding violet grows
Quite over-canopied with luscious woodbine,
With sweet musk-roses, and with eglantine: 252
There sleeps Titania some time of the night,
Lull'd in these flowers with dances and delight;
And there the snake throws her enamell'd skin,
Weed wide enough to wrap a fairy in: 256
And with the juice of this I'll streak her eyes,
And make her full of hateful fantasies.
Take thou some of it, and seek through this grove:
A sweet Athenian lady is in love 260
With a disdainful youth: anoint his eyes;
But do it when the next thing he espies
May be the lady. Thou shalt know the man
By the Athenian garments he hath on. 264
Effect it with some care, that he may prove
More fond on her than she upon her love.
And look thou meet me ere the first cock crow.

Puck. Fear not, my lord, your servant shall do so.

[Exeunt.]

Scene II.—Another Part of the Wood.

Enter TITANIA, with her Train.

Tita. Come, now a roundel and a fairy song;
Then, for the third of a minute, hence; 4
Some to kill cankers in the musk-rose buds,
Some war with rare mice for their leathern wings,
To make my small elves coats, and some keep back
The clamorous owl, that nightly hoots, and wonders
At our quaint spirits. Sing me now asleep;
Then to your offices, and let me rest.

The Fairies sing.

I.
You spotted snakes with double tongue,
Thorny hedge-hogs, be not seen;
Newts, and blind-worms, do no wrong;
Come not near our fairy queen.
Lys. Amen, amen, to that fair prayer, say I; 25
And then end life when I end loyalty!

[Retires a little distance.

Here is my bed: sleep give thee all his rest;
Her. With half that wish the wiser’s eyes be press’d!

[They sleep.

Enter Puck.

Puck. Through the forest have I gone,
But Athenian found I none,
On whose eyes I might approve
This flower’s force in stirring love.
Night and silence! who is here?
Weeds of Athens he doth wear:
This is he, my master said,
Despised the Athenian maid;
And here the maiden, sleeping sound,
On the dank and dirty ground.
Pretty soul! she durst not lie
Near this lack-love, this kill-courtesy.

[Squeezes the flower on Lysander’s eyelids.]

Churl, upon thy eyes I throw
All the power this charm doth owe.
When thou wak’st, let love forbide
Sleep his seat on thy eyelid:
So awake when I am gone;
For I must now to Oberon. [Exit.

Enter Demetrius and Helena, running.

Hel. Stay, though thou kill me, sweet Demetrius.

Dem. I charge thee, hence, and do not haunt me thus.

Hel. O! wilt thou darkling leave me? do not so.

Dem. Stay, on thy peril! I alone will go.

[Exit Demetrius.

Hel. O! I am out of breath in this fond chase.
The more my prayer, the lesser is my grace.
Happy is Hermia, wheresoe’er she lies;
For she hath blessed and attractive eyes.
How came her eyes so bright? Not with salt tears:
If so, my eyes are oftener wash’d than hers.
No, no, I am as ugly as a bear;
For beasts that meet me run away for fear;
Therefore no marvel though Demetrius
Do, as a monster, fly my presence thus.
What wicked and dissembling glass of mine
Made me compare with Hermia’s splendour eye?
But who is here? Lysander! on the ground! 100
Dead? or asleep? I see no blood, no wound.
Lysander, if you live, good sir, awake.

Lys. [Awaking.] And run through fire I will for thy sweet sake.

Transparent Helena! Nature shows art,
That through thy bosom makes me see thy heart.
Where is Demetrius? O! how fit a word

Enter Oberon, and squeezes the flower on Titania’s eyelids.

Obe. What thou seest when thou dost wake,
Do it for thy true-love take;
Love and languish for his sake:
Be it ounce, or cat, or bear,
Pard, or boar with bristled hair,
In thy eye that shall appear
When thou wak’st, it is thy dearest,
Wake when some vile thing is near. [Exit.

Enter Lysander and Hermia.

Lys. Fair love, you faint with wandering in the wood;
And to speak truth, I have forgot our way:
We’ll rest us, Hermia, if you think it good,
And tarry for the comfort of the day.
Her. Be it so, Lysander: find you out a bed,
For I upon this bank will rest my head.
Lys. One turf shall serve as pillow for us both;
One heart, one bed, two bosoms, and one troth.
Her. Nay, good Lysander; for my sake, my dear,
Lie further off yet, do not lie so near.
Lys. O! take the sense, sweet, of my innocence,
Love takes the meaning in love’s conference.
I mean that my heart unto yours is knit,
So that but one heart we can make of it;
Two bosoms interchained with an oath;
So then two bosoms and a single troth.
Then by your side no bed-room me deny,
For, lying so, Hermia, I do not lie.
Her. Lysander riddles very prettily:
Now much beshear my manners and my pride,
If Hermia meant to say Lysander lied.
But, gentle friend, for love and courtesy
Lie further off; in human modesty,
Such separation as may well be said
Becomes a virtuous bachelor and a maid,
So far be distant; and, good night, sweet friend.
Thy love ne’er alter till thy sweet life end!
Act II, Sc. II.  A MIDSUMMER-NIGHT'S DREAM

Is that vile name to perish on my sword.
Hel. Do not say so, Lysander; say not so. 108
What though he love your Hermia? Lord! what though?
Yot Hermia still loves you: then be content.
Lys. Content with Hermia! No: I do repent
The tedious minutes I with her have spent. 112
Not Hermia, but Helena I love:
Who will not change a raven for a dove?
The will of man is by his reason sway'd,
And reason says you are the worthier maid. 116
Things growing are not ripe until their season;
So I, being young, till now ripe not to reason;
And touching now the point of human skill,
Reason becomes the marshal to my will, 120
And leads me to your eyes; where I o'erlook
Love's stories written in love's richest book.
Hel. Wherefore was I to this keen mockery
born?
When at your hands did I deserve this scorn?
Is't not enough, is't not enough, young man,
That I did never, no, nor never can,
Deserve a sweet look from Demetrius' eye,
But you must flout my insufficiency? 128
Good troth, you do me wrong, good sooth, you do,
In such disdainful manner me to woo.
But fare you well: perforce I must confess
I thought you lord of more true gentleness. 132
O! that a lady of one man refus'd,
Should of another therefore be abus'd. [Exit.
Lys. She sees not Hermia. Hermia, sleep thou there;
And never mayst thou come Lysander near. 136
For, as a surfeit of the sweetest things
The deepest loathing to the stomach brings;
Or, as the heresies that men do leave
Are hated most of those they did deceive: 140
So thou, my surfeit and my heresy,
Of all be hated, but the most of me!
And, all my powers, address your love and might
To honour Helen, and to be her knight. [Exit.
Her. [Awaking.] Help me, Lysander, help me! do thy best
To pluck this crawling serpent from my breast.
Ay me, for pity! what a dream was here!
Lysander, look how I do quake with fear: 148
Methought a serpent eat my heart away,
And you sat smiling at his cruel prey.
Lysander! what! remov'd?—Lysander! lord!
What! out of hearing? gone! no sound, no word?
Alack! where are you? speak, an if you hear;
Speak, of all loves! I swound almost with fear.
No! than I well perceive you are not nigh:
Either death or you I'll find immediately. [Exit.
Snug. Doth the moon shine that night we play our play?
Bot. A calendar, a calendar! look in the almanack; find out moonshine, find out moonshine.
Quin. Yes, it doth shine that night.
Bot. Why, then may you leave a casement of the great chamber-window, where we play, open; and the moon may shine in at the casement.
Quin. Ay; or else one must come in with a bush of thorns and a lantern, and say he comes to disfigure, or to present, the person of Moonshine. Then, there is another thing: we must have a wall in the great chamber; for Pyramus and Thisby, says the story, did talk through the chink of a wall.
Snug. You can never bring in a wall. What say you, Bottom?
Bot. Some man or other must present Wall; and let him have some plaster, or some loam, or some rough-cast about him, to signify wall; and let him hold his fingers thus, and through that cranny shall Pyramus and Thisby whisper.
Quin. If that may be, then all is well. Come, sit down, every mother's son, and rehearse your parts. Pyramus, you begin: when you have spoken your speech, enter into that brake; and so every one according to his cue.

Enter Puck, behind.
Puck. What hempen home-spuns have we swagging here, So near the cradle of the fairy queen? What! a play toward; I'll be an auditor; An actor too perhaps, if I see cause.
Quin. Speak, Pyramus.—Thisby, stand forth.
Bot. Thisby, the flowers have odious savours sweet,—
Quin. Odorous, odorous.
Bot.—odours savours sweet:
So hath thy breath, my dearest Thisby dear.
But hark, a voice! stay thou but here awhile, And by and by I will to thee appear. [Exit. Puck. A stranger Pyramus than e'er play'd here! [Exit.
Flu. Must I speak now?
Quin. Ay, marry, must you; for you must understand, he goes but to see a noise that he heard, and is to come again.
Flu. Most radiant Pyramus, most lily-white of hue,
Of colour like the red rose on triumphant brier,
Most briskly juvenal, and eke most lovely Jew,
As true as truest horse that yet would never tire,
I'll meet thee, Pyramus, at Ninny's tomb.

Quin. 'Ninus' tomb,' man. Why, you must not speak that yet; that you answer to Pyramus: you speak all your part at once, cues and all. Pyramus, enter: your cue is past; it is 'never tire.'
Flu. O!—As true as truest horse, that yet would never tire.

Re-enter Puck, and Bottom with an ass's head.
Bot. If I were, fair Thisby, I were only thine.
Quin. O monstrous! O strange! we are haunted.
Pray, masters! fly, masters!—Help!
[Exit Clowns.
Puck. I'll follow you, I'll lead you about a round,
Through bog, through bush, through brake, through brier:
Sometime a horse I'll be, sometime a hound,
A hog, a headless bear, sometime a fire;
And neigh, and bark, and grunt, and roar, and burn,
Like horse, hound, hog, bear, fire, at every turn.
[Exit.
Bot. Why do they run away? this is a knavery of them to make me afeard.

Re-enter Snout.
Snout. O Bottom, thou art changed! what do I see on thee? 121
Bot. What do you see? you see an ass-head of your own, do you? [Exit Snout.

Re-enter Quince.
Quin. Bless thee, Bottom! bless thee! thou art translated.
[Exit. Bot. I see their knavery: this is to make an ass of me; to fright me, if they could. But I will not stir from this place, do what they can: I will walk up and down here, and I will sing, that they shall hear I am not afraid.

Tita. [Awaking.] What angel wakes me from my flowery bed?
Bot. The finch, the sparrow, and the lark,
The plain-song cuckoo gray,
Whose note full many a man doth mark,
And dares not answer, nay; 140
for indeed, who would set his wit so foolish a bird? who would give a bird the lie, though he cry 'cuckoo' never so?
Act III, Sc. I.

Tita. I pray thee, gentle mortal, sing again: Mine ear is much enamour'd of thy note; 145
So is mine eye enthralled to thy shape;
And thy fair virtue's force, perforce, doth move me,
On the first view, to say, to swear, I love thee.

Bot. Methinks, mistress, you should have little reason for that: and yet, to say the truth, reason and love keep little company together now-a-days. The more the pity, that some honest neighbours will not make them friends. Nay, I can gleek upon occasion. 154

Tita. Thou art as wise as thou art beautiful.

Bot. Not so, neither; but if I had wit enough to get out of this wood, I have enough to serve mine own turn.

Tita. Out of this wood do not desire to go: Thou shalt remain here, whe'r thou wilt or no. I am a spirit of no common rate; 161
The summer still doth tend upon my state;
And I do love thee: therefore, go with me;
I'll give thee fairies to attend on thee, 164
And they shall fetch thee jewels from the deep,
And sing, while thou on pressed flowers dost sleep:
And I will purge thy mortal grossness so
That thou shalt like an airy spirit go. 168
Pease-blossom! Cobweb! Moth! and Mustardseed!

Enter Four Fairies.

Peas. Ready.
Cob. And I.
Moth. And I.
Mus. And I.

All Four. Where shall we go?

Tita. Be kind and courteous to this gentleman;
Hop in his walks, and gambol in his eyes; 172
Feed him with apricocks and dewberries,
With purple grapes, green figs, and mulberries.
The honey-bags steal from the humble-bees,
And for night-tapers crop their waxen thighs,
And light them at the fiery glow-worm's eyes,
To have my love to bed, and to arise;
And pluck the wings from painted butterflies
To fan the moonbeams from his sleeping eyes:
Nod to him, elves, and do him courtesies. 181

Peas. Hall, mortal!
Cob. Hall!
Moth. Hall!
Mus. Hall!

Bot. I cry your worship's mercy, heartily: I beseech your worship's name.

Cob. Cobweb.

Bot. I shall desire you of more acquaintance, good Master Cobweb: if I cut my finger, I shall

make bold with you. Your name, honest gentleman? 192

Peas. Pease-blossom.

Bot. I pray you, commend me to Mistress Squash, your mother, and to Master Peascod, your father. Good Master Pease-blossom, I shall desire you of more acquaintance too. Your name, I beseech you, sir? 198

Mus. Mustard-seed.

Bot. Good Master Mustard-seed, I know your patience well: that same cowardly, giant-like ox-beef hath devoured many a gentleman of your house. I promise you, your kindred hath made my eyes water ere now. I desire you of more acquaintance, good Master Mustard-seed.

Tita. Come, wait upon him; lead him to my bower. 206

The moon methinks, looks with a watery eye;
And when she weeps, weeps every little flower,
Lamenting some enforced chastity.

Tie up my love's tongue, bring him silently. [Exeunt.

SCENE II.—Another Part of the Wood.

Enter OBERON.

Obe. I wonder if Titania be awak'd;
Then, what it was that next came in her eye,
Which she must dote on in extremity.
Here comes my messenger.

Enter PUCK.

How now, mad spirit! 4
What night-rule now about this haunted grove?

Puck. My mistress with a monster is in love.
Near to her close and consecrated bower,
While she was in her dull and sleeping hour, 8
A crew of patches, rude mechanicals,
That work for bread upon Athenian stalls,
Were met together to rehearse a play
Intended for great Theseus' nuptial day. 12
The shallowest thick-skin of that barren sort,
Who Pyramus presented in their sport
Forsook his scene, and enter'd in a brake,
When I did him at this advantage take; 16
An ass's nose! I fixed on his head:
Anon his Thisbe must be answered,
And forth my mimick comes. When they himspy
As wild geese that the creeping fowler eye, 20
Or russet-pated choughs, many in sort,
Rising and cawing at the gun's report,
Sever themselves, and madly sweep the sky;
So, at his sight, away his fellows fly. 24
And, at our stamp, here o'er and o'er one falls;
He murder cries, and help from Athens calls.
Their sense thus weak, lost with their fears thus strong;

206
Made senseless things begin to do them wrong;
For briers and thorns at their apparel snatch;
Some sleeves, some hats, from yielders all things catch.
I led them on in this distracted fear,
And left sweet Pyramus translated there;
When in that moment, so it came to pass,
Titania wak'd and straightway lov'd an ass.
Obe. This falls out better than I could devise.
But hast thou yet latch'd the Athenian's eyes
With the love-juice, as I did bid thee do?
Puck. I took him sleeping,—that is finish'd too,—
And the Athenian woman by his side;
That, when he wak'd, of force she must be ey'd.

Enter Demetrius and Hermia.

Obe. Stand close: this is the same Athenian.
Puck. This is the woman; but not this the man.
Dem. O! why rebuke you him that loves you so?
Lay breath so bitter on your bitter foe.
Her. Now I but chide; but I should use thee worse,
For thou, I fear, hast given me cause to curse.
If thou hast slain Lysander in his sleep,
Being o'er shoes in blood, plunge in knee deep,
And kill me too.
The sun was not so true unto the day
As he to me. Would he have stol'n away
From sleeping Hermia? I'll believe as soon
This whole earth may be bor'd, and that the moon
May through the centre creep, and so displease
Her brother's noontide with the Antipodes.
It cannot be but thou hast murder'd him;
So should a murderer look, so dead, so grim.
Dem. So should the murderer look, and so should I,
Pierced through the heart with your stern cruelty;
Yet you, the murderer, look as bright, as clear,
As yonder Venus in her glistening sphere.
Her. What's this to my Lysander? where is he?
Ah! good Demetrius, wilt thou give him me?
Dem. I had rather give his carcass to my hounds.
Her. Out, dog! out, cur! thou driv'st me past the bounds
Of maiden's patience. Hast thou slain him then?
Henceforth be never number'd among men!
O! once tell true, tell true, e'en for my sake; 68
Durst thou have look'd upon him being awake,
And hast thou kill'd him sleeping? O brave touch!

Could not a worm, an adder, do so much
An adder did it; for with doubler tongue
Than thine, thou serpent, never adder stung.
Dem. You spend your passion on a mispris'd mood:
I am not guilty of Lysander's blood,
Nor is he dead, for aught that I can tell.
Her. I pray thee, tell me then that he is well.
Dem. An if I could, what should I get therefore?
Her. A privilege never to see me more.
And from thy hated presence part I so;
See me no more, wher'e he be dead or no.

[Exil.]

Dem. There is no following her in this fierce vein:
Here therefore for awhile I will remain.
So sorrow's heaviness doth heavier grow
For debt that bankrupt sleep doth sorrow owe;
Which now in some slight measure it will pay,
If for his tender here I make some stay.

[Lies down and sleeps.]

Obe. What hast thou done? thou hast mistaken quite,
And laid the love-juice on some true-love's sight:
Of thy misprision must perforce ensue
Some true-love turn'd, and not a false turn'd true.
Puck. Then fate o'er-rules, that, one man holding troth,
A million fail, confounding oath on oath.
Obe. About the wood go swifter than the wind,
And Helena of Athens look thou find:
All fancy-sick she is, and pale of cheer
With sighs of love, that cost the fresh blood dear.
By some illusion see thou bring her here:
I'll charm his eyes against she do appear.
Puck. I go, I go; look how I go;
Swifter than arrow from the Tarter's bow. [Exil.]

Obe. Flower of this purple dye,
Hit with Cupid's archery,
Sink in apple of his eye.
When his love he doth espy,
Let her shine as gloriously
As the Venus of the sky.
When thou wak'st, if she be by,
Beg of her for remedy.

Re-enter Puck.

Puck. Captain of our fairy band,
Helena is here at hand,
And the youth, mistook by me,
Pleading for a lover's fee.
Shall we their fond pageant see?
Lord, what fools these mortals be!

Obe. Stand aside: the noise they make
Will cause Demetrius to awake.
Enter Puck. Then will two at once woo one; That must needs be sport alone; And those things do best please me 120 That befall preposterously.

Enter Lysander and Helena.

Lys. Why should you think that I should woo in scorn? Scorn and derision never come in tears: Look, when I vow, I weep; and vows so born, In their nativity all truth appears. 125 How can these things in me seem scorn to you, Bearing the badge of faith to prove them true? Hel. You do advance your cunning more and more. 128 When truth kills truth, 0 devilish-holy fray! These vows are Hermia’s: will you give her o’er? Weigh oath with oath, and you will nothing weigh:

Your vows, to her and me, put in two scales, 132 Will even weigh, and both as light as tales. Lys. I had no judgment when to her I swore. Hel. Nor none, in my mind, now you give her o’er. Lys. Demetrius loves her, and he loves not you. 136

Dem. [Awaking.] O Helen! goddess, nymph, perfect, divine! To what, my love, shall I compare thine eye? Crystal is muddy: O! how rife in show Thy lips, those kissing cherries, tempting grow, This pure congealed white, high Taurus’ snow, Fann’d with the eastern wind, turns to a crow When thou hold’st up thy hand. O! let me kiss That princess of pure white, this seal of bliss. 144 Hel. O spite! O hell! I see you all are bent To set against me for your merriment: If you were civil and knew courtesy, You would not do me thus much injury. 148 Can you not hate me, as I know you do, But you must join in souls to mock me too? If you were men, as men you are in show, You would not use a gentle lady so; 152 To vow, and swear, and superpraise my parts, When I am sure you hate me with your hearts. You both are rivals, and love Hermia, And now both rivals, to mock Helena: 156 A trim exploit, a manly enterprise, To conjure tears up in a poor maid’s eyes With your derision! none of noble sort Would so offend a virgin, and extort 160 A poor soul’s patience, all to make you sport.

Lys. You are unkind, Demetrius; be not so; For you love Hermia; this you know I know And here, with all good will, with all my heart, In Hermia’s love I yield you up my part; 165

And yours of Helena to me bequeath, Whom I do love, and will do to my death. Hel. Never did mockers waste more idle breath. Dem. Lysander, keep thy Hermia; I will none: If e’er I lov’d her, all that love is gone. My heart with her but as guest-wise sojourn’d, And now to Helen it is home return’d, 172 There to remain.

Lys. Helen, it is not so. Dem. Disparage not the faith thou dost not know, Lest to thy peril thou aby it dear. Look! where thy love comes: yonder is thy dear.

Enter Hermia.

Her. Dark night, that from the eye his function takes,
The ear more quick of apprehension makes; Wherein it doth impair the seeing sense, It pays the hearing double recompense. 180 Thou art not by mine eye, Lysander, found; Mine ear, I thank it, brought me to thy sound. But why unkindly didst thou leave me so? Lys. Why should he stay, whom love doth press to go? 184 Her. What love could press Lysander from my side?

Lys. Lysander’s love, that would not let him bide, Fair Helena, who more engilds the night Than all you fiery oes and eyes of light. Why seek’st thou me? could not this make thee know, The hate I bear thee made me leave thee so? Her. You speak not as you think; it cannot be. Hel. Lo! she is one of this confederacy. 192 Now I perceive they have conjoin’d all three To fashion this false sport in spite of me. Injurious Hermia! most ungrateful maid! Have you conspir’d, have you with these contriv’d 196 To bait me with this foul derision? Is all the counsel that we two have shar’d, The sister-vows, the hours that we have spent, When we have chid the hasty-footed time 200 For parting us, O! is it all forgot? Allschool-days’ friendship, childhood innocence? We, Hermia, like two artificial gods, Have with our needs created both one flower, Both on one sampler, sitting on one cushion, Both warbling of one song, both in one key, As if our hands, our sides, voices, and minds, Had been incorporate. So we grew together, 208 Like to a double cherry, seeming parted, But yet an union in partition; Two lovely berries moulded on one stem; So, with two seeming bodies, but one heart; 212
Two of the first, like coats in heraldry,
Due but to one, and crowned with one crest.
And will you rent our ancient love asunder,
To join with men in scorning your poor friend?
It is not friendly, 'tis not maidenly: 217
Our sex, as well as I, may chide you for it,
Though I alone do feel the injury.

**Her.** I am amazed at your passionate words.

I scorn you not: it seems that you scorn me.

**Hel.** Have you not set Lysander, as in scorn,
To follow me and praise my eyes and face,
And made your other love, Demetrius,— 224
Who even now did spurn me with his foot,—
To call me goddess, nymph, divine and rare,
Precious, celestial? Wherefore speaks he this
To her he hates? and wherefore doth Lysander
Deny your love, so rich within his soul, 229
And tender me, forsooth, affection,
But by your setting on, by your consent?
What though I be not so in grace as you, 232
So hung upon with love, so fortunate,
But miserable most to love unloved?
This you should pity rather than despise.

**Her.** I understand not what you mean by
this. 236

**Hel.** Ay, do, persever, counterfeit sad looks,
Make mouths upon me when I turn my back;
Wink each at other; hold the sweet jest up:
This sport, well carried, shall be chronicled. 240
If you have any pity, grace, or manners,
You would not make such an argument.
But, fare ye well: 'tis partly mine own fault,
Which death or absence soon shall remedy. 244

**Lys.** Stay, gentle Helena! hear my excuse:
My love, my life, my soul, fair Helena!

**Hel.** O excellent!

**Her.** Sweet, do not scorn her so.

**Dem.** If she cannot entreat, I can compel. 248

**Lys.** Thou canst compel no more than she
teat

Thy threats have no more strength than her
weak prayers.

Helen, I love thee; by my life, I do:
I swear by that which I will lose for thee, 252
To prove him false that says I love thee not.

**Dem.** I say I love thee more than he can do.

**Lys.** If thou say so, withdraw, and prove it too.

**Dem.** Quick, come!

**Her.** Lysander, whereto tends all this?

**Lys.** Away, you Ethiop! 257

**Dem.** No, no, he'll...

Seem to break loose; take on, as you would
follow,
But yet come not: you are a tame man, go!

**Lys.** [To HERMIA.] Hang off, thou cat, thou
burr! vile thing, let loose,
Or I will shake thee from me like a serpent.

**Her.** Why are you grown so rude? what
change is this,
Sweet love,—

**Lys.** Thy love! out, tawny Tartar, out!
Out, loathed medicin! hated poison, hence!

**Her.** Do you not jest?

**Hel.** Yes, sooth; and so do you.

**Lys.** Demetrius, I will keep my word with thee.

**Dem.** I would I had your bond, for I perceive
A weak bond holds you: I'll not trust your word.

**Lys.** What! should I hurt her, strike her, kill
her dead? 269

Although I hate her, I'll not harm her so.

**Her.** What! can you do me greater harm
than hate?

**Hate me! wherefore? O me! what news, my
love?** 272

Am not I Hermia? Are not you Lysander?
I am as fair now as I was erewhile.
Since night you lov'd me; yet, since night you
left me:
Why, then you left me,—O, the gods forbid!—
In earnest, shall I say?

**Lys.** Ay, by my life;
And never did desire to see thee more.
Therefore be out of hope, of question, doubt;
Be certain, nothing truer: 'tis no jest, 280
That I do hate thee and love Helena.

**Her.** O me! you juggler! you canker-blossom!
You thief of love! what have you come by night
And stol'n my love's heart from him?

**Hel.** Fine, I' faith!

Have you no modesty, no maiden shame, 285
No touch of bashfulness? What! will you tear
Impatient answers from my gentle tongue?
Fie, fie you counterfeit, you puppet you! 288

**Her.** Puppet! why, so: ay, that way goes the

Now I perceive that she hath made compare
Between our statures: she hath urg'd her height;
And with her personage, her tall personage, 292
Her height, forsooth, she hath prevail'd with him.
And are you grown so high in his esteem,
Because I am so dwarfish and so low?
How low am I, thou painted maypole? speak;
How low am I? I am not yet so low 297
But that my nails can reach unto thine eyes.

**Hel.** I pray you, though you mock me, gentle-
men,
Let her not hurt me: I was never curst;
I have no gift at all in shrewishness;
I am a right maid for my cowardice:
Let her not strike me. You perhaps may think,
Because she is something lower than myself,304
That I can match her.

**Her.** Lower! hark, again.
Hel. Good Hermia, do not be so bitter with me. 
I evermore did love you, Hermia, 
Did ever keep your counsels, never wrong'd you; 
Save that, in love unto Demetrius, 309
I told him of your stealth unto this wood. 
He follow'd you; for love I follow'd him; 
But he hath chid me hence, and threaten'd me 
To strike me, spurn me, nay, to kill me too: 313
And now, so you will let me quiet go, 
To Athens will I bear my folly back, 
And follow you no further: let me go: 316
You see how simple and how fond I am.

Her. Why, get you gone. Who is't that 
hinders you? 
Hel. A foolish heart, that I leave here behind. 
Her. What! with Lysander? 
Hel. With Demetrius. 
Lys. Be not afraid: she shall not harm thee, Helena. 321
Dem. No, sir; she shall not, though you take 
her part. 
Hel. O! when she's angry, she is keen and 
shrew'd. 
She was a vixen when she went to school: 324
And though she be but little, she is fierce. 
Her. 'Little' again! nothing but 'low' and 'little'!
Why will you suffer her to flout me thus? 
Let me come to her. 
Lys. Get you gone, you dwarf; 328
You minimus, of hindering knot-grass made; 
You bead, you acorn!
Dem. You are too officious 
In her behalf that scorns your services. 
Let her alone; speak not of Helena; 332
Take not her part, for, if thou dost intend 
Never so little show of love to her, 
Thou shalt aby it. 
Lys. Now she holds me not; 
Now follow, if thou dar' st, to try whose right, 
Or thine or mine, is most in Helena. 337
Dem. Follow! nay, I'll go with thee, cheek 
by jole.

[Exeunt Lysander and Demetrius. 

Her. You, mistress, all this coil is 'long of you: 
Nay, go not back. 
Hel. I will not trust you, I, 340
Nor longer stay in your curt company. 
Your hands than mine are quicker for a fray, 
My legs are longer though, to run away. [Exit. 
Her. I am amaz'd, and know not what to say. 

[Exit. 

Obe. This is thy negligence: still thou mistak'st, 
Or else commit'st thy knaverys wilfully. 
Puck. Believe me, king of shadows, I mistook. 
Did not you tell me I should know the man 348

By the Athenian garments he had on? 
And so far blameless proves my enterprise, 
That I have 'pointed an Athenian's eyes; 
And so far am I glad it so did sort, 352
As this their jangling I esteem a sport. 
Obe. Thou see'st these lovers seek a place to 
fight: 
Hie therefore, Robin, overcast the night; 
The starry welkin cover thou anon 
With drooping fog as black as Acheron; 
And lead these teasty rivals so astray, 
As one come not within another's way. 
Like to Lysander sometime frame thy tongue, 
Then stir Demetrius up with bitter wrong; 361
And sometime rail thou like Demetrius; 
And from each other look thou lead them thus, 
Till o'er their brows death-counterfeiting sleep 
With leaden legs and batty wings doth creep; 
Then crush this herb into Lysander's eye; 
Whose liquor hath this virtuous property, 
To take from thence all error with his might, 368
And make his eyeballs roll with wond't sight. 
When they next wake, all this derision 
Shall seem a dream and fruitless vision; 
And back to Athens shall the lovers wend, 372
With league whose date till death shall never end. 
Whiles I in this affair do thee employ, 
I'll to my queen and beg her Indian boy; 
And then I will her charmed eye release 376
From monster's view, and all things shall be peace.

Puck. My fairy lord, this must be done with 
haste, 
For night's swift dragons cut the clouds full fast, 
And yonder shines Aurora's harbinger; 380
At whose approach, ghosts, wandering here and 
there, 
Troop home to churchyards: damned spirits all, 
That in cross-ways and floods have burial, 
Already to their wormy beds are gone; 384
For fear lest day should look their shames upon, 
They willfully themselves exile from light, 
And must for aye consort with black-brow'd 
night. 

Obe. But we are spirits of another sort. 388
I with the morning's love have oft made sport; 
And, like a forester, the groves may tread, 
Even till the eastern gate, all fiery-red, 
Opening on Neptune with fair blessed beams, 
Turns into yellow gold his salt green-streams. 
But, notwithstanding, haste; make no delay: 
We may effect this business yet ere day.

[Exit Oberon. 

Puck. Up and down, up and down; 
I will lead them up and down: 
I am fear'd in field and town; 
Goblin, lead them up and down. 

Here comes one. 

210
Re-enter Lysander.
Lys. Where art thou, proud Demetrius? speak thou now.

Puck. Here, villain! drawn and ready. Where art thou?
Lys. I will be with thee straight.

Puck. Follow me, then, To plainer ground.

[Exit Lysander as following the voice.

Re-enter Demetrius.

Dem. Lysander! speak again. Thou runaway, thou coward, art thou fled?
Speak! In some bush? Where dost thou hide thy head?

Puck. Thou coward! art thou bragging to the stars,
Telling the bushes that thou look'st for wars,
And wilt not come? Come, recreant; come, thou child;

I'll whip thee with a rod: he is defil'd That draws a sword on thee.

Dem. Yea, art thou there?

Puck. Follow my voice: we'll try no manhood here. [Exeunt.

Re-enter Lysander.

Lys. He goes before me and still dares me on:
When I come where he calls, then he is gone.
The villain is much lighter-heel'd than I:
I follow'd fast, but faster he did fly; That fallen am I in dark uneven way,
And here will rest me. [Lies down.] Come, thou gentle day!

For if but once thou show me thy grey light,
I'll find Demetrius and revenge this spite. [Sleeps.

[Exit Puck and Demetrius.

Puck. Ho! ho! ho! Coward, why com'st thou not?

Dem. Abide me, if thou dar'st; for well I wot Thou runn'st before me, shifting every place,
And dar'st not stand, nor look me in the face. Where art thou now?

Puck. Come hither: I am here.

Dem. Nay then, thou mock'st me. Thou shalt buy this dear,
If ever I thy face by daylight see:
Now, go thy way. Faintness constraineth me To measure out my length on this cold bed:
By day's approach look to be visited. [Lies down and sleeps.

Re-enter Helena.

Hel. O weary night! O long and tedious night,

Abate thy hours! shine, comforts, from the east!

That I may back to Athens by daylight,
From these that my poor company detest:
And sleep, that sometimes shuts up sorrow's eye,
Steal me awhile from mine own company. [Lies down and sleeps.

Puck. Yet but three? Come one more;
Two of both kinds make up four.
Here she comes, curt and sad:
Cupid is a knavish lad,
Thus to make poor females mad.

Re-enter Hermia.

Her. Never so weary, never so in woe,
Bedabbled with the dew and torn with briers,
I can no further crawl, no further go;
My legs can keep no pace with my desires.
Here will I rest me till the break of day.
Heavens shield Lysander, if they mean a fray!

[Lies down and sleeps.

Puck. On the ground Sleep sound:
I'll apply
To your eye,
Gentle lover, remedy

[Squeezing the juice on Lysander's eyes.

When thou wak'st,
Thou tak'st
True delight
In the sight

Of thy former lady's eye:
And the country proverb known,
That every man should take his own,
In your waking shall be shown:
Jack shall have Jill;
Nought shall go ill;
The man shall have his mare again,
And all shall be well. [Exit.

ACT IV.

SCENE I.—A Wood. Lysander, Demetrius, Helena and Hermia lying asleep.

Enter Titania and Bottom, Fairies attending; Oberon behind unseen.

Tita. Come, sit thee down upon this flowery bed,
While I thy amiable cheeks do coy,
And stick musk-roses in thy sleek smooth head,
And kiss thy fair large ears, my gentle joy. 4
Bot. Where's Pease-blossom?
Peas. Ready.
Bot. Scratch my head, Pease-blossom. Where's Mounsieur Cobweb?
Cob. Ready.
Bot. Mounsieur Cobweb, good mounsieur, get
your weapons in your hand, and kill me a red-hipped humble-bee on the top of a thistle; and, good mounseur, bring me the honey-bag. Do not fret yourself too much in the action, mounseur; and, good mounseur, have a care the honey-bag break not; I would be loath to have you overflown with a honey-bag, signior. Where's Mounsier Mustard-seed?

Must. Ready.

Bot. Give me your neaf, Mounsier Mustard-seed. Pray you, leave your curtsy, good mounsier.

Must. What's your will?

Bot. Nothing, good mounsier, but to help Cavalary Cobweb to scratch. I must to the barber's, mounsier, for methinks I am marvellous hairy about the face; and I am such a tender ass, if my hair do but tickle me, I must scratch.

Tita. What, wilt thou hear some music, my sweet love?

Bot. I have a reasonable good ear in music: let us have the tongs and the bones.

Tita. Or say, sweet love, what thou desir'st to eat.

Bot. Truly, a peck of provender: I could munch your good dry oats. Methinks I have a great desire to a bottle of hay: good hay, sweet hay, hath no fellow.

Tita. I have a venturous fairy that shall seek The squirrel's hoard, and fetch thee thence new nuts.

Bot. I had rather have a handful or two of dried pease. But, I pray you, let none of your people stir me: I have an exposition of sleep come upon me.

Tita. Sleep thou, and I will wind thee in my arms.

Fairies, be gone, and be all ways away.

[Exeunt Fairies.

So doth the woodbine the sweet honeysuckle Gently entwist; the female ivy so Enrings the barky fingers of the elm. O! how I love thee; how I dote on thee!

[They sleep.

Enter Puck.

Obe. [Advancing.] Welcome, good Robin. See'st thou this sweet sight?

Her dotage now I do begin to pity: For, meeting her of late behind the wood, Seeking sweet favours for this hateful fool, I did upbraid her and fall out with her; For she his hairy temples then had rounded With comfit of fresh and fragrant flowers; And that same dew, which sometime on the buds

Was wont to swell like round and orient pearls,

Stood now within the pretty flowerets' eyes

Like tears that did their own disgrace bewail.

When I had at my pleasure taunted her,

And she in mild terms begg'd my patience,

I then did ask of her her changeling child;

Which straight she gave me, and her fairy sent

To bear him to my bower in fairy land.

And now I have the boy, I will undo

This hateful imperfection of her eyes:

And, gentle Puck, take this transformed scalp

From off the head of this Athenian swain,

That he, awaking when the other do,

May all to Athens back again repair,

And think no more of this night's accidents

But as the fierce vexation of a dream.

But first I will release the fairy queen.

[Touching her eyes with an herb.

Be as thou wast wont to be;

See as thou wast wont to see:

Dian's bud o'er Cupid's flower

Hath such force and blessed power.

Now, my Titania; wake you, my sweet queen.

Tita. My Oberon! what visions have I seen!

Methought I was enamour'd of an ass.

Obe. There lies your love.

Tita. How came these things to pass?

O! how mine eyes do loathe his visage now.

Obe. Silence, awhile. Robin, take off this head.

Titania, music call; and strike more dead Than common sleep of all these five the sense.

Tita. Music, ho! music! such as charmeth sleep.

[Music.

Puck. When thou wak'st, with thine own fool's eyes peep.

Obe. Sound, music! [Still, music.] Come, my queen, take hands with me,

And rock the ground whereon these sleepers be.

Now thou and I are now in amity,

And will to-morrow midnight solemnly Dance in Duke Theseus' house triumphantly,

And bless it to all fair prosperity.

There shall the pairs of faithful lovers be Wedded, with Theseus, all in jollity.

Puck. Fairy king, attend, and mark:

I do hear the morning lark.

Obe. Then, my queen, in silence sad,

Trip we after the night's shade;

We the globe can compass soon,

Swifter than the wandering moon.

Tita. Come, my lord; and in our flight

Tell me how it came this night

That I sleeping here was found

With these mortals on the ground.

[Exeunt. Horns wound within.


Enter THESEUS, HIPPOLYTA, EGEUS, and TRAIN.

The. Go, one of you, find out the forester:
For now our observation is perform'd;
And since we have the vaward of the day,
My love shall hear the music of my hounds. 112
Uncouple in the western valley; let them go:
Dispatch, I say, and find the forester.
We will, fair queen, up to the mountain's top,
And mark the musical confusion 116
Of hounds and echo in conjunction.

Hip. I was with Hercules and Cadmus once,
When in a wood of Crete they bade the bear
With hounds of Sparta: never did I hear 120
Such gallant chiding; for, besides the groves,
The skies, the fountains, every region near
Seem'd all one mutual cry. I never heard
So musical a discord, such sweet thunder. 124

The. My hounds are bred out of the Spartan kind,
So flew'd, so sanded; and their heads are hung
With ears that sweep away the morning dew;
Crook-knee'd, and dew-lapp'd like Thessalian bulls; 128
Slow in pursuit, but match'd in mouth like bells,
Each under each. A cry more tuneable
Was never holla'd to, nor cheer'd with horn,
In Crete, in Sparta, nor in Thessaly: 132
Judge, when you hear. But, soft! what nymphs are these?

Ege. My lord, this is my daughter here asleep;
And this, Lysander; this Demetrius is;
This Helena, old Nedars's Helena: 136
I wonder of their being here together.

The. No doubt they rose up early to observe
The rite of May, and, hearing our intent,
Came here in grace of our solemnity. 140
But speak, Egeus, is not this the day
That Hermia should give answer of her choice?

Ege. It is, my lord.

The. Go, bid the huntsmen wake them with their horns. 144

[Horns and shout within. LYSANDER, DEMETRIUS, HERMIA, and HELENA, wake and start up.

Good morrow, friends. Saint Valentine is past:
Begin these wood-birds but to couple now?
Lys. Pardon, my lord. [He and the rest kneel.
The. I pray you all, stand up.
I know you two are rival enemies: 148
How comes this gentle concord in the world,
That hatred is so far from jealousy,
To sleep by hate, and fear no enmity?
Lys. My lord, I shall reply amazedly, 152
Half sleep, half waking: but as yet, I swear,
I cannot truly say how I came here;

But, as I think,—for truly would I speak,
And now I do bethink me, so it is,—
I came with Hermia hither: our intent
Was to be gone from Athens, where we might,
Without the peril of the Athenian law—

Ege. Enough, enough, my lord; you have enough: 160
I beg the law, the law, upon his head.
They would have stol'n away; they would, Demetrius,
Therby to have defeated you and me;
You cf your wife, and me of my consent, 164
Of my consent that she should be your wife.

Dem. My lord, fair Helen told me of their stealth,
Of this their purpose hither, to this wood;
And I in fury hither follow'd them, 168
Fair Helena in fancy following me.
But, my good lord, I wot not by what power,—
But by some power it is,—my love to Hermia,
Melted as doth the snow, seems to me now 172
As the remembrance of an idle gaud
Which in my childhood I did dote upon;
And all the faith, the virtue of my heart,
The object and the pleasure of mine eye, 176
Is only Helena. To her, my lord,
Was I betroth'd ere I saw Hermia:
But, like in sickness, did I loathe this food;
But, as in health, come to my natural taste,
Now do I wish it, love it, long for it, 181
And will for evermore be true to it.

The. Fair lovers, you are fortunately met:
Of this discourse we more will hear anon. 184
Egeus, I will overbear your will,
For in the temple, by and by, with us,
These couples shall eternally be knit:
And, for the morning now is something worn,
Our purpos'd hunting shall be set aside. 189
Away with us, to Athens: three and three,
We'll hold a feast in great solemnity.

Come, HIPPOLYTA.

[Execut THESEUS, HIPPOLYTA, EGEUS, and TRAIN.

Dem. These things seem small and undistinguishable,
Like far-off mountains turned into clouds.
Her. Methinks I see these things with parted eye,
When everything seems double.

Hel. So methinks.

Mine own, and not mine own.

Dem. Are you sure
That we are awake? It seems to me
That yet we sleep, we dream. Do you not think
The duke was here, and bid us follow him? 201

Her. Yes; and my father.
Act IV, Sc. I.
A MIDSUMMER-NIGHT'S DREAM

Hel. And Hippolyta.
Lys. And he did bid us follow to the temple.
Dem. Why, then, we are awake. Let's follow him;
And by the way let us recount our dreams.

[Exeunt.]

Bot. [Awaking.] When my cue comes, call me, and I will answer: my next is, 'Most fair Pyramus.' Heigh-ho! Peter Quince! Flute, the bellows-mender! Snout, the tinker! Starveling! God's my life! stolen hence, and left me asleep! I have had a most rare vision. I have had a dream, past the wit of man to say what dream it was: man is but an ass, if he go about to expound this dream. Methought I was—there is no man can tell what. Methought I was,—and methought I had,—but man is but a patched fool, if he will offer to say what methought I had. The eye of man hath not heard, the ear of man hath not seen, man's hand is not able to taste, his tongue to conceive, nor his heart to report, what my dream was. I will get Peter Quince to write a ballad of this dream: it shall be called Bottom's Dream, because it hath no bottom; and I will sing it in the latter end of a play, before the duke: peradventure, to make it the more gracious, I shall sing it at her death. [Exit.


Enter Quince, Flute, Snout, and Starveling.

Quin. Have you sent to Bottom's house? is he come home yet?
Star. He cannot be heard of. Out of doubt, he is transported.

Flu. If he come not, then the play is marred:
it goes not forward, doth it?
Quin. It is not possible: you have not a man in all Athens able to discharge Pyramus but he.

Flu. No; he hath simply the best wit of any handicraft man in Athens.
Quin. Yea, and the best person too; and he is a very paramour for a sweet voice.

Flu. You must say, 'paragon': a paramour is, God bless us! a thing of naught.

Enter Snug.

Snug. Masters, the duke is coming from the temple, and there is two or three lords and ladies more married: if our sport had gone forward, we had all been made men.

Flu. O sweet bully Bottom! Thus hath he lost sixpence a day during his life; he could not have 'scaped sixpence a day: an the duke had not given him sixpence a day for playing Pyramus, I'll be hanged; he would have deserved it: sixpence a day in Pyramus, or nothing. 20

Enter Bottom.

Bot. Where are these lads? where are these hearts?
Quin. Bottom! O most courageous day! O most happy hour! 29
Bot. Masters, I am to discourse wonders: but ask me not what; for if I tell you, I am no true Athenian. I will tell you everything, right as it fell out.

Quin. Let us hear, sweet Bottom.
Bot. Not a word of me. All that I will tell you is, that the duke hath dined. Get your apparel together, good strings to your beards, new ribbons to your pumps; meet presently at the palace; every man look o'er his part; for the short and the long is, our play is preferred. In any case, let Thisby have clean linen; and let not him that plays the lion pare his nails, for they shall hang out for the lion's claws. And, most dear actors, eat no onions nor garlic, for we are to utter sweet breath, and I do not doubt but to hear them say, it is a sweet comedy. No more words: away! go; away. [Exeunt.

ACT V.


Enter Theseus, Hippolyta, Philostrate, Lords, and Attendants.

Hip. 'Tis strange, my Theseus, that these lovers speak of.

The. More strange than true. I never may believe These antique fables, nor these fairy toys. Lovers and madman have such seething brains, Such shaping fantasies, that apprehend More than cool reason ever comprehends. The lunatic, the lover, and the poet, Are of imagination all compact: One sees more devils than vast hell can hold, That is, the madman; the lover, all as frantic, Sees Helen's beauty in a brow of Egypt: The poet's eye, in a fine frenzy rolling, Doth glance from heaven to earth, from earth to heaven;

And, as imagination bodies forth The forms of things unknown, the poet's pen Turns them to shapes, and gives to airy nothing A local habitation and a name.

Such tricks hath strong imagination, That, if it would but apprehend some joy, It comprehends some bringer of that joy;
Or in the night, imagining some fear,
How easy is a bush suppos’d a bear!

_Hip._ But all the story of the night told over,
And all their minds transfigur’d so together, 24
More withseep than fancy’s images,
And grows to something of great constancy,
But, howsoever, strange and admirable.

_The._ Here come the lovers, full of joy and
mirth.

Enter Lysander, Demetrius, Hermia, and
Helena.

Joy, gentle friends! joy, and fresh days of love
Accompany your hearts!

_Lys._ More than to us
Wait in your royal walks, your board, your bed!

_The._ Come now; what masques, what dances
shall we have,
To wear away this long age of three hours
Between our after-supper and bed-time?
Where is our usual manager of mirth?
What revels are in hand? Is there no play,
To ease the anguish of a torturing hour?

_Call Philostrat._

_Philost._ Here, mighty Theseus,

_The._ Say, what abridgment have you for this
evening?

_What masque? what music? How shall we be-
guil e
The lazy time, if not with some delight?

_Philost._ There is a brief how many sports
are
ripe;
Make choice of which your highness will see first.

_Gives a paper._

_The._ The battle with the Centaurs, to be
sung

_By an Athenian eunuch to the harp._

_We’ll none of that; that have I told my love,
In glory of my kineman Hercules._

_The riot of the tipsy Bacchanals._

_Tearing the Thracian singer in their rage.
That is an old device; and it was play’d
When I from Theske came last a conqueror._

_The thrice three Muses mourning for the death
Of Learning, late deceas’d in beggary._

_that is some satire keen and critical,
Not sorting with a nuptial ceremony._

_A tedious brief scene of young Pyramus
And his love Thisbe; very tragical mirth.
Merry and tragical! tedious and brief! That is, hot ice and wonderous strange snow.
How shall we find the concord of this discord?

_Philost._ A play there is, my lord, some ten
words long,
Which is as brief as I have known a play;
But by ten words, my lord, it is too long;

Which makes it tedious; for in all the play
There is not one word apt, one player fitted.
And tragical, my noble lord, it is;
For Pyramus therein doth kill himself.
Which when I saw rehears’d, I must confess,
Made mine eyes water; but more merry tears
The passion of loud laughter never shed.

_The._ What are they that do play it?

_Philost._ Hard-handed men, that work in
Athens here,

_Which never labour’d in their minds till now,
And now have toil’d their unbreath’d memories
With this same play, against your nuptial,
_The._ And we will hear it.

_Philost._ No, my noble lord;
It is not for you: I have heard it over,
And it is nothing, nothing in the world;
Unless you can find sport in their intents,
Extremely stretch’d and conn’d with cruel pain,
To do you service.

_The._ I will hear that play;
For never anything can be amiss,
When simpleness and duty tender it.
Go, bring them in; and take your places, ladies.

_Exeunt Philostrate._

_Hip._ I love not to see wretchedness o’er-
charg’d,

_And duty in his service perishing.

_The._ Why, gentle sweet, you shall see no such
thing.

_Hip._ He says they can do nothing in this
kind.

_The._ The kinder we, to give them thanks for
nothing.

Our sport shall be to take what they mistake:
And what poor duty cannot do, noble respect
Takes it in might, not merit.

_Where I have come, great clerks have purposed
To greet me with premeditated welcomes;
Where I have seen them shiver and look pale,
Make periods in the midst of sentences,
Throttle their practis’d accent in their fears,
And, in conclusion, dumbly have broke off,
Not paying me a welcome. Trust me, sweet,
Out of this silence yet I pick’d a welcome;
And in the modesty of fearful duty
I read as much as from the rattling tongue
Of saucy and audacious eloquence.

_Love, therefore, and tongue-tied simplicity
In least speak most, to my capacity._

_Re-enter Philostrate._

_Philost._ So please your Grace, the Prologue is
address’d.

_The._ Let him approach.

_Flourish of trumpets._
Enter Quince for the Prologue.

Prol. If we offend, it is with our good will.
That you should think, we come not to of-

fend,

But with good will. To show our simple skill,
That is the true beginning of our end.
Consider then we come but in despite. 112
We do not come as minding to content you,
Our true intent is. All for your delight,
We are not here. That you should here re-

pent you,
The actors are at hand; and, by their show, 116
You shall know all that you are like to know.
The. This fellow doth not stand upon points.
Lys. He hath rid his prologue like a rough
colt; he knows not the stop. A good moral, my
lord: it is not enough to speak, but to speak
true.

Hip. Indeed he hath played on his prologue
like a child on a recorder; a sound, but not in
government.
The. His speech was like a tangled chain;
nothing impaired, but all disordered. Who is
next?

Enter Pyramus and Thisbe, Wall, Moon-
shine, and Lion, as in dumb show.

Prol. Gentles, perchance you wonder at this
show;
But wonder on, till truth make all things
plain.
This man is Pyramus, if you would know;
This beauteous lady Thisby is, certain. 132
This man, with lime and rough-cast, doth pre-

sent
Wall, that vile Wall which did these lovers
sunder;
And through Wall’s chink, poor souls, they are
content
To whisper, at the which let no man wonder.
This man, with lanthorn, dog, and bush of
thorn,

Presenteth Moonshine; for, if you will know,
By moonshine did these lovers think no scorn
To meet at Ninnus’ tomb, there, there to

woo.

This grisly beast, which Lion hight by name,
The trusty Thisby, coming first by night,
Did scare away, or rather did afflict;
And, as she fled, her mantle she did fall,

Which Lion vile with bloody mouth did

stain.
Anon comes Pyramus, sweet youth and tall,
And finds his trusty Thisby’s mantle stain:
Whereat, with blade, with bloody blameful
blade,
He bravely broach’d his boiling bloody breast;
And Thisby, tarrying in mulberry shade,
His dagger drew, and died. For all the
rest,
Let Lion, Moonshine, Wall, and lovers twain,
At large discourse, while here they do remain.

[Exeunt Prologue, Pyramus, Thisbe,

Lion, and Moonshine.

The. I wonder, if the lion be to speak.
Dem. No wonder, my lord: one lion may,
when many asses do. 156
Wall. In this same interlude it doth befall
That I, one Snout by name, present a wall;
And such a wall, as I would have you think,
That had in it a crannied hole or chink, 160
Through which the lovers, Pyramus and Thisby,
Did whisper often very secretly.
This loam, this rough-cast, and this stone doth show
That I am that same wall; the truth is so;
And this the cranny is, right and sinister,
Through which the fearful lovers are to whisper.
The. Would you desire lime and hair to speak
better?

Dem. It is the wittiest partition that ever I
heard discourse, my lord.
The. Pyramus draws near the wall: silence!

Re-enter Pyramus.
Pyr. O grim look’d night! O night with hue so
black!
O night, which ever art when day is not!
O night! O night! alack, alack, alack! 172
I fear my Thisby’s promise is forgot.
And thou, O wall! O sweet, O lovely wall! 176
That standst between her father’s ground and
mine;
Thou wall, O wall! O sweet, and lovely wall!
Show me thy chink to blink through with
mine eyne. [Wall holds up his fingers.
Thanks, courteous wall! Jove shield thee well
for this!

But what see I? No Thisby do I see.
O wicked wall! through whom I see no bliss;
Curs’d be thy stones for thus deceiving me!
The. The wall, methinks, being sensible,
should curse again. 185
Pyr. No, in truth, sir, he should not. ‘De-
ceiving me,’ is Thisby’s cue: she is to enter now,
and I am to spy her through the wall. You
shall see, it will fall pat as I told you. Yonder
she comes.

Re-enter Thisbe.

This. O wall! full often hast thou heard my
moans,
For parling my fair Pyramus and me: 192
My cherry lips have often kiss'd thy stones,
Thy stones with time and hair knit up in thee.

Pyr. I see a voice: now will I to the chink,
To spy an I can hear my Thisby's face. 196

Thisbe. My love! thou art my love, I think.

Pyr. Think what thou will, I am thy lover's grace;
And, like Limander, am I trusty still. 200

This. And I like Helen, till the Fates me kill.

Pyr. Not Shafalus to Procrus was so true.
This. As Shafalus to Procrus, I to you.

Pyr. O! kiss me through the hole of this vile wall.

This. I kiss the wall's hole, not your lips at all

Pyr. Will thou at Ninny's tomb meet me straightway?

This. 'Tide life, 'tide death, I come without delay. [Exeunt Pyramus and Thisbe.

Wall. Thus have I, Wall, my part discharged so;

And, being done, thus Wall away doth go. [Exit

The. Now is the mural down between the two neighbours.

Dem. No remedy, my lord, when walls are so

Willful to bear without warning. 213

Hip. This is the silliest stuff that ever I heard.

The. The best in this kind are but shadows,

And the worst are no worse, if imagination

Amend them. 217

Hip. It must be your imagination then, and

Not theirs.

The. If we imagine no worse of them than they

Of themselves, they may pass for excellent men.
Here come two noble beasts in, a man

And a lion.

Re-enter Lion and Moonshine.

Lion. You, ladies, you, whose gentle hearts do

Fear The smallest monstrous mouse that creeps on

Floor, May now perchance both quake and tremble here,

When lion rough in wildest rage doth roar.
Then know that I, one Snug the joiner, am

A lion-fell, nor else no lion's dam:
For, if I should as lion come in strife

Into this place, 'twere pity on my life.

The. A very gentle beast, and of a good conscience.

Dem. The very best at a beast, my lord, that

e'er I saw.

Lys. This lion is a very fox for his valour.

The. True; and a goose for his discretion. 237

Dem. Not so, my lord; for his valour cannot

Carry his discretion, and the fox carries the
goose. 240

The. His discretion, I am sure, cannot carry

His valour, for the goose carries not the fox. It

Is well: leave it to his discretion, and let us

Listen to the moon. 244

Moon. This lantern doth the horned moon

Present;—

Dem. He should have worn the horns on his

Head.

The. He is no crescent, and his horns are in-

visible within the circumference. 249

Moon. This lantern doth the horned moon

Present;

Myself the man 'tis the moon do seem to be.

The. This is the greatest error of all the rest.
The man should be put into the lantern: how

Is it else the man 'tis the moon?

Dem. He dares not come there for the candle;
For, you see, it is already in snuff. 256

Hip. I am aweary of this moon: would he

Would change!

The. It appears, by his small light of discre-

tion, that he is in the wane; but yet, in courtesy,
in all reason, we must stay the time. 261

Lys. Proceed, Moon.

Moon. All that I have to say, is, to tell you

That the lantern is the moon; I, the man in

The moon; this thorn-bush, my thorn-bush; and

This dog, my dog.

Dem. Why, all these should be in the lan-

tern; for all these are in the moon. But,
silence! here comes Thisbe. 269

Re-enter Thisbe.

This. This is old Ninny's tomb. Where is

My love?

Lion. [Roaring.] Oh—. [Thisbe runs off.

Dem. Well roared, Lion. 272

The. Well run, Thisbe.

Hip. Well shone, Moon. Truly, the moon

Shines with a good grace.

[The Lion tears Thisbe's mantle, and exit.

The. Well moused, Lion.

Dem. And then came Pyramus.

Lys. And so the lion vanished.

Re-enter Pyramus.

Pyr. Sweet moon, I thank thee for thy sunny

Beams;

I thank thee, moon, for shining now so bright,

For, by thy gracious, golden, glittering streams,

I trust to taste of trusty Thisby's sight.

But stay, O spite!

But mark, poor knight.

217
What dreadful dole is here!
Eyes, do you see?
How can it be?
O dainty duck! O dear!
Thy mantle good,
What! stain'd with blood!
Approach, ye Furies tell!
O Fates, come, come,
Cut thread and thrum;
Quail, crush, conclude, and quell!
The. Thus passion, and the death of a dear friend, would go near to make a man look sad.
Hip. Beshrew my heart, but I pity the man.
Pyr. O! wherefore, Nature, didst thou lions frame?
Since lion vile hath here deflower'd my dear?
Which is—no, no—which was the fairest dame
That liv'd, that lov'd, that lik'd, that look'd
with cheer.

Come tears, confound;
Out, sword, and wound
The pap of Pyramus:
Ay, that left pap,
Where heart doth hop:
Thus die I, thus, thus, thus.

[Stabs himself.
Now am I dead,
Now am I fled;
My soul is in the sky:
Tongue, lose thy light!
Moon, take thy flight!

[Exit Moonshine.

Now die, die, die, die, die. [Dies.

Dem. No die, but an ace, for him; for he is but one.
Lys. Less than an ace, man, for he is dead;
he is nothing.

The. With the help of a surgeon, he might
yet recover, and prove an ass.

Hip. How chance Moonshine is gone before
Thisbe comes back and finds her lover?

The. She will find him by starlight. Here
she comes; and her passion ends the play.

Re-enter Thisbe.

Hip. Methinks she should not use a long one
for such a Pyramus: I hope she will be brief.

Dem. A mote will turn the balance, which Pyra-
mus, which Thisbe, is the better: he for a man,
God warrant us; she for a woman, God bless us.
Lys. She hath spied him already with those
sweet eyes.

Dem. And thus she moans, videlicet:

This. Asleep, my love?

What, dead, my dove?

O Pyramus, arise!

Speak, speak! Quite dumb?
Dead, dead! A tomb
Must cover thy sweet eyes,
These lily lips,
This cherry nose,
These yellow cowslip cheeks,
Are gone, are gone:
Lovers, make moan!
His eyes were green as leeks,
O, Sisters Three,
Come, come to me,
With hands as pale as milk;
Lay them in gore,
Since you have shore
With shears his thread of silk.
Tongue, not a word:
Come, trusty sword:
Come, blade, my breast imbrue;

[Stabs herself.

And farewell, friends;
Thus Thisby ends:

Adieu, adieu, adieu. [Dies.

The. Moonshine and Liof are left to bury the
dead.

Dem. Ay, and Wall too.

Bot. No, I assure you; the wall is down that
parted their fathers. Will it please you to see
the epilogue, or to hear a Bergomask dance
between two of our company?

The. No epilogue, I pray you; for your play
needs no excuse. Never excuse; for when the
players are all dead, there need none to be
blamed. Marry, if he that writ it had played
Pyramus, and hanged himself in Thisbe's gar-
ter, it would have been a fine tragedy: and
so it is, truly, and very notably discharged.
But come, your Bergomask: let your epilogue
alone.

[A dance. The iron tongue of midnight hath told twelve;
Lovers, to bed; 'tis almost fairy time.

I fear we shall out-sleep the coming morn,
As much as we this night have overwatch'd.
This palpable-gross play hath well beguil'd
The heavy gait of night. Sweet friends, to bed.
A fortnight hold we this solemnity,
In nightly revels, and new jollity. [Exeunt.

SCENE II.

Enter Puck.

Puck. Now the hungry lion roars,
And the wolf beholds the moon;
Whilst the heavy ploughman snores,
All with weary task fordone.
Now the wasted brands do glow,
Whilst the screech-owl, screeching loud,
puts the wretch that lies in woe
in remembrance of a shroud.
now it is the time of night
that the graves, all gaping wide,
every one lets forth his sprite,
in the church-way paths to glide:
and we fairies, that do run
by the triple hecate's team,
from the presence of the sun,
following darkness like a dream.
now are frolic; not a mouse
shall disturb this hallow'd house:
I am sent with broom before,
to sweep the dust behind the door.

So shall all the couples three
ever true in loving be;
and the blots of nature's hand
shall not in their issue stand:
never mole, hare-lip, nor scar,
Nor mark prodigious, such as are
 despised in nativity,
shall upon their children be.
With this field-dew consecrate,
every fairy take his gait,
and each several chamber bless,
through this palace, with sweet peace;
ever shall in safety rest,
and the owner of it blest.

trip away;
make no stay;
meet me all by break of day.
[execut oberon, titania, and train.

Puck. If we shadows have offended,
think but this, and all is mended,
that you have but slumber'd here
while these visions did appear.
and this weak and idle theme,
no more yielding but a dream,
gentles, do not reprehend:
if you pardon, we will mend.
and, as I'm an honest Puck,
If we have unearned luck
now to 'scape the serpent's tongue,
we will make amends ere long;
else the Puck a liar call:
so, good night unto you all.
give me your hands, if we be friends,
and Robin shall restore amends. [Exit.

Enter Oberon and Titania, with their Train.
Ober. Through the house give glimmering light
by the dead and drowsy fire;
every elf and fairy sprite
hop as light as bird from brier;
and this ditty after me
sing and dance it trippingly.
Titania. First, rehearse your song by rote,
to each word a warbling note:
hand in hand, with fairy grace,
will we sing, and bless this place.
[song and dance.
Ober. Now, until the break of day,
through this house each fairy stray.
to the best bride-bed will we,
which by us shall blessed be;
and the issue there create
ever shall be fortunate.

219
THE MERCHANT OF VENICE

DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

DUKE OF VENICE.
PRINCE OF MOROCCO, \\ Suitors to Portia.
PRINCE OF ARRAGON, \\ Antonio, a Merchant of Venice.
ANTONIO, a Merchant of Venice.
BASSANIO, his Friend.
GRATIANO,
SALANIO, \\ Friends to Antonio and Bassanio.
SALARINO,
LORENZO, in love with Jessica.
SHYLOCK, a rich Jew.
TUBAL, a Jew, his Friend.
LAUNCELOT GOBBO, a Clown, Servant to Shylock.

OLD GOBBO, Father to Launcelot.
LEONARDO, Servant to Bassanio.
BALTHAZAR, \\ Servants to Portia.
STEPHANO,
PORTIA, a rich Heiress.
NERISSA, her Waiting-maid.
JESSICA, Daughter to Shylock.

Magnificoes of Venice, Officers of the Court of Justice, Gaoler, Servants to Portia, and other Attendants.

SCENE.—Partly at Venice, and partly at Belmont, the seat of Portia, on the Continent.

ACT I.

SCENE I.—Venice, A Street.

Enter Antonio, Salanio, and Salario.

Ant. In sooth, I know not why I am so sad:
It wearies me; you say it wearies you;
But how I caught it, found it, or came by it,
What stuff 'tis made of, whereof it is born,
I am to learn;
And such a want-wit sadness makes of me,
That I have much ado to know myself.

Salar. Your mind is tossing on the ocean;
There, where your argosies with portly sail,
Like signiors and rich burghers on the flood,
Or, as it were, the pageants of the sea,—
Do overpeer the petty traffickers,
That curst to them, do them reverence,
As they fly by them with their woven wings.

Salan. Believe me, sir, had I such venture forth,
The better part of my affections would
Be with my hopes abroad. I should be still
Plucking the grass to know where sits the wind;
Peering in maps for ports, and piers, and roads;
And every object that might make me fear
Misfortune to my ventures, out of doubt
Would make me sad.

Salar. My wind, cooling my broth,
Would blow me to an ague, when I thought
What harm a wind too great might do at sea.
I should not see the sandy hour-glass run
But I should think of shallows and of flats,
And see my wealthy Andrew doddled in sand
Vailing her high-top lower than her ribs
To kiss her burial. Should I go to church

And see the holy edifice of stone,
And not bethink me straight of dangerous rocks,
Which touching but my gentle vessel's side
Would scatter all her spices on the stream,
Enrobe the roaring waters with my silks;
And, in a word, but even now worth this,
And now worth nothing? Shall I have the thought
To think on this, and shall I lack the thought
That such a thing bechanc'd would make me sad?
But tell not me: I know Antonio
Is sad to think upon his merchandise.

Ant. Believe me, no: I thank my fortune for it,
My ventures are not in one bottom trusted,
Nor to one place; nor is my whole estate
Upon the fortune of this present year:
Therefore, my merchandise makes me not sad.

Salar. Why, then you are in love.

Ant. Fie, fie!

Salar. Not in love neither? Then let's say
you are sad,
Because you are not merry: and 'twere as easy
For you to laugh and leap, and say you are merry,
Because you are not sad. Now, by two-headed
Janus,
Nature hath fram'd strange fellows in her time:
Some that will evermore peep through their eyes
And laugh like parrots at a bag-piper,
And other of such vinegar aspect
That they'll not show their teeth in way of smile,
Though Nestor swear the jest be laughable.
Enter Bassanio, Lorenzo, and Gratiano.

Sal. Here comes Bassanio, your most noble kin'sman,

Gratiano, and Lorenzo. Fare ye well:

We leave you now with better company.

Sal. I would have stay'd till I had made you merry,

If worthier friends had not prevented me.

Ant. Your worth is very dear in my regard.

I take it, your own business calls on you,

And you embrace the occasion to depart.

Sal. Good morrow, my good lords.

Bass. Good signiors both, when shall we laugh? say when?

You grow exceeding strange: must it be so?

Sal. We'll make our pleasures to attend on yours.

[Lor. My Lord Bassanio, since you have found

Antonio,

We too will leave you; but, at dinner-time,

I pray you, have in mind where we must meet.

Bass. I will not fail you.

Gra. You look not well, Signior Antonio;

You have too much respect upon the world:

They lose it that do buy it with much care.

Believe me, you are marvellously chang'd.

Ant. I hold the world but as the world,

Gratiano;

A stage where every man must play a part,

And mine a sad one.

Gra. Let me play the fool:

With mirth and laughter let old wrinkles come,

And let my liver rather heat with wine

Than my heart cool with mortifying groans.

Why should a man, whose blood is warm within,

Sit like his grandsire cut in alabaster?

Sleep when he wakes, and creep into the jaundice?

By being peevish? I tell thee what, Antonio—

I love thee, and it is my love that speaks—

There are a sort of men whose visages

Do cream and mantle like a standing pond,

And do a wilful stillness entertain,

With purpose to be dress'd in an opinion

Of wisdom, gravity, profound conceit;

As who should say, 'I am Sir Oracle,

And when I open my lips let no dog bark!'—

O, my Antonio, I do know of these,

That therefore only are reputed wise

For saying nothing; when, I am very sure,

If they should speak, would almost damn those ears

Which, bearing them, would call their brothers fools.

I'll tell thee more of this another time:

But fish not, with this melancholy bait,

For this fool-guardian, this opinion.

Come, good Lorenzo. Fare ye well awhile:

I'll end my exhortation after dinner.

Lor. Well, we will leave you then till dinner-time.

I must be one of these same dumb wise men,

For Gratiano never lets me speak.

Gra. Well, keep me company but two years moe,

Thou shalt not know the sound of thine own tongue.

Ant. Farewell: I'll grow a talker for this gear.

Gra. Thanks, i' faith; for silence is only commendable

In a neat's tongue dried and a maid not vendible.

[Exeunt Gratiano and Lorenzo.

Ant. Is that anything now?

Bass. Gratiano speaks an infinite deal of nothing, more than any man in all Venice. His reasons are as two grains of wheat hid in two bushels of chaff: you shall seek all day ere you find them, and, when you have them, they are not worth the search.

Ant. Well, tell me now, what lady is the same

To whom you swore a secret pilgrimage,

That you to-day promis'd to tell me of?

Bass. 'Ts not unknown to you, Antonio,

How much I have disabled mine estate,

By something showing a more swelling port

Than my scant means would grant continuance:

Nor do I now make moan to be abridg'd

From such a noble rate; but my chief care

Is, to come fairly off from the great debts

Wherein my time, something too prodigal,

Hath left me gag'd. To you, Antonio,

I owe the most, in money and in love;

And from your love I have a warranty

To unburthen all my plots and purposes

How to get clear of all the debts I owe.

Ant. I pray you, good Bassanio, let me know

it;

And if it stand, as you yourself still do,

Within the eye of honour, be assur'd,

My purse, my person, my extremest means,

Lie all unlock'd to your occasions.

Bass. In my school-days, when I had lost one

shaft,

I shot his fellow of the self-same flight,

The self-same way with more advised watch,

To find the other forth, and by adventuring both,

I oft found both. I urge this childhood proof,

Because what follows is pure innocence.

I owe you much, and, like a wilful youth,

That which I owe is lost; but if you please

To shoot another arrow that self way

Which you did shoot the first, I do not doubt,

As I will watch the aim, or to find both,

Or bring your latter hazard back again,
And thankfully rest debtor for the first.

And you know me well, and herein spend
but time
To wind about my love with circumstance;
And out of doubt you do me now more wrong
In making question of my uttermost 157
Than if you had made waste of all I have:
Then do but say to me what I should do
That in your knowledge may by me be done, 160
And I am prest unto it: therefore speak.

Bass. In Belmont is a lady richly left,
And she is fair, and, farer than that word,
Of wondrous virtues: sometimes from her eyes;
I did receive fair speechless messages: 165
Her name is Portia; nothing undervalu’d
To Cato’s daughter, Brutus’ Portia:
Nor is the wide world ignorant of her worth, 168
For the four winds blow in from every coast
Renowned suitors; and her sunny locks
Hang on her temples like a golden fleece;
Which makes her seat of Belmont Colchis’
strong, 172
And many Jasons come in quest of her.
O my Antonio! had I but the means
To hold a rival place with one of them,
I have a mind press es me such thrift, 176
That I should questionless be fortunate.

And you knowest that all my fortunes are
at sea;
Neither have I money, nor commodity
To raise a present sum: therefore go forth; 180
Try what my credit can in Venice do:
That shall be rack’d, even to the uttermost,
To furnish thee to Belmont, to fair Portia.
Go, presently inquire, and so will I, 184
Where money is, and I no question make
To have it of my trust or for my sake. [Exit.

SCENE II.—Belmont. A Room in Portia’s House.

Enter Portia and Nerissa.

Por. By my troth, Nerissa, my little body is
aweary of this great world.

Ner. You would be, sweet madam, if your
miseries were in the same abundance as your
good fortunes are: and yet, for aught I see, they
are as sick that surfeit with too much as they
that starve with nothing. It is no mean happi-
ness therefore, to be seated in the mean:
superfluity comes sooner by white hairs, but
competency lives longer.

Por. Good sentences and well pronounced.

Ner. They would be better if well followed.

Por. If to do were as easy as to know what
were good to do, chapels had been churches, and
poor men’s cottages princes’ palaces. It is a
good divine that follows his own instructions: I
can easier teach twenty what were good to be
done, than be one of the twenty to follow mine
own teaching. The brain may devise laws for
the blood, but a hot temper leaps o’er a cold
decree: such a hare is madness the youth, to
skip o’er the meshes of good counsel the cripple.
But this reasoning is not in the fashion to choose
me a husband. O me, the word ‘choose!’ I may
neither choose whom I would nor refuse whom
I dislike; so is the will of a living daughter
curbed by the will of a dead father. Is it not
hard, Nerissa, that I cannot choose one nor
refuse none? 29

Ner. Your father was ever virtuous, and holy
men at their death have good inspirations;
therefore, the lottery that he hath devised in these
three chests of gold, silver, and lead, whereof
who chooses his meaning chooses you, will, no
doubt, never be chosen by any rightly but one
who you shall rightly love. But what warmth
is there in your affection towards any of these
princely suitors that are already come? 38

Por. I pray thee, over-name them, and as
thou namest them, I will describe them; and,
according to my description, level at my affection.

Ner. First, there is the Neapolitan prince. 42

Por. Ay, that’s a colt indeed, for he doth
nothing but talk of his horse; and he makes it
a great appropriation to his own good parts that
he can shoe him himself. I am much afraid
my lady his mother played false with a smith.

Ner. Then is there the County Palatine. 48

Por. He doth nothing but frown, as who
should say, ‘An you will not have me, choose.’
He hears merry tales, and smiles not: I fear he
will prove the weeping philosopher when he
grows old, being so full of unmannerly sadness
in his youth. I had rather be married to a
death’s-head with a bone in his mouth than to
either of these. God defend me from these two!

Ner. How say you by the French lord,
Monsieur Le Bon? 58

Por. God made him, and therefore let him pass
for a man. In truth, I know it is a sin to be a
mocker; but, he! why, he hath a horse better
than the Neapolitan’s, a better bad habit of
frowning than the Count Palatine; he is every
man in no man; if a throat sing, he falls
straight a-capering; he will fence with his own
shadow: if I should marry him, I should marry
twenty husbands. If he would despise me, I
would forgive him, for if he love me to madness,
I shall never require him. 69

Ner. What say you, then, to Falconbridge,
the young baron of England?

Por. You know I say nothing to him, for he
Por. I remember him well, and I remember him worthy of thy praise.

Enter a Servant.

Serv. The four strangers seek for you, madam, to take their leave; and there is a forerunner come from a fifth, the Prince of Morocco, who brings word the prince his master will be here to-night.

Por. If I could bid the fifth welcome with so good heart as I can bid the other four farewell, I should be glad of his approach: if he have the condition of a saint and the complexion of a devil, I had rather he should shrive me than wise me. Come, Nerissa. Sirrah, go before.

While we shut the gate upon one wooer, another knocks at the door. [Exit.

SCENE III.—Venice. A public Place.

Enter Bassanio and Shylock.

Shy. Three thousand ducats; well?
Bass. Ay, sir, for three months.
Shy. For three months; well?
Bass. For the which, as I told you, Antonio shall be bound.

Shy. Antonio shall become bound; well?
Bass. May you steal me? Will you please me? Shall I know your answer?
Shy. Three thousand ducats, for three months, and Antonio bound.
Bass. Your answer to that.
Shy. Antonio is a good man.
Bass. Have you heard any imputation to the contrary?
Shy. Ho, no, no, no, no: my meaning in saying he is a good man is to have you understand me that he is sufficient. Yet his means are in supposition: he hath an argosy bound to Tripolis, another to the Indies; I understand moreover upon the Rialto, he hath a third at Mexico, a fourth for England, and other ventures he hath, squandered abroad. But ships are but boards, sailors but men: there be land-rats and water-rats, land-thieves, and water-thieves.—I mean pirates,—and then there is the peril of waters, winds, and rocks. The man is notwithstanding, sufficient. Three thousand ducats; I think, I may take his bond.

Bass. Be assured you may.
Shy. I will be assured I may; and, that I may be assured, I will bethink me. May I speak with Antonio?

Bass. If it please you to dine with us.
Shy. Yes, to smell pork: to eat of the habitation which your prophet the Nazarite conjured
the devil into. I will buy with you, sell with you, talk with you, walk with you, and so following; but I will not eat with you, drink with you, nor pray with you. What news on the Rialto? Who is he comes here?

Enter Antonio.

Bass. This is Signior Antonio.

Shy. [Aside.] How like a fawning publican he looks!

I hate him for he is a Christian;

But more for that in low simplicity

He lends out money gratis, and brings down

The rate of usance here with us in Venice.

If I can catch him once upon the hip,

I will feed fat the ancient grudge I bear him.

He hates our sacred nation, and he rails,

Even there where merchants most do congregate,

On me, my bargains, and my well-won thrift,

Which he calls interest. Cursed be my tribe, if

If I forgive him!

Bass. Shylock, do you hear?

Shy. I am debating of my present store,

And, by the near guess of my memory,

I cannot instantly raise up the gross

Of full three thousand ducats. What of that?

Tuham, a wealthy Hebrew of my tribe,

Will furnish me. But soft! how many months

Do you desire? [To Antonio.] Rest you fair,

good signior;

Your worship was the last man in our mouths.

Ant. Shylock, albeit I neither lend nor borrow

By taking nor by giving of excess,

Yet, to supply the ripe wants of my friend,

I'll break a custom. [To Bassanio.] Is he yet possess'd

How much ye would?

Shy. Ay, ay, three thousand ducats.

Ant. And for three months.

Shy. I had forgot; three months; you told me so.

Well then, your bond; and let me see. But hear you;

Methought you said you neither lend nor borrow

Upon advantage.

Ant. I do never use it.

Shy. When Jacob graz'd his uncle Laban's sheep,

This Jacob from our holy Abram was,

As his wise mother wrought in his behalf,

The third possessor: ay, he was the third,

Ant. And what of him? did he take interest?

Shy. No; not take interest; not, as you would say,

Directly interest: mark what Jacob did.

When Laban and himself were compromis'd,
THE MERCHANT OF VENICE  
ACT II, Sc. 1.

Ant. I am as like to call thee so again,
To spet on thee again, to spurn thee too. 132
If thou wilt lend this money, lend it not
As to thy friends,—for when did friendship take
A breed for barren metal of his friend?—
But lend it rather to thine enemy; 136
Who if he break, thou mayst with better face
Exact the penalty.

Shy. Why, look you, how you storm!
I would be friends with you, and have your love,
Forget the shames that you have staint me with,
Supply your present wants, and take no doit
Of usance for my moneys, and you'll not hear me:
This is kind I offer.

Ant. This were kindness.

Shy. This kindness will I shew.
Go with me to a notary, seal me there 145
Your single bond; and, in a merry sport,
If you repay me not on such a day,
In such a place, such sum or sums as are 148
Express'd in the condition, let the forfeit
Be nominated for an equal pound
Of your fair flesh, to be cut off and taken
In what part of your body pleaseth me. 152

Ant. Content, i' faith: I'll seal to such a bond,
And say there is much kindness in the Jew.

Bass. You shall not seal to such a bond for me:
I'll rather dwell in my necessity. 156

Ant. Why, fear not, man; I will not forfeit it:
Within these two months, that's a month before
This bond expires, I do expect return
Of thrice three times the value of this bond. 160

Shy. O father Abram! what these Christians are,
Whose own hard dealing teaches them suspect
The thoughts of others. Pray you, tell me this;
If he should break his day, what should I gain
By the exactation of the forfeiture? 165
A pound of man's flesh, taken from a man,
Is not so estimable, profitable neither,
As flesh of muttons, beefs, or goats. I say, 168
To buy his favour, I extend this friendship:
If he will take it, so; if not, adieu;
And, for my love, I pray you wrong me not.

Ant. Yes, Shylock, I will seal unto this bond.

Shy. Then meet me forthwith at the notary's;
Give him direction for this merry bond,
And I will go and purse the ducats straight,
See to my house, left in the fearful guard 176
Of an unhorthy knave, and presently
I will be with you.

Ant. His thee, gentle Jew. [Exit SHYLOCK.
This Hebrew will turn Christian: he grows kind.

Bass. I like not fair terms and a villain's mind. 180

Ant. Come on: in this there can be no dismay;
My ships come home a month before the day. 183
[Exeunt.

ACT II.

SCENE I.—Belmont. A Room in Portia's House.

Flourish of Cornets. Enter the Prince of Morocco, and his Followers; Portia, Nerissa, and Others of her Train.

Mor. Mislike me not for my complexion,
The shadow'd livery of the burnish'd sun,
To whom I am a neighbour and near bred.
Bring me the fairest creature northward born, 4
Where Phoebus' fire scarce thaws the icicles,
And let us make incision for your love,
To prove whose blood is readdest, his or mine.
I tell thee, lady, this aspect of mine 8
Hath fear'd the valiant: by my love, I swear
The best regarded virgins of our clime
Have lov'd it too: I would not change this hue,
Except to steal your thoughts, my gentle queen.

Por. In terms of choice I am not solely led
By nice direction of a maiden's eyes;
Besides, the lottery of my destiny
Bars me the right of voluntary choosing: 16
But if my father had not scanted me
And hedg'd me by his wit, to yield myself
His wife who wins me by that means I told you,
Yourself, renowned prince, then stood as fair 20
As any corer I have look'd on yet
For my affection.

Mor. Even for that I thank you:
Therefore, I pray you, lead me to the caskets
To try my fortune. By this scimitar, 24
That slew the Sophy, and a Persian prince
That won three fields of Sultan Solyman,—
I would outstare the sternest eyes that look,
Outbrave the heart most daring on the earth, 28
Pluck the young sucking cubes from the she-bear,
Yea, mock the lion when he roars for prey,
To win thee, lady. But, alas the while!
If Hercules and Lichas play at dice 32
Which is the better man, the greater throw
May turn by fortune from the weaker hand:
So is Alcides beaten by his page;
And so may I, blind fortune leading me, 36
Miss that which one unworthy may attain,
And die with grieving.

Por. You must take your chance;
And either not attempt to choose at all,
Or swear before you choose, if you choose wrong,
Never to speak to lady afterward 41
In way of marriage: therefore be advis'd.
Mor. Nor will not: come, bring me unto my chance.
Por. First, forward to the temple: after dinner your hazard shall be made.
Mor. Good fortune then! To make me biest or cursed' st among men!
[Corneis, and exent.

SCENE II.—Venice. A Street.

Enter LAUNCELOT GOBBO.

Laun. Certainly my conscience will serve me to run from this Jew my master. The fiend is at mine elbow, and tempts me, saying to me, 'Gobbo, Launcelot Gobbo, good Launcelot,' or 'good Gobbo,' or 'good Launcelot Gobbo, use your legs, take the start, run away.' My conscience says, 'No; take heed, honest Launcelot; take heed, honest Gobbo; or, as aforesaid, honest Launcelot Gobbo; do not run; scorn running with thy heels.' Well, the most courageous fiend bids me pack: 'Via!' says the fiend; 'away!' says the fiend; 'for the heavens, rouse up a brave mind,' says the fiend, 'and run.' Well, my conscience, hanging about the neck of my heart, says very wisely to me, 'My honest friend Launcelot, being an honest man's son,'—or rather an honest woman's son;—for, indeed, my father did something smack, something grow to, he had a kind of taste;—well, my conscience says, 'Launcelot, budge not.' 'Budge not,' says my conscience. 'Conscience,' say I, 'you counsel well,' 'fiend,' say I, 'you counsel well.' To be ruled by my conscience, I should stay with the Jew my master, who, God bless the mark! is a kind of devil; and, to run away from the Jew, I should be ruled by the fiend, who, saving your reverence, is the devil himself. Certainly, the Jew is the very devil incarnal; and, in my conscience, my conscience is but a kind of hard conscience, to offer to counsel me to stay with the Jew. The fiend gives the more friendly counsel: I will run, fiend; my heels are at your commandment; I will run.

Enter Old Gobbo, with a basket.

Gob. Master young man, you; I pray you, which is the way to Master Jew's?
Laun. [Aside.] O heavens! this is my true-begotten father, who, being more than sandblind, high-gravel blind, knows me not: I will try confusions with him.

Gob. Master young gentleman, I pray you, which is the way to Master Jew's?
Laun. Turn up on your right hand at the next turning, but, at the next turning of all, on your left; marry, at the very next turning, turn of no hand, but turn down indirectly to the Jew's house.

Gob. By God's sotties, 'twill be a hard way to hit. Can you tell me whether one Launcelot, that dwells with him, dwell with him or no?

Laun. Talk you of young Master Launcelot?
[Aside.] Mark me now; now will I raise the waters. Talk you of young Master Launcelot?
Gob. No master, sir, but a poor man's son: his father, though I say it, is an honest, exceeding poor man, and, God be thanked, well to live.

Laun. Well, let his father be what a' will, we talk of young Master Launcelot.

Gob. Your worship's friend, and Launcelot, sir.

Laun. But I pray you, ergo, old man, ergo, I beseech you, talk you of young Master Launcelot?
Gob. Of Launcelot, an't please your master-ship.

Laun. Ergo, Master Launcelot. Talk not of Master Launcelot, father; for the young gentleman,—according to Fates and Destinies and such odd sayings, the Sisters Three and such branches of learning,—is, indeed, deceased; or, as you would say in plain terms, gone to heaven.

Gob. Marry, God forbid! the boy was the very staff of my age, my very prop.

Laun. [Aside.] Do I look like a cudgel or a hovel-post, a staff or a prop? Do you know me, father?

Gob. Alack the day! I know you not, young gentleman: but I pray you, tell me, is my boy,—

Gob. God rest his soul!—alive or dead?

Laun. Do you not know me, father?
Gob. Alack, sir, I am sand-blind; I know you not.

Laun. Nay, indeed, if you had your eyes, you might fail of the knowing me: it is a wise father that knows his own child. Well, old man, I will tell you news of your son. Give me your blessing; truth will come to light; murder cannot be hid long; a man's son may, but, in the end, truth will out.

Gob. Pray you, sir, stand up. I am sure you are not Launcelot, my boy.

Laun. Pray you, let's have no more fooling about it, but give me your blessing: I am Launcelot, your boy that was, your son that is, your child that shall be.

Gob. I cannot think you are my son.

Laun. I know not what I shall think of that; but I am Launcelot, the Jew's man, and I am sure Margery your wife is my mother.

Gob. Her name is Margery, indeed: I'll be sworn, if thou be Launcelot, thou art mine own
flesh and blood. Lord worshipped might he be! what a beard hast thou got! thou hast got more hair on thy chin than Dobbin my thill-horse has on his tail.

**Laun.** It should seem then that Dobbin’s tail grows backward: I am sure he had more hair on his tail than I have on my face, when I last saw him.

**Gob.** Lord! how art thou changed. How dost thou and thy master agree? I have brought him a present. How ’gree you now?

**Laun.** Well, well: but, for mine own part, as I have set up my rest to run away, so I will not rest till I have run some ground. My master’s a very Jew: give him a present! give him a halter: I am famished in his service; you may tell every finger I have with my ribs. Father, I am glad you are come: give me your present to one Master Bassanio, who, indeed, gives rare new liveries. If I serve not him, I will run as far as God has any ground. O rare fortune! here comes the man: to him, father; for I am a Jew, if I serve the Jew any longer.

**Enter Bassanio, with Leonardo, and other Followers.**

**Bass.** You may do so; but let it be so hasted that supper be ready at the very firstest by five of the clock. See these letters delivered; put the liveries to making; and desire Gratiano to come anon to my lodging. [Exit a Servant.

**Laun.** To him, father.

**Gob.** God bless your worship!

**Bass.** Gramercy! wouldst thou aught with me?

**Gob.** Here’s my son, sir, a poor boy,—

**Laun.** Not a poor boy, sir, but the rich Jew’s man; that would, sir, as my father shall specify,—

**Gob.** He hath a great infeccion, sir, as one would say, to serve—

**Laun.** Indeed, the short and the long is, I serve the Jew, and have a desire, as my father shall specify,—

**Gob.** His master and he, saving your worship’s reverence, are scarce easter-cousins,—

**Laun.** To be brief, the very truth is that the Jew having done me wrong, doth cause me,—as my father, being, I hope, an old man, shall frutify unto you,—

**Gob.** I have here a dish of doves that I would bestow upon your worship, and my suit is,—

**Laun.** In very brief, the suit is importinent to myself, as your worship shall know by this honest old man; and, though I say it, though old man, yet poor man, my father.

**Bass.** One speak for both. What would you?

**Laun.** Serve you, sir.

**Gob.** That is the very defect of the matter, sir.

**Bass.** I know thee well; thou hast obtain’d thy suit: Shylock thy master spoke with me this day, and hath preferreth thee, if it be preferment To leave a rich Jew’s service, to become The follower of so poor a gentleman.

**Laun.** The old proverb is very well parted between my master Shylock and you, sir: you have the grace of God, sir, and he hath enough.

**Bass.** Thou speak’st it well. Go, father, with thy son.

Take leave of thy old master, and inquire My lodging out. [To his followers.] Give him a livery

More guarded than his fellows: see it done.

**Laun.** Father, in. I cannot get a service, no; I have ne’er a tongue in my head. Well, [Looking on his palm.] if any man in Italy have a fairer table which doth offer to swear upon a book, I shall have good fortune. Go to; here’s a simple line of life: here’s a small trifle of wives: alas! fifteen wives is nothing: a ’leven widows and nine maids is a simple coming-in for one man; and then to scape drowning thrice, and to be in peril of my life with the edge of a feather-bed; here are simple ’scapes. Well, if Fortune be a woman, she’s a good wench for this gear. Father, come; I’ll take my leave of the Jew in the twinkling of an eye.

**[Exeunt Launcelot and Old Gobbo.]**

**Bass.** I pray thee, good Leonardo, think on this:

These things being bought, and orderly bestow’d, Return in haste, for I do feast to-night My best-esteem’d acquaintance: his thee, go. 188

**Leon.** My best endeavours shall be done here-in.

**Enter Gratiano.**

**Gra.** Where is your master?

**Leon.** Yonder, sir, he walks.

**[Exit.**

**Gra.** Signior Bassanio!—

**Bass.** Gratiano!

**Gra.** I have a suit to you.

**Bass.** You have obtain’d it.

**Gra.** You must not deny me: I must go with you to Belmont.

**Bass.** Why, then you must. But hear thee, Gratiano;

Thou art too wild, too rude and bold of voice; Parts that become thee happily enough, And in such eyes as ours appear not faults;
Scene IV.—The Same. A Street.

Enter Gratiano, Lorenzo, Salarino, and Salanio.

Lor. Nay, we will slink away in supper-time, Disguise us at my lodging, and return All in an hour.

Gra. We have not made good preparation.
Salar. We have not spoke us yet of torch-bearers.
Salan. 'Tis vile, unless it may be quaintly order'd,
And better, in my mind, not undertook.
Lor. 'Tis now but four o'clock: we have two hours
to furnish us.

Enter Launcelot, with a letter.

Friend Launcelot, what's the news? Laun. An it shall please you to break up this, it shall seem to signify.
Lor. I know the hand: in faith, 'tis a fair hand;
And whiter than the paper it writ on
Is the fair hand that writ.
Gra. Love news, in faith.
Laun. By your leave, sir.
Lor. Whither goest thou?
Laun. Marry, sir, to bid my old master, the Jew, to sup to-night with my new master, the Christian.
Lor. Hold here, take this: tell gentle Jessica I will not fail her; speak it privately.
Go, gentlemen, [Exit Launcelot.
Will you prepare you for this masque to-night? I am provided of a torch-bearer.
Salar. Ay, marry, I'll be gone about it straight.
Salan. And so will I.
Lor. Meet me and Gratiano At Gratiano's lodging some hour hence.
Salar. 'Tis good we do so.
[Exeunt Salario and Salanio.
Gra. Was not that letter from fair Jessica?
Lor. I must needs tell thee all. She hath directed
How I shall take her from her father's house; What gold and jewels she is furnish'd with; What page's suit she hath in readiness. If e'er the Jew her father come to heaven, It will be for his gentle daughter's sake; And never dare misfortune cross her foot. Unless she do it under this excuse, That she is issue to a faithless Jew. Come, go with me: persuade this as thou goest. Fair Jessica shall be my torch-bearer. [Exeunt.
THE MERCHANT OF VENICE
Act II, Sc. VI.

SCENE V.—The Same. Before Shylock’s House.

Enter Shylock and Launcelot.

Shy. Well, thou shalt see, thy eyes shall be
thy judge,
The difference of old Shylock and Bassanio:—
What, Jessica!—thou shalt not gormandize,
As thou hast done with me;—what, Jessica!—
And sleep and snore, and rend apparel out—
Why, Jessica, I say!

Laun. Why, Jessica!

Shy. Who bids thee call? I do not bid thee
call.

Laun. Your worship was wont to tell me that
I could do nothing without biding.

Enter Jessica.

Jes. Call you? What is your will?

Shy. I am bid forth to supper, Jessica:
There are my keys. But wherefore should I go?
I am not bid for love; they flatter me:
But yet I’ll go in hate, to feed upon
The prodigal Christian. Jessica, my girl,
Look to my house. I am right loath to go:
There is some ill a-brewing towards my rest,
For I did dream of money-bags to-night.

Laun. I beseech you, sir, go: my young
master doth expect your reproach.

Shy. So do I his.

Laun. And they have conspired together: I
will not say you shall see a masque; but if you
do, then it was not for nothing that my nose fell
a-bleeding on Black-Monday last, at six o’clock
i’ the morning, falling out that year on Ash-Wednesday was four year in the afternoon.

Shy. What! are there masques? Hear you
me, Jessica:
Lock up my doors; and when you hear the
drum,
And the vile squealing of the wry-neck’d sife,
Clamber not you up to the casements then,
Nor thrust your head into the public street.
To gaze on Christian fools with varnish’d
faces,
But stop my house’s ears, I mean my case-
ments;
Let not the sound of shallow toppery enter
My sober house. By Jacob’s staff I swear
I have no mind of feasting forth to-night;
But I will go. Go you before me, sirrah;
Say I will come.

Laun. I will go before, sir. Mistress, look out
at window, for all this;
There will come a Christian by,
Will be worth a Jewess’ eye.

[Exit Launcelot.

Shy. What says that fool of Hagar’s offspring,
ha?

Jes. His words were, ‘Farewell, mistress;’
nothing else.

Shy. The patch is kind enough, but a huge
feeder;
Snail-slow in profit, and he sleeps by day
More than the wild cat: drones hive not with
me;
Therefore I part with him, and part with him
To one that I would have him help to waste
His borrow’d purse. Well, Jessica, go in:
Perhaps I will return immediately.
Do as I bid you; shut doors after you:
‘Fast bind, fast find,’
A proverb never stale in thrifty mind. [Exit.

Jes. Farewell; and if my fortune be not crost,
I have a father, you a daughter, lost. [Exit.

SCENE VI.—The Same.

Enter Grattiano and Salarino, masqued.

Gra. This is the penthouse under which
Lorenzo
Desir’d us to make stand.

Salar. His hour is almost past.

Gra. And it is marvel he out-dwells his hour,
For lovers ever run before the clock.

Salar. O! ten times faster Venus’ pigeons fly
To seal love’s bonds new-made, than they are
wont
To keep obiged faith unforfeited!

Gra. That ever holds: who riseth from a feast
With that keen appetite that he sits down?
Where is the horse that doth untread again
His tedious measures with the unbated fire
That he did pace them first? All things that
are,
Are with more spirit chased than enjoy’d.

How like a younker or a prodigal
The scarfed bark puts from her native bay,
Hugg’d and embraced by the strumpet wind!
How like the prodigal doth she return,
With over-weather’d ribs and ragged sails,
Lean, rent, and beggar’d by the strumpet wind!

Salar. Here comes Lorenzo: more of this
hereafter.

Enter Lorenzo.

Lor. Sweet friends, your patience for my long
abode;
Not I, but my affairs, have made you wait:
When you shall please to play the thieves for
wives,
I’ll watch as long for you then. Approach; 24
Here dwells my father Jew. Ho! who’s within?
Act II, Sc. VI.  

THE MERCHANT OF VENICE

Enter Jessica above, in boy’s clothes.

Jes. Who are you? Tell me, for more certainty,
Albeit I’ll swear that I do know your tongue.
Lor. Lorenzo, and thy love.

Jes. Lorenzo, certain; and my love indeed,
For whom love I so much? And now who knows
But you, Lorenzo, whether I am yours?
Lor. Heaven and thy thoughts are witness
that thou art.

Jes. Here, catch this casket; it is worth the pains.
I am glad ’tis night, you do not look on me,
For I am much ashamed of my exchange;
But love is blind, and lovers cannot see
The pretty follies that themselves commit;
For if they could, Cupid himself would blush
To see me thus transformed to a boy.
Lor. Descend, for you must be my torch-bearer.

Jes. What! must I hold a candle to my shames?
They in themselves, good sooth, are too-too light.
Why, ’tis an office of discovery, love,
And I should be obscured.

Lor. So are you, sweet.

Even in the lovely garnish of a boy.
But come at once;
For the close night doth play the runaway,
And we are stay’d for at Bassanio’s feast.

Jes. I will make fast the doors, and gild myself
With some more ducats, and be with you straight.
[Exit above.

Gra. Now, by my hood, a Gentile, and no Jew.
Lor. Beshrew me, but I love her heartily;
For she is wise, if I can judge of her,
And fair she is, if that mine eyes be true,
And true she is, as she hath prov’d herself;
And therefore, like herself, wise, fair, and true,
Shall she be placed in my constant soul.

Enter Jessica.

What, art thou come? On, gentlemen; away!
Our masquing mates by this time for us stay.
[Exit with Jessica and Salarino.

Enter Antonio.

Ant. Who’s there?

Gra. Signior Antonio!

Ant. Fie, fie, Gratiano! where are all the rest?
’Tis nine o’clock; our friends all stay for you.
No masque to-night: the wind is come about; Bassanio presently will go aboard:
I have sent twenty out to seek for you.

Gra. I am glad on’t: I desire no more delight
Than to be under sail and gone to-night.

[Exeunt.

Scene VII.—Belmont. A Room in Portia’s House.

Flourish of Cornets. Enter Portia, with the Prince of Morocco, and their Trains.

Por. Go, draw aside the curtains, and discover
The several caskets to this noble prince.
Now make your choice.

Mor. The first, of gold, which this inscription bears:

Who chooseth me shall gain what many men desire.

The second, silver, which this promise carries:
Who chooseth me shall get as much as he deserves.

This third, dull lead, with warning all as blunt:
Who chooseth me must give and hazard all he hath.

How shall I know if I do choose the right?
Por. The one of them contains my picture, prince:
If you choose that, then I am yours withal.

Mor. Some god direct my judgment! Let me see:
I will survey the inscriptions back again:
What says this leaden casket?
Who chooseth me must give and hazard all he hath.

Must give: For what? for lead? hazard for lead?
This casket threatens. Men that hazard all
Do it in hope of fair advantages:
A golden mind stoops not to shows of dross; I’ll then nor give nor hazard aught for lead.
What says the silver with her virgin hue?
Who chooseth me shall get as much as he deserves.

As much as he deserves! Pause there, Morocco,
And weigh thy value with an even hand.

If thou be’st rated by thy estimation,
Thou dost deserve enough; and yet enough
May not extend so far as to the lady:
And yet to be afraid of my deserving
Were but a weak disabling of myself.
As much as I deserve! Why, that’s the lady:
I do in birth deserve her, and in fortunes,
In graces, and in qualities of breeding;
But more than these, in love I do deserve.

What if I stray’d no further, but chose here?
Let’s see once more this saying grav’d in gold:

[Scene of Portia and Morocco looking at caskets, as Antonio and Gratiano follow with Portia’s portrait.]
Who chooseth me shall gain what many men desire.

Why, that's the lady: all the world desires her;
From the four corners of the earth they come,
To kiss this shrine, this mortal-breathing saint:
The Hycrani desert and the vassy wilds
Of wide Arabia are as throughfares now
For princes to come view fair Portia:
The watery kingdom, whose ambitious head
Spits in the face of heaven, is no bar
To stop the foreign spirits, but they come,
As o'er a brook, to see fair Portia.
One of these three contains her heavenly picture.
Is't like that lead contains her? 'Twere damnation.

To think so base a thought: it was too gross
To rib her cerecloth in the obscure grave.
Or shall I think in silver she's immur'd,
Being ten times undervalued to tried gold?
O sinful thought! Never so rich a gem
Was set in worse than gold. They have in
England
A coin that bears the figure of an angel
Stamped in gold, but that's insculp'd upon;
But here an angel in a golden bed
Lies all within. Deliver me the key:
Here do I choose, and thrive as I may!

Por. There, take it, prince; and if my form
lie there,
Then I am yours.

[He unlocks the golden casket.

Mor. O hell! what have we here?
A carrion Death, within whose empty eye
There is a written scroll. I'll read the writing.

All that glisters is not gold; 65
Often have you heard that told.
Many a man his life hath sold
But my outside to behold -
Gilded tombs do worms infold.

Had you been as wise as bold,
Young in limbs, in judgment old,
Your answer had not been insculp'd:
Fare you well; your suit is cold.

Cold, indeed; and labour lost:
Then, farewell, heat, and welcome, frost!

Portia, adieu. I have too griev'd a heart
To take a tedious leave: thus losers part.

[Exit with his Train. Flourish of Cornets.

Por. A gentle riddance. Draw the curtains: go.

Let all of his complexion choose me so.

[Exeunt.

SCENE VIII.—Venice. A Street.

Enter Salario and Salanio.

Salar. Why, man, I saw Bassanio under sail:
With him is Gratiano gone along;

And in their ship I'm sure Lorenzo is not.

Salar. The villain Jew with outcries rais'd
the duke,

Who went with him to search Bassanio's ship.

Salar. He came too late, the ship was under sail:
But there the duke was given to understand
That in a gondola were seen together
Lorenzo and his amorous Jessica.
Besides, Antonio certified the duke
They were not with Bassanio in his ship.

Salar. I never heard a passion so confus'd, 12
So strange, outrageous, and so variable,
As the dog Jew did utter in the streets:
'My daughter! O my ducats! O my daughter!
Fled with a Christian! O my Christian ducats!
Justice! the law! my ducats, and my daughter!
A sealed bag, two sealed bags of ducats,
Of double ducats, stol'n from me by my daughter!
And jewels! two stones, two rich and precious stones,
Stol'n by my daughter! Justice! find the girl!
She hath the stones upon her, and the ducats.

Salar. Why, all the boys in Venice follow him,
Crying, his stones, his daughter, and his ducats.

Salar. Let good Antonio look he keep his day,
Or he shall pay for this.

Salar. Marry, well remember'd.
I reason'd with a Frenchman yesterday,
Who told me,—in the narrow seas that part
The French and English,—there miscarried
A vessel of our country richly fraught.
I thought upon Antonio when he told me,
And wish'd in silence that it were not his.

Salar. You were best to tell Antonio what you hear;
Yet do not suddenly, for it may grieve him.

Salar. A kinder gentleman treads not the earth.

I saw Bassanio and Antonio part:
Bassanio told him he would make some speed
Of his return: he answer'd 'Do not so;
Slubber not business for my sake, Bassanio,
But stay the very ripping of the time;
And for the Jew's bond which he hath of me,
Let it not enter in your mind of love:
Be merry, and employ your chiefest thoughts
To courtship and such fair outlets of love
As shall conveniently become you there:
And even there, his eye being big with tears,
Turning his face, he put his hand behind him,
And with affection wondrous sensible
He wrung Bassanio's hand; and so they parted.

Salar. I think he only loves the world for him.
THE MERCHANT OF VENICE

Act II, Sc. VIII.

I pray thee, let us go and find him out,
And quicken his embraced heaviness.
With some delight or other.

Salar.  Do we so.

[Exeunt.

SCENE IX.—Belmont. A Room in Portia’s House.

Enter Nerissa, with a Servitor.

Ner. Quick, quick, I pray thee; draw the curtain straight:
The Prince of Arragon hath ta’en his oath,
And comes to his election presently.

Flourish of Cornets. Enter the Prince of Arragon, Portia, and their Trains.

Por. Behold, there stands the caskets, noble prince;
A you choose that wherein I am contain’d,
Straight shall our nuptial rites be solemniz’d;
But if you fail, without more speech, my lord,
You must be gone from hence immediately.

Ar. I am enjoin’d by oath to observe three things:
First, never to unfold to any one
Which casket ’twas I chose; next, if I fail
Of the right casket, never in my life
to woo a maid in way of marriage;
Lastly,
If I do fail in fortune of my choice,
Immediately to leave you and be gone.

Por. To these injunctions every one doth swear
That comes to hazard for my worthless self.

Ar. And so have I address’d me. Fortune now
To my heart’s hope! Gold, silver, and base lead
Who chooseth me must give and hazard all he hath:
You shall look fairer, ere I give or hazard.
What says the golden chest? ha! let me see:
Who chooseth me shall gain what many men desire.
What many men desire! that ‘many’ may be meant
By the fool multitude, that choose by show,
Not learning more than the fond eye doth teach;
Which priest not to the interior, but, like the martlet,
Builds in the weather on the outward wall,
Even in the force and road of casualty.
I will not choose what many men desire,
Because I will not jump with common spirits
And rank me with the barbarous multitude.
Why, then to thee, thou silver treasure-house;
Tell me once more what title thou dost bear:

Who chooseth me shall get as much as he deserves.
And well said too; for who shall go about
to cozen fortune and be honourable
Without the stamp of merit? Let none presume
To wear an undeserved dignity.
O! that estates, degrees, and offices
Were not deriv’d corruptly, and that clear honour
Were purchas’d by the merit of the wearer.
How many then should cover that stand bare;
How many be commanded that command;
How much low peasantry would then be glean’d
From the true seed of honour; and how much honour
Pick’d from the chaff and ruin of the times.

To be new varnish’d! Well, but to my choice:
Who chooseth me shall get as much as he deserves.
I will assume desert. Give me a key for this,
And instantly unlock my fortunes here.

[He opens the silver casket.

Por. Too long a pause for that which you find there.

Ar. What’s here? the portrait of a blinking idiot,
Presenting me a schedule! I will read it.
How much unlike art thou to Portia!
How much unlike my hopes and my deservings!
Who chooseth me shall have as much as he deserves.
Did I deserve no more than a fool’s head?
Is that my prize? are my deserts no better?
Por. To offend, and judge, are distinct offices,
And of opposed natures.

Ar. What is here?

The fire seven times tried this:
Seven times tried that judgment is:
That did never choose amiss.
Some there be that shadows kiss;
Such have but a shadow’s bliss:
There be fools alive, I wis,
Silver’d o’er; and so was this.
Take what wife you will to bed,
I will ever be your head:
So be gone, sir: you are sped.

Still more fool I shall appear
By the time I linger here:
With one fool’s head I came to woo,
But I go away with two.
Sweet, adieu. I’ll keep my oath,
Patiently to bear my wretch.

[Exit Arragon with his Train.

Por. Thus hath the candle sing’d the moth.
O, these deliberate fools! when they do choose,
They have the wisdom by their wit to lose.

Ner. The ancient saying is no heresy:
Hanging and wiving goes by destiny.'
Por. Come, draw the curtain, Nerissa.

Enter a Servant.

Ser. Where is my lady?
Por. Here; what would my lord?
Ser. Madam, there is alighted at your gate
A young Venetian, one that comes before
To signify the approaching of his lord;
From whom he bringeth sensible regrets,
To wit,—besides commends and courteous
breath,—
Gifts of rich value. Yet I have not seen
So likely an ambassador of love.

A day in April never came so sweet,
To show how costly summer was at hand,
As this fore-spurrer comes before his lord.

Por. No more, I pray thee: I am half afeard
Thou wilt say anon he is some kin to thee,
Thou spend'st such high-day wit in praising him.
Come, come, Nerissa; for I long to see
Quick Cupid's post that comes so mannerly.

Ner. Bassanio, lord Love, if thy will it be!

[Exeunt]

ACT III.

SCENE I.—Venice. A Street.

Enter SALANIO and SALARINO.

Salar. Now, what news on the Rialto?
Salar. Why, yet it lives there uncheck'd that
Antonio hath a ship of rich lading wrack'd on the
narrow seas; the Goodwins, I think they call
the place; a very dangerous flat, and fatal, where
the carcasses of many a tall ship lie buried, as
they say, if my gossip Report be an honest
woman of her word.

Salar. I would she were as lying a gossip in
that as ever knapped ginger, or made her neigh-
bours believe she wept for the death of a third
husband. But it is true,—without any slips of
prolixity or crossing the plain highway of talk,
—that the good Antonio, the honest Antonio,—
O, that I had a title good enough to keep his
name company!

Salar. Come, the full stop.
Salar. Hal! what sayst thou? Why, the end
is, he hath lost a ship.

Salar. I would it might prove the end of his
losses.

Salar. Let me say 'amen' betimes, lest the
devil cross my prayer, for here he comes in the
likeness of a Jew.

Enter SHYLOCK.

How now, Shylock! what news among the
merchants?

Shy. You knew, none so well, none so well as
you, of my daughter's flight.

Salar. That's certain: I, for my part, knew
the tailor that made the wings she flew withal.

Salar. And Shylock, for his own part, knew
the bird was fledged; and then it is the com-
plexion of them all to leave the dam.

Shy. She is damned for it.

Salar. That's certain, if the devil may be her
judge.

Shy. My own flesh and blood to rebel!

Salar. Out upon it, old carrion! rebels it at
these years?

Shy. I say my daughter is my flesh and
blood.

Salar. There is more difference between thy
flesh and hers than between jet and ivory; more
between your bloods than there is between red
wine and Rhenish. But tell us, do you hear
whether Antonio have had any loss at sea
or no?

Shy. There I have another sad match: a
bankrupt, a prodigal, who dare scarce show his
head on the Rialto; a beggar, that used to come
so smug upon the mart; let him look to his bond:
he was wont to call me usurer; let him look to
his bond: he was wont to lend money for a
Christian courtesy; let him look to his bond.

Salar. Why, I am sure, if he forfeit thou
will not take his flesh: what's that good for?

Shy. To bait fish withal: if it will feed nothing
else, it will feed my revenge. He hath disgraced
me, and hindered me half a million, laughed at
my losses, mocked at my gains, scorned my
nation, thwarted my bargains, cooled my friends,
heated mine enemies; and what's his reason? I
am a Jew. Hath not a Jew eyes? hath not a
Jew hands, organs, dimensions, senses, affec-
tions, passions? fed with the same food, hurt
with the same weapons, subject to the same
diseases, healed by the same means, warmed
and cooled by the same winter and summer, as a
Christian is? If you prick us, do we not bleed?
if you tickle us, do we not laugh? if you poison
us, do we not die? and if you wrong us, shall we
not revenge? If we are like you in the rest, we
will resemble you in that. If a Jew wrong a
Christian, what is his humility? Revenge. If a
Christian wrong a Jew, what should his sufferance
be by Christian example? Why, revenge. The
villany you teach me I will execute, and it shall
go hard but I will better the instruction.

Enter a Servant.

Serv. Gentleman, my master Antonio is at his
house, and desires to speak with you both.
Act III, Sc. I.  THE MERCHANT OF VENICE

Salar. We have been up and down to seek him.

Enter Tubal.

Salar. Here comes another of the tribe: a third cannot be matched, unless the devil himself turn Jew.

[Exeunt Salanio, Salario and Servant.

Shy. How now, Tubal! what news from Genoa? Hast thou found my daughter?

Tub. I often came where I did hear of her, but cannot find her.

Shy. Why there, there, there! a diamond gone, cost me two thousand ducats in Frankfort! The curse never fell upon our nation till now; I never felt it till now: two thousand ducats in that; and other precious, precious jewels. I would my daughter were dead at my foot, and the jewels in her ear! would she were hearsed at my foot, and the ducats in her cofin! No news of them? Why, so: and I know not what’s spent in the search: Why thou—loss upon loss! the thief gone with so much, and so much to find the thief; and no satisfaction, no revenge: nor ill luck stirring but what lights on my shoulders; no sighs but of my breathing; no tears but of my shedding.

Tub. Yes, other men have ill luck too. Antonio, as I heard in Genoa,—

Shy. What, what, what? ill luck, ill luck?

Tub. hath an argosy cast away, coming from Tripolis.

Shy. I thank God! I thank God! Is it true? is it true?

Tub. I spoke with some of the sailors that escaped the wreck.

Shy. I thank thee, good Tubal. Good news, good news! ha, ha! Where? in Genoa?

Tub. Thy daughter spent in Genoa, as I heard, one night, fourscore ducats.

Shy. Thou stickst a dagger in me: I shall never see my gold again: fourscore ducats at a sitting! fourscore ducats!

Tub. There came divers of Antonio’s creditors in my company to Venice, that swear he cannot choose but break.

Shy. I am very glad of it: I’ll plague him; I’ll torture him: I am glad of it.

Tub. One of them showed me a ring that he had of your daughter for a monkey.

Shy. Out upon her! Thou torment me, Tubal: it was my turquoise; I had it of Leah when I was a bachelor: I would not have given it for a wilderness of monkeys.

Tub. But Antonio is certainly undone.

Shy. Nay, that’s true, that’s very true. Go, Tubal, fee me an officer; bespeak him a fortnight before. I will have the heart of him, if he for-feit; for, were he out of Venice, I can make what merchandise I will. Go, go, Tubal, and meet me at our synagogue; go, good Tubal; at our synagogue, Tubal.

[Exeunt.

SCENE II.—Belmont. A Room in Portia’s House.

Enter Bassanio, Portia, Gratiano, Nerissa, and Attendants.

Por. I pray you, tarry: pause a day or two. Before you hazard; for, in choosing wrong, I lose your company: therefore, forbear awhile. There’s something tells me, but it is not love, I would not lose you; and you know yourself, hate counsels not in such a quality. But lest you should not understand me well,—And yet a maiden hath no tongue but thought,—I would detain you here some month or two Before you venture for me. I could teach you How to choose right, but then I am forsworn; So will I never be: so may you miss me; But if you do, you’ll make me wish a sin, That I had been forsworn. Beshrew your eyes, They have o’erlook’d me and divided me: One half of me is yours, the other half yours, Mine own, I would say; but if mine, then yours, And so all yours. O! these naughty times Put bars between the owners and their rights; And so, though yours, not yours. Prove it so, Let fortune go to hell for it, not I. I speak too long; but ’tis to peise the time, To eke it and to draw it out in length, To stay you from election.

Bass. Let me choose: For as I am, I live upon the rack.

Por. Upon the rack, Bassanio! then confess What treason there is mingled with your love.

Bass. None but that ugly treason of mistrust, Which makes me fear th’ enjoying of my love: There may as well be amity and life ’Tween snow and fire, as treason and my love. POR. Ay, but I fear you speak upon the rack, Where men enforced do speak anything. Bass. Promise me life, and I’ll confess the truth.

Por. Well then, confess, and live.

Bass. ‘Confess’ and ‘love’ Had been the very sum of my confession: O happy torment, when my torturer Doth teach me answers for deliverance! But let me to my fortune and the caskets. Por. Away then! I am lock’d in one of them: If you do love me, you will find me out. Nerissa and the rest, stand all aloof. Let music sound while he doth make his choice; Then, if he lose, he makes a swan-like end,
Fading in music: that the comparison
May stand more proper, my eye shall be the stream
And watery death-bed for him. He may win;
And what is music then? then music is
Even as the flourish when true subjects bow
To a new-crowned monarch: such is it
As are those dulcet sounds in break of day
That creep into the dreaming bridegroom’s ear,
And summon him to marriage. Now he goes,
With no less presence, but with much more love,
Than young Alcides, when he did redeem
The virgin tribute paid by howling Troy
To the sea-monster: I stand for sacrifice;
The rest afool are the Dardanian wives,
With bleared visages, come forth to view
The issue of the exploit. Go, Hercules!
Live thou, I live: with much, much more dismay
I view the fight than thou that mak’st the fray.

[A Song, whilst BASSANIO comments on
the caskets to himself.]

Tell me where is fancy bred,
Or in the heart or in the head?
How begot, how nourished?
Reply, reply.
It is engender’d in the eyes,
With gazing fed; and fancy dies
In the cradle where it lies
Let us all ring fancy’s knell.
I’ll begin it,—Ding, dong, bell.

All. Ding, dong, bell.

Bass. So may the outward shows be least
themselves:
The world is still deceiv’d with ornament.
In law, what plea so tainted and corrupt
But, being season’d with a gracious voice,
Obscures the show of evil? In religion,
What damned error, but some sober brow
Will bless it and approve it with a text,
Hiding the grossness with fair ornament?
There is no vice so simple but assumes
Some mark of virtue on his outward parts.
How many cowards, whose hearts are all as false
As stairs of sand, wear yet upon their chins
The beards of Hercules and frowning Mars,
Who, inward search’d, have livers white as milk;
And these assume but valour’s excrement
To render them redoubled! Look on beauty,
And you shall see ‘tis purchas’d by the weight;
Which therein works a miracle in nature,
Making them lightest that wear most of it:
So are those crisp’d snaky golden locks
Which make such wanton gambols with the wind.

The seeming truth which cunning times put on
To entrap the wisest. Therefore, thou gaudy gold,
Hard food for Midas, I will none of thee;
Nor none of thee, thou pale and common drudge
’Tween man and man: but thou, thou meagre lead.

Which rather th’nest than dost promise aught,
Thy plainness moves me more than eloquence,
And here choose I: joy be the consequence!

Por. [Aside.] How all the other passions fleet to air,
As doubtful thoughts, and rash-embrac’d despair,
And shuddering fear, and green-ey’d jealousy.
O love! be moderate; alay thy ecstasy;
In measure rain thy joy; scant this excess; I feel too much thy blessing; make it less,
For fear I surfeit!

Bass. What find I here?
[Opening the leaden casket.]

Fair Portia’s counterfeit! What demi-god
Hath come so near creation? Move these eyes?
Or whether, riding on the balls of mine,
Seem they in motion? Here are sever’d lips,
Parted with sugar breath; so sweet a bar
Should sunder such sweet friends. Here, in her hairs
The painter plays the spider, and hath woven
A golden mesh to entrap the hearts of men
Faster than gnats in cobwebs: but her eyes!—
How could he see to do them? having made one,
Methinks it should have power to steal both his
And leave itself unfurnished: yet look, how far
The substance of my praise doth wrong this shadow
In underprizing it, so far this shadow
Doth limp behind the substance. Here’s the scroll,
The continent and summary of my fortune.

You that choose not by the view,
Chance as fair and choose as true!
Since this fortune falls to you,
Be content and seek no new.
If you be well pleas’d with this
And hold your fortune for your bliss,
Turn you where your lady is
And claim her with a loving kiss.

A gentle scroll. Fair lady, by your leave;
[Kissing her.]

I come by note, to give and to receive.
Like one of two contending in a prize,
That thinks he hath done well in people’s eyes,
Hearing applause and universal shout,
Giddy in spirit, still gazing in a doubt.

Whether those peals of praise be his or no;
So, thrice-fair lady, stand I, even so,
As doubtful whether what I see be true,
Until confirm'd, sign'd, ratified by you.

Por. You see me, Lord Bassanio, where I stand,
Such as I am: though for myself alone
I would not be ambitious in my mind,
To wish myself much better; yet, for you
I would be trebled twenty times myself;
A thousand times more fair, ten thousand times
More rich;
That only to stand high in your account,
I might in virtues, beauties, livings, friends,
Exceed account: but the full sum of me
Is sum of nothing; which, to term in gross,
Is an unlesson'd girl, unschool'd, unpractis'd;
Happy in this, she is not yet so old
But she may learn; happier than this,
She is not bred so dull but she can learn;
Happiest of all is that her gentle spirit
Commits itself to yours to be directed,
As from her lord, her governor, her king.
Myself and what is mine to you and yours
Is now converted: but now I was the lord
Of this fair mansion, master of my servants,
Queen o'er myself; and even now, but now,
This house, these servants, and this same myself
Are yours, my lord. I give them with this ring;
Which when you part from, lose, or give away,
Let it presage the ruin of your love,
And be my vantage to exclaim on you.

Bass. Madam, you have bereft me of all words,
Only my blood speaks to you in my veins;
And there is such confusion in my powers,
As, after some oration fairly spoke
By a beloved prince, there doth appear
Among the buzzing pleased multitude;
Where every something, being bient together,
Turns to a wild of nothing, save of joy,
Express'd and not express'd. But when this ring
Parts from this finger, then parts life from hence:
Or then be bold to say Bassanio's dead.

Ner. My lord and lady, it is now our time,
That have stood by and seen our wishes prosper,
To cry, good joy. Good joy, my lord and lady!

Gra. My Lord Bassanio and my gentle lady,
I wish you all the joy that you can wish;
For I am sure you can wish none from me:
And when your honours mean to solemnize
The bargain of your faith, I do beseech you,
Even at that time I may be married too.

Bass. With all my heart, so thou canst get a wife.

Gra. I thank your lordship, you have got me one.

My eyes, my lord, can look as swift as yours:
You saw the mistress, I beheld the maid;
You lov'd, I lov'd for intermission.

No more pertains to me, my lord, than you.

Your fortune stood upon the caskets there,
And so did mine too, as the matter falls;
For wooing here until I sweat again,
And swearing till my very roof was dry
With oaths of love, at last, if promise last,
I got a promise of this fair one here
To have her love, provided that your fortune
Achiev'd her mistress.

Por. Is this true, Nerissa?

Ner. Madam, it is, so you stand pleas'd withal.

Bass. And do you, Gratiano, mean good faith?

Gra. Yes, faith, my lord.

Bass. Our feast shall be much honour'd in
your marriage.

Gra. We'll play with them the first boy for a
thousand ducats.

Ner. What! and stake down?

Gra. No; we shall ne'er win at that sport,
and stake down.

But who comes here? Lorenzo and his infidel?

What! and my old Venetian friend, Salanio?

Enter LORENZO, JESSICA, and SALANIO.

Bass. Lorenzo, and Salanio, welcome hither,
If that the youth of my new interest here
Have power to bid you welcome. By your leave,
I bid my very friends and countrymen,
Sweet Portia, welcome.

Por. So do I, my lord:
They are entirely welcome.

Lor. I thank your honour. For my part, my lord,

My purpose was not to have seen you here;
But meeting with Salanio by the way,
He did entreat me, past all saying nay,
To come with him along.

Salan. I did, my lord,
And I have reason for it. Signior Antonio
Commends him to you. [Gives BASSANIO letter.

Bass. Ere I ope his letter,
I pray you, tell me how my good friend doth.

Salan. Not sick, my lord, unless it be in mind;
Nor well, unless in mind; his letter there
Will show you his estate.

Gra. Nerissa, cheer you stranger; bid her welcome.

Your hand, Salanio. What's the news from Venice?

How doth that royal merchant, good Antonio?
I know he will be glad of our success;
We are the Jasons, we have won the fleece.

Salan. I would you had won the fleece that
he hath lost.

Por. There are some shrewd contents in your
same paper,
That steal the colour from Bassanio's cheek;
Some dear friend dead, else nothing in the world
Could turn so much the constitution
Of any constant man. What, worse and worse!
With leave, Bassanio; I am half yourself, 249
And I must freely have the half of anything
That this same paper brings you.

Bass. O sweet Portia!
Here are a few of the unpleasantst'words 252
That ever blotted paper. Gentle lady,
When I did first impart my love to you,
I freely told you all the wealth I had
Ran in my veins, I was a gentleman: 256
And then I told you true; and yet, dear lady,
Rating myself at nothing, you shall see
How much I was a braggart. When I told you
My state was nothing, I should then have told you
That I was worse than nothing; for, indeed, 261
I have engag'd myself to a dear friend,
Engag'd my friend to his mere enemy,
To feed my means. Here is a letter, lady; 264
The paper as the body of my friend,
And every word in it a gaping wound,
Issuing life-blood. But is it true, Salanio?
Hath all his ventures fail'd? What, not one hit?
From Tripolis, from Mexico, and England, 269
From Lisbon, Barbary, and India?
And not one vessel 'scape the dreadful touch
Of merchant-marrying rocks?

Salan. Not one, my lord. 272
Besides, it should appear, that if he had
The present money to discharge the Jew,
He would not take it. Never did I know
A creature, that did bear the shape of man, 276
So keen and greedy to confound a man.
He plies the duke at morning and at night,
And doth impeach the freedom of the state,
If they deny him justice: twenty merchants, 280
The duke himself, and the magnificoes
Of greatest port, have all persuaded with him;
But none can drive him from the ensnare ple
Of forfeiture, of justice, and his bond.

Jes. When I was with him, I have heard him
swear
To Tubal and to Cusus, his countrymen,
That he would rather have Antonio's flesh
Than twenty times the value of the sum 288
That he did owe him; and I know, my lord,
If law, authority, and power deny not,
It will go hard with poor Antonio.

Por. Is it your dear friend that is thus in

trouble? 292

Bass. The dearest friend to me, the kindest
man,
The best-condition'd and unwearied spirit
In doing courtesies, and one in whom
The ancient Roman honour more appears 296
Than any that draws breath in Italy.

Por. What sum owes he the Jew?
Bass. For me, three thousand ducats.

Por. What, no more?
Pay him six thousand, and deface the bond; 300
Double six thousand, and then treble that,
Before a friend of this description
Shall lose a hair thorough Bassanio's fault.
First go with me to church and call me wife, 304
And then away to Venice to your friend;
For never shall you lie by Portia's side
With an unquiet soul. You shall have gold
To pay the petty debt twenty times over: 308
When it is paid, bring your true friend along.
My maid Nerissa and myself meantime,
Will live as maids and widows. Come, away!
For you shall hence upon your wedding-day, 312
Bid your friends welcome, show a merry cheer;
Since you are dear bought, I will love you
dear.

But let me hear the letter of your friend. 315

Bass. Sweet Bassanio, my ships have all mis-
carried, my creditors grow cruel, my estate is very
low, my bond to the Jew is forfeit; and since, in
paying it, it is impossible I should live, all debts
are cleared between you and I, if I might but see
you at my death. Notwithstanding, use your
pleasure: if your love do not persuade you to come,
let not my letter.

Por. O love, dispatch all business, and be
gone! 324

Bass. Since I have your good leave to go
away,
I will make haste; but, till I come again,
No bed shall e'er be guilty of my stay,
Nor rest be interposer 'twixt us twain. [Exeunt.

SCENE III.—Venice. A Street.

Enter SHYLOCK, SALARINO, ANTONIO, and
GAOLER.

Shy. Gaoler, look to him: tell not me of
mercy:
This is the fool that lent out money gratis:
Gaoler, look to him.

Ant. Hear me yet, good Shylock.
Shy. I'll have my bond; speak not against
my bond:
I have sworn an oath that I will have my bond.
Thou call'dst me dog before thou hast'd a cause,
But, since I am a dog, beware my fangs:
The duke shall grant me justice. I do wonder,
Thou naughty gaoler, that thou art so fond
To come abroad with him at his request.

Ant. I pray thee, speak.
Shy. I'll have my bond; I will not hear thee
speak: 12
I'll have my bond, and therefore speak no more.
I'll not be made a soft and dull-eyed fool,
To shake the head, relent, and sigh, and yield
To Christian intercessors. Follow not; 16
THE MERCHANT OF VENICE

I'll have no speaking; I will have my bond. [Exit.

Salar. It is the most impenetrable cur
That ever kept with men.

Ant. Let him alone;
I'll follow him no more with bootless prayers.
He seeks my life; his reason well I know.
I oft deliver'd from his forfeitures
Many that have at times made moan to me;
Therefore he hates me.

Salar. I am sure the duke
Will never grant this forfeiture to hold.

Ant. The duke cannot deny the course of law:
For the commodity that strangers have
With us in Venice, if it be denied,
'Twill much impeach the justice of the state;
Since that the trade and profit of the city
Consisteth of all nations. Therefore, go:
These griefs and losses have so beted me,
That I shall hardly spare a pound of flesh
To-morrow to my bloody creditor.
Well, gaoler, on. Pray God, Bassanio come
To see me pay his debt, and then I care not! [Exeunt.

SCENE IV.—Belmont. A Room in Portia's House.

Enter Portia, Nerissa, Lorenzo, Jessica, and Balthazar.

Lor. Madam, although I speak it in your presence,
You have a noble and a true conceit
Of god-like amity; which appears most strongly
In bearing thus the absence of your lord.
But if you knew to whom you show this honour,
How true a gentleman you send relief,
How dear a lover of my lord your husband,
I know you would be prouder of the work
Than customary bounty can enforce you.

Por. I never did repent for doing good,
Nor shall not now: for in companions
That do converse and waste the time together,
Whose souls do bear an equal yoke of love,
There must be needs a like proportion
Of lineaments, of manners, and of spirit;
Which makes me think that this Antonio,
Being the bosom lover of my lord,
Must needs be like my lord. If it be so,
How little is the cost I have bestow'd
In purchasing the semblance of my soul
From out the state of hellish cruelty!
This comes too near the praising of myself;
Therefore, no more of it: bear other things.
Lorenzo, I commit into your hands
The husbandry and manage of my house
Until my lord's return: for mine own part,

I have toward heaven breath'd a secret vow
To live in prayer and contemplation,
Only attended by Nerissa here,
Until her husband and my lord's return.
There is a monastery two miles off,
And there will we abide. I do desire you
Not to deny this imposition,
The which my love and some necessity
Now lays upon you.

Lor. Madam, with all my heart:
I shall obey you in all fair commands.
Por. My people do already know my mind,
And will acknowledge you and Jessica
In place of Lord Bassanio and myself.
So fare you well till we shall meet again.

Lor. Fair thoughts and happy hours attend
on you!

Jes. I wish your ladyship all heart's content.
Por. I thank you for your wish, and am well pleas'd
To wish it back on you: fare you well, Jessica.

[Exeunt Jessica and Lorenzo.

Now, Balthazar,
As I have ever found thee honest-true,
So let me find thee still. Take this same letter,
And use thou all the endeavour of a man
In speed to Padua: see thou render this
Into my cousin's hand, Doctor Bellario;
And, look, what notes and garments he doth give thee,
Bring them, I pray thee, with imagin'd speed
Unto the traitor, to the common ferry
Which trades to Venice. Waste no time in words,
But get thee gone: I shall be there before thee.

Balth. Madam, I go with all convenient speed.

[Exit.

Por. Come on, Nerissa: I have work in hand
That you yet know not of; we'll see our husbands
Before they think of us.

Ner. Shall they see us?

Por. They shall, Nerissa; but in such a habit
That they shall think we are accomplished
With that we lack. I'll hold thee any wager,
When we are both accoutred like young men,
I'll prove the prettiest fellow of the two,
And wear my dagger as a braver grace,
And speak between the change of man and boy
With a reed voice, and turn two mincing steps
Into a manly stride, and speak of frays
Like a fine bragging youth, and tall quaint lies,
How honourable ladies sought my love,
Which I denying, they fell sick and died:
I could not do withal; then I'll repent,
And wish, for all that, that I had not kill'd them:
And twenty of these puny lies I'll tell,
That man shall swear I have discontinu'd school
Above a twelvemonth. I have within my mind
A thousand raw tricks of these bragging Jacks,
Which I will practise.

_Ner._ Why, shall we turn to men?
_Por._ Fie, what a question's that,
If thou wert near a lewd interpreter!

But come: I'll tell thee all my whole device
When I am in my coach, which stays for us
At the park gate; and therefore haste away,
For we must measure twenty miles to-day.

[Exeunt.]

SCENE V.—The Same. A Garden.

_Enter LAUNCELOT and JESSICA._

_LAUN._ Yes, truly; for, look you, the sins of the father are to be laid upon the children; therefore, I promise you, I fear you. I was always plain with you, and so now I speak my agitation of the matter: therefore be of good cheer; for, truly, I think you are damned. There is but one hope in it that can do you any good, and that is but a kind of bastard hope neither.

_JES._ And what hope is that, I pray thee?

_LAUN._ Marry, you may partly hope that your father got you not, that you are not the Jew's daughter.

_JES._ That were a kind of bastard hope, indeed: so the sins of my mother should be visited upon me.

_LAUN._ Truly then I fear you are damned both by father and mother: thus when I shun Scylla, your father, I fall into Charybdis, your mother: well, you are gone both ways.

_JES._ I shall be saved by my husband; he hath made me a Christian.

_LAUN._ Truly the more to blame he: we were Christians e'en as many as could well live one by another. This making of Christians will raise the price of hogs: if we grow all to be pork-eaters, we shall not shortly have a rasher on the coals for money.

_JES._ I'll tell my husband, Launcelot, what you say: here he comes.

_Enter LORENZO._

_Lor._ I shall grow jealous of you shortly, Launcelot, if you thus get my wife into corners.

_JES._ Nay, you need not fear us, Lorenzo: Launcelot and I are out. He tells me flatly, there is no mercy for me in heaven, because I am a Jew's daughter: and he says you are no good member of the commonwealth, for, in converting Jews to Christians, you raise the price of pork.

_Lor._ I shall answer that better to the com-

monwealth than you can the getting up of the negro's belly: the Moor is with child by you, Launcelot.

_LAUN._ It is much that the Moor should be more than reason; but if she be less than an honest woman, she is indeed more than I took her for.

_Lor._ How every fool can play upon the word! I think the best grace of wit will shortly turn into silence, and discourse grow commendable in none only but parrots. Go in, sirrah: bid them prepare for dinner.

_Laun._ That is done, sir; they have all stomachs.

_Lor._ Goodly Lord, what a wit-snapper are you! then bid them prepare dinner.

_Laun._ That is done too, sir; only, 'cover' is the word.

_Lor._ Will you cover, then, sir?

_Laun._ Not so, sir, neither; I know my duty.

_Lor._ Yet more quarrelling with occasion! Wilt thou show the whole wealth of thy wit in an instant? I pray thee, understand a plain man in his plain meaning: go to thy fellows; bid them cover the table, serve in the meat, and we will come in to dinner.

_Laun._ For the table, sir, it shall be served in; for the meat, sir, it shall be covered; for your coming in to dinner, sir, why, let it be as humours and conceits shall govern.

[Exit.

_Lor._ O dear discretion, how his words are suited!

The fool hath planted in his memory
An army of good words: and I do know
A many fools, that stand in better place,
Garnish'd like him, that for a tricksey word
Defy the matter. How cheer'st thou, Jessica?
And now, good sweet, say thy opinion;
How dost thou like the Lord Bassanio's wife?

_JES._ Past all expressing. It is very meet,
The Lord Bassanio live an upright life,
For, having such a blessing in his lady,
He finds the joys of heaven here on earth;
And if on earth he do not mean it, then In reason he should never come to heaven. Why, if two gods should play some heavenly match,

And on the wager lay two earthly women,
And Portia one, there must be something else Pawn'd with the other, for the poor rude world
Hath not her fellow.

_Lor._ Even such a husband
_Hast thou of me as she is for a wife.

_JES._ Nay, but ask my opinion too of that.

_Lor._ I will anon; first, let us go to dinner.

_JES._ Nay, let me praise you while I have a stomach.
Act III, Sc. V.

THE MERCHANT OF VENICE

Lor. No, pray thee, let it serve for table-talk;
Then howsoe'er thou speakest, 'mong other things
I shall digest it.

Jes. Well, I'll set you forth. [Exeunt.

ACT IV.

SCENE I.—Venice. A Court of Justice.

Enter the DUKE: the Magnificoes; ANTONIO,
BASSANIO, GRATIANO, SALARINO, SALANIO,
and Others.

Duke. What is Antonio here?
Ant. Ready, so please your Grace.

Duke. I am sorry for thee: thou art come to answer
A stony adversary, an inhuman wretch
Uncapable of pity, void and empty
From any dram of mercy.

Ant. I have heard
Your Grace hath ta'en great pains to qualify
His rigorous course; but since he stands obdurative,
And that no lawful means can carry me
Out of his envy's reach, I do oppose
My patience to his fury, and arm'd
To suffer with a quietness of spirit
The very tyranny and rage of his.

Duke. Go one, and call the Jew into the court.

Salar. He's ready at the door: he comes,
my lord.

Enter SHYLOCK.

Duke. Make room, and let him stand before our face.

Shylock, the world thinks, and I think so too,
That thou but lead'st this fashion of thy malice
To the last hour of act; and then 'tis thought
Thou'll show thy mercy and remorse more strange
Than is thy strange-apparent cruelty;
And where thou now exact'st the penalty,—
Which is a pound of this poor merchant's flesh,—
Thou wilt not only lose the forfeiture,
But, touch'd with human gentleness and love,
Forgive a moiety of the principal;
Glancing an eye of pity on his losses,
That have of late so huddled on his back,
Know to press a royal merchant down,
And pluck commiseration of his state
From brassy bosoms and rough hearts of flint,
From stubborn Turks and Tartars, never train'd
to offices of tender courtesy.

We all expect a gentle answer, Jew.

Shy. I have possess'd your Grace of what I purpose;

And by our holy Sabbath have I sworn
To have the due and forfeit of my bond:
If you deny it, let the danger light
Upon your charter and your city's freedom.
You'll ask me, why I rather choose to have four
A weight of carrion flesh than to receive
Three thousand ducats: I'll not answer that:
But say it is my humour: is it answer'd?
What if my house be troubled with a rat,
And I be pleas'd to give ten thousand ducats
To have it ban'd? What, are you answer'd y'et?
Some men there are love not a gaping pig;
Some, that are mad if they behold a cat;
And others, when the bagpipe sings i' the nose,
Cannot contain their urine: for affection,
Mistress of passion, sways it to the mood
Of what it likes, or loathes. Now, for your answer:

As there is no firm reason to render'd,
Why he cannot abide a gaping pig;
Why he, a harmless necessary cat;
Why he, a wailing bagpipe; but of force
Must yield to such inevitable shame
As to offend, himself being offended;
So can I give no reason, nor I will not,
More than a lodg'd hate and a certain loathing
I bear Antonio, that I follow thus:
A losing suit against him. Are you answer'd?

Bass. This is no answer, thou unfeeling man,
To excuse the current of thy cruelty.

Shy. I am not bound to please thee with my answer.

Bass. Do all men kill the things they do not love?

Shy. Hates any man the thing he would not kill?

Bass. Every offence is not a hate at first.

Shy. What would'st thou have a serpent sting thee twice?

Ant. I pray you, think you question with the Jew:

You may as well go stand upon the beach,
And bid the main flood bathe his usual height;
You may as well use question with the wolf,
Why he hath made the ewe bleat for the lamb;
You may as well forbid the mountain pines
To wag their high tops, and to make no noise
When they are fretted with the gusts of heaven;
You may as well do anything most hard,
As seek to soften that—than which what's harder?

His Jewish heart: therefore, I do beseech you,
Make no more offers, use no further means;
But with all brief and plain conveniency,
Let me have judgment, and the Jew his will.
THE MERCHANT OF VENICE
ACT IV, SC. I.

Bass. For thy three thousand ducats here is six.
Shy. If every ducat in six thousand ducats
Were in six parts and every part a ducat,
I would not draw them; I would have my bond.
Duke. How shalt thou hope for mercy, rendering none?
Shy. What judgment shall I dread, doing no wrong?
You have among you many a purchaser's slave,
Which, like your asses and your dogs and mules,
You use in abject and in slavish parts,
Because you bought them: shall I say to you,
Let them be free, marry them to your heirs?
Why sweat they under burdens? let their beds
Be made as soft as yours, and let their palates
Be season'd with such viands? You will answer:
'The slaves are ours': 'so do I answer you:
The pound of flesh which I demand of him,
Is dearly bought; 'tis mine and I will have it.
If you deny me, fie upon your law!
There is no force in the decrees of Venice.
I stand for judgment: answer; shall I have it?
Duke. Upon my power I may dismiss this court,
Unless Bellario, a learned doctor,
Whom I have sent for to determine this,
'Come here to-day.'
Salar. My lord, here stays without
A messenger with letters from the doctor.
New come from Padua.
Duke. Bring us the letters: call the messenger.
Bass. Good cheer, Antonio! What, man, courage yet!
The Jew shall have my flesh, blood, bones, and all,
Ere thou shalt lose for me one drop of blood.
Ant. I am a tainted wether of the flock,
Meetest for death: the weakest kind of fruit
Drops earliest to the ground; and so let me
You cannot better be employ'd, Bassanio,
Than to live still, and write mine epitaph.

Enter Nerissa, dressed like a lawyer's clerk.
Duke. Came you from Padua, from Bellario?
Ner. From both, my lord. Bellario greets your Grace.
Bass. Why dost thou whet thy knife so earnestly?
Shy. To cut the forfeiture from that bankrupt there.
Gra. Not on thy sole, but on thy soul, harsh Jew,
Thou mak'st thy knife keen; but no metal can,
No, not the hangman's axe, bear half the keen-
ness.

Of thy sharp envy. Can no prayers pierce thee?
Shy. No, none that thou hast wit enough to make.
Gra. O, be thou damn'd, inexcusable dog!
And for thy life let justice be accus'd.
Thou almost mak'st me waver in my faith
To hold opinion with Pythagoras,
That souls of animals infuse themselves
Into the trunks of men: thy currish spirit
Governs a wolf, who, hang'd for human slaughter,
Even from the gallows did his fell soul fleet,
And whilst thou lay'st in thy unhallowed dam,
Infus'd itself in thee; for thy desires
Are wolfish, bloody, starr'd, and ravenous.
Shy. Tell thou canst rail the seal from off my bond,
Thou but offend'st thy lungs to speak so loud:
Repair thy wit, good youth, or it will fall
To curseless ruin. I stand here for law.
Duke. This letter from Bellario doth commend
A young and learned doctor to our court.
Where is he?
Ner. He attendeth here hard by,
To know your answer, whether you'll admit him.
Duke. With all my heart: some three or four of you
Go give him courteous conduct to this place.
Meantime, the court shall hear Bellario's letter.

Clerk. Your Grace shall understand that at the receipt of your letter I am very sick; but in the instant that your messenger came, in loving visitation was with me a young doctor of Rome; his name is Balthazar. I acquainted him with the cause in controversy between the Jew and Antone the merchant: we turned over many books together: he is furnish'd with my opinion; which, bettered with his own learning, the greatness whereof I cannot enough commend, comes with him, at my importunity, to fill up your Grace's request in my stead. I beseech you, let his lack of years be no impediment to let him lack a reverend estimation, for I never knew so young a body with so old a head. I leave him to your gracious acceptance, whose trial shall better publish his commendation.

Duke. You hear the learn'd Bellario, what he writes:
And here, I take it, is the doctor come.

Enter Portia, dressed like a doctor of laws.
Give me your hand. Came you from old Bellario?
Por. I did, my lord.
Duke. You are welcome: take your place.
Are you acquainted with the difference
That holds this present question in the court?
Por. I am informed throughly of the cause.
Which is the merchant here, and which the Jew?

Duke. Antonio and old Shylock, both stand forth.

Por. Is your name Shylock?

Shy. Shylock is my name. 176

Por. Of a strange nature is the suit you follow;
Yet in such rule that the Venetian law
Cannot impugn you as you do proceed.

[To ANTONIO.] You stand within his danger, do you not? 180

Ant. Ay, so he says.

Por. Do you confess the bond?

Ant. I do.

Por. Then must the Jew be merciful.

Shy. On what compulsion must I? tell me that.

Por. The quality of mercy is not strain'd, 184
It droppeth as the gentle rain from heaven
Upon the place beneath: it is twice bless'd;
It blesseth him that gives and him that takes:
'Tis mightiest in the mightiest; it becomes 188
The throned monarch better than his crown;
His sceptre shows the force of temporal power,
The attribute to awe and majesty,
Wherein doth sit the dread and fear of kings;
But mercy is above this sceptred sway, 193
It is enthroned in the hearts of kings,
It is an attribute to God himself,
And earthly power doth then show likest God's
When mercy seasons justice. Therefore, Jew,
Though justice be thy plea, consider this, 198
That in the course of justice none of us
Should see salvation: we do pray for mercy, 200
And that same prayer doth teach us all to render
The deeds of mercy. I have spake thus much
To mitigate the justice of thy plea,
Which if thou follow, this strict court of Venice
Must needs give sentence 'gainst the merchant there.

Shy. My deeds upon my head! I crave the law,
The penalty and forfeit of my bond.

Por. Is he not able to discharge the money?

Bass. Yes, here I tender it for him in the court; 209

Por. Twice the sum: if that will not suffice,
I will be bound to pay it ten times o'er,
On forfeit of my hands, my head, my heart. 212
If this will not suffice, it must appear
That malice bears down truth. And, I beseech you,
Wrest once the law to your authority:
To do a great right, do a little wrong,
And curb this cruel devil of his will. 216

Por. It must not be. There is no power in Venice
Can alter a decree established;
'Twill be recorded for a precedent,
And many an error by the same example
Will rush into the state. It cannot be.

Shy. A Daniel come to judgment! yea, a Daniel!
O wise young judge, how do I honour thee! 224

Por. I pray you, let me look upon the bond.

Shy. Here 'tis, most reverend doctor; here it is.

Por. Shylock, there's thrice thy money offer'd thee.

Shy. An oath, an oath, I have an oath in heaven:
Shall I lay perjury upon my soul?

No, not for Venice.

Por. Why, this bond is forfeit;
And lawfully by this the Jew may claim
A pound of flesh, to be by him cut off 232
Nearest the merchant's heart. Be merciful:
'Tis thousand times thy money; bid me tear the bond.

Shy. When it is paid according to the tenour.

Por. It doth appear you are a worthy judge;

Shy. You know the law, your exposition
Hath been most sound: I charge you by the law,
Whereof you are a well-deserving pillar,
Proceed to judgment: by my soul I swear 240
There is no power in the tongue of man
To alter me. I stay here on my bond.

Ant. Most heartily I do beseech the court
To give the judgment.

Por. Why then, thus it is: 244
You must prepare your bosom for his knife.

Shy. O noble judge! O excellent young man!

Por. Por. For, the intent and purpose of the law
Hath full relation to the penalty,

Which here appeareth due upon the bond.

Shy. 'Tis very true! O wise and upright judge!

How much more elder art thou than thy looks!

Por. Therefore lay bare your bosom.

Shy. Ay, 'his breast:"

Por. So says the bond:—doth it not, noble judge?—
'Nearest his heart: ' those are the very words.

Shy. That is so. Are there balance here to weigh

The flesh? 256

Shy. I have them ready.

Por. Have by some surgeon, Shylock, on your charge,
To stop his wounds, lest he do bleed to death.

Shy. Is it so nominated in the bond? 260

Por. It is not so express'd; but what of that?

Twere good you do so much for charity.

Shy. I cannot find it: 'tis not in the bond.
Por. You, merchant, have you anything to say? 264

Ant. But little: I am arm’d and well prepar’d.
Give me your hand, Bassanio: fare you well!
Grieve not that I am fallen to this for you;
For herein Fortune shows herself more kind
Than is her custom: it is still her use
To let the wretched man outlive his wealth,
To view with hollow eye and wrinkled brow
An age of poverty; from which lingering pen-
ance
Of such a misery doth she cut me off.
Commend me to your honourable wife:
Tell her the process of Antonio’s end;
Say how I lov’d you, speak me fair in death; 276
And, when the tale is told, bid her be judge
Whether Bassanio had not once a love.
Repent not you that you shall lose your friend,
And he repents not that he pays your debt; 280
For if the Jew do cut but deep enough,
I’ll pay it instantly with all my heart.

Bass. Antonio, I am married to a wife
Which is as dear to me as life itself;
But life itself, my wife, and all the world,
Are not with me esteem’d above thy life:
I would lose all, ay, sacrifice them all,
Here to this devil, to deliver you.

Por. Your wife would give you little thanks
for that,
If she were by to hear you make the offer.

Gra. I have a wife, whom, I protest, I love:
I would she were in heaven, so she could
Entreat some power to change this currish Jew.
Ner. ’Tis well you offer it behind her back;
The wish would make else an unquiet house.

Shy. These be the Christian husbands! I have
a daughter;
Would any of the stock of Barabbas
Had been her husband rather than a Christian!
We trifle time; I pray thee, pursue sentence.

Por. A pound of that same merchant’s flesh
is thine:
The court awards it, and the law doth give it.

Shy. Most rightful judge! 300

Por. And you must cut this flesh from off his
breast:
The law allows it, and the court awards it.

Shy. Most learned judge! A sentence! come,
preface!

Por. Tarry a little: there is something else.
This bond doth give thee here no jot of blood;
The words expressly are ‘a pound of flesh;’ 308
Then take thy bond, take thou thy pound of flesh;
But, in the cutting it, if thou dost shed
One drop of Christian blood, thy lands and goods
Are, by the laws of Venice, confiscate
Unto the state of Venice.

Gra. O upright judge! Mark, Jew: O learned
judge!
Shy. Is that the law?

Por. Thyself shalt see the act;
For, as thou urgest justice, be assur’d
Thou shalt have justice, more than thou desir’d.

Gra. O learned judge! Mark, Jew: a learned
judge!

Shy. I take this offer then: pay the bond
thrice,
And let the Christian go.

Bass. Here is the money. 320

Por. Soft!
The Jew shall have all justice; soft! no haste:—
He shall have nothing but the penalty.

Gra. O Jew! an upright judge, a learned
judge!

Por. Therefore prepare thee to cut off the flesh.
Shed thou no blood; nor cut thou less, nor more,
But just a pound of flesh: if thou tak’st more,
Or less, than a just pound, be it but so much,
As makes it light or heavy in the substance,
Or the division of the twentieth part
Of one poor scruple, nay, if the scale do turn
But in the estimation of a hair,

Thou diest and all thy goods are confiscate.

Gra. A second Daniel, a Daniel, Jew!

Now, infidel, I have thee on the hip.

Por. Why doth the Jew pause? take thy for-
feiture.

Shy. Give me my principal, and let me go.
Bass. I have it ready for thee; here it is.
Por. He hath refus’d it in the open court:
He shall have merely justice, and his bond.

Gra. A Daniel, still say I; a second Daniel!

I thank thee, Jew, for teaching me that word.
Shy. Shall I not have barely my principal?
Por. Thou shalt have nothing but the for-
feiture,
To be so taken at thy peril, Jew.

Shy. Why, then the devil give him good of it!
I’ll stay no longer question.

Por. Tarry, Jew:
The law hath yet another hold on you.
It is enacted in the laws of Venice,
If it be prov’d against an alien
That by direct or indirect attempts
He seek the life of any citizen,
The party ’gainst the which he doth contrive
Shall seize one half his goods; the other half
Comes to the privy coffers of the state;
And the offender’s life lies in the mercy

Of the duke only, ’gainst all other voice.
In which predicament, I say, thou stand’st;
For it appears by manifest proceeding,
That indirectly and directly too

Thou hast contriv’d against the very life
Of the defendant; and thou hast incur'd
The danger formerly by me rehears'd.

Duke. That thou shalt see the difference of
our spirits,
Doth sustain my house; you take my life
When you do take the means whereby I live.

Por. What mercy can you render him, An-
tonio?

Gra. A halter gratis; nothing else, for God's
sake!

Ant. So please my lord the duke, and all the
court,
To quit the fine for one half of his goods,
I am content; so he will let me have

Por. Art thou contented, Jew? what dost
thou say?

Shy. I am content.

Por. Clerk, draw a deed of gift.

Shy. I pray you give me leave to go from hence:
I am not well. Send the deed after me,
And I will sign it.

Duke. Get thee gone, but do it.

Gra. In christening thou shalt have two god-
fathers;
Had I been judge, thou shouldst have had ten
more,

Por. I humbly do desire your Grace of pardon;
I must away this night toward Padua,
And it is meet I presently set forth.
THE MERCHANT OF VENICE

ACT V, SC. I.

Bass. Go, Gratiano; run and overtake him; Give him the ring, and bring him, if thou canst, Unto Antonio's house. Away! make haste.

[Exit Gratiano.

Come, you and I will thither presently, 456 And in the morning early we both Fly toward Belmont. Come, Antonio. [Exeunt.

SCENE II.—The Same. A Street.

Enter Portia and Nerissa.

Por. Inquire the Jew's house out, give him this deed, And let him sign it. We'll away to-night, And be a day before our husbands' home: This deed will be well welcome to Lorenzo. 4

Enter Gratiano.

Gra. Fair sir, you are well o'erta'en. My Lord Bassanio upon more advice Hath sent you here this ring, and doth entreat Your company at dinner.

Por. That cannot be: 8 His ring I do accept most thankfully; And so, I pray you, tell him: furthermore, I pray you, show my youth old Shylock's house.

Gra. That will I do.

Ner. Sir, I would speak with you. [Aside to Portia.] I'll see if I can get my husband's ring, Which I did make him swear to keep for ever.

Por. Thou mayst, I warrant. We shall have old swearing That they did give the rings away to men; 16 But we'll outface them, and outwear them too. Away! make haste: thou know'st where I will tarry.

Ner. Come, good sir, will you show me to this house? [Exeunt.

ACT V.

SCENE I.—Belmont. The Avenue to Portia's House.

Enter Lorenzo and Jessica.

Lor. The moon shines bright: in such a night as this, When the sweet wind did gently kiss the trees And they did make no noise, in such a night Troilus methinks mounted the Trojan walls, And sigh'd his soul toward the Grecian tents, Where Cressid lay that night.

Jes. In such a night Did Thisbe fearfully o'ertrip the dew, And saw the lion's shadow ere himself, And ran dismay'd away. 8

Lor. In such a night

Stood Dido with a willow in her hand Upon the wild sea-banks, and waft her love To come again to Carthage.

Jes. In such a night 12 Medea gather'd the enchanted herbs That did renew old Æson.

Lor. In such a night Did Jessica steal from the wealthy Jew, And with an unthrift love did run from Venice, As far as Belmont.

Jes. In such a night 17 Did young Lorenzo swear he lov'd her well, Stealing her soul with many vows of faith, And ne'er a true one.

Lor. In such a night 20 Did pretty Jessica, like a little shrew, Slander her love, and he forgave it her. 

Jes. I would out-night you, did no body come; But, hark! I hear the footing of a man. 24

Enter Stephano.

Lor. Who comes so fast in silence of the night? Steph. A friend.

Lor. A friend! what friend? your name, I pray you, friend.

Steph. Stephano is my name; and I bring word My mistress will before the break of day 29 Be here at Belmont: she doth stray about By holy crosses, where she kneels and prays For happy wedlock hours.

Lor. Who comes with her? 32 Steph. None, but a holy hermit and her maid. I pray you, is my master yet return'd?

Lor. He is not, nor we have not heard from him. But go we in, I pray thee, Jessica, And ceremoniously let us prepare Some welcome for the mistress of the house.

Enter Launcelot.

Laun. Sola, sola! wo ha, ho! sola, sola! Lor. Who calls?

Laun. Sola! did you see Master Lorenzo?

Master Lorenzo! sola, sola!

Lor. Leave bollaining, man; here.

Laun. Sola! where? where?

Lor. Here.

Laun. Tell him there's a post come from my master, with his horn full of good news: my master will be here ere morning. [Exit.

Lor. Sweet soul, let's in, and there expect their coming. 49 And yet no matter; why should we go in? My friend Stephano, signify, I pray you, Within the house, your mistress is at hand; 52 And bring your music forth into the air.

[Exit Stephano.

How sweet the moonlight sleeps upon this bank!
Here will we sit, and let the sounds of music
Creep in our ears: soft stillness and the night
Become the touches of sweet harmony.
Sit, Jessica: look, how the floor of heaven
Is thick inlaid with patines of bright gold:
There’s not the smallest orb which thou behold’st
But in his motion like an angel sings,
Still quiring to the young-eyed cherubins;
Such harmony is in immortal souls;
But, whilst this muddy vesture of decay
Doth grossly close it in, we cannot hear it.

Enter Musicians.

Come, ho! and wake Diana with a hymn:
With sweetest touches pierce your mistress’ ear,
And draw her home where music. [Music.

Jes. I am never merry when I hear sweet music.

Lor. The reason is, your spirits are attentive:
For do but note a wild and wanton herd,
Or race of youthful and unhandled colts,
Fetching mad bounds, bellowing and neighing loud,
Which is the hot condition of their blood;
If they but hear perchance a trumpet sound,
Or any air of music touch their ears,
You shall perceive them make a mutual stand,
Their savage eyes turn’d to a modest gaze
By the sweet power of music: therefore the poet
Did feign that Orpheus drew trees, stones, and floods;
Since nought so stockish, hard, and full of rage,
But music for the time doth change his nature.
The man that hath no music in himself,
Nor is mov’d with concord of sweet sounds,
Is fit for treasons, stratagems, and spoils;
The motions of his spirit are dull as night,
And his affections dark as Erebus:
Let no such man be trusted. Mark the music.

Enter Portia and Nerissa, at a distance.

Por. That light which we see burning in my hall,
How far that little candle throws his beams!
So shines a good deed in a naughty world.

Ner. When the moon shine, we did not see
the candle.

Por. So doth the greater glory dim the less:
A substitute shines brightly as a king
Until a king be by, and then his state
Empty itself, as doth an inland brook
Into the main of waters. Music! hark!

Ner. It is your music, madam, of the house.

Por. Nothing is good, I see, without respect:
Methinks it sounds much sweeter than by day.

Ner. Silence bestows that virtue on it, madam.

Por. The crow doth sing as sweetly as the lark
When neither is attended, and I think

The nightingale, if she should sing by day,
When every goose is cackling, would be thought
No better a musician than the wren.
How many things by season season’d are
To their right praise and true perfection!
Peace, ho! the moon sleeps with Eumycon,
And would not be awak’d! [Music ceases.

Por. He knows me, as the blind man knows
the cuckoo,

Lor. That is the voice,

Or I am much deceiv’d, of Portia.

Por. We have been praying for our husbands’ welfare,
Which speed, we hope, the better for our words.
Are they return’d?

Lor. Madam, they are not yet;

But there is come a messenger before,
To signify their coming.

Por. Go in, Nerissa:
Give order to my servants that they take
No note at all of our being absent hence;
Nor you, Lorenzo; Jessica, nor you.

Lor. Your husband is at hand; I hear his trumpet:

We are no tell-tales, madam; fear you not.

Por. This night methinks is but the daylight sick;
It looks a little paler: ’tis a day,
Such as the day is when the sun is hid.

Enter Bassanio, Antonio, Gratiano, and their Followers.

Bass. We should hold day with the Antipodes,
If you would walk in absence of the sun.

Por. Let me give light, but let me not be light;
For a light wife doth make a heavy husband,
And never be Bassanio so for me:
But God sort all! You are welcome home, my lord.

Bass. I thank you, madam. Give welcome to
my friend:

This is the man, this is Antonio,
To whom I am so infinitely bound.
Por. You should in all sense be much bind
him,

For, as I hear, he was much bound for you.

Por. No more than I am well acquit of.
Por. Sir, you are very welcome to our house:
It must appear in other ways than words,
Therefore I scant this breathing courtesy.

Gra. [To Nerissa.] By yonder moon I swear
you do me wrong;

In faith, I gave it to the judge’s clerk:
Would he were gelt that had it, for my part.
Since you do take it, love, so much at heart.
Por. A quarrel, ho, already! what's the matter?
Gra. About a hoop of gold, a palty ring
That she did give me, whose poesy was
For all the world like cutlers' poetry
Upon a knife, 'Love me, and leave me not.'
Ner. What talk you of the posy, or the value?
You swore to me, when I did give it you,
That you would keep it till your hour of death,
And that it should lie with you in your grave:
Though not for me, yet for your vehement oaths,
You should have been respective and have kept it.
Gave it a judge's clerk! no, God's my judge,
The clerk will ne'er wear hair on his face that had it.
Gra. He will, an he live to be a man.
Ner. Ay, if a woman live to be a man.
Gra. Now, by this hand, I gave it to a youth,
A kind of boy, a little scrubbed boy,
No higher than thyself, the judge's clerk.
A prating boy, that begg'd it as a fee:
I could not for my heart deny it him.
Por. You were to blame,—I must be plain
with you,
To part so silently with your wife's first gift;
A thing stuck on with oaths upon your finger,
And riveted so with faith unto your flesh.
I gave my love a ring and made him swear
Never to part with it; and here he stands,
I dare be sworn for him he would not leave it
Nor pluck it from his finger for the wealth
That the world masters. Now, in faith, Gratiano,
You give your wife too unkind a cause of grief:
An 'twere to me, I should be mad at it.
Bass. [Aside.] Why, I were best to cut my left hand off,
And swear I lost the ring defending it.
Gra. My Lord Bassanio gave his ring away
Unto the judge that begg'd it, and indeed
Deserv'd it too; and then the boy, his clerk,
That took some pains in writing, he begg'd mine;
And neither man nor master take aught
But the two rings.
Por. What ring gave you, my lord?
Not that, I hope, that you receiv'd of me.
Bass. If I could add a lie unto a fault,
I would deny it; but you see my finger
Hath not the ring upon it; it is gone.
Por. Even so void is your false heart of truth.
By heaven, I will ne'er come in your bed
Until I see the ring.
Ner. Nor I in yours,
Till I again see mine.
Bass. Sweet Portia,
If you did know to whom I gave the ring,
If you did know for whom I gave the ring,
And would conceive for what I gave the ring,
And how unwillingly I left the ring,
When naught would be accepted but the ring,
You would abate the strength of your displeasure.
Por. If you had known the virtue of the ring,
Or half her worthiness that gave the ring,
Or your own honour to contain the ring,
You would not then have parted with the ring.
What man is there so much unreasonable,
If you had pleas'd to have defended it
With any terms of zeal, wanted the modesty
To urge the thing held as a ceremony?
Nerissa teaches me what to believe:
I'll die for't but some woman had the ring.
Bass. No, by my honour, madam, by my soul,
No woman had it; but a civil doctor,
Which did refuse three thousand ducats of me,
And begg'd the ring, the which I did deny him,
And suffer'd him to go displeas'd away;
Even he that did uphold the very life
Of my dear friend. What should I say, sweet lady?
I was enforc'd to send it after him;
I was beset with shame and courtesy;
My honour would not let ingratitude
So much besmear it. Pardon me, good lady,
For, by these blessed candles of the night,
Had you been there, I think you would have
begg'd
The ring of me to give the worthy doctor.
Por. Let not that doctor e'er come near my house.
Since he hath got the jewel that I lov'd,
And that which you did swear to keep for me,
I will become as liberal as you;
I'll not deny him anything I have;
No, not my body, nor my husband's bed.
Know him I shall, I am well sure of it:
Iam not a night from home; watch me like Argus:
If you do not, if I be left alone,
Now by mine honour, which is yet mine own,
I'll have that doctor for my bedfellow.
Ner. And I his clerk; therefore be well advis'd
How you do leave me to mine own protection.
Gra. Well, do you so: let me not take him, then;
For if I do, I'll mar the young clerk's pen.
Ant. I am the unhappy subject of these quarrels.
Por. Sir, grieve not you; you are welcome notwithstanding.
Bass. Portia, forgive me this enforced wrong;
And in the hearing of these many friends,
I swear to thee, even by thine own fair eyes,
Wherein I see myself,—
Por. Mark you but that!
In both my eyes he doubly sees himself;
In each eye, one: swear by your double self,
And there's an oath of credit.
Bass. Nay, but hear me:
Pardon this fault, and by my soul I swear
I never more will break an oath with thee. 248
     Ant. I once did lend my body for his wealth,
Which, but for him that had your husband's ring,
Had quite miscarried: I dare be bound again,
My soul upon the forfeit, that your lord 252
Will never more break faith advisedly.
     Por. Then you shall be his surety. Give him this,
And bid him keep it better than the other.
     Ant. Here, Lord Bassanio; swear to keep this ring. 256
     Bass. By heaven! it is the same I gave the doctor!
     Por. I had it of him: pardon me, Bassanio,
For, by this ring, the doctor lay with me. 259
     Ner. And pardon me, my gentle Gratiano;
For that same scrubbed boy, the doctor's clerk,
In lieu of this last night did lie with me.
     Gra. Why, this is like the mending of highways.
In summer, where the ways are fair enough. 264
What! are we cuckolds ere we have deserved it?
     Por. Speak not so grossly. You are all amaz'd:
Here is a letter; read it at your leisure;
It comes from Padua, from Bellario: 268
There you shall find that Portia was the doctor,
Nerissa, there, her clerk: Lorenzo here
Shall witness I set forth as soon as you
And even but now return'd; I have not yet 272
Enter'd my house. Antonio, you are welcome;
And I have better news in store for you
Than you expect: unseal this letter soon;
There you shall find three of your argosies 276
Are richly come to harbour suddenly.
You shall not know by what strange accident
I chanced on this letter.
     Ant. I am dumb.
     Bass. Were you the doctor and I knew you not? 280
     Gra. Were you the clerk that is to make me cuckold?
     Ner. Ay; but the clerk that never means to do it,
Unless he live until he be a man.
     Bass. Sweet doctor, you shall be my bedfellow:
When I am absent, then, lie with my wife. 285
     Ant. Sweet lady, you have given me life and living;
For here I read for certain that my ships
Are safely come to road.
     Por. How now, Lorenzo! 288
My clerk hath some good comforts too for you.
     Ner. Ay, and I'll give them him without a fee.
There do I give to you and Jessica,
From the rich Jew, a special deed of gift, 292
After his death, of all he dies possess'd of.
     Lor. Fair ladies, you drop manna in the way
Of starved people.
     Por. It is almost morning,
And yet I am sure you are not satisfied 296
Of these events at full. Let us go in;
And charge us there upon interrogatories,
And we will answer all things faithfully.
     Gra. Let it be so: the first interrogatory 300
That my Nerissa shall be sworn on is,
Who'till the next night she had rather stay,
Or go to bed now, being two hours to day:
But were the day come, I should wish it dark,
That I were couching with the doctor's clerk.
Well, while I live I'll fear no other thing 306
So sore as keeping safe Nerissa's ring. [Exeunt.
DUKE, living in exile.
FREDERICK, his Brother, Usurper of his Dominions.
AMENOS, Lords attending upon the banished Duke.
JACQUES, Duke.
LE BEAU, a Courtier, attending upon Frederick.
CHARLES, a Wrestler.
OLIVER,
JACQUES,
Sons of Sir Rowland de Boys.
ORLANDO,
ADAM,
Servants to Oliver.
DENNIS,
TOUCHSTONE, a Clown.

SIR OLIVER MACKET, a Vicar.
CORIN, Shepherds.
SILVIOUS,
WILLIAM, a Country Fellow, in love with Audrey.
A person representing Hymen.

ROBILIS, Daughter to the banished Duke.
CELIA, Daughter to Frederick.
PHEBE, a Shepherdess.
AUDREY, a Country Wench.
Lords, Pages, Foresters, and Attendants.

SCENE.—First, OLIVER’s Orchard near his House; afterwards, in the Usurper’s Court, and in the Forest of Arden.

ACT I.

SCENE I.—An Orchard near OLIVER’s House.

Enter ORLANDO AND ADAM.

Orl. As I remember, Adam, it was upon this fashion bequeathed me by will but poor a thousand crowns, and, as thou sayest, charged my brother on his blessing, to breed me well: and there begins my sadness. My brother Jaques he keeps at school, and report speaks goldenly of his profit: for my part, he keeps me rustically at home, or, to speak more properly, stays me here at home unkept; for call you that keeping for a gentleman of my birth, that differs not from the stalling of an ox? His horses are bred better; for, besides that they are fair with their feeding, they are taught their manage, and to that end riders dearly hired: but I, his brother, gain nothing under him but growth, for which his animals on his dunghills are as much bound to him as I. Besides this nothing that he so plentifully gives me, the something that nature gave me, his countenance seems to take from me: he lets me feed with his hinds, bars me the place of a brother, and, as much as in him lies, mines my gentility with my education. This is it, Adam, that grieves me; and the spirit of my father, which I think is within me, begins to mutiny against this servitude. I will no longer endure it, though yet I know no wise remedy how to avoid it.

Adam. Yonder comes my master, your brother.

Orl. Go apart, Adam, and thou shalt hear how he will shake me up.

Enter OLIVER.

Oli. Now, sir! what make you here? 31
Oli. What mar you then, sir?
Oli. Marry, sir, I am helping you to mar that which God made, a poor unworthy brother of yours, with idleness. 37
Oli. Marry, sir, be better employed, and be naught awhile.

Orl. Shall I keep your hogs, and eat husks with them? What prodigal portion have I spent, that I should come to such penury?

Oli. Know you where you are, sir?
Oli. O! sir, very well: here in your orchard.
Oli. Know you before whom, sir? 45
Oli. Ay, better than he I am before knows me. I know you are my eldest brother; and, in the gentle condition of blood, you should so know me. The courtesy of nations allows you my better, in that you are the first-born; but the same tradition takes not away my blood, were there twenty brothers betwixt us. I have as much of my father in me as you; albeit, I confess, your coming before me is nearer to his reverence.

Oli. What, boy! 56
Oli. Come, come, elder brother, you are too young in this.
Oli. Wilt thou lay hands on me, villain? 59

Orl. I am no villain; I am the youngest son of Sir Rowland de Boys; he was my father, and he is thrice a villain that says such a father begot villains. Wert thou not my brother, I would not take this hand from thy throat till this other had pulled out thy tongue for saying so: thou hast railed on thyself. 66

Adam. [Coming forward.] Sweet masters, be patient: for your father's remembrance, be at accord.

Oli. Let me go, I say.

Orl. I will not, till I please: you shall hear me. My father charged you in his will to give me good education: you have trained me like a peasant, obscuring and hidng from me all gentleman-like qualities. The spirit of my father grows strong in me, and I will no longer endure it; therefore allow me such exercises as may become a gentleman, or give me the poor allottery my father left me by testament; with that I will go buy my fortunes.

Oli. And what wilt thou do? beg, when that is spent? Well, sir, get you in: I will not long be troubled with you; you shall have some part of your will: I pray you, leave me.

Orl. I will no further offend you than becomes me for my good.

Oli. Get you with him, you old dog.

Adam. Is 'old dog' my reward? Most true, I have lost my teeth in your service. God be with my old master! he would not have spoke such a word. [Execut ORLANDO and ADAM.

Oli. Is it even so? begin you to grow upon me? I will physic your rankness, and yet give no thousand crowns neither. Holla, Dennis!

Enter DENNIS.

Den. Calls your worship?

Oli. Was not Charles the duke's wrestler here to speak with me?

Den. So please you, he is here at the door, and importunes access to you.

Oli. Call him in. [Exit DENNIS.] 'Twill be a good way; and to-morrow the wrestling is.

Enter CHARLES.

Cha. Good morrow to your worship.

Oli. Good Monsieur Charles, what's the new news at the new court?

Cha. There's no news at the court, sir, but the old news: that is, the old duke is banished by his younger brother the new duke; and three or four loving lords have put themselves into voluntary exile with him, whose lands and revenues enrich the new duke; therefore he gives them good leave to wander.

Oli. Can you tell if Rosalind, the duke's daughter, be banished with her father?

Cha. O, no; for the duke's daughter, her cousin, so loves her,—being ever from their cradles bred together,—that she would have followed her exile, or have died to stay behind her. She is at the court, and no less beloved of her uncle than his own daughter; and never two ladies loved as they do.

Oli. Where will the old duke live?

Cha. They say he is already in the forest of Arden, and a many merry men with him; and there they live like the old Robin Hood of England. They say many young gentlemen flock to him every day, and fleet the time carelessly, as they did in the golden world.

Oli. What, you wrestle to-morrow before the new duke?

Cha. Marry, do I, sir; and I came to acquaint you with a matter. I am given, sir, secretly to understand that your younger brother Orlando hath a disposition to come in disguised against me to try a fall. To-morrow, sir, I wrestle for my credit, and he that escapes me without some broken limb shall acquit him well. Your brother is but young and tender; and, for your love, I would be loath to foil him as I must, for my own honour, if he come in: therefore, out of my love to you, I came hither to acquaint you withal, that either you might stay him from his intendment, or brook such disgrace well as he shall run into, in that it is a thing of his own search and altogether against my will.

Oli. Charles, I thank thee for thy love to me, which thou shalt find I will most kindly requite. I had myself notice of my brother's purpose herein, and have by underhand means laboured to dissuade him from it, but he is resolute. I'll tell thee, Charles, it is the stubborndest young fellow of France; full of ambition, an envious emulator of every man's good parts, a secret and villainous contriver against me his natural brother: therefore use thy discretion. I had as lief thou didst break his neck as his finger. And thouwert best look to't; for if thou dost him any slight disgrace, or if he do not mightily grace himself on thee, he will practise against thee by poison, entrap thee by some treacherous device, and never leave thee till he hath ta'en thy life by some indirect means or other; for, I assure thee,—and almost with tears I speak it,—there is not one so young and so villainous this day living. I speak but brotherly of him; but should I anatomize him to thee as he is, I must blush and weep, and thou must look pale and wonder.

Cha. I am heartily glad I came hither to you.
If he come to-morrow, I'll give him his payment: if ever he go alone again, I'll never wrestle for prize more; and so God keep your worship! 

[Exit.

Oli. Farewell, good Charles. Now will I stir this gamester. I hope I shall see an end of him; for my soul, yet I know not why, hates nothing more than he. Yet he's gentle, never schooled and yet learned, full of noble device, of all sorts enchantingly beloved, and, indeed so much in the heart of the world, and especially of my own people, who best know him, that I am altogether misprised. But it shall not be so long; this wrestler shall clear all: nothing remains but that I kindle the boy thither, which now I'll go about.

SCENE II.—A Lawn before the Duke's Palace.

Enter ROSALIND and Celia.

Cel. I pray thee, Rosalind, sweet my coz, be merry.

Ros. Dear Celia, I show more mirth than I am mistress of, and would you yet I were merrier? Unless you could teach me to forget a banished father, you must not learn me how to remember any extraordinary pleasure.

Cel. Herein I see thou lov'est me not with the full weight that I love thee. If my uncle, thy banished father, had banished thee unce, the duke my father, so thou hadst been still with me, I could have taught my love to take thy father for mine: so wouldst thou, if the truth of thy love to me were so righteously tempered as mine is to thee.

Ros. Well, I will forget the condition of my estate, to rejoice in yours.

Cel. You know my father hath no child but I, nor none is like to have; and, truly, when he dies, thou shalt be his heir: for what he hath taken away from thy father perforce, I will render thee again in afection; by mine honour, I will; and when I break that oath, let me turn monster. Therefore, my sweet Rose, my dear Rose, be merry.

Ros. From henceforth I will, coz, and devise sports. Let me see; what think you of falling in love?

Cel. Marry, I prithee, do, to make sport withal: but love no man in good earnest; nor no further in sport neither, than with safety of a pure blush thou mayst in honour come off again.

Ros. What shall be our sport then?

Cel. Let us sit and mock the good housewife Fortune from her wheel, that her gifts may henceforth be bestowed equally.

Ros. I would we could do so, for her benefits are mightily misplaced, and the bountiful blind woman doth most mistake in her gifts to women.

Cel. 'Tis true; for those that she makes fair she scarce makes honest, and those that she makes honest she makes very ill-favoured. 43 Ros. Nay, now thou goest from Fortune's office to Nature's: Fortune reigns in gifts of the world, not in the lineaments of Nature.

Enter Touchstone.

Cel. No? when Nature hath made a fair creature, may she not by Fortune fall into the fire? Though Nature hath given us wit to flout at Fortune, hath not Fortune sent in this fool to cut off the argument? 51 Ros. Indeed, there is Fortune too hard for Nature, when Fortune makes Nature's natural the cutter-off of Nature's wit.

Cel. Peradventure this is not Fortune's work neither, but Nature's; who, perceiving our natural wits too dull to reason of such goddesses, hath sent this natural for our whetstone: for always the dulness of the fool is the whetstone of the wits. How now, wit! whither wander you?

Touch. Mistress, you must come away to your father.

Cel. Were you made the messenger?

Touch. No, by mine honour; but I was bid to come for you.

Ros. Where learned you that oath, fool?

Touch. Of a certain knight that swore by his honour they were good pancakes, and swore by his honour the mustard was naught: now, I'll stand to it, the pancakes were naught and the mustard was good, and yet was not the knight forsworn.

Cel. How prove you that, in the great heap of your knowledge?

Ros. Ay, marry: now unmuzzle your wisdom.

Touch. Stand you both forth now: stroke your chins, and swear by your beards that I am a knave.

Cel. By our beards, if we had them, thou art.

Touch. By my knavery, if I had it, then I were; but if you swear by that that is not, you are not forsworn: no more was this knight, swearing by his honour, for he never had any; or if he had, he had sworn it away before ever he saw those pancakes or that mustard.

Cel. Prithee, who is't that thou meanest?

Touch. One that old Frederick, your father, loves.

Cel. My father's love is enough to honour him. Enough! speak no more of him; you'll be whipped for taxation one of these days.
it is the first time that ever I heard breaking of
ribs was sport for ladies. 148

Cel. Or I, I promise thee.

Ros. But is there any else longs to feel this
broken music in his sides? is there yet another
dotes upon rib-breaking? Shall we see this
wrestling, cousin? 153

Le Beau. You must, if you stay here; for
here is the place appointed for the wrestling,
and they are ready to perform it. 156

Cel. Yonder, sure, they are coming: let us
now stay and see it.

Flourish. Enter DUKE FREDERICK, Lords,
ORLANDO, CHARLES, and Attendants.

Duke F. Come on: since the youth will not
be entreated, his own peril on his forward-
ness. 161

Ros. Is yonder the man?

Le Beau. Even he, madam.

Cel. Alas! he is too young: yet he looks
successfully. 165

Duke F. How now, daughter and cousin! are
you crept hither to see the wrestling?

Ros. Ay, my liege, so please you give us
leave. 169

Duke F. You will take little delight in it,
I can tell you, there is such odds in the man:
in pity of the challenger's youth I would fain
dissuade him, but he will not be entreated.
Speak to him, ladies; see if you can move him.

Cel. Call him hither, good Monsieur le Beau.

Duke F. Do so: I'll not be by. 176

[DUKE goes apart.

Le Beau. Monsieur the challenger, the princes
call for you.

Orl. I attend them with all respect and duty.

Ros. Young man, have you challenged Charles
the wrestler? 181

Orl. No, fair princess; he is the general
challenger: I come but in, as others do, to try
with him the strength of my youth. 184

Cel. Young gentleman, your spirits are too
bold for your years. You have seen cruel proof
of this man's strength: if you saw yourself with
your eyes or knew yourself with your judgment,
the fear of your adventure would counsel you to
a more equal enterprise. We pray you, for your
own sake, to embrace your own safety and give
over this attempt. 192

Ros. Do, young sir: your reputation shall not
therefore be misprised. We will make it our
suit to the duke that the wrestling might not go
forward. 196

Orl. I beseech you, punish me not with your
hard thoughts, wherein I confess me much
guilty, to deny so fair and excellent ladies any-
thing. But let your fair eyes and gentle wishes

\[\text{AS YOU LIKE IT} \quad \text{Act I, Sc. II.}\]

His youngest son; and would not change that
calling.

\textbf{Ros.} My father lov'd Sir Rowland as his soul,

And all the world was of my father's mind: 253

Had I before known this young man his son,

I should have given him tears unto entreaties,

\textbf{Cel.} Gentle cousin, 256

Let us go thank him and encourage him:

My father's rough and envious disposition

Sticks me at heart. Sir, you have well deserv'd:

If you do keep your promises in love 260

But justly, as you have exceeded all promise,

Your mistress shall be happy.

\textbf{Ros.} Gentleman,

\textit{[Giving him a chain from her neck.}

Wear this for me, one out of suits with fortune,

That could give more, but that her hand lacks

\textbf{Shall we go, coz?}

\textbf{Cel.} Ay. Fare you well, fair gentleman.

\textbf{Orl.} Can I not say, I thank you? My better

\text{[CHARLES and ORLANDO wrestle.}

\textbf{Ros.} O excellent young man!

\textbf{Cel.} If I had a thunderbolt in mine eye, I can
tell who should down.

\textbf{[CHARLES is thrown. Shout.}

\textbf{Duke F.} No more, no more.

\textbf{Orl.} Yes, I beseech your Grace: I am not yet

well breathed.

\textbf{Duke F.} How dost thou, Charles?

\textbf{Le Beau.} He cannot speak, my lord.

\textbf{Duke F.} Bear him away. What is thy name,
young man? 236

\textbf{Orl.} Orlando, my liege; the youngest son of

Sir Rowland de Boys.

\textbf{Duke F.} I would thou hadst been son to

some man else:

The world esteem'd thy father honourable,

But I did find him still mine enemy:

Thou shouldst have better pleas'd me with this
deed,

Hadst thou descended from another house.

But fare thee well; thou art a gallant youth:

\textbf{[Exeunt DUKE FREDERICK, TRAIN, and

\textbf{Le Beau.}

\textbf{Cel.} Were I my father, coz, would I do this?

\textbf{Orl.} I am more proud to be Sir Rowland's

\textbf{son,}

\textbf{[Exeunt ROSALIND and CELIA.}

\textbf{Le Beau.} Good sir, I do in friendship counsel

\text{you}

To leave this place. Albeit you have deserv'd

High commendation, true applause and love,

Yet such is now the duke's condition 281

That he misconstrues all that you have done.

The duke is humorous: what he is indeed,

More suits you to conceive than I to speak of.

\textbf{Orl.} I thank you, sir; and pray you, tell me

this;

\textbf{Le Beau.} Neither his daughter, if we judge

\text{by manners;}

\textbf{288}
ACT I, Sc. II.

But yet, indeed the smaller is his daughter: The other is daughter to the banish’d duke, And here detain’d by her usurping uncle, To keep his daughter company; whose loves are dearer than the natural bond of sisters. But I can tell you that of late this duke Hath ta’en displeasure ’gainst his gentle niece, Grounded upon no other argument. But that the people praise her for her virtues, And pity her for her good father’s sake; And, on my life, his malice ’gainst the lady Will suddenly break forth. Sir, fare you well: Hereafter, in a better world than this, I shall desire more love and knowledge of you.

Orl. I rest much bounden to you: fare you well. [Exit Le Beau.

Thus must I from the smoke into the smoother; From tyrant duke unto a tyrant brother. But heavenly Rosalind! [Exit.

SCENE III.—A Room in the Palace.

Enter Celia and Rosalind.

Cel. Why, cousin! why, Rosalind! Cupid have mercy! Not a word?

Ros. Not one to throw at a dog.

Cel. No, thy words are too precious to be cast away upon curs; throw some of them at me; come, lame me with reasons.

Ros. Then there were two cousins laid up; when the one should be lamed with reasons and the other mad without any.

Cel. But is all this for your father?

Ros. No, some of it is for my child’s father: O, how full of briers is this working-day world! Cel. They are but burrs, cousin, thrown upon thee in holiday foolery: if we walk not in the trodden paths, our very petticoats will catch them.

Ros. I could shake them off my coat: these burrs are in my heart.

Cel. Hem them away.

Ros. I would try, if I could cry ’hem,’ and have him.

Cel. Come, come; wrestle with thy affections.

Ros. O! they take the part of a better wrestler than myself!

Cel. O, a good wish upon you! you will try in time, in despite of a fall. But, turning these jests out of service, let us talk in good earnest: is it possible, on such a sudden, you should fall into so strong a liking with old Sir Rowland’s youngest son?

Ros. The duke my father loved his father dearly.

Cel. Doth it therefore ensue that you should

love his son dearly? By this kind of chase, I should hate him, for my father hated his father dearly; yet I hate not Orlando.

Ros. No, faith, hate him not, for my sake.

Cel. Why should I not? doth he not deserve well?

Ros. Let me love him for that; and do you love him, because I do. Look, here comes the duke.

Cel. With his eye full of anger.

Enter Duke Frederick, with Lords.

Duke F. Mistress, dispatch you with your safest haste; And get you from our court.

Ros. Me, uncle?

Duke F. You, cousin: Within these ten days if that thou be’st found So near our public court as twenty miles, Thou diest for it.

Ros. I do beseech your Grace, Let me the knowledge of my fault bear with me. If with myself I hold intelligence, Or have acquaintance with mine own desires, If that I do not dream or be not frantic,— As I do trust I am not,—then, dear uncle, Never so much as in a thought unborn Did I offend your highness.

Duke F. Thus do all traitors: If their purgation did consist in words, They are as innocent as grace itself: Let it suffice thee that I trust thee not.

Ros. Yet your mistrust cannot make me a traitor: Tell me whereon the likelihood depends.

Duke F. Thou art thy father’s daughter; there’s enough.

Ros. So was I when your highness took his dukedom; So was I when your highness banish’d him. Treason is not inherited, my lord;

Or, if we did derive it from our friends, What’s that to me? my father was no traitor: Then, good my liege, mistake me not so much To think my poverty is treacherous.

Cel. Dear sovereign, hear me speak.

Duke F. Ay, Celia; we stay’d her for your sake;

Else had she with her father rang’d along.

Cel. I did not then entreat to have her stay: It was your pleasure and your own remorse. I was too young that time to value her; But now I know her: if she be a traitor, Why so am I; we still have slept together, Rose at an instant, learn’d, play’d, eat together; And whereas’er we went, like Juno’s swans, Still we went coupled and inseparable.
Duke F. She is too subtle for thee; and her smoothness, Her very silence and her patience, Speak to the people, and they pity her. Thou art a fool: she robs thee of thy name; And thou wilt show more bright and seem more virtuous When she is gone. Then open not thy lips: Firm and irrevocable is my doom Which I have pass'd upon her; she is banish'd. Cel. Pronounce that sentence then, on me, my liege:

I cannot live out of her company. Duke F. You are a fool. You, niece, provide yourself: If you outstay the time, upon mine honour, And in the greatness of my word, you die. [Exeunt Duke Frederick and Lords. Cel. O my poor Rosalind! whither wilt thou go?

Wilt thou change fathers? I will give thee mine. I charge thee, be not thou more griev'd than I am. Ros. I have more cause. Cel. Thou hast not, cousin; Prithée, be cheerful; know'st thou not, the duke Hath banish'd me, his daughter? Ros. That he hath not. Cel. No, hath not? Rosalind lacks then the love Which teacheth thee that thou and I am one: Shall we be sunder'd? shall we part, sweet girl?

No: let my father seek another heir. Therefore devise with me how we may fly, Whither to go, and what to bear with us: And do not seek to take your change upon you, To bear your griefs yourself and leave me out; For, by this heaven, now at our sorrows pale, Say what thou canst, I'll go along with thee. Ros. Why, whither shall we go? Cel. To seek my uncle in the forest of Arden. Ros. Alas, what danger will it be to us, Maids as we are, to travel forth so far! Beauty provoketh thieves sooner than gold. Cel. I'll put myself in poor and mean attire, And with a kind of umber smirch my face; The like do you: so shall we pass along And never stir assailants.

Ros. Were it not better, Because that I am more than common tall, That I did suit me all points like a man? A gallant curtle-axe upon my thigh, A boar-spear in my hand; and,—in my heart Lie there what hidden woman's fear there will,— We'll have a swashing and a martial outside, As many other mannish cowards have That do outface it with their semblances.

Cel. What shall I call thee when thou art a man? Ros. I'll have no worse a name than Jove's own page, And therefore look you call me Ganymede. But what will you be call'd? Cel. Something that hath a reference to my state:

No longer Celia, but Aliena. Ros. But, cousin, what if we assay'd to steal The clownish fool out of your father's court? Would he not be a comfort to our travel? Cel. He'll go along o'er the wide world with me; Leave me alone to woo him. Let's away, And get our jewels and our wealth together, Devise the fittest time and safest way To hide us from pursuit that will be made After my flight. Now go we in content To liberty and not to banishment. [Exeunt.

ACT II.

SCENE I.—The Forest of Arden.

Enter Duke Senior, Amiens, and other Lords, like Foresters.

Duke S. Now, my co-mates and brothers in exile, Hath not old custom made this life more sweet Than that of painted pomp? Are not these woods More free from peril than the envious court? Here feel we but the penalty of Adam, The seasons' difference; as, the icy fang And curdling chiding of the winter's wind, Which, when it bites and blows upon my body, Even till I shriek with cold, I smile and say 'This is no flattery: these are counsellors That feelingly persuade me what I am.' Sweet are the uses of adversity, Which like the toad, ugly and venomous, Wears yet a precious jewel in his head; And this our life exempt from public haunt, Finds tongues in trees, books in the running brooks, Sermons in stones, and good in every thing. I would not change it.

Ami. Happy is your Grace, That can translate the stubbornness of fortune Into so quiet and so sweet a style. Duke S. Come, shall we go and kill us venison? And yet it irks me, the poor dappled fools, Being native burghers of this desert city, Should in their own confines with forked heads Have their round haunches gor'd.

First Lord. Indeed, my lord, The melancholy Jaques grieves at that;
And, in that kind, swears you do more usurp
Than doth your brother that hath banish’d you.
To-day my Lord of Amiens and myself
Did steal behind him as he lay along
Under an oak whose antique root peeps out
Upon the brook that brauls along this wood;
To the which place a poor sequester’d stag
That from the hunters’ aim had ta’en a hurt,
Did come to languish; and, indeed, my lord,
The wretched animal heav’d forth such groans
That their discharge did stretch his leathern coat
Almost to bursting, and the big round tears
Cours’d one another down his innocent nose
In piteous chase; and thus the hairy fool,
Much marked of the melancholy Jaques,
Stood on the extremest verge of the swift brook,
Augmenting it with tears.

Duke S. But what said Jaques?
Did he not moralize this spectacle?

First Lord. O, yes, into a thousand similes.

First, for his weeping into the needless stream;—
‘Poor deer,’ quoth he, ‘thou mak’st a testament
As worldlings do, giving thy sum of more.
To that which had too much:’ then, being there
alone,
Left and abandon’d of his velvet friends;
‘Tis right, quoth he; ‘thou doth part
The flux of company:’ anon, a careless herd,
Full of the pasture, jumps along by him
And never stays to greet him; ‘Ay,’ quoth
Jaques,
‘Sweep on, you fat and greedy citizens;
’Tis just the fashion; wherfore do you look
Upon that poor and broken bankrupt there?’
Thus most invectively he pierceth through
The body of the country, city, court,
Yea, and of this our life; swearing that we
Are mere usurpers, tyrants, and what’s worse,
To fright the animals and to kill them up
In their assign’d and native dwelling-place.

Duke S. And did you leave him in this contemplation?

Sec. Lord. We did, my lord, weeping and commenting
Upon the sobbing deer.

Duke S. Show me the place.
I love to cope him in these sullen fits,
For then he’s full of matter.

Sec. Lord. I’ll bring you to him straight.

[Exeunt.

SCENE II.—A Room in the Palace.

Enter Duke Frederick, Lords, and Attendants.
Duke F. Can it be possible that no man saw them?

It cannot be: some villains of my court
Are of consent and sufferance in this.

First Lord. I cannot hear of any that did see her.
The ladies, her attendants of her chamber,
Saw her a-bed; and, in the morning early
They found the bed untreasur’d of their mistress.

Sec. Lord. My lord, the roynish clown, at whom so oft
Your Grace was wont to laugh, is also missing.
Hisperia, the princess’ gentlewoman,
Confesses that she secretly o’erheard
Your daughter and her cousin much command
The parts and graces of the wrestler
That did but lately foil the sinewy Charles;
And she believes, wherever they are gone,
That youth is surely in their company.

Duke F. Send to his brother; fetch that gallant hither;
If he be absent, bring his brother to me;
I’ll make him find him. Do this suddenly,
And let not search and inquisition qualm
To bring again these foolish runaways. [Exeunt.

SCENE III.—Before Oliver’s House.

Enter Orlando and Adam, meeting.

Orl. Who’s there?
Adam. What! my young master? O my gentle master!
O my sweet master! O you memory
Of old Sir Rowland! why, what make you here?
Why are you virtuous? Why do people love you?
And wherefore are you gentle, strong, and valiant?
Why would you be so fond to overcome
The bony priser of the humorous duke?
Your praise is come too swiftly home before you.
Know you not, master, to some kind of men
Their graces serve them but as enemies?
No more do yours: your virtues, gentle master,
Are sanctified and holy traitors to you.

Orl. Why, what’s the matter?

Adam. O unhappy youth! Come not within these doors; within this roof
The enemy of all your graces lives.
Your brother,—no, no brother; yet the son,—
Yet not the son, I will not call him son

Orl. Hath heard your praises, and this night he means
To burn the lodging where you use to lie,
And you within it: if he fail of that,
He will have other means to cut you off.
I overheard him and his practices.
This is no place; this house is but a butchery; Abhor it, fear it, do not enter it. 28

Orl. Why, whither, Adam, wouldst thou have me go?
Adam. No matter whither, so you come not here.
Orl. What! wouldst thou have me go and beg my food?
Or with a base and boisterous sword enforce 32
A thievish living on the common road?
This I must do, or know not what to do:
Yet this I will not do, how I can;
I rather will subject me to the malice
Of a diverted blood and bloody brother.
Adam. But do not so. I have five hundred crowns,
The thrifty hire I sav’d under your father,
Which I did store to be my foster-nurse
When service should in my old limbs lie lame,
And unregarded age in corners thrown.
Take that; and He that doth the ravens feed,
Yea, providently caters for the sparrow, 44
Be comfort to my age! Here is the gold;
All this I give you. Let me be your servant;
Though I look old, yet I am strong and lusty;
For in my youth I never did apply
Hot and rebellious liquors in my blood;
Nor did not with unbashful forehead woo
The means of weakness and debility;
Therefore my age is as a lusty winter,
Frosty, but kindly. Let me go with you;
I’ll do the service of a younger man
In all your business and necessities.
Orl. O good old man! how well in thee appears
The constant service of the antique world, 57
When service sweat for duty, not for mead!
Thou art not for the fashion of these times,
Where none will sweat but for promotion, 60
And having that, do choke their service up
Even with the having; it is not so with thee.
But, poor old man, thou prun’st a rotten tree,
That cannot so much as a blossom yield,
In lieu of all thy pains and husbandry.
But come thy ways, we’ll go along together,
And ere we have thy youthful wages spent,
We’ll light upon some settled low content. 68
Adam. Master, go on, and I will follow thee
To the last gasp with truth and loyalty.
From seventeen years till now almost fourscore
Here lived I, but now live here no more. 72
At seventeen years many their fortunes seek;
But at fourscore it is too late a week:
Yet fortune cannot recompense me better
Than to die well and not my master’s debtor. 76

[Exeunt.]

Scene IV.—The Forest of Arden.
Enter Rosalind in boy’s clothes, Celia dressed like a shepherdess, and Touchstone.
Rosalind. O Jupiter! how weary are my spirits.
Touchstone. I care not for my spirits if my legs
were not weary.
Rosalind. I could find it in my heart to disgrace my man’s apparel and to cry like a woman; but I
must comfort the weaker vessel, as doublet and
hose ought to show itself courageous to petticoat; therefore, courage, good Aliena. 8
Celia. I pray you, bear with me: I cannot go
no further.
Touchstone. For my part, I had rather bear with
you than bear you; yet I should bear no cross if I
did bear you, for I think you have no money
in your purse. 14
Rosalind. Well, this is the forest of Arden.
Touchstone. Ay, now am I in Arden; the more
fool I: when I was at home, I was in a better
place: but travellers must be content.
Rosalind. Ay, be so, good Touchstone. Look you, 21
who comes here; a young man and an old in
solemn talk.

Enter Corin and Silvius.
Corin. That is the way to make her scorn you
still.
Silvius. O Corin, that thou knew’st how I do love
her!
Corin. I partly guess, for I have lov’d ere now.
Silvius. No, Corin; being old, thou canst not guess,
Though in thy youth thou wast as true a lover
As ever sigh’d upon a midnight pillow:
But if thy love were ever like to mine,— 28
As sure I think did never man love so,—
How many actions most ridiculous
Hast thou been drawn to by thy fantasy?
Corin. Into a thousand that I have forgotten.
Silvius. O! thou didst then ne’er love so heartily.
If thou rememberst not the slightest folly
That ever love did make thee run into,
Thou hast not lov’d: 36
Or if thou hast not sat as I do now,
Wearing thy hearer with thy mistress’ praise,
Thou hast not lov’d:
Or if thou hast not broke from company 40
Abruptly, as my passion now makes me,
Thou hast not lov’d. O Phebe, Phebe, Phebe!
[Exit.
Rosalind. Alas, poor shepherd! searching of thy
wound,
I have by hard adventure found mine own. 44
Touchstone. And I mine. I remember, when I was
in love I broke my sword upon a stone, and bid
him take that for coming a-night to Jane Smile;
and I remember the kissing of her father, and
the cow's dugs that her pretty chopped hands
had milked; and I remember the wooing of a
peascod instead of her, from whom I took two
cods, and giving her them again, said with weep-
tears, 'Wear these for my sake.' We that are
true lovers run into strange capers; but as all
is mortal in nature, as all nature in love mortal
in folly.

Ros. Thou speakest wiser than thou art ware
of.

Touch. Nay, I shall ne'er be ware of mine own
wit till I break my shins against it.

Ros. Jove! Jove! this shepherd's passion
Is much upon my fashion.

Touch. And mine; but it grows something
stale with me.

Col. I pray you, one of you question yond man,
If he for gold will give us any food:
I faint almost to death.

Touch. Holla, you clown!

Ros. Peace, fool; he's not thy kinsman.

Cor. Who calls?

Touch. Your betters, sir.

Cor. Else are they very wretched.

Ros. Peace, I say. Good even to you, friend.

Cor. And to you, gentle sir, and to you all.

Ros. I prithee, shepherd, if that love or gold
Can in this desert place buy entertainment,
Bring us where we may rest ourselves and feed.
Here's a young maid with travel much oppress'd,
And faints for succour.

Cor. Fair sir, I pity her,

And wish, for her sake more than for mine own,
My fortunes were more able to relieve her;
But I am shepherd to another man,
And do not shear the fleeces that I graze;

My master is of curdish disposition
And little recks to find the way to heaven
By doing deeds of hospitality.
Besides, his cote, his flocks, and bounds of feed
Are now on sale; and at our sheepepoet now,
By reason of his absence, there is nothing
That you will feed on; but what is, come see,
And in my voice most welcome shall you be.

Ros. What is he that shall buy his flock and
pasture?

Cor. That young swain that you saw here but
erewhile,
That little cares for buying anything.

Ros. I pray thee, if it stand with honesty,
Buy thou the cottage, pasture, and the flock,
And thou shalt have for it of us.

Col. And we will mend thy wages. I like this
place,
And willingly could waste my time in it.

Cor. Assuredly the thing is to be sold:

Go with me: if you like upon report
The soil, the profit, and this kind of life,
I will your very faithful feeder be,
And buy it with your gold right suddenly.

[Exeunt.

---

SCENE V.—Another Part of the Forest.

Enter AMIENS, JAMES, and Others.

SONG.

Ami. Under the greenwood tree
Who loves to lie with me,
And turn his merry note
Unto the sweet bird's throat.

Como hither, como hither, come hither:
Here shall he see
No enemy
But winter and rough weather.

Jaq. More, more, I prithee, more.

Ami. It will make you melancholy, Monsieur
Jaques.

Jaq. I thank it. More! I prithee, more. I
can suck melancholy out of a song as a weasel
sucks eggs. More! I prithee, more.

Ami. My voice is ragged; I know I cannot
please you.

Jaq. I do not desire you to please me; I do
desire you to sing. Come, more; another stanza:
call them stanzos?

Ami. What you will, Monsieur Jaques.

Jaq. Nay, I care not for their names; they
owe me nothing. Will you sing?

Ami. More at your request than to please
myself.

Jaq. Well then, if ever I thank any man, I'll thank
you: but that they call compliment is like the en-
counter of two dog-apes, and when a man thinks
me heartily, methinks I have given him a penny
and he renders me the beggarly thanks. Come,
sing; and you that will not, hold your tongues.

Ami. Well, I'll end the song. Sire, cover the
while; the duke will drink under this tree. He
hath been all this day to look you.

Jaq. And I have been all this day to avoid him.
He is too disputable for my company: I think of
as many matters as he, but I give heaven thanks,
and make no boast of them. Come, warble; come.

SONG

Ami. Who doth ambition shun, [All together here.

And loves to live I the sun,
Seeking the food he eats,
And pleas'd with what he gets.

Come hither, come hither, come hither:
Here shall he see
No enemy
But winter and rough weather.

Jaq. I'll give you a verse to this note, that I
made yesterday in despite of my invention.

Ami. And I'll sing it.
AS YOU LIKE IT

Act II, Sc. VII.

Jaq. Thus it goes:

If it do come to pass
That any man turn ass,
Leaving his wealth and ease,
A stubborn will to please,
Dudcrame, dudcrame, dudcrame:
Here shall he see
Gross fools as he,
An if he will come to me.

Ami. What's that 'dudcrame'?

Jaq. 'Tis a Greek invocation to call fools into a circle. I'll go sleep if I can; if I cannot, I'll rail against all the first-born of Egypt.

Ami. And I'll go seek the duke: his banquet is prepared. [Exeunt severally.

SCENE VI.—Another Part of the Forest.

Enter ORLANDO and ADAM.

Adam. Dear master, I can go no further: O! I die for food. Here lie I down, and measure out my grave. Farewell, kind master.

Orl. Why, how now, Adam! no greater heart in thee? Live a little; comfort a little; cheer thyself a little. If this uncouth forest yield anything savage, I will either be food for it, or bring it for food to thee. Thy conceit is nearer death than thy powers. For my sake be comfortable, hold death awhile at the arm's end, I will here be with thee presently, and if I bring thee not something to eat, I will give thee leave to die; but if thou diest before I come, thou art a mocker of my labour. Well said! thou lookest cheerily, and I'll be with thee quickly. Yet thou liest in the bleak air: come I will bear thee to some shelter, and thou shalt not die for lack of a dinner, if there live anything in this desert. Cheerly, good Adam. [Exeunt.

SCENE VII.—Another Part of the Forest.

A table set out. Enter DUKE Senior, AMIENS, Lords like Outlaws.

Duke S. I think he be transform'd into a beast,
For I can nowhere find him like a man.

First Lord. My lord, he is but even now gone hence:
Here was he merry, hearing of a song.

Duke S. If he, compact of jars, grow musical,
We shall have shortly discord in the spheres.
Go, seek him: tell him I would speak with him.

First Lord. He saves my labour by his own approach.

Enter JAQUES.

Duke S. Why, how now, monsieur! what a life is this,

That your poor friends must woo your company?
What, you look merrily!

Jaq. A fool, a fool! I met a fool i' the forest,
A motley fool; a miserable world!
As I do live by food, I met a fool;
Who laid him down and bask'd him in the sun,
And rail'd on Lady Fortune in good terms,
In good set terms, and yet a motley fool.

'Good morrow, fool,' quoth I. 'No, sir,' quoth he,
'Call me not fool till heaven hath sent me fortune.'
And then he drew a dial from his poke,
And, looking on it with lack-lustre eye,
Says very wisely, 'It is ten o'clock;
Thus may we see,' quoth he, 'how the world wags:
'Tis but an hour ago since it was nine,
And after one hour more 'twill be eleven;
And so, from hour to hour we ripe and ripe,
And then from hour to hour we rot and rot,
And thereby hangs a tale.' When I did hear
The motley fool thus moral on the time,
My lungs began to crow like chanticleer,
That fools should be so deep-contemplative,
And I did laugh sans intermission
An hour by his dial. O noble fool!
A worthy fool! Motley's the only wear.

Duke S. What fool is this?

Jaq. O worthy fool! One that hath been a courtier,
And says, if ladies be but young and fair,
They have the gift to know it; and in his brain,—
Which is as dry as the remainder biscuit
After a voyage,—he hath strange places cram'd
With observation, the which he vents
In mangled forms. O that I were a fool!
I am ambitious for a motley coat.

Duke S. Thou shalt have one.

Jaq. It is my only suit; provided that you weed your better judgments
Of all opinion that grows rank in them
That I am wise. I must have liberty
Withal, as large a charter as the wind,
To blow on whom I please; for so fools have:
And they that are most galled with my folly,
They most must laugh. And why, sir, must they so?
The 'why' is plain as way to parish church;
He that a fool doth very wisely hit
Doth very foolishly, although he smart,
Not to seem senseless of the bob; if not,
The wise man's folly is anatomiz'd
Even by the squandering glances of the fool.
Invest me in my motley; give me leave

259
To speak my mind, and I will through and through
Cleanse the foul body of th' infected world, 60
If they will patiently receive my medicine.

Duke S. Fie on thee! I can tell what thou wouldst do.

Jaq. What, for a counter, would I do, but good?

Duke S. Most mischievous foul sin, in chiding sin:
For thou thyself hast been a libertine,
As sensual as the brutish sting itself;
And all the embossed sores and headed evils,
That thou with licence of free foot hast caught,
Wouldst thou disgorge into the general world.

Jaq. Why, who cries out on pride,
That can therein tax any private party?
Doth it not flow as hugely as the sea,
Till that the weary very means do obey?
What woman in the city do I name,
When that I say the city-woman bears
The cost of princes on-unsorrowful shoulders? 76
Who can come in and say that I mean her,
When such a one as she such is her neighbour?
Or what is he of basest function,
That says his bravery is not on my cost,—80
Thinking that I mean him,—but therein suits
His folly to the mettle of my speech?
There then; how then? what then? Let me see wherein
My tongue hath wrong’d him: if it do him right,
Then he hath wrong’d himself; if he be free, 85
Why then, my taxing like a wild goose flies,
Unclaim’d of any man. But who comes here?

Enter Orlando, with his sword drawn.
Ori. Forbear, and eat no more.

Jaq. Why, I have eat none yet.

Ori. Nor shalt not, till necessity be serv’d. 89

Jaq. Of what kind should this cock come of?

Duke S. Art thou thus bolden’d, man, by thy distress,
Or else a rude despiser of good manners,
That in civility thou seem’st so empty?

Ori. You touch’d my vein at first: the thorny point
Of bare distress hath ta’en from me the show
Of smooth civility; yet I am inland bred
And know some nurture. But forbear, I say:
He dies that touches any of this fruit
Till I and my affairs are answered.

Jaq. An you will not be answered with reason,
I must die. 101

Duke S. What would you have? Your gentleness shall force
More than your force move us to gentleness.

Ori. I almost die for food; and let me have it.

Duke S. Sit down and feed, and welcome to our table.

Ori. Speak you so gently? Pardon me, I pray you:
I thought that all things had been savage here,
And therefore put I on the countenance
Of stern commandment. But whate’er you are
That in this desert inaccessible,
Under the shade of melancholy bouquets,
Lose and neglect the creeping hours of time; 112
If ever you have look’d on better days,
If ever been where bells have knoll’d to church,
If ever sat at any good man’s feast,
If ever from your eyelids wip’d a tear,
And know what ‘tis to pity, and be pitied,
Let gentleness my strong enforcement be:
In the which hope I blush, and hide my sword.

Duke S. True is it that we have seen better days,
And have with holy bell been knoll’d to church,
And sat at good men’s feasts, and wip’d our eyes
Of drops that sacred pity hath engender’d;
And therefore sit you down in gentleness
And take upon command what help we have
That to your wanting may be minister’d.

Ori. Then but forbear your food a little while,
While, like a doe, I go to find my fawn
And give it food. There is an old poor man,
Who after me hath many a weary step
Limp’d in pure love: till he be first suffic’d,
Oppress’d with two weak evils, age and hunger,
I will not touch a bit.

Duke S. Go find him out, and we will nothing waste till you return.

Ori. I thank ye; and be bless’d for your good comfort!

Duke S. Thou seest we are not all alone unhappy:
This wide and universal theatre
Presents more woful pageants than the scene
Wherein we play in.

Jaq. All the world’s a stage,
And all the men and women merely players:
They have their exits and their entrances;
And one man in his time plays many parts,
His acts being seven ages. At first the infant,
Mewling and puking in the nurse’s arms,
And then the whining school-boy, with his satchel,
And shining morning face, creeping like snail
Unwillingly to school. And then the lover,
Sighing like furnace, with a woful ballad
Made to his mistress’ eyebrow. Then a soldier,
Full of strange oaths, and bearded like the pard,
Jealous in honour, sudden and quick in quarrel,
Seeking the bubble reputation

Duke S. Sit down and feed, and welcome to our table.

Ori. Speak you so gently? Pardon me, I pray you:
I thought that all things had been savage here,
And therefore put I on the countenance
Of stern commandment. But whate’er you are
That in this desert inaccessible,
Under the shade of melancholy bouquets,
Lose and neglect the creeping hours of time; 112
If ever you have look’d on better days,
If ever been where bells have knoll’d to church,
If ever sat at any good man’s feast,
If ever from your eyelids wip’d a tear,
And know what ‘tis to pity, and be pitied,
Let gentleness my strong enforcement be:
In the which hope I blush, and hide my sword.

Duke S. True is it that we have seen better days,
And have with holy bell been knoll’d to church,
And sat at good men’s feasts, and wip’d our eyes
Of drops that sacred pity hath engender’d;
And therefore sit you down in gentleness
And take upon command what help we have
That to your wanting may be minister’d.

Ori. Then but forbear your food a little while,
While, like a doe, I go to find my fawn
And give it food. There is an old poor man,
Who after me hath many a weary step
Limp’d in pure love: till he be first suffic’d,
Oppress’d with two weak evils, age and hunger,
I will not touch a bit.

Duke S. Go find him out, and we will nothing waste till you return.

Ori. I thank ye; and be bless’d for your good comfort!

Duke S. Thou seest we are not all alone unhappy:
This wide and universal theatre
Presents more woful pageants than the scene
Wherein we play in.

Jaq. All the world’s a stage,
And all the men and women merely players:
They have their exits and their entrances;
And one man in his time plays many parts,
His acts being seven ages. At first the infant,
Mewling and puking in the nurse’s arms,
And then the whining school-boy, with his satchel,
And shining morning face, creeping like snail
Unwillingly to school. And then the lover,
Sighing like furnace, with a woful ballad
Made to his mistress’ eyebrow. Then a soldier,
Full of strange oaths, and bearded like the pard,
Jealous in honour, sudden and quick in quarrel,
Seeking the bubble reputation

Duke S. Sit down and feed, and welcome to our table.

Ori. Speak you so gently? Pardon me, I pray you:
I thought that all things had been savage here,
And therefore put I on the countenance
Of stern commandment. But whate’er you are
That in this desert inaccessible,
Under the shade of melancholy bouquets,
Lose and neglect the creeping hours of time; 112
If ever you have look’d on better days,
If ever been where bells have knoll’d to church,
If ever sat at any good man’s feast,
If ever from your eyelids wip’d a tear,
And know what ‘tis to pity, and be pitied,
Let gentleness my strong enforcement be:
In the which hope I blush, and hide my sword.

Duke S. True is it that we have seen better days,
And have with holy bell been knoll’d to church,
And sat at good men’s feasts, and wip’d our eyes
Of drops that sacred pity hath engender’d;
And therefore sit you down in gentleness
And take upon command what help we have
That to your wanting may be minister’d.

Ori. Then but forbear your food a little while,
While, like a doe, I go to find my fawn
And give it food. There is an old poor man,
Who after me hath many a weary step
Limp’d in pure love: till he be first suffic’d,
Oppress’d with two weak evils, age and hunger,
I will not touch a bit.

Duke S. Go find him out, and we will nothing waste till you return.

Ori. I thank ye; and be bless’d for your good comfort!

Duke S. Thou seest we are not all alone unhappy:
This wide and universal theatre
Presents more woful pageants than the scene
Wherein we play in.

Jaq. All the world’s a stage,
And all the men and women merely players:
They have their exits and their entrances;
And one man in his time plays many parts,
His acts being seven ages. At first the infant,
Mewling and puking in the nurse’s arms,
And then the whining school-boy, with his satchel,
And shining morning face, creeping like snail
Unwillingly to school. And then the lover,
Sighing like furnace, with a woful ballad
Made to his mistress’ eyebrow. Then a soldier,
Full of strange oaths, and bearded like the pard,
Jealous in honour, sudden and quick in quarrel,
Seeking the bubble reputation
Even in the cannon's mouth. And then the
justice,
In fair round belly with good capon lin'd,
With eyes severe, and beard of formal cut,
Full of wise saws and modern instances; 156
And so he plays his part. The sixth age shifts
Into the lean and slipper'd pantaloon,
With spectacles on nose and pouch on side,
His youthful hose well sav'd, a world too wide; 160
For his shrunk shank; and his big manly voice,
Turning again toward childish treble, pipes
And whistles in his sound. Last scene of all,
That ends this strange eventful history, 164
Is second childishness and mere oblivion,
Sans teeth, sans eyes, sans taste, sans everything.

Re-enter ORLANDO, with ADAM.

Duke S. Welcome. Set down your venerable
burden,
And let him feed.
Orl. I thank you most for him. 168
Adam. So had you need:
I scarce can speak to thank you for myself.

Duke S. Welcome; fall to: I will not trouble you
As yet, to question you about your fortunes. 172
Give us some music; and, good cousin, sing.

SONG.

Ami. Blow, blow, thou winter wind,
Thou art not so unkind
As man's ingratitude;
Thy tooth is not so keen,
Because thou art not seen,
Although thy breath be rude.
Heigh-ho! sing, heigh-ho! unto the green holly;
Most friendship is feigning, most loving mere folly.
Then heigh-ho! the holly!
This life is most jolly.
Freeze, freeze, thou bitter sky,
That dost not bite so nigh
As benefits forgot:
Though thou the waters warp,
Thy sting is not so sharp
As friend remember'd not.
Heigh-ho! sing, heigh-ho! unto the green holly;
Most friendship is feigning, most loving mere folly.
Then heigh-ho! the holly!
This life is most jolly.

Duke S. If that you were the good Sir Row-
land's son,
As you have whisper'd faithfully you were,
And as mine eye doth his effigies witness 196
Most truly limn'd and living in your face,
Be truly welcome hither: I am the duke
That lov'd your father: the residue of your
fortune,
Go to my cave and tell me. Good old man, 200
Thou art right welcome as thy master is.
Support him by the arm. Give me your hand,
And let me all your fortunes understand.

[Exeunt.]
much against my stomach. Hast any philosophy in thee, shepherd? 23

Cor. No more but that I know the more one
sickens the worse at ease he is; and that he that
wants money, means, and content, is without
three good friends; that the property of rain is
to wet, and fire to burn; that good pasture
makes fat sheep, and that a great cause of the
night is lack of the sun; that he that has
learned no wit by nature nor art may com-
plain of good breeding, or comes of a very dull
kindred. 33

Touch. Such a one is a natural philosopher.
Wast ever in court, shepherd? 36

Cor. No, truly.

Touch. Then thou art damned.
Cor. Nay, I hope.

Touch. Truly, thou art damned like an ill-
roasted egg, all on one side. 40

Cor. For not being at court? Your reason.

Touch. Why, if thou never wast at court, thou
never sawest good manners; if thou never sawest
good manners, then thy manners must be wick-
ed; and wickedness is sin, and sin is damnation.
Thou art in a parlous state, shepherd. 46

Cor. Not a whit, Touchstone: those that are
good manners at the court, are as ridiculous in
the country as the behaviour of the country is
most mockable at the court. You told me you
salute not at the court, but you kiss your hands;
that courtesy would be uncleanly if courtiers
were shepherds. 53

Touch. Instance, briefly; come, instance.

Cor. Why, we are still handling our ewes, and
their fells, you know, are greasy. 56

Touch. Why, do not your courtier’s hands
swet? and is not the grease of a mutton as
wholesome as the sweat of a man? Shallow,
shallow. A better instance, I say; come. 60

Cor. Besides, our hands are hard.

Touch. Your lips will feel them the sooner:
shallow again. A more sounder instance; come.

Cor. And they are often tarred over with the
surgery of our sheep; and would you have us
kiss tar? The courtier’s hands are perfumed
with civet. 67

Touch. Most shallow man! Thou worms-meat,
in respect of a good piece of flesh, indeed! Learn
of the wise, and perpend: civet is of a baser
birth than tar, the very uncleanly flux of a cat.
Mend the instance, shepherd. 72

Cor. You have too courtey a wit for me: I’ll
rest.

Touch. Wilt thou rest damned? God help
thee, shallow man! God make incision in thee!
thou art raw. 77

Cor. Sir, I am a true labourer: I earn that I
eat, get that I wear, owe no man hate, envy no
man’s happiness, glad of other men’s good, con-
tent with my harm; and the greatest of my pride
is to see my ewes graze and my lambs suck. 82

Touch. That is another simple sin in you, to
bring the ewes and the rams together, and to
offer to get your living by the copulation of
cattle; to be bawd to a bell-wether, and to be-
tray a she-lamb of a twelvemonth to a crooked-
pated, old, cuckoldly ram, out of all reasonable
match. If thou best not damned for this, the
devil himself will have no shepherds: I cannot
see else how thou shouldst scape.

Cor. Here comes young Master Ganymede,
my new mistress’s brother. 93

Enter ROSALIND, reading a paper.

Ros. From the east to western Ind,
No jewel is like Rosalind
Her worth, being mounted on the wind, 96
Through all the world bears Rosalind.
All the pictures fairest lind
Are but black to Rosalind.
Let no face be kept in mind,
But the fair of Rosalind. 100

Touch. I’ll rime you so, eight years together,
dinners and suppers and sleeping hours ex-
cepted: it is the right butter-women’s rank to
market.

Ros. Out, fool!

Touch. For a taste:—

If a hart do lack a hind,
Let him seek out Rosalind.
If the cat will after kind,
So be sure will Rosalind.
Winter-garments must be lin’d,
So must slender Rosalind.
They that reap must sheaf and bind,
Then to cart with Rosalind.
Sweetest nut hath sourest rind,
Such a nut is Rosalind.
He that sweetest rose will find
Must find love’s pricks and Rosalind.

This is the very false gallop of verses: why do
you infect yourself with them? 108

Ros. Peace! you dull fool: I found them on
a tree.

Touch. Truly, the tree yields bad fruit. 124

Ros. I’ll graff it with you, and then I shall
graft it with a medlar: then it will be the earliest
fruit i’ the country; for you’ll be rotten ere you
be half ripe, and that’s the right virtue of the
medlar.

Touch. You have said; but whether wisely or
no, let the forest judge.

Enter CELIA, reading a paper.

Ros. Peace!

Here comes my sister, reading: stand aside.
Cel. Why should this a desert be?  
For it is unpeopled? No;  
Tongues I'll hang on every tree,  
That shall civil sayings show.  
Some, how brief the life of man  
Runs his erring pilgrimage.  
That the stretching of a span  
Buckles in his sum of age;  
Some, of violated vows  
'Twixt the souls of friend and friend:  
But upon: the fairest boughs,  
Or at every sentence end,  
Will I Rosalinda write;  
Teaching all that read to know  
The quintessence of every sprite  
Heaven would in little show.  
Therefore Heaven Nature charg'd  
That one body should be fill'd  
With all graces wide enlarg'd:  
Nature presently distill'd  
Helen's cheek, but not her heart,  
Cleopatra's majesty,  
Atalanta's better part,  
Sad Lucretia's modesty.  
Thus Rosalind of many parts  
By heavenly synod was devis'd  
Of many faces, eyes, and hearts,  
To have those matches dearest prize'd.  
Heaven would that she these gifts should have,  
And I to live and die her slave.  

Ros. O most gentle pulpit! what tedious homily of love have you wearied your parishioners withal, and never cried, 'Have patience, good people!'  

Cel. How now! back, friends! Shepherd, go off a little: go with him, sirrah.  

Touch. Come, shepherd, let us make an honourable retreat; though not with bag and baggage, yet with scrip and scrippage.  

[Exeunt CORIN and TOUCHSTONE.  

Cel. Didst thou hear these verses?  

Ros. O, yes, I heard them all, and more too; for some of them had in them more feet than the verses would bear.  

Cel. That's no matter: the feet might bear the verses.  

Ros. Ay, but the feet were lame, and could not bear themselves without the verse, and therefore stood lamely in the verse.  

Cel. But didst thou hear without wondering, how thy name should be hanged and carved upon these trees?  

Ros. I was seven of the nine days out of the wonder before you came; for look here what I found on a palm-tree: I was never so be-rimed since Pythagoras' time, that I was an Irish rat, which I can hardly remember.  

Cel. Trow you who hath done this?  

Ros. Is it a man?  

Cel. And a chain, that you once wore, about his neck. Change you colour?  

Ros. I prithee, who?  

Cel. O Lord, Lord! it is a hard matter for friends to meet; but mountains may be removed with earthquakes, and so encounter.  

Ros. Nay, but who is it?  

Cel. Is it possible?  

Ros. Nay, I prithee now, with most petitionary vehemence, tell me who it is.  

Cel. O wonderful, wonderful, and most wonderful wonderful! and yet again wonderful! and after that, out of all whooping!  

Ros. Good my complexion! dost thou think, though I am caparison'd like a man, I have a doublet and hose in my disposition? One inch of delay more is a South-sea of discovery; I prithee, tell me who is it quickly, and speak apace. I would thou couldst stammer, that thou mightst pour this concealed man out of thy mouth, as wine comes out of a narrow-mouth'd bottle; either too much at once, or none at all. I prithee, take the cork out of thy mouth, that I may drink thy tiding.  

Cel. So you may put a man in your belly.  

Ros. Is he of God's making? What manner of man? Is his head worth a hat, or his chin worth a beard?  

Cel. Nay, he hath but a little beard.  

Ros. Why, God will send more, if the man will be thankful. Let me stay the growth of his beard, if thou delay me not the knowledge of his chin.  

Cel. It is young Orlando, that tripped up the wrestler's heels and your heart both, in an instant.  

Ros. Nay, but the devil take mocking: speak, sad brow and true maid.  

Cel. I' faith, coz, 'tis he.  

Ros. Orlando?  

Cel. Orlando.  

Ros. Alas the day! what shall I do with my doublet and hose? What did he when thou sawest him? What said he? How looked he? Wherein went he? What makes he here? Did he ask for me? Where remains he? How parted he with thee, and when shalt thou see him again? Answer me in one word.  

Cel. You must borrow me Gargantua's mouth first: 'tis a word too great for any mouth of this age's size. To say ay and no to these particulars is more than to answer in a catechism.  

Ros. But doth he know that I am in this forest and in man's apparel? Looks he as freshly as he did the day he wrestled?  

Cel. It is as easy to count atomies as to resolve the propositions of a lover; but take a taste of my finding him, and relish it with good observance. I found him under a tree, like a dropped acorn.  

Ros. It may well be called Jove's tree, when it drops forth such fruit.
Act III, Sc. II.

AS YOU LIKE IT

Cel. Give me audience, good madam.
Ros. Proceed.
Cel. There lay he, stretch’d along like a wounded knight.
Ros. Though it be pity to see such a sight, it
well becomes the ground.
Cel. Cry ‘holla!’ to thy tongue, I prithee; it
curves unseasonably. He was furnish’d like a
hunter.
Ros. O, ominous! he comes to kill my heart.
Cel. I would sing my song without a burthen:
thou bringest me out of tune.
Ros. Do you not know I am a woman? when
I think, I must speak. Sweet, say on.
Cel. You bring me out. Soft! comes he not
here?
Ros. ’Tis he: slink by, and note him.

Enter ORLANDO and JAQUEs.

Jaq. I thank you for your company; but,
good faith, I had as lief have been myself alone.

Orl. And so had I; but yet, for fashion’s sake,
I thank you too for your society.

Jaq. God be wi’ you: let’s meet as little as
we can.

Orl. I do desire we may be better strangers.
Jaq. I pray you, mar no more trees with
writing love-songs in their barks.

Orl. I pray you mar no more of my verses
with reading them ill-favouredly.

Jaq. Rosalind is your love’s name?
Orl. Yes, just.

Jaq. I do not like her name.

Orl. There was no thought of pleasing you
when she was christened.

Jaq. What stature is she of?
Orl. Just as high as my heart.

Jaq. You are full of pretty answers. Have
you not been acquainted with goldsmiths’ wives,
and conn’d them out of rings?

Orl. Not so; but I answer you right painted
cloth, from whence you have studied your ques-
tions.

Jaq. You have a nimble wit: I think ’twas
made of Atalanta’s heels. Will you sit down
with me? and we two will rail against our mis-
tress the world, and all our misery.

Orl. I will chide no breather in the world but
myself, against whom I know most faults.

Jaq. The worst fault you have is to be in
love.

Orl. ’Tis a fault I will not change for your
best virtue. I am weary of you.

Jaq. By my troth, I was seeking for a fool
when I found you.

Orl. He is drowned in the brook: look but in,
and you shall see him.

Orl. Which I take to be either a fool or a
cipher.

Jaq. I’ll tarry no longer with you. Farewell,
good Signor Love.

Orl. I am glad of your departure. Adieu,
good Monsieur Melancholy. [Exit JAQUES.

Ros. I will speak to him like a saucy lackey,
and under that habit play the knave with him.
Do you hear, forester?

Orl. Very well: what would you?

Ros. I pray you, what is’t o’clock?

Orl. You should ask me, what time o’ day;
there’s no clock in the forest.

Ros. Then there is no true lover in the forest;
else sighing every minute and groaning every
hour would detect the lazy foot of Time as well
as a clock.

Orl. And why not the swift foot of Time?
had not that been as proper?

Ros. By no means, sir. Time travels in
divers paces with divers persons. I’ll tell you
who Time ambles withal, who Time trots withal,
who Time gallops withal, and who he stands
still withal.

Orl. I prithee, who doth he trot withal?

Ros. Marry, he trots hard with a young maid
between the contract of her marriage and the
day it is solemnized; if the interim be but a
selfish, Time’s pace is so hard that it seems
the length of seven year.

Orl. Who ambles Time withal?

Ros. With a priest that lacks Latin, and a
rich man that hath not the gout; for the one
sleeps easily because he cannot study, and the
other lives merrily because he feels no pain;
the one lacking the burden of lean and wastef-
ful learning, the other knowing no burden of
heavy tedious penury. These Time ambles
withal.

Orl. Who doth he gallop withal?

Ros. With a thief to the gallows; for though
he go as softly as foot can fall he thinks himself
too soon there.

Orl. Who stays it still withal?

Ros. With lawyers in the vacation; for they
sleep between term and term, and then they per-
ceive not how Time moves.

Orl. Where dwell you, pretty youth?

Ros. With this shepherdess, my sister; here
in the skirts of the forest, like fringe upon a
petticoat.

Orl. Are you native of this place?

Ros. As the cony, that you see dwell where
she is kindled.

Orl. Your accent is something finer than you
could purchase in so removed a dwelling.
Ros. I have been told so of many: but indeed an old religious uncle of mine taught me to speak, who was in his youth an inland man; one that knew courtship too well, for there he fell in love. I have heard him read many lectures against it; and I thank God, I am not a woman, to be touched with so many giddy offences as he hath generally taxed their whole sex withal.

Orl. Can you remember any of the principal evils that he laid to the charge of women?

Ros. There were none principal; they were all like one another as half-pence are; every one fault seeming monstrous till his fellow fault came to match it.

Orl. I prithee, recount some of them.

Ros. No, I will not cast away my physic, but on those that are sick. There is a man haunts the forest, that abuses our young plants with carving 'Rosalind' on their barks; hangs odes upon Hawthorns, and elegies on Brambles; all, forsooth, deifying the name of Rosalind: if I could meet that fancy-monger, I would give him some good counsel, for he seems to have the quotient of love upon him.

Orl. I am he that is so love-shaked. I pray you, tell me your remedy.

Ros. There is none of my uncle's marks upon you: he taught me how to know a man in love; in which cage of rushes I am sure you are not prisoner.

Orl. What were his marks?

Ros. A lean cheek, which you have not; a blue eye and sunken, which you have not; a beard neglected, which you have not: but I pardon you for that, for, simply, your having in beard is a younger brother's revenue. Then, your hose should be ungartered, your bonnet unbanded, your sleeve unbudded, your shoe untied, and everything about you demonstrating a careless desolation. But you are no such man: you are rather point-device in your accoutrements; as loving yourself than seeming the lover of any other.

Orl. Fair youth, I would I could make thee believe I love.

Ros. Me believe it! you may as soon make her that you love believe it; which, I warrant, she is apter to do than to confess she does; that is one of the points in the which women still give the lie to their consciences: But, in good sooth, are you he that hangs the verses on the trees, wherein Rosalind is so admired?

Orl. I swear to thee, youth, by the white hand of Rosalind, I am that he, that unfortunate he.

Ros. But are you so much in love as your rimes speak?

Orl. Neither rime nor reason can express how much.

Ros. Love is merely a madness, and, I tell you, deserves as well a dark house and a whip as madmen do; and the reason why they are not so punished and cured is, that the lunacy is so ordinary that the whippers are in love too. Yet I profess curing it by counsel.

Orl. Did you ever cure any so?

Ros. Yes, one; and in this manner. He was to imagine me his love, his mistress; and I set him every day to woo me: at which time would I, being but a moonish youth, grieve, be effeminate, changeable, longing and liking; proud, fantastical, apish, shallow, inconstant, full of tears, full of smiles, for every passion something; and for no passion truly anything, as boys and women are, for the most part, cattle of this colour; would now like him, now loathe him; then entertain him, then forswear him; now weep for him, then spit at him; that I drain my suitor from his mad humour of love to a living humour of madness, which was, to forswear the full stream of the world, and to live in a nook merely monastic. And thus I cured him; and this way will I take upon me to wash your liver as clean as a sound sheep's heart, that there shall not be one spot of love in't.

Orl. I would not be cured, youth.

Ros. I would cure you, if you would but call me Rosalind, and come every day to my cot and woo me.

Orl. Now, by the faith of my love, I will: tell me where it is.

Ros. Go with me to it and I'll show it you; and by the way you shall tell me where in the forest you live. Will you go?

Orl. With all my heart, good youth.

Ros. Nay, you must call me Rosalind. Come, sister, will you go?

[Exeunt.

SCENE III.—Another Part of the Forest.

Enter Touchstone and Audrey; Jaques behind.

Touch. Come space, good Audrey: I will fetch up your goats, Audrey. And how, Audrey? am I the man yet? doth my simple feature content you?

Aud. Your features! Lord warrant us! what features?

Touch. Your features! Lord warrant us! what features?

Aud. I am here with thee and thy goats, as the most capricious poet, honest Ovid, was among the Goths.

Jaq. [Aside.] O knowledge ill-inhabited, worse than Jove in a thatch'd house!

k 3

265
Enter Sir Oliver Martext.

Sir Oliver Martext, you are well met: will you dispatch us here under this tree, or shall we go with you to your chapel?

Sir Oli. Is there none here to give the woman?

Touch. I will not take her on gift of any man.

Sir Oli. Truly, she must be given, or the marriage is not lawful.

Jaq. [Coming forward.] Proceed, proceed: I'll give her.

Touch. Good even, good Master What-ye-call't, how do you, sir? You are very well met: God 'uld you for your last company: I am very glad to see you: even a toy in hand here, sir: nay, pray be covered.

Jaq. Will you be married, motley?

Touch. As the ox hath his bow, sir, the horse his curb, and the falcon her bells, so man hath his desires; and as pigeons bill, so wedlock would be nibbling.

Jaq. And will you, being a man of your breeding, be married under a bush, like a beggar? Get you to church, and have a good priest that can tell you what marriage is: this fellow will but join you together as they join wainscot; then one of you will prove a shrunken panel, and like green timber, warp, warp.

Touch. [Aside.] I am not in the mind but I were better to be married of him than of another: for he is not like to marry me well, and not being well married, it will be a good excuse for me hereafter to leave my wife.

Jaq. Go thou with me, and let me counsel thee.

Touch. Come, sweet Audrey:

We must be married, or we must live in bawdry.

Farewell, good Master Oliver: not—

O sweet Oliver! 
O brave Oliver!

Leave me not behind thee:

but—

Wind away,
Begone, I say,
I will not to wedding with thee. 

[Exeunt Jaques, Touchstone, and Audrey.

Sir Oli. 'Tis no matter: ne'er a fantastical knave of them all shall flout me out of my calling. 

[Exit.

SCENE IV.—Another Part of the Forest.

Enter Rosalind and Celia.

Ros. Never talk to me: I will weep.

Ces. Do, I prithee; but yet have the grace to consider that tears do not become a man.

Ros. But have I not cause to weep?

Ces. As good a cause as one would desire; therefore weep.
Ros. His very hair is of the dissembling colour.

Col. Something browner than Judas's; marry, his kisses are Judas's own children.

Ros. 'Tis faith, his hair is of a good colour.

Col. An excellent colour: your chestnut was ever the only colour.

Ros. And his kissing is as full of sanctity as the touch of holy bread.

Col. He hath bought a pair of cast lips of Diana: a nun of winter's sisterhood kisses not more religiously; the very ice of chastity is in them.

Ros. But why did he swear he would come this morning, and comes not?

Col. Nay, certainly, there is no truth in him.

Ros. Do you think so?

Col. Yes: I think he is not a pick-purse nor a horse-stealer; but for his verity in love, I do think him as concave as a covered goblet or a worm-eaten nut.

Ros. Not true in love?

Col. Yes, when he is in; but I think he is not in.

Ros. You have heard him swear downright he was.

Col. 'Was' is not 'is': besides, the oath of a lover is no stronger than the word of a tapster; they are both the confimmers of false reckonings. He attends here in the forest on the duke your father.

Ros. I met the duke yesterday and had much question with him. He asked me of what parentage I was; I told him, of as good as he; so he laughed, and let me go. But what talk we of fathers, when there is such a man as Orlando?

Col. O, that's a brave man! He writes brave verses, speaks brave words, swears brave oaths, and breaks them bravely, quite traverse, athwart the heart of his lover; as a pusily tiller, that spurs his horse but on one side, breaks his staff like a noble goose. But all's brave that youth mounts and folly guides. Who comes here?

Enter CORIN.

Cor. Mistress and master, you have oft inquir'd

After the shepherd that complain'd of love,
Who you saw sitting by me on the turf,
Praising the proud disdainful shepherdess
That was his mistress.

Col. Well, and what-of him?

Cor. If you will see a pageant truly play'd,
Between the pale complexion of true love
And the red glow of scorn and proud disdain,
Go hence a little, and I shall conduct you.

If you will mark it.

Ros. O! come, let us remove:
The sight of lovers feedeth those in love.

Bring us to this sight, and you shall say
I'll prove a busy actor in their play. [Exeunt.

SCENE V.—Another Part of the Forest.

Enter SILVIUS and PHEBE.

SIL. Sweet Phebe, do not scorn me; do not, Phebe:
Say that you love me not, but say not so
In bitterness. The common executioner,
Whose heart the accustom'd sight of death makes hard,
Falls not the axe upon the humbled neck
But first begs pardon: will you sternly be
Than he that dies and lives by bloody drops?

Enter ROSALIND, CELIA, and CORIN, behind.

PHE. I would not be thy executioner:
I fly thee, for I would not injure thee.
Thou tell'st me there is murder in mine eye:
'Tis pretty, sure, and very probable,
That eyes, that are the frail'st and softest things,
Who shut their coward gates on atomies,
Should be call'd tyrants, butchers, murderers!
Now I do frown on thee with all my heart;
And, if mine eyes can wound, now let them kill thee;
Now counterfeit to wound; why now fall down;
Or, if thou canst not, O! for shame, for shame,
Lie not, to say mine eyes are murderers.
Now show the wound mine eye hath made in thee;
Scratch thee but with a pin, and there remains
Some scar of it; lean but upon a rush,
The cicatrice and capable impressure
Thy palm some moment keeps; but now mine eyes,
Which I have darted at thee, hurt thee not,
Nor, I am sure, there is no force in eyes
That can do hurt.

SIL. O dear Phebe,
If ever,—as that ever may be near,—
You meet in some fresh cheek the power of fancy,
Then shall you know the wounds invisible
That love's keen arrows make.

PHE. But, till that time
Come not thou near me; and, when that time comes,
Afflict me with thy mocks, pity me not;
As, till that time I shall not pity thee.

ROS. [Advancing:] And why, I pray you?
Who might be your mother,
That you insult, exult, and all at once,
Over the wretched? What though you have no beauty,—
As by my faith, I see no more in you

267
Act III, Sc. V.

AS YOU LIKE IT

Than without candle may go dark to bed,—
Must you be therefore proud and pityless? 40
Why, what means this? Why do you look on me?

I see no more in you than in the ordinary
Of nature’s sale-work. Od’s my little life!
I think she means to tangle my eyes too.

No, faith, proud mistress, hope not after it:
’Tis not your inky brows, your black silk hair,
Your bugle eyeballs, nor your cheek of cream,
That can entame my spirits to your worship. 48
You foolish shepherd, wherefore do you follow her,

Like foggy south puffing with wind and rain?
You are a thousand times a properer man
Than she a woman: ’tis such fools as you
That make the world full of ill-favour’d children:
’Tis not her glass, but you, that flatters her;
And out of you she sees herself more proper
Than any of her lineaments can show her. 56
But, mistress, know yourself: down on your knees,

And thank heaven, fasting, for a good man’s love:
For I must tell you friendly in your ear,
Sell when you can; you are not for all markets.
Cry the man mercy; love him; take his offer: 61
Foul is most foul, being foul to be a scoffer.
So take her to thee, shepherd. Fare you well.

Phe. Sweet youth, I pray you, chide a year together:
I had rather hear you chide than this man woo.

Ros. He’s fallen in love with her foulness, and
She’ll fall in love with my anger. If it be so, as fast as she answers thee with frowning looks, I’ll sauce her with bitter words. Why look you so upon me?

Phe. For no ill will I bear you.

Ros. I pray you, do not fall in love with me,
For I am falser than vows made in wine: 73
Besides, I like you not. If you will know my house,
’Tis at the tuft of olives here hard by.
Will you go, sister? Shepherd, ply her hard. 76
Come, sister. Shepherdess, look’ on him better,
And be not proud: though all the world could see,
None could be so abus’d in sight as he.

Come, to our flock.

[Exeunt ROSALIND, CELIA, and CORIN.

Phe. Dead shepherd, now I find thy saw of might:

‘Who ever lov’d that lov’d not at first sight?’
Sil. Sweet Phebe,—
Phe. Ha! what sayest thou, Silvius?
Sil. Sweet Phebe, pity me. 84
Phe. Why, I am sorry for thee, gentle Silvius.
Sil. Wherever sorrow is, relief would be:

If you do sorrow at my grief in love,
By giving love your sorrow and my grief
Were both extermind.’
Phe. Thou hast my love: is not that neighbourly?
Sil. I would have you.

Phe. Why, that were covetousness.
Silvius, the time was that I hated thee;
And yet it is not that I bear thee love:
But since that thou canst talk of love so well,
Thy company, which erst was irksome to me,
I will endure, and I’ll employ thee too;

But do not look for further recompense
Than thine own gladness that thou art employ’d.
Sil. So holy and so perfect is my love,
And I in such a poverty of grace,
That I shall think it a most plenteous crop
To glean the broken ears after the man
That the main harvest reaps: loose now and then
A scatter’d smile, and that I’ll live upon.

Phe. Know’st thou the youth that spoke to me erewhile?
Sil. Not very well, but I have met him oft;
And he hath bought the cottage and the bounds
That the old carlot once was master of.

Phe. Think not I love him, though I ask for him.
’Tis but a peevish boy; yet he talks well;
But what care I for words? yet words do well,
When he that speaks them pleases those that hear.

It is a pretty youth: not very pretty:
But, sure, he’s proud; and yet his pride becomes him:
He’ll make a proper man: the best thing in him
Is his complexion; and faster than his tongue
Did make offence his eye did heal it up.
He is not very tall; yet for his years he’s tall:
His leg is but so so; and yet ’tis well:
There was a pretty redness in his lip,
A little riper and more lusty red
Than that mix’d in his cheek; ’twas just the difference
Betwixt the constant red and mingled damask.
There be some women, Silvius, had they mark’d him
In parcels as I did, would have gone near
To fall in love with him; but, for my part,
I love him not nor hate him not; and yet
Have more cause to hate him than to love him:
For what had he to do to chide at me?
He said mine eyes were black and my hair black;
And, now I am remember’d, scorn’d at me.
I marvel why I answer’d not again:
But that’s all one; omission is no quittance.
I’ll write to him a very taunting letter,
And thou shalt bear it: wilt thou, Silvius?

Sil. Phebe, with all my heart.

Phe. I’ll write it straight;
The matter’s in my head and in my heart: I will be bitter with him and passing short. Go with me, Silvius.  

[Exeunt.]

ACT IV.

SCENE I.—The Forest of Arden.

Enter ROSALIND, CELIA, and JAQUES.

Jaq. I prithee, pretty youth, let me be better acquainted with thee.
Ros. They say you are a melancholy fellow.
Jaq. I am so; I do love it better than laughing.
Ros. Those that are in extremity of either are abominable fellows, and betray themselves to every modern censure worse than drunkards.
Jaq. Why, ’tis good to be sad and say nothing.
Ros. Why, then, ’tis good to be a poet.
Jaq. I have neither the scholar’s melancholy, which is emulation; nor the musician’s, which is fantastical; nor the courtier’s, which is proud; nor the soldier’s, which is ambitious; nor the lawyer’s, which is politic; nor the lady’s, which is nice; nor the lover’s, which is all these: but it is a melancholy of mine own, compounded of many simples, extracted from many objects, and indeed the sundry contemplation of my travels, which, by often rumination, wraps me in a most humorous sadness.
Ros. A traveller! By my faith, you have great reason to be sad. I fear you have sold your own lands to see other men’s; then, to have seen much and to have nothing, is to have rich eyes and poor hands.
Jaq. Yes, I have gained my experience.
Ros. And your experience makes you sad: I had rather have a fool to make me merry than experience to make me sad: and to travel for it too!

Enter ORLANDO.

Orl. Good day, and happiness, dear Rosalind!
Jaq. Nay then, God be wi’ you, an you talk in blank verse.

[Exit.]

Ros. Farewell, Monsieur Traveller: look you liep, and wear strange suits, disable all the benefits of your own country; be out of love with your nativity, and almost chide God for making you that countenance you are; or I will scarce think you have swam in a gondola. Why, how now, Orlando! where have you been all this while? You a lover! An you serve me such another trick, never come in my sight more.

Orl. My fair Rosalind, I come within an hour of my promise.
Ros. Break an hour’s promise in love! He that will divide a minute into a thousand parts, and break but a part of the thousandth part of a minute in the affairs of love, it may be said of him that Cupid hath clapped him o’ the shoulder, but I’ll warrant him heart-whole.
Orl. Pardon me, dear Rosalind.
Ros. Nay, an you be so tardy, come no more in my sight: I had as lief be wooed of a snail.
Orl. Of a snail!
Ros. Ay, of a snail; for though he comes slowly, he carries his house on his head: a better jointure, I think, than you make a woman: besides, he brings his destiny with him.
Orl. What’s that?
Ros. Why, horns; that such as you are fain to be beholding to your wives for: but he comes armed in his fortune and prevents the slander of his wife.
Orl. Virtue is no horn-maker; and my Rosalind is virtuous.
Ros. And I am your Rosalind?
Cel. It pleases him to call you so; but he hath a Rosalind of a better leer than you.
Ros. Come, woo me, woo me; for now I am in a holiday humour, and like enough to consent. What would you say to me now, an I were your very very Rosalind?
Orl. I would kiss before I spoke.
Ros. Nay, you were better speak first, and when you were gravelled for lack of matter, you might take occasion to kiss. Very good orators, when they are out, they will spit; and for lovers lacking,—God warn us!—matter, the cleanliest shift to is kiss.
Orl. How if the kiss be denied?
Ros. Then she puts you to entreaty, and there begins new matter.
Orl. Who could be out, being before his beloved mistress?
Ros. Marry, that should you, if I were your mistress; or I should think my honesty ranker than my wit.
Orl. What, of my suit?
Ros. Not out of your apparel, and yet out of your suit. Am not I your Rosalind?
Orl. I take some joy to say you are, because I would be talking of her.
Ros. Well, in her person I say I will not have you.
Orl. Then in mine own person I die.
Ros. No, faith, die by attorney. The poor world is almost six thousand years old, and in all this time there was not any man died in his own person, videlicet, in a love-cause. Troilus
Act IV, Sc. 1.  

AS YOU LIKE IT

had his brains dashed out with a Grecian club; yet he did what he could to die before, and he is one of the patterns of love. Leander, he would have lived many a fair year, though Hero had turned nun, if it had not been for a hot midsummer night; for, good youth, he went but forth to wash him in the Hellespont, and being taken with the cramp was drowned; and the foolish coroners of that age found it was 'Hero of Sestos.' But these are all lies: men have died from time to time, and worms have eaten them, but not for love. 112

Orl. I would not have my right Rosalind of this mind; for, I protest, her frown might kill me.

Ros. By this hand, it will not kill a fly. But come, now I will be your Rosalind in a more coming-on disposition; and ask me what you will, I will grant it.

Orl. Then love me, Rosalind. 120

Ros. Yes, faith will I, Fridays and Saturdays and all.

Orl. And wilt thou have me?

Ros. Ay, and twenty such. 124

Orl. What sayest thou?

Ros. Are you not good?

Orl. I hope so.

Ros. Why then, can one desire too much of a good thing—Come, sister, you shall be the priest and marry us.—Give me your hand, Orlando. What do you say, sister?

Orl. Pray thee, marry us. 132

Cel. I cannot say the words.

Ros. You must begin,—'Will you, Orlando,'—

Cel. Go to.—Will you, Orlando, have to wife this Rosalind?

Orl. I will.

Ros. Ay, but when?

Orl. Why now; as fast as she can marry us.

Ros. Then you must say, 'I take thee, Rosalind, for wife.' 141

Orl. I take thee, Rosalind, for wife.

Ros. I might ask you for your commission; but, I do take thee, Orlando, for my husband: there's a girl goes before the priest; and, certainly, a woman's thought runs before her actions.

Orl. So do all thoughts; they are winged. 148

Ros. Now tell me how long you would have her after you have possessed her?

Orl. For ever and a day.

Ros. Say 'a day,' without the 'ever.' No, no, Orlando; men are April when they woo, December when they wed: maids are May when they are maids, but the sky changes when they are wives. I will be more jealous of thee than a Barbary cock-pigeon over his hen; more cla-

morous than a parrot against rain; more new-fangled than an ape; more giddy in my desires than a monkey: I will weep for nothing, like Diana in the fountain, and I will do that when you are disposed to be merry; I will laugh like a hyen, and that when thou art inclined to sleep.

Orl. But will my Rosalind do so? 164

Ros. By my life, she will do as I do.

Orl. Of but she is wise.

Ros. Or else she could not have the wit to do this: the wiser, the waywarder: make the doors upon a woman's wit, and it will out at the casement; shut that, and 'twill out at the key-hole; stop that, 'twill fly with the smoke out at the chimney.

Orl. A man that hath a wife with such a wit, he might say, 'Wit, whither wilt?'

Ros. Nay, you might keep that check for it till you met your wife's wit going to your neighbour's bed. 177

Orl. And what wit could wit have to excuse that?

Ros. Marry, to say she came to seek you there. You shall never take her without her answer, unless you take her without her tongue. O! that woman that cannot make her fault her husband's occasion, let her never nurse her child herself, for she will breed it like a fool. 185

Orl. For these two hours, Rosalind, I will leave thee.

Ros. Alas! dear love, I cannot lack thee, two hours.

Orl. I must attend the duke at dinner: by two o'clock I will be with thee again.

Ros. Ay, go your ways, go your ways; I knew what you would prove, my friends told me as much, and I thought no less: that flattering tongue of yours won me: 'tis but one cast away, and so, come, death! Two o'clock is your hour?

Orl. Ay, sweet Rosalind. 197

Ros. By my troth, and in good earnest, and so God mend me, and by all pretty oaths that are not dangerous, if you break one jot of your promise or come one minute behind your hour, I will think you the most pathetical breach-promise, and the most hollow lover, and the most unworthy of her you call Rosalind, that may be chosen out of the gross band of the unfaithful. Therefore, beware my censure, and keep your promise.

Orl. With no less religion than if thou wert indeed my Rosalind: so, adieu. 209

Ros. Well, Time is the old justice that examines all such offenders, and let Time try Adieu. 212

[Exit ORLANDO.]

Cel. You have simply misused our sex in your love-prate: we must have your doubt and hose
plucked over your head, and show the world what the bird hath done to her own nest. 216
Ros. O coz, coz, coz, my pretty little coz, that thou didst know how many fathom deep I am in love! But it cannot be sounded: my affection hath an unknown bottom, like the bay of Portugal.
Cel. Or rather, bottomless; that as fast as you pour affection in, it runs out. 222
Ros. No; that same wicked bastard of Venus, that was begot of thought, conceived of spleen, and born of madness, that blind rascally boy that abuses every one's eyes because his own are out, let him be judge how deep I am in love. I'll tell thee, Aliena, I cannot be out of the sight of Orlando: I'll go find a shadow and sigh till he come. 230
Cel. And I'll sleep. [Exeunt.

SCENE II.—Another Part of the Forest.

Enter Jaques, Lords, and Foresters.
Jaq. Which is he that killed the deer?
First Lord. Sir, it was I.
Jaq. Let's present him to the duke, like a Roman conqueror; and it would do well to set the deer's horns upon his head for a branch of victory. Have you no song, forester, for this purpose? 6
Second Lord. Yes, sir.
Jaq. Sing it: 'tis no matter how it be in tune so it make noise enough.

SONG.
What shall he have that kill'd the deer?
His leather skin and horns to wear.
Then sing him home 12
[The rest shall bear this burden.
Take thou no scorn to wear the horn;
It was a crest ere thou wast born:
Thy father's father wore it,
And thy father bore it: 16
The horn, the horn, the lusty horn
Is not a thing to laugh to scorn

[Exeunt.

SCENE III.—Another Part of the Forest.

Enter Rosalind and Celia.
Roz. How say you now? Is it not past two o'clock? And here much Orlando!
Cel. I warrant you, with pure love and a troubled brain, he hath ta'en his bow and arrows, and is gone forth to sleep. Look, who comes here.

Enter Silvius.
Sil. My errand is to you, fair youth.
My gentle Phebe did bid me give you this: 8
[Giving a letter.
I know not the contents; but, as I guess
By the stern brow and waspish action
Which she did use as she was writing of it,

It bears an angry tenour: pardon me; 12
I am but as a guiltless messenger.

Ros. Patience herself would startle at this letter,
And play the swaggerer: bear this, bear all:
She says I am not fair; that I lack manners; 16
She calls me proud, and that she could not love me
Were men as rare as phoenix. 'Od's my will!
Her love is not the bare that I do hunt:
Why writes she so to me? Well, shepherd, well,
This is a letter of your own device. 21
Sil. No, I protest, I know not the contents:
Phebe did write it.

Ros. Come, come, you are a fool,
And turn'd into the extremity of love. 24
I saw her hand: she has a leathern hand,
A freestone-colour'd hand; I verily did think
That her old gloves were on, but 'twas her hands:
She has a housewife's hand; but that's no matter:
I say she never did invent this letter; 29
This is a man's invention, and his hand.
Sil. Sure, it is hers.
Roz. Why, 'tis a boisterous and a cruel style,
A style for challengers; why, she defies me, 33
Like Turk to Christian: woman's gentle brain
Could not drop forth such giant rude invention,
Such Ethiop words, blacker in their effect 36
Than in their countenance. Will you hear the letter?
Sil. So please you, for I never heard it yet;
Yet heard too much of Phebe's cruelty.

Ros. She Phebes me. Mark how the tyrant writes. [Reads.]
[Reads.]
Art thou god to shepherd turn'd,
That a maiden's heart hath ruin'd?
Can a woman rail thus?
Sil. Call you this railing?
Ros. [reads.]
Why, thy godhead laid apart,
Warr'st thou with a woman's heart?
Did you ever hear such railing?
Whiles the eye of man did woo me,
That could do no vengeance to me.
Meaning me a beast.
If the scorn of your bright eyene
Have power to raise such love in mine, 52
Alack! in me what strange effect
Would they work in mild aspect.
Whiles you chid me, I did love,
How then might your prayers move?
He that brings this love to thee
Little knows this love in me;
And by him seal up thy mind;
Whether that thy youth and kind
Will the faithful offer take
Of me and all that I can make;
Or else by him my love deny,
And then I'll study how to die. 64
Sil. Call you this chiding?
Into a bush; under which bush's shade
A lioness, with udders all drawn dry, 116
Lay couching, head on ground, with catlike watch,
When that the sleeping man should stir; for 'tis
The royal disposition of that beast
To prey on nothing that doth seem as dead: 120
This seen, Orlando did approach the man,
And found it was his brother, his elder brother.

Cel. O! I have heard him speak of that same brother;
And he did render him the most unnatural 124
That liv'd 'mongst men.

Oli. And well he might so do,
For well I know he was unnatural.

Ros. But, to Orlando: did he leave him there,
Food to the suck'd and hungry lioness? 128

Oli. Twice did he turn his back and purpos'd so;
But kindness, nobler ever than revenge,
And nature, stronger than his just occasion,
Made him give battle to the lioness, 132
Who quickly fell before him: in which hurrying
From miserable slumber I awak'd.

Cel. Are you his brother?

Ros. Was it you he rescu'd?

Cel. Was't you that did so oft contrive to
kill him? 136

Oli. 'Twas I; but 'tis not I. I do not shame
To tell you what I was, since my conversion
So sweetly tastes, being the thing I am.
Ros. But, for the bloody napkin?

Oli. By and by.

When from the first to last, betwixt us two, 141
Tears our recollections had most kindly bath'd,
As how I came into that desert place:—
In brief, he led me to the gentle duke, 144
Who gave me fresh array and entertainment,
Committing me unto my brother's love;
Who led me instantly unto his cave,
There stripp'd himself; and here, upon his arm
The lioness had torn some flesh away, 149
Which all this while had bled; and now he
fainted,
And cried, in fainting, upon Rosalind.
Brief, I recover'd him, bound up his wound; 152
And, after some small space, being strong at heart,
He sent me hither, stranger as I am,
To tell this story, that you might excuse
His broken promise; and to give this napkin,
Dy'd in his blood, unto the shepherd youth 157
That he in sport doth call his Rosalind.

Cel. [Rosalind swoons.] Why, how now,
Ganymede! sweet Ganymede!

Oli. Many will swoon when they do look on
blood.
Cel. There is more in it, Cousin Ganymede!
Oli. Look, he recovers.
Ros. I would I were at home.
Cel. We'll lead you thither.
I pray you, will you take him by the arm? 164
Oli. Be of good cheer, youth. You a man!
You lack a man's heart.
Ros. I do so, I confess. Ah, sirrah! a body
would think this was well counterfeited. I pray
you, tell your brother how well I counterfeited.
Heigh-ho!
Oli. This was not counterfeited: there is too
great testimony in your complexion that it was
a passion of earnest. 173
Ros. Counterfeit, I assure you.
Oli. Well then, take a good heart and coun-
terfeit to be a man. 176
Ros. So I do; but, 'tis faith, I should have been
a woman by right.
Cel. Come; you look paler and paler: pray
you, draw homewards. Good sir, go with us. 180
Oli. That will I, for I must bear answer back
How you excuse my brother, Rosalind.
Ros. I shall devise something. But, I pray
you, commend my counterfeiting to him. Will
you go? [Exeunt.

ACT V.

SCENE I.—The Forest of Arden.

Enter Touchstone and Audrey.

Touch. We shall find a time, Audrey: patience, gentle Audrey.

Aud. Faith, the priest was good enough, for
all the old gentleman's saying. 4

Touch. A most wicked Sir Oliver, Audrey; a
most vile Martex. But, Audrey, there is a youth
here in the forest lays claim to you.

Aud. Ay, I know who 'tis: he hath no interest
in me in the world. Here comes the man you
mean.

Enter William.

Touch. It is meat and drink to me to see a
clown. By my troth, we that have good wits have
much to answer for: we shall be flouting; we
cannot hold.

Will. Good even, Audrey.

Aud. God ye good even, William. 16

Will. And good even to you, sir.

Touch. Good even, gentle friend. Cover thy
head, cover thy head; nay, prithee, be covered.
How old are you, friend?

Will. Five-and-twenty, sir.

Touch. A ripe age. Is thy name William?

Will. William, sir.

Touch. A fair name. Wast born i' the forest
here?

Will. Ay, sir, I thank God.

Touch. 'Thank God,' a good answer. Art
rich?

Will. Faith, sir, so so.

Touch. 'So so,' is good, very good, very exel-
 lent good: and yet it is not; it is but so. Art
thou wise?

Will. Ay, sir, I have a pretty wit.

Touch. Why, thou sayest well. I do now re-
member a saying, 'The fool doth think he is
wise, but the wise man knows himself to be a
fool.' The heathen philosopher, when he had a
desire to eat a grape, would open his lips when
he put it into his mouth; meaning thereby that
grapes were made to eat and lips to open. You
do love this maid?

Will. I do, sir.

Touch. Give me your hand. Art thou learned?

Will. No, sir.

Touch. Then learn this of me: to have, is to
have; for it is a figure in rhetoric, that drink,
being poured out of a cup into a glass, by fill-
ing the one doth empty the other; for all your
writers do consent that ipse is he: now, you are
not ipse, for I am he.

Will. Which he, sir?

Touch. He, sir, that must marry this woman.
Therefore, you clown, abandon,—which is in the
vulgar, leave,—the society,—which in the boorish
is, company,—of this female,—which in the com-
mon is, woman; which together is, abandon the
society of this female, or, clown, thou perishest;
or, to thy better understanding, diest; or, to wit,
I kill thee, make thee away, translate thy life
into death, thy liberty into bondage. I will deal
in poison with thee, or in bastinado, or in steel;
I will bandy with thee in faction; I will o'erun
thee with policy; I will kill thee a hundred and
fifty ways: therefore tremble, and depart. 64

Aud. Do, good William.

Will. God rest you merry, sir. [Exit.

Enter Corin.

Cor. Our master and mistress seek you:
come, away, away!

Touch. Trip, Audrey! trip, Audrey! I attend,
I attend. [Exeunt.

SCENE II.—Another Part of the Forest.

Enter Orlando and Oliver.

Orl. Is't possible that on so little acquaint-
ance you should like her? that, but seeing, you
should love her? and, loving, woo? and, wooing,
Act V, Sc. II.

she should grant? and will you persever to enjoy her?

Oli. Neither call the giddiness of it in question, the poverty of her, the small acquaintance, my sudden wooing, nor her sudden consenting; but say with me, I love Aliena; say with her, that she loves me; consent with both, that we may enjoy each other: it shall be to your good; for my father’s house and all the revenue that was old Sir Rowland’s will I estate upon you, and here live and die a shepherd.

Ori. You have my consent. Let your wedding be to-morrow: thither will I invite the duke and all’s contented followers. Go you and prepare Aliena; for, look you, here comes my Rosalind.

Enter ROSALIND.

Ros. God save you, brother.

Oli. And you, fair sister. [Exit.

Ros. O! my dear Orlando, how it grieves me to see thee wear thy heart in a scarf.

Ori. It is my arm.

Ros. I thought thy heart had been wounded with the claws of a lion.

Ori. Wounded it is, but with the eyes of a lady.

Ros. Did your brother tell you how I counterfeited to swoon when he showed me your handkercher?

Ori. Ay, and greater wonders than that.

Ros. O! I know where you are. Nay, ‘tis true: there was never anything so sudden but the sight of two rams, and Caesar’s thraconical brag of ‘I came, saw, and overcame;’ for your brother and my sister no sooner met, but they looked; no sooner looked but they loved; no sooner loved but they sighed; no sooner sighed but they asked one another the reason; no sooner knew the reason but they sought the remedy: and in these degrees have they made a pair of stairs to marriage which they will climb incontinent, or else be incontinent before marriage. They are in the very wrath of love, and they will together: clubs cannot part them.

Ori. They shall be married to-morrow, and I will bid the duke to the nuptial. But, O! how bitter a thing it is to look into happiness through another man’s eyes. By so much the more shall I to-morrow be at the height of heart-heaviness, by how much I shall think my brother happy in having what he wishes for.

Ros. Why then, to-morrow I cannot serve your turn for Rosalind?

Ori. I can live no longer by thinking.

Ros. I will weary you then no longer with idle talking. Know of me then,—for now I speak to some purpose,—that I know you are a gentleman of good conceit. I speak not this that you should bear a good opinion of my knowledge, insomuch I say I know you are; neither do I labour for a greater esteem than may in some little measure draw a belief from you, to do yourself good, and not to grace me. Believe then, if you please, that I can do strange things. I have, since I was three years old, conversed with a magician, most profound in his art and yet not damnable. If you do love Rosalind so near the heart as your gesture cries it out, when your brother marries Aliena, shall you marry her. I know into what straits of fortune she is driven; and it is not impossible to me, if it appear not inconvenient to you, to set her before your eyes to-morrow, human as she is, and without any danger.

Ori. Speakest thou in sober meanings?

Ros. By my life, I do; which I tender dearly, though I say I am a magician. Therefore, put you in your best array; bid your friends; for if you will be married to-morrow, you shall; and to Rosalind, if you will. Look, here comes a lover of mine, and a lover of hers.

Enter SIVIUS and PHEBE.

Phe. Youth, you have done me much ungentleness,

To show the letter that I writ to you.

Ros. I care not if I have: it is my study

To seem despiteful and ungentle to you.

You are there follow’d by a faithful shepherd:

Look upon him, love him; he worships you.

Phe. Good shepherd, tell this youth what ‘tis to love.

Sil. It is to be all made of sighs and tears;

And so am I for Phoebie.

Phe. And I for Ganymede.

Ori. And I for Rosalind.

Ros. And I for no woman.

Sil. It is to be all made of faith and service;

And so am I for Phoebie.

Phe. And I for Ganymede.

Ori. And I for Rosalind.

Ros. And I for no woman.

Sil. It is to be all made of fantasy,

All made of passion, and all made of wishes;

All adoration, duty, and observance;

All humbleness, all patience, and impatience;

All purity, all trial, all obseisance;

And so am I for Phoebie.

Phe. And so am I for Ganymede.

Ori. And so am I for Rosalind.

Ros. And so am I for no woman.

Phe. [To ROSALIND.] If this be so, why blame you me to love you?
Sil. [To Phebe.] If this be so, why blame you me to love you?  
Orl. If this be so, why blame you me to love you?

Ros. Who do you speak to, ‘Why blame you me to love you?’

Orl. To her that is not here, nor doth not hear.

Ros. Pray you, no more of this: ’tis like the howling of Irish wolves against the moon. [To Silvius.] I will help you, if I can: [To Phebe.] I would love you, if I could. To-morrow meet me all together. [To Phebe.] I will marry you, if ever I marry woman, and I’ll be married to-morrow: [To Orlando.] I will satisfy you, if ever I satisfied man, and you shall be married to-morrow: [To Silvius.] I will content you, if what pleases you contents you, and you shall be married to-morrow. [To Orlando.] As you love Rosalind, meet: [To Silvius.] As you love Phebe, meet: and as I love no woman, I’ll meet. So, fare you well: I have left you commands.

Sil. I’ll not fail, if I live.

Phe. Nor I.

Orl. Nor I.  
[Exeunt.

Scene IV. — Another Part of the Forest.

Enter Duke Senior, Amiens, Jaques, Orlando, Oliver, and Celia.

Duke S. Dost thou believe, Orlando, that the boy
Can do all this that he hath promised?

Orl. I sometimes do believe, and sometimes do not;
As those that fear they hope, and know they fear.

Ros. Patience once more, whiles our compact is urg’d.

[To the Duke.] You say, if I bring in your Rosalind,
You will bestow her on Orlando here?

Duke S. That would I, had I kingdoms to give with her.

Ros. [To Orlando.] And you say, you will have her when I bring her?

Orl. That would I, were I of all kingdoms king.

Ros. [To Phebe.] You say, that you’ll marry me, if I be willing?

Phe. That will I, should I die the hour after.

Ros. But if you do refuse to marry me,

You’ll give yourself to this most faithful shepherd?

Phe. So is the bargain.

Ros. [To Silvius.] You say, that you’ll have Phebe, if she will?

Sil. Though to have her and death were both one thing.

Ros. I have promis’d to make all this matter even.

Keep your word, O duke, to give your daughter;

You yours, Orlando, to receive his daughter; 20

Keep your word, Phebe, that you’ll marry me,
Or else, refusing me, to wed this shepherd; 24
Keep thy word, Silvius, that you'll marry her,
If she refuse me: and from hence I go,
To make these doubts all even.

[Exeunt ROSALIND and CELIA.

Duke S. I do remember in this shepherd boy
Some lively touches of my daughter's favour.

Ori. My lord, the first time that I ever saw
him,
Methought he was a brother to your daughter;
But, my good lord, this boy is forest-born,
And hath been tutor'd in the rudiments
Of many desperate studies by his uncle,
Whom he reports to be a great magician,
Obscured in the circle of this forest.

Enter TOUCHSTONE and AUDREY.

Jaq. There is, sure, another flood toward, and
these couples are coming to the ark. Here comes
a pair of very strange beasts, which in all tongues
are called fools.

Touch. Salutation and greeting to you all.

Jaq. Good my lord, bid him welcome. This
is the motley-minded gentleman that I have so
often met in the forest: he hath been a courtier,
he swears.

Touch. If any man doubt that, let him put
me to my purgation. I have trod a measure; I
have flattered a lady; I have been politic with
my friend, smooth with mine enemy; I have un-
done three tailors; I have had four quarrels,
and like to have fought one.

Jaq. And how was that t'en up?

Touch. Faith, we met, and found the quarrel
was upon the seventh cause.

Jaq. How seventh cause? Good my lord,
like this fellow.

Duke S. I like him very well.

Touch. God 'lil you, sir; I desire you of the
like. I press in here, sir, amongst the rest of
the country copulative, to swear, and to forswear,
according as marriage binds and blood breaks.
A poor virgin, sir, an ill-favoured thing, sir, but
mine own: a poor humour of mine, sir, to take
that that no man else will. Rich honesty dwells
like a miser, sir, in a poor house, as your pearl
in your soul oyster.

Duke S. My faith, he is very swift and
sententious.

Touch. According to the fool's bolt, sir, and
such dulcet diseases.

Jaq. But, for the seventh cause; how did you
find the quarrel on the seventh cause?

Touch. Upon a lie seven times removed:—
bear your body more seeming, Audrey:—as thus,
sir. I did dislike the cut of a certain courtier's
beard: he sent me word, if I said his beard was
not cut well, he was in the mind it was: this is
called 'the retort courteous.' If I sent him word
again, it was not well cut, he would send me
word, he cut it to please himself: this is called
the 'quip modest.' If again, it was not well cut,
he disabled my judgment: this is called the
'reply churlish.' If again, it was not well cut, he
would answer, I spake not true: this is called the
'reproof valiant:' if again, it was not well cut,
he would say, I lie: this is called the
'countercheck quarrelsome:' and so to the 'lie
circumstantial,' and the 'lie direct.'

Jaq. And how oft did you say his beard was
not well cut?

Touch. I durst go no further than the 'lie
circumstantial,' nor he durst not give me the 'lie
direct,' and so we measured swords and parted.

Jaq. Can you nominate in order now the de-
grees of the lie?

Touch. O sir, we quarrel in print; by the
book, as you have books for good manners: I
will name you the degrees. The first, the 'retort
courteous:' the second, the 'quip modest:' the
third, the 'reply churlish:' the fourth, the 're-
proof valiant:' the fifth, the 'countercheck
quarrelsome:' the sixth, the 'lie with circum-
stances:' the seventh, the 'lie direct.' All these
you may avoid but the lie direct; and you may
avoid that too, with an 'if.' I knew when seven
justices could not take up a quarrel; but when
the parties were met themselves, one of them
thought but of an 'if,' as 'If you said so, then I
said so;' and they shook hands and swore
brothers. Your 'if' is the only peace-maker;
much virtue in 'if.'

Jaq. Is not this a rare fellow, my lord? he's
as good at any thing, and yet a fool.

Duke S. He uses his folly like a stalking-
horse, and under the presentation of that he
shoots his wit.

Enter HYMEN, leading ROSALIND in woman's
clothes, and CELIA.

Still Music.

Hym. Then is there mirth in heaven,
When earthly things made even

Alone together.

Good duke, receive thy daughter;
Hymen from heaven brought her;
Yea, brought her hither,
That thou mightest join her hand with his,
Whose heart within her bosom is.

Ros. [To DUKE S.] To you I give myself, for
I am yours.

[To ORLANDO.] To you I give myself, for I am
yours.
Duke S. If there be truth in sight, you are my daughter.

Orl. If there be truth in sight, you are my Rosalind.

Phe. If sight and shape be true, Why then, my love adieu!

Ros. [To DUKE S.] I'll have no father, if you be not he.

[To ORLANDO.] I'll have no husband, if you be not he:

[To PHŒBE.] Nor ne'er wed woman, if you be not she.

Hym. Peace, ho! I bar confusion: 'Tis I must make conclusion
Of these most strange events: Here's eight that must take hands
To join in Hymen's bands,
If truth holds true contents.

[To ORLANDO and ROSALIND.] You and you no cross shall part:

[To OLIVER and CEDAL.] You and you are heart in heart:

[To PHŒBE.] You to his love must accord,
Or have a woman to your lord:

[To TOUCHSTONE and AUDREY.] You and you are sure together,
As the winter to foul weather.
Whiles a wedlock hymne we sing,
Feed yourselves with questioning,
That reason wonder may diminish,
How thus we met, and these things finish.

SONG.

Wedding is great Juno's crown: O blessed bond of board and bed!
'Tis Hymen peoples every town;
High wedlock then be honoured.
Honour, high honour, and renown,
To Hymen, god of every town!

Duke S. O my dear niece! welcome thou art to me:

Even daughter, welcome in no less degree.

Phe. [To SILVIUS.] I will not eat my word, now thou art mine;

Thy faith my fancy to thee doth combine.

Enter JAQUES DE BOYS.

Jaq. de B. Let me have audience for a word or two:
I am the second son of old Sir Rowland,
That bring these tidings to this fair assembly.
Duke Frederick, hearing how that every day 156
Men of great worth resorted to this forest,
Address'd a mighty power, which were on foot
In his own conduct, purposely to take
His brother here and put him to the sword;
And to the skirts of this wild wood he came,

Where, meeting with an old religious man,
After some question with him, was converted.
Both from his enterprise and from the world;
His crown bequeathing to his banish'd brother,
And all their lands restor'd to them again
That were with him exil'd. This to be true, 172
I do engage my life.

Duke S. Welcome, young man;
Thou offer'st fairly to thy brothers' wedding:
To one, his lands withheld; and to the other
A land itself at large, a potent dukedom.
First, in this forest, let us do those ends
That here were well begun and well begot;
And after, every of this happy number
That have endur'd shrewd days and nights with us,
Shall share the good of our returned fortune,
According to the measure of their states.
Meantime, forget this new-fall'n dignity,
And fall into our rustic revelry.

Play, music! and you, brides and bridgegrooms all,
With measure heap'd in joy, to the measures fall.

Jaq. Sir, by your patience. If I heard you rightly,
The duke hath put on a religious life,
And thrown into neglect the pompous court?

Jaq. de B. He hath.

Jaq. To him will I: out of these convertes
There is much matter to be heard and learn'd.

[To DUKE S.] You to your former honour I bequeath;

Your patience and your virtue well deserve it:

[To ORLANDO.] You to a love that your true faith doth merit:

[To OLIVER.] You to your land, and love, and great allies:

[To SILVIUS.] You to a long and well-deserved bed:

[To TOUCHSTONE.] And you to wrangling; for thy loving voyage
Is but for two months victual'd. So, to your pleasures:
I am for other than for dancing measures.

Duke S. Stay, Jaques, stay.

Jaq. To see no pastime, I: what you would have
I'll stay to know at your abandon'd cave. [Exit.

Duke S. Proceed, proceed: we will begin these rites,
As we do trust they'll end, in true delights.

[A dance. Exeunt.

EPILOGUE.

Spoken by ROSALIND.

It is not the fashion to see the lady the epilogue; but it is no more unhandsome than to see the lord the prologue. If it be true that
good wine needs no bush, 'tis true that a good
play needs no epilogue; yet to good wine they
do use good bushes, and good plays prove the
better by the help of good epilogues. What a
case am I in then, that am neither a good epi-
logue, nor cannot insinuate with you in the be-
half of a good play! I am not furnished like a
beggar, therefore to beg will not become me: my
way is, to conjure you; and I'll begin with the
women. I charge you, O women! for the love
you bear to men, to like as much of this play as
please you: and I charge you, O men! for the
love you bear to women,—as I perceive by your
simpering none of you hate them,—that between
you and the women, the play may please. If I
were a woman I would kiss as many of you as
had beards that pleased me, complexions that
liked me, and breaths that I defied not; and,
I am sure, as many as have good beards, or
good faces, or sweet breaths, will, for my kind
offer, when I make curtsy, bid me farewell.

[Exeunt.]
THE TAMING OF THE SHREW

DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

A Lord.
CHRISTOPHER SLY, a Tinker. Persons in the
Hostess, Page, Players, Huntsmen, and Servants.
BAPTISTA, a rich Gentleman of Padua.
VINCENTIO, an old Gentleman of Pisa.
LUCENTIO, son to Vincentio; in love with
Bianca.
PETRUCHIO, a Gentleman of Verona; Suiitor to
Katharina.
GREMIO, \\ Suitors to Bianca.
HORTENSIO, \\ Widow.

TRanio,
BIONDELLO, \\ Servants to Lucentio
GRUMIO, \\ Servants to Petruchio
CURTIS, \\ Pedant, set up to personate Vincentio.

KATHARINA, the Shrew, \\ Daughters to Bap-
Bianca, \\ tista.

Tailor, Haberdasher, and Servants attending
on Bapitsta and Petruchio.

SCENE.—Sometimes in Padua; and sometimes in PETRUCHIO’s House in the Country.

INDUCTION.

SCENE I.—Before an Alehouse on a Heath.

Enter Hostess and Sly.
Sly. I’ll pheze you, in faith.
Host. A pair of stocks, you rogue!
Sly. Y’are a baggage: the Sly’s are no rogues;
look in the chronicles; we came in with Richard
Conqueror. Therefore, paucas pallabras; let
the world slide. Sessa!
Host. You will not pay for the glasses you
have burst?
Sly. No, not a denier. Go by, Jeronimy, go
to thy cold bed, and warm thee.
Host. I know my remedy: I must go fetch
the third-borough. [Exit.
Sly. Third, or fourth, or fifth borough, I’ll
answer him by law. I’ll not budge an inch, boy:
let him come, and kindly.

[Horns wined. Enter a Lord from hunting,
with Huntsmen and Servants.

Lord. Huntsman, I charge thee, tender well
my hounds:
Brach Merriman, the poor cur is emboss’d,
And copule Clowder with the deep-mouth’d
brach.
Saw’st thou not, boy, how Silver made it good
At the hedge-corner, in the coldest fault?
I would not lose the dog for twenty pound.
First Hunt. Why, Bellman is as good as he,
my lord;
He cried upon it at the merest loss,
And twice to-day pick’d out the dullest scent:
Trust me, I take him for the better dog. 25
Lord. Thou art a fool: if Echo were a fleet,
I would esteem him worth a dozen such.
But sup them well, and look unto them all: 30
To-morrow I intend to hunt again.
First Hunt. I will, my lord.
Lord. [Sees Sly.] What’s here? one dead, or
drunk? See, doth he breathe?
Sec. Hunt. He breathes, my lord. Were he
not warm’d with ale, 32
This were a bed but cold to sleep so soundly.
Lord. O monstrous beast! how like a swine
he lies!
Grim death, how foul and loathsome is thine
image!
Sirs, I will practise on this drunken man. 36
What think you, if he were convey’d to bed,
Wrapp’d in sweet clothes, rings put upon his
fingers,
A most delicious banquet by his bed,
And brave attendants near him when he wakes,
Would not the beggar then forget himself? 40
First Hunt. Believe me, lord, I think he can-
not choose.
Sec. Hunt. It would seem strange unto him
when he wak’d.
Lord. Even as a flattering dream or worth-
less fancy. 44
Then take him up and manage well the jest.
Carry him gently to my fairest chamber,
And hang it round with all my wanton pictures;
Balm his foul head in warm distilled waters, 48
And burn sweet wood to make the lodging sweet.
Induction, Sc. I. The Taming of the Shrew

Procure me music ready when he wakes,
To make a dulcet and a heavenly sound;
And if he chance to speak, be ready straight,
And with a low submissive reverence
Say, 'What is it your honour will command?'
Let one attend him with a silver basin
Full of rose-water, and bestrew'd with flowers;
Another bear the ewer, the third a diaper,
And say, 'Will 't please your lordship cool your hands?'

Some one be ready with a costly suit,
And ask him what apparel he will wear;
Another tell him of his hounds and horse,
And that his lady mourns at his disease.
Persuade him that he hath been lunatic;
And, when he says he is—say that he dreams,
For he is nothing but a mighty lord.
This do, and do it kindly, gentle sirs:
It will be pastime passing excellent,
If it be busbanded with modesty.

First Hunt. My lord, I warrant you we will play our part,
As he shall think, by our true diligence,
He is no less than what we say he is.

Lord. Take him up gently, and to bed with him,
And each one to his office when he wakes.

[Exit Sirrah. A trumpet sounds.

SIRRAH, go see what trumpet 'tis that sounds:

Belike, some noble gentleman that means,
Travelling some journey, to repose him here.

Re-enter Servant.

How now! who is it?

Serv. An it please your honour,
Players that offer service to your lordship.

Lord. Bid them come near.

Enter Players.

Now, fellows, you are welcome.

Players. We thank your honour.

Lord. Do you intend to stay with me to-night?

A Player. So please your lordship to accept our duty.

Lord. With all my heart. This fellow I remember,
Since once he play'd a farmer's eldest son:
'Twas where you woo'd the gentlewoman so well.
I have forgot your name; but, sure, that part
Was aptly fitted and naturally perform'd.

A Play. I think 'twas Soto that your honour means.

Lord. 'Tis very true: thou didst it excellent.
Well, you are come to me in happy time,
The rather for I have some sport in hand

Wherein your cunning can assist me much.
There is a lord will hear you play to-night;
But I am doubtful of your modesties,
Least, over-eyeing of his odd behaviour,—
For yet his honour never heard a play,—
You break into some merry passion
And so offend him; for I tell you, sirs,
If you should smile he grows impatient.

A Player. Fear not, my lord: we can contain ourselves.

W ere he the veriest antick in the world.

Lord. Go, sirrah, take them to the buttery,
And give them friendly welcome every one:
Let them want nothing that my house affords.

[Exeunt one with the Players.

SIRRAH, go you to Barthol'mew my page,
And see him dress'd in all suits like a lady:
That done, conduct him to the drunkard's chamber;
And call him 'madam,' do him obedience.

Tell him from me,—as he will win my love,—
He bear himself with honourable action,
Such as he hath observ'd in noble ladies
Unto their lords, by them accomplished:
Such duty to the drunkard let him do
With soft low tongue and lowly courtesy;
And say, 'What's your honour will com-

Wherein your lady and your humble wife
May show her duty, and make known her love?

And then, with kind embracements, tempting kisses,
And with declining head into his bosom,
Bid him shed tears, as being overjoy'd
To see her noble lord restor'd to health,
Who for this seven years hath esteemed him
No better than a poor and loathsome beggar.
And if the boy have not a woman's gift
To rain a shower of commanded tears,
An onion will do well for such a shift,
Which in a napkin being close convey'd,
Shall in despite enforce a watery eye.

See this dispatch'd with all the haste thou canst:

Anon I'll give thee more instructions.

[Exit Servant.

I know the boy will well usurp the grace,
Voice, gait, and action of a gentlewoman:
I long to hear him call the drunkard husband,
And how my men will stay themselves from laughter
When they do homage to this simple peasant.
I'll in to counsel them: haply, my presence
May well abate the over merry spleen
Which otherwise would grow into extremes.

[Exeunt.
Scene II.—A Bedchamber in the Lord’s House.

Sly is discovered in a rich nightgown, with Attendants: some with apparel, others with basin, ewer, and other appurtenances; and Lord, dressed like a servant.

Sly. For God’s sake! a pot of small ale.

First Serv. Will’t please your lordship drink a cup of sack?

Sec. Serv. Will’t please your honour taste of these conserves?

Third Serv. What raiment will your honour wear to-day?

Sly. I am Christopher Sly; call not me honour, nor lordship: I ne’er drank sack in my life; and if you give me any conserves, give me conserves of beef. Ne’er ask me what raiment I’ll wear, for I have no more doublets than backts, no more stockings than legs, nor no more shoes than feet: nay, sometime more feet than shoes, or such shoes as my toes look through the overleather.

Lord. Heaven cease this idle humour in your honour!

O, that a mighty man, of such descent, Of such possessions, and so high esteem, Should be infused with so foul a spirit!

Sly. What! would you make me mad? Am not I Christopher Sly, old Sly’s son, of Burton-heath; by birth a pedlar, by education a cardmaker, by transmutation a bear-herd, and now by present profession a tinker? Ask Marian Hacket, the fat ale-wife of Wincot, if she know me not: if she say I am not fourteen pence on the score for sheep ale, score me up for the lyingest knave in Christendom. What I am not bestraught: here’s—

First Serv. O! this it is that makes your lady mourn.

Sec. Serv. O! this it is that makes your servants droop.

Lord. Hence comes it that your kindred shuns your house, As beaten hence by your strange lunacy. O noble lord, bethink thee of thy birth, Call home thy ancient thoughts from banishment, And banish hence these abject lowly dreams. Look how thy servants do attend on thee, Each in his office ready at thy beck:

Wilt thou have music? hark! Apollo plays.

Music. And twenty caged nightingales do sing:

Or wilt thou sleep? we’ll have thee to a couch Softer and sweeter than the lustful bed On purpose trimm’d up for Semiramis. Say thou wilt walk, we will bestrew the ground: Or wilt thou ride? thy horses shall be trapp’d,

Their harness studded all with gold and pearl. Dost thou love hawking? thou hast hawks will soar Above the morning lark: or wilt thou hunt? Thy hounds shall make the wellkin answer them, And fetch shrill echoes from the hollow earth. First Serv. Say thou wilt course; thy greyhounds are as swift As breathed staggs, ay, fieeter than the roe.

Sec. Serv. Dost thou love pictures? we will fetch thee straight Adonis painted by a running brook, And Cythera all in sedges hid, Which seem to move and wanton with her breath, Even as the waving sedges play with wind.

Lord. We’ll show thee Io as she was a maid, And how she was beguiled and surpris’d, As lively painted as the deed was done.

Third Serv. Or Daphne roaming through a thorny wood, Scratching her legs that one shall swear she bleeds; And at that sight shall sad Apollo weep, So workmanly the blood and tears are drawn.

Lord. Thou art a lord and nothing but a lord: Thou hast a lady far more beautiful Than any woman in this waning age.

First Serv. And till the tears that she hath shed for thee Like envious floods o’er-run her lovely face, She was the fairest creature in the world; And yet she is inferior to none.

Sly. Am I a lord? and have I such a lady? Or do I dream? or have I dream’d till now? I do not sleep; I see, I hear, I speak; I smell sweet savours, and I feel soft things: Upon my life, I am a lord indeed; And not a tinker, nor Christopher Sly.

Well, bring our lady bither to our sight; And once again, a pot o’ the smallest ale.

Sec. Serv. Will’t please your mightiness to wash your hands?

[Servants present a ewer, basin, and napkin.

O, how we joy to see your wit restor’d! O, that once more you knew but what you are! These fifteen years you have been in a dream; Or, when you wak’d, so wak’d as if you slept. Sly. These fifteen years! by my fay, a goodly nap.

But did I never speak of all that time?

First Serv. O! yes, my lord, but very idle words; For though you lay here in this goodly chamber, Yet would you say ye were beaten out of door, And raiul upon the hostess of the house, And say you would present her at the fest,
Because she brought stone jugs and no seal’d quarts.

Sometimes you would call out for Cicely Hacket.

Sly. Ay, the woman’s maid of the house. 92

Third Serv. Why, sir, you know no house, nor no such maid.

Nor no such men as you reck’n’d up,

As Stephen Sly, and old John Naps of Greece,

And Peter Turf, and Henry Pimpernell, 96

And twenty more such names and men as these,

Which never were nor no man ever saw.

Sly. Now, Lord be thanked for my good amends!

All. Amen. 100

Sly. I thank thee; thou shalt not lose by it.

Enter the Page, as a lady, with Attendants.

Page. How fares my noble lord?

Sly. Marry, I fare well, for here is cheer enough.

Where is my wife?

Page. Here, noble lord: what is thy will with her?

Sly. Are you my wife, and will not call me husband?

My men should call me lord: I am your goodman.

Page. My husband and my lord, my lord and husband; 103

I am your wife in all obedience.

Sly. I know it well. What must I call her?

Lord. Madam.

Sly. Alce madam, or Joan madam? 112

Lord. Madam, and nothing else: so lords call ladies.

Sly. Madam wife, they say that I have dream’d

And slept above some fifteen year or more.

Page. Ay, and the time seems thirty unto me,

Being all this time abandon’d from your bed. 117

Sly. ’Tis much. Servants, leave me and her alone.

Madam, undress you, and come now to bed.

Page. Thrice noble lord, let me entreat of you

To pardon me yet for a night or two, 121

Or, if not so, until the sun be set:

For your physicians have expressly charg’d,

In peril to incur your former malady, 124

That I should yet absent me from your bed:

I hope this reason stands for my excuse.

Sly. Ay, it stands so, that I may hardly tarry

so long; but I would be loath to fall into my dreams again: I will therefore tarry, in spite of

the flesh and the blood.

Enter a Servant.

Serv. Your honour’s players, hearing your

amendment,

Are come to play a pleasant comedy; 132

For so your doctors hold it very meet,

Seeing too much sadness hath congeal’d your

blood,

And melancholy is the nurse of frenzy:

Therefore they thought it good you hear a play;

And frame your mind to mirth and merriment,

Which bars a thousand harms and lengthens life.

Sly. Marry, I will; let them play it. Is not a

commonly a Christmas gambold or a tumbling-trick?

Page. No, my good lord; it is more pleasing

stuff.

Sly. What! household stuff?

Page. It is a kind of history. 144

Sly. Well, we ’ll see ’t. Come, madam wife, sit by my side,

And let the world slip: we shall ne’er be younger.

[Flourish.

ACT I.

SCENE I.—Padua. A public Place.

Enter Lucentio and Tranio.

Luc. Tranio, since for the great desire I had

To see fair Padua, nursery of arts,

I am arriv’d for fruitful Lombardy,

The pleasant garden of great Italy;

And by my father’s love and leave am arm’d

With his good will and thy good company,

My trusty servant well approv’d in all,

Here let us breathe, and haply institute

A course of learning and ingenuous studies.

Pisa, renowned for grave citizens,

Gave me my being and my father first,

A merchant of great traffic through the world,

Vincenzo, come of the Bentivoli. 13

Vincenzo’s son, brought up in Florence,

It shall become to serve all hopes conceiv’d,

To deck his fortune with his virtuous deeds: 16

And therefore, Tranio, for the time I study,

Virtue and that part of philosophy

Will I apply that treats of happiness

By virtue specially to be achiev’d.

Tell me thy mind; for I have Pisa left

And am to Padua come, as he that leaves

A shallow plash to plunge him in the deep,

And with satisfy seeks to quench his thirst. 24

Tra. Mi perdona, gentle master mine,

I am in all affected as yourself,

Glad that you thus continue your resolve

To suck the sweets of sweet philosophy. 28

Only, good master, while we do admire

This virtue and this moral discipline,

Let’s be no stoics nor no stockers, I pray;

Or so devote to Aristotle’s checks

As Ovid be an outcast quite abjur’d.
THE TAMING OF THE SHREW

Act I, Sc. I.

Balk logic with acquaintance that you have,
And practise rhetoric in your common talk;
Music and poesy use to quicken you;
The mathematics and the metaphysics,
Fall to them as you find your stomach serves you;
No profit grows where is no pleasure ta'en;
In brief, sir, study what you most affect.

Luc. Gramercies, Tranio, well dost thou advise.
If, Biondello, thou wert come ashore,
We could at once put us in readiness,
And take a lodging fit to entertain
Such friends as time in Padua shall begot.
But stay awhile: what company is this?

Tra. Master, some show to welcome us to
town.

Enter Baptista, Katharina, Bianca, Gremio,
and Hortensio. Lucentio and Tranio stand aside.

Bap. Gentlemen, importune me no further,
For how I firmly am resolv’d you know;
That is, not to bestow my youngest daughter
Before I have a husband for the elder.
If either of you both love Katharina,
Because I know you well and love you well,
Leave shall you have to court her at your pleasure.

Gre. To cart her rather: she’s too rough for me.

There, there, Hortensio, will you any wife?

Kath. [To Baptista.] I pray you, sir, is it your will
To make a stale of me amongst these mates?

Hor. Mates, maid! how mean you that? no mates for you,
Unless you were of gentler, milder mould.

Kath. I’ faith, sir, you shall never need to fear:
I wis it is not half way to her heart;
But if it were, doubt not her care should be
To comb your noodle with a three-legg’d stool,
And paint your face, and use you like a fool.

Hor. From all such devils, good Lord deliver us!

Gre. And me too, good Lord!

Tra. Hush, master! here is some good pastime toward.

That wench is stark mad or wonderful froward.

Luc. But in the other’s silence do I see
Maid’s mild behaviour and sobriety.

Peace, Tranio!

Tra. Well said, master; mum! and gaze your fill.

Bap. Gentlemen, that I may soon make good
What I have said,—Bianca, get you in:
And let it not displease thee, good Bianca,
For I will love thee ne’er the less, my girl.

Kath. A pretty peat! it is best
Put finger in the eye, an she knew why.

Bian. Sister, content you in my discontent.
Sir, to your pleasure humbly I subscribe:
My books and instruments shall be my company,
On them to look and practise by myself.

Luc. Hark, Tranio! thou mayst hear Minerva speak.

Hor. Signior Baptista, will you be so strange?
Sorry am I that our good will effects
Bianca’s grief.

Gre. Why will you mew her up,
Signior Baptista, for this fiend of hell,
And make her bear the penance of her tongue?

Bap. Gentlemen, content ye; I am resolv’d.
Go in, Bianca.

[Exit Bianca.

And for I know she taketh most delight
In music, instruments, and poetry,
Schoolmasters will I keep within my house,
Fit to instruct her youth. If you, Hortensio,
Or Signior Gremio, you, know any such,
I will be very kind, and liberal
To mine own children in good bringing up;
And so, farewell. Katharina, you may stay;
For I have more to communique with Bianca. [Exit.

Kath. Why, and I trust I may go too; may I not?

What! shall I be appointed hours, as though,
belike,
I knew not what to take, and what to leave? Ha!

[Exit.

Gre. You may go to the devil’s dam: your gifts are so good, here’s none will hold you.

Their love is not so great, Hortensio, but we may blow our nails together, and fast it fairly out: our cake’s dough on both sides. Farewell: yet, for the love I bear my sweet Bianca, if I can by any means light on a fit man to teach her that wherein she delights, I will wish him to her father.

Hor. So will I, Signior Gremio: but a word, I pray. Though the nature of our quarrel yet never brooked parle, know now, upon advice, it toucheth us both,—that we may yet again have access to our fair mistress and be happy rivals in Bianca’s love,—to labour and effect one thing specially.

Gre. What’s that, I pray?

Hor. Marry, sir, to get a husband for her sister.

Gre. A husband! a devil.

Hor. I say, a husband.

Gre. I say, a devil. Thinkest thou, Hortensio,
though her father be very rich, any man is so very a fool to be married to hell?

Hor. Tuah, Gremio! though it pass your
patience and mine to endure her loud alarums, why, man, there be good fellows in the world, an a man could light on them, would take her with all faults, and money enough. 133

Gre. I cannot tell; but I had as lief take her dowry with this condition, to be whipped at the high-cross every morning. 136

Hor. Faith, as you say, there's small choice in rotten apples. But, come; since this bar in law makes us friends, it shall be so far forth friendly maintained, till by helping Baptista's eldest daughter to a husband, we set his youngest free for a husband, and then have to't afresh. Sweet Bianca! Happy man be his dote! He that runs fastest gets the ring. How say you, Signior Gremio? 145

Gre. I am agreed; and would I had given him the best horse in Padua to begin his wooing, that would thoroughly woo her, wed her, and bed her, and rid the house of her. Come on. 149 [Exeunt GREMIO AND HORTENSIO.

Tra. I pray, sir, tell me, is it possible That love should of a sudden take such hold?

Luc. O Tranio! till I found it to be true, 152 I never thought it possible or likely; But see, while idly I stood looking on, I found the effect of love in idleness; And now in plainness do confess to thee. 156 That art to me as secret and as dear As Anna to the Queen of Carthage was, Tranio, I burn, I pine, I perish, Tranio, If I achieve not this young modest girl. 160 Counsel me, Tranio, for I know thou canst: Assist me, Tranio, for I know thou wilt.

Tra. Master, it is no time to chide you now; Affection is not rated from the heart: 164 If love have touch'd you, nought remains but so, Redime te captum, quam quesas minimo.

Luc. Gramercies, lad; go forward: this contents: The rest will comfort, for thy counsel's sound.

Tra. Master, you look'd so longly on the maid. Perhaps you mark'd not what's the pith of all. 168 Luc. O yes, I saw sweet beauty in her face, Such as the daughter of Atenor had, That made great Jove to humble him to her hand, When with his knees he kiss'd the Cretan strand.

Tra. Saw you no more? mark'd you not how her sister Began to scold and raise up such a storm 176 That mortal ears might hardly endure the din? Luc. 'Tranio, I saw her coral lips to move, And with her breath she did perfume the air; Sacred and sweet was all I saw in her. 180

Tra. Nay, then, 'tis time to stir him from his trance. I pray, awake, sir: if you love the maid, Bend thoughts and wits to achieve her. Thus it stands: Her elder sister is so curst and shrewd, 184 That till the father rid his hands of her, Master, your love must live a maid at home; And therefore has he closely mew'd her up, Because she will not be annoy'd with suitors. 188 Luc. Ah, Tranio, what a cruel father's he! But art thou not advis'd he took some care Together cunning schoolmasters to instruct her?

Tra. Ay, marry, am I, sir; and now 'tis plotted.

Luc. I have it, Tranio.

Tra. Master, for my hand, Both our inventions meet and jump in one. Luc. Tell me thine first.

Tra. You will be schoolmaster, And undertake the teaching of the maid: That's your device.

Luc. It is: may it be done?

Tra. Not possible; for who shall bear your part, And be in Padua here Vincentio's son? Keep house and ply his book, welcome his friends; 200 Visit his countrymen, and banquet them?

Luc. Basta; content thee; for I have it full. We have not yet been seen in any house, Nor can we be distinguish'd by our faces 204 For man, or master: then, it follows thus: Thou shalt be master, Tranio, in my stead, Keep house, and port, and servants, as I should: I will some other be; some Florentine, 208 Some Neapolitan, or meaner man of Pisa.

Tis hatch'd and shall be so: Tranio, at once Uncase thee, take my colour'd hat and cloak: When Biondello comes, he waits on thee; 212 But I will charm him first to keep his tongue.

[They exchange habits.

Tra. So had you need. In brief then, sir, sith it your pleasure is, And I am tied to be obedient; 216 For so your father charg'd me at our parting, 'Be serviceable to my son,' quoth he, Although I think 'twas in another sense: I am content to be Lucentio, Because so well I love Lucentio.

Luc. Tranio, be so, because Lucentio loves; And let me be a slave, to achieve that maid Whose sudden sight hath thrall'd my wounded eye. 224 Here comes the rogue.

Enter BIONDELLO.

Sirrah, where have you been?

Bion. Where have I been! Nay, how now! where are you?
Master, has my fellow Tranio stol'n your clothes, Or you stol'n his? or both? pray, what's the news? 228

Luc. Sirrah, come hither: 'tis no time to jest, And therefore frame your manners to the time. Your fellow Tranio, here, to save my life, Puts my apparel and my countenance on, 232 And I for my escape have put on his; For in a quarrel since I came ashore I kill'd a man, and fear I was deserv'd. Wait you on him, I charge you, as becomes, 236 While I make way from hence to save my life: You understand me?

Bion. I, sirr! ne'er a whit. Luc. And not a jot of Tranio in your mouth: Tranio is changed to Lucentio. 240 Bion. The better for him: would I were so too! Tra. So would I, faith, boy, to have the next wish after, That Lucentio indeed had Baptista's youngest daughter. But, sirrah, not for my sake, but your master's, I advise 244 You use your manners discreetly in all kind of companies: When I am alone, why, then I am Tranio; But in all places else your master, Lucentio.

Luc. Tranio, let's go. One thing more rests, That thyself execute, to make one among these wooers: if thou ask me why, sufficeth my reasons are both good and weighty. [Exeunt.

The Presenters above speak.


SCENE II.—The Same. Before Hortensio's House.

Enter Petruchio and Grumio.

Pet. Verona, forsooth, I take my leave, To see my friends in Padua; but, of all My best beloved and approved friend, Hortensio; and I truss this is his house. 4 Here, sirrah Grumio; knock, I say.

Gru. Knock, sirr! whom should I knock? is there any man has rebused your worship? Pet. Villain, I say, knock me here soundly. 5 Gru. Knock you here, sirr! why, sir, what am I, sir, that should knock you here, sirr? Pet. Villain, I say, knock me at this gate;

And rap me well, or I'll knock your knave's pate. 12 Gru. My master is grown quarrelsome. I should knock you first, And then I know after who comes by the worst. Pet. Will it not be? Faith, sirrah, an you'll not knock, I'll ring it; I'll try how you can sol, fa, and sing it. 17 [He wrings Grumio by the ears.


Enter Hortensio.

Hor. How now! what's the matter? My old friend Grumio! and my good friend Petruchio! How do you all at Verona?

Pet. Signior Hortensio, come you to part the fray?

Con tutto ti cuore ben trovato, may I say. 24 Hor. Alla nostra casa ben venuto; molto honorato signior mio Petruchio. Rise, Grumio, rise: we will compound this quarrel.

Gru. Nay, 'tis no matter, sir, what he 'leges in Latin. If this be not a lawful cause for me to leave his service, look you, sir, he bid me knock him and rap him soundly, sir: well, was it fit for a servant to use his master so; being, perhaps, for aught I see, two-and-thirty, a pip out? 33 Whom would to God, I had well knock'd at first, Then had not Grumio come by the worst.

Pet. A senseless villain! Good Hortensio, 36 I bade the rascal knock upon your gate, And could not get him for my heart to do it. Gru. Knock at the gate! O heavens! Spake you not these words plain, 'Siarrah, knock me here, rap me here, knock me well, and knock me soundly'? And come you now with 'knocking at the gate'?

Pet. Sirrah, be gone, or talk not, I advise you. Hor. Petruchio, patience; I am Grumio's pledge. 45 Why, this 's a heavy chance 'twixt him and you, Your ancient, trusty, pleasant servant Grumio. And tell me now, sweet friend, what happy gale Blows you to Padua here from old Verona? 49 Pet. Such wind as scatters young men through the world To seek their fortunes further than at home, Where small experience grows. But in a few, 52 Signior Hortensio, thus it stands with me: Antonio, my father, is deceas'd, And I have thrust myself into this maze, Happily to wife and thrive as best I may. 56 Crowns in my purse I have and goods at home,
And so am come abroad to see the world.

Hor. Petrucho, shall I then come roundly to thee,
And wish thee to a shrewd ill-fav’rd wife? 60
Thou’dist thank me but a little for my counsel;
And yet I’ll promise thee she shall be rich,
And very rich: but thou’rt too much my friend,
And I’ll not wish thee to her. 64

Pet. Signior Hortensio, ’twixt such friends as we,
A few words suffice; and therefore, if thou know
One rich enough to be Petrucho’s wife,
As wealth is burden of my wooing dance, 68
Be she as foul as was Florentius’ love,
As old as Sibyl, and as curse and shrewd
As Socrates’ Xanthippe, or a worse,
She moves me not, or not removes, at least, 72
Affection’s edge in me, were she as rough
As are the swelling Adriatic seas:
I come to live it wealthily in Padua;
If wealthily, then happily in Padua. 76

Gru. Nay, look you, sir, he tells you flatly what his mind is: why, give him gold enough
And marry him to a puppet or an aglet-baby;
or an old trot with ne’er a tooth in her head,
Although she have as many diseases as two-and-fifty horses: why, nothing comes amiss, so money comes withal.

Hor. Petrucho, since we are stepp’d thus far in,
I will continue that I broach’d in jest.
I can, Petrucho, help thee to a wife
With wealth enough, and young and beauteous,
Brought up as best becomes a gentlewoman: 88
Her only fault,—and that is faults enough,—
Is, that she is intolerable curst
And shrewd and froward, so beyond all measure,
That, were my state far worse than it is, 92
I would not wed her for a mine of gold:

Pet. Hortensio, peace! thou know’st not gold’s effect:
Tell me her father’s name, and ’tis enough;
For I will board her, though she chide as loud
As thunder when the clouds in autumn crack.

Hor. Her father is Baptista Minola. 96
An affable and courteous gentleman;
Her name is Katharina Minola,
Renown’d in Padua for her scolding tongue.

Pet. I know her father, though I know not her;
And he knew my deceased father well.
I will not sleep, Hortensio, till I see her; 104
And therefore let me be thus bold with you,
To give you over at this first encounter,
Unless you will accompany me thither.

Gru. I pray you, sir, let him go while the humour lasts. Of my word, an she knew him as well as I do, she would think scolding would do little good upon him. She may, perhaps, call him half a score knaves or so: why, that’s nothing: an he begin once, he’ll rail in his rope-tricks. I’ll tell you what, sir, an she stand him but a little, he will throw a figure in her face, and so disfigure her with it that she shall have no more eyes to see withal than a cat. You know him not, sir.

Hor. Tarry, Petrucho, I must go with thee,
For in Baptista’s keep my treasure is: 120
He hath the jewel of my life in hold,
His youngest daughter, beautiful Bianca,
And her withholds from me and other more,
Suitors to her and rivals in my love; 124
Supposing it a thing impossible,
For those defects I have before rehearsed’d,
That ever Katharina will be woo’d:
Therefore this order hath Baptista ta’en, 128
That none shall have access unto Bianca,
Till Katharine the curst have got a husband.

Gru. Katharine the curst!
A title for a maid of all titles the worst. 132
Hor. Now shall my friend Petrucho do me grace,
And offer me, disguis’d in sober robes,
To old Baptista as a schoolmaster
Well seen in music, to instruct Bianca; 136
That so I may, by this device, at least
Have leave and leisure to make love to her,
And unsuspected court her by herself.

Gru. Here’s no knavery! See, to beguile the old folks, how the young folks lay their heads together!

Enter GREMIO, and LUCENTIO disguised, with books under his arm.

Master, master, look about you: who goes there, ha? 144

Hor. Peace, Grumio! ’tis the rival of my love.

Petrucho, stand by awhile.

Gru. A proper striping, and an amorous!

Gre. Of very well; I have perus’d the note.

Hark you, sir; I’ll have them very fairly bound:
All books of love, see that at any hand,
And see you read no other lectures to her.
You understand me. Over and beside 150
Signior Baptista’s liberality,
I’ll mend it with a largess. Take your papers too,
And let me have them very well perfum’d;
For she is sweeter than perfum’d itself 156
To whom they go to. What will you read to her?

Luc. What’er I read to her, I’ll plead for you,
As for my patron, stand you so assur'd,
As firmly & yourself were still in place; 160
Yea, and perhaps with more successful words
Than you, unless you were a scholar, sir.
Gr. Of this learning, what a thing it is.
Gr. O! this woodcock, what an ass it is. 164
Pet. Peace, sirrah!
Hor. Grumio, mum! God save you, Signior
Gremio!
Gr. And you're well met, Signior Hortensio.
Trow you whither I am going? To Baptista
Minola. 168
I promis'd to inquire carefully
About a schoolmaster for the fair Bianca;
And, by good fortune, I have lighted well
On this young man; for learning and behaviour
Fit for her turn; well read in poetry 173
And other books, good ones, I warrant ye.
Hor. 'Tis well: and I have met a gentleman
Hath promis'd me to help me to another, 176
A fine musician to instruct our mistress:
So shall I no whit be behind in duty
To fair Bianca, so belov'd of me.
Gr. Belov'd of me, and that my deeds shall
prove. 180
Gr. [Aside.] And that his bags shall prove.
Hor. Gremio, 'tis now no time to vent our
love:
Listen to me, and if you speak me fair,
I'll tell you news indifferent good for either. 184
Here is a gentleman whom by chance I met,
Upon agreement from us to his liking,
Will undertake to woo curst Katharine;
Yea, and to marry her, if her dowry please. 188
Gr. So said, so done, is well.
Hortensio, have you told him all her faults?
Pet. I know she is an irksome, brawling
scold:
If that be all, masters, I hear no harm. 192
Gr. No, sayst me so, friend? What country-
man?
Pet. Born in Verona, old Antonio's son:
My father dead, my fortune lives for me;
And I do hope good days and long to see. 196
Gr. O, sir, such a life, with such a wife, were
strange!
But if you have a stomach, to't i' God's name:
You shall have me assisting you in all.
But will you woo this wild-cat?
Gr. Will he woo her? ay, or I'll hang her.
Pet. Why came I hither but to that intent?
Think you a little din can daunt mine ears?
Have I not in my time heard lions roar? 204
Have I not heard the sea, puff'd up with winds,
Rage like an angry boar chafed with sweat?
Have I not heard great ordnance in the field,
And heaven's artillery thunder in the skies? 208
Have I not in a pitched battle heard
Loud 'larums, neighing steeds, and trumpets' clang?
And do you tell me of a woman's tongue,
That gives not half so great a blow to hear 212
As will a chestnut in a farmer's fire?
Tush, tush! fear boys with bugs.
Gr. [Aside.] For he fears none.
Gr. Hortensio, hark:
This gentleman is happily arriv'd, 216
My mind presumes, for his own good and ours.
Hor. I promis'd we would be contributors,
And bear his charge of wooing, whatsoe'er.
Gr. And so we will, provided that he win her.
Gr. [Aside.] I would I were as sure of a good
dinner. 221

Enter Tranio, bravely apparel'd; and
Biondello.
Tra. Gentlemen, God save you! If I may be
bold,
Tell me, I beseech you, which is the readiest way
To the house of Signior Baptista Minola? 224
Bion. He that has the two fair daughters:
is't he you mean?
Tra. Even he, Biondello!
Gr. Hark you, sir; you mean not her to—
Tra. Perhaps, him and her, sir: what have
you to do? 228
Pet. Not her that chides, sir, at any hand, I
pray.
Tra. I love no chiders, sir. Biondello, let's
away.
Luc. [Aside.] Well begun, Tranio.
Hor. Sir, a word ere you go:
Are you a suitor to the maid you talk of, yea
or no? 232
Tra. And if I be, sir, is it any offence?
Gr. No; if without more words you will get
you hence.
Tra. Why, sir, I pray, are not the streets as
free
For me as for you?
Gr. But so is not she. 236
Tra. For what reason, I beseech you?
Gr. For this reason, if you'll know,
That she's the choice love of Signior Gremio.
Hor. That she's the chosen of Signior Hor-
tensio. 240
Tra. Softly, my masters! if you be gentlemen,
Do me this right; hear me with patience.
Baptista is a noble gentleman,
To whom my father is not all unknown; 244
And were his daughter fairer than she is,
She may more suitors have, and me for one.
Fair Leda's daughter had a thousand wooers;
Then well one more may fair Bianca have, 248
And so she shall; Lucentio shall make one,
Though Paris came in hope to speed alone.

Gre. What! this gentleman will out-talk us all.

Luc. Sir, give him head: I know he'll prove a jade.

Pet. Hortensio, to what end are all these words?

Hor. Sir, let me be so bold as ask you,
Did you yet ever see Baptista's daughter?

Tra. No, sir; but hear I do that he hath two,
The one as famous for a scolding tongue 257
As is the other for beauteous modesty.

Pet. Sir, sir, the first's for me; let her go by.

Gre. Yea, leave that labour to great Hercules,
And let it be more than Alcides' twelve. 261

Pet. Sir, understand you this of me sooth:
The youngest daughter, whom you hearken for,
Her father keeps from all access of suitors, 264
And will not promise her to any man
Until the elder sister first be wed;
The younger then is free, and not before.

Tra. If it be so, sir, that you are the man 268
Must stead us all, and me among the rest;
And if you break the ice, and do this feat,
Achieve the elder, set the younger free
For our access, whose hap shall be to have her
Will not so graceless be to be ingrate. 273

Hor. Sir, you say well, and well you do conceive;
And since you do profess to be a suitor,
You must, as we do, gratify this gentleman, 276
To whom we all rest generally beholding.

Tra. Sir, I shall not be slack: in sign whereof,
Please ye we may contrive this afternoon,
And quaff carouse to our mistress' health, 280
And do as adversaries do in law,
Strive mightily, but eat and drink as friends.

Gre. } O excellent motion! Fellows, let's be
Bion. } gone.

Hor. The motion's good indeed, and be it so:—
Petruchio, I shall be your ben venuto. [Exeunt.

AGT II.

SCENE I.—Padua. A Room in Baptista's House.

Enter Katharina and Bianca.

Bian. Good sister, wrong me not, nor wrong yourself,
To make a bondmaid and a slave of me;
That I disdain: but for these other gawds,
Unbind my hands, I'll pull them off myself.
Yea, all my raiment, to my petticote;
Or what you will command me will I do,
So well I know my duty to my elders.

Kath. Of all thy suitors, here I charge thee, tell
Whom thou lov'st best: see thou dissemble not.

Bian. Believe me, sister, of all the men alive
I never yet beheld that special face
Which I could fancy more than any other. 12

Kath. Minion, thou liest. Is'st not Hortensio?

Bian. If you affect him, sister, here I swear
I'll plead for you myself, but you shall have him.

Kath. Of them, belike, you fancy riches more;
You will have Gremio to keep you fair. 17

Bian. Is it for him you do enve me so?

Nay, then you jest; and now I well perceive
You have but jested with me all this while: 20
I prithee, sister Kate, untie my hands.

Kath. If that be jest, then all the rest was so.

[Strikes her.

Enter Baptista.

Bap. Why, how now, dame! whence grows this insolence?

Bianca, stand aside. Poor girl! she weeps. 24
Go ply thy needle; meddle not with her.
For shame, thou hilding of a devilish spirit,
Why dost thou wrong her that did ne'er wrong thee?
When did she cross thee with a bitter word? 28

Kath. Her silence flouts me, and I'll be reveng'd. [Flies after BIANCA.

Bap. What! in my sight? Bianca, get thee in. 33

[Exit BIANCA.

Kath. What! will you not suffer me? Nay, now I see
She is your treasure, she must have a husband;
I must dance bare-foot on her wedding-day,
And, for your love to her, lead apes in hell.
Talk not to me: I will go sit and weep
Till I can find occasion of revenge. [Exit.

Bap. Was ever gentleman thus griev'd as I?
But who comes here?

Enter Gremio, with Lucentio in the habit of a mean man; Petruchio, with Hortensio as a Musician; and Tranio, with Biondello bearing a lute and books.

Gre. Good morrow, neighbour Baptista.

Bap. Good morrow, neighbour Gremio. God save you, gentlemen! 41

Pet. And you, good sir. Pray, have you not a daughter
Call'd Katharina, fair and virtuous?

Bap. I have a daughter, sir, call'd Katharina.

Gre. You are too blunt: go to it orderly. 45

Pet. You wrong me, Signior Gremio: give
me leave.

I am a gentleman of Verona, sir,
That, hearing of her beauty and her wit, 48
Her affability and bashful modesty,
THE TAMING OF THE SHREW
Act II, Sc. I.

Her wondrous qualities and mild behaviour,
Am bold to show myself a forward guest
Within your house, to make mine eye the witness
Of that report which I so oft have heard. 53
And, for an entrance to my entertainment,
I do present you with a man of mine,

[Presenting HORTENSIUS.]

Cunning in music and the mathematics, 56
To instruct her fully in those sciences,
Whereof I know she is not ignorant.
Accept of him, or else you do me wrong:
His name is Licio, born in Mantua. 60

Bap. You're welcome, sir; and he, for your
good sake.
But for my daughter Katharine, this I know,
She is not for your turn, the more my grief.

Pet. I see you do not mean to part with her,
Or else you like not of my company. 65

Bap. Mistake me not; I speak but as I find.
Whence are you, sir? what may I call your name?

Pet. Petruchio is my name; Antonio's son;
A man well known throughout all Italy. 69

Bap. I know him well: you are welcome for
his sake.

Gre. Saving your tale, Petruchio, I pray,
Let us, that are poor petitioners, speak too. 72
Backare! you are marvellous forward.

Pet. O, pardon me, Signior Gremio; I would
fairly be doing.

Gre. I doubt it not, sir; but you will curse
your wooing.

Neighbour, this is a gift very grateful, I am sure
of it. To express the like kindness myself, that
have been more kindly beholding to you than
any, freely give unto you this young scholar,

[Presenting LUCENTIO.] that has been long
studying at Rheims; as cunning in Greek,
Latin, and other languages, as the other in
music and mathematics. His name is Cambio;
pray accept his service. 84

Bap. A thousand thanks, Signior Gremio;
welcome, good Cambio.—[To TRANIO.] But, gentle
sir, methinks you walk like a stranger: may I be
so bold to know the cause of your coming? 88

Tran. Pardon me, sir, the boldness is mine own,
That, being a stranger in this city here,
Do make myself a suitor to your daughter,
Unto Bianca, fair and virtuous. 92
Nor is your firm resolve unknown to me,
In the preferment of the eldest sister.
This liberty is all that I request,
That, upon knowledge of my parentage,
I may have welcome 'mongst the rest that woo,
And free access and favour as the rest:
And, toward the education of your daughters,
I here bestow a simple instrument,
And this small packet of Greek and Latin books:

If you accept them, then their worth is great.

Bap. Lucentio is your name, of whence, I pray?

Tran. Of Pisa, sir; son to Vincentio. 104

Bap. A mighty man of Pisa; by report
I know him well: you are very welcome, sir.

[To HORTENSIUS.] Take you the lute, [To LUCEN-
TIO.] and you the set of books;
You shall go see your pupils presently. 108
Holla, within!

Enter a Servant.
Sirrah, lead these gentlemen
To my two daughters, and then tell them both
These are their tutors: bid them use them well.

[Exit Servant, with HORTENSIUS, LUCENTIO,
and BIONDELLO.]

We will go walk a little in the orchard, 112
And then to dinner. You are passing welcome,
And so I pray you all to think yourselves.

Pet. Signior Baptista, my business asketh
haste,
And every day I cannot come to woo. 116
You knew my father well, and in him me,
Left solely heir to all his lands and goods,
Which I have better'd rather than decreas'd:
Then tell me, if I get your daughter's love, 120
What dowry shall I have with her to wife?

Bap. After my death the one half of my lands,
And in possession twenty thousand crowns.

Pet. And, for that dowry, I'll assure her of
Her widowhood, be it that she survive me, 125
In all my lands and leases whatsoever.
Let specialties be therefore drawn between us,
That covenants may be kept on either hand. 128

Bap. Ay, when the special thing is well ob-
tain'd,
That is, her love; for that is all in all.

Pet. Why, that is nothing; for I tell you,
father,
I am as peremptory as she proud-minded; 132
And where two raging fires meet together
They do consume the thing that feeds their fury:
Though little fire grows great with little wind,
Yet extreme gusts will blow out fire and all; 136
So I to her, and so she yields to me;
For I am rough and woo not like a babe.

Bap. Well mayst thou woo, and happy be
thy speed!
But be thou arm'd for some unhappy words. 140

Pet. Ay, to the proof; as mountains are for
winds,
That shake not, though they blow perpetually.

Re-enter HORTENSIUS, with his head broke.

Bap. How now, my friend! why dost thou
look so pale?
Hor. For fear, I promise you, if I look pale.
Bap. What, will my daughter prove a good
musician? 145
Hor. I think she’ll sooner prove a soldier:
Iron may hold with her, but never lutes.
Bap. Why, then thou canst not break her to
the lute? 148
Hor. Why, no; for she hath broke the lute
to me.
I did but tell her she mistook her frets,
And bow’d her hand to teach her fingering;
When, with a most impatient devilish spirit, 152
‘Frets, call you these?’ quoth she; ‘I’ll fume
with them.’
And, with that word, she struck me on the head,
And through the instrument my pate made way;
And there I stood amazed for a while, 156
As on a pillory, looking through the lute;
While she did call me rascal fiddler,
And twangling Jack; with twenty such vile
terms
As she had studied to misuse me so. 160
Pet. Now, by the world, it is a lusty wench!
I love her ten times more e’er I did:
O! how I long to have some chat with her!
Bap. [To Hortensio.] Well, go with me,
and be not so discomfited. 164
Proceed in practice with my younger daughter;
She’s apt to learn, and thankful for good turns.
Signior Petruchio, will you go with us,
Or shall I send my daughter Kate to you? 168
Pet. I pray you do; I will attend her here,
[Execunt Baptistia, Gremio, Tranio, and
Hortensio.
And woo her with some spirit when she comes.
Say that she rall; why then I’ll tell her plain
She sings as sweetly as a nightingale: 172
Say that she frown; I’ll say she looks as clear
As morning roses newly wash’d with dew:
Say she be mute and will not speak a word;
Then I’ll commend her volubility, 176
And say she uttereth piercing eloquence:
If she do bid me pack; I’ll give her thanks,
As though she bid me stay by her a week:
If she deny to wed; I’ll crave the day 180
When I shall ask the banns, and when be
married.
But here she comes; and now, Petruchio, speak.

Enter Katharina.

Good morrow, Kate; for that’s your name, I hear.
Kath. Well have you heard, but something
hard of hearing: 184
They call me Katharine that do talk of me.
Pet. You lie, in faith; for you are call’d
plain Kate,
And bonny Kate, and sometimes Kate the curst;
But, Kate, the prettiest Kate in Christendom;
Kate of Kate Hall, my super-dainty Kate, 189
For dainties are all cates: and therefore, Kate,
Take this of me, Kate of my consolation;
Hearing thy mildness prais’d in every town, 192
Thy virtues spoke of, and thy beauty sounded,—
Yet not so deeply as to thee belongs,—
Myself am mov’d to woo thee for my wife.
Kath. Mov’d! in good time: let him that
mov’d you hither 196
Remove you hence. I knew you at the first,
You were a moveable.
Pet. Why, what’s a moveable?
Kath. A joint-stool.
Pet. Thou hast hit it: come, sit on me.
Kath. Asses are made to bear, and so are you.
Pet. Women are made to bear, and so are you.
Kath. No such jade as bear you, if me you
mean. 202
Pet. Alas! good Kate, I will not burden thee;
For, knowing thee to be but young and light,—
Kath. Too light for such a swain as you to catch,
And yet as heavy as my weight should be.
Pet. Should be! should buzz!
Kath. Well ta’en, and like a buzzard.
Pet. O slow-wing’d turtle! shall a buzzard
take thee? 208
Kath. Ay, for a turtle, as he takes a buzzard.
Pet. Come, come, you wasp; I’ faith you are
too angry.
Kath. If I be waspish, best beware my sting.
Pet. My remedy is, then, to pluck it out. 212
Kath. Ay, if the fool could find it where it lies.
Pet. Who knows not where a wasp does wear
his sting?
In his tail.
Kath. In his tongue.
Pet. Whose tongue?
Kath. Yours, if you talk of tails; and so fare-
well. 216
Pet. What! with my tongue in your tail?
nay, come again.

Good Kate, I am a gentleman.
Kath. That I’ll try. [Striking him.
Pet. I swear I’ll cuff you if you strike again.
Kath. So may you lose your arms: 220
If you strike me, you are no gentleman;
And if no gentleman, why then no arms.
Pet. A herald, Kate? O! put me in thy
books.
Kath. What is your crest? a coxcomb? 224
Pet. A combless cock; so Kate will be my hen.
Kath. No cock of mine; you crow too like a
craven.
Pet. Nay, come, Kate, come; you must not
look so sour.
Kath. It is my fashion when I see a crab. 228
Why, here's no crab, and therefore look not sour.

There is, there is.

Then show it me.

Had I a glass, I would.

What, you mean my face?

Well aim'd of such a young one.

Now, by Saint George, I am too young for you.

Yet you are wither'd.

'Tis with cares.

I care not.

Nay, hear you, Kate: in sooth, you 'scape not so.

I chafe you, if I tarry: let me go.

No, not a whit: I find you passing gentle.

'Twas told me you were rough and coy and sullen,
And now I find report a very liar;
For thou art pleasant, gamesome, passing courteous,
But slow in speech, yet sweet as spring-time flowers:
Thou canst not frown, thou canst not look askance,
Nor bite the lip, as angry wenches will;
Nor hast thou pleasure to be cross in talk;
But thou with mildness entertain' st thy wooers,
With gentle conference, soft and affable.

And the world report that Kate doth limp?
O slanderous world! Kate, like the hazel-twigs,
Is straight and slender, and as brown in hue
As hazel nuts, and sweeter than the kernels.

Go, fool, and whom thou keep' st command.

Did ever Dian so become a grove
As Kate this chamber with her princely gait?

Or be thou Dian, and let her be Kate,

And then let Kate be chaste, and Dian sportful.

Where did you study all this goodly speech?

A witty mother! witless else her son.

Am I not wise?

Yes; keep you warm.

Marry, so I mean, sweet Katharine, in thy bed:
And therefore, setting all this chat aside,

Thus in plain terms: your father hath consented
That you shall be my wife; your dowry 'greed on;

And will you, nill you, I will marry you.

Now, Kate, I am a husband for your turn;
For, by this light, whereby I see thy beauty,—
Thy beauty that doth make me like thee well,—
Thou must be married to no man but me:

For I am he am born to tame you, Kate;

And bring you from a wild Kate to a Kate
Conformable as other household Kates.

Here comes your father: never make denial;
I must and will have Katharine to my wife.

Re-enter Baptista, Gremio, and Tranio.

Bap. Now, Signior Petruchio, how speed you with my daughter?

How but well, sir? how but well?

It were impossible I should speed amiss.

Bap. Why, how now, daughter Katharine! in your dumps?

Call you me daughter? now, I promise you
You have show'd a tender fatherly regard,
To wish me wed to one half lunatic;
A mad-cap ruffian and a swearing Jack,
That thinks with oaths to face the matter out.

Father, 'tis thus: yourself and all the world,

That talk'd of her, have talk'd amiss of her:
If she be curst, it is for policy,
For she's not froward, but modest as the dove;
She is not hot, but temperate as the morn;
For patience she will prove a second Grisell,
And Roman Lucrece for her chastity;
And to conclude, we have 'greed so well together,
That upon Sunday is the wedding-day.

I'll see thee hang'd on Sunday first.

Hark, Petruchio: she says she'll see thee hang'd first.

Is this your speeding? nay then, good night our part!

Be patient, gentlemen; I choose her for myself:

If she and I be pleas'd, what's that to you?

'Tis bargain'd 'twixt us twain, being alone,
That she shall still be curst in company.

I tell you, 'tis incredible to believe

How much she loves me: O! the kindest Kate.

She hung about my neck, and kissed on kiss

She vied so fast, protesting oath on oath,

That in a twink she won me to her love.

O! you are novices: 'tis a world to see,

How tame, when men and women are alone,
A meacoock wretch can make the curstest shrew.

Give me thy hand, Kate: I will unto Venice
To buy apparel 'gainst the wedding-day.

Provide the feast, father, and bid the guests;

I will be sure my Katharine shall be fine.

Bap. I know not what to say; but give me

God send you joy, Petruchio! 'tis a match.

Amen, say we: we will be witnesses.

Father, and wife, and gentlemen, adieu.

I will to Venice; Sunday comes apace.
We will have rings, and things, and fine array; 
And, kiss me, Kate, we will be married o' Sunday.  
[Exeunt Petruchio and Katharina, severally.

Gre. Was ever match clapp'd up so suddenly? 
Bap. Faith, gentlemen, now I play a merchant's part, 
And venture madly on a desperate mart.

Tra. 'Twas a commodity lay fretting by you: 
'Twill bring you gain, or perish on the seas. 
Bap. The gain I seek is, quiet in the match. 
Gre. No doubt but he hath got a quiet catch.
But now, Baptista, to your younger daughter: 
Now is the day we long have looked for: 
I am your neighbour, and was suitor first. 328

Tra. And I am one that love Bianca more 
Than words can witness, or your thoughts can guess.

Gre. Youngling, thou canst not love so dear 
as I.

Tra. Greybeard, thy love doth freeze.

Gre. But thine doth fry.

Skipper, stand back: 'tis age that nourisheth. 
Tra. But youth in ladies' eyes that flourisheth.

Bap. Content you, gentlemen; I'll compound 
this strife:

'Tis deeds must win the prize; and he, of both, 
That can assure my daughter greatest dower 
Shall have my Bianca's love.

Say, Signior Gremio, what can you assure her? 
Gre. First, as you know, my house within the city 
is richly furnished with plate and gold: 
Basins and ewers to lave her dainty hands; 
My hangings all of Tyrian tapestry; 
In ivory coffers I have stuff'd my crowns; 
In cypress chests my arreas counterpoints, 
Costly apparel, tents, and canopies, 
Fine linen, Turkey cushions bese'd with pearl, 
Valance of Venice gold in needle-work, 
Pewter and brass, and all things that belong 
To house or housekeeping: then, at my farm 
I have a hundred milch-kine to the pail, 
Six score fat oxen standing in my stalls, 
And all things answerable to this portion. 
Myself am struck in years, I must confess; 
And if I die to-morrow, this is hers, 
If whilst I live she will be only mine.

Tra. That 'only' came well in. Sir, list to me: 
I am my father's heir and only son: 
If I may have your daughter to my wife, 
I'll leave her houses three or four as good, 
Within rich Pisa walls, as any one 
Old Signior Gremio has in Padua; 
Besides two thousand ducats by the year 
Of fruitful land, all of which shall be her jointure.

What, have I pinch'd you, Signior Gremio? 
Gre. Two thousand ducats by the year of land! 
My land amounts not to so much in all: 
That she shall have; besides an argosy 368 
That now is lying in Marseilles' road: 
What, have I chok'd you with an argosy? 

Tra. Gremio, 'tis known my father hath no less 
Than three great argosies, besides two galliasses, 
And twelve tight galleys; these I will assure her, 
And twice as much, whate'er thou offer'st next. 
Gre. Nay, I have offer'd all, I have no more; 
And she can have no more than all I have: 376 
If you like me, she shall have me and mine.

Tra. Why, then the maid is mine from all the world, 
By your firm promise. Gremio is out-vied.

Bap. I must confess your offer is the best; 
And, let your father make her the assurance, 381 
She is your own; else, you must pardon me: 
If you should die before him, where's her dowry? 

Tra. That's but a cavil: he is old, I young. 
Gre. And may not young men die as well as old? 385

Bap. Well, gentlemen, 
I am thus resolv'd. On Sunday next, you know, 
My daughter Katharine is to be married: 388 
Now, on the Sunday following, shall Bianca 
Be bride to you, if you make this assurance; 
If not, to Signior Gremio: 
And so, I take my leave, and thank you both. 392

Gre. Adieu, good neighbour. [Exit Baptista.] 
Now I fear thee not: 
Sirrah young gamester, your father were a fool To give thee all, and in his waning age 
Set foot under thy table. Tut! a toy! 396 
An old Italian fox is not so kind, my boy. [Exit. 

Tra. A vengeance on your crafty wither'd hide! 
Yet I have fac'd it with a card of ten. 
'Tis in my head to do my master good: 
I see no reason, but suppos'd Lucentio 
Must get a father, called 'suppos'd Vincentio; ' 
And that's a wonder: fathers, commonly 
Do get their children; but in this case of wooing, 
A child shall get a sire, if I fail not of my cunning. 

ACT III.

SCENE I.—Padua.  A Room in Baptista's House.

Enter Lucentio, Hortensio, and Bianca.

Luc. Fiddler, forbear; you grow too forward, sir:
Have you so soon forgot the entertainment
Her sister Katharine welcom’d you withal?
   Hor. But, wrangling pedant, this is
4  The patroness of heavenly harmony:
Then give me leave to have prerogative;
And when in music we have spent an hour,
Your lecture shall have leisure for as much. 8
   Luc. Preposterous ass, that never read so far
To know the cause why music was ordain’d!
Was it not to refresh the mind of man
After his studies or his usual pain? 12
Then give me leave to read philosophy,
And while I pause, serve in your harmony.
   Hor. Surrath, I will not bear these braves of thine.
   Bian. Why, gentlemen, you do me double wrong, 16
To strive for that which resteth in my choice.
I am no breeching scholar in the schools;
I’ll not be tied to hours nor ‘pointed times,
But learn my lessons as I please myself. 20
And, to cut off all strife, here sit we down:
Take you your instrument, play you the whiles;
His lecture will be done ere you have tun’d.
   Hor. You’ll leave his lecture when I am in tune?
   [Retires.
   Luc. That will be never: tune your instrument.
   25  Bian. Where left we last?
   Luc. Here, madam:—
   Hac ibat Simois; hic est Sigeia tellus; 28
   Hic sederat Priami regia celsa senis. 29
   Bian. Construe them.
   Luc. Hac ibat, as I told you before, Simois,
I am Lucentio, hic est, son unto Vincentio of Pisa,
Sigeia tellus, disguised thus to get your love;
Hic sederat, and that Lucentio that comes
a wooing, Priami, is my man Tranio, regia,
bearing my port, celsa senis, that we might be
beguile the old pantaloon.
   Hor. [Returning.] Madam, my instrument’s in tune.
   37  Bian. Let’s hear.—
   [HORTENSIO PLAYS.
   O fie! the treble jars.
   Luc. Spit in the hole, man, and tune again.
   Bian. Now let me see if I can construe it:
   Hac ibat Simois, I know you not, hic est Sigeia tellus,
I trust you not; Hic sederat Priami,
take heed he hear us not, regia, presume not;
celsa senis, despair not.
   Hor. Madam, ’tis now in tune.
   Luc. All but the base.
   40  Hor. The base is right; ’tis the base knave that jars.
How fiery and forward our pedant is!

[Aside.] Now, for my life, the knave doth court my love:
   Pedaschule, I’ll watch you better yet.
   Bian. In time I may believe, yet I mistrust.
   Luc. Mistrust it not; for, sure, Æacides 53
Was Ajax, call’d so from his grandfather.
   Bian. I must believe my master; else, I promise you,
I should be arguing still upon that doubt: 56
But let it rest. Now, Licio, to you.
Good masters, take it not unkindly, pray,
That I have been thus pleasant with you both.
   Hor. [To LUCENTIO.] You may go walk, and
   60 give me leave a while:
My lessons make no music in three parts.
   Luc. Are you so formal, sir? [Aside.] Well, I must wait,
And watch withal; for, but I be deceiv’d,
Our fine musician growth amorous.
   64  Hor. Madam, before you touch the instrument,
To learn the order of my fingering,
I must begin with rudiments of art;
To teach you gamut in a briefer sort,
More pleasant, pithy, and effectual,
Than hath been taught by any of my trade:
And there it is in writing, fairly drawn.
   Bian. Why, I am past my gamut long ago.
   72  Hor. Yet read the gamut of Hortensio.
   Bian.
   ‘Gamut’ I am, the ground of all accord,
‘A re,’ to plead Hortensio’s passion:
‘B mi,’ Bianca, take him for thy lord,
‘C fa ut,’ that loves with all affection:
‘D sol re,’ one clef, two notes have I:
‘E la mi,’ show pity, or I die.
Call you this gamut? tut, I like it not: 80
Old fashions please me best; I am not so nice,
To change true rules for odd inventions.

Enter a Servant.
   Serv. Mistress, your father prays you leave your books,
And help to dress your sister’s chamber up: 84
You know to-morrow is the wedding-day.
   Bian. Farewell, sweet masters both: I must be gone.
   [Exit BIANCA and SERVANT.
   Luc. Faith, mistress, then I have no cause to stay.

   Exeunt.
   Hor. But I have cause to pry into this pedant: 88
Methinks he looks as though he were in love.
Yet if thy thoughts, Bianca, be so humble
To cast thy wandering eyes on every stale,
Seise thee that list: if once I find thee ranging, 92
Hortensio will be quit with thee by changing.

[Exit.
SCENE II.—The Same. Before BAPTISTA’S House.

Enter BAPTISTA, Gremio, Tranio, Katharina, Bianca, Lucentio, and Attendants.

Bap. [To Tranio.] Signior Lucentio, this is the ’pointed day
That Katharine and Petruchio should be married,
And yet we hear not of our son-in-law.
What will be said? what mockery will it be
To want the bridegroom when the priest attends
To speak the ceremonial rites of marriage!
What says Lucentio to this shame of ours?
Kath. No shame but mine: I must, forsooth, be forc’d
To give my hand oppos’d against my heart
Unto a mad-brain rudesby, full of spleen;
Who woo’d in haste and means to wed at leisure.
I told you, I, he was a frantic fool,
Hiding his bitter jests in blunt behaviour;
And to be noted for a merry man,
He’ll woo a thousand, ’point the day of marriage,
Make friends invite, and proclaim the banns; yet never means to wed where he hath woo’d.
Now must the world point at poor Katharine,
And say, ’Lo! there is mad Petruchio’s wife,
If it would please him come and marry her.’

Tra. Patience, good Katharine, and Baptista too.

Upon my life, Petruchio means but well,
Whatever fortune stays him from his word:
Though he be blunt, I know him passing wise;
Though he be merry, yet withal he’s honest.

Kath. Would Katharine had never seen him though!

[Exit weeping, followed by Bianca and others.] Bap. Go, girl: I cannot blame thee now to weep,
For such an injury would vex a very saint,
Much more a shrew of thy impatient humour.

Enter Biondello.

Bion. Master, master! news! old news, and such news as you never heard of!

Bap. Is it new and old too? how may that be?

Bion. Why, is it not news to hear of Petruchio’s coming?

Bap. Is he come?

Bion. Why, no, sir.

Bap. What then?

Bion. He is coming.

Bap. When will he be here?

Bion. When he stands where I am and sees you there.

Tra. But, say, what to thine old news? 43

Bion. Why, Petruchio is coming, in a new hat and an old jerkin; a pair of old breeches thrice turned; a pair of boots that have been candle-cases, one buckled, another laced; an old rusty sword ta’en out of the town-armoury, with a broken hilt, and shapeless; with two broken points: his horse hipped with an old mothy saddle and stirrups of no kindred; besides, possessed with the glanders and like to mose in the chine; troubled with the lampass, infected with the fashions, full of windgalls, sped with spavins, rayed with the yellows, past cure of the fives, stark spoilt with the taggers, begnawn with the bota, swayed in the back, and shoulder-shotten; near-legged before, and with a half-checked bit, and a head-stall of sheep’s leather, which, being restrained to keep him from stumbling, hath been often burst and now repaired with knots; one girth six times pieced, and a woman’s crupper of velure, which hath two letters for her name fairly set down in studs, and here and there pieced with packthread. 65

Bap. Who comes with him?

Bion. O, sir! his lackey, for all the world caparisoned like the horse; with a linen stock on one leg and a kersey boot-hose on the other, gartered with a red and blue list; an old hat, and the ‘humour of forty fancies’ pricked in’t for a feather: a monster, a very monster in apparel, and not like a Christian footboy or a gentleman’s lackey.

Tra. ‘Tis some odd humour pricks him to this fashion;
Yet oftentimes he goes but mean-apparel’d. 76

Bap. I am glad he is come, howsoe’er he comes.

Bion. Why, sir, he comes not.

Bap. Didst thou not say he comes?

Bion. Who? that Petruchio came?

Bap. Ay, that Petruchio came.

Bion. No, sir; I say his horse comes, with him on his back.

Bap. Why, that’s all one.

Bion. Nay, by Saint Jamy, I hold you a penny, a horse and a man is more than one, and yet not many.

Enter PETRUCHIO and GRUMIO.

Pet. Come, where be these gallants? who is at home?

Bap. You are welcome, sir.

Pet. And yet I come not well.
THE TAMING OF THE SHREW

Act III, Sc. II.

B. p. And yet you halst not.

Tra. Not so well appareld; 92
As I wish you were.

Ped. Were it better, I should rush in thus.
But where is Kate? where is my lovely bride?
How does my father? Gentles, methinks you frown:
And wherfore gaze this goodly company,
As if they saw some wondrous monument,
Some comet, or unusual prodigy?

Bap. Why, sir, you know this is your wedding-day:
First were we sad, fearing you would not come;
Now saddier, that you come so unprovided.
Fie! doff this habit, shame to your estate,
An eye-sore to our solemn festival.

Tra. And tell us what occasion of import
Hath all so long detain’d you from your wife,
And sent you hither so unlike yourself?

Ped. Tedium it were to tell, and harsh to hear:
Sufficeeth, I am come to keep my word,
Though in some part enforced to digress;
Which, at more leisure, I will so excuse
As you shall well be satisfied withal.

But where is Kate? I stay too long from her:
The morning wears, ‘tis time we were at church.

Tra. See not your bride in these un reverent robes:
Go to my chamber; put on clothes of mine.

Ped. Not I, believe me: thus I’ll visit her.

Bap. But thus, I trust, you will not marry her.

Ped. Good sooth, even thus; therefore ha’ done words:
To me she’s married, not unto my clothes.
Could I repair what she will wear in me
As I can change these poor accoutrements,
’Twere well for Kate and better for myself.
But what a fool am I to chat with you
When I should bid good morrow to my bride,
And seal the title with a lovely kiss!

[Exeunt PETRUCHIO, GRUMIO, and BIONDELLO.

Tra. He hath some meaning in his mad attire.

We will persuade him, be it possible,
To put on better ere he go to church.

Bap. I’ll after him, and see the event of this.

[Exeunt BAPTISTA, GRUMIO, and Attendants.

Tra. But to her love concerneth us to add
Her father’s liking: which to bring to pass,""
As I before imparted to your worship,
I am to get a man,—what’er he be
It skills not much, we’ll fit him to our turn,—
And he shall be Vincentio of Pisa,
And make assurance here in Padua,
Of greater sums than I have promised.
So shall you quietly enjoy your hope,
And marry sweet Bianca with consent.

Luc. Were it not that my fellow school-master
Doth watch Bianca’s steps so narrowly,
’Twere good, methinks, to steal our marriage;
Which once perform’d, let all the world say no,
I’ll keep mine own, despite of all the world. 145

Tra. That by degrees we mean to look into,
And watch our vantage in this business.
We’ll over-reach the greybeard, Gremio, 148
The narrow-prying father, Minola,
The quaint musician, amorous Licio;
All for my master’s sake, Lucentio.

Re-enter GREMIO.

Signior Gremio, came you from the church? 152

Gre. As willingly as e’er I came from school.

Tra. And is the bride and bridegroom coming home?

Gre. A bridegroom say you? ’Tis a groom indeed,
A grumbling groom, and that the girl shall find.


Gre. Why, he’s a devil, a devil, a very fiend.

Tra. Why, she’s a devil, a devil, the devil’s dam.

Gre. Tut! she’s a lamb, a dove, a fool to him.
I’ll tell you, Sir Lucentio: when the priest 161
Should ask, if Katharine should be his wife,
‘Ay, by gogs-wounds!’ quoth he; and swore so loud,
That, all amaz’d, the priest set fall the book; 164
And, as he stoop’d again to take it up,
The mad-brain’d bridegroom took him such a cuff
That down fell priest and book and book and priest:

‘Now take them up,’ quoth he, ‘if any list.’ 168

Tra. What said the wench when he arose again?

Gre. Trembled and shook; for why he stumpt and swore,
As if the vicar meant to cozen him.
But after many ceremonies done, 172
He calls for wine: ‘A health!’ quoth he; as if
He had been aboard, carousing to his mates
After a storm; quaff’d off the muscadel,
And threw the sops all in the sexton’s face; 176
Having no other reason
But that his beard grew thin and hungrily,
And seem’d to ask him sops as he was drinking.
This done, he took the bride about the neck, 180
And kiss’d her lips with such a clamorous smack
That at the parting all the church did echo:
And I, seeing this, came thence for very shame;
And after me, I know, the rout is coming. 184
Such a mad marriage never was before.
Hark, hark! I hear the minstrels play. [Music.
Re-enter Petruchio, Katharina, Bianca, Baptista, Hortensio, Grumio, and Train.

Pel. Gentlemen and friends, I thank you for your pains:
I know you think to dine with me to-day, 188
And have prepar'd great store of wedding cheer;
But so it is, my haste doth call me hence,
And therefore here I mean to take my leave.

Bap. Is't possible you will away to-night? 192

Pel. I must away to-day, before night come.
Make it no wonder: if you knew my business,
You would entreat me rather go than stay.
And, honest company, I thank you all, 196
That have beheld me give away myself
To this most patient, sweet, and virtuous wife.
Dine with my father, drink a health to me,
For I must hence; and farewell to you all. 200

Tra. Let us entreat you stay till after dinner.

Pel. It may not be.

Gre. Let me entreat you.

Pel. It cannot be.

Kath. Let me entreat you.

Pel. I am content.

Kath. Are you content to stay? 204
But yet not stay, entreat me how you can.

Kath. Now, if you love me, stay.

Pel. Grumio, my horse!

Gru. Ay, sir, they be ready: the oats have eaten the horses. 209

Kath. Nay, then,
Do what thou canst, I will not go to-day;
No, nor to-morrow, nor till I please myself. 212
The door is open, sir, there lies your way;
You may be jogging whiles your boots are green;
For me, I'll not be gone till I please myself.
'Tis like you'll prove a jolly surly groom, 216
That take it on you at the first so roundly.

Pel. O Kate! content thee: prithee, be not angry.

Kath. I will be angry: what hast thou to do?
Father, be quiet; he shall stay my leisure. 220

Gre. Ay, marry, sir, now it begins to work.

Kath. Gentlemen, forward to the bridal dinner:
I see a woman may be made a fool,
If she had not a spirit to resist. 224

Pel. They shall go forward, Kate, at thy command.

Obey the bride, you that attend on her;
Go to the feast, revel and domineer,
Carouse full measure to her maidenhead, 228
Be mad and merry, or go hang yourselves:
But for my bonny Kate, she must with me.
Nay, look not big, nor stamp, nor stare, nor fret;
I will be master of what is mine own. 232
She is my goods, my chattels; she is my house,
My household stuff, my field, my barn,
My horse, my ox, my ass, my anything;
And here she stands, touch her whoever dare;
I'll bring mine action on the proudest he 237
That stops my way in Padua. Grumio,
Draw forth thy weapon, we're beset with thieves;
Rescue thy mistress, if thou be a man. 240
Fear not, sweet wench; they shall not touch thee, Kate:
I'll buckle thee against a million.

[Exeunt Petruchio, Katharina, and Grumio.

Bap. Nay, let them go, a couple of quiet ones.

Gre. Went they not quickly I should die with laughing. 244

Tra. Of all mad matches never was the like.

Luc. Mistress, what's your opinion of your sister?

Bian. That, being mad herself, she's madly mated.

Gre. I warrant him, Petruchio is Kated. 248

Bap. Neighbours and friends, though bride and bridegroom wants
For to supply the places at the table,
You know there wants no junkets at the feast.
Lucentio, you shall supply the bridegroom's place, 252
And let Bianca take her sister's room.

Tra. Shall sweet Bianca practise how to bride it?

Bap. She shall, Lucentio. Come, gentlemen, let's go.

ACT IV.

SCENE I.—A Hall in Petruchio’s Country House.

Enter Grumio.

Gru. Fie, fie, on all tired jades, on all mad masters, and all foul ways! Was ever man so beaten? was ever man so rayed? was ever man so weary? I am sent before to make a fire, and they are coming after to warm them. Now, were not I a little pot and soon hot, my very lips might freeze to my teeth, my tongue to the roof of my mouth, my heart in my belly, ere I should come by a fire to thaw me; but I, with blowing the fire, shall warm myself; for, considering the weather, a taller man than I will take cold. Holla, ho! Curtis. 12

Enter Curtis.

Curt. Who is that calls so coldly?

Gru. A piece of ice: if thou doubt it, thou mayst slide from my shoulder to my heel with
no greater a run but my head and my neck. A
fire, good Curtis.

Curt. Is my master and his wife coming,
Grumio?

Gr. O! ay, Curtis, ay; and therefore fire,
cast on no water.

Curt. Is she so hot a shrew as she’s reported?
Gr. She was, good Curtis, before this frost;
but, thou knowest, winter tames man, woman,
and beast; for it hath tamed my old master, and
my new mistress, and myself, fellow Curtis.

Curt. Away, you three-inch-fool! I am no
beast. 28

Gr. Am I but three inches? why, thy horn
is a foot; and so long am I at the least. But
wilt thou make a fire, or shall I complain on
thee to our mistress, whose hand,—she being
now at hand,—thou shalt soon feel, to thy cold
comfort, for being slow in thy hot office?

Curt. I prithee, good Grumio, tell me, how
goes the world?

Gr. A cold world, Curtis, in every office but
thine; and therefore, fire. Do thy duty, and
have thy duty, for my master and mistress are
almost frozen to death.

Curt. There’s fire ready; and therefore, good
Grumio, the news?

Gr. Why, ‘Jack, boy! ho, boy!’ and as
much news as thou wilt.

Curt. Come, you are so full of cony-catching.
Gr. Why therefore fire: for I have caught
extreme cold. Where’s the cook? is supper
ready, the house trimmed, rushes strewn, cob-
webs swept; the serving-men in their new fusi-
tian, their white stockings, and every officer his
wedding-garment on? Be the Jacks fair within,
the Jills fair without, and carpets laid, and
everything in order?

Curt. All ready; and therefore, I pray thee,
news?

Gr. First, know, my horse is tired; my
master and mistress fallen out.

Curt. How?

Gr. Out of their saddles into the dirt; and
thereby hangs a tale.

Curt. Let’s ha’nt, good Grumio.

Gr. Lend thine ear.

Curt. Here.

Gr. [Striking him.] There.

Curt. This to feel a tale, not to hear a tale.
Gr. And therefore it is called a sensible tale;
and this cuff was but to knock at your ear and
beseech listening. Now I begin: Imprimis, we
came down a foul hill, my master riding behind
my mistress,—

Curt. Both of one horse?

Gr. What’s that to thee?
Where is Nathaniel, Gregory, Philip?—
All Serv. Here, here, sir; here, sir.
Pet. Here, sir! here, sir! here, sir! here, sir! here, sir!
You logger-headed and unpolish'd grooms! 128
What, no attendance? no regard? no duty?
Where is the foolish knave I sent before?
Gru. Here, sir; as foolish as I was before.
Pet. You peasant swain! you whoreson malthorse drudge!
Did I not bid thee meet me in the park,
And bring along these rascal knaves with thee?
Gru. Nathaniel's coat, sir, was not fully made,
And Gabriel's pumps were all unpink'd i' the heel,
There was no link to colour Peter's hat,
And Walter's dagger was not come from sheathing,
There were none fine but Adam, Ralph, and Gregory;
The rest were ragged, old, and beggarly;
Yet, as they are, here are they come to meet you.
Pet. Go, rascals, go, and fetch my supper in.
[Execut some of the Servants.
Where is the life that I led?
Where are those?—Sit down, Kate, and welcome.
Sourd, sour, sour, sour, sour!
Re-enter Servants with supper.
Why, when, I say?—Nay, good sweet Kate, be merry.
Off with my boots, you rogues! you villains!
When?
It was the friar of orders grey,
As he forth walked on his way:
Out, you rogues! you pluck my foot awry:
Take that, and mend the plucking off the other.
Be merry, Kate. Some water, here; what, ho!
Where's my spaniel Troilus? Sirrah, get you hence
And bid my cousin Ferdinand come hither:
[Exit Servant.
One, Kate, that you must kiss, and be acquainted with.
Where are my slippers? Shall I have some water?
Come, Kate, and wash, and welcome heartily.—
[Servant lets the ewer fall. PETRUChIo strikes him.
You whoreson villain! will you let it fall?
Kath. Patience, I pray you; 'twas a fault unwilling.
Pet. A whoreson, beetles-headed, flap-ear'd knave!
Come, Kate, sit down; I know you have a stomach.
Will you give thanks, sweet Kate, or else shall I?—
What's this? mutton?
First Serv. Ay.
Pet. Who brought it?
First Serv. I.
Pet. 'Tis burnt; and so is all the meat. 164
What dogs are these! Where is the rascal cook?
How durst you, villains, bring it from the dresser,
And serve it thus to me that love it not?
[Throws the meat, &c. at them.
There, take it to you, trenchers, cups, and all.
You needless jolthead and unmanner'd slaves!
What! do you grumble? I'll be with you straight.
Kath. I pray you, husband, be not so discreet:
The meat was well if you were so contented. 172
Pet. I tell thee, Kate, 'twas burnt and dried away;
And I expressly am forbid to touch it,
For it engenders choler, planteth anger;
And better 'twere that both of us did fast,
Since, of ourselves, ourselves are cholerick,
Than feed it with such over-roasted flesh.
Be patient; to-morrow shall be mended,
And for this night we'll fast for company: 180
Come, I will bring thee to thy bridal chamber.
[Execut PETRUChIO, KATHARINA, and CURTIS.
Nath. Peter, didst ever see the like?
Peter. He kills her in her own humour.
Re-enter CURTIS.
Gru. Where is he?
Curt. In her chamber, making a sermon of continency to her;
And rail, and swears, and rates, that she, poor soul,
Knows not which way to stand, to look, to speak,
And sits as one new-risen from a dream. 189
Away, away! for he is coming hither. [Execut.
Re-enter PETRUChIO.
Pet. Thus have I politicly begun my reign,
And 'tis my hope to end successfully.
My falcon now is sharp and passing empty,
And till she stoop she must not be full-gorg'd,
For then she never looks upon her lure.
Another way I have to man my haggard,
To make her come and know her keeper's call;
That is, to watch her, as we watch these kites
That bate and beat and will not be obedient.
She eat no meat to-day, nor none shall eat; 200
Last night she slept not, nor to-night she shall not:
As with the meat, some undeserved fault
I'll find about the making of the bed;
And here I'll fling the pillow, there the bolster,
This way the coverlet, another way the sheets:
Ay, and amid this hurry I intend
That all is done in reverend care of her;

298
And in conclusion she shall watch all night: 208
And if she chance to nod I'll rail and brawl,
And with the clamour keep her still awake.
This is a way to kill a wife with kindness;
And thus I'll curb her mad and headstrong humour. 212
He that knows better how to tame a shrew,
Now let him speak: 'tis charity to show. [Exit.


Enter Tranio and Hortensio.

Tra. Is't possible, friend Licio, that Mistress Bianca
Doth fancy any other but Lucentio?
I tell you, sir, she bears me fair in hand.
Hor. Sir, to satisfy you in what I have said, 4
Stand by, and mark the manner of his teaching.  [They stand aside.

Enter Bianca and Lucentio.

Luc. Now, mistress, profit you in what you read?
Bian. What, master, read you? first resolve me that.
Luc. I read that I profess, the Art to Love. 8
Bian. And may you prove, sir, master of your art!
Luc. While you, sweet dear, prove mistress of my heart.  [They retire.
Hor. Quick proceed, marry! Now, tell me,
You that durst swear that your mistress Bianca
Loved none in the world so well as Lucentio. 13
Tra. O despiteful love! unconstant woman-kind!
I tell thee, Licio, this is wonderful.
Hor. Mistake no more: I am not Licio, 16
Nor a musician, as I seem to be;
But one that scorns to live in this disguise,
For such a one as leaves a gentleman,
And makes a god of such a cullion:
Know, sir, that I am call'd Hortensio.

Tra. Signior Hortensio, I have often heard
Of your entire affection to Bianca;
And since mine eyes are witness of her lightness,
I will with you, if you be so contented,
Forsewear Bianca and her love for ever.
Hor. See, how they kiss and court! Signior Lucentio,

Here is my hand, and here I firmly vow
Never to woo her more; but I do forswear her,
As one unworthy all the former favours
That I have fondly flattering hers withal.

Tra. And here I take the like unfeigned oath,
Never to marry with her though she would entreat,

Fie on her! see how beastly she doth court him.
Hor. Would all the world, but he had quite forsown!
For me, that I may surely keep mine oath,
I will be married to a wealthy widow
Ere three days pass, which hath as long lov'd me
As I have lov'd this proud disdainful haggard.
And so farewell, Signior Lucentio. 40
Kindness in women, not their beauteous looks,
Shall win my love: and so I take my leave,
In resolution as I swore before.

[Exit Hortensio. Lucentio and Bianca advance.

Tra. Mistress Bianca, bless you with such grace
As longeth to a lover's blessed case!
Nay, I have ta'en you napping, gentle love,
And have forsworn you with Hortensio.

Bian. Tranio, you jest. But have you both forsworn me?

Tra. Mistress, we have.
Luc. Then we are rid of Licio.

Tra. I faith, he'll have a lusty widow now,
That shall be woo'd and wedded in a day.

Bian. God give him joy!

Tra. Ay, and he'll tame her.
Bian. He says so, Tranio.

Tra. Faith, he is gone unto the taming-school.
Bian. The taming-school! what, is there such a place?

Tra. Ay, mistress, and Petruchio is the master;
That teacheth tricks eleven and twenty long,
To tame a shrew, and charm her chattering tongue.

Enter Biondello, running.

Bion. O master, master! I have watch'd so long
That I'm dog-weary; but at last I spied
An ancient angel coming down the hill
Will serve the turn.

Tra. What is he, Biondello?

Bion. Master, a mercantante, or a pedant,
I know not what; but formal in apparel,
In gait and countenance surely like a father.

Luc. And what of him, Tranio?

Tra. If he be credulous and trust my tale,
I'll make him glad to seem Vincentio,
And give assurance to Baptista Minola,
As if he were the right Vincentio.

Take in your love, and then let me alone.

[Exeunt Lucentio and Bianca.

Enter a Pedant.

Ped. God save you, sir!

Tra. And you, sir! you are welcome.
Travel you far on, or are you at the furthest? Ped. Sir, at the furthest for a week or two; But then up further, and as far as Rome, And so to Tripoli, if God lend me life. 74


Tra. 'Tis death for any one in Mantua To come to Padua. Know you not the cause? Your ships are stay'd at Venice; and the duke,— For private quarrel 'twixt your duke and him,— Hath publish'd and proclaim'd it openly. 'Tis marvel, but that you are but newly come, You might have heard it else proclaim'd about. Ped. Alas, sir! it is worse for me than so; For I have bills for money by exchange From Florence, and must here deliver them. Tra. Well, sir, to do you courtesy, This will I do, and this I will advise you: First, tell me, have you ever been at Pisa? Ped. Ay, sir, in Pisa have I often been; Pisa, renowned for grave citizens. Tra. Among them, know you one Vincentio? Ped. I know him not, but I have heard of him; A merchant of incomparable wealth. Tra. He is my father, sir; and, sooth to say, In countenance somewhat doth resemble you. Bion. [Aside.] As much as an apple doth an oyster, and all one.

Tra. To save your life in this extremity, This favour will I do for his sake; And think it not the worst of all your fortunes That you are like to Sir Vincentio. His name and credit shall you undertake, And in my house you shall be friendly lodg'd, Look that you take upon you as you should. You understand me, sir; so shall you stay Till you have done your business in the city. If this be courtesy, sir, accept of it.

Ped. O sir, I do; and will repute you ever The patron of my life and liberty.

Tra. Then go with me to make the matter good. This, by the way, I let you understand: My father is here look'd for every day, To pass assurance of a dower in marriage 'Twixt me and one Baptist's daughter here: In all these circumstances I'll instruct you. Go with me to clothe you as becomes you.

[Exeunt.]

Scene III.—A Room in Petruchio's House. Enter Katharina and Grumio.

Gru. No, no, forsooth; I dare not, for my life.

Kath. The more my wrong the more his spite appears. What, did he marry me to famish me? Beggars, that come unto my father's door, Upon entreaty have a present alms; If not, elsewhere they meet with charity: But I, who never knew how to entertain, Nor never needed that I should entertain, Am starv'd for meat, giddy for lack of sleep; With oaths kept waking, and with brawling fed. And that which sprees me more than all these wants,

He does it under name of perfect love; As who should say, if I should sleep or eat 'Twere deadly sickness, or else present death. I prithee go and get me some repast; I care not what, so it be wholesome food.

Gru. What say you to a neat's foot? Kath. 'Tis passing good: I prithee let me have it.

Gru. I fear it is too cholerical a meat. How say you to a fat tripe finely broil'd? Kath. I like it well: good Grumio, fetch it me. Gru. I cannot tell; I fear 'tis cholerical.

What say you to a piece of beef and mustard? Kath. A dish that I do love to feed upon. Gru. Ay, but the mustard is too hot a little. Kath. Why, then the beef, and let the mustard rest.

Gru. Nay, then I will not: you shall have the mustard,

Or else you get no beef of Grumio.

Kath. Then both, or one, or anything thou wilt.

Gru. Why then, the mustard without the beef. Kath. Go, get thee gone, thou false deluding slave, That feed'st me with the very name of meat. Sorrow on thee and all the pack of you, That ye triumph thus upon my misery! Go, get thee gone, I say.

Enter Petruchio with a dish of meat; and Hortensio.

Pet. How fares my Kate? What, sweeting, all amoret? Hor. Mistress, what cheer? Kath. Faith, as cold as can be. Pet. Pluck up thy spirits; look cheerfully upon me. Here, love; thou seest how diligent I am, To dress thy meat myself and bring it thee: [Sets the dish on a table. I am sure, sweet Kate, this kindness merits thanks.

What! not a word? Nay then, thou lovest it not, And all my pains is sorted to no proof.

300
THE TAMING OF THE SHREW  Act IV, Sc. III,

Here, take away this dish.

Kath. I pray you, let it stand. 44

Pet. The poorest service is repaid with thanks,
And so shall mine, before you touch the meat.

Kath. I thank you, sir.

Hor. Signior Petruchio, fie! you are to blame.

Come, Mistress Kate, I’ll bear you company. 49

Pet. [Aside.] Eat it up all, Hortensio, if thou
lov’st me.

Much good do it unto thy gentle heart!
Kate, eat apace: and now, my honey love, 52
Will we return unto thy father’s house,
And revel it as bravely as the best,
With silken coats and caps and golden rings,
With ruffs and cuffs and farthingales and things;
With scarfs and fans and double change of
bravery, 57
With amber bracelets, beads and all this knavery.
What! hast thou din’d? The tailor stays thy
leisure,
To deck thy body with his ruffling treasure. 60

Enter Tailor.

Come, tailor, let us see these ornaments;
Lay forth the gown.—

Enter Haberdasher.

What news with you, sir? 63

Hab. Here is the cap your worship did bespeak.

Pet. Why, this was moulded on a porringier;
A velvet dish: fie, fie! ’tis lewd and filthy: 65
Why, ’tis a cockle or a walnut-shell,
A knob, a toy, a trick, a baby’s cap:
Away with it! come, let me have a bigger. 68

Kath. I’ll have no bigger: this doth fit the time,
And gentlewomen wear such caps as these.

Pet. When you are gentle, you shall have one
too;
And not till then.

Hor. [Aside.] That will not be in haste.
Kath. Why, sir, I trust I may have leave to
speak. 73

And speak I will; I am no child, no babe:
Your betters have endur’d me say my mind,
And if you cannot, best you stop your ears. 76
My tongue will tell the anger of my heart,
Or else my heart, concealing it, will break:
And rather than it shall, I will be free
Even to the uttermost, as I please, in words. 80

Pet. Why, thou sayst true; it is a paltry cap,
A custard-coffin, a bauble, a silken pie.
I love thee well in that thou lik’st it not.

Kath. Love me or love me not, I like the cap,
And if I will have, or I will have none. 85

[Exit Haberdasher.

Pet. Thy gown? why, ay: come, tailor, let
us see’t.

O mercy, God! what masquing stuff is here?
What’s this? a sleeve? ’tis like a demi-cannon:
What! up and down, carv’d like an apple-tart?
Here’s snip and nip and cut and slish and slash,
Like to a censer in a barber’s shop.

Why, what, i’ devil’s name, tailor, call’st thou
this? 92

Hor. [Aside.] I see, she’s like to have neither
cap nor gown.

Tat. You bid me make it orderly and well,
According to the fashion and the time.

Pet. Marry, and did: but if you be remember’d,
I did not bid you mar it to the time. 97

Go, hop me over every kennel home,
For you shall hop without my custom, sir.
I’ll none of it: hence! make your best of it. 100

Kath. I never saw a better-fashion’d gown,
More quaint, more pleasing, nor more com-
mandable.

Belike you mean to make a puppet of me.

Pet. Why, true; he means to make a puppet
of thee. 104

Tat. She says your worship means to make
a puppet of her.

Pet. O monstrous arrogance! Thou liest,
Thou thread,
Thou thimble, 108
Thou yard, three-quarters, half-yard, quarter,
nail!
Thou flea, thou nit, thou winter-cricket thou!
Brav’d in mine own house with a skein of thread!
Away! thou rag, thou quantity, thou remnant,
Or I shall so be-mete thee with thy yard
As thou shalt think on prating whilst thou liv’st!
I tell thee, I, that thou hast marr’d her gown.

Tat. Your worship is deceived: the gown is
made 116
Just as my master had direction.
Grumio gave order how it should be done.

Gru. I gave him no order; I gave him the stuff.

Tat. But how did you desire it should be
made? 120

Gru. Marry, sir, with needle and thread.

Tat. But did you not request to have it cut?

Gru. Thou hast faced many things.

Tat. I have. 124

Gru. Face not me: thou hast braved many
men: brave not me: I will neither be faced nor
braved. I say unto thee, I bid thy master cut
out the gown; but I did not bid him cut it to
pieces: ergo, thou liest. 129

Tat. Why, here is the note of the fashion to
testify.

Pet. Read it.

Gru. Thenote lies in’s throat if he say I said so.

Tat. Imprimis. A loose-bodied gown.

Gru. Master, if ever I said loose-bodied gown,
saw me in the skirts of it, and beat me to death with a bottom of brown thread. I said, a gown.  
\textit{Pet.} Proceed.  
\textit{Tai.} With a small compassed cape.  
\textit{Gru.} I confess the cape.  
\textit{Tai.} With a trunk sleeve.  
\textit{Gru.} I confess two sleeves.  
\textit{Tai.} The sleeves curiously cut.  
\textit{Pet.} Ay, there's the villany.  
\textit{Gru.} Error i' the bill, sir; error i' the bill. I commanded the sleeves should be cut out and sewed up again; and that I'll prove upon thee, though thy little finger be armed in a thimble.  
\textit{Tai.} This is true that I say: an I had thee in place where thou shouldst know it.  
\textit{Gru.} I am for thee straight: take thou the bill, give me thy mete-yard, and spare not me.  
\textit{Hor.} God-a-mercy, Grumio! then he shall have no odds.  
\textit{Pet.} Well, sir, in brief, the gown is not for me.  
\textit{Gru.} You are i' the right, sir; 'tis for my mistress.  
\textit{Pet.} Go, take it up unto thy master's use.  
\textit{Gru.} Villain, not for thy life! take up my mistress' gown for thy master's use!  
\textit{Pet.} Why, sir, what's your conceit in that?  
\textit{Gru.} O, sir, the conceit is deeper than you think for.  
Take up my mistress' gown to his master's use!  
O, fie, fie, fie!  
\textit{Pet. [Aside.] Hortensio, say thou wilt see the tailor paid.}  
\textit{[To Tailor.]} Go take it hence; be gone, and say no more.  
\textit{Hor. [Aside to Tailor.]} Tailor, I'll pay thee for thy gown to-morrow:  
Take no unkindness of his hasty words.  
Away! I say; commend me to thy master.  
\textit{[Exit Tailor.]}  
\textit{Pet.} Well, come, my Kate; we will unto your father's,  
Even in these honest mean habiliments.  
Our purses shall be proud, our garments poor:  
For 'tis the mind that makes the body rich;  
And as the sun breaks through the darkest clouds,  
So honour peareth in the meanest habit.  
What is the jay more precious than the lark  
Because his feathers are more beautiful?  
Or is the adder better than the eel  
Because his painted skin contents the eye?  
O, no, good Kate; neither art thou the worse  
For this poor furniture and mean array.  
If thou account'st it shame, lay it on me;  
And therefore frolic: we will henceforthwith,  
To feast and sport us at thy father's house.  
Go, call my men, and let us straight to him;  
And bring our horses unto Longe-lane end;  
There will we mount, and thither walk on foot.  
Let's see; I think 'tis now some seven o'clock,  
And well we may come there by dinner-time.  
\textit{Kath.} I dare assure you, sir, 'tis almost two;  
And 'twill be supper-time ere you come there.  
\textit{Pet.} It shall be seven ere I go to horse.  
Look, what I speak, or do, or think to do,  
You are still crossing it. Sirs, let 't alone:  
I will not go to-day; and ere I do,  
It shall be what o'clock I say it is.  
\textit{Hor.} Why, so this gallant will command the sun.  
\textit{[Exeunt.]}  

\textbf{SCENE IV.—Padua. Before BAPTISTA'S House.}  

\textit{Enter TRANIO, and the Pedant dressed like VINCENTIO.}  

\textit{Tra.} Sir, this is the house: please it you that I call?  
\textit{Pet.} Ay, what else? and, but I be deceived,  
Signior Baptista may remember me,  
Near twenty years ago, in Genoa,  
Where we were lodgers at the Pegasus.  
\textit{Tra.} 'Tis well; and hold your own, in any case,  
With such austerity as 'longeth to a father.  
\textit{Pet.} I warrant you. But, sir, here comes your boy;  
'Twere good he were school'd.  

\textit{Enter BIONDELLO.}  

\textit{Tra.} Fear you not him. Sirrah Biondello,  
Now do your duty throughly, I advise you:  
Imagine 'twere the right Vincentio.  
\textit{Bion.} Tut! fear not me.  
\textit{Tra.} But hast thou done thy errand to Baptist?  
\textit{Bion.} I told him that your father was at Venice,  
And that you look'd for him this day in Padua.  
\textit{Tra.} Thou'rt a tall fellow: hold thee that to drink.  

\textit{Enter BAPTISTA and LUCENTIO.}  
Signior Baptista, you are happily met.  
\textit{[To the Pedant.]} Sir, this is the gentleman I told you of:  
I pray you, stand good father to me now,  
Give me Bianca for my patrimony.  
\textit{Pet.} Soft, son!  

\textit{Sir, by your leave: having come to Padua}  
To gather in some debts, my son Lucentio.
Made me acquainted with a weighty cause
Of love between your daughter and himself:
And,—for the report I hear of you, 28
And for the love he beareth to your daughter,
And she to him,—to stay him not too long,
I am content, in a good father’s care,
To have him match’d; and, if you please to like
No worse than I, upon some agreement 33
Me shall you find ready and willing
With one consent to have her so bestow’d;
For curious I cannot be with you, 36
Signior Baptista, of whom I hear so well.
Bap. Sir, pardon me in what I have to say:
Your plainness and your shortness please me well.
Right true it is, your son Lucentio here 40
Doth love my daughter and she loveth him,
Or both dissemble deeply their affections;
And therefore, if you say no more than this,
That like a father you will deal with him 44
And pass my daughter a sufficient dower,
The match is made, and all is done:
Your son shall have my daughter with consent.
Tra. I thank you, sir. Where, then, do you know best
We be affied and such assurance ta’en
As shall with either part’s agreement stand?
Bap. Not in my house, Lucentio; for, you know,
Pitchers have ears, and I have many servants. 52
Besides, old Gremio is hearkening still,
And happily we might be interrupted.
Tra. Then at my lodging an it like you:
There doth my father lie, and there this night
We’ll pass the business privately and well. 57
Send for your daughter by your servant here;
My boy shall fetch the scrivener presently.
The worst is this, that, at so slender warning, 60
You’re like to have a thin and slender pittance.
Bap. It likes me well. Cambio, hie you home,
And bid Bianca make her ready straight;
And, if you tell, what hath happened: 64
Lucentio’s father is arriv’d in Padua,
And she’s like to be Lucentio’s wife.
Luc. I pray the gods she may with all my heart!
Tra. Daily not with the gods, but get thee gone. 68
Signior Baptista, shall I lead the way?
Welcome! one mess is like to be your cheer.
Come, sir; we will better it in Pisa.
Bap. I follow you. 72
[Exeunt TRanio, Pedant, and Baptista.
Bion. Cambio!
Luc. What sayst thou, Biondello?

Bion. You saw my master wink and laugh upon you? 76
Luc. Biondello, what of that?
Bion. Faith, nothing; but he has left me here behind to expound the meaning or moral of his signs and tokens. 80
Luc. I pray thee, moralize them.
Bion. Then thus. Baptista is safe, talking with the deceiving father of a deceitful son.
Luc. And what of him? 84
Bion. His daughter is to be brought by you to the supper.
Luc. And then? 89
Bion. The old priest at Saint Luke’s church is at your command at all hours.
Luc. And what of all this?
Bion. I cannot tell, expect they are busied about a counterfeit assurance: take you assurance of her, sum privilegio ad imprimendum solum. To the church! take the priest, clerk, and some sufficient honest witnesses.
If this be not that you look for, I have no more to say, 95
But bid Bianca farewell for ever and a day.
[Going.

Luc. Hearest thou, Biondello?
Bion. I cannot tarry: I knew a wench married in an afternoon as she went to the garden for parsley to stuff a rabbit; and so may you, sir; and so, adieu, sir. My master hath appointed me to go to Saint Luke’s, to bid the priest be ready to come against you come with your appendix. 109
[Exit.

Luc. I may, and will, if she be so contented:
She will be pleas’d; then wherefore should I doubt?
Hap what hap may, I’ll roundly go about her:
It shall go hard if Cambio go without her. 113
[Exit.

SCENE V.—A public Road.

Enter PETRUCHIO, KATHARINA, HORTENSIO, and Servants.

Petr. Come on, i’ God’s name; once more toward our father’s.
Good Lord, how bright and goodly shines the moon!
Kath. The moon! the sun: it is not moonlight now.
Petr. I say it is the moon that shines so bright.
Kath. I know it is the sun that shines so bright.
Petr. Now, by my mother’s son, and that’s myself,
It shall be moon, or star, or what I list,
Or ere I journey to your father’s house. 2
Go one and fetch our horses back again.
Evermore cross'd and cross'd; nothing but cross'd!

Hor. Say as he says, or we shall never go.
Kath. Forward, I pray, since we have come so far,
And be it moon, or sun, or what you please.
An if you please to call it a rush-candle,
Henceforth I vow it shall be so for me.

Pet. I say it is the moon.

Kath. I know it is the moon.

Pet. Nay, then you lie; it is the blessed sun.
Kath. Then God be bless'd, it is the blessed sun:
But sun it is not when you say it is not,
And the moon changes even as your mind.
What you will have it nam'd, even that it is;
And so, it shall be so for Katherine.

Hor. Petruchio, go thy ways; the field is won.

Pet. Well, forward, forward! thus the bowl should run,
And not unluckily against the bias.
But soft! what company is coming here?

Enter VINCENTIO, in a travelling dress.

[To VINCENTIO.] Good morrow, gentle mistress: where away?
Tell me, sweet Kate, and tell me truly too,
Hast thou beheld a fresher gentlewoman?
Such war of white and red within her cheeks!
What stars do spangle heaven with such beauty,
As those two eyes become that heavenly face?
Fair lovely maid, once more good day to thee.
Sweet Kate, embrace her for her beauty's sake.

Hor. A' will make the man mad, to make a woman of him.

Kath. Young budding virgin, fair and fresh and sweet,
Whither away, or where is thy abode?
Happy the parents of so fair a child;
Happier the man, whom favourable stars
Allot thee for his lovely bed-fellow!

Pet. Why, how now, Kate! I hope thou art not mad:
This is a man, old, wrinkled, faded, wither'd,
And not a maiden, as thou sayst he is.

Kath. Pardon, old father, my mistaking eyes,
That have been so bedazzled with the sun
That everything I look on seems green:
Now I perceive thou art a reverend father;
Pardon, I pray thee, for my mad mistaking.

Pet. Do, good old grandsire; and withal make known
Which way thou travellest: if along with us,
We shall be joyful of thy company.

Vin. Fair sir, and you my merry mistress,
That with your strange encounter much amaz'd me,

My name is called Vincentio; my dwelling, Pisa;
And bound I am to Padua, there to visit
A son of mine, which long I have not seen.

Pet. What is his name?

Vin. Lucentio, gentle sir.

Pet. Happily met; the happier for thy son.
And now by law, as well as reverence,
I may entitle thee my loving father:
The sister to my wife, this gentlewoman,
Thy son by this hath married. Wonder not,
Nor be not griev'd: she is of good esteem,
Her dowry wealthy, and of worthy birth;
Beside, so qualified as may beoseen
The spouse of any noble gentleman.
Let me embrace with old Vincentio; and wander we to see thy honest son,
Who will of thy arrival be full joyous.

Vin. But is this true? or is it else your pleasure,
Like pleasant travellers, to break a jest
Upon the company you overtake?

Hor. I do assure thee, father, so it is.

Pet. Come, go along, and see the truth hereof;
For our first merriment hath made thee jealous.

[Exeunt all but HORTENSIO.]

Hor. Well, Petruchio, this has put me in heart.

Have to my widow! and if she be froward,
Then hast thou taught Hortensio to be untoward.

[Exit.]

ACT V.


Enter on one side BIONDELLO, LUCENTIO, and BIANCA; Gremio walking on the other side.

Bion. Softly and swiftly, sir, for the priest is ready.

Luc. I fly, Biondello: but they may chance to need thee at home; therefore leave us.

Bion. Nay, faith, I’ll see the church o’ your back; and then come back to my master as soon as I can.

[Exeunt LUCENTIO, BIANCA, and BIONDELLO.

Gre. I marvel Cambio comes not all this while.

Enter PETRUCHIO, KATHARINA, VINCENTIO, and Attendants.

Pet. Sir, here’s the door, this is Lucentio’s house:
My father’s bears more toward the marketplace;
Thither must I, and here I leave you, sir.
Vin. You shall not choose, but drink before you go.
I think I shall command your welcome here, And, by all likelihood, some cheer is toward.
[Knocks.
Gre. They're busy within; you were best knock louder.

Enter Pedant above, at a window.

Ped. What's he that knocks as he would beat down the gate?
Vin. Is Signior Lucentio within, sir?
Ped. He's within, sir, but not to be spoken withal.
Vin. What if a man bring him a hundred pound or two, to make merry withal?
Ped. Keep your hundreds pound to yourself: he shall need none so long as I live.
Ped. Nay, I told you your son was well beloved in Padua. Do you hear, sir? To leave frivolous circumstances, I pray you, tell Signior Lucentio that his father is come from Pisa, and is here at the door to speak with him.
Ped. Thou liest: he is father from Padua, and here looking out at the window.
Vin. Art thou his father?
Ped. Ay, sir; so his mother says, if I may believe her.
Ped. [To VINCENTIO.] Why, how now, gentleman! why, this is flat knavery, to take upon you another man's name.
Ped. Lay hands on the villain: I believe, a' means to cozen somebody in this city under my countenance.

Re-enter BIONDELLO.

Bion. I have seen them in the church together: God send 'em good shipping! But who is here? mine old master, Vincentio! now we are undone and brought to nothing.
Bion. I hope I may choose, sir.
Vin. Come hither, you rogue. What, have you forgot me?
Bion. Forgot you! no, sir: I could not forget you, for I never saw you before in all my life.
Vin. What, you notorious villain! didst thou never see thy master's father, Vincentio?
Bion. What, my old, worshipful old master? yes, marry, sir: see where he looks out of the window.
Vin. Is't so, indeed? [Beats BIONDELLO.
Bion. Help, help, help! here's a madman will murder me.

[Exit.

Ped. Help, son! help, Signior Baptist! [Exit from the window.
Ped. Prithee, Kate, let's stand aside, and see the end of this controversy. [They retire.

Re-enter Pedant below; BAPTISTA, TRanio, and Servants.

Tra. Sir, what are you that offer to beat my servant?
Vin. What am I, sir? nay, what are you, sir? O immortal gods! O fine villain! A silken doublet! a velvet hose! a scarlet cloak! and a copatain hat! O, I am undone! I am undone! while I play the good husband at home, my son and my servant spend all at the university.
Tra. How now! what's the matter?
Bap. What, is the man lunatic?
Tra. Sir, you seem a sober ancient gentleman by your habit, but your words show you a madman. Why, sir, what 'cernes it you if I wear pearl and gold? I thank my good father, I am able to maintain it.
Vin. Thy father! O villain! he is a sailmaker in Bergamo.
Bap. You mistake, sir, you mistake, sir. Pray, what do you think is his name?
Vin. His name! as if I knew not his name: I have brought him up ever since he was three years old, and his name is Tranio.
Ped. Away, away, mad ass! his name is Lucentio; and he is mine only son, and heir to the lands of me, Signior Vincentio.
Vin. Lucentio! O! be hath murdered his master. Lay hold on him, I charge you in the duke's name. O my son, my son! tell me, thou villain, where is my son Lucentio?
Tra. Call forth an officer.

Enter one with an Officer.

Carry this mad knave to the gaol. Father Baptist, I charge you see that he be forthcoming. Vin. Carry me to the gaol!
Gre. Stay, officer: he shall not go to prison.
Bap. Talk not, Signior Gremio: I say he shall go to prison.
Gre. Take heed, Signior Baptist, lest you be cony-catched in this business: I dare swear this is the right Vincentio.
Ped. Swear, if thou darest.
Gre. Nay, I dare not swear it.
Tra. Then thou wert best say, that I am not Lucentio.
Gre. Yes, I know thee to be Signior Lucentio.
Bap. Away with the dotard! to the gaol with him!

305
Act V, Sc. I. THE TAMING OF THE SREW

Vin. Thus strangers may be haled and abused: O monstrous villain!

Re-enter BIONDELLO, with LUCENTIO and BIANCA.

Bion. O! we are spoiled; and yonder he is: deny him, forswear him, or else we are all undone.

Luc. [Kneeling.] Pardon, sweet father.

Vin. Lives my sweetest son?

Bion. [Kneeling.] Pardon, dear father.

Bap. How hast thou offended?

Where is LUCENTIO?

Luc. Here’s LUCENTIO, Right son to the right Vincentio;
That have by marriage made thy daughter mine,
While counterfeit supposes blear’d thine eye.

Gre. Here’s packing, with a witness, to deceive us all!

Vin. Where is that damned villain Tranio,
That fac’d and brav’d me in this matter so?

Bap. Why, tell me, is not this my Cambio?

Bian. Cambio is chang’d into Lucentio.

Luc. Love wrought these miracles. Bianca’s love
Made me exchange my state with Tranio,
While he did bear my countenance in the town;
And happily I have arriv’d at last
Unto the wished haven of my bliss.

What Tranio did, myself enforce’d him to;
Then pardon him, sweet father, for my sake.

Vin. I’ll slit the villain’s nose, that would have sent me to the gaol.

Bap. [To LUCENTIO.] But do you hear, sir? Have you married my daughter without asking my good will?

Vin. Fear not, Baptista; we will content you, go to: but I will in, to be revenged for this villany.

Bap. And I, to sound the depth of this knavery.

Luc. Look not pale, Bianca; thy father will not frown. [Exeunt LUCENTIO and BIANCA.

Gre. My cake is dough; but I’ll in among the rest,
Out of hope of all, but my share of the feast.

PETRUUCHIO and KATHARINA advance.

Kath. Husband, let’s follow, to see the end
of this ado.

Pet. First kiss me, Kate, and we will.

Kath. What! in the midst of the street?

PETRUUCHIO and KATHARINA advance.

Pet. What! art thou ashamed of me? 152

Kath. No, sir, God forbid; but ashamed to kiss.

Pet. Why, then let’s home again. Come, sirrah, let’s away.

Kath. Nay, I will give thee a kiss: now pray thee, love, stay.

Pet. Is not this well? Come, my sweet Kate: Better once than never, for never too late. 157

[Exeunt.

SCENE II.—A Room in LUCENTIO’S House.

A Banquet set out. Enter BAPTISTA, VINCENTIO, GREGGIO, the Pedant, LUCENTIO, BIANCA, PETRUUCHIO, KATHARINA, HORTENSIO, and Widow. TRANIO, BIONDELLO, GRUMIO, and Others, attending.

Luc. At last, though long, our jarring notes agree:
And time it is, when raging war is done,
To smile at ‘scapes and perils overblown.
My fair Bianca, bid my father welcome,
While I with self-same kindness welcome thine.

Brother Petrucchio, sister Katharina,
And thou, HORTENSIO, with thy loving widow,
Feast with the best, and welcome to my house:
My banquet is to close our stomachs up,
After our great good cheer. Pray you, sit down;
For now we sit to chat as well as eat. [They sit at table.

Pet. Nothing but sit and sit, and eat and eat! 12

Bap. Padua affords this kindness, son Petruuchio.

Pet. Padua affords nothing but what is kind.
Hor. For both our sakes I would that word were true.

Pet. Now, for my life, Hortensio fears his widow.

Wid. Then never trust me, if I be afraid.

Pet. You are very sensible, and yet you miss my sense:

I mean, Hortensio is afraid of you.

Wid. He that is giddy thinks the world turns round.


Kath. Mistress, how mean you that?

Wid. Thus I conceive by him.

Pet. Conceives by me! How likes Hortensio that?

Hor. My widow says, thus she conceives her tale.

Pet. Very well mended. Kiss him for that, good widow.
Kath. 'He that is giddy thinks the world turns round.'
I pray you, tell me what you meant by that.
Wid. Your husband, being troubled with a shrew,

Measures my husband's sorrow by his woe:
And now you know my meaning.
Kath. A very mean meaning.
Wid. Right, I mean you.
Kath. And I am mean, indeed, respecting you.

Pet. To her, Kate!
Hor. To her, widow!
Pet. A hundred marks, my Kate does put her down.
Hor. That's my office.
Pet. Spoke like an officer: ha' to thee, lad. [Drinks to Hortensio.

Bap. How likes Gremio these quick-witted folks?
Gre. Believe me, sir, they butt together well.
Bian. Head and butt! a hasty-witted body
Would say your head and butt were head and horn.

Vin. Ay, mistress bride, hath that awaken'd you?
Bian. Ay, but not frighted me; therefore I'll sleep again.

Pet. Nay, that you shall not; since you have begun,

Have at you for a bitter jest or two.
Bian. Am I your bird? I mean to shift my bush;
And then pursue me as you draw your bow.
You are welcome all. [Exit Bianca, Katharina, and Widow.

Pet. She hath prevented me. Here, Signior Tranio;
This bird you aim'd at, though you hit her not:
Therefore a health to all that shot and miss'd.

Tra. O sir! Lucentio slipp'd me, like his greyhound,
Which runs himself, and catches for his master.

Pet. A good swift simile, but something currish.

Tra. 'Tis well, sir, that you hunted for yourself:
'Tis thought your deer does hold you at a bay.

Bap. O ho, Petruchio! Tranio hits you now.
Luc. I thank thee for that gird, good Tranio.

Hor. Confess, confess, hath he not hit you here?

 Pet. A' has a little gall'd me, I confess;
And, as the jest did glance away from me,
'Tis ten to one it maim'd you two outright.
Bap. Now, in good sadness, son Petruchio,

I think thou hast the veriest shrew of all. 64
Pet. Well, I say no: and therefore, for assurance,

Let's each one send unto his wife;
And he whose wife is most obedient
To come at first when he doth send for her, 66
Shall win the wager which we will propose.

Hor. Content. What is the wager?
Luc. Twenty crowns.

Pet. Twenty crowns!
I'll venture so much of my hawk or hound, 72
But twenty times so much upon my wife.

Luc. A hundred then.

Hor. A match! 'tis done.
Hor. Who shall begin?

Luc. That will I.

Go, Biondello, bid your mistress come to me. 76
Bion. I go. [Exit.

Bap. Son, I will be your half, Bianca comes.

Luc. I'll have no halves; I'll bear it all myself.

Re-enter BIONDELLO.

How now! what news?

Bion. Sir, my mistress sends you word
That she is busy and she cannot come. 81
Pet. How! she is busy, and she cannot come!

Is that an answer?

Gre. Ay, and a kind one too:
Pray God, sir, your wife send you not a worse.

Pet. I hope, better. 85

Hor. Sirrah Biondello, go and entreat my wife
To come to me forthwith. [Exit BIONDELLO.

Pet. O ho! entreat her!

Nay, then she must needs come.

Hor. I am afraid, sir, 88

Do what you can, yours will not be entreated.

Re-enter BIONDELLO.

Now, where's my wife?

Bion. She says you have some goodly jest in hand:
She will not come: she bids you come to her. 92
Pet. Worse and worse; she will not come! O vile,

Intolerable, not to be endur'd!
Sirrah Grumio, go to your mistress; say,
I command her come to me. [Exit Grumio.

Hor. I know her answer. 96

Pet. What?

Hor. She will not.

Pet. The fouler fortune mine, and there an end.
Re-enter Katharina.

Bap. Now, by my holidame, here comes Katharina!

Kath. What is your will, sir, that you send for me?

Pet. Where is your sister, and Hortensio's wife?

Kath. They sit conferring by the parlour fire.

Pet. Go, fetch them hither: if they deny to come,

Swinge me them soundly forth unto their husbands.

Away, I say, and bring them hither straight.

[Exeunt Katharina.

Luc. Here is a wonder, if you talk of a wonder.

Hor. And so it is. I wonder what it bodes.

Pet. Marry, peace it bodes, and love, and quiet life,

An awful rule and right supremacy;

And, to be short, what not that's sweet and happy.

Bap. Now fair befall thee, good Petruchio!
The wager thou hast won; and I will add Unto their losses twenty thousand crowns; Another dowry to another daughter,
For she is chang'd, as she had never been.

Pet. Nay, I will win my wager better yet,
And show more sign of her obedience,
Her new-built virtue and obedience.

See where she comes, and brings your froward wives

As prisoners to her womanly persuasion.

Re-enter Katharina, with Bianca and Widow.

Katharina, that cap of yours becomes you not:

Off with that bauble, throw it under foot.

[Katharina pulls off her cap, and throws it down.

Wid. Lord! let me never have a cause to sigh.

Till I be brought to such a silly pass!

Bian. Fie! what a foolish duty call you this?

Luc. I would your duty were as foolish too:
The wisdom of your duty, fair Bianca,
Hath cost me an hundred crowns since supper-time.

Bian. The more fool you for laying on my duty.

Pet. Katharine, I charge thee, tell these headstrong women

What duty they do owe their lords and husbands.

Wid. Come, come, you're mocking: we will have no telling.

Pet. Come on, I say; and first begin with her.

Wid. She shall not.

Pet. I say she shall: and first begin with her.

Kath. Fie, fie! unknit that threatening unkind brow,

And dart not scornful glances from those eyes,

To wound thy lord, thy king, thy governor:
It blasts thy beauty as frosts do bite the meads,

Confounds thy fame as whirlwinds shake fair buds,

And in no sense is meet or amiable.

A woman mov'd is like a fountain troubled,

Muddy, ill-seeing, thick, bereft of beauty;

And while it is so, none so dry or thirsty
Will deign to sip or touch one drop of it.

Thy husband is thy lord, thy life, thy keeper,
Thy head, thy sovereign; one that cares for thee,

And for thy maintenance commits his body
To painful labour both by sea and land,
To watch the night in storms, the day in cold,

Whilst thou liest warm at home, secure and safe;

And craves no other tribute at thy hands
But love, fair looks, and true obedience;

Too little payment for so great a debt.

Such duty as the subject owes the prince,
Even such a woman oweth to her husband;
And when she's froward, peevish, sullen, sour,

And not obedient to his honest will,

What is she but a foul contending rebel,

And graceless traitor to her loving lord?

I am ashamed that women are so simple
To offer war where they should kneel for peace,

Or seek for rule, supremacy, and sway,

When they are bound to serve, love, and obey.

Why are our bodies soft, and weak, and smooth,

Unapt to toil and trouble in the world,

But that our soft conditions and our hearts
Should well agree with our external parts?

Come, come, you froward and unable worms!

My mind hath been as big as one of yours,
My heart as great, my reason haply more,

To bandy word for word and frown for frown;

But now I see our lances are but straws,

Our strength as weak, our weakness past compare,
THE TAMING OF THE SHREW

Act V, Sc. II.

That seeming to be most which we indeed least
are. 176
Then vail your stomachs, for it is no boot,
And place your hands below your husband's
foot:
In token of which duty, if he please,
My hand is ready; may it do him ease. 180

Pet. Why, there's a wench! Come on, and
kiss me, Kate.

Luc. Well, go thy ways, old lad, for thou
shalt ha't.

Vin. 'Tis a good hearing when children are
toward.

Luc. But a harsh hearing when women are
froward. 184

Pet. Come, Kate, we'll to bed.
We three are married, but you two are sped.
'Twas I won the wager, [To Lucentio.] though
you hit the white;
And, being a winner, God give you good
night!

[Exeunt Petruchio and Katharina.

Hor. Now, go thy ways; thou hast tam'd a
curst shrew.

Luc. 'Tis a wonder, by your leave, she will
be tam'd so.

[Exeunt.]
ALL'S WELL THAT ENDS WELL

DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

KING OF FRANCE.
DUKE OF FLORENCE.
BERTRAM, Count of Rousillon.
LAFEU, an old Lord.
PAROLLES, a follower of Bertram.
Steward to the Countess of Rousillon.
LAVACHE, a Clown in her household.
A Page.

COUNTESS OF ROUSILLON, Mother to Bertram.

HELENA, a Gentlewoman protected by the
Countess.
An Old Widow of Florence.
DIANA, Daughter to the Widow.
VIOLENTA, Neighbours and Friends to
MARIANA, the Widow.

Lords, Officers, Soldiers, &c., French and
Florentine.


ACT I.

SCENE I.—Rousillon. A Room in the
Countess's Palace.

Enter BERTRAM, the Countess of Rousillon,
HELENA, and LAFEU, all in black.

Count. In delivering my son from me, I bury
a second husband.

Ber. And I, in going, madam, weep o'er my
father's death anew; but I must attend his
majesty's command, to whom I am now in
ward, evermore in subjection.

Laf. You shall find of the king a husband,
madam; you, sir, a father. He that so generally
is at all times good, must of necessity hold his
virtue to you, whose worthiness would stir it up
where it wanted rather than lack it where there
is such abundance.

Count. What hope is there of his majesty's
amendment?

Laf. He hath abandoned his physicians,
madam; under whose practices he hath per-
secuted time with hope, and finds no other
advantage in the process but only the losing of
hope by time.

Count. This young gentlewoman had a fa-
ther,—O, that 'had!' how sad a passage 'tis!—
whose skill was almost as great as his honesty;
had it stretched so far, would have made na-
ture immortal, and death should have play for
lack of work. Would, for the king's sake, he
were living! I think it would be the death of
the king's disease.

Laf. How called you the man you speak of,
madam?

Count. He was famous, sir, in his profession,

and it was his great right to be so: Gerard de
Narbon.

Laf. He was excellent indeed, madam: the
king very lately spoke of him admiringly and
mourningly. He was skillful enough to have
lived still, if knowledge could be set up against
mortality.

Ber. What is it, my good lord, the king
languishes of?

Laf. A fistula, my lord.

Ber. I heard not of it before.

Laf. I would it were not notorious. Was
this gentlewoman the daughter of Gerard de
Narbon?

Count. His sole child, my lord; and be-
queathed to my overlooking. I have those hopes
of her good that her education promises: her
dispositions she inherits, which makes fair gifts
fairer; for where an unclean mind carries vir-
tuous qualities, there commendations go with
pity; they are virtues and traitors too: in her
they are the better for their simpleness; she de-
erves her honesty and achieves her goodness.

Laf. Your commendations, madam, get from
her tears.

Count. 'Tis the best brine a maiden can sea-
son her praise in. The remembrance of her
father never approaches her heart but the
tyranny of her sorrows takes all livelihood from
her cheek. No more of this, Helena, go to, no
more; lest it be rather thought you affect a
sorrow, than have it.

Hel. I do affect a sorrow indeed, but I have
it too.

Laf. Moderate lamentation is the right of
the dead, excessive grief the enemy to the living.
Hel. If the living be enemy to the grief, the excess makes it soon mortal.

Ber. Madam, I desire your holy wishes.

Laf. How understand we that?

Count. Be thou blest, Bertram; and succeed thy father

In manners, as in shape! thy blood and virtue Contend for empire in thee; and thy goodness Share with thy birthright! Love all, trust a few, Do wrong to none: be able for thine enemy Rather in power than use, and keep thy friend Under thy own life's key: be check'd for silence, But never tax'd for speech. What heaven more will 

That thee may furnish, and my prayers pluck down,

Fall on thy head! Farewell, my lord; 'Tis an unseason'd courtier; good my lord, Advise him.

Laf. He cannot want the best

That shall attend his love.

Count. Heaven bless him! Farewell, Bertram.

[Exit.

Ber. [To HELENA.] The best wishes that can be forged in your thoughts be servants to you! Be comfortable to my mother, your mistress, and make much of her.

Laf. Farewell, pretty lady: you must hold the credit of your father.

[Exeunt BERTRAM and LAFEU.

Hel. O! were that all. I think not on my father;

And these great tears grace his remembrance more

Than those I shed for him. What was he like? I have forgot him: my imagination Carries no favour in't but Bertram's.

I am undone: there is no living, none, If Bertram be away. It were all one That I should love a bright particular star And think to wed it, he is so above me: In his bright radiance and collateral light Must I be comforted, not in his sphere.

The ambition in my love thus plagues itself: The hind that would be mated by the lion Must die for love. 'Twas pretty, though a plague, To see him every hour; to sit and draw His arched brows, his hawkwing eye, his curls, In our heart's table; heart too capable Of every line and trick of his sweet favour: But now he's gone, and my idolatrous fancy Must sanctify his reliques. Who comes here? One that goes with him: I love him for his sake; And yet I know him a notorious liar, Think him a great way fool, solely a coward; Yet these fix'd evils sit so fit in him, That they take place, when virtue's steely bones

Look bleak in the cold wind: withal, full oft we see Cold wisdom waiting on superfluous folly.

Enter PAROLLES.

Par. Save you, fair queen!

Hel. And you, monarch!

Par. No.

Hel. And no.

Par. Are you meditating on virginity?

Hel. Ay. You have some stain of soldier in you; let me ask you a question. Man is enemy to virginity; how may we barricado it against him?

Par. Keep him out.

Hel. But he assails; and our virginity, though valiant in the defence, yet is weak. Unfold to us some war-like resistance.

Par. There is none: man, sitting down before you, will undermine you and blow you up. Bless our poor virginity from underminers and blowers up! Is there no military policy, how virgins might blow up men?

Par. Virginity being blown down, man will quicklier be blown up: marry in blowing him down again, with the breach yourselves made, you lose your city. It is not politic in the commonwealth of nature to preserve virginity. Loss of virginity is rational increase, and there was never virgin got till virginity was first lost. That you were made of is metal to make virgins. Virginity, by being once lost, may be ten times found: by being ever kept, it is ever lost. 'Tis too cold a companion: away with 't!

Hel. I will stand for 't a little, though therefore I die a virgin.

Par. There's little can be said in 't: 'tis against the rule of nature. To speak on the part of virginity is to accuse your mothers, which is most infallible disobedience. He that hangs himself is a virgin: virginity murders itself, and should be buried in highways, out of all sanctified limit, as a desperate offenseness against nature. Virginity breeds mites, much like a cheese, consumes itself to the very paring, and so dies with feeding his own stomach. Besides, virginity is peevish, proud, idle, made of self-love, which is the most inhibited sin in the canon. Keep it not; you cannot choose but lose by 't! Out with 't! within the year it will make itself two, which is a goodly increase, and the principal itself not much the worse. Away with 't!

Hel. How might one do, sir, to lose it to her own liking?

Par. Let me see: marry, ill, to like him that ne'er it likes. 'Tis a commodity that will lose the gloss with lying; the longer kept, the less
worth: off with 't, while 'tis vendible; answer the
time of request. Virginity, like an old courtier,
wears her cap out of fashion; richly suited, but
unsuitable: just like the brooch and the tooth-
pick, which wear not now. Your date is better in
your pie and your porridge than in your cheek:
your virginity, your old virginity, is like one
of our French withered pears; it looks ill, it eats
drily; marry, 'tis a withered pear; it was for-
merly better; marry, yet 'tis a withered pear.
Will you anything with it?

H. Not my virginity yet.

There shall your master have a thousand loves,
A mother, and a mistress, and a friend,
A phénix, captain, and an enemy,
A guide, a goddess, and a sovereign,
A counsellor, a traitress, and a dear;
His humble ambition, proud humility,
His jarring concord, and his discord dulcet,
His faith, his sweet disaster; with a world
Of pretty, fond, adoptive christendoms,
That blinking Cupid gossips. Now shall he—
I know not what he shall. God send him well!
The court's a learning-place, and he is one—

P. What one, i' faith?

H. That I wish well. 'Tis pity—

P. What's pity?

H. That wishing well had not a body in 't,
Which might be felt; that we, the poorer born,
Whose baser stars do shut us up in wishes,
Might with effects of them follow our friends.

And show what we alone must think, which
never
Returns us thanks.

Enter a Page.

P. Monsieur Parolles, my lord calls for
you. [Exit.

P. Little Helen, farewell: if I can remem-
ber thee, I will think of thee at court.

H. Monsieur Parolles, you were born under
a charitable star.

P. Under Mars, I.

H. I especially think, under Mars.

P. Why under Mars?

H. The wars have so kept you under that
you must needs be born under Mars.

P. When he was predominant.

H. When he was retrograde, I think rather.

P. Why think you so?

H. You go so much backward when you
fight.

P. That's for advantage.

H. So is running away, when fear proposes
the safety: but the composition that your valour
and fear makes in you is a virtue of a good wing,
and I like the wear well.

Par. I am so full of businesses I cannot
answer thee acutely. I will return perfect court-
tier; in which, my instruction shall serve to
naturalize thee, so thou wilt be capable of a
courtier's counsel, and understand what advice
shall thrust upon thee; else thou diest in thine
unthankfulness, and thine ignorance makes thee
away: farewell. When thou hast leisure, say thy
prayers; when thou hast none, remember thy
friends. Get thee a good husband, and use him
as he uses thee: so, farewell. [Exit.

H. Our remedies oft in ourselves do lie
Which we ascribe to heaven: the fated sky
Gives us free scope; only doth backward pull
Our slow designs when we ourselves are dull.
What power is it which mounts my love so high;
That makes me see, and cannot feed mine eye?
The mightiest space in fortune nature brings
To join like likes, and kiss like native things.
Impossible be strange attempts to those
That weigh their pains in sense, and do suppose
What hath been cannot be: who ever strove
To show her merit, that did miss her love?
The king's disease,—my project may deceive me,
But my intents are fix'd and will not leave me.

[Exit.

SCENE II.—PARTS. A Room in the King's
Palace.

Flourish of Cornets. Enter the King of France,
with letters; Lords and Others attending.

K. The Florentines and Senoys are by the
cars;
Have fought with equal fortune, and continue
A braving war.

F. Sir. So 'tis reported, sir.

K. Nay, 'tis most credible: we here re-
ceive it.

A certainly, vouch'd from our cousin Austria,
With caution that the Florentine will move us
For speedy aid; wherein our dearest friend
Prejudicates the business, and would seem
To have us make denial.

F. Sir. His love and wisdom,
Approv'd so to your majesty, may plead
For amplest credence.

K. He hath arm'd our answer,
And Florence is denied before he comes:
Yet, for our gentlemen that mean to see
The Tuscan service, freely have they leave
To stand on either part.

S. It well may serve
A nursery to our gentry, who are sick
For breathing and exploit.

K. What's he comes here?
Enter Bertram, Lafeu, and Parolles.

First Lord. It is the Count Rousillon, my good lord,
Young Bertram.

King. Youth, thou bear'st thy father's face;
Frank nature, rather curious than in haste, 20
Hath well compos'd thee. Thy father's moral parts
Mayst thou inherit too! Welcome to Paris.

Ber. My thanks and duty are your majesty's.

King. I would I had that corporal soundness
Now, 24
As when thy father and myself in friendship
First tried our valorship! He did look far
Into the service of the time and was
Discipl'd of the bravest: he lasted long;
But on us both did haggish age steal on,
And wore us out of act. It much repairs me
To talk of your good father. In his youth
He had the wit which I can well observe
To-day in our young lords; but they may jest
Till their own scorn return to them unnoted
Ere they can hide their levity in honour.
So like a courtier, contempt nor bitterness 36
Were in his pride or sharpness; if they were,
His equal had awak'd them; and his honour,
Clock to itself, knew the true minute when
Exception bid him speak, and at this time 40
His tongue obey'd his hand: who were below him
He us'd as creatures of another place,
And how'd his eminent top to their low ranks,
Making them proud of his humility, 44
In their poor praise he humbled. Such a man
Might be a copy to these younger times,
Which, follow'd well, would demonstrate them
now
But goers backward.

Ber. His good remembrance, sir, 48
Lies richer in your thoughts than on his tomb;
So in approv'd lives not his epitaph
As in your royal speech.

King. Would I were with him! He would
always say,— 52
Methinks I hear him now: his plausive words
He scatter'd in ears, but grafted them,
To grow there and to bear. 'Let me not live,'—
Thus his good melancholy oft began,
On the catastrophe and heel of pastime,
When it was out,—'Let me not live,' quoth he,
'After my flame lacks oil, to be the snuff
Of younger spirits, whose apprehensive senses 60
All but new things disdain; whose judgments are
Mere fathers of their garments; whose con-
stancies
Expire before their fashions.' This he wish'd:
I, after him, do after him wish too,

Since I nor wax nor honey can bring home,
I quickly were dissolved from my hive,
To give some labourers room.

Sec. Lord. You are lov'd, sir;
They that least lend it you shall lack you first.68

King. I fill a place, I know't. How long is't, count,
Since the physician at your father's died?
He was much fam'd.

Ber. Some six months since, my lord.

King. If he were living, I would try him yet:
Lend me an arm: the rest have worn me out 73
With several applications: nature and sickness
Debate it at their leisure. Welcome, count;
My son's no dearer.

Ber. Thank your majesty. 76

[Exeunt. Flourish.

Scene III.—Rousillon. A Room in the
Countess's Palace.

Enter Countess, Steward, and Clown.

Count. I will now hear: what say you of this
gentlewoman?

Stew. Madam, the care I have had to even
your content, I wish might be found in the
calendar of my past endeavours; for then we
wound our modesty and make foul the clearness
of our deserving, when of ourselves we publish
them.

Count. What does this knave here? Get you
gone, sirrah: the complaints I have heard of you
I do not all believe: 'tis my slowness that I do
not; for I know you lack not folly to commit
them, and have ability enough to make such
knaveeries yours.

Clo. 'Tis not unknown to you, madam, I am
a poor fellow.

Count. Well, sir.

Clo. No, madam, 'tis not so well that I am
poor, though many of the rich are damned. But, if
I may have your ladyship's good will to go to the
world, Isbel the woman and I will do as we may.

Count. Wilt thou needs be a beggar?

Clo. I do beg your good will in this case.

Count. In what case? 24

Clo. In Isbel's case and mine own. Service is
no heritage; and I think I shall never have the
blessing of God till I have issue o' my body, for
they say barnes are blessings. 28

Count. Tell me thy reason why thou wilt
marry.

Clo. My poor body, madam, requires it: I
am driven on by the flesh; and he must needs
go that the devil drives. 33

Count. Is this all your worship's reason?
Act I, Sc. III.

ALL’S WELL THAT ENDS WELL

Clo. Faith, madam, I have other holy reasons, such as they are. 36

Count. May the world know them? 40

Clo. I have been, madam, a wicked creature, as you and all flesh and blood are; and, indeed, I do marry that I may repent. 40

Count. Thy marriage, sooner than thy wickedness.

Clo. I am out o’ friends, madam; and I hope to have friends for my wife’s sake. 44

Count. Such friends are thine enemies, kneave.

Clo. You’re shallow, madam, in great friends; for the knaves come to do that for me which I am aweary of. He that ears my land spares my team, and gives me leave to loaf in the crop: if I be his cuckold, he’s my drudge. He that comforts my wife is the generisher of my flesh and blood; he that cherishes my flesh and blood loves my flesh and blood; he that loves my flesh and blood is my friend: ergo, he that kisses my wife is my friend. If men could be contented to be what they are, there were no fear in marriage; for young Charbon the puritan, and old Poyssam the papist, have sworn their hearts are severed in religion, their heads are both one; they may jowl horns together like any deer i’ the herd. 60

Count. Wilt thou ever be a foul-mouthed and calumnious kneave?

Clo. A prophet I, madam; and I speak the truth the next way:

For I the ballad will repeat,
Which men full true shall find;
Your marriage comes by destiny,
Your cuckoo sings by kind. 68

Count. Get you gone, sir: I’ll talk with you more anon.

Stew. May it please you, madam, that he bid Helen come to you: of her I am to speak. 72

Count. Sirrah, tell my gentlewoman I would speak with her; Helen I mean.

Clo. Was this fair face the cause, quoth she,
Why the Grecians sacked Troy? 76
Fond done, done fond,
Was this King Priam’s joy?
With that she sighed as she stood,
With that she sighed as she stood,
And gave this sentence then:
Among nine bad if one be good,
Among nine bad if one be good,
There’s yet one good in ten. 80

Count. What! one good in ten? you corrupt the song, sirrah.

Clo. One good woman in ten, madam; which is a purifying o’ the song. Would God would serve the world so all the year! we’d find no fault with the tithe-woman if I were the parson.

One in ten, quoth a! An we might have a good woman born but for every blazing star, or at an earthquake, ’twould mend the lottery well: a man may draw his heart out ere a’ pluck one.

Count. You’ll be gone, sir kneave, and do as I command you! 96

Clo. That man should be at woman’s command, and yet no hurt done! Though honesty be no puritan, yet it will do no hurt; it will wear the surplice of humility over the black gown of a big heart. I am going, forsooth: the business is for Helen to come hither. [Exit.

Count. Well, now.

Stew. I know, madam, you love your gentlewoman entirely.

Count. Faith, I do: her father bequeathed her to me; and she herself, without other advantage, may lawfully make title to as much love as she finds: there is more owing her than is paid, and more shall be paid her than she’ll demand.

Stew. Madam, I was very late more near her than I think she wished me: alone she was, and did communicate to herself her own words to her own ears; she thought, I dare vow for her, they touched not any stranger sense. Her matter was, she loved your son: Fortune, she said, was no goddess, that had put such difference betwixt their two estates; Love no god, that would not extend his might, only where qualities were level; Dian no queen of virgins, that would suffer her poor knight surprised, without rescue in the first assault or ransom afterward. This she delivered in the most bitter touch of sorrow that e’er I heard virgin exclaim in; which I held my duty speedily to acquaint you withal, sithence in the loss that may happen, it concerns you something to know it. 128

Count. You have discharged this honestly: keep it to yourself. Many likelihoods informed me of this before, which hung so tollering in the balance that I could neither believe nor misdoubt. Pray you, leave me: stall this in your bosom; and I thank you for your honest care. I will speak with you further anon. [Exit Steward.

Enter HELENA.

Even so it was with me when I was young: 136
If ever we are nature’s, these are ours; this thorn
Doth to our rose of youth rightly belong;
Our blood to us, this to our blood is born:
It is the show and seal of nature’s truth, 140
Where love’s strong passion is impress’d in youth:
By our remembrances of days foregone,
Such were our faults; or then we thought them none.

Her eye is sick on’t: I observe her now. 144
Hel. What is your pleasure, madam?
Count. You know, Helen, I am a mother to you.
Hel. Mine honourable mistress.

That you start at it? I say, I am your mother; And put you in the catalogue of those That were enwombed mine: ‘tis often seen Adoption strives with nature, and choice breeds A native slip to us from foreign seeds; You ne’er oppress’d me with a mother’s groan, Yet I express to you a mother’s care.

God’s mercy, maiden! does it curd thy blood To say I am thy mother? What’s the matter, That this distemper’d messenger of wet, The many-colour’d Iris, rounds thine eye? Why? that you are my daughter? That I am not.

Hel. I say, I am your mother.
Count. Pardon, madam; The Count Roussillon cannot be my brother: I am from humble, he from honour’d name; No note upon my parents, his all noble: My master, my dear lord he is; and I His servant live, and will his vassal die. He must not be my brother.

Count. Nor I your mother? So that my lord your son were not my brother,— Indeed my mother! or were you both our mothers, I care no more for than I do for heaven, So I were not his sister. Can’t no other, But, your daughter, he must be my brother.

Count. Yes, Helen, you might be my daughter-in-law: God shield you mean it not! daughter and mother

So strive upon your pulse. What, pale again? My fear hath catch’d your fondness: now I see The mystery of your loneliness, and find Your salt tears’ head: now to all sense ‘tis gross You love my son; invention is ashamed, Against the proclamation of thy passion, To say thou dost not: therefore tell me true; But tell me then, ‘tis so; for look, thy cheeks Confess it, th’ one to th’ other; and thine eyes See it so grossly shown in thy behaviours That in their kind they speak it: only sin And hellish obstinacy tie thy tongue, That truth should be suspected. Speak, is’t so? If it be so, you have wound a goodly clew; If it be not, forswear’t: howser, I charge thee,

As heaven shall work in me for thine avail, To tell me truly.
Hel. Good madam, pardon me!
Count. Do you love my son?
Hel. Your pardon, noble mistress!
Count. Love you my son?
Hel. Do not you love him, madam?
Count. Go not about; my love hath in’t a bond Whereof the world takes note: come, come, disclose The state of your affection, for your passions Have to the full appeach’d.

Hel. Then, I confess, Here on my knee, before high heaven and you That before you, and next unto high heaven, I love your son. My friends were poor, but honest; so’s my love: Be not offended, for it hurts not him That he is lov’d of me: I follow him not By any token of presumptuous suit; Nor would I have him till I do deserve him; Yet never know how that desert should be. I know I love in vain, strive against hope; Yet, in this captious and intenable sieve I still pour in the waters of my love, And lack not to lose still. Thus, Indian-like, Religious in mine error, I adore The sun, that looks upon his worshipper, But knows of him no more. My dearest madam, Let not your hate encounter with my love For loving where you do: but, if yourself, Whose aged honour cites a virtuous youth, Did ever in so true a flame of liking Wish chastely and love dearly, that your Dian Was both herself and Love: O! then, give pity To her, whose state is such that cannot choose But lend and give where she is sure to lose; That seeks not to find that her search implies, But, riddle-like, lives sweetly where she dies.

Count. Had you not lately an intent, speak truly,

To go to Paris?
Hel. Madam, I had.
Hel. I will tell truth; by grace itself I swear. You know my father left me some prescriptions Of rare and prov’d effects, such as his reading And manifest experience had collected For general sovereignty; and that he will’d me In heedfull’st reservation to bestow them. As notes whose faculties inclusive were More than they were in note. Amongst the rest, There is a remedy, approv’d, set down To cure the desperate languishings whereof The king is render’d lost.
Act I, Sc. III.  ALL'S WELL THAT ENDS WELL

Count. This was your motive
For Paris, was it? speak.
Hel. My lord your son made me to think of
this; 240
Else Paris, and the medicine, and the king,
Had from the conversation of my thoughts
Haply been absent then.
Count. But think you, Helen,
If you should tender your supposed aid, 244
He would receive it? He and his physicians
Are of a mind; he, that they cannot help him,
They, that they cannot help. How shall they
credit
A poor unlearned virgin, when the schools, 248
Embowell'd of their doctrine, have left off
The danger to itself?
Hel. There's something in't,
More than my father's skill, which was the
great'st
Of his profession, that his good receipt 252
Shall for my legacy be sanctified
By the luckiest stars in heaven: and, would
your honour
But give me leave to try success, I'd venture
The well-lost life of mine on his Grace's cure, 256
By such a day, and hour.
Count. Dost thou believe 't?
Hel. Ay, madam, knowingly.
Count. Why, Helen, thou shalt have my
leave and love,
Means, and attendants, and my loving greet-
ings 260
To those of mine in court. I'll stay at home
And pray God's blessing into thy attempt.
Be gone to-morrow; and be sure of this,
What I can help thee to thou shalt not miss. 264
[Exeunt.

ACT II.

SCENE I.—Paris.  A Room in the King's
Palace.

Flourish. Enter the KING, with divers young
Lords taking leave for the Florentine war;
BERTRAM, PAROLLES, and Attendants.

King. Farewell, young lords: these war-like
principles
Do not throw from you: and you, my lords,
farewell:
Share the advice betwixt you; if both gain, all
The gift doth stretch itself as 'tis receiv'd, 4
And is enough for both.
First Lord. 'Tis our hope, sir,
After well enter'd soldiers, to return
And find your Grace in health.
King. No, no, it cannot be; and yet my heart

Will not confess he owes the malady 9
That doth my life besiege. Farewell, young
lords;
Whether I live or die, be you the sons
Of worthy Frenchmen: let higher Italy— 12
Those bated that inherit but the fall
Of the last monarch—see that you come
Not to woo honour, but to wed it; when
The bravest questants, find what you seek
That fame may cry you loud: I say, farewell. 17
Sec. Lord. Health, at your bidding, serve
your majesty!

King. Those girls of Italy, take heed of them:
They say, our French lack language to deny 20
If they demand: beware of being captives,
Before you serve.

Both Lords. Our hearts receive your warnings.

King. Farewell. Come hither to me. 25
[Exit attended.

First Lord. O my sweet lord, that you will
stay behind us! 24
Par. 'Tis not his fault, the spark.

Sec. Lord. Of 'tis brave wars.
Par. Most admirable: I have seen those wars.
Ber. I am commanded here, and kept a coil
with
'Too young,' and 'the next year,' and 'tis too
early.' 28
Par. An thy mind stand to't, boy, steal away
bravely.

Ber. I shall stay here the forehorse to a
smock,
Creaking my shoes on the plain masonry,
Till honour be bought up and no sword worn 32
But one to dance with! By heaven! I'll steal
away.

First Lord. There's honour in the theft.
Par. Commit it, count.

Sec. Lord. I am your accessory; and so fare-
well.

Ber. I grow to you, and our parting is a tor-
tured body. 37

First Lord. Farewell, captain.
Sec. Lord. Sweet Monsieur Parolles!
Par. Noble heroes, my sword and yours are
kin. Good sparks and lustrous, a word, good
metals: you shall find in the regiment of the
Spinii, one Captain Spurio, with his cicatrice,
an emblem of war, here on his sinister cheek: it
was this very sword entrenched it: say to him,
I live, and observe his reports for me 46
Sec. Lord. We shall, noble captain.

[Exeunt Lords.

Par. Mars dote on you for his novices!
What will ye do?
Ber. Stay; the king. 50

316
Re-enter King; Parolles and Bertram retire.

Par. Use a more spacious ceremony to the noble lords; you have restrained yourself within the list of too cold an adieu: be more expressive to them; for they wear themselves in the cap of the time, there do must needs go sight, eat, speak, and move under the influence of the most received star; and though the devil lead the measure, such are to be followed. After them, and take a more dilated farewell.

Ber. And I will do so.

Par. Worthy fellows; and like to prove most sinewy swordsmen.

[Exeunt Bertram and Parolles.

Enter Lafou.

Laf. [Kneeling.] Pardon, my lord, for me and for my tidings.

King. I'll see thee to stand up.

Laf. Then here's a man stands that has brought his pardon.

I would you had kneel'd, my lord, to ask me mercy, and that at my bidding you could so stand up.

King. I would I had; so I had broke thy pate, and ask'd thee mercy for't.

Laf. Good faith, across: but, my good lord, tis thus;

Will you be cur'd of your infirmity?

King. No.

Laf. O! will you eat no grapes, my royal fox? Yes, but you will my noble grapes an if My royal fox could reach them. I have seen a medicine That's able to breathe life into a stone, Quickening a rock, and make you dance canary With sprightly fire and motion; whose simple touch Is powerful to raise King Pepin, nay, To give great Charlemain a pen in's hand And write to her a love-line.

King. What 'her' is this?

Laf. Why, Doctor She. My lord, there's one arriv'd

If you will see her: now, by my faith and honour, If seriously I may convey my thoughts In this my light deliverance, I have spoke With one, that in her sex, her years, profession, Wisdom, and constancy, hath amaz'd me more Than I dare blame my weakness. Will you see her,

For that is her demand, and know her business? That done, laugh well at me.

King. Now, good Lafou, Bring in the admiration, that we with thee May spend our wonder too, or take off thine By wonder how thou took'st it.

Laf. Nay, I'll fit you,
Oft does them by the weakest minister:
So holy writ in babes hath judgment shown,
When judges have been babes; great floods have
flown
From simple sources; and great seas have dried
When miracles have been by the greatest been denied.
Oft expectation fails, and most oft there
Where most it promises; and oft it hits
Where hope is coldest and despair most fits.

King. I must not hear thee: fare thee well,
kind maid.

Thy pains, not us'd, must by thyself be paid:
Profer's not took reap thanks fpr their reward.

Hel. Inspired merit so by breath is barr'd.
It is not so with Him that all things knows,
As 'tis with us that square our guess by shows;
But most it is presumption in us when
The help of heaven we count the act of men.
Dear sir, to my endeavours give consent;
Of heaven, not me, make an experiment.
I am not an impostor that proclaim
Myself against the level of mine aim;
But know I think, and think I know most
sure,

My art is not past power nor you past cure.

King. Art thou so confident? Within what
space
Hop'st thou my cure?

Hel. The great'st grace lending grace,
Ere twice the horses of the sun shall bring
Their fiery torcher diurnal ring,
Ere twice in murek and occidental damp
Moist Hesperus hath quench'd his sleepy lamp,
Or four and twenty times the pilot's glass
Hath told the thievish minutes how they pass,
What is infirm from your sound parts shall fly,
Health shall live free, and sickness freely die.

King. Upon thy certainty and confidence
What dar'st thou venture?

Hel. Tax of impudence,
A strumpet's boldness, a divulged shame,
Traduced by odious ballads: my maiden's name
Sear'd otherwise; nay worse—if worse—extended
With vilest torture let my life be ended.

King. Methinks in thee some blessed spirit
doth speak,
His powerful sound within an organ weak;
And what imposibility would say
In common sense, sense saves another way.
Thy life is dear; for all that life can rate
Worth name of life in thee hath estimate;
Youth, beauty, wisdom, courage, virtue, all
That happiness and prime can happy call:
Thou this to hazard needs must intimate
Skill infinite or monstrous desperate.
Sweet practiser, thy physic I will try,

That ministers thine own death if I die.

Hel. If I break time, or flinch in property
Of what I spoke, unpitied let me die,
And well deserve. Not helping, death's my
fee;

But, if I help, what do you promise me?

King. Make thy demand.

Hel. But will you make it even?

King. Ay, by my sceptre, and my hopes of
heaven.

Hel. Then shalt thou give me with thy
kingly hand
What husband in thy power I will command:
Exempted be from me the arrogance
To choose from forth the royal blood of France,
My low and humble name to propagate
With any branch or image of thy state;
But such a one, thy vassal, whom I know
Is free for me to ask, thee to bestow.

King. Here is my hand; the promises ob-
serv'd,

Thy will by my performance shall be serv'd:
So make the choice of thy own time, for I,
Thy resolv'd patient, on thee still rely.
More should I question thee, and more I must,
Though more to know could not be more to
trust,

From whence thou cam'st, how tended on; but
rest
Unquestion'd welcome and undoubted blest.
Give me some help here, ho! If thou proceed
As high as word, my deed shall match thy
deed.  

[Flourish. Exeunt.

SCENE II.—Rousillon. A Room in the
COUNTESS'S Palace.

Enter Countess and Clown.

Count. Come on, sir; I shall now put you to
the height of your breeding.

Clo. I will show myself highly fed and lowly
taught. I know my business is but to the
court.

Count. To the court! why what place make
you special, when you put off that with such
contempt? 'But to the court!'  

Clo. Truly, madam, if God have lent a man
any manners, he may easily put it off at court:
he that cannot make a leg, put off's cap, kiss his
hand, and say nothing, has neither leg, hands,
lip, nor cap; and indeed such a fellow, to say
precisely, were not for the court. But, for me, I
have an answer will serve all men.

Count. Marry, that's a bountiful answer
that fits all questions.

Clo. It is like a barber's chair that fits all
buttocks; the pin-buttock, the quatch-buttock, the brawn-buttock, or any buttock. 20

Count. Will your answer serve fit to all questions?

Clo. As fit as ten groats is for the hand of an attorney, as your French crown for your taffeta punk, as Tib's rush for Tom's forefinger, as a pancake for Shrove-Tuesday, a morris for Mayday, as the nail to his hole, the cuckold to his horn, as a scolding queen to a wrangling knave, as the nun's lip to the friar's mouth; nay, as the puddling to his skin.

Count. Have you, I say, an answer of such fitness for all questions? 32

Clo. From below your duke to beneath your constable, it will fit any question.

Count. It must be an answer of most monstrous size that must fit all demands. 36

Clo. But a trifle neither, in good faith, if the learned should speak truth of it. Here it is, and all that belongs to 't: ask me if I am a courtier; it shall do you no harm to learn. 40

Count. To be young again, if we could. I will be a fool in question, hoping to be the wiser by your answer. I pray you, sir, are you a courtier?

Clo. O Lord, sir! there's a simple putting off. More, more, a hundred of them.

Count. Sir, I am a poor friend of yours, that loves you. 48

Clo. O Lord, sir! Thick, thick, spare not me.

Count. I think, sir, you can eat none of this homely meat.

Clo. O Lord, sir! Nay, put me 't, I warrant you.

Count. You were lately whipped, sir, as I think.

Clo. O Lord, sir! Spare not me.

Count. Do you cry, 'O Lord, sir!' at your whipping, and 'Spare not me?' Indeed your 'O Lord, sir!' is very sequent to your whipping: you would answer very well to a whipping, if you were but bound to 't. 62

Clo. I me'er had worse luck in my life in my 'O Lord, sir!' I see things may serve long, but not serve ever.

Count. I play the noble housewife with the time,

To entertain 't so merrily with a fool.

Clo. O Lord, sir! why, there's serves well again.

Count. An end, sir: to your business. Give Helen this,

And urge her to a present answer back:

Commend me to my kinsmen and my son.

This is not much.

Clo. Not much commendation to them.

Count. Not much employment for you: you understand me?

Clo. Most fruitfully: I am there before my legs.

Count. Haste you again. [Exeunt severally.

SCENE III.—Paris. A Room in the King's Palace.

Enter BERTRAM, LAFEU, and PAROLLES.

Laf. They say miracles are past; and we have our philosophical persons, to make modern and familiar, things supernatural and causeless. Hence is it that we make trifles of terrors, ensconcing ourselves into seeming knowledge, when we should submit ourselves to an unknown fear.

Par. Why, 'tis the rarest argument of wonder that hath shot out in our latter times. 8

Ber. And so 'tis.

Laf. To be relinquished of the artists,—

Par. So I say.

Laf. Both of Galen and Paracelsus. 12

Par. So I say.

Laf. Of all the learned and authentic fellows,—

Par. Right; so I say.

Laf. That gave him out incurable,—

Par. Why, there 'tis; so say I too.

Laf. Not to be helped,—

Par. Right; as 'twere, a man assured of a—

Laf. Uncertain life, and sure death. 20

Par. Just, you say well: so would I have said.

Laf. I may truly say it is a novelty to the world. 24

Par. It is, indeed: if you will have it in showing, you shall read it in—what do you call there—

Laf. A showing of a heavenly effect in an earthly actor. 29

Par. That's it I would have said; the very same.

Laf. Why, your dolphin is not lustier: 'fore me, I speak in respect—

Par. Nay, 'tis strange, 'tis very strange, that is the brief and the tedious of it; and he is of a most facinorous spirit, that will not acknowledge it to be the—

Laf. Very hand of heaven—

Par. Ay, so I say.

Laf. In a most weak and debile minister, great power, great transcendence: which should, indeed, give us a further use to be made than alone the recovery of the king, as to be generally thankful.

Par. I would have said it; you say well. Here comes the king.
Enter KING, HELENA, and Attendants.

Laf. Lustig, as the Dutchman says: 'Tis like a maid the better, whilst I have a tooth in my head. Why, he's able to lead her a coranto. 49

Par. Mort du vinatgé! Is not this Helen?

Laf. 'Fore God, I think so.

King. Go, call before me all the lords in court. [Exit an Attendant.

Sit, my preserver, by thy patient's side: 52

And with this healthful hand, whose banish'd sense

Thou hast repeal'd, a second time receive

The confirmation of my promised gift,

Which but attends thy naming.

Enter several Lords.

Fair maid, send forth thine eye: this youthful parcel

Of noble bachelors stand at my bestowing,

O'er whom both sov'reign power and father's voice

I have to use: thy frank election make;

Thou hast power to choose, and they none to for-sake.

Hel. To each of you one fair and virtuous mistress

Fall, when Love pleaseth marry, to each, but one.

Laf. 'Tis not for me. Curtal, and his furniture, 65

My mouth no more were broken than these boys'

And writ as little beard.

King. Peruse them well:

Not one of those but had a noble father.

Hel. Gentlemen,

Heaven hath through me restor'd the king to health.

All. We understand it, and thank heaven for you.

Hel. I am a simple maid; and therein wealthiest

That I protest I simply am a maid.

Please it your majesty, I have done already:

The blushes in my cheeks thus whisper me,

'Ve blush, that thou shouldst choose; but, be refus'd,' 76

Let the white death sit on thy cheek for ever;

We'll ne'er come there again.'

King. Make choice; and see,

Who shuns thy love, shuns all his love in me.

Hel. Now, Dian, from thy altar do I fly, 80

And to imperial Love, that god most high,

Domysighs stream. Sir, will you hear my suit?

First Lord. And grant it.

Hel. Thanks, sir; all the rest is mute.

Laf. I had rather be in this choice than

throw ames-see for my life.

Hel. The honour, sir, that flames in your fair eyes,
From lowest place when virtuous things proceed,
The place is dignified by the doer’s deed:
Where great additions swell’s, and virtue none,
It is a dropped honour. Good alone
Is good without a name: vileness is so:
The property by what it should go,
Not by the title. She is young, wise, fair;
In these to nature she’s immediate heir,
And these breed honour: that is honour’s scorn
Which challenges itself as honour’s born,
And is not like the sire: honours thrive
When rather from our acts we them derive
Than our foregoers. The mere word’s a slave,
Debosh’d on every tomb, on every grave
A lying trophy, and as oft is dumb
Where dust and dam’d oblivion is the tomb
Of honour’d bones indeed. What should be said?
If thou canst like this creature as a maid,
I can create the rest: virtue and she
Is her own dower; honour and wealth from me.

Ber. I cannot love her, nor will strive to do’t.
King. Thou wrong’st thyself if thou shouldest strive to choose.
Hel. That you are well restor’d, my lord, I’m glad:
Let the rest go.
King. My honour’s at the stake, which to defeat
I must produce my power. Here, take her hand,
Proud scornful boy, unworthy this good gift,
That dost in vile misprision shackle up
My love and her desert; thou canst not dream
We, poising us in her defective scale,
Shall weigh thee to the beam; that wilt not know.
It is in us to plant thine honour where
We please to have it grow. Check thy contempt:
Obey our will, which travels in thy good:
Believe not thy disdain, but presently
Do thine own fortunes that obedient right
Which both thy duty owes and our power claims;
Or I will throw thee from my care for ever
Into the staggers and the careless lapse
Of youth and ignorance; both my revenge and hate
Loosing upon thee, in the name of justice.
Without all terms of pity. Speak; thine answer.

Ber. Pardon, my gracious lord; for I submit
My fancy to your eyes. When I consider
What great creation and what dole of honour
Flies where you bid it, I find that she, which late
Was in my nobler thoughts most base, is now
The praised of the king; who, so ennobled,
Is, as’twere, born so.

King. Take her by the hand,
And tell her she is thine: to whom I promise

A counterpoise, if not to thy estate
A balance more replie.

Ber. I take her hand.

King. Good fortune and the favour of the king
Smile upon this contract; whose ceremony
Shall seem expedient on the now-born brief,
And be perform’d to-night: the solemn feast
Shall more attend upon the coming space,
Expecting absent friends. As thou lov’st her,
Thy love’s to me religious; else, does err.

[Exeunt King, Bertram, Helena, Lords, and Attendants.

Laf. Do you hear, monsieur? a word with you.
Par. Your pleasure, sir?

Laf. Your lord and master did well to make
his recantation.

Par. Recantation! My lord! my master!
Laf. Ay; is it not a language I speak?
Par. A most harsh one, and not to be understood
without bloody succeeding. My master!
Laf. Are you companion to the Count Roussillon?

Par. To any count; to all counts; to what is man.

Laf. To what is count’s man: count’s master
is of another style.

Par. You are too old, sir; let it satisfy you,
you are too old.

Laf. I must tell thee, sirrah, I write man; to
which title age cannot bring thee.

Par. What I dare too well do, I dare not do.
Laf. I did think thee, for two ordinaries,
to be a pretty wise fellow: thou didst make
tolerable vent of thy travel; it might pass:
yet the scars and the bannerets about thee did
manifoldly dissuade me from believing thee a
vessel of too great a burden. I have now found thee;
when I lose thee again, I care not; yet art thou good for nothing but taking up, and that
thou’rt scarce worth.

Par. Hadst thou not the privilege of antiquity upon thee,—

Laf. Do not plunge thyself too far in anger,
lest thou hasten thy trial; which if—Lord have mercy on thee for a ben! So, my good window
of lattice, fare thee well: thy casement I need
not open, for I look through thee. Give me thy hand.

Par. My lord, you give me most egregious
indignity.

Laf. Ay, with all my heart; and thou art
worthy of it.

Par. I have not, my lord, deserved it.

Laf. Yes, good faith, every dram of it; and I
will not hate thee a scruple.

Par. Well, I shall be wiser.
I will not bed her.
Par. What, what, sweet heart?
Ber. O my Parolles, they have married me!
I’ll to the Tuscan wars, and never bed her.
Par. France is a dog-hole, and it no more merits
The tread of a man’s foot. To the wars!
Ber. There’s letters from my mother: what the import is
I know not yet.
Par. Ay, that would be known. To the wars, my boy! to the wars!
He wears his honour in a box, unseen.
That hugs his kicky-wicky here at home,
Spending his manly marrow in her arms,
Which should sustain the bound and high curvet
Of Mars’s fiery steed. To other regions!
France is a stable; we that dwell in’t jades;
Therefore, to the war!
Ber. It shall be so: I’ll send her to my house,
Acquaint my mother with my hate to her,
And wherefore I am fled; write to the king
That which I durst not speak: his present gift
Shall furnish me to those Italian fields,
Where noble fellows strike. War is no strife
To the dark house and the detested wife.
Par. Will this capriccio hold in thee? art
sure?
Ber. Go with me to my chamber, and advise me.
I’ll send her straight away: to-morrow
I’ll to the wars, she to her single sorrow.
Par. Why, these balls bound; there’s noise
in it. ’Tis hard:
A young man married is a man that’s marr’d:
Therefore away, and leave her bravely; go:
The king has done you wrong: but, hush! ’tis so.

Scene IV.—Same. Another Room in the Palace.

Enter Helena and Clown.

Hel. My mother greets me kindly: is she well?
Clo. She is not well; but yet she has her health; she’s very merry; but yet she is not well: but thanks be given, she’s very well, and wants nothing i’ the world; but yet she is not well.

Hel. If she be very well, what does she all that she’s not very well?
Clo. Truly, she’s very well indeed, but for two things.

Hel. What two things?
Clo. One, that she’s not in heaven, whither God send her quickly! the other, that she’s in earth, from whence God send her quickly!
Enter Parolles.

Par. Bless you, my fortunate lady!

Hel. I hope, sir, I have your good will to have mine own good fortunes.

Par. You had my prayers to lead them on; and to keep them on, have them still. O! my knave, how does my old lady?

Clo. So that you had her wrinkles, and her money, I would she did as you say.

Par. Why, I say nothing.

Clo. Marry, you are the wiser man; for many a man's tongue shakes out his master's undoing. To say nothing, to do nothing, to know nothing, and to have nothing, is to be a great part of your title; which is within a very little of nothing.

Par. Away! thou'rt a knave.

Clo. You should have said, sir, before a knave thou'rt a knave; that is, before me thou'rt a knave: this had been truth, sir.

Par. Go to, thou art a witty fool; I have found thee.

Clo. Did you find me in yourself, sir? or were you taught to find me? The search, sir, was profitable; and much fool may you find in you, even to the world's pleasure and the increase of laughter.

Par. A good knave, i' faith, and well fed. Madam, my lord will go away to-night; A very serious business calls on him. The great prerogative and rite of love, Which, as your due, time claims, he does acknowledge,

But puts it off to a compell'd restraint; Whose want, and whose delay, is strew'd with sweets,

Which they distil now in the curbed time, To make the coming hour o'erflow with joy, And pleasure drown the brim.

Hel. What's his will else?

Par. That you will take your instant leave o' the king,

And make this haste as your own good proceeding,

Strengthen'd with what apology you think May make it probable need.

Hel. What more commands he?

Par. That, having this obtain'd, you presently Attend his further pleasure.

Hel. In everything I wait upon his will.

Par. I shall report it so.

Hel. I pray you. Come, sirrah. [Exeunt.

Scene V.—Another Room in the Same.

Enter Lafeu and Bertram.

Laf. But I hope your lordship thinks not him a soldier.

Ber. Yes, my lord, and of very valiant approbation.

Laf. You have it from his own deliverance.

Ber. And by other warranted testimony.

Laf. Then my dial does not true: I took this lark for a bunting.

Ber. I do assure you, my lord, he is very great in knowledge, and accordingly valiant.

Laf. I have then sinned against his experience and transgressed against his valour; and my state that way is dangerous, since I cannot yet find in my heart to repent. Here he comes; I pray you, make us friends; I will pursue the amity.

Enter Parolles.

Par. [To Bertram.] These things shall be done, sir.

Laf. Pray you, sir, who's his tailor?

Par. Sir?

Laf. O! I know him well. Ay, sir; he, sir, is a good workman, a very good tailor.

Ber. [Aside to Parolles.] Is she gone to the king?

Par. She is.

Ber. Will she away to-night?

Par. As you'll have her.

Ber. I have writ my letters, casketed my treasure,

Given orders for our horses; and to-night,

When I should take possession of the bride,

End ere I do begin.

Laf. A good traveller is something at the latter end of a dinner; but one that lies three thirds, and uses a known truth to pass a thousand nothings with, should be once heard and thrice beaten. God save you, captain.

Ber. Is there any unkindness between my lord and you, monsieur?

Par. I know not how I have deserved to run into my lord's displeasure.

Laf. You have made shift to run into 't, boots and spurs and all, like him that leaped into the custard; and out of it you'll run again, rather than suffer question for your residence.

Ber. It may be you have mistaken him, my lord.

Laf. And shall do so ever, though I took him at his prayers. Fare you well, my lord; and believe this of me, there can be no kernel in this light nut; the soul of this man is his clothes. Trust him not in matter of heavy consequence; I have kept of them tame, and know their natures. Farewell, monsieur: I have spoken better of you than you have or will to deserve at my hand; but we must do good against evil. [Exeunt.

Par. An idle lord, I swear.

Ber. I think not so.
Par. Why, do you not know him?
Ber. Yes, I do know him well; and common speech
Gives him a worthy pass. Here comes my clog.

Enter HELENA.
Hel. I have, sir, as I was commanded from you,
Spoke with the king, and have procur'd his leave
For present parting; only, he desires
Some private speech with you.
Ber. I shall obey his will. You must not marvel, Helen, at my course,
Which holds not colour with the time, nor does
The ministration and required office
On my particular: prepar'd I was not
For such a business; therefore am I found
So much unsettled. This drives me to entreat you
That presently you take your way for home;
And rather muse than ask why I entreat you;
For my respects are better than they seem,
And my appointments have in them a need
Greater than shows itself at the first view
To you that know them not. This to my mother.

[Giving a letter.
'Twill be two days ere I shall see you, so
I leave you to your wisdom.
Hel. Sir, I can nothing say,
But that I am your most obedient servant.
Ber. Come, come, no more of that.
Hel. And ever shall
With true observance seek to eke out that
Wherein toward me my homely stars have fail'd
To equal my great fortune.
Ber. Let that go:
My haste is very great. Farewell: his home.
Hel. Pray sir, your pardon.
Ber. Well, what would you say?
Hel. I am not worthy of the wealth I owe,
Nor dare I say 'tis mine, and yet it is;
But, like a timorous thief, most fain would steal
What law does vouch mine own.
Ber. What would you have?
Hel. Something, and scarce so much: nothing, indeed.
I would not tell you what I would, my lord:
Faith, yes;
Strangers and foes do sunder, and not kiss.
Ber. I pray you, stay not, but in haste to horse.
Hel. I shall not break your bidding, good my lord.

[Exit HELENA.
Go thou toward home; where I will never come
Whilst I can shake my sword or hear the drum.
Away! and for our flight.
Par. Bravely, coraggio! 98
[Exeunt.

ACT III.


Flourish. Enter the DUKE, attended; two French Lords, and Soldiers.
Duke. So that from point to point now have you heard
The fundamental reasons of this war,
Whose great decision hath much blood let forth,
And more thirsts after.
First Lord. Holy seems the quarrel
Upon your Grace's part; black and fearful
On the opposer.
Duke. Therefore we marvel much our cousin France
Would in so just a business shut his bosom
Against our borrowing prayers.
First Lord. Good my lord,
The reasons of our state I cannot yield,
But like a common and an outward man,
That the great figure of a council frames
By self-unable motion: therefore dare not
Say what I think of it, since I have found
Myself in my uncertain grounds to fail
As often as I guess'd.
Duke. Be it his pleasure.
Sec. Lord. But I am sure the younger of our nature,
That surfeit on their ease, will day by day
Come here for physic.
Duke. Welcome shall they be,
And all the honours that can fly from us
Shall on them settle. You know your places well;
When better fall, for your avails they fell.
To-morrow to the field. [Flourish. Exeunt.

SCENE II.—Ronsillon. A Room in the Countess's Palace.

Enter COUNTESS and Clown.
Count. It hath happened all as I would have had it, save that he comes not along with her.
Clo. By my troth, I take my young lord to be a very melancholy man.
Count. By what observance, I pray you?
Clo. Why, he will look upon his boot and sing; mend the ruff and sing; ask questions and sing; pick his teeth and sing. I know a man that had this trick of melancholy sold a goodly manor for a song.
ALL'S WELL THAT ENDS WELL  Act III, Sc. II.

Count. [Opening a letter.] Let me see what he writes, and when he means to come. 12
Clo. I have no mind to Isbel since I was at court. Our old ling and our Isbels o’ the country are nothing like your old ling and your Isbels o’ the court: the brains of my Cupid’s knocked out, and I begin to love, as an old man loves money, with no stomach.

Count. What have we here?  19
Clo. E’en that you have there. [Exit.
Count. I have send you a daughter-in-law: she hath recovered the king, and undone me. I have wedded her, not bedded her; and sworn to make the ‘not eternal’. You shall hear I am run away: know it before the report come. If there be breadth enough in the world, I will hold a long distance. My duty to you.

Your unfortunate son, 28

BERTRAM.

This is not well: rash and unbridled boy, To fly the favours of so good a king! To pluck his indignation on thy head 32
By the misprisning of a maid too virtuous For the contempt of empire!

Re-enter Clown.

Clo. O madam! yonder is heavy news within between two soldiers and my young lady. 36
Count. What is the matter?
Clo. Nay, there is some comfort in the news, some comfort; your son will not be killed so soon as I thought he would. 40
Count. Why should he be killed?
Clo. So say I, madam, if he run away, as I hear he does: the danger is in standing to’t; that’s the loss of men, though it be the getting of children. Here they come will tell you more; for my part, I only hear your son was run away. [Exit.

Enter HELENA and Gentlemen.

First Gen. Save you, good madam.
Hel. Madam, my lord is gone, for ever gone. 49
Sec. Gen. Do not say so.
Count. Think upon patience. Pray you, gentle- men,
I have felt so many quirks of joy and grief, That the first face of neither, on the start, 52
Can woman me unto’t: where is my son, I pray you?
Sec. Gen. Madam, he’s gone to serve the Duke of Florence:
We met him thitherward: for thence we came, And, after some dispatch in hand at court, 56
Thither we bend again.

Hel. Look on his letter, madam; here’s my passport.

When thou canst get the ring upon my finger, which never shall come off, and show me a child begotten of thy body that I am father to, then call me husband: but in such a ‘then’ I write a ‘never.’

This is a dreadful sentence. 64
Count. Brought you this letter, gentlemen?
First Gen. Ay, madam; And for the contents’ sake are sorry for our pains.
Count. I prithee, lady, have a better cheer; If thou engrossest all the griefs are thine, 68
Thou robb’st me of a moiety: he was my son, But I do wash his name out of my blood, And thou art all my child. Towards Florence is he?
Sec. Gen. Ay, madam. 72
Count. And to be a soldier? 72
Sec. Gen. Such is his noble purpose; and, believe’t.
The duke will lay upon him all the honour That good convenience claims.
Count. Return you thither?
First Gen. Ay, madam, with the swiftest wing of speed. 76
Hel. Till I have no wife, I have nothing in France.

'Tis bitter.

Count. Find you that there?
Hel. Ay, madam.
First Gen. 'Tis but the boldness of his hand, haply, which his heart was not consenting to. 80
Count. Nothing in France until he have no wife!
There’s nothing here that is too good for him But only she; and she deserves a lord That twenty such rude boys might tend upon, 84
And call her hourly mistress. Who was with him?
First Gen. A servant only, and a gentle- man Which I have some time known.
Count. Paroles, was it not?
First Gen. Ay, my good lady, he. 88
Count. A very tainted fellow, and full of wickedness.
My son corrupts a well-deriv’d nature With his inducement.
First Gen. Indeed, good lady, The fellow has a deal of that too much, 92
Which holds him much to have.
Count. Y’are welcome, gentlemen.
I will entreat you, when you see my son, To tell him that his sword can never win 96
The honour that he loses: more I’ll entreat you Written to bear along.
Sec. Gen. We serve you, madam, In that and all your worthiest affairs.

325
Act III, Sc. II. \ ALL'S WELL THAT ENDS WELL

Count. Not so, but as we change our courtesies.
Will you draw near? 101

[Exeunt Countess and Gentlemen.

Hel. 'Till I have no wife, I have nothing in France.'

Nothing in France until he has no wife!
Thou shalt have none, Roussillon, none in France;
Then hast thou all again. Poor lord! is't I 105
That chase thee from thy country, and expose
Those tender limbs of thine to the event
Of the non-sparing war? and is it I 108
That drive thee from the sportive court, where thou

Wast shot at with fair eyes, to be the mark
Of smoky muskets? O you leaden messengers,
That ride upon the violent speed of fire, 112
Fly with false aim; move the still-piercing air,
That sings with piercing; do not touch my lord!
Whoever shoots at him, I set him there;
Whoever charges on his forward breast, 116
I am the catiff that do hold him to;
And, though I kill him not, I am the cause
His death was so effect'd: better 'twere
I met the ravin lion when he roar'd 120
With sharp constraint of hunger; better 'twere
That all the miseries which nature owes
Were mine at once. No, come thou home, Roussillon,

Whence honour but of danger wins a scar, 124
As oft it loses all: I will be gone;
My being here is that holds thee hence:
Shall I stay here to do't? no, no, although
The air of life did fan the house, 128
And angels offic'd all: I will be gone,
That pitiful rumour may report my flight,
To console thine ear. Come, night; end, day!
For with the dark, poor thief, I'll steal away. 132
[Exit.


Duke. The general of our horse thou art;
and we,
Great in our hope, lay our best love and credence
Upon thy promising fortune.

Ber. Sir, it is
A charge too heavy for my strength, but yet
We'll strive to bear it for thy worthy sake
To the extreme edge of hazard.

Duke. Then go thou forth,
And fortune play upon thy prosp’rous helm
As thy auspicious mistress!

Ber. This very day,
Great Mars, I put myself into thy file:

Make me but like my thoughts, and I shall prove
A lover of thy drum, hater of love. 136

[Exeunt.

SCENE IV.—Rousillon. A Room in the Countess’s Palace.

Enter Countess and Steward.

Count. Alas! and would you take the letter of her?
 Might you not know she would do as she has done,
By sending me a letter? Read it again.
Stew. I am Saint Jaques’ pilgrim, thither gone:

Ambitious love hath so in me offended
That bare-foot plod I the cold ground upon
With sainted vow my faults to have amended.
Write, write, that from the bloody course of war,
My dearest master, your dear son, may hie:
Bless him at home in peace, whilst I from far
His name with zealous fervour sanctify:
His taken labours bid him me forgive;
I, his despitful Juno, sent him forth
From courtly friends, with camping foés to live,

Where death and danger dog the heels of worth:
He is too good and fair for Death and me; 16
Whom I myself embrace, to set him free.

Count. Ah, what sharp stings are in her mildest words!

Rinaldo, you did never lack advice so much,
As letting her pass so: had I spoke with her, 20
I could have well diverted her intents,
Which thus she hath prevented.

Stew. Pardon me, madam:
If I had given you this at over-night
She might have been o’erta’en; and yet she writes,
Pursuit would be but vain.

Count. What angel shall 25
Bless this unworthy husband? he cannot thrive,
Unless her prayers, whom heaven delights to hear,
And loves to grant, reprieve him from the wrath
Of greatest justice. Write, write, Rinaldo, 29
To this unworthy husband of his wife;
Let every word weigh heavy of her worth
That he does weigh too light: my greatest grief,
Though little he do feel it, set down sharply. 33
Dispatch the most convenient messenger:
When haply he shall hear that she is gone,
He will return; and hope I may that she, 36
Hearing so much, will speed her foot again,
Led hither by pure love. Which of them both
Is dearest to me I have no skill in sense
To make distinction. Provide this messenger. 40
My heart is heavy and mine age is weak; Grief would have tears, and sorrow bids me speak. [Exeunt.

SCENE V.—Without the Walls of Florence.

A talket afar off. Enter a Widow of Florence, DIANA, VIOLENTA, MARIANA, and other Citizens.

Wid. Nay, come; for if they do approach the city we shall lose all the sight. Dia. They say the French Count has done most honourable service. Wid. It is reported that he has taken their greatest commander, and that with his own hand he slew the duke's brother. We have lost our labour; they are gone a contrary way: hark! you may know by their trumpets. Mar. Come; let's return again, and suffice ourselves with the report of it. Well, Diana, take heed of this French earl: the honour of a maid is her name, and no legacy is so rich as honesty. Wid. I have told my neighbour how you have been solicited by a gentleman his companion. Mar. I know that knave; hang him! one Parolles: a filthy officer he is in those suggestions for the young earl. Beware of them; Diana; their promises, enticements, oaths, tokens, and all these engines of lust, are not the things they go under: many a maid hath been seduced by them; and the misery is, example, that so terrible shows in the wrack of maidenhood, cannot for all that dissuade succession, but that they are limed with the twigs that threaten them. I hope I need not to advise you further; but I hope your own grace will keep you where you are, though there were no further danger known but the modesty which is so lost.

Dia. You shall not need to fear me. Wid. I hope so. Look, here comes a pilgrim: I know she will lie at my house; thither they send one another. I'll question her.

Enter HELENA in the dress of a Pilgrim.

God save you, pilgrim! whither are you bound? Hel. To Saint Jaques le Grand. Where do the pilgrims lodge, I do beseech you? Wid. At the Saint Francis, here beside the port.

Hel. Is this the way? Wid. Ay, marry, 'tis. Hark you! [A march afar off. They come this way. If you will tarry, holy pilgrim, But till the troops come by, I will conduct you where you shall be lodg'd: The rather, for I think I know your hostess As ample as myself.

Hel. Is it yourself? Wid. If you shall please so, pilgrim.

Hel. I thank you, and will stay upon your leisure.

Wid. You came, I think, from France? Hel. I did so. Wid. Here you shall see a countryman of yours That has done worthy service.

Hel. His name, I pray you. Dia. The Count Rousillon: know you such a one? Hel. But by the ear, that bears most nobly of him; His face I know not.

Dia. Whatsoe'er he is, He's bravely taken here. He stole from France, As 'tis reported, for the king had married him Against his liking. Think you it is so? Hel. Ay, surely, mere the truth: I know his lady. Dia. There is a gentleman that serves the count Reports but coarsely of her.


Hel. O! I believe with him, In argument of praise, or to the worth Of the great count himself, she is too mean To have her name repeated: all her deserving Is a reserved honesty, and that I have not heard examin'd.

Dia. Alas, poor lady! 'Tis a hard bondage to become the wife Of a detesting lord.

Wid. Ay, right; good creature, wheresoe'er she is, Her heart weighs sadly. This young maid might do her A shrewd turn if she pleas'd.

Hel. How do you mean? May be the amorous count solicits her In the unlawful purpose.

Wid. He does, indeed; And brokes with all that can in such a suit Corrupt the tender honour of a maid: But she is arm'd for him and keeps her guard In honestest defence.

Mar. The gods forbid else!

Enter, with drum and colours, a party of the Florentine army, BERTRAM and PAROLLES.

Wid. So, now they come. That is Antonio, the duke's eldest son; That, Escalus. Hel. Which is the Frenchman? Dia. He; That with the plume: 'tis a most gallant fellow;
I would he lov'd his wife. If he were honest, He were much goodlier; is't not a handsome gentleman? 80

Hel. I like him well.

Dit. 'Tis pity he is not honest. Yond's that same knave
That leads him to these places: were I his lady I would poison that vile rascal.

Hel. Which is he? 84

Dit. That jack-an-apes with scarfs. Why is he melancholy?

Hel. Perchance he's hurt i' the battle.

Par. Lose our drum! well.

Mar. He's shrewdly vexed at something. Look, he has spied us.

Wid. Marry, hang you!

Mar. And your courtesy, for a ring-carrier! [Exeunt Bertram, Parolles, Officers, and Soldiers.

Wid. The troop is past. Come, pilgrim, I will bring you Where you shall host: of enjoin'd penitents There's four or five, to great Saint Jaques bound, Already at my house.

Hel. I humbly thank you. 96

Please it this matron and this gentle maid To eat with us to-night, the charge and thanking Shall be for me; and, to require you further, I will bestow some precepts of this virgin 100 Worthy the note.

Both. We'll take your offer kindly. [Exeunt.

SCENE VI.—Camp before Florence.

Enter Bertram and the two French Lords.

First Lord. Nay, good my lord, put him to't: let him have his way.

Sec. Lord. If your lordship find him not a biding, hold me no more in your respect. 4

First Lord. On my life, my lord, a bubble.

Ber. Do you think I am so far deceived in him?

First Lord. Believe it, my lord, in mine own direct knowledge, without any malice, but to speak of him as my kinsman, he's a most notable coward, an infinite and endless liar, an hourly promise-breaker, the owner of no one good quality worthy your lordship's entertainment. 12

Sec. Lord. It were fit you knew him; lest, reposing too far in his virtue, which he hath not, he might at some great and trusty business in a main danger fail you.

Ber. I would I knew in what particular action to try him.

Sec. Lord. None better than to let him fetch off his drum, which you hear him so confidently undertake to do.

First Lord. I, with a troop of Florentines, will suddenly surprise him: such I will have whom I am sure he knows not from the enemy. We will bind and hoodwink him so, that he shall suppose no other but that he is carried into the league of the adversaries, when we bring him to our own tents. Be but your lordship present at his examination: if he do not, for the promise of his life and in the highest compulsion of base fear, offer to betray you and deliver all the intelligence in his power against you, and that with the divine forfeit of his soul upon oath, never trust my judgment in anything. 34

Sec. Lord. O! for the love of laughter, let him fetch his drum: he says he has a stratagem for't. When your lordship sees the bottom of his success in't, and to what metal this counterfeit lump of ore will be melted, if you give him not John Drum's entertainment, your inclining cannot be removed. Here he comes. 41

First Lord. O! for the love of laughter, hinder not the honour of his design: let him fetch off his drum in any hand.

Enter Parolles.

Ber. 'How now, monsieur! this drum sticks sorely in your disposition.

Sec. Lord. A pox on't! let it go: 'tis but a drum.

Par. 'But a drum!' Is't 'but a drum?' A drum so lost! There was excellent command, to charge in with our horse upon our own wings, and to rend our own soldiers! 48

Sec. Lord. That was not to be blamed in the command of the service: it was a disaster of war that Caesar himself could not have prevented if he had been there to command. 52

Ber. Well, we cannot greatly condemn our success: some dishonour we had in the loss of that drum; but it is not to be recovered.

Par. It might have been recovered.

Ber. It might; but it is not now.

Par. It is to be recovered. But that the merit of service is seldom attributed to the true and exact performer, I would have that drum or another, or hic facet. 65

Ber. Why, if you have a stomach to't, monsieur, if you think your mystery in stratagem can bring this instrument of honour again into its native quarter, be magnanimous in the enterprise and go on; I will grace the attempt for a worthy exploit: if you speed well in it, the duke shall both speak of it, and extend to you what further becomes his greatness, even to the utmost syllable of your worthiness.

Par. By the hand of a soldier, I will undertake it.
Ber. But you must not now slumber in it.
Par. I'll about it this evening: and I will presently pen down my dilemmas, encourage myself in my certainty, put myself into my mortal preparation, and by midnight look to hear further from me.
Ber. May I be bold to acquaint his Grace you are gone about it?
Par. I know not what the success will be, my lord; but the attempt I vow.
Ber. I know thou'rt valiant; and, to the possibility of thy soldiership, will subscribe for thee. Farewell.
Par. I love not many words. [Exit.

First Lord. No more than a fish loves water. Is not this a strange fellow, my lord, that so confidently seems to undertake this business, which he knows is not to be done; dams himself to do, and dares better be damned than to do't? 95
Sec. Lord. You do not know him, my lord, as we do: certain it is, that he will steal himself into a man's favour, and for a week escape a great deal of discoveries; but when you find him out you have him ever after. 100
Ber. Why, do you think he will make no deed at all of this that so seriously he does address himself unto?
First Lord. None in the world; but return with an invention and clap upon you two or three probable lies. But we have almost embossed him, you shall see his fall to-night; for, indeed, he is not for your lordship's respect. 108
Sec. Lord. We'll make you some sport with the fox ere we case him. He was first smoked by the old Lord Lafou: when his disguise and he is parted, tell me what a sprat you shall find him; which you shall see this very night. 113
First Lord. I must go look my twigs: he shall be caught.
Ber. Your brother he shall go along with me.
First Lord. As't please your lordship: I'll leave you. [Exit.
Ber. Now will I lead you to the house, and show you
The lase I spoke of.
Sec. Lord. But you say she's honest. 120
Ber. That's all the fault. I spoke with her but once,
And found her wondrous cold; but I sent to her,
By this same coxcomb that we have i' the wind,
Tokens and letters which she did re-send; 124
And this is all I have done. She's a fair creature;
Will you go see her?
Sec. Lord. With all my heart, my lord.
[Exeunt.

SCENE VII.—Florence. A Room in the Widow's House.

Enter Helena and Widow.

Hel. If you misdoubt me that I am not she, I know not how I shall assure you further, But I shall lose the grounds I work upon.
Wid. Though my estate be fall'n, I was well born,
Nothing acquainted with these businesses; And would not put my reputation now In any staining act.
Hel. Nor would I wish you. First, give me trust, the county is my husband, And what to your sworn counsel I have spoken Is so from word to word; and then you cannot, By the good aid that I of you shall borrow, Err in bestowing it.
Wid. I should believe you: 12 For you have shew'd me that which well approves You're great in fortune.
Hel. Take this purse of gold, And let me buy your friendly help thus far; Which I will over-pay and pay again 16 When I have found it. The county woos your daughter,
Lays down his wanton siege before her beauty, Resolv'd to carry her: let her in fine consent, As we'll direct her how 'tis best to bear it. 20 Now, his important blood will nought deny That she'll demand: a ring the county wears, That downward hath succeeded in his house From son to son, some four or five descents 24 Since the first father wore it: this ring he holds In most rich choice; yet, in his idle fire, To buy his will, it would not seem too dear, Howe'er repented after.
Wid. Now I see 28 The bottom of your purpose.
Hel. You see it lawful then. It is no more, But that your daughter, ere she seems as won, Desires this ring, appoints him an encounter, 32 In fine, delivers me to fill the time, Herself most chastely absent. After this, To marry her, I'll add three thousand crowns To what is past already.
Wid. I have yielded. 36
Instruct my daughter how she shall persever,
That time and place with this deceit so lawful May prove coherent. Every night he comes With musics of all sorts and songs compos'd 40 To her unworthiness: it nothing steads us To chide him from our eaves, for he persists As if his life lay on't.
Hel. Why then to-night Let us assay our plot; which, if it speed, 44 Is wicked meaning in a lawful deed,
And lawful meaning in a lawful act,  
Where both not sin, and yet a sinful fact. 47  
But let's about it.  

[Exeunt.]

ACT IV.

SCENE I.—Without the Florentine Camp.

Enter First French Lord, with five or six Soldiers in ambush.

First Lord. He can come no other way but by this hedge-corner. When you sally upon him, speak what terrible language you will: though you understand it not yourselves, no matter; for we must not seem to understand him, unless some one among us, whom we must produce for an interpreter.

First Sold. Good captain, let me be the interpreter.

First Lord. Art not acquainted with him? knows he not thy voice?

First Sold. No, sir, I warrant you. 12

First Lord. But what linsey-wooley hast thou to speak to us again?

First Sold. Even such as you speak to me.

First Lord. He must think us some band of strangers: 'tis the adversary's entertainment. Now, he hath a smock of all neighbouring languages; therefore we must every one be a man of his own fancy, not to know what we speak one to another; so we seem to know, is to know straight our purpose: chough's language, gabble enough, and good enough. As for you, interpreter, you must seem very politic. But couch, bold here he comes, to beguile two hours in a sleep, and then to return and swear the lies he forges. 26

Enter Parolles.

Par. Ten o'clock: within these three hours 'twill be time enough to go home. What shall I say I have done? It must be a very plausible invention that carries it. They begin to smoke me, and disgraces have of late knocked too often at my door. I find my tongue is too foolhardy; but my heart hath the fear of Mars before it and of his creatures, not dreading the reports of my tongue.

First Lord. This is the first truth that e'er thine own tongue was guilty of. 36

Par. What the devil should move me to undertake the recovery of this drum, being not ignorant of the impossibility, and knowing I had no such purpose? I must give myself some hurts and say I got them in exploit. Yet slight ones will not carry it: they will say, 'Came you off with so little?' and great ones I dare not give. Wherefore, what's the instance? Tongue, I must put you into a butter-woman's mouth, and buy

myself another of Bajazet's mute, if you prattle me into these perils.

First Lord. Is it possible he should know what he is, and be that he is? 49

Par. I would the cutting of my garments would serve the turn or the breaking of my Spanish sword. 52

First Lord. We cannot afford you so.

Par. Or the baring of my beard, and to say it was in stratagem.

First Lord. 'Twould not do. 56

Par. Or to drown my clothes, and say I was stripped.

First Lord. Hardly serve.

Par. Though I swore I leaped from the window of the citadel—

First Lord. How deep?

Par. Thirty fathom.

First Lord. Three great oaths would scarce make that be believed.

Par. I would I had any drum of the enemy's:

I would swear I recovered it.

First Lord. Thou shalt hear one anon. 68

Par. A drum now of the enemy's!

[Alarum within.

First Lord. Throca movovus, cargo, cargo, cargo.

[All. Cargo, cargo, willienda par corbo, cargo. 69

[They seize and blindfold him.

Par. O! ransom, ransom! Do not hide mine eyes. 72

First Sold. Boskos thromuldo boskos.

Par. I know you are the Muskos' regiment; And I shall lose my life for want of language. If there be here German, or Dane, low Dutch, 76 Italian, or French, let him speak to me: I will discover that which shall undo The Florentine.

First Sold. Boskos vaunado:

I understand thee, and can speak thy tongue: Kerelyboto: Sir, 81

Betake thee to thy faith, for seventeen poniards Are at thy bosom.

Par. O!

First Sold. O! pray, pray, pray.

Manka revania dulche.

First Lord. Osorbidulchos vellorco.

First Sold. The general is content to spare thee yet;

And, hoodwink'd as thou art, will lead thee on 85 To gather from thee:haply thou may'st inform Something to save thy life.

Par. O! let me live,

And all the secrets of our camp I'll show, Their force, their purposes; nay, I'll speak that Which you will wonder at.

First Sold. But wilt thou faithfully?
Par. If I do not, damn me.

First Sold. Acordo linta. 92

Come on; thou art granted space.

[Exit, with PAROLLES guarded.
A short alarum within.

First Lord. Go, tell the Count Rousillon, and my brother,
We have caught the woodcock, and will keep him muffled
Till we do hear from them.

Sec. Sold. Captain, I will. 96

First Lord. A’ will betray us all unto ourselves:
Inform on that.

Sec. Sold. So I will, sir.

First Lord. Till then, I’ll keep him dark and safely lock’d. [Exeunt.

SCENE II.—Florence. A Room in the Widow’s House.

Enter BERTRAM and DIANA.

Ber. They told me that your name was Fontibell.

Dia. No, my good lord, Diana.

Ber. Titled goddess;
And worth it, with addition! But, fair soul, In your fine frame hath love no quality? 4
If the quick fire of youth light not your mind, You are no maiden, but a monument:
When you are dead, you should be such a one As you are now, for you are cold and stern; 8
And now you should be as your mother was
When your sweet self was got.

Dia. She then was honest.

Ber. So should you be.

Dia. My mother did but duty; such, my lord, 12 As you owe to your wife.

Ber. No more o’ that!
I prithee do not strive against my vows.
I was compell’d to her; but I love thee
By love’s own sweet constraint, and will for ever
Do thee all rights of service.

Dia. Ay, so you serve us 17 Till we serve you; but when you have our roses, You barely leave our thorns to prick ourselves And mock us with our bareness.

Ber. How have I sworn! 20

Dia. ’Tis not the many oaths that make the truth.
But the plain single vow that is vow’d true.
What is not holy, that we swear not by, But take the Highest to witness: then, pray you, tell me,
If I should swear by God’s great attributes I lov’d you dearly, would you believe my oaths,

When I did love you ill? this has no holding,
To swear by him whom I protest to love, 28
That I will work against him: therefore your oaths Are words and poor conditions, but unseal’d;
At least in my opinion.

Ber. Change it, change it.
Be not so holy-cruel: love is holy; 32
And my integrity ne’er knew the crafts That you do charge men with. Stand no more off,
But give thyself unto my sick desires,
Who then recover: say thou art mine, and ever
My love as it begins shall so persever. 37

Dia. I see that men make ropes in such a scar
That we’ll forsake ourselves. Give me that ring.

Ber. I’ll lend it thee, my dear; but have no power 40
To give it from me.

Dia. Will you not, my lord?

Ber. It is an honour ’longing to our house,
Bequeathed down from many ancestors,
Which were the greatest obloquy i’ the world 44
In me to lose.

Dia. Mine honour’s such a ring:
My chastity’s the jewel of our house,
Bequeathed down from many ancestors,
Which were the greatest obloquy i’ the world 48
In me to lose. Thus your own proper wisdom
Brings in the champion honour on my part
Against your vain assault.

Ber. Here, take my ring:
My house, mine honour, yea, my life, be thine, 52
And I’ll be bid by thee.

Dia. When midnight comes, knock at my chamber-window:
I’ll order take my mother shall not hear.
Now will I charge you in the band of truth, 56
When you have conquer’d my yet maiden bed,
Remain there but an hour, nor speak to me.
My reasons are most strong; and you shall know them
When back again this ring shall be deliver’d: 60
And on your finger in the night I’ll put
Another ring, that what in time proceeds
May token to the future our past deeds.
Adieu, till then; then, fail not. You have won
A wife of me, though there my hope be done. 65

Ber. A heaven on earth I have won by wooing thee.

[Exit.

Dia. For which live long to thank both heaven and me!

You may so in the end. 68
My mother told me just how he would woo
As if she sat in’s heart; she says all men
Have the like oaths: he had sworn to marry me
When his wife’s dead; therefore I’ll lie with him
When I am buried. Since Frenchmen are so braid,
Marry that will, I live and die a maid:
Only in this disguise I think 'tis no sin
To cozen him that would unjustly win. [Exit.

SCENE III.—The Florentine Camp.

Enter the two French Lords, and two or three Soldiers.

First Lord. You have not given him his mother's letter?

Sec. Lord. I have delivered it an hour since:
there is something in't that stings his nature,
for on the reading it he changed almost into another man.

First Lord. He has much worthy blame laid
upon him for shaking off so good a wife and so sweet a lady.

Sec. Lord. Especially he hath incurred the
everlasting displeasure of the king, who had
even tuned his bounty to sing happiness to him.
I will tell you a thing, but you shall let it dwell
darkly with you.

First Lord. When you have spoken it, 'tis
dead, and I am the grave of it.

Sec. Lord. He hath perverted a young gentle-
woman here in Florence, of a most chaste re-
nown; and this night he fleshes his will in the
spoil of her honour: he hath given her his
monumental ring, and thinks himself made in
the unchaste composition.

First Lord. Now, God delay our rebellion
as we are ourselves, what things are we!

Sec. Lord. Merely our own traitors: and as
in the common course of all treasons, we still
see them reveal themselves, till they attain to
their abhorred ends, so he that in this action
contrives against his own nobility, in his proper
stream overflows himself.

First Lord. Is it not most damnable in us,
to be trumpeters of our unlawful intents? We
shall not then have his company to-night?

Sec. Lord. Not till after midnight, for he is
dieted to his hour.

First Lord. That approaches space: I would
gladly have him see his company anatomized,
that he might take a measure of his own judg-
ments, wherein so curiously he had set this
counterfeit.

Sec. Lord. We will not meddle with him till
he come, for his presence must be the whip of
the other.

First Lord. In the meantime what near you
of these wars?

Sec. Lord. I hear there is an overture of peace.

First Lord. Nay, I assure you, a peace con-
ccluded.

Sec. Lord. What will Count Rousillon do
then? will he travel higher, or return again into
France?

First Lord. I perceive by this demand, you
are not altogether of his council.

Sec. Lord. Let it be forbid, sir; so should I
be a great deal of his act.

First Lord. Sir, his wife some two months
since fled from his house: her pretense is a
pilgrimage to Saint Jaques le Grand; which
holy undertaking with most austere sanctimony
she accomplished; and, there reading, the
tenderness of her nature became as a prey to
her grief; in fine, made a groan of her last
breath, and now she sings in heaven.

Sec. Lord. How is this justified?

First Lord. The stronger part of it by her
own letters, which make her story true, even to
the point of her death: her death itself, which
could not be her office to say is come, was faith-
fully confirmed by the rector of the place.

Sec. Lord. Hath the count all this intelligence?

First Lord. Ay, and the particular confirma-
tions, point from point, to the full arming of
the verity.

Sec. Lord. I am heartily sorry that he'll be
glad of this.

First Lord. How mightily sometimes we
make us comforts of our losses!

Sec. Lord. And how mightily some other
times we drown our gain in tears! The great
dignity that his valour hath here acquired for
him shall at home be encountered with a shame
as ample.

First Lord. The web of our life is of a mingled
yarn, good and ill together: our virtues would
be proud if our faults whipped them not; and
our crimes would despair if they were not
cherished by our virtues.

Enter a Servant.

How now! where's your master?

Serv. He met the duke in the street, sir, of
whom he hath taken a solemn leave: his lord-
ship will next morning for France. The duke hath
offered him letters of commendations to the king.

Sec. Lord. They shall be no more than needful
there, if they were more than they can commend.

First Lord. They cannot be too sweet for the
king's tawtness. Here's his lordship now.

Enter BERTRAM.

How now, my lord! is not after midnight?

Ber. I have to-night dispatched sixteen
businesses, a month's length a-piece, by an
abstract of success: I have cong’d with the duke, done my adieu with his nearest, bursed a wife, mourned for her, writ to my lady mother I am returning, entertained my convoy; and between these main parcels of dispatch effected many nicer needs: the last was the greatest, but that I have not ended yet.

Sec. Lord. If the business be of any difficulty, and this morning your departure hence, it requires haste of your lordship.

Ber. I mean, the business is not ended, as fearing to hear of it hereafter. But shall we have this dialogue between the foot and the soldier? Come, bring forth this counterfeit model: he has deceive me, like a double-meaning prophesier.

Sec. Lord. Bring him forth. [Exeunt Soldiers.] Has set i’ the stocks all night, poor gallant knave.

Ber. No matter; his heels have deserved it, in usurping his spurs so long. How does he carry himself?

First Lord. I have told your lordship already, the stocks carry him. But to answer you as you would be understood; he weeps like a wench that had shed her milk: he hath confessed himself to Morgan,—whom he supposes to be a friar,—from the time of his remembrance to this very instant disaster of his setting i’ the stocks: and what think you he hath confessed?

Ber. Nothing of me, has a’?

Sec. Lord. His confession is taken, and it shall be read to his face: if your lordship be in’t, as I believe you are, you must have the patience to hear it.

Re-enter Soldiers with Parolles.

Ber. A plague upon him! muffled! he can say nothing of me: hush! hush!


First Sold. He calls for the tortures: what will you say without ’em?

Par. I will confess what I know without constraint: if ye pinch me like a pasty, I can say no more.

First Sold. Bosko chimurcho.

First Lord. Boblibindo chimurmurco.

First Sold. You are a merciful general. Our general bids you answer to what I shall ask you out of a note.

Par. And truly, as I hope to live.

First Sold. First, demand of him—how many horse the duke is strong. What say you to that?

Par. Five or six thousand; but very weak and unserviceable: the troops are all scattered, and the commanders very poor rougies, upon my reputation and credit, and as I hope to live.

First Sold. Shall I set down your answer so?

Par. Do: I’ll take the sacrament on’t, how and which way you will.

Ber. All’s one to him. What a past-saving slave is this!

First Lord. You are deceived, my lord: this is Monsieur Parolles, the gallant militarist,—that was his own phrase,—that had the whole theoretick of war in the knot of his scarf, and the practice in the chape of his dagger.

Sec. Lord. I will never trust a man again for keeping his sword clean; nor believe he can have everything in him by wearing his apparel neatly.

First Sold. Well, that’s set down.

Par. Five or six thousand horse, I said,—I will say true,—or thereabouts, set down, for I’ll speak truth.

First Lord. He’s very near the truth in this.

Ber. But I con him no thanks for’t, in the nature he delivers it.

Par. Poor rogues, I pray you, say.

First Sold. Well, that’s set down.

Par. I humbly thank you, sir. A truth’s a truth; the rogues are marvellous poor.

First Sold. Demand of him, of what strength they are a-foot. What say you to that?

Par. By my troth, sir, if I were to live this present hour, I will tell true. Let me see: Spurio, a hundred and fifty; Sebastian, so many; Corambus, so many; Jaque, so many; Guiliano, Cosmo, Lodowick, and Gratia, two hundred fifty each; mine own company, Chistoper, Vaunond, Bentii, two hundred fifty each: so that the muster-file, rotten and sound, upon my life, amounts not to fifteen thousand poll; half of the which dare not shake the snow from off their cassocks, lest they shake themselves to pieces.

Ber. What shall be done to him?

First Lord. Nothing, but let him have thanks. Demand of him my condition, and what credit I have with the duke.

First Sold. Well, that’s set down. You shall demand of him, whether one Captain Dumain be t’ the camp, a Frenchman; what his reputation is with the duke; what his valour, honesty, and expertness in wars; or whether he thinks it were not possible, with well-weighing sums of gold, to corrupt him to a revolt. What say you to this? what do you know of it?

Par. I beseech you, let me answer to the particular of the interrogatories: demand them singly.

First Sold. Do you know this Captain Dumain?
Act IV, Sc. III.

ALL’S WELL THAT ENDS WELL

Par. I know him: a’ was a butcher’s prentice in Paris, from whence he was whipped for getting the shrive’s fool with child; a dumb innocent, that could not say him nay.

[DUMAIN lifts up his hand in anger.]

Ber. Nay, by your leave, hold your hands; though I know his brains are forfeit to the next tile that falls.

First Sold. Well, is this captain in the Duke of Florence’s camp?

Par. Upon my knowledge he is, and lousy.

First Lord. Nay, look not so upon me; we shall hear of your lordship anon.

First Sold. What is his reputation with the duke?

Par. The duke knows him for no other but a poor officer of mine, and writ to me this other day to turn him out o’ the band: I think I have his letter in my pocket.

First Sold. Marry, we’ll search.

Par. In good sadness, I do not know: either it is there, or it is upon a file with the duke’s other letters in my tent.

First Sold. Here ‘tis; here’s a paper; shall I read it to you?

Par. I do not know if it be it or no.

Ber. Our interpreter does it well.

First Lord. Excellently.

First Sold. Dian, the count’s a fool, and full of gold—

Par. That is not the duke’s letter, sir; that is an advertisement to a proper maid in Florence, one Diana, to take heed of the allurement of one Count Rousillon, a foolish idle boy, but for all that very ruttish. I pray you, sir, put it up again.

First Sold. Nay, I’ll read it first, by your favour.

Par. My meaning in’t, I protest, was very honest in the behalf of the maid; for I knew the young count to be a dangerous and lascivious boy, who is a whale to virginity, and devours up all the fry it finds.

Ber. Damnable both-sides rogue!

First Sold. When he swears oaths, bid him drop gold, and take it; after he scores, he never pays the score: hal’won is match well made; match, and well make it;

He ne’er pays after-debts; take it before, and say a soldier, Dian, told thee this,

Men are to melt with, boys are not to kiss;

For count of this, the count’s a fool, I know it,

Who pays before, but not when he does owe it.

Thine, as he vow’d to thee in thine ear, Pariolles.

First Sold. He shall be whipped through the army with this rime in’s forehead.

First Lord. This is your devoted friend, sir; the manifold linguist and the armipotent soldier.

Ber. I could endure anything before but a cat, and now he’s a cat to me.

First Sold. I perceive, sir, by our general’s looks, we shall be fain to hang you.

Par. My life, sir, in any case not that I am afraid to die; but that, my offences being many, I would repent out the remainder of nature. Let me live, sir, in a dungeon, ’t the stocks, or anywhere, so I may live.

First Sold. We’ll see what may be done, so you confess freely: therefore, once more to this Captain Dumain. You have answered to his reputation with the duke and to his valour: what is his honesty?

Par. He will steal, sir, an egg out of a cloister; for rapes and ravishments he parallels Nessus; he professes not keeping of oaths; in breaking ’em he is stronger than Hercules; he will lie, sir, with such volubility, that you would think truth were a fool; drunkenness is his best virtue, for he will be swine-drunk, and in his sleep he does little harm, save to his bed-clothes about him; but they know his conditions, and lay him in straw. I have but little more to say, sir, of his honesty: he has everything that an honest man should not have; what an honest man should have, he has nothing.

First Lord. I begin to love him for this.

Ber. For this description of thine honesty? A pox upon him for me! he is more and more a cat.

First Sold. What say you to his expertise in war?

Par. Faith, sir, he has led the drum before the English tragedians,—to belie him I will not,—and more of his soldiery I know not; except, in that country, he had the honour to be the officer at a place there called Mile-end, to instruct for the doubling of files: I would do the man what honour I can, but of this I am not certain.

First Lord. He hath out-villained villany so far, that the rarity redeems him.

Ber. A pox on him! he’s a cat still.

First Sold. His qualities being at this poor price, I need not ask you, if gold will corrupt him to revolt.

Par. Sir, for a carden he will sell the fesimple of his salvation, the inheritance of it; and cut the entail from all remainders, and a perpetual succession for it perpetually.

First Sold. What’s his brother, the other Captain Dumain?
ALL'S WELL THAT ENDS WELL

Act IV, Sc. IV.

Sec. Lord. Why does he ask him or me?
First Sold. What's he?
Par. E'en a crow o' the same nest; not altogether so great as the first in goodness, but greater a great deal in evil. He excels his brother for a coward, yet his brother is reputed one of the best that is. In a retreat he out-runs any lackey; marry, in coming on he has the cramp.
First Sold. If your life be saved, will you undertake to betray the Florentine?
Par. Ay, and the captain of his horse, Count Rousillon.
First Sold. I'll whisper with the general, and know his pleasure.
Par. [Aside.] I'll no more drumming; a plague of all drums! Only to seem to deserve well, and to beguile the supposition of that lascivious young boy the count, have I run into this danger. Yet who would have suspected an ambush where I was taken?
First Sold. There is no remedy, sir, but you must die. The general says, you, that have so traitorously discovered the secrets of your army, and made such pestiferous reports of men very nobly held, can serve the world for no honest use; therefore you must die. Come, headsmen, off with his head.
Par. O Lord, sir, let me live, or let me see my death!
First Sold. That shall you, and take your leave of all your friends. [Unmuffling him. So, look about you: know you any here?
Ber. Good morrow, noble captain.
Sec. Lord. God bless you, Captain Parolles.
First Lord. God save you, noble captain.
Sec. Lord. Captain, what greeting will you to my Lord Lafeu? I am for France.
First Lord. Good captain, will you give me a copy of the sonnet you writ to Diana in behalf of the Count Rousillon? an I were not a very coward I'd compel it of you; but fare you well.
[Exeunt Bertram and Lords.
First Sold. You are undone, captain; all but your scarf; that has a knot on 't.
Par. Who cannot be crushed with a plot?
First Sold. If you could find out a country where but women were that had received so much shame, you might begin an impudent nation. Fare ye well, sir; I am for France too: we shall speak of you there. [Exit.
Par. Yet am I thankful: if my heart were great 'twould burst at this. Captain I'll be no more; But I will eat and drink, and sleep as soft As captain shall: simply the thing I am Shall make me live. Who knows himself a braggart,

Let him fear this; for it will come to pass That every braggart shall be found an ass. Rust, sword! cool, blushes! and Parolles, live Safest in shame! being fool'd, by foolery thrive! There's place and means for every man alive. I'll after them. [Exit.

SCENE IV.—Florence. A Room in the Widow's House.

Enter HELENA, Widow, and DIANA.

Hel. That you may well perceive I have not wrong'd you, One of the greatest in the Christian world Shall be my surety; 'fore whose throne 'tis needful,
Ere I can perfect mine intents, to kneel. Time was I did him a desired office, Dear almost as his life; which gratitude Through flinty Tartar's bosom would peep forth, And answer, thanks. I duly am inform'd His Grace is at Marseilles; to which place We have convenient convey. You must know, I am supposed dead: the army breaking, My husband hies him home; where, heaven aiding, And by the leave of my good lord the king, We'll be before our welcome.

Wid. Gentle madam,
You never had a servant to whose trust Your business was more welcome.

Hel. Nor you, mistress. Ever a friend whose thoughts more truly labour To recompense your love. Doubt not the heaven Hath brought me up to be your daughter's dower,
As it hath fated her to be my motive And helper to a husband. But, O strange men! That can such sweet use make of what they hate, When saucy trusting of the cozen'd thoughts Defiles the pitchy night: so lust doth play With what it loathes for that which is away.
But more of this hereafter. You, Diana, Under my poor instructions yet must suffer Something in my behalf.

Día. Let death and honesty
Go with your impositions, I am yours
Upon your will to suffer.

Hel. Yet, I pray you:
But with the word the time will bring on sum-
mer,
When briers shall have leaves as well as thorns, And be as sweet as sharp. We must away; Our waggon is prepar'd, and time revives us:
All's well that ends well: still the fine's the crown;
Whate'er the course, the end is the renown. [Exeunt.
Scene V.—Rousillon. A Room in the Countess's Palace.

Enter Countess, Lafeu, and Clown.

Laf. No, no, no; your son was misled by a snipt-taffeta fellow there, whose villanous saffron would have made all the unbaked and doughy youth of a nation in his colour: your daughter-in-law had been alive at this hour, and your son here at home, more advanced by the king than by that red-tailed humble-bee I speak of.

Count. I would not have known him; it was the death of the most virtuous gentlewoman that ever nature had praise for creating. If she had partaken of my flesh, and cost me the dearest groans of a mother, I could not have owed her a more rooted love.

Laf. 'Twas a good lady, 'twas a good lady: we may pick a thousand salads ere we light on such another herb.

Clo. Indeed, sir, she was the sweet-marjoram of the salad, or, rather the herb of grace.

Laf. They are not salad-herbs, you know; they are nose-herbs.

Clo. I am no great Nebuchadnezzar, sir; I have not much skill in grass.

Laf. Whether dost thou profess thyself, a knave, or a fool?

Clo. A fool, sir, at a woman's service, and a knave at a man's.

Laf. Your distinction?

Clo. I would cozen the man of his wife, and do his service.

Laf. So you were a knave at his service, indeed.

Clo. And I would give his wife my bauble, sir, to do her service.

Laf. I will subscribe for thee, thou art both knave and fool.

Clo. At your service.

Laf. No, no, no.

Clo. Why, sir, if I cannot serve you, I can serve as great a prince as you are.

Laf. Who's that? a Frenchman?

Clo. Faith, sir, 'a has an English name; but his phoniness is more hotter in France than there.

Laf. What prince is that?

Clo. The black prince, sir; alias, the prince of darkness; alias, the devil.

Laf. Hold thee, there's my purse. I give thee not this to suggest thee from thy master thou talkest of: serve him still.

Clo. I am a woodland fellow, sir, that always loved a great fire; and the master I speak of, ever keeps a good fire. But, sure, he is the prince of the world; let his nobility remain in his court. I am for the house with the narrow gate, which I take to be too little for pomp to enter: some that humble themselves may; but the many will be too chill and tender, and they'll be for the flowery way that leads to the broad gate and the great fire.

Laf. Go thy ways, I begin to be awary of thee; and I tell thee so before, because I would not fall out with thee. Go thy ways: let my horses be well looked to, without any tricks.

Clo. If I put any tricks upon 'em, sir, they shall be jade's tricks, which are their own right by the law of nature. [Exit.

Laf. A shrewd knave and an unhappy. So he is. My lord that's gone made himself much sport out of him: by his authority he remains here, which he thinks is a patent for his sauciness; and, indeed, he has no pace, but runs where he will.

Laf. I like him well; 'tis not amiss. And I was about to tell you, since I heard of the good lady's death, and that my lord your son was upon his return home, I moved the king my master to speak in the behalf of my daughter; which, in the minority of them both, his majesty, out of a self-gracious remembrance, did first propose. His highness hath promised me to do it; and to stop up the displeasure he hath conceived against your son, there is no fitter matter. How does your ladyship like it?

Count. With very much content, my lord; and I wish it happily effected.

Laf. His highness comes post from Marseilles, of an able body as when he numbered thirty: he will be here to-morrow, or I am deceived by him that in such intelligence hath seldom failed.

Count. It rejoices me that I hope I shall see him ere I die. I have letters that my son will be here to-night: I shall beseech your lordship to remain with me till they meet together.

Laf. Madam, I was thinking with what manners I might safely be admitted.

Count. You need but plead your honourable privilege.

Laf. Lady, of that I have made a bolder charter; but I thank my God it holds yet.

Re-enter Clown.

Clo. O madam! yonder's my lord your son with a patch of velvet on's face: whether there be a scar under it or no, the velvet knows; but 'tis a goodly patch of velvet. His left cheek is a cheek of two piler and a half, but his right cheek is worn bare.

Laf. A scar nobly got, or a noble scar, is a good livery of honour; so belike is that.

Clo. But it is your carbonadoed face.
ALL'S WELL THAT ENDS WELL

ACT V, Sc. II.

Scene I.—Marseilles. A Street.

Enter Helena, Widow, and Diana, with two Attendants.

Hel. But this exceeding posting, day and night,
Must wear your spirits low; we cannot help it:
But since you have made the days and nights
As nothing can unroot you. In happy time;

Enter a gentle Astringer.

This man may help me to his majesty's ear,
If he would spend his power. God save you, sir.

Gent. And you.

Hel. Sir, I have seen you in the court of France.

Gent. I have been sometimes there.

Hel. I do presume, sir, that you are not fallen
From the report that goes upon your goodness;
And therefore, goaded with most sharp occasions,
Which lay nice manners by, I put you to
The use of your own virtues, for the which
I shall continue thankful.

Gent. What's your will?

Hel. That it will please you
To give this poor petition to the king,
And aid me with that store of power you have
To come into his presence.

Gent. The king's not here.

Hel. Not here, sir!

Gent. Not, indeed:
He hence remov'd last night, and with more haste
Than is his use.

Wid. Lord, how we lose our pains! All's well that ends well yet,
Though time seems so adverse and means unfit.

Hel. I do beseech you, whither is he gone?

Gent. Marry, as I take it, to Rousillon;

Hel. Whither I am going.

I do beseech you, sir,
Since you are like to see the king before me,
Commend the paper to his gracious hand;
Which I presume shall render you no blame
But rather make you thank your pains for it.
I will come after you with what good speed
Our means will make us means.

Gent. This I'll do for you.

Hel. And you shall find yourself to be well
thank'd,

Scene II.—Rousillon. The inner Court of the Countess's Palace.

Enter Clown and Paroles.

Par. Good Monsieur Lavache, give my Lord
Lafeu this letter. I have ere now, sir, been better
known to you, when I have held familiarity with
freisher clothes; but I am now, sir, muddied in
Fortune's mood, and smell somewhat strong of
her strong displeasure.

Hel. Truly, Fortune's displeasure is but slut-
tish if it smell so strongly as thou speakest of: I
will henceforth eat no fish of Fortune's butter-
ing. Prithee, allow the wind.

Par. Nay, you need not to stop your nose, sir:
I spoke but by a metaphor.

Hel. Indeed, sir, if your metaphors stink, I
will stop my nose; or against any man's meta-
phor. Prithee, get thee further.

Par. Pray you, sir, deliver me this paper.

Hel. Foh! prithee, stand away: a paper from
Fortune's close-stool to give to a nobleman! Look,
here he comes himself.

Enter Lafeu.

Here is a purr of Fortune's, sir, or of Fortune's
cat—but not a musk-cat—that has fallen into
the unclean fishpond of her displeasure, and, as
he says, is muddied withal. Pray you, sir, use
the carp as you may, for he looks like a poor,
decayed, ingenious, foolish, rascally knave. I do
pity his distress in my smiles of comfort, and
leave him to your lordship.

Exit.

Par. My lord, I am a man whom Fortune
hath cruelly scratched.

Hel. And what would you have me to do? 'tis
too late to pare her nails now. Wherein have
you played the knave with Fortune that she
should scratch you, who of herself is a good lady,
and would not have knaves thrive long under
her? There's a cardeneu for you. Let the justices
make you and Fortune friends; I am for other
business.

Par. I beseech your honour to hear me one
single word.

Hel. You beg a single penny more: come,
you shall ha't; save your word.

Par. My name, my good lord, is Paroles.

Hel. You beg more than one word then.
Cox my passion! give me your hand. How
does your drum?

Par. O, my good lord! you were the first that
found me.


**Act V, Sc. II.**

ALL'S WELL THAT ENDS WELL

Laf. Was I, in sooth? and I was the first that lost thee.

Par. It lies in you, my lord, to bring me in some grace, for you did bring me out.

Laf. Out upon thee, knavell dost thou put upon me at once both the office of God and the devil? one brings thee in grace and the other brings thee out. [Trumpets sound.] The king's coming; I know by his trumpets. Sirrah, inquire further after me; I had talk of you last night: though you are a fool and a knave, you shall eat; go to, follow.

Par. I praise God for you. [Exeunt.

**SCENE III.**—*The Same. A Room in the Countess's Palace.*

**Flourish. Enter King, Countess, Lafeu, Lords, Gentlemen, Guards, &c.*

King. We lost a jewel of her, and our esteem Was made much poorer by it: but your son, As mad in folly, lack'd the sense to know Her estimation home.

Count. 'Tis past, my liege; And I beseech your majesty to make it Natural rebellion, done 't the blaze of youth; When oil and fire, too strong for reason's force, O'erbear'st it and burns on.

King. My honour'd lady, I have forgiven and forgotten all, Though my revenge was high bent upon him, And watch'd the time to shoot.

Laf. This must say,— But first I beg my pardon,—the young lord Did to his majesty, his mother, and his lady, Offence of mighty note, but to himself The greatest wrong of all: he lost a wise Whose beauty did astonish the survey Of richest eyes, whose words all ears took captive, Whose dear perfection hearts that scorn'd to serve Humbly call'd mistress.

King. Praising what is lost Makes the remembrance dear. Well, call him hither;

We are reconcil'd, and the first view shall kill All repetition. Let him not ask our pardon: The nature of his great offence is dead, And deeper than oblivion we do bury The incensing relics of it: let him approach, A stranger, no offender; and inform him So 'tis our will he should.

**Exit.**

King. What says he to your daughter? have you spoke?

Laf. All that he is hath reference to your highness.

King. Then shall we have a match. I have letters sent me, That set him high in fame.

Enter Bertram.

Laf. He looks well on't.

King. I am not a day of season, For thou mayst see a sunshine and a hail In me at once; but to the brightest beams Distracted clouds give way: so stand thou forth;
The time is fair again.

Ber. My high-repent'd blames, Dear sovereign, pardon to me.

King. All is whole; Not one word more of the consumed time. Let's take the instant by the forward top, For we are old, and on our quick'st decrees The inaudible and noiseless foot of time Steals ere we can effect them. You remember The daughter of this lord?

Ber. Admiringly, my liege: At first I stuck my choice upon her, ere my heart Durst make too bold a herald of my tongue, Where the impression of mine eye insirving, Contempt his scornful perspective did lend me, Which warp'd the line of every other favour; Scorn'd a fair colour, or express'd it stolen; Extended or contracted all proportions To a most hideous object: thence it came That she, whom all men prais'd, and whom myself, Since I have lost, have lov'd, was in mine eye The dust that did offend it.

King. Well excus'd: That thou didst love her, strikes some scores away From the great comp't. But love that comes too late, Like a remorseful pardon slowly carried, To the great sender turns a sour offence, Crying, 'That's good that's gone.' Our rashier faults Make trivial price of serious things we save, Not knowing them until we know their grave: Oft our displeasures, to ourselves unjust, Destroy our friends and after weep their dust: Our own love waking cries to see what's done, While shameful hate sleeps out the afternoon. Be this sweet Helen's knell, and now forget her. Send forth your amorous token for fair Maud-lin:

The main consents are had; and here we'll stay To see our widower's second marriage-day.
Count. Which better than the first, O dear
heaven, bless!
Or, ere they meet, in me, O nature, cesse!

Laf. Come on, my son, in whom my house’s
name
Must be digested, give a favour from you
To sparkle in the spirits of my daughter,
That she may quickly come.

[BERTRAM GIVES A RING.

By my old beard, 76
And every hair that’s on’t, Helen, that’s dead,
Was a sweet creature; such a ring as this,
The last that e’er I took her leave at court,
I saw upon her finger.

Ber. Hers it was not. 80

King. Now, pray you, let me see it; for mine
eye,
While I was speaking, oft was fasten’d to’t.—
This ring was mine; and, when I gave it Helen,
I bade her, if her fortunes ever stood 84
Necessitated to help, by that this token
I would relieve her. Had you that craft to
reave her
Of what should steal her most?

Ber. My gracious sovereign,
How’er it pleases you to take it so, 88
The ring was never hers.

Count. Son, on my life,
I have seen her wear it; and she reckon’d it
At her life’s rate.

Laf. I am sure I saw her wear it.

Ber. You are deceiv’d, my lord, she never
saw it:
In Florence was it from a casement thrown me,
Wapp’d in a paper, which contain’d the name
Of her that throw’d it. Noble she was, and
thought
I stood engag’d; but when I had subscrib’d
To mine own fortune, and inform’d her fully
I could not answer in course of honour
As she had made the overture, she ceas’d,
In heavy satisfaction, and would never 100
Receive the ring again.

King. Plutus himself,
That knows the tinct and multiplying medicine,
Hath not in nature’s mystery more science
Than I have in this ring: ‘twas mine, ‘twas
Helen’s,

Whoever gave it you. Then, if you know
That you are well acquainted with yourself,
Confess ‘twas hers, and by what rough enforce-
ment
You got it from her. She call’d the saints to
surety,

That she would never put it from her finger
Unless she gave it to yourself in bed,
Where you have never come, or sent it us

Upon her great disaster.

Ber. She never saw it. 112

King. Thou speak’st it falsely, as I love
mine honour;
And mak’st conjectural fears to come into me
Which I would fain shut out. If it should prove
That thou art so inhuman,—’twill not prove
so;—

And yet I know not: thou didst hate her
deadly,
And she is dead; which nothing, but to close
Her eyes myself, could win me to believe,
More than to see this ring. Take him away. 120

[Guards seize BERTRAM.

My forepast proofs, how’er the matter fall,
Shall tax my fears of little vanity,
Having vainly fear’d too little. Away with
him!

We’ll sift this matter further.

Ber. If you shall prove 124
This ring was ever hers, you shall as easy
Prove that I husbanded her bed in Florence,
Where yet she never was. 128

[Exit guarded.

King. I am wrap’d in dismal thinking.

Enter the gentle ASTRINGER.

Gent. Gracious sovereign, 128

Whether I have been to blame or no, I know
not:
Here’s a petition from a Florentine,
Who hath, for four or five removes come short
To tender it herself. I undertook it, 132
Vanquish’d thereto by the fair grace and speech
Of the poor suppliant, who by this I know
Is here attending: her business looks in her
With an importing visage, and she told me, 136
In a sweet verbal brief, it did concern
Your highness with herself.

King. Upon his many protestations to
marry me when his wife was dead, I blush
to say it, he won me. Now is the Count Rou-
sillon a widower: his vows are forfeited to me,
and my honour’s paid to him. He strole from
Florence, taking no leave, and I follow him to
his country for justice. Grant it me, O king! in
you it best lies; otherwise a seducer flourishes,
and a poor maid is undone. 147

DIANA CAPILLY

Laf. I will buy me a son-in-law in a fair, and
toll for this: I’ll none of him.

King. The heavens have thought well on thee, LAFEU,
To bring forth this discovery. Seek these
suitors:

Go speedily and bring again the count.

[Exeunt the gentle ASTRINGER, and some
Attendants.
Act V, Sc. III.  ALL’S WELL THAT ENDS WELL

I am afraid the life of Helen, lady,  
Was foully snatch’d.  
Count.  Now, justice on the doers!

Re-enter BERTRAM, guarded.

King. I wonder, sir, sith wives are monsters  
to you,  
And that you fly them as you swear them lordship,  
Yet you desire to marry.

Re-enter the gentle ASTRINGER, with Widow and DIANA.

What woman’s that?

Dia. I am, my lord, a wretched Florentine,  
Derived from the ancient Capulet:  
My suit, as I do understand, you know,  
And therefore know how far I may be pitted.

Wid. I am her mother, sir, whose age and honour  
Both suffer under this complaint we bring,  
And both shall cease, without your remedy.

King. Come hither, county; do you know these women?

Ber. My lord, I neither can nor will deny  
But that I know them: do they charge me further?

Dia. Why do you look so strange upon your wife?

Ber. She’s none of mine, my lord.

Dia. If you shall marry,  
You give away this hand, and that is mine;  
You give away heaven’s vows, and those are mine;  
You give away myself, which is known mine;  
For I by vow am so embossed yours  
That she which marries you must marry me;  
Either both or none.

Laf. [To BERTRAM.] Your reputation comes  
too short for my daughter: you are no husband  
for her.

Ber. My lord, this is a fond and desperate creature,  
Whom sometime I have laugh’d with: let your highness  
Lay a more noble thought upon mine honour  
Than for to think that I would sink it here.

King. Sir, for my thoughts, you have them  
ill to friend,  
Till your deeds gain them: fairer prove your honour,  
Than in my thought it lies.

Dia. Good my lord,  
Ask him upon his oath, if he does think  
He had not my virginity.

King. What sayst thou to her?

Ber. She’s impudent, my lord;  
And was a common gamester to the camp.

Dia. He does me wrong, my lord; if I were so,  
He might have bought me at a common price:  
Do not believe him. O! behold this ring,  
Whose high respect and rich validity  
Did lack a parallel; yet for all that  
He gave it to a commoner o’ the camp,  
If I be one.

Count. He blushes, and ’tis it:  
Of six preceding ancestors, that gem  
Conferr’d by testament to the sequent issue,  
Hath it been ow’d and worn. This is his wife:

That ring’s a thousand proofs.

King. Methought you said  
You saw one here in court could witness it.

Dia. I did, my lord, but loath am to produce  
So bad an instrument: his name’s Parolles.

Laf. I saw the man to-day, if man he be.

King. Find him, and bring him hither.  
[Exit an Attendant.]

Ber. What of him?

He’s quoted for a most perfidious slave,  
With all the spots of the world tax’d and debosh’d,  
Whose nature sickens but to speak a truth.

Am I or that or this for what he’ll utter,  
That will speak anything?

King. She hath that ring of yours.

Ber. I think she has: certain it is I lik’d her,  
And boarded her i’ the wanton way of youth.  
She knew her distance and did angle for me,  
Madding my eagerness with her restraint,  
As all impediments in fancy’s course  
Are motives of more fancy; and, in fine,  
Her infinite cunning, with her modern grace,  
Subdued me to her rate: she got the ring,  
And I had that which any inferior might  
At market-price have bought.

Dia. I must be patient;  
You, that have turn’d off a first so noble wife,  
May justly diet me. I pray you yet,—  
Since you lack virtue I will lose a husband,—224  
Send for your ring; I will return it home,  
And give me mine again.

Ber. I have it not.

King. What ring was yours, I pray you?

Dia. Sir, much like  
The same upon your finger.

King. Know you this ring? this ring was his  
of late.

Dia. And this was it I gave him, being a-bed.

King. The story then goes false you throw it him  
Out of a casement.

Dia. I have spoke the truth. 232
Re-enter Attendant with PAROLLES.

Ber. My lord, I do confess the ring was hers.
King. You boggle shrewdly, every feather
starts you.
Is this the man you speak of?

Dia. Ay, my lord.
King. Tell me, sirrah, but tell me true, I
charge you,
Not fearing the displeasure of your master,—
Which, on your just proceeding I'll keep off,—
By him and by this woman here what know
you?
Par. So please your majesty, my master hath
been an honourable gentleman: tricks he hath
had in him, which gentlemen have.
King. Come, come, to the purpose: did he
love this woman?
Par. Faith, sir, he did love her; but how?
King. How, I pray you?
Par. He did love her, sir, as a gentleman
loves a woman.
King. How is that?
Par. He loved her, sir, and loved her not.
King. As thou art a knave, and no knave.
What an equivocal companion is this!
Par. I am a poor man, and at your majesty's
command.

Laf. He is a good drum, my lord, but a
naughty orator.
Dia. Do you know he promised me marriage?
Par. Faith, I know more than I'll speak.
King. But wilt thou not speak all thou
knowest?
Par. Yes, so please your majesty. I did go
between them, as I said; but more than that, he
loved her, for, indeed, he was mad for her, and
talked of Satan, and of limbo, and of Furies,
and I know not what: yet I was in that credit
with them at that time, that I knew of their
going to bed, and of other motions, as promising
her marriage, and things which would derive
me ill to speak of: therefore I will not
speak what I know.

King. Thou hast spoken all already, unless
thou canst say they are married: but thou art
too fine in thy evidence; therefore stand aside.
This ring, you say, was yours?
Dia. Ay, my good lord.
King. Where did you buy it? or who gave it
you?
Dia. It was not given me, nor I did not buy it.
King. Who lent it you?
Dia. It was not lent me neither.
King. Where did you find it, then?
Dia. I found it not.
King. If it were yours by none of all these
ways,

How could you give it him?
Dia. I never gave it him.
Laf. This woman's an easy glove, my lord:
she goes off and on at pleasure.
King. This ring was mine: I gave it his first
wife.
Dia. It might be yours or hers, for aught I
know.
King. Take her away; I do not like her now.
To prison with her; and away with him.
Unless thou tell'st me where thou hadst this ring
Thou diest within this hour.
Dia. I'll never tell you.
King. Take her away.
Dia. I'll put in bail, my liege.
King. I think thee now some common cus-
tomer.
Dia. By Jove, if ever I knew man, 'twas you.
King. Wherefore hast thou accus'd him all
this while?
Dia. Because he's guilty, and he is not guilty.
He knows I am no maid, and he'll swear to't;
I'll swear I am a maid, and he knows not.
Great king, I am no strumpet, by my life;
I am either maid, or else this old man's wife.

[Pointing to LAFEU.

King. She does abuse our ears: to prison
with her!
Dia. Good mother, fetch my bail. [Exit
Widow.]

Stay, royal air;
The jeweller that owes the ring is sent for,
And he shall surety me. But for this lord,
Who hath abus'd me, as he knows himself,
Though yet he never harm'd me, here I quit him:
He knows himself my bed he hath defil'd,
And at that time he got his wife with child:
Dead though she be, she feels her young one
kiss:
So there's my riddle: one that's dead is quick;
And now behold the meaning.

Re-enter Widow, with HELENA.

King. Is there no exorcist

Beguiles that true office of mine eyes?
Is't real that I see?

Hel. No, my good lord;
'Tis but the shadow of a wife you see;
The name and not the thing.

Ber. Both, both. O! pardon.

Hel. O my good lord! when I was like this
maid,
I found you wondrous kind. There is your ring;
And, look you, here's your letter; thus it says:
When from my finger you can get this ring,
And are by me with child, &c. This is done:
Will you be mine, now you are doubly won?
Act V, Sc. III.  ALL'S WELL THAT ENDS WELL

Ber. If she, my liege, can make me know this clearly, 320
I'll love her dearly, ever, ever dearly.

Hel. If it appear not plain, and prove untrue,
Deadly divorce step between me and you!
O! my dear mother; do I see you living? 324

Laf. Mine eyes smell onions; I shall weep anon. [To PAROLLES.] Good Tom Drum, lend me a handkercher: so, I thank thee. Wait on me home, I'll make sport with thee: let thy curtsies alone, they are scurvy ones. 329

King. Let us from point to point this story know,
To make the even truth in pleasure flow.
[To DIANA.] If thou be'st yet a fresh uncropped flower, 332
Choose thou thy husband, and I'll pay thy dower;

For I can guess that by thy honest aid
Thou kepest a wife herself, thyself a maid.
Of that, and all the progress, more and less, 336
Resolvedly more leisure shall express:
All yet seems well; and if it end so meet,
The bitter past, more welcome is the sweet.

[Fleurish. Exeunt.

EPILOGUE.

Spoken by the KING.
The king's a beggar, now the play is done:
All is well ended if this suit be won
That you express content; which we will pay,
With strife to please you, day exceeding day: 4
Ours be your patience then, and yours our parts;
Your gentle hands lend us, and take our hearts.

[Exeunt.]
TWELFTH-NIGHT; OR, WHAT YOU WILL

DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

ORSINO, Duke of Illyria.
SEBASTIAN, Brother to Viola.
ANTONIO, a Sea Captain, Friend to Sebastian.
A VALENTINE, Gentlemen attending on the
CURIO, Duke.
SIR TOBY BELCH, Uncle to Olivia.
SIR ANDREW AGUECHEEK.
MALVOLIO, Steward to Olivia.

FABIAN, Servants to Olivia.
FESTE, a Clown.
OLIVIA, a rich Countess.
VIOLA, in love with the Duke.
MARIA, Olivia’s Woman.

Lords, Priests, Sailors, Officers, Musicians, and other Attendants.

SCENE.—A City in Illyria; and the Sea-coast near it.

ACT I.

SCENE I.—A Room in the Duke’s Palace.

Enter DUKE, CURIO, Lords; Musicians attending.

Duke. If music be the food of love, play on; Give me excess of it, that surfeiting, The appetite may sicken, and so die. That strain again! it had a dying fall: O! it came o’er my ear like the sweet sound That breathes upon a bank of violets, Stealing and giving odour. Enough! no more: ‘Tis not so sweet now as it was before. O! spirit of love! how quick and fresh art thou, That notwithstanding thy capacity Receiveth as the sea, nought entereth there, Of what validity and pitch soe’er, But falls into abatement and low price, Even in a minute: so full of shapes is fancy, That it alone is high fantastical.

Cur. Will you go hunt, my lord?
Duke. What, Curio? I would go hunt, and see the sea.

Cur. The hart.

Duke. Why, so I do, the noblest that I have. O! when mine eyes did see Olivia first, Methought she purg’d the air of pestilence. That instant was I turn’d into a hart, And my desires, like fell and cruel hounds, E’er since pursue me.

Enter VALENTINE.

Val. So please my lord, I might not be admitted; But from her handmaid do return this answer: The element itself, till seven years’ heat,

Shall not behold her face at ample view; But, like a cloistress, she will veiled walk, And water once a day her chamber round With eve-offending brine: all this, to season A brother’s dead love, which she would keep fresh And lasting in her sad remembrance.

Duke. O! she that hath a heart of that fine frame To pay this debt of love but to a brother, How will she love, when the rich golden shaft Hath kill’d the flock of all affections else That live in her; when liver, brain, and heart, These sovereign thrones, are all supplied, and fill’d Her sweet perfections with one self king. Away before me to sweet beds of flowers; Love-thoughts lie rich when canopied with bower.

[Exeunt.]

SCENE II.—The Sea-coast.

Enter VIOLA, Captain, and Sailors.

Vio. What country, friends, is this?
Cap. This is Illyria, lady.
Vio. And what should I do in Illyria?

My brother he is in Elysium, Perchance he is not drown’d: what think you sailors?

Cap. It is perchance that you yourself were sav’d.
Vio. O my poor brother! and so perchance may he be.

Cap. True, madam: and, to comfort you with chance, Assure yourself, after our ship did split,
When you and those poor number sav’d with you
Hung on our driving boat, I saw your brother,
Most provident in peril, bind himself,—
Courage and hope both teaching him the practice,—
To a strong mast that liv’d upon the sea;
Where, like Arion on the dolphin’s back,
I saw him hold acquaintance with the waves
So long as I could see.

Vio. For saying so there’s gold. Mine own escape unfoldeth to my hope,
Where’er thy speech serves for authority,
The like of him. Know’st thou this country?

Cap. Ay, madam, well; for I was bred and born
Not three hours’ travel from this very place.

Vio. Who governs here?

Cap. A noble duke, in nature as in name.

Vio. What is his name?

Cap. Orsino.

Vio. Orsino! I have heard my father name him:
He was a bachelor then.

Cap. And so is now, or was so very late;
For but a month ago I went from hence,
And then ’twas fresh in murmur,—as, you know,
What great ones do the less will prattle of,—
That he did seek the love of fair Olivia.

Vio. What’s she?

Cap. A virtuous maid, the daughter of a count
That died some twelvemonth since; then leaving her
In the protection of his son, her brother,
Who shortly also died: for whose dear love,
They say she hath abjur’d the company
And sight of men.

Vio. O! that I serv’d that lady, And might not be deliver’d to the world,
Till I had made mine own occasion mellow,
What my estate is.

Cap. That were hard to compass,
Because she will admit no kind of suit,
No, not the duke’s.

Vio. There is a fair behaviour in thee, captain;
And though that nature with a beauteous wall
Doth oft close in pollution, yet of thee
I will believe thou hast a mind that suits
With this thy fair and outward character.
I prithee,—and I’ll pay thee bounteously,—
Conceal me what I am, and be my aid
For such disguise as haply shall become
The form of my intent. I’ll serve this duke;
Thou shalt present me as a eunuch to him:
It may be worth thy pains; for I can sing
And speak to him in many sorts of music
That will allow me very worth his service.
What else may hap to time I will commit;
Only shape thou thy silence to my wit.

Cap. Be you his eunuch, and your mute I’ll be:
When my tongue blabs, then let mine eyes not see.

Vio. I thank thee; lead me on. [Exeunt.

SCENE III.—A Room in OLIVIA’s House.

Enter Sir Toby Belch and Maria.

Sir To. What a plague means my niece, to take the death of her brother thus? I am sure care’s an enemy to life.

Mar. By my troth, Sir Toby, you must come in earlier o’ nights: your cousin, my lady, takes great exceptions to your ill hours.

Sir To. Why, let her except before excepted.

Mar. Ay, but you must confine yourself within the modest limits of order.

Sir To. Confine! I’ll confine myself no finer than I am. These clothes are good enough to drink in, and so be these boots too: an they be not, let them hang themselves in their own straps.

Mar. That quaffing and drinking will undo you: I heard my lady talk of it yesterday; and of a foolish knight that you brought in one night here to be her wooer.

Sir To. Who? Sir Andrew Aguecheek?

Mar. Ay, he.

Sir To. He’s as tall a man as any’s in Illyria.

Mar. What’s that to the purpose?

Sir To. Why, he has three thousand ducats a year.

Mar. Ay, but he’ll have but a year in all these ducats: he’s a very fool and a prodigal.

Sir To. Fie, that you’ll say so! he plays o’ the viol-de-gamboys, and speaks three or four languages word for word without book, and hath all the good gifts of nature.

Mar. He hath indeed, almost natural; for, besides that he’s a fool, he’s a great quarreller; and but that he hath the gift of a coward to allay the gust he hath in quarrelling, ’tis thought among the prudent he would quickly have the gift of a grave.

Sir To. By this hand, they are scoundrels and substractors that say so of him. Who are they?

Mar. They that add, moreover, he’s drank nightly in your company.

Sir To. With drinking healths to my niece.
I’ll drink to her as long as there is a passage in my throat and drink in Illyria. He’s a coward

344
and a coynist, that will not drink to my niece

till his brains turn o’ the toe like a parish-top.

What, wencher! Castiliano vulgo! for here comes

Sir Andrew Agueface.

Enter Sir Andrew Aguecheek.

Sir And. Sir Toby Belch! how now, Sir Toby Belch!

Sir To. Sweet Sir Andrew!

Sir And. Bless you, fair shrew.

Mar. And you too, sir.

Sir To. Accost, Sir Andrew, accost.

Sir And. What’s that?

Sir To. My niece’s chambermaid.

Sir And. Good Mistress Accost, I desire better acquaintance.

Mar. My name is Mary, sir.

Sir And. Good Mistress Mary Accost, —

Sir To. You mistake, knight: ‘accost’ is, front her, board her, woo her, assail her.

Sir And. By my troth, I would not undertake her in this company. Is that the meaning of ‘accost’?

Mar. Fare you well, gentlemen.

Sir To. An thou let her part so, Sir Andrew, would thou mightest never draw sword again!

Sir And. An you part so, mistress, I would I might never draw sword again. Fair lady, do you think you have fools in hand?

Mar. Sir, I have not you by the hand.

Sir And. Marry, but you shall have; and here’s my hand.

Mar. Now, sir, ‘thought is free:’ I pray you, bring your hand to the buttery-bar and let it drink.

Sir And. Wherefore, sweetheart? what’s your metaphor?

Mar. ‘tis dry, sir.

Sir And. Why, I think so: I am not such an ass but I can keep my hand dry. But what’s your jest?

Mar. A dry jest, sir.

Sir And. Are you full of them?

Mar. Ay, sir, I have them at my fingers’ ends: marry, now I let go your hand, I am barren.

[Exit.

Sir To. O knight! thou lackest a cup of canary: when did I see thee so put down?

Sir And. Never in your life, I think; unless you see canary put me down. Methinks sometimes I have no more wit than a Christian or an ordinary man has; but I am a great eater of beef, and I believe that does harm to my wit.

Sir To. No question.

Sir And. An I thought that, I’d forswear it. I’ll ride home to-morrow, Sir Toby.

Sir To. Pourquoi, my dear knight?

Sir And. What is ‘pourquoi?’ do or not do? I would I had bestowed that time in the tongues that I have in fencing, dancing, and bear-baiting. O! had I but followed the arts!

Sir To. Then hadst thou an excellent head of hair.

Sir And. Why, would that have mended my hair?

Sir To. Past question; for thou seest it will not curl by nature.

Sir And. But it becomes me well enough, doesn’t it not?

Sir To. Excellent; it hangs like flax on a distaff, and I hope to see a housewife take thee between her legs, and spin it off.

Sir And. Faith, I’ll home to-morrow, Sir Toby; your niece will not be seen; or if she be, it’s four to one she’ll none of me. The count himself here hard by woos her.

Sir To. She’ll none o’ the count; she’ll not match above her degree, neither in estate, years, nor wit; I have heard her swear it. Tut, there’s life in’t, man.

Sir And. I’ll stay a month longer. I am a fellow o’ the strangest mind i’ the world: I delight in masques and revels sometimes altogether.

Sir To. Art thou good at these kuckkawases, knight?

Sir And. As any man in Illyria, whatsoever he be, under the degree of my betters: and yet I will not compare with an old man.

Sir To. What is thy excellence in a galliard, knight?

Sir And. Faith, I can cut a caper.

Sir To. And I can cut the mutton to’t.

Sir And. And I think I have the back-trick simply as strong as any man in Illyria.

Sir To. Wherefore are these things hid? wherefore have these gifts a curtain before ’em? are they like to take dust, like Mistress Mill’s picture? why dost thou not go to church in a galliard, and come home in a coranto? My very walk should be a jig: I would not so much as make water but in a sink-a-pace. What dost thou mean? is it a world to hide virtues in? I did think, by the excellent constitution of thy leg, it was formed under the star of a galliard.

Sir And. Ay, ’tis strong, and it does indifferent well in a flame-coloured stock. Shall we set about some revels?

Sir To. What shall we do else? were we not born under Taurus?

Sir And. Taurus! that’s sides and heart.

Sir To. No, sir, it is legs and thighs. Let me see thee caper. Hal! higher: ha! hal! excellent!

[Exeunt.
Scene IV.—A Room in the Duke’s Palace.

Enter Valentine, and Viola in man’s attire.

Val. If the duke continue these favours towards you, Cesario, you are like to be much advanced: he hath known you but three days, and already you are no stranger.

Vio. You either fear his humour or my negligence, that you call in question the continuance of his love. Is he inconstant, sir, in his favours?

Val. No, believe me.

Vio. I thank you. Here comes the count.

Enter Duke, Curio, and Attendants.

Duke. Who saw Cesario? ho!

Vio. On your attendance, my lord; here.

Duke. Stand you awhile alee. Cesario, thou know’st no less but all; I have unclasp’d To thee the book even of my secret soul: Therefore, good youth, address thy gait unto her, Be not denied access, stand at her doors, And tell them, there thy fixed foot shall grow Till thou have audience.

Vio. Sure, my noble lord, If she be so abandon’d to her sorrow As it is spoke, she never will admit me.

Duke. Be clamorous and leap all civil bounds Rather than make unprofitful return.

Vio. Say I do speak with her, my lord, what then?

Duke. O! then unfold the passion of my love; Surprise her with discourse of my dear faith: It shall become thee well to act my woes; She will attend it better in thy youth Than in a nuncio of more grave aspect.

Vio. I think not so, my lord.

Duke. Dear lad, believe it; For they shall yet belie thy happy years That say thou art a man: Diana’s lip Is not more smooth and rubious; thy small pipe Is as the maiden’s organ, shrill and sound; And all is semblative a woman’s part. I know thy constellation is right apt For this affair. Some four or five attend him; All, if you will; for I myself am youth When least in company. Prosper well in this, And thou shalt live as freely as thy lord, To call his fortunes thine.

Vio. I’ll do my best.

[Aside] Yet, a barb’rous strife! Whoe’er I woo, myself would be his wife.

[Exeunt.

Scene V.—A Room in Olivia’s House.

Enter Maria and Clown.

Mar. Nay, either tell me where thou hast been, or I will not open my lips so wide as a bristle may enter in way of thy excuse. My lady will hang thee for thy absence.

Clo. Let her hang me: he that is well hanged in this world needs to fear no colours.

Mar. Make that good.

Clo. He shall see none to fear.

Mar. A good lenten answer: I can tell thee where that saying was born, of: ‘I fear no colours.’

Clo. Where, good Mistress Mary?

Mar. In the wars; and that may you be bold to say in your foolery.

Clo. Well, God give them wisdom that have it; and those that are fools, let them use their talents.

Mar. Yet you will be hanged for being so long absent; or, to be turned away, is not that as good as a hanging to you?

Clo. Many a good hanging prevents a bad marriage; and, for turning away, let summer bear it out.

Mar. You are resolute then?

Clo. Not so, neither; but I am resolved on two points.

Mar. That if one break, the other will hold; or, if both break, your gaskins fall.

Clo. Apt, in good faith; very apt. Well, go thy way: if Sir Toby would leave drinking, thou wert as witty a piece of Eve’s flesh as any in Illyria.

Mar. Peace, you rogue, no more o’that. Here comes my lady: make your excuse wisely, you were best.

Clo. Wit, an’t be thy will, put me into good fooling! Those wits that think they have thee, do very oft prove fools; and I, that am sure I lack thee, may pass for a wise man: for what says Quinapalus? ‘Better a witty fool than a foolish wot.’

Enter Olivia with Malvolio.

God bless thee, lady!

Oli. Take the fool away.

Clo. Do you not hear, fellows? Take away the lady.

Oli. Go to, you’re a dry fool; I’ll no more of you: besides, you grow dishonest.

Clo. Two faults, madonna, that drink and good counsel will amend: for give the dry fool drink, then is the fool not dry; bid the dishonest man mend himself: if he mend, he is no longer dishonest; if he cannot, let the butcher mend him. Any thing that’s mended is but patched: virtue that transgresses is but patched with sin; and sin that amends is but patched with virtue. If that this simple syllogism will serve, so; if it will not, what remedy? As there is no true cuckold but calamity, so beauty’s a
TWELFTH-NIGHT; OR, WHAT YOU WILL Act I, Sc. V.

flower. The lady bade take away the fool; therefore, I say again, take her away. 58

Oli. Sir, I bade them take away you.

Clo. Misprision in the highest degree! Lady, cucullus non facit monachum; that's as much to say as I wear not motley in my brain. Good madonna, give me leave to prove you a fool.

Oli. Can you do it? 64

Clo. Dexteriously, good madonna.

Oli. Make your proof.

Clo. I must catechize you for it, madonna: good my mouse of virtue, answer me. 68

Oli. Well, sir, for want of other idleness, I'll bide your proof.

Clo. Good madonna, why mournest thou?

Oli. Good fool, for my brother's death. 72

Clo. I think his soul is in hell, madonna.

Oli. I know his soul is in heaven, fool.

Clo. The more fool, madonna, to mourn for your brother's soul being in heaven. Take away the fool, gentleman. 77

Oli. What think you of this fool, Malvolio? doth he not mend?

Mal. Yes; and shall do, till the pangs of death shake him: infirmity, that decays the wise, doth ever make the better fool. 82

Clo. God send you, sir, a speedy infirmity, for the better increasing your folly! Sir Toby will be sworn that I am no fox, but he will not pass his word for two pence that you are no fool.

Oli. How say you to that, Malvolio? 87

Mal. I marvel your ladyship takes delight in such a barren rascal: I saw him put down the other day with an ordinary fool that has no more brain than a stone. Look you now, he's out of his guard already; unless you laugh and minister occasion to him, he is gagged. I protest, I take these wise men, that crow so at these set kind of fools, no better than the fools' zanies. 95

Oli. O! you are sick of self-love, Malvolio, and taste with a distempered appetite. To be generous, guiltless, and of free disposition, is to take those things for bird-bolts that you deem cannon-bullets. There is no slander in an allowed fool, though he do nothing but rail; nor no railing in a known discreet man, though he do nothing but reprove.

Clo. Now, Mercury endure thee with leasing, for thou speakest well of fools! 105

Re-enter MARIA.

Mar. Madam, there is at the gate a young gentleman much desires to speak with you.

Oli. From the Count Orsino, is it? 108

Mar. I know not, madam: 'tis a fair young man, and well attended.

Oli. Who of my people hold him in delay?

Mar. Sir Toby, madam, your kinsman. 112

Oli. Fetch him off, I pray you: he speaks nothing but madman. Fie on him! [Exit MARIA.] Go you, Malvolio: if it be a suit from the count, I am sick, or not at home; what you will, to dismiss it, [Exit MALVOLIO.] Now you see, sir, how your foolling grows old, and people dislike it.

Clo. Thou hast spoken for us, madonna, as if thy eldest son should be a fool; whose skull Jove cramp with brains! for here comes one of thy kin has a most weak pia mater.

Enter SIR TOBY BELCH.

Oli. By mine honour, half drunk. What is he at the gate, cousin? 124

Sir To. A gentleman.

Oli. A gentleman! what gentleman?

Sir To. 'Tis a gentleman here,—a plague o' these pickle herring! How now, sol! 128

Clo. Good Sir Toby.

Oli. Cousin, cousin, how have you come so early by this lethargy?

Sir To. Lechery! I defy lechery! There's one at the gate. 133

Clo. Ay, marry, what is he?

Sir To. Let him be the devil, an he will, I care not: give me faith, say I. Well, it's all one. [Exit.

Oli. What's a drunken man like, fool? 137

Clo. Like a drowned man, a fool, and a madman: one draught above heat makes him a fool, the second mads him, and a third drowns him.

Oli. Go thou and seek the crowner, and let him sit o' my coz; for he's in the third degree of drink, he's drowned: go, look after him. 144

Clo. He is but mad yet, madonna; and the fool shall look to the madman. [Exit.

Re-enter MALVOLIO.

Mal. Madam, yond young fellow swears he will speak with you. I told him you were sick: he takes on him to understand so much, and therefore comes to speak with you. I told him you were asleep: he seems to have a foreknowledge of that too, and therefore comes to speak with you.

What is to be said to him, lady? he's fortified against any denial. 154

Oli. Tell him he shall not speak with me.

Mal. He's been told so; and he says, he'll stand at your door like a sheriff's post, and be the supporter to a bench, but he'll speak with you.

Oli. What kind o' man is he? 160

Mal. Why, of mankind.
Oli. What manner of man?
Mal. Of very ill manner: he'll speak with you, will you or no. 164
Oli. Of what personage and years is he?
Mal. Not yet old enough for a man, nor young enough for a boy; as a squash is before 'tis a peascod, or a cobling when 'tis almost an apple: 'tis with him in standing water, between boy and man. He is very well-favoured; he speaks very shrewishly: one would think his mother’s milk were scarce out of him. 172
Oli. Let him approach. Call in my gentlewoman.
Mal. Gentlewoman, my lady calls. [Exit.

Re-enter Maria.

Oli. Give me my veil: come, throw it o'er my face. 176
We'll once more hear Orsino’s embassy.

Enter Viola and Attendants.

Vio. The honourable lady of the house, which is she?
Oli. Speak to me; I shall answer for her. Your will?
Vio. Most radiant, exquisite, and unmatchable beauty,—I pray you tell me if this be the lady of the house, for I never saw her: I would be loth to cast away my speech; for, besides that it is excellently well penned, I have taken great pains to con it. Good beauties, let me sustain no scorn; I am very comtable, even to the least sinister usage. 181
Oli. Whence came you, sir?
Vio. I can say little more than I have studied, and that question’s out of my part. Good gentle one, give me modest assurance if you be the lady of the house, that I may proceed in my speech.
Oli. Are you a comedian?
Vio. No, my profound heart; and yet, by the very fangs of malice I swear I am not that I play. Are you the lady of the house?
Oli. If I do not usurp myself, I am. 199
Vio. Most certain, if you are she, you do usurp yourself; for, what is yours to bestow is not yours to reserve. But this is from my commission: I will on with my speech in your praise, and then show you the heart of my message. 204
Oli. Come to what is important in’t: I forgive you the praise.
Vio. Alas! I took great pains to study it, and 'tis poetical. 208
Oli. It is the more like to be feigned: I pray you keep it in. I heard you were saucy at my gates, and allowed your approach rather to wonder at you than to hear you. If you be not mad, be gone; if you have reason, be brief: 'tis not that time of moon with me to make one in so skipping a dialogue. 215
Mar. Will you hoist sail, sir? here lies your way.
Vio. No, good swabber; I am to hull here a little longer. Some mollification for your giant, sweet lady.
Oli. Tell me your mind.
Vio. I am a messenger.
Oli. Sure, you have some hideous matter to deliver, when the courtesy of it is so fearful. Speak your office. 224
Vio. It alone concerns your ear. I bring no overture of war, no taxation of homage: I hold the olive in my hand; my words are as full of peace as matter. 228
Oli. Yet you began rudely. What are you? what would you?
Vio. The rudeness that hath appear’d in me have I learn’d from my entertainment. What I am, and what I would, are as secret as maidenhead; to your ears, divinity; to any other’s, profanation. 235
Oli. Give us the place alone: we will hear this divinity. [Exit Maria and Attendants.]
Now, sir; what is your text?
Vio. Most sweet lady,—
Oli. A comfortable doctrine, and much may be said of it. Where lies your text? 241
Vio. In Orsino’s bosom.
Oli. In his bosom! In what chapter of his bosom?
Vio. To answer by the method, in the first of his heart.
Oli. O! I have read it: it is hereby. Have you no more to say? 248
Vio. Good madam, let me see your face.
Oli. Have you any commission from your lord to negotiate with my face? you are now out of your text: but we will draw the curtain and show you the picture. [Unveiling.] Look you, sir, such a one I was as this present: is’t not well done?
Vio. Excellently done, if God did all. 256
Oli. 'Tis in grain, sir; ’twill endure wind and weather.
Vio. 'Tis beauty truly blent, whose red and white
Nature’s own sweet and cunning hand laid on:
Lady, you are the cruell’st she alive, 261
If you will lead these graces to the grave
And leave the world no copy.
Oli. O! sir, I will not be so hard-hearted; I will give out divers schedules of my beauty: it shall be inventoried, and every particle and utensil labelled to my will: as Item, Two lips,
indifferent red; Item, Two grey eyes, with lids to them; Item, One neck, one chin, and so forth.

Were you sent hither to praise me?

Vio. I see you what you are: you are too proud;

But, if you were the devil, you are fair. 272

My lord and master loves you: O! such love
Could be but recompens’d, though you were crown’d

The nonpareil of beauty.

Oli. How does he love me?

Vio. With adorations, with fertile tears, 276
With groans that thunder love, with sighs of fire.

Oli. Your lord does know my mind; I cannot love him;

Yet I suppose him virtuous, know him noble,
Of great estate, of fresh and stainless youth; 280
In voices well divulg’d, free, learn’d, and valiant;
And, in dimension and the shape of nature
A gracious person; but yet I cannot love him:
He might have took his answer long ago. 284

Vio. If I did love you in my master’s flame,

With such a suffering, such a deadly life,

In your denial I would find no sense;

I would not understand it.

Oli. Why, what would you? 288

Vio. Make me a willow cabin at your gate,

And call upon my soul within the house;

Write loyal cantons of contemned love,

And sing them loud even in the dead of night;

Holla your name to the reverberate hills, 293

And make the babbling gossip of the air

Cry out, ‘Olivia’! O! you should not rest

Between the elements of air and earth, 296

But you should pity me!

Oli. You might do much. What is your parentage?

Vio. Above my fortune, yet my state is well:

I am a gentleman.

Oli. Get you to your lord: 300

I cannot love him. Let him send no more,

Unless, perchance, you come to me again,

To tell me how he takes it. Fare you well:

I thank you for your pains: spend this for me.

Vio. I am no fee’d post, lady; keep your purse:

My master, not myself, lacks recompense.

Love make his heart of flint, that you shall love,

And let your fervour, like my master’s, be 308

Plac’d in contempt! Farewell, fair cruelty. 310

[Exit.

Oli. ‘What is your parentage?’

‘Above my fortunes, yet my state is well:

I am a gentleman.’ I’ll be sworn thou art: 312

Thy tongue, thy face, thy limbs, actions, and spirit,
will boldly publish her: she bore a mind that
ever could not but call fair. She is drowned already, sir, with salt water, though I seem to
drown her remembrance again with more. 33

Ant. Pardon me, sir, your bad entertainment.

Seb. O good Antonio! forgive me your trouble!

Ant. If you will not murder me for my love,
let me be your servant.

Seb. If you will not undo what you have
done, that is, kill him whom you have recovered,
desire it not. Fare ye well at once: my bosom
is full of kindness; and I am yet so near the
manners of my mother, that upon the least
occasion mine eyes will tell tales of me.
I am bound to the Count Orsino's court: fare-
well. [Exit.

Ant. The gentleness of all the gods go with
thee!

I have many enemies in Orsino's court,
Else would I very shortly see thee there;
But, come what may, I do adore thee so,
That danger shall seem sport, and I will go.

[Exit.

SCENE II.—A Street.

Enter VIOLA; MALVOLIO following.

Mal. Were not you even now with the
Countess Olivia?

Vio. Even now, sir: on a moderate pace I
have since arrived but hither.

Mal. She returns this ring to you, sir: you
might have saved me my pains, to have taken it
away yourself. She adds, moreover, that you
should put your lord into a desperate assurance
she will none of him. And one thing more: that
you be never so hardy to come again in his
affairs, unless it be to report your lord's taking
of this. Receive it so.

Vio. She took the ring of me; I'll none of it.

Mal. Come, sir, you pegerlishly threw it to
her; and her will is it should be so returned:
if it be worth stooping for, there it lies in your
eye; if not, be it his that finds it. [Exit.

Vio. I left no ring with her: what means
this lady?

Fortune forbid my outside have not charm'd
her!

She made good view of me; indeed, so much,
That sure methought her eyes had lost her
tongue,

For she did speak in starts distractedly.

She loves me, sure; the cunning of her passion
Invites me in this churlish messenger.

None of my lord's ring! why, he sent her none.

I am the man: if it be so, as 'tis,

Poor lady, she were better love a dream.

Disguise, I see, thou art a wickedness,

Wherein the pregnant enemy does much.

How easy it is for the proper-false
In women's waxen hearts to set their forms!

Alas! our frailty is the cause, not we!

For such as we are made of, such we be.

How will this fadge? My master loves her dearly;

And I, poor monster, fond as much on him;

And she, mistaken, seems to dote on me.

What will become of this? As I am man,

My state is desperate for my master's love;

As I am woman,—now alas the day!—

What thriftless sighs shall poor Olivia breathe?

O time! thou must untangle this, not I;

It is too hard a knot for me to untie. [Exit.

SCENE III.—A Room in Olivia's House.

Enter SIR TOBY BELCH and SIR ANDREW
AGUECHEEK.

Sir To. Approach, Sir Andrew: not to be
as bed after midnight is to be up betimes; and
diluculo surgere, thou knowest,—

Sir And. Nay, by my troth, I know not; but
I know, to be up late is to be up late.

Sir To. A false conclusion: I hate it as an
unfilled can. To be up after midnight and to
go to bed then, is early; so that to go to bed
after midnight is to go to bed betimes. Does
not our life consist of the four elements?

Sir And. Faith, so they say; but, I think, it
rather consists of eating and drinking.

Sir To. Thou art a scholar; let us therefore
eat and drink. Marian, I say! a stoup of wine!

Enter Clown.

Sir And. Here comes the fool, 't faith.

Clo. How now, my hearts! Did you never
see the picture of 'we three'?

Sir To. Welcome, ass. Now let's have a
catch.

Sir And. By my troth, the fool has an ex-
cellent breast. I had rather than forty shillings
I had such a leg, and so sweet a breath to sing,
as the fool has. In sooth, thou wast in very
gracious footing last night, when thou spokest of
Pigrogromitus, of the Vapians passing the equi-

nocial of Quebus: 'twas very good, 't faith. I
sent thee sixpence for thy leman: hadst it?

Clo. I did impetico thy gratitilly; for Mal-
volio's nose is no whipstock: my lady has a
white hand, and the Myrmidons are no bottle-

ale houses.

Sir And. Excellent! Why, this is the best
fooling, when all is done. Now, a song.
Sir To. Come on; there is sixpence for you: let's have a song.

Sir And. There's a trestle of me too: if one knight give a—

Clo. Would you have a love-song, or a song of good life?

Sir To. A love-song, a love-song.

Sir And. Ay, ay; I care not for good life.

Clo. O mistress mine! where are you roaming? O! stay and hear; your true love's coming, That can sing both high and low. Trip no further, pretty sweeting; Journeys end in lovers meeting, Every wise man's son doth know.

Sir And. Excellent good, i' faith.

Sir To. Good, good.

Clo. What is love? 'tis not hereafter; Present mirth hath present laughter; What's to come is still unsure: In delay there lies no plenty; Then come kiss me, sweet and twenty, Youth's a stuff will not endure.

Sir And. A mellifluous voice, as I am true knight.

Sir To. A contagious breath.

Sir And. Very sweet and contagious, i' faith.

Sir To. To hear by the nose, it is dulcet in contagion. But shall we make the welkin dance indeed? Shall we rouse the night-owl in a catch that will draw three souls out of one weaver? shall we do that?

Sir And. An you love me, let's do't: I am dog at a catch.

Clo. By'r lady, sir, and some dogs will catch well.

Sir And. Most certain. Let our catch be, 'Thou knowe.'

Clo. Hold thy peace, thou knowe, knight? I shall be constrain'd in't to call thee knowe, knight.

Sir And. 'Tis not the first time I have constraint one to call me knave. Begin, fool: it begins, 'Hold thy peace.'

Clo. I shall never begin if I hold my peace.

Sir And. Good, i' faith. Come, begin.

[They sing a catch.]

Enter MARY.

Mar. What a caterwauling do you keep here! If my lady have not called up her steward Malvolio and bid him turn you out of doors, never trust me.

Sir To. My lady's a Catalan; we are politicians; Malvolio's a Peg-a-Ramsey, and 'Three merry men be we.' Am not I consanguineous? am I not of her blood? Tillyvally, lady!

There dwell a man in Babylon, lady, lady!

Clo. Beshrew me, the knight's in admirable fooling.

Sir And. Ay, he does well enough if he be disposed, and so do I too: he does it with a better grace, but I do it more natural.

Sir To. O! the twelfth day of December,—

Mar. For the love o' God, peace!

Enter MALVOLIO.

Mal. My masters, are you mad? or what are you? Have you no wit, manners, nor honesty, but to gabble like tinkers at this time of night? Do ye make an alehouse of my lady's house, that ye squeak out your cozier's catches without any mitigation or remorse of voice? Is there no respect of place, persons, nor time, in you? We did keep time, sir, in our catches. Sneak up!

Mal. Sir Toby, I must be round with you. My lady bade me tell you, that, though she harbours you as her kinsman, she's nothing allied to your disorders. If you can separate yourself and your misdemeanours, you are welcome to the house; if not, an it would please you to take leave of her, she is very willing to bid you farewell.

Sir To. Farewell, dear heart, since I must needs be gone.

Mar. Nay, good Sir Toby.

Clo. His eyes do show his days are almost done.

Mal. Is't even so?

Sir To. But I will never die.

Clo. Sir Toby, there you lie.

Mal. This is much credit to you.

Sir To. Shall I bid him go?

Clo. What an if you do?

Sir To. Shall I bid him go, and spare not?

Clo. O! no, no, no, you dare not.

Sir To. 'Out o' time!' Sir, ye lie. Art any more than a steward? Dost thou think, because thou art virtuous, there shall be no more cakes and ale?

Clo. Yes, by Saint Anne; and ginger shall be hot i' the mouth too.

Sir To. Thou'rt i' the right. Go, sir, rub your chain with crumbs. A stoup of wine, Maria!

Mal. Mistress Mary, if you prized my lady's favour at anything more than contempt, you would not give means for this uncivil rule: she shall know of it, by this hand.

[Exit.

Mar. Go shake your ears.

Sir And. 'Twere as good a deed as to drink when a man's a-hungry, to challenge him the field, and then to break promise with him and make a fool of him.

Sir To. Do't, knight: I'll write thee a chal-
Act II. Sc. III. TWELFTH-NIGHT; OR, WHAT YOU WILL

Sir To. She's a beagle, true-bred, and one that adores me: what o' that?
Sir And. I was adored once too.
Sir To. Let's to bed, knight. Thou hadst need send for more money.
Sir And. If I cannot recover your niece, I am a foul way out.
Sir To. Send for money, knight: if thou hast her not i' the end, call me out.
Sir And. If I do not, never trust me, take it how you will.
Sir To. Come, come: I'll go burn some sack; 'tis too late to go to bed now. Come, knight; come, knight.

[Exeunt.

SCENE IV.—A Room in the Duke's Palace.

Enter Duke, Viola, Curio, and Others.

Duke. Give me some music. Now, good morrow, friends:
Now, good Cesario, but that piece of song,
That old and antique song we heard last night;
Methought it did relieve my passion much,
More than light airs and recollected terms
Of these most brisk and giddy-paced times:
Come; but one verse.
Cur. He is not here, so please your lordship,
that should sing it.

Duke. Who was it?
Cur. Feste, the jester, my lord; a fool that
the Lady Olivia's father took much delight in.
He is about the house.

Duke. Seek him out, and play the tune the while.


Come hither, boy: if ever thou shalt love,
in the sweet pangs of it remember me;
For such as I am all true lovers are:
Unstaid and skittish in all motions else
Save in the constant image of the creature
That is belov'd. How dost thou like this tune?

Vio. It gives me a very echo to the seat
Where love is thron'd.

Duke. Thou dost speak masterly.
My life upon't, young though thou art, thine eye
Hath stay'd upon some favour that it loves; 24
Hath it not, boy?

Vio. A little, by your favour.

Duke. What kind of woman is it?

Vio. Of your complexion.

Duke. She is not worth thee, then. What years, i' faith?

Vio. About your years, my lord.

Duke. Too old, by heaven. Let still the woman take
TWELFTH-NIGHT; OR, WHAT YOU WILL    Act II, Sc. IV.

An elder than herself, so wears she to him,
So sways she level in her husband's heart:
For, boy, however we do praise ourselves, 32
Our fancies are more giddy and unfirm,
More longing, wavering, sooner lost and worn,
Than women's are.

Vio. I think it well, my lord.

Duke. Then, let thy love be younger than thyself, 36
Or thy affection cannot hold the bent;
For women are as roses, whose fair flower
Being once display'd, doth fall that very hour.

Vio. And so they are: alas, that they are so;

To die, even when they to perfection grow!

Re-enter Curio with Clown.

Duke. O, fellow! come, the song we had last night.

Mark it, Cesario; it is old and plain;
The spinster and the knitters in the sun, 44
And the free maids that weave their thread
With bones,
Do use to chant it: it is silly sooth,
And dallies with the innocence of love,
Like the old age.

Clo. Are you ready, sir?

Duke. Ay; prithee, sing.

Clo. Come away, come away, death,
And in sad cypress let me be laid; 52
Fly away, fly away, breath;
I am slain by a fair cruel maid.
My shroud of white, stuck all with yew,
My part of death, no one so true
Did share it.

Not a flower, not a flower sweet,
On my black coffin let there be strown, 60
Not a friend, not a friend greet
My poor corse, where my bones shall be thrown.

A thousand thousand sighs to save,
Lay me, O! where
Sad true lover never find my grave,
To weep there.

Duke. There's for thy pains.

Clo. No pains, sir; I take pleasure in singing, sir.

Duke. I'll pay thy pleasure then.

Clo. Truly, sir, and pleasure will be paid, one time or another.

Duke. Give me now leave to leave thee.

Clo. Now, the melancholy god protect thee,
And the tailor make thy doublet of changeable taffeta,
For thy mind is a very opal! I would have men of such constancy put to sea, that their business might be everything and their intent everywhere; for that's it that always makes a good voyage of nothing. Farewell.  

Duke. Let all the rest give place.

[Exeunt Curio and Attendants.

Once more, Cesario, 81
Get thee to yond same sovereign cruelty:
Tell her, my love, more noble than the world,
Prizes not quantity of dirty lands; 84
The parts that fortune hath bestow'd upon her,
Tell her, I hold as giddily as fortune;
But 'tis that miracle and queen of gems
That nature pranks her in attracts my soul. 88

Vio. But if she cannot love you, sir?

Duke. I cannot be so answer'd.

Vio. Sooth, but you must.

Say that some lady, as perhaps, there is,
Hath for your love as great a pang of heart 92
As you have for Olivia: you cannot love her;
You tell her so; must she not then be answer'd?

Duke. There is no woman's sides
Can bide the beating of so strong a passion
As love doth give my heart; no woman's heart
So big, to hold so much; they lack retention.
Alas! their love may be call'd appetite,
No motion of the liver, but the palate,
That suffer surfeit, cloyment, and revolt;
But mine is all as hungry as the sea,
And can digest as much. Make no compare
Between that love a woman can bear me
And that I owe Olivia.

Vio. Ay, but I know,—

Duke. What dost thou know?

Vio. Too well what love women to men may owe:
In faith, they are as true of heart as we.

My father had a daughter lov'd a man,
As it might be, perhaps, were I a woman,
I should your lordship.

Duke. And what's her history?

Vio. A blank, my lord. She never told her love,

But let concealment, like a worm i' the bud,
Feed on her damask cheek: she pin'd in thought,
And with a green and yellow melancholy,
She sat like Patience on a monument,

Smiling at grief. Was not this love indeed?

We men may say more, swear more; but indeed
Our shows are more than will, for still we prove
Much in our vows, but little in our love. 120

Duke. But did thy sister of her love, my boy?

Vio. I am all the daughters of my father's house,
And all the brothers too; and yet I know not.
Sir, shall I to this lady?

Duke. Ay, that's the theme. 124

[Exeunt.  

To her in haste; give her this jewel; say
My love can give no place, bide no denay.
Act II, Sc. V.  TWELFTH-NIGHT; OR, WHAT YOU WILL

SCENE V.—OLIVIA’S GARDEN.

.Enter Sir Toby Belch, Sir Andrew Ague-Cheek, and Fabian.

Sir To. Come thy ways, Signior Fabian.

Fab. Nay, I’ll come: if I lose a scruple of this sport, let me be boiled to death with melancholy.

Sir To. Wouldst thou not be glad to have the niggardly rascally sheep-biter come by some notable shame?

Fab. I would exult, man: you know he brought me out o’ favour with my lady about a bear-baiting here.

Sir To. To anger him we’ll have the bear again; and we will fool him black and blue; shall we not, Sir Andrew?

Sir And. An we do not, it is pity of our lives.

Sir To. Here comes the little villain.

Enter MARIA.

How now, my metal of India!

Mar. Get ye all three into the box-tree. Malvolio’s coming down this walk: he has been yonder i’ the sun practising behaviour to his own shadow this half-hour. Observe him, for the love of mockery; for I know this letter will make a contemplative idiot of him. Close, in the name of jesting! Lie thou there: [Throws down a letter.] for here comes the trout that must be caught with tickling.

[Exeunt.

Enter MALVOLIO.

Mal. ’Tis but fortune; all is fortune. Maria once told me she did affect me; and I have heard herself come thus near, that should she fancy, it should be one of my complexion. Besides, she uses me with a more exalted respect than anyone else that follows her. What should I think on’t?

Sir To. Here’s an over-weening rogue!

Fab. O, peace! Contemplation makes a rare turkey-cock of him: how he jets under his advanced plumage!

Sir And. ’Slight, I could so beat the rogue!

Sir To. Peace! I say.

Mal. To be Count Malvolio!

Sir To. Ah, rogue!

Sir And. Pistol him, pistol him.

Sir To. Peace! peace!

Mal. There is example for’t: the lady of the Strachy married the yeoman of the wardrobe.

Sir And. Fie on him, Jezebel!

Fab. O, peace! now he’s deeply in; look how imagination blows him. 49

Mal. Having been three months married to her, sitting in my state,—

Sir To. Oi for a stone-bow, to hit him in the eye!

Mal. Calling my officers about me, in my branched velvet gown; having come from a day-bed, where I have left Olivia sleeping,— 56

Sir To. Fire and brimstone!

Fab. O, peace! peace!

Mal. And then to have the humour of state: and after a demure travel of regard, telling them I know my place, as I would they should do theirs, to ask for my kinsman Toby,—

Sir To. Bolts and shackles!

Fab. O, peace, peace, peace! now, now. 64

Mal. Seven of my people, with an obedient start, make out for him. I frown the while; and perchance wind up my watch, or play with my—some rich jewel. Toby approaches; curtsies there to me,—

Sir To. Shall this fellow live?

Fab. Though our silence be drawn from us with cars, yet peace!

Mal. I extend my hand to him thus, quenching my familiar smile with an austere regard of control,—

Sir To. And does not Toby take you a blow o’ the lips then?

Mal. Saying, ‘Cousin Toby, my fortunes having cast me on your niece give me this prerogative of speech.’—

Sir To. What, what?

Mal. ‘You must amend your drunkenness.’

Sir To. Out, scab!

Fab. Nay, patience, or we break the sinews of our plot.

Mal. ‘Besides, you waste the treasure of your time with a foolish knight,—

Sir And. That’s me, I warrant you.

Mal. ‘One Sir Andrew,’—

Sir And. I knew ‘twas I; for many do call me fool.

Mal. [Seeing the letter.] What employment have we here?

Fab. Now is the woodcock near the gin.

Sir To. O, peace! and the spirit of humours intimate reading aloud to him!

Mal. [Taking up the letter.] By my life, this is my lady’s hand! these be her very C’s, her U’s, and her T’s; and thus makes she her great P’s. It is, in contempt of question, her hand.

Sir And. Her C’s, her U’s, and her T’s: why that— 101

Mal. [Reads.] To the unknown beloved, this and my good wishes: her very phrases! By
your leave, wax. Soft! and the impressure her Lucrece, with which she uses to seal: 'tis my lady. To whom should this be?

**Fab.** This wins him, liver and all.

**Mal.** Jove knows I love; 108
But who?
Lips, do not move.
No man must know.

'No man must know.' What follows? the numbers altered! 'No man must know:' if this should be thee, Malvolio!

**Sir To.** Marry, hang thee, brock!

**Mal.** I may command where I adore; 116
But silence, like a Lucrece knife,
With bloodless stroke my heart doth cage:
M, O, A, I, doth sway my life.

**Fab.** A fustian riddle! 120

**Sir To.** Excellent wench, say I.

**Mal.** 'M, O, A, I, doth sway my life.' Nay, but first, let me see, let me see, let me see.

**Fab.** What dish o' poison has she dressed him?

**Sir To.** And with what wing the stannel checks it all!

**Mal.** 'I may command where I adore.' Why, she may command me; I serve her; she is my lady. Why, this is evident to any formal capacity; there is no obstruction in this. And the end, what should that alphabetical position portend? if I could make that resemble something in me.—Softly!—M, O, A, I—

**Sir To.** O! ay, make up that: he is now at a cold scent.

**Fab.** Sowter will cry upon't, for all this, though it be as rank as a fox.

**Mal.** M, Malvolio; M, why, that begins my name.

**Fab.** Did not I say he would work it out? the cur is excellent at faults.

**Mal.** M,—But then there is no consonancy in the sequel; that suffers under probation: A should follow, but O does.

**Fab.** And O shall end, I hope.

**Sir To.** Ay, or I'll cudgel him, and make him cry, O!

**Mal.** And then I comes behind.

**Fab.** Ay, an you had any eye behind you, you might see more distraction at your heels than fortunes before you. 152

**Mal.** M, O, A, I; this simulation is not as the former; and yet, to crush this a little, it would bow to me, for every one of these letters are in my name. Soft! here follows prose. 156

If this fall into thy hand, revolve. In my stars I am above thee; but be not afraid of greatness: some are born great, some achieve greatness, and some have greatness thrust upon them. Thy Fates open their hands; let thy blood and spirit embrace them; and to inure thyself to what thou art like to be, cast thy humble slough, and appear fresh. Be opposite with a kinman, surly with servants; let thy tongue tang arguments of state; put thyself into the trick of singularity. She thus advises thee that signs for thee. Remember who commend thy yellow stockings, and wished to see thee ever cross-gartered: I say, remember. Go to, thou art made, if thou desirest to be so; if not, let me see thee a steward still, the fellow of servants, and not worthy to touch Fortune's fingers. Farewell. She that would alter services with thee.

**The Fortunate- Unhappy.**

Daylight and champian discovers not more: this is open. I will be proud, I will read politic authors, I will baffle Sir Toby, I will wash off gross acquaintance, I will be point-devise the very man. I do not now fool myself, to let imagination jade me, for every reason excites to this, that my lady loves me. She did command my yellow stockings of late, she did praise my leg being cross-gartered; and in this she manifests herself to my love, and, with a kind of injunction drives me to these habits of her liking. I thank my stars I am happy. I will be strange, stout, in yellow stockings, and cross-gartered, even with the swiftness of putting on. Jove and my stars be praised! Here is yet a postscript.

Thou canst not choose but know who I am. If thou entertainest my love, let it appear in thy smiling; thy smiles become thee well; therefore in my presence still smile, dear my sweet, I prithee.

Jove, I thank thee. I will smile: I will do everything that thou wilt have me.

**Exit.**

**Fab.** I will not give my part of this sport for a pension of thousands to be paid from the.

**Sophy.**

**Sir To.** I could marry this wench for this device.

**Sir And.** So could I too.

**Sir To.** And ask no other dowry with her but such another jest.

**Sir And.** Nor I neither.

**Fab.** Here comes my noble gull-catcher.

**Re-enter Mar- bia.**

**Sir To.** Wilt thou set thy foot o' my neck?

**Sir And.** Or o' mine either?

**Sir To.** Shall I play my freedom at tray-trip, and become thy bond-slave?

**Sir And.** I' faith, or I either?

**Sir To.** Why, thou hast put him in such a dream, that when the image of it leaves him he must run mad.

**Mar.** Nay, but say true; does it work upon him?

**Sir To.** Like aqua-vite with a midwife.

**Mar.** If you will, then see the fruits of the sport, mark his first approach before my lady;
he will come to her in yellow stockings, and 'tis a
colour she abhors; and cross-gartered, a fashion
she detests; and he will smile upon her, which
will now be so unsuitable to her disposition,
being addicted to a melancholy as she is, that it
cannot but turn him into a notable contempt.
If you will see it, follow me.

Sir To. To the gates of Tartar, thou most
evil devil of wit.

Sir And. I'll make one too.

ACT III.

SCENE I.—OLIVIA’S Garden.

Enter Viola, and Clown with a labor.

Vio. Save thee, friend, and thy music. Dost
thou live by thy labor?

Clo. No, sir, I live by the church.

Vio. Art thou a churchman?

Clo. No such matter, sir: I do live by the
church; for I do live at my house, and my house
doth stand by the church.

Vio. So thou mayst say, the king lies by a
beggar, if a beggar dwell near him; or, the
church stands by thy labor, if thy labor stand
by the church.

Clo. You have said, sir. To see this age!
A sentence is but a cheveril glove to a good wit:
how quickly the wrong side may be turned out-
ward!

Vio. Nay, that’s certain: they that dally
nicely with words may quickly make them
wanton.

Clo. I would therefore my sister had had no
name, sir.

Vio. Why, man?

Clo. Why, sir, her name’s a word; and to
dally with that word might make my sister
wanton. But indeed, words are very rascals
since bonds disgraced them.

Vio. Thy reason, man?

Clo. Truth, sir, I can yield you none without
words; and words are grown so false, I am
loath to prove reason with them.

Vio. I warrant thou art a merry fellow, and
carest for nothing.

Clo. Not so, sir, I do care for something; but
in my conscience, sir, I do not care for you:
if that be to care for nothing, sir, I would it
would make you invisible.

Vio. Art not thou the Lady Olivia’s fool? 36

Clo. No, indeed, sir; the Lady Olivia has no
folly: she will keep no fool, sir, till she be
married; and fools are as like husbands as
pilchards are to herrings—the husband’s the
bigger. I am indeed not her fool, but her
corrupter of words.

Vio. I saw thee late at the Count Orsino’s.

Clo. Foolery, sir, does walk about the orb
like the sun; it shines everywhere. I would be
sorry, sir, but the fool should be as off with
your master as with my mistress. I think I saw
your wisdom there.

Vio. Nay, an thou pass upon me, I’ll no more
with thee. Hold, there’s sixpence for thee.

[Give a piece of money.

Clo. Now Jove, in his next commodity of
hair, send thee a beard!

Vio. By my troth, I’ll tell thee, I am almost
sick for one, though I would not have it grow
on my chin. Is thy lady within?

Clo. [Pointing to the coin.] Would not a pair
of these have bred, sir?

Vio. Yes, being kept together and put to use.

Clo. I would play Lord Pandarus of Phrygia,
sir, to bring a Cressida to this Troilus.

Vio. I understand you, sir; ’tis well begg’d.

Clo. The matter, I hope, is not great, sir,
begging but a beggar: Cressida was a beggar.
My lady is within, sir. I will conter to them
whence you come; who you are and what you
would are out of my welkin; I might say ‘ele-
ment,’ but the word is overworn.

[Exit. Viola. This fellow’s wise enough to play the
fool.

And to do that well craves a kind of wit:
He must observe their mood on whom he jests,
The quality of persons, and the time,
And, like the haggard, check at every feather
That comes before his eye. This is a practice
As full of labour as a wise man’s art;
For folly that he wisely shows is fit;
But wise men folly fall’n, quite taint their
wit.

Enter Sir Toby Belch and Sir Andrew
Aguecheek.

Sir To. Save you, gentleman.

Vio. And you, sir.

Sir And. Dieu vous garde, monsieur.

Vio. Et vous aussi; votre serviteur.

Sir And. I hope, sir, you are; and I am
yours.

Sir To. Will you encounter the house? my
niece is desirous you should enter, if your trade
be to her.

Vio. I am bound to your niece, sir: I mean,
she is the list of my voyage.

Sir To. Taste your legs, sir: put them to
motion.

Vio. My legs do better understand me, sir,
than I understand what you mean by bidding
me taste my legs.

Sir To. I mean, to go, sir, to enter.

Vio. I will answer you with gait and en-
trance. But we are prevented.

Enter OLIVIA and MARIA.

Most excellent accomplished lady, the heavens
rain odours on you! 97

Sir And. That youth's a rare courtier. 'Rain
odours!' well.

Vio. My matter hath no voice, lady, but to
your own most pregnant and vouchsafed ear. 101

Sir And. 'Odours,' 'pregnant,' and 'vouch-
safed.' I'll get 'em all three all ready.

Oli. Let the garden door be shut, and leave
me to my hearing. 105

[Exeunt Sir TOBY, Sir ANDREW, and MARIA.

Give me your hand, sir.

Vio. My duty, madam, and most humble
service.

Oli. What is your name? 108

Vio. Cesario is your servant's name, fair
princess.

Oli. My servant, sir! 'Twas never merry
world
Since lowly feigning was call'd compliment.
You're servant to the Count Orsino, youth. 112

Vio. And he is yours, and his must needs be
yours:

Your servant's servant is your servant, madam.

Oli. For him, I think not on him: for his
thoughts,
Would they were blanks rather than fill'd with
me! 116

Vio. Madam, I come to what your gentle
thoughts
On his behalf.

Oli. O! by your leave, I pray you,
I bade you never speak again of him:

But, would you undertake another suit,
I had rather hear you to solicit that
Than music from the spheres.

Vio. Dear lady,—

Oli. Give me leave, beseech you. I did send,
After the last enchantment you did here, 125
A ring in chase of you: so did I abuse
Myself, my servant, and, I fear me, you:
Under your hard construction must I sit, 128
To force that on you, in a shameful cunning,
Which you knew none of yours: what might
you think?

Have you not set mine honour at the stake,
And bated it with all th' unmuzzled thoughts
That tyrannous heart can think? To one of
your receiving

Enough is shown; a cypress, not a bosom,
Hideth my heart. So, let me hear you speak.

Vio. I pity you. 136

Oli. That's a degree to love.

Vio. No, not a grize; for 'tis a vulgar proof
That very oft we pity enemies.

Oli. Why, then methinks 'tis time to smile
again. 140

O world! how apt the poor are to be proud.
If one should be a prey, how much the better
To fall before the lion than the wolf!

[Clock strikes.
The clock upbraids me with the waste of time.
Be not afraid, good youth, I will not have you:
And yet, when wit and youth is come to har-
est,
Your wife is like to reap a proper man:
There lies your way, due west.

Vio. Then westward-ho! 148

Grace and good disposition attend your lady-
ship!

You'll nothing, madam, to my lord by me?

Oli. Stay:

I prithee, tell me what thou think'st of me. 152

Vio. That you do think you are not what you
are.

Oli. If I think so, I think the same of you.

Vio. Then think you right: I am not what I
am.

Oli. I would you were as I would have you
be!

Vio. Would it be better, madam, than I am?

I wish it might, for now I am your fool.

Oli. O! what a deal of scorn looks beautiful
In the contempt and anger of his lip. 160
A murderous guilt shows not itself more soon
Than love that would seem hid; love's night is
noon.

Cesario, by the roses of the spring,

By maidhood, honour, truth, and every thing,
I love thee so, that, maugre all thy pride, 165
Nor wit nor reason can my passion hide.
Do not extort thy reasons from this clause,
For that I woo, thou therefore hast no cause;
But rather reason thus with reason better, 169
Love sought is good, but giv'n unsought is
better.

Vio. By innocence I swear, and by my youth,
I have one heart, one bosom, and one truth, 172
And that no woman has; nor never none
Shall mistress be of it, save I alone.
And so adieu, good madam: never more
Will I my master's tears to you deplore. 176

Oli. Yet come again, for thou perhaps mayst
move
That heart, which now abhors, to like his love.

[Exeunt.
Scene II.—A Room in Olivia’s House.

Enter Sir Toby Belch, Sir Andrew Ague-Cheek, and Fabian.

Sir And. No, faith, I’ll not stay a jot longer.
Sir To. Thy reason, dear venom; give thy reason.
Fab. You must needs yield your reason, Sir Andrew.
Sir And. Marry, I saw your niece do more favours to the count’s serving-man than ever she bestowed upon me; I saw ‘t i’ the orchard.
Sir To. Did she see thee the while, old boy? tell me that.
Sir And. As plain as I see you now.
Fab. This was a great argument of love in her toward you.
Sir And. ’Slight! will you make an ass o’ me?
Fab. I will prove it legitimate, sir, upon the oaths of judgment and reason.
Sir To. And they have been grand-jurymen since before Noah was a sailor.
Fab. She did show favour to the youth in your sight only to exasperate you, to awake your dormouse valour, to put fire in your heart, and brimstone in your liver. You should then have accosted her, and with some excellent jests, fire-new from the mint, you should have banged the youth into dumbness. This was looked for at your hand, and this was balked: the double gift of this opportunity you let time wash off, and you are now sailed into the north of my lady’s opinion; where you will hang like an icicle on a Dutchman’s beard, unless you do redeem it by some laudable attempt, either of valour or policy.
Sir And. An’t be any way, it must be with valour, for policy I hate: I had as lief be a Brownist as a politician.
Sir To. Why, then, build me thy fortunes upon the basis of valour: challenge me the count’s youth to fight with him; hurt him in eleven places: my niece shall take note of it; and assure thyself, there is no love-broker in the world can more prevail in man’s commendation with woman than report of valour.
Fab. There is no way but this, Sir Andrew.
Sir And. Will either of you bear me a challenge to him?
Sir To. Go, write it in a martial hand; be curst and brief; it is no matter how witty, so it be eloquent, and full of invention: taunt him with the licence of ink: if thou thou’st him some thrice, it shall not be amiss; and as many lies as will lie in thy sheet of paper, although the sheet were big enough for the bed of Ware in England, set ’em down: go, about it. Let there be gall enough in thy ink, though thou write with a goose-pen, no matter: about it. Sir And. Where shall I find you?
Sir To. We’ll call thee at the cubicula: go.
[Exit Sir Andrew.
Fab. This is a dear manakin to you, Sir Toby.
Sir To. I have been dear to him, lad, some two thousand strong, or so.
Fab. We shall have a rare letter from him; but you’ll not deliver it.
Sir To. Never trust me, then; and by all means stir on the youth to an answer. I think oaken and wainropes cannot bale them together. For Andrew, if he were opened, and you find so much blood in his liver as will clog the foot of a flea, I’ll eat the rest of the anatomy.
Fab. And his opposite, the youth, bears in his visage no great presage of cruelty.
Sir To. Look, where the youngest wren of nine comes.

Enter Maria.

Mar. If you desire the spleen, and will laugh yourselves into stitches, follow me. Yond gull Malvolio is turned heathen, a very renegade; for there is no Christian, that means to be saved by behaving rightly, can ever believe such impossible passages of grossness. He’s in yellow stockings.

Sir To. And cross-gartered?
Mar. Most villanously; like a pedant that keeps a school i’ the church. I have dogged him like his murderer. He does obey every point of the letter that I dropped to betray him: he does smile his face into more lines than are in the new map with the augmentation of the Indies. You have not seen such a thing as ’tis; I can hardly forbear hurling things at him. I know my lady will strike him: if she do, he’ll smile and take’t for a great favour.

Sir To. Come, bring us, bring us where he is.

[Exit.

Scene III.—A Street.

Enter Sebastian and Antonio.

Seb. I would not by my will have troubled you; But since you make your pleasure of your pains, I will no further chide you.
Ant. I could not stay behind you: my desire, More sharp than filed steel, did spur me forth; And not all love to see you,—though so much As might have drawn one to a longer voyage,—
But jealousy what might betfall your travel, 8
Being skillless in these parts; which to a stranger,
Unguided and unfriended, often prove
Rough and unhospitable: my willing love,
The rather by these arguments of fear,
Set forth in your pursuit.

Seb. My kind Antonio,
I can no other answer make but thanks,
And thanks, and ever thanks; for oft good
turns
Are shuffled off with such uncurrent pay: 16
But, were my worth, as is my conscience,
firm,
You should find better dealing. What’s to do?
Shall we go see the reliques of this town?

Ant. To-morrow, sir: best first go see your
lodging.

Seb. I am not weary, and 'tis long to night:
I pray you, let us satisfy our eyes
With the memorials and the things of fame
That do renown this city.

Ant. Would you’d pardon me;
I do not without danger walk these streets: 25
Once, in a sea-fight 'gainst the Count his galleys,
I did some service; of such note indeed,
That were I ta’en here it would scarce be
answer’d.

Seb. Be like you slew great number of his
people?

Ant. The offence is not of such a bloody
nature,
Albeit the quality of the time and quarrel
Might well have given us bloody argument. 32
It might have since been answer’d in repaying
What we took from them; which, for traffic’s
sake,
Most of our city did: only myself stood out;
For which, if I be lapsed in this place, 36
I shall pay dear.

Seb. Do not then walk too open.
Ant. It doth not fit me. Hold, sir; here’s my
purse.

In the south suburbs, at the Elephant,
Is best to lodge: I will bespeak our diet, 40
Whiles you beguile the time and feed your
knowledge
With viewing of the town: there shall you have
me.

Seb. Why your purse?
Ant. Haply your eye shall light upon some
toy
You have desire to purchase; and your store,
I think, is not for idle markets, sir.

Seb. I’ll be your purse-bearer and leave you
for an hour.

Ant. To the Elephant.
Seb. I do remember. 48

Scene IV.—Olivia’s Garden.

Enter Olivia and Maria.

Oli. I have sent after him: he says he’ll
come;
How shall I feast him? what bestow of him?
For youth is bought more oft than begg’d or
borrow’d.
I speak too loud.

Where is Malvolio? he is sad, and civil,
And suits well for a servant with my fortunes:
Where is Malvolio?

Mar. He’s coming, madam; but in very
strange manner. He is sure possess’d, madam. 9

Oli. Why, what’s the matter? does he rave?

Mar. No, madam; he does nothing but
smile: your ladyship were best to have some
guard about you if he come, for sure the man
is tainted in’s wits.

Oli. Go call him hither. [Exit Maria.

I am as mad as he,
If sad and merry madness equal be.

Re-enter Maria, with Malvolio.

How now, Malvolio!

Mal. Sweet lady, ho, ho.

Oli. Smil’st thou?

I sent for thee upon a sad occasion.

Mal. Sad, lady! I could be sad: this does
make some obstruction in the blood, this
cross-gartering; but what of that? if it please the eye
of one, it is with me as the very true sonnet is,
‘Please one and please all.’

Oli. Why, how dost thou, man? what is the
matter with thee?

Mal. Not black in my mind, though yellow
in my legs. It did come to his hands, and com-
mands shall be executed: I think we do know
the sweet Roman hand.

Oli. Wilt thou go to bed, Malvolio?

Mal. To bed! ay, sweetheart; and I’ll come
to thee.

Oli. God comfort thee! Why dost thou smile
so and kiss thy hand so oft?

Mar. How do you, Malvolio?

Mal. At your request! Yes; nightingales
answer daws.

Mar. Why appear you with this ridiculous
boldness before my lady?

Mal. ‘Be not afraid of greatness.’ Twas
well writ.

Oli. What meanest thou by that, Malvolio?
Mal. ‘Some are born great,’—

Oli. Ha!

Mal. ‘Some achieve greatness,’—

Oli. What sayst thou?
Mal. 'And some have greatness thrust upon them.'

Oli. Heaven restore thee! 52
Mal. 'Remember who commendeth thy yellow stockings,'

Oli. Thy yellow stockings!
Mal. 'And wished to see thee cross-gartered,'

Oli. Cross-gartered!
Mal. 'Go to, thou art made, if thou desir'st to be so,'—

Oli. Am I made?
Mal. 'If not, let me see thee a servant still.'
Oli. Why, this is very midsummer madness.

Enter Servant.

Ser. Madam, the young gentleman of the Count Orsino's is returned. I could hardly entreat him back: he attends your ladyship's pleasure.

Oli. I'll come to him. [Exit Servant.]

Good Maria, let this fellow be looked to. Where's my cousin Toby? Let some of my people have a special care of him: I would not have him miscarry for the half of my dowry. 71

[Exeunt OLIVIA and MARIA.

Mal. Oh, ho! do you come near me now? no worse man than Sir Toby to look to me! This concurs directly with the letter: she sends him on purpose, that I may appear stubborn to him; for she incites me to that in the letter. 'Cast thy humble slough,' says she; 'be opposite with a kinsman, surly with servants; let thy tongue tang with arguments of state; put thyself into the trick of singularity;' and consequently sets down the manner how; as, a sad face, a reverend carriage, a slow tongue, in the habit of some sir of note, and so forth. I have limed her; but it is Jove's doing, and Jove make me thankful! And when she went away now, 'Let this fellow be looked to;' fellow! not Malvolio, nor after my degree, but fellow. Why, everything adheres together, that no dram of a scruple, no scruple of a scruple, no obstacle, no incredulous or unsafe circumstance—What can be said? Nothing that can be can come between me and the full prospect of my hopes. Well, Jove, not I, is the doer of this, and he is to be thanked.

Re-enter MARIA, with SIR TOBY BELCH and FABIAN.

Sir To. Which way is he, in the name of sanctity? If all the devils in hell be drawn in little, and Legion himself possess'd him, yet I'll speak to him.

Fab. Here he is, here he is. How is't with you, sir? how is't with you, man?

Mal. Go off; I discard you: let me enjoy my private; go off.

Mar. Lo, how hollow the fiend speaks within him! did not I tell you? Sir Toby, my lady prays you to have a care of him.

Mal. Ah, ha! does she so?

Sir To. Go to, go to: peace, peace! we must deal gently with him; let me alone. How do you, Malvolio? how is't with you? What, man! defy the devil: consider, he's an enemy to mankind.

Mal. Do you know what you say?

Mar. Le you! an you speak ill of the devil, how he takes it at heart. Pray God, he be not bewitched!

Fab. Carry his water to the wise-woman.

Mar. Marry, and it shall be done to-morrow morning, if I live. My lady would not lose him for more than I'll say.

Mal. How now, mistress!

Mar. O Lord!

Sir To. Prithhee, hold thy peace; this is not the way: do you not see you move him? let me alone with him.

Fab. No way but gentleness; gently, gently: the fiend is rough, and will not be roughly used.

Sir To. Why, how now, my bawcock! how dost thou, chuck?

Mal. Sir!

Sir To. Ay, Biddy, come with me. What, man! 'tis not for gravity to play at cherry-pit with Satan: hang him, foul collier!

Mar. Get him to say his prayers, good Sir Toby, get him to pray.

Mal. My prayers, minx!

Mar. No, I warrant you, he will not hear of godliness.

Mal. Go, hang yourselves all! you are idle shallow things: I am not of your element. You shall know more hereafter. [Exit.

Sir To. Is't possible?

Fab. If this were played upon a stage now, I could condemn it as an improbable fiction.

Sir To. His very genius hath taken the infection of the device, man.

Mar. Nay, pursue him now, lest the device take air, and taint.

Fab. Why, we shall make him mad indeed.

Mar. The house will be the quieter.

Sir To. Come, we'll have him in a dark room, and bound. My niece is already in the belief that he's mad: we may carry it thus, for our pleasure and his pance, till our very pastime, tired out of breath, prompt us to have mercy on him; at which time we will bring the device to the bar, and crown thee for a finder of madmen. But see, but see.
Enter Sir Andrew Aguecheek.

Fab. More matter for a May morning.

Sir And. Here’s the challenge; read it: I warrant there’s vinegar and pepper in’t. 165

Fab. Is’t so saucy?

Sir And. Ay, is’t, I warrant him: do but read.

Sir To. Give me. Youth, whatsoever thou art, thou art but a scurvy fellow. 165

Fab. Good, and valiant.

Sir To. Wonder not, nor admire not in thy mind, why I do call thee so, for I will show thee no reason for’t.

Fab. A good note, that keeps you from the blow of the law.

Sir To. Thou comest to the Lady Olivia, and in my sight she uses thee kindly: but thou liest in thy throat; that is not the matter I challenge thee for.

Fab. Very brief, and to exceeding good sense.

Sir To. I will waylay thee going home; where, if it be thy chance to kill me,—

Fab. Good.

Sir To. Thou killest me like a rogue and a villain.

Fab. Still you keep o’ the windy side of the law: good.

Sir To. Fare thee well; and God have mercy upon one of our souls! He may have mercy upon mine, but my hope is better; and so look to thyself. Thy friend, as thou usest him, and thy sworn enemy,

Andrew Aguecheek.

If this letter move him not, his legs cannot. I’ll give’t him.

Mar. You may have very fit occasion for’t; he is now in some commerce with my lady, and will by and by depart.

Sir To. Go, Sir Andrew; scout me for him at the corner of the orchard like a bumbally: so soon as ever thou seest him, draw; and, as thou drawest, swear horrible; for it comes to pass oft that a terrible oath, with a swaggering accent sharply twanged off, gives mankind more approbation than ever proof itself would have earned him. Away!

Sir And. Nay, let me alone for swearing. 192

[Exit.

Sir To. Now will I deliver his letter: for the behaviour of the young gentleman gives him out to be of good capacity and breeding; his employment between his lord and my niece confirms no less: therefore this letter, being so excellently ignorant, will breed no terror in the youth: he will find it comes from a clodpole. But, sir, I will deliver his challenge by word of mouth; set upon Aguecheek a notable report of valour; and drive the gentleman,—as I know his youth will aptly receive it,—into a most hideous opinion of his rage, skill, fury, and impetuosity. This will so fright them both that they will kill one another by the look, like cockatrices.

Fab. Here he comes with your niece: give them way till he take leave, and presently after him.

Sir To. I will meditate the while upon some horrid message for a challenge.

[Exeunt Sir Toby, Fabian, and Maria.

Re-enter Olivia, with Viola.

Ol. I have said too much unto a heart of stone, 224
And laid mine honour too unchary out:
There’s something in me that reproves my fault,
But such a headstrong potent fault it is
That it but mocks reproof.

Vio. With the same haviour that your passion bears
Goes on my master’s griefs.

Ol. Here; wear this jewel for me, ’tis my picture;
Refuse it not; it hath no tongue to vex you; 232
And I beseech you come again to-morrow.
What shall you ask of me that I’ll deny,
That honour sav’d may upon asking give?

Vio. Nothing but this; your true love for my master.

Ol. How with mine honour may I give him that
Which I have given to you?

Vio. I will acquit you.

Ol. Well, come again to-morrow: fare thee well:
A fiend like thee might bear my soul to hell. 240

[Exit.

Re-enter Sir Toby Belch and Fabian.

Sir To. Gentleman, God save thee.

Vio. And you, sir.

Sir To. That defence thou hast, betake thee to’t: of what nature the wrongs are thou hast done him, I know not; but thy interceptor, full of despite, bloody as the hunter, attends thee at the orchard-end. Dismount thy buck; be yare in thy preparation, for thy assailant is quick, skilful, and deadly.

Vio. You mistake, sir: I am sure no man hath any quarrel to me: my remembrance is very free and clear from any image of offence done to any man. 253

Sir To. You’ll find it otherwise, I assure you: therefore, if you hold your life at any price, be-take you to your guard; for your opposite hath
in him what youth, strength, skill, and wrath, can furnish man withal.

Vio. I pray you, sir, what is he? 259

Sir To. He is knight dubbed with unhatched rapier, and on carpet consideration; but he is a devil in private brawl: souls and bodies hath he divorced three, and his incensement at this moment is so implacable that satisfaction can be none but by pangs of death and sepulture. Hob, nob, is his word: give't or take't. 266

Vio. I will return again into the house and desire some conduct of the lady: I am no fighter. I have heard of some kind of man that put quarrels purposely on others to taste their value; belike this is a man of that quirk.

Sir To. Sir, no; his indignation derives itself out of a very competent injury: therefore get you on and give him his desire. Back you shall not to the house, unless you undertake that with me which with as much safety you might answer him: therefore, on, or strip your sword stark naked; for meddle you must, that's certain, or forswear to wear iron about you. 279

Vio. This is as uncivil as strange. I beseech you, do me this courteous office, as to know of the knight what my offence to him is: it is something of my negligence, nothing of my purpose.

Sir To. I will do so. Signior Fabian, stay you by this gentleman till my return. [Exit. Vio. Pray you, sir, do you know of this matter? 287

Fab. I know the knight is incensed against you, even to a mortal arbitrement, but nothing of the circumstance more.

Vio. I beseech you, what manner of man is he? 292

Fab. Nothing of that wonderful promise, to read him by his form, as you are like to find him in the proof of his valour. He is, indeed, sir, the most skilful, bloody, and fatal opposite that you could possibly have found in any part of Illyria. Will you walk towards him? I will make your peace with him if I can. 299

Vio. I shall be much bound to you for't: I am one that had rather go with sir priest than sir knight; I care not who knows so much of my mottle. [Exeunt.

Re-enter SIR TOBY, with SIR ANDREW.

Sir To. Why, man, he's a very devil; I have not seen such a firago. I had a pass with him, rapier, scabbard and all, and he gives me the stuck in with such a mortal motion that it is inevitable; and on the answer, he pays you as surely as your feet hit the ground they step on. They say he has been fencer to the Sophy. 320

Sir And. Pox on't, I'll not meddle with him.

Sir To. Ay, but he will not now be pacified: Fabian can scarce hold him yonder. 333

Sir And. Plague on't; an I thought he had been valiant and so cunning in fince I'd have seen him damned ere I'd have challenged him. Let him let the matter slip, and I'll give him my horse, grey Capilet. 318

Sir To. I'll make the motion. Stand here; make a good show on't: this shall end without the perdition of souls. — [Aside.] Marry, I'll ride your horse as well as I ride you.

Re-enter FABIAN and VIOLA.

[To FABIAN.] I have his horse to take up the quarrel. I have persuaded him the youth's a devil.

Fab. He is as horribly conceited of him; and pants and looks pale, as if a bear were at his heels. 328

Sir To. There's no remedy, sir: he will fight with you for his oath's sake. Marry, he hath better bethought him of his quarrel, and he finds that now scarce to be worth talking of: therefore draw for the supportance of his vow: he protests he will not hurt you.

Vio. [Aside.] Pray God defend me! A little thing would make me tell them how much I lack of a man. 337

Fab. Give ground, if you see him furious.

Sir To. Come, Sir Andrew, there's no remedy: the gentleman will, for his honour's sake, have one bout with you; he cannot by the duello avoid it: but he has promised me, as he is a gentleman and a soldier, he will not hurt you. Come on; to't. 344

Sir And. Pray God, he keep his oath! [Draws.

Vio. I do assure you, 'tis against my will. [Draws.

Enter ANTONIO.

Ant. Put up your sword. If this young gentleman have done offence, I take the fault on me: 348
If you offend him, I for him defy you. [Drawing.

Sir To. You, sir! why, what are you?

Ant. One, sir, that for his love dares yet do more
Than you have heard him brag to you he will. 352

Sir To. Nay, if you be an undertaker, I am for you. [Draws.

Fab. O, good air Toby, hold! here come the officers. 356

Sir To. I'll be with you anon.

Vio. [To SIR ANDREW.] Pray, sir, put your sword up, if you please.
Sir And. Marry, will I, sir; and, for that I promised you, I'll be as good as my word. He will bear you easily and reins well.

Enter two Officers.

First Off. This is the man; do thy office.


Ant. You do mistake me, sir.

First Off. No, sir, no jot: I know your favour well, Though now you have no sea-cap on your head. Take him away: he knows I know him well. 368

Ant. I must obey.—[To VIOLA.] This comes with seeking you:

But there's no remedy: I shall answer it. What will you do, now my necessity MAKES me to ask you for my purse? It grieves me Much more for what I cannot do for you 373 Than what befalls myself. You stand amaz'd: But be of comfort.

Sec. Off. Come, sir, away.

Ant. I mustentreat of you some of that money.

Vio. What money, sir?

For the fair kindness you have show'd me here, And part, being prompted by your present trouble, Out of my lean and low ability 380 I'll lend you something: my having is not much: I'll make division of my present with you. Hold, there is half my coffer.

Ant. Will you deny me now?

Is't possible that my deserts to you 384 Can lack persuasion? Do not tempt my misery, Lest that it make me so unsound a man As to upbraid you with those kindnesses That I have done for you.

Vio. I know of none; 388 Nor know I you by voice or any feature. I hate ingratitude more in a man Than lying, vainness, babbling drunkenness, Or any taint of vice whose strong corruption 392 Inhabits our frail blood.

Ant. O heavens themselves! 9


Ant. Let me speak a little. This youth that you see here I snatch'd one-half out of the jaws of death, 396 Reliev'd him with such sanctity of love, And to his image, which me most did promise Most venerable worth, did I devotion.

First Off. What's that to us? The time goes by: away!

Ant. But O! how vile an idol proves this god.

Thou hast, Sebastian, done good feature shame. In nature there's no blemish but the mind; None can be call'd deform'd but the unkind: 404 Virtue is beauty, but the beauteous evil Are empty trunks o'erflourish'd by the devil.

First Off. The man grows mad: away with him! Come, come, sir.

Ant. Lead me on. 408

[Exeunt Officers with ANTONIO.

Vio. Methinks his words do from such passion fly, That he believes himself; so do not I. Prove true, imagination, O, prove true, That I, dear brother, be now ta'en for you! 412

Sir To. Come hither, knight; come hither, Fabian: we'll whisper o'er a couplet or two of most sage saws.

Vio. He nam'd Sebastian: I my brother know Yet living in my glass; even such and so 417 In favour was my brother; and he went Still in this fashion, colour, ornament, For him I imitate. O! if it prove, 420 Tempests are kind, and salt waves fresh in love!

[Exit.

Sir To. A very dishonest paltry boy, and more a coward than a hare. His dishonesty appears in leaving his friend here in necessity, and denying him; and for his cowardship, ask Fabian. 425

Fab. A coward, a most devout coward, religious in it.

Sir And. 'Slid, I'll after him again and beat him. 429

Sir To. Do; cuff him soundly, but never draw thy sword.

Sir And. An I do not,— 433

Fab. Come, let's see the event.

Sir To. I dare lay any money 'twill be nothing yet.

[Exeunt.

ACT IV.

SCENE I.—The Street adjoining OLIVIA'S House.

Enter SEBASTIAN and Clown.

Clo. Will you make me believe that I am not sent for you?

Seb. Go to, go to, thou art a foolish fellow: Let me be clear of thee.

Clo. Well held out, I' faith! No, I do not know you; nor I am not sent to you by my lady to bid you come speak with her; nor your name is not Master Cesario; nor this is not my nose neither. Nothing that is so is so.

Seb. I prithee, vent thy folly somewhere else: Thou know'st not me.

Clo. Vent my folly! He has heard that word of some great man, and now applies it to a fool. Vent my folly! I am afraid this great lubber, the world, will prove a cockney. I prithee now, ungird thy strangeness and tell me what I shall
vent to my lady. Shall I vent to her that thou art coming?

Seb. I prithee, foolish Greek, depart from me: There’s money for thee: if you tarry longer I shall give worse payment.

Clo. By my troth, thou hast an open hand. These wise men that give fools money get themselves a good report after fourteen years’ purchase.

Enter Sir Andrew.

Sir And. Now, sir, have I met you again? there’s for you. [Striking Sebastian.]

Seb. Why, there’s for thee, and there, and there, and there! [Beating Sir Andrew.

Are all the people mad?

Enter Sir Toby and Fabian.

Sir To. Hold, sir, or I’ll throw your dagger o’er the house.

Clo. This will I tell my lady straight. I would not be in some of your coats for twopence. [Exit. Sir To. [Holding Sebastian.] Come on, sir: hold.

Sir And. Nay, let him alone; I’ll go another way to work with him: I’ll have an action of battery against him if there be any law in Illyria. Though I struck him first, yet it’s no matter for that.

Seb. Let go thy hand.

Sir To. Come, sir, I will not let you go. Come, my young soldier, put up your iron: you are well fleshed; come on.

Seb. I will be free from thee. [Disengaging himself.] What wouldst thou now? If thou dar’st tempt me further, draw thy sword.

Sir To. What, what! Nay then, you must have an ounce or two of this malapert blood from you.

[Draws.]

Enter Olivia.

Oli. Hold, Toby! on thy life I charge thee, hold!

Sir To. Madam!

Oli. Will it be ever thus? Ungracious wretch! Fit for the mountains and the barbarous caves, Where manners ne’er were preach’d. Out of my sight!

Be not offended, dear Cesario.

Rudesby, be gone! [Exeunt Sir Toby, Sir Andrew, and Fabian.

I prithee, gentle friend,
Let thy fair wisdom, not thy passion, sway In this uncivil and unjust extent
Against thy peace. Go with me to my house, And hear thou there how many fruitless pranks This ruffian hath botch’d up, that thou thereby

Mayst smile at this. Thou shalt not choose but go:

Do not deny. Be shrewed his soul for me, He started one poor heart of mine in thee.

Seb. What relish is in this? how runs the stream?

Or I am mad, or else this is a dream: Let fancy still my sense in Letho steep; If it be thus to dream, still let me sleep!

Oli. Nay; come, I prithee. Would thou’dst be rul’d by me!

Seb. Madam, I will.

Oli. O! say so, and so be!

[Exeunt.]

Scene II.—A Room in Olivia’s House.

Enter Maria and Clown; Malvolio in a dark chamber adjoining.

Mar. Nay, I prithee, put on this gown and this beard; make him believe thou art Sir Topas the curate: do it quickly; I’ll call Sir Toby the whilst.

[Exit. Malvolio.]

Clo. Well, I’ll put it on and I will dissemble myself in’t: and I would I were the first that ever dissembled in such a gown. I am not tall enough to become the function well, nor lean enough to be thought a good student; but to be said an honest man and a good housekeeper goes as fairly as to say a careful man and a great scholar. The competitors enter.

Enter Sir Toby Belch and Maria.

Sir To. God bless thee, Master parson.

Clo. Bonos dies, Sir Toby: for, as the old hermit of Prague, that never saw pen and ink, very wittily said to a niece of King Gorbusche, ‘That, that is, is;’ so I, being Master parson, am Master parson; for, what is ‘that,’ but ‘that,’ and ‘is,’ but ‘is?’

Sir To. To him, Sir Topas.

Clo. What ho! I say. Peace in this prison! Sir To. The knave counterfeit well; a good knave.

Mal. [Within.] Who calls there?

Clo. Sir Topas, the curate, who comes to visit Malvolio the lunatic.

Mal. Sir Topas, Sir Topas, good Sir Topas, go to my lady.

Clo. Out, hyperbolical fiend! how vexest thou this man! Talkest thou nothing but of ladies?

Sir To. Well said, Master Parson.

Mal. [Within.] Sir Topas, never was man thus wronged. Good Sir Topas, do not think I am mad: they have laid me here in hideous darkness.

Clo. Fie, thou dishonest Satan! I call thee by
the most modest terms; for I am one of those
gentle ones that will use the devil himself with
courtesy. Sayst thou that house is dark?
Mal. As hell, Sir Topas.
Clo. Why, it hath bay-windows transparent
as barricades, and the clerestories toward the
south-north are as lustrous as ebony; and yet
complainest thou of obstruction?
Mal. I am not mad, Sir Topas. I say to you,
this house is dark.
Clo. Madman, thou errest: I say, there is no
darkness but ignorance, in which thou art more
puzzled than the Egyptians in their fog.
Mal. I say this house is as dark as igno-
rance, though ignorance were as dark as hell;
and I say, there was never man thus abused.
I am no more mad than you are: make the trial
of it in any constant question.
Clo. What is the opinion of Pythagoras con-
cerning wild fowl?
Mal. That the soul of our granmand might
haply inhabit a bird.
Clo. What thinkest thou of his opinion?
Mal. I think nobly of the soul, and no way
approve his opinion.
Clo. Fare thee well: remain thou still in
darkness: thou shalt hold the opinion of Pytha-
goras ere I will allow of thy wits, and fear to
kill a woodcock, lest thou despossess the soul
of thy granmand. Fare thee well.
Mal. Sir Topas! Sir Topas!
Sir To. My most exquisite Sir Topas!
Mal. Nay, I am for all waters.
Mar. Thou mightest have done this without
thy beard and gown: he sees thee not.
Sir To. To him in thine own voice, and bring
me word how thou findest him: I would we were
well rid of this knavery. If he may be con-
veniently delivered, I would he were; for I am
now so far in offence with my niece that I can-
not pursue with any safety this sport to the up-
shot. Come by and by to my chamber.
[Exeunt Sir Toby and Maria.

Mal. Ay, good fool.
Clo. Alas, sir, how fell you beside your five
wits?
Mal. Fool, there was never man so notori-
ously abused: I am as well in my wits, fool, as
thou art.
Clo. But as well? then you are mad indeed,
if you be no better in your wits than a fool.
Mal. They have here propertied me; keep me
in darkness, send ministers to me, assise! and do
all they can to face me out of my wits.
Clo. Advise you what you say: the minister
is here. Malvolio, Malvolio, thy wits the heavens
restore! endeavour thyself to sleep, and leave
thy vain bibble-babble.
Mal. Sir Topas!
Clo. Maintain no words with him, good
fellow.—Who, I, sir? not I, sir. God be wi
you, good Sir Topas. Marry, amen. I will, sir,
I will.
Mal. Fool, fool, fool, I say!
Clo. Alas, sir, be patient. What say you, sir?
I am shent for speaking to you.
Mal. Good fool, help me to some light and
some paper: I tell thee I am as well in my wits
as any man in Illyria.
Clo. Well-a-day, that you were, sir!
Mal. By this hand, I am. Good fool, some
ink, paper, and light; and convey what I will
set down to my lady: it shall advantage thee
more than ever the bearing of letter did.
Clo. I will help you to't. But tell me true,
are you not mad indeed? or do you but counter-
feit?
Mal. Believe me, I am not: I tell thee
true.
Clo. Nay, I'll ne'er believe a madman till I
see his brains. I will fetch you light and paper
and ink.
Mal. Fool, I'll requite it in the highest
degree: I prithee, be gone.

Clo. I am gone, sir,
And anon, sir,
I'll be with you again
In a trice,
Like to the old Vice,
Your need to sustain;
Who with dagger of lath,
In his rage and his wrath,
Cries, Ah, ah! to the devil:
Like a mad lad,
Pare thy nails, dad;
Adieu, goodman drivel.
[Exit.

SCENE III.—OLIVIA'S GARDEN.

Enter SEBASTIAN.

Seb. This is the air; that is the glorious sun;
This pearl she gave me, I do feel't and see't;
Act IV, Sc. III. TWELFTH-NIGHT; OR, WHAT YOU WILL

And though 'tis wonder that enwraps me thus,
Yet 'tis not madness. Where's Antonio then?
I could not find him at the Elephant; 5
Yet there he was, and there I found this credit,
That he did range the town to seek me out.
His counsel now might do me golden service; 8
For though my soul disputes well with my sense
That this may be some error, but no madness,
Yet doth this accident and flood of fortune
So far exceed all instance, all discourse, 12
That I am ready to distrust mine eyes,
And wrangle with my reason that persuades me
To any other trust but that I am mad
Or else the lady's mad: yet, if 'twere so, 16
She could not sway her house, command her followers,
Take and give back affairs and their dispatch
With such a smooth, discreet, and stable bearing
As I perceive she does. There's something in 't
That is deceitful. But here the lady comes. 21

Enter OLIVIA and a Priest.

O. Blame not this haste of mine. If you mean well,
Now go with me and with this holy man
Into the chantry by; there, before him, 24
And underneath that consecrated roof,
Plight me the full assurance of your faith;
That my most jealous and too doubtful soul
May live at peace. He shall conceal it
Whiles you are willing it shall come to note,
What time we will our celebration keep
According to my birth. What do you say?
S. I'll follow this good man, and go with you;
And, having sworn truth, ever will be true.

O. Then lead the way, good father; and heavens so shine
That they may fairly note this act of mine!

Exeunt.

ACT V.

SCENE I.—The Street before OLIVIA's House.

Enter Clown and FABIAN.

F. Now, as thou lovest me, let me see his letter.
C. Good Master Fabian, grant me another request.
F. Anything.
C. Do not desire to see this letter.
F. This is, to give a dog, and, in recompense desire my dog again.

Enter DUKE, VIOLA, CURIO, and Attendants.

D. Belong you to the Lady Olivia, friends?
C. Ay, sir; we are some of her trappings.
D. I know thee well; how dost thou, my good fellow? 12
C. Truly, sir, the better for my foes and the worse for my friends.
D. Just the contrary; the better for thy friends.
C. No, sir, the worse.
D. How can that be?
C. Marry, sir, they praise me and make an ass of me; now my foes tell me plainly I am an ass: so that by my foes, sir, I profit in the knowledge of myself, and by my friends I am abused: so that, conclusions to be as kisses, if your four negatives make your two affirmatives, why then, the worse for my friends and the better for my foes. 26
D. Why, this is excellent.
C. By my troth, sir, no; though it please you to be one of my friends.
D. Thou shalt not be the worse for me: there's gold.
C. But that it would be double-dealing, sir,
I would you could make it another. 33
D. O, you give me ill counsel.
C. Put your grace in your pocket, sir, for this once, and let your flesh and blood obey it. 36
D. Well, I will be so much a sinner to be a double-dealer: there's another.
C. Primo, secundo, tertio, is a good play;
And the old saying is, 'the third pays for all';
the triplex, sir, is a good tripping measure;
or the bells of Saint Bennet, sir, may put you in mind; one, two, three. 43
D. You can fool no more money out of me at this throw: if you will let your lady know I am here to speak with her, and bring her along with you, it may awake my bounty further. 47
C. Marry, sir, lullaby to your bounty till I come again. I go, sir; but I would not have you to think that my desire of having is the sin of covetousness; but as you say, sir, let your bounty take a nap, I will awake it anon. 54
E. Here comes the man, sir, that did rescue me.

Enter ANTONIO and Officers.

D. That face of his I do remember well;
Yet when I saw it last, it was besmeared 56
As black as Vulcan in the smoke of war.
A babbling vessel was he captain of,
For shallow draught and hulk unprizable;
With which such scathful grapple did he make
With the most noble bottom of our fleet, 61
That very envy and the tongue of loss
Cried fame and honour on him. What's the matter?
F. Orsino, this is that Antonio 64
That took the Phoenix and her fraught from Candy;
And this is he that did the Tiger board,
When your young nephew Titus lost his leg.
Here in the streets, desperate of shame and state,
In private brabble did we apprehend him.

_Vio._ He did me kindness, sir, drew on my side;
But in conclusion put strange speech upon me:

I know not what 'twas but distraction.

_Duke._ Notable pirate! thou salt-water thief!
What foolish boldness brought thee to their mercies
Whom thou, in terms so bloody and so dear,
Hast made thing enemies?

_Ant._ Orsino, noble sir, be pleas'd that I shake off these names you give me:
antonio never yet was thief or pirate,
Though I confess, on base and ground enough,
Orsino's enemy. A witchcraft drew me hither:
That most ingratitude boy there by your side, sir!

From the rude sea's enraged and foamy mouth
Did I redeem; a wrack past hope he was:
His life I gave him, and did thereto add
My love, without retention or restraint,
All his in dedication; for his sake
Did I expose myself, pure for his love,
Into the danger of this adverse town;
Drew to defend him when he was beset:
Where being apprehended, his false cunning,
Not meaning to partake with me in danger,
Taught him to face me out of his acquaintance,
And grew a twenty years removed thing
While one would wink, denied me mine own purse,
Which I had recommended to his use
Not half an hour before.

_Vio._ How can this be?

_Duke._ When came he to this town?

_Ant._ To-day, my lord; and for three months before,—

No interim, not a minute's vacancy,—
Both day and night did we keep company.

_Enter OLIVIA and Attendants._

_Duke._ Here comes the countess: now heaven walks on earth!
But for thee, fellow; fellow, thy words are madness:
Three months this youth hath tended upon me;
But more of that anon. Take him aside.

_Oli._ What would my lord, but that he may not have,
Wherein Olivia may seem serviceable?
Cesario, you do not keep promise with me.

_Vio._ Madam!

_Duke._ Gracious Olivia.—

_Oli._ What do you say, Cesario? Good my lord,—

_Vio._ My lord would speak; my duty hushes me.

_Oli._ If it be sought to the old tune, my lord,
It is as fat and fulsome to mine ear
As howling after music.

_Duke._ Still so cruel?

_Oli._ Still so constant, lord.

_Duke._ What, to perverseness? you uncivil lady,

To whose ingrate and unsuspicious altars
My soul the faithfull'st offerings hath breath'd out
That e'er devotion tender'd! What shall I do?

_Oli._ Even what it please my lord, that shall become him.

_Duke._ Why should I not, had I the heart to do it,
Like to the Egyptian thief at point of death,
Kill what I love? a savage jealousy
That sometimes savours nobly. But hear me this:

Since you to non-regardance cast my faith,
And that I partly know the instrument
That screws me from my true place in your favour,
Live you, the marble-breasted tyrant still;

But this your minion, whom I know you love,
And whom, by heaven I swear, I tender dearly,
Him will I tear out of that cruel eye,
Where he sits crowned in his master's spite.

Come, boy, with me; my thoughts are ripe in mischief;
I'll sacrifice the lamb that I do love,
To spite a raven's heart within a dove. [Going.

_Vio._ And I, most jocund, apt, and willingly,
To do you rest, a thousand deaths would die.

_Oli._ Where goes Cesario?

_Vio._ After him I love
More than I love these eyes, more than my life,

More, by all mores, than e'er I shall love wife.
If I do feign, you witnesses above
Punish my life for tainting of my love!

_Oli._ Ah me, detected! how am I beguil'd!

_Vio._ Who does beguil you? who does do you wrong?

_Oli._ Hast thou forgot thyself? Is it so long?

Call forth the holy father. [Exit an Attendant.


Duke. Husband?

Oli. Ay, husband: can he that deny? 148

Duke. Her husband, sirrah?

Vio. No, my lord, not I.

Oli. Alas! it is the baseness of thy fear
That makes thee strange thy propriety.
Fear not, Cesario; take thy fortunes up; 152
Be that thou know'st thou art, and then thou art
As great as that thou fear'st.

Enter Priest.

O, welcome, father!

Father, I charge thee, by thy reverence,
Here to unfold,—though lately we intended 156
To keep in darkness what occasion now
Reveals before 'tis ripe,—what thou dost know
Hath newly pass'd between this youth and me.

Priest. A contract of eternal bond of love, 160
Confirm'd by mutual joinder of your hands,
Attested by the holy close of lips,
Strengthen'd by interchanging of your rings;
And all the ceremony of this compact 164
Seal'd in my function, by my testimony:
Since when, my watch hath told me, toward
my grave
I have travell'd but two hours.

Duke. O, thou dissembling cub! what wilt thou be 168

When time hath sow'd a grizzle on thy face?
Or will not else thy craft so quickly grow
Thine own trip shall be thine overthrow?
Farewell, and take her; but direct thy feet 172
Where thou and I henceforth may never meet.

Vio. My lord, I do protest,—

Oli. O! do not swear:
Hold little faith, though thou hast too much fear.

Enter SIR ANDREW AGUECHEEK, with his head broken.

Sir And. For the love of God, a surgeon! send one presently to Sir Toby. 177

Oli. What's the matter?

Sir And. He has broke my head across, and has given Sir Toby a bloody coxcomb too. For the love of God, your help! I had rather than forty pound I were at home. 182

Oli. Who has done this, Sir Andrew?

Sir And. The count's gentleman, one Cesario: we took him for a coward, but he's the very devil incendant.

Duke. My gentleman, Cesario?
Than these two creatures. Which is Sebastian?

Oli. Most wonderful!

Seb. Do I stand there? I never had a brother;

Nor can there be that deity in my nature,
Of here and every where. I had a sister,
Whom the blind waves and surges have devour'd.

Of charity, what kin are you to me? What countryman? what name? what parentage?

Vio. Of Messaline: Sebastian was my father;

Such a Sebastian was my brother too,
So went he suited to his watery tomb.

If spirits can assume both form and suit
You come to fright us.

Seb. A spirit I am indeed;

But am in that dimension grossly clad
Which from the womb I did participate.

Were you a woman, as the rest goes even,
I should my tears let fall upon your cheek,
And say, 'Thrice welcome, drowned Viola!'

Vio. My father had a mole upon his brow.

Seb. And so had mine.

Vio. And died that day when Viola from her birth

Had number'd thirteen years.

Seb. Of that record is lively in my soul.

He finished indeed his mortal act
That day that made my sister thirteen years.

Vio. If nothing lets to make us happy both

But this my masculine usurp'd attire,

Do not embrace me till each circumstance

Of place, time, fortune, do cohere and jump

That I am Viola: which to confirm,

I'll bring you to a captain in this town,

Where lie my maiden weeds: by whose gentle help

I was preserv'd to serve this noble count.

All the occurrence of my fortune since

Hath been between this lady and this lord.

Seb. [To OLIVIA.] So comes it, lady, you have been mistook:

But nature to her bias drew in that.

You would have been contracted to a maid;

Nor are you therein, by my life, deceiv'd.

You are betroth'd both to a maid and man.

Duke. Be not amaz'd; right noble is his blood.

If this be so, as yet the glass seems true,

I shall have share in this most happy wrack.

[To VIOLA.] Boy, thou hast said to me a thousand times

Thou never shouldst love woman like to me.

Vio. And all those sayings will I over-swear,

And all those swearings keep as true in soul

As doth that orb'd continent the fire

That severs day from night.

Duke. Give me thy hand;

And let me see thee in thy woman's weeds.

Vio. The captain that did bring me first on shore

Hath my maid's garments: he upon some action

Is now in durance at Malvolio's suit,

A gentleman and follower of my lady's.

Oli. He shall enlarge him. Fetch Malvolio hither.

And yet, alas, now I remember me,

They say, poor gentleman, he's much distract.

A most extracting frenzy of mine own

From my remembrance clearly banish'd his
to think me as well a sister as a wife,

Re-enter Clown with a letter, and FABIAN.

How does he, sirrah?

Clo. Truly, madam, he holds Delzoebub at the stave's end as well as a man in his case may do.

He has here writ a letter to you: I should have given it to you to-day morning; but as a madman's epistles are no gospels, so it skills not much when they are delivered.

Oli. Open it, and read it.

Clo. Look then to be well edified, when the fool delivers the madman.

By the Lord, madam,—

Oli. How now! art thou mad?

Clo. No, madam, I do but read madness: an your ladyship will have it as it ought to be, you must allow vox.

Oli. Prithee, read it! thy right wits.

Clo. So I do, madonna; but to read his right wits is to read thus: therefore perpend, my princes, and give ear.

Oli. [To FABIAN.] Read it you, sirrah.

Fab. By the Lord, madam, you wrong me, and the world shall know it: though you have put me into darkness, and given your drunken cousin rule over me, yet have I the benefit of my senses as well as your ladyship.

I have your own letter that induced me to the semblance I put on; with the which I doubt not but to do myself much right, or you much shame.

Think of me as you please. I leave my dud a little unhought of, and speak out of my injury.

The madly-used MALVOLIO.

Oli. Did he write this?

Clo. Ay, madam.

Duke. This savours not much of distraction.

Oli. See him deliver'd, Fabian; bring him hither.

[Exit FABIAN.

My lord, so please you, these things further thought on.

To think me as well a sister as a wife,
One day shall crown the alliance on't, so please you,  
Here at my house and at my proper cost.  
Duke. Madam, I am most apt to embrace 
your offer.  
[To VIOLA.] Your master quits you; and, for 
your service done him, 
So much against the mettle of your sex, 
So far beneath your soft and tender breeding; 
And since you call'd me master for so long,  
Here is my hand: you shall from this time be 
Your master's mistress. 

Oli. A sister! you are she.

Re-enter FABIAN, with MALVOLIO.

Duke. Is this the madman? 

Oli. Ay, my lord, this same. 

How now, Malvolio! 

Mal. Madam, you have done me wrong, 
Notorious wrong. 


Mal. Lady, you have. Pray you peruse that 
letter.

You must not now deny it is your hand: 
Write from it, if you can, in hand or phrase, 
Or say 'tis not your seal nor your invention: 
You can say none of this. Well, grant it then, 
And tell me, in the modesty of honour, 
Why you have given me such clear lights of 
favour, 
Bade me come smiling and cross-garter'd to you, 
To put on yellow stockings, and to frown 
Upon Sir Toby and the lighter people; 
And, acting this in an obedient hope, 
Why have you suffer'd me to be imprison'd, 
Kept in a dark house, visited by the priest, 
And made the most notorious gosh and gull 
That e'er invention play'd on? tell me why. 

Oli. Alas! Malvolio, this is not my writing, 
Though, I confess, much like the character; 
But, out of question, 'tis Maria's hand: 
And now I do bethink me, it was she  
First told me thou wast mad; then cam'st in 
smiling, 
And in such forms which here were presuppos'd 
Upon thee in the letter. Prithee, be content: 
This practice hath most shrewdly pass'd upon 
thee; 
But when we know the grounds and authors of 
it, 
Thou shalt be both the plaintiff and the judge 
Of thine own cause.

Fab. Good madam, hear me speak,  
And let no quarrel nor no brawl to come  
Taint the condition of this present hour, 
Which I have wonder'd at. In hope it shall 
not,
THE WINTER'S TALE

DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

LEONTES, King of Sicilia.
MAMILLIUS, young Prince of Sicilia.
CAMILLO,
ANTIGONUS, Lords of Sicilia.
CLEOMENES,
DION,
POLIXENES, King of Bohemia.
FLORIZEL, his Son.
ARCHIDAMUS, a Lord of Bohemia.
A Mariner.
A Gaoler.
An old Shepherd, reputed Father of Perdita.
Clown, his Son.
Servant to the old Shepherd.

AUTOLYCUS, a Rogue.
HERMIONE, Queen to Leontes.
PERDITA, Daughter to Leontes and Hermione.
PAULINA, Wife to Antigonus.
EMILIA, a Lady, attending the Queen.
Other Ladies,
MOPSIA, Shepherdesses.
DORCAS, Shepherdesses.
Sicilian Lords and Ladies, Attendants, Guards, Satyrs, Shepherds, Shepherdesses, &c.

Time, as Chorus.

SCENE.—Sometimes in Sicilia, sometimes in Bohemia.

ACT I.

SCENE I.—Sicilia. An Antechamber in Leontes’ Palace.

Enter CAMILLO and ARCHIDAMUS.

Arch. If you shall chance, Camillo, to visit Bohemia, on the like occasion whereon my services are now on foot, you shall see, as I have said, great difference betwixt our Bohemia and your Sicilia.

Cam. I think, this coming summer, the King of Sicilia means to pay Bohemia the visitation which he justly owes him.

Arch. Wherein our entertainment shall shame us we will be justified in our loves: for, indeed,—

Cam. Beseech you,—

Arch. Verily, I speak it in the freedom of my knowledge: we cannot with such magnificence—im so rare— I know not what to say. We will give you sleepy drinks, that your senses, unintelligent of our insufficiency, may, though they cannot praise us, as little accuse us.

Cam. You pay a great deal too dear for what’s given freely.

Arch. Believe me, I speak as my understanding instructs me, and as mine honesty puts it to utterance.

Cam. Sicilia cannot show himself over-kind to Bohemia. They were trained together in their childhoods; and there rooted betwixt them then such an affection which cannot choose but branch now. Since their more ma-

ture dignities and royal necessities made separation of their society, their encounters, though not personal, have been royally attended with interchange of gifts, letters, loving embassies; that they have seemed to be together, though absent, shook hands, as over a vast, and embraced, as it were, from the ends of opposed winds. The heavens continue their loves.

Arch. I think there is not in the world either malice or matter to alter it. You have an unspeakable comfort of your young Prince Mamilius: it is a gentleman of the greatest promise that ever came into my note.

Cam. I very well agree with you in the hopes of him. It is a gallant child; one that indeed physics the subject, makes old hearts fresh; they that went on crutches ere he was born desire yet their life to see him a man.

Arch. Would they else be content to die?

Cam. Yes; if there were no other excuse why they should desire to live.

Arch. If the king had no son, they would desire to live on crutches till he had one.

[Exeunt.

SCENE II.—The Same. A Room of State in the Palace.

Enter LEONTES, POLIXENES, HERMIONE, MAMILLIUS, CAMILLO, and Attendants.

Pol. Nine changes of the watery star have been
THE WINTER'S TALE

Act I, Sc. II.

The shepherd's note since we have left our throne
Without a burden: time as long again
Would be fill'd up, my brother, with our thanks;
And yet we should for perpetuity 5
Go hence in debt: and therefore, like a cipher,
Yet standing in rich place, I multiply
With one 'We thank you' many thousands more
That go before it.

Leon. Stay your thanks awhile, 9
And pay them when you part.

Pol. Sir, that's to-morrow.
I am question'd by my fears, of what may chance
Or breed upon our absence; that may blow 12
No snapping winds at home, to make us say,
'This is put forth too truly!' Besides, I have stay'd
To tire your royalty.

Leon. We are tougher, brother,
Than you can put us to't.

Pol. No longer stay. 16
Leon. One seven-night longer.
Pol. Very sooth, to-morrow.
Leon. We'll part the time between's then;
and in that
I'll no gainsaying.

Pol. Press me not, beseech you, so.
There is no tongue that moves, none, none i' the world, 20
So soon as yours could win me: so it should now,
Were there necessity in your request, although 'twere needful I denied it. My affairs
Do even drag me homeward; which to hinder 24
Were in your love a whip to me; my stay
To you a charge and trouble: to save both,
Farewell, our brother.

Leon. Tongue-tied, our queen? speak you.

Her. I had thought, sir, to have held my peace until 28
You had drawn oaths from him: not to stay.
You, sir;
Charge him too coldly: tell him, you are sure
All in Bohemia's well: this satisfaction
The by-gone day proclaim'd: say this to him, 32
He's beat from his best ward.

Leon. Well said, Hermione.

Her. To tell he longs to see his son were strong:
But let him say so then, and let him go;
But let him swear so, and he shall not stay, 36
We'll thwack him hence with distaffs.

[To POLIXENES.] Yet of your royal presence I'll adventure
The borrow of a week. When at Bohemia
You take my lord, I'll give him my commission
To let him there a month behind the gait 41
Prefix'd for's parting: yet, good deed, Leonides,
I love thee not a jar o' the clock behind
What lady she her lord. You'll stay?

Pol. No, madam. 44

Her. Nay, but you will?

Pol. I may not, verily.

Her. Verily!
You put me off with limber vows; but I,
Though you would seek to unsphere the stars
With oaths, 48
Should yet say, 'Sir, no going.' Verily,
You shall not go: a lady's 'verily' 's
As potent as a lord's. Will you go yet?
Force me to keep you as a prisoner,
Not like a guest; so you shall pay your fees
When you depart, and save your thanks. How say you?

My prisoner, or my guest? by your dread
'verily,'
One of them you shall be.

Pol. Your guest, then, madam: 56
To be your prisoner should import offending;
Which is for me less easy to commit
Than you to punish.

Her. Not your gaoler then,
But your kind hostess. Come, I'll question you
Of my lord's tricks and yours when you were boys:

You were pretty lordings then.

Pol. We were, fair queen,
Two lads that thought there was no more behind
But such a day to-morrow as to-day,
And to be boy eternal.

Her. Was not my lord the verier wag o' the two?

Pol. We were as twinn'd lambs that did frisk
i' the sun,
And bleat the one at the other: what we chang'd
Was innocence for innocence; we knew not
The doctrine of ill-doing, no nor dream'd
That any did. Had we pursu'd that life,
And our weak spirits ne'er been higher rear'd 72
With stronger blood, we should have answer'd heaven
Boldly, 'not guilty;' the imposition clear'd
Hereditary ours.

Her. By this we gather
You have tripp'd since.

Pol. O! my most sacred lady, 76
Temptations have since then been born to's; for
In those unbridg'd days was my wife a girl;
Your precious self had then not cross'd the eyes
Of my young playfellow.

Her. Grace to boot! 80
Of this make no conclusion, lest you say
Your queen and I are devils; yet, go on:
The offences we have made you do we'll answer;
They say it is a copy out of mine. Come, captain,
We must be neat; not neat, but cleanly, captain:
And yet the steer, the heifer, and the calf,
Are all call'd neat. Still virginalling
Upon his palm! How now, you wanton calf!
Art thou my calf?

Mam. Yes, if you will, my lord.

Leon. Thou want'st a rough pash and the
shoots that I have,
To be full like me: yet they say we are
Almost as like as eggs; women say so,
That will say anything: but were they false
As o'er-dy'd blacks, as wind, as waters, false
As dice are to be wish'd by one that fixes
No bourn 'twixt his and mine, yet were it true
To say this boy were like me. Come, sir page,
Look on me with your winking eye: sweet villain!
Most dear'st! my collop! Can thy dam?—may't
be?—

Affection! thy intention stabs the centre:
Thou dost make possible things not so held,
Communicat'st with dreams;—how can this be?—
With what's unreal thou co-active art,
And fellow'st nothing: then, 'tis very credent
Thou mayst co-join with something; and thou
doest,
And that beyond commission, and I find it,
And that to the infection of my brains
And hardening of my brows.

Pol. What means Sicilia?

Her. He something seems unsettled.

Pol. How, my lord! What cheer? how is't with you, best brother?

Her. You look
As if you held a brow of much distraction:
Are you mov'd, my lord?

Leon. No, in good earnest.

How sometimes nature will betray its folly,
Its tenderness, and make itself a pastime
To harder bosoms! Looking on the lines
Of my boy's face, methoughts I did recoil
Twenty-three years, and saw myself unbreath'd,
In my green velvet coat, my dagger muzzled,
Lest it should bite its master, and so prove,
As ornaments oft do, too dangerous:
How like, methought, I then was to this kernel,
This squaw, this gentleman. Mine honest
friend,

Will you take eggs for money?

Mam. No, my lord, I'll fight.

Leon. You will? why, happy man be his doll!

My brother,
Are you so fond of your young prince as we?
Do seem to be of ours?

Pol. If at home, sir,
He's all my exercise, my mirth, my matter,
Now my sworn friend and then mine enemy; 168
My parasite, my soldier, statesman, all:
He makes a July's day short as December,
And with his varying childishness in me
Thoughts that would thicken my blood.

Leon. So stands this squire
Offic'd with me. We two will walk, my lord, 172
And leave you to your graver steps. Hermione,
How thou lov'st us, shew in our brother's wel-
come:
Let what is dear in Sicily be cheap:
Next to thyself and my young rover, he's 176
Apparent to my heart.

Her. If you would seek us,
We are yours i' the garden: shall's attend you
there?
Leon. To your own bents dispose you: you'll
be found,
Be you beneath the sky.—[Aside.] I am angling
now,
Though you perceive me not how I give line.
Go to, go to!
How she holds up the neb, the bill to him!
And arms her with the boldness of a wife 184
To her allowing husband!

[Exeunt Polixenes, Hermione, and
Attendants.

Gone already!

Inch-thick, knee-deep, o'er head and ears a
fork'd one!
Go play, boy, play; thy mother plays, and I
Play too, but so disgrace'd a part, whose issue 188
Will hiss me to my grave: contempt and clau-
mor
Will be my knell. Go play, boy, play. There
have been,
Or I am much deceiv'd, cuckold's are now;
And many a man there is even at this present,
Now, while I speak this, holds his wife by the arm,
That little thinks she has been slau'd in's ab-

And his pond fish'd by his next neighbour, by
Sir Smile, his neighbour: nay, there's comfort
in't, 196

While other men have gates, and those gates
open'd,
As mine, against their will. Should all despair
That have revolted wives the tenth of mankind
Would hang themselves. Physic for't there is
none;

It is a bawdy planet, that will strike
Where 'tis predominant; and 'tis powerful,
think it,
From east, west, north, and south: be it con-
cluded,
No barricado for a belly: know't;
It will let in and out the enemy

With bag and baggage. Many a thousand on's
Have the disease, and feel 't not. How now, boy!
Mam. I am like you, they say.
Leon. Why, that's some comfort. 208
What! Camillo there?
Cam. Ay, my good lord.
Leon. Go play, Mamilius; thou'rt an honest
man.

[Exit MAMILLIUS.

Camillo, this great sir will yet stay longer. 212
Cam. You had much ado to make his anchor
hold:
When you cast out, it still came home.
Leon. Didst note it?
Cam. He would not stay at your petitions;
made
His business more material.
Leon. Didst perceive it? 216

[Aside.] They're here with me already, whisper-
ing, rounding
'Sicilia is a so forth.' 'Tis far gone,
When I shall gust it last. How came't, Camillo,
That he did stay?

Cam. At the good queen's entreaty. 220
Leon. At the queen's, be't: 'good' should be
pertinent;
But so it is, it is not. Was this taken
By any understanding pate but thine?
For thy conceit is soaking; will draw in 224
More than the common blocks: not noted, is't,
But of the finer natures? by some several
Of head-piece extraordinary? lower messes
Perchance are to this business purblind? say.

Cam. Business, my lord! I think most under-
stand
Bohemia stays here longer.

Leon. Ha!
Cam. Stays here longer.
Leon. Ay, but why?
Cam. To satisfy your highness and the en-
treaties

Of our most gracious mistress.

Leon. Satisfy!
The entreaties of your mistress! satisfy!

Let that suffice. I have trusted thee, Camillo,
With all the nearest things to my heart, as well
My chamber-councils, wherein, priest-like, thou
Hast cleans'd my bosom: I from thee departed
Thy penitent reform'd; but we have been
Deceiv'd in thy integrity, deceiv'd 240
In that which seems so.

Cam. Be it forbid, my lord!
Leon. To bide upon 't, thou art not honest; or,
If thou inclin'st that way, thou art a coward,
Which boxes honesty behind, restraining 244
From course requir'd; or else thou must be

A servant grafted in my serious trust,
And therein negligent; or else a fool
That seest a game play’d home, the rich stake
drawn,
And tak’est it all for jest.

Cam. My gracious lord,
I may be negligent, foolish, and fearful;
In every one of these no man is free,
But that his negligence, his folly, fear,
Among the infinite doings of the world,
Sometime puts forth. In your affairs, my lord,
If ever I were wilful-negligent,
It was my folly; if industriously
I play’d the fool, it was my negligence,
Not weighing well the end; if ever fearful
To do a thing, where I the issue doubted,
Whereof the execution did cry out
Against the non-performance, ’twas a fear
Which oft infects the wisest; these, my lord,
Are such allow’d intiminities that honesty
Is never-free of: but, beseech your Grace,
Be plainer with me; let me know my trespass
By its own visage; if I then deny it,
’Tis none of mine.

Leon. Ha’ not you seen, Camillo,—
But that’s past doubt; you have, or your eyeglass
Is thicker than a cuckold’s horn,—or heard,
For to a vision so apparent rumour
Cannot be mute,—or thought,—for cogitation
Resides not in that heart which does not think,
My wife is slippery? If thou wilt confess,—
Or else be impudently negative,
To have nor eyes, nor ears, nor thought,—then
say
My wife’s a hobby-horse; deserves a name
As rank as any flax-wench that puts to
Before her troth-plight: say ’t and justify’t.

Cam. I would not be a stander-by, to hear
My sovereign mistress clouded so, without
My present vengeance taken: ’shrew my heart,
You never spoke what did become you less
Than this; which to reatherate were sin
As deep as that, though true.

Leon. Is whispering nothing? Is leaning cheek to cheek? Is meeting noses? Kissing with inside lip? stopping the career Of laughter with a sigh?—a note infallible Of breaking honesty,—horsing foot on foot? Skulking in corners? wishing clocks more swift? Hours, minutes? noon, midnight? and all eyes Blind with the pin and web but theirs, theirs only,
That would unseen be wicked? is this nothing? Why, then the world and all that’s in’t is nothing;
The covering sky is nothing; Bohemia nothing;
My wife is nothing; nor nothing have these
nothings,
If this be nothing.

Cam. Good my lord, be cur’d Of this diseas’d opinion, and betimes;
For ’tis most dangerous.

Leon. Say it be, ’tis true.

Cam. No, no, my lord.

Leon. It is; you lie, you lie;
I say thou liest, Camillo, and I hate thee; Pronounce thee a gross lout, a mindless slave,
Or else a hovering temporizer, that
Canst with thine eyes at once see good and evil,
Inclin’in to them both: were my wife’s liver Infected as her life, she would not live
The running of one glass.

Cam. Who does infect her?

Leon. Why, he that wears her like her medal, hanging
About his neck, Bohemia: who, if I
Had servants true about me, that bare eyes
To see alike mine honour as their profits,
Their own particular thrifts, they would do that
Which should undo more doing: ay, and thou,
His cup-bearer,—whom I from meaner form Have bench’d and rear’d to worship, who mayst
see
Plainly, as heaven sees earth, and earth sees
heaven,
How I am galled,—mightst bespice a cup,
To give mine enemy a lasting wink;
Which draught to me were cordial.

Cam. Sir, my lord,
I could do this, and that with no rash potion,
But with a lingering dram that should not work
Maliciously like poison: but I cannot
Believe this crack to be in my dread mistress,
So sovereignly being honourable:
I have lov’d thee,—

Leon. Make that thy question, and go rot!
Dost think I am so muddy, so unsettled,
To appoint myself in this vexation; sully
The purity and whiteness of my sheets,
Which to preserve is sleep; which being spotted
Is goads, thorns, nettles, tails of wasps?
Give scandal to the blood o’ the prince my son,
Who I do think is mine, and love as mine,
Without ripe moving to’t? Would I do this?
Could man so b ench?
Even so as I mine own course have set down:
I'll give no blemish to her honour, none. 341

Cam. My lord,
Go then; and with a countenance as clear
As friendship wears at feasts, keep with Bohemia,
And with your queen. I am his cupbearer; 345
If from me he have wholesome beverage,
Account me not your servant.

Leon. This is all:
Do't, and thou hast the one half of my heart;
Do't not, thou split'st thine own.

Cam. I'll do't, my lord. 349

Leon. I will seem friendly, as thou hast advis'd me.

[Exit.

Cam. O miserable lady! But, for me,
What case stand I in? I must be the poisoner
Of good Polixenes; and my ground to do't 353
Is the obedience to a master; one
Who, in rebellion with himself will have
All that are his so too. To do this deed 356
Promotion follows. If I could find example
Of thousands that had struck anointed kings,
And flourish'd after, I'd not do't; but since
Nor brass nor stone nor parchment bears not
one,
Let villany itself forswear't. I must
Forsake the court: to do't, or no, is certain
To me a break-neck. Happy star reign now!
Here comes Bohemia.

Re-enter Polixenes.

Pol. This is strange: methinks 364
My favour here begins to warp. Not speak?—
Good day, Camillo.

Cam. Hail, most royal sir!

Pol. What is the news 't' the court?

Cam. None rare, my lord.

Pol. The king hath on him such a countenance
As he had lost some province and a region
Lov'd as he loves himself: even now I met him
With customary compliment, when he,
Waiting his eyes to the contrary, and falling 372
A lip of much contempt, speeds from me and
So leaves me to consider what is breeding
That changes thus his manners.

Cam. I dare not know, my lord. 376

Pol. How! dare not! do not! Do you know,
and dare not
Be intelligent to me? 'Tis thereabouts:
For, to yourself, what you do know, you must,
And cannot say you dare not. Good Camillo,
Your chang'd complexion are to me a mirror
Which shows me mine chang'd too; for I must be
A party in this alteration, finding
Myself thus alter'd with't.

Cam. There is a sickness 384
Which puts some of us in distemper; but
I cannot name the disease, and it is caught
Of you that yet are well.

Pol. How! caught of me?
Make me not sighted like the basilisk: 388
I have look'd on thousands, who have sped the better
By my regard, but kill'd none so. Camillo,—
As you are certainly a gentleman, thereto
Clerk-like experienc'd, which no less adorns 392
Our gentry than our parents' noble names,
In whose success we are gentle,—I beseech you,
If you know aught which does behave my knowledge
Thereof to be inform'd, imprison it not 396
In ignorant concealment.

Cam. I may not answer.

Pol. A sickness caught of me, and yet I well!
I must be answer'd. Dost thou hear, Camillo;
I conjure thee, by all the parts of man: 400
Which honour does acknowledge,—whereof the least
Is not this suit of mine,—that thou declare
What incidency thou dost guess of harm
Is creeping toward me; how far off, how near;
Which way to be prevented if to be; 405
If not, how best to bear it.

Cam. Sir, I will tell you;
Since I am charg'd in honour and by him
That I think honourable. Therefore mark my counsel,

Pol. Which must be even as swiftly follow'd as
I mean to utter it, or both yourself and me
Cry 'lost,' and so good night!

Pol. On, good Camillo.

Cam. I am appointed him to murder you. 412

Pol. By whom, Camillo?

Cam. By the king.

Pol. For what?

Cam. He thinks, nay, with all confidence he swears,
As he had seen't or been an instrument
To vice you to, that you have touch'd his queen
Forbiddingly.

Pol. O, then my best blood turn 417
To an infected jelly, and my name
Be yok'd with his that did betray the Best!
Turn then my freshest reputation to 420
A savour, that may strike the dullest nostril!
Where I arrive; and my approach be shun'd,
Nay, hated too, worse than the great't infection
That e'er was heard or read!

Cam. Swear his thought over
By each particular star in heaven and
By all their influences, you may as well
THE WINTER’S TALE

ACT II, SC. I.

Forbid the sea for to obey the moon
As or by oath remove or counsel shake
The fabric of his folly, whose foundation
Is pil’d upon his faith, and will continue
The standing of his body.
Pol. How should this grow?
Cam. I know not; but I am sure ’tis safer to
Avoid what’s grown than question how ’tis born.
If therefore you dare trust my honesty,
That sets enclosed in this trunk, which you
Shall bear along impaun’d, away to-night! Your followers I will whisper to the business,
And will by twos and threes at several posterns
Clear them o’ the city. For myself, I’ll put
My fortunes to your service, which are here
By this discovery lost. Be not uncertain;
For, by the honour of my parents, I
Have uttered truth, which, if you seek to prove,
I dare not stand by; nor shall you be safer
Than one condem’d by the king’s own mouth, thereon
His execution sworn.
Pol. I do believe thee;
I saw his heart in’s face. Give me thy hand:
Be pilot to me and thy places shall
Still neighbour mine. My ships are ready and
My people did expect my hence departure
Two days ago. This jealousy
Is for a precious creature: as she’s rare
Must it be great, and, as his person’s mighty
Must it be violent, and, as he does conceive
He is dishonour’d by a man which ever
Profess’d to him, why, his revenge must
In that be made more bitter. Fear o’ershades me:

Good expedition be my friend, and comfort
The gracious queen, part of his theme, but nothing
Of his ill-ta’en suspicion! Come, Camillo,
I will respect thee as a father if
Thou bear’st my life off hence: let us avoid.
Cam. It is in mine authority to command
The keys of all the posterns: please your highness
To take the urgent hour. Come, sir, away!

ACT II.

SCENE I.—Sicilia. A Room in the Palace.

Enter Hermione, Mamillius, and Ladies.

Her. Take the boy to you: he so troubles me,
’Tis past enduring.
First Lady. Come, my gracious lord,
Shall I be your playfellow?
Mam. No, I’ll none of you.
First Lady. Why, my sweet lord?

Mam. You’ll kiss me hard and speak to me
as if
I were a baby still. I love you better.
Sec. Lady. And why so, my lord?
Mam. Not for because
Your brows are blacker; yet black brows, they say,
Become some women best, so that there be not
Too much hair there, but in a semicircle,
Or a half-moon made with a pen.
Sec. Lady. Who taught you this?
Mam. I learn’d it out of women’s faces.
Pray now,
What colour are your eyebrows?
First Lady. Blue, my lord.
Mam. Nay, that’s a mock: I have seen a
lady’s nose
That has been blue, but not her eyebrows.
Sec. Lady. Hark ye;
The queen your mother rounds space: we shall
Present our services to a fine new prince
One of these days; and then you’d wanton with us,
If we would have you.
First Lady. She is spread of late
Into a goodly bulk: good time encounter her!
Her. What wisdom stirs amongst you? Come sir, now
And tell’s a tale.

Mam. Merry or sad shall’t be?
Her. As merry as you will.
Mam. A sad tale’s best for winter.
I have one of sprites and goblins.

Her. Let’s have that, good sir.
Come on, sit down: come on, and do your best
To fright me with your sprites; you’re powerful
At it.
Mam. There was a man,—
Her. Nay, come, sit down; then on.
Mam Dwelt by a churchyard. I will tell it softly;
Yond crickets shall not hear it.
Her. Come on then,
And give’t me in mine ear.

Enter Leontes, Antigonus, Lords, and Others.

Leon. Was he met there? his train? Camillo
with him?
First Lord. Behind the tuft of pines I met
them: never
Saw I men scour so on their way: I ey’d them
Even to their ships
Leon. How blest am I
In my just censure, in my true opinion!
Alack, for lesser knowledge! How accur’d
In being so blest! There may be in the cup
THE WINTER'S TALE

A spider steep'd, and one may drink, depart,
And yet partake no venom, for his knowledge
Is not infected; but if one present
The abhor'd ingredient to his eye, make known
How he hath drunk, he cracks his gorge, his sides,
With violent hefts. I have drunk, and seen the spider.

Camillo was his help in this, his pandar:
There is a plot against my life, my crown;
All's true that is mistrusted: that false villain
Whom I employ'd was pre-employ'd by him: 48
He has discover'd my design, and I
Remain a pinch'd thing; yea, a very trick
For them to play at will. How came the posterns
So easily open?

First Lord. By his great authority; 52
Which often hath no less prevail'd than so
On your command.

Leon. I know 'tis well.
[To Hermione.] Give me the boy: I am glad
you did not nurse him:
Though he does bear some signs of me, yet you
Have too much blood in him.

Her. What is this? sport?
Leon. Bear the boy hence; he shall not come
about her;
Away with him!—[Exit Mamilius, attended.]
and let her sport herself
With that she's big with; for 'tis Polixenes
Has made thee swell thus.

Her. But I'd say he had not,
And I'll be sworn you would believe my saying,
Howe'er you lean to the Nayward.

Leon. You, my lords,
Look on her, mark her well; but be about
To say, 'she is a goodly lady,' and
The justice of your hearts will thereto add
'Tis pity she's not honest, honourable.'
Praise her but for this her without-door form,—
Which, on my faith deserves high speech,—and straight
The shrug, the hum or ha, these petty brands
That calumny doth use,—O, I am out!—
That mercy does, for calumny will sear
Virtue itself: these shrugs, these hums and ha's,
When you have said 'she's goodly,' come between,
Ere you can say 'she's honest.' But be't known,
From him that has most cause to grieve it should be,
She's an adulteress.

Her. Should a villain say so,
The most replenish'd villain in the world,
He were as much more villain: you, my lord,
Do but mistake.

Leon. You have mistook, my lady, 80
Polixenes for Leontes. O thou thing!
Which I'll not call a creature of thy place,
Lest barbarism, making me the precedent,
Should a like language use to all degrees,
And mannerly distinction leave out
Betwixt the prince and beggar: I have said
She's an adulteress; I have said with whom:
More, she's a traitor, and Camillo is
A federary with her, and one that knows
What she should shame to know herself
But with her most vile principal, that she's
A bed-swerver, even as bad as those
That vulgar give bold'st titles; ay, and privy
To this their late escape.

Her. No, by my life,
Privy to none of this. How will this grieve you
When you shall come to clearer knowledge that
You thus have publish'd me! Gentle my lord, 97
You scarce can right me throughly then to say
You did mistake.

Leon. No; if I mistake
In those foundations which I build upon,
The centre is not big enough to bear
A schoolboy's top. Away with her to prison!
He who shall speak for her is afar off guilty
But that he speaks.

Her. There's some ill planet reigns: 104
I must be patient till the heavens look
With an aspect more favourable. Good my lords,
I am not prone to weeping, as our sex
Commonly are; the want of which vain dew
Perchance shall dry your pities; but I have
That honourable grief lodg'd here which burns
Worse than tears drown. Beseech you all, my lords,
With thoughts so qualified as your charities
Shall best instruct you, measure me; and so
The king's will be perform'd!

Leon. [To the Guards.] Shall I be heard?
Her. Who is 't that goes with me? Beseech
your highness,
My women may be with me; for you see
My plight requires it. Do not weep, good fools;
There is no cause: when you shall know your
mistress
Has deserve'd prison, than abound in tears
As I come out: this action I now go on
Is for my better grace. Adieu, my lord:
I never wish'd to see you sorry; now
I trust I shall. My women, come; you have
leave.

Leon. Go, do our bidding: hence!

[Execut Queen guarded, and Ladies.

First Lord. Beseech your highness call the queen again.

Ant. Be certain what you do, sir, lest your justice
Prove violence: in the which three great ones
suffer,
Yourself, your queen, your son.

First Lord. For her, my lord, 128
I dare my life lay down, and will do't, sir,
Please you to accept it,—that the queen is spot-
less
I' the eyes of heaven and to you: I mean,
In this which you accuse her.

Ant. If it prove 132
She's otherwise, I'll keep my stables where
I lodge my wife; I'll go in couples with her;
Than when I feel and see her no further trust
her;
For every inch of woman in the world, 136
Ay, every dram of woman's flesh is false, If she be.

Leon. Hold your peace!

First Lord. Good my lord,— 140
Ant. It is for you we speak, not for ourselves.
You are abus'd, and by some putter-on
That will be damn'd for't; would I knew the
villain,
I would land-damn him. Be she honour-flaw'd,—
I have three daughters; the eldest is eleven,
The second and the third, nine and some five; 144
If this prove true, they'll pay for't: by mine
honour,
I'll geld them all; fourteen they shall not see,
To bring false generations: they are co-heirs;
And I had rather gibl myself than they
Should not produce fair issue.

Leon. Cease! no more.
You smell this business with a sense as cold
As is a dead man's nose; but I do see 't and feel 't,
As you feel doing thus, and see withal 152
The instruments that feel.

Ant. If it be so,
We need no grave to bury honesty:
There's not a grain of it the face to sweeten
Of the whole dunghy earth.

Leon. What lack I credit? 156

First Lord. I had rather you did lack than I,
my lord,
Upon this ground; and more it would content
me
To have her honour true than your suspicion,
Be blam'd for' how you might.

Leon. Why, what need we 160
Commune with you of this, but rather follow
Our forceful instigation? Our prerogative
Call not your counsels, but our natural goodness
Imparts this; which if you,—or stupified 164
Or seeming so in skill,—cannot or will not
Relish a truth like us, inform yourselves
We need no more of your advice: the matter,
The loss, the gain, the ordering on 't, is all

Properly ours.

Ant. And I wish, my liege,
You had only in your silent judgment tried it,
Without more overture.

Leon. How could that be?

Either thou art most ignorant by age, 172
Or thou wert born a fool. Camillo's flight,
Added to their familiarity,
Which was as gross as ever touch'd conjecture,
That lack'd sight only, nought for approbation
But only seeing, all other circumstances
Made up to the deed, doth push on this pro-
ceeding:
Yet, for a greater confirmation,—
For in an act of this importance 'twere
Most piteous to be wild,—I have dispatch'd in post
To sacred Delphos, to Apollo's temple,
To Cleomenes and Dion, whom you know
Of stuff'd sufficiency. Now, from the oracle
They will bring all; whose spiritual counsel had,
Shall stop or spur me. Have I done well?

First Lord. Well done, my lord.

Leon. Though I am satisfied and need no more
Than what I know, yet shall the oracle
Give rest to the minds of others, such as he
Whose ignorant credulity will not
Come up to the truth. So have we thought it
good
From our free person she should be confin'd,
Lest that the treachery of the two fled hence
Be left her to perform. Come, follow us:
We are to speak in public; for this business
Will raise us all.

Ant. [Aside.] To laughter, as I take it,
If the good truth were known.

[Exeunt.]

SCENE II.—The Same. The outer Room of a
Prison.

Enter Paulina and Attendants.

Paul. The keeper of the prison, call to him;
Let him have knowledge who I am.—[Exit an
Attendant.] Good lady,
No court in Europe is too good for thee;
What dost thou then in prison?

Re-enter Attendant with the Gaoler.

Paul. Now, good sir, 4

Gaol. You know me, do you not?

Paul. For a worthy lady
And one whom much I honour.

Gaol. I may not, madam: to the contrary

Paul. I have express commandment.

Gaol. Here's ado,

Paul. To lock up honesty and honour from
THE WINTER'S TALE

Act II, Sc. II.

The access of gentle visitors! Is't lawful, pray you,
To see her women? any of them? Emilia? 12

Gaol. So please you, madam,
To put apart these your attendants, I
Shall bring Emilia forth.

Paul. I pray now, call her.
Withdraw yourselves. [Execute Attendants.

Gaol. And, madam, 16
I must be present at your conference.

Paul. Well, be 't so, prithee. [Exit Gaoler.
Here's such ado to make no stain a stain,
As passes colouring.

Re-enter Gaoler, with EMILIA.

Dear gentlewoman, 20
How fares our gracious lady?

Emil. As well as one so great and so forlorn
May hold together. On her frights and griefs,—
Which never tender lady hath borne greater,—
She is something before her time deliver'd. 25

Paul. A boy?

Emil. A daughter; and a goodly babe,
Lusty and like to live: the queen receives
Much comfort in 't; says, 'My poor prisoner, 28
I am innocent as you.'

Paul. I dare be sworn:
These dangerous unsafe lunes i' the king, be shrew them!
He must be told on't, and he shall: the office
Becomes a woman best; I'll take 't upon me. 32
If I prove honey-mouth'd, let my tongue blister,
And never to my red-look'd anger be
The trumpet any more. Pray you, Emilia,
Command my best obedience to the queen: 36
If she dares trust me with her little babe,
I'll show it to the king and undertake to be
Her advocate to the loud'est. We do not know
How he may soften at the sight of the child: 40
The silence often of pure innocence
Persuades when speaking fails.

Emil. Most worthy madam,
Your honour and your goodness is so evident
That your free undertaking cannot miss 44
A thriving issue: there is no lady living
So meet for this great errand. Please your ladyship
To visit the next room, I'll presently
Acquaint the queen of your most noble offer, 48
Who but to-day hammer'd of this design,
But durst not tempt a minister of honour,
Lest she should be denied.

Paul. Tell her, Emilia,
I'll use that tongue I have: if wit flow from 't 52
As boldness from my bosom, let it not be doubted

I shall do good.

Emil. Now be you blest for it!
I'll to the queen. Please you, come something nearer.

Gaol. Madam, if 't please the queen to send
the babe, 56
I know not what I shall incur to pass it,
Having no warrant.

Paul. You need not fear it, sir:
The child was prisoner to the womb, and is
By law and process of great nature thence 60
Freed and enfranchis'd; not a party to
The anger of the king, nor guilty of,
If any be, the trespass of the queen.
Gaol. I do believe it.

Paul. Do not you fear: upon mine honour, I
Will stand betwixt you and danger. [Exeunt.

SCENE III.—The Same. A Room in the Palace.

Enter LEONTES, ANTIGonus, Lords, and other Attendants.

Leon. Nor night, nor day, no rest; it is but weakness
To bear the matter thus; mere weakness. If
The cause were not in being,—part o' the cause,
She the aduertress; for the harlot king 4
Is quite beyond mine arm, out of the blank
And level of my brain, plot-proof; but she
I can hook to me: say, that she were gone,
Given to the fire, a moiety of my rest
Might come to me again. Who's there?

First Att'en. [Advancing.] My lord?

Leon. How does the boy?

First Att'en. He took good rest to-night;
'Tis hop'd his sickness is discharg'd.

Leon. To see his nobleness! 12
Conceiving the dishonour of his mother,
He straight declin'd, droop'd, took it deeply,
Fasen'd and fix'd the shame on 't in himself,
Threw off his spirit, his appetite, his sleep, 16
And downright languish'd. Leave me solely:
go,
See how he fares. [Exit Attendant.]—Fie, fie!
no thought of him;
The very thought of my revenges that way
Recoil upon me: in himself too mighty, 20
And in his parties, his alliance; let him be
Until a time may serve: for present vengeance,
Take it on her. Camillo and Polixenes
Laugh at me; make their pastime at my sorrow:

They should not laugh, if I could reach them, nor
Shall she within my power.
THE WINTER'S TALE  

Act II, Sc. III.

Enter Paulina, with a Child.

First Lord. You must not enter.

Paul. Nay, rather, good my lords, be second to me:

Fears you your tyrannous passion more, alas, 28
Than the queen's life? a gracious innocent soul, More free than he is jealous.

Ant. That's enough.

Sec. Att'en. Madam, he hath not slept tonight; commanded None should come at him.

Paul. Not so hot, good sir; 32
I come to bring him sleep. 'Tis such as you, That creep like shadows by him and do sigh At each his needless heavings, such as you Nourish the cause of his awaking: I 36 Do come with words as medicinal as true, Honest as either, to purge him of that humour That presses him from sleep.

Leon. What noise there, ho?

Paul. No noise, my lord; but needful conference 40 About some gossips for your highness.

Leon. How!

Away with that audacious lady! Antigonus, I charg'd thee that she should not come about me:

I knew she would.

Ant. I told her so, my lord, 44 On your displeasure's peril, and on mine, She should not visit you.

Leon. What! canst not rule her? 46

Paul. From all dishonesty he can: in this, Unless he take the course that you have done, Commit me for committing honour, trust it, 49 He shall not rule me.

Ant. La you now! you hear; Thou will take the reins I let her run; But she'll not stumble.

Paul. Good my liege, I come, 52 And I beseech you, hear me, who professes Myself your loyal servant, your physician, Your most obedient counsellor, yet that fears Less appear so in comforting your evils Than such as most seem yours: I say, I come From your good queen.

Leon. Good queen!

Paul. Good queen, my lord, good queen; I say, good queen;

And would by combat make her good, so were I A man, the worst about you.

Leon. Force her hence. 61

Paul. Let him that makes but trifles of his eyes First hand me: on mine own accord I'll off; But first I'll do my errand. The good queen, 64 For she is good, hath brought you forth a daughter:

Here 'tis; commends it to your blessing. 68

[Laying down the Child.

Leon. Out!

A mankind witch! Hence with her, out o' door: A most intelligencing bawd!

Paul. Not so; 68
I am as ignorant in that as you In so entitling me, and no less honest Than you are mad; which is enough, I'll warrant, As this world goes, to pass for honest.

Leon. Traitors! 72
Will you not push her out? Give her the bastard.

[To ANTIGONUS.] Thou dotard! thou art woman-tir'd, unroosted
By thy dame Partlet here. Take up the bastard; Take't up, I say; give't to thy crone.

Paul. For ever 76 Unvenerable be thy hands, if thou Tak'st up the princess by that forced baseness Which he has put upon 't!

Leon. He dreads his wife.

Paul. So I would you did; then, 'twere past all doubt, 80 You'd call your children yours.

Leon. A nest of traitors!

Ant. I am none, by this good light.

Paul. Nor I; nor any But one that's here, and that's himself; for he The sacred honour of himself, his queen's, 84 His hopeful son's, his babe's, betrays to slander, Whose sting is sharper than the sword's; and will not,—

For, as the case now stands, it is a curse He cannot be compell'd to 't,—once remove 88 The root of his opinion, which is rotten As ever oak or stone was sound.

Leon. A callat

Of boundless tongue, who late hath beat her husband And now baits me! This brat is none of mine; It is the issue of Polixenes: 93 Hence with it; and, together with the dam Commit them to the fire!

Paul. It is yours;

And, might we lay the old proverb to your charge, 96 'So like you, 'tis the worse.' Behold, my lords, Although the print be little, the whole matter And copy of the father; eye, nose, lip, The trick of's frown, his forehead, nay, the valley, 100 The pretty dimples of his chin and cheek, his smiles,
Act II, Sc. III.  THE WINTER’S TALE

The very mould and frame of hand, nail, finger:
And thou, good goddess Nature, which hast
made it
So like to him that got it, if thou hast 104
The ordering of the mind too, ‘mongst all
colours
No yellow in’t; lest she suspect, as he does,
Her children not her husband’s.
Leon.  A gross hag!
And, loze!, thou art worthy to be hang’d, 108
That will not stay her tongue.
Ant.  Hang all the husbands
That cannot do that feat, you’ll leave yourself
Hardly one subject.
Leon.  Once more, take her hence.
Paul.  A most unworthy and unnatural lord
Can do no more.
Leon.  I’ll ha’ thee burn’d.
Paul.  I care not:
It is a heretic that makes the fire,
Not she which burns in’t. I’ll not call you
tyrant;
But this most cruel usage of your queen,— 116
Not able to produce more accusation
Than your own weak-hing’d fancy,—something
savours
Of tyranny, and will ignoble make you,
Yea, scandalous to the world.
Leon.  On your allegiance, 120
Out of the chamber with her! Were I a tyrant,
Where were her life? she durst not call me so
If she did know me one. Away with her!
Paul.  I pray you do not push me; I’ll be
gone. 124
Look to your babe, my lord; ’tis yours: Jove
send her
A better guiding spirit! What need these hands?
You, that are thus so tender o’er his follies,
Will never do him good, not one of you. 128
So, so: farewell; we are gone.  [Exit.
Leon.  Thou, traitor, hast set on thy wife to
this.
My child! away with’t!—even thou, that hast
A heart so tender o’er it, take it hence 132
And see it instantly consum’d with fire:
Even thou and none but thou. Take up
straight:
Within this hour bring me word ’tis done,—
And by good testimony,—or I’ll seize thy life,
With what thou else call’st thine. If thou refuse
And wilt encounter with my wrath, say so;
The bastard brains with these my proper hands
Shall I dash out. Go, take it to the fire; 140
For thou sett’st on thy wife.
Ant.  I did not, sir:
These lords, my noble fallows, if they please,
Can clear me in’t.

First Lord.  We can, my royal liege,
He is not guilty of her coming hither. 144
Leon.  You are liars all.
First Lord.  Beseech your highness, give us
better credit:
We have always truly serv’d you, and beseech
you
So to esteem of us; and on our knees we beg, 148
As recompense of our dear services
Past and to come, that you do change this
purpose,
Which being so horrible, so bloody, must
Lead on to some foul issue. We all kneel. 152
Leon.  I am a feather for each wind that blows.
Shall I live on to see this bastard kneel?
And call me father? Better burn it now
Than curse it then. But, be it; let it live: 156
It shall not neither.—[To ANTIGONUS.] You, sir,
come you hither;
You that have been so tenderly officious
With Lady Margery, your midwife there,
To save this bastard’s life,—for ’tis a bastard,160
So sure as thy beard’s grey,—what will you
adventure
To save this brat’s life?
Ant.  Any thing, my lord,
That my ability may undergo,
And nobleness impose: at least, thus much: 164
I’ll pawn the little blood which I have left,
To save the innocent: any thing possible.
Leon.  It shall be possible. Swear by this
sword
Thou wilt perform my bidding.
Ant.  I will, my lord. 168
Leon.  Mark and perform it,—seest thou!—
for the fail
Of any point in’t shall not only be
Death to thyself, but to thy lewd-tongu’d wife,
Whom for this time we pardon. We enjoin thee,
As thou art liegeman to us, that thou carry 173
This female bastard hence; and that thou bear it
To some remote and desert place quite out
Of our dominions; and that there thou leave it,
Without more mercy, to its own protection, 177
And favour of the climate. As by strange fortune
It came to us, I do in justice charge thee,
On thy soul’s peril and thy body’s torture, 180
That thou commend it strangely to some place,
Where chance may nurse or end it. Take it up.
Ant.  I swear to do this, though a present
death
Had been more merciful. Come on, poor babe:
Some powerful spirit instruct the kites and
ravens 185
To be thy nurses! Wolves and bears, they say,
Casting their savageness aside have done
Like offices of pity. Sir, be prosperous 188
In more than this deed doth require! And blessing
Against this cruelty fight on thy side,
Poor thing, condemn'd to loss!

Leon.

No; I'll not rear
Another's issue.

Enter a Servant.

Serv.

Please your highness, posts 192
From those you sent to the oracle are come
An hour since: Cleomenes and Dion,
Being well arriv'd from Delphos, are both landed,
Hasting to the court.

First Lord.

So please you, sir, their speed
Hath been beyond account.

Leon.

Twenty-three days
They have been absent: 'tis good speed; foretells
The great Apollo suddenly will have
The truth of this appear. Prepare you, lords;
Summon a session, that we may arraign 201
Our most disloyal lady; for, as she hath
Been publicly accus'd, so shall she have
A just and open trial. While she lives 204
My heart will be a burden to me. Leave me,
And think upon my bidding.

[Exeunt.

ACT III.

SCENE I.—A Sea-port in Sicilia.

Enter Cleomenes and Dion.

Cleo.
The climate's delicate, the air most sweet,
Fertile the isle, the temple much surpassing
The common praise it bears.

Dion.

I shall report,
For most it caught me, the celestial habits,— 4
Methinks I so should term them,—and the reverence
Of the grave wearers. O, the sacrifice!
How ceremonious, solemn, and unearthly
It was i' the offering!

Cleo.

But of all, the burst
And the ear-deafening voice o' the oracle,
Kin to Jove's thunder, so surpris'd my sense,
That I was nothing.

Dion.

If the event o' the journey
Prove as successful to the queen,—O, be't so!—
As it hath been to us rare, pleasant, speedy, 12
The time is worth the use on't.

Cleo.

Great Apollo
Turn all to the best! These proclamations,
So forcing faults upon Hermione,
I little like.

Dion.
The violent carriage of it
Will clear or end the business: when the oracle,
Thus by Apollo's great divine seal'd up,
Shall the contents discover, something rare 20
Even then will rush to knowledge.—Go:—
fresh horses!
And gracious be the issue!  [Exeunt.

SCENE II.—Sicilia. A Court of Justice.

LEONTES, Lords, and Officers.

Leon. This sessions, to our great grief we pronounce,
Even pushes in our heart: the party tried
The daughter of a king, our wife, and one
Of us too much below'd. Let us be clear'd 4
Of being tyrannous, since we so openly
Proceed in justice, which shall have due course,
Even to the guilt or the purgation.
Produce the prisoner.

Offr. It is his highness' pleasure that the queen
Appear in person here in court. Silence!

Enter Hermione guarded; Paulina and Ladies attending.

Leon. Read the indictment.

Offr. Hermione, queen to the worthy Leontes,
King of Sicilia, thou art her accused and arraigned of high treason, in committing adultery with Polixenes, King of Bohemia, and conspiring with Camillo to take away the life of our sovereign lord the king, thy royal husband: the pretence whereof being by circumstances partly laid open, thou, Hermione, contrary to the faith and allegiance of a true subject, didst counsel and aid them, for their better safety, to fly away by night.

Her. Since what I am to say must be but that
Which contradicts my accusation, and 24
The testimony on my part no other
But what comes from myself, it shall scarce boot me
To say 'Not guilty'; mine integrity
Being counted falsehood, shall, as I express it,
Be so receiv'd. But thus: if powers divine 29
Behold our human actions, as they do,
I doubt not then but innocence shall make
False accusation blush, and tyranny 32
Tremble at patience. You, my lord, best know,—
Who least will seem to do so,—my past life
Hath been as continent, as chaste, as true,
As I am now unhappy; which is more 36
Than history can pattern, though devils'd
And play'd to take spectators. For behold me,
A fellow of the royal bed, which owe
A moiety of the throne, a great king's daughter,
The mother to a hopeful prince, here standing
To praise and talk for life and honour 'fore
Who please to come and hear. For life, I prize it
The bug which you would fright me with I seek.
To me can life be no commodity:
The crown and comfort of my life, your favour,
I do give lost; for I do feel it gone,
But know not how it went. My second joy,
And first-fruits of my body, from his presence
I am barr'd, like one infectious. My third
comfort,
Starr'd most unluckily, is from my breast,
The innocent milk in its most innocent mouth,
Hal'd out to murder: myself on every post
Proclaim'd a strumpet: with immodest hatred
The child-bed privilege denied, which 'longs
To women of all fashion: lastly, hurried
Here to this place, 'tis the open air, before
I have get strength of limit. Now, my liege,
Tell me what blessings I have here alive,
That I should fear to die? Therefore proceed.
But yet hear this; mistake me not; no life,
I prize it not a straw:—but for mine honour,
Which I would free, if I shall be condemn'd
Upon surmises, all proofs sleeping else
But what your jealousies awake, I tell you,
'Tis rigour and not law. Your honours all,
I do refer me to the oracle:
Apollo be my judge!

First Lord. This your request
Is altogether just: therefore, bring forth,
And in Apollo's name, his oracle.

[Exeunt certain Officers.]

Her. The Emperor of Russia was my father:
O! that he were alive, and here beholding
His daughter's trial; that he did but see
The flatness of my misery; yet with eyes
Of pity, not revenge!

Re-enter Officers, with Cleomenes and Dion.

Offi. You here shall swear upon this sword of
 justice,
That you, Cleomenes and Dion, have
Been both at Delphos, and from thence have brought
This seal'd-up oracle, by the hand deliver'd
Of great Apollo's priest, and that since then
You have not dar'd to break the holy seal,
Nor read the secrets in it.

Cleo. All this we swear.

Dion. —

Leon. Break up the seals, and read.

Offi. Hermione is chaste; Polixenes blame-
less; Camillo a true subject; Leonides a jealous
tyrant; his innocent babe truly begotten; and
the king shall live without an heir if that which
is lost be not found!

Lords. Now blessed be the great Apollo!

Her. Praise!

Leon. Hast thou read truth?
Off. Ay, my lord; even so
As it is here set down.
Leon. There is no truth at all i' the oracle:
The sessions shall proceed: this is mere falsehood.

Enter a Servant.
Ser. My lord the king, the king!
Leon. What is the business?
Ser. O sir! I shall be hated to report it: 144
The prince your son, with mere conceit and fear
Of the queen's speed, is gone.
Leon. How! gone!
Ser. Is dead.
Leon. Apollo's angry; and the heavens themselves
Do strike at my injustice. [HERMIONE SWOONS.
How now, there! 148
Paul. This news is mortal to the queen:—
look down,
And see what death is doing.
Leon. Take her hence:
Her heart is but o'ercarg'd; she will recover:
I have too much believ'd mine own suspicion:
Beseech you, tenderly apply to her 153
Some remedies for life.—
[Exeunt Paulina, and Ladies, with HERMIONE.

Apollo, pardon
My great profaneness, against thine oracle!
I'll reconcile me to Polixenes,
New woo my queen, recall the good Camillo,
Whom I proclaim a man of truth, of mercy;
For, being transported by my jealousies
To bloody thoughts and to revenge, I chose 160
Camillo for the minister to poison
My friend Polixenes: which had been done,
But that the good mind of Camillo tardied
My swift command; though I with death and with
Reward did threaten and encourage him,
Not doing it, and being done: he, most humane
And fill'd with honour, to my kingly guest
Uncloasp'd my practice, quit his fortunes here, 168
Which you knew great, and to the certain hazard
Of all uncertainties himself commended,
No richer than his honour: how he glisters
Thorough my rust! and how his piety 172
Does my deeds make the blacker!

Re-enter Paulina.
Paul. Woe the while!
0, cut my lace, lest my heart, cracking it,
Break too!
First Lord. What fit is this, good lady?
Paul. What studied tortures, tyrant, hast for me?

What wheels? racks? fires? What flaying?
or what boiling
In leads, or oles? what old or newer torture
Must I receive, whose every word deserves
To taste of thy most worst? Thy tyranny, 180
Together working with thy jealousies,
Fancies too weak for boys, too green and idle
For girls of nine, O! think what they have done,
And then run mad indeed, stark mad; for all 184
Thy by-gone fooleries were but spices of it.
That thou betray'st Polixenes, 'twas nothing;
That did but show thee of a fool, inconstant
And damnable ingratitude; nor was't much 188
Thou would'st have poison'd good Camillo's honour
To have him kill a king; poor trespasses,
More monstrous standing by: whereof I reckon
The casting forth to crows thy baby daughter 192
To be or none or little; though a devil
Would have shed water out of fire ere done't:
Nor is't directly laid to thee, the death
Of the young prince, whose honourable thoughts,—
Thoughts high for one so tender,—cleft the heart
That could conceive a gross and foolish sire
Blemish'd his gracious dam: this is not, no,
Laid to thy answer: but the last,—O lords! 200
When I have said, cry, 'woe! '—the queen, the queen,
The sweetest, dearest creature's dead, and vengeance for't
Not dropp'd down yet.
First Lord. The higher powers forbid!
Paul. I say she's dead; I'll swear't: if word
nor oath
Prevail not, go and see: if you can bring
Tincture or lustre in her lip, her eye,
Heat outwardly, or breath within, I'll serve you
As I would do the gods. But, O thou tyrant! 208
Do not repent these things, for they are heavier
Than all thy woes can stir; therefore betake thee
To nothing but despair. A thousand knees
Ten thousand years together, naked, fasting, 212
Upon a barren mountain, and still winter
In storm perpetual, could not move the gods
To look that way thou wert.
Leon. Go on, go on;
Thou canst not speak too much: I have deserv'd
All tongues to talk their bitterest.
First Lord. Say no more: 217
How'er the business goes, you have made fault
I' the boldness of your speech.
Paul. I am sorry for't:
All faults I make, when I shall come to know them,
I do repent. Alas! I have show'd too much
The rashness of a woman: he is touch'd
To the noble heart. What's gone and what's
past help
Should be past grief: do not receive affliction 224
At my petition; I beseech you, rather
Let me be punish'd, that have minded you
Of what you should forget. Now, good my liege,
Sir, royal sir, forgive a foolish woman: 228
The love I bore your queen,—lo, fool again!—
I'll speak of her no more, nor of your children;
I'll not remember you of my own lord,
Who is lost too: take your patience to you, 232
And I'll say nothing.
Leon. Thou didst speak but well,
When most the truth, which I receive much
better
Than to be pitied of thee. Prithee, bring me
To the dead bodies of my queen and son: 236
One grave shall be for both: upon them shall
The causes of their death appear, unto
Our shame perpetual. Once a day I'll visit
The chapel where they lie, and tears shed there
Shall be my recreation: so long as nature 241
Will bear up with this exercise, so long
I daily vow to use it. Come and lead me
Unto these sorrows. [Exeunt.

Scene III.—Bohemia. A desert Country near
the Sea.

Enter Antigonus, with the Child; and a
Mariner.

Ant. Thou art perfect, then, our ship hath
touch'd upon
The desarts of Bohemia?

Mar. Ay, my lord; and fear
We have landed in ill time: the skies look
grimly
And threaten present blusters. In my con-
science,
The heavens with that we have in hand are
angry,
And frown upon's.

Ant. Their sacred wills be done! Go, get
aboard;
Look to thy bark: I'll not be long before
I call upon thee.

Mar. Make your best haste, and go not
Too far i' the land: 'tis like to be loud weather;
Besides, this place is famous for the creatures
Of prey that keep upon't.

Ant. Go thou away: 12
I'll follow instantly.

Mar. I am glad at heart
To be so rid of the business. [Exit.

Ant. Come, poor babe:
I have heard, but not believ'd, the spirits o' the
dead
May walk again: if such thing be, thy mother 16
Appear'd to me last night, for no'er was dream
So like a waking. To me comes a creature,
Sometimes her head on one side, some another;
I never saw a vessel of like sorrow, 20
So fill'd, and so becoming: in pure white robes,
Like very sanctity, she did approach
My cabin where I lay; thrice bow'd before me,
And, gasping to begin some speech, her eyes 24
Became two spouts: the fury spent, anon
Did this break from her: 'Good Antigonus,
Since fate, against thy better disposition,
Hath made thy person for the thrower-out 28
Of my poor babe, according to thine oath,
Places remote enough are in Bohemia,
There weep and leave it crying; and, for the
babe
Is counted lost for ever, Perdita,
I prithee, call 't: for this ungentle business,
Put on thee by my lord, thou ne'er shalt see
Thy wife Paulina more: ' and so, with shrieks,
She melted into air. Affrighted much, 36
I did in time collect myself, and thought
This was so and no slumber. Dreams are toys;
Yet for this once, yea, superstitiously,
I will be squar'd by this. I do believe
Hermione hath suffer'd death; and that
Apollo would, this being indeed the issue
Of King Polixenes, it should here be laid,
Either for life or death, upon the earth 44
Of its right father. Blossom, speed thee well!
[Laying down Child.
There lie; and there thy character: there these;
[Laying down a bundle.
Which may, if fortune please, both breed thee,
pretty,
And still rest thine. The storm begins: poor
wretch!
That for thy mother's fault art thus expos'd
To loss and what may follow. Weep I cannot,
But my heart bleeds, and most accrues'd am I
To be by oath enjoin'd to this. Farewell! 52
The day frowns more and more: thou art like
to have
A lullaby too rough. I never saw
The heavens so dim by day. A savage clamour!
Well may I get aboard! This is the chase: 56
I am gone for ever. [Exit, pursued by a bear.

Enter a Shepherd.

Shep. I would there were no age between
sixteen and three-and-twenty, or that youth
would sleep out the rest; for there is nothing
in the between but getting wenches with child,
wronging the anciencty, stealing, fighting. Hark
THE WINTER'S TALE

Act IV, Ch.

you now! Would any but these boiled brains of nineteen and two-and-twenty hunt this weather? They have scared away two of my best sheep; which I fear the wolf will sooner find than the master: if anywhere I have them, 'tis by the sea-side, browsing of ivy. Good luck, an't be thy will! what have we here? [Taking up the Child.] Mercy on's, a barne; a very pretty barne! A boy or a child, I wonder? A pretty one; a very pretty one; sure some scape: though I am not bookish, yet I can read waiting-gentlewoman in the scape. This has been some starw-kum, some trunk-work, some behind-doorwork; they were warmer that got this than the poor thing is here. I will take it up for pity; yet I'll tarry till my son come; he hollaed but even now. Whoa, ho, hoal! 79

Enter Clown.

Clo. Hilloa, loa!

Shep. What! art so near? If thou'lt see a thing to talk on when thou art dead and rotten, come hither. What ailesst thou, man? 83

Clo. I have seen two such sights by sea and

by land! but I am not to say it is a see, for it is now the sky: betwixt the firmament and it you cannot thrust a bodkin's point.

Shep. Why, boy, how is it? 88

Clo. I would you did but see how it chafes, how it rages, how it takes up the shore! but that's not to the point. O! the most piteous cry of the poor souls; sometimes to see 'em, and not to see 'em; now the ship boring the moon with her mainmast, and anon swallowed with yeast and froth, as you'd thrust a cork into a hogshad. And then for the land-service: to see how the bear tore out his shoulderbone; how he cried to me for help and said his name was Antigonus, a nobleman. But to make an end of the ship: to see how the sea flap-dragoned it: but, first, how the poor souls roared, and the sea mocked them; and how the poor gentleman roared, and the bear mocked him, both roaring louder than the sea or weather. 104

Shep. Name of mercy! when was this, boy?

Clo. Now, now; I have not winked since I saw these sights: the men are not yet cold under water, nor the bear half dined on the gentle-

man: he's at it now. 109

Shep. Would I had been by, to have helped the old man!

Clo. I would you had been by the ship's side, to have helped her: there your charity would have lacked footing. 114

Shep. Heavy matters! heavy matters! but

look thee here, boy. Now bless thyself: thou mettest with things dying, I with things new

born. Here's a sight for thee; look thee, a

bearing-cloth for a squire's child! Look thee here: take up, take up, boy; open't. So, let's see: it was told me, I should be rich by the fairies: this is some changing.—Open't. What's within, boy? 123

Clo. You're a made old man: if the sins of your youth are forgiven you, you're well to live. Gold! all gold!

Shep. This is fairy gold, boy, and 'twill prove so: up with't, keep it close: home, home, the next way. We are lucky, boy; and to be so still, requires nothing but secrecy. Let my sheep go. Come, good boy, the next way home.

Clo. Go you the next way with your findings. I'll go see if the bear be gone from the gentle-

man, and how much he hath eaten: they are never curst but when they are hungry. If there be any of him left, I'll bury it. 136

Shep. That's a good deed. If thou mayst
discern by that which is left of him what he is, fetch me to the sight of him.

Clo. Marry, will I; and you shall help to put him in the ground. 141

Shep. 'Tis a lucky day, boy, and we'll do good deeds on't. [Exeunt.]

ACT IV.

Enter Time, the Chorus.

Time. I, that please some, try all, both joy

and terror

Of good and bad, that make and unfold error,

Now take upon me, in the name of Time,

To use my wings. Impute it not a crime

To me or my swift passage, that I slide

O'er sixteen years, and leave the growth untried

Of that wide gap; since it is in my power

To o'erthrow law, and in one self-born hour

To plant and o'erwhelm custom. Let me pass

The same I am, ere ancient'st order was

Or what is now receiv'd: I witness to

The times that brought them in; so shall I do

To the freshest things now reigning, and make

stale

The glistening of this present, as my tale

Now seems to it. Your patience this allowing,

I turn my glass and give my scene such growing

As you had kept between. Leontes leaving,—

The effects of his fond jealousies so griefing,

That he shuts up himself,—imagine me,

Gentle spectators, that I now may be

In fair Bohemia; and remember well,

I mention'd a son of the king's, which Florizel

Y now name to you; and with speed so pace

To speak of Perdita, now grown in grace

387
Equal with wondering, what of her ensues
I list not prophecy; but let Time's news
Be known when 'tis brought forth. A shepherd's daughter,
And what to her adheres, which follows after,
Is 'th argument of Time. Of this allow,
If ever you have spent time worse ere now:
If never, yet that Time himself doth say
He wishes earnestly you never may. [Exit.]

SCENE I.—Bohemia. A Room in the Palace of Polixenes.

Enter Polixenes and Camillo.

Pol. I pray thee, good Camillo, be no more importunate; 'tis a sickness denying thee anything; a death to grant this.

Cam. It is fifteen years since I saw my country; though I have for the most part been aired abroad, I desire to lay my bones there. Besides, the penitent king, my master, hath sent for me; to whose feeling sorrows I might be some alay, or I o'erween to think so, which is another spur to my departure.

Pol. As thou lovest me, Camillo, wipe not out the rest of thy services by leaving me now. The need I have of thee thine own goodness hath made: better not to have had thee than thus to want thee. Thou, having made me businesses which none without thee can sufficiently manage, must either stay to execute them thyself or take away with thee the very services thou hast done; which if I have not enough considered,—as too much I cannot,—to be more thankful to thee shall be my study, and my profit therein, the heaping friendships. Of that fatal country, Sicilia, prithee speak no more, whose very naming punishes me with the remembrance of that penitent, as thou callest him, and reconciled king, my brother; whose loss of his most precious queen and children are even now to be afresh lamented. Say to me, when sawest thou the Prince Florizel, my son? Kings are no less unhappy, their issue not being gracious, than they are in losing them when they have approved their virtues.

Cam. Sir, it is three days since I saw the prince. What his happier affairs may be, are to me unknown; but I have missively noted he is of late much retired from court, and is less frequent to his princely exercises than formerly he hath appeared.

Pol. I have considered so much, Camillo, and with some care; so far, that I have eyes under my service which look upon his removedness; from whom I have this intelligence, that he is seldom from the house of a most homely shepherd; a man, they say, that from very nothing,

and beyond the imagination of his neighbours, is grown into an unspeakable estate.

Cam. I have heard, sir, of such a man, who hath a daughter of most rare note: the report of her is extended more than can be thought to begin from such a cottage.

Pol. That's likewise part of my intelligence; but I fear, the angle that plucks our son therin. Thou shalt accompany us to the place; where we will, not appearing what we are, have some question with the shepherd; from whose simplicity I think it not uneasy to get the cause of my son's resort therin. Prithie, be my present partner in this business, and lay aside the thoughts of Sicilia.

Cam. I willingly obey your command.

Pol. My best Camillo!—We must disguise ourselves. [Exeunt.]

SCENE II.—The Same. A Road near the Shepherd's Cottage.

Enter Autolycus, singing.

When daffodils begin to peer,
With heigh! the doxy, over the dale,
Why, then comes in the sweet o' the year;
For the red blood reigns in the winter's pale.

The white sheet bleaching on the hedge,
With heigh! the sweet birds, O, how they sing!
Doth set my pugging tooth on edge;
For a quart of ale is a dish for a king.

The lark, that tirra-lirra chants,
With, heigh! with, heigh! the thrush and the jay,
Are summer songs for me and my auntie,
While we lie tumbling in the hay.

I have served Prince Florizel, and in my time wore three-pile; but now I am out of service:

But shall I go mourn for that, my dear?
The pale moon shines by night;
And when I wander here and there,
I then do most go right.

If tinkers may have leave to live,
And bear the sow-akin bowget,
Then my account I well may give,
And in the stocks arouch it.

My traffic is sheets; when the kite builds, look to lesser linen. My father named me Autolycus; who being, as I am, littered under Mercury, was likewise a snapper-up of unconsidered trifles. With die and drab I purchased this caparison, and my revenue is the silly cheat. Gallows and knock are too powerful on the highway: beating and hanging are terrors to me: for the life to come, I sleep out the thought of it. A prize! a prize!

Enter Clown.

Clo. Let me see: Every 'leven wether tods; every tod yields pound and odd shilling: fifteen hundred shorn, what comes the wool to?
Aut. [Aside.] If the springe hold, the cock’s mine. 37

Clo. I cannot do’t without compters. Let me see; what am I to buy for our sheep-shearing feast? ‘Three pound of sugar; five pound of currants; rice,’ what will this sister of mine do with rice? But my father hath made her mistress of the feast, and she lays it on. She hath made me four-and-twenty nosegays for the shearsers, three-man song-men all, and very good ones; but they are most of them means and bases: but one puritan amongst them, and he sings psalms to hornpipes. I must have saffron, to colour the warden pies; mace, dates,—none; that’s out of my note!—nutmegs seven; a race or two of ginger,—but that I may beg;—four pound of prunes, and as many of raisins o’ the sun. 53

Aut. O! that ever I was born! [Grovelling on the ground.]

Clo. I’ the name of me!—

Aut. O! help me, help me! pluck but off these rags, and then death, death! 57

Clo. Alack, poor soul! thou hast need of more rags to lay on thee, rather than have these off. 60

Aut. O, sir! the loathsomeness of them offends me more than the stripes I have received, which are mighty ones and millions.

Clo. Alas, poor man! a million of beating may come to a great matter. 65

Aut. I am robbed, sir, and beaten; my money and apparel ta’en from me, and these detestable things put upon me. 68

Clo. What, by a horseman or a footman?

Aut. A footman, sweet sir, a footman.

Clo. Indeed, he should be a footman, by the garments he hath left with thee: if this be a horseman’s coat, it hath seen very hot service. Lend me thy hand, I’ll help thee: come, lend me thy hand. [Helping him up.]

Aut. O! good sir, tenderly, O! 76

Clo. Alas, poor soul! 78

Aut. Or good sir; softly, good sir! I fear, sir, my shoulder-blade is out.

Clo. How now! canst stand? 80

Aut. Softly, dear sir; [Picks his pocket.] good sir, softly. You ha’ done me a charitable office.

Clo. Dost lack any money? I have a little money for thee. 84

Aut. No, good sweet sir: no, I beseech you, sir. I have a kinsman not past three-quarters of a mile hence, unto whom I was going: I shall there have money, or anything I want; offer me no money, I pray you! that kills my heart. 89

Clo. What manner of fellow was he that robbed you?
Act IV, Sc. III.

THE WINTER'S TALE

To chide at your extremes it not becomes me:
Oh, pardon, that I name them. Your high self,
The gracious mark o' the land, you have obscure'd
With aswan's wearing, and me, poor lowly maid,
Most goddess-like prank'd up. But that our feasts
In every mess have folly, and the feeders
Digest it with a custom, I should blush
To see you so attired,—swoon, I think,
To show myself a glass.

Flo. I bless the time
When my good falcon made her flight across
Thy father's ground.

Per. Now, Jove afford you cause!
To me the difference forges dread; your greatness
Hath not been us'd to fear. Even now I tremble
To think, your father, by some accident,
Should pass this way as you did. O, the Fates!
How would he look, to see his work, so noble,
Vilely bound up? What would he say? Or how
Should I, in these my borrow'd flaunts, behold
The sternness of his presence?

Flo. Nothing but jollity. The gods themselves,
Humbling their deities to love, have taken
The shapes of beasts upon them: Jupiter
Became a bull, and bellow'd; the green Neptune
A ram, and bleated; and the fire-rob'd god,
Golden Apollo, a poor humble swain,
As I seem now. Their transformations
Were never for a piece of beauty rarer,
Nor in a way so chaste, since my desires
Run not before mine honour, nor my lusts
Burn hotter than my faith.

Per. O! but, sir,
Your resolution cannot hold, when 'tis
Oppos'd, as it must be, by the power of the king.
One of these two must be necessities,
Which then will speak, that you must change
this purpose,
Or I my life.

Flo. Thou dearest Perdita,
With these fore'd thoughts, I prithee, darken not
The mirth o' the feast: or I'll be thine, my fair,
Or not my father's; for I cannot be
Mine own, nor anything to any, if
I be not thine: to this I am most constant,
Though destiny say no. Be merry, gentle;
Strangle such thoughts as these with any thing
That you behold the while. Your guests are coming:
Lift up your countenance, as it were the day
Of celebration of that nuptial which
We two have sworn shall come.

Per. Stand you auspicious!

Flo. See, your guests approach: Address yourself to entertain them sprightly,
And let's be red with mirth.

Enter Shepherd, with POLIXENES and CAMILLO disguised; Clown, MOPO, DORCAS, and Others.

Shep. Fie, daughter! when my old wife liv'd,
Upon This day she was both pantler, butcher, cook;
Both dame and servant; welcom'd all, serv'd all,
Would sing her song and dance her turn; now here,
At upper end o' the table, now i' the middle;
On his shoulder, and hus; her face o' fire
With labour and the thing she took to quench it,
She would to each one sip. You are retir'd,
As if you were a feasted one and not
The hostess of the meeting: pray you, bid
These unknown friends to's welcome; for it is
A way to make us better friends, more known.
Come, quench your blushes and present yourself
That which you are, mistress o' the feast: come on,
And bid us welcome to your sheep-shearing,
As your good flock shall prosper.

Per. [To POLIXENES.] Sir, welcome:
It is my father's will I should take on me
The hostess-ship o' the day:—[To CAMILLO.]
You're welcome, sir.

Pol. Give me those flowers there, Dorcas. Reverend sirs,
For you there's rosemary and rue; these keep
Seeming and savour all the winter long:
Grace and remembrance be to you both,
And welcome to our shearing!

Per. Shepherdesse,—
A fair one are you,—well you fit our ages
With flowers of winter.

Per. Sir, the year growing ancient,
Not yet on summer's death, nor on the birth
Of trembling winter, the fairest flowers o' the season
Are our carnations, and streak'd gillyvors,
Which some call nature's bastards: of that kind
Our rustic garden's barren, and I care not
to get slips of them.

Pol. Wherefore, gentle maiden,
Do you neglect them?

Per. For I have heard it said
There is an art which in their piedness shares
With great creating nature.

Pol. Say there be; yet nature is made better by no mean
But nature makes that mean: so, over that art,
Which you say adds to nature, is an art
That nature makes. You see, sweet maid, we marry
A gentler scion to the wildest stock,
And make conceive a bark of baser kind
By bud of nobler race: this is an art
Which does mend nature, change it rather, but
The art itself is nature.

Per. So it is. 97

Pol. Then make your garden rich in gillyvors,
And do not call them bastards.

Per. I’ll not put the dibble in earth to set one slip of them; 100
No more than, were I painted, I would wish
This youth should say, ’twere well, and only
therefore
Desire to breed by me. Here’s flowers for you;
Hot lavender, mints, savory, marjoram; 104
The marigold, that goes to bed wi’ the sun,
And with him rises weeping: these are flowers
Of middle summer, and I think they are given
to men of middle age. You’re very welcome. 108

Cam. I should leave grazing, were I of your flock,
And only live by gazing.

Per. Out, alas!
You’d be so lean, that blasts of January
Would blow you through and through. Now,
my fair’st friend, 112
I would I had some flowers o’ the spring that
might
Become your time of day; and yours, and yours,
That wear upon your virgin branches yet
Your maidenheads growing: O Proserpina! 116
For the flowers now that frighted thou let’st fall
From Dis’s waggons! daffodils,
That come before the swallow dares, and take
The winds of March with beauty; violets dim,
But sweeter than the lids of Juno’s eyes 121
Or Cytherea’s breath; pale prime-roses,
That die unmarried, they can behold
Bright Phoebus in his strength, a malady 124
Most incident to maidens; bold oxlips and
The crown imperial; lilies of all kinds,
The flower-de-luce being one. O! these I lack
To make you garlands of, and my sweet friend,
To strew him o’er and o’er!

Flo. What! like a corse? 129

Per. No, like a bank for love to lie and play on;
Not like a corse; or if,—not to be buried,
But quick and in mine arms. Come, take your
flowers: 132

Methinks I play as I have seen them do
In Whitsun pastorals: sure this robe of mine
Does change my disposition.

Flo. What you do
Still betters what is done. When you speak,
sweet,
I’d have you do it ever: when you sing,

I’d have you buy and sell so; so give alms;
Pray so; and, for the ordering your affairs,
To sing them too: when you do dance, I wish

A wave o’ the sea, that you might ever do
Nothing but that; move still, still so,
And own no other function: each your doing,
So singular in each particular, 144
Crowns what you are doing in the present deed,
That all your acts are queens.

Flo. I think you have as little skill to fear as I have purpose
To put you to’t. But, come; our dance, I pray.
Your hand, my Perida: so turtles pair
That never mean to part.

Per. I’ll swear for ’em.

Pol. This is the prettiest low-born lass that
ever Ran on the green-sord: nothing she does or seems
But smacks of something greater than herself;
Too noble for this place.

Cam. He tells her something
That makes her blood look out. Good sooth,
she is 160

The queen of curds and cream.

Clo. Come on, strike up.

Dor. Mopsa must be your mistress: marry,
garlic,
To mend her kissing with.

Hop. Now, in good time!

Clo. Not a word, a word: we stand upon our
manners. 164

Come, strike up. [Music. Here a dance of Shepherds and Shepherdesses.

Pol. Pray, good shepherd, what fair swain is this
Which dances with your daughter?
Shep. They call him Doricles, and boasts himself
To have a worthy feeding; but I have it
Upon his own report and I believe it:
He looks like sooth. He says he loves my
daughter:
I think so too; for never gaz’d the moon
Upon the water as he’ll stand and read
As ’twere my daughter’s eyes; and, to be plain,
I think there is not half a kiss to choose
Who loves another best.

Pol. She dances fealty. 176

Shep. So she does any thing, though I report it
That should be silent. If young Doricles
Act IV, Sc. III.

THE WINTER'S TALE

Do light upon her, she shall bring him that
Which he not dreams of. 180

Enter a Servant.

Serv. O master! if you did but hear the pedlar
at the door, you would never dance again after a
tabor and pipe; no, the bagpipe could not move
you. He sings several tunes faster than you'll
tell money; he utters them as he had eaten
ballads and all men's ears grew to his tunes. 186

Clo. He could never come better: he shall
come in: I love a ballad but even too well, if it
be doleful matter merrily set down, or a very
pleasant thing indeed and sung lamentably. 190

Serv. He hath songs for man or woman, of all
sizes; no milliner can so fit his customers with
gloves: he has the prettiest love-songs for maids;
so without bawdry, which is strange; with such
delicate burthen of dildos and fadings, 'jump
her and thumb her;' and where some stretch-
mouthed rascal would, as it were, mean mischief
and break a foul gap into the matter, he makes
the maid to answer, 'Whoop, do me no harm, 
good man;' puts him off, slights him with
'Whoop, do me no harm, good man.' 201

Pol. This is a brave fellow.

Clo. Believe me, thou talkest of an admirable
conceited fellow. Has he any unbraided wares?

Serv. He hath ribands of all the colours i'
the rainbow; points more than all the lawyers
in Bohemia can learnedly handle, though they
come to him by the gross; inkleles, caddisses,
cambries, lawns: why, he sings 'em over, as they
were gods or goddesses. You would think a
smock were a she-angel, he so chants to the
sleeve-hand and the work about the square on't.

Clo. Prithee, bring him in, and let him ap-
proach singing. 214

Per. Forewarn him that he use no scurrilous
words in 's tunes. [Exit Servant.

Clo. You have of these pedlars, that have
more in them than you'd think, sister.

Per. Ay, good brother, or go about to think.

Enter AUTOLYCUS, singing.

Lawn as white as driven snow; 220
Cyprus black as s' er was crow; 221
Gloves as sweet as damask roses; 222
Maska for faces and for noses; 223
Bugle-bracelet, necklace-amber; 224
Perfume for a lady's chamber; 225
Golden quiots and stomachers,
For my lads to give their dears; 226
 Pins and poking-sticks of steel; 227
What maids lack from head to heel:
Come buy of me, come; come buy, come buy; 228
Buy, lads, or else your lasses cry:
Come buy. 232

Clo. If I were not in love with Mopsa, thou
shouldst take no money of me; but being en-

thralled as I am, it will also be the bondage of
certain ribands and gloves. 236

Mop. I was promised them against the feast;
but they come not too late now.

Dor. He hath promised you more than that,
or there be liars. 240

Mop. He hath paid you all he promised you:
may be he has paid you more, which will shame
you to give him again.

Clo. Is there no manners left among maids?
will they wear their plackets where they should
bear their faces? Is there not milking-time,
when you are going to bed, or kiln-hole, to whistle
off these secrets, but you must be tittle-tattling
before all our guests? 'Tis well they are whisper-
ing; clamour your tongues, and not a word more.

Mop. I have done. Come, you promised me
a tawdry face and a pair of sweet gloves. 252

Clo. Have I not told thee how I was cozened
by the way, and lost all my money?

Aut. And indeed, sir, there are cozeners
abroad; therefore it behoves men to be wary. 256

Clo. Fear not thou, man, thou shalt lose
nothing here.

Aut. I hope so, sir; for I have about me
many parcels of charge. 260

Clo. What hast here? ballads?

Mop. Pray now, buy some: I love a ballad in
print, a life, for then we are sure they are true.

Aut. Here's one to a very doleful tune, how
a usurer's wife was brought to bed of twenty
money-bags at a burden; and how she longed to
eat adders' heads and toads carbonadoed.

Mop. Is it true, think you? 268

Aut. Very true, and but a month old.

Dor. Bless me from marrying a usurer!

Aut. Here's the midwife's name to't, one Mas-
tress Taleporter, and five or six honest wives that
were present. Why should I carry lies abroad?

Mop. Pray you now, buy it. 274

Clo. Come on, lay it by: and let's first see
moe ballads; we'll buy the other things anon.

Aut. Here's another ballad of a fish that
appeared upon the coast on Wednesday the
fourscore of April, forty thousand fathom above
water, and sung this ballad against the hard
hearts of maids: it was thought she was a woman
and was turned into a cold fish for she would not
exchange flesh with one that loved her. The
ballad is very pitiful and as true. 284

Dor. Is it true too, think you?

Aut. Five justices' hands at it, and witnesses
more than my pack will hold.

Clo. Lay it by too: another. 288

Aut. This is a merry ballad, but a very

pretty one.

Mop. Let's have some merry ones.

392
THE WINTER'S TALE  Act IV, Sc. III.

Aut. Why, this is a passing merry one, and goes to the tune of 'Two maids wooing a man.' there's scarce a maid westward but she sings it: 'tis in request, I can tell you. 295

Mop. We can both sing it: if thou 'tis bear a part thou shalt hear; 'tis in three parts.

Dor. We had the tune on't a month ago.

Aut. I can bear my part; you must know 'tis my occupation: have at it with you. 300

Aut. Get you hence, for I must go, Where it fits not you to know.

Dor. Whither?

Mop. O! whither?

Dor. Whither?

Mop. It becomes thy oath full well, Thou to me thy secrets tell.

Dor. Me too, let me go thither. 308

Mop. Or thou go'st to the grange or mill.

Dor. If to either, thou dost ill.

Aut. Neither.

Dor. What, neither?

Aut. Neither.

Dor. Thou hast sworn my love to be

Mop. Thou hast sworn it more to me:

Then whither go'st? say whither? 316

Clo. We'll have this song out anon by ourselves: my father and the gentlemen are in sad talk, and we'll not trouble them: come, bring away thy pack after me. Wenches, I'll buy for you both. Pedlar, let's have the first choice. Follow me, girls. [Exit with DORCAS and MOPSA.

Aut. And you shall pay well for 'em.

Will you buy any tape,

Or lace for your cape,

My dainty duck, my dear-a?

Any silk, any thread,

Any toys for your head,

Of the new'st and fin'est, fin'est wear-a?

Come to the pedlar;

Money's a meddler.

That doth utter all men's ware-a. 322

[Exit.

Re-enter Servant.

Serv. Master, there is three carters, three shepherds, three neat-herds, three swine-herds, that have made themselves all men of hair; they call themselves Saltiers; and they have a dance which the wenches say is a gallimaufry of gambols, because they are not in 't; but they themselves are o' the mind,—if it be not too rough for some that know little but bowling,—it will please plentifully. 341

Shep. Away! we'll none on't: here has been too much homely foolery already. I know, sir, we weary you. 344

Pol. You weary those that refresh us: pray, let's see those four threes of herdsmen.

Serv. One three of them, by their own report, sir, hath danced before the king; and not the worst of the three but jumps twelve foot and a half by the squier.

Shep. Leave your prating: since these good men are pleased let them come in: but quickly now.

Serv. Why, they stay at door, sir. [Exit.

Re-enter Servant, with Twelve Rustics habited like Satyrs. They dance, and then execut.

Pol. [To Shep.] O, father! you'll know more of that hereafter.

[To CAMILLO.] Is it not too far gone? 'Tis time to part them.

He's simple and tells much. [To FLORIZEL.] How now, fair shepherd! Your heart is full of something that does take Your mind from feasting. Sooth, when I was young, And handed love as you do, I was wont To load my she with knacks: I would have ransack'd The pedlar's silken treasure and have pour'd it To her acceptance; you have let him go And nothing marted with him. If your lass Interpretation should abuse and call this Your lack of love or bounty, you were straited For a reply, at least if you make a care Of happy holding her.

Flo. Old sir, I know 368 She prizes not such trifles as these are. The gifts she looks from me are pack'd and lock'd Up in my heart, which I have given already, But not deliver'd. O! hear me breathe my life Before this ancient sir, who, it should seem, Hath sometime lov'd: I take thy hand; this hand, As soft as dove's down, and as white as it, Or Ethiopian's tooth, or the fann'd snow That's bolted by the northern blasts twice o'er. [Pol. What follows this?]

How prettily the young swain seems to wash The hand was fair before! I have put you out: But to your protestation: let me hear What you profess.

Flo. Do, and be witness to't.

Pol. And this my neighbour too?

Flo. And, he, and more Than he, and men, the earth, the heavens, and all; That, were I crown'd the most imperial monarch, Thereof most worthy, were I the fairest youth That ever made eye swerve, had force and knowledge More than was ever man's, I would not prize them Without her love: for her employ them all; Command them and condemn them to her service Or to their own perdition.

393
Act IV, Sc. III.  

THE WINTER'S TALE

POL.  Fairly offer'd.
CAM.  This shows a sound affection.
SHEP.  But, my daughter, 392
Say you the like to him?
PER.  I cannot speak
So well, nothing so well; no, nor mean better:
By the pattern of mine own thoughts I cut out
The purity of his.
SHEP.  Take hands; a bargain; 396
And, friends unknown, you shall bear witness
to 't:
I give my daughter to him, and will make
Her portion equal his.
FLO.  Of that must be 399
I' the virtue of your daughter: one being dead,
I shall have more than you can dream of yet;
Enough then for your wonder. But, come on;
Contract us 'fore these witnesses.
SHEP.  Come, your hand;
And, daughter, yours.
POL.  Soft, swain, awhile, beseech you.
Have you a father?
FLO.  I have; but what of him?
POL.  Knows he of this?
FLO.  He neither does nor shall.
POL.  Methinks a father
Is, at the nuptial of his son, a guest
That best becomes the table. Pray you, once
more,
Is not your father grown incapable
Of reasonable affairs? is he not stupid
With age and altering rheums? can he speak?

hear?

Know man from man? dispute his own estate?
Lies he not bed-rid? and again does nothing
But what he did being childish?
FLO.  No, good sir:
He has his health and ample strength indeed
Than most have of his age.
POL.  By my white beard, 417
You offer him, if this be so, a wrong
Something unfilial. Reason my son
Should choose himself a wife, but as good
reason
The father,—all whose joy is nothing else
But fair posterity,—should hold some counsel
In such a business.
FLO.  I yield all this;
But for some other reasons, my grave sir,
Which 'tis not fit you know, I not acquaint
My father of this business.
POL.  Let him know't.
FLO.  He shall not.
POL.  Prithée, let him.
FLO.  No, he must not.
SHEP.  Let him, my son: he shall not need to
grieve

at knowing of thy choice.
FLO.  Come, come, he must not.
Mark our contract.
POL.  Mark your divorce, young sir,
[Discovering himself.
Whom son I dare not call: thou art too base
To be acknowledg'd: thou a sceptre's heir, 432
That thus assist'st a sheep-hook! Thou old
traitor,
I am sorry that by hanging thee I can
But shorten thy life one week. And thou, fresh
piece
Of excellent witchcraft, who of force must know
The royal fool thou cop'st with,—
SHEP.  O, my heart! 437
POL.  I'll have thy beauty scratch'd with
briers, and made
More homely than thy state. For thee, fond
boy,
If I may ever know thou dost but sigh
That thou'no more shalt see this knack,—as
never.
I mean thou shalt,—we'll bar thee from succes-
sion;
Not hold thee of our blood, no, not our kin,
Far than Deucalion off: mark thou my words:
Follow us to the court. Thou, churl, for this
time,
Though full of our displeasure, yet we free thee
From the dead blow of it. And you, enchant-
ment,—
Worthy enough a herdsman; yea, him too,
That makes himself, but for our honour therein,
Unworthy thee,—if ever henceforth thou
These rural latches to his entrance open,
Or hoop his body more with thy embraces,
I will devise a death as cruel for thee
As thou art tender to't.  [Exit.
PER.  Even here undone!
I was not much afeard; for once or twice
I was about to speak and tell him plainly,
The self-same sun that shines upon his court
Hides not his visage from our cottage, but
Looks on alike. Will't please you, sir, be gone?
I told you what would come of this: beseech
you,
Of your own state take care: this dream of
mine—
Being now awake, I'll queen it no inch further,
But milk my ewes and weep.
CAM.  Why, how now, father!
SPEAK, ere thou diest.
SHEP.  I cannot speak, nor think,
Nor dare to know that which I know. O sir!
You have undone a man of fourscore three,
That thought to fill his grave in quiet, yea,
To die upon the bed my father died, 468
THE WINTER'S TALE

Act IV, Sc. III.

To lie close by his honest bones: but now
Some hangman must put on my shroud and
lay me
Where no priest shovels in dust. O cursed
wretch!
That knew'st this was the prince, and wouldst
adventure
To mingle faith with him. Undone! undone!
If I might die within this hour, I have liv'd
To die when I desire.  
[Exit.

Flo. Why look you so upon me?
I am but sorry, not afraid; delay'd,
But nothing alter'd. What I was, I am:
More straining on for plucking back; not follow
My leash unwillingly.

Cam. Gracious my lord,
You know your father's temper: at this time
He will allow no speech, which I do guess
You do not purpose to him; and as hardly
Will be endure your sight as yet, I fear:
Then, till the fury of his highness settle,
Come not before him.

Flo. I not purpose it.
I think, Camillo?

Cam. Even he, my lord.

Per. How often have I told you 'twould be
thus!

How often said my dignity would last
But till 'twere known!

Flo. It cannot fail but by
The violation of my faith; and then
Let nature crush the sides o' the earth together
And mar the seeds within! Lift up thy looks:
From my succession wipe me, father; I
Am heir to my affection.

Cam. Be advis'd.

Flo. I am; and by my fancy: if my reason
Will thereto be obedient, I have reason;
If not, my senses, better pleas'd with madness,
Do bid it welcome.

Cam. This is desperate, sir.

Flo. So call it; but it does fulfil my vow,
I needs must think it honesty. Camillo,
Not for Bohemia, nor the pomp that may
Be theretofore glean'd, for all the sun sees or
The close earth wombs or the profound sea
hides
In unknown fathoms, will I break my oath
To this my fair belov'd. Therefore, I pray you,
As you have ever been my father's honour'd
friend,
When he shall miss me,—as, in faith, I mean not
To see him any more,—cast your good counsels
Upon his passion: let myself and fortune
Tug for the time to come. This you may know
And so deliver, I am put to sea
With her whom here I cannot hold on shore;
And most opportune to our need, I have
A vessel rides fast by, but not prepar'd
For this design. 'Course I mean to hold
Shall nothing benefit your knowledge, nor
Concern me the reporting.

Cam. O my lord!
I would your spirit were easier for advice,
Or stronger for your need.

Flo. Hark, Perdita. [Takes her aside.
[To CAMILLO.] I'll hear you by and by.

Cam. He's irremovable, 520
Resolv'd for flight. Now were I happy if
His going I could frame to serve my turn,
Save him from danger, do him love and honour,
Purchase the sight again of dear Sicilia
And that unhappy king, my master, whom
I so much thirst to see.

Flo. Now, good Camillo,
I am so fraught with curious business that
I leave out ceremony.

Cam. Sir, I think
You have heard of my poor services, i' the love
That I have borne your father?

Flo. Very nobly
Have you deserv'd: it is my father's music
To speak your deeds, not little of his care
To have them recompens'd as thought on.

Cam. Well, my lord,
If you may please to think I love the king
And through him what's nearest to him, which
is
Your gracious self, embrace but my direction,
If your more ponderous and settled project
May suffer altercation, on mine honour
I'll point you where you shall have such receiv
As shall become your highness; where you may
Enjoy your mistress,—from the whom, I see,
There's no disjuncture to be made, but by,
As, heavens forefend! your ruin,—marry her;
And with my best endeavours in your absence
Your discontenting father strive to qualify,
And bring him up to liking.

Flo. How, Camillo,
May this, almost a miracle, be done?
That I may call thee something more than man,
And, after that trust to thee.

Cam. Have you thought on
A place where to you'll go?

Flo. Not any yet;
But as the unthought-on accident is guilty
To what we wildly do, so we profess
Ourselves to be the slaves of chance and flies
Of every wind that blows.

Cam. Then list to me:
The following; if you will not change your purpose
But undergo this flight, make for Sicilia,
And there present yourself and your fair princess.

For so, I see, she must be,—'fore Leontes;
She shall be abated as it becomes
The partner of your bed. Methinks I see
Leontes opening his free arms and weeping
His welcomes forth; asks thee, the son, forgiveness
As 'twere i' the father's person; kisses the hands
Of your fresh princess; o'er and o'er divides him
'Twixt his unkindness and his kindness; the one
He chides to hell, and bids the other grow
Faster than thought or time.

Worthy Camillo,
What colour for my visitation shall I hold up before him?

Sent by the king your father
To greet him and to give him comforts. Sir,
The manner of your bearing towards him, with
What you as from your father shall deliver,
Things known betwixt us three, I'll write you down:
The which shall point you forth at every sitting
What you must say; that he shall not perceive
But that you have your father's bosom there
And speak his very heart.

I am bound to you.
There is some sap in this.

A course more promising
Than a wild dedication of yourselves
To unpath'd waters, undream'd shores, most certain
To miseries enough: no hope to help you,
But as you shake off one to take another;
Nothing so certain as your anchors, who
Do their best office, if they can but stay you
Where you'll be loath to be. Besides, you know
Prosperity's the very bond of love,
Whose fresh complexion and whose heart togetherness
Affliction alters.

One of these is true:
I think affliction may subdue the cheek,
But not take in the mind.

Yea, say you so?
There shall not at your father's house these seven years
Be born another such.

My good Camillo,
She is as forward of her breeding as she is i' the rear o' her birth.

I cannot say 'tis pity
She lacks instructions, for she seems a mistress
To most that teach.

Your pardon, sir; for this
I'll blush you thanks.

My prettiest Perdita!
But O! the thorns we stand upon. Camillo,
Preserver of my father, now of me,
The med'cine of our house, how shall we do? We are not furnish'd like Bohemia's son,
Nor shall appear in Sicilia.

My lord,
Fear none of this: I think you know my fortunes
Do all lie there: it shall be so my care
To have you royally appointed as if The scene you play were mine. For instance, sir,
That you may know you shall not want, one word.
[They talk aside.

Enter Autolycus.

Au. Ha, ha! what a fool Honesty is! and Trust, his sworn brother, a very simple gentleman! I have sold all my trumpery: not a counterfeit stone, not a riband, glass, pomander, brooch, table-book, ballad, knife, tape, glove, shoe-tie, bracelet, horn-ring, to keep my pack from fasting: they throng who should buy first, as if my trinkets had been hallowed and brought a benediction to the buyer: by which means I saw whose purse was best in picture; and what I saw, to my good use I remembered. My clown,—who wants but something to be a reasonable man,—grew so in love with the wenches' song that he would not stir his pettotes till he had both tune and words; which so drew the rest of the herd to me that all their other senses stuck in ears: you might have pinched a placket, it was senseless; 'twas nothing to geld a codpiece of a purse; I would have filed keys off that hung in chains: no hearing, no feeling, but my sir's song, and admiring the nothing of it; so that, in this time of lethargy I picked and cut most of their festival purses; and had not the old man come in with a whoo-hub against his daughter and the king's son, and scared my choughs from the chaff, I had not left a purse alive in the whole army.

[Camillo, Florizel, and Perdita come forward.

Cam. Nay, but my letters, by this means being there
So soon as you arrive, shall clear that doubt.

Flo. And those that you'll procure from
King Leontes—

Cam. Shall satisfy your father.
THE WINTER'S TALE
Act IV, Sc. III.

Per. Happy be you! All that you speak shows fair. Cam. [Seeing AUTOLYCUS.] Whom have we here? We'll make an instrument of this: omit 640 Nothing may give us aid.

Aut. [Aside.] If they have overheard me now, why, hanging.

Cam. How now, good fellow! Why shakest thou so? Fear not, man; here's no harm intended to thee.

Aut. I am a poor fellow, sir. 647 Cam. Why, be so still; here's nobody will steal that from thee; yet, for the outside of thy poverty we must make an exchange; therefore, disease thee instantly,—thou must think, there's a necessity in 't,—and change garments with this gentleman; though the pennyworth on his side be the worst, yet hold thee, there's some boot.

Aut. I am a poor fellow, sir.—[Aside.] I know ye well enough. 656 Cam. Nay, prithee, dispatch: the gentleman is half slain already.


Aut. Indeed, I have had earnest; but I cannot with conscience take it.

Cam. Unbuckle, unbuckle.— 664 [FLORIZEL and AUTOLYCUS exchange garments.

Fortunate mistress,—let my prophecy Come home to ye!—you must retire yourself Into some covert: take your sweetest's hat And pluck it o'er your brows; muffle your face; Dismantle you, and, as you can, dislike 669 The truth of your own seeming; that you may,— For I do fear eyes over you,—to shipboard Get undescribed.

Per. I see the play so lies That I must bear a part. Cam. No remedy. Have you done there? Flo. Should I now meet my father He would not call me son. Cam. Nay, you shall have no hat. [Giving it to PERDITA.

Come, lady, come. Farewell, my friend. Aut. Adieu, sir. 676 Flo. O Perdita, what have we twain forgot! Pray you, a word. [They conversate apart.

Cam. [Aside.] What I do next shall be to tell the king Of this escape, and whither they are bound; 680 Wherein my hope is I shall so prevail To force him after; in whose company I shall review Sicilia, for whose sight

I have a woman's longing.

Flo. Fortune speed us! 684 Thus we set on, Camillo, to the sea-side.

Cam. The swifter speed the better.

[Exeunt FLORIZEL, PERDITA, and CAMILLO.

Aut. I understand the business; I hear it. To have an open ear, a quick eye, and a nimble hand, is necessary for a cut-purse: a good nose is requisite also, to smell out work for the other senses. I see this is the time that the unjust man doth thrive. What an exchange had this been without boot! what a boot is here with this exchange! Sure, the gods do this year connive at us, and we may do anything extempore. The prince himself is about a piece of iniquity; stealing away from his father with his clog at his heels. If I thought it were a piece of honesty to acquaint the king withal, I would not do't: I hold it the more knavery to conceal it, and therewith I am constant to my profession. Aside, aside: here is more matter for a hot brain. Every lane's end, every shop, church, session, hanging, yields a careful man work. 704

Re-enter Clown and Shepherd.

Clo. See, see, what a man you are now! There is no other way but to tell the king she's a changeling and none of your flesh and blood.

Shep. Nay, but hear me. 708 Clo. Nay, but hear me.

Shep. Go to, then.

Clo. She being none of your flesh and blood, your flesh and blood has not offended the king; and so your flesh and blood is not to be punished by him. Show those things you found about her; those secret things, all but what she has with her: this being done, let the law go whistle: I warrant you.

Shep. I will tell the king all, every word, yea, and his son's pranks too; who, I may say, is no honest man neither to his father nor to me, to go about to make me the king's brother-in-law.

Clo. Indeed, brother-in-law was the furthest off you could have been to him, and then your blood had been the dearer by I know not how much an ounce.

Aut. [Aside] Very wisely, puppies! 727 Shep. Well, let us to the king: there is that in this fardel will make him scratch his beard.

Aut. [Aside.] I know not what impediment this complaint may be to the flight of my master. 733

Clo. Pray heartily he be at palace.

Aut. [Aside.] Though I am not naturally honest, I am so sometimes by chance: let me pocket up my pedlar's excrement. [Takes off
The Winter's Tale

Act IV, Sc. III.

Shep. To the palace, an it like your worship.

Aut. Your affairs there, what, with whom, the condition of that fardel, the place of your dwelling, your names, your ages, of what having, breeding, and anything that is fitting to be known, discover.

Clo. We are but plain fellows, sir.

Aut. A lie; you are rough and hairy. Let me have no lying; it becomes none but tradesmen, and they often give us soldiers the lie; but we pay them for it with stamped coin, not stabbing steel; therefore they do not give us the lie.

Clo. Your worship had like to have given us one, if you had not taken yourself with the manner.

Shep. Are you a courtier, an't like you, sir?

Aut. Whether it like me or no, I am a courtier. Seest thou not the air of the court in these endfoldings? hath not my gait in it the measure of the court? receives not thy nose court-odour from me? reflect I not on thy base-ness court-contempt? Think'st thou, for that I insinuate, or toaze from thee thy business, I am therefore no courtier? I am courtier, cap-a-pe, and one that will either push on or pluck back thy business thence; whereupon I command thee to open thy affair.

Shep. My business, sir, is to the king.

Aut. What advocate hast thou to him?

Shep. I know not, an't like you.

Clo. Advocate's the court-word for a pheasant; say you have none.

Shep. None, sir; I have no pheasant, cock nor hen.

Aut. How bless'd are we that are not simple men!

Yet nature might have made me as these are, therefore I'll not disdain.

Clo. This cannot be but a great courtier.

Shep. His garments are rich, but he wears them not handsomely.

Clo. He seems to be the more noble in being fantastical: a great man, I'll warrant; I know by the picking of his teeth.

Aut. The fardel there? what's i' the fardel? Wherefore that box?

Shep. Sir, there lies such secrets in this fardel and box which none must know but the king; and which he shall know within this hour if I may come to the speech of him.

Aut. Age, thou hast lost thy labour.

Shep. Why, sir?

Aut. The king is not at the palace; he is gone aboard a new ship to purge melancholy and air himself: for, if thou be'st capable of things serious, thou must know the king is full of grief.

Shep. So 'tis said, sir, about his son, that should have married a shepherd's daughter.

Aut. If that shepherd be not now in hand-fast, let him fly: the curses he shall have, the torture he shall feel, will break the back of man, the heart of monster.

Clo. Think you so, sir?

Aut. Not he alone shall suffer what wit can make heavy and vengeance bitter; but those that are germane to him, though removed fifty times, shall all come under the hangman: which though it be great pity, yet it is necessary. An old sheep-whistling rogue, a ram-tender, to offer to have his daughter come into grace! Some say he shall be stoned; but that death is too soft for him, say I: draw our throne into a sheep cotel! all deaths are too few, the sharpest too easy.

Clo. Has the old man e'er a son, sir, do you hear, an't like you, sir?

Aut. He has a son, who shall be flayed alive; then 'nointed over with honey, set on the head of a wasp's nest; then stand till he be three quarters and a dram dead; then recovered again with aqua vitae or some other hot infusion; then, raw as he is, and in the hottest day prophesies and proclamations, shall be set against a brick-wall, the sun looking with a southward eye upon him, where he is to behold him with flies blown to death. But what talk we of these traitorously rascals, whose miseries are to be smiled at, their offences being so capital? Tell me,—for you seem to be honest plain men,—what you have to the king: being something gently considered, I'll bring you where he is aboard, tender your persons to his presence, whisper him in your behalfs; and if it be in man besides the king to effect your suits, here is a man shall do it.

Clo. He seems to be of great authority: close with him, give him gold; and though authority be a stubborn bear, yet he is oft led by the nose with gold. Show the inside of your purse to the outside of his hand, and no more ado. Remember, 'stoned,' and 'flayed alive!'

Shep. An't please you, sir, to undertake the business for us, here is that gold I have: I'll make it as much more and leave this young man in pawn till I bring it you.

Aut. After I have done what I promised?

Shep. Ay, sir.

Aut. Well, give me the moisty. Are you a party in this business?
Clo. In some sort, sir: but though my case be a pitiful one, I hope I shall not be slaved out of it.

Aur. O! that's the case of the shepherd's son: hang him, he'll be made an example. 853

Clo. Comfort, good comfort! we must to the king and show our strange sights: he must know 'tis none of your daughter nor my sister; we are gone else. Sir, I will give you as much as this old man does when the business is performed; and remain, as he says, your pawn till it be brought you. 860

Aur. I will trust you. Walk before toward the sea-side; go on the right hand, I will look upon the hedge and follow you.

Clo. We are blessed in this man, as I may say, even blessed.

Shep. Let's before as he bids us. He was provided to do us good.

[Execut Shepherd and Clown.

Aur. If I had a mind to be honest I see Fortune would not suffer me; she drops boots in my mouth. I am courted now with a double occasion, gold, and a means to do the prince my master good; which who knows how that may turn back to my advancement? I will bring these two moles, these blind ones, aboard him: if he think it fit to shore them again, and that the complaint they have to the king concerns him nothing, let him call me rogue for being so far officious; for I am proof against that title and what shame else belongs to 't. To him will I present them: there may be matter in it.

[Exit.

ACT V.

SCENE I.—Sicilia. A Room in the Palace of Leontes.

Enter Leontes, Cleomenes, Dion, Paulina, and others.

Cleo. Sir, you have done enough, and have perform'd
A saint-like sorrow: no fault could you make
Which you have not redeem'd; indeed, paid down
More penitence than done trespass. At the last,
Do as the heavens have done, forget your evil;
With them forgive yourself.

Leon. Whilst I remember
Her and her virtues, I cannot forget
My blemishes in them, and so still think of
The wrong I did myself; which was so much,
That heireless it hath made my kingdom, and
Destroy'd the sweet'nest companion that ever man
Bred his hopes out of.

Paul. True, too true, my lord; if one by one you wedded all the world,
Or from the all that are took something good,
To make a perfect woman, she you kill'd
Would be unparallel'd.

Leon. I think so. Kill'd! She I kill'd! I did so; but thou strik'st me
Sorely to say I did: it is as bitter
Upon thy tongue as in my thought. Now, good now
Say so but seldom.

Cleo. Not at all, good lady: You might have spoke a thousand things that would
Have done the time more benefit, and grac'd
Your kindness better.

Paul. You are one of those
Would have him wed again.

Dion. If you would not so, you pity not the state, nor the remembrance
Of his most sovereign name; consider little
What dangers, by his highness' fail of issue,
May drop upon his kingdom and devour
Uncertain lookers-on. What were more holy
Than to rejoice the former queen is well?
What holier than for royalty's repair,
For present comfort, and for future good,
To bless the bed of majesty again
With a sweet fellow to 't?

Paul. There is none worthy,
Respecting her that's gone. Besides, the gods
Will have fulfill'd their secret purposes;
For has not the divine Apollo said,
Is't not the tenour of his oracle,
That King Leontes shall not have an heir
Till his lost child be found, which that it shall, is all as monstrous to our human reason
As my Antigonus to break his grave
And come again to me; who, on my life,
Did perish with the infant. 'Tis your counsel 44
My lord should to the heavens be contrary,
Oppose against their wills.—[To Leontes.]

Care not for issue;
The crown will find an heir; great Alexander
Left his to the worthiest, so his successor
Was like to be the best.

Leon. Good Paulina,
Who hast the memory of Hermione,
I know, in honour; Of that ever I
Had squar'd me to thy counsel then, even now,
I might have look'd upon my queen's full eyes,
Have taken treasure from her lips,—

Paul. And left them
More rich, for what they yielded.

Leon. Thou speak'st truth.

No more such wives; therefore, no wife: one worse,
And better us'd, would make her sainted spirit
Again possess her corpse and on this stage,—
Where we're offenders now,—appear soul-vex'd,
And begin, 'Why to me?'

**Paul.** Had she such power, 60

She had just cause.

**Leon.** She had; and would incense me
To murder her I married.

**Paul.** I should so:

Were I the ghost that walk'd, I'd bid you mark
Her eye, and tell me for what dull part in 't 64
You chose her; then I'd shriek, that even your
ears
Should rift to hear me; and the words that
follow'd
Should be 'Remember mine.'

**Leon.** Stars, stars!
And all eyes else dead coals. Fear thou no wife;
I'll have no wife, Paulina.

**Paul.** Will you swear 69
Never to marry but by my free leave?

**Leon.** Never, Paulina: so be bless'd my spirit!

**Paul.** Then, good my lords, bear witness to
his oath.

**Cleo.** You tempt him over much.

**Paul.** Unless another,

As like Hermione as is her picture,
Affront his eye.

**Cleo.** Good madam,—

I have done.

Yet, if my lord will marry,—if you will, sir, 76
No remedy, but you will,—give me the office
To choose you a queen, she shall not be so young
As was your former; but she shall be such
As, walk'd your first queen's ghost, it should
take joy
To see her in your arms.

**Leon.** My true Paulina,
We shall not marry till thou bidd' st us.

**Paul.** That

Shall be when your first queen's again in breath;
Never till then.

**Enter a Gentleman.**

**Gent.** One that gives out himself Prince
Florizel,
Son of Polixenes, with his princess,—she
The fairest I have yet beheld,—desires access
To your high presence.

**Leon.** What with him? he comes not 88
Like to his father's greatness; his approach,
So out of circumstance and sudden, tells us
'Tis not a visitation fram'd, but forc'd
By need and accident. What train?

**Gent.** But few, 92
And those but mean.

**Leon.** His princess, say you, with him?

**Gent.** Ay, the most peerless piece of earth, I
think.

That e'er the sun shone bright on.

**Paul.** O Hermione!

As every present time doth boast itself
Above a better gone, so must thy grave
Give way to what's seen now. Sir, you yourself
Have said and writ so,—but your writing now
Is colder than that theme,—'She had not been,
Nor was not to be equal'd;' thus your verse 107
Flow'd with her beauty ones: 'tis shrewdly ebb'd
To say you have seen a better.

**Gent.** Pardon, madam:
The one I have almost forgot—your pardon—
The other, when she has obtain'd your eye, 105
Will have your tongue too. This is a creature,
Would she begin a sect, might quench the zeal
Of all professors else, make proselytes 108
Of who she but bid follow.

**Paul.** How! not women?

**Gent.** Women will love her, that she is a
woman
More worth than any man; men, that she is
The rarest of all women.

**Leon.** Go, Cleomenes; 112
Yourself, assisted with your honour'd friends,
Bring them to our embracement. Still 'tis
strange,
[Exit CLEOMENES, Lords, and Gentleman.

He thus should steal upon us.

**Paul.** Had our prince—

Jewel of children—seen this hour, he had pair'd
Well with this lord: there was not full a month
Between their births.

**Leon.** Priithee, no more: cease! thou know'st
He dies to me again when talk'd of: sure, 120
When I shall see this gentleman, thy speeches
Will bring me to consider that which may
Unfurnish me of reason. They are come.

Re-enter CLEOMENES, with FLORIZEL, PERTITA,
and Others.

Your mother was most true to wedlock, prince;
For she did print your royal father off, 125
Conceiving you. Were I but twenty-one,
Your father's image is so hit in you,
His very air, that I should call you brother, 128
As I did him; and speak of something wildly
By us perform'd before. Most dearly welcome!
And you, fair princess,—goddess! O, alas!
I lost a couple, that 'twixt heaven and earth 132
Might thus have stood begetting wonder as
You, gracious couple, do: and then I lost—
All mine own folly—the society,

Amity too, of your brave father, whom, 136
Though bearing misery, I desire my life
Once more to look on him.

Flo. By his command
Have I here touch’d Sicilin; and from him
Give you all greetings that a king, at friend,
Can send his brother: and, but infirmity,—
Which waits upon worn times,—hath some-
thing seiz’d
His wish’d ability, he had himself
The land and waters ‘twist your throne and his
Measur’d to look upon you, whom he loves—
He bade me say so—more than all the scep-
tres
And those that bear them living.

Leon. O, my brother!—
Good gentleman,—the wrongs I have done thes
stir
Afresh within me, and these thy offices
So rarely kind, are as interpreters
Of my behind-hand slackness! Welcome hither,
As is the spring to the earth. And hath he too
Expos’d this paragon to the fearful usage—
At least ungentle,—of the dreadful Neptune,
To greet a man not worth her pains, much less
The adventure of her person?

Flo. Good my lord,
She came from Libya.

Leon. Where the war-like Smalus,
That noble honour’d lord, is fear’d and lov’d?

Flo. Most royal sir, from thence; from him,
Whose daughter
His tears proclaim’d his, parting with her:
thence—
A prosperous south-wind friendly—we have
cross’d,
To execute the charge my father gave me
For visiting your highness: my best train
I have from your Sicilian shores dismiss’d;
Who for Bohemia bend, to signify
Not only my success in Libya, sir,
But my arrival and my wife’s, in safety
Here where we are.

Leon. The blessed gods
Purse all infection from our air whilst you
Do climate here! You have a holy father,
A graceful gentleman; against whose person,
So sacred as it is, I have done sin:
For which the heavens, taking angry note,
Have left me issueless; and your father’s
bless’d—
As he from heaven merits it—with you,
Worthy his goodness. What might I have been,
Might I a son and daughter now have look’d on,
Such goodly things as you!  

Enter a Lord.

Lord. Most noble sir,
That which I shall report will bear no credit,
Were not the proof so nigh. Please you, great
sir,
Bohemia greets you from himself by me;
Desires you to attach his son, who has—
His dignity and duty both cast off—
Fled from his father, from his hopes, and with
A shepherd’s daughter.


Lord. Here in your city; I now came from
him:
I speak amazedly, and it becomes
My marvel and my message. To your court
While he was hastening,—in the chase it seems
Of this fair couple,—meets he on the way
The father of this seeming lady and
Her brother, having both their country quitte
With this young prince.

Flo. Camillo has betray’d me; he has
Whose honour and whose honesty till now
Endur’d all weathers.

Lord. Lay’t so to his charge:
He’s with the king your father.

Leon. Who? Camillo?  

Lord. Camillo, sir: I spake with him, who
now
Has these poor men in question. Never saw I
Wretches so quake: they kneel, they kiss the
earth,
Forswear themselves as often as they speak: 200
Bohemia stops his ears, and threatens them
With divers deaths in death.

Per. O my poor father!
The heaven sets spies upon us, will not have
Our contract celebrated.

Leon. You are married? 204
Flo. We are not, sir, nor are we like to be;
The stars, I see, will kiss the valleys first:
The odds for high and low’s alike.

Leon. My lord,
Is this the daughter of a king?

Flo. She is,
When once she is my wife.

Leon. That ‘once,’ I see, by your good
father’s speed,
Will come on very slowly. I am sorry,
Most sorry, you have broken from his hiking
Where you were tied in duty; and as sorry
Your choice is not so rich in worth as beauty,
That you might well enjoy her.

Flo. Dear, look up:
Though Fortune, visible an enemy,
Should chase us with my father, power no jot
Hath she to change our loves. Beseech you, sir,
Remember since you ow’d no more to time
Than I do now; with thought of such affections,
Step forth mine advocate; at your request my father will grant precious things as trifles.

Leon. Would he do so, I'd beg your precious mistress,
Which he counts but a trifle.

Paul. Sir, my liege, your eye hath too much youth in't: not a month
'Fore your queen died, she was more worth such gazes
Than what you look on now.

Leon. I thought of her,
Even in these looks I made. [To Florizel.]

But your petition is yet unanswered. I will to your father:
Your honour not o'erthrown by your desires,
I am friend to them and you; upon which errand
I now go toward him. Therefore follow me, and mark what way I make: come, good my lord. [Exeunt.

SCENE II.—The Same. Before the Palace.

Enter Autolycus and a Gentleman.

Aut. Beseech you, sir, were you present at this relation?

Gent. I was by at the opening of the fardel, heard the old shepherd deliver the manner how he found it: whereupon, after a little amazement, we were all commanded out of the chamber; only this methought I heard the shepherd say, he found the child.

Aut. I would most gladly know the issue of it.

Gent. I make a broken delivery of the business; but the changes I perceived in the king and Camillo were very notes of admiration: they seemed almost, with staring on one another, to tear the cases of their eyes; there was speech in their dumbness, language in their very gesture; they looked as they had heard of a world ransomed, or one destroyed: a notable passion of wonder appeared in them; but the wisest beholder, that knew no more but seeing, could not say if the importance were joy or sorrow; but in the extremity of the one it must needs be.

Enter another Gentleman.

Here comes a gentleman that haply knows more. The news, Rogero?

Sec. Gent. Nothing but bonfires: the oracle is fulfilled; the king's daughter is found: such a deal of wonder is broken out within this hour that ballad-makers cannot be able to express it.

Enter a third Gentleman.

Here comes the lady Paulina's steward: he can deliver you more. How goes it now, sir? this news which is called true is so like an old tale, that the verity of it is in strong suspicion: has the king found his heir?

Third Gent. Most true, if ever truth were pregnant by circumstance: that which you hear you'll swear you see, there is such unity in the proofs. The mantle of Queen Hermione, her jewel about the neck of it, the letters of Antigonus found with it, which they know to be his character; the majesty of the creature in resemblance of the mother, the affection of nobleness which nature shows above her breeding, and many other evidences proclaim her with all certainty to be the king's daughter. Did you see the meeting of the two kings?

Sec. Gent. No.

Third Gent. Then have you lost a sight, which was to be seen, cannot be spoken of. There might you have beheld one joy crown another, so, and in such manner that, it seemed, sorrow wept to take leave of them, for their joy waded in tears. There was casting up of eyes, holding up of hands, with countenances of such distraction that they were to be known by garment, not by favour. Our king, being ready to leap out of himself for joy of his found daughter, as if that joy were now become a loss, cries, 'O, thy mother, thy mother!' then asks Bohemia forgiveness; then embraces his son-in-law; then again worries he his daughter with clipping her; now he thanks the old shepherd, which stands by like a weather-bitten conduit of many kings' reigns. I never heard of such another encounter, which lames report to follow it and undoes description to do it.

Sec. Gent. What, pray you, became of Antigonus that carried hence the child?

Third Gent. Like an old tale still, which will have matter to rehearse, though credit be asleep and not an ear open. He was torn to pieces with a bear: this avouches the shepherd's son, who has not only his innocence—which seems much—to justify him, but a handkerchief and rings of his that Paulina knows.

First Gent. What became of his bark and his followers?

Third Gent. Wrecked, the same instant of their master's death, and in the view of the shepherd: so that all the instruments which aided to expose the child were even then lost when it was found. But, O! the noble combat that twixt joy and sorrow was fought in Paulina. She had one eye declined for the loss of her husband,
another elevated that the oracle was fulfilled: she lifted the princess from the earth, and so locks her in embracing, as if she would pin her to her heart that she might no more be in danger of losing.

First Gent. The dignity of this act was worth the audience of kings and princes, for by such was it acted.

Third Gent. One of the prettiest touches of all, and that which angled for mine eyes,—caught the water though not the fish,—was when at the relation of the queen's death, with the manner how she came to it,—bravely confessed and lamented by the king,—how attentiveness wounded his daughter; till, from one sign of dolour to another, she did, with an 'alas!' I would fain say, bleed tears, for I am sure my heart wept blood. Who was most marble there changed colour; some wounded, all sorrowed: if all the world could have seen't, the wo had been universal.

First Gent. Are they returned to the court?

Third Gent. No; the princess bearing of her mother's statue, which is in the keeping of Paulina—a piece many years in doing, and now newly performed by that rare Italian master, Giulio Romano; who, had he himself eternity and could put breath into his work, would beguile Nature of her custom, so perfectly he is her ape: he so near to Hermione hath done Hermione that they say one would speak to her and stand in hope of answer: thither with all greediness of affection are they gone, and there they intend to sup.

Sec. Gent. I thought she had some great matter there in hand, for she hath privately, twice or thrice a day, ever since the death of Hermione, visited that removed house. Shall we thither and with our company piece the rejoicing?

First Gent. Who would be thence that has the benefit of access? every wunk of an eye some new grace will be born: our absence makes us unthrift to our knowledge. Let's along.

[Exeunt Gentlemen.

Art. Now, had I not the dash of my former life in me, would preferment drop on my head. I brought the old man and his son aboard the prince; told him I heard them talk of a faridel and I know not what; but he at that time, over-fond of the shepherd's daughter,—so he then took her to be,—who began to be much sea-sick, and himself little better, extremity of weather continuing, this mystery remained undiscovered. But 'tis all one to me; for had I been the finder out of this secret, it would not have relished among my other discredit. Here come those

I have done good to against my will, and already appearing in the blossoms of their fortune.

Enter Shepherd and Clown.

Shep. Come, boy; I am past moe children, but thy sons and daughters will be all gentleman born.

Clo. You are well met, sir. You denied to fight with me this other day, because I was no gentleman born: see you these clothes? say, you see them not and think me still no gentleman born: you were best say these robes are not gentleman born. Give me the lie, do, and try whether I am not now gentleman born.

Art. I know you are now, sir, a gentleman born.

Clo. Ay, and have been so any time these four hours.

Shep. And so have I, boy.

Clo. So you have: but I was a gentleman born before my father; for the king's son took me by the hand and called me brother; and then the two kings called my father brother; and then the prince my brother and the princess my sister called my father father; and so we wept: and there was the first gentleman-like tears that ever we shed.

Shep. We may live, son, to shed many more.

Clo. Ay; or else 'twere hard luck, being in so preposterous estate as we are.

Art. I humbly beseech you, sir, to pardon me all the faults I have committed to your worship, and to give me your good report to the prince my master.

Shep. Prithee, son, do; for we must be gentle, now we are gentlemen.

Clo. Thou wilt amend thy life?

Art. Ay, an it like your good worship.

Clo. Give me thy hand: I will swear to the prince thou art as honest a true fellow as any is in Bohemia.

Shep. You may say it, but not swear it.

Clo. Not swear it, now I am a gentleman? Let boors and franklins say it, I'll swear it.

Shep. How if it be false, son?

Clo. If it be ne'er so false, a true gentleman may swear it in the behalf of his friend: and I'll swear to the prince thou art a tall fellow of thy hands and that thou wilt not be drunk; but I know thou art no tall fellow of thy hands and that thou wilt be drunk: but I'll swear it, and I would thou wouldst be a tall fellow of thy hands.

Art. I will prove so, sir, to my power.

Clo. Ay, by any means prove a tall fellow: if I do not wonder how thou darest venture to
THE WINTER'S TALE

be drunk, not being a tall fellow, trust me not. Hark! the kings and the princes, our kindred, are going to see the queen's picture. Come, follow us: we'll be thy good masters. 197

[Exeunt.]

SCENE III.—The Same. A Chapel in Paulina's House.

Enter Leontes, Polixenes, Florizel, Perdita, Camillo, Paulina, Lords, and Attendants.

Leon. O grave and good Paulina, the great comfort That I have had of thee!

Paul. What, sovereign sir, I did not well, I meant well. All my services You have paid home; but that you have vouch-saf'd, With your crown'd brother and these your contracted Heirs of your kingdoms, my poor house to visit, It is a surplus of your grace, which never My life may last to answer.

Leon. O Paulina! 8 We honour you with trouble: but we came To see the statue of your queen: your gallery Have we pass'd through, not without much content In many singularities, but we saw not That which my daughter came to look upon, The statue of her mother.

Paul. As she liv'd peerless, So her dead likeness, I do well believe, Exceals whatever yet you look'd upon Or hand of man hath done; therefore I keep it Lonely, apart. But here it is: prepare To see the life as lively mock'd as ever Still sleep mock'd death: behold! and say 'tis well.

[Paulina draws back a curtain, and discovers Hermione as a statue.]

I like your silence: it the more shows off Your wonder; but yet speak: first you, my liege. Comes it not something near?

Leon. Her natural posture! Chide me, dear stone, that I may say, indeed Thou art Hermione; or rather, thou art she In thy not chiding, for she was as tender As infancy and grace. But yet, Paulina, Hermione was not so much wrinkled; nothing So aged as this seems.

Pol. O! not by much. 29

Paul. So much the more our carver's excellence;

Which lets go by some sixteen years and makes her As she liv'd now.

Leon. As now she might have done, 32 So much to my good comfort, as it is Now piercing to my soul. O! thus she stood, Even with such life of majesty,—warm life, As now it coldly stands,—when first I woo'd her.

I am asham'd: does not the stone rebuke me 37 For being more stone than it? O, royal piece! There's magic in thy majesty, which has My evils conjur'd to remembrance, and From thy admiring daughter took the spirits, Standing like stone with thee.

Per. And give me leave, And do not say 'tis superstition, that I kneel and then implore her blessing. Lady, 44 Dear queen, that ended when I but began, Give me that hand of yours to kiss.

Paul. O, patience! The statue is but newly fix'd, the colour's Not dry.

Cam. My lord, your sorrow was too sore laid on, Which sixteen winters cannot blow away, So many summers dry: scarce any joy Did ever so long live: no sorrow But kill'd itself much sooner.

Pol. Dear my brother, Let him that was the cause of this have power To take off so much grief from you as he Will piece up in himself.

Paul. Indeed, my lord, 56 If I had thought the sight of my poor image Would thus have wrought you,—for the stone is mine,— I'd not have show'd it.

Paul. No longer shall you gaze on't, lest your fancy May think anon it moves.

Leon. Let be, let be! Would I were dead, but that, methinks, already— What was he that did make it? See, my lord, Would you not deem it breath'd, and that those veins Did verily bear blood?

Pol. Masterly done:
The very life seems warm upon her lip.

Leon. The fixture of her eye has motion in't, As we are mock'd with art.
THE WINTER'S TALE  

Act V, Sc. III.

Paul. I'll draw the curtain; 68
My lord, he's almost so far transported that
He'll think anon it lives.

Leon. O sweet Paulina!
Make me to think so twenty years together:
No settled sense of the world can match
The pleasure of that madness. Let it alone.

Paul. I am sorry, sir, I have thus far sturr'd
you; but
I could affect you further.

Leon. Do, Paulina;
For this affliction has a taste as sweet
As any cordial comfort. Still, methinks,
There is an air comes from her: what fine
chisel
Could ever yet cut breath? Let no man mock
me,
For I will kiss her.

Paul. Good my lord, forbear. 80
The ruddiness upon her lip is wet:
You'll mar it if you kiss it; stain your own
With oily painting. Shall I draw the cur-
tain?

Leon. No, not these twenty years.

Per. So long could I 84
Stand by, a looker-on.

Paul. Either forbear,
Quit presently the chapel, or resolve you
For more amazement. If you can behold it,
I'll make the statue move indeed, descend,
And take you by the hand; but then you'll
think,—
Which I protest against,—I am assisted
By wicked powers.

Leon. What you can make her do,
I am content to look on: what to speak,
I am content to hear; for 'tis as easy
To make her speak as move.

Paul. It is requir'd
You do awake your faith. Then, all stand
still;
Or those that think it is unlawful business
I am about, let them depart.

Leon. Proceed:
No foot shall stir.

'Tis time; descend; be stone no more: approach;
Strike all that look upon with marvel. Come;
I'll fill your grave up: stir; nay, come away; 101
Bequeath to death your numbness, for from
him
Dear life redeems you. You perceive she stirs:

[HERMIONE comes down.

Start not; her actions shall be holy as
You hear my spell is lawful: do not shun
her

Until you see her die again, for then
You kill her double. Nay, present your hand:
When she was young you wo'd her; now in
age
Is she become the suitor!

Leon. [Embracing her.] O! she's warm.
If this be magic, let it be an art
Lawful as eating.

Pol. She embraces him.

Cam. She hangs about his neck:
112
If she pertain to life let her speak too.

Pol. Ay; and make't manifest where she has
liv'd,
Or how stol'n from the dead.

Paul. That she is living,
Were it but told you, should be hooted at
Like an old tale; but it appears she lives,
Though yet she speak not. Mark a little
while.

Please you to interpose, fair madam. kneel
And pray your mother's blessing. Turn, good
lady;

Our Perdita is found.

[Presenting PERDITA, who kneels to
HERMIONE.

Her. You gods, look down,
And from your sacred vials pour your graces
Upon my daughter's head! Tell me, mine
own,
Where hast thou been preserv'd? where liv'd? how found
124
Thy father's court? for thou shalt hear that I,
Knowing by Paulina that the oracle
Gave hope thou wast in being, have preserv'd
Myself to see the issue.

Paul. There's time enough for that; 128
Lest they desire upon this push to trouble
Your joys with like relation. Go together,
You precious winners all: your exultation
Partake to every one. I, an old turtle, 132
Will wing me to some wither'd bough, and there
My mate, that's never to be found again,
Lament till I am lost.

Leon. O! peace, Paulina.

Thou should'st a husband take by my con-
sent,

As I by thine a wife: this is a match,
And made between's by vows. Thou hast found
mine;
But how, is to be question'd; for I saw her,
As I thought dead, and have in vain said
many
140
A prayer upon her grave. I'll not seek far,—
For him, I partly know his mind,—to find
thee
An honourable husband. Come, Camillo,
Act V, Sc. III.  THE WINTER'S TALE

And take her by the hand; whose worth and honesty
Is richly noted, and here justified
By us, a pair of kings. Let's from this place.
What! look upon my brother: both your pardons,
That e'er I put between your holy looks

My ill suspicion. This' your son-in-law,
And son unto the king,—whom heavens directing,
Is troth-plight to your daughter. Good Paulina,
Lead us from hence, where we may leisurely
Each one demand and answer to his part
Perform'd in this wide gap of time since first
We were dissever'd: hastily lead away. [Exeunt.]
THE LIFE AND DEATH OF KING JOHN

DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

KING JOHN.
PRINCE HENRY, Son to the King.
ARTHUR, Duke of Britaine, Nephew to the King.
THE EARL OF PEMBROKE.
THE EARL OF ESSEX.
THE EARL OF SALISBURY.
THE LORD BIGOT.
HUBERT DE BURGH.
ROBERT FAUCONBRIDGE, Son to Sir Robert Faulconbridge.
PHILIP THE BASTARD, his half-brother.
JAMES GURNEY, Servant to Lady Faulconbridge.
PETER OF POMFRET, a Prophet.

PHILIP, King of France.
LEWIS, the Dauphin.
LYMOGES, Duke of Austria.
CARDINAL PANDULPH, the Pope's Legate.
MELUN, a French Lord.
CHATILLON, Ambassador from France.

QUEEN ELINOR, Mother to King John.
CONSTANCE, Mother to Arthur.
BLANCH OF SPAIN, Niece to King John.
LADY FAUCONBRIDGE.

Lords, Ladies, Citizens of Angiers, Sheriff, Heralds, Officers, Soldiers, Messengers, and other Attendants.

SCENE.—Sometimes in England, and sometimes in France.

ACT I.

SCENE I.—A Room of State in the Palace.
Enter King John, Queen Elinor, Pembroke, Essex, Salisbury, and Others, with Chatillon.

K. John. Now, say, Chatillon, what would France with us?
Chat. Thus, after greeting, speaks the King of France,
In my behaviour, to the majesty,
The borrow'd majesty of England here.  
Eli. A strange beginning; 'borrow'd majesty!'  
K. John. Silence, good mother; hear the embassy.
Chat. Philip of France, in right and true behalf
Of thy deceased brother Geoffrey's son,
Arthur Plantagenet, lays most lawful claim
To this fair island and the territories,
To Ireland, Poictiers, Anjou, Touraine, Maine;
Desiring thee to lay aside the sword
Which sways usurpingly these several titles,
And put the same into young Arthur's hand,
Thy nephew and right royal sovereign.
K. John. What follows if we disallow of this?
Chat. The proud control of fierce and bloody war,
To enforce these rights so forcibly withheld.

K. John. Here have we war for war, and blood for blood,
Controlment for controlment: so answer France.
Chat. Then take my king's defiance from my mouth,
The furthest limit of my embassy.
K. John. Bear mine to him, and so depart in peace:
Be thou as lightning in the eyes of France;
For ere thou canst report I will be there,
The thunder of my cannon shall be heard.
So, hence! Be thou the trumpet of our wrath
And sullen pressage of your own decay.
An honourable conduct let him have:
Pembroke, look to't. Farewell, Chatillon.
[Exeunt Chatillon and Pembroke.
Eli. What now, my son! have I not ever said
How that ambitious Constance would not cease
Till she had kindled France and all the world
Upon the right and party of her son?
This might have been prevented and made whole
With very easy arguments of love,
Which now the manage of two kingdoms must
With fearful bloody issue arbitrate.
K. John. Our strong possession and our right
For us.
Eli. Your strong possession much more than your right,
Or else it must go wrong with you and me:
Enter a Sheriff, who whispers Essex.

Essex. My liege, here is the strangest controversy.


Our abbeys and our priories shall pay This expedition's charge.

Re-enter Sheriff, with Robert Faulconbridge and Philip, his Bastard Brother.

What men are you?

Bast. Your faithful subject I, a gentleman
Born in Northamptonshire, and eldest son,
As I suppose, to Robert Faulconbridge, A soldier, by the honour-giving hand
Of Cœur-de-Lion knighted in the field.

K. John. What art thou?

Rob. The son and heir to that same Faulconbridge. K. John. Is that thee, and art thou the heir? You came not of one mother then, it seems.

Bast. Most certain of one mother, mighty king,
That is well known: and, as I think, one father:
But for the certain knowledge of that truth I put you o'er to heaven and to my mother:
Of that I doubt, as all men's children may.

Eli. Out on thee, rude man! thou dost shame thy mother
And wound her honour with this defiance.

Bast. I, madam? no, I have no reason for it;
That is my brother's plea and none of mine:
The which if he can prove, 'a' pops me out
At least from fair five hundred pound a year:
Heaven guard my mother's honour and my land!

K. John. A good blunt fellow. Why, being younger born,
Doth he lay claim to thine inheritance?

Bast. I know not why, except to get the land.
But once he slander'd me with bastardy:
But who'er I be as true-begot or no,
That still I lay upon my mother's head;
But that I am as well-begot, my liege,—
Fair fall the bones that took the pains for me!—
Compare our faces and be judge yourself.
If old Sir Robert did beget us both,
And were our father, and this son like him;
O old Sir Robert, father, on my knee
I give heaven thanks I was not like to thee!

K. John. Why, what a madcap hath heaven lent us here!

Eli. He hath a trick of Cœur-de-Lion's face;
The accent of his tongue affecteth him.
And like thy brother, to enjoy thy land,
Or the reputed son of Coeur-de-Lion,
Lord of thy presence and no land beside?
Bast. Madam, an if my brother had my shape,
And I had his, Sir Robert his, like him;
And if my legs were two such riding-rods,
My arms such eel-skins stuff’d, my face so thin
That in mine ear I durst not stick a rose
Lest men should say, ‘Look, where three—far—things goes!’
And, to his shape, were heir to all this land,
Would I might never stir from off this place,
I’d give it every foot to have this face:
I would not be Sir Nob in any case.

Elr. I like thee well: wilt thou forsake thy fortune,
Bequeath thy land to him, and follow me?
I am a soldier and now bound to France.
Bast. Brother, take you my land, I’ll take my chance.
Your face hath got five hundred pounds a year,
Yet sell your face for five pence and ‘tis dear.
Madam, I’ll follow you unto the death.

Elr. Nay, I would have you go before me thither.
Bast. Our country manners give our betters way.

K. John. What is thy name?
Bast. Philip, my liege, so is my name begun;
Philip, good old Sir Robert’s wife’s eldest son.
K. John. From henceforth bear his name
whose form thou bearest:
Kneel thou down Philip, but arise more great;
Arise Sir Richard, and Plantagenet.
Bast. Brother by the mother’s side, give me your hand:
My father gave me honour, yours gave land.
Now blessed be the hour, by night or day,
When I was got, Sir Robert was away.
Elr. The very spirit of Plantagenet!
I am thy grandson, Richard: call me so.

Bast. Madam, by chance but not by truth;
what though?
Something about, a little from the right,
In at the window, or else o’er the hatch:
Who dares not stir by day must walk by night,
And have is have, however men do catch.
Near or far off, well won is still well shot,
And I am the way, how’er I was begot.

K. John. Go, Faulconbridge: now hast thou thy desire;
A landless knight makes thee a landed squire.
Come, madam, and come, Richard: we must speed
For France, for France, for it is more than need.

Bast. Brother, adieu: good fortune come to thee!

For thou wast got i’ the way of honesty.
[Exeunt all but the BASTARD.
A foot of honour better than I was,
But many a many foot of land the worse.
Well, now can I make any Joan a lady.
‘Good den, Sir Richard! ’ God-a-mercy, fellow!
And if his name be George, I’ll call him Peter;
For new-made honour doth forget men’s names;
’Tis too respective and too sociable
For your conversion. Now your traveller,
He and his toothpick at my worship’s mess,
And when my knightly stomach is suffic’d,
Why then I suck my teeth, and catechize
My picked man of countries: ‘My dear sir,—’
Thus, leaning on mine elbow, I begin,—
‘I shall beseech you,’—that is question now;
And then comes answer like an abbey-book
‘O, sir,’ says answer, ‘at your best command;
At your employment; at your service, sir:’
‘No, sir,’ says question, ‘I, sweet sir, at yours:’
And so, ere answer knows what question would,
Saving in dialogue of compliment,
And talking of the Alps and Apennines,
The Pyrenean and the river Po,
It draws toward supper in conclusion so.
But this is worshipful society
And fits the mounting spirit like myself;
For he is but a bastard to the time,
That doth not smack of observation;
And so am I, whether I smack or no;
And not alone in habit and device,
Exterior form, outward accoutrement,
But from the inward motion to deliver
Sweet, sweet, sweet poison for the age’s tooth:
Which, though I will not practise to deceive,
Yet, to avoid deceit, I mean to learn;
For it shall strew the footsteps of my rising.
But who comes in such haste in riding-robes?
What woman-post is this? hath she no husband
That will take pains to blow a horn before her?

Enter Lady Faulconbridge and James Gurney.
O me! it is my mother. How now, good lady!
What brings you here to court so hastily?
Lady F. Where is that slave, thy brother?
That holds in chase mine honour up and down?
Bast. My brother Robert? old Sir Robert’s son?
Colbrand the giant, that same mighty man?
Is it Sir Robert’s son that you seek so?
Lady F. Sir Robert’s son! Ay, thou unreverend boy,
Sir Robert’s son: why scorn’st thou at Sir Robert?
He is Sir Robert’s son, and so art thou.

_Bast._ James Gurney, wilt thou give us leave awhile?

_Gur._ Good leave, good Philip.

_Bast._ Philip! sparrow! James, There’s toys abroad: anon I’ll tell thee more.

[Exit GURNEY.

Madam, I was not old Sir Robert’s son: 233
Sir Robert might have eat his part in me
Upon Good-Friday and ne’er broke his fast.
Sir Robert could do well: marry, to confess, 236
Could he get me? Sir Robert could not do it:
We know his handiwork: therefore, good mother,
To whom am I beholding for these limbs?
Sir Robert never holp to make this leg. 240

_Lady F._ Hast thou conspired with thy brother too,
That for thine own gain shouldst defend mine honour?

What means this scorn, thou most untoward knave?

_Bast._ Knight, knight, good mother, Basilo-co-like. 244

What! I am dubb’d; I have it on my shoulder.
But, mother, I am not Sir Robert’s son;
I have disclaim’d Sir Robert and my land;
Legitimation, name, and all is gone. 248
Then, good my mother, let me know my father;
Some proper man, I hope; who was it, mother?

_Lady F._ Hast thou denied thyself a Faulconbridge?

_Bast._ As faithfully as I deny the devil. 252

_Lady F._ King Richard Cœur-de-Lion was thy father:
By long and vehement suit I was seduc’d
To make room for him in my husband’s bed.
Heaven lay not my transgression to my charge!
Thou art the issue of my dear offence, 257
Which was so strongly urg’d past my defence.

_Bast._ Now, by this light, were I to get again,
Madam, I would not wish a better father. 260
Some sins do bear their privilege on earth,
And so doth yours; your fault was not your folly:
Needs must you lay your heart at his dispose,
Subjected to commanding love. 264
Against whose fury and unmatched force
The aweless lion could not wage the fight,
Nor keep his princely heart from Richard’s hand.

He that perfice robs lions of their hearts 268
May easily win a woman’s. Ay, my mother,
With all my heart I thank thee for my father!
Who lives and dares but say thou didst not well
When I was got, I’ll send his soul to hell. 272

Come, lady, I will show thee to my kin;
And they shall say, when Richard me begot,
If thou hadst said him nay, it had been sin:
Who says it was, he lies: I say, ’twas not. 276
[Exeunt.

ACT II.

SCENE I.—France. Before the Walls of Angiers.

_Enter, on one side, the DUKE OF AUSTRIA, and Forces; on the other, PHILIP, King of France, and Forces, LEWIS, CONSTANCE, ARTHUR, and Attendants._

_K.Ph._ Before Angiers well met, brave Austria.
Arthur, that great forerunner of thy blood,
Richard, that robb’d the lion of his heart
And fought the holy wars in Palestine,
By this brave duke came early to his grave:
And, for amends to his posterity,
At our importance hither is he come,
To spread his colours, boy, in thy behalf,
And to rebuke the usurpation
Of thy unnatural uncle, English John:
Embrace him, love him, give him welcome hither.

_Arth._ God shall forgive you Cœur-de-Lion’s death
The rather that you give his offspring life,
Shadowing their right under your wings of war.
I give you welcome with a powerless hand,
But with a heart full of unstained love:
Welcome before the gates of Angiers, duke.

_K. Phi._ A noble boy! Who would not do thee right?

_Aust._ Upon thy cheek lay I this zealous kiss,
As seal to this indenture of my love,
That to my home I will no more return
Till Angiers, and the right thou hast in France,
Together with that pale, that white-fac’d shore,
Whose foot spurs back the ocean’s roaring tides
And coops from other lands her islanders,
Even till that England, hedg’d in with the main,
That water-walled bulwark, still secure
And confident from foreign purposes,
Even till that utmost corner of the west
Salute thee for her king: till then, fair boy,
Will I not think of home, but follow arms.

_Const._ O! take his mother’s thanks, a widow’s thanks,
Till your strong hand shall help to give him strength
To make a more requital to your love.

_Aust._ The peace of heaven is theirs that lift their swords
In such a just and charitable war.
Against the brows of this resisting town.
Call for our chiefest men of discipline,
To cull the plots of best advantages:
We'll lay before this town our royal bones,
Wade to the market-place in Frenchmen's blood,
But we will make it subject to this boy.

Const. Stay for an answer to your embassy,
Lest unadvis'd you stam your swords with blood.
My Lord Chatillon may from England bring
That right in peace which here we urge in war;
And then we shall repent each drop of blood
That hot rash haste so indirectly shed.

Enter Chatillon.

K. Phi. A wonder, lady! lo, upon thy wish,
Our messenger, Chatillon, is arriv'd!
What England says, say briefly, gentle lord; 52
We coldly pause for thee; Chatillon, speak.

Chat. Then turn your forces from this paltry siege
And stir them up against a mightier task.
England, impatient of your just demands, 56
Hath put himself in arms: the adverse winds,
Whose leisure I have stay'd, have given him time
To land his legions all as soon as I;
His marches are expedient to this town,
His forces strong, his soldiers confident.
With him along is come the mother-queen,
An Ate, stirring him to blood and strife;
With her her niece, the Lady Blanch of Spain;
With them a bastard of the king's deceas'd; 65
And all the unsettled humours of the land,
Rash, inconsiderate, fiery voluntaries,
With ladys' faces and fierce dragons' spleens, 68
Have sold their fortunes at their native homes,
Bearing their birthrights proudly on their backs,
To make a hazard of new fortunes here.
In brief, a braver choice of dauntless spirits
Than now the English bottoms have waft o'er
Did never float upon the swelling tide,
To do offence and scathe in Christendom.
[Drums heard within.]
The interruption of their churlish drums
Cuts off more circumstance: they are at hand,
To parley or to fight; therefore prepare.

K. Phi. How much unlook'd for is this expedition!

Aust. By how much unexpected, by so much
We must awake our endeavours for defence,
For courage mounteth with occasion:
Let them be welcome then, we are prepar'd.

Enter King John, Elinor, Blanch, the Bastard, Lords, and Forces.

K. John. Peace be to France, if France in peace permit
Our just and lineal entrance to our own;
If not, bleed France, and peace ascend to heaven,
While we, God's wrathful agent, do correct
Their proud contempt that beats his peace to heaven.

K. Phi. Peace be to England, if that war return
From France to England, there to live in peace.
England we love; and, for that England's sake
With burden of our armour here we sweat: 92
This toil of ours should be a work of thine;
But thou from loving England art so far
That thou hast under-wrought his lawful king,
Cut off the sequence of posterity, 96
Out-faced infant state, and done a rape
Upon the maiden virtue of the crown.
Look here upon thy brother Geoffrey's face:
These eyes, these brows, were moulded out of his;
This little abstract doth contain that large
Witch died in Geoffrey, and the hand of time
Shall draw this brief into as huge a volume.
That Geoffrey was thy elder brother born, 104
And this his son; England was Geoffrey's right
And this is Geoffrey's. In the name of God
How comes it then that thou art call'd a king,
When living blood doth in these temples beat,
Which owe the crown that thou o'ernestrest?

K. John. From whom hast thou this great commission, France,
To draw my answer from thy articles?

K. Phi. From that supernal judge, that stirs
Good thoughts in any breast of strong authority,
To look into the blots and stains of right:
That judge hath made me guardian to this boy:
Under whose warrant I impeach thy wrong, 116
And by whose help I mean to chastise it.

K. Phi. Excuse; it is to beat usurping down.
Eli. Who is it thou dost call usurper, France?

Const. Let me make answer; thy usurping son.

Eli. Out, insolent! thy bastard shall be king,
That thou mayst be a queen, and check the world!

Const. My bed was ever to thy son as true
As thine was to thy husband, and this boy
Liker in feature to his father Geoffrey
Than thou and John in manners; being as like
As rain to water, or devil to his dam.
My boy a bastard! By my soul I think
His father never was so true begot:
It cannot be an if thou wert his mother.

_Eli._ There's a good mother, boy, that blots
thy father. 132
(Const. There's a good grandam, boy, that
would blot thee.
_Aust. Peace!
_Bast. Hear the crier.
_Aust._ What the devil art thou?
_Bast._ One that will play the devil, sir, with
you,
An a' may catch your hide and you alone. 136
You are the hare of whom the proverb goes,
Whose valour plucks dead lions by the beard.
I'll smoke your skin-coat, an I catch you right.
Sirrah, look to't; i' faith, I will, i' faith. 140
_Blanch._ O! well did he become that lion's
robe,
That did disrobe the lion of that robe.

_Bast._ It lies as sightly on the back of him
As great Alcides' shows upon an ass: 144
But, ass, I'll take that burden from your back,
Or lay on that shall make your shoulders crack.

_Aust._ What cracker is this same that deafs
our ears
With this abundance of superfluous breath? 148
King,—Lewis, determine what we shall do
straight.

_K. Phil._ Women and fools, break off your con-
ference.

King John, this is the very sum of all:
England and Ireland, Anjou, Touraine, Maine,
In right of Arthur do I claim of thee. 153
Wilt thou resign them and lay down thy arms?

_K. John._ My life as soon: I do defy thee,
France.
Arthur of Britaine, yield thee to my hand; 156
And out of my dear love I'll give thee more
Than e'er the coward hand of France can win.
Submit thee, boy.

_Eli._ Come to thy grandam, child.

(Const. Do, child, go to it grandam, child; 160
Give grandam kingdom, and it grandam will
Give it a plum, a cherry, and a fig:
There's a good grandam.

_Arth._ Good my mother, peace!
I would that I were low laid in my grave: 164
I am not worth this coil that's made for me.

_Eli._ His mother shames him so, poor boy, he
weeps.

_Const._ Now shame upon you, whe'r she does
or no!
His grandam's wrongs, and not his mother's
shames, 168
Draw those heaven-moving pearls from his poor
eyes,

Which heaven shall take in nature of a fee;
Ay, with these crystal beads heaven shall be
brib'd
To do him justice and revenge on you. 172

_Eli._ Thou monstrous slanderer of heaven
and earth!

_Const._ Thou monstrous injurer of heaven
and earth!

Call not me slanderer; thou and thine usurp
The dominations, royalties, and rights
Of this oppressed boy: this is thy el'dst son's son,
Infortunate in nothing but in thee:
Thy sins are visited in this poor child;
The canon of the law is laid on him,
Being but the second generation
Removed from thy sin-conceiving womb.

_K. John._ Bedlam, have done.

_Const._ I have but this to say,
That he's not only plagued for her sin,
But God hath made her sin and her the plague
On this removed issue, plagu'd for her,
And with her plague, her sin; his injury
Her injury, the beadle to her sin,
All punish'd in the person of this child,
And all for her. A plague upon her!

_Eli._ Thou unadvised scold, I can produce
A will that bars the title of thy son. 192

_Const._ Ay, who doubts that? a will! a wicked
will;
A woman's will; a canker'd grandam's will!

_K. Phil._ Peace, lady! pause, or be more tem-
perate:
It ill beseems this presence to cry aim
To these ill-tuned repetitions.
Some trumpet summon bither to the walls
These men of Angiers: let us hear them speak
Whose title they admit, Arthur's or John's. 200

_Trumpet sounds. Enter Citizens upon the
Walls._

_First Cit._ Who is it that hath warn'd us to
the walls?

_K. Phil._ 'Tis France, for England.

_K. John._ England for itself.
You men of Angiers, and my loving subjects,—

_K. Phil._ You loving men of Angiers, Arthur's
subjects,
Our trumpet call'd you to this gentle parle,—

_K. John._ For our advantage; therefore hear
us first.

These flags of France, that are advanced here
Before the eye and prospect of your town,
Have hither march'd to your endamage:
The cannons have their bowels full of wrath,
And ready mounted are they to spit forth
Their iron indignation 'gainst your walls: 212
All preparation for a bloody siege

*
And merciless proceeding by these French
Confronts your city’s eyes, your winking gates;
And but for our approach those sleeping stones,
That as a waist do girdle you about,
By the compulsion of their ordinance
By this time from their fixed beds of lime
Had been dishabited, and wide havoc made
For bloody power to rush upon your peace.
But on the sight of us your lawful king,—
Who painfully with much expedient march
Have brought a countecheck before your gates,
To save unscratch’d your city’s threaten’d
cheeks,—
Behold, the French amaz’d vouchsafe a parle;
And now, instead of bullets wrapp’d in fire,
To make a shaking fever in your walls,
They shoot but calm words folded up in smoke,
To make a faithless error in your ears:
Which trust accordingly, kind citizens,
And let us in, your king, whose labour’d spirits,
Forwaried in this action of swift speed,
Crave harbourage within your city walls.

K. Phi. When I have said, make answer to
us both.
Lo! in this right hand, whose protection
Is most divinely vow’d upon the right
Of him it holds, stands young Plantagenet,
Son to the elder brother of this man,
And king o’er him and all that he enjoys:
For this down-trodden equity, we tread
In war-like march these green’s before your town,
Being no further enemy to you
Than the constraint of hospitable zeal,
In the relief of this oppressed child,
Religiously provokes. Be pleased then
To pay that duty which you truly owe
To him that owes it, namely, this young prince;
And then our arms, like to a muzzled bear,
Save in aspect, have all offence seal’d up;
Our cannons’ malice vainly shall be spent
Against the invulnerable clouds of heaven;
And with a blessed and unher’d retire,
With unback’d swords and helmets all unbrus’d,
We will bear home that lusty blood again
Which here we came to spout against your
town,
And leave your children, wives, and you, in
peace.
But if you fondly pass our proffer’d offer,
’Tis not the roundure of your old-fac’d walls
Can hide you from our messengers of war,
Though all these English and their discipline
Were harbour’d in their rude circumference.
Then tell us, shall your city call us lord,
In that behalf which we have challeng’d it?
Or shall we give the signal to our rage
And stalk in blood to our possession?

First Cit. In brief, we are the King of England’s subjects:
For him, and in his right, we hold this town.
K. John. Acknowledge then the king, and let me in.

First Cit. That can we not; but he that proves the king,
To him will we prove loyal: till that time
Have we ram’d up our gates against the world.
K. John. Doth not the crown of England prove the king?
And if not that, I bring you witnesses,
Twice fifteen thousand hearts of England’s breed,—
Bast. Bastards, and else.
K. John. To verify our title with their lives.
K. Phi. As many and as well-born bloods as those,—
Bast. Some bastards too.
K. Phi. Stand in his face to contradict his
claim.

First Cit. Till thou compound whose right
is worthiest,
We for the worthiest hold the right from both.
K. John. Then God forgive the sins of all
those souls
That to their everlasting residence,
Before the dew of evening fall, shall fleet,
In dreadful trial of our kingdom’s king
K. Phi. Amen, Amen! Mount, chevaliers! to arms!
Bast. Saint George, that swing’d the dragon,
and e’er since
Sits on his horse back at mine hostess’ door,
Teach us some fence! [To AUSTRIA.] Sirrah,
were I at home,
At your den, sirrah, with your lioness,
I would set an ox-head to your lion’s hide,
And make a monster of you.

Aust. Peace! no more.

Bast 0! tremble, for you hear the lion roar.
K. John. Up higher to the plain; where we’ll set forth
In best appointment all our regiments.

Bast. Speed then, to take advantage of the
field.
K. Phi. It shall be so; [To LEWIS.] and at the
other hill
Command the rest to stand. God, and our
right!

[Exeunt.

Alarums and excursions; then a retreat.
Enter a French Herald, with trumpets, to
the gates.
F. Her. You men of Angiers, open wide your
gates,


And let young Arthur, Duke of Britaine, in,  
Who, by the hand of France this day hath made  
Much work for tears in many an English mother,  
Whose sons lie scatter'd on the bleeding ground;  
Many a widow's husband grovelling lies,  
COLDLY embracing the discolour'd earth;  
And victory, with little loss, doth play  
Upon the dancing banners of the French,  
Who are at hand, triumphantly display'd,  
To enter conquerors and to proclaim  
Arthur of Britaine England's king and yours.

Enter English Herald, with trumpets.

E. Her. Rejoice, you men of Angiers, ring your bells;  
King John, your king and England's, doth approach,  
Commander of this hot malicious day.  
Their armours, that march'd hence so silverbright,  
Hither return all gilt with Frenchmen's blood;  
There stuck no plume in any English crest  
That is removed by a staff of frost;  
Our colours do return in those same hands  
That did display them when we first march'd forth;  
And, like a jolly troop of huntsmen, come  
Our lusty English, all with purpled hands  
Dy'd in the dying slaughter of their foes.  
Open your gates and give the victors way.  

First Cit. Heralds, from off our towers we might behold,  
From first to last, the onset and retire  
Of both your armies; whose equality  
By our best eyes cannot be censured:  
Blood hath bought blood, and blows have answ'er'd blows;  
Strength match'd with strength, and power confron- 
ted power;  
Both are alike; and both alike we like.  
One must prove greatest: while they weigh so even,  
We hold our town for neither, yet for both.  

Re-enter the two KINGS, with their powers,  
severally.

K. John. France, hast thou yet more blood to cast away?  
Say, shall the current of our right run on?  
Whose passage, ver'd with thy impediment,  
Shall leave his native channel and o'erswell  
With course disturb'd even thy confining shores,  
Unless thou let'si silver water keep  
A peaceful progress to the ocean.

K. Phi. England, thou hast not saw'd one drop of blood,  
In this hot trial, more than we of France.
Is the young Dauphin every way complete:
If not complete of, say he is not she;
And she again wants nothing, to name want,
If want it be not that she is not he: 436
He is the half part of a blessed man,
Left to be finished by such a she;
And she a fair divided excellence,
Whose fulness of perfection lies in him. 440
Of two such silver currents, when they join,
Do glorify the banks that bound them in;
And two such shores to two such streams made one,
Two such controlling bounds shall you be, kings. 444
To these two princes, if you marry them.
This union shall do more than battery can
To our fast-closed gates; for at this match,
With swifter spleen than powder can enforce,448
The mouth of passage shall we fling wide ope,
And give you entrance; but without this match,
The sea enraged is not half so deaf,
Lions more confident, mountains and rocks 452
More free from motion, no, not death himself
In mortal fury half so peremptory,
As we to keep this city.

Bast.  Here’s a stay,
That shakes the rotten carcase of old Death 456
Out of his rags! Here’s a large mouth, indeed,
That spits forth death and mountains, rocks and seas,
Talks as familiarly of roaring lions
As maids of thirteen do of puppy-dogs. 460
What canonner begot this lusty blood?
He speaks plain cannon fire, and smoke and bounce;
He gives the bastinado with his tongue;
Our ears are cudgell’d; not a word of his
But buffets better than a fist of France.
’Zounds! I was never so bethump’d with words
Since I first call’d my brother’s father dad.

Ell. [Aside to KING JOHN.] Son, list to this
conjunction, make this match; 468
Give with our niece a dowry large enough;
For by this knot thou shalt so surely tie
Thy now unsur’d assurance to the crown,
That yon green boy shall have no sun to ripe 472
The bloom that promiseth a mighty fruit.
I see a yielding in the looks of France;
Mark how they whisper: urge them while their souls
Are capable of this ambition,
Lest zeal, now melted by the windy breath
Of soft petitions, pity and remorse,
Cool and congeal again to what it was.

First Ctt. Why answer not the double ma-
jesties 490
This friendly treaty of our threaten’d town?
K. Phi. Speak England first, that hath been forward first
to speak unto this city: what say you?
K. John. If that the Dauphin there, thy
princely son,
can in this book of beauty read 'I love,'
her dowry shall weigh equal with a queen:
for Anjou, and fair Touraine, Maine, Poitiers,
and all that we upon this side the sea,—
except this city now by us besieged,
find liable to our crown and dignity,
shall gild her bridal bed and make her rich
in titles, honours, and promotions,
as she in beauty, education, blood,
holds hand with any princess of the world.
K. Phi. What say'st thou, boy! look in the lady's face.
Lew. I do, my lord; and in her eye I find
a wonder, or a wondrous miracle,
the shadow of myself form'd in her eye;
which, being but the shadow of your son,
becomes a sun, and makes your son a shadow:
I do protest I never lov'd myself
Till now infixed I beheld myself,
drawn in the flattering table of her eye.
[Whispers with Blanch.
Bast. Drawn in the flattering table of her eye!
Hang'd in the frowning wrinkle of her brow!
And quarter'd in her heart! he doth sappy
himself love's traitor: this is pity now,
that hang'd and drawn and quarter'd, there
should be
in such a love so vile a lout as he.
Blanch. My uncle's will in this respect is
mine:
If he see aught in you that makes him like,
that anything he sees, which moves his liking,
I can with ease translate it to my will;
or if you will, to speak more properly,
I will enforce it easily to my love.
Further I will not flatter you, my lord,
that all I see in you is worthy love,
than this: that nothing do I see in you,
though churlish thoughts themselves should
be your judge,
that I can find should merit any hate.
K. John. What say these young ones? What
say you, my niece?
Blanch. That she is bound in honour still
to do
what you in wisdom still vouchsafe to say.
K. John. Speak then, Prince Dauphin; can
you love this lady?
Lew. Nay, ask me if I can refrain from love;
for I do love her most uneffectually.
K. John. Then do I give Volquessen, Tou-
raine, Maine,
Poitiers, and Anjou, these five provinces,
with her to thee; and this addition more,
full thirty thousand marks of English coin.
Philip of France, if thou be pleas'd withal,
command thy son and daughter to join hands.
K. Phi. It like us well. Young princes,
close your hands.
Aust. And your lips too; for I am well assur'd
that I did so when I was first assur'd.
K. Phi. Now, citizens of Angiers, open your
gates,
let in that amity which you have made;
for at Saint Mary's chapel presently
the rites of marriage shall be solemniz'd,
Is not the Lady Constance in this troop?
I know she is not; for this match made up
her presence would have interrupted much:
where is she and her son? tell me, who knows.
Lew. She is sad and passionate at your high-
ness' tent.
K. Phi. And, by my faith, this league that
we have made
will give her sadness very little cure.
Brother of England, how may we content
this widow lady? In her right we came;
which we, God knows, have turn'd another way,
to our own vantage.
K. John. We will heal up all;
for we'll create young Arthur Duke of Brit-
taine
and Earl of Richmond; and this rich fair town
we make him lord of. Call the Lady Constance:
some speedy messenger bid her repair
to our solemnity: I trust we shall,
if not fill up the measure of her will,
yet in some measure satisfy her so,
that we shall stop her exclamation.
go we, as well as haste will suffer us,
to this unlook'd-for unprepared pomp.
[Exeunt all except the Bastard. The
Citizens retire from the walls.
Bast. Mad world! mad kings! mad com-
position!
John, to stop Arthur's title in the whole,
hath willingly departed with a part;
and France, whose armour conscience buckled
on,
whom zeal and charity brought to the field
as God's own soldier, rounded in the ear
with that same purpose-changer, that sly devil,
that broker, that still breaks the pace of faith,
that daily break-vow, he that wins of all,
of kings, of beggars, old men, young men,
maids,
who having no external thing to lose
but the word 'maid,' cheats the poor maid of
that,
That smooth-fac'd gentleman, tickling Commodity,
Commodity, the bias of the world;
The world, who of itself is peised well,
Made to run even upon even ground,
Till this advantage, this vile-drawing bias,
This sway of motion, this Commodity,
Makes it take head from all indifferency,
From all direction, purpose, course, intent:
And this same bias, this Commodity,
This bawd, this broker, this all-changing word,
Clapp'd on the outward eye of fickle France,
Hath drawn him from his own determin'd aid,
From a resolv'd and honourable war,
To a most base and vile-terminated peace.
And why rail I on this Commodity?
But for because he hath not woo'd me yet.
Not that I have the power to clutch my hand
When his fair angels would salute my palm;
But for my hand, as unattempted yet,
Like a poor beggar, raileth on the rich.
Well, whilst I am a beggar, I will rail,
And say there is no sin but to be rich;
And being rich, my virtue then shall be
To say there is no vice but beggary.
Since kings break faith upon Commodity,
Gain, be my lord, for I will worship thee! [Exit.

ACT III.

SCENE I.—France. The French King’s Tent.

Enter Constance, Arthur, and Salisbury.

Const. Gone to be married! gone to swear a peace!
False blood to false blood join’d! gone to be friends!
Shall Lewis have Blanch, and Blanch those provinces?
It is not so; thou hast misspoke, misheard;
Be well advis’d, tell o’er thy tale again:
It cannot be; thou dost but say ‘tis so.
I trust I may not trust thee, for thy word
Is but the vain breath of a common man:
Believe me, I do not believe thee, man;
I have a king’s oath to the contrary.
Thou shalt be punish’d for thus frightening me,
For I am sick and capable of fears;
Oppress’d with wrongs, and therefore full of fears;
A widow, husbandless, subject to fears;
A woman, naturally born to fears;
And though thou now confess thou didst but jest,
With my vex’d spirit I cannot take a truce,
But they will quake and tremble all this day.
What dost thou mean by shaking of thy head?

Why dost thou look so sadly on my son?
What means that hand upon that breast of thine?
Why holds thine eye that lamentable rheum,
Like a proud river peering o’er his bounds?
Be these sad signs confirmers of thy words?
Then speak again; not all thy former tale,
But this one word, whether thy tale be true.

Sal. As true as I believe you think them false.
That give you cause to prove my saying true.
Con. O! if thou teach me to believe this sorrow,
Teach thou this sorrow how to make me die;
And let belief and life encounter so
As doth the fury of two desperate men
Which in the very meeting fall and die.
Lewis marry Blanch! O boy! then where art thou?
France friend with England what becomes of me?
Fellow, be gone! I cannotbrook thy sight:
This news hath made thee a most ugly man.

Sal. What other harm have I, good lady, done,
But spoke the harm that is by others done?
Const. Which harm within itself so heinous
As it makes harmful all that speak of it.
Arth. I do beseech you, madam, be content.
Const. If thou, that bidd’st me be content,
Wert grim,
Ugly and slanderous to thy mother’s womb,
Full of unpleasing blots and sightless stains,
Lame, foolish, crooked, swart, prodigious,
Patch’d with foul moles and eye-offending marks,
I would not care, I then would be content;
For then I should not love thee, no, nor thou
Become thy great birth, nor deserve a crown.
But thou art fair; and at thy birth, dear boy,
Nature and Fortune join’d to make thee great:
Of Nature’s gifts thou mayst with lilies boast
And with the half-blown rose. But Fortune, O!
She is corrupted, chang’d, and won from thee:
She adulterates hourly with thine uncle John,
And with her golden hand hath pluck’d on France
To tread down fair respect of sovereignty,
And made his majesty the bawd to theirs.
France is a bawd to Fortune and King John,
That strumpet Fortune, that usurping John!
Tell me, thou fellow, is not France forsworn?
Envenom him with words, or get thee gone
And leave those woes alone which I alone
Am bound to underbear.

Sal. Pardon me, madam, I may not go without you to the kings.
KING

Hear me! O, hear me!

Aust. Lady Constance, peace!

Const. War! war! no peace! peace is to me a war.

O, Lymoges! O, Austria! thou dost shame
That bloody spoil. thou slave, thou wretch, thou coward!

Thou little valiant, great in villany!

Thou ever strong upon the stronger side!

Thou Fortune's champion, that dost never fight
But when her humorous ladyship is by

To teach thee safety! thou art perjurd too,
And soothst't up greatness. What a fool art thou,
A ramping fool, to brag, and stamp and swear
Upon my party! Thou cold-blooded slave,
Hast thou not spoke like thunder on my side?

 Been sworn my soldier? bidding me depend
Upon thy stars, thy fortune, and thy strength?
And dost thou now fall over to my foes?

Thou wear a lion's hide! doff it for shame,
And hang a calf's-skin on those recreant limbs.

Aust. O! that a man should speak those words to me,

Bast. And hang a calf's-skin on those recreant limbs.

Aust. Thou darst not say so, villain, for thy life.

Bast. And hang a calf's-skin on those recreant limbs.

K. John. We like not this; thou dost forget thyself.

Enter PANDULPH.

K. Phi. Here comes the holy legate of the pope.

Pand. Hail, you anointed deputies of heaven!

To thee, King John, my holy errand is.

I Pandulph, of fair Milan cardinal,

And from Pope Innocent the legate here,

Do in his name religiously demand

Why thou against the church, our holy mother,

So willfully dost spurn; and, force perforce,

Keep Stephen Langton, chosen Archbishop

Of Canterbury, from that holy see?

This, in our foresaid holy father's name,

Pope Innocent, I do demand of thee.

K. John. What earthly name to interrogatories

Can task the free breath of a sacred king?

Thou canst not, cardinal, devise a name

So slight, unworthy and ridiculous,

To charge me to an answer, as the pope.

Tell him this tale; and from the mouth of England

Add thus much more: that no Italian priest

Shall tithe or toll in our dominions;

But as we under heaven are supreme head,
So under him that great supremacy, 156
Where we do reign, we will alone uphold,
Without the assistance of a mortal hand:
So tell the pope; all reverence set apart
To him, and his usurp’d authority. 160

**K. Phi.** Brother of England, you blaspheme
in this.

**K. John.** Though you and all the kings of
Christendom
Are led so grossly by this meddlesing priest,
Dreading the curse that money may buy out;
And, by the merit of vile gold, dross, dust,
Purchase corrupted pardon of a man,
Who in that sale sells pardon from himself;
Though you and all the rest so grossly led
This juggling witchcraft with revenue cherish;
Yet I alone, alone do me oppose
Against the pope, and count his friends my foes.

**Pand.** Then, by the lawful power that I have,
Thou shalt stand curs’d and excommunicate:
And blessed shall be he that doth revolt
From his allegiance to a heretic;
And meritorious shall that hand be call’d,
That takes away by any secret course
Thy hateful life.

**Const.** O! lawful let it be
That I have room with Rome to curse awhile.
Good father cardinal, cry thou amen
To my keen curses; for without my wrong
There is no tongue hath power to curse him right.

**Pand.** There’s law and warrant, lady, for
my curse.

**Const.** And for mine too: when law can do
no right,
Let it be lawful that law bar no wrong.
Law cannot give my child his kingdom here,
For he that holds his kingdom holds the law:
Therefore, since law itself is perfect wrong,
How can the law forbid my tongue to curse?

**Pand.** Philip of France, on peril of a curse,
Let go the hand of that arch-heretic.
And raise the power of France upon his head,
Unless he do submit himself to Rome.

**Eliz.** Lookst thou pale, France? do not let
go thy hand.

**Const.** Look to that, devil, lest that France
repent,

And by disjoining hands, hell lose a soul.

**Aust.** King Philip, listen to the cardinal.

**Bast.** And hang a calf’s-skin on his re-
creant limbs.

**Aust.** Well, ruffian, I must pocket these
wrongs,
Because—

**Bast.** Your breeches best may carry them.

**K. John.** Philip, what sayst thou to the car-
dinal?

**Const.** What should he say, but as the car-
dinal?

**Lew.** Bethink you, father; for the difference
Is purchase of a heavy curse from Rome,
Or the light loss of England for a friend:
Forego the easier.

**Blanch.** That’s the curse of Rome.

**Const.** O Lewis, stand fast! the devil tempts
thee here,

In likeness of a new untrimmed bride.

**Blanch.** The Lady Constance speaks not
from her faith,
But from her need.

**Const.** O! if thou grant my need,
Which only lives but by the death of faith,
That need must needs infer this principle,
That faith would live again by death of need:
O! then, tread down my need, and faith mounts
up;
Keep my need up, and faith is trodden down.

**K. John.** The king is mov’d, and answers
not to this.

**Const.** O! be remov’d from him, and answer
well.

**Aust.** Do so, King Philip: hang no more in
doubt.

**Bast.** Hang nothing but a calf’s-skin, most
sweet lout.

**K. Phi.** I am perplex’d, and know not what
to say.

**Pand.** What canst thou say but will perplex
thee more,
If thou stand excommunicate and curs’d?

**K. Phi.** Good reverend father, make my
person yours,

And tell me how you would bestow yourself.
This royal hand and mine are newly knit,
And the conjunction of our inward souls
Married in league, coupled and link’d together
With all religious strength of sacred vows;
The latest breath that gave the sound of words
Was deep-sworn faith, peace, amity, true love,
Between our kingdoms and our royal selves;
And even before this true, but new before,
No longer than we well could wash our hands
To clap this royal bargain up of peace.
Heaven knows, they were besmear’d and over-

stain’d

With slaughter’s pencil, where revenge did paint
The fearful difference of incensed kings:
And shall these hands, so lately purg’d of
blood,

So newly join’d in love, so strong in both,

Unyoke this seizure and this kind regret?

---

419
Play fast and loose with faith? so jest with heaven,
Make such unconstant children of ourselves,
As now again to snatch our palm from palm,
Unwear faith sworn, and on the marriage-bed
Of smiling peace to march a bloody host,
And make a riot on the gentle brow
Of true sincerity? O! holy sir,
My reverend father, let it not be so!
Out of your grace, devise, ordain, impose
Some gentle order, and then we shall be bless'd
To do your pleasure and continue friends. 252
Pand. All form is formless, order orderless,
Save what is opposite to England's love.
Therefore to arms! be champion of our church,
Or let the church, our mother, breathe her curse,
A mother's curse, on her revolting son. 257
France, thou mayst hold a serpent by the tongue,
A chafed lion by the mortal paw,
A fasting tiger safer by the tooth. 260
Than keep in peace that hand which thou dost hold.
K. Phl. I may disjoin my hand, but not my faith.
Pand. So mak'st thou faith an enemy to faith:
And like a civil war sett'st oath to oath, 264
Thy tongue against thy tongue. O! let thy vow
First made to heaven, first be to heaven perform'd;
That is, to be the champion of our church.
What's since thou swor'st is sworn against thyself
And may not be performed by thyself; 269
For that which thou hast sworn to do amiss
Is not amiss when it is truly done;
And being not done, where doing tends to ill,
The truth is then most done not doing it. 273
The better act of purposes mistook
Is to mistake again; though indirect,
Yet indirection thereby grows direct, 276
And falsehood falsehood cures, as fire cools fire
Within the scorched veins of one new-burn'd.
It is religion that doth make vows keep;
But thou hast sworn against religion
By what thou swear'st, against the thing thou swear'st,
And mak'st an oath the surety for thy truth
Against an oath: the truth thou art unsure
To swear, swears only not to be forsworn; 284
Else what a mockery should it be to swear!
But thou dost swear only to be forsworn;
And most forsworn, to keep what thou dost swear.
Therefore thy later vows against thy first 288
Is in thyself rebellion to thyself;
And better conquest never canst thou make
Than arm thy constant and thy nobler parts
Against these giddy loose suggestions: 292
Upon which better part our prayers come in,
If thou vouchsafe them; but, if not, then know
The peril of our curses light on thee
So heavy as thou shalt not shake them off, 296
But in despair die under 't:ir black weight.
Aust. Rebellion, flat rebellion!
Bast. Will 't not be?
Will not a call's-skin stop that mouth of thine?
Lew. Father, to arms!
Blanch. Upon thy wedding-day? 300
Against the blood that thou hast married?
What shall our feast be kept with slaughter'd men?
Shall braying trumpets and loud churlish drums,
Clamours of hell, be measures to our pomp? 304
O husband, hear me! ay, alack! how new
Is husband in my mouth; even for that name,
Which till this time my tongue did ne'er pronounce,
Upon my knee I beg, go not to arms 308
Against mine uncle.
Const. O! upon my knee,
Made hard with kneeling, I do pray to thee,
Thou virtuous Dauphin, alter not the doom
Forethought by heaven. 312
Blanch. Now shall I see thy love: what motive may
Be stronger with thee than the name of wife?
Const. That which upholdeth him that thee upholds,
His honour: O! thine honour, Lewis, thine honour.
Lew. I muse your majesty doth seem so cold,
When such profound respects do pull you on.
Pand. I will denounce a curse upon his head.
K. Phl. Thou shalt not need. England, I'll fall from thee.
Const. O fair return of banish'd majesty!
Ell. O foul revolt of French inconstancy!
K. John. France, thou shalt rue this hour
within this hour.
Bast. Old Time the clock-setter, that bald sexton Time,
Is it as he will? well then, France shall rue.
Blanch. The sun's o'ercast with blood: fair day, adieu!
Which is the side that I must go withal?
I am with both: each army hath a hand; 328
And in their rage, I having hold of both,
They whirl asunder and dismember me.
Husband, I cannot pray that thou mayst win;
Uncle, I needs must pray that thou mayst lose;
Father, I may not wish the fortune thine; 333
Grandsam, I will not wish thy wishes thrive:
Whoever wins, on that side shall I lose;
Assured loss before the match be play'd.
KING JOHN

Act III, Sc. III.

Lew. Lady, with me; with me thy fortune lies.
Blanch. There where my fortune lives, there my life dies.

K. John. Cousin, go draw our puissance together.

[Exit BASTARD.

France, I am burn’d up with inflaming wrath;
A rage whose heat hath this condition,
That nothing can allay, nothing but blood,
The blood, and dearest valu’d blood of France.

K. Phl. Thy rage shall burn thee up, and thou shalt turn
To ashes, ere our blood shall quench that fire:

Look to thyself, thou art in jeopardy.

K. John. No more than he that threatens. To arms let’s lie!

[Exeunt.

SCENE II.—The Same. Plains near Angiers.

Alarums; excursions. Enter the BASTARD, with the DUKE OF AUSTRIA’S head.

Bast. Now, by my life, this day grows wondrous hot;
Some airy devil hovers in the sky
And pours down mischief. Austria’s head lie there,
While Philip breathes.

Enter KING JOHN, ARTHUR, and HUBERT.

K. John. Hubert, keep this boy. Philip, make up,
My mother is assailed in our tent,
And ta’en, I fear.

Bast. My lord, I rescu’d her;
Her highness is in safety, fear you not:
But on, my liege; for very little pains
Will bring this labour to a happy end. [Exeunt.

SCENE III.—The Same.

Alarums; excursions; retreat. Enter KING JOHN, ELINOR, ARTHUR, the BASTARD, HUBERT, and Lords.

K. John. [To ELINOR.] So shall it be; your grace shall stay behind
So strongly guarded. [To ARTHUR.] Cousin, look not sad:
Thy grandam loves thee; and thy uncle will
As deare be to thee as thy father was.

Arth. O! this will make my mother die with grief.

K. John. [To the BASTARD.] Cousin, away for England! haste before;
And, are we coming, see thou shake the bags
Of hoarding abbots; set at liberty
Imprison’d angels: the fat ribs of peace
Must by the hungry now be fed upon:
Use our commission in his utmost force.

Bast. Bell, book, and candle shall not drive me back
When gold and silver beck’s me to come on.
I leave your highness. Grandam, I will pray,—
If ever I remember to be holy,—
For your fair safety; so I kiss your hand.

Elr. Farewell, gentle cousin.


[Exit BASTARD.

Elr. Come hither, little kinsman; hark, a word.

She takes ARTHUR aside.

K. John. Come hither, Hubert. O my gentle Hubert,
We owe thee much: within this wall of flesh
There is a soul counts thee her creditor,
And with advantage means to pay thy love:
And, my good friend, thy voluntary oath
Lives in this bosom, dearly cherished.
Give me thy hand. I had a thing to say,
But I will fit it with some better time.
By heaven, Hubert, I am almost ashamed
To say what good respect I have of thee.

Hub. I am much bounden to your majesty.

K. John. Good friend, thou hast no cause
to say so yet;
But thou shalt have; and creep time ne’er so slow,
Yet it shall come for me to do thee good.
I had a thing to say, but let it go:
The sun is in the heaven, and the proud day,
Attended with the pleasures of the world,
Is all too wanton and too full of gawds
To give me audience: if the midnight bell
Did, with his iron tongue and brazen mouth,
Sound one into the drowsy race of night;
If this same were a churchyard where we stand,
And thou possessed with a thousand wrongs;
Or if that surly spirit, melancholy,
Had bak’d thy blood and made it heavy-thick,
Which else runs tickling up and down the veins,
Making that idiot, laughter, keep men’s eyes
And strain their cheeks to idle merriment,
A passion hateful to my purposes;
Or if that thou couldst see me without eyes,
Hear me without thine ears, and make reply
Without a tongue, using conceit alone,
Without eyes, ears, and harmful sound of words;
Then, in despite of brooded watchful day,
I would into thy bosom pour my thoughts:
But ah! I will not: yet I love thee well;
And, by my troth, I think thou lov’st me well.

Hub. So well, that what you bid me undertake,
Though that my death were adjunct to my act,
By heaven, I would do it.

K. John. Do not I know thou wouldst?

Good Hubert! Hubert, Hubert, throw thine eye
On on young boy: I'll tell thee what, my friend,
He is a very serpent in my way;
And wheresoe’er this foot of mine doth tread
He lies before me: dost thou understand me?
Thou art his keeper.
Hub. And I’ll keep him so
That he shall not offend your majesty.
Hub. My lord?
Hub. He shall not live.
I could be merry now. Hubert, I love thee;
Well, I’ll not say what I intend for thee:
Remember. Madam, fare you well:
I’ll send those powers o’er to your majesty.
Eli. My blessing go with thee!
K. John. For England, cousin; go:
Hubert shall be your man, attend on you
With all true duty. On toward Calais, ho!

[Exeunt.]

SCENE IV.—The Same. The French King’s Tent.

Enter King Philip, Lewis, Pandulph, and Attendants.

K. Phi. So, by a roaring tempest on the flood,
A whole armado of convicted sail
Is scatter’d and disjoin’d from fellowship.
Pand. Courage and comfort! all shall yet go well.
K. Phi. What can go well when we have run so ill?
Are we not beaten? Is not Angiers lost?
Arthur ta’en prisoner? divers dear friends slain?
And bloody England into England gone,
O’erbearing interruption, spite of France?
Lew. What he hath won that hath he fortified:
So hot a speed with such advice dispos’d,
Such temperate order in so fierce a cause,
Doth want example: who hath read or heard
Of any kindred action like to this?
K. Phi. Well could I bear that England had
this praise,
So we could find some pattern of our shame.

Enter Constance.

Look, who comes here! a grave unto a soul;
Holding the eternal spirit, against her will,
In the vile prison of afflicted breath.
I prithee lady, go away with me.
Const. Lo now! now see the issue of your peace.

K. Phi. Patience, good lady! comfort, gentle Constable!
Const. No, I defy all counsel, all redress,
But that which ends all counsel, true redress,
Death, death: O, amiable lovely death!
Thou odoriferous stench! sound rottenness!
Arose forth from the couch of lasting night,
Thou hate and terror to prosperity,
And I will kiss thy detestable bones,
And put my eyeballs in thy vaulty brows,
And ring these fingers with thy household worms,
And stop this gap of breath with fulsome dust,
And be a carrion monster like thyself:
Come, grin on me; and I will think thou smil’st
And buss thee as thy wife! Misery’s love,
O! come to me.
K. Phi O fair affliction, peace!
Const. No, no, I will not, having breath to cry:
O! that my tongue were in the thunder’s mouth!
Then with a passion would I shake the world,
And rouse from sleep that fell anatomy
Which cannot hear a lady’s feeble voice,
Which scorbs a modern invocation.
Pand. Lady, you utter madness, and not sorrow.

Const. Thou art not holy to belie me so;
I am not mad: this hair I tear is mine;
My name is Constance; I was Geoffrey’s wife;
Young Arthur is my son, and he is lost!
I am not mad: I would to heaven I were!
For then ‘tis like I should forget myself:
O! if I could, what grief should I forget.
Preach some philosophy to make me mad,
And thou shalt be canoniz’d, cardinal;
For being not mad but sensible of grief,
My reasonable part produces reason
How I may be deliver’d of these woes,
And teaches me to kill or hang myself:
If I were mad, I should forget my son,
Or madly think a babe of clouts were he.
I am not mad: too well, too well I feel
The different plague of each calamity.

K. Phi. Bind up those tresses. O! what love I note
In the fair multitude of those her hairs:
Where but by chance a silver drop hath fallen,
Even to that drop ten thousand wary friends
Do glue themselves in sociable grief;
Like true, inseparable, faithful loves,
Sticking together in calamity.

Const. To England, if you will.
K. Phi. Bind up your hairs.
Const. Yes, that I will; and wherefore will I do it?
I tore them from their bonds, and cried aloud
‘O! that these hands could so redeem my son,
As they have given these hairs their liberty! 72
But now I envy at their liberty,
And will again commit them to their bonds,
Because my poor child is a prisoner.
And, father cardinal, I have heard you say 76
That we shall see and know our friends in heaven.
If that be true, I shall see my boy again;
For since the birth of Cain, the first male child,
To him that did but yesterday suspire, 80
There was not such a gracious creature born.
But now will canker-sorrow eat my bud
And chase the native beauty from his cheek,
And he will look as hollow as a ghost, 84
As dim and meagre as an ague’s fit,
And so he’ll die; and, rising so again,
When I shall meet him in the court of heaven
I shall not know him: therefore never, never 88
Must I behold my pretty Arthur more.

Pand. You hold too heinous a respect of grief.

Const. He talks to me, that never had a son.

K. Phi. You are as fond of grief as of your child. 92

Const. Grief fills the room up of my absent child,
Lies in his bed, walks up and down with me,
Puts on his pretty looks, repeats his words,
Remembers me of all his gracious parts,
Stuffs out his vacant garments with his form:
Then have I reason to be fond of grief.
Fare you well: had you such a loss as I,
I could give better comfort than you do.
I will not keep this form upon my head
When there is such disorder in my wit.
O Lord! my boy, my Arthur, my fair son!
My life, my joy, my food, my all the world!
My widow-comfort, and my sorrows’ cure!

K. Phi. I fear some outrage, and I’ll follow her.

Lew. There’s nothing in this world can make me joy:
Life is so tedious as a twice-told tale,
Vexing the dull ear of a drowsy man;
And bitter shame hath spoil’d the sweet world’s taste,
That it yields nought but shame and bitterness.

Pand. Before the curing of a strong disease,
Even in the instant of repair and health,
The fit is strongest: evils that take leave,
On their departure most of all show evil.
What have you lost by losing of this day? 116

Lew. All days of glory, joy, and happiness.

Pand. If you had won it, certainly you had.
No, no; when Fortune means to men most good,
She looks upon them with a threatening eye. 120

'Tis strange to think how much King John hath lost
In this which he accounts so clearly won.
Are not you griev’d that Arthur is his prisoner?

Lew. As heartily as he is glad he hath him.

Pand. Your mind is all as youthful as your blood. 125
Now hear me speak with a prophetic spirit;
For even the breath of what I mean to speak
Shall blow each dust, each straw, each little rub,
Out of the path which shall directly lead
Thy foot to England’s throne; and therefore mark.
John hath seiz’d Arthur; and it cannot be,
That whiles warm life plays in that infant’s veins
The misplac’d John should entertain an hour,
One minute, nay, one quiet breath of rest.
A sceptre snatch’d with an unruly hand
Must be as boisterously maintain’d as gain’d;
And he that stands upon a slippery place
Makes nice of no vile hold to stay him up:
That John may stand, then Arthur needs must fall;
So be it, for it cannot be but so.

Lew. But what shall I gain by young Arthur’s fall?

Pand. You, in the right of Lady Blanch your wife,
May then make all the claim that Arthur did.

Lew. And lose it, life and all, as Arthur did.

Pand. How green you are and fresh in this old world!
John lays you plots; the times conspire with you;
For he that steeps his safety in true blood
Shall find but bloody safety and untruth. 148
This act so evilly borne shall cool the hearts
Of all his people and freeze up their zeal,
That none so small advantage shall step forth
To check his reign, but they will cherish it;
No natural exhalation in the sky,
No scope of nature, no distemper’d day,
No common wind, no customed event,
But they will pluck away his natural cause
And call them meteors, prodigies, and signs,
Abortives, presages, and tongues of heaven,
Plainly denouncing vengeance upon John.

Lew. May be he will not touch young Arthur’s life,
But hold himself safe in his imprisonment.

Pand. Oi sir, when he shall hear of your approach,
If that young Arthur be not gone already,
Even at that news he dies; and then the hearts
Of all his people shall revolt from him
And kiss the lips of unacquainted change,
And pick strong matter of revolt and wrath
Out of the bloody fingers' ends of John. 168
Methinks I see this hurly all on foot:
And, Oh! what better matter breeds for you
Than I have nam'd. The bastard Faulconbridge
Is now in England ransacking the church, 172
Offending charity: if but a dozen French
Were there in arms, they would be as a call
To train ten thousand English to their side;
Or as a little snow, tumbled about, 176
Anon becomes a mountain. O noble Dauphin!
Go with me to the king. 'Tis wonderful
What may be wrought out of their discontent
Now that their souls are topful of offence. 180
For England go; I will whet on the king.

Lew. Strong reasons make strong actions.
Let us go:
If you say ay, the king will not say no.

[Exeunt.

ACT IV.

SCENE I.—Northampton. A Room in the Castle.

Enter HUBERT and Two Attendants.

Hub. Heat me these irons hot; and look
thou stand
Within the arras: when I strike my foot
Upon the bosom of the ground, rush forth,
And bind the boy which you shall find with me 4
Fast to the chair: be heedful. Hence, and watch.

First Attend. I hope your warrant will bear
out the deed.

Hub. Uncleanly scruples! fear not you: look
to't. 5

[Exeunt Attendants.
Young lad, come forth; I have to say with you.

Enter ARTHUR.

Arth. Good morrow, Hubert.

Hub. Good morrow, little prince.

Arth. As little prince,—having so great a title
To be more prince,—as may be. You are sad.

Hub. Indeed, I have been merrier.

Arth. Mercy on me! 12

Methinks nobody should be sad but I:
Yet I remember, when I was in France,
Young gentlemen would be as sad as night,
Only for wantonness. By my christendom, 16
So I were out of prison and kept sheep,
I should be as merry as the day is long;
And so I would be here, but that I doubt
My uncle practises more harm to me: 20
He is afraid of me, and I of him.
Is it my fault that I was Geoffrey's son?
No, indeed, is't not; and I would to heaven
I were your son, so you would love me, Hubert.

Hub. [Aside.] If I talk to him with his inno-
cent prate
He will awake my mercy which lies dead:
Therefore I will be sudden and dispatch.

Arth. Are you sick, Hubert? you look pale
to-day:

In sooth, I would you were a little sick,
That I might sit all night and watch with you:
I warrant I love you more than you do me.

Hub. [Aside.] His words do take possession
of my bosom.

Read here, young Arthur. [Showing a paper.
[Aside.] How now, foolish rheum!
Turning disperate torture out of door!
I must be brief, lest resolution drop
Out at mine eyes in tender womanish tears. 36
Can you not read it? is it not fair writ?

Arth. Too fairly, Hubert, for so foul effect.
Must you with hot irons burn out both mine
eyes?

Hub. Young boy, I must.

Arth. And will you?

Hub. 

Arth. Have you the heart? When your head
did but ake,
I knit my handkercher about your brows,—
The best I had, a princess wrought it me,—
And I did never ask it you again;
And with my hand at midnight held your head,
And like the watchful minutes to the hour,
Still and anon cheer'd up the heavy time,
Saying, 'What lack you?' and, 'Where lies your
grief?'

Or, 'What good love may I perform for you?'
Many a poor man's son would have lain still,
And ne'er have spoke a loving word to you;
But you at your sick-service had a prince. 52
Nay, you may think my love was crafty love,
And call it cunning: do an if you will.
If heaven be pleas'd that you must use me ill,
Why then you must. Will you put out mine
eyes?

These eyes that never did nor never shall
So much as frown on you?

Hub. I have sworn to do it;
And with hot irons must I burn them out.

Arth. Ah! none but in this iron age would do
it!

The iron of itself, though heat red-hot,
Approaching near these eyes, would drink my
tears
And quench this fiery indignation
Even in the matter of mine innocence; 64
Nay, after that, consume away in rust,
But for containing fire to harm mine eye.
Are you more stubborn-hard than hammer'd
iron?
An if an angel should have come to me
And told me Hubert should put out mine eyes,
I would not have believ'd him; no tongue but Hubert's.

Hub. [Stamps.] Come forth.

Re-enter Attendants, with cord, irons, &c.

Do as I bid you do.

Arth. O! save me, Hubert, save me! my eyes are out
Even with the fierce looks of these bloody men.

Hub. Give me the iron, I say, and bind him here.

Arth. Alas! what need you be so boisterously rough?

I will not struggle; I will stand stone-still.
For heaven's sake, Hubert, let me not be bound!
Nay, hear me, Hubert: drive these men away,
And I will sit as quiet as a lamb.

I will not stir, nor wince, nor speak a word,
Nor look upon the iron angrily.

Thrust but these men away, and I'll forgive you,
Whatever torment you do put me to.

Hub. Go, stand within: let me alone with him.

First Attendant. I am best pleas'd to be from such a deed.

[Exeunt Attendants.

Arth. Alas! I then have chid away my friend:
He hath a stern look, but a gentle heart.

Let him come back, that his compassion may
Give life to yours.

Hub. Come, boy, prepare yourself.

Arth. Is there no remedy?

Hub. None, but to lose your eyes.

Arth. O heaven! that there were but a mole
in yours,

A grain, a dust, a gnat, a wandering hair,
Any annoyance in that precious sense;
Then feeling what small things are boisterous there,
Your vile intent must needs seem horrible.

Hub. Is this your promise? go to, hold your tongue.

Arth. Hubert, the utterance of a brace of tongues
Must needs want pleading for a pair of eyes:
Let me not hold my tongue; let me not, Hubert:
Or Hubert, if you will, cut out my tongue.

So I may keep mine eyes: O! spare mine eyes,
Though to no use but still to look on you:
Lol by my troth, the instrument is cold
And would not harm me.

Hub. I can beat it, boy.

Arth. No, in good sooth; the fire is dead
with grief,

Being created for comfort, to be us'd
In undeserv'd extremity; see else yourself;

There is no malice in this burning coal;
The breath of heaven hath blown his spirit out
And strew'd repentant ashes on his head.

Hub. But with my breath I can revive it, boy.

Arth. An if you do you will but make it blush
And glow with shame of your proceedings,

Hubert:
Nay, it perchance will sparkle in your eyes;
And like a dog that is compell'd to fight,
Snatch at his master that doth tarre him on.
All things that you should use to do me wrong
Deny their office: only you do lack
That mercy which fierce fire and iron extends,
Creatures of note for mercy-lacking uses.

Hub. Well, see to live; I will not touch thine eyes
For all the treasure that thine uncle owes:
Yet am I sworn and I did purpose, boy,
With this same very iron to burn them out.

Arth. O! now you look like Hubert, all this while
You were disguised.


Your uncle must not know but you are dead;
I'll fill these dogged spies with false reports:

And, pretty child, sleep doubtless and secure,
That Hubert for the wealth of all the world
Will not offend thee.

Arth. O heaven! I thank you, Hubert.

Hub. Silence! no more, go closely in with me:

Much danger do I undergo for thee.

[Exeunt.

SCENE II.—The Same. A Room of State in the Palace.

Enter King John, crowned; Pembroke, Salisbury, and other Lords. The King takes his state.

K. John. Here once again we sit, once again
crown'd,
And look'd upon, I hope, with cheerful eyes.

Pembroke. This 'once again,' but that your highness pleas'd,
Was once superfluous: you were crown'd before,
And that high royalty was ne'er pluck'd off,
The faiths of men ne'er stained with revolt;

Fresh expectation troubled not the land
With any long'd-for change or better state.

Sal. Therefore, to be possess'd with double pomp,
To guard a title that was rich before,
To gild refined gold, to paint the lily,
To throw a perfume on the violet,
To smooth the ice, or add another hue
Unto the rainbow, or with taper-light

425
To seek the beauteous eye of heaven to garnish,
Is wasteful and ridiculous excess.

*Pem.* But that your royal pleasure must be done,
This act is as an ancient tale new told,
And in the last repeating troublesome,
Being urged at a time unseasonable.

*Sal.* In this the antique and well-noted face
Of plain old form is much disfigured;
And, like a shifted wind unto a sail,
It makes the course of thoughts to fetch about,
Startles and frights consideration,
Makes sound opinion sick and truth suspected,
For putting on so new a fashion'd robe.

*Pem.* When workmen strive to do better than well
They do confound their skill in covetousness;
And oftentimes excusing of a fault
Doth make the fault the worse by the excuse:
As patches set upon a little breach
Discredits more in hiding of the fault
Than did the fault before it was so patch'd.

*Sal.* To this effect, before you were new-crown'd,
We breath'd our counsel: but it pleas'd your highness
To overbear it, and we are all well pleas'd;
Since all and every part of what we would
Doth make a stand at what your highness will.

*K. John.* Some reasons of this double coronation
I have possess'd you with and think them strong;
And more, more strong,—when lesser is my fear,—
I shall induct you with: meantime but ask
What you would have reform'd that is not well;
And well shall you perceive how willingly
I will both hear and grant you your requests.

*Pem.* Then I,—as one that am the tongue of these
To sound the purposes of all their hearts,—
Both for myself and them,—but, chief of all,
Your safety, for which the myself and them
Bend their best studies,—heartily request
The enfranchisement of Arthur; whose restraint
Doth move the murmuring lips of discontent
To break into this dangerous argument:
If what in rest you have in right you hold,
Why then your fears,—which, as they say, attend
The steps of wrong,—should move you to mew up
Your tender kinsman, and to choke his days
With barbarous ignorance, and deny his youth
The rich advantage of good exercise?
That the time's enemies may not have this
To grace occasions, let it be our suit
That you have bid us ask, his liberty;

Which for our goods we do no further ask
Than whereupon our weal, on you depending,
Counts it your weal he have his liberty.

Enter Hubert.

*K. John.* Let it be so: I do commit his youth
To your direction. Hubert, what news with you?

*Pem.* This is the man should do the bloody deed;
He show'd his warrant to a friend of mine:
The image of a wicked henous fault
Lives in his eye; that close aspect of his
Does show the mood of a much troubled breast;
And I do fearfully believe 'ts done,
What we so fear'd he had a charge to do.

*Sal.* The colour of the king doth come and go
Between his purpose and his conscience;
Like heralds 'twixt two dreadful battles set:
His passion is so ripe it needs must break.

*Pem.* And when it breaks, I fear will issue thence
The foul corruption of a sweet child's death.

*K. John.* We cannot hold mortality's strong hand:
Good lords, although my will to give is living,
The suit which you demand is gone and dead:
He tells us Arthur is deceas'd to-night.

*Sal.* Indeed we fear'd his sickness was past cure.

*Pem.* Indeed we heard how near his death he was
Before the child himself felt he was sick:
This must be answer'd, either here or hence.

*K. John.* Why do you bend such solemn brows on me?
Think you I bear the shears of destiny?
Have I commandment on the pulse of life?

*Sal.* It is apparent foul play; and 'tis shame
That greatness should so grossly offer it:
So thrive it in your gamel and so, farewell.

*Pem.* Stay yet, Lord Salisbury; I'll go with thee.
And find the inheritance of this poor child,
His little kingdom of a forced grave.
That blood which ow'd the breadth of all this isle,
Three foot of it doth hold; bad world the while!
This must not be thus borne: this will break out
To all our sorrows, and ere long I doubt.

[Exeunt Lords.

*K. John.* They burn in indignation. I repent:
There is no sure foundation set on blood,
No certain life achiev'd by others' death.
Enter a Messenger.
A fearful eye thou hast: where is that blood
That I have seen inhabit in those cheeks?
So foul a sky clears not without a storm:
Pour down thy weather: how goes all in
France?
Mess. From France to England. Never such a power
For any foreign preparation
Was leved in the body of a land.
The copy of your speed is learn'd by them;
For when you should be told they do prepare,
The tidings come that they are all arriv'd.
K. John. O! where hath our intelligence been drunk?
Where hath it slept? Where is my mother's care
That such an army could be drawn in France,
And she not hear of it?
Mess. My liege, her ear
Is stopp'd with dust: the first of April died
Your noble mother; and, as I hear, my lord,
The Lady Constance in a frenzy died
Three days before: but this from rumour's tongue
I idly heard; if true or false I know not.
K. John. Withhold thy speed, dreadful occasion!
O! make a league with me, till I have pleas'd
My discontented peers. What! mother dead!
How wildly then walks my estate in France!
Under whose conduct came those powers of France
That thou for truth giv'st out are landed here?
Mess. Under the Dauphin.
K. John. Thou hast made me giddy
With these ill tidings.

Enter the Bastard, and Peter of Pompiret.
Now, what says the world
To your proceedings? do not seek to stuff
My head with more ill news, for it is full.
Bast. But if you be afraid to hear the worst,
Then let the worst unheard fall on your head.
K. John. Bear with me, cousin, for I was amaz'd
Under the tide; but now I breathe again
Aloft the flood, and can give audience
To any tongue, speak it of what it will.
Bast. How I have sped among the clergy-men,
The sums I have collected shall express.
But as I travell'd hither through the land,
I find the people strangely fantastied,
Possess'd with rumours, full of idle dreams,
Not knowing what they fear, but full of fear.
And here's a prophet that I brought with me
From forth the streets of Pomfret, whom I found
With many hundreds treading on his heels;
To whom he sung, in rude harsh-sounding rimes,
That, ere the next Ascension-day at noon,
Your highness should deliver up your crown.
K. John. Thou idle dreamer, wherefore didst thou so?
Peter. Foreknowing that the truth will fall out so.
K. John. Hubert, away with him; imprison him:
And on that day at noon, whereon, he says,
I shall yield up my crown, let him be hang'd.
Deliver him to safety, and return,
For I must use thee.

[Exit Hubert, with Peter.
O my gentle cousin,
Hear'st thou the news abroad, who are arriv'd?
Bast. The French, my lord; men's mouths are full of it:
Besides, I met Lord Bigot and Lord Salisbury,
With eyes as red as new-kin'dled fire,
And others more, going to seek the grave
Of Arthur, whom they say is kill'd to-night
On your suggestion.
K. John. Gentle kinsman, go,
And thrust thyself into their companies.
I have a way to win their loves again;
Bring them before me.
Bast. I will seek them out.
K. John. Nay, but make haste; the better foot before.
O! let me have no subject enemies
When adverse foreigners affright my towns
With dreadful pomp of stout invasion.
Be Mercury, set feathers to thy heels,
And fly like thought from them to me again.
Bast. The spirit of the time shall teach me speed.
K. John. Spoke like a sprightly nobel gentleman.
[Exit Bastard.
Go after him; for he perhaps shall need
Some messenger betwixt me and the peers;
And be thou he.
Mess. With all my heart, my liege. [Exit.
K. John. My mother dead!

Re-enter Hubert.
Hub. My lord, they say five moons were seen to-night:
Four fixed, and the fifth did whirl about
The other four in wondrous motion.
K. John. Five moons!
Hub. Old men and beldams in the streets
Do prophesy upon it dangerously:
Act IV, Sc. II.

KING JOHN

Young Arthur’s death is common in their mouths;
And when they talk of him, they shake their heads 188
And whisper one another in the ear;
And he that speaks, doth gripe the hearer’s wrist,
Whilst he that hears makes fearful action,
With wrinkled brows, with nods, with rolling eyes.
I saw a smith stand with his hammer, thus,
The whilst his iron did on the anvil cool,
With open mouth swallowing a tailor’s news;
Who, with his shears and measure in his hand,
Standing on slippers,—which his nimble haste
Had falsely thrust upon contrary feet,—
Told of a many thousand warlike French,
That were embattled and rank’d in Kent. 200
Another lean unwash’d artificer
Cuts off his tale and talks of Arthur’s death.
K. John. Why seek’st thou to possess me with these fears?
Why urgest thou so oft young Arthur’s death?
Thy hand hath murder’d him: I had a mighty cause
To wish him dead, but thou hadst none to kill him.
Hub. No had, my lord! why, did you not provoke me?
K. John. It is the curse of kings to be attended
By slaves that take their humours for a warrant
To break within the bloody house of life,
And on the winking of authority
To understand a law, to know the meaning 212
Of dangerous majesty, when, perchance, it frowns
More upon humour than advis’d respect.
Hub. Here is your hand and seal for what I did.
K. John. O! when the last account ’twixt heaven and earth
Is to be made, then shall this hand and seal
Witness against us to damnation.
How oft the sight of means to do ill deeds
Makes ill deeds done! Hadst not thou been by,
A fellow by the hand of nature mark’d, 221
Quoted and sign’d to do a deed of shame,
This murder had not come into my mind;
But taking note of thy abhor’d aspect,
Finding thee fit for bloody villany,
Apt, liable to be employ’d in danger,
I faintly broke with thee of Arthur’s death;
And thou, to be endeared to a king,
Made it no conscience to destroy a prince.
Hub. My lord,—
K. John. Hadst thou but shook thy head or made a pause
When I spake darkly what I purposed, 232
Or turn’d an eye of doubt upon my face,
As bid me tell my tale in express words,
Deep shame had struck me dumb, made me break off,
And those thy fears might have wrought fears in me:
But thou didst understand me by my signs
And didst in signs again parley with sin;
Yea, without stop, didst let thy heart consent,
And consequently thy rude hand to act
The deed which both our tongues held vile to name.
Out of my sight, and never see me more!
My nobles leave me; and my state is brav’d,
Even at my gates, with ranks of foreign powers:
Nay, in the body of this fleshly land, 245
This kingdom, this confine of blood and breath,
Hostility and civil tumult reigns
Between my conscience and my cousin’s death.
Hub. Arm you against your other enemies,
I’ll make a peace between your soul and you.
Young Arthur is alive: this hand of mine
Is yet a maiden and an innocent hand,
Not painted with the crimson spots of blood.
Within this bosom never enter’d yet
The dreadful motion of a murderous thought;
And you have slander’d nature in my form, 256
Which, howsoever rude exteriorly,
Is yet the cover of a fairer mind
Than to be butcher of an innocent child.
K. John. Doth Arthur live? O! haste thee to the peers,
Throw this report on their incensed rage,
And make them tame to their obedience.
Forgive the comment that my passion made
Upon thy feature; for my rage was blind, 264
And foul imaginary eyes of blood
Presented thee more hideous than thou art.
O! answer not; but to my closet bring
The angry lords, with all expedient haste. 268
I conjure thee but slowly; run more fast.
[Exeunt.

Scene III.—The Same. Before the Castle.

Enter ARTHUR, on the Walls.

Arth. The wall is high; and yet will I leap down
Good ground, be pitiful and hurt me not!
There’s few or none do know me; if they did,
This ship-boy’s semblance hath disguish’d me quite.
I am afraid; and yet I’ll venture it.
If I get down, and do not break my limbs,
I’ll find a thousand shifts to get away:
As good to die and go, as die and stay. 8
[Leaps down.

O me! my uncle’s spirit is in these stones:
Heaven take my soul, and England keep my bones!  

Enter PEMBROKE, SALISBURY, and BIGOT.
Sal. Lords, I will meet him at Saint Edmundsbury.
It is our safety, and we must embrace this gentle offer of the perilous time.
Pem. Who brought that letter from the cardinal?
Sal. The Count Melun, a noble lord of France;
Whose private with me of the Dauphin’s love, is much more general than these lines import.
Big. Tomorrow morning let us meet him then.
Sal. Or rather then set forward; for ‘twill be two long days’ journey, lords, or e’er we meet.

Enter the BASTARD.
Bast. Once more to-day well met, distemper’d lords!
The king by me requests your presence straight.
Sal. The king hath dispossest’d himself of us; we will not line his thin bestained cloak with our pure honours, nor attend the foot that leaves the print of blood where’er it walks. Return and tell him so: we know the worst.
Bast. Whate’er you think, good words, I think, were best.
Sal. Our griefs, and not our manners, reason now.
Bast. But there is little reason in your grief; therefore ‘twere reason you had manners now.
Pem. Sir, sir, impatience hath his privilege.
Bast. ’Tis true; to hurt his master, no man else.
Sal. This is the prison. [Seeing ARTHUR. What is he here? Pem. O death, made proud with pure and princely beauty! The earth had not a hole to hide this deed. Sal. Murder, as having what himself hath done, Doth lay it open to urge on revenge.
Big. Or when he doom’d this beauty to a grave, Found it too precious-princely for a grave. Sal. Sir Richard, what think you? Have you beheld, or have you read, or heard? or could you think? Or do you almost think, although you see, That you do see? could thought, without this object, form such another? This is the very top, The height, the crest, or crest unto the crest, Of murder’s arms: this is the bloodiest shame,
The wildest savagery, the vilest stroke, That ever wall-eyed wrath or staring rage Presented to the tears of soft remorse.
Pem. All murders past do stand excus’d in this:
And this, so sole and so unmatchable, Shall give a holiness, a purity, to the yet unbegotten sin of times; And prove a deadly bloodshed but a jest, Exampl’d by this heinous spectacle.
Bast. It is a damned and a bloody work; the graceless action of a heavy hand, if that it be the work of any hand.
Sal. If that it be the work of any hand! We had a kind of light what would ensue: it is the shameful work of Hubert’s hand; the practice and the purpose of the king: From whose obedience I forbid my soul, Kneeling before this ruin of sweet life, And breathing to his breathless excellence The incense of a vow, a holy vow, Never to taste the pleasures of the world, Never to be infected with delight, nor conversant with ease and idleness, till I have set a glory to this hand, by giving it the worship of revenge.
Pem. Our souls religiously confirm thy words.

Enter HUBERT.
Hub. Lords, I am hot with haste in seeking you: Arthur doth live: the king hath sent for you.
Sal. O! he is bold and blushes not at death.
Avaunt, thou hateful villain! get thee gone. Hub. I am no villain.
Sal. [Drawing his sword.] Must I rob the law? Bast. Your sword is bright, sir; put it up again.
Sal. Not till I sheathe it in a murderer’s skin.
Hub. Stand back, Lord Salisbury, stand back, I say: By heaven, I think my sword’s as sharp as yours. I would not have you, lord, forget yourself, nor tempt the danger of my true defence; lest I, by marking of your rage, forget your worth, your greatness, and nobility.
Big. Out, dunghill! dar’st thou brave a nobleman?
Hub. Not for my life; but yet I dare defend my innocent life against an emperor.
Sal. Thou art a murderer.
Hub. Do not prove me so; yet I am none. Whose tongue so’er speaks false,
Act IV, Sc. III.

KING JOHN

Not truly speaks; who speaks not truly, lies. 92

Pem. Cut him to pieces.

Bast. Keep the peace, I say.

Sal. Stand by, or I shall gall you, Faulconbridge.

Bast. Thou wert better gall the devil, Salisbury:
If thou but frown on me, or stir thy foot, 96
Or teach thy hasty spleen to do me shame,
I’ll strike thee dead. Put up thy sword betime:
Or I’ll so maul you and your toasting-iron,
That you shall think the devil is come from hell.

Big. What wilt thou do, renowned Faulconbridge?

Second a villain and a murderer?

Hub. Lord Bigot, I am none.

Big. Who kill’d this prince?

Hub. ’Tis not an hour since I left him well:
I honour’d him, I lov’d him; and will weep my date of life out for his sweet life’s loss.

Sal. Trust not those cunning waters of his eyes,
For villainy is not without such rheum;
And he, long traded in it, makes it seem
Like rivers of remorse and innocency.
Away with me, all you whose souls abhor
The uncleanly savours of a slaughter-house;
For I am stifled with this smell of sin.

Big. Away toward Bury; to the Dauphin there!

Pem. There tell the king he may inquire us out.

[Exeunt Lords.

Bast. Here’s a good world! Knew you of this fair work?

Beyond the infinite and boundless reach
Of mercy, if thou didst this deed of death,
Art thou damn’d, Hubert.

Hub. Do but hear me, sir.

Bast. Ha! I’ll tell thee what;

Thou art damn’d as black—nay, nothing is so black;
Thou art more deep damn’d than Prince Lucifer:

There is not yet so ugly a fiend of hell
As thou shalt be, if thou didst kill this child. 124

Hub. Upon my soul,—

Bast. If thou didst but consent
To this most cruel act, do but despair;
And if thou want’st a cord, the smallest thread
That ever spider twisted from her womb
Will serve to strangle thee; a rush will be a beam
To hang thee on; or wouldst thou drown thyself,

Put but a little water in a spoon,
And it shall be as all the ocean,
Enough to stifte such a villain up.

I do suspect thee very grievously.

Hub. If I in act, consent, or sin of thought,
Be guilty of the stealing that sweet breath
Which was embounded in this beauteous clay,
Let hell want pains enough to torture me.

I left him well.

Bast. Go, bear him in thine arms.
I am amaz’d, methinks, and lose my way.

Among the thorns and dangers of this world,
How easy dost thou take all England up!
From forth this morsel of dead royalty,
The life, the right and truth of all this realm
Is fled to heaven; and England now is left
To tug and scamble and to part by the teeth
The unw’d interest of proud swelling state.

Now for the bare-pick’d bone of majesty.
Doth dogged war bristle his angry crest,
And snarl in the gentle eyes of peace:

Now powers from home and discontent at home
Meet in one line; and vast confusion waits,—

As doth a raven on a sick-fallen beast,—
The imminent decay of wrested pomp.

Now happy he whose cloak and coigne can
Hold out this tempest. Bear away that child
And follow me with speed: I’ll to the king:

A thousand businesses are brief in hand,
And heaven itself doth frown upon the land.

[Exeunt.

ACT V.

SCENE I.—The Same. A Room in the Palace.

Enter KING JOHN, PANDULPH with the crown, and Attendants.

K. John. Thus have I yielded up into your hand
The circle of my glory.

Pand. [Giving John the crown.] Take again
From this my hand, as holding of the pope,
Your sovereign greatness and authority.

K. John. Now keep your holy word: go meet the French,
And from his holiness use all your power
To stop their marches ’fore we are inflam’d.

Our discontented counties do revolt,
Our people quarrel with obedience,
Swearing allegiance and the love of soul
To stranger blood, to foreign royalty.

This inundation of mistemper’d humour
Rests by you only to be qualified:

Then pause not; for the present time’s so sick,
That present medicine must be minister’d,

Pand. It was my breath that blew this tempest up

Upon your stubborn usage of the pope;

430
KING JOHN

Act V, Sc. II.

But, since you are a gentle converte,
My tongue shall hush again this storm of war,
And make fair weather in your blustering land.
On this Ascension-day, remember well,
Upon your oath of service to the pope,
Go I to make the French lay down their arms.

Exit.

K. John. Is this Ascension-day? Did not
the prophet
Say that before Ascension-day at noon
My crown I should give off? Even so I have:
I did suppose it should be on constraint;
But, heaven be thank’d, it is but voluntary.

Enter the BASTARD.

Bast. All Kent hath yielded; nothing there
holds out
But Dover Castle; London hath receiv’d,
Like a kind host, the Dauphin and his powers:
Your nobles will not hear, but are gone 

To offer service to your enemy;
And wild amazement hurries up and down
The little number of your doubtful friends.

K. John. Would not my lords return to me
again
After they heard young Arthur was alive?

Bast. They found him dead and cast into the
streets,
An empty casket, where the jewel of life

By some damn’d hand was robb’d and ta’en
away.

K. John. That villain Hubert told me he did
live.

Bast. So, on my soul, he did, for aught he
knew.

But wherefore do you droop? why look you sad?
Be great in act, as you have been in thought;
Let not the world see fear and sad distrust
Govern the motion of a kingly eye:
Be stirring as the time; be fire with fire;
Threaten the threatener, and oufaze the brow
Of bragging horror: so shall inferior eyes,
That borrow their behaviours from the great,
Grow great by your example and put on
The dauntless spirit of resolution.
Away! and glister like the god of war
When he intendeth to become the field:
Show boldness and aspiring confidence.

What! shall they seek the lion in his den
And fright him there? and make him tremble
there?

O! let it not be said. Forage, and run
To meet displeasure further from the doors,
And grapple with him ere he comes so nigh.

K. John. Thelegate of the pope hath been
with me,
And I have made a happy peace with him;

And he hath promis’d to dismiss the powers
Led by the Dauphin.

Bast. O inglorious league!

Shall we, upon the footing of our land,
Send fair-play orders and make compromise,
Insinuation, parole and base truce
To arms invasive? shall a beardless boy,
A cocker’d silken wanton, brave our fields,
And flesh his spirit in a war-like soil,
Mocking the air with colours idly spread.

And find no check? Let us, my liege, to arms:
Perchance the cardinal cannot make your peace;
Or if he do, let it at least be said
They saw we had a purpose of defence.

K. John. Have thou the ordering of this
present time.

Bast. Away then, with good courage! yet, I
know,
Our party may well meet a prouder foe.

Exeunt.

SCENE II.—A Plain, near St. Edmundsbury.
The French Camp.

Enter, in arms, LEWIS, SALISBURY, MELUN,
PEMBROKE, BIGOT, and Soldiers.

Lew. My Lord Melun, let this be copied out,
And keep it safe for our remembrance.

Return the precedent to these lords again;
That, having our fair order written down,
Both they and we, perusing o’er these notes,
May know wherefore we took the sacrament,
And keep our faiths firm and inviolable.

Sal. Upon our oaths it never shall be broken.

And, noble Dauphin, albeit we swear
A voluntary zeal, an unurg’d faith
To your proceedings; yet, believe me, prince,
I am not glad that such a sore of time
Should seek a plaster by contemn’d revolt,
And heal the inveterate canker of one wound
By making many. O! it grieves my soul
That I must draw this metal from my side
To be a widow-maker! O! and there
Where honourable rescue and defence
Cries out upon the name of Salisbury.

But such is the infection of the time,
That, for the health and physic of our right,
We cannot deal but with the very hand
Of stern injustice and confused wrong.
And is’t not pity, O my grieved friends!

That we, the sons and children of this isle,
Were born to see so sad an hour as this;
Wherein we step after a stranger march
Upon her gentle bosom, and fill up
Her enemies’ ranks.—I must withdraw and weep
Upon the spot of this enforced cause,—
To grace the gentry of a land remote,
And follow unacquainted colours here? What, here? O nation! that thou couldst remove; That Neptune's arms, who clippeth thee about, Would bear thee from the knowledge of thyself, And gripple thee unto a pagan shore; Where these two Christian armies might combine The blood of malice in a vein of league, And not to spend it so unneighbourly! Lew. A noble temper dost thou show in this; And great affections wrestling in thy bosom Do make an earthquake of nobility. Of what a noble combat hast thou fought Between compulsion and a brave respect. Let me wipe off this honourable dew, That silvery doth progress on thy cheeks: My heart hath melted at a lady's tears, Being an ordinary inundation; But this effusion of such many drops, This shower, blown up by tempest of the soul, Startles mine eyes, and makes me more amaz'd Than had I seen the vaulty top of heaven Figur'd quite o'er with burning meteors. Lift up thy brow, renowned Salisbury, And with a great heart heave away this storm: Command these waters to those baby eyes That never saw the giant world enrag'd; Nor met with fortune other than at feasts, Full warm of blood, of mirth, of gossiping. Come, come; for thou shalt thrust thy hand as deep Into the purse of rich prosperity As Lewis himself: so, nobles, shall you all, That knit your sinews to the strength of mine.

Enter Pandulph attended.
And even there, methinks, an angel spake: Look, where the holy legate comes apace, To give us warrant from the hand of heaven, And on our actions set the name of right With holy breath.

Pand. Hail, noble prince of France! The next is this: King John hath reconcile'd Himself to Rome; his spirit is come in That so stood out against the holy church, The great metropolis and see of Rome. Therefore thy threat'ning colours now wind up, And tame the savage spirit of wild war, That, like a lion foster'd up at hand, It may lie gently at the foot of peace, And be no further harmful than in show.

Lew. Your grace shall pardon me; I will not back:
I am too high-born to be propertied, To be a secondary at control, Or useful serving-man and instrument

To any sovereign state throughout the world. Your breath first kindled the dead coal of wars Between this chastis'd kingdom and myself, And brought in matter that should feed this fire; And now 'tis far too huge to be blown out With that same weak wind which enkindled it. You taught me how to know the face of right, Acquainted me with interest to this land,

Yea, thrust this enterprise into my heart; And come you now to tell me John hath made His peace with Rome? What is that peace to me? I, by the honour of my marriage-bed, After young Arthur, claim this land for mine; And, now it is half-conquer'd, must I back Because that John hath made his peace with Rome?

Am I Rome's slave? What penny hath Rome borne, What men provided, what munition sent, To underprop this action? is't not I That undergo this charge? who else but I, And such as to my claim are liable,

Sweat in this business and maintain this war? Have I not heard these islands shout out, Vive le roy! as I have bank'd their towns? Have I not here the best cards for the game To win this easy match play'd for a crown? And shall I now give o'er the yielded set? No, no, on my soul, it never shall be said.

Pand. You look but on the outside of this work.

Lew. Outside or inside, I will not return Till my attempt so much be glorified As to my ample hope was promised Before I drew this gallant head of war, And cull'd these fiery spirits from the world, To outlook conquest and to win renown Even in the jaws of danger and of death.

[Trumpet sounds.]

What lusty trumpet thus doth summon us?

Enter the Bastard, attended.

Bast. According to the fair play of the world, Let me have audience; I am sent to speak: My holy Lord of Milan, from the king I come, to learn how you have dealt for him; And, as you answer, I do know the scope And warrant limited unto my tongue.

Pand. The Dauphin is too wilful-opposite, And will not temporize with my entreataies; He flatly says he'll not lay down his arms.

Bast. By all the blood that ever fury breath'd, The youth says well. Now hear our English king;

For thus his royalty doth speak in me.
He is prepar'd; and reason too he should:
This spish and unmannerly approach,
This harness'd masque and unadvised revel, 
This unhair'd sauciness and boyish troops,
The king doth smile at; and is well prepar'd
To whip this dwarfish war, these pigmy arms,
From out the circle of his territories.

That hand which had the strength, even at
your door,
To cudgel you and make you take the hatch;
To dive, like buckets, in concealed wells;
To crouch in litter of your stable planks:
To lie like pawns lock'd up in chests and trunks;
To hug with swine; to seek sweet safety out
In vaults and prisons; and to thrill and shake,
Even at the crying of your nation's crow,

Thinking this voice an armed Englishman:
Shall that victorious hand be feebled here?
That in your chambers gave you chastisement?
Not! Know, the gallant monarch is in arms,
And like an eagle o'er his airy towers,
To some annoyance that comes near his nest.
And you degenerate, you ingrate revolts,
You bloody Neros, ripping up the womb
Of your dear mother England, blush for shame:
For your own ladies and pale-visag'd maids
Like Amazons come tripping after drums,
Their thimbles into armed gauntlets change,
Their needles to lances, and their gentle hearts
To fierce and bloody inclination.

Lew. There end thy brave, and turn thy face
in peace;
We grant thou canst outscold us: fare thee
well;
We hold our time too precious to be spent
With such a brabbler.

Pand. Give me leave to speak.

Bast. No, I will speak.

Lew. We will attend to neither.

Strike up the drums; and let the tongue of
war
Plead for our interest and our being here.

Bast. Indeed, your drums, being beaten, will
cry out;
And so shall you, being beaten. Do but start
An echo with the clamour of thy drum,
And even at hand a drum is ready brace'd
That shall reverberate all as loud as thine;
Sound but another, and another shall
As loud as thine rattle the wellkin's ear
And mock the deep-mouth'd thunder: for at
hand,—
Not trusting to this halting legate here,
Whom he hath us'd rather for sport than need,—
Is warlike John; and in his forehead sits
A bare-ribb'd death, whose office is this day
To feast upon whole thousands of the French.

Lew. Strike up our drums, to find this
danger out.

Bast. And thou shalt find it, Dauphin, do
not doubt.

[Exeunt.

SCENE III.—The Same. A Field of Battle.

Alarums. Enter KING JOHN and HUBERT.

K. John. How goes the day with us? O! tell
me, Hubert.

Hub. Badly, I fear. How fares your majesty?
K. John. This fever, that hath troubled me
so long,
Lies heavy on me: O! my heart is sick.

Enter a Messenger.

Mess. My lord, your vaillant kinsman, Faul
conbridge,
Desires your majesty to leave the field,
And send him word by me which way you go.
K. John. Tell him, toward Swinstead, to the
abbey there.

Mess. Be of good comfort: for the great supply
That was expected by the Dauphin here,
Are wrack'd three nights ago on Goodwin sands.
This news was brought to Richard but even now.
The French fight coldly, and retire themselves; 
K. John. Ay me! this tyrant fever burns me up,
And will not let me welcome this good news.
Set on toward Swinstead: to my litter straight;
Weakness possesseth me, and I am faint.

[Exeunt.

SCENE IV.—The Same. Another Part of
the Same.

Enter SALISBURY, PEMBROKE, BICOT, and
Others.

Sal. I did not think the king so stor'd with
friends.

Pem. Up once again; put spirit in the French:
If they miscarry we miscarry too.

Sal. That misbegotten devil, Faulconbridge,
In spite of spite, alone upholds the day.

Pem. They say King John, sore sick, hath
left the field.

Enter MELUN wounded, and led by Soldiers.

Mel. Lead me to the revolts of England here.
Sal. When we were happy we had other names.

Pem. It is the Count Melun.

Sal. Wounded to death.

Mel. Fly, noble English; you are bought and
sold;

Unthread the rude eye of rebellion,
And welcome home again discarded faith.

Seek out King John and fall before his feet;
For if the French be lords of this loud day,
He means to recompense the pains you take
By cutting off your heads. Thus hath he sworn,
And I with him, and many more with me. 
Upon the altar at Saint Edmundsbury;
Even on that altar where we swore to you
Dear amity and everlasting love.

Sal. May this be possible? may this be true?
Mel. Have I not hideous death within my view,
Retaining but a quantity of life,
Which bleeds away, even as a form of wax
Resolveth from his figure 'gainst the fire?
What in the world should make me now deceive,
Since I must lose the use of all deceit?
Why should I then be false, since it is true
That I must die here and live hence by truth?
I say again, if Lewis do win the day,
He is forsworn, if e'er those eyes of yours
Behold another day break in the east:
But even this night, whose black contagious breath
Already smokes about the burning crest
Of the old, feeble, and day-wearied sun,
Even this ill night, your breathings shall expire,
Paying the fine of rated treachery
Even with a treacherous fine of all your lives,
If Lewis by your assistance win the day.
Commend me to one Hubert with your king;
The love of him, and this respect besides,
For that my grand sire was an Englishman,
Awakes my conscience to confess all this.
In lieu whereof, I pray you, bear me hence
From forth the noise and rumour of the field,
Where I may think the remnant of my thoughts
In peace, and part this body and my soul
With contemplation and devout desires.

Sal. We do believe thee: and beshrew my soul
But I do love the favour and the form
Of this most fair occasion, by the which
We will untread the steps of damned flight,
And like a bated and retired flood,
Leaving our rankness and irregular course,
Stoop low within those bounds we have o'erlook'd,
And calmly run on in obedience.
Even to our ocean, to our great King John.
My arm shall give thee help to bear thee hence,
For I do see the cruel pangs of death
Right in thine eye. Away, my friends! New flight;
And happy newness, that intends old right.

[Exeunt, leading off Melun.]

---

When the English measur'd backward their
own ground
In faint retire. O! bravely came we off,
When with a volley of our needless shot,
After such bloody toil, we bid good night,
And wound our tottering colours clearly up,
Last in the field, and almost lords of it!

Enter a Messenger.

Mess. Where is my prince, the Dauphin?
Lew. Here: what news?
Mess. The Count Melun is slain; the English
lords,
By his persuasion, are again fall'n off;
And your supply, which you have wish'd so long,
Are cast away and sunk, on Goodwin sands. 
Lew. Ah, foul shrewd news! Beshrew thy
very heart!
I did not think to be so sad to-night.
As this hath made me. Who was he that said
King John did fly an hour or two before
The stumbling night did part our weary powers?
Mess. Whoever spoke it, it is true, my lord.
Lew. Well; keep good quarter and good care
to-night:
The day shall not be up so soon as I,
To try the fair adventure of to-morrow. [Exeunt.

SCENE VI.—An open Place in the neighbour-
hood of Swinsteald Abbey.

Enter the BASlard and HUBERT, severally.

Hub. Who's there? speak, hol speak quickly,
or I shoot.
Bast. A friend. What art thou?
Hub. Of the part of England.
Bast. Whither dost thou go?
Hub. What's that to thee? Why may not I
demand
Of thine affairs as well as thou of mine?
Bast. Hubert, I think?
Hub. Thou hast a perfect thought:
I will upon all hazards well believe
Thou art my friend, that knowst my tongue so
well.
Who art thou?
Bast. Who thou wilt: and if thou please,
Thou mayst befriended me so much as to think
I come one way of the Plantagenets.
Hub. Unkind remembrances thou and eye-
less night
Have done me shame: brave soldier, pardon
me,
That any accent breaking from thy tongue
Should escape the true acquaintance of mine
ear.
Bast. Come, come; sans compliment, what news abroad? 16
Hub. Why, here walk I in the black brow of night,
To find you out.
Bast. Brief, then; and what's the news? 24
Hub. O! my sweet sir, news fitting to the night,
Black, fearful, comfortless, and horrible. 20
Bast. Show me the very wound of this ill news:
I am no woman; I'll not swound at it.
Hub. The king, I fear, is poison'd by a monk:
I left him almost speechless; and broke out
To acquaint you with this evil, that you might
The better arm you to the sudden time
Than if you had at leisure known of this.
Bast. How did he take it? who did taste to him? 28
Hub. A monk, I tell you; a resolved villain,
Whose bowels suddenly burst out: the king
Yet speaks, and peradventure may recover.
Bast. Whom diest thou leave to tend his majesty? 32
Hub. Why, know you not? the lords are all
come back,
And brought Prince Henry in their company;
At whose request the king hath pardon'd them,
And they are all about his majesty. 36
Bast. Withhold thine indignation, mighty heaven,
And tempt us not to bear above our power!
I'll tell thee, Hubert, half my power this night,
Passing these flats, are taken by the tide;
These Lincoln Washes have devoured them:
Myself, well-mounted, hardly have escap'd.
Away before! conduct me to the king;
I doubt he will be dead or ere I come. [Exeunt.

SCENE VII.—The Orchard of Swinstead Abbey.

Enter Prince Henry, Salisbury, and Bigot.
P. Hen. It is too late: the life of all his blood
Is touch'd corruptibly; and his pure brain,—
Which some suppose the soul's frail dwelling-house,—
Doth, by the idle comments that it makes,
Foretell the ending of mortality.

Enter Pembroke.
Pem. His highness yet doth speak; and holds belief
That, being brought into the open air,
It would allay the burning quality
Of that fell poison which assaileth him.
P. Hen. Let him be brought into the orchard here.
Doth he still rage? [Exit Bigot.
Pem. He is more patient
Than when you left him: even now he sung. 12
P. Hen. O, vanity of sickness! fierce extremes
In their continuance will not feel themselves.
Death, having prey'd upon the outward parts,
Leaves them invisible; and his siege is now 16
Against the mind, which he pricks and wounds
With many legions of strange fantasies,
Which, in their throng and press to that last hold,
Confound themselves. 'Tis strange that death should sing.
I am the cygnet to this pale faint swan,
Who chants a doleful hymn to his own death,
And from the organ-pipe of frailty sings
His soul and body to their lasting rest 24
Sal. Be of good comfort, prince; for you are born
To set a form upon that indigest
Which he hath left so shapeless and so rude.

Re-enter Bigot and Attendants carrying King John in a chair.

K. John. Ay, marry, now my soul hath elbow-room;
It would not out at windows, nor at doors.
There is so hot a summer in my bosom
That all my bowels crumble up to dust:
I am a scribbled form, drawn with a pen 32
Upon a parchment, and against this fire
Do I shrink up.
P. Hen. How fares your majesty?
K. John. Poison'd, ill-fare; dead, forsook, cast off;
And none of you will bid the winter come 36
To thrust his icy fingers in my maw;
Nor let my kingdom's rivers take their course
Through my burn'd bosom; nor entreat the north
To make his bleak winds kiss my parched lips
And comfort me with cold. I do not ask you much:
I beg cold comfort; and you are so strait
And so ingrateful you deny me that.
P. Hen. O! that there were some virtue in my tears,
That might relieve you.
K. John. The salt in them is hot.
Within me is a hell; and there the poison
Is as a fiend confin'd to tyrannize
On unreprievable condemned blood. 48
Enter the Bastard.

Bast. O! I am scalded with my violent motion
And spleen of speed to see your majesty.

K. John. O cousin! thou art come to set mine eye:
The tackle of my heart is crack'd and burn'd, 52
And all the shrouds wherewith my life should sail
Are turned to one thread, one little hair;
My heart hath one poor string to stay it by,
Which holds but till thy news be uttered; 56
And then all this thou seest is but a cloath
And module of confounded royalty.

Bast. The Dauphin is preparing hitherward,
Where heaven he knows how we shall answer him: 60
For in a night the best part of my power,
As I upon advantage did remove,
Were in the Washes all unwarily
Devoured by the unexpected flood. 64

[The King dies.

Sal. You breathe these dead news in as dead an ear.

My liege! my lord! But now a king, now thus.

P. Hen. Even so must I run on, and even so stop.

What surety of the world, what hope, what stay,
When this was now a king, and now is clay? 69

Bast. Art thou gone so? I do but stay behind
To do the office for thee of revenge,
And then my soul shall wait on thee to heaven,
As it on earth hath been thy servant still. 73
Now, now, you stars, that move in your right spheres,
Where be your powers? Show now your mended
faiths,
And instantly return with me again,
To push destruction and perpetual shame
Out of the weak door of our fainting land.
Straight let us seek, or straight we shall be sought:
The Dauphin rages at our very heels. 80

Sal. It seems you know not then so much as we.
The Cardinal Pandulph is within at rest,
Who half an hour since came from the Dauphin,
And brings from him such offers of our peace 84
As we with honour and respect may take,
With purpose presently to leave this war.

Bast. He will the rather do it when he sees
Ourselves well sinewed to our defence. 88

Sal. Nay, it is in a manner done already;
For many carriages he hath dispatch'd
To the sea-side, and put his cause and quarrel
To the disposing of the cardinal: 92
With whom yourself, myself, and other lords,
If you think meet, this afternoon will post
To consummate this business happily.

Bast. Let it be so. And you, my noble prince,
With other princes that may best be spare'd, 97
Shall wait upon your father's funeral.

P. Hen. At Worcester must his body be interr'd;
For so he will'd it.

Bast. Thither shall it then. 100
And happily may your sweet self put on
The lineal state and glory of the land!
To whom, with all submission, on my knee,
I do bequeath my faithful services 104
And true subjection everlastingly.

Sal. And the like tender of our love we make,
To rest without a spot for evermore.

P. Hen. I have a kind soul that would give
you thanks, 108
And knows not how to do it but with tears.

Bast. O! let us pay the time but needful woe
Since it hath been beforehand with our griefs.
This England never did, nor never shall, 112
Lie at the proud foot of a conqueror,
But when it first did help to wound itself.
Now these her princes are come home again,
Come the three corners of the world in arms, 116
And we shall shock them. Nought shall make us rue,
If England to itself do rest but true. [Exeunt.
## THE TRAGEDY OF
## KING RICHARD THE SECOND

### DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Role</th>
<th>Notes</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>KING RICHARD THE SECOND</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>JOHN OF GAUNT, Duke</td>
<td>of Lancaster</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>EDMUND OF LANGLEY, Duke of York</td>
<td>Uncles to the King</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>HENRY, surnamed BOLINGBROKE, Duke of</td>
<td>Hereford, Son to John of Gaunt:</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>afterwards King Henry IV</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>DUKE OF AUMERLE, Son to the Duke of York</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>THOMAS MOWBRAY, Duke of Norfolk</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>DUKE OF SURREY</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>EARL OF SALISBURY</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LORD BERKELEY</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>BUSHY,</td>
<td>Servants to King Richard</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>BAGOT,</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>GREEN,</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>EARL OF NORTHAMBERLAND</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>HENRY PERCY, surnamed Hotspur, his Son.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LORD ROSS</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LORD WILLOUGHBY</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LORD FITZWATER</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>BISHOP OF CARLISLE</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ABBOT OF WESTMINSTER</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LORD MARSHAL</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>SIR PIERCE OF EXTON</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>SIR STEPHEN SCROOP</td>
<td>Captain of a Band of Welshmen</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>QUEEN TO KING RICH</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>DUCHESS OF GLOUCESTER</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>DUCHESS OF YORK</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lady attending on the Queen</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lords, Heralds, Officers, Soldiers,</td>
<td>Keeper, Messenger, Groom, and</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gardeners,</td>
<td>other Attendants</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### SCENE.—Dispersely in England and Wales.

### ACT I.

#### SCENE I.—London. A Room in the Palace.

Enter KING RICHARD, attended; JOHN OF GAUNT, and other Nobles.

K. Rich. Old John of Gaunt, time-honour'd Lancaster,

Hast thou, according to thy oath and band,

Brought hither Henry Hereford thy bold son,

Here to make good the boisterous late appeal,

Which then our leisure would not let us hear,

Against the Duke of Norfolk, Thomas Mowbray?

Gaunt. I have, my liege.

K. Rich. Tell me, moreover, hast thou sounded him,

If he appeal the duke on ancient malice,

Or worthy, as a good subject should,

On some known ground of treachery in him?

Gaunt. As near as I could sift him on that argument,

On some apparent danger seen in him

Aim'd at thy highness, no inveterate malice

K. Rich. Then call them to our presence:

face to face,

And frowning brow to brow, ourselves will hear

The accuser and the accused freely speak: 17

[Exeunt some Attendants.

High-stomach'd are they both, and full of ire,

In rage deaf as the sea,usty as fire.

Re-enter Attendants, with BOLINGBROKE and MOWBRAY.

Boling. Many years of happy days befall 20

My gracious sovereign, my most loving liege!

Mow. Each day still better other's happiness;

Until the heavens, envying earth's good hap,

Add an immortal title to your crown! 24

K. Rich. We thank you both: yet one but

flatters us,

As well appeareth by the cause you come;

Namely, to appeal each other of high treason.

Cousin of Hereford, what dost thou object 28

Against the Duke of Norfolk, Thomas Mowbray?

Boling. First,—heaven be the record to my

speech!—

In the devotion of a subject's love,

Tendering the precious safety of my prince, 32

And free from other misbegotten hate,

Come I appellant to this princely presence.

Now, Thomas Mowbray, do I turn to thee,
And mark my greeting well; for what I speak
My body shall make good upon this earth,
Or my divine soul answer it in heaven.
Thou art a traitor and a miscreant;
Too good to be so and too bad to live,
Since the more fair and crystal is the sky,
The uglier seem the clouds that in it fly.
Once more, the more to aggravate the note,
With a foul traitor's name stuff I thy throat;
And wish, so please my sovereign, ere I move,
What my tongue speaks, my right drawn sword
may prove.

Mow. Let not my cold words here accuse my zeal:
'Tis not the trial of a woman's war,
The bitter clamour of two eager tongues,
Can arbitrate this cause betwixt us twain;
The blood is hot that must be cool'd for this:
Yet can I not of such tame patience boast
As to be hush'd and nought at all to say.
First, the fair reverence of your highness curb's me
From giving reins and spurs to my free speech;
Which else would post until it had return'd:
These terms of treason doubled down his throat.
Setting aside his high blood's royalty,
And let him be no kinsman to my liege,
I do defy him, and I spit at him;
Call him a slanderous coward and a villain:
Which to maintain I would allow him odds,
And meet him, were I tied to run afoot
Even to the frozen ridges of the Alps,
Or any other ground inhabitable,
Wherever Englishman durst set his foot.
Meantime let this defend my loyalty:
By all my hopes, most falsely doth he lie.

Boling. Pale trembling coward, there I throw
my gage,
Disclaiming here the kindred of the king;
And lay aside my high blood's royalty,
Which fear, not reverence, makes thee to ex-
cept:
If guilty dread have left thee so much strength
As to take up mine honour's pawn, then stoop:
By that, and all the rites of knighthood else,
Will I make good against thee, arm to arm,
What I have spoke, or thou canst worse devise.

Mow. I take it up; and by that sword I swear,
Which gently laid my knighthood on my shoul-
der,
I'll answer thee in any fair degree,
Or chivalrous design of knightly trial!
And when I mount, alive may I not light,
If I be traitor or unjustly fight!

K. Rich. What doth our cousin lay to Mow-
bray's charge?
Now swallow down that lie. For Gloucester's death,
I slew him not; but to mine own disgrace
Neglected my sworn duty in that case.
For you, my noble Lord of Lancaster,
The honourable father to my foe,
Once did I lay an ambush for your life;
A trespass that doth vex my grieved soul;
But ere I last receiv'd the sacrament
I did confess it, and exactly begg'd
Your Grace's pardon, and I hope I had it.
This is my fault: as for the rest appeal'd,
It issues from the rancour of a villain,
A recreant and most degenerate traitor;
Which in myself I boldly will defend,
And interchangeably hurl down my gage
Upon this overweening traitor's foot,
To prove myself a loyal gentleman
Even in the best blood chamber'd in his bosom.
In haste whereof, most heartily I pray
Your highness to assign our trial day.

K. Rich. Wrath-kindled gentlemen, be rul'd by me;
Let's purge this choler without letting blood:
This we prescribe, though no physician;
Deep malice makes too deep incision:
Forget, forgive; conclude and be agreed,
Our doctors say this is no month to bleed.
Good uncle, let this end where it begun;
We'll calm the Duke of Norfolk, you your son.

Gaunt. To be a make-peace shall become my age:
Throw down, my son, the Duke of Norfolk's gage.

K. Rich. And, Norfolk, throw down his.
Gaunt. When, Harry, when?
Obedience bids I should not bid again.

K. Rich. Norfolk, throw down, we bid; there is no boot.

Now. Myself I throw, dread sovereign, at thy foot.

My life thou shalt command, but not my shame:
The one my duty owes; but my fair name,—
Despite of death that lives upon my grave,—
To dark dishonour's use thou shalt not have.
I am disgrac'd, impeach'd, and baffled here,
Pere'd to the soul with slander's venom'd spear,
The which no balm can cure but his heart-blood
Which breath'd this poison.

Rage must be withstood:
Give me his gage: lions make leopards tame.

Now. Yea, but not change his spots: take but my shame,
And I resign my gage. My dear dear lord,
The purest treasure mortal times afford
Is spotless reputation; that away,
Men are but gilded loam or painted clay.
A jewel in a ten-times-barr'd-up chest
Is a bold spirit in a loyal breast.
Mine honour is my life; both grow in one;
Take honour from me, and my life is done:
Then, dear my liege, mine honour let me try;
In that I live and for that will I die.


Boiling. O! God defend my soul from such deep sin.
Shall I seem crest-fall'n in my father's sight,
Or with pale beggar-scare impeach my height
Before this out-dar'd dastard? Ere my tongue
Shall wound mine honour with such feeble wrong,
Or sound so base a parle, my teeth shall tear
The slavish motive of recanting fear,
And spit it bleeding in his high disgrace,
Where shame doth harbour, even in Mowbray's face.

K. Rich. We were not born to sue, but to command:
Which since we cannot do to make you friends,
Be ready, as your lives shall answer it,
At Coventry, upon Saint Lambert's day:
There shall your swords and lances arbitrate
The swelling difference of your settled hate:
Since we cannot alone you, we shall see justice design the victor's chivalry.
Marshal, command our officers-at-arms
Be ready to direct these home alarms. [Exeunt.

SCENE II.—The Same. A Room in the Duke of Lancaster's Palace.

Enter Gaunt and Duchess of Gloucester.

Gaunt. Alas! the part I had in Woodstock's blood
Doth more solicit me than your exclaims,
To stir against the butchers of his life.
But since correction lieth in those hands
Which made the fault that we cannot correct,
Put we our quarrel to the will of heaven;
Who, when they see the hours ripe on earth,
Will rain hot vengeance on offenders' heads.

Duch. Finds brotherhood in thee no sharper spur?
Hath love in thy old blood no living fire?
Edward's seven sons, whereof thyself art one, Were as seven vials of his sacred blood,
Or seven fair branches springing from one root: Some of those seven are dried by nature's course, Some of those branches by the Destinies cut;
But Thomas, my dear lord, my life, my Gloucester, One vial full of Edward's sacred blood,
One flourishing branch of his most royal root, 
Is crack’d, and all the precious liquor spilt; 
Is hack’d down, and his summer leaves all vaded, 
By envy’s hand and murder’s bloody axe. 
21
Ah, Gaunt! his blood was thine: that bed, that 
womb, 
That metal, that self-mould, that fashion’d thee 
Made him a man; and though thou liv’st and 
breath’st, 
24
Yet art thou slain in him: thou dost consent 
In some large measure to thy father’s death 
In that thou seest thy wretched brother die, 
Who was the model of thy father’s life. 
28
Call it not patience, Gaunt; it is despair: 
In suffering thus thy brother to be slaughter’d 
Thou show’st the naked pathway to thy life, 
Teaching stern murder how to butcher thee: 
32
That which in mean men we entitle patience 
Is pale cowardice in noble breasts. 
What shall I say? to safeguard thine own life, 
The best way is to venge my Gloucester’s death. 
36
Gaunt. God’s is the quarrel; for God’s sub-
stitute, 
His deputy anointed in his sight, 
Hath caus’d his death; the which if wrongfully, 
Let heaven revenge, for I may never lift 
An angry arm against his minister. 
Duch. Where then, alas! may I complain 
myself? 
Gaunt. To God, the widow’s champion and 
defence. 
Duch. Why then, I will. Farewell, old Gaunt. 
Thou go’st to Coventry, there to behold 
Our cousin Hereford and fell Mowbray fight: 
Of sit my husband’s wrongs on Hereford’s spear. 
That it may enter butcher Mowbray’s breast. 
44
Or if misfortune miss the first career, 
Be Mowbray’s sins so heavy in his bosom 
That they may break his foaming courser’s back, 
And throw the rider headlong in the lists, 
48
A caitiff recreant to my cousin Hereford! 
Farewell, old Gaunt: thy sometimes brother’s 
wife 
With her companion grief must end her life. 
Gaunt. Sister, farewell; I must to Coventry. 
As much good stay with thee as go with me! 
Duch. Yet one word more. Grief boundeth 
where it falls, 
Not with the empty hollowness, but weight: 
I take my leave before I have begun. 
60
For sorrow ends not when it seemeth done. 
Commend me to my brother, Edmund York. 
Lol this is all: nay, yet depart not so; 
Though this be all, do not so quickly go; 
64
I shall remember more. Bid him—ah, what?— 
With all good speed at Flashy visit me. 
Alack! and what shall good old York there see 
But empty lodgings and unfurnish’d walls, 
68
Unpeopled offices, untrodden stones? 
And what hear there for welcome but my 
groans? 
Therefore commend me; let him not come there, 
To seek out sorrow that dwells every where. 
72
Desolate, desolate will I hence, and die: 
The last leave of thee takes my weeping eye. 

[Exeunt.]

SCENE III.—Open Space, near Coventry. Lists 
set out, and a Throne. Heralds, &c., attend-
ing.

Enter the Lord Marshal and Aumerle.

Mar. My Lord Aumerle, is Harry Hereford 
arm’d?

Aum. Yea, at all points, and longs to enter 
in.

Mar. The Duke of Norfolk, sprightly and 
bold, 
Stays but the summons of the appellant’s 
trumpet. 
4
Aum. Why then, the champions are pre-
par’d, and stay 
For nothing but his majesty’s approach.

Flourish. Enter KING RICHARD, who takes his 
seat on his Throne; GAUNT, BUSHY, BAGOT, 
GREEN, and Others, who take their places. A 
trumpet is sounded, and answered by another 
trumpet within. Then enter MOWBRAY, in 
amour, defendant, preceded by a Herald.

K. Rich. Marshal, demand of yonder champion 
The cause of his arrival here in arms: 
Ask him his name, and orderly proceed 
To swear him in the justice of his cause. 
Mar. In God’s name, and the king’s, say 
who thou art, 
And why thou com’st thus knightly clad in arms, 
Against what man thou com’st, and what thy 
quarrel. 
13
Speak truly, on thy knighthood and thine oath: 
As so defend thee heaven and thy valour! 
Mow. My name is Thomas Mowbray, Duke 
of Norfolk, 
Who hither come engaged by my oath,— 
Which God defend a knight should violate!— 
Both to defend my loyalty and truth 
To God, my king, and his succeeding issue, 
Against the Duke of Hereford that appeals me; 
And, by the grace of God and this mine arm, 
To prove him, in defending of myself, 
A traitor to my God, my king, and me: 
24
And as I truly fight, defend me heaven!

[He takes his seat.]
King Richard the Second

Act I, Sc. III.

Trumpet sounds. Enter Bolingbroke, appellant, in armour, preceded by a Herald.

K. Rich. Marshal, ask yonder knight in arms, both who he is and why he cometh hither. Thus plaited in habiliments of war; and formally, according to our law, depose him in the justice of his cause.

Mar. What is thy name? and wherefore com'st thou hither, before King Richard in his royal lists?

Against whom comest thou? and what's thy quarrel?

Speak like a true knight, so defend thee heaven!

Boling. Harry of Hereford, Lancaster, and Derby,

Am I; who ready here do stand in arms, to prove by God's grace and my body's valour, in lists, on Thomas Mowbray, Duke of Norfolk, that he's a traitor foul and dangerous, to God of heaven, King Richard, and to me: and as I truly fight, defend me heaven!

Mar. On pain of death, no person be so bold or daring-hardy as to touch the lists, except the marshal and such officers appointed to direct these fair designs.

Boling. Lord Marshal, let me kiss my sovereign's hand, and bow my knee before his majesty: for Mowbray and myself are like two men, that vow a long and weary pilgrimage; then let us take a ceremonial leave and loving farewell of our several friends.

Mar. The appellant in all duty greteth your highness, and craves to kiss your hand and take his leave.

K. Rich. [Descends from his throne.] We will descend and fold him in our arms. Cousin of Hereford, as thy cause is right, so be thy fortune in this royal fight! Farewell, my blood; which if to-day thou sheddest, Lament we may, but not revenge thee dead.

Boling. I'll let no noble eye profane a tear for me, if I be gor'd with Mowbray's spear. As confident as is the falcon's flight against a bird, do I with Mowbray fight. My loving lord, I take my leave of you; of you, my noble cousin, Lord Aumerle; not sick, although I have to do with death, but lusty, young, and cheerly drawing breath. Lo! as at English feasts, so I regret the daintiest last, to make the end most sweet: oh thou, the earthly author of my blood, whose youthful spirit, in me regenerate, doth with a two-fold vigour lift me up to reach at victory above my head. Add proof unto mine armour with thy prayers, and with thy blessings steel my lance's point, that it may enter Mowbray's waxen coat, and furnish new the name of John a Gaunt, even in the lusty humour of his son.

Gaunt. God in thy good cause make thee prosperous! Be swift like lightning in the execution; and let thy blows, doubly redoubled, fall like amazing thunder on the casque of thy adverse pernicious enemy.

Rouse up thy youthful blood, be valiant and live.

Boling. Mine innocence and Saint George to thrive! [He takes his seat.]

Mow. [Rising.] However God or fortune cast my lot.

There lives or dies, true to King Richard's throne, a loyal, just, and upright gentleman. Never did captive with a freer heart cast off his chains of bondage and embrace his golden uncontroll'd enfranchisement, more than my dancing soul doth celebrate this feast of battle with mine adversary. Most mighty liege, and my companion peers, take from my mouth the wish of happy years. As gentle and as jovial as to jest, go I to fight: truth has a quiet breast.


[The King and the Lords return to their seats.

Mar. Harry of Hereford, Lancaster, and Derby, receive thy lance; and God defend the right!

Boling. [Rising.] Strong as a tower in hope, I cry 'amen.'

Mar. [To an Officer.] Go bear this lance to Thomas, Duke of Norfolk.

First Her. Harry of Hereford, Lancaster, and Derby, stands here for God, his sovereign, and himself, on pain to be found false and recreant, to prove the Duke of Norfolk, Thomas Mowbray, a traitor to his God, his king, and him; and dares him to set forward to the fight.

Sec. Her. Here standeth Thomas Mowbray, Duke of Norfolk, on pain to be found false and recreant, both to defend himself and to approve Henry of Hereford, Lancaster, and Derby, to God, his sovereign, and to him, disloyal; courageously and with a free desire attending but the signal to begin.

Mar. Sound, trumpets; and set forward, combatants. [A charge sounded.

Stay, stay, the king hath thrown his warder down.

K. Rich. Let them lay by their helmets and their spears,
And both return back to their chairs again: 
Withdraw with us; and let the trumpets sound
While we return these dukes what we decree.
[A long flourish.

[To the Combatants.] Draw near,
And list what with our council we have done.
For that our kingdom's earth should not be soil'd
With that dear blood which it hath fostered;
And for our eyes do hate the dire aspect
Of civil wounds plough'd up with neighbours' swords;
And for we think the eagle-winged pride
Of sky-aspiring and ambitious thoughts,
With rival-hating envy, set on you
To wake our peace, which in our country's cradle
Draws the sweet infant breath of gentle sleep;
Which so rous'd up with boist rous untun'd drums,
With harsh-resounding trumpets' dreadful bray,
And grating shock of wrathful iron arms, might
From our quiet confines fright fair peace
And make us wade even in our land'd blood:
Therefore, we banish you our territories:
You, cousin Hereford, upon pain of life,
Till twice five summers have enrich'd our fields,
Shall not regret our fair dominions,
But tread the stranger paths of banishment.

Boling. Your will be done: this must my comfort be,
That sun that warms you here shall shine on me;
And those his golden beams to you here lent
Shall point on me and gild my banishment.

K. Rich. Norfolk, for thee remains a heavier doom,
Which I with some unwillingness pronounce:
The sly slow hours shall not determinate
The dateless limit of thy dear exile;
The hopeless word of 'never to return'
Breathes against thee, upon pain of life.

Mow. A heavy sentence, my most sovereign liege,
And all unlook'd for from your highness' mouth:
A dearer merit, not so deep a maim
As to be cast forth in the common air,
Have I deserved at your highness' hands.
The language I have learn'd these forty years,
My native English, now I must forego;
And now my tongue's use is to me no more
Than an unstrung violin or a harp,
Or like a cunning instrument cas'd up,
Or, being open, put into his hands
That knows no touch to tune the harmony:
Within my mouth you have engaol'd my tongue,
Doubly portcullis'd with my teeth and lipes;
And dull, unfeeling, barren ignorance
Is made my gaoler to attend on me.
I am too old to fawn upon a nurse,
Too far in years to be a pupil now:
What is thy sentence then but speechless death,
Which robs my tongue from breathing native breath?

K. Rich. It boots thee not to be compassionate:
After our sentence planning comes too late.
Mow. Then, thus I turn me from my country's light,
To dwell in solemn shades of endless night.

[Retiring.

K. Rich. Return again, and take an oath with thee.

Lay on our royal sword your banish'd hands;
Swear by the duty that you owe to God—
Our part therein we banish with yourselves—
To keep the oath that we administer.
You never shall,—so help you truth and God!—
Embrace each other's love in banishment;
Nor never look upon each other's face;
Nor never write, regret, nor reconcile—
This low'ring tempest of your home-bred hate;
Nor never by advised purpose meet
To plot, contrive, or comploit any ill
'Gainst us, our state, our subjects, or our land.

Boling. I swear.

Mow. And I, to keep all this.

Boling. Norfolk, so far, as to mine enemy:—
By this time, had the king permitted us,
One of our souls had wander'd in the air,
Banish'd this frail sepulchre of our flesh,
As now our flesh is banish'd from this land:
Confess thy treasons ere thou fly the realm;
Since thou hast far to go, bear not along
The clogging burden of a guilty soul.

Mow. No, Bolingbroke: if ever I were traitor,
My name be blot'ted from the book of life,
And I from heaven banish'd as from hence!
But what thou art, God, thou, and I do know;
And all too soon, I fear, the king shall rue.
Farewell, my liege. Now no way can I stray;
Save back to England, all the world's my way.

[Exit.

K. Rich. Uncle, even in the glasses of thine eyes
I see thy grieved heart: thy sad aspect
Hath from the number of his banish'd years
Pluck'd four away.—[To Bolingbroke.] Six frozen winters spent,
Return with welcome home from banishment.

Boling. How long a time lies in one little word!

Four lagging winters and four wanton springs
End in a word: such is the breath of kings.

Gaunt. I thank my liege, that in regard of me
He shortens four years of my son's exile; 217
But little vantage shall I reap thereby:
For, ere the six years that he hath to spend
Can change their moons and bring their times about,
My oil-dried lamp and time-bewasted light
Shall be extinct with age and endless night;
My inch of taper will be burnt and done,
And blindfold death not let me see my son. 224

K. Rich. Why, uncle, thou hast many years to live.

Gaunt. But not a minute, king, that thou canst give:
Shorten my days thou canst with sullen sorrow,
And pluck nights from me, but not a lend a morrow;
Thou canst help time to furrow me with age.229
But stop no wrinkle in his pilgrimage;
Thy word is current with him for my death,
But dead, thy kingdom cannot buy my breath.

K. Rich. Thy son is banish'd upon good advice,

Where to thy tongue a party-verdict gave:
Why at our justice seem'st thou then to lower?

Gaunt. Things sweet to taste prove in digestion sour.

You urg'd me as a judge; but I had rather
You would have bid me argue like a father.
Of had it been a stranger, not my child,
To smooth his fault I should have been more mild:

A partial slander sought I to avoid,
And in the sentence my own life destroy'd.
Alas! I look'd when some of you should say,
I was too strict to make mine own away; 244
But you gave leave to my unwilling tongue
Against my will to do myself this wrong.

K. Rich. Cousin, farewell; and, uncle, bid him so:

Six years we banish him, and he shall go. 248

[FLOURISH. EXEUNT KING RICHARD AND TRAIN.

Aum. Cousin, farewell: what presence must not know,
From where you do remain let paper show.

Mar. My lord, no leave take I; for I will ride,
As far as land will let me, by your side. 252

Gaunt. O! to what purpose dost thou hoard thy words,
That thou return'st no greeting to thy friends?

Boling. I have too few to take my leave of you,
When the tongue's office should be prodigal
To breathe the abundant dolour of the heart.

Gaunt. Thy grief is but thy absence for a time.

Boling. Joy absent, grief is present for that time.

Gaunt. What is six winters? they are quickly gone.

Boling. To men in joy; but grief makes one hour ten.

Gaunt. Call it a travel that thou tak'st for pleasure.

Boling. My heart will sigh when I miscall it so,
Which finds it an enforced pilgrimage.

Gaunt. The sullen passage of thy weary steps
Esteem as foil wherein thou art to set
The precious jewel of thy home return.

Boling. Nay, rather, every tedious stride I make

Will but remember me what a deal of world
I wander from the jewels that I love.
Must I not serve a long apprenticeship
To foreign passages, and in the end,
Having my freedom, boast of nothing else
But that I was a journeyman to grief?

Gaunt. All places that the eye of heaven visits
Are to a wise man ports and happy havens.
Teach thy necessity to reason thus;
There is no virtue like necessity.

Thin'k not the king did banish thee,
But thou the king. Woe doth the heaviest sit,
Where it perceives it is but faintly borne.

Go, say I sent thee forth to purchase honour,
And not the king exil'd thee; or suppose
Devouring pestilence hangs in our air,
And thou art flying to a fresher clime.

Look, what thy soul holds dear, imagine it
To lie that way thou go'st, not whence thou com'st.

Suppose the singing birds musicians,
The grass whereon thou tread'st the presence strew'd,
The flowers fair ladies, and thy steps no more
Than a delightful measure or a dance;
For gnarling sorrow hath less power to bite
The man that mocks at it and sets it light.

Boling. O! who can hold a fire in his hand
By thinking on the frosty Caucasus?
Or cloy the hungry edge of appetite
By bare imagination of a feast?
Or wallow naked in December snow
By thinking on fantastic summer's heat?
O, not the apprehension of the good
Gives but the greater feeling to the worse:
Fell sorrow's tooth doth never rancle more
Than when it bites, but lanceth not the sore.

Gaunt. Come, come, my son, I'll bring thee
On thy way.

Had I thy youth and cause, I would not stay.

Boling. Then, England's ground, farewell; sweet soil, adieu:
My mother, and my nurse, that bears me yet!
Where'er I wander, boast of this I can, 308
Though banish'd, yet a true-born Englishman.  
[Exeunt.

SCENE IV.—London. A Room in the KING's
    Castle.

Enter KING RICHARD, BAGOT, and GREEN at
    one door; AMERLE at another.

K. Rich. We did observe, Cousin Amerle,
How far brought you high Hereford on his way?

Aum. I brought high Hereford, if you call
him so,
But to the next highway, and there I left him. 4

K. Rich. And say, what store of parting
    tears were shed?

Aum. Faith, none for me; except the north-
    east wind,
Which then blew bitterly against our faces,
Awak'd the sleeping rheum, and so by chance 8
Did grace our hollow parting with a tear.

K. Rich. What said our cousin when you
    parted with him?

Aum. 'Farewell:'
And, for my heart disdained that my tongue 12
Should so profane the word, that taught me craft
To counterfeit oppression of such grief
That words seem'd buried in my sorrow's grave.
Marry, would the word 'farewell' have length-
    en'd hours 16
And added years to his short banishment,
He should have had a volume of farewells;
But, since it would not, he bad none of me.

K. Rich. He is our cousin, cousin; but 'tis
    doubt,
When time shall call him home from banish-
    ment,
Whether our kinsman come to see his friends.

Ourselves and Bushy, Bagot here and Green
Observe'd his courtship to the common people, 24
How he did seem to dive into their hearts
With humble and familiar courtesy,
What reverence he did throw away on slaves,
Wooing poor craftsmen with the craft of smiles
And patient underbearing of his fortune, 29
As 'twere to banish their affects with him.
Off goes his bonnet to an oyster-wench;
A brace of draymen bid God speed him well, 32
And had the tribute of his supple knee,
With 'Thanks, my countrymen, my loving
friends;' 36
As were our England in reversion his,
And he our subjects' next degree in hope.

Green. Well, he is gone; and with him go
theses thoughts.

Now for the rebels which stand out in Ireland;
 Expedient manage must be made, my liege,
Ere further leisure yield them further means 40
For their advantage and your highness' loss.

K. Rich. We will ourselves in person to this
war.
And, for our coffers with too great a court
And liberal largess are grown somewhat light,
We are enforce'd to farm our royal realm; 45
The revenue whereof shall furnish us
For our affairs in hand. If that come short,
Our substitutes at home shall have blank charters;
Whereto, when they shall know what men are
rich,
They shall subscribe them for large sums of gold,
And send them after to supply our wants;
For we will make for Ireland presently. 52

Enter BUSHY.

Bushy, what news?
Bushy. Old John of Gaunt is grievous sick,
my lord,
Suddenly taken, and hath sent post-haste 56
To entreat your majesty to visit him.

K. Rich. Where lies he?
Bushy. At Ely House.

K. Rich. Now, put it, God, in his physician's
    mind
To help him to his grave immediately! 60
The lining of his coffers shall make coats
To deck our soldiers for these Irish wars.
Come, gentlemen, let's all go visit him:
Pray God we may make haste, and come too late.

All. Amen.

[Exeunt.

ACT II.

SCENE I.—London. An Apartment in Ely
    House.

GAUNT on a couch; the DUKE OF YORK and
    Others standing by him.

Gaunt. Will the king come, that I may
    breathe my last
In wholesome counsel to his untaid youth?
York. Vex not yourself, nor strive not with
your breath;
For all in vain comes counsel to his ear. 4

Gaunt. O! but they say the tongues of dying
men
Enforce attention like deep harmony:
Where words are scarce, they are seldom spent
in vain,
For they breathe truth that breathe their words
in pain. 8

He that no more must say is listen'd more
Than they whom youth and ease have taught
to close;
More are men's ends mark'd than their lives
before:
The setting sun, and music at the close, 12  
As the last taste of sweets, is sweetest last, 13  
Writ in remembrance more than things long past: 14  
Though Richard my life's counsel would no hear, 15  
My death's sad tale may yet undeaf his ear. 16  
York. No; it is stopp'd with other flattering sounds, 20  
As praises of his state: then there are fond  
Lascivious metres, to whose venom sound  
The open ear of youth doth always listen: 24  
Report of fashions in proud Italy,  
Whose manners still our tardy apish nation  
Limp after in base imitation. 28  
Where doth the world thrust forth a vanity,— 32  
So it be new there's no respect how vile,— 33  
That is not quickly buzz'd into his ears? 34  
Then all too late comes counsel to be heard, 38  
Where will doth mutiny with wit's regard. 42  
Direct not him whose way himself will choose: 46  
'Tis breath thou lack'st, and that breath wilt thou lose. 50  
Gaunt. Methinks I am a prophet new inspir'd, 54  
And thus expiring do foretell of him: 58  
His rash fierce blaze of riot cannot last, 62  
For violent fires soon burn out themselves; 66  
Small showers last long, but sudden storms are short; 70  
He tires betimes that spurs too fast betimes; 74  
With eager feeding food doth choke the feeder: 78  
Light vanity, insatiate cormorant, 82  
Consuming means, soon prey's upon itself. 86  
This royal throne of kings, this scepter'd isle, 90  
This earth of majesty, this seat of Mars, 94  
This other Eden, demi-paradise,  
This fortress built by Nature for herself  
Against infection and the hand of war, 98  
This happy breed of men, this little world, 102  
This precious stone set in the silver sea,  
Which serves it in the office of a wall, 106  
Or as a moat defensive to a house, 110  
Against the envy of less happier lands,  
This blessed plot, this earth, thus realm, this England, 114  
This nurse, this teeming womb of royal kings,  
Fear'd by their breed and famous by their birth, 118  
Renowned for their deeds as far from home,— 122  
For Christian service and true chivalry,— 126  
As is the sepulchre in stubborn Jewry  
Of the world's ransom, blessed Mary's Son: 130  
This land of such dear souls, this dear, dear land,  
Dear for her reputation through the world,  
Is now less'd out,—I die pronouncing it,— 134  
Like to a tenement, or pelting farm: 138  
England, bound in with the triumphant sea,  
Whose rocky shore beats back the envious siege 142  
of watery Neptune, is now bound in with shame,  
With inky blots, and rotten parchment bonds: 146  
That England, that was wont to conquer others,  
Hath made a shameful conquest of itself. 150  
Ahi! would the scandal vanish with my life,  
How happy then were my ensuing death. 154  

Enter King Richard and Queen; Aumerle,  
Bushy, Green, Bagot, Ross, and Willoughby. 158  
York. The king is come: deal mildly with his youth; 162  
For young hot colts, being rag'd, do rage the more. 166  
Queen. How fares our noble uncle, Lancaster? 170  
Gaunt. Of how that name befits my composition; 178  
Old Gaunt indeed, and gaunt in being old: 182  
Within me grief hath kept a tedious fast; 186  
And who abstains from meat that is not gaunt? 190  
For sleeping England long time have I watch'd; 194  
Watching breeds leanness, leanness is all gaunt. 198  
The pleasure that some fathers feed upon  
Is my strict fast, I mean my children's looks; 202  
And therein fasting hast thou made me gaunt. 206  
Gaunt am I for the grave, gaunt as a grave, 210  
Whose hollow womb inherits nought but bones. 214  
K. Rich. Can sick men play so nicely with their names? 218  
Gaunt. No; misery maketh sport to mock itself: 222  
Since thou dost seek to kill my name in me,  
I mock my name, great king, to flatter thee. 226  
Gaunt. No, no; men living flatter those that die. 234  
K. Rich. Thou, now a-dying, sayst thou flatter'st me. 238  
Gaunt. O, no! thou diest, though I the sicker be. 242  
K. Rich. I am in health, I breathe, and see thee ill. 246  
Gaunt. Now, he that made me knows I see thee ill; 250  
I'll in myself to see, and in thee seeing ill. 254  
Thy death-bed is no lesser than thy land  
Wherein thou liest in reputation sick: 258  
And thou, too careless patient as thou art,  
Committ'st thy anointed body to the cure  
Of those physicians that first wounded thee: 262  
A thousand flatterers sit within thy crown,  
Whose compass is no bigger than thy head; 266  
And yet, incaged in so small a verge,  
The waste is no whit lesser than thy land. 270  
O! had thy grandsire, with a prophet's eye, 274  

445
His tongue is now a stringless instrument;
Words, life, and all, old Lancaster hath spent.
York. Be York the next that must be bankrupt sol!

Though death be poor, it ends a mortal woe.
K. Rich. Theripestfruitfirstfalls, and sodoth he:
His time is spent; our pilgrimage must be.
So much for that. Now for our Irish wars. We must supplant those rough rug-headed kerns,
Which live like venom where no venom else
But only they have privilege to live.
And for these great affairs do ask some charge,
Towards our assistance we do seize to us The plate, coin, revenues, and moveables,
Whereof our uncle Gaunt did stand possess'd.
York. How long shall I be patient? Ah! how long
Shall tender duty make me suffer wrong?
Not Gloucester's death, nor Hereford's banishment,
Not Gaunt's rebukes, nor England's private wrongs,
Nor the prevention of poor Bolingbroke
About his marriage, nor my own disgrace,
Have ever made me sour my patient cheek,
Or bend one wrinkle on my sovereign's face.
I am the last of noble Edward's sons,
Of whom thy father, Prince of Wales, was first;
In war was never lionrag'd more fierce,
In peace was never gentle lamb more mild,
Than was that young and princely gentleman.
His face thou hast, for even so look'd he,
Accomplish'd with the number of thy hours;
But when he frowned, it was against the French,
And not against his friends; his noble hand
Did win what he did spend, and spent not that
Which his triumphant father's hand had won:
His hands were guilty of no kindred's blood,
But bloody with the enemies of his kin.
O, Richard! York is too far gone with grief,
Or else he never would compare between.
K. Rich. Why, uncle, what's the matter?
York. O my liege.
Pardon me, if you please; if not, I, pleas'd
Not to be pardon'd, am content withal.
Seek you to seize and grip into your hands
The royalties and rights of banish'd Hereford?
Is not Gaunt dead, and doth not Hereford live?
Was not Gaunt just, and is not Harry true?
Did not the one deserve to have an heir?
Is not his heir a well-deserving son?
Take Hereford's rights away, and take from Time
His charters and his customary rights;
Let not to-morrow then ensue to-day;
Be not thyself; for how art thou a king
But by fair sequence and succession?
KING RICHARD THE SECOND  

Act II, Sc. I.

Now, afore God,—God forbid I say true!—
If you do wrongfully seize Hereford’s rights,
Call in the letters-patent that he hath
By his attorneys-general to sue 204
His livery, and deny his offer’d homage,
You pluck a thousand dangers on your head,
You lose a thousand well-disposed hearts,
And prick my tender patience to those thoughts
Which honour and allegiance cannot think. 209

K. Rich. Think what you will: we seize into our hands
His plate, his goods, his money, and his lands.
York. I’ll not be bound by this: the while my liege, farewell: 212

What will ensue hereof, there’s none can tell;
But by bad courses may be understood
That their events can never fall out good. [Exit.

K. Rich. Go, Bushy, to the Earl of Wiltshire
straight:

Bid him repair to us to Ely House
To see this business. To-morrow next
We will for Ireland; and ’tis time, I trow:
And we create, in absence of ourself, 220
Our uncle York lord governor of England;
For he is just, and always lov’d us well.
Come on, our queen: to-morrow must we part;
Bemerry, for our time of stay is short. [Flourish.

[Exeunt King, Queen, Bushy, Aumerle,
Green, and Bagot.

North. Well, lords, the Duke of Lancaster is dead.

Ross. And living too; for now his son is duke.

Willo. Barely in title, not in revenue.

North. Richly in both, if justice had her right.

Ross. My heart is great; but it must break
with silence,
Ere’t be disburden’d with a liberal tongue.

North. Nay, speak thy mind; and let him
ne’er speak more
That speaks thy words again to do thee harm!

Willo. Tends that thou’dst speak to the
Duke of Hereford?
If it be so, with it boldly, man;
Quick is mine ear to hear of good towards him.

Ross. No good at all that I can do for him.

Unless you call it good to pity him,
Bereft and galled of his patrimony.

North. Now, afore God, ’tis shame such
wrongs are borne
In him, a royal prince, and many more
Of noble blood in this declining land.
The king is not himself, but basely led
By flatterers; and what they will inform,
Merely in hate, ’gainst any of us all,
That will the king severely prosecute
’Gainst us, our lives, our children, and our hairs.

Ross. The commons hath he pill’d with
grievous taxes,
And quite lost their hearts: the nobles hath he
fin’d 248
For ancient quarrels, and quite lost their hearts.

Willo. And daily new exactions are devis’d;
As blanks, benevolences, and I wrought not what:
But what, o’ God’s name, doth become of this?

North. Wars have not wasted it, for warr’d
he hath not, 253
But basely yielded upon compromise
That which his ancestors achiev’d with blows.
More hath he spent in peace than they in wars.

Ross. The Earl of Wiltshire hath the realm
in farm.

Willo. The king’s sworn bankrupt, like a
broken man.

North. Reproach and dissolution hangeth
over him.

Ross. He hath not money for these Irish wars,
His burdensome taxation notwithstanding, 261
But by the robbing of the banish’d duke.

North. His noble kinsman: most degenerate
king!
But, lords, we hear this fearful tempest sing,
Yet seek no shelter to avoid the storm;
We see the wind sit sore upon our sails,
And yet we strike not, but securely perish.

Ross. We see the very wrack that we must
suffer;
And unaverted is the danger now,
For suffering so the causes of our wrack.

North. Not so: even through the hollow eyes
of death
I spy life peering; but I dare not say
How near the tidings of our comfort is.

Willo. Nay, let us share thy thoughts, as
thou dost ours.

Ross. Beconfident to speak, Northumberland:
We three are but thyself: and, speaking so,
Thy words are but as thoughts; therefore, be
bold.

North. Then thus: I have from Port le Blanc,
a bay
In Brittany, receiv’d intelligence
That Harry Duke of Hereford, Rainold Lord
Cobham,
That late broke from the Duke of Exeter,
His brother, Archbishop late of Canterbury,
Sir Thomas Erpingham, Sir John Ramston,
Sir John Norbery, Sir Robert Waterton, and
Francis Quoint,
All these well furnish’d by the Duke of Britaine,
With eight tall ships, three thousand men of
war,
Are making thither with all due expedience,
And shortly mean to touch our northern shore.

447
Act II, Sc. I.  

KING RICHARD THE SECOND

Perhaps they had ere this, but that they stay 289  
The first departing of the king for Ireland.  
If then we shall shake off our slavish yoke,  
Imp out our drooping country's broken wing,  
Redeem from brok'ning pawn the blemish'd crown,  
Wipe off the dust that hides our sceptre's girt,  
And make high majesty look like itself,  
Away with me in post to Ravenspurgh; 296  
But if you faint, as fearing to do so,  
Stay and be secret, and myself will go.  

Ross. To horse, to horse! urge doubts to  
them that fear.  

Willo. Hold out my horse, and I will first be  
there.  

[Exeunt.

SCENE II.—The Same. A Room in the  
Palace.

Enter Queen, Bushy, and Bagot.

Bushy. Madam, your majesty is too much sad:  
You promis'd, when you parted with the king,  
To lay aside life-harming heaviness,  
And entertain a cheerful disposition.  

Queen. To please the king I did; to please  
myself  
I cannot do it; yet I know no cause  
Why I should welcome such a guest as grief,  
Save bidding farewell to so sweet a guest  
As my sweet Richard: yet, again, methinks,  
Some unborn sorrow, ripe in fortune's womb,  
Is coming towards me, and my inward soul  
With nothing trembles; at some thing it grieves  
More than with parting from my lord the king.  

Bushy. Each substance of a grief hath twenty  
shadows,  
Which show like grief itself, but are not so.  
For sorrow's eye, glazed with blinding tears,  
Divides one thing entire to many objects;  
Like perspectives, which rightly gaz'd upon  
Show nothing but confusion; ey'd awry  
Distinguish form: so your sweet majesty,  
Looking awry upon your lord's departure,  
Finds shapes of grief more than himself to wail:  
Which, look'd on as it is, is nought but shadows  
Of what it is not. Then, thrice-gracious queen,  
More than your lord's departure weep not:  
more's not seen; 25  
Or if it be, 'tis with false sorrow's eye,  
Which for things true weeps things imaginary.  

Queen. It may be so; but yet my inward soul  
Persuades me it is otherwise: howe'er it be,  
I cannot but be sad, so heavy sad,  
As, though in thinking on no thought I think,  
Makes me with heavy nothing faint and shrink.  

Bushy. 'Tis nothing but conceit, my gracious  
lady.

Queen. 'Tis nothing less: conceit is still  
deriv'd  
From some forefather grief; mine is not so,  
For nothing hath begot my something grief; 36  
Or something hath the nothing that I grieve:  
'Tis in reversion that I do possess;  
But what it is, that is not yet known; what  
I cannot name; 'tis nameless woe, I wot. 40

Enter Green.

Green. God save your majesty! and well met,  
gentlemen:  
I hope the king is not yet shipp'd for Ireland.  

Queen. Why hop'st thou so? 'tis better hope  
he is,  
For his designs crave haste, his haste good hope:  
Then wherefore dost thou hope he is not shipp'd?  

Green. That he, our hope, might have retir'd  
his power,  
And driven into despair an enemy's hope,  
Who strongly hath set footing in this land: 48  
The banish'd Bolingbroke repeals himself,  
And with uplifted arms is safe arriv'd  
At Ravenspurg.

Queen. Now God in heaven forbid!  

Green. Ah! madam, 'tis too true: and that is  
worst, 52  
The Lord Northumberland, his son young  
Henry Percy,  
The Lords of Ross, Beaumont, and Willoughby,  
With all their powerful friends, are fled to him.  

Bushy. Why have you not proclaim'd North-  
umberland 56  
And all the rest of the revolted faction traitors?  
Green. We have: whereupon the Earl of  
Worcester  
Hath broke his staff, resign'd his stewardship,  
And all the household servants fled with him 60  
To Bolingbroke.

Queen. So, Green, thou art the midwife to  
yo' woe,  
And Bolingbroke my sorrow's dismal heir:  
Now hath my soul brought forth her prodigy, 64  
And I, a gasping new-deliver'd mother,  
Have woe to woe, sorrow to sorrow join'd.  

Bushy. Despair not, madam,  

Queen. Who shall hinder me  
I will despair, and be at enmity 68  
With cozening hope: he is a flatterer,  
A parasite, a keeper-back of death,  
Who gently would dissolve the bands of life,  
Which false hope lingers in extremity. 72

Enter York.

Green. Here comes the Duke of York.  

Queen. With signs of war about his aged  
neck:
Ol full of careful business are his looks.
Uncle, for God's sake, speak comfortable words.
York. Should I do so, I should belie my thoughts:
Comfort's in heaven; and we are on the earth,
Where nothing lives but crosses, cares, and grief.
Your husband, he is gone to save far off,
Whilst others come to make him lose at home:
Here am I left to underprop his land,
Who, weak with age, cannot support myself.
Now comes the sick hour that his surfeit made;
Now shall he try his friends that flatter'd him.

Enter a Servant.
Serv. My lord, your son was gone before I came.
York. He was? Why, so! go all which way it will!
The nobles they are fled, the commons they are cold,
And will, I fear, revolt on Hereford's side.
Sirrah, get thee to Flashy, to my sister Gloucester;
Bid her send me presently a thousand pound.
Hold, take my ring.
Serv. My lord, I had forgot to tell your lordship:
To-day, as I came by, I called there;
But I shall grieve you to report the rest.
York. What is 't, knave?
Serv. An hour before I came the duchess died.
York. God for his mercy! what a tide of woes
Comes rushing on this woeful land at once!
I know not what to do: I would to God,—
So my untruth had not provok'd him to it,—
The king had cut off my head with my brother's.
What is there no posts dispatch'd for Ireland?
How shall we do for money for these wars?
Come, sister,—cousin, I would say,—pray, pardon me.—
Go, fellow, get thee home; provide some carts
And bring away the armour that is there.

[Exit Servant.
Gentlemen, will you go muster men? If I know
How or which way to order these affairs
Thus thrust disorderly into my hands,
Never believe me. Both are my kin'smen:
The one is my sovereign, whom both my oath
And duty bids defend; the other again
Is my kinsman, whom the king hath wrong'd,
Whom conscience and my kindred bids to right.
Well, somewhat we must do. Come, cousin, I'll dispose of you. Gentlemen, go muster up your men,
And meet me presently at Berkeley Castle.

I should to Flashy too:
But time will not permit. All is uneven,
And every thing is left at six and seven.

[Exeunt York and Queen.

Bushy. The wind sits fair for news to go to Ireland,
But none returns. For us to levy power
Proportional to the enemy
Is all impossible.

Green. Besides, our nearness to the king in love
Is near the hate of those love not the king.
Bagot. And that's the wavering commons; for their love
Lies in their purses, and whose empties them,
By so much fills their hearts with deadly hate.
Bushy. Wherein the king stands generally condemn'd.
Bagot. If judgment lie in them, then so do we,
Because we ever have been near the king.

Green. Well, I'll for refuge straight to Bristol Castle;
The Earl of Wiltshire is already there.
Bushy. Thither will I with you; for little office
Will the hateful commons perform for us,
Except like curs to tear us all to pieces.
Will you go along with us?
Bagot. No; I will to Ireland to his majesty.
Farewell: if heart's presages be not vain,
We three here part that ne'er shall meet again.
Bushy. That's as York thrives to beat back Bolingbroke.

Green. Alas, poor dukel the task he undertakes
Is numbering sands and drinking oceans dry:
Where one on his side fights, thousands will fly.
Farewell at once; for once, for all, and ever.
Bushy. Well, we may meet again.

Bagot. I fear me, never.

[Exeunt.

SCENE III.—The Wolds in Gloucestershire.

Enter Bolingbroke and Northumberland, with Forces.

Boling. How far is it, my lord, to Berkeley now?

North. Believe me, noble lord,
I am a stranger here in Gloucestershire:
These high wild hills and rough uneven ways
Draw out our miles and make them wearisome;
But yet your fair discourse hath been as sugar,
Making the hard way sweet and delectable.
But I bethink me what a weary way
From Ravenspurgh to Cotswold will be found
In Ross and Willoughby, wanting your company,
Which, I protest, hath very much beguil'd
The tediousness and process of my travel:
But theirs is sweeten'd with the hope to have
The present benefit which I possess;
And hope to joy is little less in joy
Than hope enjoy'd: by this the weary lords
Shall make their way seem short, as mine hath
done
By sight of what I have, your noble company.
Boling. Of much less value is my company
Than your good words. But who comes here?

Enter Henry Percy.

North. It is my son, young Harry Percy, sent from my brother Worcester, whencesoever.

Harry, how fares your uncle?
H. Percy. I had thought, my lord, to have learn'd his health of you.

North. Why, is he not with the queen?
H. Percy. No, my good lord; he hath forsook the court,
Broken his staff of office, and dispens'd
The household of the king.

North. What was his reason? He was not so resolv'd when last we spake together.
H. Percy. Because your lordship was proclaimed traitor.
But he, my lord, is gone to Ravenspurgh,
To offer service to the Duke of Hereford,
And sent me over by Berkeley to discover
What power the Duke of York had levied there;
Then with direction to repair to Ravenspurgh.
North. Have you forgot the Duke of Hereford, boy?
H. Percy. No, my good lord; for that is not forgot
Which ne'er I did remember: to my knowledge
I never in my life did look on him.
North. Then learn to know him now: this is the duke.
H. Percy. My gracious lord, I tender you my service,
Such as it is, being tender, raw, and young,
Which elder days shall ripen and confirm
To more approved service and desert.
Boling. I thank thee, gentle Percy; and be sure
I count myself in nothing else so happy
As in a soul remembering my good friends;
And as my fortune ripens with thy love,
It shall be still thy true love's recompense:
My heart this covenant makes, my hand thus seals it.

North. How far is it to Berkeley? and what stir

Keeps good old York there with his men of war?
H. Percy. There stands the castle, by yon tuft of trees,
Mann'd with three hundred men, as I have heard;
And in it are the Lords of York, Berkeley, and Seymour;
None else of name and noble estimate.

Enter Ross and Willoughby.

North. Here come the Lords of Ross and Willoughby,
Bloody with spurring, fiery-red with haste.
Boling. Welcome, my lords. I wot your love pursues
A banish'd traitor; all my treasury
Is yet but unfelt thanks, which, more enrich'd,
Shall be your love and labour's recompense.
Ross. Your presence makes us rich, most noble lord.
Will. And far surmounts our labour to attain it.
Boling. Evermore thanks, the exchequer of the poor;
Which, till my infant fortune comes to years,
Stands for my bounty. But who comes here?

Enter Berkeley.

North. It is my Lord of Berkeley, as I guess.
Berk. My lord of Hereford, my message is to you.
Boling. My lord, my answer is—to Lancaster; and I am come to seek that name in England;
And I must find that title in your tongue before I make reply to aught you say.
Berk. Mistake me not, my lord; 'tis not my meaning
To raze one title of your honour out:
To you, my lord, I come, what lord you will,
From the most gracious regent of this land,
The Duke of York, to know what pricks you on
to take advantage of the absent time
And fright our native peace with self-born arms.

Enter York, attended.

Boling. I shall not need transport my words by you:
Here comes his Grace in person.

My noble uncle! [Kneels.
York. Show me thy humble heart, and not thy knee,
Whose duty is deceivable and false.
Boling. My gracious uncle—York. Tut, tut!
Grace me no grace, nor uncle no uncle:
I am no traitor's uncle; and that word 'grace'
In an ungracious mouth is but profane.
Why have those banish'd and forbidden legs
Dar'd once to touch a dust of England's ground?
But then, more 'why?' why have they dar'd to
march 92
So many miles upon her peaceful bosom,
Frighting her pale-fac'd villages with war
And ostentation of despised arms?
Com'st thou because the anointed king is hence?
Why, foolish boy, the king is left behind, 97
And in my loyal bosom lies his power.
Were I but now the lord of such hot youth
As when brave Gaunt thy father, and myself, 100
Rescu'd the Black Prince, that young Mars of
men,
From forth the ranks of many thousand French,
O! then, how quickly should this arm of mine,
Now prisoner to the palsy, chastise thee 104
And minister correction to thy fault!

Boling. My gracious uncle, let me know my
fault:
On what condition stands it and wherein?
York. Even in condition of the worst degree,
In gross rebellion and detested treason: 109
Thou art a banish'd man, and here art come
Before the expiration of thy time,
In braving arms against thy sovereign. 112

Boling. As I was banish'd, I was banish'd
Hereford;
But as I come, I come for Lancaster.
And, noble uncle, I beseech your Grace
Look on my wrongs with an indifferent eye: 116
You are my father, for methinks in you
I see old Gaunt alive: O! then, my father,
Will you permit that I shall stand condemn'd
A wandering vagabond; my rights and royalties
Pluck'd from my arms perforce and given away
To upstart unthrifs? Wherefore was I born?
If that my cousin king be King of England,
It must be granted I am Duke of Lancaster. 124
You have a son, Aumerle, my noble kinsman;
Had you first died, and he been thus trod down,
He should have found his uncle Gaunt a father,
To rouse his wrongs and chase them to the bay.
I am denied to sue my livery here, 129
And yet my letters-patent give me-leave:
My father's goods are all distress'd and sold,
And these and all are all amiss employ'd. 132
What would you have me do? I am a subject,
And challenge law: attorneys are denied me,
And therefore personally I lay my claim
To my inheritance of free descent.

North. The noble duke hath been too much
abus'd.
Ross. It stands your Grace upon to do him
right.
Willo, Base men by his endowments are
made great.

York. My lords of England, let me tell you
this: 140
I have had feeling of my cousin's wrongs,
And labour'd all I could to do him right;
But in this kind to come, in braving arms,
Be his own carver and cut out his way, 144
To find out right with wrong, it may not be;
And you that do abet him in this kind
Cherish rebellion and are rebels all.

North. The noble duke hath sworn his com-
ing is 148
But for his own; and for the right of that
We all have strongly sworn to give him aid;
And let him ne'er see joy that breaks that oath!
York. Well, well, I see the issue of these
arms: 152
I cannot mend it, I must needs confess,
Because my power is weak and all ill left;
But if I could, by him that gave me life,
I would attach you all and make you stoop
Unto the sovereign mercy of the king;
But since I cannot, be it known to you
I do remain as neuter. So, fare you well;
Unless you please to enter in the castle
And there repose you for this night.

Boling. An offer, uncle, that we will accept:
But we must win your Grace to go with us
To Bristol Castle; which they say is held
By Bushy, Bagot, and their complices,
The caterpillars of the commonwealth,
Which I have sworn to weed and pluck away.
York. It may be I will go with you; but yet
I'll pause; 168
For I am loath to break our country's laws.
Nor friends nor foes, to me welcome you are:
Things past redress are now with me past care.

[Exeunt.

SCENE IV.—A Camp in Wales.

Enter Salisbury and a Captain.

Cap. My Lord of Salisbury, we have stay'd
ten days,
And hardly kept our countrymen together,
And yet we hear no tidings from the king;
Therefore we will disperse ourselves: farewell. 4

Sal. Stay yet another day, thou trusty Welsh-
man:
The king reposeth all his confidence in thee.
Cap. 'Tis thought the king is dead: we will
not stay.
The bay-trees in our country are all wither'd 8
And meteors fright the fixed stars of heaven,
The pale-fac'd moon looks bloody on the earth
And lean-look'd prophets whisper fearful change,
Rich men look sad and ruffians dance and leap,
The one in fear to lose what they enjoy,
The other to enjoy by rage and war:  
These signs forerun the death or fall of kings.  
Farewell: our countrymen are gone and fled,  
As well assur’d Richard their king is dead.  

[Exit.]

Sal. Ah, Richard! with the eyes of heavy mind  
I see thy glory like a shooting star  
Fall to the base earth from the firmament.  
Thy sun sets weeping in the lowly west,  
Witnessing storms to come, woe, and unrest.  
Thy friends are fled to wait upon thy foes,  
And crossly to thy good all fortune goes.  

[Exit.]

ACT III.

SCENE I.—Bristol. Bolingbroke’s Camp.

Enter Bolingbroke, York, Northumberland,  
Henry Percy, Willoughby, Ross; Officers behind, with Bushy and Green prisoners.

Boling. Bring forth these men.  
Bushy and Green, I will not vex your souls—  
Since presently your souls must part your bodies—  
With too much urging your pernicious lives,  
For ‘twere no charily; yet, to wash your blood  
From off my hands, here in the view of men  
I will unfold some causes of your deaths.  
You have misled a prince, a royal king,  
A happy gentleman in blood and lineaments,  
By you unhappied and disgrac’d clean:  
You have in manner with your sinful hours  
Made a divorce betwixt his queen and him,  
Broke the possession of a royal bed,  
And stain’d the beauty of a fair queen’s cheeks  
With tears drawn from her eyes by your foul wrongs.  
Myself, a prince by fortune of my birth,  
Near to the king in blood, and near in love  
Till you did make him misinterpret me,  
Have stoo’d my neck under your injuries,  
And sigh’d my English breath in foreign clouds,  
Eating the bitter bread of banishment;  
Whilst you have fed upon my signories,  
Dispar’d my parks, and fail’d my forest woods,  
From mine own windows torn my household coat,  
Raz’d out my impress, leaving me no sign,  
Save men’s opinions and my living blood,  
To show the world I am a gentleman.  
This and much more, much more than twice all this,  
Condemns you to the death. See them deliver’d over  
To execution and the hand of death.  

Bushy. More welcome is the stroke of death to me

Than Bolingbroke to England. Lords, farewell.  
Green. My comfort is, that heaven will take our souls  
And plague injustice with the pains of hell.  
Boling. My Lord Northumberland, see them dispatch’d.  

[Execunt Northumberland and Others, with Bushy and Green.]

Uncle, you say the queen is at your house;  
For God’s sake, fairly let her be entreated:  
Tell her I send to her my kind commendings;  
Take special care my greetings be deliver’d.  
York. A gentleman of mine I have dispatch’d  
With letters of your love to her at large.  

Boling. Thanks, gentle uncle. Come, lords, away,  
To fight with Glendower and his complices:  
Awhile to work, and after holiday.  

[Exeunt.]

SCENE II.—The Coast of Wales. A Castle in view.

Flourish: drums and trumpets. Enter King Richard, the Bishop of Carlisle, Aumerle, and Soldiers.

K. Rich. Barklyough Castle call they this at hand?  
Aum. Yea, my lord. How brooks your Grace the air,  
After your late tossing on the breaking seas?  
K. Rich. Needs must I like it well: I weep for joy  
To stand upon my kingdom once again.  
Dear earth, I do salute thee with my hand,  
Though rebels wound thee with their horses’ hoofs:  
As a long-parted mother with her child  
Plays fondly with her tears and smiles in meeting,  
So, weeping, smiling, greet I thee, my earth,  
And do thee favour with my royal hands.  
Feed not thy sovereign’s foe, my gentle earth,  
Nor with thy sweets comfort his ravenous sense;  
But let thy spiders, that suck up thy venom,  
And heavy-gaited toads lie in their way,  
Doing annoyance to the treacherous feet  
Which with usurping steps do trample thee.  
Yield stinging nettles to mine enemies;  
And when they from thy bosom pluck a flower,  
Guard it, I pray thee, with a lurking adder  
Whose double tongue may with a mortal touch  
Throw death upon thy sovereign’s enemies.  
Mock not my senseless conjunction, lords:  
This earth shall have a feeling and these stones  
Prove armed soldiers, ere her native king  
Shall falter under foul rebellion’s arms.  
Cur. Fear not, my lord: that power that made you king

452
Hath power to keep you king in spite of all. 28
The means that heaven yields must be embrac'd,
And not neglected; else, if heaven would,
And we will not, heaven's offer we refuse,
The proffer'd means of succour and redress. 32

Aum. He means, my lord, that we are too
remiss;
Whilst Bolingbroke, through our security,
Grows strong and great in substance and in
friends.
K. Rich. Discomfortable cousin! know'st
thou not
That when the searching eye of heaven is hid
Behind the globe, and lights the lower world,
Then thieves and robbers range abroad un-
seen,
In murders and in outrage bloody here;
But when, from under this terrestrial ball
He fires the proud tops of the eastern pines
And darts his light through every guilty hole,
Then murders, treasons, and delected sins,
The cloak of night being pluck'd from off their
backs,
Stand bare and naked, trembling at themselves?
So when this thief, this traitor, Bolingbroke,
Who all this while hath revel'd in the night 48
Whilst we were wandering with the antipodes,
Shall see us rising in our throne, the east,
His treasons will sit blushing in his face,
Not able to endure the sight of day,
But self-affrighted tremble at his sin.
Not all the water in the rough rude sea
Can wash the balm from an anointed king;
The breath of worldly men cannot depose
The deputy elected by the Lord.
For every man that Bolingbroke hath press'd
To lift shrewed steel against our golden crown,
God for his Richard hath in heavenly pay
A glorious angel: then, if angels fight,
Weak man must fall, for heaven still guards
the right.

Enter Salisbury.
Welcome, my lord: how far off lies your power?
Sal. Nor near nor further off, my gracious
lord,
Than this weak arm: discomfort guides my
tongue
And bids me speak of nothing but despair.
One day too late, I fear me, noble lord,
Hath clouded all thy happy days on earth.
Of call back yesterday, bid time return,
And thou shalt have twelve thousand fighting
men:
To-day, to-day, unhappy day too late,
O'erthrows thy joys, friends, fortune, and thy
state;

For all the Welshmen, hearing thou wert dead,
Are gone to Bolingbroke, dispers'd, and fled.
Aum. Comfort, my liege! why looks your
Grace so pale?

K. Rich. But now, the blood of twenty thou-
sand men
Did triumph in my face, and they are fled;
And till so much blood thither come again
Have I not reason to look pale and dead?
All souls that will be safe, fly from my side; 80
For time hath set a blot upon my pride.
Aum. Comfort, my liege! remember who you
are.

K. Rich. I had forgot myself. Am I not king?
Awake, thou sluggard majesty! thou sleepest. 84
Is not the king's name twenty thousand names?
Arm, arm, my name! a puny subject strikes
At thy great glory. Look not to the ground,
Ye favourites of a king: are we not high? 88
High be our thoughts: I know my uncle York
Hath power enough to serve our turn. But who
comes here?

Enter Sir Stephen Scroop.
Scroop. More health and happiness betide
my liege
Than can my care-tun'd tongue deliver him! 92

K. Rich. Mine ear is open and my heart pre-
par'd:
The worst is worldy loss thou canst unfold.
Say, is my kingdom lost? why, 'twas my care;
And what loss is it to be rid of care? 96
Strives Bolingbroke to be as great as we?
Greater he shall not be: if he serve God
We'll serve him too, and be his fellow so:
Revolt our subjects? that we cannot mend; 100
They break their faith to God as well as us:
Cry woe, destruction, ruin, loss, decay;
The worst is death, and death will have his day.
Scroop. Glad am I that your highness is so
arm'd
To bear the tidings of calamity.
Like an unseasonable stormy day
Which makes the silver rivers drown their shores,
As if the world were all dissolv'd to tears, 108
So high above his limits swells the rage
Of Bolingbroke, covering your fearful land
With hard bright steel and hearts harder than
steel.
White-beards have arm'd their thin and hair-
less scalps 112
Against thy majesty; and boys, with women's
voices,
Strive to speak big, and clap their female joints
In stiff unwieldy arms against thy crown;
Thy very beadsmen learn to bend their bows 116
Of double-fatal yew against thy state;
Yea, distaff-women manage rusty bills
Against thy seat: both young and old rebel,
And all goes worse than I have power to tell. 120
K. Rich. Too well, too well thou tell'st a tale so ill.

Where is the Earl of Wiltshire? where is Bagot?
What is become of Bushy? where is Green?
That they have let the dangerous enemy 124
Measure our confines with such peaceful steps?
If we prevail, their heads shall pay for it.
I warrant they have made peace with Boling-broke.

Scr. Peace have they made with him, indeed, my lord. 128
K. Rich. O villains, vipers, damn'd without redemption!
Dogs, easily won to fawn on any man!
Snakes, in my heart-blood warm'd, that sting my heart!

Three Judases, each one thrice worse than Judas!
Would they make peace? terrible hell make war
Upon their spotted souls for this offence!
Scr. Sweet love, I see, changing his property,
Turns to the sourest and most deadly hate. 136
Again uncurse their souls; their peace is made
With heads and not with hands: those whom you curse
Have felt the worst of death's destroying wound
And lies full low, grav'd in the hollow ground. 140
Aum. Is Bushy, Green, and the Earl of Wiltshire dead?
Scr. Yea, all of them at Bristol lost their heads.
Aum. Where is the duke my father with his power?
K. Rich. No matter where. Of comfort no man speak: 144

Let's talk of graves, of worms, and epitaphs;
Make dust our paper, and with rainy eyes
Write sorrow on the bosom of the earth;
Let's choose executors and talk of wills: 148
And yet not so—for what can we bequeath
Save our deposed bodies to the ground?
Our lands, our lives, and all are Bolingbroke's,
And nothing can we call our own but death, 152
And that small model of the barren earth
Which serves as paste and cover to our bones.
For God's sake, let us sit upon the ground
And tell sad stories of the death of kings: 156
How some have been deposed, some slain in war,
Some haunted by the ghosts they have deposed,
Some poison'd by their wives, some sleeping kill'd;
All murder'd: for within the hollow crown 160
That rounds the mortal temples of a king
Keeps Death his court, and there the antick sits,
Scoffing his state and grinning at his pomp;
Allowing him a breath, a little scene, 164
To monarchize, be fear'd, and kill with looks,
Infusing him with self and vain conceit
As if this flesh which walls about our life
Were brass impregnable; and humour'd thus
Comes at the last, and with a little pin 169
Bores through his castle wall, and farewell king!
Cover your heads, and mock not flesh and blood
With solemn reverence: throw away respect, 172
Tradition, form, and ceremonious duty,
For you have but mistook me all this while:
I live with bread like you, feel want,
Taste grief, need friends: subjected thus, 176
How can you say to me I am a king?
Car. My lord, wise men ne'er sit and wail their woes,
But presently prevent the ways to wail.
To fear the foe, since fear oppresseth strength,
Gives in your weakness strength unto your foe,
And so your follies fight against yourself.
Fear and be slain; no worse can come to fight:
And fight and die is death destroying death; 184
Where fearing dying pays death servile breath.
Aum. My father hath a power; inquire of him
And learn to make a body of a limb.
K. Rich. Thou chid'st me well. Proud Boling-broke, I come 188
To change blows with thee for our day of doom.
This ague-fit of fear is over-blown;
An easy task it is, to win our own,—
Say, Scr., where lies our uncle with his power?
Speak sweetly, man, although thy looks be sour.
Scr. Men judge by the complexion of the sky
The state and inclination of the day;
So may you by my dull and heavy eye, 196
My tongue hath but a heavier tale to say.
I play the torturer, by small and small
To lengthen out the worst that must be spoken.
Your uncle York is join'd with Bolingbroke, 200
And all your northern castles yielded up,
And all your southern gentlemen in arms
Upon his party.
K. Rich. Thou hast said enough.
[To Aumerle.] Be shrewd, the cousin, which
Didst lead me forth 204
Of that sweet way I was in to despair!
What say you now? What comfort have we now?
By heaven, I'll hate him everlastingly
That bids me be of comfort any more. 208
Go to Flint Castle: there I'll pine away;
A king, woe's slave, shall kingly woe obey.
That power I have, discharge; and let them go
To ear the land that hath some hope to grow,
For I have none: let no man speak again 213
To alter this, for counsel is but vain.

Arm. My liege, one word.

K. Rich. He does me double wrong,
That wounds me with the flatteries of his tongue.
Discharge my followers: let them hence away,
From Richard's night to Bolingbroke's fair day.

[Exeunt.

SCENE III.—Wales. Before Flint Castle.

Enter, with drum and colours, BOLINGBROKE and Forces; YORK, NORTHUMBERLAND, and Others.

Boling. So that by this intelligence we learn
The Welshmen are dispers'd and Salisbury
Is gone to meet the king, who lately landed
With some few private friends upon this coast. 4

North. The news is very fair and good, my lord:
Richard not far from hence hath bid his head.

York. It would be seem the Lord Northumber-

land

To say, 'King Richard: ' alack the heavy day 8
When such a sacred king should hide his head!

North. Your Grace mistakes; only to be brief
Left I his title out.

York. The time hath been,
Would you have been so brief with him, ha
would 12
Have been so brief with you, to shorten you,
For taking so the head, your whole head's length.

Boling. Mistake not, uncle, farther than you
should.

York. Take not, good cousin, farther than you
should, 16
Lest you mistake the heavens are o'er our heads.

Boling. I know it, uncle; and oppose not myself
Against their will. But who comes here?

Enter HENRY PERCY.

Welcome, Harry: what, will not this castle
yield? 20

H. Percy. The castle royally is mann'd, my lord,
Against thy entrance.

Boling. Royally! Why, it contains no king?

H. Percy. Yes, my good lord, 24
It doth contain a king: King Richard lies
Within the limits of your lime and stone;
And with him are the Lord Aumerle, Lord
Salisbury,
Sir Stephen Scroop; besides a clergyman
Of holy reverence; who, I cannot learn.

North. Of belike it is the Bishop of Carlisle.

Boling. [To North.] Noble lord,
Go to the rude ribs of that ancient castle, 32
Through brazen trumpet send the breath of parley
Into his ruin'd ears, and thus deliver:

Henry Bolingbroke
On both his knees doth kiss King Richard's hand,
And sends allegiance and true faith of heart
To his most royal person; hither come
Even at his feet to lay my arms and power,
Provided that my banishment repeal'd,
And lands restor'd again be freely granted.
If not, I'll use the advantage of my power,
And lay the summer's dust with showers of blood
Rain'd from the wounds of slaughter'd Englishmen:

The which, how far off from the mind of Bol-
ingbroke
It is, such crimson tempest should bedrench
The fresh green lap of fair King Richard's land,
My stooping duty tenderly shall show. 48
Go, signify as much, while here we march
Upon the grassy carpet of this plain.
Let's march without the noise of threat'ning drum,
That from the castle's totter'd battlements
Our fair appointments may be well perus'd.
Methinks King Richard and myself should meet
With no less terror than the elements
Of fire and water, when their thundering shock
At meeting tears the cloudy cheeks of heaven.
Be he the fire, I'll be the yielding water:
The rage be his, while on the earth I rain
My waters; on the earth, and not on him. 60
March on, and mark King Richard how he looks.

A Parley sounded, and answered by a Trumpet
within. Flourish. Enter on the Walls KING
RICHARD, the BISHOP OF CARLISLE, AU-
MERLE, SCROOP, and SALISBURY.

H. Percy. See, see, King Richard doth him-
self appear,
As doth the blushing discontented sun
From out the fiery portal of the east, 64
When he perceives the envious clouds are bent
To dim his glory and to stain the track
Of his bright passage to the occident.

York. Yet looks he like a king: behold, his eye,
As bright as is the eagle's, lightens forth 69
Controlling majesty: alack, alack, for woe,
That any harm should stain so fair a show!

K. Rich. [To NORTHUMBERLAND.] We are
amaz'd; and thus long have we stood
To watch the fearful bending of thy knee,
Because we thought ourself thy lawful king:
And if we be, how dare thy joints forget
To pay their awful duty to our presence? 76
If we be not, show us the hand of God
That hath dismiss’d us from our stewardship;
For well we know, no hand of blood and bone
Can graze the sacred handles of our sceptre, 80
Unless he do profane, steal, or usurp.
And though you think that all, as you have done,
Have torn their souls by turning them from us,
And we are barren and bereft of friends; 84
Yet know, my master, God omnipotent,
Is mustering in his clouds on our behalf
Armies of pestilence; and they shall strike
Your children yet unborn and unbegot,
That lift your vassal hands against my head
And threat the glory of my precious crown.
Tell Bolingbroke,—for yond methinks he is,—
That every stride he makes upon my land
Is dangerous treason: he is come to open
The purple testament of bleeding war;
But ere the crown he looks for live in peace,
Ten thousand bloody crowns of mothers’ sons 90
Shall ill become the flower of England’s face,
Change the complexion of her maid-pale peace
To scarlet indignation, and bedew
Her pastures’ grass with faithful English blood.

North. The king of heaven forbid our lord the king
Should so with civil and uncivil arms
Be rush’d upon! Thy thrice-noble cousin,
Harry Bolingbroke, doth humbly kiss thy hand;
And by the honourable tomb he swears,
That stands upon your royal grand sire’s bones,
And by the royalties of both your bloods,
Currents that spring from one most gracious head,
And by the buried hand of war-like Gaunt,
And by the worth and honour of himself,
Comprising all that may be sworn or said,
His coming hither hath no further scope
Than for his lineal royalties and to beg
Enfranchisement immediate on his knees:
Which on thy royal party granted once,
His glittering arms he will command to rust,
His barbed steeds to stables, and his heart
To faithful service of your majesty.
This swears he, as he is a prince, is just;
And, as I am a gentleman, I credit him. 120

K. Rich. Northumberland, say, thus the king returns:
His noble cousin is right welcome hither;
And all the number of his fair demands
Shall be accomplish’d without contradiction.
With all the gracious utterance thou hast
Speak to his gentle hearing kind commands.

[NORTHUMBERLAND RETIRES TO BOLINGBROKE.
[To AUMERLE.] We do debase ourself, cousin, do we not,
To look so poorly and to speak so fair?
Shall we call back Northumberland and send
Defiance to the traitor, and so die?
Aum. No, good my lord; let’s fight with gentle words,
Till time lend friends and friends their helpful swords.

K. Rich. O God! O God! that ever this tongue of mine,
That laid the sentence of dread banishment
On yond proud man, should take it off again
With words of sooth. O! that I were as great
As is my grief, or lesser than my name, 137
Or that I could forget what I have been,
Or not remember what I must be now.
Swell’st thou, proud heart? I’ll give thee scope to beat,
Since foes have scope to beat both thee and me.

Aum. Northumberland comes back from Bolingbroke.

K. Rich. What must the king do now? Must he submit?
The king shall do it: must he depos’d?
The king shall be contented: must he lose
The name of king? o’ God’s name, let it go:
I’ll give my jewels for a set of beads,
My gorgeous palace for a hermitage,
My gay apparel for an almamancer’s gown,
My figur’d goblets for a dish of wood,
My sceptre for a palmer’s walking-staff,
My subjects for a pair of carved saints,
And my large kingdom for a little grave,
A little little grave, an obscure grave;
Or I’ll be buried in the king’s highway,
Some way of common trade, where subjects’ feet
May hourly trample on their sovereign’s head;
For on my heart they tread now whilst I live;
And buried once, why not upon my head? 152
Aumerle, thou weep’st, my tender-hearted cousin!
We’ll make foul weather with despised tears;
Our sighs and they shall lodge the summer corn,
And make a dearth in this revolting land.
Or shall we play the wantons with our woes, 164
And make some pretty match with shedding tears?
As thus; to drop them still upon one place,
Till they have fretted us a pair of graces
Within the earth; and, there inlaid: ‘There lies
Two kinsmen digg’d their graves with weeping eyes.’

Would not this ill do well? Well, well, I see
I talk but idly and you laugh at me.
Most mighty prince, my Lord Northumberland,
What says King Bolingbroke? will his majesty
Give Richard leave to live till Richard die?
You make a leg, and Bolingbroke says ay.
KING RICHARD THE SECOND

Act III, Sc. IV.

North. My lord, in the base court he doth attend
To speak with you; may't please you to come down?

K. Rich. Down, down, I come; like glistening Phaethon,
Wanting the manage of unruly jades.
In the base court? Base court, where kings grow base,
To come at traitors' calls and do them grace.
In the base court? Come down? Down, court! down, king!
For night-owls shriek where mounting larks should sing. [Exeunt from above.

Boling. What says his majesty?

North. Sorrow and grief of heart
Makes him speak fondly, like a frantic man:
Yet he is come.

Enter KING RICHARD, and his Attendants.

Boling. Stand all apart,
And show fair duty to his majesty. [Kneeling.
My gracious lord,—
K. Rich. Fair cousin, you debase your princely knee
To make the base earth proud with kissing it:
Me rather had my heart might feel your love
Than my unpleas'd eye see your courtesy.
Up, cousin, up; your heart is up, I know,
Thus high at least, although your knee be low.

Boling. My gracious lord, I come but for mine own.

K. Rich. Your own is yours, and I am yours, and all.

Boling. So far be mine, my most redoubted lord,
As my true service shall deserve your love.

K. Rich. Well you deserve: they well deserve to have
That know the strong'st and surest way to get.
Uncle, give me your hand: nay, dry your eyes;
Tears show their love, but want their remedies.
Cousin, I am too young to be your father,
Though you are old enough to be my hair.
What you will have I'll give, and willing too;
For do we must what force will have us do.
Set on towards London. Cousin, is it so?

Boling. Yea, my good lord.


SCENE IV.—Langley. The DUKE OF YORK'S Garden.

Enter the QUEEN and two Ladies.

Queen. What sport shall we devise here in this garden,
To drive away the heavy thought of care?

First Lady. Madam, we'll play at bowls.

Queen. 'Twill make me think the world is full of rubs;
And that my fortune runs against the bias.
First Lady. Madam, we'll dance.

Queen. My legs can keep no measure in delight.
When my poor heart no measure keeps in grief:
Therefore, no dancing, girl; some other sport.

First Lady. Madam, we'll tell tales.

Queen. Of sorrow or of joy?

First Lady. Of either, madam.

Queen. For if of joy, being altogether wanting,
It doth remember me the more of sorrow;
Or if of grief, being altogether had,
It adds more sorrow to my want of joy:
For what I have I need not to repeat,
And what I want it boots not to complain.

First Lady. Madam, I'll sing.

Queen. 'Tis well that thou hast cause;
But thou shouldst please me better wouldst thou weep.

First Lady. I could weep, madam, would it do you good.

Queen. And I could sing would weeping do me good,
And never borrow any tear of thee.
But stay, here come the gardeners:
Let's step into the shadow of these trees.
My wretchedness unto a row of pins,
They'll talk of state; for every one doth so
Against a change: woe is forerun with woe.

[Queen and Ladies retire.

Enter a Gardener and two Servants.

Gard. Go, bind thou up yon dangling apricocks,
Which, like unruly children, make their sire
Stoop with oppression of their prodigal weight:
Give some supportance to the bending twigs.
Go thou, and like an executioner,
Cut off the heads of too fast growing sprays,
That look too lofty in our commonwealth:
All must be even in our government.
You thus employ'd, I will go root away
The noisome weeds, that without profit suck
The soil's fertility from wholesome flowers.

First Serv. Why should we in the compass of a pale
Keep law and form and due proportion,
Showing, as in a model, our firm estate,
When our sea-walled garden, the whole land,
Is full of weeds, her fairest flowers chok'd up,
Her fruit-trees all unprun'd, her hedges ruin'd,
Her knots disorder'd, and her wholesome herbs
Swarming with caterpillars?
Act III, Sc. IV.

KING RICHARD THE SECOND

Gard. Hold thy peace: He that hath suffered this disorder'd spring Hath now himself met with the fall of leaf; The weeds that his broad-spreading leaves did shelter, That seem'd in eating him to hold him up, Are pluck'd up root and all by Bolingbroke; I mean the Earl of Wiltshire, Bushy, Green. First Serv. What! are they dead? Gard. They are; and Bolingbroke Hath seiz'd the wasteful king. O! what pity is it That he hath not so trimm'd and dress'd his land As we this garden. We at time of year Do wound the bark, the skin of our fruit-trees, Lest, being over-proud with sap and blood, With too much riches it confound itself: Had he done so to great and growing men, They might have liv'd to bear and he to taste Their fruits of duty: superfluous branches We lop away that bearing boughs may live: Had he done so, himself had borne the crown, Which waste of idle hours hath quite thrown down. First Serv. What! think you then the king shall be depos'd? Gard. Depress he is already, and depos'd 'Tis doubt he will be: letters came last night To a dear friend of the good Duke of York's, That tell black tidings. Queen. O! I am press'd to death through want of speaking. [Coming forward. Thou, old Adam's likeness, set to dress this garden, How dares thy harsh rude tongue sound this unpleasing news? What Eve, what serpent, hath suggested thee To make a second fall of cursed man? Why dost thou say King Richard is depos'd? Dar'st thou, thou little better thing than earth, Divine his downfall? Say, where, when, and how Cam'st thou by these ill tidings? speak, thou wretch. Gard. Pardon me, madam: little joy have I To breathe these news, yet what I say is true. King Richard, he is in the mighty hold Of Bolingbroke; their fortunes both are weigh'd: In your lord's scale is nothing but himself, And some few vanities that make him light; But in the balance of great Bolingbroke, Besides himself, are all the English peers, And with that odds he weighs King Richard down. Post you to London and you'll find it so; I speak no more than every one doth know. Queen. Nimble mischief. that art so light of foot,

Doth not thy embassage belong to me, And am I last that knows it? O! thou think'st To serve me last, that I may longest keep Thy sorrow in my breast. Come, ladies, go, To meet at London London's king in woe. What! was I born to this, that my sad look Should grace the triumph of great Bolingbroke? Gardener, for telling me these news of woe, Pray God the plants thou graft'st may never grow. [Exeunt Queen and Ladies. Gard. Poor queen! so that thy state might be no worse, I would my skill were subject to thy curse. Here did she fall a tear; here, in this place, I'll set a bank of rue, sour herb of grace; Rue, even for ruth, here shortly shall be seen, In the remembrance of a weeping queen. [Exeunt.

ACT IV.

SCENE I.—London. Westminster Hall.

The Lords spiritual on the right side of the throne: the Lords temporal on the left; the Commons below. Enter Bolingbroke, Aumerle, Surrey, Northumberland, Henry Percy, Fitzwater, another Lord, the Bishop of Carlisle, the Abbot of Westminster, and Attendants. Officers behind with Bagot.

Boling. Call forth Bagot.

Now, Bagot, freely speak thy mind; What thou dost know of noble Gloucester's death, Who wrought it with the king, and who perform'd The bloody office of his timeless end.

Bagot. Then set before my face the Lord Aumerle.

Boling. Cousin, stand forth, and look upon that man.

Bagot. My Lord Aumerle, I know your daring tongue Soorns to unsay what once it hath deliver'd. In that dead time when Gloucester's death was plotted, I heard you say, 'Is not my arm of length, That reacheth from the restful English court As far as Calais, to my uncle's head?'

Amidst much other talk, that very time, I heard you say that you had rather refuse The offer of a hundred thousand crowns Than Bolingbroke's return to England; Adding withal, how blest this land would be In this your cousin's death.

Aum. Princes and noble lords, What answer shall I make to this base man?
Shall I so much dishonour my fair stars,  
On equal terms to give him chastisement?  
Either I must, or have mine honour soil'd  
With the attainer of his slanderous lips.  
There is my gage, the manual seal of death,  
That marks thee out for hell: I say thou liest,  
And will maintain what thou hast said is false  
In thy heart-blood, though being all too base  
To stain the temper of my knightly sword.  
Boling. Bagot, forbear; thou shalt not take  
it up.  
Aum. Excepting one, I would he were the  
best  
In all this presence that hath mov'd me so.  
Fitz. If that thy valour stand on sympathies,  
There is my gage, Aumerle, in gage to thine:  
By that fair sun which shows me where thou  
stand'st,  
I heard thee say, and vauntingly thou spak'st it,  
That thou wert cause of noble Gloucester's  
death.  
If thou deny'st it twenty times, thou liest;  
And I will turn thy falsehood to thy heart,  
Where it was forged, with my rapier's point.  
Aum. Thou dar'st not, coward, live to see  
that day.  
Fitz. Now, by my soul, I would it were this  
hour.  
Aum. Fitzwater, thou art damn'd to hell for  
this.  
H. Percy. Aumerle, thou liest; his honour is  
as true  
In this appeal as thou art all unjust;  
And that thou art so, there I throw my gage,  
To prove it on thee to the extremest point  
Of mortal breathing: seize it if thou dar'st.  
Aum. And if I do not may my hands rot off  
And never brandish more revengeful steel  
Over the glittering helmet of my foe!  
Lord. I task the earth to the like, forsworn  
Aumerle;  
And spur thee on with full as many lies  
As may be holla'd in thy treacherous ear  
From sun to sun: there is my honour's pawn;  
Engage it to the trial if thou dar'st.  
Aum. Who sets me else? by heaven, I'll  
throw at all:  
I have a thousand spirits in one breast,  
To answer twenty thousand such as you.  
Surrey. My Lord Fitzwater, I do remember  
well  
The very time Aumerle and you did talk.  
Fitz. 'Tis very true: you were in presence  
then;  
And you can witness with me this is true.  
Surrey. As false, by heaven, as heaven itself  
is true.

Fitz. Surrey, thou best.  
Surrey. Dishonourable boy!  
That he shall lie so heavy on my sword  
That it shall render vengeance and revenge,  
Till thou the lie-giver and that lie do lie  
In earth as quiet as thy father's skull.  
In proof whereof, there is my honour's pawn:  
Engage it to the trial if thou dar'st.  
Fitz. How fondly dost thou spur a forward  
horse!  
If I dare eat, or drink, or breathe, or live,  
I dare meet Surrey in a wilderness,  
And spit upon him, whilst I say he lies,  
And lies, and lies: there is my bond of faith  
To tie thee to my strong correction.  
As I intend to thrive in this new world,  
Aumerle is guilty of my true appeal;  
Besides, I heard the banish'd Norfolk say  
That thou, Aumerle, didst send two of thy men  
To execute the noble duke at Calais.  
Aum. Some honest Christian trust me with  
a gage.  
That Norfolk lies, here do I throw down this,  
If he may be repeal'd to try his honour.  
Boling. These differences shall all rest under  
gage  
Till Norfolk be repeal'd: repeal'd he shall be,  
And though mine enemy, restoring again  
To all his lands and signories; when he's  
return'd,  
Against Aumerle we will enforce his trial.  
Car. That honourable day shall ne'er be  
seen.  
Many a time hath banish'd Norfolk fought  
For Jesus Christ in glorious Christian field,  
Streaming the ensign of the Christian cross  
Against black pagans, Turks, and Saracens;  
And toil'd with works of war, retir'd himself  
To Italy; and there at Venice gave  
His body to that pleasant country's earth,  
And his pure soul unto his captain Christ,  
Under whose colours he had fought so long.  
Boling. Why, bishop, is Norfolk dead?  
Car. As surely as I live, my lord.  
Boling. Sweet peace conduct his sweet soul  
to the bosom  
Of good old Abraham! Lords appertain,  
Your differences shall all rest under gage  
Till we assign you to your days of trial.  

Enter York, attended.  
York. Great Duke of Lancaster, I come to thee  
From plume-pluck'd Richard; who with willing  
soul  
Adopts thee hair, and his high sceptre yields  
To the possession of thy royal hand.
Ascend his throne, descending now from him;
And long live Henry, of that name the fourth!
Boling. In God's name, I'll ascend the regal throne.

Car. Marry, God forbid!

Worst in this royal presence may I speak,
Yet best beseeing me to speak the truth. 116
Would God that any in this noble presence
Were enough to upright judge
Of noble Richard! then, true noblesse wouldn
Learn him forbearance from so foul a wrong. 120
What subject can give sentence on his king?
And who sits here that is not Richard's subject?
Thieves are not judg'd but they are by to hear,
Although apparent guilt be seen in them; 124
And shall the figure of God's majesty,
His captain, steward, deputy elect,
Anointed, crowned, planted many years,
Be judg'd by subject and inferior breath, 128
And he himself not present? O! forfend it,
And God,
That in a Christian climate souls refin'd
Should show so heinous, black, obscene a deed.
I speak to subjects, and a subject speaks, 132
Stir'd up by God thus boldly for his king.
My Lord of Hereford here, whom you call king,
Is a foul traitor to proud Hereford's king;
And if you crown him, let me prophesy, 136
The blood of English shall manure the ground
And future ages groan for this foul act;
Peace shall go sleep with Turks and infidels,
And in this seat of peace tumultuous wars 140
Shall kin with kin and kind with kind confound;
Disorder, horror, fear and mutiny
Shall here inhabit, and this land be call'd
The field of Golgotha and dead men's skulls. 144
O! if you rear this house against this house,
It will the woefullest division prove
That ever fell upon this cursed earth.
Prevent it, resist it, let it not be so, 148
Last child, child's children, cry against you
woel!

North. Well have you arg'd, sir; and, for
your pains,
Of capital treason we arrest you here.
My Lord of Westminster, be it your charge 152
To keep him safely till his day of trial.
May it please you, lords, to grant the commons'
suit?
Boling. Fetch hither Richard, that in common view
He may surrender; so we shall proceed 156
Without suspicion.
York. I will be his conduct. [Exit.
Boling. Lords, you that here are under our
arrest,
Procure your sureties for your days of answer.

[To Carlisle.] Little are we beholding to your
love,
And little look'd for at your helping hands.

Re-enter York, with King Richard, and Offic-
ers bearing the Crown, &c.

K. Rich. Alack! why am I sent for to a king
Before I have shook off the regal thoughts
Wherewith I reign'd? I hardly yet have learn'd
To insinuate, flatter, bow, and bend my limbs:
Give sorrow leave awhile to tutor me
To this submission. Yet I well remember
The favours of these men: were they not mine?

Did they not sometime cry, 'All hail!' to me?
So Judas did to Christ: but he, in twelve,
Found truth in all but one; I, in twelve thou-
sand, none.

God save the king! Will no man say, amen? 172
Am I both priest and clerk? well then, amen.
God save the king! although I be not he;
And yet, amen, if heaven do think him me.
To do what service am I sent for hither? 176
York. To do that office of thine own good will
Which tired majesty did make thee offer,
The resignation of thy state and crown
To Henry Bolingbroke.

K. Rich. Give me the crown. Here, cousin,
seize the crown;
Here cousin,
On this side my hand and on that side thine.
Now is this golden crown like a deep well 184
That owes two buckets filling one another;
The emptier ever dancing in the air,
The other down, unseen and full of water:
That bucket down and full of tears am I, 188
Drinking my griefs, whilst you mount up on
high.
Boling. I thought you had been willing to
resign.
K. Rich. My crown, I am; but still my griefs
are mine.
You may my glories and my state depose, 192
But not my griefs; still am I king of those.
Boling. Part of your cares you give me with
your crown.
K. Rich. Your cares set up do not pluck my
cares down.
My care is loss of care, by old care done; 196
Your care is gain of care, by new care won.
The cares I give I have, though given away;
They tend the crown, yet still with me they stay.
Boling. Are you contented to resign the
crown?
K. Rich. Ay, no; no, ay; for I must nothing
be;
Therefore no no, for I resign to thee.

460
Now mark me how I will undo myself:
I give this heavy weight from off my head,
And this unwieldy sceptre from my hand,
The pride of kingly sway from out my heart;
With mine own tears I wash away my balm,
With mine own hands I give away my crown,
With mine own tongue deny my sacred state,
With mine own breath release all duteous rites:
All pomp and majesty I do forswear;
My manors, rents, revenues, I forego;
My acts, decrees, and statutes I deny;
God pardon all oaths that are broke to me!
God keep all vows unbroké are made to thee!
Make me, that nothing have, with nothing grieve'd,
And thou with all pleas'd, that hast all achiev'd!
Long mayst thou live in Richard's seat to sit,
And soon lie Richard in an earthly pit!
God save King Henry, unking'd Richard says,
And send him many years of sunshine days!
What more remains?
North. [Offering a paper.] No more, but that you read
These accusations and these grievous crimes
Committed by your person and your followers
Against the state and profit of this land;
That, by confessing them, the souls of men
May deem that you are worthily depose'd.
K. Rich. Must I do so? and must I ravel out
My weav'd-up follies? Gentle Northumberland,
If thy offences were upon record,
Would it not shame thee in so fair a troop
To read a lecture of them? If thou wouldst,
There shouldst thou find one heinous article,
Containing the deposing of a king,
And cracking the strong warrant of an oath,
Mark'd with a blot, damn'd in the book of heaven.
Nay, all of you that stand and look upon me,
Whilst that my wretchedness doth bait myself,
Though some of you with Pilate wash your hands,
Showing an outward pity; yet you Pilates
Have here deliver'd me to my sour cross,
And water cannot wash away your sin.
North. My lord, dispatch; read o'er these articles.
K. Rich. Mine eyes are full of tears, I cannot see:
And yet salt water blinds them not so much
But they can see a sort of traitors here.
Nay, if I turn mine eyes upon myself,
I find myself a traitor with the rest;
For I have given here my soul's consent
To undock the pompous body of a king;
Made glory base and sovereignty a slave,
Proud majesty a subject, state a peasant.
North. My lord,—
K. Rich. No lord of thine, thou haught insulting man,
Nor no man's lord; I have no name, no title,
No, not that name was given me at the font,
But 'tis usurp'd: alack the heavy day!
That I have worn so many winters out,
And know not now what name to call myself.
O! that I were a mockery king of snow,
Standing before the sun of Bolingbroke,
To melt myself away in water-drops.
Good king, great king,—and yet not greatly good,
An if my word be sterling yet in England,
Let it command a mirror higher straight,
That it may show me what a face I have,
Since it is bankrupt of his majesty.
Boling. Go some of you and fetch a looking-glass.
North. [Exit an Attendant.]
North. Read o'er this paper while the glass doth come.
K. Rich. Fiend! thou torment'st me ere I come to hell.
Boling. Urge it no more, my Lord Northumberland.
North. The commons will not then be satisfied.
K. Rich. They shall be satisfied: I'll read enough
When I do see the very book indeed
Where all my sins are writ, and that's myself.
Re-enter Attendant, with a glass.
Give me the glass, and therein will I read.
No deeper wrinkles yet? Hath sorrow struck
So many blows upon this face of mine
And made no deeper wounds? O, flattering glass!
Like to my followers in prosperity,
Thou dost beguile me. Was this face the face
That every day under his household roof
Did keep ten thousand men? Was this the face
That like the sun did make beholders wink?
Was this the face that fac'd so many follies,
And was at last out fac'd by Bolingbroke?
A brittle glory shineth in this face:
As brittle as the glory is the face;
[Dashes the glass against the ground.
For there it is, crack'd in a hundred shivers.
Mark, silent king, the moral of this sport,
How soon my sorrow hath destroy'd my face.
Boling. The shadow of your sorrow hath destroy'd
The shadow of your face.
K. Rich. Say that again.
The shadow of my sorrow! Ha! let's see:
'Tis very true, my grief lies all within;
And these external manners of laments
Are merely shadows to the unseen grief
That swells with silence in the tortur'd soul;
Here let us rest, if this rebellious earth
Have any resting for her true king’s queen.

Enter KING RICHARD and Guard.

But soft, but see, or rather do not see,
My fair rose wither: yet look up, behold,
That you in pity may dissolve to dew,
And wash him fresh again with true-love tears.
Ah! thou, the model where old Troy did stand,
Thou map of honour, thou King Richard’s tomb,
And not King Richard; thou most beauteous inn,

Why should hard-favour’d grief be lodg’d in thee,
When triumph is become an alehouse guest?

K. Rich. Join not with grief, fair woman, do not so,
To make my end too sudden: learn, good soul,
To think our former state a happy dream;
From which awak’d, the truth of what we are
Shows us but this. I am sworn brother, sweet,
To grim Necessity, and he and I
Will keep a league till death. Hie thee to France,
And cloister thee in some religious house:
Our holy lives must win a new world’s crown,
Which our profanes hours here have stricken down.

Queen. What! is my Richard both in shape and mind
Transform’d and weaken’d! Hath Bolingbroke depos’d
Thine intellect? hath he been in thy heart?
The lion dying thrusteth forth his paw
And wounds the earth, if nothing else, with rage
To be o’erpower’d; and wilt thou, pupil-like,
Take thy correction mildly, kiss the rod,
And fawn on rage with base humility,
Which art a lion and a king of beasts?

K. Rich. A king of beasts indeed; if aught but beasts,
I had been still a happy king of men.

Good sometime queen, prepare thee hence for France,
Think I am dead, and that even here thou tak’st,
As from my death-bed, my last living leave.
In winter’s tedious nights sit by the fire
With good old folks, and let them tell thee tales
Of woeful ages, long ago betid;
And ere thou bid good night, to quit their grief,
Tell thou the lamentable tale of me,
And send the hearers weeping to their beds:
For why the senseless brands will sympathize
The heavy accent of thy moving tongue,
And in compassion weep the fire out;
And some will mourn in ashes, some coal-black,
For the deposing of a rightful king.

ACT V.

SCENE I.—London. A Street leading to the Tower.

Enter the QUEEN and LADIES.

Queen. This way the king will come; this is the way
To Julius Caesar’s ill-erected tower,
To whose flint bosom my condemned lord
Is doom’d a prisoner by proud Bolingbroke.

ACT IV, Sc. I.

KING RICHARD THE SECOND

There lies the substance: and I thank thee, king,
For thy great bounty, that not only giv’st
Me cause to wail, but teachest me the way
How to lament the cause. I’ll beg one boon,
And then be gone and trouble you no more.
Shall I obtain it?

Boling. Name it, fair cousin.

K. Rich. ‘Fair cousin!’ I am greater than a king;
For when I was a king, my flatterers
Were then but subjects; being now a subject,
I have a king here to my flatterer.

Being so great, I have no need to beg.

Boling. Yet ask.

K. Rich. And shall I have?

Boling. You shall.

K. Rich. Then give me leave to go.

Boling. Whither?

K. Rich. Whither you will, so I were from your sights.

Boling. Go, some of you convey him to the Tower.

K. Rich. O, good! convey? conveyers are you all,
That rise thus nimbly by a true king’s fall.

[Exeunt KING RICHARD and Guard.

Boling. On Wednesday next we solemnly set down
Our coronation: lords, prepare yourselves.

[Exeunt all except the BISHOP OF CARLISLE,
the ABBOT OF WESTMINSTER, and AUMERLE.

Abbot. A woeful pageant have we here beheld.
Bishop. The wo’s to come; the children yet unborn
Shall feel this day as sharp to them as thorn.

Aum. You holy clergymen, is there no plot
To rid the realm of this pernicious blot?

Abbot. My lord,
Before I freely speak my mind herein,
You shall not only take the sacrament
To bury mine intents; but also to effect
Whatever I shall happen to devise.
I see your brows are full of discontent,
Your hearts of sorrow, and your eyes of tears:
Come home with me to supper; I will lay

A plot shall show us all a merry day. [Exeunt.
Enter Northumberland, attended.

North. My lord, the mind of Bolingbroke is charg'd;
You must to Pomfret, not unto the Tower. 52
And, madam, there is order ta'en for you;
With all swift speed you must away to France.

K. Rich. Northumberland, thou ladder wherewithal
The mounting Bolingbroke ascend my throne,
The time shall not be many hours of age 57
More than it is, ere foule sin gathering head
Shall break into corruption. Thou shalt think,
Though he divide the realm and give thee half,
It is too little, helping him to all; 61
And he shall think that thou, which know'st
The way
To plant unrightful kings, wilt know again,
Being ne'er so little urg'd, another way 64
To pluck him headlong from the usurped throne.

The love of wicked friends converts to fear;
That fear to hate, and hate turns one or both
To worthy danger and deserved death. 68

North. My guilt be on my head, and there
an end.

Take leave and part, for you must part forthwith.

K. Rich. Doubly divorc'd! Bad men, ye violate
A two-fold marriage; 'twixt my crown and me,
And then, betwixt me and my married wife. 73
Let me unkiss the oath 'twixt thee and me;
And yet not so, for with a kiss 'twas made.

Part us, Northumberland: I towards the north,
Where shivering cold and sickness pines the clime;
My wife to France: from whence, set forth in pomp,
She came adorned hither like sweet May,
Sent back like Hallowmas or short'st of day. 80

Queen. And must we be divided? must we part?

K. Rich. Ay, hand from hand, my love, and heart from heart.

Queen. Banish us both and send the king with me.

North. That were some love but little policy.

Queen. Then whither he goes, thither let me go.

K. Rich. So two, together weeping, make one woe.

Weep thou for me in France, I for thee here;
Better far off, than near, be ne'er the near. 88
Go, count thy way with sighs, I mine with groans.

Queen. So longest way shall have the longest moans.

K. Rich. Twice for one step I'll groan, the way being short,
And piece the way out with a heavy heart. 92
Come, come, in wooing sorrow let's be brief,
Since, wedding it, there is such length in grief.
One kiss shall stop our mouths, and dummly part;
Thus give I mine, and thus take I thy heart. 96

They kiss.

Queen. Give me mine own again; 'twere no good part
To take on me to keep and kill thy heart.

They kiss again.

So, now I have mine own again, be gone,
That I may strive to kill it with a groan. 100

K. Rich. We make woe wanton with this fond delay:
Once more, adieu; the rest let sorrow say.

[Exeunt.

Scene II.—The Same. A Room in the Duke of York's Palace.

Enter York and his Duchess.

Duch. My lord, you told me you would tell the rest,
When weeping made you break the story off,
Of our two cousins coming into London.
York. Where did I leave?
Duch. At that sad stop, my lord, 4
Where rude misgovern'd hands, from windows' tops,
Threw dust and rubbish on King Richard's head.
York. Then, as I said, the duke, great Bolingbroke,
Mounted upon a hot and fiery steed,
Which his aspiring rider seem'd to know,
With slow but stately pace kept on his course,
While all tongues cried, 'God save thee, Bolingbroke!'

You would have thought the very windows spake,
So many greedy looks of young and old
Through casements darted their desiring eyes
Upon his visage, and that all the walls
With painted imagery had said at once
'Jesu preserve thee! welcome, Bolingbroke!'

Whilst he, from one side to the other turning,
Bare-headed, lower than his proud steed's neck,
Bespake them thus, 'I thank you, countrymen:
And thus still doing, thus he pass'd along. 21

Duch. Alack, poor Richard! where rode he the whilst?
York. As in a theatre, the eyes of men,
After a well-grac'd actor leaves the stage, 24
Are idly bent on him that enters next,
Thinking his prattle to be tedious;
Even so, or with much more contempt, men's eyes
Did scowl on Richard: no man cried, 'God save him;'
No joyful tongue gave him his welcome home;
But dust was thrown upon his sacred head,
Which with such gentle sorrow he shook off,
His face still combatting with tears and smiles,
The badges of his grief and patience,
That had not God, for some strong purpose,
steel'd
The hearts of men, they must perforce have melted,
And barbarism itself have pitied him.
But heaven hath a hand in these events,
To whose high will we bound our calm contents.
To Bolingbroke are we sworn subjects now,
Whose state and honour I for aye allow.
Duch. Here comes my son Aumerle.
York. Aumerle that was;
But that is lost for being Richard's friend,
And, madam, you must call him Rutland now.
I am in parliament pledge for his truth
And lasting fealty to the new-made king.

Enter Aumerle.

Duch. Welcome, my son: who are the violets now
That strew the green lap of the new come spring?
Aum. Madam, I know not, nor I greatly care not:
God knows I had as lief be none as one.
York. Well, bear you well in this new spring of time,
Lest you be cropp'd before you come to prime.
What news from Oxford? hold those justs and triumphs?
Aum. For aught I know, my lord, they do.
York. You will be there, I know.
Aum. If God prevent it not, I purpose so.
York. What seal is that that hangs without thy bosom?
Yea, look'st thou pale? let me see the writing.
Aum. My lord, 'tis nothing.
York. No matter then, who sees it:
I will be satisfied; let me see the writing.
Aum. I do beseech your Grace to pardon me:
It is a matter of small consequence,
Which for some reasons I would not have seen.
York. Which for some reasons, sir, I mean to see.
I fear, I fear,—
Duch. What should you fear?
'Tis nothing but some bond he's enter'd into
For gay apparel 'gainst the triumph day.
York. Bound to himself! what doth he with a bond

That he is bound to? Wife, thou art a fool.
Boy, let me see the writing.

Aum. I do beseech you, pardon me; I may not show it.
York. I will be satisfied; let me see it, I say.
Duch. What is the matter, my lord?
York. Hol! who is within there?

Enter a Servant.

Saddle my horse.
God for his mercy! what treachery is here!
Duch. Why, what is it, my lord?
York. Give me my boots, I say; saddle my horse.
Now, by mine honour, by my life, my troth,
I will appease the villain.

[Exit Servant.
Duch. What's the matter?
York. Peace, foolish woman.
Duch. I will not peace. What is the matter, Aumerle?
Aum. Good mother, be content; it is no more
Than my poor life must answer.

Duch. Thy life answer!
York. Bring me my boots: I will unto the king.

Re-enter Servant with boots.
Duch. Strike him, Aumerle. Poor boy, thou art amaz'd.

[To Servant.] Hance, villain! never more come in my sight.

[Exit Servant.
York. Give me my boots, I say.
Duch. Why, York, what wilt thou do?
Wilt thou not hide the trespass of thine own?
Have we more sons, or are we like to have?
Is not my teeming date drunk up with time?
And will thou pluck my fair son from mine age,
And rob me of a happy mother's name?
Is he not like thee? is he not thine own?
York. Thou fond, mad woman,
Wilt thou conceal this dark conspiracy?
A dozen of them here have ta'en the sacrament,
And interchangeably set down their hands,
To kill the king at Oxford.
Duch. He shall be none;
We'll keep him here: then, what is that to him?
York. Away, fond woman! were he twenty times
My son, I would appease him.
Duch. Hadst thou groan'd for him
As I have done, thou'dst be more pitiful.
But now I know thy mind: thou dost suspect
That I have been disloyal to thy bed,
And that he is a bastard, not thy son.
Sweet York, sweet husband, be not of that mind:
KING RICHARD THE SECOND

Act V, Sc. III.

He is as like thee as a man may be,
Not like to me, nor any of my kin,
And yet I love him.

York. Make way, unruly woman! [Exit.

Duch. After, Aumerle! Mount thee upon his horse;
Spur post, and get before him to the king,
And beg thy pardon ere he do accuse thee.
I'll not be long behind; though I be old,
I doubt not but to ride as fast as York:
And never will I rise up from the ground
Till Bolingbroke have pardon'd thee. Away! be gone.

[Exeunt.

SCENE III.—Windsor. A Room in the Castle.

Enter BOLINGBROKE as King; HENRY PERCY, and other Lords.

Boling. Can no man tell of my unthrifty son?
"'Tis full three months since I did see him last,
If any plague hang over us, 'tis he.
I would to God, my lords, he might be found:
Inquire at London, 'mongst the taverns there.
For there, they say, he daily doth frequent,
With unrestrained loose companions,
Even such, they say, as stand in narrow lanes,
And beat our watch and rob our passengers;
While he, young wanton and effeminate boy,
Takes on the point of honour to support
So dissolve a crew.

H. Percy. My lord, some two days since I saw the prince,
And told him of these triumphs held at Oxford.
Boling. And what said the gallant?
H. Percy. His answer was: he would unto the stews,
And from the common'st creature pluck a glove,
And wear it as a favour; and with that
He would unhorse the lustiest challenger.

Boling. As dissolve as desperate; yet, through both,
I see some sparkles of a better hope,
Which elder days may happily bring forth.
But who comes here?

Enter AUMERLE.

Aum. Where is the king?

Boling. What means Our cousin, that he stares and looks so wildly?

Aum. God save your Grace! I do beseech your majesty,
To have some conference with your Grace alone.


What is the matter with our cousin now?
Or my sham’d life in his dishonour lies:
Thou kill’st me in his life; giving him breath, 72
The traitor lives, the true man’s put to death.

Duch. [Within.] What ho, my liege! for
God’s sake let me in.

Boling. What shrill-vois’d supplicant makes
this eager cry?

Duch. [Within.] A woman, and thine aunt,
great king; ’tis I. 76

Speak with me, pity me, open the door:
A beggar begs, that never begg’d before.

Boling. Our scene is alter’d from a serious
thing,
And now chang’d to ‘The Beggar and the King.’
My dangerous cousin, let your mother in: 81
I know she’s come to pray for your foul sin.

[Aumerle unlocks the door.

York. If thou do pardon, whosoever pray,
More sins, for this forgiveness, prosper may. 84
This fester’d joint cut off, the rest rests sound;
This, let alone, will all the rest confound.

Enter Duchess.

Duch. O king! believe not this hard-hearted
man:
Love, loving not itself, none other can. 88

York. Thou frantic woman, what dost thou
make here?

Shall thy old dugs once more a traitor rear?

Duch. Sweet York, be-patient. [Kneels.
Hear me, gentle liege.

Boling. Rise up, good aunt.

Duch. Not yet, I thee beseech. 92
For ever will I walk upon my knees,
And never see day that the happy sees,
Till thou give joy; until thou bid me joy,
By pardoning Rutland, my transgressing boy.96
Aum. Unto my mother’s prayers I bend my
knee. [Kneels.

York. Against them both my true joints
bended be. [Kneels.
Ill mayst thou thrive if thou grant any grace!
Duch. Plead he in earnest? look upon his
face;
His eyes do drop no tears, his prayers are in jest;
His words come from his mouth, ours from our
breast:
He prays but faintly and would be denied;
We pray with heart and soul and all beside: 104
His weary joints would gladly rise, I know;
Our knees shall kneel till the ground they
grow:
His prayers are full of false hypocrisy;
Ours of true zeal and deep integrity. 108
Our prayers do out-pray his; than let them have
That mercy which true prayer ought to have.

Boling. Good aunt, stand up.

Duch. Nay, do not say ‘stand up;’
But ‘pardon’ first, and afterwards ‘stand up.’
An if I were thy nurse, thy tongue to teach, 113
‘Pardon’ should be the first word of thy speech.
I never long’d to hear a word till now;
Say ‘pardon,’ king; let pity teach thee how: 116
The word is short, but not so short as sweet;
No word like ‘pardon,’ for kings’ mouths so
meet.

York. Speak it in French, king; say, ‘par-
donnez moy.’

Duch. Dost thou teach pardon pardon to
destroy?

Ahl my sour husband, my hard-hearted lord,
That sett’st the word itself against the word.
Speak ‘pardon’ as ’tis current in our land;
The chopping French we do not understand. 124
Thine eye begins to speak, set thy tongue there,
Or in thy piteous heart plant thou thine ear,
That hearing how our plants and prayers do
pierce,
Pity may move thee pardon to rehearse. 128

Boling. Good aunt, stand up.

Duch. I do not sue to stand;
Pardon is all the suit I have in hand.

Boling. I pardon him, as God shall pardon
me.

Duch. O happy vantage of a kneeling knee!
Yet am I sick for fear; speak it again; 133
Twice saying ‘pardon’ doth not pardon twain,
But makes one pardon strong.

Boling. With all my heart
I pardon him.

Duch. A god on earth thou art. 136

Boling. But for our trusty brother-in-law
and the abbot,
With all the rest of that consorted crew,
Destruction straight shall dog them at the heels.
Good uncle, help to order several powers 140
To Oxford, or where’er these traitors are:
They shall not live within this world, I swear,
But I will have them, if I once know where.
Uncle, farewell: and cousin too, adieu: 144
Your mother well hath pray’d, and prove you
true.

Duch. Come, my old son: I pray God make
thee new.

[Exit with the duchess.

SCENE IV.—Another Room in the Castle.

Enter Exton and a Servant.

Exton. Didst thou not mark the king, what
words he spake?

Was it not so?

Serv. Those were his very words.

SCENE IV. — Another Room in the Castle.

Enter Exton and a Servant.

Exton. Didst thou not mark the king, what
words he spake?

Was it not so?

Serv. Those were his very words.

[Exit with the duchess.

SCENE IV. — Another Room in the Castle.

Enter Exton and a Servant.

Exton. Didst thou not mark the king, what
words he spake?

Was it not so?

Serv. Those were his very words.

[Exit with the duchess.
KING RICHARD THE SECOND  
Act V, Sc. V.

Exton. 'Have I no friend?' quoth he: he spake it twice. And urg'd it twice together, did he not? 
Serv. He did.
Exton. And speaking it, he wistly looked on me,
As who should say, 'I would thou wert the man
That would divorce this terror from my heart:'
Meaning the king at Pomfret. Come, let's go:
I am the king's friend, and will rid his foe.

[Exeunt.

SCENE V.—Pomfret. The Dungeon of the Castle.

Enter King Richard.

K. Rich. I have been studying how I may compare
This prison where I live unto the world:
And for because the world is populous,
And here is not a creature but myself,
I cannot do it; yet I'll hammer it out.
My brain I'll prove to the female to my soul;
My soul the father: and these two beget
A generation of still-breeding thoughts;
And these same thoughts people this little world
In humours like the people of this world,
For no thought is contented. The better sort,
As thoughts of things divine, are intermix'd
With scruples, and do set the word itself
Against the word:
As thus, 'Come, little ones;' and then again,
'Is it as hard to come as for a camel'
To thread the postern of a needle's eye.'
Thoughts tending to ambition, they do plot
Unlikely wonders; how these vain weak nails
May tear a passage through the flinty ribs
Of this hard world, my ragged prison walls;
And, for they cannot, die in their own pride.
Thoughts tending to content flatter themselves
That they are not the first of fortune's slaves,
Nor shall not be the last; like silly beggars
Who sitting in the stocks refuse their shame,
That many have and others must sit there:
And in this thought they find a kind of ease,
Bearing their own misfortune on the back
Of such as have before endur'd the like.
Thus play I in one person many people,
And none contented: sometimes am I king;
Then treason makes me wish myself a beggar,
And so am I: then crushing penury
Persuades me I was better when a king;
Then am I king'd again; and by and by
Think that I am unking'd by Bolingbroke,
And straight am nothing: but whate'er I be,
Nor I nor any man but man is
With nothing shall be pleas'd, till he be eas'd

With being nothing. Music do I hear? [Music. Ha, ha! keep time. How sour sweet music is
When time is broke and no proportion kept!
So is it in the music of men's lives.
And here have I the daintiness of ear
To check time broke in a disorder'd string;
But for the concord of my state and time
Had not an ear to hear my true time broke.
I wasted time, and now doth time waste me;
For now hath time made me his numbering
Clock:
My thoughts are minutes, and with sighs they jar
Their watches on unto mine eyes, the outward
Watch,
Where to my finger, like a dial's point,
Is pointing still, in cleansing them from tears.
Now sir, the sound that tells what hour it is
Are clamorous groans, that strike upon my heart
Which is the bell: so sighs and tears and groans
Show minutes, times, and hours; but my time
Runs posting on in Bolingbroke's proud joy,
While I stand fooling here, his Jack o' the clock.
This music mends me: let it sound no more; for though
It have holp madmen to their wits,
In me it seems it will make wise men mad.
Yet blessing on his heart that gives it me!
For 'tis a sign of love, and love to Richard
Is a strange brooch in this all-hating world.

Enter Groom of the Stable.

Groom. Hail, royal prince!
K. Rich. Thanks, noble peer;
The cheapest of us is ten groats too dear.
What art thou? and how comest thou hither,
man,
Where no man never comes but that sad dog
That brings me food to make misfortune live?
Groom. I was a poor groom of thy stable, king,
When thou wert king; who, travelling towards
York,
With much ado at length have gotten leave
To look upon my sometimes royal master's face.
O! how it yearn'd my heart when I beheld
In London streets, that coronation day
When Bolingbroke rode on roan Barbary,
That horse that thou so often bestrode,
That horse that I so carefully have dress'd.
K. Rich. Rode he on Barbary? Tell me, gentle friend,
How went he under him?
Groom. So proudly as if he disdain'd the ground.
K. Rich. So proud that Bolingbroke was on
his back!
That jade hath eat bread from my royal hand;
This hand hath made him proud with clapping
him.
Would he not stumble? Would he not fall down,—
Since pride must have a fall,—and break the neck.
Of that proud man that did usurp his back?
Forgiveness, horse! why do I rail on thee,
Since thou, created to be aw’d by man,
Wast born to bear? I was not made a horse; 92
And yet I bear a burden like an ass,
Spur-gall’d and tir’d by jaunting Bolingbroke.

Enter Keeper, with a dish.

Keep. [To the Groom.] Fellow, give place; here is no longer stay.

K. Rich. If thou love me, ’tis time thou wert away.

Groom. What my tongue dares not, that my heart shall say. [Exit.]

Keep. My lord, will’t please you to fall to?

K. Rich. Taste of it first, as thou art wont to do.

Keep. My lord, I dare not: Sir Pierce of Exton, who lately came from the king, commands the contrary.

K. Rich. The devil take Henry of Lancaster, and thee!

Patience is stale, and I am weary of it. [Strikes the Keeper.]

Keep. Help, help, help!

Enter Exton and Servants, armed.

K. Rich. How now! what means death in this rude assault?

Villain, thine own hand yields thy death’s instrument.

[Snatching a weapon and killing one.]

Go thou and fill another room in hell. 108
[He kills another: then Exton strikes him down.

That hand shall burn in never-quenching fire
That staggerst thus my person. Exton, thy fierce hand
Hath with the king’s blood stain’d the king’s own land.
Mount, mount, my soul! thy seat is up on high.

Whilst my gross flesh sinks downward, here to die.

[Dies.]

Exton. As full of valour as of royal blood:
Both have I spilt; O! would the deed were good;
For now the devil, that told me I did well, 116
Says that this deed is chronicled in hell.
This dead king to the living king I’ll bear.
Take hence the rest and give them burial here.

[Exeunt.]

Scene VI.—Windsor. An Apartment in the Castle.

Flourish. Enter Bolingbroke and York, with Lords and Attendants.

Boling. Kind uncle York, the latest news we hear
Is that the rebels have consum’d with fire
Our town of Cioester in Gloucestershire;
But whether they be ta’en or slain we hear not.

Enter Northumberland.

Welcome, my lord. What is the news?

North. First, to thy sacred state wish i all happiness.

The next news is: I have to London sent
The heads of Salisbury, Spencer, Blunt, and Kent.

The manner of their taking may appear
At large discorused in this paper here.

Boling. We thank thee, gentle Percy, for thy pains,
And to thy worth will add right worthy gains.

Enter Fitzwater.

Fitz. My lord, I have from Oxford sent to London
The heads of Brocas and Sir Bennet Seely,
Two of the dangerous consorted traitors
That sought at Oxford thy dire overthrow. 16
Boling. Thy pains, Fitzwater, shall not be forgot;
Right noble is thy merit, well I wot.

Enter Henry Percy, with the Bishop of Carlisle.

H. Percy. The grand conspirator, Abbot of Westminster,
With clog of conscience and sour melancholy, 20
Hath yielded up his body to the grave;
But here is Carlisle living, to abide
Thy kingly doom and sentence of his pride.

Boling. Carlisle, this is your doom: 24
Choose out some secret place, some reverend room,
More than thou hast, and with it joy thy life;
So, as thou livest in peace, die free from strife:
For though mine enemy thou hast ever been, 28
High sparks of honour in thee have I seen.

Enter Exton, with Attendants bearing a coffin.

Exton. Great king, within this coffin I present
Thy buried fear: herein all breathless lies
The mightiest of thy greatest enemies,
Richard of Bordeaux, by me hither brought.
Boling. Exton, I thank thee not; for thou hast wrought
A deed of slander with thy fatal hand
Upon my head and all this famous land. 36

Exton. From your own mouth, my lord, did I this deed.

Boling. They love not poison that do poison need,
Nor do I thee: though I did wish him dead,
I hate the murderer, love him murdered. 40
The guilt of conscience take thou for thy labour,
But neither my good word nor princely favour:

With Cain go wander through the shade of night,
And never show thy head by day nor light. 44
Lords, I protest, my soul is full of woe,
That blood should sprinkle me to make me grow:

Come, mourn with me for that I do lament,
And put on sullen black incontinent. 48
I'll make a voyage to the Holy Land,
To wash this blood off from my guilty hand.

March sadly after; grace my mournings here,
In weeping after this untimely bier. [Exeunt.
THE FIRST PART OF
KING HENRY THE FOURTH

DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

KING HENRY THE FOURTH.
HENRY, Prince of Wales, Sons to the King.
JOHN OF LANCASTER.
EARL OF WESTMORELAND.
SIR WALTER BLUNT.
THOMAS PERCY, Earl of Worcester.
HENRY PERCY, Earl of Northumberland.
HENRY PERCY, surnamed Hotspur, his son.
EDMUND MORTIMER, Earl of March.
RICHARD SCROOP, Archbishop of York.
ARCHIBALD, Earl of Douglas.
OWEN GLENDOVER.
SIR RICHARD VERNON.
SIR JOHN FALSTAFF.
SIR MICHAEL, a Friend to the Archbishop of York.

POINS.
GADSHILL.
PETO.
BARDOLOTH.

LADY PERCY, Wife to Hotspur, and Sister to Mortimer.
LADY MORTIMER, Daughter to Glendower, and Wife to Mortimer.
MISTRESS QUICKLY, Hostess of the Boar’s Head Tavern in Eastcheap.

Lords, Officers, Sheriff, Vintner, Chamberlain, Drawers, two Carriers, Travellers, and Attendants.

SCENE.—England.

ACT I.

SCENE I.—London. The Palace.

Enter King Henry, Westmoreland, and Others.

K. Hen. So shaken as we are, so wan with care,
Find we a time for frighted peace to pant,
And breathe short-winded accents of new broils
To be commenc’d in stronds afar remote.

No more the thirsty entrance of this soil
Shall daub her lips with her own children’s blood;
No more shall trenching war channel her fields,
Nor bruise her flowerets with the armed hoofs
Of hostile paces: those opposed eyes,
Which, like the meteors of a troubled heaven,
All of one nature, of one substance bred,
Did lately meet in the intestine shock
And furious close of civil butchery,
Shall now, in mutual well-beseeming ranks,
March all one way, and be no more oppos’d
Against acquaintance, kindred, and allies:
The edge of war, like an ill-sheathed knife,
No more shall cut his master. Therefore, friends,
As far as to the sepulchre of Christ,—
Whose soldier now, under whose blessed cross
We are impressed and engag’d to fight,—

Forthwith a power of English shall we levy,
Whose arms were moulded in their mother’s womb
To chase those pagans in those holy fields
Over whose acres walk’d those blessed feet
Which fourteen hundred years ago were nail’d
For our advantage on the bitter cross.

But this our purpose is a twelve month old,
And bootless ’tis to tell you we will go: Therefore we meet not now. Then let me hear
Of you, my gentle cousin Westmoreland,
What yesternight our council did decree
In forwarding this dear expedition.

West. My liege, this haste was hot in question,
And many limits of the charge set down
But yesternight; when all awhart there came
A post from Wales laden with heavy news;
Whose worst was, that the noble Mortimer,
Leading the men of Herefordshire to fight Against the irregular and wild Glendower,
Was by the rude hands of that Welshman taken,
And a thousand of his people butchered;
Upon whose dead corpse there was such misuse,
Such beastly shameless transformation
By those Welshwomen done, as may not be
Without much shame re-told or spoken of.

K. Hen. It seems then that the tidings of this broil
Brake off our business for the Holy Land. 48

West. This match’d with other like, my gracious lord;
For more uneven and unwelcome news
Came from the north and thus it did import:
On Holy-rood day, the gallant Hotspur there, 52
Young Harry Percy and brave Archibald,
That ever-valiant and approved Scot,
At Holmedon met,
Where they did spend a sad and bloody hour;
As by discharge of their artillery,
And shape of likelihood, the news was told;
For he that brought them, in the very heat
And pride of their contention did take horse, 60
Uncertain of the issue any way.

K. Hen. Here is a dear and true industrious friend,
Sir Walter Blunt, new lighted from his horse,
Stain’d with the variation of each soil
Betwixt that Holmedon and this seat of ours;
And he hath brought us smooth and welcome news.

The Earl of Douglas is discomfited;
Ten thousand bold Scots, two and twenty knights,
Balk’d in their own blood did Sir Walter see
On Holmedon’s plains: of prisoners Hotspur took
Mordake the Earl of Fife, and eldest son
To beaten Douglas, and the Earls of Athol,
Of Murray, Angus, and Menteith.
And is not this an honourable spoil?
A gallant prize? ha, cousin, is it not?

West. In faith,
It is a conquest for a prince to boast of.

K. Hen. Yea, thou mak’st me sad and mak’st me sin
In envy that my Lord Northumberland
Should be the father to so blest a son,
A son who is the theme of honour’s tongue;
Amongst a grove the very straightest plant;
Who is sweet Fortune’s minion and her pride:
Whilst I, by looking on the praise of him,
See riot and dishonour stain the brow
Of my young Harry. O! that it could be prov’d
That some night-tripping fairy had exchang’d
In cradle-clothes our children where they lay,
And call’d mine Percy, his Plantagenet.
Then would I have his Harry, and he mine:
But let him from my thoughts. What think you, coz,
Of this young Percy’s pride? the prisoners,
Which he in this adventure hath surpris’d,
To his own use he keeps, and sends me word,
I shall have none but Mordake Earl of Fife.

West. This is his uncle’s teaching, this is Worcester,
Malevolent to you in all aspects;
Which makes him prune himself, and bristle up
The crest of youth against your dignity.

K. Hen. But I have sent for him to answer this;
And for this cause a while we must neglect
Our holy purpose to Jerusalem.
Cousin, on Wednesday next our council we
Will hold at Windsor; so inform the lords: 104
But come yourself with speed to us again;
For more is to be said and to be done
Than out of anger can be uttered.

West. I will, my liege. [Exeunt.

SCENE II.—The Same. An Apartment of the Prince’s.

Enter the Prince and Falstaff.

Fal. Now, Hal, what time of day is it, lad?

Prince. Thou art so fat-witted, with drinking of old sack, and unbuttoning thee after supper, and sleeping upon benches after noon, that thou hast forgotten to demand that truly which thou wouldst truly know. What a devil hast thou to do with the time of the day? unless hours were cups of sack, and minutes capons, and clocks the tongues of bawds, and dials the signs of leaping-houses, and the blessed sun himself a fair hot wench in flame-colour’d taffetas, I see no reason why thou shouldst be so superfluous to demand the time of the day.

Fal. Indeed, you come near me now, Hal; for we that take purses go by the moon and the seven stars, and not by Phoebus, he, ‘that wandering knight so fair.’ And, I prithee, sweet wag, when thou art king,—as, God save thy Grace,—majesty, I should say, for grace thou wilt have none,—

Prince. What! none?

Fal. No, by my troth; not so much as will serve to be prologue to an egg and butter.

Prince. Well, how then? come, roundly, roundly.

Fal. Marry, then, sweet wag, when thou art king, let not us that are squires of the night’s body be called thieves of the day’s beauty: let us be Diana’s foresters, gentlemen of the shade, minions of the moon; and let men say, we be men of good government, being governed as the sea is, by our noble and chaste mistress the moon, under whose countenance we steal.

Prince. Thou sayest well, and it holds well too; for the fortune of us that are the moon’s men doth ebb and flow like the sea, being governed as the sea is, by the moon. As for proof now: a purse of gold must resolutely snatched on Monday night and most disolutely spent on
Act I, Sc. II. FIRST PART OF KING HENRY THE FOURTH

Tuesday morning; got with swearing 'Lay by,' and spent with crying 'Bring in:' now in as low an ebb as the foot of the ladder, and by and by in as high a flow as the ridge of the gallows.

Fal. By the Lord, thou sayest true, lad. And is not my hostess of the tavern a most sweet wench?

Prince. As the honey of Hybla, my old lad of the castle. And is not a buff jerkin a most sweet robe of durance?

Fal. How now, how now, mad wag! what, in thy quips and thy quiddities? what a plague have I to do with a buff jerkin?

Prince. Why, what a pox have I to do with my hostess of the tavern?

Fal. Well, thou hast called her to a reckoning many a time and oft.

Prince. Did I ever call for thee to pay thy part?

Fal. No; I'll give thee thy due, thou hast all there.

Prince. Yea, and elsewhere, so far as my coin would stretch; and where it would not, I have used my credit.

Fal. Yea, and so used it that, were it not here apparent that thou art heir apparent.—But, I prithee, sweet wag, shall there be gallows standing in England when thou art king, and resolution thus fobbed as it is with the rusty curb of old father antic the law? Do not thou, when thou art king, hang a thief.

Prince. No; thou shalt.

Fal. Shall I? O rare! By the Lord, I'll be a brave judge.

Prince. Thou judgest false already; I mean, thou shalt have the hanging of the thieves and so become a rare hangman.

Fal. Well, Hal, well; and in some sort it jumps with my humour as well as waiting in the court, I can tell you.

Prince. For obtaining of suits?

Fal. Yea, for obtaining of suits, whereof the hangman hath no lean wardrobe. 'Shblood, I am as melancholy as a gib cat, or a lugged bear.

Prince. Or an old lion, or a lover's lute.

Fal. Yea, or the drone of a Lincolnshire bagpipe.

Prince. What sayest thou to a hare, or the melancholy of Moor-ditch?

Fal. Thou hast the unsavory similes, and art, indeed, the most comparative, rascalliest, sweet young prince; but, Hal, I prithee, trouble me no more with vanity. I would to God thou and I knew where a commodity of good names were to be bought. An old lord of the council rated me the other day in the street about you, sir, but I marked him not; and yet he talked very wisely, but I regarded him not; and yet he talked wisely, and in the street too.

Prince. Thou didst well; for wisdom cries out in the streets, and no man regards it.

Fal. O! thou hast damnable iteration, and art indeed able to corrupt a saint. Thou hast done much harm upon me, Hal; God forgive thee for it! Before I knew thee, Hal, I knew nothing; and now am I, if a man should speak truly, little better than one of the wicked. I must give over this life, and I will give it over; by the Lord, an I do not, I am a villain: I'll be damned for never a king's son in Christendom.

Prince. Where shall we take a purse to-morrow, Jack?

Fal. Zounds! where thou wilt, lad, I'll make one; an I do not, call me a villain and baffle me.

Prince. I see a good amendment of life in thee; from praying to purse-taking.

Enter POINS, at a distance.

Fal. Why, Hal, 'tis my vocation, Hal; 'tis no sin for a man to labour in his vocation. Poins! Now shall we know if Gadshill have set a match. O! if men were to be saved by merit, what hole in hell were hot enough for him? This is the most omnipotent villain that ever cried 'Stand!' to a true man.

Prince. Good morrow, Ned.

Poins. Good morrow, sweet Hal. What says Monsieur Remorse? What says Sir John Sack-and-Sugar? Jack! how agrees the devil and thee about thy soul, that thou soldest him on Good-Friday last for a cup of Madeira and a cold capon's leg?

Prince. Sir John stands to his word, the devil shall have his bargain; for he was never yet a breaker of proverbs: he will give the devil his due.

Poins. Then art thou damned for keeping thy word with the devil.

Prince. Else he had been damned for coveting the devil.

Poins. But my lads, my lads, to-morrow morning, by four o'clock, early at Gadshill! There are pilgrims going to Canterbury with rich offerings, and traders riding to London with fat purses: I have vizards for you all; you have horses for yourselves. Gadshill lies to night in Rochester; I have bespake supper to-morrow night in Eastcheap: we may do it as secure as sleep. If you will go I will stuff your purses full of crowns; if you will not, tarry at home and be hanged.

Fal. Hear ye, Yeoward: if I tarry at home and go not, I'll hang you for going.

Poins. You will, chaps?

Fal. Hal, wilt thou make one?

Fal. There's neither honesty, manhood, nor good fellowship in thee, nor thou camest not of the blood royal, if thou darest not stand for ten shillings. 157

Prince. Well, then, once in my days I'll be a madcap.

Fal. Why, that's well said. 160

Prince. Well, come what will, I'll tarry at home.

Fal. By the Lord, I'll be a traitor then, when thou art king. 164

Prince. I care not.

Poins. Sir John, I prithee, leave the prince and me alone: I will lay him down such reasons for this adventure that he shall go. 168

Fal. Well, God give thee the spirit of persuasion and him the ears of profiting, that what thou speakest may move, and what he hears may be believed, that the true prince may, for recreation sake, prove a false thief; for the poor abuses of the time want countenance. Farewell: you shall find me in Eastcheap. 175

Prince. Farewell, thou latter spring! Farewell, All-hallowen summer! [Exit FALSTAFF. 
Poins. Now, my good sweet honey lord, ride with us to-morrow: I have a jest to execute that I cannot manage alone. Falstaff, Bardolph, Peto, and Gadshill shall rob those men that we have already waylaid; yourself and I will not be there; and when they have the booty, if you and I do not rob them, cut this head from my shoulders. 185

Prince. But how shall we part with them in setting forth?

Poins. Why, we will set forth before or after them, and appoint them a place of meeting, wherein it is at our pleasure to fail; and then will they adventure upon the exploit themselves, which they shall have no sooner achieved but we'll set upon them. 193

Prince. Yea, but 'tis like that they will know us by our horses, by our habits, and by every other appointment, to be ourselves. 196

Poins. Tut! our horses they shall not see, I'll tie them in the wood; our wizards we will change after we leave them; and, sirrah, I have cases of buckram for the nonce, to immask our noted outward garments. 201

Prince. Yea, but I doubt they will be too hard for us.

Poins. Well, for two of them, I know them to be as true-bred cowards as ever turned back; and for the third, if he fight longer than he sees reason, I'll forswear arms. The virtue of this jest will be, the incomprehensible lies that this same fat rogue will tell us when we meet at supper: how thirty, at least, he fought with; what wards, what blows, what extremities he endured; and in the reproof of this lies the jest.

Prince. Well, I'll go with thee: provide us all things necessary and meet me to-morrow night in Eastcheap; there I'll sup. Farewell.

Poins. Farewell, my lord. [Exit. Prince. I know you all, and will awhile uphold 217
The unyok'd humour of your idleness: Yet herein will I imitate the sun, Who doth permit the base contagious clouds To smother up his beauty from the world, 221 
That when he please again to be himself, Being wanted, he may be more wonder'd at, By breaking through the foul and ugly mists Of vapours that did seem to strangle him. 225 
If all the year were playing holidays, To sport would be as tedious as to work; But when they seldom come, they wish'd for come, And nothing pleaseth but rare accidents. 229
So, when this loose behaviour I throw off, And pay the debt I never promised, By how much better than my word I am 232 
By so much shall I falsify men's hopes; And like bright metal on a sullen ground, My reformation, glittering o'er my fault, Shall show more goodly and attract more eyes Than that which hath no foil to set it off. 237 
I'll so offend to make offence a skill; Redeeming time when men think least I will. [Exit.

SCENE III.—The Same. The Palace.

Enter KING HENRY, NORTHUMBERLAND, WORCESTER, HOTSPIR, SIR WALTER BLUNT, and Others.

K. Hen. My blood hath been too cold and temperate, 
Unapt to stir at these indignities, 
And you have found me; for accordingly You tread upon my patience: but, be sure, 4 
I will from henceforth rather be myself, Mighty, and to be fear'd, than my condition, Which hath been smooth as oil, soft as young down, 
And therefore lost that title of respect 8 
Which the proud soul ne'er pays but to the proud.

Wor. Our house, my sovereign liege, little deserves 
The scourge of greatness to be us'd on it; 
And that same greatness too which our own hands 12 
Have help to make so portly: 473
North. My lord,—
K. Hen. Worcester, get thee gone; for I do see
Danger and disobedience in thine eye. 16
O, sir, your presence is too bold and peremptory,
And majesty might never yet endure
The moody frontier of a servant brow.
You have good leave to leave us; when we need
Your use and counsel we shall send for you. 21

[Exit Worcester.

[to Northumberland.] You were about to speak.

North. Yea, my good lord.
Those prisoners in your highness’ name demanded,
Which Harry Percy here at Holmedon took, 24
Were, as he says, not with such strength denied
As is deliver’d to your majesty:
Either envy, therefore, or misprision
Is guilty of this fault and not my son. 28

Hot. My liege, I did deny no prisoners:
But I remember, when the fight was done,
When I was dry with rage and extreme toil,
Breathless and faint, leaning upon my sword, 32
Came there a certain lord, neat, and trimly dress’d,
Fresh as a bridegroom; and his chin, new reap’d,
Show’d like a stubble-land at harvest-home:
He was perfumed like a milliner, 36
And ’twixt his finger and his thumb he held
A pouce-box, which ever and anon
He gave his nose and took’t away again;
Who therewith angry, when it next came there,
Took it in snuff: and still he smil’d and talk’d;
And as the soldiers bore dead bodies by,
He call’d them untaught knaves, unmannerly,
To bring a slovenly unhandsome corpse 44
Betwixt the wind and his nobility.
With many holiday and lady terms
He question’d me; among the rest, demanded
My prisoners in your majesty’s behalf. 48
Then all smarting with my wounds being col’d,
To be so pester’d with a popinjay,
Out of my grief and my impatience
Answer’d neglectingly, I know not what, 52
He should, or he should not; for he made me mad
To see him shine so brisk and smell so sweet
And talk so like a waiting-gentlewoman
Of guns, and drums, and wounds,—God save the mark!— 56
And telling me the sovereignst thing on earth
Was parmaoeli for an inward bruise;
And that it was great pity, so it was,
This villainous saltpetre should be digg’d
Out of the bowels of the harmless earth,
Which many a good tall fellow had destroy’d
So cowardly; and but for these vile guns,

He would himself have been a soldier. 64
This bald unjointed chat of his, my lord,
I answer’d indirectly, as I said;
And I beseech you, let not his report
Come current for an accusation 68
Betwixt my love and your high majesty.
Blunt. The circumstance consider’d, good my lord,
Whatever Harry Percy then had said
To such a person and in such a place,
At such a time, with all the rest re-told,
May reasonably die and never rise
To do him wrong, or any way impeach
What then he said, so he unsay it now. 76

K. Hen. Why, yet he doth deny his prisoners,
But with proviso and exception,
That we at our own charge shall ransom straight
His brother-in-law, the foolish Mortimer; 80
Who, on my soul, hath wilfully betray’d
The lives of those that he did lead to fight
Against the great magician, damn’d Glendower,
Whose daughter, as we hear, the Earl of March
Hath lately married. Shall our coffers then 85
Be emptied to redeem a traitor home?
Shall we buy treason, and indent with fears,
When they have lost and forfeited themselves?
No, on the barren mountains let him starve; 89
For I shall never hold that man my friend
Whose tongue shall ask me for one penny cost
To ransom home revolted Mortimer. 92

Hot. Revolted Mortimer!
He never did fall off, my sovereign liege,
But by the chance of war: to prove that true
Needs no more but one tongue for all those wounds,
Those mouthed wounds, which valiantly he took,
When on the gentle Severn’s sedgy bank,
In single opposition, hand to hand,
He did confound the best part of an hour 100
In changing hardiment with great Glendower.
Three times they breathed and three times did they drink,
Upon agreement, of swift Severn’s flood,
Who then, affrighted with their bloody looks, 104
Ran fearfully among the trembling reeds,
And hid his crisp head in the hollow bank
Blood-stained with these valiant combatants.
Never did base and rotten policy 108
Colour her working with such deadly wounds;
Nor never could the noble Mortimer
Receive so many, and all willingly:
Then let him not be slander’d with revolt. 112

K. Hen. Thou dost belie him, Percy, thou
Dost belie him:
He never did encounter with Glendower:
I tell thee,
He durst as well have met the devil alone 116
FIRST PART OF KING HENRY THE FOURTH  Act I, Sc. III.

As Owen Glendower for an enemy.
Art thou not ashamed? But, sirrah, henceforth
Let me not hear you speak of Mortimer:
Send me your prisoners with the speediest means.

120 Or you shall hear in such a kind from me
As will displease you. My Lord Northumberland,
We license your departure with your son.
Send us your prisoners, or you'll hear of it. 124

[Exit King Henry, Blunt, and Train.

Hot. An if the devil come and roar for them,
I will not send them: I will after straight
And tell him so; for I will ease my heart,
Albeit I make a hazard of my head.

128 North. What! drunk with choler? stay, and pause awhile:
Here comes your uncle.

Re-enter Worcester.

Hot. Speak of Mortimer!
'Zounds! I will speak of him; and let my soul
Want mercy if I do not join with him: 132
In his behalf I'll empty all these veins,
And shed my dear blood drop by drop i' the dust,
But I will lift the down-trod Mortimer
As high i' the air as this unthankful king, 136
As this ingrate and canker'd Bolingbroke.

North. Brother, the king hath made your nephew mad.

Wor. Who struck this heat up after I was gone?

Hot. He will, forsooth, have all my prisoners;
And when I urg'd the ransom once again 141
Of my wife's brother, then his cheek look'd pale,
And on my face he turn'd an eye of death,
Trembling even at the name of Mortimer. 144

Wor. I cannot blame him: was he not proclaim'd
By Richard that dead is the next of blood?

North. He was; I heard the proclamation:
And then it was when the unhappy king,— 148
Whose wrongs in us God pardon!—did set forth
Upon his Irish expedition;
From whence he, intercepted, did return
To be depos'd, and shortly murdered. 152

Wor. And for whose death we in the world's wide mouth
Live scandaliz'd and foully spoken of.

Hot. But, soft! I pray you, did King Richard then
Proclaim my brother Edmund Mortimer 156
Hair to the crown?

North. He did; myself did hear it.

Hot. Nay, then I cannot blame his cousin king,
That wish'd him on the barren mountains starve.
But shall it be that you, that set the crown 160

Upon the head of this forgetful man,
And for his sake wear the detested blot
Of murd'rous subornation, shall it be,
That you a world of curses undergo,

Being the agents, or base second means,
The cords, the ladder, or the hangman rather?
O! pardon me that I descend so low,
To show the line and the predicament
Wherein you range under this subtle king.
Shall it for shame be spoken in these days,
Or fill up chronicles in time to come,
That men of your nobility and power,

172 Did gage them both in an unjust behalf,
As both of you—God pardon it!—have done,
To put down Richard, that sweet lovely rose,
And plant this thorn, this canker, Bolingbroke?
And shall it in more shame be further spoken,
That you are fool'd, discarded, and shook off
By him for whom these shames ye underwent?
No; yet time serves wherein you may redeem 180
Your banish'd honours, and restore yourselves
Into the good thoughts of the world again;
Revenge the jeering and disdain'd contempt
Of this proud king, who studies day and night
To answer all the debt he owes to you, 185
Even with the bloody payment of your deaths.
Therefore, I say,——

Wor. Peace, cousin! say no more:
And now I will unclasp a secret book,
And to your quick-conceiving discontents
I'll read you matter deep and dangerous,
As full of peril and adventurous spirit
As to o'er-walk a current roaring loud,
On the unsteadfast footing of a spear.

Hot. If he fall in, good night! or sink or swim:
Send danger from the east unto the west,
So honour cross it from the north to south, 196
And let them grapple: Of the blood more stirs
To rouse a lion than to start a hare.

North. Imagination of some great exploit
Drives him beyond the bounds of patience. 200

Hot. By heaven methinks it were an easy leap
To pluck bright honour from the pale-fac'd moon,
Or dive into the bottom of the deep,
Where fathom-line could never touch the ground,

204 And pluck up drowned honour by the locks;
So he that doth redeem her thence might wear
Without corral all her dignities:
But out upon this half-fac'd fellowship! 208

Wor. He apprehends a world of figures here,
But not the form of what he should attend.
Good cousin, give me audience for a while.

Hot. I cry you mercy.
ACT I, Sc. III. FIRST PART OF KING HENRY THE FOURTH

Wor. Those same noble Scots shall be kept;—
Hot. Those same noble Scots shall be kept;—
By God, he shall not have a Scot of them:
No, if a Scot would save his soul, he shall not:
I'll keep them, by this hand.

Wor. You start away, 216
And lend no ear unto my purposes.
Wor. Those prisoners you shall keep.
Hot. Nay, I will; that's flat:
He said he would not ransom Mortimer;
Forbade my tongue to speak of Mortimer;
But I will find him when he lies asleep,
And in his ear I'll holla 'Mortimer!'
Nay, I'll have a starling taught to speak
Nothing but 'Mortimer,' and give it him,
To keep his anger still in motion.

Wor. Hear you, cousin; a word.
Hot. All studies here I solemnly defy.

Save how to gall and pinch this Bolingbroke:
And that same sword-and-buckler Prince of Wales,
But that I think his father loves him not,
And would be glad he met with some mischance,
I would have him poison'd with a pot of ale.

Wor. Farewell, kinsman: I will talk to you
When you are better temper'd to attend.

North. Why, what a wasp-stung and impatient fool
Art thou to break into this woman's mood,
Tyring thine ear to no tongue but thine own!

Hot. Why, look you, I am whipp'd and scourg'd with rods,
Nettled, and stung with pismsires, when I hear
Of this vile politician, Bolingbroke.
In Richard's time,—what do ye call the place?—
A plague upon't—it is in Glouchestershire;—
'Twas where the madcap duke his uncle kept,
His uncle York; where I first bow'd my knee
Unto this king of smiles, this Bolingbroke,
'Sblood!

When you and he became from Ravenspurgh.

North. At Berkeley Castle.

Wor. You say true.

Wor. Why, what a candy deal of courtesy
This fawning greyhound then did proffer me!
Look, 'when his infant fortune came to age,'
And 'gentle Harry Percy,' and 'kind cousin.'
Ol' the devil take such cozeners. God forgive me!

Good uncle, tell your tale, for I have done.

Wor. Nay, if you have not, to't again;
Wor. We'll stay your leisure.

Hot. I have done, i' faith.
Wor. Then once more to your Scottish prisoners.

Deliver them up without their ransom straight,
And make the Douglas' son your only mean;
For powers in Scotland; which, for divers reasons
Which I shall send you written, be assur'd,
Will easily be granted. [To NORTHUMBERLAND.]
You, my lord,
Your son in Scotland being thus employ'd,
Shall secretly into the bosom creep
Of that same noble prelate well belov'd,
The Archbishops.

Hot. Of York, is it not?
Wor. True; who bears hard
His brother's death at Bristol, the Lord Scroop.
I speak not this in estimation,
As what I think might be, but what I know
Is ruminated, plotted and set down;
And only stays but to behold the face
Of that occasion that shall bring it on.

Hot. I smell it.
Upon my life it will do wondrous well.

North. Before the game's afoot thou still lett'st slip.

Hot. Why, it cannot choose but be a noble plot;
And then the power of Scotland and of York,
To join with Mortimer, ha?

Wor. And so they shall.

Hot. In faith, it is exceedingly well aim'd.
Wor. And 'tis no little reason bids us speed,
To save our heads by raising of a head;
For, bear ourselves as even as we can,
The king will always think him in our debt,
And think we think ourselves unsatisfied,
Till he hath found a time to pay us home.
And see already how he doth begin
To make us strangers to his looks of love.

Hot. He does, he does: we'll be reveng'd on him.

Wor. Cousin, farewell: no further go in this,
Than I by letters shall direct your course.
When time is ripe,—which will be suddenly,—
I'll steal to Glendower and Lord Mortimer;
Where you and Douglas and our powers at once,—
As I will fashion it,—shall happily meet,
To bear our fortunes in our own strong arms,
Which now we hold at much uncertainty.

North. Farewell, good brother: we shall thrive, I trust.

Hot. Uncle, adieu! O! let the hours be short,
Till fields and blows and groans applaud our sport!

[Exeunt.]
ACT II.


Enter a Carrier, with a lanthorn in his hand.

First Car. Heigh-ho! An't be not four by the day I'll be hanged: Charles Wain is over the new chimney, and yet our horse not packed.

What, ostler! 

Ost. [Within.] Anon, anon.

First Car. I prithee, Tom, beat Cut's saddle, put a few flocks in the point; the poor jade is wrung in the withers out of all cess.

Enter another Carrier.

Sec. Car. Peas and beans are as dank here as a dog, and that is the next way to give poor jades the bots; this house is turned upside down since Robin Ostler died.

First Car. Poor fellow! never joyed since the price of oats rose; it was the death of him.

Sec. Car. I think this be the most villainous house in all London road for fleas: I am stung like a tetch.

First Car. Like a tetch! by the mass, there is ne'er a king christen could be better bit than I have been since the first cock.

Sec. Car. Why, they will allow us ne'er a jordan, and then we leak in the chimney; and your chamber-lie breeds fleas like a loach.

First Car. What, ostler! come away and be hanged, come away.

Sec. Car. I have a gammon of bacon and two razes of ginger, to be delivered as far as Charing-cross.

First Car. Godsworthy: the turkeys in my pannier are quite starved. What, ostler! A plague on thee! hast thou never an eye in thy head? canst not hear? An 'were not as good a deed as drink to break the pate on thee, I am a very villain. Come, and be hanged! hast no faith in thee?

Enter GADSHILL.

Gads. Good morrow, carriers. What's o'clock? 

First Car. I think it be two o'clock.

Gads. I prithee, lend me thy lanthorn, to see my gelding in the stable.

First Car. Nay, by God, soft: I know a trick worth two of that, 't faith.

Gads. I prithee, lend me thine.

Sec. Car. Ay, when? canst tell? Lend me thy lanthorn, quoth a? marry, I'll see thee hanged first.

Gads. Sirrah carrier, what time do you mean to come to London?

Sec. Car. Time enough to go to bed with a candle, I warrant thee. Come, neighbour Mugs, we'll call up the gentlemen: they will along with company, for they have great charge.

[Exeunt Carriers.

Gads. What, ho! chamberlain! 

Cham. [Within.] 'At hand, quoth pick-purse.'

Gads. That's even as far as, 'at hand, quoth the chamberlain'; for thou varyest no more from picking of purses than giving direction doth from labouring; thou layest the plot how.

Enter CHAMBERLAIN.

Cham. Good morrow, Master Gadshill. It holds current that I told you yesternight: there's a franklin in the wild of Kent hath brought three hundred marks with him in gold: I heard him tell it to one of his company last night at supper; a kind of auditor; one that hath abundance of charge too, God knows what. They are up already and call for eggs and butter: they will away presently.

Gads. Sirrah, if they meet not with Saint Nicholas' clerks, I'll give thee this neck.

Cham. No, I'll none of it: I prithee, keep that for the hangman; for I know thou worship'st Saint Nicholas as truly as a man of falsehood may.

Gads. What talkest thou to me of the hangman? If I hang I'll make a fat pair of gallows; for if I hang, old Sir John hangs with me, and thou knowest he's no sarveling. Tut! there are other Troyans that thou dreamest not of, the which for sport sake are content to do the profession some grace; that would, if matters should be looked into, for their own credit make all whole. I am joined with no foot-land-rakers, no long-staff sixpenny strikers, none of these mad mustachio-purple-hued malt worms; but with nobility and tranquillity, burgomasters and great onyers such as can hold in, such as will strike sooner than speak, and speak sooner than drink, and drink sooner than pray: and yet I lie; for they pray continually to their saint, the commonwealth; or, rather, not pray to her, but pray on her, for they ride up and down on her and make her their boots.

Cham. What! the commonwealth their boots? will she hold out water in foul way? 

Gads. She will, she will; justice hath liquored her. We steal as in a castle, cock-sure; we have the receipt of fern-seed, we walk invisible.

Cham. Nay, by my faith, I think you are more beholding to the night than to fern-seed for your walking invisible.

Gads. Give me thy hand: thou shalt have a share in our purchase, as I am a true man.
Cham. Nay, rather let me have it, as you are a false thief.

Gads. Go to; homo is a common name to all men. Bid the ostler bring my gelding out of the stable. Farewell, you muddy knave.

Prince. Stand close.

[Exeunt.

SCENE II.—The Road by Gadshill.

Enter the PRINCE and PoiNS.

PoiNS. Come, shelter, shelter: I have removed Falstaff’s horse, and he frets like a gummed velvet.

Prince. Stand close.

Enter FALSTAFF.

Fal. PoiNS! PoiNS, and be hanged! PoiNS!

Prince. Peace, ye fat-kidneyed rascal! What a brawling dost thou keep!

Fal. Where’s PoiNS, Hal?

Prince. He is walked up to the top of the hill: I’ll go seek him.

[Thet pretends to seek PoiNS, and retires.

Fal. I am accursed to rob in that thief’s company; the thief has removed my horse and tied him I know not where. If I travel but four foot by the squire further afoot I shall break my wind. Well, I doubt not but to die a fair death for all this, if I scape hanging for killing that rogue. I have forsworn his company hourly any time this two-and-twenty years, and yet I am bewitched with the rogue’s company. If the rascal have not given me medicines to make me love him, I’ll be hanged: it could not be else: I have drunk medicines. PoiNS! Hal! a plague upon you both! Bardolph! Peto! I’ll starve ere I’ll rob a foot further. An ’twere not as good a deed as drink to turn true man and leave these rogues, I am the veriest varlet that ever chewed with a tooth. Eight yards of uneven ground is trescore and ten miles afoot with me, and the stony-hearted villains know it well enough. A plague upon’t when thieves cannot be true one to another! [Thet whistleflower] Whew! A plague upon you all! Give me my horse, you rogues; give me my horse and be hanged.

Prince. [Comet forward.] Peace, ye fat-guts! lie down: lay thine ear close to the ground, and list if thou canst hear the tread of travellers.

Fal. Have you any levers to lift me up again, being down? ’Sblood! I’ll not bear mine own flesh so far afoot again for all the coin in thy father’s exchequer. What a plague mean ye to colt me thus?

Prince. Thou liest: thou art not colted; thou art uncolted.

Fal. I prithee, good Prince Hal, help me to my horse, good king’s son.

Prince. Out, you rogue! shall I be your ostler?

Fal. Go, hang thyself in thine own heir apparent garters! If I be ta’en I’ll peach for this. An I have not ballads made on you all, and sung to filthy tunes, let a cup of sack be my poison: when a jest is so forward, and afoot too! I hate it.

Enter GADSHILL.

Gads. Stand.

Fal. So I do, against my will.

PoiNS. O! ’tis our setter: I know his voice.

Enter BARDOLPH and PETO.

Bard. What news?

Gads. Case ye, case ye; on with your vizards: there’s money of the king’s coming down the hill; ’tis going to the king’s exchequer.

Fal. You lie, you rogue; ’tis going to the king’s tavern.

Gads. There’s enough to make us all.

Fal. To be hanged.

Prince. Sirs, you four shall front them in the narrow lane; Ned PoiNS and I will walk lower: if they ‘scape from your encounter then they light on us.

Peto. How many be there of them?

Gads. Some eight or ten.

Fal. ’Zounds! will they not rob us?

Prince. What! a coward, Sir John Paunch?

Fal. Indeed, I am not John of Gaunt, your grandfather; but yet no coward, Hal.

Prince. Well, we leave that to the proof.

PoiNS. Sirrah Jack, thy horse stands behind the hedge: when thou needest him there thou shalt find him. Farewell, and stand fast.

Fal. Now cannot I strike him if I should be hanged.

Prince. [Aside to PoiNS.] Ned, where are our disguises?

PoiNS. Here, hard by; stand close.

[Exeunt Prince and PoiNS.

Fal. Now my masters, happy man be his dole, say I: every man to his business.

Enter Travellers.

First Trav. Come, neighbour; the boy shall lead our horses down the hill; we’ll walk afoot awhile, and ease our legs.

Thieves. Stand!

Travellers. Jesu bless us!
FIRST PART OF KING HENRY THE FOURTH Act II, Sc. III.

Fal. Strike; down with them; cut the villains’ throats: ah! whoreson caterpillars! bacon-fed knaves! they hate us youth: down with them; fleece them.

Travellers. Oi we are undone, both we and ours for ever.

Fal. Hang ye, gorbellied knaves, are ye undone? 'No, ye fat chuffs; I would your store were here! On, bacons, on! What! ye knaves, young men must live. You are grand-jurors are ye? We'll jure ye, i’ faith. [Here they rob and bind them. Exeunt.

Re-enter the Prince and P O I N S.

Prince. The thieves have bound the true men. Now could thou and I rob the thieves and go merrily to London, it would be argument for a week, laughter for a month, and a good jest for ever.

P O I N S. Stand close; I hear them coming.

Re-enter Thieves.

Fal. Come, my masters; let us share, and then to horse before day. An the Prince and P O I N S be not two arrant cowards, there’s no equity stirring: there’s no more valour in that P O I N S than in a wild duck.

Prince. Your money!

P O I N S. Villains!

[As they are sharing, the Prince and P O I N S set upon them. They all run away; and Falstaff, after a blow or two, runs away too, leaving the booty behind.

Prince. Got with much ease. Now merrily to horse:
The thieves are scatter’d and possess’d with fear
So strongly that they dare not meet each other;
Each takes his fellow for an officer.
Away, good Ned. Falstaff sweats to death
And lards the lean earth as he walks along:
Were’t not for laughing I should pity him.

P O I N S. How the rogue roar’d! [Exeunt.

SCENE III.—Warkworth. A Room in the Castle.

Enter HOTSPUR, reading a letter.

But for mine own part, my lord, I could be well contented to be there, in respect of the love I bear your house.

He could be contented; why is he not then? In respect of the love he bears our house: he shows in this he loves his own barn better than he loves our house. Let me see some more.

The purpose you undertake is dangerous;—

Why, that’s certain: 'tis dangerous to take a cold, to sleep, to drink; but I tell you, my lord fool, out of this nettle, danger, we pluck this flower, safety.

The purpose you undertake is dangerous; the friends you have named uncertain; the time itself unsorted; and your whole plot too light for the counterpose of so great an opposition.

Say you so, say you so? I say unto you again, you are a shallow cowardly hind, and you lie. What a lack-brain is this! By the Lord, our plot is a good plot as ever was laid; our friends true and constant: a good plot, good friends, and full of expectation; an excellent plot, very good friends. What a frosty-spirited rogue is this! Why, my Lord of York commends the plot and the general course of the action. 'Zounds! an I were now by this rascal, I could brain him with his lady’s fan. Is there not my father, my uncle, and myself? Lord Edmund Mortimer, my Lord of York, and Owen Glendower? Is there not besides the Douglas? Have I not all their letters to meet me in arms by the ninth of the next month, and are they not some of them set forward already? What a pagan rascal is this! an infidel! Hal! you shall see now in very sincerity of fear and cold heart, will he to the king and lay open all our proceedings. Of I could divide myself and go to buffets, for moving such a dish of skim milk with so honourable an action. Hang him! let him tell the king; we are prepared. I will set forward to-night.

Enter LADY PERCY.

How now, Kate! I must leave you within these two hours.

Lady P. O, my good lord! why are you thus alone?

For what offence have I this fortnight been
A banish’d woman from my Harry’s bed?
Tell me, sweet lord, what is ‘t that takes from thee
Thy stomach, pleasure, and thy golden sleep?
Why dost thou bend thine eyes upon the earth,
And start so often when thou sit’st alone?

Why hast thou lost the fresh blood in thy cheeks,
And given my treasures and my rights of thee
To thick-eyed musing and curt melancholy?
In thy faint slumber I by thee have watch’d,
And heard thee murmur tales of iron wars,
Speak terms of manage to thy bounding steed,
Cry, ‘Courage! to the field!’ And thou hast talk’d
Of sallies and retirets, of trenches, tents,
Of palisadoes, frontiers, parapets,
Of basiliaks, of cannon, culverin,
Of prisoners’ ransom, and of soldiers slain,
And all the currents of a heady fight.

Thy spirit within thee hath been so at war,
And thus hath so bestir’d thee in thy sleep,
Act II, Sc. III. FIRST PART OF KING HENRY THE FOURTH

That beads of sweat have stood upon thy brow,
Like bubbles in a late-disturbed stream; 64
And in thy face strange motions have appear’d,
Such as we see when men restrain their breath
On some great sudden hest. O! what portents
are these?
Some heavy business hath my lord in hand, 68
And I must know it, else he loves me not.

Hot. What, ho!

Enter Servant.

Serv. Is Gilliam with the packet gone?

Hot. Hath Butler brought those horses from
the sheriff? 72

Serv. One horse, my lord, he brought even
now.

Hot. What horse? a roan, a crop-ear, is it
not?

Serv. It is, my lord.

Hot. That roan shall be my throne.

Well, I will back him straight: O, Esperance!
Bid Butler lead him forth into the park. 77

[Exit Servant.

Lady P. But hear you, my lord.

Hot. What sayst thou, my lady?

Lady P. What is it carries you away? 80

Hot. Why, my horse, my love, my horse.

Lady P. Out, you mad-headed ape!

A weasel hath not such a deal of spleen
As you are toss’d with. In faith, 84
I’ll know your business, Harry, that I will.

I fear my brother Mortimer doth stir
About his title, and hath sent for you
To line his enterprise. But if you go— 88

Hot. So far afoot, I shall be weary, love.

Lady P. Come, come, you paragon, an-
swer me

Directly unto this question that I ask.
In faith, I’ll break thy little finger, Harry, 92
An if thou wilt not tell me all things true.

Hot. Away,

Away, you trifler! Love! I love thee not,
I care not for thee, Kate: this is no world 96
To play with mummies and to till with lips:
We must have bloody noses and crack’d crowns,
And pass them current too. God’s me, my
horse!

What sayst thou, Kate? what wouldst thou
have with me?

Lady P. Do you not love me? do you not,
indeed?

Well, do not, then; for since you love me not,
I will not love myself. Do you not love me?
Nay, tell me if you speak in jest or no. 104

Hot. Come, wilt thou see me ride?

And when I am o’ horseback, I will swear

I love thee infinitely. But hark you, Kate;
I must not have you henceforth question me 108
Whither I go, nor reason whereabouts.
Whither I must, I must; and, to conclude,
This evening must I leave you, gentle Kate.
I know you wise; but yet no further wise 112
Than Harry Percy’s wife: constant you are,
But yet a woman: and for secrecy,
No lady closer; for I well believe
Thou wilt not utter what thou dost not know;
And so far will I trust thee, gentle Kate. 117

Lady P. How! so far?

Hot. Not an inch further. But, hark you,
Kate;
Whither I go, thither shall you go; 120
To-day will I set forth, to-morrow you.
Will this content you, Kate?

Lady P. It must, of force. 121

[Exeunt.

SCENE IV.—Eastcheap. A Room in the Boar’s
Head Tavern.

Enter the Prince and Poins.

Prince. Ned, prithee, come out of that fat
room, and lend me thy hand to laugh a little.
Poins. Where hast been, Hal? 3

Prince. With three or four loggerheads a-
mongst three or four score hogshies. I have
sounded the very base string of humility. Sir-
rah, I am sworn brother to a leach of drawers,
and can call them all by their christen names,
as Tom, Dick, and Francis. They take it already
upon their salvation, that though I be but Prince
of Wales, yet I am the king of courtesy; and tell
me flatly I am no proud Jack, like Falstaff, but
a Corinthian, a lad of mettle, a good boy,—by
the Lord, so they call me,—and when I am king
of England, I shall command all the good lads
in Eastcheap. They call drinking deep, dyeing
scarlet; and when you breathe in your waterings,
they cry ‘ham!’ and bid you play off. To
conclude, I am so good a proficient in one
quarter of an hour, that I can drink with any
tinker in his own language during my life. I
tell thee, Ned, thou hast lost much honour that
thee with in this action. But, sweet Ned,—to sweeten which name of Ned, I give thee
this pennyworth of sugar, clapped even now into
my hand by an underskinker, one that never
spake other English in his life than— ‘Eight
shillings and sixpence,’ and—‘You are welcome,’
with this shrill addition,—Anon, anon, sir! Score a pint of bastard in the Half-moon,’ or
so. But, Ned, to drive away the time till Falstaff
come, I prithee do thou stand in some by-room,
while I question my puny drawer to what end
he gave me the sugar; and do thou never leave calling ‘Francis!’ that his tale to me may be nothing but ‘Anon.’ Step aside, and I’ll show thee a precedent.

Prince. Thou art perfect.

Poins. Francis! [Exit Poins.

Enter FRANCIS.

Fran. Anon, anon, sir. Look down into the Pongarnet, Ralph.

Prince. Come hither, Francis.

Fran. My lord.

Prince. How long hast thou to serve, Francis?

Fran. Forsworn, five years, and as much as to—

Poins. [Within.] Francis!

Fran. Anon, anon, sir.

Prince. Five years! by ’r lady a long lease for the clinking of pewter. But, Francis, darest thou be so valiant as to play the coward with thy indenture and show it a fair pair of heels and run from it?

Fran. O Lord, sir! I’ll be sworn upon all the books in England, I could find in my heart—

Poins. [Within.] Francis!

Fran. Anon, sir.

Prince. How old art thou, Francis?

Fran. Let me see—about Michaelmas next I shall be—

Poins. [Within.] Francis!

Fran. Anon, sir. Pray you, stay a little, my lord.

Prince. Nay, but hark you, Francis. For the sugar thou gavest me, 'twas a pennyworth, wasn’t it?

Fran. O Lord, sir! I would it had been two.

Prince. I will give thee for it a thousand pound: ask me when thou wilt and thou shalt have it.

Poins. [Within.] Francis!

Fran. Anon, anon.

Prince. Anon, Francis? No, Francis; but to-morrow, Francis; or, Francis, o’ Thursday; or, indeed, Francis, when thou wilt. But, Francis!

Fran. My lord?

Prince. Wilt thou rob this leathern-jerkin, crystal-button, knot-pated, agate-ring, puke-stocking, caddis-garter, smooth-tongue, Spanish-pouch,—

Fran. O Lord, sir, who do you mean?

Prince. Why then, your brown bastard is your only drink; for, look you, Francis, your white canvas doublet will sully. In Barbary, sir, it cannot come to so much.

Fran. What, sir?

Poins. [Within.] Francis!

Prince. Away, you rogue! Dost thou not hear them call?

[Here they both call him; the Drawer stands amazed, not knowing which way to go.

Enter VINTNER.

Vint. What! standest thou still, and hearest such a calling? Look to the guests within.

Exit FRANCIS.] My lord, old Sir John, with half a dozen more, are at the door: shall I let them in?

Prince. Let them alone awhile, and then open the door. [Exit VINTNER.] Poins! 97

Re-enter Poins.

Poins. Anon, anon, sir.

Prince. Sirrah, Falstaff and the rest of the thieves are at the door: shall we be merry? 100

Poins. As merry as crickets, my lord. But hark ye; what cunning match have you made with this jest of the drawer? come, what’s the issue?

Prince. I am now of all humours that have showed themselves humors since the old days of goodman Adam to the pupil age of this present twelve o’clock at midnight. [FRANCIS crosses the stage, with wine.] What’s o’clock, Francis?

Fran. Anon, anon, sir. [Exit.

Prince. That ever this fellow should have fewer words than a parrot, and yet the son of a woman! His industry is up-stairs and downstairs; his eloquence the parcel of a reckoning. I am not yet of Percy’s mind, the Hotspur of the North; he that kills me some six or seven dozen of Scots at a breakfast, washes his hands, and says to his wife, ‘Fie upon this quiet life! I want work.’ ‘O my sweet Harry,’ says she, ‘how many hast thou killed to-day?’ ‘Give my roan horse a drench,’ says he, and answers, ‘Some fourteen,’ an hour after, ‘a trife, a trife.’ I prithee call in Falstaff: I’ll play Percy, and that damned brawn shall play Dame Mortimer his wife. ‘Rivol!’ says the drunken. Call in rbs, call in tallow.

Enter FALSTAFF, GADSHILL, BARDOLPH, PETO, and FRANCIS.

Poins. Welcome, Jack: where hast thou been? 127

Fal. A plague of all cowards, I say, and a vengeance too! marry, and amen! Give me a cup of sack, boy. Ere I lead this life long, I’ll sew nether-stocks and mend them and foot them too. A plague of all cowards! Give me a cup of sack, rogue.—Is there no virtue extant? [He drinks.

Prince. Didst thou never see Titan kiss a dish
Act II, Sc. IV. FIRST PART OF KING HENRY THE FOURTH

of butter—pitiful-hearted Titan, that melted at the sweet tale of the sun? if thou didst then behold that compound.

Fal. You rogue, here's lime in this sack too: there is nothing but roguery to be found in villanous man; yet a coward is worse than a cup of sack with lime in it, a villanous coward! Go thy ways, old Jack; die when thou wilt. If manhood, good manhood, be not forgot upon the face of the earth, then am I a shotten herring. There live not three good men unhanged in England, and one of them is fat and grows old: God help the while! a bad world, I say. I would I were a weaver; I could sing psalms or any thing. A plague of all cowards, I say still.

Prince. How now, wool-sack! what matter you?

Fal. A king's son! If I do not beat thee out of thy kingdom with a dagger of lath, and drive all thy subjects afore thee like a flock of wild geese, I'll never wear hair on my face more. You Prince of Wales!

Prince. Why, you whoreson round man, what's the matter?

Fal. Are you not a coward? answer me to that; and Poins there?

Poins. 'Zounds! ye fat paunch, an ye call me coward, I'll stab thee.

Fal. I call thee coward! I'll see thee damned ere I call thee coward; but I would give a thousand pound I could run as fast as thou canst. You are straight enough in the shoulders; you care not who sees your back: call you that backing of your friends? A plague upon such backing! give me them that will face me. Give me a cup of sack: I am a rogue if I drink today.

Prince. O villain! thy lips are scarce wiped since thou drunkest last.

Fal. All's one for that. [He drinks.] A plague of all cowards, still say I.

Prince. What's the matter?

Fal. What's the matter? there be four of us here have ta'en a thousand pound this day morning.

Prince. Where is it, Jack? where is it?

Fal. Where is it! taken from us it is: a hundred upon poor four of us.

Prince. What, a hundred, man?

Fal. I am a rogue, if I were not at half-sword with a dozen of them two hours together. I have 'scap'd by miracle. I am eight times thrust through the doublet, four through the hose; my buckler out through and through; my sword backed like a hand-saw: ecce signum! I never dealt better since I was a man: all would not do. A plague of all cowards! Let them speak:

if they speak more or less than truth, they are villains and the sons of darkness.

Prince. Speak, sirs; how was it?

Gads. We four set upon some dozen,—

Fal. Sixteen, at least, my lord.

Gads. And bound them.

Peto. No, no, they were not bound.

Fal. You rogue, they were bound, every man of them; or I am a Jew else, an Ebrew Jew.

Gads. As we were sharing, some six or seven fresh men set upon us,—

Fal. And unbound the rest, and then came in the other.

Prince. What, fought ye with them all?

Fal. All! I know not what ye call all; but if I fought not with fifty of them, I am a bunch of radish: if there were not two or three and fifty upon poor old Jack, then am I no two-legged creature.

Prince. Pray God you have not murdered some of them.

Fal. Nay, that's past praying for: I have peppered two of them: two I am sure I have paid, two rogues in buckram suits. I tell thee what, Hal, if I tell thee a lie, spit in my face, call me horse. Thou knowest my old ward; here I lay, and thus I bore my point. Four rogues in buckram let drive at me,—

Prince. What, four? thou saidst but two even now.

Fal. Four, Hal; I told thee four.

Poins. Ay, ay, he said four.

Fal. These four came all a-front, and mainly thrust at me. I made me no more ado but took all their seven points in my target, thus.

Prince. Seven? why, there were but four even now.

Fal. In buckram.

Poins. Ay, four, in buckram suits.

Fal. Seven, by these hils, or I am a villain else.

Prince. Prithee, let him alone; we shall have more anon.

Fal. Dost thou hear me, Hal?

Prince. Ay, and mark thee too, Jack.

Fal. Do so, for it is worth the listening to. These nine in buckram that I told thee of,—

Prince. So, two more already.

Fal. Their points being broken,—

Poins. Down fell their hose.

Fal. Began to give me ground; but I followed me close, came in foot and hand and with a thought seven of the eleven I paid.

Prince. O monstrous! eleven buckram men grown out of two.

Fal. But, as the devil would have it, three
misbegotten knaves in Kendal-green came at my back and let drive at me; for it was so dark, Hal, that thou couldst not see thy hand. 252

Prince. These lies are like the father that begets them; gross as a mountain, open, palpable. Why, thou clay-brained guts, thou knotty-pated fool, thou whoreson, obscene, greasy tallow-ketch,— 257

Fal. What, art thou mad? art thou mad? is not the truth the truth?

Prince. Why, how couldst thou know these men in Kendal-green, when it was so dark thou couldst not see thy hand? come, tell us your reason: what sayest thou to this? 263

Points. Come, your reason, Jack, your reason.

Fal. What, upon compulsion? Zounds! an I were at the strappado, or all the racks in the world, I would not tell you on compulsion. Give you a reason on compulsion! if reasons were as plenty as blackberries I would give no man a reason upon compulsion, I. 270

Prince. I'll be no longer guilty of this sin: this sanguine coward, this bed-presser, this horseback-breaker, this huge hill of flesh;— 273

Fal. 'Sblood, you starveling, you self-skin, you dried neat's-tongue, you bull's pizzle, you stock-fish! Ol' for breath to utter what is like thee; you tailor's yard, you sheath, you bow-case, you vile standing-tuck; — 278

Prince. Well, breathe awhile, and then to it again; and when thou hast tired thyself in base comparisions, hear me speak but this. 281

Points. Mark, Jack.

Prince. We two saw you four set on four and you bound them, and were masters of their wealth. Mark now, how a plain tale shall put you down. Then did we two set on you four, and, with a word, out-faced you from your pride, and have it; yea, and can show it you here in the house. And, Falstaff, you carried your guts away as nimbly, with as quick dexterity, and roasted for mercy, and still ran and roasted, as ever I heard bull-calf. What a slave art thou, to hack thy sword as thou hast done, and then say it was in fight! What trick, what device, what starting-hole canst thou now find out to hide thee from this open and apparent shame? 296

Points. Come, let's hear, Jack; what trick hast thou now?

Fal. By the Lord, I knew ye as well as he that made ye. Why, hear you, my masters: was it for me to kill the heir-apparent? Should I turn upon the true prince? Why, thou knowest I am as valiant as Hercules; but beware instinct; the lion will not touch the true prince. Instinct is a great matter, I was a coward on instinct. I shall think the better of myself and thee during my life; I for a valiant lion, and thou for a true prince. But, by the Lord, lads, I am glad you have the money. Hostess, clap to the doors: watch to-night, pray to-morrow. Gallants, lads, boys, hearts of gold, all the titles of good fellowship come to you! What shall we be merry? shall we have a play extempore?

Prince. Content; and the argument shall be thy running away.

Fal. Ah! no more of that, Hal, an thou lov'st me!

Enter MISTRESS QUICKLY.

Quick. O Jesu! my lord the prince!

Prince. How now, my lady the hostess! what sayest thou to me?

Quick. Marry, my lord, there is a nobleman of the court at door would speak with you: he says he comes from your father.

Prince. Give him as much as will make him a royal man, and send him back again to my mother.

Fal. What manner of man is he?

Quick. An old man.

Fal. What doth gravity out of his bed at midnight? Shall I give him his answer?

Prince. Prithee, do, Jack.

Fal. Faith, and I'll send him packing. [Exit. Prince. Now, ains: by 'r lady, you fought fair; so did you, Peto; so did you, Bardolph: you are lions too, you ran away upon instinct, you will not touch the true prince; no, fie!

Bard. Faith, I ran when I saw others run. Prince. Faith, tell me now in earnest, how came Falstaff's sword so hacked?

Peto. Why he hacked it with his dagger, and said he would swear truth out of England but he would make you believe it was done in fight, and persuaded us to do the like.

Bard. Yea, and to tickle our noses with spear-grass to make them bleed, and then to beslobber our garments with it and swear it was the blood of true men. I did that I did not this seven year before; I blushed to hear his monstrous devices.

Prince. O villain! thou stol'st a cup of sack eighteen years ago, and wert taken with the manner, and ever since thou hast blushed extempore. Thou hast fired and sword on thy side, and yet thou rannest away. What instinct hadst, thou for it?

Bard. [Pointing to his face.] My lord, do you see these meteors? do you behold these exhalations?

Prince. I do.

Bard. What think you they portend?

Prince. Hot livers and cold purses. 360

Bard. Choler, my lord, if rightly taken.

Prince. No, if rightly taken, halter.—
Here comes lean Jack, here comes bare-bone.—
How now, my sweet creature of bombast! How long is't ago, Jack, since thou sawest thine own knee?

Fal. My own knee! when I was about thy years, Hal, I was not an eagle's talon in the waist; I could have crept into any alderman's thumb-ring. A plague of sighing and grief! it blows a man up like a bladder. There's villainous news abroad: here was Sir John Bracy from your father: you must to the court in the morning. That same mad fellow of the north, Percy, and he of Wales, that gave Amaimon the bastinado and made Lucifer cuckold, and swore the devil his true liegeman upon the cross of a Welsh hook—what a plague call you him?

Poins. Owen Glendower.

Fal. Owen, Owen, the same; and his son-in-law Mortimer and old Northumberland; and that sprightly Scot of Scots, Douglas, that runs o' horseback up a hill perpendicular.

Prince. He that rides at high speed and with his pistol kills a sparrow flying.

Fal. You have hit it.

Prince. So did he never the sparrow.

Fal. Well, that rascal hath good mettle in him; he will not run.

Prince. Why, what a rascal art thou then to praise him so for running!

Fal. O' horseback, ye cuckoo! but, afoot he will not budge a foot.

Prince. Yes, Jack, upon instinct.

Fal. I grant ye, upon instinct. Well, he is there too, and one Mordake, and a thousand blue-caps more. Worcester is stolen away tonight; thy father's beard is turned white with the news: you may buy land now as cheap as stinking mackerel.

Prince. Why then, it is like, if there come a hot June and this civil buffeting hold, we shall buy maidenheads as they buy bob-nails, by the hundreds.

Fal. By the mass, lad, thou sayest true; it is like we shall have good trading that way. But tell me, Hal, art thou not horribly afraid? thou being heir apparent, could the world pick thee out three such enemies again as that fiend Douglas, that spirit Percy, and that devil Glendower? Art thou not horribly afraid? doth not thy blood thrill at it?

Prince. Not a whit, i' faith; I lack some of thy instinct.

Fal. Well, thou wilt be horribly chid tomorrow when thou comest to thy father; if thou love me, practise an answer.
some fifty, or by 'r lady, inclining to threescore; and now I remember me, his name is Falstaff: if that man should be lewdly given, he deceiveth me; for, Harry, I see virtue in his looks. If then the tree may be known by the fruit, as the fruit by the tree, then, peremptorily I speak it, there is virtue in that Falstaff: him keep with, the rest banish. And tell me now, thou naughty varlet, tell me, where hast thou been this month?

Prince. Dost thou speak like a king? Do thou stand for me, and I'll play my father. 483

Fal. Depose me? if thou dost it half so gravely, so majestically, both in word and matter, hang me up by the heels for a rabbit-sucker or a poultar's hare.

Prince. Well, here I am set. 488

Fal. And here I stand. Judge, my masters.

Prince. Now, Harry! whence come you?

Fal. My noble lord, from Eastcheap.

Prince. The complaints I bear of thee are grievous. 493

Fal. 'Sblood, my lord, they are false: nay, I'll tickle ye for a young prince, I' faith.

Prince. Swarest thou, ungracious boy? henceforth ne'er look on me. Thou art violently carried away from grace: there is a devil haunts thee in the likeness of a fat old man; a dun of man is thy companion. Why dost thou converse with that trunk of humours, that bolting-hutch of beastliness, that swollen parcel of dropsey, that huge bombard of sack, that stuffed cloak-bag of guts, that roasted Manningtree ox with the pudding in his belly, that reverend vice, that grey iniquity, that father ruffian, that vanity in years? Wherein is he good but to taste sack and drink it? wherein neat and cleanly but to carve a capon and eat it? wherein cunning but in craft? wherein crafty but in villany? wherein villainous but in all things? wherein worthy but in nothing? 512

Fal. I would your Grace would take me with you: whom means your Grace?

Prince. That villainous abominable misleader of youth, Falstaff, that old white-bearded Satan.

Fal. My lord, the man I know. 517

Prince. I know thou dost.

Fal. But to say I know more harm in him than in myself were to say more than I know. That he is old, the more the pity, his white hairs do witness it; but that he is, saving your reverence, a whoremaster, that I utterly deny. If sack and sugar be a fault, God help the wicked! If to be old and marry be a sin, then many an old host that I know is dammed: if to be fat be to be hated, then Pharaoh's lean kine are to be loved. No, my good lord; banish Peto, banish Bardolph, banish Poins; but for sweet Jack Falstaff, kind Jack Falstaff, true Jack Falstaff, valiant Jack Falstaff, and therefore more valiant, being, as he is, old Jack Falstaff, banish not him thy Harry's company: banish not him thy Harry's company: banish plump Jack, and banish all the world. 535

Prince. I do, I will. 538

[Execut Mistress Quickly, Francis, and Bardolph.

Re-enter Bardolph, running.

Bard. Ol my lord, my lord, the sheriff with a most monstrous watch is at the door.

Fal. Out, ye rogue! Play out the play: I have much to say in the behalf of that Falstaff.

Re-enter Mistress Quickly.

Quick. O Jesu! my lord, my lord! 541

Prince. Heigh, heigh! the devil rides upon a fiddle-stick: what's the matter?

Quick. The sheriff and all the watch are at the door: they are come to search the house. Shall I let them in? 546

Fal. Dost thou hear, Hal? never call a true piece of gold a counterfeit: thou art essentially mad without seeming so. 549

Prince. And thou a natural coward without instinct.

Fal. I deny your major. If you will deny the sheriff, so; if not, let him enter: if I become not a cart as well as another man, a plague on my bringing up! I hope I shall as soon be strangled with a halter as another. 556

Prince. Go, hide thee behind the arras: the rest walk up above. Now, my masters, for a true face and good conscience.

Fal. Both which I have had; but their date is out, and therefore I'll hide me. 561

[Execut all but the Prince and Peto.

Prince. Call in the sheriff.

Enter Sheriff and Carrier.

Now, master sheriff, what's your will with me?

Sher. First, pardon me, my lord. A hue and cry 564

Hath follow'd certain men unto this house.

Prince. What men?

Sher. One of them is well known, my gracious lord,

A gross fat man.

Car. As fat as butter. 568

Prince. The man, I do assure you, is not here, For I myself at this time have employ'd him. And, sheriff, I will engage my word to thee, That I will, by to-morrow dinner-time, 572

Send him to answer thee, or any man,

For anything he shall be charg'd withal;

485
Act II, Sc. IV. FIRST PART OF KING HENRY THE FOURTH

And so let me entreat you leave the house.
Sher. I will, my lord. There are two gentle-
men
Have in this robbery lost three hundred marks.
Prince. It may be so: if he have robb'd these
men,
He shall be answerable; and so farewell.
Sher. Good night, my noble lord.
Prince. I think it is good morrow, is it not?
Sher. Indeed, my lord, I think it be two
o'clock. [Exeunt Sheriff and Carrier.
Prince. This oily rascal is known as well as
Paul's.
Go, call him forth.
Peto. Falstaff! fast asleep behind the arras,
and snorting like a horse.
Prince. Hark, how hard he fetches breath.
Search his pockets. [He searcheth his pockets,
and findeth certain papers.] What hast thou
found?
Peto. Nothing but papers, my lord.
Prince. Let's see what they be: read them.
Peto. Item, A capon 2s. 2d.
Item, Sauce 4d.
Item, Sack, two gallons 5s. 6d.
Item, Anchovies and sack after
supper 2s. 6d.
Item, Bread 6d.

Prince. O monstrous! but one half-penny-
worth of bread to this intolerable deal of sack!
What there is else, keep close; we'll read it at
more advantage. There let him sleep till day.
I'll to the court in the morning. We must all to
the wars, and thy place shall be honourable. I'll
procure this fat rogue a charge of foot; and,
I know, his death will be a march of twelve-
score. The money shall be paid back again
with advantage. Be with me betimes in the
morning; and so good morrow, Peto.
Peto. Good morrow, good my lord. [Exeunt.

ACT III.

SCENE I.— Bangor. A Room in the
Archdeacon's House.

Enter Hothspur, Worcester, Mortimer, and
Glendower.

Mort. These promises are fair, the parties
sure,
And our induction full of prosperous hope.
Hot. Lord Mortimer, and cousin Glendower,
Will you sit down?
And uncle Worcester: a plague upon it!
I have forgot the map.
Glend. No, here it is.
Sit, cousin Percy; sit, good cousin Hothspur;
For by that name as oft as Lancaster

Doth speak of you, his cheek looks pale and with
A rising sigh he wishes you in heaven.
Hot. And you in hell, as often as he hears
Owen Glendower spoke of.
Glend. I cannot blame him: at my nativity
The front of heaven was full of fiery shapes,
Of burning cresses; and at my birth
The frame and huge foundation of the earth
Shak'd like a coward.
Hot. Why, so it would have done at the same
season, if your mother's cat had but kinned,
though yourself had never been born.
Glend. I say the earth did shake when I was
born.
Hot. And I say the earth was not of my
mind,
If you suppose as fearing you it shook.
Glend. The heavens were all on fire, the earth
did tremble.
Hot. O! then the earth shook to see the
heavens on fire,
And not in fear of your nativity.
Diseased nature oftentimes breaks forth
In strange eruptions; oft the teeming earth
Is with a kind of colic pinch'd and vex'd
By the imprisoning of unruly wind
Within her womb; which, for enlargement
striving,
Shakes the old beldam earth, and topples down
Steepleys and moss-grown towers. At your
birth
Our grandam earth, having this distemperature,
In passion shook.
Glend. Cousin, of many men
I do not bear these crossings. Give me leave
to tell you once again that at my birth
The front of heaven was full of fiery shapes,
The goats ran from the mountains, and the
herds
Were strangely clamorous to the frighted fields.
These signs have mark'd me extraordinary;
And all the courses of my life do show
I am not in the roll of common men.
Where is he living, chipp'd in with the sea
That chides the banks of England, Scotland,
Wales,
Which calls me pupil, or hath read to me?
And bring him out that is but woman's son
Can trace me in the tedious ways of art
And hold me pace in deep experiments.
Hot. I think there's no man speaks better
Welsh.
I'll to dinner.
Mort. Peace, cousin Percy! you will make
him mad.
Glend. I can call spirits from the vasty deep.
Hot. Why, so can I, or so can any man;
FIRST PART OF KING HENRY THE FOURTH  Act III, Sc.

But will they come when you do call for them?

Glend. Why, I can teach thee, cousin, to command

The devil.

Hot. And I can teach thee, coz, to shame the devil
By telling truth: tell truth and shame the devil.
If thou have power to raise him, bring him hither,

And I'll be sworn I have power to shame him hence.

O! while you live, tell truth and shame the devil!

Mort. Come, come;

No more of this unprofitable chat.

Glend. Three times hath Henry Bolingbroke made head
Against my power; thrice from the banks of Wye
And sandy-bottom'd Severn have I sent him
Bootless home and weather-beaten back.

Hot. Home without boots, and in foul weather too!

How 'scapest thou agony, in the devil's name?

Glend. Come, here's the map: shall we divide our right

According to our threefold order ta'en?

Mort. The archdeacon hath divided it
Into three limits very equally.
England, from Trent and Severn hitherto,
By south and east, is to my part assign'd:
All westward, Wales beyond the Severn shore,
And all the fertile land within that bound,
To Owen Glendower: and, dear coz, to you
The remnant northward, lying off from Trent.
And our indentures tripartite are drawn,
Which being sealed interchangeably,
A business that this night may execute,
To-morrow, cousin Percy, you and I
And my good Lord of Worcester will set forth
To meet your father and the Scottish power,
As is appointed, at Shrewsbury.
My father Glendower is not ready yet,
Nor shall we need his help these fourteen days.

[To GLENDOwer.] Within that space you may have drawn together
Your tenants, friends, and neighbouring gentlemen.

Glend. A shorter time shall send me to you,
vows;
And in my conduct shall your ladies come,
From whom you now must steal and take no leave;
For there will be a world of water shed
Upon the parting of your wives and you.

Hot. Methinks my moiety, north from Burton here,
In quantity equals not one of yours:
See how this river comes me cranking in,

And cute me from the best of all my land
A huge half-moon, a monstrous cantle out.
I'll have the current in this place damm'd up,
And here the smug and silver Trent shall run
In a new channel, fair and evenly:
It shall not wind with such a deep indent,
To rob me of so rich a bottom here.

Glend. Not wind! it shall, it must; you see it doth.

Mort. Yea, but
Mark how he bears his course, and runs me up
With like advantage on the other side;
Gelding the opposed continent as much,
As on the other side it takes from you.

Wor. Yea, but a little charge will trench him here,
And on this north side win this cape of land;
And then he runs straight and even.

Hot. I'll have it so; a little charge will do it.

Glend. I will not have it alter'd.

Hot. Will not you?

Glend. No, nor you shall not.

Hot. Who shall say me nay?

Glend. Why, that will I.

Hot. Let me not understand you then:
Speak it in Welsh.

Glend. I can speak English, lord, as well as you,
For I was train'd up in the English court;
Where, being but young, I framed to the harp
Many an English ditty lovely well,
And gave the tongue an helpful ornament;
A virtue that was never seen in you.

Hot. Marry, and I'm glad of it with all my heart.
I had rather be a kitten, and cry mew
Than one of these same metre-ballad-mongers;
I had rather hear a brazen canstieck turn'd,
Or a dry wheel grate on the axle-tree;
And that would set my teeth nothing on edge,
Nothing so much as mincing poetry:
'Tis like the fore'd gait of a shuffling nag.

Glend. Come, you shall have Trent turn'd.

Hot. I do not care: I'll give three so much land
To any well-deserving friend;
But in the way of bargain, mark you me,
I'll cavil on the ninth part of a hair.
Are the indentures drawn? shall we be gone?

Glend. The moon shines fair, you may away by night:
I'll haste the writer and withal
Break with your wives of your departure hence:
I am afraid my daughter will run mad,
So much she doteth on her Mortimer. [Exit.

Mort. Fie, cousin Percy! how you cross my father!
Hot. I cannot choose: sometimes he angers me.
With telling me of the moldwarp and the ant,
Of the dreamer Merlin and his prophecies,
And of a dragon, and a finless fish,
A clip-wing'd griffin, and a moultin raven,
A couching lion, and a ramping cat,
And such a deal of skimbleshake stuff
As puts me from my faith. I'll tell thee what;
He held me last night at least nine hours
In reckoning up the several devils' names.
That were his lackeys: I cried 'hum!' and 'well, go to.'
But mark'd him not a word. O! he's as tedious
As a tired horse, a railing wife;
Worse than a smoky house. I had rather live
With cheese and garlic in a windmill, far,
Than feed on cates and have him talk to me
In any summer-house in Christendom.
Mort. In faith, he is a worthy gentleman,
Exceedingly well read, and profited
In strange concealments, valiant as a lion
And wondrous affable, and as bountiful
As mines of India. Shall I tell you, cousin?
He holds your temper in a high respect,
And curbs himself even of his natural scope
When you do cross his humour; faith, he does.
I warrant you, that man is not alive
Might so have tempted him as you have done,
Without the taste of danger and reproof:
But do not use it off, let me entreat you.
Wor. In faith, my lord, you are too willful-blame;
And since your coming hither have done enough
To put him quite beside his patience.
You must needs learn, lord, to amend this fault:
Though sometimes it show greatness, courage,
And that's the dearest grace it renders you,—
Yet oftentimes it doth present harsh rage,
Defect of manners, want of government,
Pride, haughtiness, opinion, and disdain:
The least of which haunting a nobleman
Loseth men's hearts and leaves behind a stain
Upon the beauty of all parts besides,
Beguiling them of commendation.
Hot. Well, I am school'd; good manners be your speed!
Here come our wives, and let us take our leave.
Re-enter GLENDOVER, with the Ladies.
Mort. This is the deadly spite that angers me,
My wife can speak no English, I no Welsh.
Glen. My daughter weeps; she will not part with you:
She'll be a soldier too: she'll to the wars.
Mort. Good father, tell her that she and my aunt Percy,
Shall follow in your conduct speedily.
[GLENDOWER speaks to LADY MORTIMER
in Welsh, and she answers him in the same.
Glen. She's desperate here; a peevish self-will'd harlotry, one that no persuasion can do good upon. [She speaks to MORTIMER in Welsh.
Mort. I understand thy looks: that pretty Welsh
Which thou pour'st down from these swelling heavens
I am too perfect in; and, but for shame,
In such a parley would I answer thee.
[She speaks again.
I understand thy kisses and thou mine,
And that's a feeling disputation:
But I will never be a truant, love,
Till I have learnt thy language; for thy tongue
Makes Welsh as sweet as ditties highly penn'd,
Sung by a fair queen in a summer's bower,
With ravishing division, to her lute.
Glen. Nay, if you melt, then will she run mad.
[She speaks again.
Mort. O! I am ignorance itself in this.
Glen. She bids you
Upon the wanton rushes lay you down
And rest your gentle head upon her lap,
And she will sing the song that pleaseth you,
And on your eye-lids crown the god of sleep,
Charming your blood with pleasing heaviness,
Making such difference 'twixt wake and sleep
As is the difference between day and night.
The hour before the heavenly-harness'd team
Begins his golden progress in the east.
Mort. With all my heart I'll sit and hear her sing:
By that time will our book, I think, be drawn.
Glen. Do so;
And those musicians that shall play to you
Hang in the air a thousand leagues from hence,
And straight they shall be here: sit, and attend.
Hot. Come, Kate, thou art perfect in lying down: come, quick, quick, that I may lay my head in thy lap.
Lady P. Go, ye giddy goose.
[GLENDOWER speaks some Welsh words,
and music is heard.
Hot. Now I perceive the devil understands Welsh;
And 'tis no marvel he is so humorous.
By'r lady, he's a good musician.
Lady P. Then should you be nothing but musical for you are altogether governed by
FIRST PART OF KING HENRY THE FOURTH Act III, Sc. II.

humours. Lie still, ye thief, and hear the lady sing in Welsh.

Hot. I had rather hear Lady, my brach, howl in Irish. 240
Lady P. Wouldst thou have thy head broken?
Hot. No.
Lady P. Then be still.
Hot. Neither; 'tis a woman's fault. 244
Lady P. Now, God help thee!
Hot. To the Welsh lady's bed.
Lady P. What's that?
Hot. Peace! she sings. 248

[A Welsh song sung by LADY MORTIMER.]
Hot. Come, Kate, I'll have your song too.
Lady P. Not mine, in good sooth.
Hot. Not yours, 'in good sooth!' Heart!
you swear like a comfit-maker's wife! Not you, 'in good sooth,' and, 'as true as I live,' and, 'as God shall mend me;' and, 'as sure as day,' and giv'st such sarcasm surety for thy oaths, As if thou never walk'dst further than Finsbury. 256

Swear me, Kate, like a lady as thou art, A good mouth-filling oath; and leave 'in sooth,' And such protest of pepper-gingerbread, To velvet-guards and Sunday-citizens. 260
Come, sing.
Lady P. I will not sing.
Hot. 'Tis the next way to turn tailor or be red-breast teacher. An the indentures be drawn, I'll away within these two hours; and so, come in when ye will. [Exit.
Glend. Come, come, Lord Mortimer; you are as slow
As hot Lord Percy is on fire to go. 268
By this our book is drawn; we will but seal,
And then to horse immediately.
Mort. With all my heart. [Exeunt.

SCENE II.—London. A Room in the Palace.

Enter KING HENRY, the PRINCE, and Lords.
K. Hen. Lords, give us leave; the Prince of Wales and I Must have some private conference: but be near at hand,
For we shall presently have need of you.

[Exeunt Lords.
I know not whether God will have it so, 4
For some displeasing service I have done,
That, in his secret doom, out of my blood
He'll breed revengement and a scourge for me;
But thou dost in thy passages of life
Make me believe that thou art only mark'd
For the hot vengeance and the rod of heaven
To punish my mistreadings. Tell me else,
Could such inordinate and low desires, 12

Such poor, such bare, such lewd, such mean attempts,
Such barren pleasures, rude society,
As thou art match'd withal and grafted to,
Accompany the greatness of thy blood
And hold their level with thy princely heart?
Prince. So please your majesty, I would I could
Quit all offences with as clear excuse
As well as I am doubtless I can purge
Myself of many I am charg'd withal;
Yet such extenuation let me beg,
As, in reproof of many tales devis'd,
Which oft the ear of greatness needs must hear,
By smiling pick-thanks and base newsmongers,
I may, for some things true, wherein my youth
Hath faulty wander'd and irregular,
Find pardon on my true submission. 28

K. Hen. God pardon thee! yet let me wonder,
Harry,
At thy affections, which do hold a wing
Quite from the flight of all thy ancestors.
Thy place in council thou hast rudely lost,
Which by thy younger brother is supplied,
And art almost an alien to the hearts
Of all the court and princes of my blood.
The hope and expectation of thy time
Is ruin'd, and the soul of every man
Prophetically do forethink thy fall.
Had I so lavish of my presence been,
So common-hackney'd in the eyes of men,
So stale and cheap to vulgar company,
Opinion, that did help me to the crown,
Had still kept loyal to possession
And left me in reputeless banishment,
A fellow of no mark nor likelihood.
By being seldom seen, I could not stir,
But like a comet I was wonder'd at;
That men would tell their children, 'This is he,'
Others would say, 'Where? which is Boling-broke?'

And then I stole all courtesy from heaven,
And dress'd myself in such humility
That I did pluck allegiance from men's hearts,
Loud shouts and salutations from their mouths,
Even in the presence of the crowned king.
Thus did I keep my person fresh and new;
My presence, like a robe pontifical, 56
Ne'er seen but wonder'd at: and so my state,
Seldom but sumptuous, showed like a feast,
And won by raresness such solemnity.
The skipping king, he ambled up and down
With shallow jesters and rash bavin wits,
Soon kindled and soon burnt; carded his state,
Mingled his royalty with capping fools,
Had his great name profaned with their scorns,
And gave his countenance, against his name, 65

489
To laugh at gibing boys and stand the push
Of every beardless vain comparative;
Grew a companion to the common streets, 68
Eneoff'd himself to popularity;
That, being daily swallow'd by men's eyes,
They surfeited with honey and began
To loathe the taste of sweetness, whereof a little
More than a little is by much too much. 73
So, when he had occasion to be seen,
He was but as the cuckoo is in June,
Heard, not regarded; seen, but with such eyes
As, sick and blunted with community, 77
Afford no extraordinary gaze,
Such as is bent on sun-like majesty
When it shines seldom in admiring eyes; 80
But rather drows'd and hung their eyelids down,
Slept in his face, and render'd such aspect
As cloudy men use to their adversaries,
Being with his presence glutted, gorg'd, and full.
And in that very line, Harry, stand'st thou; 85
For thou hast lost thy princely privilege
With vile participation: not an eye
But is aweary of thy common sight,
Save mine, which hath desir'd to see thee more;
Which now doth that I would not have it do,
Make blind itself with foolish tenderness.

Prince. I shall hereafter, my thrice gracious lord, 92

K. Hen. For all the world,
As thou art to this hour was Richard then
When I from France set foot at Ravenspurgh;
And even as I was then is Percy now. 96
Now, by my sceptre and my soul to boot,
He hath more worthy interest to the state
Than thou the shadow of succession:
For of no right, nor colour like to right, 100
He doth fill fields with harness in the realm,
Turns head against the lion's armed jaws,
And, being no more in debt to years than thou,
Leads ancient lords and reverend bishops on 104
To bloody battles and to bruising arms.
What never-dying honour hath he got
Against renowned Douglas! whose high deeds,
Whose hot incursions and great name in arms,
Holds from all soldiers chief majority, 109
And military title capital,
Through all the kingdoms that acknowledge Christ.
Thrice hath this Hotspur, Mars in swathing clothes, 112
This infant warrior, in his enterprises
Discomfited great Douglas; ta'en him once,
Enlarged him and made a friend of him,
To fill the mouth of deep defiance up 116
And shake the peace and safety of our throne.

And what say you to this? Percy, Northumberland,
The Archbishop's Grace of York, Douglas,
Mortimer,
Capitulate against us and are up. 120
But wherfore do I tell these news to thee?
Why, Harry, do I tell thee of my foes,
Which art my near'st and dearest enemy?
Thou that art like enough, through vaissal fear,
Base inclination, and the start of spleen, 125
To fight against me under Percy's pay,
To dog his heels, and curtay at his frowns,
To show how much thou art degenerate. 128

Prince. Do not think so; you shall not find it so:
And God forgive them, that so much havesway'd
Your majesty's good thoughts away from me!
I will redeem all this on Percy's head, 132
And in the closing of some glorious day
Be bold to tell you that I am your son;
When I will wear a garment all of blood
And stain my favours in a bloody mask, 136
Which, wash'd away, shall scour my shame with it:
And that shall be the day, whene'er it lights,
That this same child of honour and renown,
This gallant Hotspur, this all-praised knight, 140
And your unthought-of Harry chance to meet.
For every honour sitting on his helm,
Would they were multitudes, and on my head
My shames redoubled—for the time will come
That I shall make this northern youth exchange
His glorious deeds for my indignities.
Percy is but my factor, good my lord,
To engross up glorious deeds on my behalf; 148
And I will call him to so strict account
That he shall render every glory up,
Yea, even the slightest worship of his time,
Or I will tear the reckoning from his heart. 152
This, in the name of God, I promise here:
The which, if he be pleas'd I shall perform,
I do beseech your majesty may salve
The long-grown wounds of my intemperance: 156
If not, the end of life cancels all bands,
And I will die a hundred thousand deaths
Ere break the smallest parcel of this vow.

K. Hen. A hundred thousand rebels die in this: 160
Thou shalt have charge and sovereign trust herein.

Enter Sir Walter Blunt.

How now, good Blunt! thy looks are full of speed.

Blunt. So hath the business that I come to speak of.

Lord Mortimer of Scotland hath sent word 164
That Douglas and the English rebels met,  
The eleventh of this month at Shrewsbury,  
A mighty and a fearful head they are,—  
If promises be kept on every hand,—  
As ever offer’d foul play in a state.  

K. Hen. The Earl of Westmoreland set forth  
to-day,  
With him my son, Lord John of Lancaster;  
For this advertisement is five days old.  

On Wednesday next, Harry, you shall set forward;  
On Thursday we ourselves will march: our meeting  
Is Bridgenorth; and Harry, you shall march  
Through Gloucestershire; by which account,  
Our business valued, seven days hence  
Our general forces at Bridgenorth shall meet.  
Our hands are full of business: let’s away;  
Advantage feeds him fat while men delay.  

[Exeunt.

SCENE III.—Eastcheap. A Room in the Boar’s Head Tavern.

Fal. Bardolph, am I not fallen away vilely  
since this last action? do I not bate? do I not  
dwindle? Why, my skin hangs about me like an  
old lady’s loose gown; I am withered like an old  
apple-john. Well, I’ll repent, and that suddenly,  
while I am in some liking; I shall be out of heart  
shortly, and then I shall have no strength to  
repent. An I have not forgotten what the inside  
of a church is made of, I am a peppercorn, a  
brewer’s horse: the inside of a church! Company,  
villainous company, hath been the spoil of me.  

Bard. Sir John, you are so fretful, you cannot  
live long.  

Fal. Why, there is it: come, sing me a bawdy  
song; make me merry. I was as virtuously given  
as a gentleman need to be; virtuous enough:  
sware little; dined not above seven times a week;  
went to a bawdy-house not above once in a  
quarter—of an hour; paid money that I  
borrowed three or four times; lived well and in good  
compass; and now I live out of all order, out of  
all compass.  

Bard. Why, you are so fat, Sir John, that  
you must needs be out of all compass, out of all  
reasonable compass, Sir John.  

Fal. Do thou amend thy face, and I’ll amend my  
life: thou art our admiral, thou bearest the  
lamborn in the poop, but 'tis in the nose of thee:  
thou art the Knight of the Burning Lamp.  

Bard. Why, Sir John, my face does you no  
harm.

Fal. No, I’ll be sworn; I make as good use  
of it as many a man doth of a Death’s head, or  
a memento mori: I never see thy face but I think  
upon hell-fire and Dives that lived in purple;  
for there he is in his robes, burning, burning. If  
thou wert any way given to virtue, I would swear  
by thy face; my oath should be, 'By this fire,  
that’s God’s angel,' but thou art altogether  
given over, and wilt indeed, but for the light in  
thy face, the son of utter darkness. When thou  
rannest up Gadshill in the night to catch my  
horse, if I did not think thou hadst been an  
ignis fatuus or a ball of wildfire, there’s no  
purchase in money. O thou art a perpetual  
triumph, an everlasting bonfire-light. Thou hast  
saved me a thousand marks in links and torches,  
walking with thee in the night betwixt tavern  
and tavern: but the sack that thou hast drunk  
me would have bought me lights as good cheap  
at the dearest chandler’s in Europe. I have  
maintained that salamander of yours with fire  
any time this two-and-thirty years; God reward  
me for it!  

Bard. 'Sblood, I would my face were in your  
belly.  

Fal. God-a-mercy! so should I be sure to be  
heart-burned.

Enter MISTRESS QUICKLY.

How now, Dame Partlet! have you inquired yet who picked my pocket?  

Quick. Why, Sir John, what do you think,  
Sir John? Do you think I keep thieves in my  
house? I have searched, I have inquired, so has  
my husband, man by man, boy by boy, servant  
by servant: the title of a hair was never lost in  
my house before.  

Fal. You lie, hostess: Bardolph was shaved  
and lost many a hair; and I’ll be sworn my  
pocket was picked. Go to, you are a woman; go.  

Quick. Who, I? No; I defy thee: God’s light!  
I was never called so in my own house before.  

Fal. Go to, I know you well enough.  

Quick. No, Sir John; you do not know me,  
Sir John: I know you, Sir John: you owe me  
money, Sir John, and now you pick a quarrel to  
beguile me of it: I bought you a dozen of shirins  
to your back.  

Fal. Dowlas, filthy dowlas: I have given  
them away to bakers’ wives, and they have  
made bolters of them.  

Quick. Now, as I am true woman, holland of  
eight shillings an all. You owe money here  
besides, Sir John, for your diet and by-drinkings,  
and money lent you, four-and-twenty pound.  

Fal. He had his part of it; let him pay.  

Quick. He! alas! he is poor; he hath nothing.
Act III, Sc. III. FIRST PART OF KING HENRY THE FOURTH

Fal. How! poor? look upon his face; what call you rich? let them coin his nose, let them coin his cheeks. I'll not pay a denier. What! will you make a younker of me? shall I not take mine ease in mine inn but I shall have my pocket picked? I have lost a seal-ring of my grandfather's worth forty mark.

Quick. O Jesu! I have heard the prince tell him, I know not how oft, that that ring was copper.

Fal. How! the prince is a Jack, a sneak-cup; 'blood! an he were here, I would cudgel him like a dog, if he would say so.

Enter the Prince and Poins marching. Falstaff meets them, playing on his truncheon like a fife.

Fal. How now, lad! is the wind in that door, i' faith? must we all march?

Bard. Yea, two and two, Newgate fashion.

Quick. My lord, I pray you, hear me.

Prince. What sayest thou, Mistress Quickly? How does thy husband? I love him well, he is an honest man.

Quick. Good my lord, hear me.

Fal. Prithlee, let her alone, and list to me.

Prince. What sayest thou, Jack?

Fal. The other night I fell asleep here behind the arras and had my pocket picked: this house is turned bawdy-house; they pick pockets.

Prince. What didst thou lose, Jack?

Fal. Wilt thou believe me, Hal? three or four bonds of forty pound a-piece, and a seal-ring of my grandfather's.

Prince. A trifle; some eight-penny matter.

Quick. So I told him, my lord; and I said I heard your grace say so: and, my lord, he speaks most vilely of you, like a fowl-mouthed man as he is, and said he would cudgel you.

Prince. What! he did not?

Quick. There's neither faith, truth, nor womanhood in me else.

Fal. There's no more faith in thee than in a stewed prune; nor no more truth in thee than in a drawn fox; and for womanhood, Maid Marian may be the deputy's wife of the ward to thee. Go, you thing, go.

Quick. Say, what thing? what thing?

Fal. What thing? why, a thing to thank God on.

Quick. I am no thing to thank God on, I would thou shouldst know it; I am an honest man's wife; and, setting thy knighthood aside, thou art a knave to call me so.

Fal. Setting thy womanhood aside, thou art a beast to say otherwise.

Quick. Say, what beast, thou knave thou?
Prince. O! my sweet beef, I must still be good
angel to thee: the money is paid back again.
Fal. O! I do not like that paying back; 'tis
a double labour.
Prince. I am good friends with my father
and may do anything.
Fal. Rob me the exchequer the first thing
thou dost, and do it with unwashed hands too.
Bard. Do, my lord.
Prince. I have procured thee, Jack, a charge
of foot.
Fal. I would it had been of horse. Where
shall I find one that can steal well? O! for a
fine thief, of the age of two and twenty, or there-
abouts; I am heinously unprovided. Well, God
be thanked for these rebels; they offend none
but the virtuous: I laud them, I praise them.
Prince. Bardolph!
Bard. My lord?
Prince. Go bear this letter to Lord John of
Lancaster,
To my brother John; this to my Lord of West-
moreland.
Go, Poins, to horse, to horse! for thou and I
Have thirty miles to ride ere dinner-time.
Jack, meet me to-morrow in the Temple-hall
At two o'clock in the afternoon:
There shalt thou know thy charge, and there
receive
Money and order for their furniture.
The land is burning; Percy stands on high;
And either we or they must lower lie.
[Exeunt the Prince, Poins, and BARDOLPH.
Fal. Rare words! brave world! Hostess, my
breakfast; come!
O! I could wish this tavern were my drum.

[Exil.

ACT IV.

SCENE I.—The Rebel Camp near Shrewsbury.
Enter HOTSPUR, WORCESTER, and DOUGLAS.
Hot. Well said, my noble Scot: if speaking
truth
In this fine age were not thought flattery,
Such attribution should the Douglas have,
As not a soldier of this season's stamp
Should go so general current through the world.
By God, I cannot flatter; do defy
The tongues of soothers; but a braver place
In my heart's love hath no man than yourself.
Nay, trust me to my word; approve me, lord.
Doug. Thou art the king of honour:
No man so potent breathes upon the ground
But I will heard him.
Hot. Do so, and 'tis well.
Wor. But yet, I would your father had been here. 60

The quality and hair of our attempt
Brooks no division. It will be thought
By some, that know not why he is away,
That wisdom, loyalty, and mere dislike
Of our proceedings, kept the earl from hence.
And think how such an apprehension
May turn the tide of fearful faction
And breed a kind of question in our cause;
For well you know we of the offering side
Must keep aloof from strict arbitrement,
And stop all sight-holes, every loop from whence
The eye of reason may pry in upon us:
This absence of your father’s draws a curtain,
That shows the ignorant a kind of fear
Before not dreamt of.

Hol. You strain too far.
I rather of his absence make this use:
It lends a lustre and more great opinion,
A larger dare to our great enterprise,
Than if the earl were here; for men must think,
If we without his help, can make a head
To push against the kingdom, with his help
We shall o’erturn it topsy-turvy down.
Yet all goes well, yet all our joints are whole.

Doug. As heart can think: there is not such a word
Spoke of in Scotland as this term of fear.

Enter SIR RICHARD VERNON.

Hol. My cousin Vernon! welcome, by my soul.
Ver. Pray God my news be worth a welcome, lord.
The Earl of Westmoreland, seven thousand strong,
Is marching hitherwards; with him Prince John.
Hol. No harm: what more?
Ver. And further, I have learn’d,
The king himself in person is set forth,
Or hitherwards intended speedily,
With strong and mighty preparation.
Hol. He shall be welcome too. Where is his son,
The nimble-footed madcap Prince of Wales,
And his comrades, that daff’d the world aside,
And bid it pass?
Ver. All furnish’d, all in arms,
All plum’d like estridges that wing the wind,
Baited like eagles having lately bath’d,
Glittering in golden coats, like images,
As full of spirit as the month of May,
And gorgeous as the sun at midsummer,
Wanton as youthful goats, wild as young bulls.
I saw young Harry, with his beaver on,
His cushions on his thighs, gallantly arm’d,
Rise from the ground like feather’d Mercury,
And vaulted with such ease into his seat.

As if an angel dropp’d down from the clouds,
To turn and wind a fiery Pegasus
And witch the world with noble horsemanship.

Hol. No more, no more: worse than the sun
in March
This praise doth nourish agues. Let them come;
They come like sacrifices in their trim,
And to the fire-eyed maid of smoky war
All hot and bleeding will we offer them:
The mailed Mars shall on his altar sit
Up to the ears in blood. I am on fire
To hear this rich reprisal is so nigh
And yet not ours. Come, let me taste my horse,
Who is to bear me like a thunderbolt
Against the bosom of the Prince of Wales:
Harry to Harry shall, hot horse to horse,
Meet and ne’er part till one drop down a corse.
Of that Glendower were come.

Ver. There is more news: I learn’d in Worcester, as I rode along,
He cannot draw his power these fourteen days.

Doug. That’s the worst tidings that I hear of yet.

Wor. Ay, by my faith, that bears a frosty sound.

Hol. What may the king’s whole battle reach unto?

Ver. To thirty thousand.

Hol. Forty let it be:
My father and Glendower being both away,
The powers of us may serve so great a day.
Come, let us take a muster speedily:
Doomsday is near; die all, die merrily.

Doug. Talk not of dying: I am out of fear
Of death or death’s hand for this one half year.

[Exeunt.

SCENE II.—A public Road near Coventry.

Enter FALSTAFF and BARDOLPH.

Fal. Bardolph, get thee before to Coventry;
fill me a bottle of sack: our soldiers shall march through: we’ll to Sutton-Co’fal’ to-night.

Bard. Will you give me money, captain?

Fal. Lay out, lay out.

Bard. This bottle makes an angel.

Fal. An if it do, take it for thy labour; and if it make twenty, take them all, I’ll answer the coinage. Bid my Lieutenant Peto meet me at the town’s end.

Bard. I will, captain: farewell. [Exit.

Fal. If I be not ashamed of my soldiers, I am a soused gurnet. I have misused the king’s press damnable. I have got, in exchange of a hundred and fifty soldiers, three hundred and odd pounds.

I press me none but good householders, yeomen’s sons; inquire me out contracted bachelors, such
as had been asked twice on the banni; such a commodity of warm slaves, as had as lief hear the devil as a drum; such as fear the report of a caliver worse than a struck fowl or a hurt wild-duck. I pressed me none but such toasts-and-butter, with hearts in their bellies no bigger than pins’ heads, and they have bought out their services; and now my whole charge consists of ancients, corporals, lieutenants, gentlemen of companies, slaves as ragged as Lazarus in the painted cloth, where the glutton’s dogs licked his sores; and such as indeed were never soldiers, but discarded unjust serving-men, younger sons to younger brothers, revoluted tapsters and ostlers trade-fallen, the cankers of a calm world and a long peace; ten times more dishonourable ragged than an old faced ancient: and such have I, to fill up the rooms of them that have bought out their services, that you think that I had a hundred and fifty tattered prodigals, lately come from swine-keeping, from eating draf and husks. A mad fellow met me on the way and told me I had unloaded all the giblets and pressed the dead bodies. No eye hath seen such scarecrows. I’ll not march through Coventry with them, that’s flat: nay, and the villains march wide between the legs, as if they had gryses on; for, indeed I had the most of them out of prison. There’s but a shirt and a half in all my company; and the half shirt is two napkins sacked together and thrown over the shoulders like a herald’s coat without sleeves; and the shirt, to say the truth, stolen from my host at St. Alban’s, or the red-nose inn-keeper of Daventry. But that’s all one; they’ll find linen enough on every hedge.

Enter the Prince and Westmoreland.

Prince. How now, blown Jack! how now, quitl!

Fal. What, Hal! How now, mad wag! what a devil dost thou in Warwickshire? My good Lord of Westmoreland, I cry you mercy: I thought your honour had already been at Shrewsbury.

West. Faith, Sir John, ’tis no more than time that I were there, and you too; but my powers are there already. The king, I can tell you, looks for us all: we must away all night.

Fal. Tut, never fear me: I am as vigilant as a cat to steal cream.

Prince. I think to steal cream indeed, for thy theft hath already made thee butter. But tell me, Jack, whose fellows are these that come after?

Fal. Mine, Hal, mine.

Prince. I did never see such pitiful rascals.

Fal. Tut, tut; good enough to toes; food for powder, food for powder; they’ll fill a pit as well as better: tush, man, mortal men, mortal men. West. Ay, but, Sir John, methinks they are exceeding poor and bare; too beggarly.

Fal. Faith, for their poverty, I know not where they had that; and for their bareness, I am sure they never learned that of me.

Prince. No, I’ll be sworn; unless you call three fingers on the ribs bare. But sirrah, make haste: Percy is already in the field.

Fal. What, is the king encamped?

West. He is, Sir John: I fear we shall stay too long.

Fal. Well, To the latter end of a fray and the beginning of a feast. Fits a dull fighter and a keen guest. [Exeunt.

SCENE III.—The Rebel Camp near Shrewsbury.


Hot. We’ll fight with him to-night.

Wor. It may not be.

Doug. You give him then advantage.

Ver. Not a whit.

Hot. Why say you so? looks he not for supply?

Ver. So do we.

Hot. His is certain, ours is doubtful.

Wor. Good cousin, be advis’d: stir not to-night.

Ver. Do not, my lord.

Doug. You do not counsel well:

You speak it out of fear and cold heart.

Ver. Do me no slander, Douglas: by my life,—

And I dare well maintain it with my life,—

If well-respected honour bid me on,

I hold as little counsel with weak fear

As you, my lord, or any Scot that this day lives:

Let it be seen to-morrow in the battle

Which of us fears.

Doug. Yea, or to-night.

Ver. Content.

Hot. To-night, say I.

Ver. Come, come, it may not be. I wonder much.

Being men of such great leading as you are,

That you foresee not what impediments

Drag back our expedition: certain horse

Of my cousin Vernon’s are not yet come up:

Your uncle Worcester’s horse came but to-day;

And now their pride and mettle is asleep,

Their courage with hard labour tame and dull,

That not a horse is half the half of himself.

Hot. So are the horses of the enemy

in general, journey-bated and brought low:
Act IV, Sc. III. FIRST PART OF KING HENRY THE FOURTH

The better part of ours are full of rest.  
War. The number of the king exceedeth ours:  
For God's sake, cousin, stay till all come in.  
[The trumpet sounds a parley.  

Enter Sir Walter Blunt.  

Blunt. I come with gracious offers from the king,  
If you vouchsafe me hearing and respect.  

Hot. Welcome, Sir Walter Blunt; and would  
to God 32  
You were of our determination!  
Some of us love you well; and even those some  
Envy your great deservings and good name,  
Because you are not of our quality,  
But stand against us like an enemy.  

Blunt. And God defend but still I should  
stand so,  
So long as out of limit and true rule  
You stand against anointed majesty.  
But, to my charge. The king hath sent to know  
The nature of your griefs, and whereupon  
You conjure from the breast of civil peace  
Such bold hostility, teaching his duteous land  
Audacious cruelty. If that the king  
Have any way your good deserts forgot,—  
Which he confesseth to be manifold,—  
He bids you name your griefs; and with all speed  
You shall have your desires with interest,  
And pardon absolute for yourself and these  
Herein misled by your suggestion.  

Hot. The king is kind; and well we know the king  
Knows at what time to promise, when to pay.  
My father and my uncle and myself  
Did give him that same royalty he wears;  
And when he was not six-and-twenty strong,  
Sick in the world's regard, wretched and low,  
A poor unmingled outlaw sneaking home,  
My father gave him welcome to the shore;  
And when he heard him swear and vow to God  
He came but to be Duke of Lancaster,  
To sue his livery and beg his peace,  
With tears of innocency and terms of zeal,  
My father, in kind heart and pity mov'd,  
Sware him assistance and perform'd it too.  
Now when the lords and barons of the realm  
Perceiv'd Northumberland did lean to him,  
The more and less came in with cap and knee;  
Met him in boroughs, cities, villages,  
Attended him on bridges, stood in lanes,  
Laid gifts before him, proffer'd him their oaths,  
Gave him their hairs as pages, follow'd him  
Even at the heels in golden multitudes.  
He presently, as greatness knows itself,  
Steps me a little higher than his vow  
Made to my father, while his blood was poor,  
Upon the naked shore at Ravenspurgh;  
And now, forsooth, takes on him to reform  
Some certain edicts and some strait decrees  
That lie too heavy on the commonwealth,  
Cries out upon abuses, seems to weep  
Over his country's wrongs; and by this face,  
This seeming brow of justice, did he win  
The hearts of all that he did angle for;  
Proceeded further; cut me off the heads  
Of all the favourites that the absent king  
In deputation left behind him here,  
When he was personal in the Irish war.  

Blunt. Tut, I came not to hear this.  

Hot. Then to the point.  
In short time after, he depos'd the king;  
Soon after that, depriv'd him of his life;  
And, in the neck of that, task'd the whole state;  
To make that worse, suffer'd his kinsman  
March—  
Who is, if every owner were well plac'd,  
Indeed his king—to be engag'd in Wales,  
There without ransom to lie forfeited;  
Diagrac'd me in my happy victories;  
Sought to entrap me by intelligence;  
Rated my uncle from the council-board;  
In rage dismiss'd my father from the court;  
Broke oath on oath, committed wrong on wrong;  
And in conclusion drove us to seek out  
This head of safety; and withal to pry  
Into his title, the which we find  
Too indirect for long continuance.  

Blunt. Shall I return this answer to the king?  

Hot. Not so, Sir Walter: we'll withdraw  
awhile.  
Go to the king; and let there be impawn'd  
Some surety for a safe return again,  
And in the morning early shall my uncle  
Bring him our purposes; and so farewell.  

Blunt. I would you would accept of grace and love.  

Hot. And may be so we shall.  

Blunt. Pray God, you do!  

[Exeunt.  

SCENE IV.—York. A Room in the ARCHBISHOP'S Palace.  

Enter the ARCHBISHOP OF YORK and SIR MICHAEL.  

Arch. Hie, good Sir Michael; bear this sealed brief  
With winged haste to the lord marshal;  
This to my cousin Scroop, and all the rest  
To whom they are directed. If you knew
How much they do import, you would make haste.

Sir M. My good lord,
I guess their tenour.

Arch. Like enough you do.

To-morrow, good Sir Michael, is a day

Wherein the fortune of ten thousand men
Must bite the touch; for, sir, at Shrewsbury,
As I am truly given to understand,
The king with mighty and quick-raised power
Meets with Lord Harry: and, I fear, Sir Michael,
What with the sickness of Northumberland,—
Whose power was in the first proportion,—
And what with Owen Glendower’s absence thence,

Who with them was a rated sinew too,
And comes not in, o’er-rul’d by prophecies,—
I fear the power of Percy is too weak
To wage an instant trial with the king.

Sir M. Why, my good lord, you need not fear:

There is the Douglas and Lord Mortimer.

Arch. No, Mortimer is not there.

Sir M. But there is Mordake, Vernon, Lord Harry Percy,

And there’s my Lord of Worcester, and a head

Of gallant warriors, noble gentlemen.

Arch. And so there is; but yet the king hath drawn
The special head of all the land together.

The Prince of Wales, Lord John of Lancaster,
The noble Westmoreland, and war-like Blunt;
And many moe orrivals and dear men

Of estimation and command in arms.

Sir M. Doubt not, my lord, they shall be well oppo’d.

Arch. I hope no less, yet needful ’tis to fear;
And, to prevent the worse, Sir Michael, speed:
For if Lord Percy thrive not, ere the king
Dismiss his power, he means to visit us,
For he hath heard of our confederacy,
And ’tis but wisdom to make strong against him:

Therefore make haste. I must go write again
To other friends; and so farewell, Sir Michael.

[Exeunt.]

ACT V.

SCENE I.—The King’s Camp near Shrewsbury.

Enter King Henry, the Prince, John of Lancaster, Sir Walter Blunt, and Sir John Falstaff.

K. Hen. How bloodily the sun begins to peer
Above you busky hill! the day looks pale
At his distemperature.

Prince. The southern wind
Doth play the trumpet to his purposes,

And by his hollow whistling in the leaves
Foretells a tempest and a blustering day.

K. Hen. Then with the losers let it sympathize,
For nothing can seem foul to those that win.

[Trumpet sounds.

Enter Worcester and Vernon.

How now, my Lord of Worcester! ’tis not well
That you and I should meet upon such terms
As now we meet. You have deceiv’d our trust,
And made us doff our easy robes of peace,
To crush our old limbs in ungentle steel:
This is not well, my lord; this is not well.
What say you to it? will you again unknit
This churlish knot of all-abhorred war,
And move in that obedient orb again
Where you did give a fair and natural light,
And be no more an exhal’d meteor,
A prodigy of fear and a portent
Of broached mischief to the unborn times?

Wor. Hear me, my liege.

For mine own part, I could be well content
To entertain the lag-end of my life
With quiet hours; for I do protest
I have not sought the day of this dislike.

K. Hen. You have not sought it! how comes it then?

Fal. Rebellion lay in his way, and he found it.

Prince. Peace, chewet, peace!

Wor. It pleas’d your majesty to turn your looks
Of favour from myself and all our house;
And yet I must remember you, my lord,
We were the first and dearest of your friends.
For you my staff of office did I break
In Richard’s time; and posted day and night
To meet you on the way, and kiss your hand,
When yet you were in place and in account
Nothing so strong and fortunate as I.
It was myself, my brother, and his son,
That brought you home and boldly did outdare
The dangers of the time. You swore to us,
And you did swear that oath at Doncaster,
That you did nothing purpose ’gainst the state,
Nor claim no further than your new-fall’d right,
The seat of Gaunt, dukedom of Lancaster.
To this we swore our aid: but, in short space
It rain’d down fortune showering on your head,
And such a flood of greatness fell on you,
What with our help, what with the absent king,
What with the injuries of a wanton time,
The seeming sufferances that you had borne,
And the contrarious winds that held the king so long in his unlucky Irish wars,
That all in England did repute him dead:
And from this swarm of fair advantages
You took occasion to be quickly woo'd
To grip the general sway into your hand;
Forgot your oath to us at Doncaster;
And being fed by us you us'd us so
As that ungentle gull, the cuckoo's bird,
Useth the sparrow; did oppress our nest,
Grew by our feeding to so great a bulk
That even our love durst not come near your sight.
For fear of swallowing; but with nimble wing
We were encou'red, for safety's sake, to fly
Out of your sight and raise this present head;
Whereby we stand opposed by such means
As you yourself have forg'd against yourself
By unkind usage, dangerous countenance,
And violation of all faith and troth
Sworn to us in your younger enterprise.

K. Hen. These things indeed, you have articulate,
Proclaim'd at market-crosses, read in churches,
To face the garment of rebellion
With some fine colour that may please the eye
Of fickle changelings and poor discontenters,
Which gape and rub the elbow at the news
Of hurlselybur innovation:
And never yet did insurrection want
Such water-colours to impaint his cause;
Nor moody beggars, starving for a time
Of bell-mell havoc and confusion.

Prince. In both our armies there is many a soul
Shall pay full dearly for this encounter,
If once they join in trial. Tell your nephew,
The Prince of Wales doth join with all the world
In praise of Henry Percy: by my hopes,
This present enterprise set off his head,
I do not think a braver gentleman,
More active-valiant or more valiant-young,
More daring or more bold, is now alive
To grace this latter age with noble deeds.
For my part, I may speak it to my shame,
I have a truant been to chivalry;
And so I hear he doth account me too;
Yet this before my father's majesty—
I am content that he shall take the odds
Of his great name and estimation,
And will, to save the blood on either side,
Try fortune with him in a single fight.

K. Hen. And, Prince of Wales, so dare we venture thee,
Albeit considerations infinite
Do make against it. No, good Worcester, no,
We love our people well; even those we love
That are misled upon your cousin's part;
And, will they take the offer of our grace,
Both he and they and you, yea, every man
Shall be my friend again, and I'll be his.
So tell your cousin, and bring me word
What he will do; but if he will not yield,
Rebuke and dread correction wait on us,
And they shall do their office. So, be gone: We will not now be troubled with reply;
We offer fair, take it advisedly.

[Exeunt Worcester and Vernon.

Prince. It will not be accepted, on my life.
The Douglas and the Hotspur both together
Are confident against the world in arms.

K. Hen. Hence, therefore, every leader to his charge;
For, on their answer, will we set on them;
And God befriend us, as our cause is just!

[Exeunt King Henry, Blunt, and John of Lancaster.

Fal. Hal, if thou see me down in the battle,
And bestride me, so; 'tis a point of friendship.

Prince. Nothing but a colossus can do thee
that friendship. Say thy prayers, and farewell.

Fal. I would it were bed-time, Hal, and all well.


Fal. 'Tis not due yet: I would be loath to pay him before his day.
What need I be so forward with him that calls not on me? Well, 'tis no matter; honour pricks me on. Yea, but how if honour prick me off when I come on? how then? Can honour set to a leg? No. Or an arm? No. Or take away the grief of a wound? No. Honour hath no skill in surgery then? No. What is honour? a word. What is that word, honour? Air. A trim reckoning! Who hath it he that died o' Wednesday. Doth he feel it? No. Doth he hear it? No. It is insensible then? Yea, to the dead. But will it not live with the living? No. Why? Detraction will not suffer it. Therefore I'll none of it: honour is a mere scutcheon; and so ends my catechism. [Exit.

SCENE II.—The Rebel Camp near Shrewsbury.

Enter Worcester and Vernon.

Wor. O, no! my nephew must not know,
Sir Richard,
The liberal kind offer of the king.

Ver. 'Twere best he did.

Wor. Then are we all undone.
It is not possible, it cannot be,
The king should keep his word in loving us; He will suspect us still, and find a time To punish this offence in other faults: Suspicion all our lives shall be stuck full of eyes;

For treason is but trusted like the fox,
Who, ne’er so tame, so cherish’d, and lock’d up, 12
Will have a wild trick of his ancestors.
Look how we can, or sad or merrily, 16
Interpretation will misquote our looks,
And we shall feed like oxen at a stall,
The better cherish’d, still the nearer death.
My nephew’s trespass may be well forgot, 20
It hath the excuse of youth and heat of blood;
And an adopted name of privilege,
A hare-brain’d Hotspur, govern’d by a spleen.
All his offences live upon my head, 24
And on his father’s: we did train him on;
And, his corruption being ta’en from us,
We, as the spring of all, shall pay for all.
Therefore, good cousin, let not Harry know
In any case the offer of the king.
Ver. Deliver what you will, I’ll say ‘tis so.
Here comes your cousin.

Enter Hotspur and Douglas; Officers and
Soldiers behind.

Hot. My uncle is return’d: deliver up 23
My Lord of Westmoreland. Uncle, what news?
Wor. The king will bid you battle presently.
Doug. Defy him by the Lord of Westmore-
land.
Hot. Lord Douglas, go you and tell him so.32
Doug. Marry, and shall, and very willingly.

[Exit.

Wor. There is no seeming mercy in the king.
Hot. Did you beg any? God forbid!
Wor. I told him gently of our grievances, 36
Of his oath-breaking; which he mended thus,
By now forewarning that he is forswn:
He calls us rebels, traitors; and will scourge
With haughty arms this hateful name in us. 40

Re-enter Douglas.

Doug. Arm, gentlemen! to arms! for I have thrown
A brave defiance in King Henry’s teeth,
And Westmoreland, that was engag’d, did bear
it;
Which cannot choose but bring him quickly on. 45
Wor. The Prince of Wales stepp’d forth
before the king.
And, nephew, challeng’d you to single fight.
Hot. O! would the quarrel lay upon our heads,
And that no man might draw short breath to-day 48
But I and Harry Monmouth. Tell me, tell me,
How show’d his tasking? seem’d it in contempt?
Ver. No, by my soul; I never in my life
Did hear a challenge urg’d more modestly, 52
Unless a brother should a brother dare

To gentle exercise and proof of arms.
He gave you all the duties of a man,
Timm’d up your praises with a princely tongue,
Spoke your deserving like a chronicle,
Making you ever better than his praise,
By still dispraising praise valu’d with you;
And, which became him like a prince indeed, 60
He made a blushing cital of himself,
And chid his truant youth with such a grace
As if he master’d there a double spirit
Of teaching and of learning instantly. 64
There did he pause. But let me tell the world,
If he outlive the envy of this day,
England did never owe so sweet a hope,
So much misconstru’d in his wantonness. 68
Hot. Cousin, I think thou art enamoured
On his follies: never did I hear
Of any prince so wild a libertine.
But he as he will, yet once ere night 72
I will embrace him with a soldier’s arm,
That he shall shrink under my courtesy.
Arm, arm, with speed! And, fellows, soldiers,
friends,
Better consider what you have to do, 76
Than I, that have not well the gift of tongue,
Can lift your blood up with persuasion.

Enter a Messenger.

Mess. My lord, here are letters for you. 80
Hot. I cannot read them now.
O gentlemen! the time of life is short;
To spend that shortness basely were too long,
If life did ride upon a dail’s point,
Still ending at the arrival of an hour. 84
An if we live, we live to tread on kings;
If die, brave death, when princes die with us!
Now, for our consciences, the arms are fair,
When the intent of bearing them is just. 88

Enter another Messenger.

Mess. My lord, prepare; the king comes on space.
Hot. I thank him that he cuts me from my tale,
For I profess not talking. Only this,— 92
Let each man do his best: and here draw I
A sword, whose temper I intend to stain
With the best blood that I can meet withal
In the adventure of this perilous day.
Now, Esperance! Percy! and set on. 96
Sound all the lofty instruments of war,
And by that music let us all embrace;
For, heaven to earth, some of us never shall
A second time do such a courtesy. 100

[The trumpets sound. They embrace,
and exclaim.]
Act V, Sc. III. FIRST PART OF KING HENRY THE FOURTH

SCENE III.—Between the Camps.

Excursions and Parties fighting. Alarum to the Battle. Then enter DOUGLAS and SIR WALTER BLUNT, meeting.

Blunt. What is thy name, that in the battle thus
Thou crosseth me? what honour dost thou seek
Upon my head?

Doug. Know then, my name is Douglas;
And I do haunt thee in the battle thus
Because some tell me that thou art a king.
Blunt. They tell thee true.

Doug. The Lord of Stafford dear to-day hath bought
Thy likeness; for, instead of thee, King Harry,
This sword hath ended him: so shall it thee,
Unless thou yield thee as my prisoner.
Blunt. I was not born a yielder, thou proud Scot;
And thou shalt find a king that will revenge 12
Lord Stafford’s death.

[They fight, and BLUNT is slain.

Enter HOSSPUR.

Hot. O, Douglas! hadst thou fought at Holmedon thus,
I never had triumph’d upon a Scot.
Doug. All’s done, all’s won: here breathless lies the king.

Hot. Where?

Doug. Here.

Hot. This, Douglas! no; I know this face full well;
A gallant knight he was, his name was Blunt; 20
Semblably furnish’d like the king himself.
Doug. A fool go with thy soul, whither it goes!
A borrow’d title hast thou bought too dear:
Why didst thou tell me that thou wert a king?
Hot. The king hath many marching in his coats.
Doug. Now, by my sword, I will kill all his coats;
I’ll murder all his wardrobe, piece by piece,
Until I meet the king.
Hot. Up, and away! 28
Our soldiers stand full fairly for the day.

[Exeunt.

Alarums. Enter FALSTAFF.

Fal. Though I could ‘scape shot-free at London, I fear the shot here; here’s no scoring but upon the pate. Soft! who art thou? Sir Walter Blunt: there’s honour for you! here’s no vanity! I am as hot as molten lead, and as heavy too: God keep lead out of me! I need no more weight than mine own bowels. I have led my ragamuffins where they are peppered: there’s not three of my hundred and fifty left alive, and they are for the town’s end, to beg during life. But who comes here?

Enter the Prince.

Prince. What! stand’st thou idle here? lend me thy sword:
Many a nobleman lies stark and stiff
Under the hoofs of vaunting enemies,
Whose deaths are unreveng’d; prithee, lend me thy sword.

Fal. O Hal! I prithee, give me leave to breathe awhile. Turk Gregory never did such deeds in arms as I have done this day. I have paid Percy, I have made him sure.

Prince. He is, indeed; and living to kill thee.
I prithee, lend me thy sword.

Fal. Nay, before God, Hal, if Percy be alive, thou get’tst not my sword; but take my pistol, if thou wilt.

Prince. Give it me. What! is it in the case?
Fal. Ay, Hal; ’tis hot, ’tis hot: there’s that will sack a city.

[The Prince draws out a bottle of sack.

Prince. What! is’t a time to jest and dally now? 56

Fal. Well, if Percy be alive, I’ll pierce him.
If he do come in my way, so: if he do not, if I come in his, willingly, let him make a carbonado of me. I like not such grinning honour as Sir Walter hath: give me life; which if I can save, so; if not, honour comes unlooked for, and there’s an end.

[Exeunt.

SCENE IV.—Another Part of the Field.

Alarums. Excursions. Enter KING HENRY, the PRINCE, JOHN OF LANCASTER, and WESTMORELAND.

K. Hen. I prithee, Harry, withdraw thyself; thou bleed’st too much.

Lord John of Lancaster, go you with him.
Lanc. Not I, my lord, unless I did bleed too.

Prince. I beseech your majesty, make up,
Lest your retirement do amaze your friends.
K. Hen. I will do so.

My Lord of Westmoreland, lead him to his tent.

West. Come, my lord, I’ll lead you to your tent.

Prince. Lead me, my lord? I do not need your help:
And God forbid a shallow scratch should drive
The Prince of Wales from such a field as this, 12
Where stain’d nobility lies trodden on,
And rebels' arms triumph in massacres!
    Lanc. We breathe too long; come, cousin
    Westmoreland,
Our duty this way lies: for God's sake, come. 16
    [Exeunt JOHN OF LANCASTER and
    WESTMORELAND.

Prince. By God, thou hast deceiv’d me, Lancaster;
I did not think thee lord of such a spirit:
Before, I lov’d thee as a brother, John;
But now, I do respect thee as my soul. 20
    K. Hen. I saw him hold Lord Percy at the
    point
With lustier maintenance than I did look for
Of such an ungrown warrior.

Prince. O! this boy
Lends mettle to us all. 25

[Exit.

    Alarums. Enter DOUGLAS.

Doug. Another king! they grow like Hydra's
    heads:
I am the Douglas, fatal to all those
That wear those colours on them: what art thou,
That counterfeit'st the person of a king? 28
    K. Hen. The king himself; who, Douglas,
grieves at heart
So many of his shadows thou hast met
And not the very king. I have two boys
Seek Percy and thyself about the field: 32
But, seeing thou fall'st on me so luckily,
I will assay thee; so defend thyself.

Doug. I fear thou art another counterfeit;
And yet, in faith, thou bear'st thee like a king:
But mene I am sure thou art, who'er thou be,
And thus I win thee.

[They fight. KING HENRY being in
danger, re-enter the PRINCE.

Prince. Hold up thy head, vile Scot, or thou
art like
Never to hold it up again! the spirits
Of valiant Shirley, Stafford, Blunt, are in my
arms:
It is the Prince of Wales that threatens thee,
Who never promiseth but he means to pay.

[They fight: DOUGLAS flies.

Cheerly, my lord: how fares your Grace? 44
Sir Nicholas Gawsey hath for succour sent,
And so hath Clifton: I'll to Clifton straight.
    K. Hen. Stay, and breathe awhile.
Thou hast redeem'd thy lost opinion,
And sow'd thou mak'st some tender of my life,
In this fair rescue thou hast brought to me.

Prince. O God! they did me too much
injury
That ever said I hearken'd for your death. 52
If it were so, I might have let alone
The insulting hand of Douglas over you;
Which would have been as speedy in your end
As all the poisonous potions in the world, 56
And say'd the treacherous labour of your son.
    K. Hen. Make up to Clifton: I'll to Sir
    Nicholas Gawsey. 60

    Enter HOTSPUR.

Hot. If I mistake not, thou art Harry Mon-

    mouth.

Prince. Thou speak'st as if I would deny my
name.

Hot. My name is Harry Percy.

Prince. Why, then, I see
A very valiant rebel of that name.
I am the Prince of Wales; and think not, 68
    Percy,
To share with me in glory any more:
Two stars keep not their motion in one sphere;
Nor can one England brook a double reign,
Of Harry Percy and the Prince of Wales.

    Hot. Nor shall it, Harry; for the hour is
    come
To end the one of us; and would to God
    Thy name in arms were now as great as mine!

Prince. I'll make it greater ere I part from thee;
And all the budding honours on thy crest
    72
I'll crop, to make a Garland for my head.

Hot. I can no longer brook thy vanities.

[They fight.

    Enter FALSTAFF.

Fal. Well said, Hal! to it, Hal! Nay, you
shall find no boy's play here, I can tell you. 76

Re-enter DOUGLAS; he fights with FALSTAFF,
    who falls down as if he were dead, and exit
    DOUGLAS. HOTSPUR IS wounded, and falls.

    Hot. O, Harry! thou hast robb'd me of my
    youth.
I better brook the loss of brittle life
Than those proud titles thou hast won of me;
They wound my thoughts worse than thy sword
my flesh:

But thought's the slave of life, and life time's
foon;
And time, that takes survey of all the world,
Must have a stop. O! I could prophesy,
But that the earthy and cold hand of death
Lies on my tongue. No, Percy, thou art dust,
And food for—— 84

    Dies.

Prince. For worms, brave Percy. Fare thee
well, great heart!
Ill-weav'd ambition, how much art thou shrunk!
When that this body did contain a spirit, 89
A kingdom for it was too small a bound;
But now, two paces of the vilest earth
Is room enough: this earth, that bears thee dead,
82
Bears not alive so stout a gentleman.
If thou wert sensible of courtesy,
I should not make so dear a show of zeal:
But let my favours hide thy mangled face, 96
And, even in thy behalf, I’ll thank myself
For doing these fair rites of tenderness.
Adieu, and take thy praise with thee to heaven!
Thy ignomy sleep with thee in the grave, 100
But not remember’d in thy epitaph!

[He spies Falstaff on the ground.
What! old acquaintance! could not all this flesh
Keep in a little life? Poor Jack, farewell!
I could have better spard a better man. 104
O! I should have a heavy miss of thee
If I were much in love with vanity.
Death hath not struck so fat a deer to-day,
Though many dearer, in this bloody fray. 108
Embowell’d will I see thee by and by:
Till then in blood by noble Percy lie. [Exit.

Fal. [Rising.] Embowell’d! if thou embowell
me to-day, I’ll give you to powder me and
eat me too, to-morrow. ’Sblood! ’twas time to
counterfeit, or that hot tarmagant Scot had paid
me scot and lot too. Counterfeit? I lie, I am no
counterfeit: to die, is to be a counterfeit; for he
is but the counterfeit of a man, who hath not
the life of a man; but to counterfeit dying, when
a man thereby liveth, is to be no counterfeit, but
the true and perfect image of life indeed. The
better part of valour is discretion; in the which
better part, I have saved my life. ’Zounds! I
am afraid of this gunpowder Percy though he
be dead: how, if he should counterfeit too and
rise? By my faith I am afraid he would prove
the better counterfeit. Therefore I’ll make him
sure; yea, and I’ll swear I killed him. Why may
not he rise as well as I? Nothing confutes me
but eyes, and nobody sees me: therefore, sirrah
[stabbing him], with a new wound in your thigh
come you along with me.

[He takes Hotspur on his back.

Re-enter the Prince and John of Lancaster.

Prince. Come, brother John; full bravely
hast thou flesh’d 132
Thy maiden sword.

Lanc. But, soft! whom have we here?
Did you not tell me this fat man was dead?
Prince. I did; I saw him dead,
Breathless and bleeding on the ground. 136
Art thou alive? or is it fantasy
That plays upon our eyesight? I prithee, speak:

We will not trust our eyes without our ears:
Thou art not what thou seem’st. 140

Fal. No, that’s certain; I am not a double
man: but if I be not Jack Falstaff, then am I a
Jack. There is Percy [throwing the body down]:
if your father will do me any honour, so; if not,
let him kill the next Percy himself. I look to
be either earl or duke, I can assure you.

Prince. Why, Percy I killed myself, and saw
thee dead. 147

Fal. Didst thou? Lord, Lord! how this world
is given to lying. I grant you I was down and
out of breath, and so was he; but we rose both
at an instant, and fought a long hour by Shrewsbury
clock. If I may be believed, so; if not, let
them that should reward valour bear the sin
upon their own heads. I’ll take it upon my
death, I gave him this wound in the thigh: if
the man were alive and would deny it, ’zounds,
I would make him eat a piece of my sword. 157

Lanc. This is the strangest tale that ’er I
heard.

Prince. This is the strangest fellow, brother
John.
Come, bring your luggage nobly on your back:
For my part, if a lie may do thee grace, 161
I’ll gild it with the happiest terms I have.

[A retreat is sounded.
The trumpet sounds retreat; the day is ours.
Come, brother, let us to the highest of the field,
To see what friends are living, who are dead. 165

[Exeunt the Prince and John of
Lancaster.

Fal. I’ll follow, as they say, for reward. He
that rewards me, God reward him! If I do grow
great, I’ll grow less; for I’ll purge, and leave
sack, and live cleanly, as a nobleman should do.

[Exit.

SCENE V.—Another Part of the Field.

The trumpets sound. Enter King Henry, the
Prince, John of Lancaster, Westmoreland,
and Others, with Worcester and
Vernon prisoners.

K. Hen. Thus ever did rebellion find rebuke.
Ill-spirited Worcester! did we not send grace,
Pardon, and terms of love to all of you?
And wouldst thou turn our offers contrary?
Misuse the tenour of thy kinsman’s trust?
Three knights upon our party slain to-day,
A noble earl and many a creature else
Had been alive this hour,
If like a Christian, thou hadst truly borne
Betwixt our armies true intelligence.

Wor. What have I done my safety urg’d me
to;
And I embrace this fortune patiently,
Since not to be avoided it falls on me.

K. Hen. Bear Worcester to the death and
Vernon too:
Other offenders we will pause upon.
[Exeunt Worcester and Vernon, guarded.
How goes the field?

Prince. The noble Scot, Lord Douglas, when
he saw
The fortune of the day quite turn’d from him,
The noble Percy slain, and all his men
Upon the foot of fear, fled with the rest;
And falling from a hill he was so bruis’d
That the pursuers took him. At my tent
The Douglas is, and I beseech your Grace
I may dispose of him.

K. Hen. With all my heart.

Prince. Then, brother John of Lancaster, to
you
This honourable bounty shall belong.
Go to the Douglas, and deliver him

Up to his pleasure, ransomless, and free:
His valour shown upon our crests to-day
Hath taught us how to cherish such high
deeds,
Even in the bosom of our adversaries.

Lanc. I thank your Grace for this high courte-
sey,
Which I shall give away immediately.

K. Hen. Then this remains, that we divide
our power.
You, son John, and my cousin Westmoreland
Towards York shall bend you, with your dearest
speed,
To meet Northumberland and the prelate Scroop,
Who, as we hear, are busily in arms:
Myself and you, son Harry, will towards Wales,
To fight with Glendower and the Earl of March.
Rebellion in this land shall lose his sway,
Meeting the check of such another day:
And since this business so fair is done,
Let us not leave till all our own be won. [Exeunt.
THE SECOND PART OF
KING HENRY THE FOURTH

DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

RUMOUR, the Presenter.
KING HENRY THE FOURTH.
HENRY, Prince of Wales; afterwards
King Henry the Fifth.
THOMAS, Duke of Clarence,
JOHN OF LANCASTER,
HUMPHREY OF GLOUCESTER,
EARL OF WARWICK,
EARL OF WESTMORELAND,
EARL OF SURREY,
GOWER,
HARCOURT,
BLUNT,
LORD CHIEF JUSTICE of the King’s Bench.
A Servant of the Chief Justice.
EARL OF NORTHUMBERLAND,
RICHARD SROOP, Archbishop
of York.
LORD MOWBRAY,
LORD HASTINGS,
LORD BARDOLPH,
SIR JOHN COLEVILE,
TRAVERS and MORTON, Retainers of Northum-
berland.

SIR JOHN FALSTAFF.
His Page.
BARDOLPH.
PISTOL.
POINS.
PETO.
SHALLOW and SILENCE, Country Justices.
DAVV, Servant to Shallow.
MOULDY, SHADOW, WART, FEEBLE, and BULL-
calf, Recruits.
FANG and SNARE, Sheriff’s Officers.
A Porter.
A Dancer, Speaker of the Epilogue.

LADY NORTHUMBERLAND.
LADY PERY.
MISTRESS QUICKLY, Hostess of a tavern in
Eastcheap.
DOLL TEARESHEET.

Lords and Attendants; Officers, Soldiers, Mes-
senger, Drawers, Beadles, Grooms, &c.

SCENE.—England.

INDUCTION.

Warkworth. Before NORTHUMBERLAND’S Castle.

Enter RUMOUR, painted joll of tongues
Ram. Open your ears; for which of you will
stop
The vent of hearing when loud Rumour speaks?
I, from the orient to the drooping west,
Making the wind my post-horse, still unfold
The acts commenced on this ball of earth:
Upon my tongues continual slanders ride,
The which in every language I pronounce.
Stuffing the ears of men with false reports.
I speak of peace, while covert enmity
Under the smile of safety wounds the world:
And who but Rumour, who but only I,
Make fearful musters and prepar’d defence,
Whilst the big year, swollen with some other grief,
Is thought with child by the stern tyrant war,
And no such matter? Rumour is a pipe
Blown by surmises, jealousies, conjectures,
And of so easy and so plain a stop
That the blunt monster with uncounted heads,
The still-discordant waving multitude,
Can play upon it. But what need I thus
My well-known body to anatomize
Among my household? Why is Rumour here?
I run before King Harry’s victory;
Who in a bloody field by Shrewsbury
Hath beaten down young Hotspur and his
troops,
Quenching the flame of bold rebellion
Even with the rebels’ blood. But what mean I
To speak so true at first? my office is
To noise abroad that Harry Monmouth fell
Under the wrath of noble Hotspur’s sword,
And that the king before the Douglas’ rage
Stoop’d his anointed head as low as death.
This have I rumour’d through the peasant
towns

504
Between the royal field of Shrewsbury
And this worm-eaten hold of ragged stone,
Where Hotspur's father, old Northumberland,
Lies crafty-sick. The posts come tiring on;
And not a man of them brings other news
Than they have learn'd of me: from Rumour's
tongues
They bring smooth comforts false, worse than
true wrongs.

[Exit.]

ACT I.


Enter Lord Bardolph.

L. Bard. Who keeps the gate here? ho!
[The Porter opens the gate.
Port. Where is the earl?
L. Bard. Tell thou the earl. That the Lord Bardolph doth attend him here.
Port. His Lordship is walk'd forth into the orchard:

Please it your honour knock but at the gate,
And he himself will answer.

Enter Northumberland.

L. Bard. Here comes the earl.
[Exit Porter.

North. What news, Lord Bardolph? every minute now
Should be the father of some stratagem.
The times are wild; contention, like a horse
Full of high feeding, madly hath broke loose
And bears down all before him.

L. Bard. Noble earl, I bring you certain news from Shrewsbury.
North. Good, an God will!
L. Bard. As good as heart can wish.
The king is almost wounded to the death;
And, in the fortune of my lord your son,
Prince Harry slain outright; and both the Blunts
Kill'd by the hand of Douglas; young Prince John
And Westmoreland and Stafford flied the field.
And Harry Monmouth's brawn, the hulk Sir John,
Is prisoner to your son: 0! such a day,
So fought, so follow'd, and so fairly won,
 Came not till now to dignify the times
Since Caesar's fortunes.

North. How is this deriv'd?
Saw you the field? came you from Shrewsbury?

L. Bard. I spake with one, my lord, that came from thence;
A gentleman well bred and of good name,
Thou tremblest, and the whiteness in thy cheek
Is apter than thy tongue to tell thy errand. 69
Even such a man, so faint, so spiritless,
So dull, so dead in look, so woeful—
Drew Friar's curtain in the dead of night, 72
And would have told him half his Troy was
burn'd;
But Friar found the fire ere he spoke.
And I my Percy's death ere thou report it.
This thou wouldst say, 'Thy son did thus and
thus; 76
Your brother thus; so fought the noble Douglas;
Stopping my greedy ear with their bold deeds:
But in the end, to stop mine ear indeed,
Thou hast a sigh to blow away this praise, 80
Ending with 'Brother, son, and all are dead.'
Mor. Douglas is living, and your brother, yet;
But, for my lord your son,—
North. Why, he is dead.—
See, what a ready tongue suspicion hath! 84
He that but fears the thing he would not know
Hath by instinct knowledge from others' eyes
That what he fear'd is chanced. Yet speak,
Morton:
Tell thou thy earl his divination lies, 88
And I will take it as a sweet disgrace
And make thee rich for doing me such wrong.
Mor. You are too great to be by me gainsaid;
Your spirit is too true, your fears too certain. 92
North. Yet, for all this, say not that Percy's
death,
I see a strange confession in thine eye:
Thou shak'st thy head, and hold'st it fear or sin
To speak a truth. If he be slain, say so; 96
The tongue offendst not that reports his death:
And he doth sin that doth belie the dead,
Not he which says the dead is not alive.
Yet the first bringer of unwelcome news 100
Hath but a losing office, and his tongue
Sounds ever after as a sullen bell,
Remember'd knolling a departing friend.
L. Bard. I cannot think, my lord, your son
is dead.
Mor. I am sorry I should force you to believe
That which I would to God I had not seen;
But these mine eyes saw him in bloody state,
Rendering faint quittance, wearied and out-breath'd,
To Harry Monmouth; whose swift wrath beat
down
The never-daunted Percy to the earth,
From whence with life he never more sprung up.
In few, his death,—whose spirit lent a fire 112
Even to the dullest peasant in his camp,—
Being bruited once, took fire and heat away
From the best-temper'd courage in his troops;
For from his metal was his party steel'd; 116
Which once in him abated, all the rest
Turn'd on themselves, like dull and heavy lead:
And as the thing that's heavy in itself,
Upon enforcement flies with greatest speed, 120
So did our men, heavy in Hotspur's loss,
Lend to this weight such lightness with their
fear
That arrows fled not swifter toward their aim
Than did our soldiers, aiming at their safety, 124
Fly from the field. Then was that noble Wor-
cester
Too soon ta'en prisoner; and that furious Scot,
The bloody Douglas, whose well-labouring sword
Had three times slain the appearance of the
king, 128
'Gan vail his stomach, and did grace the shame
Of those that turn'd their backs; and in his
flight,
Stumbling in fear, was took. The sum of all
Is, that the king hath won, and hath sent out
A speedy power to encounter you, my lord, 133
Under the conduct of young Lancaster
And Westmoreland. This is the news at full.
North. For this I shall have time enough to
mourn. 136
In poison there is physic; and these news,
Having been well, that would have made me sick,
Being sick, have in some measure made me well:
And as the wretch, whose fever-weak'd joints,
Like strengthless hinges, buckle under life, 141
Impatient of his fit, breaks like a fire
Out of his keeper's arms, even so my limbs,
Weak'en'd with grief, being now enrag'd with
grief, 144
Are thrice themselves. Hence, therefore, thou
nice crutch!
A scaly gauntlet now, with joints of steel
Must glove this hand: and hence, thou sickly
quaff!
Thou art a guard too wanton for the head 148
Which princes, flesh'd with conquest, aim to hit.
Now bind my brows with iron; and approach
The ragged'st hour that time and spite dare
bring
To frown upon the enrag'd Northumberland! 152
Let heaven kiss earth! now let not nature's hand
Keep the wild flood confin'd! let order die!
And let this world no longer be a stage
To feed contention in a lingering act; 156
But let one spirit of the first-born Cain
Reign in all bosoms, that, each heart being set
On bloody courses, the rude scene may end,
And darkness be the burier of the dead! 160
Tra. This strained passion doth you wrong,
my lord.
L. Bard. Sweet earl, divorce not wisdom
from your honour.

506
SECOND PART OF KING HENRY THE FOURTH  Act I, Sc. II.

Mor. The lives of all your loving complices
Lean on your health; the which, if you give o'er
To stormy passion must perforce decay. 165
You cast the event of war, my noble lord,
And summd the account of chance, before you
said,
'Let us make head.' It was your presurmise 168
That in the dole of blows your son might drop:
You knew he walk'd o'er peril, on an edge,
More likely to fall in than to get o'er;
You were advis'd his flesh was capable 172
Of wounds and scars, and that his for ward spirit
Would lift him where most trade of danger
rang'd:
Yet did you say, 'Go forth;' and none of this,
Though strongly apprehended, could restrain 176
The stiff-borne action: what hath then befallen,
Or what hath this bold enterprise brought forth,
More than that being which was like to be?
L. Bard. We all that are engaged to this loss
Knew that you ventur'd on such dangerous seas
That if we wrought out life 'twas ten to one;
And yet we ventur'd, for the gain propos'd
Chok'd the respect of likely peril fear'd; 184
And since we are o'erset, venture again.
Come, we will all put forth, body and goods.
Mor. 'Tis more than time: and, my most
noble lord,
I bear for certain, and do speak the truth, 188
The gentle Archbishop of York is up,
With well-appointed powers: he is a man
Who with a double surety binds his followers,
My lord your son had only but the corpse', 192
But shadows and the shows of men to fight;
For that same word, rebellion, did divide
The action of their bodies from their souls;
And they did fight with queasiness, constrain'd,
As men drink potions, that their weapons only
Seem'd on our side: but, for their spirits and
souls,
This word, rebellion, it had froze them up,
As fish are in a pond. But now the bishop 200
Turns insurrection to religion:
Suppos'd sincere and holy in his thoughts,
He's follow'd both with body and with mind,
And doth enlarge his rising with the blood 204
Of fair King Richard, scrap'd from Pomfret
stones;
Derives from heaven his quarrel and his cause;
Tells them he doth besstride a bleeding land,
Gasping for life under great Bolingbroke; 208
And more and less do flock to follow him.
North. I knew of this before; but, to speak
truth,
This present grief had wip'd it from my mind.
Go in with me; and counsel every man 212
The aptest way for safety and revenge:
Get posts and letters, and make friends with
speed:
Never so few, and never yet more need.
[Exeunt.

SCENE II.—London. A Street.

Enter Sir John Falstaff, with his Page bear-
ing his sword and buckler.

Fal. Sirrah, you giant, what says the doctor
to my water?

Page. He said, sir, the water itself was a good
healthy water; but, for the party that owed it, he
might have more diseases than he knew for. 5

Fal. Men of all sorts take a pride to gird at
me: the brain of this foolish-compounded clay,
man, is not able to invent anything that tends
to laughter, more than I invent or is invented
on me: I am not only witty in myself, but the
cause that wit is in other men. I do here walk
before thee like a sow that hath overwhelmed all
her litter but one. If the prince put thee into
my service for any other reason than to set me
off, why then I have no judgment. Thou whores-
on mandrake, thou art fitter to be worn in my
cap than to wait at my heels. I was never
manned with an agate till now; but I will set
you neither in gold nor silver, but in vile apparel,
and send you back again to your master, for a
jewel; the juvenile, the prince your master, whose
chin is not yet fledged. I will sooner have a
beard grow in the palm of my hand than he shall
get one on his cheek; and yet he will not stick
to say, his face is a face-royal: God may finish it
when he will, it is not a hair amiss yet: he may
keep it still as a face-royal, for a barber shall
never earn sixpence out of it; and yet he will
be crowing as if he had writ man ever since his
father was a bachelor. He may keep his own
grace, but he is almost out of mine, I can assure
him. What said Master Dombledon about the
satin for my short cloak and my slops? 33

Page. He said, sir, you should procure him
better assurance than Bardolph; he would not
take his bond and yours: he liked not the
security.

Fal. Let him be damned like the glutton! may
his tongue be hotter! A whoreson Achitoph-
ell! a rascally yea-forsooth knave! to bear a
gentleman in hand, and then stand upon security.
The whoreson smooth-pates do now wear noth-
ing but high shoes, and bunches of keys at their
girdles; and if a man is thorough with them in
honest taking up, then they must stand upon
security. I had as lief they would put ratsbane
in my mouth as offer to stop it with security. I
looked a' should have sent me two and twenty
yards of satin, as I am a true knight, and he sends me security. Well, he may sleep in security; for he hath the horn of abundance, and the lightness of his wife shines through it: and yet cannot he see, though he have his own lanthorn to light him. Where's Bardolph? 

Page. He's gone into Smithfield to buy your worship a horse.

Fal. I bought him in Paul's, and he'll buy me a horse in Smithfield: an I could get me but a wife in the stews, I were manned, horsed, and wived.

Enter the LORD CHIEF JUSTICE and SERVANT.

Page. Sir, here comes the nobleman that committed the prince for striking him about Bardolph.

Fal. Wait close; I will not see him.

Ch. Just. What's he that goes there?

Ser. Falstaff, an't please your lordship.

Ch. Just. He that was in question for the robbery?

Ser. He, my lord; but he hath since done good service at Shrewsbury, and, as I hear, is now going with some charge to the Lord John of Lancaster.


Ser. Sir John Falstaff!

Fal. Boy, tell him I am deaf.

Page. You must speak louder, my master is deaf.

Ch. Just. I am sure he is, to the hearing of anything good. Go, pluck him by the elbow; I must speak with him.

Ser. Sir John!

Fal. What! young knave, and beg! Is there not wars? is there not employment? doth not the king lack subjects? do not the rebels want soldiers? Though it be a shame to be on any side but one, it is worse shame to beg than to be on the worst side, were it worse than the name of rebellion can tell how to make it.

Ser. You mistake me, sir.

Fal. Why, sir, did I say you were an honest man? setting my knighthood and my soldiership aside, I had lied in my throat if I had said so.

Ser. I pray you, sir, then set your knighthood and your soldiership aside, and give me leave to tell you you lie in your throat if you say I am any other than an honest man.

Fal. I give thee leave to tell me so! I lay aside that which grows to me! If thou gettest any leave of me, hang me: if thou takest leave, thou wert better be hanged. You hunt-counter: hence! avaunt!

Ser. Sir, my lord would speak with you.

Ch. Just. Sir John Falstaff, a word with you.

Fal. My good lord! God give your lordship good time of day. I am glad to see your lordship abroad; I heard say your lordship was sick: I hope your lordship goes abroad by advice. Your lordship, though not clean past your youth, hath yet some smack of age in you, some relish of the saltiness of time; and I most humbly beseech your lordship to have a reverend care of your health.

Ch. Just. Sir John, I sent for you before your expedition to Shrewsbury.

Fal. An't please your lordship, I hear his majesty is returned with some discomfort from Wales.

Ch. Just. I talk not of his majesty. You would not come when I sent for you.

Fal. And I hear, moreover, his highness is fallen into this same whoreson apoplexy.

Ch. Just. Well, heaven mend him! I pray you, let me speak with you.

Fal. This apoplexy is, as I take it, a kind of lethargy, an't please your lordship; a kind of sleeping in the blood, a whoreson tingling.

Ch. Just. What tell you me of it? be it as it is.

Fal. It hath its original from much grief, from study and perturbation of the brain. I have read the cause of his effects in Galen: it is a kind of deafness.

Ch. Just. I think you are fallen into the disease, for you hear not what I say to you.

Fal. Very well, my lord, very well: rather, an't please you, it is the disease of not listening, the malady of not marking, that I am troubled withal.

Ch. Just. To punish you by the heels would amend the attention of your ears; and I care not if I do become your physician.

Fal. I am as poor as Job, my lord, but not so patient: your lordship may minister the potion of imprisonment to me in respect of poverty; but how I should be your patient to follow your prescriptions, the wise may make some dram of a scruple, or indeed a scruple itself.

Ch. Just. I sent for you, when there were matters against you for your life, to come speak with me.

Fal. As I was then advised by my learned counsel in the laws of this land-service, I did not come.

Ch. Just. Well, the truth is, Sir John, you live in great infamy.
SECOND PART OF KING HENRY THE FOURTH Act I, Sc. II.

Fal. He that buckles him in my belt cannot live in less.

Ch. Just. Your means are very slender, and your waste is great.

Fal. I would it were otherwise: I would my means were greater and my waist slenderer. 164

Ch. Just. You have misled the youthful prince.

Fal. The young prince hath misled me: I am the fellow with the great belly, and he my dog. 168

Ch. Just. Well, I am loath to gall a new-healed wound: your day's service at Shrewsbury hath a little gilded over your night's exploit on Gadshill: you may thank the unquiet time for your quiet o'er-posting that action. 173

Fal. My lord!

Ch. Just. But since all is well, keep it so: wake not a sleeping wolf. 176

Fal. To wake a wolf is as bad as to smell a fox.

Ch. Just. What! you are as a candle, the better part burnt out. 180

Fal. A wassail candle, my lord; all tallow: if I did say of wax, my growth would approve the truth.

Ch. Just. There is not a white hair on your face but should have his effect of gravity. 185

Fal. His effect of gravity, gravy, gravy.

Ch. Just. You follow the young prince up and down, like his ill angel. 188

Fal. Not so, my lord; your ill angel is light, but I hope he that looks upon me will take me without weighing: and yet, in some respects, I grant, I cannot go, I cannot tell. Virtue is of so little regard in these costermonger times that true valour is turned bear-bred: pregnancy is made a tapster, and hath his quick wit wasted in giving reckonings: all the other gifts appertaining to man, as the malice of this age shapes them, are not worth a gooseberry. You that are old consider not the capacities of us that are young; you measure the heat of our livers with the bitterness of your galls; and we that are in the vaword of our youth, I must confess, are wags too. 203

Ch. Just. Do you set down your name in the scroll of youth, that are written down old with all the characters of age? Have you not a moist eye, a dry hand, a yellow cheek, a white beard, a decreasing leg, an increasing belly? Is not your voice broken, your wind short, your chin double, your wit single, and every part about you blasted with antiquity, and will you yet call yourself young? Fie, fie, fie, Sir John! 212

Fal. My lord, I was born about three of the clock in the afternoon, with a white head, and something a round belly. For my voice, I have lost it with hollaing, and singing of anthems. To approve my youth further, I will not: the truth is, I am only old in judgment and understanding; and he that will caper with me for a thousand marks, let him lend me the money, and have at him! For the box o' the ear that the prince gave you, he gave it like a rude prince, and you took it like a sensible lord. I have checked him for it, and the young lion repents; marry, not in ashes and sackcloth, but in new silk and old sack. 226

Ch. Just. Well, God send the prince a better companion!

Fal. God send the companion a better prince! I cannot rid my hands of him. 230

Ch. Just. Well, the king hath severed you and Prince Harry. I hear you are going with Lord John of Lancaster against the archbishop and the Earl of Northumberland. 234

Fal. Yea; I thank your pretty sweet wit for it. But look you pray, all you that kiss my lady Peace at home, that our armies join not in a hot day; for, by the Lord, I take but two shirts out with me, and I mean not to sweat extraordinarily: if it be a hot day, and I brandish anything but my bottle, I would I might never spit white again. There is not a dangerous action can peep out his head but I am thrust upon it. Well, I cannot last ever. But it was always yet the trick of our English nation, if they have a good thing, to make it too common. If you will needs say I am an old man, you should give me rest. I would to God my name were not so terrible to the enemy as it is: I were better to be eaten to death with rust than to be scourd to nothing with perpetual motion. 251

Ch. Just. Well, be honest, be honest; and God bless your expedition.

Fal. Will your lordship lend me a thousand pound to furnish me forth? 255

Ch. Just. Not a penny; not a penny; you are too impatient to bear crosses. Fare you well: commend me to my cousin Westmoreland. 258

[Exeunt Chief Justice and Servant.

Fal. If I do, fill me with a three-man beetle. A man can no more separate age and covetousness than he can part young limbs and lechery; but the gout galls the one, and the pox pinches the other; and so both the degrees prevent my curses. Boy! 264

Page. Sir!

Fal. What money is in my purse?

Page. Seven groats and twopence. 267

Fal. I can get no remedy against this consumption of the purse: borrowing only lingers and lingers it out, but the disease is incurable. Go bear this letter to my Lord of Lancaster;
this to the prince; this to the Earl of Westmoreland; and this to old Mistress Ursula, whom I have weekly sworn to marry since I perceived the first white hair on my chin. About it: you know where to find me. [Exit PAGE.] A pox of this guilt! or, a guilt of this pox! for the one or the other plays the rogue with my great toe. 'Tis no matter if I do hal't; I have the wars for my colour, and my pension shall seem the more reasonable. A good wit will make use of anything; I will turn diseases to commodity. [Exit.

SCENE III.—York. A Room in the Archbishops's Palace.

Enter the Archbishop of York, Lord Hastings, Mowbray, and Bardolph.

Arch. Thus have you heard our cause and known our means: And, my most noble friends, I pray you all, Speak plainly your opinions of our hopes: And first, Lord Marshal, what say you to it? 4 Mowb. I well allow the occasion of our arms; But gladly would be better satisfied How in our means we should advance ourselves To look with forehead bold and big enough Upon the power and puissance of the king.

Hast. Our present musters grow upon the file To five-and-twenty thousand men of choice; And our supplies live largely in the hope Of great Northumberland, whose bosom burns With an incensed fire of injuries.

L. Bard. The question, then, Lord Hastings, standeth thus: Whether our present five-and-twenty thousand May hold up head without Northumberland. 17 Hast. With him, we may.

L. Bard. Ay, marry, there's the point: But if without him we be thought too feeble, My judgment is, we should not stand too far Till we had his assistance by the hand; For in a theme so bloody:foa'd as this, Conjecture, expectation, and surmise Of aids uncertain should not be admitted. 24 Arch. 'Tis very true, Lord Bardolph; for, indeed

It was young Hotspur's case at Shrewsbury.

L. Bard. It was, my lord; who lin'd himself with hope, Eating the air on promise of supply, 28 Flattering himself with project of a power Much smaller than the smallest of his thoughts; And so, with great imagination Proper to madmen, led his powers to death, 32 And winking leap'd into destruction.

Hast. But, by your leave, it never yet did hurt To lay down likelihooods and forms of hope.

L. Bard. Yes, if this present quality of war,— Indeed the instant action,—a cause on foot, Lives so in hope, as in an early spring We see the appearing buds; which, to prove fruit, Hope gives not so much warrant as despair That frosts will bite them. When we mean to build, We first survey the plot, then draw the model; And when we see the figure of the house, Then must we rate the cost of the erection; Which if we find outweighs ability, What do we then but draw anew the model In fewer offices, or at last desist To build at all? Much more, in this great work,— Which is almost to pluck a kingdom down And set another up,—should we survey The plot of situation and the model, Consent upon a sure foundation, Question surveyors, know our own estate, How able such a work to undergo, To weigh against his opposite; or else, We fortify in paper, and in figures, Using the names of men instead of men: Like one that draws the model of a house Beyond his power to build it; who, half through, Gives o'er and leaves his part-created cost A naked-subject to the weeping clouds, And waste for churlish winter's tyranny.

Hast. Grant that our hopes, yet likely of fair birth, Should be still-born, and that we now possess'd The utmost man of expectation; I think we are a body strong enough, Even as we are, to equal with the king.

L. Bard. What! is the king but five-and-twenty thousand? 68 Hast. To us no more; nay, not so much, Lord Bardolph.

For his divisions, as the times do brawl, Are in three heads: one power against the French, And one against Glendower; perforse, a third Must take up us: so is the unfirm king In three divided, and his coffers sound With hollow poverty and emptiness.

Arch. That he should draw his several strengths together And come against us in full puissance, Need not be dreaded.

Hast. If he should do so, He leaves his back unarm'd, the French and Welsh Buying him at the heels: never fear that.

L. Bard. Who is it like should lead his forces hither?

Hast. The Duke of Lancaster and Westmoreland;
Against the Welsh, himself and Harry Monmouth:

But who is substituted 'gainst the French 84
I have no certain notice.

Arch. Let us on
And publish the occasion of our arms.
The commonwealth is sick of her own choice;
Their over-greedy love hath surfeited. 88
A habitation giddy and unsure
 Hath he that buildeth on the vulgar heart.
O thou fond many! with what loud applause
Didst thou beat heaven with blessing Bolingbroke
92
Before he was what thou wouldst have him be:
And being now trimm'd in thine own desires,
Thou, beastly feeder, art so full of him
That thou provok'st thyself to cast him up. 96
So, so, thou common dog, didst thou disgorg
Thy gluton bosom of the royal Richard,
And now thou wouldst eat thy dead vomit up,
And howl'st to find it. What trust is in these times?

They that, when Richard liv'd, would have him
die,
Are now become enamour'd on his grave:
Thou, that threw'st dust upon his goodly head,
When through proud London he came sighing on
After the admired heels of Bolingbroke,
Cry'st now, 'O earth! yield us that king again,
And take thou this!' O, thoughts of men
accurst!
Past and to come seem best; things present
worse. 108

Mowb. Shall we go draw our numbers and
set on?
Hast. We are time's subjects, and time bids
be gone. [Exeunt.

ACT II.

* SCENE I.—London. A Street.

Enter Mistress Quickly: Fang, and his Boy,
with her; and Snare following.

Quick. Master Fang, have you entered the
exon?

Fang. It is entered.
Quick. Where's your yeoman? Is it a lusty
yeoman? will a' stand to 't?
Fang. Sirrah, where's Snare?
Quick. O Lord, ay! good Master Snare.
Snare. Here, here.
Fang. Snare, we must arrest Sir John Fal-
staff.
Quick. Yea, good Master Snare; I have en-
tered him and all.

Snare. It may chance cost some of us our
lives, for he will stab.
Quick. Alas the day! take heed of him: he
stabb'd me in mine own house, and that most
beastly. In good faith, he cares not what
mischief he doth if his weapon be out: he
will fom like any devil, he will spare neither
man, woman, nor child. 20
Fang. If I can close with him I care not for
his thrust.
Quick. No, nor I neither: I'll be at your
elbow.
Fang. An I but fist him once; an' a' come but
within my vice,—

Quick. I am undone by his going; I warrant
you, he's an infinitive thing upon my score.
Good Master Fang, hold him sure: good Master
Snare, let him not 'scape: A' comes continually
to Pie-corner—saving your manhoods—to buy
a saddle, and he's invited to dinner to the Lub-
ber's Head in Lumber-Street, to Master Smooth's
the silkman: I pray ye, since my exyon is entered,
and my case so openly known to the world, let
him be brought in to his answer. A hundred
mark is a long one for a poor lone woman to
bear; and I have borne, and borne, and borne;
and have been fubbed off, and fubbed off, and
fubbed off, from this day to that day, that it is
a shame to be thought on. There is no honesty in
such dealing; unless a woman should be made
an ass, and a beast, to bear every knave's wrong.
Yonder he comes; and that arrant malmesy-
nose knave, Bardolph, with him. Do your offices,
do your offices, Master Fang and Master Snare;
do me, do me, do me your offices. 47

Enter SIR JOHN FALSTAFF, Page, and BAR-
DOLPH.

Fal. How now! whose mare's dead? what's
the matter?

Fang. Sir John, I arrest you at the suit of
Mistress Quickly.
Fal. Away, varlets! Draw, Bardolph: cut
me off the villain's head; throw the quen in
the channel.

Quick. Throw me in the channel! I'll throw
thee in the channel. Wilt thou? wilt thou? thou
bassadry rogue! Murder, murder! Ah, thou
honey-suckle villain! wilt thou kill God's officers
and the king's? Ah, thou honey-seed rogue!
thou art a honey-seed, a man-queller, and a
woman-queller.

Fal. Keep them off, Bardolph.

Fang. A rescue! a rescue!

Quick. Good people, bring a rescue or twol
Thou wot, wot thou? thou wot, wot's ta? do,
do, thou rogue! do, thou hemp-seed!
Act II, Sc. I. SECOND PART OF KING HENRY THE FOURTH

Fal. Away, you scullion! you rampallien! you rustillarian! I'll tickle your catastrophe. 68

Enter the LORD CHIEF JUSTICE, attended.

Ch. Just. What is the matter? keep the peace here, ho!

Quick. Good my lord, be good to me! I beseech you, stand to me! 72

Ch. Just. How now, Sir John! what! are you brawling here?

Dost this become your place, your time and business?

You should have been well on your way to York.

Stand from him, fellow: wheresoe'er hang'st upon him? 76

Quick. O, my most worshipful lord, an't please your grace, I am a poor widow of Eastcheap, and he is arrested at my suit.

Ch. Just. For what sum? 80

Quick. It is more than for some, my lord; it is for all, all I have. He hath eaten me out of house and home; he hath put all my substance into that fat belly of his: but I will have some of it out again, or I will ride thee o' nights like the mare.

Fal. I think I am as like to ride the mare if I have any vantage of ground to get up. 88

Ch. Just. How comes this, Sir John? Fie! what man of good temper would endure this tempest of exclamation? Are you not ashamed to enforce a poor widow to so rough a course to come by her own? 93

Fal. What is the gross sum that I owe thee?

Quick. Marry, if thou wert an honest man, thyself and the money too. Thou didst swear to me upon a parcel-gilt goblet, sitting in my Dolphin-chamber, at the round table, by a seacoal fire, upon Wednesday in Wheesoon week, when the prince broke thy head for liking his father to a singing-man of Windsor, thou didst swear to me then, as I was washing thy wound, to marry me and make me my lady thy wife. Canst thou deny it? Did not goodwife Keech, the butcher's wife, come in then and call me gossip Quickly? coming in to borrow a mess of vinegar; telling us she had a good dish of prawns; whereby thou didst desire to eat some, whereby I told thee they were ill for a green wound? And didst thou not, when she was gone down-stairs, desire me to be no more so familiar with such poor people; saying that ere long they should call me madam? And didst thou not kiss me and bid me fetch thee thirty shillings? I put thee now to thy book-oath: deny it if thou canst.

Fal. My lord, this is a poor mad soul; and she says up and down the town that her eldest son is like you. She hath been in good case, and the truth is, poverty hath distracted her. But for these foolish officers, I beseech you I may have redress against them. 122

Ch. Just. Sir John, Sir John, I am well acquainted with your manner of wrenching the true cause the false way. It is not a confident brow, nor the throng of words that come with such more than impudent sauciness from you, can thrust me from a level consideration; you have, as it appears to me, practised upon the easy-yielding spirit of this woman, and made her serve your uses both in pursu and in person.

Quick. Yea, in truth, my lord. 132

Ch. Just. Prifthee, peace. Pay her the debt you owe her, and unpay the villany you have done her: the one you may do with stering money, and the other with current repentance.

Fal. My lord, I will not undergo this snap without reply. You call honourable boldness impudent sauciness: if a man will make curtsy, and say nothing, he is virtous. No, my lord, my humble duty remembered, I will not be your suitor: I say to you, I do desire deliverance from these officers, being upon hasty employment in the king's affairs. 144

Ch. Just. You speak as having power to do wrong: but answer in the effect of your reputation, and satisfy the poor woman.

Fal. Come hither, hostess. [Taking her aside.

Enter GOWER.

Ch. Just. Now, Master Gower! what news?

Gow. The king, my lord, and Harry Prince of Wales

Are near at hand: the rest the paper tells. 152

[Gives a letter.

Fal. As I am a gentleman.

Quick. Nay, you said so before.

Fal. As I am a gentleman. Come, no more words of it.

Quick. By this heavenly ground I tread on, I must be fain to pawn both my plate and the tapestry of my dining-chambers. 158

Fal. Glasses, glasses, is the only drinking: and for thy walls, a pretty slight dronky, or the story of the Prodigal, or the German hunting in water-work, is worth a thousand of these bed-hangings and these fly-bitten tapestries. Let it be ten pound if thou canst. Come, an it were not for thy humours, there is not a better wench in England. Go, wash thy face, and draw thy action. Come, thou must not be in this humour with me; dost not know me? Come, come, I know thou wast set on to this. 169

Quick. Prifthee, Sir John, let it be but twenty
nobiles: 't faith, I am loath to pawn my plate, so God save me, lal!

Fal. Let it alone; I'll make other shift: you'll be a fool still.

Quick. Well, you shall have it, though I pawn my gown. I hope you'll come to supper. You'll pay me all together?


Quick. Will you have Doll Tear-sheet meet you at supper?

Fal. No more words; let's have her.

[Exeunt MISTRESS QUICKLY, BARDOYL, Officers, and Page.

Ch. Just. I have heard better news.

Fal. What's the news, my good lord?

Ch. Just. Where lay the king last night?

Gov. At Basingsstoke, my lord.

Ch. Just. I hope, my lord, all's well: what is the news, my lord?

Ch. Just. Come all his forces back?

Gov. No; fifteen hundred foot, five hundred horse,

Are march'd up to my Lord of Lancaster,
Against Northumberland and the archbishop.

Fal. Comes the king back from Wales, my noble lord?

Ch. Just. You shall have letters of me presently.

Come, go along with me, good Master Gower.

Fal. My lord!

Ch. Just. What's the matter?

Fal. Master Gower, shall I entreat you with me to dinner?

Gov. I must wait upon my good lord here;
I thank you, good Sir John.

Ch. Just. Sir John, you loiter here too long, being you are to take soldiers up in counties as you go.

Fal. Will you sup with me, Master Gower?

Ch. Just. What foolish master taught you these manners, Sir John?

Fal. Master Gower, if they become me not, he was a fool that taught them me. This is the right fencing grace, my lord; tap for tap, and so part fair.

Ch. Just. Now the Lord lighten thee; thou art a great fool.

[Exeunt.

SCENE II. — The same Scene. Another Street.

Enter the Prince and Poins.

Prince. Before God, I am exceeding weary.

Poins. Is it come to that? I had thought weariness durst not have attached one of so high blood.

Prince. Faith, it does me, though it dis-

colours the complexion of my greatness to acknowledge it. Doth it not show vilely in me to desire small beer?

Poins. Why, a prince should not be so loosely studied as to remember so weak a composition.

Prince. Belike then my appetite was not princely got; for, by my troth, I do now remember the poor creature, small beer. But, indeed, these humble considerations make me out of love with my greatness. What a disgrace is it to me to remember thy name, or to know thy face to-morrow? or to take note how many pair of silk stockings thou hast; viz. these, and those that were thy peach-coloured ones! or to bear the inventory of thy shirys; as, one for superfluity, and one other for use! But that the tennis-court-keeper knows better than I, for it is a low ebb of linen with thee when thou keepest not rocket there; as thou hast not done a great while, because the rest of thy low-countries have made a shift to eat up thy holland: and God knows whether those that bawl out the ruins of thy linen shall inherit his kingdom; but the midwives say the children are not in the fault; whereupon the world increases, and kindreds are mightily strengthened.

Poins. How ill it follows, after you have laboured so hard, you should talk so idly! Tell me, how many good young princes would do so, their fathers being so sick as yours at this time is?

Prince. Shall I tell thee one thing, Poins?

Poins. Yes, faith, and let it be an excellent good thing.

Prince. It shall serve among wits of no higher breeding than thine.

Poins. Go to; I stand the push of your one thing that you will tell.

Prince. Marry, I tell thee, it is not meet that I should be sad, now my father is sick: albeit I could tell to thee,—as to one it pleases me, for fault of a better, to call my friend,—I could be sad, and sad indeed too.

Poins. Very hardly upon such a subject.

Prince. By this hand, thou thinkest me as far in the devil's book as thou and Falstaff for obduracy and persistency: let the end try the man. But I tell thee my heart bleeds inwardly that my father is so sick; and keeping such vile company as thou art hath in reason taken from me all ostentation of sorrow.

Poins. The reason?

Prince. What wouldst thou think of me if I should weep?

Poins. I would think thee a most princely hypocrite.

Prince. It would be every man's thought;
and thou art a blessed fellow to think as every man thinks: never a man’s thought in the world keeps the road-way better than thine: every man would think me a hypocrite indeed. And what accites your most worshipful thought to think so?

Poins. Why, because you have been so lewd and so much engrossed to Falstaff.

Prince. And to thee.

Poins. By this light, I am well spoken on; I can hear it with mine own ears: the worst that they can say of me is that I am a second brother and that I am a proper fellow of my hands; and these two things I confess I cannot help. By the mass, here comes Bardolph.

Enter BARDOLPH and PAGE.

Prince. And the boy that I gave Falstaff: a had him from me Christian; and look, if the fat villain have not transformed him ape.

Bard. God save your Grace!

Prince. And yours, most noble Bardolph.

Bard. [To the Page.] Come, you virtuous ass, you bashful fool, must you be blushing? wherefore blush you now? What a maidenly man-at-arms are you become! Is it such a matter to get a pottle-pot’s maidenhead?

Page. A calls me even now, my lord, through a red lattice, and I could discern no part of his face from the window: at last, I spied his eyes, and methought he had made two holes in the ale-wife’s new petticoat, and peeped through.

Prince. Hath not the boy profited?

Bard. Away, you whoreson upright rabbit, away!

Page. Away, you rascally Althea’s dream, away!

Prince. Instruct us, boy; what dream, boy?

Page. Marry, my lord, Althea dreamed she was delivered of a firebrand; and therefore called him her dream.


Poins. O! that this good blossom could be kept from cankers. Well, there is sixpence to preserve thee.

Bard. An you do not make him be hanged among you, the gallows shall have wrong.

Prince. And how doth thy master, Bardolph?

Bard. Well, my lord. He heard of your Grace’s coming to town: there’s a letter for you.

Poins. Delivered with good respect. And how doth the martlemas, your master?

Bard. In bodily health, sir.

Poins. Marry, the immortal part needs a physician; but that moves not him: though that be sick, it dies not.

Prince. I do allow this wen to be as familiar with me as my dog; and he holds his place, for I look you how he writes.

Poins. ‘John Falstaff, knight,—every man must know that, as oft as he has occasion to name himself: even like those that are akin to the king, for they never prick their finger but they say, ‘There is some of the king’s blood spilt.’ ‘How comes that?’ says he that takes upon him not to conceive. The answer is as ready as a borrower’s cap, ‘I am the king’s poor cousin, sir.’

Prince. Nay, they will be kin to us, or they will fetch it from Japhet. But to the letter:

Poins. Sir John Falstaff, knight, to the son of the king nearest his father, Harry Prince of Wales, greeting. Why, this is a certificate.

Prince. Peace!

Poins. I will imitate the honourable Romans in brevity: sure he means brevity in breath, short-winded.—I commend me to thee, I commend thee, and I leave thee. Be not too familiar with Poins; for he misuses thy favours so much that he swears thou art to marry his sister Nell. Repent at idle times as thou mayest, and so farewell.

Thine, by yea and no,—which is as much as to say, as thou useth him, JACK FALSTAFF, with my familiar; JOHN, with my brothers and sisters, and SIR JOHN with all Europe.

My lord, I’ll steep this letter in sack and make him eat it.

Prince. That’s to make him eat twenty of his words. But do you use me thus, Ned? must I marry your sister?

Poins. God send the wench no worse fortune! but I never said so.

Prince. Well, thus we play the fools with the time, and the spirits of the wise sit in the clouds and mock us. Is your master here in London?

Bard. Yes, my lord.

Prince. Where sups he? doth the old boar feed in the old frank?

Bard. At the old place, my lord, in Eastcheap.

Prince. What company?

Page. Ephesians, my lord, of the old church.

Prince. Sup any women with him?

Page. None, my lord, but old Mistress Quickly and Mistress Doll Tearsheet.

Prince. What pagan may that be?

Page. A proper gentlewoman, sir, and a kindwoman of my master’s.

Prince. Even such kin as the parish heifers are to the town bull. Shall we steal upon them, Ned, at supper?
SECOND PART OF KING HENRY THE FOURTH Act II, Sc. III.

Points. I am your shadow, my lord; I'll follow you.

Prince. Sirrah, you boy, and Bardolph; no word to your master that I am yet come to town: there's for your silence. [Gives money.

Bard. I have no tongue, sir.

Page. And for mine, sir, I will govern it. 180

Prince. Fare ye well; go. [Exeunt BARDOLPH and PAGE.] This Doll Tearsheet should be some road.

Points. I warrant you, as common as the way between Saint Alban's and London. 185

Prince. How might we see Falstaff bestow himself to-night in his true colours, and not ourselves be seen? 188

Points. Put on two leathern jerkins and aprons, and wait upon him at his table as drawers.

Prince. From a god to a bull! a heavy descension! it was Jove's case. From a prince to a prentice! a low transformation! that shall be mine; for in every thing the purpose must weigh with the folly. Follow me, Ned. [Exeunt.

SCENE III.—Warwick. Before NORTHUMBERLAND'S Castle.

Enter NORTHUMBERLAND, LADY NORTHUMBERLAND, and LADY PERCY.

North. I pray thee, loving wife, and gentle daughter,
Give even way unto my rough affairs:
Put not you on the visage of the times,
And be like them to Percy troublesome. 4

Lady N. I have given over, I will speak no more:
Do what you will; your wisdom be your guide.

North. Alas! sweet wife, my honour is at pawn;
And, but my going, nothing can redeem it. 8

Lady P. O! yet for God's sake, go not to these wars.
The time was, father, that you broke your word
When you were more endear'd to it than now;
When your own Percy, when my heart's dear
Harry,
Threw many a northward look to see his father
Bring up his powers; but he did long in vain.
Who then persuaded you to stay at home?
There were two honours lost, yours and your son's; 16
For yours, the God of heaven brighten it!
For his, it stuck upon him as the sun
In the grey vault of heaven; and by his light
Did all the chivalry of England move

To do brave acts: he was indeed the glass
Wherein the noble youth did dress themselves:
He had no legs, that practis'd not his gait;
And speaking thick, which nature made his blemish,

Became the accents of the valiant;
For those that could speak low and tardily,
Would turn their own perfection to abuse,
To seem like him: so that, in speech, in gait, 28
In diet, in affections of delight,
In military rules, humour of blood,
He was the mark and glass, copy and book,
That fashion'd others. And him, O wondrous him!

O miracle of men! him did you leave,—
Second to none, unseconed by you,—
To look upon the hideous god of war 32
In disadvantage; to abide a field
Where nothing but the sound of HOTSPUR'S name
Did seem defensible; so you left him.
Never, O! never, do his ghost the wrong
To hold your honour more precise and nice 40
With others than with him: let them alone.
The marshal and the archbishop are strong:
Had my sweet Harry had but half their numbers,
To-day might I, hanging on Hotspur's neck, 44
Have talk'd of Monmouth's grave.

North. Beawrue thy heart,
Fair daughter! you do draw my spirits from me
With new lamenting ancient oversights.
But I must go and meet with danger there, 48
Or it will seek me in another place,
And find me worse provided.

Lady N. O! fly to Scotland,
Till that the nobles and the armed commons
Have of their puissance made a little taste. 52

Lady P. If they get ground and vantage of the king,
Then join you with them, like a rib of steel,
To make strength stronger; but, for all our loves,
First let them try themselves. So did your son; 56
He was so suffer'd: so came I a widow;
And never shall have length of life enough
To rain upon remembrance with mine eyes, 60
That it may grow and sprout as high as heaven,
For recordation to my noble husband. 61

North. Come, come, go in with me. 'Tis with my mind
As with the tide swell'd up unto its height,
That makes a still-stand, running neither way:
Fain would I go to meet the archbishop,
But many thousand reasons hold me back.
I will resolve for Scotland: there am I,
Till time and vantage crave my company. 68

[Exeunt.
Act II, Sc. IV. SECOND PART OF KING HENRY THE FOURTH

Scene IV.—London. A Room in the Boar’s Head Tavern, in Eastcheap.

Enter two Drawers.


Sec. Draw. Mass, thou sayst true. The prince once set a dish of apple-johns before him, and told him there were five more Sir Johns; and, putting off his hat, said, ‘I will now take my leave of these six dry, round, old withered knights.’ It angered him to the heart; but he hath forgot that.

First Draw. Why then, cover, and set them down: and see if thou canst find out Sneak’s noise; Mistress Tearsheet would fain hear some music. Dispatch: the room where they supped is too hot; they’ll come in straight.

Sec. Draw. Sirrah, here will be the prince and Master Poins anon; and they will put on two of their jerkins and aprons; and Sir John must not know of it: Bardolph hath brought word.

First Draw. By the mass, here will be old utis: it will be an excellent stratagem.

Sec. Draw. I’ll see if I can find out Sneak.

[Exit.

Enter Mistress Quickly and Doll Tearsheet.

Quick. I faith, sweetheart, methinks now you are in an excellent good temperality: your pulisidge beats as extraordinarily as heart would desire; and your colour, I warrant you, is as red as any rose; in good truth, la! But, i’ faith, you have drunk too much canaries, and that’s a marvellous searching wine, and it perfumes the blood ere one can say, What’s this? How do you now?

Dol. Better than I was: hem!

Quick. Why, that’s well said; a good heart’s worth gold. Lo! here comes Sir John.

Enter Falstaff, singing.

Fal. When Arthur first in court—Empty the jordan.—[Exit First Drawer.]—And was a worthy king. How now, Mistress Doll!

Quick. Sick of a calm: yea, good sooth.

Fal. So is all her sect; an they be once in a calm they are sick.

Dol. You muddy rascal, is that all the comfort you give me?

Fal. You make fat rascals, Mistress Doll.

Dol. I make them glutony and diseases make them; I make them not.

Fal. If the cook help to make the gluttony, you help to make the diseases, Doll: we catch of you, Doll, we catch of you; grant that, my poor virtue, grant that.

Dol. Ay, marry; our chains and our jewels.

Fal. ‘Your brooches, pearls, and owches:’—for to serve bravely is to come halting off you know: to come off the breach with his pike bent bravely, and to surgery bravely; to venture upon the charged chambers bravely,—

Dol. Hang yourself, you muddy conger, hang yourself!

Quick. By my troth, this is the old fashion; you two never meet but you fall to some discord: you are both, in good troth, as rheumatic as two dry toasts; you cannot one bear with another’s confirmities. What the good-year! one must bear, and that must be you: you are the weaker vessel, as they say, the emptier vessel.

Dol. Can a weak empty vessel bear such a huge full hoghead? there’s a whole merchant’s venture of Bourdeaux stuff in him: you have not seen a hulk better stuffed in the hold. Come, I’ll be friends with thee, Jack: thou art going to the wars; and whether I shall ever see thee again or no, there is nobody cares.

Re-enter First Drawer.

First Draw. Sir, Ancient Pistol’s below, and would speak with you.

Dol. Hang him, swaggering rascal! let him not come hither: it is the foul-mouthedest rogue in England.

Quick. If he swagger, let him not come here: no, by my faith; I must live amongst my neighbours; I’ll no swaggerers: I am in good name and fame with the very best. Shut the door; there comes no swaggerers here: I have not lived all this while to have swaggering now: shut the door, I pray you.

Fal. Dost thou hear, hostess?

Quick. Pray you, pacify yourself, Sir John: there comes no swaggerers here.

Fal. Dost thou hear? it is mine ancient.

Quick. Tilly-fally, Sir John, never tell me: your ancient swaggerer comes not in my doors. I was before Master Tisick, the deputy, t’other day; and, as he said to me,—’twas no longer ago than Wednesday last,—’Neighbour Quickly,’ says he,—’Master Dumbe, our minister, was by then;—’Neighbour Quickly,’ says he, receive those that are civil, for,’ said he, ‘you are in an ill name;’ now, a,’ said so, I can tell whereupon; ‘for,’ says he, ‘you are an honest woman, and well thought on; therefore take heed what guests you receive: receive,’ says he, ‘no swaggering companions.’ There comes none here:—you
SECOND PART OF KING HENRY THE FOURTH Act II, Sc. IV.

would bless you to hear what he said. No, I'll no swaggerers.

Fal. He's no swaggerer, hostess; a tame cheater, 't faith; you may stroke him as gently as a puppy greyhound: he will not swagger with a Barbary hen if her feathers turn back in any show of resistance. Call him up, drawer. 108

[Exit First Drawer.

Quick. Cheater, call you him? I will bar no honest man my house, nor no cheater; but I do not love swaggering, by my troth; I am the worse, when one says swagger. Feel, masters, how I shake; look you, I warrant you. 113

Dol. So you do, hostess.

Quick. Do I? yea, in very truth, do I, an 'twere an aspen leaf: I cannot abide swaggerers.

Enter PISTOL, BARDOLPH, and Page.

Pist. God save you, Sir John! 117

Fal. Welcome, Ancient Pistol. Here, Pistol, I charge you with a cup of sack: do you discharge upon mine hostess. 120

Pist. I will discharge upon her, Sir John, with two bullets. 122

Fal. She is pistol-proof, sir; you shall hardly offend her. 124

Quick. Come, I'll drink no proofs nor no bullets: I'll drink no more than will do me good, for no man's pleasure, I.

Pist. Then to you, Mistress Dorothy; I will charge you. 129

Dol. Charge me! I scorn you, scurvy companion. What! you poor, base, rascally, cheating, lack-linen mate! Away, you mouldy rogue, away! I am meat for your master.

Pist. I know you, Mistress Dorothy. 134

Dol. Away, you cut-purse rascal! you filthy bung, away! By this wine, I'll thrust my knife in your mouldy chaps an you play the saucy cuttle with me. Away, you bottle-ale rascal! you basket-hilted jester, you! Since when, I pray you, sir? God's light! with two points on your shoulder! much! 141

Pist. God let me not live. I will murder your ruff for this!

Fal. No more, Pistol: I would not have you go off here. Discharge yourself of our company, Pistol.

Quick. No, good captain Pistol; not here, sweet captain. 148

Dol. Captain! thou abominable damned cheater, art thou not ashamed to be called captain? An captains were of my mind, they would truncheon you out for taking their names upon you before you have earned them. You a captain, you slave! for what? for tearing a poor whore's ruff in a bawdy-house? He a

captain! Hang him, rogue! He lives upon mouldy stewed prunes and dried cakes. A captain! God's light, these villains will make the word captain as odious as the word 'occupy,' which was an excellent good word before it was ill sorted: therefore captains had need look to it.

Bard. Pray thee, go down, good ancient. 162

Fal. Hear thee hither, Mistress Doll.

Pist. Not I; I tell thee what, Corporal Bardolph; I could tear her. I'll be revenged of her. 166

Page. Pray thee, go down.

Pist. I'll see her damned first; to Pluto's damned lake, by this hand, to the infernal deep, with Erebos and tortures vile also. Hold hook and line, say I. Down, down, dogs! down fates! Have we not Hiren here?

Quick. Good Captain Foesel, be quiet; it is very late, 't faith. I beseech you now, aggravate your choler.

Pist. These be good humours, indeed! Shall pack-horses, 176

And hollow pamper'd jades of Asia,
Which cannot go but thirty miles a day,
Compare with Caesars, and with Cannibals,
And Trojan Greeks? nay, rather damn them with
King Cerberus; and let the welkin roar.
Shall we fall foul for toys?

Quick. By my troth, captain, these are very bitter words.

Bard. Be gone, good ancient: this will grow to a brawl anon.

Pist. Die men like dogs! give crowns like pins! Have we not Hiren here? 188

Quick. O' my word, captain, there's none such here. What the good-year! do you think I would deny her? for God's sake be quiet.

Pist. Then feed, and be fat, my fair Calipolis.
Come, give's some sack.

Si fortuna me tormento, spero me contento.
Fear we broadsides? no, let the fiend give fire:
Give me some sack; and, sweetheart, lie thou there.

[Laying down his sword.

Come we to full points here, and are et ceteras
nothing? 197

Fal. Pistol, I would be quiet.

Pist. Sweet knight, I kiss thy neif. What! we have seen the seven stars.

Dol. For God's sake, thrust him down stairs! I cannot endure such a fustian rascal.

Pist. 'Thrust him down stairs!' know we not Galloway nags?

Fal. Quoit him down, Bardolph, like a shogroat shilling: nay, an a' do nothing but speak nothing, a' shall be nothing here.

Bard. Come, get you down stairs.
Dol. Sirrah, what humour is the prince of?
Fal. A good shallow young fellow: 'a would have made a good pantler, 'a would have chipped bread well.
Dol. They say, Poins has a good wit. 260
Fal. He a good wit! hang him, baboon! his wit is as thick as Tewksbury mustard: there is no more conceit in him than is in a mallet.
Dol. Why does the prince love him so, then? Fal. Because their legs are both of a bigness, and he plays at quoits well, and eats conger and fennel, and drinks off candles' ends for flapdragons, and rides the wild mare with the boys, and jumps upon joint-stools, and swears with a good grace, and wears his boots very smooth, like unto the sign of the leg, and breeds no bate with telling of discreet stories; and such other gambol faculties 'a has, that show a weak mind and an able body, for which the prince admits him: for the prince himself is such another; the weight of a hair will turn the scales between their avoidupois. 277
Prince. Would not this navi of a wheel have his ears cut off?
Poins. Let's beat him before his whore. 280
Prince. Look, whether the withered elder hath not his poll clawed like a parrot.
Poins. Is it not strange that desire should so many years outlive performance? 284
Fal. Kiss me, Doll.
Prince. Saturn and Venus this year in conjunction! what says the almanack to that?
Poins. And, look, whether the fiery Trigon, his man, be not lapsing to his master's old tables, his note-book, his counsel-keeper. 290
Fal. Thou dost give me flattering busses.
Dol. By my troth, I kiss thee with a most constant heart.
Fal. I am old, I am old.
Dol. I love thee better than I love e'er a scurvy young boy of them all. 296
Fal. What stuff wilt have a kittle of? I shall receive money o' Thursday; thou shalt have a cap to-morrow. A merry song! come: it grows late; we'll to bed. Thou'lt forget me when I am gone. 301
Dol. By my troth, thou'lt set me a weeping an thou sayst so: prove that ever I dress myself handsome till thy return. Well, hearken at the end.
Fal. Some sack, Francis!
Prince. [Coming forward.] Anon, anon, Poins. sir. 303
Fal. Ha! a bastard son of the king's? And art not thou Poins his brother?
Prince. Why, thou globe of sinful continents, what a life dost thou lead! 312
SECOND PART OF KING HENRY THE FOURTH  Act II, Sc. IV.

Fal. A better than thou: I am a gentleman; thou art a drawer.
Prince. Very true, sir; and I come to draw you out by the ears.
Quick. O the Lord preserve thy good Grace; by my troth, welcome to London. Now, the Lord bless that sweet face of thine! O Jesu! are you come from Wales?
Fal. Thou whoreson mad compound of majesty, by this light flesh and corrupt blood [pointing to Doll], thou art welcome.
Doll. How, you fat fool! I scorn you.
Points. My lord, he will drive you out of your revenge and turn all to a Merriment, if you take not the heat.
Prince. You whoreson candle-mine, you, how vilely did you speak of me even now before this honest, virtuous, civil gentlewoman!
Quick. Blessing on your good heart! and so she is, by my troth.
Fal. Didst thou hear me?
Prince. Yea; and you knew me, as you did when you ran away by Gadshill: you knew I was at your back, and spoke it on purpose to try my patience.
Fal. No, no, no; not so; I did not think thou wast within hearing.
Prince. I shall drive you then to confess the wilful abuse; and then know how to handle you.
Fal. No abuse, Hal, o’ mine honour; no abuse.
Prince. Not to dispraise me, and call me pantler and bread-chipper and I know not what?
Fal. No abuse, Hal.
Points. No abuse!
Fal. No abuse, Ned, in the world; honest Ned, none. I dispraised him before the wicked, that the wicked might not fall in love with him; in which doing I have done the part of a careful friend and a true subject, and thy father is to give me thanks for it. No abuse, Hal; none, Ned, none: no, faith, boys, none.
Prince. See now, whether pure fear and entire cowardice doth not make thee wrong this virtuous gentlewoman to close with us? Is she of the wicked? Is thine hostess here of the wicked? Or is thy boy of the wicked? Or honest Bardolph, whose zeal burns in his nose, of the wicked?
Points. Answer, thou dead elm, answer.
Fal. The fiend bath pricked down Bardolph irrecoverable; and his face is Lucifer’s privy-kitchen, where he doth nothing but roast mallow-worms. For the boy, there is a good angel about him; but the devil outbids him too.
Prince. For the women?
Fal. For one of them, she is in hell already, and burns poor souls. For the other, I owe her money; and whether she be damned for that, I know not.
Quick. No, I warrant you.
Fal. No, I think thou art not; I think thou art quit for that. Marry, there is another indictment upon thee, for suffering flesh to be eaten in thy house, contrary to the law; for which I think thou wilt howl.
Quick. All victuallers do so: what’s a joint of mutton or two in a whole Lent?
Prince. You, gentlewoman,—
Doll. What says your Grace?
Fal. His Grace says that which his flesh rebels against. [Knocking within.
Quick. Who knocks so loud at door? Look to the door there, Francis.

Enter Peto.
Prince. Peto, how now! what news?
Peto. The king your father is at Westminster; and there are twenty weak and wearied posts come from the north: and as I came along, I met and overtook a dozen captains, bare-headed, sweating, knocking at the taverns, and asking every one for Sir John Falstaff.
Prince. By heaven, Points, I feel me much to blame, so idly to profane the precious time, when tempest of commotion, like the south, borne with black vapour, doth begin to melt and drop upon our bare unarmed heads. Give me my sword and cloak. Falstaff, good night. [Exeunt the Prince, Points, Peto, and Bardolph.

Fal. Now comes in the sweetest morsel of the night, and we must hence and leave it unpicked. [Knocking within.] More knocking at the door!

Re-enter Bardolph.
How now! what’s the matter?
Bard. You must away to court, sir, presently;
a dozen captains stay at door for you.
Fal. [To the Page.] Pay the musicians, sirrah. Farewell, hostess; farewell, Doll. You see, my good wenches, how men of merit are sought after: the underserver may sleep when the man of action is called on. Farewell, good wenches. If I be not sent away post, I will see you again ere I go.
Doll. I cannot speak; if my heart be not ready to burst,—well, sweet Jack, have a care of thyself.
Fal. Farewell, farewell.
[Exeunt Falstaff and Bardolph.]
Quick. Well, fare thee well: I have known thee these twenty-nine years, come peacetime; but an honester, and truer-hearted man,—well, fare thee well.

Bard. [Within.] Mistress Tearsheet!
Quick. What's the matter?
Bard. [Within.] Bid Mistress Tearsheet come to my master.
Quick. O! run, Doll, run; run, good Doll.

[Exeunt.

ACT III.


Enter King Henry in his night-gown, with a Page.

K. Hen. Go, call the Earls of Surrey and of Warwick;
But, ere they come, bid them o'er-read these letters,
And well consider of them. Make good speed.

[Exit Page.

How many thousand of my poorest subjects Are at this hour asleep! O sleep! O gentle sleep! Nature's soft nurse, how have I fainted thee, That thou no more wilt weigh my eyelids down And steep my senses in forgetfulness?

Why rather, sleep, liest thou in smoky cribs, Upon uneasy pallets stretching thee, And hush'd with bustling night-flies to thy slumber,
Than in the perfumed chambers of the great, Under the canopies of costly state, And lull'd with sound of sweetest melody? O thou dull god! why liest thou with the vile In loathsome beds, and leave'st the kingly couch A watch-case or a common 'larum bell?

Wilt thou upon the high and giddy mast Seal up the ship-boy's eyes, and rock his brains In cradle of the rude imperious surge, And in the visitation of the winds, Who take the ruffian billows by the top, Curling their monstrous heads, and hanging them With deaf'ning clamour in the slippery clouds, That with the hurly death itself awakes?

Canst thou, O partial sleep! give thy repose To the wet sea-boy in an hour so rude, And in the calmest and most stilllest night, With all appliances and means to boot, Deny it to a king? Then, happy low, lie down! Uneasy lies the head that wears a crown.

Enter Warwick and Surrey.

War. Many good morrows to your majesty!
K. Hen. Is it good morrow, lords?

War. 'Tis one o'clock, and past.

K. Hen. Why then, good morrow to you all, my lords.

Have you read o'er the letters that I sent you?

War. We have, my liege.

K. Hen. Then you perceive the body of our kingdom,
How foul it is; what rank diseases grow,
And with what danger, near the heart of it, it is. War. It is but as a body, yet, distemper'd, Which to his former strength may be restor'd With good advice and little medicine: My Lord Northumberland will soon be cool'd.

K. Hen. O God! that one might read the book of fate, And see the revolution of the times,
Make mountains level, and the continent,— Weary of solid firmness,—melt itself Into the sea! and, other times, to see The beauchy girdle of the ocean Too wide for Neptune's hips; how chances mock, And changes fill the cup of alteration With divers liquors! O! if this were seen, The happiest youth, viewing his progress through What perils past, what crosses to ensue, Would shut the book, and sit him down and die.

'Tis not ten years gone Since Richard and Northumberland, great friends, Did feast together, and in two years after Were they at wars: it is but eight years since This Percy was the man nearest my soul, Who like a brother toil'd in my affairs And laid his love and life under my foot; Yea, for my sake, even to the eyes of Richard Gave him defiance. But which of you was by,—

[To Warwick.] You, cousin Nevil, as I may remember,—

When Richard, with his eye brimful of tears, Then check'd and rated by Northumberland, Did speak these words, now prov'd a prophecy: 'Northumberland, thou ladder, by the which My cousin Bolingbroke ascends my throne;' Though then, God knows, I had no such intent, But that necessity so bow'd the state That I and greatness were compelled to kiss: 'The time shall come,' thus did he follow it, 'The time will come, that foul sin, gathering head, Shall break into corruption:'—so went on, Foretelling this same time's condition And the division of our amity.

War. There is a history in all men's lives, Figuring the nature of the times deceas'd; The which observ'd, a man may prophesy, With a near aim, of the main chance of things As yet not come to life, which in their seeds
SECOND PART OF KING HENRY THE FOURTH ACT III, SC. II.

And weak Beginnings lie treasured.
Such things become the hatch and brood of time;
And by the necessary form of this
King Richard might create a perfect guess. 88
That great Northumberland, then false to him,
Would of that seed grow to a greater falseness,
Which should not find a ground to root upon,
Unless on you.

K. Hen. Are these things then necessities?
Then let them meet them like necessities; 93
And that same word even now cries out on us.
They say the bishop and Northumberland
Are fifty thousand strong.

War. It cannot be, my lord!
Rumour doth double, like the voice and echo, 07
The numbers of the fear'd. Please it your Grace
To go to bed: upon my soul, my lord,
The powers that you have sent forth 100
Shall bring this prize in very easily.
To comfort you the more, I have receiv'd
A certain instance that Glendower is dead.
Your majesty hath been this fortnight ill, 104
And these unseason'd hours performe must add
Unto your sickness.

K. Hen. I will take your counsel:
And were these inward wars once out of hand,
We would, dear lords, unto the Holy Land. 108
[Exeunt.

SCENE II.—Court before JUSTICE SHALLOW’S
House in Gloucestershire.

Enter SHALLOW and SILENCE, meeting; MOULDY,
SHADOW, WART, FEEBLE, BULLCALF and
Servants, behind.

Shal. Come on, come on, come on, sir; give
me your hand, sir, give me your hand, sir: an early stirrer,
by the rood! And how doth my
good cousin Silence? 4

Sil. Good morrow, good cousin Shallow.

Shal. And how doth my cousin, your bed-
fellow? and your fairest daughter and mine,
your god-daughter Ellen? 8

Sil. Alas! a black ousel, cousin Shallow!

Shal. By yea and nay, sir, I dare say my
cousin William is become a good scholar. He is
at Oxford still, is he not? 12

Sil. Indeed, sir, to my cost.

Shal. A’ must, then, to the inns o’ court
shortly. I was once of Clement’s Inn; where I
think they will talk of mad Shallow yet. 16

Sil. You were called ‘lusty Shallow’ then,
cousin.

Shal. By the mass, I was called any thing;
and I would have done any thing indeed too,
and roundly too. There was I, and Little John

Doit of Staffordshire- and black George Barnes,
and Francis Pickbone, and Will Squele a Cots-
woold man; you had not four such swinge-buck-
lers in all the inns of court again: and, I may
say to you, we knew where the bona-robos were,
and had the best of them all at commandment.
Then was Jack Falstaff, now Sir John, a boy, and
page to Thomas Mowbray, Duke of Norfolk. 29

Sil. This Sir John, cousin, that comes hither
anon about soldiers?

Shal. The same Sir John, the very same. I
saw him break Skogan’s head at the court gate,
when a’ was a crack not thus high: and the very
same day did I fight with one Sampson Stock-
fish, a fruiter, behind Gray’s Inn. Jesu! Jesu!
the mad days that I have spent; and to see how
many of mine old acquaintance are dead! 38

Sil. We shall all follow, cousin.

Shal. Certain, ’tis certain; very sure, very
sure: death, as the Psalmist saith, is certain to
all; all shall die. How a good yoke of bullocks
at Stamford fair?

Sil. Truly, cousin, I was not there. 44

Shal. Death is certain. Is old Double of your
town living yet?

Sil. Dead, sir.

Shal. Jesu! Jesu! dead! a’ drew a good
bow; and dead! a’ shot a fine shoot: John a
Gaunt loved him well, and betted much money
on his head. Dead! a’ would have clapped i’ the
clout at twelve score; and carried you a fore-
hand shaft a fourteen and fourteen and a half,
that it would have done a man’s heart good to
see. How a score of ewes now? 55

Sil. Thereafter as they be: a score of good
ewes may be worth ten pounds.

Shal. And is old Double dead?

Sil. Here come two of Sir John Falstaff’s
men, as I think. 60

Enter BARDOLPH, and One with him.

Bard. Good morrow, honest gentlemen: I
beseech you, which is Justice Shallow?

Shal. I am Robert Shallow, sir; a poor
esquire of this county, and one of the king’s
justices of the peace: what is your good pleasure
with me?

Bard. My captain, sir, commends him to you;
my captain, Sir John Falstaff: a tall gentleman,
by heaven, and a most gallant leader. 69

Shal. He greets me well, sir. I knew him a
good backsword man. How doth the good
knight? may I ask how my lady his wife doth?

Bard. Sir, pardon; a soldier is better accom-
modated than with a wife. 74

Shal. It is well said, in faith, sir; and it is
well said indeed too. ‘Better accommodat’d’
it is good; yea indeed, is it: good phrases are surely and ever were, very commendable. Accommodated! it comes of accommodate: very good; a good phrase.

Bard. Pardon me, sir; I have heard the word. 'Phrase,' call you it? By this good day, I know not the phrase; but I will maintain the word with my sword to be a soldier-like word, and a word of exceeding good command, by heaven. Accommodated; that is, when a man is, as they say, accommodated; or, when a man is, being, whereby, a' may be thought to be accommodated, which is an excellent thing. 89

Enter Falstaff.

Shal. It is very just. Look, here comes good Sir John. Give me your good hand, give me your worship's good hand. By my troth, you look well and bear your years very well: welcome, good Sir John.

Fal. I am glad to see you well, good Master Robert Shallow. Master Surecard, as I think.

Shal. No, Sir John; it is my cousin, Silence, in commission with me.

Fal. Good Master Silence, it well befits you should be of the peace.

Sil. Your good worship is welcome.

Fal. Fie! this is hot weather, gentlemen. Have you provided me here half a dozen sufficient men?

Shal. Marry, have we, sir. Will you sit?

Fal. Let me see them, I beseech you.

Shal. Where's the roll? where's the roll? where's the roll? Let me see, let me see, let me see.

So, so, so, so, so, so, so: yea, marry, sir: Ralph Mouldy! let him appear as I call; let them do so, let them do so. Let me see; where is Mouldy?

Moul. Here, an't please you.

Shal. What think you, Sir John? a good-limbed fellow; young, strong, and of good friends.

Fal. Is thy name Mouldy?

Moul. Yea, an't please you.

Fal. 'Tis the more time thou wert used.

Shal. Ha, ha, ha! most excellent, i' faith! things that are mouldy lack use: very singular good. In faith, well said, Sir John; very well said.

Fal. Prick him.

Moul. I was pricked well enough before, an you could have let me alone: my old dame will be undone now for one to do her husbandry and her drudgery: you need not to have pricked me; there are other men fitter to go out than I. 128

Fal. Go to: peace, Mouldy! you shall go. Mouldy, it is time you were spent.

Moul. Spent!

Shal. Peace, fellow, peace! stand aside: know you where you are? For the other, Sir John: let me see. Simon Shadow!

Fal. Yea, marry, let me have him to sit under: he's like to be a cold soldier.

Shal. Where's Shadow?

Shad. Here, sir.

Fal. Shadow, whose son art thou?

Shad. My mother's son, sir.

Fal. Thy mother's soul like enough, and thy father's shadow: so the son of the female is the shadow of the male: it is often so, indeed; but not of the father's substance.

Shal. Do you like him, Sir John?

Fal. Shadow will serve for summer; prick him, for we have a number of shadows to fill up the muster-book.

Shal. Thomas Wart?

Fal. Where's he?

Wart. Here, sir.

Fal. Is thy name Wart?

Wart. Yea, sir.

Fal. Thou art a very ragged wart.

Shal. Shall I prick him, Sir John?

Fal. It were superfluous; for his apparel is built upon his back, and the whole frame stands upon pins: prick him no more.

Shal. Ha, ha, ha! you can do it, sir; you can do it: I commend you well. Francis Feeble!

Fee. Here, sir.

Fal. What trade art thou, Feeble?

Fee. A woman's tailor, sir.

Shal. Shall I prick him, sir?

Fal. You may; but if he had been a man's tailor he'd have pricked you. Wilt thou make as many holes in an enemy's battle as thou hast done in a woman's petticoat?

Fee. I will do my good will, sir: you can have no more.

Fal. Well said, good woman's tailor! well said, courageous Feeble! Thou wilt be as valiant as the wrathful dove or most magnanimous mouse. Prick the woman's tailor; well, Master Shallow; deep, Master Shallow.

Fee. I would Wart might have gone, sir.

Fal. I would thou wert a man's tailor, that thou might'st mend him, and make him fit to go. I cannot put him to a private soldier that is the leader of so many thousands: let that suffice, most forcible Feeble.

Fee. It shall suffice, sir.

Fal. I am bound to thee, reverend Feeble. Who is next?

Shal. Peter Bullcalf o' the green!

Fal. Yea, marry, let's see Bullcalf.

Bull. Here, sir.
SECOND PART OF KING HENRY THE FOURTH  Act III, Sc. II.

Fal. 'Fore God, a likely fellow! Come, prick me Bullof till he roar again.  
Bull. O Lord! good my lord captain,—  
Fal. What! dost thou roar before thou art pricked?  
Bull. O Lord, sir! I am a diseased man.  
Fal. What disease hast thou?  
Bull. A whorsen cold, sir; a cough, sir, which I caught with ringing in the king's affairs upon his coronation day, sir.  
Fal. Come, thou shalt go to the wars in a gown; we will have away thy cold; and I will take such order that thy friends shall ring for thee. Is here all?  
Shal. Here is two more called than your number; you must have but four here, sir: and so, I pray you, go in with me to dinner.  
Fal. Come, I will go drink with you, but I cannot tarry dinner. I am glad to see you, by my troth, Master Shallow.  
Shal. O, Sir John, do you remember since we lay all night in the windmill in Saint George's fields?  
Fal. No more of that, good Master Shallow, no more of that.  
Shal. Hal! it was a merry night. And is Jane Nightwork alive?  
Fal. She lives, Master Shallow.  
Shal. She never could away with me.  
Fal. Never, never; she would always say she could not abide Master Shallow.  
Shal. By the mass, I could anger her to the heart. She was then a bona-roba. Doth she hold her own well?  
Fal. Old, old, Master Shallow.  
Shal. Nay she must be bold; she cannot choose but be old; certain she's old; and had Robin Nightwork by old Nightwork before I came to Clement's Inn.  
Sil. That's fifty-five year ago.  
Shal. Hal! cousin Silence, that thou hadst seen that this knight and I have seen. Hal! Sir John, said I well?  
Fal. We have heard the chimes at midnight, Master Shallow.  
Shal. That we have, that we have, that we have; in faith, Sir John, we have. Our watchword was, 'Hem, boys!' Come, let's to dinner; come, let's to dinner. Jesus, the days that we have seen! Come, come.  
[Exeunt Falstaff, Shallow, and Silence.  

Bull. Good Master Corporate Bardolph, stand my friend, and here's four Harry ten shillings in French crowns for you. In very truth, sir, I had as lief be hanged, sir, as go: and yet, for mine own part, sir, I do not care; but rather, because I am unwilling, and, for mine own part, have a desire to stay with my friends: else, sir, I did not care, for mine own part, so much.

Bard. Go to; stand aside.  
Moul. And, good Master corporal captain, for my old dame's sake, stand my friend: she has nobody to do any thing about her, when I am gone; and she is old, and cannot help herself. You shall have forty, sir.

Bard. Go to; stand aside.  
Fee. By my troth, I care not; a man can die but once; we owe God a death. I'll ne'er bear a base mind: an't be my destiny, so; an't be not, so. No man's so good to serve's prince; and let it go which way it will, he that dies this year is quit for the next.

Bard. Well said; thou'rt a good fellow.  
Fee. Faith, I'll bear no base mind.

Re-enter Falstaff and the Justices.

Fal. Come, sir, which men shall I have?  
Shal. Four, of which you please.

Bard. [To Falstaff.] Sir, a word with you. I have three pound to free Mouldy and Bullof.

Fal. [Aside to Bardolph.] Go to; well.  
Shal. Come, Sir John, which four will you have?

Fal. Do you choose for me.

Shal. Marry, then, Mouldy, Bullof, Feeble, and Shadow.

Bard. Mouldy, and Bullof: for you, Mouldy, stay at home till you are past service: and for your part, Bullof, grow till you come unto it: I will none of you.

Shal. Sir John, Sir John, do not yourself wrong: they are your likeliest men, and I would have you served with the best.

Fal. Will you tell me, Master Shallow, how to choose a man? Care I for the limb, the thewes, the stature, bulk, and big assemblance of a man? Give me the spirit, Master Shallow. Here's Wart; you see what a ragged appearance it is: a' shall charge you and discharge you with the motion of a pewterer's hammer, come off and on swifter than he that gibbets on the brewer's bucket. And this same half-faced fellow, Shadow, give me this man: he presents no mark to the enemy; the foeman may with as great aim level at the edge of a penknife. And, for a retreat; how swiftly will this Feeble the woman's tailor run off! Of give me the spare men, and spare me the great ones. Put me a caliver into Wart's hand, Bardolph.

Bard. Hold, Wart, traverse; thus, thus, thus.  
Fal. Come, manage me your caliver. So: very well: go to: very good: exceeding good. O, give me always a little, lean, old, chopp'd,
Act III, Sc. II.  SECOND PART OF KING HENRY THE FOURTH

bald scab: hold, there's a tester for thee. 299

Shal. He is not his craft's master, he doth not do it right. I remember at Mile-end Green, when I lay at Clement's Inn,—I was then Sir Dagonet in Arthur's show,—there was a little quiver fellow, and a' would manage you his piece thus: and a' would about and about, and come you in, and come you in; 'rah, tah, tah,' would a' say; 'bounce,' would a' say; and away again would a' go, and again would a' come: I shall never see such a fellow. 309

Fal. These fellows will do well, Master Shallow. God keep you, Master Silence: I will not use many words with you. Fare you well, gentlemen both: I thank you: I must a dozen mile to-night. Bardolph, give the soldiers coats. 314

Shal. Sir John, the Lord bless you! and prosper your affairs! God send us peace! At your return visit our house; let our old acquaintance be renewed: peradventure I will with ye to the court. 319

Fal. 'Fore God I would you would, Master Shallow.

Shal. Go to; I have spoke at a word. God keep you. 323

Fal. Fare you well, gentle gentlemen. [Exeunt Shallow and Silence.] On, Bardolph; lead the men away. [Exeunt Bardolph, Recruits, &c.] As I return, I will fetch off these justices: I do see the bottom of Justice Shallow. Lord, Lord! how subject we old men are to this vice of lying. This same starved justice hath done nothing but prate to me of the wildness of his youth and the feats he hath done about Turnbull Street; and every third word a lie, duer paid to the hearer than the Turk's tribute. I do remember him at Clement's Inn like a man made after supper of a cheese-paring: when a' was naked he was for all the world like a forked radish, with a head fantastically carved upon it with a knife: a' was so forlorn that his dimensions to any thick sight were invincible: a' was the very genius of famine; yet lecherous as a monkey, and the whores called him mandrake: a' came ever in the rearward of the fashion and sung those tunes to the over-scutched huswives that he heard the carmen whistle, and aware they were his fancies or his good-nights. And now is this Vice's dagger become a squire, and talks as familiarly of John a Gaunt as if he had been sworn brother to him; and I'll be sworn a' never saw him but once in the Till-yard, and then he burst his head for crowding among the marshal's men. I saw it and told John a Gaunt he beat his own name; for you might have thrust him and all his apparel into an eel-skin; the case of a treble hautboy was a mansion for him, a court; and now has he land and bees. Well, I will be acquainted with him, if I return; and it shall go hard but I will make him a philosopher's two stones to me. If the young dace be a bait for the old pike, I see no reason in the law of nature but I may snap at him. Let time shape, and there an end. [Exit.

ACT IV.

SCENE I.—A Forest in Yorkshire.

Enter the ARCHBISHOP OF YORK, MOWBKBAY, HASTINGS, and Others.

Arch. What is this forest call'd?

Hast. 'Tis Gaultree Forest, an' shall please your Grace.

Arch. Here stand, my lords, and send discoverers forth,
To know the numbers of our enemies.

Hast. We have sent forth already.

Arch. 'Tis well done. My friends and brethren in these great affairs, I must acquaint you that I have receiv'd New-dated letters from Northumberland;

Their cold intent, tenour and substance, thus: Here doth he wish his person, with such powers As might hold sortance with his quality;
The which he could not levy; whereupon
He is retir'd, to ripe his growing fortunes,
To Scotland; and concludes in hearty prayers
That your attempts may overlie the hazard
And fearful meeting of their opposite. 16

Mowb. Thus do the hopes we have in him touch ground
And dash themselves to pieces.

Enter a Messenger.

Hast. Now, what news?

Mess. West of this forest, scarcely off a mile,
In goodly form comes on the enemy; 20
And, by the ground they hide, I judge their number
Upon or near the rate of thirty thousand.

Mowb. The just proportion that we gave them out.

Let us away on and face them in the field. 24

Enter WESTMORELAND.

Arch. What well-appointed leader fronts us here?

Mowb. I think it is my Lord of Westmoreland.

West. Health and fair greeting from our general,
The Prince, Lord John and Duke of Lancaster.
SECOND PART OF KING HENRY THE FOURTH  Act IV, Sc. I.

Arch. Say on, my Lord of Westmoreland, in peace, 29
What doth concern your coming.

West. Then, my lord,
Unto your Grace do I in chief address
The substance of my speech. If that rebellion
Came like itself, in base and abject routs, 33
Led on by bloody youth, guarded with rags,
And countenance'd by boys and beggary;
I say, if dam'd commotion so appear'd,
In his true, native, and most proper shape,
You, reverend father, and these noble lords
Had not been here, to dress the ugly form
Of base and bloody insurrection 40
With your fair honours. You, lord archbishop,
Whose see is by a civil peace maintain'd,
Whose beard the silver hand of peace hath touch'd,
Whose learning and good letters peace hath tutor'd, 44
Whose white investments figure innocence,
The dove and very blessed spirit of peace,
Wherefore do you so ill translate yourself
Out of the speech of peace that bears such grace
Into the harsh and boisterous tongue of war; 49
Turning your books to greaves, your ink to blood,
Your pens to lances, and your tongue divine
To a loud trumpet and a point of war? 52

Arch. Wherefore do I this? so the question stands.
Briefly to this end: we are all diseas'd:
And, with our surfeiting and wanton hours
Have brought ourselves into a burning fever, 56
And we must bleed for it: of which disease
Our late king, Richard, being infected, died.
But, my most noble Lord of Westmoreland,
I take not on me here as a physician, 60
Nor do I as an enemy to peace
Troop in the throng's of military men;
But rather show a while like fearful war,
To diet rank minds sick of happiness 64
And purge the obstructions which begin to stop
Our very veins of life. Hear me more plainly:
I have in equal balance justly weigh'd
What wrongs our arms may do, what wrongs
we suffer, 68
And find our grieves heavier than our offences.
We see which way the stream of time doth run
And are enforc'd from our most quiet sphere
By the rough torrent of occasion; 72
And have the summary of all our grieves,
When time shall serve, to show in articles,
Which long ere this we offer'd to the king,
And might by no suit gain our audience. 76
When we are wrong'd and would unfold our grieves,
We are denied access unto his person
Even by those men that most have done us wrong.
The dangers of the days but newly gone,— 80
Whose memory is written on the earth
With yet appearing blood,—and the examples
Of every minute's instance, present now,
Have put us in these ill-beseeing arms;
Not to break peace, or any branch of it,
But to establish here a peace indeed,
Concurring both in name and quality.

West. When ever yet was your appeal denied?
Wherein have you been galled by the king? 89
What peer hath been suborn'd to grate on you,
That you should seal this lawless bloody book
Of for'd rebellion with a seal divine, 92
And consecrate commotion's bitter edge?

Arch. My brother general, the commonwealth,
To brother born an household cruelty,
I make my quarrel in particular. 96

West. There is no need of any such redress;
Or if there were, it not belongs to you.

Mowb. Why not to him in part, and to us all
That feel the bruises of the days before, 100
And suffer the condition of these times
To lay a heavy and unequal hand
Upon our honours?

West. O! my good Lord Mowbray,
Construe the times to their necessities, 104
And you shall say indeed, it is the time,
And not the king, that doth you injuries.
Yet, for your part, it not appears to me
Either from the king or in the present time 108
That you should have an inch of any ground
To build a grief on: were you not restor'd
To all the Duke of Norfolk's signories,
Your noble and right well-remember'd father's?

Mowb. What thing, in honour, had my father lost, 113
That need to be reviv'd and breath'd in me?
The king that low'd him as the state stood then,
Was force perforce compell'd to banish him:
And then that Harry Bolingbroke and he, 117
Being mounted and both roused in their seats,
Their neighing coursers daring of the spur,
Their armed staves in charge, their beavers down,
Their eyes of fire sparkling through sights of steel, 121
And the loud trumpet blowing them together,
Then, then, when there was nothing could have stay'd
My father from the breast of Bolingbroke, 124
O! when the king did throw his warder down,
His own life hung upon the staff he threw;
Then threw he down himself and all their lives
That by indictment and by dint of sword 128
Act IV, Sc. I. SECOND PART OF KING HENRY THE FOURTH

Have since miscarried under Bolingbroke.

Wes. You speak, Lord Mowbray, now you know not what.
The Earl of Hereford was reputed then In England the most valiant gentleman: 132
Who knows on whom Fortune would then have smil'd?
But if your father had been victor there, He ne'er had borne it out of Coventry; For all the country in a general voice 136
Cried hate upon him; and all their prayers and love Were set on Hereford, whom they doted on And bless'd and gazed indeed, more than the king.

But this is mere digression from my purpose. 140
Here come I from our princely general To know your griefs; to tell you from his Grace That he will give you audience; and wherein It shall appear that your demands are just, 144
You shall enjoy them; every thing set off That might so much as think you enemies.

Mowb. But he hath force'd us to compel this offer,
And it proceeds from policy, not love. 148
Wes. Mowbray, you overween to take it so.
This offer comes from mercy, not from fear:
For, lo! within a ken our army lies
Upon mine honour, all too confident 152
To give admittance to a thought of fear.
Our battle is more full of names than yours,
Our men more perfect in the use of arms,
Our armour all as strong, our cause the best;
Then reason will our hearts should be as good:
Say you not then our offer is well
Mowb. Well, by my will we shall admit no parley.

Wes. That argues but the shame of your offence: 160
A rotten case abides no handling.

Hast. Hath the Prince John a full commission,
In very ample virtue of his father, To hear and absolutely to determine 164
Of what conditions we shall stand upon?

Wes. That is intended in the general's name.
I muse you make so slight a question.

Arch. Then take, my Lord of Westmoreland, this schedule, 168
For this contains our general grievances:
Each several article herein redress'd;
All members of our cause, both her and hence, That are insinu'd to this action, 172
Acquitted by a true substantial form And present execution of our wills To us and to our purposes consign'd;
We come within our awful banks again 176
And knit our powers to the arm of peace.

Wes. This will I show the general. Please you, lords,
In sight of both our battles we may meet;
And either end in peace, which God so frame!
Or to the place of difference call the swords 181
Which must decide it.

Arch. My lord, we will do so. [Exit WESTMORELAND.

Mowb. There is a thing within my bosom tells me That no conditions of our peace can stand. 184

Hast. Fear you not that: if we can make our peace Upon such large terms, and so absolute As our conditions shall consist upon,
Our peace shall stand as firm as rocky mountains.

Mowb. Yea, but our valuation shall be such That every slight and false-derived cause, Yea, every idle, nice, and wanton reason Shall to the king taste of this action; 192
That, were our royal faiths martyrs in love, We shall be winnow'd with so rough a wind That even our corn shall seem as light as chaff And good from bad find no partition. 196

Arch. No, no, my lord. Note this; the king is weary Of dainty and such picking grievances:
For he hath found to end one doubt by death Revives two greater in the heirs of life; 200
And therefore will he wipe his tables clean, And keep no tell-tale to his memory That may repeat and history his loss To new remembrance; for full well he knows He cannot so precisely weed this land 205
As his misdoubts present occasion:
His foes are so enrooted with his friends That, plucking to unfix an enemy, He doth unrest his so and shake a friend. So that this land, like an offensive wife, That hath enrag'd him on to offer strokes, As he is striking, holds his infant up 212
And hangs resolv'd correction in the arm That was uprear'd to execution.

Hast. Besides, the king hath wasted all his rods On late offenders, that he now doth lack The very instruments of chastisement; So that his power, like to a fangless lion, May offer, but not hold.

Arch. 'Tis very true:
And therefore be assur'd, my good lord marshal, If we do now make our atonement well, 221
Our peace will, like a broken limb united, Grow stronger for the breaking.

Mowb. Be it so.

Here is return'd my Lord of Westmoreland. 224
SECOND PART OF KING HENRY THE FOURTH Act IV, Sc. II.

Re-enter Westmoreland.

West. The prince is here at hand: pleaseth your lordship,
To meet his Grace just distance 'tween our armies?
Mowb. Your Grace of York, in God's name then, set forward.
Arch. Before, and greet his Grace: my lord, we come. [Exeunt.

SCENE II.—Another Part of the Forest.

Enter, from one side, Mowbray, the Archbishop, Hastings, and Others; from the other side, John of Lancaster, Westmoreland, Officers, and Attendants.

Lanc. You are well encounter'd here, my cousin Mowbray:
Good day to you, gentle lord archbishop;
And so to you, Lord Hastings, and to all.
My Lord of York, it better show'd with you,
When that your flock, assembled by the bell,
Encircled you to hear with reverence
Your exposition on the holy text
Than now to see you here an iron man,
Cheering a rout of rebels with your drum,
Turning the word to sword and life to death.
That man that sits within a monarch's heart
And ripens in the sunshine of his favour,
Would he abuse the countenance of the king,
Alack! what mischief might he set abroach
In shadow of such greatness. With you, lord bishop,
It is even so. Who hath not heard it spoken
How deep you were within the books of God?
To us, the speaker in his parliament;
To us the imagin'd voice of God himself;
The very opener and intelligencer.
Between the grace, the sanctities of heaven,
And our dull workings. O! who shall believe
But you misuse the reverence of your place,
Employ the countenance and grace of heaven,
As a false favourite doth his prince's name,
In deeds dishonourable? You have taken up,
Under the counterfeit zeal of God,
The subjects of his substitute, my father;
And both against the peace of heaven and him
Have here upwarm'd them.
Arch. Good my Lord of Lancaster,
I am not here against your father's peace;
But, as I told my Lord of Westmoreland,
The time misorder'd doth, in common sense,
Crowd us and crush us to this monstrous form,
To hold our safety up. I sent your Grace
The parcels and particulars of our grief,—
The which hath been with scorn shov'd from

Whereon this Hydra son of war is born;
Whose dangerous eyes may well be charm'd aspelt
With grant of our most just and right desires,
And true obedience, of this madness cur'd,
Stoop tamely to the foot of majesty.
Mowb. If not, we ready are to try our fortunes
To the last man.
Hast. And though we here fall down,
We have supplies to second our attempt:
If they miscarry, theirs shall second them;
And so success of mischief shall be born,
And heir from heir shall hold this quarrel up
Whiles England shall have generation.
Lanc. You are too shallow, Hastings, much too shallow,
To sound the bottom of the after-times.
West. Pleaseth your Grace, to answer them directly
How farth you do like their articles.
Lanc. I like them all, and do allow them well;
And swear here, by the honour of my blood,
My father's purposes have been mistock,
And some about him have too lavishly
Wrested his meaning and authority.
My lord, these griefs shall be with speed redress'd;
Upon my soul, they shall. If this may please you,
Discharge your powers unto their several counties,
As we will ours: and here between the armies
Let's drink together friendly and embrace,
That all their eyes may bear those tokens home
Of our restored love and amity.
Arch. I take your princely word for these redresses.
Lanc. I give it you, and will maintain my word:
And thereupon I drink unto your Grace.
Hast. [To an Officer.] Go, captain, and deliver
to the army
This news of peace: let them have pay, and part:
I know it will well please them: hie thee, captain.
[Exit Officer.

Arch. To you, my noble Lord of Westmoreland.
West. I pledge your Grace: and, if you knew
what pains
I have bestow'd to breed this present peace,
You would drink freely; but my love to you
Shall show itself more openly hereafter.
Arch. I do not doubt you.
West. I am glad of it.
Health to my lord and gentle cousin, Mowbray.
Mowb. You wish me health in very happy season; 80
For I am, on the sudden, something ill. Arch. Against ill chances men are ever merry, But heaviness foreruns the good event. West. Therefore be merry, coz; since sudden sorrow Serves to say thus, Some good thing comes to morrow. 84
Arch. Believe me, I am passing light in spirit. Mowb. So much the worse if your own rule be true. [Shouts within. Lanc. The word of peace is render’d: hark, how they shout!
Mowb. This had been cheerful, after victory. Arch. A peace is of the nature of a conquest; For then both parties nobly are subdued, And neither party loser.
Lanc. Go, my lord, And let our army be discharged too. 92
[Exit Westmoreland. And, good my lord, so please you, let our trains March by us, that we may peruse the men We should have cop’d withal.
Arch. Go, good Lord Hastings, 96 And, ere they be dismiss’d, let them march by. 96
[Exit Hastings.
Lanc. I trust, lords, we shall lie to-night together.

Re-enter Westmoreland. Now, cousin, wherefore stands our army still? West. The leaders, having charge from you to stand, 100
Will not go off until they hear you speak. Lanc. They know their duties.

Re-enter Hastings.
Hast. My lord, our army is dispers’d already: Like youthful steers unyok’d, they take their courses 104
East, west, north, south; or, like a school broke up,
Each hurries toward his home and sporting-place.
West. Good tidings, my Lord Hastings; for the which I do arrest thee, traitor, of high treason: 108
And you, lord archbishop, and you, Lord Mowbray,
Of capital treason I attach you both.
Mowb. Is this proceeding just and honourable?
West. Is your assembly so? Arch. Will you thus break your faith?
Lanc. I pawn’d thee none. I promis’d you redress of these same grievances

Whereof you did complain; which, by mine honour,
I will perform with a most Christian care. 116
But for you, rebels, look to taste the due Meet for rebellion and such acts as yours.
Most shallowly did you these arms commence,
Fondly brought here and foolishly sent hence.
Strike up our drums! pursue the scatter’d stray:
God, and not we, hath safely fought to-day.
Some guard these traitors to the block of death;
Treason’s true bed, and yielder up of breath. 124
[Exeunt.

Scene III.—Another Part of the Forest.

Alarums. Excursions. Enter Falstaff and Coleville, meeting.

Fal. What’s your name, sir? of what condition are you, and of what place, I pray?
Cole. I am a knight, sir; and my name is Coleville of the dale.

Fal. Well then, Coleville is your name, a knight is your degree, and your place the dale: Coleville shall be your name, a traitor your degree, and the dungeon your place, a place deep enough; so shall you be still Coleville of the dale.

Cole. Are not you Sir John Falstaff?
Fal. As good a man as he, sir, who’er I am. Do ye yield, sir, or shall I sweat for you? If I do sweat, they are the drops of thy lovers, and they weep for thy death: therefore rouse up fear and trembling, and do observance to my mercy.

Cole. I think you are Sir John Falstaff, and in that thought yield me.

Fal. I have a whole school of tongues in this belly of mine, and not a tongue of them all speaks any other word but my name. An I had but a belly of any indifferency, I were simply the most active fellow in Europe: my womb, my womb, my womb undoes me. Here comes our general.

Enter John of Lancaster, Westmoreland, Blunt, and Others.

Lanc. The heat is past, follow no further now.

Call in the powers, good cousin Westmoreland. [Exit Westmoreland. Now, Falstaff, where have you been all this while? 29

When everything is ended, then you come:
These tardy tricks of yours will, on my life,
One time or other break some gallows’ back. 32
Fal. I would be sorry, my lord, but it should be thus: I never knew yet but rebuke and check
was the reward of valour. Do you think me a swallow, an arrow, or a bullet? have I, in my poor and old motion, the expedition of thought? I have speeded hither with the very extremest inch of possibility; I have foundered nine score and odd posts; and here, travel-tainted as I am, have, in my pure and immaculate valour, taken Sir John Coleville of the dale, a most furious knight and valorous enemy. But what of that? he saw me, and yielded; that I may justly say with the hook-nosed fellow of Rome, ‘I came, saw, and overcame.’

Lanc. It was more of his courtesy than your deserving.

Fal. I know not; here he is, and here I yield him; and I beseech your Grace, let it be booked with the rest of this day’s deeds; or, by the Lord, I will have it in a particular ballad else, with mine own picture on the top on’t, Coleville kissing my foot. To the which course if I be enforced, if you do not all show like gilt twopences to me, and I in the clear sky of fame o’er shine you as much as the full moon doth the cinders of the element, which show like pins’ heads to her, believe not the word of the noble. Therefore let me have right, and let desert mount.

Lanc. Thine’s too heavy to mount.

Fal. Let it shine then.

Lanc. Thine’s too thick to shine.

Fal. Let it do something, my good lord, that may do me good, and call it what you will.

Lanc. Is thy name Coleville?

Cole. It is, my lord.

Lanc. A famous rebel art thou, Coleville.

Fal. And a famous true subject took him.

Cole. I am, my lord, but as my betters are that led me hither: had they been ruled by me you should have won them dearer than you have.

Fal. I know not how they sold themselves: but thou, like a kind fellow, gavest thyself away gratis, and I thank thee for thee.

Re-enter Westmoreland.

Lanc. Have you left pursuit?

West. Retreat is made and execution stay’d.

Lanc. Send Coleville with his confederates To York, to present execution.

Blunt, lead him hence, and see you guard him sure.

[Exeunt Blunt and Others with Coleville, guarded.]

And now dispatch we toward the court, my lords:

I hear, the king my father is sore sick:

Our news shall go before us to his majesty, which, cousin [addressing Westmoreland], you shall bear, to comfort him;

And we with sober speed will follow you.

Fal. My lord, I beseech you, give me leave to go, Through Gloucestershire, and when you come to court

Stand my good lord, pray, in your good report.

Lanc. Fare you well, Falstaff: I, in my condition,

Shall better speak of you than you deserve.

[Exeunt all but Falstaff.

Fal. I would you had but the wit: ’twere better than your dukedom. Good faith, this same young sober-blooded boy doth not love me; nor a man cannot make him laugh; but that’s no marvel, he drinks no wine. There’s never none of these demure boys come to any proof; for thin drink doth so over-cool their blood, and making many fish-meals, that they fall into a kind of male green-sickness; and then, when they marry, they get wenchs. They are generally fools and cowards, which some of us should be too but for inflammation. A good sherris-sack hath a two-fold operation in it. It ascends me into the brain; dries me there all the foolish and dull and cruddy vapours which environ it; makes it apprehensive, quick, forgetive, full of nimble fiery and delectable shapes; which, deliver’d o’er to the voice, the tongue, which is the birth, becomes excellent wit. The second property of your excellent sherris is, the warming of the blood; which, before cold and settled, left the liver white and pale, which is the badge of pusillanimit and cowardice: but the sherris warms it and makes it course from the inwards to the parts extreme. It illumineth the face, which, as a beacon, gives warning to all the rest of this little kingdom, man, to arm; and then the vital commoners and inland petty spirits must me all to their captain, the heart, who, great and puffed up with this reuine, doth any deed of courage; and this valour comes of sherris. So that skill in the weapon is nothing without sack, for that sets it a-work; and learning, a mere hoard of gold kept by a devil till sack commences it and sets it in act and use. Hereof comes it that Prince Harry is valiant; for the cold blood he did naturally inherit of his father, he hath, like lean, sterile, and bare land, manured, husbanded, and till’d, with excellent endeavoure of drinking good and good store of fertile sherris, that he is become very hot and valiant. If I had a thousand sons, the first human principle I would teach them should be, to forewear thin potations and to addict themselves to sack.
Enter Bardolph.

How now, Bardolph?

Bard. The army is discharged all and gone.

Fal. Let them go. I'll through Gloucestershire; and there will I visit Master Robert Shallow, esquire: I have him already tempering between my finger and my thumb, and shortly will I seal with him. Come away. [Exeunt.

SCENE IV.—Westminster. The Jerusalem Chamber.

Enter King Henry, Clarence, Gloucester, Warwick, and Others.

K. Hen. Now, lords, if God doth give successful end To this debate that bleedeth at our doors, We will our youth lead on to higher fields And draw no swords but what are sanctified. Our navy is address'd, our power collected, Our substitutes in absence well invested, And everything lies level to our wish: Only, we want a little personal strength; And pause us, till these rebels, now afoot, Come underneath the yoke of government.

War. Both which we doubt not but your majesty Shall soon enjoy.

K. Hen. Humphrey, my son of Gloucester, Where is the prince your brother?

Glo. I think he's gone to hunt, my lord, at Windsor.

K. Hen. And how accompanied?

Glo. I do not know, my lord.

K. Hen. Is not his brother Thomas of Clarence with him?

Glo. No, my good lord; he is in presence here.

Cla. What would my lord and father?

K. Hen. Nothing but well to thee, Thomas of Clarence.

How chance thou art not with the prince thy brother?

He loves thee, and thou dost neglect him, Thomas;
Thou hast a better place in his affection Than all thy brothers: cherish it, my boy, And noble offices thou mayst effect Of mediation, after I am dead, Between his greatness and thy other brethren: Therefore omit him not; blunt not his love, Nor lose the good advantage of his grace By seeming cold or careless of his will; For he is gracious, if he be observ'd: He hath a tear for pity and a hand Open as day for melting charity; Yet, notwithstanding, being incens'd, he's a flint;

As humorous as winter, and as sudden As flaws congealed in the spring of day. His temper therefore must be well observ'd: Chide him for faults, and do it reverently, When you perceive his blood inclin'd to mirth; But, being moody, give him line and scope, Till that his passions, like a whale on ground, Confound themselves with working. Learn this, Thomas, And thou shalt prove a shelter to thy friends, A hoop of gold to bund thy brothers in, That the united vessel of their blood, Mingled with venom of suggestion— As, force perforce, the age will pour it in— Shall never leak, though it do work as strong As aconitum or rash gunpowder.

Cla. I shall observe him with all care and love.

K. Hen. Why art thou not at Windsor with him, Thomas?

Cla. He is not there to-day; he dines in London.

K. Hen. And how accompanied? canst thou tell that?

Cla. With Poins and other his continual followers.

K. Hen. Most subject is the fattest soil to weeds; And he, the noble image of my youth, Is overspread with them: therefore my grief Stretches itself beyond the hour of death: The blood weeps from my heart when I do shape In forms imaginary the unguided days And rotten times that you shall look upon When I am sleeping with my ancestors. For when his headstrong riot hath no curb, When rage and hot blood are his counsellors, When means and lavish manners meet together, O! with what wings shall his affections fly Towards fronting peril and oppos'd decay. War. My gracious lord, you look beyond him quite: The prince but studies his companions Like a strange tongue, wherein to gain the language, 'Tis needful that the most immodest word Be look'd upon, and learn'd; which once attain'd, Your highness knows, comes to no further use But to be known and hated. So, like gross terms, The prince will in the perfectness of time Cast off his followers; and their memory Shall as a pattern or a measure live, By which his Grace must mete the lives of others, Turning past evils to advantages.
SECOND PART OF KING HENRY THE FOURTH Act IV, Sc. V.

K. Hen. 'Tis seldom when the bee doth leave her comb
In the dead carrion.

Enter WESTMORELAND.

Who's here? Westmoreland! 80
West. Health to my sovereign, and new happiness
Added to that that I am to deliver!
Prince John your son doth kiss your Grace's hand:
Mowbray, the Bishop Scroop, Hastings and all
Are brought to the correction of your law. 85
There is not now a rebel's sword unheath'd,
But Peace puts forth her olive everywhere.
The manner how this action hath been borne 88
Here at more leisure may your highness read,
With every course in his particular.
K. Hen. O Westmoreland! thou art a summer bird,
Which ever in the haunch of winter sings 92
The lifting up of day.

Enter HARCOURT.

Look! here's more news.

Har. From enemies heaven keep your majesty;
And, when they stand against you, may they fall
As those that I am come to tell you of! 96
The Earl Northumberland, and the Lord Bardolph,
With a great power of English and of Scots,
Are by the sheriff of Yorkshire overthrown.
The manner and true order of the fight 100
This packet, please you, contains at large.
K. Hen. And wherefore should these good news make me sick?
Will Fortune never come with both hands full
But write her fair words still in foulest letters?
She either gives a stomach and no food; 105
Such are the poor, in health; or else a feast
And takes away the stomach; such are the rich,
That have abundance and enjoy it not. 108
I should rejoice now at this happy news,
And now my sight fails, and my brain is giddy.
O me! come near me, now I am much ill.
Glo. Comfort, your majesty!
Cla. O my royal father! 112
West. My sovereign lord, cheer up yourself:
look up!
War. Be patient, princes: you do know these fits
Are with his highness very ordinary:
Stand from him, give him air; he'll straight be well. 116

Cla. No, no; he cannot long hold out these pangs:
The incessant care and labour of his mind
Hath wrought the mure that should confine it in
So thin, that life looks through and will break out.
Glo. The people fear me; for they do observe
Unfather'd heirs and loathly births of nature:
The seasons change their manners, as the year
Had found some months asleep and leap'd them over. 124
Cla. The river hath thrice flow'd, no ebb between;
And the old folk, time's doting chronicles,
Say it did so a little time before
That our great-grandson, Edward, sick'd and died.
War. Speak lower, princes, for the king recovers.
Glo. This apoplexy will certain be his end.
K. Hen. I pray you take me up, and bear me hence
Into some other chamber: softly, pray. 132

SCENE V.—Another Chamber.

KING HENRY lying on a bed: CLARENCE, GLOUCESTER, WARWICK, and Others in attendance.

K. Hen. Let there be no noise made, my gentle friends;
Unless some dull and favourable hand
Will whisper music to my weary spirit.
War. Call for the music in the other room. 4
K. Hen. Set me the crown upon my pillow here.
Cla. His eye is hollow, and he changes much.
War. Less noise, less noise!

Enter the Prince.

Prince. Who saw the Duke of Clarence?
Cla. I am here, brother, full of heaviness. 8
Prince. How now! rain within doors, and none abroad!
How doth the king?
Glo. Exceeding ill.
Prince. Heard he the good news yet?
Tell it him.
Glo. He alter'd much upon the hearing it. 12
Prince. If he be sick with joy, he will recover
without physic.
War. Not so much noise, my lords. Sweet prince, speak low;
The king your father is dispos'd to sleep. 16
Cla. Let us withdraw into the other room.
War. Will't please your Grace to go along with us?
Act IV, Sc. V. SECOND PART OF KING HENRY THE FOURTH

Prince. No; I will sit and watch here by the king. [Exeunt all but the PRINCE.

Why doth the crown lie there upon his pillow, 20
Being so troublesome a bedfellow?
O polish’d perturbation! golden care!
That keepst the ports of slumber open wide
To many a watchful night! Sleep with it now!
Yet not so sound, and half so deeply sweet 25
As he whose brow with homely biggin bound
Snores out the watch of night. O majesty!
When thou dost pinch thy bearer, thou dost sit
Like a rich armour worn in heat of day, 29
That scalds with safety. By his gates of breath
There lies a downy feather which stirs not:
Did he susire, that light and weightless down
Perforce must move. My gracious lord! my 33
father!
This sleep is sound indeed; this is a sleep
That from this golden rigol hath divorc’d 36
So many English kings. Thy due from me
Is tears and heavy sorrows of the blood,
Which nature, love, and filial tenderness
Shall, O dear father! pay thee plenteously:
My due from thee is this imperial crown, 40
Which, as immediate from thy place and blood,
Derives itself to me. Lo! here it sits,

[Putting it on his head.

Which heaven shall guard; and put the world’s
whole strength
Into one giant arm, it shall not force 44
This lineal honour from me. This from thee
Will I to mine leave, as ’tis left to me. [Exit.

K. Hen. [Waking.] Warwick! Gloucester! Clarence!

Re-enter Warwick, Gloucester, Clarence, and the rest.

Cla. Doth the king call?
War. What would your majesty? How fares your Grace? 48
K. Hen. Why did you leave me here alone, my lords?
Cla. We left the prince my brother here, my liege,
Who undertook to sit and watch by you.

K. Hen. The Prince of Wales! Where is he? let me see him:

He is not here.

War. This door is open; he is gone this way.
Glo. He came not through the chamber where we stay’d.

K. Hen. Where is the crown? who took it from my pillow?

War. When we withdrew, my liege, we left it here.

K. Hen. The prince hath ta’en it hence; go, seek him out.

Is he so hasty that he doth suppose
My sleep my death? 60
Find him, my Lord of Warwick; chide him hither.

[Exit Warwick.

This part of his conjoins with my disease,
And helps to end me. See, sons, what things you are!
How quickly nature falls into revolt
When gold becomes her object!
For this the foolish over-careful fathers
Have broke their sleeps with thoughts,
Their brains with care, their bones with industry;
For this they have engrossed and pil’d up
The canker’d heaps of strange-achieved gold;
For this they have been thoughtful to invest
Their sons with arts and martial exercises:
When, like the bee, culling from every flower
The virtuous sweets,
Our thighs packed with wax, our mouths with honey,
We bring it to the hive, and like the bees,
Are murder’d for our pains. This bitter taste
Yield his engrossments to the ending father.

Re-enter Warwick.

Now, where is he that will not stay so long
Till his friend sickness hath determin’d me? 80
War. My lord, I found the prince in the next room,
Washing with kindly tears his gentle cheeks,
With such a deep demeanour in great sorrow
That tyranny, which never quaff’d but blood, 84
Would, by beholding him, have wash’d his knife
With gentle eye-drops. He is coming hither.

K. Hen. But wherfore did he take away the crown?

Re-enter the PRINCE.

Lo, where he comes. Come hither to me, Harry.
Depart the chamber, leave us here alone. 89

[Exit Warwick, and the rest.

Prince. I never thought to hear you speak again.

K. Hen. Thy wish was father, Harry, to that thought:
I stay too long by thee, I weary thee. 92
Dost thou so hunger for my empty chair
That thou wilt needs invest thee with mine honours
Before thy hour be ripe? O foolish youth!
Thou seek’st the greatness that will overwhelm thee.

Stay but a little; for my cloud of dignity
Is held from falling with so weak a wind
That it will quickly drop: my day is dim.
SECOND PART OF KING HENRY THE FOURTH  Act IV, Sc. V.

Thou hast stol’n that which after some few hours 
Were thine without offence; and at my death
Thou hast seal’d up my expectation:
Thy life did manifest thou lov’dst me not,
And thou wilt have me die assur’d of it. 104
Thou hid’st a thousand daggers in thy thoughts,
Which thou hast whetted on thy stony heart,
To stab at half an hour of my life.
What! canst thou not forbear me half an hour?
Then get thee gone and dig my grave thyself, 109
And bid the merry bells ring to thine ear
That thou art crowned, not that I am dead.
Let all the tears that should bedew my hearse
Be drops of balm to sanctify thy head: 113
Only compound me with forgotten dust;
Give that which gave thee life unto the worms.
Pluck down my officers, break my decrees;
For now a time is come to mock at form. 117
Harry the Fifth is crown’d! Up, vanity! Down,
royal state! all you sage counsellors, hence!
And to the English court assemble now,
From every region, apes of idleness!
Now, neighbour confines, purge you of your
scum:
Have you a ruffian that will swear, drink, dance,
Revel the night, rob, murder, and commit 124
The oldest sins the newest kind of ways?
Be happy, he will trouble you no more:
England shall double gild his treble guilt.
England shall give him office, honour, might;
For the fifth Harry from curb’d licence plucks
The muzzle of restraint, and the wild dog
Shall fresh his tooth in every innocent.
O my poor kingdom! sick with civil blows. 132
When that my care could not withold thy riots,
What wilt thou do when riot is thy care?
O! thou wilt be a wilderness again,
Peopled with wolves, thy old inhabitants. 136
Prince. O! pardon me, my liege; but for my

And never live to show the incredulous world
The noble change that I have purposed. 153
Coming to look on you, thinking you dead,
And dead almost, my hege, to think you were,
I spake unto the crown as having sense, 156
And thus upbraided it: ‘The care on thee de-

Hath fed upon the body of my father;
Therefore, thou best of gold art worst of gold:
Other, less fine in carat, is more precious, 160
Preserving life in medicine potable:
But thou most fine, most honour’d, most re-

Hast eat thy bearer up.’ Thus, my most royal
liege,
Accusing it, I put it on my head,
To try with it, as with an enemy
That had before my face murder’d my father,
The quarrel of a true inheritour.
But if it did infect my blood with joy, 168
Or swell my thoughts to any strain of pride;
If any rebel or vain spirit of mine
Did with the least affection of a welcome
Give entertainment to the might of it, 172
Let God for ever keep it from my head,
And make me as the poorest vassal is
That doth with awe and terror kneel to it!

K. Hen. O my son! 176
God put it in thy mind to take it hence,
That thou mightst win the more thy father’s
love,
Pleading so wisely in excuse of it.
Come hither, Harry: sit thou by my bed; 180
And hear, I think, the very latest counsel
That ever I shall breathe. God knows, my son,
By what by-paths and indirect crook’d ways
I met this crown; and I myself know well 184
How troublesome it sat upon my head:
To thee it shall descend with better quiet,
Better opinion, better confirmation;
For all the soil of the achievement goes
With me into the earth. It seem’d in me
But as an honour snatch’d with boisterous hand,
And I had many living to upbraid
My gain of it by their assistance; 192
Which daily grew to quarrel and to bloodshed,
Wounding supposed peace. All these bold fears
Thou seest with peril I have answered;
For all my reign hath been but as a scene
Acting that argument; and now my death
Changes the mode: for what in me was pur-
chas’d,
Falls upon thee in a more fairer sort;
So thou the garment wear’st successively. 200
Yet, though thou stand’st more sure than I
could do,
Thou art not firm enough, since grieves are green;
And all my friends, which thou must make thy friends,
Have but their stings and teeth newly ta’en out;
By whose fell working I was first advanc’d, 205
And by whose power I well might lodge a fear
To be again displac’d: which to avoid,
I cut them off; and had a purpose now 208
To lead out many to the Holy Land,
Lest rest and lying still make them look
Too near unto my state. Therefore, my Harry,
Be it thy course to busy giddy minds 212
With foreign quarrels; that action, hence borne out,
May waste the memory of the former days.
More would I, but my lungs are wasted so
That strength of speech is utterly denied me. 216
How I came by the crown, O God, forgive!
And grant it may with thee in true peace live.
Prince. My gracious liege,
You won it, wore it, kept it, gave it me; 220
Then plain and right must my possession be:
Which I with more than with a common pain
'Gainst all the world will rightfully maintain.

Enter JOHN OF LANCASHIRE.

K. Hen. Look, look, here comes my John of L

224
Lanc. Health, peace, and happiness to my royal father!
K. Hen. Thou bring’st me happiness and peace, son John;
But health, alack, with youthful wings is flown
From this bare wither’d trunk: upon thy sight
My worldly business makes a period. 229
Where is my Lord of Warwick?
Prince. My Lord of Warwick!

Re-enter Warwick and Others.

K. Hen. Doth any name particular belong
Unto the lodging where I first did awound? 232
War. ’Tis call’d Jerusalem, my noble lord.
K. Hen. Laud be to God! even there my life must end.
It hath been prophesied to me many years
I should not die but in Jerusalem, 236
Which vainly I suppose’d the Holy Land.
But bear me to that chamber; there I’ll lie:
In that Jerusalem shall Harry die. [Exeunt.

ACT V.


Enter Shallow, Falstaff, Bardolph, and Page.

Shal. By cock and pie, sir, you shall not away to-night. What! Davy, I say.

Fal. You must excuse me, Master Robert Shallow.
Shal. I will not excuse you; you shall not be excused; excuses shall not be admitted; there is no excuse shall serve; you shall not be excused. Why, Davy!

Enter Davy.

Davy. Here, sir.
Shal. Davy, Davy, Davy, Davy, let me see, Davy; let me see: yea, marry, William cook, bid him come hither. Sir John, you shall not be excused.

Davy. Marry, sir, thus; those precepts cannot be served: and again, sir, shall we sow the headland with wheat?

Shal. With red wheat, Davy. But for William cook: are there no young pigeons?
Davy. Yes, sir. Here is now the smith’s note for shoeing and plough-irons.
Shal. Let it be cast and paid. Sir John, you shall not be excused.

Davy. Now, sir, a new link to the bucket must needs be had: and, sir, do you mean to stop any of William’s wages, about the sack he lost the other day at Hinckley fair?

Shal. A’ shall answer it. Some pigeons, Davy, a couple of short-legged hens, a joint of mutton, and any pretty little tiny kickshaws, tell William cook.

Davy. Doth the man of war stay all night, sir?

Shal. Yes, Davy. I will use him well. A friend i’ the court is better than a penny in purse. Use his men well, Davy, for they are arrant knaves, and will backbite.

Davy. No worse than they are back-bitten, sir; for they have marvellous foul linen.
Shal. Well conceited, Davy: about thy business, Davy.

Davy. I beseech you, sir, to countenance William Visor of Wincot against Clement Perkes of the hill.

Shal. There are many complaints, Davy, against that Visor: that Visor is an arrant knave, on my knowledge.

Davy. I grant your worship that he is a knave, sir; but yet, God forbid, sir, but a knave should have some countenance at his friend’s request. An honest man, sir, is able to speak for himself, when a knave is not. I have served your worship truly, sir, this eight years; and if I cannot once or twice in a quarter bear out a knave against an honest man, I have but a very little credit with your worship. The knave is mine honest friend, sir; therefore, I beseech your worship, let him be countenanced.
Shal. Go to; I say he shall have no wrong.
Look about, Davy. [Exit Davy.] Where are you, Sir John? Come, come, come; off with your boots. Give me your hand, Master Bardolph. 65
Bard. I am glad to see your worship.
Shal. I thank thee with all my heart, kind Master Bardolph:—[To the Page.] and welcome, my tall fellow. Come, Sir John.
Fal. I'll follow you, good Master Robert Shallow. [Exit Shallow.] Bardolph, look to our horses. [Exit Bardolph and Page.] If I were sawed into quantities, I should make four dozen of such bearded hermit's staves as Master Shallow. It is a wonderful thing to see the semblable coherence of his man's spirits and his: they, by observing him, do bear themselves like foolish justices; he, by conversing with them, is turned into a justice-like serving-man. Their spirits are so married in conjunction with the participation of society that they flock together in consent, like so many wild-geese. If I had a suit to Master Shallow, I would humour his men with the imputation of being near their master: if to his men, I would curry with Master Shallow that no man could better command his servants. It is certain that either wise bearing or ignorant carriage is caught, as men take diseases, one of another: therefore let men take heed of their company. I will devise matter enough out of this Shallow to keep Prince Harry in continual laughter the wearing out of six fashions,—which is four terms, or two actions,—and shall laugh without intervals. O! it is much that a lie with a slight oath and a jest with a sad brow will do with a fellow that never had the ache in his shoulders. O! you shall see him laugh till his face be like a wet cloak ill laid up!

Shal. [Within.] Sir John!

Ward. Indeed I think the young king loves you not.
Ch. Just. I know he doth not, and do arm myself,
To welcome the condition of the time;
Which cannot look more hideously upon me 12
Than I have drawn it in my fantasy.

Enter Lancaster, Clarence, Gloucester, Westmoreland and Others.

Ward. Here come the heavy issue of dead Harry:
O! that the living Harry had the temper
Of him, the worst of these three gentlemen. 16
How many nobles then should hold their places,
That must strike sail to spirits of vile sort!
Ch. Just. O God! I fear all will be overturn'd.
Lanc. Good morrow, cousin Warwick, good morrow.
Glo. | Good morrow, cousin.
Cla. |
Lanc. We meet like men that had forgot to speak.
War. We do remember; but our argument
Is all too heavy to admit much talk. 24
Lanc. Well, peace be with him that hath made us heavy!
Ch. Just. Peace be with us, lest we be heavier!
Glo. O! good my lord, you have lost a friend indeed;
And I dare swear you borrow not that face 28
Of seeming sorrow; it is sure your own.
Lanc. Though no man be assur'd what grace to find,
You stand in coldest expectation.
I am the sorrier; would 'twere otherwise. 32
Cla. Well, you must now speak Sir John Falstaff fair,
Which swims against your stream of quality.
Ch. Just. Sweet princes, what I did, I did in honour,

Lan. By the impartial conduct of my soul;
And never shall you see that I will beg
A ragged and forestall'd remission.
If truth and upright innocence fail me,
I'll to the king my master that is dead, 40
And tell him who hath sent me after him.
War. Here comes the prince.

Enter King Henry the Fifth, attended.
Ch. Just. Good morrow, and God save your majesty!
K. Hen. V. This new and gorgeous garment, majesty, 44
Sits not so easy on me as you think.
Brothers, you mix your sadness with some fear:
This is the English, not the Turkish court;
Act V, Sc. II. SECOND PART OF KING HENRY THE FOURTH

Not Amurath an Amurath succeeds, 48
But Harry Harry. Yet be sad, good brothers,
For, to speak truth, it very well becomes you:
Sorrow so royally in you appears
That I will deeply put the fashion on 52
And wear it in my heart. Why then, be sad;
But entertain no more of it, good brothers,
Than a joint burden laid upon us all.
For me, by heaven, I bid you assur’d,
I’ll be your father and your brother too;
Let me but bear your love, I’ll bear your cares:
Yet weep that Harry’s dead, and so will I;
But Harry lives that shall convert those tears 60
By number into hours of happiness.

Lanc., &c. We hope no other from your
majesty.

K. Hen. V. You all look strangely on me: [To
the CHIEF JUSTICE.] and you most;
You are, I think, assur’d I love you not. 64
Ch. Just. I am assur’d, if I be measur’d rightly,
Your majesty hath no just cause to hate me.
K. Hen. V. No!
How might a prince of my great hopes forget 68
So great indignities you laid upon me?
What! rate, rebuke, and roughly send to prison
The immediate heir of England! Was this easy?
May this be wash’d in Lethe, and forgotten? 72
Ch. Just. I then did use the person of your
father;
The image of his power lay than in me:
And, in the administration of his law,
Whiles I was busy for the commonwealth,
Your highness pleas’d to forget my place,
The majesty and power of law and justice,
The image of the king whom I presented,
And struck me in my very seat of judgment; 80
Whereon, as an offender to your father,
I gave bold way to my authority,
And did commit you. If the deed were ill,
Be you contented, wearing now the garland,
To have a son set your decrees at nought,
To pluck down justice from your awful bench,
To trip the course of law, and blunt the sword
That guards the peace and safety of your person:
Nay, more, to spurn at your most royal image
And mock your workings in a second body. 90
Question your royal thoughts, make the case
yours;
Be now the father and propose a son, 92
Hear your own dignity so much profan’d,
See your most dreadful laws so loosely slighted,
Behold yourself so by a son disdain’d;
And then imagine me taking your part, 96
And in your power soft silencing your son:
After this cold consideration, sentence me;
And, as you are a king, speak in your state
What I have done that misbecame my place, 100
My person, or my liege’s sov’reignty.

K. Hen. V. You are right, justice; and you
weigh this well;
Therefore still bear the balance and the sword:
And I do wish your honours may increase
Till you do live to see a son of mine
Offend you and obey you, as I did.
So shall I live to speak my father’s words:
‘Happy am I, that have a man so bold
That dares do justice on my proper son;
And not less happy, having such a son,
That would deliver up his greatness so
Into the hands of justice.’ You did commit me:
For which, I do commit into your hand
The unstained sword that you have us’d to bear;
With this remembrance, that you use the same
With the like bold, just, and impartial spirit
As you have done against me. There is my hand:
You shall be as a father to my youth;
My voice shall sound as you do prompt mine ear,
And I will stoop and humble my intents
To your well-practis’d wise directions.
And, princes all, believe me, I beseech you;
My father is gone wild into his grave,
For in his tomb lie my affections;
And with his spirit sadly I survive,
To mock the expectation of the world,
To frustrate prophecies, and to raze out
Rotten opinion, who hath writ me down
After my seeming. The tide of blood in me
Hath proudly flow’d in vanity till now: 128
Now doth it turn and ebb back to the sea,
Where it shall mingle with the state of floods
And flow henceforth in formal majesty.
Now call we our high court of parliament;
And let us choose such limbs of noble counsel,
That the great body of our state may go
In equal rank with the best govern’d nation;
That war or peace, or both at once, may be
As things acquainted and familiar to us;
In which you, father, shall have foremost hand.
Our coronation done, we will accite,
As I before remember’d, all our state:
And, God consigning to my good intents,
No prince nor peer shall have just cause to say,
God shorten Harry’s happy life one day. 145

[Exeunt.

SCENE III.—Gloucestershire. The Garden of
SHALLOW’S House.

Enter Falstaff, Shallow, Silence, Bardolph, the Page, and Davy.

Shal. Nay, you shall see mine orchard, where,
in an arbour, we will eat a last year’s pippin
of my own grafting, with a dish of caraways, and
so forth; come, cousin Silence; and then to bed.
SECOND PART OF KING HENRY THE FOURTH  Act V, Sc. III.

Fal. 'Fore God, you have here a goodly dwelling, and a rich.

Shal. Barren, barren, barren: beggars all, beggars all, Sir John: marry, good air. Spread, Davy; spread, Davy: well said, Davy.

Fal. This Davy serves you for good uses; he is your serving-man and your husband.

Shal. A good varlet, a good varlet, a very good varlet, Sir John: by the mass, I have drunk too much sack at supper: a good varlet. Now sit down, now sit down. Come, cousin.

Sil. Ah, sirrah! quoth a', we shall

Do nothing but eat, and make good cheer,
And praise God for the merry year;
When flesh is cheap and females dear,
And lusty lads roam here and there,
So merrily
And ever among so merrily.

Fal. There's a merry heart! Good Master Silence, I'll give you a health for that anon.

Shal. Give Master Bardolph some wine, Davy.

Davy. Sweet sir, sit; I'll be with you anon: most sweet sir, sit. Master page, good master page, sit. Proface! What you want in meat we'll have in drink: but you must bear: the heart's all.

[Exit.]

Shal. Be merry, Master Bardolph; and my little soldier there, be merry.

Sil. Be merry, be merry, my wife has all:
For women are shrews, both short and tall:
'Tis merry in hall when beards wag all,
And welcome merry Shrove-tide.

Be merry, be merry.

Fal. I did not think Master Silence had been a man of this mettle.

Sil. Who, I? I have been merry twice and once ere now.

Re-enter Davy.

Davy. There's a dish of leather-costs for you.

[Setting them before BARDOLPH.]

Shal. Davy!

Davy. Your worship! I'll be with you straight.

A cup of wine, sir?

Sil. A cup of wine that's brisk and fine
And drink unto the leman mine;
And a merry heart lives long-a.

Fal. Well said, Master Silence.

Sil. And we shall be merry, now comes in the sweet o' the night.

Fal. Health and long life to you, Master Silence.

Sil. Fill the cup, and let it come;
I'll pledge you a mile to the bottom.

Shal. Honest Bardolph, welcome: if thou wantest anything and will not call, beseech thy heart.

[To the Page.] Welcome, my little tiny thief;

and welcome indeed too. I'll drink to Master Bardolph and to all the cavaliers about London.

Davy. I hope to see London once ere I die.

Bard. An I might see you there, Davy,—

Shal. By the mass, you'll crack a quart together: hal will you not, Master Bardolph?

Bard. Yea, sir, in a bottle-pot.

Shal. By God's liggens, I thank thee. The knave will stick by thee, I can assure thee that: a' will not out; he is true bred.

Bard. And I'll stick by him, sir.

Shal. Why, there spoke a king. Lack nothing: be merry. [Knocking within.] Look who's at door there. Ho! who knocks?

[Exit Davy.

Fal. [To SILENCE, who drinks a bumper.] Why, now you have done me right.

Sil. Do me right, And dub me knight: Samingo

Is't not so?

Fal. 'Tis so.

Sil. Is't so? Why, then, say an old man can do somewhat.

Re-enter Davy.

Davy. An't please your worship, there's one Pistol come from the court with news.

Fal. From the court! let him come in.

Enter PISTOL.

How now, Pistol!

Pist. Sir John, God save you, sir!

Fal. What wind blew you hither, Pistol?

Pist. Not the ill wind which blows no man to good.

Sweet knight, thou art now one of the greatest men in this realm.

Sil. By'r lady, I think a' be, but Goodman Puff of Barson.

Pist. Puff!

Puff in thy teeth, most recreant coward base! Sir John, I am thy Pistol and thy friend, And helter-skelter have I rode to thee, And tidings do I bring and lucky joys And golden times and happy news of price.

Fal. I prithee now, deliver them like a man of this world.

Pist. A foutra for the world and worldlings base!

I speak of Africa and golden joys.

Fal. O base Assyrian knight, what is thy news?

Let King Cophetus know the truth thereof.

Sil. And Robin Hood, Scarlet, and John.

Pist. Shall dunghill curs confront the Helicons?

And shall good news be baffled?
Then, Pistol, lay thy head in Fuzies’ lap.
Shal. Honest gentleman, I know not your
breeding. 109
Pist. Why then, lament therefore.
Shal. Give me pardon, sir; if sir, you come with
news from the court, I take it there is but two
ways: either to utter them, or to conceal them.
I am, sir, under the king, in some authority. 114
Pist. Under which king, Bezonian? speak, or
die. 116
Shal. Under King Harry.
Pist. Harry the Fourth? or Fifth?
Shal. Harry the Fourth.
Pist. A foutra for thine office!
Sir John, thy tender lambkin now is king;
Harry the Fifth’s the man. I speak the truth:
When Pistol lies, do this; and fig me, like 121
The bragging Spaniard.
Fal. What! is the old king dead?
Pist. As nail in door: the things I speak are
just. 124
Fal. Away, Bardolph! saddle my horse.
Master Robert Shallow, choose what office thou
wilt in the land, ’us thine. Pistol, I will double-
charge thee with dignities. 128
Bard. O joyful day!
I would not take a knighthood for my fortune.
Pist. What! I do bring good news. 131
Fal. Carry Master Silence to bed. Master
Shallow, my Lord Shallow, be what thou wilt, I
am Fortune’s steward. Get on thy boots; we’ll
ride all night. O sweet Pistol! Away, Bardolph!
[Exit BARDOLPH.] Come, Pistol, utter more to
me; and, withal devise something to do thyself
good. Boot, boot, Master Shallow: I know the
young king is sick for me. Let us take any
man’s horses; the laws of England are at my
commandment. Happy are they which have
been my friends, and woe unto my lord chief
justice! 143
Pist. Let vultures vile seize on his lungs also!
‘Where is the life that late I led?’ say they:
Why, here it is; welcome these pleasant days!
[Exeunt.

SCENE IV.—London. A Street.

Enter Beadles, dragging in Mistress Quickly
and Doll Tearsheet.

Quick. No, thou arrant knave: I would to
God I might die that I might have thee hanged;
thou hast drawn my shoulder out of joint.
First Bead. The constables have delivered
her over to me, and she shall have whipping-
cheer enough, I warrant her: there hath been a
man or two lately killed about her. 7
Dol. Nut-hook, nut-hook, you lie. Come on;
I’ll tell thee what, thou damned tramp-visaged
rascal, an the child I now go with do miscarry,
you hadst better thou hadst struck thy mother,
you paper-faced villain. 12
Quick. O the Lord! that Sir John were come;
he would make this a bloody day to somebody.
But I pray God the fruit of her womb miscarry!

First Bead If it do, you shall have a dozen
of cushions again; you have but eleven now.
Come, I charge you both go with me; for the
man is dead that you and Pistol beat among you.
Dol. I’ll tell thee what, thou thin man in a
censer, I will have you as soundly swunged for
this, you blue-bottle rogue! you filthy famished
correctioner! if you be not swunged, I’ll for-
swear half-kirtles.

First Bead. Come, come, you she knight-
errant, come.
Quick. O, that right should thus overcome
might! Well, of sufferance comes ease.
Dol. Come, you rogue, come: bring me to
a justice. 29
Quick. Ay; come, you starved-bloodhound.
Dol. Goodman death! Goodman bones!
Quick. Thou atony, thou!
Dol. Come, you thin thing; come, you rascal!
First Bead. Very well. [Exeunt.

SCENE V.—A public Place near Westminster
Abbey.

Enter two Grooms, strewing rushes.

First Groom. More rushes, more rushes.
Sec. Groom. The trumpets have sounded
twice.
First Groom. It will be two o’clock ere they
come from the coronation. Dispatch, dispatch.
[Exeunt.

Enter Falstaff, Shallow, Pistol, Bardolph, and the Page.

Fal. Stand here by me, Master Robert Shal-
low; I will make the king do you grace. I will
leer upon him, as a’ comes by; and do but mark
the countenance that he will give me.

Pist. God bless thy lungs, good knight.
Fal. Come here, Pistol; stand behind me.
O! if I had had time to have made new liveries,
I would have bestowed the thousand pound I
borrowed of you. But ‘tis no matter; this poor
show doth better: this doth infer the zeal I had
to see him. 16
Shal. It doth so.
Fal. It shows my earnestness of affection.
Shal. It doth so.
Fal. My devotion.
Shal. It doth, it doth, it doth.
SECOND PART OF KING HENRY THE FOURTH  Act V, Sc. V.

Fal. As it were, to ride day and night; and not to deliberate, not to remember, not to have patience to shift me. 24
Shal. It is most certain.
Fal. But to stand stained with travel, and sweating with desire to see him; thinking of nothing else; putting all affairs else in oblivion, as if there were nothing else to be done but to see him.
Pist. 'Tis semper idem, for absque hoc nihil est:
'Tis all in every part. 32
Shal. 'Tis so, indeed.
Pist. My knight, I will inflame thy noble liver,
And make thee rage.
Thy Doll, and Helen of thy noble thoughts, 36
Is in base durance and contagious prison;
Hal'd thither
By most mechanical and dirty hand:
Rouse up revenge from ebon den with fell Alecto's snake, 40
For Doll is in: Pistol speaks nought but truth.
Fal. I will deliver her.
[Shouts within and trumpets sound.
Pist. There roar'd the sea, and trumpet-clanger sounds.

Enter KING HENRY THE FIFTH and his Train,
the LORD CHIEF JUSTICE among them.

Fal. God save thy grace, King Hall! my royal Hall! 45
Pist. The heavens thee guard and keep, most royal imp of fame!
Fal. God save thee, my sweet boy! 48
K. Hen. V. My lord chief justice, speak to that vain man.
Ch. Just. Have you your wits? know you what 'tis you speak?
Fal. My king! my Jove! I speak to thee, my heart!
K. Hen. V. I know thee not, old man: fall to thy prayers; 52
How ill white hairs become a fool and jester!
I have long dream'd of such a kind of man,
So surfeit-swell'd, so old, and so profane;
But, being awak'd, I do despise my dream. 56
Make less thy body hence, and more thy grace;
Leave gormandising; know the grave doth gape
For thee thrice wider than for other men.
Reply not to me with a fool-born jest:
Presume not that I am the thing I was;
For God doth know, so shall the world perceive,
That I have turn'd away my former self;
So will I those that kept me company. 64
When thou dost hear I am as I have been,
Approach me, and thou shalt be as thou wast,
The tutor and the feeder of my riots:
Till then, I banish thee, on pain of death, 68
As I have done the rest of my misleaders,
Not to come near our person by ten mile.
For competence of life I will allow you,
That lack of means enforce you not to evil: 72
And, as we hear you do reform yourselves,
We will, according to your strength and qualities,
Give you advancement. Be it your charge, my lord,
To see perform'd the tenour of our word. 76
Set on. [Exeunt King Henry V. and his Train.
Fal. Master Shallow, I owe you a thousand pound.
Shal. Ay, marry, Sir John; which I beseech you to let me have home with me. 80
Fal. That can hardly be, Master Shallow. Do not you grieve at this: I shall be sent for in private to him. Look you, he must seem thus to the world. Fear not your advancements; I will be the man yet that shall make you great.85
Shal. I cannot perceive how, unless you should give me your doubtlet and stuff me out with straw. I beseech you, good Sir John, let me have five hundred of my thousand. 89
Fal. Sir, I will be as good as my word: this that you heard was but a colour.
Shal. A colour that I fear you will die in, Sir John. 93
Fal. Fear no colours: go with me to dinner.
Come, Lieutenant Pistol; come, Bardolph: I shall be sent for soon at night. 96

Re-enter JOHN OF LANCASTER, the LORD CHIEF JUSTICE; Officers with them.

Ch. Just. Go, carry Sir John Falstaff to the Fleet;
Take all his company along with him.
Fal. My lord, my lord! 100
Ch. Just. I cannot now speak: I will hear you soon.
Take them away.
Pist. Si fortuna me tormenta, spero, contenta.

[Exeunt Falstaff, Shallow, Pistol, Bardolph, Page, and Officers.
Lanc. I like this fair proceeding of the king's.
He hath intent his wonted followers 104
Shall all be very well provided for;
But all are banish'd till their conversations
Appear more wise and modest to the world.
Ch. Just. And so they are. 108
Lanc. The king hath call'd his parliament, my lord.
Ch. Just. He hath.
Lanc. I will lay odds, that ere this year expire,
We bear our civil swords and native fire
As far as France. I heard a bird so sing,
Whose music, to my thinking, pleas'd the king.
Come, will you hence? [Exeunt.

EPILOGUE.

Spoken by a Dancer.

First, my fear; then, my curtsy; last my speech. My fear is, your displeasure, my curtsy, my duty, and my speech, to beg your pardon. If you look for a good speech now, you undo me; for what I have to say is of mine own making; and what indeed I should say will, I doubt, prove mine own marring. But to the purpose, and so to the venture. Be it known to you,—as it is very well,—I was lately here in the end of a displeasing play, to pray your patience for it and to promise you a better. I did mean indeed to pay you with this; which, if like an ill venture it come unluckily home, I break, and you, my gentle creditors, lose. Here, I promised you I would be, and here I commit my body to your mercies: bade me some and I will pay you some; and, as most debtors do, promise you infinitely.

If my tongue cannot entreat you to acquit me, will you command me to use my legs? and yet that were but light payment, to dance out of your debt. But a good conscience will make any possible satisfaction, and so will I. All the gentlewomen here have forgiven me: if the gentlemen will not, then the gentlemen do not agree with the gentlewomen, which was never seen before in such an assembly.

One word more, I beseech you. If you be not too much cloyed with fat meat, our humble author will continue the story, with Sir John in it, and make you merry with fair Katharine of France: where, for anything I know, Falstaff shall die of a sweat, unless already a' be killed with your hard opinions; for Oldcastle died a martyr, and this is not the man. My tongue is weary; when my legs are too, I will bid you good night: and so kneel down before you; but, indeed, to pray for the queen.
THE LIFE OF
KING HENRY THE FIFTH

DRAMATIS personae.

KING HENRY the Fifth.
DUKE OF GLOUCESTER, 
DUKE OF BEDFORD,
DUKE OF EXETER, Uncle to the King.
DUKE OF YORK, Cousin to the King.
EARLS OF SALISBURY, WESTMORELAND, and
WARWICK.
ARCHBISHOP OF CANTERBURY.
BISHOP OF ELY.
EARL OF CAMBRIDGE.
LORD SCHOOP.
SIR THOMAS GREY.
SIR THOMAS ERPINGHAM, GOWER, FUELLEN,
MACMORRIS, JAMY, Officers in King Henry's
Army.
BATES, COURT, WILLIAMS, Soldiers in the
Same.
PISTOL, NYM, BARDOLPH.
Boy.
A Herald.

CHARLES the Sixth, King of France.
LEWIS, the Dauphin.
Dukes of Burgundy, Orleans, and Bourbon.
The Constable of France.
Rambures and Grandpré, French Lords.
Montjoy, a French Herald.
Governor of Harfleur.
Ambassadors to the King of England.

ISABEL, Queen of France.
KATHARINE, Daughter to Charles and Isabel.
ALICE, a Lady attending on the Princess
Katharine.
Hostess of the Boar's Head Tavern, formerly
Mistress Quickly, and now married to Pistol.

Lords, Ladies, Officers, French and English
Soldiers, Citizens, Messengers, and Attendants.

Chorus.

Scene.—England; afterwards France.

Enter Chorus.

Chor. O! for a Muse of fire, that would ascend;
The brightest heaven of invention;
A kingdom for a stage, princes to act
And monarchs to behold the swelling scene.
Then should the war-like Harry, like himself,
Assume the port of Mars; and at his heels,
Leash'd in like hounds, should famine, sword,
and fire
Crouch for employment. But pardon, gentle all,
The flat unraised spirits that hath dar'd
On this unworthy scaffold to bring forth
So great an object: can this cockpit hold
The vasty fields of France? or may we cram
Within this wooden O the very casques
That did affright the air at Agincourt?
O, pardon! since a crooked figure may
Attest in little place a million;
And let us, ciphers to this great accompt,
On your imaginary forces work.
Suppose within the girdle of these walls
Are now confin'd two mighty monarchies,
Whose high upreared and abutting fronts
The perilous narrow ocean parts asunder:
Piece out our imperfections with your thoughts:
Into a thousand parts divide one man,
And make imaginary puissance;
Think when we talk of horses that you see them
Printing their proud hoofs i' the receiving earth;
For 'tis your thoughts that now must deck our
kings,
Carry them here and there, jumping o'er times,
Turning the accomplishment of many years
Into an hour-glass: for the which supply,
Admit me Chorus to this history;
Who prologue-like your humble patience pray,
Gently to hear, kindly to judge, our play. [Exit.

ACT I.

Scene I.—London. An Antechamber in the
King's Palace.

Enter the ARCHBISHOP OF CANTERBURY and
the BISHOP OF ELY.

Can. My lord, I'll tell you; that self bill is
urg'd,
Which in th' eleventh year of the last king's
reign
Was like, and had indeed against us pass'd,
But that the scambling and unquiet time
Did push it out of further question.
Ely. But how, my lord, shall we resist it now?
Cant. It must be thought on. If it pass
against us,
We lose the better half of our possession;
For all the temporal lands which men devout
By testament have given to the church
Would they strip from us; being valu’d thus:
As much as would maintain, to the king’s
honour,
Full fifteen earls and fifteen hundred knights,
Six thousand and two hundred good esquires;
And, to relief of lazars and weak age,
Of indigent faint souls past corporal toil,
A hundred almshouses right well supplied;
And to the coffers of the king beside,
A thousand pounds by the year. Thus runs the
bill.
Ely. This would drink deep.
Cant. ’Twould drink the cup and all.
Ely. But what prevention?
Cant. The king is full of grace and fair regard.
Ely. And a true lover of the holy church.
Cant. The courses of his youth promis’d it
not.

The breath no sooner left his father’s body
But that his wildness, mortis’d in him,
Seem’d to die too; yea, at that very moment,
Consideration like an angel came,
And whipp’d the offending Adam out of him,
Leaving his body as a paradise,
To envelop and contain celestial spirits.
Never was such a sudden scholar made;
Never came reformation in a flood,
With such a heady curruce, scouring faults;
Nor never Hydra-headed wilfulness
So soon did lose his seat and all at once
As in this king.
Ely. We are blessed in the change.
Cant. Hear him but reason in divinity,
And, all-admiring, with an inward wish
You would desire the king were made a pro-
late:
Hear him debate of commonwealth affairs,
You would say it hath been all in all his study:
List his discourse of war, and you shall hear
A fearful battle render’d you in music:
Turn him to any cause of policy,
The Gordian knot of it he will unloose,
Familiar as his garter; that, when he speaks,
The air, a charter’d libertine, is still,
And the mute wonder lurketh in men’s ears,
To steal his sweet and honey’d sentences;
So that the art and practic part of life
Must be the mistress to this theoretic:
Which is a wonder how his Grace should glean
it,
Since his addiction was to courses vain;
His companies unletter’d, rude, and shallow;
His hours fill’d up with riots, banquets,

sports;
And never noted in him any study,
Any retirement, any sequestration
From open haunts and popularity.
Ely. The strawberry grows underneath the
nettle,
And wholesome berries thrive and ripen best
Neighbour’d by fruit of baser quality:
And so the prince obscur’d his contemplation
Under the veil of wildness; which, no doubt,
Grew like the summer grass, fastest by night,
Unseen, yet crescing in his faculty.
Cant. It must be so; for miracles are
ceas’d;
And therefore we must needs admit the means
How things are perfected.
Ely. But, my good lord, how now for mitigation of this bill
Urg’d by the commons? Doth his majesty
Incline to it, or no?
Cant. He seems indifferent,
Or rather swaying more upon our part
Than cherishing the exhibitors against us;
For I have made an offer to his majesty,
Upon our spiritual convocation,
And in regard of causes now in hand,
Which I have open’d to his Grace at large,
As touching France, to give a greater sum
Than ever at one time the clergy yet
Did to his predecessors part withal.
Ely. How did this offer seem receiv’d, my
lord?
Cant. With good acceptance of his majesty;
Save that there was not time enough to
hear,—
As I perceiv’d his Grace would fain have done,—
The several and unhidden passages
Of his true titles to some certain dukedoms,
And generally to the crown and seat of France,
Deriv’d from Edward, his great-grandfather.
Ely. What was the impediment that broke
this off?
Cant. The French ambassador upon that
instant
Crav’d audience; and the hour I think is come
To give him hearing: is it four o’clock?
Ely. It is.
Cant. Then go we in to know his embassy;
Which I could with a ready guess declare
Before the Frenchman speak a word of it.
Ely. I’ll wait upon you, and I long to hear it.
[Exeunt.
SCENE II.—The Same. The Presence Chamber.

Enter King Henry, Gloucester, Bedford, Exeter, Warwick, Westmoreland, and Attendants.

K. Hen. Where is my gracious lord of Canterbury?

Exe. Not here in presence.

K. Hen. Send for him, good uncle.

West. Shall we call in the ambassador, my liege?

K. Hen. Not yet, my cousin: we would be resolv’d,

Before we hear him, of some things of weight
That task our thoughts, concerning us and France.

Enter the Archbishop of Canterbury and
the Bishop of Ely.

Cant. God and his angels guard your sacred throne,
And make you long become it!

K. Hen. Sure, we thank you.

My learned lord, we pray you to proceed,
And justly and religiously unfold
Why the law Salique that they have in France
Or should, or should not, bar us in our claim.

And God forbid, my dear and faithful lord,
That you should fashion, wrest, or bow your reading,

Or nicely charge your understanding soul
With opening titles miscreate, whose right
Suits not in native colours with the truth;
For God doth know how many now in health
Shall drop their blood in approbation
Of what your reverence shall incite us to.

Therefore take heed how you impawn our person,
How you awake the sleeping sword of war:
We charge you in the name of God, take heed;
For never two such kingdoms did contend
Without much fall of blood; whose guiltless drops
Are every one a woe, a sore complaint,
‘Gainst him whose wrongs give edge unto the swords
That make such waste in brief mortality.

Under this conjuration speak, my lord,
And we will hear, note, and believe in heart,
That what you speak is in your conscience wash’d
As pure as sin with baptism.

Cant. Then hear me, gracious sovereign, and you peers,
That owe yourselves, your lives, and services
To this imperial throne. There is no bar
To make against your highness’ claim to France
But this, which they produce from Pharamond,

In terram Salicam mulieres ne succedant,
Howbeit they would hold up this Salique law
To bar your highness claiming from the female;
And rather choose to hide them in a net
Than amply to imbar their crooked titles
Usurp'd from you and your progenitors.

K. Hen. May I with right and conscience
make this claim?

Cant. The sin upon my head, dread soveraign!

For in the book of Numbers is it writ:
'When the son dies, let the inheritance
Descend unto the daughter.' Gracious lord,
Stand for your own; unwind your bloody flag;
Look back into your mighty ancestors:
Go, my dear lord, to your great-grandisire's tomb,
From whom you claim; invoke his war-like spirit,
And your great-uncle's, Edward the Black Prince,
Who on the French ground play'd a tragedy,
Making defeat on the full power of France;
Whiles his most mighty father on a hill
Stood smiling to behold his lion's whelp
Forage in blood of French nobility.
O noble English! that could entertain
With half their forces the full pride of France,
And let another half stand laughing by,
All out of work, and cold for action.

Ely. Awake remembrance of these valiant dead,
And with your puissant arm renew their feats:
You are their heir, you sit upon their throne,
The blood and courage that renowned them
Runs in your veins; and my thrice-puissant liege
Is in the very May-morn of his youth,
Ripe for exploits and mighty enterprises.

Exe. Your brother kings and monarchs of the earth
Do all expect that you should rouse yourself,
As did the former lions of your blood.

West. They know your Grace hath cause and means and might;
So hath your highness; never King of England
Had nobles richer, and more loyal subjects,
Whose hearts have left their bodies here in England
And lie pavilion'd in the fields of France.

Cant. Of let their bodies follow, my dear liege,
With blood and sword and fire to win your right;
In aid whereof we of the spirituality
Will raise your highness such a mighty sum
As never did the clergy at one time
Bring in to any of your ancestors.

K. Hen. We must not only arm to invade
the French,
KING HENRY THE FIFTH  Act I, Sc. II.

To which is fixed, as an aim or butt,
Obedience: for so work the honey-bees,
Creatures that by a rule in nature teach
The act of order to a peopled kingdom.
They have a king and officers of sorts;
Where some, like magistrates, correct at home,
Others, like merchants, venture trade abroad,
Others, like soldiers, armed in their stings,
Make boot upon the summer’s velvet buds;
Which pillage they with merry march bring home
To the tent-royal of their emperor:
Who, busied in his majesty, surveys
The singing masons building roofs of gold,
The civil citizens kneading up the honey,
The poor mechanic porters crowding in
Their heavy burdens at his narrow gate,
The sad-ey’d justice, with his surly hum,
Delivering o’er to executors pale
The lazy yawning drone. I this infer,
That many things, having full reference
To one consent, may work contrariously;
As many arrows, loosed several ways,
Fly to one mark; as many ways meet in one town;
As many fresh streams meet in one salt sea;
As many lines close in the dial’s centre;
So may a thousand actions, once afoot,
End in one purpose, and be all well borne
Without defeat. Therefore to France, my liege,
Divide your happy England into four;
Whereof take you one quarter into France,
And you withal shall make all Gallia shake.
If we, with thrice such powers left at home,
Cannot defend our own doors from the dog,
Let us be worried and our nation lose
The name of hardiness and policy.

K. Hen. Call in the messengers sent from
the Dauphin.  [Exit an Attendant.

Now are we well resolv’d; and by God’s help,
And yours, the noble sinews of our power,
France being ours, we’ll bend it to our awe
Or break it all to pieces: or there we’ll sit,
Ruling in large and ample empery
O’er France and all her almost kingly dukedoms,
Or lay these bones in an unworthy urn:—
Either our history shall with full mouth
Speak freely of our acts, or else our grave,
Like Turkish mute, shall have a tongueless mouth,
Not worshipp’d with a waxy epitaph.

Enter Ambassadors of France.

Now are we well prepar’d to know the pleasure
Of our fair cousin Dauphin; for we hear
Your greeting is from him, not from the king.

First Amb. May’t please your majesty to give us leave
Freely to render what we have in charge;
Or shall we sparingly show you far off
The Dauphin’s meaning and our embassy?

K. Hen. We are no tyrant, but a Christian king;
Unto whose grace our passion is as subject
As are our wretches fetter’d in our prisons:
Therefore with frank and with uncured plainness
Tell us the Dauphin’s mind.

First Amb. Thus then, in few.
Your highness, lately sending into France,
Did claim some certain dukedoms, in the right
Of your great predecessor, King Edward the Third.

In answer of which claim, the prince our master
Says that you savour too much of your youth,
And bids you be advis’d there’s nought in France
That can be with a nimble galliard won;
You cannot revel into dukedoms there.
He therefore sends you, meeter for your spirit,
This tun of treasure; and, in lieu of this,
Desires you let the dukedoms that you claim
Hear no more of you. This the Dauphin speaks.

K. Hen. What treasure, uncle?

Exe. Tennis-balls, my liege.

K. Hen. We are glad the Dauphin is so pleasant with us:
His present and your pains we thank you for:
When we have match’d our rackets to these balls,
We will in France, by God’s grace, play a set
Shall strike his father’s crown into the hazard.
Tell him he hath made a match with such a wrangler
That all the courts of France will be disturb’d
With chACES. And we understand him well,
How he comes o’er us with our wilder days,
Not measuring what use we made of them.

We never val’d this poor seat of England;
And therefore, living hence, did give ourself
To barbarous licence; as ‘tis ever common
That men are merriest when they are from home.

But tell the Dauphin I will keep my state,
Be like a king and show my sail of greatness
When I do rouse me in my throne of France:
For that I have laid by my majesty

And plodded like a man for working-days,
But I will rise there with so full a glory
That I will dazzle all the eyes of France,
Yea, strike the Dauphin blind to look on us.
And tell the pleasant prince this mock of his
Hath turn’d his balls to gun-stones; and his soul
Shall stand sore-charged for the wasteful vengeance
That shall fly with them: for many a thousand widows
Shall this his mock mock out of their dear husbands;
Mock mothers from their sons, mock castles down;
And some are yet ungotten and unborn
That shall have cause to curse the Dauphin's scorn.

But this lies all within the will of God,
To whom I do appeal; and in whose name
Tell you the Dauphin I am coming on,
To venge me as I may and to put forth
My rightful hand in a well-hallowed cause.
So get you hence in peace; and tell the Dauphin
His jest will savour but of shallow wit
When thousands weep more than did laugh at it.

Convey them with safe conduct. Fare you well.

[Exeunt Ambassadors.

EXEC. This was a merry message.

K. Hen. We hope to make the sender blush at it.

Therefore, my lords, omit no happy hour
That may give furtherance to our expedition;
For we have now no thought in us but France,
Save those to God, that run before our business.
Therefore let our proportions for these wars
Be soon collected, and all things thought upon
That may with reasonable swiftness add
More feathers to our wings; for, God before,
We'll chide this Dauphin at his father's door.
Therefore let every man now task his thought,
That this fair action may on foot be brought.

[Exeunt. Flourish.

ACT II.

Enter Chorus.

Chor. Now all the youth of England are on fire,
And silken dalliance in the wardrobe lies;
Now thrive the armourers, and honour's thought
Reigns solely in the breast of every man:
They sell the pasture now to buy the horse,
Following the mirror of all Christian kings,
With winged heels, as English Mercuries.
For now sits Expectation in the air
And hides a sword from hills unto the point
With crowns imperial, crowns and coronets,
Promis'd to Harry and his followers.
The French, advis'd by good intelligence
Of this most dreadful preparation,
Shake in their fear, and with pale policy
Seek to divert the English purposes.

O England! model to thy inward greatness,
Like little body with a mighty heart,
What mightst thou do, that honour would thee do,
Were all thy children kind and natural!
But see thy fault! France hath in thee found out
A nest of hollow bosoms, which he fills
With treacherous crowns; and three corrupted men,
One, Richard Earl of Cambridge, and the second,
Henry Lord Scroop of Masham, and the third,
Sir Thomas Grey, knight, of Northumberland,
Have, for the gift of France,—O guilt, indeed!—
Confirm'd conspiracy with fearful France;
And by their hands this grace of kings must die,—
If hell and treason hold their promises,—
Ere he take ship for France, and in Southampton.

Linger your patience on; and well digest
The abuse of distance while we force a play.
The sum is paid; the traitors are agreed;
The king is set from London; and the scene
Is now transported, gentle, to Southampton:
There is the playhouse now, there must you sit:
And thence to France shall we convey you safe,
And bring you back, charming the narrow seas
To give you gentle pass; for, if we may,
We'll not offend one stomach with our play.
But, till the king come forth and not till then,
Undo Southampton do we shift our scene.

[Exit.


Enter NYM and BARDOLPH.

Bard. Well met, Corporal Nym.

Nym. Good morrow, Lieutenant Bardolph.

Bard. What, are Ancient Pistol and you friends yet?

Nym. For my part, I care not: I say little;
but when time shall serve, there shall be smiles;
but that shall be as it may. I dare not fight;
but I will wink and hold out mine iron. It is a simple one; but what though? it will toast cheese, and it will endure cold as another man's sword will: and there's an end.

Bard. I will bestow a breakfast to make you friends, and we'll be all three sworn brothers to France: let it be so, good Corporal Nym.

Nym. Faith, I will live so long as I may, that's the certain of it; and when I cannot live any longer, I will do as I may: that is my rest, that is the rendezvous of it.

Bard. It is certain, corporal, that he is married to Nell Quickly; and, certainly she did you wrong, for you were troth-plight to her.
Nym. I cannot tell; things must be as they may: men may sleep, and they may have their throats about them at that time; and, some say, knives have edges. It must be as it may: though patience be a tired mare, yet she will plod. There must be conclusions. Well, I cannot tell.

_Enter Pistol and Hostess._

Bard. Here comes Ancient Pistol and his wife. Great corporal, be patient here. How now, mine host Pistol!  
Pist. Base like, call'st thou me host?  
Now, by this hand, I swear, I scorn the term; 32  
Nor shall my Nell keep lodgers.  
Host. No, by my troth, not long; for we cannot lodge and board a dozen or fourteen gentlewomen that live honestly by the pick of their needles, but it will be thought we keep a hawthouse straight. [NYM and PISTOL draw.] O well-a-day, Lady! if he be not drawn now: we shall see willful adultery and murder committed. 40  
Bard. Good lieutenant! good corporal! offer nothing here.  
Nym. Pish!  
Pist. Pish for thee, Iceland dog! thou pricked cur of Iceland! 44  
Host. Good Corporal Nym, show thy valour and put up your sword.  
Nym. Will you shog off? I would have you solus.  
[Sheathing his sword.  
Pist. Solus, egregious dog? O viper vile!  
The solus in thy most mervailous face;  
The solus in thy teeth, and in thy throat,  
And in thy hateful lungs, yea, in thy maw, perdy;  
And, which is worse, within thy nasty mouth! 53  
I do retort the solus in thy bowels;  
For I can take, and Pistol's cock is up,  
And flashing fire will follow.  
Nym. I am not Barbason; you cannot conjure me. I have an humour to knock you indifferently well. If you grow foul with me, Pistol, I will scour you with my rapier, as I may, in fair terms: if you would walk off, I would prick your guts a little, in good terms, as I may; and that's the humour of it.  
Pist. O braggart vile and damned furious wight! 64  
The grave doth gape, and doting death is near;  
Therefore exhale.  
Bard. Hear me, hear me what I say: he that strikes the first stroke, I'll run him up to the hilt, as I am a soldier.  
[Draws.  
Pist. An oath of mickle might, and fury shall abate.  
Give me thy fist, thy fore-foot to me give;  
Thy spirits are most tall. 72

Nym. I will cut thy throat, one time or other, in fair terms; that is the humour of it.  
Pist. Coupe le gorge!  
That is the word. I thee defy again. 76  
O hound of Crete, think'st thou my spouse to get?  
No; to the spital go,  
And from the powdering tub of infamy  
Fetch forth the lazar kite of Cressid's kind, 80  
Doll Tearsheet by her name, and her espouse:  
I have, and I will hold, the quondam Quickly  
For the only she; and—pauca, there's enough. Go to

_Enter the Boy._

Boy. Mine host Pistol, you must come to my master, and your hostess: he is very sick, and would to bed. Good Bardolph, put thy face between his sheets and do the office of a warming-pan. Faith, he's very ill. 88  
Bard. Away, you rogue!  
Host. By my troth, he'll yield the crow a pudding one of these days. The king has killed his heart. Good husband, come home presently. [Exeunt Hostess and Boy.  
Bard. Come, shall I make you two friends?  
We must to France together. Why the devil should we keep knives to cut one another's throats? 95  
Pist. Let floods o'erswell, and fiends for food  
Howl on!  
Nym. You'll pay me the eight shillings I won of you at betting?  
Pist. Base is the slave that pays. 100  
Nym. That now I will have; that's the humour of it.  
Pist. As manhood shall compound: push home.  
[They draw.  
Bard. By this sword, he that makes the first thrust, I'll kill him; by this sword, I will. 105  
Pist. Sword is an oath, and oaths must have their course.  
Bard. Corporal Nym, an thou wilt be friends,  
be friends: an thou wilt not, why then, be enemies with me too. Pr thee, put up. 109  
Nym. I shall have my eight shillings I won of you at betting?  
Pist. A noble shalt thou have, and present pay;  
And liquor likewise will I give to thee, 113  
And friendship shall combine, and brotherhood:  
I'll live by Nym, and Nym shall live by me.  
Is not this just? for I shall suffer be 116  
Unto the camp, and profits will accrue.  
Give me thy hand.  
Nym. I shall have my noble?  
Pist. In cash most justly paid. [Paying him.  
Nym. Well then, that's the humour of it. 121
KING HENRY THE FIFTH

Act II, Sc. I.

Re-enter Hostess.

Host. As ever you came of women, come in quickly to Sir John. Ah, poor heart! he is so shaked of a burning tertian, that it is most lamentable to behold. Sweet men, come to him.

Nym. The king hath run bad humours on the knight; that's the even of it.

Pist. Nym, thou hast spoke the right; His heart is fractured and corroborate.

Nym. The king is a good king: but it must be as it may; he passes some humours and careers.

Pist. Let us conhole the knight; for, lambkins, we will live.

Exeunt.


Enter Exeter, Bedford, and Westmoreland.

Bed. 'Fore God, his Grace is bold to trust these traitors.

Exe. They shall be apprehended by and by.

West. How smooth and even they do bear themselves!

As if allegiance in their bosoms sat, 4

Crowned with faith and constant loyalty.

Bed. The king hath note of all that they intend,

By interception which they dream not of.

Exe. Nay, but the man that was his bedfellow,

Whom he hath dull'd and cloy'd with gracious favours,

That he should, for a foreign purse, so sell

His sovereign's life to death and treachery!

Trumpets sound. Enter King Henry, Scroop, Cambridge, Grey, Lords, and Attendants.

K. Hen. Now sits the wind fair, and we will aboard.

My Lord of Cambridge, and my kind Lord of Masham,

And you, my gentle knight, give me your thoughts: Think you not that the powers we bear with us Will cut their passage through the force of France, Doing the execution and the act

For which we have in head assembled them?

Scroop. No doubt, my liege, if each man do his best.

K. Hen. I doubt not that; since we are well persuaded

We carry not a heart with us from hence

That grows not in a fair consent with ours;

Nor leave not one behind that doth not wish

Success and conquest to attend on us.

Cam. Never was monarch better fear'd and lov'd

Than is your majesty: there's not, I think, a subject

That sits in heart-grief and uneasiness

Under the sweet shade of your government.

Grey. True: those that were your father's enemies

Have sleep'd their galls in honey, and do serve you

With hearts create of duty and of zeal.

K. Hen. We therefore have great cause of thankfulness,

And shall forget the office of our hand,

Sooner than quittance of desert and merit

According to the weight and worthiness.

Scroop. So service shall with steel'd sinews toil,

And labour shall refresh itself with hope,

To do your Grace incessant services.

K. Hen. We judge no less. Uncle of Exeter,

Enlarge the man committed yesterday

That rail'd against our person: we consider

It was excess of wine that set him on;

And on his more advice we pardon him.

Scroop. That's mercy, but too much security:

Let him be punish'd, sovereign, lest example Breed, by his sufferance, more of such a kind.

K. Hen. O! let us yet be merciful.

Cam. So may your highness, and yet punish too.

Grey. Sir,

You show great mercy, if you give him life

After the taste of much correction.

K. Hen. Alas! your too much love and care of me

Are heavy orisons 'gainst this poor wretch.

If little faults, proceeding on distemper,

Shall not be wink'd at, how shall we stretch our eye

When capital crimes, chew'd, swallow'd, and digested,

Appear before us? We'll yet enlarge that man,

Though Cambridge, Scroop, and Grey, in their dear care,

And tender preservation of our person,

Would have him punish'd. And now to our French causes:

Who are the late commissioners?

Cam. I one, my lord:

Your highness bade me ask for it to-day.

Scroop. So did you me, my liege.

Grey. And I, my royal sovereign.

K. Hen. Then, Richard, Earl of Cambridge, there is yours;

There yours, Lord Scroop of Masham; and, sir knight,
Grey of Northumberland, this same is yours: 68
Read them; and know, I know your worthiness.
My Lord of Westmoreland, and uncle Exeter,
We will aboard to-night. Why, how now, gentlemen!
What see you in those papers that you lose 72
So much complexion? Look ye, how they change!
Their cheeks are paper. Why, what read you there,
That hath so cowarded and chas’d your blood
Out of appearance?
Cam. I do confess my fault, 76
And do submit me to your highness’ mercy.
Grey. 80
Scroop. To which we all appeal.
K. Hen. The mercy that was quick in us but late
By your own counsel is suppress’d and kill’d:
You must not dare, for shame, to talk of mercy;
For your own reasons turn into your bosoms
As dogs upon their masters, worrying you.
See you, my princes and my noble peers, 84
These English monsters! My Lord of Cambridge here,
You know how apt our love was to accord
To furnish him with all appertains
Belonging to his honour; and this man
Hath, for a few light crowns, lightly conspir’d,
And sworn unto the practices of France,
To kill us here in Hampton: to the which
This knight, no less for bounty bound to us
Than Cambridge is, hath likewise sworn. But O!
What shall I say to thee, Lord Scroop? thou cruel,
Ingrateful, savage and inhuman creature!
Thou that didst bear the key of all my counsels,
That knewst the very bottom of my soul,
That almost mightst have coind me into gold
Wouldst thou have practis’d on me for thy use!
May it be possible that foreign hire
Could out of thee extract one spark of evil
That might annoy my finger? ’tis so strange
That, though the truth of it stands off as gross
As black from white, my eye will scarcely see it.
Treason and murder ever kept together,
As two yoke-devils sworn to either’s purpose,
Working so grossly in a natural cause
That admiration did not whoop at them:
But thou, ’gainst all proportion, didst bring in
Wonder to wait on treason and on murder:
And whatsoever cunning fiend it was
That wrought upon thee so preposterously
Hath got the voice in hell for excellence:
And other devils that suggest by treasons
Do backlog and bungle up damnation
With patches, colours, and with forms, being fetch’d 116
From glistening semblances of piety;
But he that temper’d thee bade thee stand up,
Gave thee no instance why thou shouldst do treason,
Unless to dub thee with the name of traitor.
If that same demon that hath gull’d thee thus
Should with his lion gait walk the whole world,
He might return tousty Tartar back,
And tell the legions, ’I can never win
A soul so easy as that Englishman’s.’
O! how hast thou with jealousy infected
The sweetness of affiance. Show men duteifull
Why, so didst thou: seem they grave and learned?
Why, so didst thou: come they of noble family?
Why, so didst thou: seem they religious?
Why, so didst thou: or are they spare in diet,
Free from gross passion or of mirth or anger,
Constant in spirit, not swerving with the blood,
Garnish’d and deck’d in modest complement,
Not working with the eye without the ear,
And but in purged judgment trusting neither?
Such and so finely boild didst thou seem:
And thus thy fall hath left a kind of blot,
To mark the full-fraught man and best indu’d
With some suspicion. I will weep for thee:
For this revolt of thine, methinks, is like
Another fall of man. Their faults are open:
Arrest them to the answer of the law;
And God acquit them of their practices!
Exe. I arrest thee of high treason, by the name of Richard Earl of Cambridge.
I arrest thee of high treason, by the name of
Henry Lord Scroop of Masham.
I arrest thee of high treason, by the name of
Thomas grey, knight, of Northumberland.
Scroop. Our purposes God justly hath discover’d,
And I repent my fault more than my death;
Which I beseech your highness to forgive,
Although my body pay the price of it.
Cam. For me, the gold of France did not seduce,
Although I did admit it as a motive
The sooner to effect what I intended:
But God be thanked for prevention;
Which I in sufferance heartily will rejoice,
Beseeching God and you to pardon me.
Grey. Never did faithful subject more rejoice
At the discovery of most dangerous treason
Than I do at this hour joy o’er myself,
Prevented from a damned enterprise.
My fault, but not my body, pardon, sovereign.
K. Hen. God quit you in his mercy! Hear your sentence. You have conspir’d against our royal person, Join’d with an enemy proclaim’d, and from his coffers receiv’d the golden earnest of our death; Wherein you would have sold your king to slaughter, His princes and his peers to servitude, His subjects to oppression and contempt, And his whole kingdom into desolation. Touching our person seek we no revenge; But we our kingdom’s safety must so tender, Whose ruin you have sought, that to her laws We do deliver you. Get you therefore hence, Poor miserable wretches, to your death; The taste whereof, God of his mercy give you Patience to endure, and true repentance. Of all your dear offences! Bear them hence. [Exeunt Cambridge, Scoop, and Grey, guarded.

Now, lords, for France! the enterprise whereof Shall be to you, as us, like glorious. We doubt not of a fair and lucky war, Since God so graciously hath brought to light This dangerous treason lurking in our way To hinder our beginnings. We doubt not now But every rub is smoothed on our way. Then forth, dear countrymen: let us deliver Our puissance into the hand of God, Putting it straight in expedition. Cheerly to sea! the signs of war advance: No king of England, if not king of France. [Exeunt.


Enter Pistol, Hostess, Nym, Bardolph, and Boy. Host. Prithée, honey-sweet husband, let me bring thee to Staines. Pistol. No; for my manly heart doth yearn. Bardolph, be blitha; Nym, rouse thy vaunting veins; Boy, bristle thy courage up; for Falstaff he is dead, And we must yearn therefore.

Bard. Would I were with him, whereasmore he is, either in heaven or in hell! Host. Nay, sure, he’s not in hell: he’s in Arthur’s bosom, if ever man went to Arthur’s bosom. A’ made a finer end and went away an it had been any christom child; a’ parted even just between twelve and one, even at the turning o’ the tide: for after I saw him tumble with the sheets and play with flowers and smile upon his fingers’ ends, I knew there was but one way; for his nose was as sharp as a pen, and a’ babbled of green fields. ‘How now, Sir John!’ quoth I: ‘what man! be of good cheer.’ So a’ cried out ‘God, God, God!’ three or four times: now I, to comfort him, bid him a’ should not think of God, I hoped there was no need to trouble himself with any such thoughts yet. So a’ bade me lay more clothes on his feet: I put my hand into the bed and felt them, and they were as cold as any stone; then I felt to his knees, and so upward, and upward, and all was as cold as any stone.

Nym. They say he cried out of sack. Host. Ay, that a’ did. Bard. And of women. Host. Nay, that a’ did not. Boy. Yes, that a’ did; and said they were devils incarnate.

Host. A’ could never abide carnation; ‘twas a colour he never liked.

Boy. A’ said once, the devil would have him about women. Host. A’ did in some sort, indeed, handle women; but then he was rheumatic, and talked of the whore of Babylon.

Boy. Do you not remember a’ saw a flea stick upon Bardolph’s nose, and a’ said it was a black soul burning in hell-fire? Bard. Well, the fuel is gone that maintained that fire: that’s all the riches I got in his service.

Nym. Shall we shog? the king will be gone from Southampton. Pist. Come, let’s away. My love, give me thy lips. Look to my chattels and my moveables; Let senses rule, the word is, ‘Pitch and pay;’ Trust none; For oaths are straws, men’s faiths are wafer-cakes, And hold-fast is the only dog, my duck: Therefore, caveo be thy counsellor. Go, clear thy crystals. Yoke-fellows in arms, Let us to France; like horse-leeches, my boys, To suck, to suck, the very blood to suck! Boy. And that’s but unwholesome food, they say.

Pist. Touch her soft mouth, and march. Bard. Farewell, hostess. [Kissing her. Nym. I cannot kiss, that is the humour of it; but, adieu.


Host. Farewell; adieu. [Exeunt.

550
SCENE IV.—France. An Apartment in the French King’s Palace.

Flourish. Enter the French King, attended; the Dauphin, the Dukes of Berri and Britaine, the Constable, and Others.

Fr. King. Thus come the English with full power upon us;
And more than carefully it us concerns
To answer royally in our defences.
Therefore the Dukes of Berri and Britaine,
Of Brabant and of Orleans, shall make forth,
And you, Prince Dauphin, with all swift dispatch,
To line and new repair our towns of war
With men of courage and with means defendant.

For England his approaches makes as fierce
As waters to the sucking of a gulf.
It suits us then to be as provident
As fear may teach us, out of late examples
Left by the fatal and neglected English
Upon our fields.

Dau. My most redoubted father,
It is most meet we arm us ’gainst the foe;
For peace itself should not so dull a kingdom,—
Though war nor no known quarrel were in question,—
But that defences, musters, preparations,
Should be maintain’d, assembled, and collected,
As were a war in expectation.

Therefore, I say ’tis meet we all go forth
To view the sick and feeble parts of France:
And let us do it with no show of fear;
No, with no more than if we heard that England
Were busied with a Whitsun morris-dance.

For, my good liege, she is so idly king’d,
Her sceptre so fantastically borne
By a vain, giddy, shallow, humorous youth,
That fear attends her not.

Con. O peace, Prince Dauphin!
You are too much mistaken in this king.
Question your Grace the late ambassadors,
With what great state he heard their embassy,
How well supplied with noble counsellors,
How modest in exception, and, withal
How terrible in constant resolution,
And you shall find his vanities forespent
Were but the outside of the Roman Brutus,
Covering discretion with a coat of folly;
As gardeners do with ordure hide those roots
That shall first spring and be most delicate.

Dau. Well, ’tis not so, my lord high constable;
But though we think it so, it is no matter:
In cases of defence ’tis best to weigh
The enemy more mighty than he seems.

So the proportions of defence are fill’d;
Which of a weak and niggardly projection
Doth like a miser spoil his coat with scanting
A little cloth.

Fr. King. Think we King Harry strong; 48
And, princes, look you strongly arm to meet him.
The kindred of him hath been flesh’d upon us,
And he is bred out of that bloody strain
That haunted us in our familiar paths:
Witness our too much memorable shame
When Cressy battle fatally was struck
And all our princes captiv’d by the hand
Of that black name, Edward Black Prince of Wales;
Whiles that his mounting sire, on mountain standing,
Up in the air, crown’d with the golden sun,
Saw his heroical seed, and smil’d to see him
Mangle the work of nature, and deface
The patterns that by God and by French fathers
Had twenty years been made. This is a stem
Of that victorious stock; and let us fear
The native mightiness and fate of him.

Enter a Messenger.

Mess. Ambassadors from Harry King of England
Do crave admittance to your majesty.

Fr. King. We’ll give them present audience.
Go, and bring them.

[Exeunt Messenger and certain Lords.

You see this chase is hotly follow’d, friends.

Dau. Turn head, and stop pursuit; for coward dogs
Most spend their mouths when what they seem to threaten
Runs far before them. Good my sovereign,
Take up the English short, and let them know
Of what a monarchy you are the head:
Self-love, my liege, is not so vile a sin
As self-neglecting.

Re-enter Lords, with Exeter and Train.

Fr. King. From our brother England?
Exe. From him; and thus he greets your majesty.

He wills you, in the name of God Almighty,
That you divest yourself, and lay apart
The borrow’d glories that by gift of heaven,
By law of nature and of nations ’long
To him and to his heirs; namely, the crown
And all wide-stretched honours that pertain
By custom and the ordinance of times
Upto the crown of France. That you may know
’Tis no sinister nor no awkward claim,

551
Act II, Sc. IV.  KING HENRY THE FIFTH

Pick'd from the worm-holes of long-vanish'd days,
Nor from the dust of old oblivion rak'd,
He sends you this most memorable line, [Gives a pedigree.

In every branch truly demonstrative;
Willing you overlook this pedigree;
And when you find him evenly deriv'd
From his most fam'd of famous ancestors, Edward the Third, he bids you then resign
Your crown and kingdom, indirectly held
From him the native and true challenger.

Fr. King. Or else what follows?  
Exe. Bloody constraint; for if you hide the crown

Even in your hearts, there will be rake for it:
Therefore in fierce tempest is he coming,
In thunder and in earthquake like a Jove,
That, if requiring fail, he will compel;
And bids you, in the bowels of the Lord,
Deliver up the crown, and to take mercy
On the poor souls for whom this hungry war
Opens his vasty jaws; and on your head
Turning the widows' tears, the orphans' cries,
The dead men's blood, the pining maidens' groans,
For husbands, fathers, and betrothed lovers,
That shall be swallow'd in this controversy.
This is his claim, his threatening, and my message;
Unless the Dauphin be in presence here,
To whom expressly I bring greeting too.

Fr. King. For us, we will consider of this further:

To-morrow shall you bear our full intent
Back to our brother England.

Dau. For the Dauphin, I stand here for him: what to him from England?

Exe. Scorn and defiance, slight regard, contempt,
And anything that may not misbecome
The mighty sender, doth he prize you at.
Thus says my king: an if your father's highness
Do not, in grant of all demands at large,
Sweeten the bitter mock you sent his majesty,
He'll call you to so hot an answer of it,
That caves and womby vaultages of France
Shall chide your trespass and return your mock

In second act of his ordinance.

Dau. Say, if my father render fair return,
It is against my will; for I desire
Nothing but odds with England: to that end,
As matching to his youth and vanity,
I did present him with the Paris balls.

Exe. He'll make your Paris Louvre shake
For it,
Were it the mistress-court of mighty Europe;
And, be assur'd, you'll find a difference—
As we his subjects have in wonder found—
Between the promise of his greener days
And these he masters now. Now he weighs time
Even to the utmost grain; that you shall read
In your own losses, if he stay in France.

Fr. King. To-morrow shall you know our mind at full.

Exe. Dispatch us with all speed, lest that our king

Come here himself to question our delay;
For he is footed in this land already.

Fr. King. You shall be soon dispatch'd with

Fair conditions:
A night is but small breath and little pause
To answer matters of this consequence.

[FLOURISH. EXEUNT.

ACT III.

Enter Chorus.

Chor. Thus with imagin'd wing our swift scene flies

In motion of no less celerity
Than that of thought. Suppose that you have seen

The well-appointed king at Hampton pier
Embark his royalty; and his brave fleet
With silken streamers the young Phoebus fanning:

Play with your fancies, and in them behold
Upon the hempen tackle ship-boys climbing;
Hear the shrill whistle which doth order give
To sounds confus'd; behold the threaden sails,
Borne with the invisible and creeping wind,

Draw the huge bottoms through the furrow'd sea,
Breasting the lofty surge. O! do but think
You stand upon the rivage and behold
A city on the inconstant billows dancing;

For so appears this fleet majestical,

Holding due course to Harfleur. Follow, follow! Grapple your minds to sternage of this navy, And leave your England, as dead midnight still,
Guarded with grandsires, babies, and old women,

Either past or not arriv'd to pith and piasance:
For who is he, whose chin is but enrich'd
With one appearing hair, that will not follow
Those call'd and choice-drawn cavaliers to France?
WORK, work your thoughts, and therein see a
sieve;
Behold the ordinance on their carriages,
With fatal mouths gaping on girded Harfleur.
Suppose the ambassador from the French comes
back;
Tells Harry that the king doth offer him
Katharine his daughter; and with her, to
dowry,
Some petty and unprofitable dukedoms:
The offer likes not: and the nimble gunner
With linstock now the devilish cannon touches,
And down goes all before them. Still be kind,
And eke out our performance with your mind.
[Exit.

SCENE i.—France. Before Harfleur.

ALARUMS. Enter King Henrey, Exeter, Bed-
ford, Gloucester, and Soldiers, with scal-
ing ladders.

K. Hen. Once more unto the breach, dear
friends, once more;
Or close the wall up with our English dead!
In peace there’s nothing so becomes a man
As modest stillness and humility:
But when the blast of war blows in our ears,
Then imitate the action of the tiger;
Stiffen the sinews, summon up the blood,
Disguise fair nature with hard-favour’d rage;
Then lend the eye a terrible aspect;
Let it pry through the portage of the head
Like the brass cannon; let the brow o’erwhelm
it
As fearfully as doth a galled rock
O’erhang and jutty his confounded base,
Swill’d with the wild and wasteful ocean.
Now set the teeth and stretch the nostril wide,
Hold hard the breast, and bend up every spirit
To his full height! On, on, you noblest English!
Whose blood is fet from fathers of war-proof;
Fathers that, like so many Alexanders,
Have in these parts from morn till even fought,
And sheath’d their swords for lack of argu-
ment.

Dishonour not your mothers; now attest
That those whom you call’d fathers did beget
you.

Be copy now to men of grosser blood,
And teach them how to war. And you, good
yeomen,
Whose limbs were made in England, show us
here
The mettle of your pasture; let us swear
That you are worth your breeding; which I

For there is none of you so mean and base
That hath not noble lustre in your eyes.
I see you stand like greyhounds in the slipes,
Straining upon the start. The game’s afoot: follow your spirit; and, upon this charge
Cry ‘God for Harry! England and Saint George!’
[Exeunt. Alarum, and chambers go off.

SCENE ii.—The Same.

Enter Nym, Bardolph, Pistol, and Boy.

Bard. On, on, on, on, on to the breach, to
the breach!

Nym. Pray thee, corporal, stay: the knocks
are too hot; and for mine own part, I have not
a case of lives: the humour of it is too hot, that
is the very plain-song of it.

Pist. The plain-song is most just, for hu-
mours do abound:

Knocks go and come: God’s vessels drop and die;
And sword and shield
In bloody field
Doth win immortal fame.

Boy. Would I were in an alehouse in London!
I would give all my fame for a pot of ale, and

Pist. And I:

If wishes would prevail with me,
My purpose should not fail with me,
But thither would I tie.

Boy. As duty,
But not as truly,
As bird doth sing on bough.

Enter Fluellen.

Flu. Up to the breach, you dogs! avaunt,
you cullions! [Driving them forward.

Pist. Be merciful, great duke, to men of
mould!

Abate thy rage, abate thy manly rage!

Abate thy rage, great duke!

Good hawcocks, bate thy rage; use lenity, sweet
chuck!

Nym. These be good humours! your honour
wells bad humours.

[Exeunt Nym, Pistoll, and Bardolph, followed by Fluellen.

Boy. As young as I am, I have observed these
three swashers. I am boy to them all three, but
all they three, though they would serve me, could
not be man to me; for, indeed there three such
antiques do not amount to a man. For Bardolph,
he is white-livered and red-faced; by the means
whereof, a’ faces it out, but fights not. For
Pistol, he hath a killing tongue and a quiet
sword; by the means whereof a’ breaks words,
and keeps whole weapons. For Nym, he hath
heard that men of few words are the best men;
and therefore he scorns to say his prayers, lest a' should be thought a coward: but his few bad words are matched with as few good deeds; for a' never broke any man's head but his own, and that was against a post when he was drunk. They will steal any thing and call it purchase. Bardolph stole a lute-case, bore it twelve leagues, and sold it for three half pence. Nym and Bardolph are sworn brothers in fitching, and in Calais they stole a fire-shovel;—I knew by that piece of service the men would carry coals,—they would have me as familiar with men's pockets as their gloves or their handkerchers: which makes much against my manhood if I should take from another's pocket to put into mine; for it is plain pocketing up of wrongs. I must leave them and seek some better service: their villany goes against my weak stomach, and therefore I must cast it up. [Exit.

Re-enter Fluellen, Gower following.

Gow. Captain Fluellen, you must come presently to the mines: the Duke of Gloucester would speak with you.

Flu. To the mines! tell you the duke it is not so good to come to the mines. For look you, the mines is not according to the disciplines of the war; the concavities of it is not sufficient; for, look you, th' adversary—you may discuss unto the duke, look you—is digg himself four yards under the countermines; by Cheshu, I think, a' will plow up all if there is not better directions.

Gow. The Duke of Gloucester, to whom the order of the siege is given, is altogether directed by an Irishman, a very valiant gentleman, i' faith.

Flu. It is Captain Macmorris, is it not? I think it be.

Flu. By Cheshu, he is an ass, as in the world: I will verify as much in his peard: he has no more directions in the true disciplines of the wars, look you, of the Roman disciplines, than is a puppy-dog.

Enter MACMORRIS and JAMY, at a distance.

Gow. Here a' comes; and the Scots captain, Captain Jamy, with him.

Flu. Captain Jamy is a marvellous lavish gentleman, that is certain; and of great expedition and knowledge in th' aumcient wars, upon my particular knowledge of his directions: by Cheshu, he will maintain his argument as well as any military man in the world, in the disciplines of the pristine wars of the Romans.

Jamy. I say gud day, Captain Fluellen.

Flu. God-den to your worship, good Captain James.

Gow. How now, Captain Macmorris! have you quit the mines? have the pioners given o'er? Mac. By Chrish, la! tish ill done: the work ish give over, the trumpet sound the retreat. By my hand, I swear, and my father's soul, the work ish ill done; it ish give over: I would have blew up the town, so Chrish save me, la! in an hour: O! tish ill done, tish ill done; by my hand, tish ill done!

Flu. Captain Macmorris, I beseech you now, will you voutsafe me, look you, a few disputations with you, as partly touching or concerning the disciplines of the war, the Roman wars, in the way of argument, look you, and friendly communication; partly to satisfy my opinion, and partly for the satisfaction, look you, of my mind, as touching the discipline of the military discipline: that is the point.

Jamy. It sail be very gud, gud faith, gud captains bath: [Aside.] and I sail quit you with gud leve, as I may pick occasion; that sail I, marry.

Mac. It is no time to discourse, so Chrish save me: the day is hot, and the weather, and the wars, and the king, and the dukies: it is no time to discourse. The town is beseched, and the trumpet calls us to the breach; and we talk, and be Chrish, do nothing: 'tis shame for us all; so God sa' me, 'tis shame to stand still; it is shame, by my hand; and there is threats to be cut, and works to be done; and there is nothing done, so Chrish sa' me, la!

Jamy. By the mess, ere these eyes of mine take themselves to slumber, aile do gud service, or aile lig' the Grund for it; ay, or go to death; and aile pay it as valorously as I may, that sail I suerly do, that is the breff and the long. Marry, I was full fain hear some question 'tween you tway.

Flu. Captain Macmorris, I think, look you, under your correction, there is not many of your nation—

Mac. Of my nation! What ish my nation? ish a villain, and a bastard, and a knave, and a rascal? What ish my nation? Who talks of my nation?

Flu. Look you, if you make the matter otherwise than is meant, Captain Macmorris, peradventure I shall think you do not use me with that affability as in discretion you ought to use me, look you; being as good a man as yourself, both in the disciplines of wars, and in the derivation of my birth, and in other particularities.

Mac. I do not know you so good a man as myself: so Chrish save me, I will cut off your head.

Gow. Gentlemen both, you will mistake each other.
KING HENRY THE FIFTH

Act III, Sc. IV.

K. Hen. How yet resolves the governor of the town?
This is the latest parle we will admit:
Therefore to our best mercy give yourselves;
Or like to men proud of destruction
Defy us to our worst: for, as I am a soldier,—
A name that in my thoughts, becomes me best,—
If I begin the battery once again,
I will not leave the half-achieved Harfleur
Till in her ashes she lie buried.
The gates of mercy shall be all shut up,
And the flesh’d soldier, rough and hard of heart,
In liberty of bloody hand shall range
With conscience wide as hell, mowing like grass
Your fresh-fair virgins and your flowering infants.
What is it then to me, if impious war,
Array’d in flames like to the prince of fiends,
Do, with his smirch’d complexion, all fell feats
Enlink’d to waste and desolation?
What is ’t to me, when you yourselves are cause,
If your pure maidens fall into the hand
Of hot and forcing violation?
What rein can hold licentious wickedness
When down the hill he holds his fierce career?
We may as bootless spend our vain command
Upon the enraged soldiers in their spoil
As send precepts to the Leviathan
To come ashore. Therefore, you men of Harfleur,
Take pity of your town and of your people,
Whiles yet my soldiers are in my command;
Whiles yet the cool and temperate wind of grace
O’erblows the filthy and contagious clouds
Of heady murder, spoil, and villany.
If not, why, in a moment, look to see
The blind and bloody soldier with foul hand
Defile the locks of your shrill-shrieking daughters;
Your fathers taken by the silver beards,
And their most reverend heads dash’d to the walls;
Your naked infants spitted upon pikes,
While the mad mothers with their howls confus’d

Do break the clouds, as did the wives of Jewry
At Herod’s bloody-hunting slaughtermen.
What say you? will you yield, and this avoid?
Or, guilty in defence, be thus destroy’d?
Our expectation hath this day an end.
The Dauphin, whom of succour we entreated,
Returns us that his powers are yet not ready
To raise so great a siege. Therefore, great king,
We yield our town and lives to thy soft mercy.
Enter our gates; dispose of us and ours;
For we no longer are defensible.
K. Hen. Open your gates! Come, uncle Exeter,
Go you and enter Harfleur; there remain,
And fortify it strongly ’gainst the French;
Use mercy to them all. For us, dear uncle,
The winter coming on and sickness growing,
Upon our soldiers, we will retire to Calais.
To-night in Harfleur will we be your guest;
To-morrow for the march are we address’d.
Flourish. KING HENRY and his Train enter the town.

SCENE IV.—Rouen. A Room in the Palace.

Enter Katharine and Alice.
Kath. Alice, tu as esté en Angleresse, et tu parles bien le langage.
Alice. Un peu, madame.
Kath. Je le prée, m’enseigne, il faut que j’apprenne à parler. Comment appellez-vous la main en Anglois?
Alice. La main? elle est appellée, de hand.
Kath. De hand. Et les doigts?
Alice. Les doigts? ma foy, je oublie les doigts; mais je me souviendrai. Les doigts? je pense qu’ils sont appelés de finges; ouy, de finges.
Kath. La main, de hand; les doigts, de finges. Je pense que je suis le bon escolier. J’ai gagné deux mots d’Anglois vistement. Comment appellez vous les ongles?
Alice. Les ongles? nous les appelons, de nails.
Kath. De nails. Escoutez; dites moy, si je parle bien: de hands, de finges, et de nails.
Alice. C’est bien dit, madame; il est fort bon Anglois.
Kath. Dites moy l’Anglois pour le bras.
Alice. De arm, madame.
Kath. Et le coude?
Alice. De elbow.
Kath. De elbow. Je m’en fais la répétition de tous les mots que vous m’avez appris dès à présent.
Alice. Il est trop difficile, madame, comme je pense.
Kath. Excusez moy, Alice; escoutez: de hand, 
de fanges, de nails, de arma, de bilbow. 32

Alice. De elbow, madame.

Kath. O Seigneur Dieu! je m’en oublie; de 
elbow. Comment appellez vous le col?

Alice. De nick, madame. 36

Kath. De nick. Et le menton?

Alice. De chin.

Kath. De sin. Le col, de nick: le menton, do 
sin.

Alice. Ouy. Sauf vostre honneur, en vérité 
you prononcez les mots aussi droit que les 
natifs d’Angleterre.

Kath. Je ne doute point d’apprendre par la 
grace de Dieu, et en peu de temps. 45

Alice. N’avez vous déjà oublié ce que je vous 
ay enseigné?

Kath. Non, je reciteray à vous promptement.
De hand, de finge, de mails,— 49

Alice. De nails, madame.

Kath. De nails, de arme, de ilbow.

Alice. Sauf vostre honneur, d’elbow. 52

Kath. Ainsi dis je; d’elbow, de nick, et de 
sin. Comment appelez vous le pied et la robe?

Alice. De foot, madame; et de cown. 55

Kath. De foot, et de cown? O Seigneur 
Dieu! ces sont mots de son mauvais, corruptible, 
gros, et impudique, et non pour les dames 
d’honneur d’user. Je ne vouvoirais prononcer 
ces mots devant les seigneurs de France, pour 
tout le monde. Foh! le foot, et le cown. Néant-
moins je reciterai une autre fois ma leçon 
ensemble: de hand, de finge, de nails, d’arm, 
d’elbow, de nick, de sin, de foot, de cown. 64

Alice. Excellent, madame!

Kath. C’est assez pour une fois: allons nous 
da diner.  [Exeunt.

SCENE V.—The Same. Another Room in 
the Palace.

Enter the French King, the Dauphin, Duke 
of Bourbon, the Constable of France, 
and Others.

Fr. King. ’Tis certain, he hath pass’d the 
river Somme.

Con. And if he be not fought while, my lord, 
Let us not live in France; let us quit all, 
And give our vineyards to a barbarous people. 4

Dau. O Dieu vivant! shall a few sprays of us, 
The emptying of our fathers’ luxury, 
Our scions, put in wild and savage stock, 
Spirit up so suddenly into the clouds, 
And overlook their grattlers? 8

Bour. Normans, but bastard Normans, Nor-
man bastards!

Mort de ma vie! if they march along

Unfought whileth, but I will sell my dukedom, 12
To buy a slobery and a dirty farm 
In that nook-shotten isle of Albion.

Con. Dieu de batailles! where have they 
this mettis?
Is not their climate foggy, raw, and duli, 16
On whom, as in despite, the sun looks pale,
Killing their fruit with frowns? Can sodden 
water,
A drench for sur-rein’d jades, their barley-broth,
Decoct their cold blood to such valiant heat? 20
And shall our quick blood, spirited with wine, 
Seem frosty? Of! for honour of our land, 
Let us not hang like roping icicles 

Upon our houses’ thatch, whiles a more frosty 
people 24
Sweat drops of gallant youth in our rich fields; 
Poor we may call them in their native lords.

Dau. By faith and honour, 
Our madams mock at us, and plainly say 28
Our mettle is bred out; and they will give 
Their bodies to the lust of English youth 
To new-store France with bastard warriors.

Bour. They bid us to the English dancing-
schools, 32
And teach lavoltes high and swift corantoe; 
Saying our grace is only in our heels, 
And that we are most lofty runaways.

Fr. King. Where is Monbjoy the herald? 
speed him hence:
Let him greet England with our sharp defiance. 
Up, princes! and, with spirit of honour eg’d 
More sharper than your swords, hie to the field: 
Charles Delabroth, High Constable of France; 40
You Dukes of Orleans, Bourbon, and Berri, 
Alençon, Brabant, Bar, and Burgundy; 
Jaques Chatillon, Rambures, Vaudemont, 
Beaumont, Grandpré, Roussie, and Faunonberg, 
Foir, Lestrale, Bouciqult, and Charolois; 45
High dukes, great princes, barons, lords, and 
knightes, 
For your great seats now quit you of great 
shames.

Bar Harry England, that sweeps through our land 
With pennons painted in the blood of Harfleur! 
Rush on his host, as doth the melted snow 
Upon the valleys, whose low vassal seat 
The Alps doth spitt and void his rheum upon: 52
Go down upon him, you have power enough; 
And in a captive chariot into Roan 
Bring him our prisoner.

Con. This becomes the great. 
Sorry am I his numbers are so few, 56
His soldiers sick and famish’d in their march, 
For I am sure when he shall see our army 
He’ll drop his heart into the sink of fear, 
And for achievement offer us his ransom. 60
KING HENRY THE FIFTH  
ACT III, SC. VI.

Fr. King. Therefore, lord constable, haste on Montjoy, And let him say to England that we send To know what willing ransom he will give. Prince Dauphin, you shall stay with us in Roan. 
Dau. Not so, I do beseech your majesty. Fr. King. Be patient, for you shall remain with us. Now forth, lord constable and princes all, And quickly bring us word of England's fall.  
[Exeunt.

SCENE VI.—The English Camp in Picardy. 

Enter GOWER and FLUellen.

Gow. How now, Captain Fluellen! come you from the bridge? 

Flu. I assure you, there is very excellent services committed at the bridge. 

Gow. Is the Duke of Exeter safe? 

Flu. The Duke of Exeter is as magnanimous as Agamemnon; and a man that I love and honour with my soul, and my heart, and my duty, and my life, and my living, and my uttermost power: he is not—God be praised and blessed!—any hurt in the world; but keeps the pride most valiantly, with excellent discipline. There is an aunchient lieutenant there at the bridge, I think, in my very conscience, he is as valiant a man as Mark Antony; and he is a man of no estimation in the world; but I did see him do as gallant service. 

Gow. What do you call him? 

Flu. He is called Aunchient Pistol. 

Gow. I know him not. 

Enter Pistol.

Pist. Captain, I thee beseech to do me favours: 
The Duke of Exeter doth love thee well. 

Flu. Ay, I praise God; and I have merited some love at his hands. 

Pist. Bardolph, a soldier firm and sound of heart, And of luxom valour, hath, by cruel fate And giddy Fortune's furious fickle wheel, That goddess blind, 

Flu. By your patience, Aunchient Pistol. Fortune is painted plind, with a muffer afore her eyes, to signify to you that Fortune is plind: and she is painted also with a wheel, to signify to you, which is the moral of it, that she is turning, and inconstant, and mutability, and variation: and her foot, look you, is fixed upon a spherical stone, which rolls, and rolls, and rolls: in good truth, the poet makes a most excellent description of it: Fortune is an excellent moral. 

Pist. Fortune is Bardolph's foe, and frowns on him; For he hath stol'n a pax, and hanged must a' be, A damned death! Let gallows gape for dog, let man go free And let not hemp his wind-pipe suffocate. But Exeter hath given the doom of death For pax of little price. Therefore, go speak; the duke will hear thy voice; And let not Bardolph's vital thread be cut With edge of penny cord and vile reproach: Speak, captain, for his life, and I will thee requisite. 

Pist. Why then, rejoice therefore. 

Flu. Certainly, aunchient, it is not a thing to rejoice at; for, if, look you, he were my brother, I would desire the duke to use his good pleasure and put him to execution; for discipline ought to be used. 

Pist. Die and be damn'd; and figo for thy friendship! 

Flu. It is well. 

Pist. The fig of Spain! 

[Exit. 

Flu. Very good. 

Gow. Why, this is an arrant counterfeit rascal: I remember him now; a bawd, a cutpurse. 

Flu. I'll assure you a' uttered as prave words at the bridge as you shall see in a summer's day. But it is very well; what he has spoke to me, that is well, I warrant you, when time is serve. 

Gow. Why, 'tis a gall, a fool, a rogue, that now and then goes to the wars to grace himself at his return into London under the form of a soldier. And such fellows are perfect in the great commanders' names, and they will learn you by rote where services were done; at such and such a sconce, at such a breach, at such a convoy; who came off bravely, who was shot, who disgraced, what terms the enemy stood on; and this they can perfectly in the phrase of war, which they trick up with new-tuned oaths; and what a beard of the general's cut and a horrid suit of the camp will do among foaming bottles and ale-washed wits, is wonderful to be thought on. But you must learn to know such slanders of the age, or else you may be marvellously mistook. 

Flu. I tell you what, Captain Gower; I do
perceive, he is not the man that he would gladly make show to the world he is: if I find a hole in his coat I will tell him my mind. [Drum heard.] Hark you, the king is coming; and I must speak with him from the pridge.

Enter KING HENRY, GLOUCESTER, and Soldiers.

Flu. God pless your majesty!

K. Hen. How now, Fluellen! canst thou from the bridge?

Flu. Ay, so please your majesty. The Duke of Exeter hath very gallantly maintained the pridge: the French is gone off, look you, and there is gallant and most prave passages. Marry, th' atherosvary was have possession of the pridge, but he is enforced to retire, and the Duke of Exeter is master of the pridge. I can tell your majesty the duke is a prave man.

K. Hen. What men have you lost, Fluellen?

Flu. The perdition of th' atherosvary hath been very great, reasonable great: marry, for my part, I think the duke hath lost never a man but one that is like to be executed for robbing a church; one Bardolph, if your majesty know the man: his face is all bubbleks, and whels, and knobbs, and flames o' fire; and his lips blow at his nose, and it is like a coal of fire, sometimes blue and sometimes red; but his nose is executed, and his fire's out.

K. Hen. We would have all such offenders so cut off: and we give express charge that in our marches through the country there be nothing compelled from the villages, nothing taken but paid for, none of the French upbraided or abused in disdainful language; for when lenity and cruelty play for a kingdom, the gentler gamester is the soonest winner.

Tucket. Enter MONTJOY.

Mont. You know me by my habit.

K. Hen. Well then I know thee: what shall I know of thee?

Mont. My master's mind.

K. Hen. Unfold it.

Mont. Thus says my king: Say thou to Harry of England: Though we seemed dead, we did but sleep: advantage is a better soldier than rashness. Tell him, we could have rebuked him at Harfleur, but that we thought not good to bruise an injury till it were full ripe: now we speak upon our cue, and our voice is imperial: England shall repent his folly, see his weakness, and admire our sufferance. Bid him therefore consider of his ransom; which must proportion the losses we have borne, the subjects we have lost, the disgrace we have digested; which, in weight to
SCENE VII.—The French Camp, near Agincourt.

Enter the Constable of France, the Lord Rambures, the Duke of Orleans, the Dauphin, and Others.

Con. Tut! I have the best armour of the world. Would it were day!

Orl. You have an excellent armour; but let my horse have his due.

Con. It is the best horse of Europe.

Orl. Will it never be morning?

Dau. My Lord of Orleans, and my lord high constable, you talk of horse and armour—

Orl. You are as well provided of both as any prince in the world.

Dau. What a long night is this! I will not change my horse with any that treads but on four pasterns. Ça, ha!' He bounds from the earth as if his entrails were hairs: le cheval volant, the Pegasus; qui a les marines de feu! When I bestride him, I soar, I am a hawk: he trots the air; the earth sings when he touches it; the basest horn of his hoof is more musical than the pipe of Hermes.

Orl. He's of the colour of the nutmeg.

Dau. And of the heat of the ginger. It is a beast for Perseus; he is pure air and fire; and the dull elements of earth and water never appear in him but only in patient stillness while his rider mounts him: he is indeed a horse; and all other jades you may call beasts.

Con. Indeed, my lord, it is a most absolute and excellent horse.

Dau. It is the prince of palfreys; his neigh is like the bidding of a monarch and his countenance enforces homage.

Orl. No more, cousin.

Dau. Nay, the man hath no wit that cannot, from the rising of the lark to the lodging of the lamb, vary deserved praise on my palfrey: it is a theme as fluent as the sea; turn the sands into eloquent tongues, and my horse is argument for them all. 'Tis a subject for a sovereign to reason on, and for a sovereign's sovereign to ride on; and for the world—familiar to us, and unknown—to lay apart their particular functions and wonder at him. I once writ a sonnet in his praise and began thus: 'Wonder of nature!'

Orl. I have heard a sonnet begin so to one's mistress.

Dau. Then did they imitate that which I composed to my courser; for my horse is my mistress.

Orl. Your mistress bears well.

Dau. Me well; which is the prescription praise and perfection of a good and particular mistress.

Con. Ma foi, methought yesterday your mistress shrewdly shook your back.

Dau. So perhaps did yours.

Con. Mine was not bridled.

Dau. Of then belike she was old and gentle; and you rode, like a kern of Ireland, your French hose off and in your straight strusers.

Con. You have good judgment in horsemanship.

Dau. Be warned by me, then: they that ride so, and ride not warily, fall into foul bogs. I had rather have my horse to my mistress.

Con. I had as lief have my mistress a jade.

Dau. I tell thee, constable, my mistress wears his own hair.

Con. I could make as true a boast as that if I had a sow to my mistress.

Dau. Le chien est retourné à son propre vomissement, et la truie lavée au bourbier: thou makest use of any thing.

Con. Yet do I not use my horse for my mistress: or any such proverb so little kin to the purpose.

Ram. My lord constable, the armour that I saw in your tent to-night, are those stars or suns upon it?

Con. Stars, my lord.

Dau. Some of them will fall to-morrow, I hope.

Con. And yet my sky shall not want.

Dau. That may be, for you bear a many superfluously, and 'twere more honour some were away.

Con. Even as your horse bears your praises; who would trot as well were some of your brags dismounted.

Dau. Would I were able to load him with his desert! Will it never be day? I will trot tomorrow a mile, and my way shall be paved with English faces.

Con. I will not say so for fear I should be faced out of my way. But I would it were morning, for I would fain be about the ears of the English.

Ram. Who will go to hazard with me for twenty prisoners?

Con. You must first go yourself to hazard, ere you have them.

Dau. 'Tis midnight: I'll go arm myself.

Exit.

Orl. The Dauphin longs for morning.

Ram. He longs to eat the English.

Con. I think he will eat all he kills.

Orl. By the white hand of my lady, he's a gallant prince.
Act III, Sc. VII.

KING HENRY THE FIFTH

Con. Swear by her foot, that she may tread out the oath. 109

Orl. He is simply the most active gentleman of France.

Con. Doing is activity, and he will still be doing. 113

Orl. He never did harm, that I heard of.

Con. Nor will do none to-morrow: he will keep that good name still.

Orl. I know him to be valiant.

Con. I was told that by one that knows him better than you.

Orl. What's he?

Con. Marry, he told me so himself; and he said he cared not who knew it.

Orl. He needs not; it is no hidden virtue in him. 124

Con. By my faith, sir, but it is; never any body saw it but his laocney: 'tis a hooded valour; and when it appears, it will bate.

Orl. 'Ill never said well.' 128

Con. I will cap that proverb with 'There is flattery in friendship.'

Orl. And I will take up that with 'Give the devil his due.' 132

Con. Well placed: there stands your friend for the devil: have at the very eye of that proverb, with 'A pox of the devil.'

Orl. You are the better at proverbs, by how much 'A fool's bolt is soon shot.' 137

Con. You have shot over.

Orl. 'Tis not the first time you were overshot.

Enter a Messenger.

Mess. My lord high constable, the English lie within fifteen hundred paces of your tents. 141

Con. Who hath measured the ground.

Mess. The Lord Grandpré.

Con. A valiant and most expert gentleman.

Would it were day! Alas! poor Harry of England, he longs not for the dawning as we do. 146

Orl. What a wretched and peevish fellow is this King of England, to mope with his fat-brained followers so far out of his knowledge!

Con. If the English had any apprehension they would run away. 151

Orl. That they lack; for if their heads had any intellectual armour they could never wear such heavy head-pieces.

Ram. That island of England breeds very valiant creatures: their mastiffs are of unmatchable courage.

Orl. Foolish curs! that run winking into the mouth of a Russian bear and have their heads crushed like rotten apples. You may as well say that's a valiant flea that dare eat his breakfast on the lip of a lion. 157

Con. Just, just; and the men do sympathize with the mastiffs in robustious and rough coming on, leaving their wits with their wives: and then give them great meals of beef and iron and steel, they will eat like wolves and fight like devils. 168

Orl. Ay, but these English are shrewdly out of beef.

Con. Then shall we find to-morrow they have only stomachs to eat and none to fight. Now is it time to arm; come, shall we about it? 173

Orl. It is now two o'clock: but, let me see, by ten

We shall have each a hundred Englishmen.

[Exeunt.

ACT IV.

Enter Chorus.

Now entertain conjecture of a time
When creeping murmur and the poring dark
Fills the wide vessel of the universe.
From camp to camp, through the foul womb of night,
The hum of either army stills sounds,
That the fix'd sentinels almost receive
The secret whispers of each other's watch:
Fire answers fire, and through their paly flames
Each battle sees the other'sumber'd face:
Steed threatens steed, in high and boastful neighs
Piercing the night's dull ear; and from the tents
The armourers, accomplishing the knights, 12
With busy hammers closing rivets up,
Give dreadful note of preparation.
The country cock do crow, the clocks do toll,
And the third hour of drowsy morning name. 16
Proud of their numbers, and secure in soul,
The confident and over-lusty French
Do the low-rated English play at dice;
And chide the cripple tardy-gaited night
Who, like a foul and ugly witch, doth limp
So tediously away. The poor condemned Eng-

lish,
Like sacrifices, by their watchful fires
Sil patiency, and only ruminate 24
The morning's danger, and their gesture sad
Investing lank-lean cheeks and war-worn coals
Presenteth them unto the gazing moon
So many horrid ghosts. 0! now, who will behold

The royal captain of this ruin'd band
Walking from watch to watch, from tent to tent,
Let him cry 'Praise and glory on his head!'
For forth he goes and visits all his host;— 32
Bids them good morrow with a modest smile,
And calls them brothers, friends, and country-
men.
Upon his royal face there is no note
How dread an army hath enrounded him; 36
Nor doth he dedicate one jot of colour
Unto the weary and all-watch'd night:
But freshly looks and overbears allaint
With cheerful semblance and sweet majesty;
That every wretch, pining and pale before,
Beholding him, placeth comfort from his looks.
A largess universal, like the sun
His liberal eye doth give to every one,
Thawing cold fear. Then mean and gentle all,
Behold, as may unworthiness define,
A little touch of Harry in the night.
And so our scene must to the battle fly;
Where,—O for pity,—we shall much disgrace,
With four or five most vile and ragged foils,
Right ill dispos'd in brawl ridiculous.
The name of Agincourt. Yet sit and see;
Minding true things by what their mockery be.

SCENE I.—The English Camp at Agincourt.

Enter King Henry, Bedford, and Gloucester.

K. Hen. Gloucester, 'tis true that we are in
great danger;
The greater therefore should our courage be.
Good morrow, brother Bedford. God Almighty!
There is some soul of goodness in things evil,
Would men observing distil it out;
For our bad neighbour makes us early stirrers,
Which is both healthful, and good husbandry:
Besides, they are our outward consciences,
And preachers to us all; admonishing
That we should dress us fairly for our end.
Thus may we gather honey from the weed,
And make a moral of the devil himself.

Enter Erpingham.

Good morrow, old Sir Thomas Erpingham:
A good soft pillow for that good white head
Were better than a churlish turf of France.

Erp. Not so, my liege: this lodging likes me better.

Since I may say, 'Now lie I like a king.'
K. Hen. 'Tis good for men to love their
present pains
Upon example; so the spirit is eas'd:
And when the mind is quicken'd, out of doubt,
The organs, though deject and dead before,
Break up their drowsy grave, and newly move
With casted slough and fresh legerity.

Lend me thy cloak, Sir Thomas. Brothers both,
Commend me to the princes in our camp;
Do my good morrow to them; and anon
Desire them all to my pavilion.

Glo. We shall, my liege. 28

[Exeunt Gloucester and Bedford.

Erp. Shall I attend your Grace?
K. Hen. No, my good knight;
Go with my brothers to my lords of England:
I and my bosom must debate awhile,
And then I would no other company.

Erp. The Lord in heaven bless thee, noble Harry!

K. Hen. God-a-mercy, old heart! thou speak'st
cheerfully.

Enter Pistol.

Pist. Qui va là?
K. Hen. A friend.
Pist. Discuss unto me; art thou officer?
Or art thou base, common and popular?
K. Hen. I am a gentleman of a company.
Pist. Trail'st thou the puissant pike?
K. Hen. Even so. What art thou?
Pist. As good a gentleman as the emperor.
K. Hen. Then you are a better than the king.
Pist. The king's a bawcock, and a heart of
gold,
A lad of life, an imp of fame:
Of parents good, of fist most valiant:
I kiss his dirty shoe, and from my heart-string
I love the lovely bully. What's thy name?
Pist. Le Roy! a Cornish name: art thou of
Cornish crew?
K. Hen. No, I am a Welshman.
Pist. Know'st thou Fluellen?
K. Hen. Yes.
Pist. Tell him, I'll knock his look about his
pate
Upon Saint Davy's day.
K. Hen. Do not you wear your dagger in your
cap that day, lest he knock that about yours.
Pist. Art thou his friend?
K. Hen. And his kinsman too.
Pist. The figo for thee then!
K. Hen. I thank you. God be with you!
Pist. My name is Pistol called. [Exit.
K. Hen. It sorts well with your fierceness.
[Retires.

Enter Fluellen and Gower, severally.

Gow. Captain Fluellen!

Flu. Sir! in the name of Cheshu Christ, speak
lower. It is the greatest admiration in the
universal world, when the true and auncient
prerogatifs and laws of the wars is not kept.

561
If you would take the pains but to examine the wars of Pompey the Great, you shall find, I warrant you, that there is no tiddle-taddle nor pibble-pabble in Pompey's camp; I warrant you, you shall find the ceremonies of the wars, and the cares of it, and the forms of it, and the sobriety of it, and the modesty of it, to be otherwise.

Gow. Why, the enemy is loud; you heard him all night.

Flu. If the enemy is an ass and a fool and a prating coxcomb, is it meet, think you, that we should also, look you, be an ass and a fool and a prating coxcomb, in your own conscience now?

Gow. I will speak lower.

Flu. I pray you and peseech you that you will.

[Exeunt Gower and Fluellen.

K. Hen. Though it appear a little out of fashion, there is much care and valour in this Welshman.

Enter John Bates, Alexander Court, and Michael Williams.

Court. Brother John Bates, is not that the morning which breaks yonder?

Bates. I think it be; but we have no great cause to desire the approach of day.

Will. We see yonder the beginning of the day, but I think we shall never see the end of it. Who goes there?

K. Hen. A friend.

Will. Under what captain serve you?


Will. A good old commander and a most kind gentleman: I pray you, what thinks he of our estate?

K. Hen. Even as men wracked upon a sand, that look to be washed off the next tide.

Bates. He hath not told his thought to the king?

K. Hen. No; nor it is not meet he should. For, though I speak it to you, I think the king is but a man, as I am: the violet smells to him as it doth to me; the element shows to him as it doth to me; all his senses have but human conditions: his ceremonies lay by him, in his nakedness he appears but a man; and though his affections are higher mounted than ours, yet when they stoop, they stoop with the like wing. Therefore when he sees reason of fears, as we do, his fears, out of doubt, be of the same relish as ours are: yet, in reason, no man should possess him with any appearance of fear, lest he, by showing it, should dishearten his army.

Bates. He may show what outward courage he will, but I believe, as cold a night as 'tis, he could wish himself in Thames up to the neck, and so I would be were, and I by him, at all adventures, so we were quit here.

K. Hen. By my troth, I will speak my conscience of the king: I think he would not wish himself any where but where he is.

Bates. Then I would be were here alone; so should he be sure to be ransomed, and a many poor men's lives saved.

K. Hen. I dare say you love him not so ill to wish him here alone, howsoever you speak this to feel other men's minds. Methinks I could not die any where so contented as in the king's company, his cause being just and his quarrel honourable.

Will. That's more than we know.

Bates. Ay, or more than we should seek after; for we know enough if we know we are the king's subjects. If his cause be wrong, our obedience to the king wipes the crime of it out of us.

Will. But if the cause be not good, the king himself hath a heavy reckoning to make; when all those legs and arms and heads, chopped off in a battle, shall join together at the latter day, and cry all, 'We died at such a place;' some swearing, some crying for a surgeon, some upon their wives left poor behind them, some upon the debts they owe, some upon their children rawly left. I am afraid there are few die well that die in a battle; for how can they charitably dispose of any thing when blood is their argument? Now, if these men do not die well, it will be a black matter for the king that led them to it, whom to disobey were against all proportion of subjection.

K. Hen. So, if a son that is by his father sent about merchandise do sinfully miscarry upon the sea, the imputation of his wickedness, by your rule, should be imposed upon his father that sent him: or if a servant, under his master's command transporting a sum of money, be assailed by robbers and die in many irreconciled iniquities, you may call the business of the master the author of the servant's damnation. But this is not so: the king is not bound to answer the particular endings of his soldiers, the father of his son, nor the master of his servant; for they purpose not their death when they purpose their services. Besides, there is no king, be his cause never so spotless, if it come to the arbitrement of swords, can try it out with all unsprouted soldiers. Some, perdadventure, have on them the guilt of premeditated and contrived murder; some, of beguiling virgins with the broken seals of perjury; some, making the ware their bulwark, that have before gored the gentle bosom of peace with pillage and robbery. Now, if these men have defeated the law and outrun native
punishment, though they can outstrip men, they have no wings to fly from God: war is his beadle, war is his vengeance; so that here men are punished for before-breach of the king's laws in now the king's quarrel: where they feared the death they have borne life away, and where they would be safe they perish. Then, if they die unprovided, no more is the king guilty of their damnation than he was before guilty of those impieties for the which they are now visited. Every subject's duty is the king's; but every subject's soul is his own. Therefore should every soldier in the wars do as every sick man in his bed, wash every mote out of his conscience; and dying so, death is to him advantage; or not dying, the time was blessedly lost wherein such preparation was gained: and in him that escapes, it were not sin to think, that making God so free an offer, he let him outlive that day to see his greatness, and to teach others how they should prepare.

Will. 'Tis certain, every man that dies ill, the ill upon his own head: the king is not to answer it.

Bates. I do not desire he should answer for me; and yet I determine to fight lustily for him.

K. Hen. I myself heard the king say he would not be ransomed.

Will. Ay, he said so, to make us fight cheerfully; but when our throats are cut he may be ransomed, and we ne'er the wiser.

K. Hen. If I live to see it, I will never trust his word after.

Will. You pay him then. That's a perilous shot out of an elder-gun, that a poor and a private displeasure can do against a monarch. You may as well go about to turn the sun to ice with fanning in his face with a peacock's feather. You'll never trust his word after! come, 'tis a foolish saying.

K. Hen. Your reproach is something too round; I should be angry with you if the time were convenient.

Will. Let it be a quarrel between us, if you live.

K. Hen. I embrace it.

Will. How shall I know thee again?

K. Hen. Give me any gage of thine, and I will wear it in my bonnet: then, if ever thou darest acknowledge it, I will make it my quarrel.

Will. Here's my glove: give me another of thine.

K. Hen. There.

Will. This will I also wear in my cap: if ever thou come to me and say after to-morrow, 'This is my glove,' by this hand I will take thee a box on the ear.
Can sleep so soundly as the wretched slave, 288
Who with a body fill’d and vacant mind
Gets him to rest, cram ’d with distressful bread;
Never sees horrid night, the child of hell,
But, like a lackey, from the rise to set 292
Sweats in the eye of Phoebus, and all night
Sleeps in Elysium; next day after dawn,
Doth rise and help Hyperion to his horse,
And follows so the ever-running year 296
With profitable labour to his grave:
And, but for ceremony, such a wretch,
Winding up days with toil and nights with sleep,
Had the fore-hand and vantage of a king. 300
The slave, a member of the country’s peace,
Enjoys it; but in gross bran little wots
What watch the king keeps to maintain the peace,
Whose hours the peasant best advantages. 304

Re-enter Erpingham.

Erp. My lord, your nobles, jealous of your absence,
Seek through your camp to find you.
K. Hen. Good old knight,
Collect them all together at my tent:
I’ll be before thee.

Erp. I shall do ’t, my lord. [Exit. K. Hen. O God of battles! steel my soldiers’ hearts; 309
Possess them not with fear; take from them now
The sense of reckoning, if the opposed numbers
Pluck their hearts from them. Not to-day, O Lord!
Ol not to-day, think not upon the fault
My father made in compassing the crown.
I Richard’s body have inter’d anew,
And on it have bestow’d more contrite tears
Than from it issu’d forced drops of blood.
Five hundred poor I have in yearly pay,
Who twice a day their witherd hands hold up Toward heaven, to pardon blood; and I have built
Two chantries, where the sad and solemn priests
Sing still for Richard’s soul. More will I do;
Though all that I can do is nothing worth,
Since that my penitence comes after all, Imploring pardon.

Re-enter Gloucester.

Glo. My liege!

K. Hen. My brother Gloucester’s voice! Ay;
I know thy errand, I will go with thee:
The day, my friends, and all things stay for me.

Enter Constable.

Now, my lord constable!

Con. Hark how our steeds for present service neigh!

Dau. Mount them, and make incision in their hides,
That their hot blood may spin in English eyes,
And dout them with superfluous courage: ha!
Ram. What! will you have them weep our horses’ blood?

How shall we then behold their natural tears?

Enter a Messenger.

Mess. The English are embattail’d, you French peers.

Con. To horse, you gallant princes! straight to horse!

Do but behold you poor and starved band,
And your fair show shall suck away their souls,
Leaving them but the shales and husks of men.
There is not work enough for all our hands;
Scarcely enough in all their sickly veins
To give each naked curtal-axe a stain,
That our French gallants shall to-day draw out,
And sheathe for lack of sport: let us but blow on them,
The vapour of our valour will o’erturn them.
’Tis positive ‘gainst all exceptions, lords,
That our superfluous lackeys and our peasants,
Who in unnecessary action swarm
About our squares of battle, were enow
To purge this field of such a biding foe,
Though we upon this mountain’s basis by
Took stand for idle speculation:
But that our honours must not. What’s to say?
A very little let us do,
And all is done. Then let the trumpets sound
The tucket sonance and the note to mount:
For our approach shall so much dare the field.
That England shall couch down in fear and yield.

Enter Grandpré.

Grand. Why do you stay so long, my lords of France?
Yon island carrions desperate of their bones,
Ill-favour'dly become the morning field: 40
Their ragged curtains poorly are let loose,
And our air shakes them passing scornfully:
Big Mars seems bankrupt in their beggar'd host,
And faintly through a rusty beaver peeps: 44
The horsemen sit like fixed candlesticks,
With torch-staves in their hand; and their poor
jades
Lob down their heads, dropping the hides and
hips,
The gum down-roping from their pale-dead
eyes, 48
And in their pale dull mouths the gimmal bit
Lies foul with chew'd grass, still and motionless;
And their executors, the knavish crows,
Fly o'er them, all impatient for their hour. 52
Description cannot suit itself in words
To demonstrate the life of such a battle
In life so lifeless as it shows itself.
Con. They have said their prayers, and they
stay for death. 56
Dau. Shall we go send them dinners and
fresh suits,
And give their fasting horses provender,
And after fight with them?
Con. I stay but for my guard: on, to the
field! 60
I will the banner from a trumpet take,
And use it for my haste. Come, come, away!
The sun is high, and we outwear the day.
[Exeunt.

SCENE III.—The English Camp.

Enter the English host; Gloucester, Bedford, Exeter, Salisbury, and Westmoreland.

Glo. Where is the king?
Bed. The king himself is rode to view their
battle.
West. Of fighting men they have full threescore thousand.
Exe. There's five to one; besides, they all are
fresh.
Sal. God's arm strike with us! 'tis a fearful
odds.

God be wi' you, princes all; I'll to my charge:
If we no more meet till we meet in heaven,
Then, joyfully, my noble Lord of Bedford,
My dear Lord Gloucester, and my good Lord
Exeter,
And my kind kinsman, warriors all, adieu! 8
Bed. Farewell, good Salisbury; and good
luck go with thee!
Exe. Farewell, kind lord. Fight valiantly to-
day:
And yet I do thee wrong to mind thee of it,
For he to-day that sheds his blood with me
Shall be my brother; be he ne'er so vile
This day shall gentle his condition:
And gentlemen in England, now a-bed
Shall think themselves accurs'd they were not here,
And hold their manhoods cheap whilst any speaks
That fought with us upon Saint Crispin's day.

Re-enter Salisbury.

Sal. My sov'reign lord, bestow yourself with speed;
The French are bravely in their battles set,
And will with all expence charge on us.
K. Hen. All things are ready, if our minds be so.
West. Perish the man whose mind is backward now!
K. Hen. Thou dost not wish more help from England, coz?
West. God's will! my liege, would you and I alone,
Without more help, could fight this royal battle!
K. Hen. Why, now thou hast unwish'd five thousand men;
Which likes me better than to wish us one.
You know your places: God be with you all!

Tucket. Enter Montjoy.

Mont. Once more I come to know of thee, King Harry,
If for thy ransom thou wilt now compound,
Before thy most assured overthrow:
For certainly thou art so near the gulf
Thou needs must be englutted. Besides, in mercy,
The constable desires thee thou wilt mind
Thy followers of repentance; that their souls
May make a peaceful and a sweet retire
From off these fields, where, wretches, their poor bodies
Must lie and fester.
K. Hen. I pray thee, bear my former answer back:
Bid them achieve me and then sell my bones.
Good God! why should they mock poor fel lows thus?
The man that once did sell the lion's skin
While the beast liv'd, was kill'd with hunting him.
A many of our bodies shall no doubt
Find native graves; upon the which, I trust,
Shall witness live in brass of this day's work;
And those that leave their valiant bones in France,
Dying like men, though buried in your dung-hills,
They shall be fam'd; for there the sun shall greet them,
And draw their honours reeking up to heaven,
Leaving their earthly parts to choke your clime,
The smell whereof shall breed a plague in France.
Mark then abounding valour in our English,
That being dead, like to the bullet's grazing,
Break out into a second course of mischief,
Killing in relapse of mortality.
Let me speak proudly: tell the constable,
We are but warriors for the working-day;
Our gayness and our gilt are all besmirch'd
With rainy marching in the painful field;
There's not a piece of feather in our host—

Good argument, I hope, we will not fly—
And time hath worn us into slovenry:
But, by the mass, our hearts are in the trim;
And my poor soldiers tell me, yet ere night
They'll be in fresher robes, or they will pluck
The gay new coats 'o'er the French soldiers' heads,
And turn them out of service. If they do this,—
As, if God please, they shall,—my ransom then
Will soon be levied. Herald, save thou thy labour;

Come thou no more for ransom, gentle herald:
They shall have none, I swear, but these my joints;
Which if they have as I will leave 'em them,
Shall yield them little, tell the constable.
Mont. I shall, King Harry. And so, fare thee well:
Thou never shalt hear herald any more. [Exit.
K. Hen. I fear thou'lt once more come again for ransom.

Enter York.

York. My lord, most humbly on my knee I beg
The leading of the vaward.
K. Hen. Take it, brave York. Now, soldiers, march away:
And how thou pleasest, God, dispose the day!

[Exeunt.

Scene IV.—The Field of Battle.

Alarums: Excursions. Enter French Soldier,
Pistol, and Boy.

Pist. Yield, cur!
Fr. Sol. Je pense que vous estes le gentil-homme de bonne qualité.
Pist. Quality? Calen O custure me! Art thou a gentleman?
What is thy name? discuss.
Fr. Sol. O Seigneur Dieu!
Pist. O Signieur Dew should be a gentleman:
Perpend my words, O Signieur Dew, and mark:
O Signieur Dew, thou diest on point of fox
Except, O signieur, thou do give to me
Egregious ransom.
Fr. Sol. O, prenez misericorde! ayez pitié de moy!
Pist. Moy shall not serve; I will have forty moys;
Or I will fetch thy rim out at thy throat
In drops of crimson blood.
Fr. Sol. Est-il impossible d'échapper la force
de ton bras?
Pist. Brass, curl.
Thou damned and luxurious mountain goat,
Offerst me brass?
Fr. Sol. O pardonnez moy!
Pist. Sayst thou me so? is that a ton of moys?
Come hither, boy: ask me this slave in French
What is his name.
Boy. Escoutez: comment estes vous appelé?
Fr. Sol. Monsieur le Fer.
Boy. He says his name is Master Fer.
Pist. Master Fer! I'll fer him, and firk him,
and ferret him. Discuss the same in French
unto him.
Boy. I do not know the French for fer, and
ferret, and firk.
Pist. Bid him prepare, for I will cut his
throat.
Fr. Sol. Que dit-il, monsieur?
Boy. Il me commande à vous dire que vous
faites vous pres; car ce soldat icy est disposé
tout à cette heure de couper vostre gorge.
Pist. Ony, cuppele gorge, permafuy.
Peasant, unless thou give me crowns, brave
crowns;
Or mangled shalt thou be by this my sword.
Fr. Sol. O! je vous supplie pour l'amour de
Dieu, me pardonner! Je suis le gentilhomme de
bonne maison: gardez ma vie, et je vous don-
neray deux cents escus.
Pist. What are his words?
Boy. He prays you to save his life: he is a
gentleman of a good house; and, for his ransom
he will give you two hundred crowns.
Pist. Tell him, my fury shall abate, and I
The crowns will take.
Fr. Sol. Petit monsieur, que dit-il?
Boy. Encore qu'il est contre son jurement
de pardonner aucun prisonnier; neantmoins,
pour les escus que vous l'avez promis, il est
content de vous donner la liberté, le franchise-
ment.
Fr. Sol. Sur mes genoux, je vous donne mille
remerciements; et je m'estime heureux que je
sois tombé entre les mains d'un chevalier, je
pense, le plus brave, valiant, et très distingué
seigneur d'Angleterre.
Pist. Expound unto me, boy.
Boy. He gives you, upon his knees, a thou-
sand thanks; and he esteems himself happy
that he hath fallen into the hands of one—as he
thinks—the most brave, valorous, and thrice-
worthy signieur of England.
Pist. As I suck blood, I will some mercy
show.—
Follow me!

[Execut PISTOL and French Soldier.

Boy. Suivez vous le grand capitaine. I did
never knew so full a voice issue from so empty
a heart: but the saying is true, 'The empty
vessel makes the greatest sound.' Bardolph
and Nym had ten times more valour than this
roaring devil i' the old play, that every one
may pare his nails with a wooden dagger;
and they are both hanged; and so would this
be if he durst steal anything adventurously.
I must stay with the lackeys, with the luggage
of our camp: the French might have a good
prey of us, if he knew of it; for there is none to
guard it but boys.

[Exit.

SCENE V.—Another Part of the Field.

Alarums. Enter DAUPHIN, ORLEANS, BOUR-
BON, CONSTABLE, RAMBURUS, and Others.

Con. O diable!
Ori. O seigneur! le jour est perdu! tout est
perdu!
Dau. Mort de ma vie! all is confounded, all!
Reproach and everlasting shame
Sit mocking in our plumes. O meschante
fortune!
Do not run away. [A short alarum.

Con. Why, all our ranks are broke.
Dau. O perdurable shame! let's stab our-

Be these the wretches that we play'd at dice
for?
Ori. Is this the king we sent to for his
ransom?
Bour. Shame, and eternal shame, nothing
but shame!
Let's die in honour! once more back again;
And he that will not follow Bourbon now,
Let him go hence, and with his cap in hand,
Like a base pander, hold the chamber-door
Act IV, Sc. V.

WHILST BY A SLAVE, NO GENTIER THAN MY DOG,
His fairest daughter is contaminated. 16

Con. Disorder, that hath spoil’d us, friend us
now!

Let us on heaps go offer up our lives.

OId. We are enough yet living in the field
To smother up the English in our thongs, 20
If any order might be thought upon.

Bour. The devil take order now! I’ll to the
throng:
Let life be short, else shame will be too long. 37

[Exeunt.

SCENE VI.—Another Part of the Field.

Alarums. Enter King Henry and Forces;
Exeter, and Others.

K. Hen. Well have we done, thrice-valiant
countrymen:
But all’s not done; yet keep the French the
field.

Exe. The Duke of York commends him to
your majesty.

K. Hen. Lives he, good uncle? thrice within
this hour
I saw him down; thrice up again, and fighting;
From helmet to the spur all blood he was.

Exe. In which array, brave soldier, doth he lie,
Larding the plain; and by his bloody side,— 8
Yoke-fellow to his honour-owing wounds,—
The noble Earl of Suffolk also lies.

Suffolk first died: and York, all haggled over,
Comes to him, where in gore he lay insteep’d, 12
And takes him by the beard, kisses the gashes
That bloodily did yawn upon his face;
And cries aloud, ‘Tarry, dear cousin Suffolk! My
soul shall thine keep company to heaven;’ 16
Tarry, sweet soul, for mine, then fly abroad,
As in this glorious and well-foughten field,
We kept together in our chivalry!’

Upon these words I came and cheer’d him up:
He smil’d in the face, raught me his hand,
And with a feeble gripe says, ‘Dear my lord,
Commend my service to my sovereign.’

So did he turn, and over Suffolk’s neck
24
He threw his wounded arm, and kiss’d his lips;
And so espous’d to death, with blood he seal’d
A testament of noble-ending love.

The pretty and sweet manner of it forc’d
28
Those waters from me which I would have
stopp’d;
But I had not so much of man in me,
And all my mother came into mine eyes
And gave me up to tears.

K. Hen. I blame you not; 32
For, hearing this, I must perforce compound
With mistful eyes, or they will issue too.

[Alarum.

But hark! what new alarum is this same?
The French have reinforce’d their scatter’d men:
Then every soldier kill his prisoners!

SCENE VII.—Another Part of the Field.

Alarums. Enter Fluellen and Gower.

Flu. Kill the poys and the luggage! ’tis express
against the law of arms: ’tis as arrant
a piece of knavery, mark you now, as can be
offer’d: in your conscience now, is it not? 4

Gow. ’Tis certain, there’s not a boy left alive;
and the cowardly rascals that ran from
the battle have done this slaughter: besides, they
have burned and carried away all that was in
the king’s tent; wherefore the king most
worthily hath caused every soldier to cut his
prisoner’s throat. O! ’tis a gallant king. 11

Flu. Ay, he was born at Monmouth, Captain
Gower. What call you the town’s name where
Alexander the Pig was born?

Gow. Alexander the Great. 15

Flu. Why, I pray you, is not pig great? The
pig, or the great, or the mighty, or the huge,
or the magnanimous, are all one reckonings,
save the phrase is a little variations. 19

Gow. I think Alexander the Great was born
in Macedon: his father was called Philip of
Macedon, as I take it.

Flu. I think it is in Macedon where Alex-
ander is born. I tell you, captain, if you look in
the maps of the ‘orld, I warrant you shall find,
in the comparisons between Macedon and Mon-
mouth, that the situations, look you, is both
alike. There is a river in Macedon, and there is
also moreover a river at Monmouth: it is called
Wye at Monmouth; but it is out of my prains
what is the name of the other river; but ’tis all
one, ’tis alike as my fingers is to my fingers, and
there is salmons in both. If you mark Alex-
ander’s life well, Harry of Monmouth’s life is
come after it indifferent well; for there is figures
in all things. Alexander,—God knows, and you
know,—in his races, and his furies, and his
wraths, and his cholers, and his moods, and his
displeasures, and his indignations, and also
being a little intoxicates in his prains, did, in
his ales and his angers, look you, kill his pest
friend, Cleitus. 42

Gow. Our king is not like him in that: he
never killed any of his friends.

Flu. It is not well done, mark you now, to
take the tales out of my mouth, ere it is made
and finished. I speak but in the figures and
comparisons of it: as Alexander killed his friend
Cleitus, being in his ales and his cups, so also
KING HENRY THE FIFTH

Act IV, Sc. VII.

Harry Monmouth, being in his right wits and
his good judgments, turned away the fat knight
with the great belly-doublet: he was full of
jests, and gipes, and knavery, and mocks; I
have forgot his name.

Gow. Sir John Falstaff.

Flu. That is he. I'll tell you, there is goat
men born at Monmouth.

Gow. Here comes his majesty.

Alarum. Enter KING HENRY, with a part of
the English Forces; WARWICK, GLOUCESTER,
EXETER, and Others.

K. Hen. I was not angry since I came to
France
Until this instant. Take a trumpet, herald; 60
Ride thou unto the horsemen on yon hill:
If they will fight with us, bid them come down,
Or void the field; they do offend our sight.
If they 'll do neither, we will come to them, 64
And make them shirk away, as swift as stones
Enforced from the old Assyrian slings.
Besides, we'll cut the throats of those we have,
And not a man of them that we shall take 68
Shall taste our mercy. Go and tell them so.

Enter MONTJOY.

Exe. Here comes the herald of the French,
my liege.

Glo. His eyes are humbler than they us'd to
be.

K. Hen. How now! what means this, herald? 72
know'st thou not
That I have fin'd these bones of mine for
ransom?
Com'st thou again for ransom?

Mont. No, great king.
I come to thee for charitable licence,
That we may wander o'er this bloody field 76
To book our dead, and then to bury them;
To sort our nobles from our common men;
For many of our princes—woe the world!—
Lies drown'd and soak'd in mercenary blood; 80
So do our vulgar drench their pleasant limbs
In blood of princes; and their woundéd steeds
Fret tsetlock-deep in gore, and with wild rage
Yerk out their armed heels at their dead masters,
Killing them twice. O! give us leave, great king,
To view the field in safety and dispose
Of their dead bodies.

K. Hen. I tell thee truly, herald,
I know not if the day be ours or no; 88
For yet a many of your horsemen peer
And gallop o'er the field.

Mont. The day is yours.

K. Hen. Praised be God, and not our
strength, for it!

What is this castle call'd that stands hard by?

Mont. They call it Agincourt.

K. Hen. Then call we this the field of Agin-
court,
Fought on the day of Crispin Crispianus.

Flu. Your grandfather of famous memory,
an't please your majesty, and your great-uncle
Edward the Plack Prince of Wales, as I have
read in the chronicles, fought a most prave
pattle here in France.

K. Hen. They did, Fluellen.

Flu. Your majesty says very true. If your
majesties is remembered of it, the Welshmen
did good service in a garden where leeks did
grow, wearing leeks in their Monmouth caps;
which, your majesty know, to this hour is an
honourable badge of the service; and I do be-
lieve, your majesty takes no scorn to wear the
leek upon Saint Tavy's day.

K. Hen. I wear it for a memorable honour;
For I am Welsh, you know, good countryman.

Flu. All the water in Wye cannot wash your
majesty's Welsh plood out of your pody, I can
tell you that: Got pless it and preserve it, as long
as it plesses his grace, and his majesty too!

K. Hen. Thanks, good my countryman.

Flu. By Jesu, I am your majesty's country-
man, I care not who know it; I will confess it to
all the 'orld: I need not be ashamed of your
majesty, praised be God, so long as your majesty
is an honest man.

K. Hen. God keep me so! Our heralds go
with him:
Bring me just notice of the numbers dead
On both our parts. Call yonder fellow hither.

[Points to WILLIAMS. Exeunt MONTJOY
and Others.

Exe. Soldier, you must come to the king.

K. Hen. Soldier, why wear'st thou that glove
in thy cap?

Will. An't please your majesty, 'tis the gage
of one that I should fight withal, if he be alive.

K. Hen. An Englishman?

Will. An't please your majesty, a rascal that
swaggered with me last night; who, if a live
and ever dare to challenge this glove, I have sworn to
take him a box o' the ear; or, if I can see my
glove in his cap,—which he swore as he was a
soldier he would wear if alive,—I will strike it
out soundly.

K. Hen. What think you, Captain Fluellen?
is it fit this soldier keep his oath?

Flu. He is a craven and a villain else, an't
please your majesty, in my conscience.

K. Hen. It may be his enemy is a gentleman
of great sort, quite from the answer of his degree.

Flu. Though he be as good a gentleman as

569
the devil is, as Lucifer and Belzebub himself, it
is necessary, look your Grace, that he keep his
vow and his oath. If he be perjured, see you
now, his reputation is as arrant a villain and a
Jack-sauce as ever his black shoe trod upon
God's ground and his earth, in my conscience,
la!

K. Hen. Then keep thy vow, sirrah, when
thou meetest the fellow.

Will. So I will, my liege, as I live.

K. Hen. Who servest thou under?

Will. Under Captain Gower, my liege. 156

Flu. Gower is a good captain, and is good
knowledge and literate in the wars.

K. Hen. Call him hither to me, soldier.

Will. I will, my liege. [Exit.

K. Hen. Here, Fluellen; wear thou this favour
for me and stick it in thy cap. When Alençon
and myself were down together I plucked this
glove from his helm: if any man challenge this,
he is a friend to Alençon, and an enemy to our
person; if thou encounter any such, apprehend
him, an thou dost me love. 167

Flu. Your Grace does me as great honours as
I can be desired in the hearts of his subjects: I
would fain see the man that has but two legs
that shall find himself aggrieved at this glove,
that is all; but I would fain see it once, and
please God of his grace that I might see. 173

K. Hen. Knowest thou Gower?

Flu. He is my dear friend, an't please you.

K. Hen. Pray thee, go seek him, and bring
him to my tent. 177

Flu. I will fetch him. [Exit.

K. Hen. My Lord of Warwick, and my brother

Gloucester,

Follow Fluellen closely at the heels. 180

The glove which I have given him for a favour,
May haply purchase him a box o' the ear;
It is the soldier's; I by bargain should
Wear it myself. Follow, good cousin Warwick:
If that the soldier strike him,—as, I judge 185
By his blunt bearing he will keep his word,—
Some sudden mischief may arise of it;
For I do know Fluellen valiant, 188
And touch'd with choler, hot as gunpowder,
And quickly will return an injury:
Follow and see there be no harm between them.
Go you with me, uncle of Exeter. [Exeunt.

Scene VIII.—Before King Henry's Pavilion.

Enter Gower and Williams.

Will. I warrant it is to knight you, captain.

Enter Fluellen.

Flu. God's will and his pleasure, captain, I
beseech you now come apace to the king: there
is more good toward you peradventure than is
in your knowledge to dream of.

Will. Sir, know you this glove?

Flu. Know the glove! I know the glove is
a glove.

Will. I know this; and thus I challenge it. 8

[Strikes him.

Flu. 'Sblood! an arrant traitor as any's in
the universal 'orld, or in France, or in England
Gow. How now, sir! you villain!

Will. Do you think I'll be forsworn? 12

Flu. Stand away, Captain Gower; I will give
treason his payment into plows, I warrant you.

Will. I am no traitor.

Flu. That's a lie in thy throat. I charge you
in his majesty's name, apprehend him: he is a
friend of the Duke Alençon's. 18

Enter Warwick and Gloucester.

War. How now, how now! what's the matter?

Flu. My Lord of Warwick, here is,—praised
be God for it!—a most contagious treason come
to light, look you, as you shall desire in a
summer's day. Here is his majesty.

Enter King Henry and Exeter.

K. Hen. How now! what's the matter? 24

Flu. My liege, here is a villain and a traitor,
that, look your Grace, has struck the glove which
your majesty is take out of the helmet of Alençon.

Will. My liege, this was my glove; here is the
fellow of it; and he that I gave it to in change
promised to wear it in his cap: I promised to
strike him, if he did: I met this man with my
glove in his cap, and I have been as good as my
word.

Flu. Your majesty hear now,—saving your
majesty's manhood,—what an arrant, rascally,
beggarly, lousy knave it is. I hope your majesty
is pier me testimony and witness, and avouch-
ments, that this is the glove of Alençon that your
majesty is give me; in your conscience now.

K. Hen. Give me thy glove, soldier: look,
here is the fellow of it.

Twas I, indeed, thou promisest to strike;
And thou hast given me most bitter terms.

Flu. An't please your majesty, let his neck
answer for it, if there is any martial law in the
'orld.

K. Hen. How canst thou make me satisfac-
tion?

Will. All offences, my lord, come from the
heart: never came any from mine that might
offend your majesty.

K. Hen. It was ourself thou didst abuse. 52

Will. Your majesty came not like yourself:
you appeared to me but as a common man;
KING HENRY THE FIFTH

Act V, Ch.

witness the night, your garments, your lowliness; and what your highness suffered under that shape, I beseech you, take it for your own fault and not mine: for had you been as I took you for I made no offence; therefore, I beseech your highness, pardon me. 60

K. Hen. Here, unce Exeter, fill this glove with crowns, And give it to this fellow. Keep it, fellow; And wear it for an honour in thy cap Till I do challenge it. Give him the crowns: 64 And, captain, you must needs be friends with him.

Flu. By this day and this light, the fellow has mettle enough in his belly. Hold, there is twelve pence for you, and I pray you to serve God, and keep you out of pranks, and prables, and quarrels, and dissensions, and, I warrant you, it is the better for you.

Will. I will none of your money. 72

Flu. It is with a good will; I can tell you it will serve you to mend your shoes: come, wherefore should you be so pashful? your shoes is not so good: 'tis a good shilling, I warrant you, or I will change it.

Enter an English Herald.

K. Hen. Now, herald, are the dead number'd?

Her. Here is the number of the slaughter'd French. [Delivers a paper.

K. Hen. What prisoners of good sort are taken, uncle?

Exe. Charles Duke of Orleans, nephew to the king;

John Duke of Bourbon, and Lord Bouicault:
Of other lords and barons, knights and squires,
Full fifteen hundred, besides common men. 84

K. Hen. This note doth tell me of ten thousand French

That in the field lie slain: of princes, in this number,

And nobles bearing banners, there lie dead
One hundred twenty-six; added to these,

Of knights, esquires, and gallant gentlemen,
Eight thousand and four hundred; of the which
Five hundred were but yesterday dubb'd knights:
So that, in these ten thousand they have lost, 92

There are but sixteen hundred mercenaries;
The rest are princes, barons, lords, knights, squires,

And gentlemen of blood and quality.
The names of those their nobles that lie dead: 96
Charles Delabreth, High Constable of France;
Jaques of Chatillon, Admiral of France;
The master of the cross-bows, Lord Rambures;
Great-master of France, the brave Sir Guiscard Dauphin;

John Duke of Alençon; Antony Duke of Brabant,
The brother to the Duke of Burgundy,
And Edward Duke of Bar: of lusty earls,
Grandpré and Roussi, Fauconberg and Foix, 104
Beaumont and Marie, Vaudemont and Lestraile.
Here was a royal fellowship of death!

Where is the number of our English dead?

[Herold presents another paper.

Edward the Duke of York, the Earl of Suffolk,
Sir Richard Ketly, Davy Gam, esquire: 109
None else of name: and of all other men
But five and twenty. O God! thy arm was here;
And not to us, but to thy arm alone, 112
Ascribe we all. When, without stratagem,
But in plain shock and even play of battle,
Was ever known so great and little loss
On one part and on the other? Take it, God,
For it is none but thine.

Exe. 'Tis wonderful! 117

K. Hen. Come, go we in procession to the village:

And be it death proclaimed through our host
To boast of this or take the praise from God
Which is his only.

Flu. Is it not lawful, an please your majesty, to tell how many is killed?

K. Hen. Yes, captain; but with this acknowledgment,

That God fought for us.

Flu. Yes, my conscience, he did us great good.

K. Hen. Do we all holy rites:
Let there be sung Non nobis and Te Deum; 128
The dead with charity enclos'd in clay.
We'll then to Calais; and to England then,
Where ne'er from France arriv'd more happy men.

[Exeunt.

ACT V.

Enter Chorus.

Chor. Vouchsafe to those that have not read the story,

That I may prompt them: and of such as have, I humbly pray them to admit the excuse
Of time, of numbers, and due course of things,

Which cannot in their huge and proper life
Be here presented. Now we bear the king
Toward Calais: grant him there; there seen,
Heave him away upon your winged thoughts
Althwart the sea. Behold, the English beach
Pales in the flood with men, with wives, and boys,
Whose shouts and claps out-voice the deep-mouth'd sea,

Which, like a mighty whistler 'fore the king, 12
Seems to prepare his way: so let him land

571
And solemnly see him set on to London.
So swift a pace hath thought that even now
You may imagine him upon Blackheath; 16
Where that his lords desire him to have borne
His bruised helmet and his bended sword
Before him through the city: he forbids it,
Being free from vainness and self-glorious
pride; 20
Giving full trophy, signal and ostent,
Quite from himself, to God. But now behold,
In the quick forge and working-house of thought,
How London doth pour out her citizens. 24
The mayor and all his brethren in best sort,
Like to the senators of the antique Rome,
With the plebeians swarming at their heels,
Go forth and fetch their conquering Caesar in:
As, by a lower but loving likelihood,
Were now the general of our gracious empress,—
As in good time he may,—from Ireland coming,
Bringing rebellion broached on his sword, 32
How many would the peaceful city quit
To welcome him! much more, and much more
cause,
Did they this Harry. Now in London place
him;
As yet the lamentation of the French 36
Invites the King of England’s stay at home,—
The emperor’s coming in behalf of France,
To order peace between them;—and omit
All the occurrences, whatever chanced,
Till Harry’s back-return again to France:
There must we bring him; and myself have play’d
The interim, by remembering you ’tis past.
Then brook abridgment, and your eyes advance,
After your thoughts, straight back again to
France. [Exit.

SCENE I.—France. An English Court of
Guard.

Enter Fluellen and Gower.

Gow. Nay, that’s right; but why wear you
your leak to-day? Saint Davy’s day is past.

Flu. There is occasions and causes why and
wherefore in all things: I will tell you, asse my
friend, Captain Gower. The rascally, scald,
beggarly, lousy, prangling knave, Pistol,—which
you and yourself and all the ‘orld know to be no
better than a fellow,—look you now, of no merits,
his is come to me and pringes me pread and salt
yesterday, look you, and pid me eat my leak. It
was in a place where I could not preed no con-
tention with him; but I will be so bold as to
wear it in my cap till I see him once again, and
then I will tell him a little piece of my desires.

Gow. Why, here he comes, swelling like a
turkey-cock.

Enter Pistol.

Flu. ’Tis no matter for his swellings nor his
turkey-cocks. God pess you, Aunchient Pistoll!
your scurry, lousy knave, God pess you!

Pist. Ha! art thou bedlam? dost thou thirst,
base Troyan, 20
To have me fold up Parce’s fatal web?
Hence! I am qualmish at the smell of leek.

Flu. I peseech you heartily, scurry lousy
knave, at my desires and my requests and my
petitions to eat, look you, this leak; becaus,
look you, you do not love it, nor your affections
and your appetites and your digestions does not
agree with it, I would desire you to eat it. 28

Pist. Not for Cadwallader and all his goats.

Flu. [Strikes him.] There is one goat for you.
Will you be so good, scald knave, as eat it?

Pist. Base Troyan, thou shalt die. 32

Flu. You say very true, scald knave, when
God’s will is. I will desire you to live in the
mean time and eat your victuals; come, there
is sauce for it. [Strikes him again.] You called
me yesterday mountain-squire, but I will make
you to-day a squire of low degree. I pray you, fall
to: if you can mock a leak you can eat a leak.

Gow. Enough, captain: you have astonished
him.

Flu. I say, I will make him eat some part of
my leak, or I will peat his pate four days. Bite,
I pray you; it is good for your green wound
and your ploody coxcomb. 45

Pist. Must I bite?

Flu. Yes, certainly, and out of doubt and
out of question too and ambiguities. 48

Pist. By this leak, I will most horribly re-
venge. I eat and eat, I swear—

Flu. Eat, I pray you: will you have some
more sauce to your leak? there is not enough
leak to swear by.

Pist. Quiet thy cudgel: thou dost see I eat.

Flu. Much good do you, scald knave, heart-
ily. Nay, pray you, throw none away; the
skin is good for your broken coxcomb. When
you take occasions to see leaks hereafter, I pray
you, mock at ’em; that is all.

Pist. Good.

Flu. Ay, leaks is good. Hold you, there is a
groat to heal your pate.

Pist. Me a groat!

Flu. Yes, verily and in truth, you shall take
it; or I have another leak in my pocket, which
you shall eat.

Pist. I take thy groat in earnest of revenge.
Fy. If I owe you anything I will pay you in cudgels: you shall be a woodmonger, and buy nothing of me but cudgels. God be wi' you, and keep you, and heal your pate. [Exeunt.
Pist. All hell shall stir for this. 72

Gow. Go, go; you are a counterfeit cowardly knave. Will you mock at an ancient tradition, begun upon an honourable respect, and worn as a memorable trophy of deceased valour, and dare not avouch in your deeds any of your words? I have seen you gleek and gallying at this gentleman twice or thrice. You thought, because he could not speak English in the native garb, he could not therefore handle an English cudgel: you find it otherwise; and henceforth let a Welsh correction teach you a good English condition. Fare ye well. [Exit.
Pist. Doth Fortune play the huswife with me now? 85

News have I that my Nell is dead i' the spital
Of malady of France:
And there my rendezvous is quite cut off. 88

Old I do wax, and from my weary limbs
Honour is cudgelled. Well, bawd I'll turn,
And something lean to cutpurse of quick hand.
To England will I steal, and there I'll steal: 92
And patches will I get unto these cudgel'd scars,
And swear I got them in the Gallia wars. [Exit.

SCENE II.—Troyes in Champagne. An Apartment in the French King's Palace.

Enter, from one side, King Henry, Bedford, Gloucester, Exeter, Warwick, Westmoreland, and other Lords; from the other side, the French King, Queen Isabel, the Princess Katharine, Alice and other Ladies; the Duke of Burgundy, and his Train.

K. Hen. Peace to this meeting, wherefore we are met!

Unto our brother France, and to our sister,
Health and fair time of day; joy and good wishes
To our most fair and princely cousin Katharine;
And, as a branch and member of this royalty, 5
By whom this great assembly is contriv'd,
We do salute you, Duke of Burgundy;
And, princes French, and peers, health to you all! 8

Fr. King. Right joyous are we to behold your face,
Most worthy brother England; fairly met:
So are you, princes English, every one.

Q. Isa. So happy be the issue, brother England,
Of this good day and of this gracious meeting; 13
As we are now glad to behold your eyes;
Your eyes, which hitherto have borne in them

Against the French, that met them in their bent,
The fatal balls of murdering basilisks: 17
The venom of such looks, we fairly hope,
Have lost their quality, and that this day
Shall change all griefs and quarrels into love. 20

K. Hen. To cry amen to that, thus we appear.
Q. Isa. You English princes all, I do salute you.

Bur. My duty to you both, on equal love,
Great Kings of France and England! That I
have labour'd 24
With all my wits, my pains, and strong endeavours,
To bring your most imperial majesties
Unto this bar and royal interview,
Your mightiness on both parts best can witness.
Since then my office hath so far prevailed 29
That face to face, and royal eye to eye,
You have congreav'd, let it not disgrace me
If I demand before this royal view, 32
What rub or what impediment there is,
Why that the naked, poor, and mangled Peace,
Dear nurse of arts, plenties, and joyful births,
Should not in this best garden of the world, 36
Our fertile France, put up her lovely visage?
Alas! she hath from France too long been chas'd,
And all her husbandry doth lie on heaps,
Corrupting in its own fertility. 40

Her vine, the merry cheerer of the heart,
Unpruned dies; her hedges even-pleach'd,
Like prisoners wildly overgrown with hair,
Put forth disorder'd twigs; her fallow leas 44
The darnel, hemlock and rank fumitory
Doth root upon, while that the couler rusts
That should deracinate such savagery;
The even mead, that erst brought sweetly forth
The freckled cowslip, burnet, and green clover,
Wanting the scythe, all uncorrected, rank,
Conceives by idleness, and nothing teams 51
But hateful docks, rough thistles, kecksies, burs,
Losing both beauty and utility;
And as our vineyards, fallows, meads, and hedges,
Defective in their natures, grow to wildness.
Even so our houses and ourselves and children
Have lost, or do not learn for want of time, 57
The sciences that should become our country,
But grow like savages,—as soldiers will,
That nothing do but meditate on blood,— 60
To swearing and stern looks, diffus'd attire,
And every thing that seems unnatural.
Which to reduce into our former favour
You are assembled; and my speech entreats
That I may know the let why gentle Peace
Should not expel these inconveniences,
And bless us with her former qualities.

K. Hen. If, Duke of Burgundy, you would the peace,
Whose want gives growth to the imperfections
Which you have cited, you must buy that
peace
With full accord to all our just demands;
Whose tenours and particular effects
You have, enschedul'd briefly, in your hands.
Bur. The king hath heard them; to the
which as yet,
There is no answer made.

K. Hen. Well then the peace,
Which you before so urg'd, lies in his answer.
Fr. King. I have but with a cursory eye
O'erglanc'd the articles: pleaseth your Grace
To appoint some of your council presently
To sit with us once more, with better heed
To re-survey them, we will suddenly
Pass our accept and peremptory answer.

K. Hen. Brother, we shall. Go, uncle Exeter,
And brother Clarence, and you, brother Glou-
cester,
Warwick and Huntington, go with the king;
And take with you free power to ratify,
Augment, or alter, as your wisdoms best
Shall see advantageous for our dignity,
Anything in or out of our demands,
And we'll consign thereto. Will you, fair
sister,
Go with the princes, or stay here with us?
Q. Isa. Our gracious brother, I will go with
them.

Haply a woman's voice may do some good
When articles too nicely urg'd be stood on.

K. Hen. Yet leave our cousin Katharine here
with us:
She is our capital demand, compris'd
Within the fore-rank of our articles.
Q. Isa. She hath good leave.

[Exeunt all except KING HENRY,
KATHARINE, and ALICE.

K. Hen. Fair Katharine, and most fair!
Will you vouchsafe to teach a soldier terms,
Such as will enter at a lady's ear,
And plead his love-suit to her gentle heart?

Kath. Your majesty shall mock at me; I can-
ot speak your England.

K. Hen. O fair Katharine! if you will love
me soundly with your French heart, I will be
glad to hear you confess it brokenly with your
English tongue. Do you like me, Kate?

Kath. Pardonnez moy, I cannot tell vat is
like me.'

K. Hen. An angel is like you, Kate; and you
are like an angel.

Kath. Que dit-il? que je suis semblable à les
anges?

Alice. Ony, vrayment, sauf vostre grace, ainsi
dit-il.
his course truly. If thou wouldst have such a one,take me; and take me, take a soldier; take a soldier, a king. And what sayest thou then to my love? I speak, my fair, and fairly, I pray thee.

Kath. Is it possible that I should love de enemy of France?

K. Hen. No; it is not possible you should love the enemy of France, Kate; but, in loving me, you should love the friend of France; for I love France so well, that I will not part with a village of it; I will have it all mine: and, Kate, when France is mine and I am yours, then yours is France and you are mine.

Kath. I cannot tell vat is dat.

K. Hen. No, Kate? I will tell thee in French, which I am sure will hang upon my tongue like a new-married wife about her husband's neck, hardly to be shook off. Je quaud sur le possession de France, et quand vous avez le possession de moy,—let me see, what then? Saint Denis be my speed!—donc votre est France, et vous estes miene. It is as easy for me, Kate, to conquer the kingdom, as to speak so much more French: I shall never move thee in French, unless it be to laugh at me.

Kath. Sauf votre honnere, le Francois que vous parlez est meilleur que l'Anglois lequel je parle.

K. Hen. No, faith, it is not, Kate; but thy speaking of my tongue, and I thine, most truly falsely, must needs be granted to be much at one. But, Kate, dost thou understand thus much English, Canst thou love me?

Kath. I cannot tell.

K. Hen. Can any of your neighbours tell, Kate? I'll ask them. Come, I know thou lovest me; and at night when you come into your closet you'll question this gentlewoman about me; and I know, Kate, you will to her dispraise those parts in me that you love with your heart: but, good Kate, mock me mercifully; the rather, gentle princess, because I love thee cruelly. If ever thou be'st mine, Kate,—as I have a saving faith within me tells me thou shalt,—I get thee with scrambling, and thou must therefore needs prove a good soldier-bredre. Shall not thou and I, between Saint Denis and Saint George, compound a boy, half French, half English, that shall go to Constantinople and take the Turk by the beard? shall we not? what sayest thou, my fair flower-de-luce?

Kath. I do not know dat.

K. Hen. No; 'tis hereafter to know, but now to promise: do but now promise, Kate, you will endeavour for your French part of such a boy, and for my English moiety take the word of a king and a bachelor. How answer you, la plus belle Katharine du monde, mon tres cher et divine desse?

Kath. Your majestie ave fausse French enough to deceive de most sage demoiselle dat is en France.

K. Hen. Now, fie upon my false French! By mine honour, in true English I love thee, Kate: by which honour I dare not swear thou lovest me; yet my blood begins to flatter me that thou dost, notwithstanding the poor and untempering effect of my visage. Now shew my father's ambition! he was thinking of civil wars when he got me: therefore was I created with a stubborn outside, with an aspect of iron, that, when I come to woo ladies I fright them. But, in faith, Kate, the elder I wax the better I shall appear: my comfort is, that old age, that ill layer-up of beauty, can do no more spoil upon my face: thou hast me, if thou hast me, at the worst; and thou shalt wear me, if thou wear me, better and better. And therefore tell me, most fair Katharine, will you have me? Put off your maiden blushes; avouch the thoughts of your heart with the looks of an empress; take me by the hand, and say 'Harry of England, I am thine:' which word thou shalt no sooner bless mine ear withal, but I will tell thee aloud—'England is thine, Ireland is thine, France is thine, and Henry Plantagenet is thine,' who, though I speak it before his face, if he be not fellow with the best king, thou shalt find the best king of good fellows. Come, your answer in broken music; for thy voice is music, and thy English broken; therefore, queen of all, Katharine, break thy mind to me in broken English: wilt thou have me?

Kath. Dat is as it sal pleasure de roy mon pere.

K. Hen. Nay, it will please him well, Kate; it shall please him, Kate.

Kath. Den it sail also content me.

K. Hen. Upon that I kiss your hand, and I call you my queen.

Kath. Laissez, mon seigneur, laissez, laissez! Ma foy, je ne veux point que vous abaissez votre grandeur, en baisant la main d'une vostre indigne servitue: excusez moy, je vous supplie, mon tres puissant seigneur.

K. Hen. Then I will kiss your lips, Kate.

Kath. Les dames, et demoiselles, pour estre baisées devant leur noces, il n'est pas la coutume de France.

K. Hen. Madam my interpreter, what sayst thou? Alice. Dat it is not be de fashion pour les ladies of France,—I cannot tell what is baisé in English.

K. Hen. To kiss.

Alice. Your majesty entendre bettre que moy.
K. Hen. It is not a fashion for the maids in France to kiss before they are married, would she say? Alice. Ouy, vrayment.

K. Hen. O Kate! nice customs curtsey to great kings. Dear Kate, you and I cannot be confined within the weak list of a country's fashion: we are the makers of manners, Kate; and the liberty that follows our places stops the mouths of all find-faults, as I will do yours, for upholding the nice fashion of your country in denying me a kiss: therefore, patiently, and yielding [Kissing her]. You have witchcraft in your lips, Kate: there is more eloquence in a sugar touch of them, than in the tongues of the French council; and they should sooner persuade Harry of England than a general petition of monarchs. Here comes your father.

Re-enter the King and Queen, Burgundy, Bedford, Gloucester, Exeter, Warwick, Westmoreland, and other French and English Lords.

Bur. God save your majesty! My royal cousin, teach you our princess English?

K. Hen. I would have her learn, my fair cousin, how perfectly I love her; and that is good English.

Bur. Is she not apt?

K. Hen. Our tongue is rough, cox, and my condition is not smooth; so that, having neither the voice nor the heart of flattery about me, I cannot so conjure up the spirit of love in her, that he will appear in his true likeness.

Bur. Pardon the frankness of my mirth if I answer you for that. If you would conjure in her, you must make a circle; if conjure up Love in her in his true likeness, he must appear naked and blind. Can you blame her then, being a maid yet roseed over with the virgin crimson of modesty, if she deny the appearance of a naked blind boy in her naked seeing self? It were, my lord, a hard condition for a maid to consign to.

K. Hen. Yet they do wink and yield, as love is blind and enforces.

Bur. They are then excused, my lord, when they see not what they do.

K. Hen. Then, good my lord, teach your cousin to consent winking.

Bur. I will wink on her to consent, my lord, if you will teach her to know my meaning: for maids, well summered and warm kept, are like flies at Bartholomew-tide, blind, though they have their eyes; and then they will endure handling, which before would not abide looking on.

K. Hen. This moral ties me over to time and a hot summer; and so I shall catch tho fly, your cousin, in the latter end, and she must be blind too.

Bur. As love is, my lord, before it loves.

K. Hen. It is so: and you may, some of you, thank love for my blindness, who cannot see many a fair French city for one fair French maid that stands in my way.

Fr. King. Yes, my lord, you see them perpectively, the cities turned into a maid; for they are all girdled with maiden walls that war hath never entered.

K. Hen. Shall Kate be my wife?

Fr. King. So please you.

K. Hen. I am content; so the maiden cities you talk of may wait on her: so the maid that stood in the way for my wish shall show me the way to my will.

Fr. King. We have consented to all terms of reason.

K. Hen. Is't so, my lords of England?

West. The king hath granted every article: His daughter first, and then in sequel all, According to their firm proposed natures.

Exe. Only he hath not yet subscribed this: Where your majesty demands, that the King of France, having any occasion to write for matter of grant, shall name your highness in this form, and with this addition, in French, Notre tres cher filz Henry roy d'Angleterre, Heretier de France; and thus in Latin, Praeclarissimus filius noster Henricus, Rex Angliae, et Haeres Franciae.

Fr. King. Nor this I have not, brother, so denied,
But your request shall make me let it pass.

K. Hen. I pray you then, in love and dear alliance,
Let that one article rank with the rest;
And thereupon give me your daughter.

Fr. King. Take her, fair son; and from her blood raise up Issue to me; that the contending kingdoms Of France and England, whose very shores look pale
With envy of each other's happiness,
May cease their hatred, and this dear conjunction Plant neighbourhood and Christian-like accord In their sweet bosoms, that never war advance His bleeding sword 'twixt England and fair France.

All. Amen!

K. Hen. Now, welcome, Kate: and bear me witness all,
That here I kiss her as my sovereign queen.

[Flourish.

Q. Ies. God, the best maker of all marriages,
Combine your hearts in one, your realms in one!
As man and wife, being two, are one in love, 389
So be there 'twixt your kingdoms such a spousal
That never may ill office, or fell jealousy,
Which troubles oft the bed of blessed marriage,
Thrust in between the paction of these kingdoms,
To make divorce of their incorporate league;
That English may as French, French Englishmen,
Receive each other! God speak this Amen! 396
All. Amen!

K. Hen. Prepare we for our marriage: on which day,
My Lord of Burgundy, we'll take your oath,
And all the peers', for surety of our leagues. 400
Then shall I swear to Kate, and you to me;
And may our oaths well kept and prosperous be!

[Sennet. Exeunt.]

Enter Chorus.
Thus far, with rough and all-unable pen,
Our bending author hath pursu'd the story;
In little room confining mighty men,
Mangling by starts the full course of their glory.
Small time, but in that small most greatly liv'd
This star of England: Fortune made his sword,
By which the world's best garden he achiev'd, 409
And of it left his son imperial lord.

Henry the Sixth, in infant hands crown'd King
Of France and England, did this king succeed;
Whose state so many had the managing, 413
That they lost France and made his England bleed:
Which oft our stage hath shown; and, for their sake,
In your fair minds let this acceptance take. 416

[Exit.]
THE FIRST PART OF
KING HENRY THE SIXTH

DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

KING HENRY THE SIXTH.
DUKE OF GLOUCESTER, Uncle to the King, and Protector.
DUKE OF BEDFORD, Uncle to the King, Regent of France.
THOMAS BEAUFORT, Duke of Exeter, Great-uncle to the King.
HENRY BEAUFORT, Great-uncle to the King; Bishop of Winchester, and afterwards Cardinal.
JOHN BEAUFORT, Earl, afterwards Duke, of Somerset.
RICHARD PLANTAGENET, Son of Richard, late Earl of Cambridge; afterwards Duke of York.
EARL OF WARWICK.
EARL OF SALISBURY.
EARL OF SUFFOLK.
LORD TALBOT, afterwards Earl of Shrewsbury.
JOHN TALBOT, his Son.
EDMUND MORTIMER, Earl of March.
SIR JOHN FASTOLFE.
SIR WILLIAM LUCY.
SIR WILLIAM GLANSDALE.
SIR THOMAS GARGRAVE.

VERNON, of the White-Rose, or York Faction.
BASSET, of the Red-Rose, or Lancaster Faction.
CHARLES, Dauphin, and afterwards King of France.
REIGNIER, Duke of Anjou, and titular King of Naples.
DUKE OF BURGUNDY.
DUKE OF ALENÇON.
BASTARD OF ORLEANS.
Governor of Paris.
Master-Gunner of Orleans, and his Son.
General of the French Forces in Bourdeaux.
A French Sergeant.
A Porter.
An old Shepherd, Father to Joan la Pucelle.

MARGARET, Daughter to Reignier; afterwards married to King Henry.
COUNTESS OF AULENGNE.
JOAN LA PUCELLE, commonly called Joan of Arc.

Lords, Warders of the Tower, Heralds, Officers, Soldiers, Messengers, and Attendants.

Fiends appearing to La Pucelle.

SCENE.—Partly in England, and partly in France.

ACT I.

SCENE I.—Westminster Abbey.

Dead March. Enter the Funeral of King Henry the Fifth attended on by the Dukes of Bedford, Gloucester, and Exeter; the Earl of Warwick, the Bishop of Winchester, Heralds, &c.

Bed. Hung be the heavens with black, yield day to night!
Comets, importing change of times and states,
Brandish your crystal tresses in the sky,
And with them scourge the bad revolting stars,
That have consented unto Henry's death!
King Henry the Fifth, too famous to live long!

England ne'er lost a king of so much worth.

Glo. England ne'er had a king until his time.
Virtue he had, deserving to command: 9
His brandish'd sword did blind men with his beams;
His arms spread wider than a dragon's wings;
His sparkling eyes, replete with wrathful fire, 12
More dazzled and drove back his enemies
Than mid-day sun fierce bent against their faces.

What should I say? his deeds exceed all speech:
He ne'er lift up his hand but conquered. 16

Exe. We mourn in black: why mourn we not in blood?

Henry is dead and never shall revive.
Upon a wooden coffin we attend,
And death’s dishonourable victory
We with our stately presence glorify,
Like captives bound to a triumphant car.
What! shall we curse the planets of mishap
That plotted thus our glory’s overthrow?
Or shall we think the subtle-witted French
Conjurers and sorcerers, that, afraid of him,
By magic verses have contriv’d his end?

Win. He was a king bless’d of the King of kings.
Unto the French the dreadful judgment-day
So dreadful will not be as was his sight.
The battles of the Lord of hosts he fought:
The church’s prayers made him so prosperous.

Glo. The church! where is it? Had not churchmen pray’d
His thread of life had not so soon decay’d:
None do you like but an effeminate prince,
Whom like a school-boy you may over-awe.

Win. Gloucester, what’er we like thou art protector,
And lookest to command the prince and realm.
Thy wife is proud; she holdeth thee in awe,
More than God or religious churchmen may.

Glo. Name not religion, for thou lov’st the flesh,
And ne’er throughout the year to church thou go’st,
Except it be to pray against thy foes.

Bed. Cease, cease these jars and rest your minds in peace!
Let’s to the altar: heralds, wait on us:
Instead of gold we’ll offer up our arms,
Since arms avail not, now that Henry’s dead.
Posterity, await for wretched years,
When at their mothers’ moist eyes babes shall suck,
Our axe be made a marish of salt tears,
And none but women left to wail the dead.

Henry the Fifth! thy ghost I invoke:
Prosper this realm, keep it from civil broils!
Combat with adverse planets in the heavens!
A far more glorious star thy soul will make,
Than Julius Caesar, or bright—

Glo. Is Paris lost? is Roan yielded up?
If Henry were recall’d to life again
These news would cause him once more yield the ghost.

Exe. How were they lost? what treachery was us’d?

Mess. No treachery; but want of men and money.
Among the soldiers this is muttered,
That here you maintain several factions;
And, whilst a field should be dispatch’d and fought,
You are disputing of your generals.
One would have lingering wars with little cost;
Another would fly swift, but wanteth wings;
A third thinks, without expense at all,
By guileful fair words peace may be obtain’d.
Awake, awake, English nobility!
Let not sloth dim your honours new-begot;
Cropp’d are the flower-de-luces in your arms;
Of England’s coat one half is cut away.

Exe. Were our tears wanting to this funeral
These tidings would call forth their flowing tides.

Bed. Me they concern; Regent I am of France.
Give me my steeled coat: I’ll fight for France.
Away with these disgraceful wailing robes!
Wounds will I lend the French instead of eyes,
To weep their intermesser miseries.

Enter another Messenger.

Sc. Mess. Lords, view these letters, full of bad mischance.
France is revolted from the English quite,
Except some petty towns of no import:
The Dauphin Charles is crowned king in Rheims.
The Bastard of Orleans with him is join’d;
Reignier, Duke of Anjou, doth take his part;
The Duke of Aalencon fieth to his side.

Exe. The Dauphin crowned king! all fly to him!
O! whither shall we fly from this reproach?
Glo. We will not fly, but to our enemies’ throats.

Bed. If thou be slack, I’ll fight it out.

Bed. Gloucester, why doubt’st thou of my forwardness?
An army have I muster’d in my thoughts,
Wherewith already France is overrun.

Enter a third Messenger.

Third Mess. My gracious lords, to add to your laments,
Wherewith you now bedew King Henry’s hearse,
I must inform you of a dismal fight
Betwixt the stout Lord Talbot and the French.
Win. What! wherein Talbot overcame? is't so?
Third Mess. O, no! wherein Lord Talbot was o'ertaken:
108
The circumstance I'll tell you more at large.
The tenth of August last this dreadful lord,
Retiring from the siege of Orleans,
Having full scarce six thousand in his troop, 112
By three-and-twenty thousand of the French
Was round encompassed and set upon.
No leisure had he to enrank his men;
He wanted pikes to set before his archers; 116
Instead whereof sharp stakes pluck'd out of hedges
They pitched in the ground confusedly,
To keep the horsemen off from breaking in.
More than three hours the fight continued; 120
Where valiant Talbot above human thought
Enacted wonders with his sword and lance.
Hundreds he sent to hell, and none durst stand
him;
Here, there, and everywhere, enraged he flew:
The French exclaim'd the devil was in arms; 125
All the whole army stood agaz'd on him.
His soldiers, spaying his unsounded spirit,
A Talbot! A Talbot! cried out a'main, 128
And rush'd into the bowels of the battle.
Here had the conquest fully been seal'd up,
If Sir John Fastolfe had not play'd the coward.
He, being in the vaward,—parc'd behind, 132
With purpose to relieve and follow them,—
Cowardly fled, not having struck one stroke.
Hence grew the general wrack and massacre;
Enclosed were they with their enemies. 136
A base Walloon, to win the Dauphin's grace,
Thrust Talbot with a spear into the back;
Whom all France, with their chief assembled
strength,
Durst not presume to look once in the face. 140
Bed. Is Talbot slain? then I will slay myself,
For living idly here in pomp and ease
Whilst such a worthy leader, wanting aid,
Unto his dastard foesmen is betray'd. 144
Third Mess. O no! he lives; but is taken
prisoner,
And Lord Scales with him, and Lord Hungerford:
Most of the rest slaughter'd or took likewise.
Bed. His ransom there is none but I shall pay: 148
I'll hale the Dauphin headlong from his throne;
His crown shall be the ransom of my friend;
Four of their lords I'll change for one of ours.
Farewell, my masters; to my task I'll; 152
Bonfires in France forthwith I am to make,
To keep our great Saint George's feast withal:
Ten thousand soldiers with me I will take,
Whose bloody deeds shall make all Europe quake.
Third Mess. So you had need; for Orleans is
besieg'd;
The English army is grown weak and faint;
The Earl of Salisbury craveth supply,
And hardly keeps his men from mutiny, 160
Since they, so few, watch such a multitude.
Exe. Remember, lords, your oaths to Henry
sworn,
Either to quell the Dauphin utterly,
Or bring him in obedience to your yoke. 164
Bed. I do remember it; and here take my leave,
To go about my preparation. [Exit.
Glo. I'll to the Tower with all the haste I
can,
To view the artillery and munition;
And then I will proclaim young Henry king. 168
Exe. To Eltham will I, where the young
king is,
Being ordain'd his special governor;
And for his safety there I'll best devise. [Exit.
Win. Each hath his place and function to
attend:
I am left out; for me nothing remains.
But long I will not be Jack-out-of-office.
The king from Eltham I intend to steal, 176
And sit at chiefest stern of public weal. [Exit.

SCENE II.—France. Before Orleans.

Flourish. Enter CHARLES, with his Forces:
ALLENCON, REIGNE, and Others.

Char. Mars his true moving, even as in the heavens
So in the earth, to this day is not known.
Late did he shine upon the English side;
Now we are victors; upon us he smiles. 4
What towns of any moment but we have?
At pleasure here we lie near Orleans;
Otherwhiles the famish'd English, like pale
ghosts,
Faintly besiege us one hour in a month. 8
Alen. They want their porridge and their fat
bull-beves:
Either they must be dieted like mules
And have their provender tied to their mouths,
Or piteous they will look, like drowned mice. 12
Reig. Let's raise the siege: why live we idly
here?
Talbot is taken, whom we wont to fear:
Remaineth none but mad-brain'd Salisbury,
And he may well in fretting spend his gall; 16
Nor men nor money hath he to make war.
FIRST PART OF KING HENRY THE SIXTH  Act I, Sc. II.

Char. Sound, sound alarum! we will rush on them.  Now for the honour of the forlorn French!  Him I forgive my death that killeth me  When he sees me go back one foot or fly.  [Exeunt.

Alarums; Excursions; afterwards a retreat.  Re-enter CHARLES, ALENÇON, REIGNIER, and Others.

Char. Who ever saw the like? what men have I!  Dogs! cowards! dastards! I would ne’er have fled  But that they left me ’midst my enemies.  Reig. Salisbury is a desperate homicide;  He fighteth as one weary of his life:  The other lords, like lions wanting food,  Do rush upon us as their hungry prey.  Alen. Froissart, a countryman of ours, records,  England all Oliver’s and Rowlands bred  During the time Edward the Third did reign.  More truly now may this be verified;  For none but Samsons and Goliases,  It sendeth forth to skirmish. One to ten!  Lean raw-bon’d rascals! who would e’er suppose  They had such courage and audacity?  Char. Let’s leave this town; for they are hare-brain’d slaves,  And hunger will enforce them to be more eager:  Of old I know them; rather with their teeth  The walls they’ll tear down than forsake the siege.  Reig. I think, by some odd gimmars or device,  Their arms are set like clocks, still to strike on;  Else ne’er could they hold out so as they do.  By my consent, we’ll s’en let them alone.  Alen. Be it so.

Enter the BASTARD OF ORLEANS.
Bast. Where’s the prince Dauphin? I have news for him.
Char. Bastard of Orleans, thrice welcome to us.
Bast. Methinks your looks are sad, your cheer appall’d:
Hath the late overthrow wrought this offence?  Be not dismay’d, for succour is at hand:  A holy maid hither with me I bring,  Which by a vision sent to her from heaven  Ordained is to raise this tedious siege,  And drive the English forth the bounds of France.  The spirit of deep prophecy she hath,  Exceeding the nine sibyls of old Rome;  What’s past and what’s to come she can decry.  Speak, shall I call her in? Believe my words, For they are certain and unfallsable.  Char. Go, call her in. [Exit BASTARD.] But first, to try her skill,  Reignier, stand thou as Dauphin in my place:  Question her proudly; let thy looks be stern:  By this means shall we sound what skill she hath.  [Retires.

Re-enter the BASTARD OF ORLEANS, with JOAN LA PUCELLE and Others.

Reig. Fair maid, is’t thou wilt do these wondrous feats?  Joan. Reignier, is’t thou that thinkest to beguile me?  Where is the Dauphin? Come, come from behind;  I know thee well, though never seen before.  Be not amaz’d, there’s nothing hid from me:  In private will I talk with thee apart.  Stand back, you lords, and give us leave a while.  Reig. She takes upon her bravely at first dash.

Joan. Dauphin, I am by birth a shepherd’s daughter,  My wit untrain’d in any kind of art.  Heaven and our Lady gracious hath it pleas’d To shine on my contemptible estate:  Lo! whilst I waited on my tender lambs,  And to sun’s parching heat display’d my cheeks,  God’s mother deigned to appear to me,  And in a vision full of majesty  Will’d me to leave my base vocation  And free my country from calamity:  Her aid she promis’d and assureth success;  In complete glory she reveal’d herself;  And, whereas I was black and swart before,  With those clear rays which she infus’d on me,  That beauty am I bless’d with which you see.  Ask me what question thou canst possible  And I will answer unpreameditated:  My courage try by combat, if thou dar’st,  And thou shalt find that I exceed my sex.  Resolve on this, thou shalt be fortunate  If thou receive me for thy war-like mate.  Char. Thou hast astonish’d me with thy high terms.  Only this proof I’ll of thy valour make,  In single combat thou shalt buckle with me,  And if thou vanquishest, thy words are true;  Otherwise I renounce all confidence.

Joan. I am prepar’d: here is my keen-edg’d sword,  Deck’d with five flower-de-luces on each side;  The which at Touraine, in Saint Katharine’s churchyard,
Act I, Sc. II.  FIRST PART OF KING HENRY THE SIXTH

Out of a great deal of old iron I chose forth.
Char. Then come, o' God's name; I fear no woman.
Joan. And, while I live, I'll ne'er fly from a man.
[They fight, and JOAN LA PUCelle overcomes.
Char. Stay, stay thy hands! thou art an Amazon,
And fightest with the sword of Deborah.
Joan. Christ's mother helps me, else I were too weak.
Char. Whoseer helps thee, 'tis thou that must help me:
Impatiently I burn with thy desire; 108
My heart and hands thou hast at once subdu'd.
Excellent Pucelle, if thy name be so,
Let me thy servant and not sovereign be;
'Tis the French Dauphin's ghost to thee thus. 112
Joan. I must not yield to any rites of love,
For my profession's sacred from above:
When I have chased all thy foes from hence,
Then will I think upon a recompense. 116
Char. Meantime look gracious on thy prostrate thrall.
Reig. My lord, methinks, is very long in talk.
Alien. Doubtless he shrives this woman to her smock;
Else ne'er could he so long protract his speech.
Reig. Shall we disturb him, since he keeps no mean? 121
Alien. He may mean more than we poor men do know:
These women are shrewd tempters with their tongues.
Reig. My lord, where are you? what device you on?
Shall we give over Orleans, or no?
Joan. Why, no, I say, distrustful recreants!
Fight till the last gasp; I will be your guard.
Char. What she says, I'll confirm: we'll fight it out. 128
Joan. Assign'd am I to be the English scourge.
This night the siege assuredly I'll raise:
Expect Saint Martin's summer, halcyon days,
Since I have entered into these wars. 132
Glory is like a circle in the water,
Which never ceaseth to enlarge itself,
Till by broad spreading it disperse to nought.
With Henry's death the English circle ends;
Dispersed are the glories it included.
Now am I like that proud insulting ship
Which Caesar and his fortune bare at once.
Char. Was Mahomet inspired with a dove?
Thou with an eagle art inspired then. 141
Helen, the mother of great Constantine,
Nor yet Saint Philip's daughters were like thee.
Bright star of Venus, fall'n down on the earth,
How may I reverently worship thee enough?
Alien. Leave off delays and let us raise the siege. 146
Reig. Woman, do what thou canst to save our honours;
Drive them from Orleans and be immortalis'd.
Char. Presently we'll try. Come, let's away about it:
No prophet will I trust if she prove false. 150
[Exeunt.

SCENE III.—London. Before the Tower.

Enter at the Gates the DUKE OF GLOUCESTER,
with his Serving-men, in blue coats.
Glo. I am come to survey the Tower this day;
Since Henry's death, I fear, there is conveyance.
Where be these warders that they wait not here?
Open the gates! 'Tis Gloucester that calls. 4
[Servants knock.
First Ward. [Within.] Who's there that knocks so imperiously?
First Serv. It is the noble Duke of Gloucester.
Sec. Ward. [Within.] Whoe'er he be, you may not be let in.
First Serv. Villains, answer you so the Lord Protector?
3
First Ward. [Within.] The Lord protect him! so we answer him:
We do not otherwise than we are will'd.
Glo. Who willed you? or whose will stands but mine?
There's none protector of the realm but I. 12
Break up the gates, I'll be your warrantize:
Shall I be flouted thus by dunghill grooms?
GLOUCESTER'S Men rush at the Tower, gates,
and WOODVILLE the Lieutenant speaks within.
Wood. What noise is this? what traitors have we here?
Glo. Lieutenant, is it you whose voice I hear?
Open the gates! here's Gloucester that would enter. 17
Wood. [Within.] Have patience, noble Duke; I may not open;
The Cardinal of Winchester forbids:
From him I have express commandment
That thou nor none of thine shall be let in.
Glo. Faint-hearted Woodville, prizest him 'fore me?
Arrogant Winchester, that haughty prelate,
Whom Henry, our late sovereign, ne'er could brook?
Thou art no friend to God or to the king:
Open the gates, or I'll shut thee out shortly.

582
FIRST PART OF KING HENRY THE SIXTH  Act I, Sc. IV.

First Serv. Open the gates unto the Lord Protector;  
Or we’ll burst them open, if that you come not quickly.  

Enter WINCHESTER, attended by Serving-men 
in tawny coats.  

Win. How now, ambitious Humphrey! what means this?  
Glo. Peel’d priest, dost thou command me to be shut out?  
Win. I do, thou most usurping proctor,  
And not protector, of the king or realm.  
Glo. Stand back, thou manifest conspirator,  
Thou that contriv’dst to murder our dead lord;  
Thou that giv’st whores indulgences to sin:  
I’ll canvass thee in thy broad cardinal’s hat,  
If thou proceed in this thy insolence.  
Win. Nay, stand thou back; I will not budge a foot:  
This be Damascus, be thou cursed Cain,  
To slay thy brother Abel, if thou wilt.  
Glo. I will not slay thee, but I’ll drive thee back:  
Thy scarlet robes as a child’s bearing-cloth  
I’ll use to carry thee out of this place.  
Win. Do what thou dar’st; I’ll beard thee to thy face.  
Glo. What! am I dar’d and bearded to my face?—  
Draw men, for all this privileged place;  
Blue coats to tawny-coats. Priest, beware your beard; [GLOUCESTER and his men attack the CARDINAL.  
I mean to tug it and to cuff you soundly.  
Under my feet I stamp thy cardinal’s hat,  
In spite of pole or dignities of church,  
Here by the cheeks I’ll drag thee up and down.  
Win. Gloucester, thou’lt answer this before the pope.  
Glo. Winchester goose! I cry a rope! a rope!  
Now beat them hence; why do you let them stay?  
Thou’lt chase hence, thou wolf in sheep’s array.  
Out, tawny coats! out, scarlet hypocrite!  

Here GLOUCESTER’S Men beat out the Cardinal’s Men, and enter in the hurly-burly  
the Mayor of London and his Officers.  

May. Fie, lords! that you, being supreme magistrates,  
Thus contumeliously should break the peace!  
Glo. Peace, mayor! thou know’st little of my wrongs:  
Here’s Beaufort, that regards nor God nor King,  
Hath here distrain’d the Tower to his use.  
Win. Here’s Gloucester, a foe to citizens;  
One that still motions war and never peace,  
O’ercharging thy free purses with large fines,  
That seeks to overthrow religion.  
Because he is protector of the realm,  
And would have armour here out of the Tower,  
To crown himself king and suppress the prince.  
Glo. I will not answer thee with words, but blows.  
[Here they skirmish again.  
May. Nought rests for me, in this tumultuous strife  
But to make open proclamation.  
Come, officer: as loud as e’er thou canst;  
Cry.  
Off. All manner of men, assembled here in arms this day, against God’s peace and the king’s, we charge and command you, in his highness’ name, to repair to your several dwelling-places; and not to wear, handle, or use, any sword, weapon, or dagger, henceforward, upon pain of death.  
Glo. Cardinal, I’ll be no breaker of the law;  
But we shall meet and break our minds at large.  
Win. Gloucester, we will meet; to thy cost, be sure:  
Thy heart-blood I will have for this day’s work.  
May. I’ll call for clubs if you will not away.  
This cardinal’s more haughty than the devil.  
Glo. Mayor, farewell: thou dost but what thou mayst.  
Win. Abominable Gloucester! guard thy head;  
For I intend to have it ere long.  
[Exeunt, severally, GLOUCESTER and WINCHESTER, with their Serving-men.  
May. See the coast clear’d, and then we will depart.  
Good God! these nobles should such stomachs bear;  
I myself fight not once in forty year.  
[Exeunt.

SCENE IV.—France. Before Orleans.  

Enter, on the walls, the Master-Gunner and his Boy.  

M. Gun. Sirrah, thou know’st how Orleans is besieg’d,  
And how the English have the suburbs won.  
Son. Father, I know; and oft have shot at them,  
Howe’er unfortunate I miss’d my aim.  
M. Gun. But now thou shalt not. Be thou rul’d by me:  
Chief master-gunner am I of this town;  
Something I must do to procure me grace.  
The prince’s epistles have informed me  
How the English, in the suburbs close entrenched,  
Wont through a secret gate of iron bars  
In yonder tower to overpeer the city,
Enter the Boy with a linstock. 

Sal. I grieve to hear what torments you endure; 
But we will be reveng’d sufficiently. 
Now it is supper-time in Orleans: 
Here, through this grate, I count each one, 
And view the Frenchmen how they fortify: 
Let us look in; the sight will much delight thee. 
Sir Thomas Gargrave, and Sir William Glansdale, 

Let me have your express opinions 
Where is best place to make our battery next. 

Gar. I think at the North gate; for there stand lords. 

Glan. And I, here, at the bulwark of the bridge. 

Tal. For aught I see, this city must be famish’d, 

Or with light skirmishes enfeebled. 

[Here they shoot. SALISBURY and SIR THOMAS GARGRAVE fall. 

Sal. O Lord! have mercy on us, wretched sinners. 

Gar. O Lord! have mercy on me, woeful man. 

Tal. What chance is this that suddenly hath cross’d us? 

Speak, Salisbury; at least, if thou canst speak: 

How far’est thou, mirror of all martial men? 
One of thy eyes and thy cheek’s side struck off! 

Accursed tower! accursed fatal hand 

That hath contriv’d this woeful tragedy! 

In thirteen battles Salisbury o’ercame; 
Henry the Fifth he first train’d to the wars; 
Whilst any trump did sound or drum struck up, 

His sword did ne’er leave striking in the field. 
Yet liv’st thou, Salisbury? though thy speech doth fail, 

One eye thou hast to look to heaven for grace: 
The sun with one eye vieweth all the world. 

Heaven, be thou gracious to none alive, 
If Salisbury wants mercy at thy hands! 
Bear hence his body; I will help to bury it. 
Sir Thomas Gargrave, hast thou any life? 

Speak unto Talbot; nay, look up to him. 
Salisbury, cheer thy spirit with this comfort; 
Thou shalt not die, whiles— 

He beckons with his hand and smiles on me, 

As who should say, ‘When I am dead and gone, 
Remember to avenge me on the French.’ 

Plantagenet, I will; and like thee, Nero, 

Play on the lute, beholding the towns burn: 

Wretched shall France be only in my name. 

[It thunders and lightens. An alarum. 

What stir is this? What tumult’s in the heavens? 

Whence cometh this alarum and the noise?
Enter a Messenger.  
Mess. My lord, my lord! the French have gather'd head: 100  
The Dauphin, with one Joan la Pucelle join'd,  
A holy prophetess new risen up  
is come with a great power to raise the siege.  

[Here Salisbury lifteth himself up and groans.  

Tal. Hear, hear how dying Salisbury doth groan! 104  
It irks his heart he cannot be reveng'd.  
Frenchmen, I'll be a Salisbury to you:  
Pucelle or puzzel, dolphin or dogfish,  
Your hearts I'll stamp out with my horse's heels  
And make a quagmire of your mingled brains.  
Convey me Salisbury into his tent,  
And then we'll try what these dastard Frenchmen dare.  

[Execut, bearing out the bodies.  

Scene V.—The Same. Before one of the Gates.  

Alarum. Skirmishings. Enter Talbot, pursuing the Dauphin; drives him in, and exit: then enter Joan la Pucelle, driving Englishmen before her, and exit after them. Then re-enter Talbot.  

Tal. Where is my strength, my valour, and my force?  
Our English troops retire, I cannot stay them;  
A woman clad in armour chasest them.  

Re-enter Joan la Pucelle.  
Here, here she comes. I'll have a bout with thee;  
Devil, or devil's dam, I'll conjure thee:  
Blood will I draw on thee, thou art a witch,  
And straightway give thy soul to him thou serv'st.  
Joan. Come, come; 'tis only I that must disgrace thee.  
[They fight.  

Tal. Heavens, can you suffer hell so to prevail?  
My breast I'll burst with straining of my courage,  
And from my shoulders crack my arms asunder,  
But I will chastise this high-minded strumpet.  

[They fight again.  

Joan. Talbot, farewell; thy hour is not yet come:  
I must go victual Orleans forthwith.  

[Short alarum; then la Pucelle enters the town with soldiers.  

O'take me if thou canst; I scorn thy strength.  
Go, go, cheer up thy hunger-starved men;  
Help Salisbury to make his testament:  
This day is ours, as many more shall be. [Exit.  

Tal. My thoughts are whirled like a potter's wheel;  
I know not where I am, nor what I do:  

A witch, by fear, not force, like Hannibal,  
Drives back our troops and conquers as she lists:  
So bees with smoke, and doves with noisome stench,  
Are from their hives and houses driven away.  
They call'd us for our fierceness English dogs;  
Now, like to whelps, we crying run away.  

[A short alarum.  
Hark, countrymen! either renew the fight,  
Or tear the lions out of England's coat;  
Renounce your soil, give sheep in lions' stead:  
Sheep run not half so treacherous from the wolf,  
Or horse or oxen from the leopard,  
As you fly from your oft-subdued slaves.  

[Alarum. Another skirmish.  
It will not be: retire into your trenches:  
You all consented unto Salisbury's death,  
For none would strike a stroke in his revenge.  
Pucelle is entered into Orleans  
In spite of us or aught that we could do.  
O! would I were to die with Salisbury.  
The shame hereof will make me hide my head.  

[Alarum. Retreat. Execut Talbot and his Forces, &c.  

Scene VI.—The Same.  

Flourish. Enter, on the walls, Joan la Pucelle, Charles, Reignier, Alençon, and Soldiers.  

Joan. Advance our waving colours on the walls;  
Rescue's Orleans from the English:  
Thus Joan la Pucelle hath perform'd her word.  
Char. Divinest creature, Astraea's daughter,  
How shall I honour thee for this success?  
Thy promises are like Adonis' gardens,  
That one day bloom'd and fruitful were the next.  
France, triumph in thy glorious prophetess!  

Reignier. Why ring not out the bells throughout the town?  
Dauphin, command the citizens make bonfires  
And feast and banquet in the open streets,  
To celebrate the joy that God hath given us.  
Alençon. All France will be replete with mirth and joy,  
When they shall hear how we have play'd the men.  

Char. 'Tis Joan, not we, by whom the day is won;  
For which I will divide my crown with her;  
And all the priests and friars in my realm  
Shall in procession sing her endless praise.
Act I, Sc. VI. FIRST PART OF KING HENRY THE SIXTH

A statelier pyramid to her I'll rear
Than Rhodope's or Memphis ever was:
In memory of her when she is dead,
Her ashes, in an urn more precious
Than the rich-jewell'd coffer of Darius,
Transported shall be at high festivals
Before the kings and queens of France.
No longer on Saint Denis will we cry,
But Joan la Pucelle shall be France's saint.
Come in, and let us banquet royally,
After this golden day of victory.

[FLOURISH. EXEUNT.]

ACT II.

SCENE I.—Before Orleans.

Enter to the Gates, a French Sergeant, and two Sentinels.

Serg. Sirs, take your places and be vigilant.
If any noise or soldier you perceive
Near to the walls, by some apparent sign
Let us have knowledge at the court of guard.

First Sent. Sergeant, you shall.

[Exit Sergeant. Thus are poor servants—
When others sleep upon their quiet beds—
Constrain'd to watch in darkness, rain, and cold.

Enter Talbot, Bedford, Burgundy, and Forces with scaling-ladders; their drums beating a dead march.

Tal. Lord regent, and redoubted Burgundy, 8
By whose approach the regions of Artois,
Walloon, and Picardy, are friends to us,
This happy night the Frenchmen are secure,
Having all day carous'd and banqueted:
Embrace we then this opportunity,
As fitting to quittance their deceit
Contriv'd by art and baleful sorcery.

Bed. Coward of France! how much he wrongs
his fame,

Despairing of his own arm's fortitude,
To join with witches and the help of hell!

Bur. Traitors have never other company.

But what's that Pucelle whom they term so pure?

Tal. A maid, they say.

Bed. A maid, and be so martial! 21

Bur. Pray God she prove not masculine ere long;

If underneath the standard of the French
She carry armour, as she hath begun.

Tal. Well, let them practise and converse
with spirits;
God is our fortress, in whose conquering name
Let us resolve to scale their flinty bulwarks.

Bed. Ascend, brave Talbot; we will follow thee.

Tal. Not all together: better far, I guess,
That we do make our entrance several ways,
That if it chance the one of us do fail,
The other yet may rise against their force.

Bed. Agreed. I'll to yond corner.

Bur. And I to this.

Tal. And here will Talbot mount, or make his grave.
Now, Salisbury, for thee, and for the right
Of English Henry, shall this night appear
How much in duty I am bound to both.

[The English scale the walls, crying, 'Saint George!' 'A Talbot!' 'And all enter the town.' First Sent. Arm, arm! the enemy doth make assault!]

The French leap over the Walls in their shirts.
Enter, several ways, Bastard of Orleans,
Alençon, and Regnier, half ready, and half unready.

Alen. How now, my lords! what! all unready so?

Bast. Unready! ay, and glad we 'scap'd so well.

Regi. 'Twas time, I trow, to wake and leave our beds,
Hearing alarums at our chamber-doors.

Alen. Of all exploits since first I follow'd arms,
Ne'er heard I of a war-like enterprise
More venturous or desperate than this.

Bast. I think this Talbot be a fiend of hell.

Regi. If not of hell, the heavens, sure, favour him.

Alen. Here cometh Charles: I marvel how he sped.

Bast. Tut! holy Joan was his defensive guard.

Enter Charles and Joan la Pucelle.

Char. Is this thy cunning, thou deceitful dame?

Didst thou at first, to flatter us withal,
Make us partakers of a little gain,
That now our loss might be ten times so much?

Joan. Wherefore is Charles impatient with his friend?

At all times will you have my power alike?
Sleeping or waking must I still prevail,
Or will you blame and lay the fault on me?

Improv'd soldiers! had your watch been good,
This sudden mischief never could have fall'n.

Char. Duke of Alençon, this was your default,
That, being captain of the watch to-night,
Did look no better to that weighty charge.

Alen. Had all your quarters been so safely kept
As that whereof I had the government,
We had not been thus shamefully surpris'd,

586
Bast. Mine was secure.
Reg; And so was mine, my lord.
Char. And for myself, most part of all this night,
Within her quarter and mine own precinct
I was employ'd in passing to and fro,
About relieving of the sentinels:
Then how or which way should they first break in?
Joan. Question, my lords, no further of the case,
How or which way: 'tis sure they found some place
But weakly guarded, where the breach was made.
And now there rests no other shift but this;
To gather our soldiers, scatter'd and dispers'd,
And lay new platforms to endamage them.

Alarm. Enter an English Soldier, crying, 'A Talbot! a Talbot!' They fly, leaving their clothes behind.
Sold. I'll be so bold to take what they have left.
The cry of Talbot serves me for a sword;
For I have loaden me with many spoils,
Using no other weapon but his name. [Exit.

SCENE II.—Orleans. Within the town.
Enter TALBOT, BEDFORD, BURGUNDY, a Captain, and Others.

Bed. The day begins to break, and night is fled,
Whose pitchy mantle over-veil'd the earth.
Here sound retreat, and cease our hot pursuit.
[Retreat sounded.

Tal. Bring forth the body of old Salisbury,
And here advance it in the market-place,
The middle centre of this cursed town.
Now have I paid my vow unto his soul;
For every drop of blood was drawn from him
There hath at least five Frenchmen died to-night.
And that hereafter ages may behold
What ruin happen'd in revenge of him,
Within their chiefest temple I'll erect.
A tomb wherein his corpse shall be inter'r'd:
Upon the which, that every one may read,
Shall be engrav'd the sack of Orleans,
The treacherous manner of his mournful death,
And what a terror he had been to France.
But, lords, in all our bloody massacre,
I muse we met not with the Dauphin's grace,
His new-come champion, virtuous Joan of Arc,
Nor any of his false confederates.

Bed. 'Tis thought, Lord Talbot, when the fight began,
Rous'd on the sudden from their drowsy beds,
They did amongst the troops of armed men
Leap o'er the walls for refuge in the field.
Bur. Myself—as far as I could well discern
For smoke and dusky vapours of the night—
Am sure I scar'd the Dauphin and his trull, 28
When arm in arm they both came swiftly running,
Like to a pair of loving turtle-doves
That could not live assembler day or night.
After that things are set in order here,
We'll follow them with all the power we have.

Enter a Messenger.
Mess. All hail, my lords! Which of this princely train
Call ye the war-like Talbot, for his acts
So much applauded through the realm of France?
Tal. Here is the Talbot: who would speak with him?
Mess. The virtuous lady, Countess of Auvergne,
With modesty admiring thy renown,
By me entreats, great lord, thou wouldst vouchsafe
To visit her poor castle where she lies,
That she may boast she hath beheld the man
Whose glory fills the world with loud report.
Bur. Is it even so? Nay, then, I see our wars
Will turn into a peaceful comic sport,
When ladies crave to be encounter'd with.
You may not, my lord, despise her gentle suit.
Tal. Ne'er trust me then; for when a world of men
Could not prevail with all their oratory,
Yet hath a woman's kindness over-ru'd:
And therefore tell her I return great thanks,
And in submission will attend on her.
Will not your honours bear me company?
Bed. No, truly; it is more than manners will;
And I have heard it said, unbidden guests
Are often welcomest when they are gone.
Tal. Well then, alone,—since there's no remedy,—
I mean to prove this lady's courtesy.
Come hither, captain. [Whispers.] You perceive my mind.
Capt. I do, my lord, and mean accordingly.
[Exit.

SCENE III.—Auvergne. Court of the Castle.
Enter the COUNTRESS and her Porter.

Count. Porter, remember what I gave in charge;
And when you have done so, bring the keys to me.
Port. Madam, I will. [Exit.
Act II, Sc. III. FIRST PART OF KING HENRY THE SIXTH

Count. The plot is laid; if all things fall out right,
I shall as famous be by this exploit
As Scythian Tomyris by Cyrus' death.
Great is the rumour of this dreadful knight,
And his achievements of no less account:
Fain would mine eyes be witness with mine ears,
To give their censure of these rare reports.

Enter Messenger and TALBOT.

Mess. Madam,
According as your ladyship desir'd,
By message crav'd, so is Lord Talbot come.

Count. And he is welcome. What! is this the man?

Mess. Madam, it is.

Count. Is this the scourge of France?
Is this the Talbot, so much fear'd abroad,
That with his name the mothers still their babes?
I see report is fabulous and false:
I thought I should have seen some Hercules,
A second Hector, for his grim aspect,
And large proportion of his strong-knit limbs.
Alas! this is a child, a silly dwarf:
It cannot be this weak and wrinkled shrimp
Should strike such terror to his enemies.

Tal. Madam, I have been bold to trouble you;
But since your ladyship is not at leisure,
I'll sort some other time to visit you.

Count. What means he now? Go ask him whither he goes.

Mess. Stay, my Lord Talbot; for my lady craves
To know the cause of your abrupt departure.

Tal. Marry, for that she's in a wrong belief,
I go to certify her Talbot's here.

Re-enter Porter, with keys.

Count. If thou be he, then art thou prisoner.

Tal. Prisoner! to whom?

Count. To me, blood-thirsty lord;
And for that cause I train'd thee to my house.
Long time thy shadow hath been thrall to me,
For in my gallery thy picture hangs:
But now the substance shall endure the like,
And I will chain these legs and arms of thine,
That hast by tyranny, these many years
Wasted our country, slain our citizens,
And sent our sons and husbands captive.

Tal. Ha, ha, ha!

Count. Laughest thou, wretch? thy mirth shall turn to moan.

Tal. I laugh to see your ladyship so fond
To think that you have aught but Talbot's shadow,
Whereon to practise your severity.

Count. Why, art not thou the man?

Tal. I am, indeed.

Count. Then have I substance too.

Tal. No, no, I am but shadow of myself:
You are deceiv'd, my substance is not here;
For what you see is but the smallest part
And least proportion of humanity.
I tell you, madam, were the whole frame here,
It is of such a spacious lofty pitch,
Your roof were not sufficient to contain it.

Count. This is a riddling merchant for the nonce;
He will be here, and yet he is not here:
How can these contrarieties agree?

Tal. That will I show you presently.

He winds a horn. Drums strike up; a peal of ordnance. The Gates being forced, enter Soldiers.

How say you, madam? are you now persuaded
That Talbot is but shadow of himself?
These are his substance, sinews, arms, and strength,
With which he yoketh your rebellious necks,
Razeth your cities, and subverts your towns,
And in a moment makes them desolate.

Count. Victorious Talbot! pardon my abuse:
I find thou art no less than fame hath bruited,
And more than may be gather'd by thy shape.
Let my presumption not provoke thy wrath;
For I am sorry that with reverence
I did not entertain thee as thou art.

Tal. Be not dismay'd, fair lady; nor misconstr
The mind of Talbot as you did mistake
The outward composition of his body.
What you have done hath not offended me;
Nor other satisfaction do I crave,
But only, with your patience, that we may
Taste of your wine and see what cates you have;
For soldiers' stomachs always serve them well.

Count. With all my heart, and think me honoured
To feast so great a warrior in my house.

[Exeunt.

SCENE IV.—London. The Temple Garden.

Enter the EARLS OF SOMERSET, SUFFOLK, and WARWICK; RICHARD PLANTAGENET, VERNON, and A Lawyer.

Plan. Great lords, and gentlemen, what means this silence?
Dare no man answer in a case of truth?
FIRST PART OF KING HENRY THE SIXTH  Act II, Sc. IV.

Suf. Within the Temple hall we were too loud;  

The garden here is more convenient.  

Plan. Then say at once if I maintain'd the truth,  

Or else was wrangling Somerset in the error?  

Som. Faith, I have been a truant in the law,  
And never yet could frame my will to it;  
And therefore frame the law unto my will.  

Som. Judge you, my Lord of Warwick, then,  
Betwixt us.  

War. Between two hawks, which flies the  
higher pitch;  

Between two dogs, which hath the deeper mouth;  

Between two blades, which bears the better  
temper;  

Between two horses, which doth bear him best;  

Between two girls, which hath the merriest eye;  
I have perhaps, some shallow spirit of judg-  
ment;  

But in these nice sharp quillets of the law,  
Good faith, I am no wiser than a daw.  

Plan. Tut, tut! here is a manly forbearance:  

The truth appears so naked on my side,  
That any purblind eye may find it out.  

Som. And on my side it is so well apparell'd,  
So clear, so shining, and so evident,  
That it will glimmer through a blind man's eye.  

Plan. Since you are tongue-tied, and so loath to  

In dumb significants proclaim your thoughts:  

Let him that is a true-born gentleman,  
And stands upon the honour of his birth,  

If he suppose that I have pleaded truth,  
From off this brier pluck a white rose with me.  

Som. Let him that is no coward nor no flatterer,  

But dare maintain the party of the truth,  

Pluck a red rose from off this thorn with me.  

War. I love no colours, and, without all colour  

Of base insinuating flattery  

I pluck this white rose with Plantagenet.  

Suf. I pluck this red rose with young Somerset:  

And say withal I think he held the right.  

Ver. Stay, lords and gentlemen, and pluck no more,  

Till you conclude that he, upon whose side  
The fewest roses are cropp'd from the tree,  
Shall yield the other in the right opinion.  

Som. Good Master Vernon, it is well objected:  

If I have fewest I subscribe in silence.  

Plan. And I.  

Ver. Then for the truth and plainness of the  

I pluck this pale and maiden blossom here,  

Giving my verdict on the white rose side.  

Som. Prick not your finger as you pluck it off,  

Lest bleeding you do paint the white rose red,  

And fall on my side so, against your will.  

Ver. If I, my lord, for my opinion bleed,  

Opinion shall be surgeon to my hurt,  

And keep me on the side where still I am.  

Som. Well, well, come on: who else?  

Law. [To Somerset.] Unless my study and my books be false,  

The argument you held was wrong in you,  

In sign whereof I pluck a white rose too.  

Plan. Now, Somerset, where is your argument?  

Som. Here, in my scabbard; meditating that  

Shall dye your white rose in a bloody red.  

Plan. Meantime, your cheeks do counterfeit our roses;  

For pale they look with fear, as witnessing  

The truth on our side.  

Som. No, Plantagenet,  

'Tis not for fear but anger that thy cheeks blush for pure shame to counterfeit our roses,  

And yet thy tongue will not confess thy error,  

Plan. Hath not thy rose a canker, Somerset?  

Som. Hath not thy rose a thorn, Plantagenet?  

Plan. Ay, sharp and piercing, to maintain his truth;  

Whiles thy consuming canker eats his falsehood.  

Som. Well, I'll find friends to wear my bleeding roses,  

That shall maintain what I have said is true,  

Where false Plantagenet dare not be seen.  

Plan. Now, by this maiden blossom in my hand,  

I scorn thee and thy faction, peevish boy.  

Suf. Turn not thy scorns this way, Plantagenet.  

Plan. Proud Pole, I will, and scorn both him and thee.  

Suf. I'll turn my part thereof into thy throat.  

Som. Away, away! good William de la Pole:  

We grace the yeoman by conversing with him.  

War. Now, by God's will, thou wrong'st him, Somerset:  

His grandfather was Lionel, Duke of Clarence,  

Third son to the third Edward, King of England.  

Spring creastless yeomen from so deep a root?  

Plan. He bears him on the place's privilege,  

Or durst not, for his craven heart, say thus.  

Som. By Him that made me, I'll maintain my words.
On any plot of ground in Christendom. 
Was not thy father, Richard Earl of Cambridge, For treason executed in our late king’s days? 
And, by his treason stand’st not thou attainted, Corruption, and exempt from ancient gentry? His trespass yet lives guilty in thy blood; 
And, till thou be restor’d, thou art a yeoman.

Plan. My father was attached, not attainted; Condemn’d to die for treason, but no traitor; And that I’ll prove on better men than Somerset, Were growing time once ripen’d to my will. For your partaker Pole and you yourself, I’ll note you in my book of memory, To scourge you for this apprehension: Look to it well and say you are well warn’d. 

Som. Ah, thou shalt find us ready for thee still, 
And know us by these colours for thy foes; 
For these my friends in spite of thee shall wear. 

Plan. And, by my soul, this pale and angry rose, As cognizance of my blood-drinking hate, Will I for ever and my faction wear, Until it wither with me to my grave Or flourish to the height of my degree. 

Suf. Go forward, and be chok’d with thy ambition: And so farewell until I meet thee next. [Exit. 


Plan. How I am brav’d and must perforce endure it! 

War. This blot that they object against your house Shall be wip’d out in the next parliament, Call’d for the truce of Winchester and Gloucester; And if thou be not then created York, I will not live to be accounted Warwick. 

Meantime in signal of my love to thee, Against proud Somerset and William Pole, Will I upon thy party wear this rose. And here I prophesy: this brawl to-day, Grown to this faction in the Temple garden, Shall send between the red rose and the white A thousand souls to death and deadly night. 

Plan. Good Master Vernon, I am bound to you, That you on my behalf would pluck a flower. 

Ver. In your behalf still would I wear the same. 

Law. And so will I. 

Plan. Thanks, gentle sir. 

Come, let us four to dinner: I dare say This quarrel will drink blood another day. 

[Exeunt.

SCENE V.—London. A Room in the Tower. 

Enter Mortimer, brought in a chair by two Gaolers. 

Mor. Kind keepers of my weak decaying age, 
Let dying Mortimer here rest himself. 
Even like a man new haled from the rack, 
So fare my limbs with long imprisonment; 
And these gray locks, the pursuivants of death, 
Nestor-like aged, in an age of care, 
Argue the end of Edmund Mortimer. 

These eyes, like lamps whose wasting oil is spent, 
Wax dim, as drawing to their exigent; 
Weak shoulders, overborne with burdening grief, 
And pitless arms, like to a wither’d vine That droops his sapless branches to the ground: Yet are these feet, whose strengthless stay is numb, 
Unable to support this lump of clay, Swift-winged with desire to get a grave, As witting I no other comfort have. 

But tell me, keeper, will my nephew come? First Keep. Richard Plantagenet, my lord, 
will come: 

We sent unto the Temple, unto his chamber. 
And answer was return’d that he will come. 

Mor. Enough: my soul shall then be satisfied. 

Poor gentleman! his wrong doth equal mine. 
Since Henry Monmouth first began to reign, Before whose glory I was great in arms, 
This loathsome sequestration have I had; And even since then hath Richard been obscur’d, 
Depriv’d of honour and inheritance. 

But now the arbitrator of despairs, 
Just death, kind umpire of men’s miseries, 
With sweet enlargement doth dismiss me hence: I would his troubles likewise were expir’d, 

That so he might recover what was lost. 

Enter Richard Plantagenet. 

First Keep. My lord, your loving nephew now is come. 

Mor. Richard Plantagenet, my friend, is he come? 

Plan. Ay, noble uncle, thus ignobly us’d, Your nephew, late despis’d Richard, comes. 

Mor. Direct mine arms I may embrace his neck, 

And in his bosom spend my latter gasp: 
Of tell me when my lips do touch his cheeks, 
That I may kindly give one fainting kiss. 

And now declare, sweet stem from York’s great stock, 

Why didst thou say of late thou wert despis’d?
FIRST PART OF KING HENRY THE SIXTH  Act III, Sc. I.

Plan. First, lean thine aged back against
mine arm;
And in that ease, I'll tell thee my disease. 44
This day, in argument upon a case,
Some words there grew 'twixt Somerset and
me;
Among which terms he us'd a lavish tongue
And did upbraided me with my father's death: 48
Which obloquy set bars before my tongue,
Else with the like I had required him.
Therefore, good uncle, for my father's sake,
In honour of a true Plantagenet,
And for alliance sake, declare the cause
My father, Earl of Cambridge, lost his head.
Mor. That cause, fair nephew, that im
prison'd me,
And hath detain'd me all my flow'ring youth
Within a loathsome dungeon, there to pine,
Was cursed instrument of his decease.

Plan. Discover more at large what cause
that was,
For I am ignorant and cannot guess. 60
Mor. I will, if that my fading breath permit,
And death approach not ere my tale be done.
Henry the Fourth, grandfather to this king,
Depos't his nephew Richard, Edward's son,
The first-begotten, and the lawful heir
Of Edward king, the third of that descent:
During whose reign the Percy's of the North,
Finding his usurpation most unjust,
Endeavour'd my advancement to the throne.
The reason mov'd these warlike lords to this
Was, for that—young King Richard thus re
mov'd,
Leaving no heir begotten of his body—
I was the next by birth and parentage;
For by my mother I derived am
From Lionel Duke of Clarence, the third son
To King Edward the Third; whereas he
From John of Gaunt doth bring his pedigree,
Being but fourth of that heroic line.
But mark: as, in this haughty great attempt
They laboured to plant the rightful heir,
I lost my liberty, and they their lives.
Long after this, when Henry the Fifth
Succeeding his father Bolingbroke, did reign,
Thy father, Earl of Cambridge, then deriv'd
From famous Edmund Langley, Duke of York,
Marrying my sister that thy mother was,
Again in pity of my hard distress
Levied an army, weening to redeem
And have install'd me in the diadem;
But, as the rest, so fell that noble earl,
And was beheaded. Thus the Mortimers,
In whom the title rested, were suppress'd. 92

Plan. Of which, my lord, your honour is the
last.

Mor. True; and thou seest that I no issue
have,
And that my fainting words do warrant death:
Thou art my heir; the rest I wish thee ga
ther:
But yet be wary in thy studious care.
Plan. Thy grave admonishments prevail
with me.
But yet methinks my father's execution
Was nothing less than bloody tyranny. 100
Mor. With silence, nephew, be thou politic:
Strong-fixed is the house of Lancaster,
And like a mountain, not to be remov'd.
But now thy uncle is removing hence, 104
As princes do their courts, when they are cloy'd
With long continuance in a settled place.

Plan. O uncle! would some part of my young
years
Might but redeem the passage of your age. 108
Mor. Thou dost then wrong me,—as the
slaughterer doth,
Which giveth many wounds when one will kill.—
Mourn not, except thou sorrow for my good;
Only give order for my funeral: 112
And so farewell; and fair be all thy hopes,
And prosperous be thy life in peace and war!

Dies.

Plan. And peace, no war, befall thy parting
soul!
In prison hast thou spent a pilgrimage,
And like a hermit overpass'd thy days.
Well, I will lock his counsel in my breast;
And what I do imagine let that rest.
Keepers, convey him hence; and I myself
Will see his burial better than his life.

[Exeunt Keepers, bearing out the body
of MORTIMER.

Here dies the dusky torch of Mortimer,
Chok'd with ambition of the meaner sort:
And, for those wrongs, those bitter injuries,
Which Somerset hath offer'd to my house,
I doubt not but with honour to redress;
And therefore haste I to the parliament,
Either to be restored to my blood,
Or make my will the advantage of my good. [Exit.

ACT III.


Flourish. Enter KIng HENRY, EXETER, GLOU
CESTER, WARWICK, SOMERSET, and SUFF
FOLK; the BISHOP OF WINCHESTER, RICHARD
PLANTAGENET, and Others. Gloucester
offers to put up a bill; Winchester snatch
s it, and tears it.

Win. Com'st thou with deep premeditated
lines,
Act III, Sc. I. FIRST PART OF KING HENRY THE SIXTH

With written pamphlets studiously devis’d, 4
Humphrey of Gloucester? If thou canst accuse,
Or aught intend’st to lay unto my charge,
Do it without invention, suddenly;
As I, with sudden and extemporal speech
Purpose to answer what thou canst object.

Glo. Presumptuous priest! this place commands my patience. 8
Or thou shouldst find thou hast dishonour’d me.
Think not, although I write I profess’d
The manner of thy vile outrageous crimes,
That therefore I have forg’d, or am not able 12
Verbatim to rehearse the method of my pen:
No, prelate; such is thy audacious wickedness,
Thy lewd, pestiferous, and dissientious pranks,
As very infants prattle of thy pride. 16
Thou art a most pernicious usurer,
Froward by nature, enemy to peace;
Lascivious, wanton, more than well beseesm
A man of thy profession and degree; 20
And for thy treachery, what’s more manifest?
In that thou laid’st a trap to take my life
As well at London Bridge as at the Tower.
Beside, I fear me, if thy thoughts were sifted, 24
The king, thy sov’reign, is not quite exempt
From envious malice of thy swelling heart.

Win. Gloucester, I do defy thee. Lords, vouchsafe
To give me hearing what I shall reply. 28
If I were covetous, ambitious, or perverse,
As he will have me, how am I so poor?
Or how haps it I seek not to advance
Or raise myself, but keep my wonted calling? 32
And for dissension, who preferreth peace
More than I do, except I be provok’d?
No, my good lords, it is not that offends;
It is not that that hath incensed the duke: 36
It is, because no one should sway but he;
No one but he should be about the king;
And that engenders thunder in his breast,
And makes him roar those accusations forth. 40
But he shall know I am as good—

Glo. Thou bastard of my grandfather!

Win. Ay, lordly sir; for what are you, I pray,
But one imperious in another’s throne? 44
Glo. Am I not protector, saucy priest?
Win. And am not I a prelate of the church?
Glo. Yes, as an outlaw in a castle keeps,
And useth it to patronage his theft. 48
Win. Unreverent Gloucester!
Glo.

Thou art reverent,
Touching thy spiritual function, not thy life.

Win. Rome shall remedy this.

War. Roam thither then.

Som. My lord, it were your duty to forbear.

War. Ay, see the bishop be not overcome.
Third Serv. My lord, we know your Grace to
be a man
Just and upright, and, for your royal birth,
Inferior to none but to his majesty;
And ere that we will suffer such a prince,
So kind a father of the commonweal,
To be disgraced by an inhorn mat,
We and our wives and children all will fight,
And have our bodies slaughter’d by thy foes.
First Serv. Ay, and the very parings of our
nails
Shall pitch a field when we are dead.

[Skirmish again.

Glo.

Stay, stay, I say!
And, if you love me, as you say you do,
Let me persuade you to forbear a while.
K. Hen. O! how this discord doth afflict my
soul!
Can you, my Lord of Winchester, behold
My sighs and tears and will not once relent?
Who should be pitiful if you be not?
Or who should study to prefer a peace
If holy churchmen take delight in broils?
War. Yield, my Lord Protector; yield, Win-
chester;
Except you mean with obstinate repulse
To slay your sov reign and destroy the realm.
You see what mischief and what murder too
Hath been enacted through your enmity:
Then be at peace, except ye thirst for blood.
Win. He shall submit or I will never give
Glo. Compassion on the king commands me
stoop;
Or I would see his heart out ere the priest
Should ever get that privilege of me.
War. Behold, my Lord of Winchester, the
duke
Hath banish’d moody discontented fury,
As by his smoothed brows it doth appear:
Why look you still so stern and tragical?
Glo. Here, Winchester, I offer thee my hand.
K. Hen. Fie, uncle Beaufort! I have heard
you preach,
That malice was a great and grievous sin;
And will not you maintain the thing you teach,
But prove a chief offender in the same?
War. Sweet king! the bishop hath a kindly
girl.

For shame, my Lord of Winchester, relent!
What shall a child instruct you what to do?
Win. Well, Duke of Gloucester, I will yield
to thee;
Love for thy love and hand for hand I give.
Glo. [Aside.] Ay; but I fear me, with a
hollow heart.
See here, my friends and loving countrymen,
This token serveth for a flag of truce,

Betwixt ourselves and all our followers.
So help me God, as I dissemble not!
Win. [Aside.] So help me God, as I intend it
not!
K. Hen. O loving uncle, kind Duke of Glos-
cester,
How joyful am I made by this contract!
Away, my masters! trouble us no more;
But join in friendship, as your lords have done.
First Serv. Content: I’ll to the surgeon’s.
Sec. Serv.
And so will I. 
Third Serv. And I will see what physic the
tavern affords.

[Exeunt Mayor, Serving-men, &c.

War. Accept this scroll, most gracious sove-
reign,
Which in the right of Richard Plantagenet
We do exhibit to your majesty.
Glo. Well urg’d, my Lord of Warwick: for,
sweet prince,
An if your Grace mark every circumstance,
You have great reason to do Richard right;
Especially for those occasions
At Eltham-place I told your majesty.
K. Hen. And those occasions, uncle, were of
force:
Therefore, my loving lords, our pleasure is
That Richard be restored to his blood.
War. Let Richard be restored to his blood;
So shall his father’s wrongs be recompens’d.
Win. As will the rest, so willleth Winchester.
K. Hen. If Richard will be true, not that
alone,
But all the whole inheritance I give
That doth belong unto the house of York,
From whence you spring by linear descent.
Plan. Thy humble servant vows obedience,
And humble service till the point of death.
K. Hen. Stoop then and set your knee
against my foot;
And, in reguerdon of that duty done,
I girt thee with the valiant sword of York:
Rise, Richard, like a true Plantagenet,
And rise created princely Duke of York.
Plan. And so thrive Richard as thy foes
may fall!
And as my duty springs, so perish they
That grudge one thought against your majesty!
All. Welcome, high prince, the mighty Duke
of York!
Som. [Aside.] Perish, base prince, ignoble
Duke of York!
Glo. Now, will it best avail your majesty
To cross the seas and to be crown’d in France.
The presence of a king engenders love
Amongst his subjects and his loyal friends,
As it disanimates his enemies.
K. Hen. When Gloucester says the word, King Henry goes; 184
For friendly counsel cuts off many foes.
Glo. Your ships already are in readiness.
[Flourish. Exeunt all except EXETER.
Exe. Ay, we may march in England or in France,
Not seeing what is likely to ensue.
This late dissension grown betwixt the peers Burns under feigned ashes of forg’d love,
And will at last break out into a flame:
As fester’d members rot but by degree,
Till bones and flesh and sinews fall away, 192
So will this base and envious discord breed.
And now I fear that fatal prophecy
Which in the time of Henry, nam’d the Fifth, Was in the mouth of every sucking babe; 196
That Henry born at Monmouth should win all;
And Henry born at Windsor should lose all:
Which is so plain that Exeter doth wish
His days may finish ere that hapless time. 200

[Exit.

SCENE II.—France. Before Roan.

Enter JOAN LA PUCELLE, disguised, and Soldiers dressed like countrymen, with sacks upon their backs.

Joan. These are the city gates, the gates of Roan,
Through which our policy must make a breach: Take heed, be wary how you place your words;
Talk like the vulgar sort of market-men 4
That come to gather money for their corn.
If we have entrance,—as I hope we shall,—And that we find the slothful watch but weak, I’ll by a sign give notice to our friends, 8
That Charles the Dauphin may encounter them.

First Sold. Our sacks shall be a mean to sack the city,
And we be lords and rulers over Roan;
Therefore we’ll knock. [Knocks.

Guard. [Within.] Qui est là? 13
Joan. Pauvres gens de France:
Poor market-folks that come to sell their corn.

Guard. [Opening the gates.] Enter, go in; the market-bell is rung.

Joan. Now, Roan, I’ll shake thy bulwarks to the ground.
[JOAN LA PUCELLE, &c., enter the city.

Enter CHARLES, the BASTARD OF ORLEANS, ALENÇON, AND FORCES.

Char. Saint Denis bless this happy strata
gem!
And once again we’ll sleep secure in Roan.

Bast. Here enter’d Pucelle and her practisants; 20
Now she is there how will she specify
Where is the best and safest passage in?

Alen. By thrusting out a torch from yonder tower;
Which, once discern’d, shows that her meaning is, 24
No way to that, for weakness, which she enter’d.

Enter JOAN LA PUCELLE on a battlement, holding out a torch burning.

Joan. Behold! this is the happy wedding torch
That joineth Roan unto her countrymen, 27
But burning fatal to the Talbotites! [Exit.

Bast. See, noble Charles, the beacon of our friend,
The burning torch in yonder turret stands.

Char. Now shine it like a comet of revenge,
A prophet to the fall of all our foes! 32
Alen. Defer no time, delays have dangerous ends;
Enter, and cry ‘The Dauphin!’ presently,
And then do execution on the watch.

[They enter the town.

Alarum. Enter TALBOT in an Excursion.

Tal. France, thou shalt rue this treason with thy tears,
If Talbot but survive thy treachery.

Pucelle, that witch, that damned sorceress,
Hath wrought this hellish mischief unawares,
That hardly we escap’d the pride of France. 40

[Exit.

Alarum: Excursions. Enter from the town, BEDFORD, brought in sick in a chair. Enter TALBOT and BURGUNDY, and the English Forces. Then, enter on the walls, JOAN LA PUCELLE, CHARLES, the BASTARD OF ORLEANS, ALENÇON, AND OTHERS.

Joan. Good morrow, gallants! Want ye corn for bread?
I think the Duke of Burgundy will fast
Before he’ll buy again at such a rate.
’Twas full of darnel; do you like the taste? 44
Bur. Scoff on, vile fiend and shameless courtezan!
I trust ere long to choke thee with thine own
And make thee curse the harvest of that corn.

Char. Your Grace may starve perhaps, before that time. 48
Bed. O! let no words, but deeds, revenge this treason!
Joan. What will you do, good grey-beard? 
break a lance,
And run a tilt at death within a chair?  
Tal. Foul fiend of France, and bag of all 
despite,
Encompass'd with thy lustful paramours!
Becomes it thee to taunt his valiant age 
And twit with cowardice a man half dead? 
Damsel, I'll have a bout with you again,  
Or else let Talbot perish with this shame. 
Joan. Are you so hot, sir? Yet, Pucelle, 
hold thy peace; 
If Talbot do but thunder, rain will follow.  
[TALBOT and the rest consult together. 
God speed the parliament! who shall be the 
speaker?  
Tal. Dare ye come forth and meet us in the 
field? 
Joan. Belike your lordship takes us then 
for fools,
To try if that our own be ours or no.  
Tal. I speak not to that railing Hecate,  
But unto thee, Alençon, and the rest; 
Will ye, like soldiers, come and fight it out? 
Alen. Signior, no.  
Tal. Signior, hang! base muleters of 
France! 
Like peasant foot-boys do they keep the walls, 
And dare not take up arms like gentlemen. 
Joan. Away, captains! let's get us from the 
walls; 
For Talbot means no goodness, by his looks. God be wi' you, my lord! we came but to tell 
you That we are here.  
[Exeunt Joan LA PUCELLE, &c., from the Walls. 
Tal. And there will we be too, ere it be 
long, 
Or else reproach be Talbot's greatest fame!  
Vow, Burgundy, by honour of thy house,—  
Prick'd on by public wrongs sustain'd in France,— Either to get the town again, or die; 
And I, as sure as English Henry lives,  
As his father here was conqueror, As sure as in this late-betrayed town 
Great Cœur-de-lion's heart was buried, So sure I swear to get the town or die. Bur. My vows are equal partners with thy 
vows. 
Tal. But, ere we go, regard this dying prince, The valiant Duke of Bedford. Come, my lord, We will bestow you in some better place, Fitter for sickness and for crazy age. 
Bed. Lord Talbot, do not so dishonour me: Here will I sit before the walls of Roan, And will be partner of your weal or woe. 
Bur. Courageous Bedford, let us now per- suade you. 
Bed. Not to be gone from hence; for once I read, That stout Pendragon in his litter, sick, Came to the field and vanquished his foes: Methinks I should revive the soldiers' hearts, Because I ever found them as myself. 
Tal. Undaunted spirit in a dying breast! Then be it so: heavens keep old Bedford safe! And now no more ado, brave Burgundy, But gather we our forces out of hand, And set upon our boasting enemy.  
[Exeunt all but BEDFORD and Attendants. 
Alarum: Excursions; in one of which, enter SIR JOHN FASTOLFE and a Captain. 
Cap. Whither away, Sir John Fastolfe, in such haste? 
Fost. Whither away! to save myself by flight: We are like to have the overthrow again. 
Cap. What! will you fly, and leave Lord Talbot? 
Fost. Ay, 
All the Talbots in the world, to save my life. 
[Exeunt. 
Cap. Cowardly knight! ill fortune follow thee!  
Retreat: Excursions. Re-enter, from the town, JOAN LA PUCELLE, ALÉNÇON, CHARLES, &c., and exeunt, flying. 
Bed. Now, quiet soul, depart when Heaven please, For I have seen our enemies' overthrow. What is the trust or strength of foolish man? They, that of late were dashing with their scoffs Are glad and fain by flight to save themselves.  
[Dies, and is carried off in his chair. 
Alarum. Re-enter TALBOT, BURGUNDY, 
and Others. 
Tal. Lost, and recover'd in a day again! This is a double honour, Burgundy: Yet heavens have glory for this victory! 
Bur. Warlike and martial Talbot, Burgundy Enshrines thee in his heart, and there erects Thy noble deeds as valour's monument.  
Tal. Thanks, gentle duke. But where is Pucelle now? I think her old familiar is asleep. Now where's the Bastard's braves, and Charles his gleeks? What! all amott? Roan hangs her head for grief, That such a valiant company are fled. Now will we take some order in the town, Placing therein some expert officers,
Act III, Sc. II. FIRST PART OF KING HENRY THE SIXTH

And there depart to Paris to the king; 128
For there young Henry with his nobles lie.


Tal. But yet, before we go, let’s not forget The noble Duke of Bedford late decoess’d, 132
But see his exeques fulfill’d in Roan:
A braver soldier never couched lance,
A gentler heart did never sway in court;
But kings and mightiest potentates must die, 136
For that’s the end of human misery. [Exeunt.

SCENE III.—The Plains near Roan.

Enter Charles, the Bastard of Orleans, ALENÇON, JOAN LA PUCELLE, and Forces.

Joan. Dismay not, princes, at this accident, Nor grieve that Roan is so recovered.
Care is no cure, but rather corrosive, For things that are not to be remedied.
Let frantic Talbot triumph for a while, And like a peacock sweep along his tail.
We’ll pull his plumes and take away his train, If Dauphin and the rest will be but rul’d.
Char. We have been guided by thee hitherto, And of thy cunning had no difcidence:
One sudden foil shall never breed distrust.
Bast. Search out thy wit for secret policies, And we will make thee famous through the world.

ALENÇON. We’ll set thy statue in some holy place And have thee reverence’d like a blessed saint:
Employ thee, then, sweet virgin, for our good.

Joan. Then thus it must be; this doth Joan devise:
By fair persuasions, mix’d with sugar’d words, We will entice the Duke of Burgundy To leave the Talbot and to follow us.

Char. Ay, marry, sweeting, if we could do that,
France were no place for Henry’s warriors; Nor should that nation boast it so with us,
But be estrup’d from our provinces.

Alençon. For ever should they be expuls’d from France,
And not have title of an earldom here.

Joan. Your honours shall perceive how I will work
To bring this matter to the wished end.

[Drums heard afar off.

Hark! by the sound of drum you may perceive Their powers are marching unto Paris-ward.

Here sound an English march. Enter, and pass over, TALBOT and his Forces.

There goes the Talbot, with his colours spread, And all the troops of English after him.

A French march. Enter the Duke of Burgundy and his Forces.

Now in the rearward comes the duke and his:
Fortune in favour makes him lag behind. Summon a parley; we will talk with him.

[Parley.

Char. A parley with the Duke of Burgundy?
Bur. Who craves a parley with the Burgundy?

Joan. The princely Charles of France, thy countryman. 37
Char. Speak, Pucelle, and enchant him with thy words.

Joan. Brave Burgundy, undoubted hope of France!
Stay, let thy humble handmaid speak to thee. Speak on; but be not over-tedious.

Joan. Look on thy country, look on fertile France,
And see the cities and the towns defac’d
By wasting ruin of the cruel foe. As looks the mother on her lowly babe
When death doth close his tender dying eyes,
See, see the pining malady of France; Behold the wounds, the most unnatural wounds, Which thou thyself hast giv’n her woeful breast.
O! turn thy edged sword another way; Strike those that hurt, and hurt not those that help.
One drop of blood drawn from thy country’s bosom,
Should grieve thee more than streams of foreign gore:
Return thee therefore, with a flood of tears, And wash away thy country’s stained spots.

Bur. Either she hath bewitch’d me with her words, Or nature makes me suddenly relent.

Joan. Besides, all French and France exclaims on thee,

Doubting thy birth and lawful progeny.
Who join’st thou with but with a lordly nation That will not trust thee but for profit’s sake? When Talbot hath set footing once in France, And fashion’d thee that instrument of ill, Who then but English Henry will be lord, And thou be thrust out like a fugitive? Call we to mind, and mark but this for proof, Was not the Duke of Orleans thy foe, And was he not in England prisoner? But when they heard he was thine enemy, They set him free, without his ransom paid, In spite of Burgundy and all his friends.
See then, thou fight’st against thy countrymen.
And join'st with them will be thy slaughter-
men.
Come, come, return; return thou wand'ring
lord;
Charles and the rest will take thee in their
arms.
Bar. I am vanquished; these haughty words
of hers
Have batter'd me like roaring cannon-shot,
And made me almost yield upon my knees.
Forgive me, country, and sweet countrymen!
And, lords, accept this hearty kind embrace:
My forces and my power of men are yours.
So, farewell, Talbot; I'll no longer trust thee.
Joan. Done like a Frenchman: turn, and
turn again!
Char. Welcome, brave duke! thy friendship
makes us fresh.
Bast. And doth beget new courage in our
breasts.
Alen. Pucelle hath bravely play'd her part
in this,
And doth deserve a coronet of gold.
Char. Now let us on, my lords, and join our
powers:
And seek how we may prejudice the foe.

[Exeunt.]


Enter King Henry, Gloucester, Bishop of
Winchester, York, Suffolk, Somerset,
Warwick, Exeter; Vernon, Basset, and
Others. To them with his Soldiers, Talbot.

Tal. My gracious prince, and honourable
peers,
Hearing of your arrival in this realm,
I have a while giv'n truec unto my wars,
To do my duty to my sovereign:
In sign whereof, this arm,—that hath reclaim'd
To your obedience fifty fortresses,
Twelve cities, and seven walled towns of strength,
Beside five hundred prisoners of esteem,—
Lets fall his sword before your highness' feet,
[Exeunt.]

And with submissive loyalty of heart,
Ascribes the glory of his conquest got,
First to my God, and next unto your Grace.
K. Hen. Is this the Lord Talbot, uncle
Gloucester,
That hath so long been resident in France?
Glo. Yes, if it please your majesty, my liege.
K. Hen. Welcome, brave captain and victo-
rious lord!
When I was young,—as yet I am not old,—
I do remember how my father said,
A stouter champion never handled sword.

Long since we were resolved of your truth,
Your faithful service and your toil in war;
Yet never have you tasted our reward,
Or been reguider'd with so much as thanks,
Because till now we never saw your face,
Therefore, stand up; and for these good deserts,
We here create you Earl of Shrewsbury;
And in our coronation take your place.

[Flourish. Exeunt all but Vernon
and Basset.]

Ver. Now, sir, to you, that were so hot at
sea,
Disgracing of these colours that I wear
In honour of my noble Lord of York,
Dar'st thou maintain the former words thou
spak'st?
Bas. Yes, sir: as well as you dare patronage
The envious barking of your saucy tongue
Against my lord the Duke of Somerset.
Ver. Sirrah, thy lord I honour as he is.
Bas. Why, what is he? as good a man as
York.
Ver. Hark ye; not so: in witness, take ye
that.
[Strikes him.]
Bas. Villain, thou know'st the law of arms
is such
That, who so draws a sword, 'tis present death,
Or else this blow should broach thy dearest
blood.
But I'll unto his majesty, and crave
I may have liberty to venge this wrong;
When thou shalt see I'll meet thee to thy
cost.
Ver. Well, miscreant, I'll be there as soon
as you;
And, after, meet you sooner than you would.

[Exeunt.]

ACT IV.


Enter King Henry, Gloucester, Exeter,
York, Suffolk, Somerset, the Bishop of
Winchester, Warwick, Talbot, the
Governor of Paris, and Others.

Glo. Lord bishop, set the crown upon his
head.

Win. God save King Henry, of that name
the sixth.

Glo. Now, Governor of Paris, take your
oath,—
[Governor kneels.]

That you elect no other king but him,
Esteem none friends but such as are his friends,
And none your foe but such as shall pretend
Malicious practices against his state:
This shall ye do, so help you righteous God!

[Exeunt Governor and his Train.]
Enter Sir John Fastolfe.

Fast. My gracious sovereign, as I rode from Calais,
To haste unto your coronation,
A letter was deliver'd to my hands,
Writ to your Grace from the Duke of Burgundy.
Tal. Shame to the Duke of Burgundy and thee!

I vow'd, base knight, when I did meet thee next,
To tear the garter from thy craven's leg;

[Plucking it off.]

Which I have done, because unworthily
Thou wast installed in that high degree.
Pardon me, princely Henry, and the rest:
This dastard, at the battle of Patay,
When but in all I was six thousand strong,
And that the French were almost ten to one,
Before we met or that a stroke was given,
Like to a trusty squire did run away:
In which assault we lost twelve hundred men;
Myself, and divers gentlemen beside,
Were there surpris'd and taken prisoners.
Then judge, great lords, if I have done amiss;
Or whether that such cowards ought to wear
This ornament of knighthood, yea, or no?

Glo. To say the truth, this fact was infamous
And ill beseeing any common man,
Much more a knight, a captain and a leader.

Tal. When first this order was ordain'd, my lords,
Knights of the garter were of noble birth,
Valiant and virtuous, full of haughty courage,
Such as were grown to credit by the wars;
Not fearing death, nor shrinking for distress,
But always resolute in most extremes.
He then that is not furnish'd in this sort
Doth but usurp the sacred name of knight,
Profaning this most honourable order;
And should—if I were worthy to be judge—
Be quite degraded, like a hedge-brown swain
That doth presume to boast of gentle blood.

K. Hen. Stain to thy countrymen! thou hear'st thy doom.
Be packing therefore, thou that wast a knight;
Henceforth we banish thee on pain of death.

[Exit Fastolfe.]

And now, my Lord Protector, view the letter
Sent from our uncle Duke of Burgundy.

Glo. [Viewing superscription.] What means his Grace, that he hath chang'd his style?
No more, but plain and bluntly, To the King!
Hath he forgot he is his sovereign?
Or doth this churlish superscription
 Pretend some alteration in good will?
What's here? I have, upon especial cause,
Mov'd with compassion of my country's wrack,
Together with the pitiful complaints
Of such as your oppression feeds upon,
Forsaken your pernicious faction,
And join'd with Charles, the rightful King of France.

O, monstrous treachery! Can this be so,
That in alliance, amity, and oaths,
There should be found such false dissembling
guile?

K. Hen. What! doth my uncle Burgundy revolt?

Glo. He doth, my lord, and is become your foe.

K. Hen. Is that the worst this letter doth contain?

Glo. It is the worst, and all, my lord, he writes.

K. Hen. Why then, Lord Talbot there shall talk with him,
And give him chastisement for this abuse.
How say you, my lord? are you not content?

Tal. Content, my liege! Yes: but that I am prevented,
I should have begg'd I might have been employ'd.

K. Hen. Then gather strength, and march unto him straight:
Let him perceive how ill we brook his treason,
And what offence it is to flout his friends.

Tal. I go, my lord; in heart desiring still
You may behold confusion of your foes. [Exit.

Enter Vernon and Basset.

Ver. Grant me the combat, gracious sovereign!
Bas. And me, my lord; grant me the combat too!

York. This is my servant: hear him, noble prince!

Som. And this is mine: sweet Henry, favour him!

K. Hen. Be patient, lords; and give them leave to speak.
Say, gentlemen, what makes you thus exclaim?
And wherefore crave you combat? or with whom?

Ver. With him, my lord; for he hath done me wrong.

Bas. And I with him; for he hath done me wrong.

K. Hen. What is that wrong whereof you both complain?
First let me know, and then I'll answer you.

Bas. Crossing the sea from England into France,
This fellow here, with envious carping tongue,
Upbraided me about the rose I wear;
Saying, the sanguine colour of the leaves
Did represent my master’s blushing cheeks,
When stubbornly he did repugn the truth
About a certain question in the law
Argu’d betwixt the Duke of York and him;
With other vile and ignominious terms:
In confusion of which rude reproach,
And in defence of my lord’s worthiness,
I crave the benefit of law of arms.

Ver. And that is my petition, noble lord:
For though he seem with forged quaint conceit,
To set a gloss upon his bold intent,
Yet know, my lord, I was provok’d by him;
And he first took exceptions at this badge,
 Pronouncing, that the paleness of this flower
 Bewray’d the faintness of my master’s heart.
York. Will not this malice, Somerset, be left?

Som. Your private grudge, my Lord of York,
will out,
Though ne’er so cunningly you smother it.

K. Hen. Good Lord! what madness rules in
brain-sack men,
When, for so slight and frivolous a cause,
Such factious emulations shall arise!
Good cousins both, of York and Somerset,
Quiet yourselves, I pray, and be at peace.
York. Let this dissension first be tried by
fight,
And then your highness shall command a peace.

Som. The quarrel toucheth none but us
alone;
Bewray’st ourselves let us decide it, then.

York. There is my pledge; accept it, Somer-
set.

Ver. Nay, let it rest where it began at first.
Bas. Confirm it so, mine honourable lord.
Glo. Confirm it so! Confounded be your
strife!
And perish ye, with your audacious prate!
Presumptuous vassals! are you not asham’d,
With this immodest clamorous outrage
To trouble and disturb the king and us? —
And you, my lords, methinks you do not well
To bear with their perverse objections;
Much less to take occasion from their mouths
To raise a mutiny betwixt yourselves:
Let me persuade you take a better course.

Exe. It grieves his highness: good my lords,
be friends.

K. Hen. Come hither, you that would be
combatants.

Henceforth I charge you, as you love our favour,
Quite to forget this quarrel and the cause.
And you, my lords, remember where we are;
In France, amongst a fickle wav’ring nation.
If they perceive dissension in our looks,

And that within ourselves we disagree,
How will their grudging stomachs be provok’d
To wilful disobedience, and rebel!
Beside, what infamy will there arise,
When foreign disobedience shall be certified
That for a toy, a thing of no regard,
King Henry’s peers and chief nobility
Destroy’d themselves, and lost the realm of
France!

O! think upon the conquest of my father,
My tender years, and let us not forego
That for a trifle that was bought with blood!
Let me be umpire in this doubtful strife.
I see no reason, if I wear this rose,

[Putting on a red rose.
That any one should therefore be suspicious
I more incline to Somerset than York:
Both are my kinmen, and I love them both.
As well they may upbraid me with my crown,
Because, forsooth, the King of Scots is crown’d.
But your discretions better can persuade
Than I am able to instruct or teach:
And therefore, as we hither came in peace,
So let us still continue peace and love.
Cousin of York, we institute your Grace
To be our regent in these parts of France:
And, good my Lord of Somerset, unite
Your troops of horsemen with his bands of foot;
And like true subjects, sons of your progenitors,
Go cheerfully together and digest
Your angry choler on your enemies.

Ourself, my Lord Protector, and the rest,
After some respite will return to Calais;
From thence to England; where I hope ere
long
To be presented by your victories,
With Charles, Alençon, and that traitorous rout.

[Floourish. Exeunt all but YORK, WARWICK,
EXETER, and VERNON.

War. My Lord of York, I promise you, the king
Prettily, methought, did play the orator.
York. And so he did; but yet I like it not,
In that he wears the badge of Somerset.
War. Tush! that was but his fancy, blame
him not;
I dare presume, sweet prince, he thought no
harm.
York. An if I wist he did,—But let it rest;
Other affairs must now be managed.

[Exeunt YORK, WARWICK, and VERNON.
Exe. Well didst thou, Richard, to suppress
thy voice;
For had the passions of thy heart burst out,
I fear we should have seen decipher’d there
More rancorous spite, more furious raging broils,
Than yet can be imagin’d or supposed.
But howsoe’er, no simple man that sees

599
Act IV, Sc. I.  FIRST PART OF KING HENRY THE SIXTH

This jarring discord of nobility,
This shouldering of each other in the court,
This factious bandying of their favourites,
But that it doth presage some ill event.
'Tis much when sceptres are in children's hands;
But more, when envy breeds unkind division:
There comes the ruin, there begins confusion.

[Exit.

SCENE II.—Before Bourdeaux.

Enter Talbot, with his Forces.

Tal. Go to the gates of Bourdeaux, trumpeter;
Summon their general unto the wall.

Trumpet sounds a parley. Enter, on the
Walls, the General of the French Forces, and
Others.

English John Talbot, captains, calls you forth,
Servant in arms to Harry King of England;
And thus he would: Open your city gates,
Be humble to us, call my sov' reign yours,
And do him homage as obedient subjects,
And I'll withdraw me and my bloody power; 8
But, if you frown upon this proffer'd peace,
You tempt the fury of my three attendants,
Lean famine, quartering steel, and climbing fire;
Who in a moment even with the earth
Shall lay your stately and air-braving towers,
If you forsake the offer of their love.

Gen. Thou ominous and fearful owl of death,
Our nation's terror and their bloody scourge! 16
The period of thy tyranny approacheth.
On us thou canst not enter but by death;
For, I protest, we are well forti'd,
And strong enough to issue out and fight: 20
If thou retire, the Dauphin, well appointed,
Stands with the snares of war to tangle thee:
On either hand thee there are squadrons pitch'd,
To wall thee from the liberty of flight; 24
And no way canst thou turn thee for redress
But death doth front thee with apparent spoil,
And pale destruction meets thee in the face.
Ten thousand French have ta'en the sacrament,
To rive their dangerous artillery
Upon no Christian soul but English Talbot.
If thou stand'st, a breathing valiant man,
Of an invincible unconquer'd spirit: 32
This is the latest glory of thy praise,
That I, thy enemy, 'due thee withal;
For ere the glass, that now begins to run,
Finish the process of his sandy hour, 36
These eyes, that see thee now well coloured,
Shall see thee wither'd, bloody, pale, and dead.

[Drum afar off.

Hark! hark! the Dauphin's drum, a warning bell,
York. O God! that Somerset, who in proud heart
Doth stop my cornets, were in Talbot’s place!
So should we save a valiant gentleman
By forfeiting a traitor and a coward.
Mad ire and wrathful fury, make me weep
That thus we die, while remiss traitors sleep.
Lucy. O! send some succour to the distress’d lord.
York. He dies, we lose; I break my war-like word;
We mourn, France smiles; we lose, they daily get;
All ’long of this vile traitor Somerset.
Lucy. Then God take mercy on brave Talbot’s soul;
And on his son young John, whom two hours since
I met in travel toward his war-like father.
This seven years did not Talbot see his son;
And now they meet where both their lives are done.
York. Alas! what joy shall noble Talbot have,
To bid his young son welcome to his grave? Away! vexation almost stops my breath
That sunder’d friends greet in the hour of death.
Lucy, farewell: no more my fortune can,
But curse the cause I cannot aid the man.
Maine, Blois, Poitiers, and Tours, are won away,
’Long all of Somerset and his delay.

[Exit, with his Soldiers.

Lucy. Thus, while the vulture of sedition
Feeds in the bosom of such great commanders,
Sleeping negligence doth betray to loss
The conquest of our scarce cold conqueror,
That ever living man of memory,
Henry the Fifth: Whiles they each other cross,
Lives, honours, lands, and all hurry to loss.

[Exit.

SCENE IV.—Other Plains in Gascony.

Enter SOMERSET, with his Army; a Captain of TALBOT’s with him.

Som. It is too late; I cannot send them now:
This expedition was by York and Talbot
Too rashly plotted: all our general force
Might with a sally of the very town
Be buckled with: the over-daring Talbot
Hath allured all his gloss of former honour
By this unheedful, desperate, wild adventure:
York set him on to fight and die in shame,
That, Talbot dead, great York might bear the name.

Cap. Here is Sir William Lucy, who with me
Set from our o’ermatch’d forces forth for aid.

Enter SIR WILLIAM LUCY.

Som. How now, Sir William! whither were you sent?
Lucy. Whither, my lord? from bought and sold Lord Talbot;
Who, ring’d about with bold adversity,
Cries out for noble York and Somerset,
To beat assailing death from his weak legions:
And whiles the honourable captain there
Drops bloody sweat from his war-wearied limbs,
And, in advantage lingering, looks for rescue.
You, his false hopes, the trust of England’s honour,
Keep off aloof with worthless emulation.
Let not your private discord keep away
The levied succours that should lend him aid,
While he, renowned noble gentleman,
Yields up his life unto a world of odds:
Orleans the Bastard, Charles, Burgundy,
Alerçon, Reignier, compass him about,
And Talbot perisheth by your default.

Som. York set him on; York should have sent him aid.

Lucy. And York as fast upon your Grace exclaims;
Swearing that you withhold his levied host
Collected for this expedition.

Som. York lies; he might have sent and had the horse:
I owe him little duty, and less love;
And take foul scorn to fawn on him by sending.

Lucy. The fraud of England, not the force of France,
Hath now entrapp’d the noble-minded Talbot.
Never to England shall he bear his life,
But dies, betray’d to fortune by your strife.

Som. Come, go; I will dispatch the horseman straight:
Within six hours they will be at his aid.

Lucy. Too late comes rescue: he is ta’en or slain,
For fly he could not if he would have fled;
And fly would Talbot never, though he might.

Som. If he be dead, brave Talbot, then adieu!

Lucy. His fame lives in the world, his shame
in you.

[Exeunt.

SCENE V.—The English Camp near Bourdeaux.

Enter TALBOT and JOHN his Son.

Tal. O young John Talbot! I did send for thee
To tutor thee in stratagems of war,
That Talbot’s name might be in thee reviv’d
When sapless age, and weak unable limbs
Should bring thy father to his drooping chair.
But,—O malignant and ill-boding stars!
Now thou art come unto a feast of death,
A terrible and unavoidable danger:
Therefore, dear boy, mount on my swiftest horse,
And I'll direct thee how thou shalt escape
By sudden flight: come, daily not, be gone.

John. Is my name Talbot? and am I your son?

And shall I fly? O! if you love my mother,
Dishonour not her honourable name,
To make a bastard and a slave of me:
The world will say he is not Talbot's blood
That basely fled when noble Talbot stood.

Tal. Fly, to revenge my death, if I be slain.

John. He that flies so will never return again.

Tal. If we both stay, we both are sure to die.

John. Then let me stay; and, father, do you fly:

Your loss is great, so your regard should be;
My worth unknown, no loss is known in me.
Upon my death the French can little boast;
In yours they will, in you all hopes are lost.
Flight cannot stain the honour you have won;
But mine it will that no exploit have done:
You fled for vantage everyone will swear;
But if I bow, they'll say it was for fear.
There is no hope that ever I will stay
If the first hour I shrink and run away.
Here, on my knee, I beg mortality,
Rather than life preserv'd with infamy.

Tal. Shall all thy mother's hopes lie in one tomb?

John. Ay, rather than I'll shame my mother's womb.

Tal. Upon my blessing I command thee go.

John. To fight I will, but not to fly the foe.

Tal. Part of thy father may be sav'd in thee.

John. No part of him but will be shame in me.

Tal. Thou never hadst renown, nor canst not lose it.

John. Yes, your renowned name: shall fight abuse it?

Tal. Thy father's charge shall clear thee from that stain.

John. You cannot witness for me, being slain.

If death be so apparent, then both fly.

Tal. And leave my followers here to fight and die?

My age was never tainted with such shame.

John. And shall my youth be guilty of such blame?

No more can I be sever'd from your side
Than can yourself yourself in twain divide.

Stay, go, do what you will, the like do I;
For live I will not if my father die.

Tal. Then here I take my leave of thee, fair son,

Born to eclipse thy life this afternoon.
Come, side by side together live and die,
And soul with soul from France to heaven fly.

SCENE VI.—A Field of Battle.

Alarum: Excursions, wherein Talbot's Son is hemmed about, and Talbot rescues him.

Tal. Saint George and victory! fight, soldiers, fight!
The regent hath with Talbot broke his word,
And left us to the rage of France his sword.
Where is John Talbot? Pause, and take thy breath:
I gave thee life and rescu'd thee from death.

John. O! twice my father, twice am I thy son:
The life thou gav'st me first was lost and done,
Till with thy war-like sword, despite of fate,
To my determin'd time thou gav'st new date.

Tal. When from the Dauphin's crest thy sword struck fire,
It warm'd thy father's heart with proud desire
Of bold-fac'd victory. Then lend age,
Quicken'd with youthful spleen and war-like rage,
Beat down Alençon, Orleans, Burgundy,
And from the pride of Gallia rescu'd thee.
The ireful bastard Orleans,—that drew blood
From thee, my boy, and had the maidenhood
Of thy first fight,—I soon encountered
And, interchanging blows, I quickly shed
Some of his bastard blood; and, in disgrace,
Bespoke him thus, 'Contaminated, base,
And misbegotten blood I spill of thine,
Mean and right poor, for that pure blood of mine
Which thou didst force from Talbot, my brave boy:'

Here, purposing the Bastard to destroy,
Came in strong rescue. Speak, thy father's care,
Art thou not weary, John? How dost thou fare?

Wilt thou yet leave the battle, boy, and fly?
Now thou art seal'd the son of chivalry?
Fly, to revenge my death when I am dead;
The help of one stands me in little stead.
O! too much folly is it, well I wot,
To hazard all our lives in one small boat.
If I to-day die not with Frenchmen's rage,
To-morrow I shall die with mickle age:
By me they nothing gain an if I stay;
'Tis but the short'ning of my life one day.
In thee thy mother dies, our household's name,
My death’s revenge, thy youth, and England’s fame.
All these and more we hazard by thy stay; 40
All these are sav’d if thou wilt fly away.

John. The sword of Orleans hath not made me smart;
These words of yours draw life-blood from my heart.

On that advantage, bought with such a shame,
To save a paltry life and slay bright fame, 45
Before young Talbot from old Talbot fly,
The coward horse that bears me fall and die!
And like me to the peasant boys of France,
To be shame’s scorn and subject of mischance!
Surely, by all the glory you have won,
An if I fly, I am not Talbot’s son:
Then talk no more of flight, it is no boot; 52
If son to Talbot, die at Talbot’s foot.

Tal. Then follow thou thy desperate sire of Crete,
Thou Icarus. Thy life to me is sweet:
If thou wilt fight, fight by thy father’s side, 56
And, commendable prov’d, let’s die in pride.

[Exeunt.]

SCENE VII.—Another Part of the Field.

Alarum: Excursions. Enter Old Talbot, wounded, led by a Servant.

Tal. Where is my other life?—mine own is gone;—
O! where’s your young Talbot? where is valiant John?
Triumphant death, smear’d with captivity,
Young Talbot’s valour makes me smile at thee.
When he perceiv’d me shrink and on my knee,
His bloody sword he brandish’d over me,
And like a hungry lion did commence
Rough deeds of rage and stern impatience;
But when my angry guardiand stood alone,
Tendering my ruin and assaill’d of none,
Dizzy-ey’d fury and great rage of heart
Suddenly made him from my side to start
Into the clust’ring battle of the French;
And in that sea of blood my boy did drench
His overthrowing spirit; and there died
My Icarus, my blossom, in his pride. 12

Enter Soldiers, bearing the body of Young Talbot.

Serv. O, my dear lord! lo, where your son is born!

Tal. Thou antick, death, which laugh’st us here to scorn,
Anon, from thy insulting tyranny,
Coupled in bonds of perpetuity,
Two Talbots, winged through the lither sky,
In thy despite shall ’scape mortality.
O! thou, whose wounds become hard-favour’d death,
Speak to thy father ere thou yield thy breath; 24
Brave death by speaking who’r he will or no;
Imagine him a Frenchman and thy foe.
Poor boy! he smiles, methinks, as who should say,
Had death been French, then death had died to-day. 28
Come, come, and lay him in his father’s arms:
My spirit can no longer bear these harms.
Soldiers, adieu! I have what I would have,
Now my old arms are young John Talbot’s grave.

[Dies.

Alarums. Exeunt Soldiers and Servant, leaving the two bodies. Enter CHARLES, ALLENCON, BURGUNDY, THE BASTARD OF ORLEANS, JOAN LA PUCELLE, and Forces.

Char. Had York and Somerset brought rescue in
We should have found a bloody day of this.
Bast. How the young whelp of Talbot’s, raging-wood,
Did flesh his puny sword in Frenchmen’s blood!
Joan. Once I encounter’d him, and thus I said:
‘Thou maiden youth, be vanquish’d by a maid;’
But with a proud majestic high scorn,
He answer’d thus: ‘Young Talbot was not born
To be the pillage of a giglot wench.’
So, rushing in the bowels of the French,
He left me proudly, as unworthy fight.

Bur. Doubtless he would have made a noble knight;
See, where he lies inhearsed in the arms
Of the most bloody nurser of his harms.
Bast. Hew them to pieces, hack their bones asunder,
Whose life was England’s glory, Gallia’s wonder.
Char. O, no forbear; for that which we have fled
During the life, let us not wrong it dead.

Enter SIR WILLIAM LUCY, attended: a French Herald preceding.

Lucy. Herald, conduct me to the Dauphin’s tent;
To know who hath obtain’d the glory of the day.
Char. On what submissive message art thou sent?

Lucy. Submission, Dauphin! ’tis a mere French word;
We English warriors wot not what it means.
I come to know what prisoners thou hast ta’en,
And to survey the bodies of the dead.
Act IV, Sc. VII. FIRST PART OF KING HENRY THE SIXTH

Char. For prisoners ask't thou? hell our prison is.
But tell me whom thou seek'st.

Lucy. Where is the great Alcides of the field,
Valiant Lord Talbot, Earl of Shrewsbury?

Created, for his rare success in arms,
Great Earl of Washford, Waterford, and Valence;

Lord Talbot of Goodrig and Urchinfield,
Lord Strange of Blackmore, Lord Verdun of Alton,
Lord Cromwell of Wingfield, Lord Furnival of Sheffield,
The thrice-victorious Lord of Falconbridge;
Knight of the noble order of Saint George,
Worthy Saint Michael and the Golden Fleece;

Of all his wars within the realm of France?

Joan. Here is a silly stately style indeed!
The Turk, that two-and-fifty kingdoms bath,
Write not so sediously a style as this.

Him that thou magnifist with all these titles,
Stinking and fly-blown lies here at our feet.

Lucy. Is Talbot slain, the Frenchmen's only scourge,
Your kingdom's terror and black Nemesis?

Char. He speaks with such a proud commanding spirit.
For God's sake, let him have 'em; to keep them here

They would but stink and putrefy the air.
Char. Go, take their bodies hence.

Lucy. I'll bear them hence:

But from their ashes shall be rear'd
A phœnix that shall make all France afeard.

Char. So we be rid of them, do with 'em what thou wilt.

And now to Paris, in this conquering vein:
All will be ours now bloody Talbot's slain.

[Exeunt.

ACT V.


Enter KING HENRY, GLOUCESTER, and EXETER.

K. Hen. Have you perus'd the letters from the pope,
The emperor, and the Earl of Armagnac?

Glo. I have, my lord; and their intent is this:

They humbly sue unto your excellence.

Char. To have a godly peace concluded of

Between the realms of England and of France.

K. Hen. How doth your Grace affect their motion?

Glo. Well, my good lord; and as the only means

To stop effusion of our Christian blood,
And stablish quietness on every side.

K. Hen. Ay, marry, uncle; for I always thought
It was both impious and unnatural

That such immanity and bloody strife

Should reign among professors of one faith.

Glo. Beside, my lord, the sooner to effect

And surer bind this knot of amity,

The Earl of Armagnac, near knit to Charles,
A man of great authority in France,

Presents his only daughter to your Grace

In marriage, with a large and sumptuous dowry.

K. Hen. Marriage, uncle! alas! my years are young,

And fitter is my study and my books

Than wanton dalliance with a paramour.

Yet call the ambassadors; and, as you please,

So let them have their answers every one:

I shall be well content with any choice

Tends to God's glory and my country's weal.

Enter a Legate, and two Ambassadors, with

WINCHESTER, now CARDINAL BEAUFORT,

and habited accordingly.

Exec. [Aside.] What! is my Lord of Winchester install'd,

And call'd unto a cardinal's degree?

Then, I perceive that will be verified

Henry the Fifth did sometime prophesy,—
‘If once he come to be a cardinal,

He'll make his cap co-equal with the crown.'

K. Hen. My lords ambassadors, your several suits

Have been consider'd, and debated on.

Your purpose is both good and reasonable;

And therefore are we certainly resolv'd

To draw conditions of a friendly peace;

Which by my Lord of Winchester we mean

Shall be transported presently to France.

Glo. And for the profser of my lord your master,

I have inform'd his highness so at large,

As,—liking of the lady’s virtuous gifts,
Her beauty, and the value of her dowry,—

He doth intend she shall be England's queen.

K. Hen. [To the Ambassador.] In argument

and proof of which contract,
FIRST PART OF KING HENRY THE SIXTH  Act V, Sc. III.

Bears her this jewel, pledge of my affection.  
And so, my lord protector, see them guarded, 48  
And safely brought to Dover; where inshipp'd  
Commit them to the fortune of the sea.  

[Exeunt King Henry and Train; Gloucester, Exeter, and Ambassadors.  
Win. Stay, my lord legate: you shall first  
receive  
The sum of money which I promised 52  
Should be deliver'd to his holiness.  
For clothing me in these grave ornaments.  
Leg. I will attend upon your lordship's leisure.  
Win. [Aside] Now Winchester will not submit, I trow, 56  
Or be inferior to the proudest peer.  
Humphrey of Gloucester, thou shalt well perceive  
That neither in birth or for authority  
The bishop will be overborne by thee: 60  
I'll either make thee stoop and bend thy knee,  
Or sack this country with a mutiny.  
[Exeunt.

SCENE III.—France. Before Angiers.  

Alarum: Excursions. Enter Joan la Pucelle.  
Joan. The regent conquers and the Frenchmen fly.  
Now help, ye charming spells and periaptes;  
And ye choice spirits that admonish me  
And give me signs of future accidents:  

[Thunder.  
You speedy helpers, that are substitutes  
Under the lordly monarch of the north,  
Appear, and aid me in this enterprise!  

Enter Fiends.  
This speedy and quick appearance argues proof  
Of your accustom'd diligence to me.  
Now, ye familiar spirits, that are cull'd  
Out of the powerful regions under earth,  
Help me this once, that France may get the field.  

[They walk, and speak not.  
O! hold me not with silence over-long.  
Where I was wont to feed you with my blood,  
I'll lop a member off and give it you,  
In earnest of a further benefit,  
So you do condescend to help me now.  

[They hang their heads.  
No hope to have redress? My body shall  
Pay recompense, if you will grant my suit.  

[They shake their heads.  
Cannot my body nor blood-sacrifice 20  
Entreat you to your wonted furtherance?  
Then take my soul; my body, soul, and all,  
Before that England give the French the foil.  

[They depart.  
Seel they forsake me. Now the time is come, 24  
That France must vail her lofty-plumed crest,  
And let her head fall into England's lap.  
My ancient incantations are too weak,  
And hell too strong for me to buckle with: 28  
Now, France, thy glory droopeth to the dust.  

[Exit.

Alarum. Enter French and English fighting:  
Joan la Pucelle and York fight hand to hand: Joan la Pucelle is taken. The French fly.  
York. Damsel of France, I think I have you fast:  
Unchain your spirits now with spelling charms,  
And try if they can gain your liberty.  
A goodly prize, fit for the devil's grace!  
See how the ugly witch doth bend her brows,  
As if with Circe she would change my shape.  

Joan. Chang'd to a worser shape thou canst not be.  

York. O! Charles the Dauphin is a proper man;  
No shape but his can please your dainty eye.
Act V, Sc. III. FIRST PART OF KING HENRY THE SIXTH

Joan. A plaguing mischief light on Charles and thee!
And may ye both be suddenly surpris’d
By bloody hands, in sleeping on your beds!
York. Fell banning hag, enchantress, hold thy tongue!
Joan. I prithee, give me leave to curse a while.
York. Curse, miscreant, when thou comest to the stake.
[Exeunt.]

Alarum. Enter Suffolk, with Margaret in his hand.

Suf. Be what thou wilt, thou art my prisoner.
[Gazes on her.

O fairest beauty! do not fear nor fly,
For I will touch thee but with reverent hands.
I kiss these fingers for eternal peace,
And lay them gently on thy tender side.
What art thou? say, that I may honour thee.

Mar. Margaret my name, and daughter to a king,
The King of Naples, whose’er thou art.

Suf. An earl I am, and Suffolk am I call’d.
Be not offended, nature’s miracle,
Thou art allotted to be tau’en by me:
So doth the swan her downy cygnets save,
Keeping them prisoners underneath her wings,
Yet if this servile usage once offend,
Go and be free again, as Suffolk’s friend.
[She turns away as going.

O stay! I have no power to let her pass;
My hand would free her, but my heart says no.
As plays the sun upon the glassy streams,
Twinkling another counterfeited beam,
So seems this gorgeous beauty to mine eyes.
Fain would I woo her, yet I dare not speak:
I’ll call for pen and ink and write my mind.
Fie, De la Pole! disable not thyself;
Hast not a tongue? is she not here thy prisoner?

Wilt thou be daunted at a woman’s sight?
Ay; beauty’s princely majesty is such
Confounds the tongue and makes the senses rough.

Mar. Say, Earl of Suffolk,—if thy name be so,—

What ransom must I pay before I pass?
For I perceive, I am thy prisoner.

Suf. [Aside.] How canst thou tell she will deny thy suit,

Before thou make a trial of her love?

Mar. Why speak’st thou not? what ransom must I pay?

Suf. [Aside.] She’s beautiful and therefore to be woo’d,

She is a woman, therefore to be won.

Mar. Wilt thou accept of ransom, yea or no?

Suf. [Aside.] Fond man! remember that thou hast a wife;
Then how can Margaret be thy paramour?

Mar. I were best to leave him, for he will not hear.

Suf. [Aside.] There all is marr’d; there lies a cooling card.

Mar. He talks at random; sure, the man is mad.

Suf. [Aside.] And yet a dispensation may be had.

Mar. And yet I would that you would answer me.

Suf. [Aside.] I’ll win this Lady Margaret.

For whom?

Why, for my kingdom: tush! that’s a wooden thing.

Mar. [Overhearing him.] He talks of wood: it is some carpenter.

Suf. [Aside.] Yet so my fancy may be satisfied,
And peace established between these realms.
But there remains a scruple in that too;
For though her father be the King of Naples,
Duke of Anjou and Maine, yet is he poor,
And our nobility will scorn the match.

Mar. Hear ye, captain? Are you not at leisure?

Suf. [Aside.] It shall be so, disdain they ne’er so much:
Henry is youthful and will quickly yield.

Madam, I have a secret to reveal.

Mar. [Aside.] What though I be enthrall’d? he seems a knight,
And will not any way dishonour me.

Suf. Lady, vouchsafe to listen what I say.

Mar. [Aside.] Perhaps I shall be rescued by the French;

And then I need not crave his courtesy.

Suf. Sweet madam, give me hearing in a cause—

Mar. Tush, women have been captivates ere now.

Suf. Lady, wherefore talk you so?

Mar. I cry you mercy, ’tis but quid for quo.

Suf. Say, gentle princess, would you not suppose
Your bondage happy to be made a queen?

Mar. To be a queen in bondage is more vile
Than is a slave in base servility;

For princes should be free.

Suf. And so shall you,

If happy England’s royal king be free.

Mar. Why, what concerns his freedom unto me?

Suf. I’ll undertake to make thee Henry’s queen,
To put a golden sceptre in thy hand
And set a precious crown upon thy head,
If thou wilt descend to be my—

Mar. What?

Suf. His love.
Mar. I am unworthy to be Henry's wife.
Suf. No, gentle madam; I unworthy am
To woo so fair a dame to be his wife,
And have no portion in the choice myself. 124
How say you, madam, are you so content?
Mar. An if my father please, I am content.
Suf. Then call our captains and our colours forth!
And, madam, at your father's castle walls 128
We'll crave a parley, to confer with him.
[Troops come forward.

A Parley sounded. Enter REIGNIER on the Walls.

Suf. See, Reignier, see thy daughter prisoner!
Reign. To whom?
Suf. To me.
Reign. Suffolk, what remedy?
I am a soldier, and unapt to weep, 132
Or to exclaim on Fortune's sickness.
Suf. Yes, there is remedy enough; my lord:
Consent, and for thy honour, give consent,
Thy daughter shall be wedded to my king, 136
Whom I with pain have woo'd and won thereto;
And this her easy-held imprisonment
Hath gain'd thy daughter princely liberty.
Reign. Speaks Suffolk as he thinks?
Suf. Fair Margaret knows 140
That Suffolk doth not flatter, face, or feign.
Reign. Upon thy princely warrant, I descend
To give thee answer of thy just demand.

[Exit from the walls.

Trumpets sound. Enter REIGNIER, below.

Reign. Welcome, brave earl, into our territories:
Command in Anjou what your honour pleases.
Suf. Thanks, Reignier, happy for so sweet a child,
Fit to be made companion with a king. 148
What answer makes your Grace unto my suit?
Reign. Since thou dost deign to woo her little worth
To be the princely bride of such a lord,
Upon condition I may quietly
Enjoy mine own, the county Maine and Anjou,
Free from oppression or the stroke of war,
My daughter shall be Henry's if he please.
Suf. That is her ransom; I deliver her; 156
And those two counties I will undertake
Your Grace shall well and quietly enjoy.
Reign. And I again, in Henry's royal name,
As deputy unto that gracious king, 160
Give thee her hand for sign of plighted faith.
Suf. Reignier of France, I give thee kingly thanks.

Because this is in traffic of a king:
[Aside.] And yet, methinks, I could be well content
To be mine own attorney in this case.
I'll over then, to England with this news,
And make this marriage to be solemniz'd.
So farewell, Reignier; set this diamond safe, 168
In golden palaces, as it becomes.
Reign. I do embrace thee, as I would embrace
The Christian prince, King Henry, were he here.
Mar. Farewell, my lord. Good wishes, praise, and prayers 172
Shall Suffolk ever have of Margaret. [Going.
Suf. Farewell, sweet madam! but hark you,
Margaret;
No princely commendations to my king?
Mar. Such commendations as become a maid,
A virgin, and his servant, say to him. 177
Suf. Words sweetly plac'd and modestly directed.
But madam, I must trouble you again,
No loving token to his majesty? 180
Mar. Yes, my good lord; a pure unspotted heart,
Never yet taint with love, I send the king.
Suf. And this withal. [Kisses her.
Mar. That for thyself: I will not so presume,
To send such peevish tokens to a king. 185
[Exeunt REIGNIER and MARGARET.

Suf. O! wert thou for myself! But Suffolk, stay;
Thou mayst not wander in that labyrinth;
There Minotaurs and ugly treasons lurk. 188
Solicit Henry with her wondrous praise:
Bethink thee on her virtues that surmount
And natural graces that extinguish art;
Repeat their semblance often on the seas, 192
That, when thou com'st to kneel at Henry's feet,
Thou mayst bereave him of his wits with wonder.

[Exit.

SCENE IV.—Camp of the DUKE OF YORK, in Anjou.

Enter YORK, WARWICK, and Others.

York. Bring forth that sorceress, condemn'd to burn.

Enter JOAN LA PUCELLE, guarded; and a Shepherd.

Shep. Ah, Joan! this kills thy father's heart outright.
Have I sought every country far and near,
And, now it is my chance to find thee out, 4
Must I behold thy timeless cruel death?
Ah, Joan! sweet daughter Joan, I'll die with thee.

Joan. Decrepit miser! base ignoble wretch!
I am descended of a gentler blood:
Thou art no father nor no friend of mine.

Shep. Out, out! My lords, an please you, 'tis not so;
I did beget her all the parish knows:
Her mother liveth yet, can testify
She was the first fruit of my bachelorship.

War. Graceless! wilt thou deny thy parent-age?

York. This argues what her kind of life hath been:
Wicked and vile; and so her death concludes.

Shep. Fie, Joan, that thou wilt be so obstacle!
God knows, thou art a collop of my flesh;
And for thy sake have I shed many a tear:
Deny me not, I prithee, gentle Joan.

Joan. Peasant, avaunt! You have suborn'd
this man,
Of purpose to obscure my noble birth.

Shep. 'Tis true, I gave a noble to the priest,
The morn that I was wedded to her mother.
Kneel down and take my blessing, good my girl.
Wilt thou not stoop? Now cursed be the time
Of thy nativity! I would the milk
Thy mother gave thee, when thou suck'dst her breast,
Had been a little ratsbane for thy sake!
Or else, when thou didst keep my lambs a-field
I wish some ravenous wolf had eaten thee!
Dost thou deny thy father, cursed drab?
Or burn her, burn her! hanging is too good.

Yorks. Take her away; for she hath liv'd too long,
To fill the world with vicious qualities.

Joan. First, let me tell you whom you have condemn'd:
Not me begotten of a shepherd swain,
But issu'd from the progeny of kings;
Virtuous and holy; chosen from above,
By inspiration of celestial grace,
To work exceeding miracles on earth.
I never had to do with wicked spirits:
But you,—that are polluted with your lusts,
Stain'd with the guiltless blood of innocents,
Corrupt and tainted with a thousand vices,—
Because you want the grace that others have,
You judge it straight a thing impossible
To compass wonders but by help of devils.
No misconceived! Joan of Arc hath been
A virgin from her tender infancy,
Chaste and immaculate in very thought;
Whose maiden blood, thus rigorously effus'd,
Will cry for vengeance at the gates of heaven.

York. Ay, ay: away with her to execution!

War. And hark ye, sire; because she is a maid,
Spare for no fagots, let there be enow:
Place barrels of pitch upon the fatal stake,
That so her torture may be shortened.

Joan. Will nothing turn your unrelenting hearts?
Then, Joan, discover thine infirmity;
That warranteth by law to be thy privilege.
I am with child, ye bloody homicides:
Murder not then the fruit within my womb,
Although ye hale me to a violent death.

York. Now, heaven forefend! the holy maid
with child!

War. The greatest miracle that e'er ye wrought!
Is all your strict preciseness come to this?

York. She and the Dauphin have been juggling:
I did imagine what would be her refuge.

War. Well, go to; we will have no bastards live;
Especially since Charles must father it.

Joan. You are deceiv'd; my child is none of his:
It was Alençon that enjoy'd my love.

York. Alençon! that notorious Machiavel!
It dies an if it had a thousand lives.

Joan. O! give me leave, I have deluded you:
'Twas neither Charles, nor yet the duke I nam'd,
But Reignier, King of Naples, that prevail'd.

War. A married man: that's most intolerable.

York. Why, here's a girl! I think she knows not well,
There were so many, whom she may accuse.

War. It's sign she hath been liberal and free.

York. And yet, forsooth, she is a virgin pure.
Strumpet, thy words condemn thy brat and thee:
Use no entreaty, for it is in vain.

Joan. Then lead me hence; with whom I leave my curse:
May never glorious sun reflect his beams
Upon the country where you make abode;
But darkness and the gloomy shade of death
Environ you, till mischance and despair
Drive you to break your necks or hang yourselves!

York. Break thou in pieces and consume to ashes,
Thou foul accursed minister of hell!

Enter CARDINAL BEAUFORT, attended.

Car. Lord regent, I do greet your excellence
With letters of commission from the king.
For know, my lords, the states of Christendom,
Mov'd with remorse of these outrageous broils,
Have earnestly implor'd a general peace
Betwixt our nation and the aspiring French;
And here at hand the Dauphin, and his train,
Approacheth to confer about some matter. 102
York. Is all our travail turn'd to this effect?
After the slaughter of so many peers,
So many captains, gentlemen, and soldiers, 104
That in this quarrel have been overthown,
And sold their bodies for their country's benefit,
Shall we at last conclude effeminate peace?
Have we not lost most part of all the towns, 108
By treason, falsehood, and by treachery,
Our great progenitors had conquered?
O! Warwick, Warwick! I foresee with grief
The utter loss of all the realm of France. 112
War. Be patient, York: if we conclude a peace,
It shall be with such strict and severe covenants
As little shall the Frenchmen gain thereby.

Enter CHARLES, attended; ALÉNÔN, THE BASTARD OF ORLEANS, REIGNIER, AND OTHERS.

Char. Since, lords of England, it is thus agreed,
117
That peaceable truce shall be proclaimed in France,
We come to be informed by yourselves
What the conditions of that league must be.
York. Speak, Winchester; for boiling cholera
chokes
The hollow passage of my poison'd voice,
By sight of those our baleful enemies.

Car. Charles, and the rest, it is enacted thus:
That, in regard King Henry gives consent, 124
Of mere compassion and of lenity,
To ease your country of distressful war,
And suffer you to breathe in fruitful peace,
You shall become true liege-men to his crown:
And, Charles, upon-condition thou wilt swear
To pay him tribute, and submit thyself,
Thou shalt be plac'd as viceroys under him,
And still enjoy thy regal dignity. 132

Alen. Must he be then, as shadow of himself?
Adorn his temples with a crown,
And yet, in substance and authority,
Retain but privilege of a private man? 136
This prof'er is absurd and reasonless.

Char. 'Tis known already that I am possess'd
With more than half the Gallian territories,
And therein reverenc'd for their lawful king: 140
Shall I, for lucre of the rest unvanquish'd,
Detract so much from that prerogative
As to be call'd but viceroys of the whole?
No, lord ambassador; I'll rather keep
That which I have then, coveting for more,
Be cast from possibility of all.
York. Insulting Charles! hast thou by secret
means
Us'd intercession to obtain a league, 148
And now the matter grows to compromise,
Stand'st thou aloof upon comparison?
Either accept the title thou usurp'st,
Of benefit proceeding from our king
And not of any challenge of desert,
Or we will plague thee with incessant wars.
Reig. My lord, you do not well in obstinacy
To cavil in the course of this contract: 156
If once it be neglected, ten to one,
We shall not find like opportunity.

Alen. [Aside to CHARLES.] To say the truth,
it is your policy
To save your subjects from such massacre
And ruthless slaughters as are daily seen
By our proceeding in hostility;
And therefore take this compact of a truce,
Although you break it when your pleasure serves.
War. How sayst thou, Charles? shall our
condition stand? 165
Char. It shall;
Only reserv'd, you claim no interest
In any of our towns of garrison.
York. Then swear allegiance to his majesty;
As thou art knight, never to disobey
Nor be rebellious to the crown of England,
Thou, nor thy nobles, to the crown of England.
[CHARLES, &c., give tokens of fealty.
So, now dismiss your army when ye please;
Hang up your ensigns, let your drums be still,
For here we entertain a solemn peace. [Exeunt.

SCENE V.—London. A Room in the Palace.

Enter KING HENRY, in conference with SUFFOLK; GLOUCESTER and EXETER following.

K. Hen. Your wondrous rare description,
noble earl,
Of beauteous Margaret hath astonish'd me:
Her virtues, grace with external gifts
Do breed love's settled passions in my heart:
And like as rigour of tempestuous gusts
Provokes the mightiest hulk against the tide,
So am I driven by breath of her renown
Either to suffer shipwreck, or arrive
Where I may have fruition of her love.
Suf. Tush! my good lord, this superficial tale
Is but a preface of her worthy praise:
The chief perfections of that lovely dame—
Had I sufficient skill to utter them—
Would make a volume of enticing lines,
Able to ravish any dull conceit:
And, which is more, she is not so divine,
So full replete with choice of all delights,
But with as humble lowliness of mind
She is content to be at your command:
Command, I mean, of virtuous chaste intents,
To love and honour Henry as her lord.
K. Hen. And otherwise will Henry ne'er presume.
Therefore, my Lord Protector, give consent
That Margaret may be England's royal queen.
Glo. So should I give consent to flatter sin. 25
You know, my lord, your highness is betroth'd
Unto another lady of esteem;
How shall we then dispense with that contract,
And not deface your honour with reproach? 29
Suf. As doth a ruler with unlawful oaths;
Or one that, at a triumph having vow'd
To try his strength, forsaketh yet the lists 32
By reason of his adversary's odds.
A poor earl's daughter is unequal odds,
And therefore may be broke without offence.
Glo. Why, what, I pray, is Margaret more than that? 36
Her father is no better than an earl,
Although in glorious titles he excel.
Suf. Yes, my good lord, her father is a king,
The King of Naples and Jerusalem; 40
And of such great authority in France
As his alliance will confirm our peace,
And keep the Frenchmen in allegiance.
Glo. And so the Earl of Armagnac may do, 44
Because he is near kinsman unto Charles.
Exe. Beside, his wealth doth warrant liberal dower,
Where Reignier sooner will receive than give.
Suf. A dower, my lords! disgrace not so your king, 48
That he should be so abject, base, and poor,
To choose for wealth and not for perfect love.
Henry is able to enrich his queen,
And not to seek a queen to make him rich: 52
So worthless peasants bargain for their wives,
As market-men for oxen, sheep, or horse.
Marriage is a matter of more worth
Than to be dealt in by attorneyship: 56
Not whom we will, but whom his Grace affects,
Must be companion of his nuptial bed;
And therefore, lords, since he affects her most
It most of all these reasons bindeth us, 60
In our opinions she should be prefer'd.
For what is wedlock forced, but a hell,
An age of discord and continual strife?
Whereas the contrary bringeth bliss, 64
And is a pattern of celestial peace.
Whom should we match with Henry, being a king,
But Margaret, that is daughter to a king?
Her peerless feature, joined with her birth, 68
Approves her fit for none but for a king:
Her valiant courage and undaunted spirit—
More than in women commonly is seen—
Will answer our hope in issue of a king; 72
For Henry, son unto a conqueror,
Is likely to beget more conquerors,
If with a lady of so high resolve
As is fair Margaret he be link'd in love. 76
Then yield, my lords; and here conclude with me
That Margaret shall be queen, and none but she.
K. Hen. Whether it be through force of your report,
My noble lord of Suffolk, or for that 80
My tender youth was never yet attain'd
With any passion of inflaming love,
I cannot tell; but this I am assur'd,
I feel such sharp dissension in my breast, 84
Such fierce alarums both of hope and fear,
As I am sick with working of my thoughts.
Take, therefore, shipping; post, my lord, to France;
Agree to any covenants, and procure 88
That Lady Margaret do vouchsafe to come
To cross the seas to England and be crown'd
King Henry's faithful and anointed queen:
For your expenses and sufficient charge, 92
Among the people gather up a tenth.
Be gone, I say; for till you do return
I rest perplexed with a thousand cares.
And you, good uncle, banish all offence: 96
If you do censure me by what you were,
Not what you are, I know it will excuse
This sudden execution of my will.
And so, conduct me, where, from company 100
I may revolve and ruminate my grief.  [Exit.
Glo. Ay, grief, I fear me, both at first and last.  [Exeunt Gloucester and Exeuter.
Suf. Thus Suffolk hath prevail'd; and thus he goes,
As did the youthful Paris once to Greece; 104
With hope to find the like event in love,
But prosper better than the Trojan did.
Margaret shall now be queen, and rule the king;
But I will rule both her, the king, and realm. 108
[Exit.

610
THE SECOND PART OF
KING HENRY THE SIXTH

DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

KING HENRY THE SIXTH.
HUMPHREY, Duke of Gloucester, his Uncle.
CARDINAL BEAUFORT, Bishop of Winchester,
Great-Uncle to the King.
RICHARD PLANTAGENET, Duke of York.
EDWARD and RICHARD, his Sons.
DUKE OF SOMERSET,
DUKE OF SUFFOLK,
DUKE OF BUCKINGHAM,
LORD CLIFFORD,
YOUNG CLIFFORD, his Son,
EARL OF SALISBURY, { of the King's Party.
EARL OF WARWICK, { of the York Faction.
LORD SCALES, Governor of the Tower.
SIR HUMPHREY STAFFORD, and WILLIAM STAFFORD, his Brother.
LORD SAY.
A Sea-captain, Master, and Master's Mate.
WALTER WHITMORE.
SIR JOHN STANLEY.
Two Gentlemen, prisoners with Suffolk.
VAUX.
MATTHEW GOFTE.
JOHN HUME and JOHN SOUTHWELL, Priests.

BOLINGBROKE, a Conjurer.
A Spirit raised by him.
THOMAS HORNER, an Armourer.
PETER, his Man.
Clerk of Chatham.
Mayor of St. Alban's.
SIMPCOX, an Impostor.
Two Murderers.
JACK CADE, a Rebel.
GEORGE BEVIS, JOHN HOLLAND, DICK the Butcher, SMITH the Weaver. MICHAEL, &c., Followers of Cade.
ALEXANDER IDEN, a Kentish Gentleman.
MARGARET, Queen to King Henry.
ELEANOR, Duchess of Gloucester.
MARGERY JOURDAIN, a Witch.
Wife to Simpcox.

Lords, Ladies, and Attendants; Herald, Petitioners, Aldermen, a Beadle, Sheriff, and Officers; Citizens, Prentices, Falconers, Guards, Soldiers, Messengers, &c.

SCENE.—In various parts of England.

ACT I.

SCENE I.—London. A Room of State in the Palace.

Flourish of Trumpets: then hautboys. Enter, on one side, KING HENRY, DUKE OF GLOUCESTER, SALISBURY, WARWICK, and CARDINAL BEAUFORT; on the other, QUEEN MARGARET, led in by SUFFOLK; YORK, SOMERSET, BUCKINGHAM, and Others, following.

Su/. As by your high imperial majesty
I had in charge at my depart for France,
As procurator to your excellence,
To marry Princess Margaret for your Grace; 4
So, in the famous ancient city, Tours,
In presence of the Kings of France and Sicil,
The Dukes of Orleans, Calaber, Britaine, and
Alencon,
Seven earls, twelve barons, and twenty reverend
bishops,
I have perform’d my task, and was espous’d:

And humbly now upon my bended knee,
In sight of England and her lordly peers,
Deliver up my title in the queen 12
To your most gracious hands, that are the sub-
stance
Of that great shadow I did represent;
The happiest gift that ever marquess gave,
The fairest queen that ever king receiv’d: 16

K. Hen. Suffolk, arise. Welcome, Queen Margaret:
I can express no kinder sign of love
Than this kind kiss. O Lord! that lends me
life,
Lend me a heart replete with thankfulness! 20
For thou hast given me in this beauteous face
A world of earthly blessings to my soul,
If sympathy of love unite our thoughts.

Q. Mar. Great King of England and my
gracious lord, 24
The mutual conference that my mind hath had
By day, by night, waking, and in my dreams,
In courtly company, or at my beads,
With you, mine alderliest sovereign,
Makes me the bolder to salute my king
With ruder terms, such as my wit affords,
And over-joy of heart doth minister.

K. Hen. Her sight did ravish, but her grace
in speech,
Her words y-clad with wisdom’s majesty,
Makes me from wondering fall to weeping joys;
Such is the fulness of my heart’s content.
Lords, with one cheerful voice welcome my love.

All. Long live Queen Margaret, England’s
happiness!
Q. Mar. We thank you all. [Flourish.
Suf. My Lord Protector, so it please your Grace,
Here are the articles of contracted peace
Between our sovereign and the French King
Charles,
For eighteen months concluded by consent.

Glo. Imprimit. It is agreed between the French king, Charles, and William De la Pole, Marquess of Suffolk, ambassador for Henry King of England, that the said Henry shall espouse the Lady Margaret, daughter unto Reignter King of Naples, Sicilia, and Jerusalem, and crown her Queen of England ere the thirtieth of May next ensuing. Item, That the duchy of Anjou and the county of Maine shall be released and delivered to the king her father.—

K. Hen. Uncle, how now!
Glo. Pardon me, gracious lord;
Some sudden qualm hath struck me at the heart
And dimm’d mine eyes, that I can read no further.

K. Hen. Uncle of Winchester, I pray, read on.
Car. Item. It is further agreed between them, that the duchies of Anjou and Maine shall be released and delivered over to the king her father; and she sent over of the King of England’s own proper cost and charges, without having any dowry.

K. Hen. They please us well. Lord marquess, kneel down:
We here create thee the first Duke of Suffolk,
And girt thee with the sword. Cousin of York,
We here discharge your Grace from being regent
T’ the parts of France, till term of eighteen months
Be full expir’d. Thanks, uncle Winchester, Gloucester, York, Buckingham, Somerset, Salisbury, and Warwick;
We thank you all for this great favour done, In entertainment to my princely queen.

Come, let us in, and with all speed provide
To see her coronation be perform’d.

[Exeunt King, Queen, and Suffolk.
Glo. Brave peers of England, pillars of the state,
To you Duke Humphrey must unload his grief,
Your grief, the common grief of all the land.
What! did my brother Henry spend his youth,
His valour, coin, and people, in the wars?
Did he so often lodge in open field,
In winter’s cold, and summer’s parching heat,
To conquer France, his true inheritance?
And did my brother Bedford toil his wits,
To keep by policy what Henry got?
Have you yourselves, Somerset, Buckingham, Brave York, Salisbury, and victorius Warwick, Receiv’d deep scars in France and Normandy?
Or hath mine uncle Beaufort and myself,
With all the learned council of the realm, Studied so long, sat in the council-house
Early and late, debating to and fro
How France and Frenchmen might be kept in awe?

And hath his highness in his infancy
Been crown’d in Paris, in despite of foes?
And shall these labours and these honours die?
Shall Henry’s conquest, Bedford’s vigilance,
Your deeds of war and all our counsel die?
O peers of England! shameful is this league,
Fatal this marriage, cancelling your fame,
Blotting your names from books of memory,
Razing the characters of your renown,
Defacing monuments of conquer’d France,
Undoing all, as all had never been.

Car. Nephew, what means this passionate discourse,
This peroration with such circumstance?
For France, ’tis ours; and we will keep it still.
Glo. Ay, uncle; we will keep it, if we can;
But now it is impossible we should.
Suffolk, the new-made duke that rules the roost,
Hath given the duchies of Anjou and Maine
Unto the poor King Reignter, whose large style
Agrees not with the leanness of his purse.
Sal. Now, by the death of him who died for all,
These counties were the keys of Normandy.
But wherefore weeps Warwick, my valiant son?
War. For grief that they are past recovery:
For, were there hope to conquer them again,
My sword should shed hot blood, mine eyes
No tears.
Anjou and Maine! myself did win them both;
Those provinces these arms of mine did conquer:
And are the cities, that I got with wounds,
Deliver’d up again with peaceful words?
Mort Dieu!
SECOND PART OF KING HENRY THE SIXTH  Act I, Sc. I.

York. For Suffolk's duke, may he be suffocate,
That dims the honour of this war-like isle!
France should have torn and rent my very heart
Before I would have yielded to this league. 128
I never read but England's kings have had
Large sums of gold and dowries with their wives;
And our King Henry gives away his own,
To match with her that brings no vantages. 132

Glo. A proper jest, and never heard before,
That Suffolk should demand a whole fifteenth
For costs and charges in transporting her!
She should have stay'd in France, and starv'd
in France,
Before—

Car. My Lord of Gloucester, now you grow
too hot:
It was the pleasure of my lord the king.
Glo. My Lord of Winchester, I know your
mind:
'Tis not my speeches that you do mislike,
But 'tis my presence that doth trouble ye.
Rancour will out: proud prelate, in thy face
I see thy fury. If I longer stay
We shall begin our ancient bickerings.
Lordings, farewell; and say, when I am gone,
I prophesied France will be lost ere long. [Exil.

Car. So, there goes our protector in a rage.
'Tis known to you he is mine enemy,
Nay, more, an enemy unto you all,
And no great friend, I fear me, to the king.
Consider lords, he is the next of blood,
And heir apparent to the English crown:
Had Henry got an empire by his marriage,
And all the wealthy kingdoms of the west,
There's reason he should be displeas'd at it.
Look to it, lords; let not his smoothing words
Bewitch your hearts; be wise and circumspect.
What though the common people favour him,
Calling him, 'Humphrey, the good Duke of Gloucester;'
Clapping their hands, and crying with loud voice,
'Jesu maintain your royal excellence!' 60
With 'God preserve the good Duke Humphrey!' I
fear me, lords, for all this flattering gloss,
He will be found a dangerous protector.

Buck. Why should he then protect our
sovereign,
He being of age to govern of himself?
Cousin of Somerset, join you with me,
And all together, with the Duke of Suffolk,
We'll quickly hoise Duke Humphrey from his
seat.

Car. This weighty business will not brook
delay;
I'll to the Duke of Suffolk presently. [Exil.

Som. Cousin of Buckingham, though Hum-
phrey's pride

And greatness of his place be grief to us,
Yet let us watch the haughty cardinal:
His insolence is more intolerable
Than all the princes in the land beside:
If Gloucester be displac'd, he'll be protector.

Buck. Or thou, or I, Somerset, will be pro-
tector,
Despite Duke Humphrey or the cardinal. 80
[Exeunt BUCKINGHAM and SOMERSET.

Sal. Pride went before, ambition follows him.
While these do labour for their own preferment,
Behoves it us to labour for the realm.
I never saw but Humphrey, Duke of Gloucester,
Did bear him like a noble gentleman. 105
Oft have I seen the haughty cardinal
More like a soldier than a man o' the church,
As stout and proud as he were lord of all,
Swear like a ruffian and demean himself
Unlike the ruler of a common weal.
Warwick, my son, the comfort of my age,
Thy deeds, thy plainness, and thy house-keeping,
Have won the greatest favour of the commons,
Excepting none but good Duke Humphrey:
And, brother York, thy acts in Ireland,
In bringing them to civil discipline,
They late exploits done in the heart of France,
When thou wert regent for our sovereign,
Have made thee fear'd and honour'd of the
people.
Join we together for the public good,
In what we can to bridle and suppress
The pride of Suffolk and the cardinal,
With Somerset's and Buckingham's ambition;
And, as we may, cherish Duke Humphrey's
deeds,
While they do tend the profit of the land.

War. So God help Warwick, as he loves the
land,
And common profit of his country!

York. [Aside.] And so says York, for he
hath greatest cause. 208

Sal. Then let's make haste away, and look
unto the main.

War. Unto the main! O father, Maine is
lost!
That Maine which by main force Warwick did
win,
And would have kept so long as breath did last:
Main chance, father, you meant; but I meant
Maine,

Which I will win from France, or else be slain.
[Exeunt WARWICK and SALISBURY.

York. Anjou and Maine are given to the
French;
Paris is lost; the state of Normandy
Stands on a tickle point now they are gone.
Suffolk concluded on the articles,
The peers agreed, and Henry was well pleasd
to change two dukedoms for a duke’s fair
daughter. 220
I cannot blame them all: what is’t to them?
’Tis thine they give away, and not their own.
Pirates may make cheap pennyworths of their,
pillage,
And purchase friends, and give to courtezans,
Still revelling like lords till all be gone; 225
While as the silly owner of the goods
Weeps over them, and wrings his hapless hands,
And shakes his head, and trembling stands aloof,
While all is shar’d and all is borne away, 229
Ready to starve and dare not touch his own:
So York must sit and fret and bite his tongue
While his own lands are bargain’d for and sold.
Methinks the realms of England, France, and
Ireland 233
Bear that proportion to my flesh and blood
As did the fatal brand Althaea burn’d
Unto the prince’s heart of Caldyon. 236
Anjou and Maine both given unto the French!
Cold news for me, for I had hope of France,
Even as I have of fertile England’s soil.
A day will come when York shall claim his own;
And therefore I will take the Nevils’ parts 241
And make a show of love to proud Duke Humphrey,
And, when I spy advantage, claim the crown,
For that’s the golden mark I seek to hit. 244
Nor shall proud Lancaster usurp my right.
Nor hold the sceptre in his childish fist,
Nor wear the diadem upon his head,
Whose church-like humours fit not for a crown.
Then, York, be still awhile, till time do serve:
Watch thou and wake when others be asleep,
To pry into the secrets of the state;
Till Henry, surfeiting in joys of love, 252
With his new bride and England’s dear-bought
queen,
And Humphrey with the peers be fall’n at jars:
Then will I raise aloft the milk-white rose,
With whose sweet smell the air shall be perfum’d, 256
And in my standard bear the arms of York,
To grapple with the house of Lancaster;
And, force perforce, I’ll make him yield the
crown,
Whose bookish rule hath pull’d fair England
down. [Exit.

SCENE II.—The Same. A Room in the DUKE
OF GLOUCESTER’S House.

Enter Gloucester and his DUCHESS.

Duch. Why droops my lord, like over-ripen’d corn

Hanging the head at Ceres’ plenteous load?
Why doth the great Duke Humphrey knit his
brows,
As frowning at the favours of the world?

Why are thine eyes fix’d to the sullen earth,
Gazing on that which seems to dim thy sight?
What seest thou there? King Henry’s diadem
Enchas’d with all the honours of the world? 8
If so, gaze on, and grovel on thy face,
Until thy head be circled with the same.
Put forth thy hand, reach at the glorious gold:
What’s too short? I’ll lengthen it with
mine;

And having both together heav’d it up,
We’ll both together lift our heads to heaven,
And never more abase our sight so low
As to vouchsafe one glance unto the ground. 16

Glo. O Nell, sweet Nell, if thou dost love thy
lord,
Banish the canker of ambitious thoughts:
And may that thought, when I imagine ill
Against my king and nephew, virtuous Henry,
Be my last breathing in this mortal world! 21
My troublous dream this night doth make mesad.

Duch. What dream’d my lord? tell me, and
I’ll requite it

With sweet rehearsal of my morning’s dream. 24

Glo. Methought this staff, mine office-badge
in court,
Was broke in twain; by whom I have forgot,
But, as I think, it was by the cardinal;
And on the pieces of the broken wand 28
Were plac’d the heads of Edmund Duke of
Somerset,
And William De la Pole, first Duke of Suffolk.
This was my dream: what it doth bode, God
knows.

Duch. Tut! this was nothing but an argu-
ment 32
That he that breaks a stick of Gloucester’s grove
Shall lose his head for his presumption.
But list to me, my Humphrey, my sweet duke:
Methought I sat in seat of majesty
In the cathedral church of Westminster,
And in that chair where kings and queens are
crown’d;
Where Henry and Dame Margaret kneel’d to
me,
And on my head did set the diadem. 40

Glo. Nay, Eleanor, then must I chide out-
right:

Presumptuous dame! ill-nurtur’d Eleanor!
Art thou not second woman in the realm,
And the protector’s wife, belov’d of him? 44
Hast thou not worldly pleasure at command,
Above the reach or compass of thy thought?
And wilt thou still be hammering treachery,
To tumble down thy husband and thyself 48
From top of honour to disgrace's feet?
Away from me, and let me hear no more.

Duch. What, what, my lord! are you so
cholerie
With Eleanor, for telling but her dream? 52
Next time I'll keep my dreams unto myself,
And not be check'd.

Glo. Nay, be not angry; I am pleas'd again.

Enter a Messenger.

Mess. My Lord Protector, 'tis his highness' pleasure

You do prepare to ride unto Saint Alban's,
Whereas the king and queen do mean to
hawk.

Glo. I go. Come, Nell, thou wilt ride with
us?

Duch. Yes, my good lord, I'll follow presently.

[Excunt Gloucester and Messenger.

Follow I must; I cannot go before,
While Gloucester bears this base and humble
mind.

Were I a man, a duke, and next of blood,
I would remove these tedious stumbling-blocks
And smooth my way upon their headless necks;
And, being a woman, I will not be slack
To play my part in Fortune's pageant.
Where are you there? Sir John! nay, fear not,
man,
We are alone; here's none but thee and I.

Enter Hume.

Hume. Jesus preserve your royal majesty!
Duch. What sayst thou? majesty! I am but
Grace.

Hume. But, by the grace of God, and Hume's
advice,

Your Grace's title shall be multiplied.

Duch. What sayst thou, man? hast thou as
yet conferred'd

With Margery Jourdain, the cunning witch,
With Roger Bolingbroke, the conjurer?
And will they undertake to do me good?

Hume. This they have promised, to show
your highness
A spirit rais'd from depth of under ground,
That shall make answer to such questions
As by your Grace shall be propounded him.

Duch. It is enough: I'll think upon the
questions.

When from Saint Alban's we do make return
We'll see these things effected to the full.
Here, Hume, take this reward; makemerry, man,
With thy confederates in this worthy cause.

[Exit.
Duke of Suffolk, for enclosing the commons of Melford! How now, sir knave! 25
Sec. Pet. Alas! sir, I am but a poor petitioner of our whole township.
Peter. [Presenting his petition.] Against my master, Thomas Horner, for saying that the Duke of York was rightful heir to the crown.
Q. Mar. What sayst thou? Did the Duke of York say he was rightful heir to the crown? 32
Pet. That my master was? No, forsooth: my master said that he was; and that the king was an usurper.
Suf. Who is there? 36

Enter Servants.
Take this fellow in, and send for his master with a pursuivant presently. We'll hear more of your matter before the king.
[Exeunt Servants with PETER.
Q. Mar. And as for you, that love to be protected 40
Under the wings of our protector's grace,
Begin your suits anew and sue to him.
[Tears the petitions.
Away, base cullions! Suffolk, let them go.
All. Come, let's be gone.
[Exeunt Petitioners.
Q. Mar. My Lord of Suffolk, say, is this the guise,
Is this the fashion of the court of England?
Is this the government of Britain's isle,
And this the royalty of Albion's king? 48
What shall King Henry be a pible still
Under the surly Gloucester's governance?
Am I a queen in title and in style,
And must be made a subject to a duke? 52
I tell thee, Pole, when in the city Tours
Thou ran'st a tilt in honour of my love,
And stol'st away the ladies' hearts of France,
I thought King Henry had resembled thee 56
In courage, courtship, and proportion:
But all his mind is bent to holiness,
To number Ave-Maries on his beads;
His champions are the prophets and apostles;
His weapons holy saws of sacred writ; 61
His study is his tilt-yard, and his loves
Are brazen images of canoniz'd saints.
I would the college of the cardinals
Would choose him pope, and carry him to
Rome,
And set the triple crown upon his head:
That were a state fit for his holiness.
Suf. Madam, be patient; as I was cause 68
Your highness came to England, so will I
In England work your Grace's full content.
Q. Mar. Beside the haughty protector, have we Beaufort

The imperious churchman, Somerset, Buckingham,
And grumbling York; and not the least of these
But can do more in England than the king.
Suf. And he of these that can do most of all
Cannot do more in England than the Nevils: 76
Salisbury and Warwick are no simple peers.
Q. Mar. Not all these lords do vex me half so much
As that proud dame, the Lord Protector's wife:
She sweeps it through the court with troops of ladies,
More like an empress than Duke Humphrey's wife.
Strangers in court do take her for the queen:
She bears a duke's revenues on her back,
And in her heart she scorns our poverty. 84
Shall I not live to be aveng'd on her?
Contemptuous base-born callot as she is,
She vaunted 'mongst her minions t'other day
The very train of her worst wearing gown
Was better worth than all my father's lands,
Till Suffolk gave two dukedoms for his daughter.
Suf. Madam, myself have lim'd a bush for her,
And plac'd a quire of such enticing birds
That she will light to listen to the lays,
And never mount to trouble you again.
So, let her rest: and, madam, list to me;
For I am bold to counsel you in this. 96
Although we fancy not the cardinal,
Yet must we join with him and with the lords
Till we have brought Duke Humphrey in disgrace.
As for the Duke of York, this late complaint
Will make but little for his benefit:
So, one by one, we'll weed them all at last,
And you yourself shall steer the happy helm.

Sound a sennet. Enter KING HENRY, YORK, and SOMERSET; DUKE AND DUCHESS OF GLOUCESTER, CARDINAL BEAUFORT, BUCKINGHAM, SALISBURY, and WARWICK.

K. Hen. For my part, noble lords, I care not which;
Or Somerset or York, all's one to me.
York. If York have ill demean'd himself in France,
Then let him be denay'd the regentship.
Som. If Somerset be unworthy of the place,
Let York be regent; I will yield to him. 109
War. Whether your Grace be worthy, yea or no,
Dispute not that: York is the worthier.
Car. Ambitious Warwick, let thy betters speak.

616
SECOND PART OF KING HENRY THE SIXTH Act I, Sc. III.

War. The cardinal's not my better in the field.
Buck. All in this presence are thy betters, Warwick.

War. Warwick may live to be the best of all.
Sal. Peace, son! and show some reason,
Buckingham, 116
Why Somerset should be preferr'd in this.
Q. Mar. Because the king, forsooth, will have it so.
Glo. Madam, the king is old enough himself
To give his censure; these are no women's matters.
Q. Mar. If he be old enough, what needs your Grace
To be protector of his excellence?
Glo. Madam, I am protector of the realm;
And at his pleasure will resign my place. 124
Suf. Resign it then and leave thine insolence.
Since thou art king,—as who is king but thou?—
The commonwealth hath daily run to wrack;
The Dauphin hath prevail'd beyond the seas;
And all the peers and nobles of the realm 129
Have been as bondmen to thy sovereignty.
Car. The commons hast thou rack'd; the clergy's bags
Are lank and lean with thy extortions. 132
Sov. Thy sumptuous buildings and thy wife's attire
Have cost a mass of public treasury.
Buck. Thy cruelty in execution
Upon offenders hath exceeded law, 136
And left thee to the mercy of the law.
Q. Mar. Thy sale of offices and towns in France,
If they were known, as the suspect is great,
Would make thee quickly hop without thy head.
[Exit Gloucester. The Queen drops her fan.
Give me my fan: what, minion! can ye not?
[Giving the DUCHESS a box on the ear.
I cry you mercy, madam, was it you?
Duch. Was't I? yea, I it was, proud Frenchwoman:
Could I come near your beauty with my nails
I'd set my ten commandments in your face. 145
K. Hen. Sweet aunt, be quiet; 'twas against her will.
Duch. Against her will! Good king, look to't
in time;
She'll hamper thee and dandle like a baby:
Though in this place most master wear no breeches,
She shall not strike Dame Eleanor unreveng'd. 149
[Exit.
Buck. Lord Cardinal, I will follow Eleanor,
And listen after Humphrey, how he proceeds:
She's tickled now; her fume can need no spurs,
She'll gallop far enough to her destruction. 160
[Exit Buckingham.

Re-enter Gloucester.

Glo. Now, lords, my choler being over-blown
With walking once about the quadrangle, 156
I come to talk of commonwealth affairs.
As for your spiteful false objection,
Prove them, and I lie open to the law:
But God in mercy so deal with my soul
As I in duty love my king and country!
But to the matter that we have in hand.
I say, my sov'reign, York is meetest man
To be your regent in the realm of France. 164
Suf. Before we make election, give me leave
To show some reason, of no little force,
That York is most unmeet of any man.
York. I'll tell thee, Suffolk, why I am unmeet:
First, for I cannot flatter thee in pride;
Next, if I be appointed for the place,
My Lord of Somerset will keep me here,
Without discharge, money, or furniture, 172
Till France be won into the Dauphin's hands.
Last time I danc'd attendance on his will
Till Paris was besieg'd, famish'd, and lost.
War. That can I witness; and a fouler fact
Did never traitor in the land commit. 177
Suf. Peace, headstrong Warwick!
War. Image of pride, why should I hold my peace?

Enter Servants of Suffolk, bringing in
Horner and Peter.

Suf. Because here is a man accus'd of treason:
Pray God the Duke of York excuse himself!
York. Doth any one accuse York for a traitor?
K. Hen. What mean'st thou, Suffolk? tell me, what are these?
Suf. Please it your majesty, this is the man
That doth accuse his master of high treason. 185
His words were these: that Richard, Duke of York,
Was rightful heir unto the English crown,
And that your majesty was a usurper. 188
K. Hen. Say, man, were these thy words?
Hor. An't shall please your majesty, I never said nor thought any such matter: God is my witness, I am falsely accused by the villain. 192
Pet. By these ten bones, my lords, he did speak them to me in the garret one night, as we were scouring my Lord of York's armour.
York. Base dunghill villain, and mechanical,
I'll have thy head for this thy traitor's speech.
Act I, Sc. III. SECOND PART OF KING HENRY THE SIXTH

I do beseech your royal majesty
Let him have all the rigour of the law.

Hor. Alas! my lord, hang me if ever I spake the words. My accuser is my prentice; and when I did correct him for his fault the other day, he did vow upon his knees he would be even with me: I have good witness of this: therefore I beseech your majesty, do not cast away an honest man for a villain’s accusation.

K. Hen. Uncle, what shall we say to this in law?

Glo. This doom, my lord, if I may judge. Let Somerset be regent o’er the French, Because in York this breeds suspicion; And let these have a day appointed them For single combat in convenient place; For he hath witness of his servant’s malice.

This is the law, and this Duke Humphrey’s doom.

K. Hen. Then be it so. My Lord of Somerset, We make your Grace lord regent o’er the French.

Som. I humbly thank your royal majesty.

Hor. And I accept the combat willingly.

Pet. Alas! my lord, I cannot fight: for God’s sake, pity my case! the spite of man prevaleth against me. O Lord, have mercy upon me! I shall never be able to fight a blow. O Lord, my heart!

Glo. Sirrah, or you must fight, or else be hang’d.

K. Hen. Away with them to prison; and the day Of combat shall be the last of the next month. Come, Somerset, we’ll see thee sent away.

[Exeunt.]

SCENE IV.—The Same. The DUKE OF GLOUCESTER’S GARDEN.

Enter MARGERY JOURDAIN, HUME, SOUTHWELL, and BOLINGBROKE.

Hume. Come, my masters; the duchess, I tell you, expects performance of your promises.

Boling. Master Hume, we are therefore provided. Will her ladyship behold and hear our exorcisms?

Hume. Ay; what else? fear you not her courage.

Boling. I have heard her reported to be a woman of invincible spirit: but it shall be convenient, Master Hume, that you be by her aloft while we be busy below; and so, I pray you, go in God’s name, and leave us. [Exit HUME.]

Mother Jourdain, be you prostrate, and grovel on the earth; John Southwell, read you; and let us to our work.

Enter DUCHESS aloft, HUME following.

Duch. Well said, my masters, and welcome all.

To this gear the sooner the better.

Boling. Patience, good lady; wizards know their times:

Deep night, dark night, the silent of the night,
The time of woe, the time when Troy was set on fire; The time when screech-owls cry, and ban-dogs howl,

And spirits walk, and ghosts break up their graves,

That time best fits the work we have in hand. Madam, sit you, and fear not: whom we raise We will make fast within a hallow’d verge. [Here they perform the ceremonies belonging, and make the circle; BOLINGBROKE, or SOUTHWELL reads, Conjuro te, &c.

It thunders and lightens terribly; then the Spirit riseth.

Spir. Adsum.

M. Jourd. Asmath!

By the eternal God, whose name and power
Thou tremblest at, answer that I shall ask;
For till thou speak, thou shalt not pass from hence.

Spir. Ask what thou wilt. That I had said and done

Boling. First, of the king: what shall of him become?

Spir. The Duke yet lives that Henry shall depose;

But him outlive, and die a violent death.

[As the Spirit speaks, SOUTHWELL writes the answers.

Boling. What fate awaits the Duke of Suffolk?

Spir. By water shall he die and take his end.

Boling. What shall befall the Duke of Somerset?

Spir. Let him shun castles:

Safer shall he be upon the sandy plains Than where castles mounted stand.

Have done, for more I hardly can endure.

Boling. Descend to darkness and the burning lake!

False friend, avoid!

[Thunder and lightning. Spirit descends.

Enter YORK and BUCKINGHAM, hastily, with their Guards, and Others.

York. Lay hands upon these traitors and their trash.
SECOND PART OF KING HENRY THE SIXTH  
ACT II, SC. I.

What, madam, are you there? the king and commonweal Are deeply indebted for this piece of pains: My Lord Protector will, I doubt it not, See you well guardon'd for these good deserts.

Duch. Not half so bad as thine to England's king, Injurious duke, that threat'st where is no cause.

Buck. True, madam, none at all. What call you this? [Showing her the papers. Away with them! let them be clapp'd up close. And kept asunder. You, madam, shall with us: Stafford, take her to thee.—

[Exeunt above, DUCHESS and HUME
   guarded.

We'll see your trinkets here all forthcoming. All, away!

[Exeunt SOUTHWELL, BOLINGBROKE, &c., guarded.

York. Lord Buckingham, methinks you watch'd her well: A pretty plot, well chosen to build upon! Now, pray, my lord, let's see the devil's writ. 60 What have we here? The duke yet lives that Henry shall depose; But him outlive, and die a violent death. Why, this is just, Aio te, aexiteta, Romanos vincere posse. Well, to the rest: Tell me what fate awaits the Duke of Suffolk? By water shall he die and take his end. 68 What shall betide the Duke of Somerset? Let him shun castles: Safer shall he be upon the sandy plains Than where castles mounted stand. 72 Come, come, my lords; these oracles Are hardly attain'd, and hardly understood. The king is now in progress towards Saint Alban's; With him, the husband of this lovely lady: 76 Thither go these news as fast as horse can carry them, A sorry breakfast for my Lord Protector.

Buck. Your Grace shall give me leave, my Lord of York, To be the post, in hope of his reward. 80 York. At your pleasure, my good lord. Who's within there, ho!

Enter a Serving-man.

 Invite my Lords of Salisbury and Warwick To sup with me to-morrow night. Away! [Flourish. Exeunt.

ACT II.

SCENE I.—St. Alban's.

Enter KING HENRY, QUEEN MARGARET, GLOUCESTER, CARDINAL BEAUFORT, and SUFFOLK, with Falconers, hollating.

Q. Mar. Believe me, lords, for flying at the brook, I saw not better sport these seven years' day: Yet, by your leave, the wind was very high, And, ten to one, old Joan had not gone out. 4 K. Hen. But what a point, my lord, your falcon made, And what a pitch she flew above the rest! To see how God in all his creatures works! Yea, man and birds are fain of climbing high. 8 Suf. No marvel, an it like your majesty, My Lord Protector's hawks do tower so well; They know their master loves to be aloft, And bears his thoughts above his hawks' pitch. Glo. My lord, 'tis but a base ignoble mind That mounts no higher than a bird can soar.

Car. I thought as much; he'd be above the clouds.

Glo. Ay, my Lord Cardinal; how think you by that? 16 Were it not good your Grace could fly to heaven?

K. Hen. The treasury of everlasting joy.

Car. Thy heaven is on earth; thine eyes and thoughts Beat on a crown, the treasure of thy heart; 20 Pernicious protector, dangerous peer, That smooth'st it so with king and commonweal! Glo. What! cardinal, is your priesthood grown peremptory? Tantane animis caelestibus ira? 24 Churchmen so hot? good uncle, hide such malice; With such holiness can you do it?

Suf. No malice, sir; no more than well becomes So good a quarrel and so bad a peer. 28 Glo. As who, my lord?


K. Hen. I prithee, peace, 32 Good queen, and what not on these furious peers; For blessed are the peacemakers on earth.

Car. Let me be blessed for the peace I make Against this proud protector with my sword! 36 Glo. [Aside to the CARDINAL.] Faith, holy uncle, would 'twere come to that!
Car. [Aside to Gloucester.] Marry, when thou dar'st.

Glo. [Aside to the Cardinal.] Make up no factious numbers for the matter;
In thine own person answer thy abuse. 40

Car. [Aside to Gloucester.] Ay, where thou dar'st not peep; an if thou dar'st,
This evening on the east side of the grove.

K. Hen. How now, my lords! 45

Car. Believe me, cousin Gloucester,
Had not your man put up the fowl so suddenly,
We had had more sport. [Aside to Gloucester.] Come with thy two-hand sword.

Glo. True, uncle.

Car. Are you advis'd? [Aside to Gloucester] the east side of the grove.

Glo. [Aside to the Cardinal.] Cardinal, I am with you. 48

K. Hen. Why, how now, uncle Gloucester!

Glo. Talking of hawking; nothing else, my lord.—

[Aside to the Cardinal.] Now, by God's mother, priest, I'll shave your crown
For this, or all my fence shall fail. 52

Car. [Aside to Gloucester.] Medice te ipsum; Protector, see to't well, protect yourself.

K. Hen. The winds grow hugh; so do your stomachs, lords.
How irksome is this music to my heart! 56
When such strings jar, what hope of harmony?
I pray, my lords, let me compound this strife.

Enter One, crying, 'A Miracle.'

Glo. What means this noise?
Fellow, what miracle dost thou proclaim? 60

One. A miracle! a miracle!

Suf. Come to the king, and tell him what miracle.

One. Forsooth, a blind man at Saint Alban's shrine,
Within this half hour hath receiv'd his sight; 64
A man that ne'er saw in his life before.

K. Hen. Now, God be prais'd, that to believing souls
Gives light in darkness, comfort in despair!

Enter the Mayor of Saint Alban's, and his Brethren, and Simpcox, borne between two persons in a chair; his Wife and a great multitude following.

Car. Here comes the townsmen on procession,
To present your highness with the man. 69

K. Hen. Great is his comfort in this earthly vale,
Although by his sight his sin be multiplied.

Glo. Stand by, my masters; bring him near the king:

His highness' pleasure is to talk with him.

K. Hen. Good fellow, tell us here the circumstance,
That we for thee may glorify the Lord.
What! hast thou been long blind, and now restor'd?

Simp. Born blind, an't please your Grace.

Wife. Ay, indeed, was he.

Suf. What woman is this?

Wife. His wife, an't like your worship. 80

Glo. Hadst thou been his mother, thou couldst have better told.

K. Hen. Where went thou born?

Simp. At Berwick in the north, an't like your Grace.

K. Hen. Poor soul! God's goodness hath been great to thee:

Let never day nor night unhallow'd pass,
But still remember what the Lord hath done.

Q. Mar. Tell me, good fellow, cam'st thou here by chance.
Or of devotion, to this holy shrine?

Simp. God knows, of pure devotion; being call'd
A hundred times and oft'ner in my sleep,
By good Saint Alban; who said, 'Simpcox, come;
Come, offer at my shrine, and I will help thee.'

Wife. Most true, forsooth; and many time and oft
Myself have heard a voice to call him so.

Car. What! art thou lame?

Simp. Ay, God Almighty help me!

Suf. How cam'st thou so?

Simp. A fall off of a tree. 96

Wife. A plum-tree, master.

Glo. How long hast thou been blind?

Simp. O! born so, master.

Glo. What! and wouldst climb a tree?

Simp. But that in all my life, when I was a youth.

Wife. Too true; and bought his climbing very dear. 100

Glo. Mass, thou lov'dst plums well, that wouldst venture so.

Simp. Alas! master, my wife desir'd some damsons,
And made me climb with danger of my life.

Glo. A subtle knave! but yet it shall not serve.

Let me see thine eyes: wink now: now open them:

In my opinion yet thou seest not well.

Simp. Yes, master, clear as day; I thank God and Saint Alban.

Glo. Sayst thou me so? What colour is this cloak of?

Simp. Red, master; red as blood.
SECOND PART OF KING HENRY THE SIXTH  Act II, Sc. I.

Glo. Why, that's well said. What colour is my gown of?
Simp. Black, forsooth; coal-black, as jet.
K. Hen. Why then, thou know'st what colour jet is of?
Suf. And yet, I think, jet did he never see.
Glo. But cloaks and gowns before this day a many.
Wife. Never, before this day, in all his life.
Glo. Tell me, sirrah, what's my name?
Simp. Alas! master, I know not.
Glo. What's his name?
Simp. I know not.
Glo. Nor his?
Simp. No, indeed, master.
Glo. What's thine own name?
Simp. Saunter Simpson, as if it please you, master.

Glo. Then, Saunter, sit there, the lyingest knave in Christendom. If thou hadst been born blind, thou mightst as well have known all our names as thus to name the several colours we do wear. Sight may distinguish of colours, but suddenly to nominate them all, it is impossible. My lords, Saint Alban here hath done a miracle; and would ye not think that cunning to be great, that could restore this cripple to his legs again?
Simp. O, master, that you could!
Glo. My masters of Saint Alban's, have you not beadles in your town, and things called whips?

May. Yes, my lord, if it please your Grace.
Glo. Then send for one presently.
May. Sirrah, go fetch the beadle hither straight. [Exit an Attendant.
Glo. Now fetch me a stool hither by and by.
[Exit a stool brought.] Now, sirrah, if you mean to save yourself from whipping, leap me over this stool and run away.
Simp. Alas! master, I am not able to stand alone:
You go about to torture me in vain.

Re-enter Attendant, and a Beadle with a whip.
Glo. Well, sir, we must have you find your legs. Sirrah, beadle, whip him till he leap over that same stool.

Bead. I will, my lord. Come on, sirrah; off with your doublet quickly.
Simp. Alas! master, what shall I do? I am not able to stand.

[After the Beadle hath hit him once, he leaps over the stool, and runs away; and the people follow and cry, 'A miracle!'

K. Hen. O God! seest thou this, and bear'st so long?

Q. Mar. It made me laugh to see the villain run.
Glo. Follow the knave; and take this drab away.
Wife. Alas! sir, we did it for pure need.
Glo. Let them be whipp'd through every market town
Till they come to Berwick, from whence they came. [Exeunt Mayor, Beadle, Wife, &c.
Car. Duke Humphrey has done a miracle to-day.
Suf. True; made the lame to leap and fly away.
Glo. But you have done more miracles than I; You made in a day, my lord, whole towns to fly.

Enter BUCKINGHAM.

K. Hen. What tidings with our cousin Buckingham?

Buck. Such as my heart doth tremble to unfold.

A sort of naughty persons, lewdly bent,
Under the countenance and confederacy
Of Lady Eleanor, the protector's wife,
The ringleader and head of all this rout,
Have practis'd dangerously against your state,
Dealing with witches and with conjurers:
Whom we have apprehended in the fact;
Raising up wicked spirits from under-ground,
Demanding of King Henry's life and death,
And other of your highness' privy council,
As more at large your Grace shall understand.

Car. And so, my Lord Protector, by this means
Your lady is forthcoming yet at London.
This news, I think, hath turn'd your weapon's edge;
'Tis like, my lord, you will not keep your hour.
Glo. Ambitious churchman, leave to afflict my heart:
Sorrow and grief have vanquish'd all my powers;
And, vanquish'd as I am, I yield to thee,
Or to the meanest grooms.

K. Hen. O God! what mischiefs work the wicked ones,
Heaping confusion on their own heads thereby.

Q. Mar. Gloucester, see here the tainture of thy nest;
And look thyself be faultless, thou wert best.
Glo. Madam, for myself, to heaven I do appeal,
How I have lov'd my king and commonwealth;
And, for my wife, I know not how it stands.
Sorry I am to hear what I have heard:
Noble she is, but if she have forgot
Honour and virtue, and convers'd with such
As, like to pitch, defile nobility,
I banish her my bed and company,
And give her, as a prey, to law and shame.

That hath dishonour'd Gloucester's honest name.
K. Hen. Well, for this night we will repose us here:
To-morrow toward London back again,
To look into this business thoroughly, 200
And call these foul offenders to their answers;
And poise the cause in justice’ equal scales,
Whose beam stands sure, whose rightful cause prevails.
[FLOURISH. EXEUNT.]


Enter York, Salisbury, and Warwick.
York. Now, my good Lords of Salisbury and Warwick,
Our simple supper ended, give me leave,
In this close walk to satisfy myself,
In craving your opinion of my title,
Which is infallible to England’s crown.
Sal. My lord, I long to hear it at full.
War. Sweet York, begin; and if thy claim be good,
The Nevils are thy subjects to command.

York. Then thus:
Edward the Third, my lords, had seven sons:
The first, Edward the Black Prince, Prince of Wales;
The second, William of Hatfield; and the third,
Lionel, Duke of Clarence; next to whom 13
Was John of Gaunt, the Duke of Lancaster;
The fifth was Edmund Langley, Duke of York;
The sixth was Thomas of Woodstock, Duke of Gloucester; 16
William of Windsor was the seventh and last.
Edward the Black Prince died before his father,
And left behind him Richard, his only son,
Who after Edward the Third’s death, reign’d as king;
Till Henry Bolingbroke, Duke of Lancaster,
The eldest son and heir of John of Gaunt,
Crown’d by the name of Henry the Fourth,
Seiz’d on the realm, depos’d the rightful king, 24
Sent his poor queen to France, from whence she came,
And him to Pompfret; where as all you know,
Harmless Richard was murder’d traitorously.
War. Father, the duke hath told the truth;
Thus got the house of Lancaster the crown. 29
York. Which now they hold by force and not by right;
For Richard, the first son’s heir, being dead,
The issue of the next son should have reign’d. 32
Sal. But William of Hatfield died without an heir.
York. The third son, Duke of Clarence, from whose line
I claim the crown, had issue, Philippe a daughter,
Who married Edmund Mortimer, Earl of March:
Edmund had issue Roger, Earl of March: 37
Roger had issue Edmund, Anne, and Eleanor.
Sal. This Edmund, in the reign of Bolingbroke,
As I have read, laid claim unto the crown; 40
And but for Owen Glendower, had been king,
Who kept him in captivity till he died.
But, to the rest.
York. His eldest sister, Anne,
My mother, being heir unto the crown, 44
Married Richard, Earl of Cambridge, who was son
To Edmund Langley, Edward the Third’s fifth son.
By her I claim the kingdom: she was heir
To Roger, Earl of March; who was the son 48
Of Edmund Mortimer; who married Philippe,
Sole daughter unto Lionel, Duke of Clarence:
So, if the issue of the eldest son
Succeed before the younger, I am king. 52
War. What plain proceeding is more plain than this?
Henry doth claim the crown from John of Gaunt,
The fourth son; York claims it from the third.
Till Lionel’s issue fails, his should not reign: 56
It fails not yet, but flourishes in thee,
And in thy sons, fair slips of such a stock.
Then, father Salisbury, kneel we together,
And in this private plot be we the first 60
That shall salute our rightful sovereign
With honour of his birthright to the crown.
Both. Long live our sovereign Richard, England’s king!
York. We thank you, lords! But I am not your king.
Till I be crown’d, and that my sword be stain’d
With heart-blood of the house of Lancaster;
And that’s not suddenly to be perform’d,
But with advice and silent secrecy. 68
Do you as I do in these dangerous days,
Wink at the Duke of Suffolk’s insolence,
At Beaufort’s pride, at Somerset’s ambition,
At Buckingham and all the crew of them, 72
Till they have snar’d the shepherd of the flock,
That virtuous prince, the good Duke Humphrey:
’Tis that they seek; and they, in seeking that
Shall find their deaths, if York can prophesy. 76
Sal. My lord, break we off; we know your mind at full.
War. My heart assures me that the Earl of Warwick
Shall one day make the Duke of York a king.
York. And, Nevil, this I do assure myself. 80
Richard shall live to make the Earl of Warwick 
The greatest man in England but the king. 

[Exeunt.

SCENE III.—The Same. A Hall of Justice.

Trumpets sounded. Enter KING HENRY, 
QUEEN MARGARET, GLOUCESTER, YORK, 
SUFFOLK, and SALISBURY; the DUCHESS OF 
GLOUCESTER, MARGERY JORDAIN, SOUTH- 
WELL, HUME, and BOLINGBROKE, under 
guard.

K. Hen. Stand forth, Dame Eleanor Cob- 
ham, Gloucester's wife.

In sight of God and us, your guilt is great: 
Receive the sentence of the law for sins 
Such as by God's book are adjudged to death. 4 
You four, from hence to prison back again; 
From thence, unto the place of execution: 
The witch in Smithfield shall be burn'd to ashes, 
And you three shall be strangled on the gallows. 
You, madam, for you are more nobly born, 9 
Despoiled of your honour in your life, 
Shall, after three days' open penance done, 
Live in your country here, in banishment, 12 
With Sir John Stanley, in the Isle of Man.

Duch. Welcome is banishment; welcome 
were my death.

Glo. Eleanor, the law, thou seest, hath 
judged thee:

I cannot justify whom the law condemns. — 16 

[Exeunt the DUCHESS, and the other 
Prisoners, guarded.

Mine eyes are full of tears, my heart of grief. 
Ah, Humphrey! this dishonour in thine age 
Will bring thy head with sorrow to the ground. 
I beseech your majesty, give me leave to go; 20 
Sorrow would solve and mine age would ease.

K. Hen. Stay, Humphrey, Duke of Gloucester: 
ere thou go,

Give up thy staff: Henry will to himself 
Protector be; and God shall be my hope, 24 
My stay, my guide, and, on my feet. 
And go in peace, Humphrey; no less belov'd 
Than when thou wert protector to thy king: 28

Q. Mar. I see no reason why a king of years 
Should be to be protected like a child.

God and King Henry govern England's helm! 
Give up your staff, sir, and the king his realm.

Glo. My staff! here, noble Henry, is my 
staff:

As willingly do I the same reign 
As e'er thy father Henry made it mine; 32 
And even as willingly at thy feet I leave it 
As others would ambitiously receive it.

Farewell, good king! when I am dead and gone, 
May honourable peace attend thy throne. 

[Exit.

Q. Mar. Why, now is Henry king, and Marg- 
garet queen; 
And Humphrey, Duke of Gloucester, scarce 
himself, 40 
That bears so shrewd a maim: two pulls at 
one; 
His lady banish'd, and a limb lopp'd off; 
This staff of honour raught: there let it stand, 
Where it best fits to be, in Henry's hand. 44 
Suf. Thus droops this lofty pine and hangs 
his sprays; 
Thus Eleanor's pride dies in her youngest 
days.

York. Lords, let him go. Please it your 
majesty 
This is the day appointed for the combat; 48 
And ready are the appellant and defendant, 
The armourer and his man, to enter the lists, 
So please your highness to behold the fight.

Q. Mar. Ay, good my lord; for purposely 
therefore 52 
Left I the court, to see this quarrel tried.

K. Hen. O' God's name, see the lists and all 
things fit: 
Here let them end it; and God defend the 
right!

York. I never saw a fellow worse bested, 56 
Or more afraid to fight, than is the appellant, 
The servant of this armourer, my lords.

Enter, on one side, HORNER, and his Neigh-
bours drinking to him so much that he is 
drunk; and he enters bearing his staff with a 
sand-bag fastened to it; a drum before 
him: on the other side, PETER, with a drum 
and a sand-bag; and Prentices drinking to 
him.

First Neigh. Here, neighbour Horner, I drink to 
you in a cup of sack: and fear not, neigh-
bour, you shall do well enough. 61 
Sec. Neigh. And here, neighbour, here's a 
cup of charneco.

Third Neigh. And here's a pot of good 
double beer, neighbour: drink, and fear not 
your man.

Hor. Let it come, 't faith, and I'll pledge you 
all; and a fig for Peter! 65 
First Prun. Here, Peter, I drink to thee; and 
be not afraid.

Sec. Prun. Be merry, Peter, and fear not thy 
master: fight for credit of the prentices. 72 
Peter. I thank you all: drink, and pray for 
me, I pray you; for, I think, I have taken my
last draught in this world. Here, Robin, an if I
die, I give thee my apron: and, Will, thou shalt
have my hammer: and here, Tom, take all the
money that I have. O Lord bless me! I pray
God, for I am never able to deal with my master,
heth learnt so much sense already. 80
Sal. Come, leave your drinking and fall to
blows. Surrab, what's thy name?
Peter. Peter, forsooth.
Sal. Peter! what more? 84
Peter. Thump.
Sal. Thump! then see thou thump thy mas-
ter well.
Hor. Masters, I am come hither, as it were,
upon my man's instigation, to prove him a
knife, and myself an honest man: and touch-
ing the Duke of York, I will take my death
I never meant him any ill, nor the king, nor the
queen; and therefore, Peter, have at thee with
a downright blow! 94
York. Dispatch: this knife's tongue begins
to double.
Sound, trumpets, alarum to the combatants.
[Alarum. They fight, and Peter strikes
down his Master.
Hor. Hold, Peter, hold! I confess, I confess treason.
York. Take away his weapon. Fellow, thank
God, and the good wine in thy master's way. 100
Peter. O God! have I overcome mine enemies
in this presence? O Peter! thou hast prevailed
in right!
K. Hen. Go, take hence that traitor from
our sight;
For by his death we do perceive his guilt:
And God in justice hath reveal'd to us
The truth and innocence of this poor fellow,
Which he had thought to have murder'd wrong-
fully.
Come, fellow, follow us for thy reward.
[Sound a flourish. Exeunt.

SCENE IV.—The Same. A Street.

Enter Gloucester and Serving-men, in
mourning cloaks.

Glo. Thus sometimes hath the brightest day
a cloud;
And after summer evermore succeeds
Barren winter, with his w rathful nipping cold:
So cares and joys abound, as seasons fleet.
Sirs, what's o'clock?
Serv. Ten, my lord.
Glo. Ten is the hour that was appointed me
To watch the coming of my punish'd duchess:
Uneath may she endure the flinty streets,
To tread them with her tender-feeling feet.

Sweet Nell, ill can thy noble mind abrook
The abject people, gazing on thy face
With envious looks still laughing at thy shame,
That erst did follow thy proud chariot wheels 13
When thou didst ride in triumph through the
streets.
But, soft! I think she comes; and I'll prepare
My tear-stain'd eyes to see her miseries. 16
Enter the Duchess of Gloucester, with
papers pinned upon her back, in a white sheed, her
feet bare, and a taper burning in
her hand; Sir John Stanley, a Sheriff,
and Officers.
Serv. So please your Grace, we'll take her
from the sheriff.
Glo. No, stir not, for your lives; let her pass by.
Duch. Come you, my lord, to see my open
shame?
Now thou dost penance too. Look! how they
gaze.
See! how the giddy multitude do point,
And nod their heads, and throw their eyes on
thee.
Ah, Gloucester, hide thee from their hateful
looks,
And, in thy closet pent up, rue my shame, 24
And ban thine enemies, both mine and thine!
Glo. Be patient, gentle Nell; forget this grief.
Duch. Ay, Gloucester, teach me to forget
myself;
For whilst I think I am thy wedded wife, 28
And thou a prince, protector of this land,
Methinks I should not thus be led along,
Mail'd up in shame, with papers on my back,
And follow'd with a rabble that rejoice 32
To see my tears and hear my deep-fet groans.
The ruthless flint doth cut my tender feet,
And when I start, the envious people laugh,
And bid me be advised how I tread. 36
Ah, Humphrey! can I bear this shameful yoke?
Trow'st thou that e'er I'll look upon the world,
Or count them happy that enjoy the sun?
No; dark shall be my light, and night my day;
To think upon my pomp shall be my hell. 41
Sometime I'll say, I am Duke Humphrey's
wife;
And he a prince and ruler of the land:
Yet so he rul'd and such a prince he was 44
As he stood by whilst I, his forlorn duchess,
Was made a wonder and a pointing-stick
To every idle rascal follower.
But be thou mild and blush not at my shame;
Nor stir at nothing till the axe of death 49
Hang over thee, as, sure, it shortly will;
For Suffolk, he that can do all in all
With her that hateth thee, and hates us all, 52

624
SECOND PART OF KING HENRY THE SIXTH  Act III, Sc. 1.

And York, and impious Beaufort, that false priest,
Have all lim'd bushes to betray thy wings;
And, fly thou how thou canst, they'll tangle thee:
But fear not thou, until thy foot be snar'd,
Nor never seek prevention of thy foes.
Glo. Ah, Nell! forbear: thou artest all awry;
I must offend before I be attainted;
And had I twenty times so many foes,
And each of them had twenty times their power,
All these could not procure me any scath,
So long as I am loyal, true, and crimeless.
Wouldst have me rescue thee from this reproach?
Why, yet thy scandal were not wip'd away,
But I in danger for the breach of law.
Thy greatest help is quiet, gentle Nell:
I pray thee, sort thy heart to patience;
These few days' wonder will be quickly worn.

Enter a Herald.

Her. I summon your Grace to his majesty's parliament, holden at Bury the first of this next month.
Glo. And my consent ne'er ask'd herein before!
This is close dealing. Well, I will be there.

[Exit Herald.

My Nell, I take my leave; and, master sheriff,
Let not her penance exceed the king's commission.
Sher. An't please your Grace, here my commission stays;
And Sir John Stanley is appointed now
To take her with him to the Isle of Man.
Glo. Must you, Sir John, protect my lady here?
Stan. So am I given in charge, may't please your Grace.
Glo. Entreat her not the worse in that I pray You use her well. The world may laugh again;
And I may live to do you kindness if
You do it her: and so, Sir John, farewell.
Duch. What! gone, my lord, and bid me not farewell!
Glo. Witness my tears, I cannot stay to speak.
[Exeunt Gloucester and Serving-men.

Duch. Art thou gone too? All comfort go with thee!
For none abides with me: my joy is death;
Death, at whose name I oft have been afeard,
Because I wish'd this world's eternity.
Stanley, I prithee, go, and take me hence;
I care not whither, for I beg no favour,
Only convey me where thou art commanded.

Stan. Why, madam, that is to the Isle of Man;
There to be us'd according to your state.
Duch. That's bad enough, for I am but reproach:
And shall I then be us'd reproachfully?
Stan. Like to a duchess, and Duke Humphrey's lady:
According to that state you shall be us'd.
Duch. Sheriff, farewell, and better than I fare.
Although thou hast been conduct of my shame.
Sher. It is my office; and, madam, pardon me.
Duch. Ay, ay, farewell; thy office is discharged.
Come, Stanley, shall we go?
Stan. Madam, your penance done, throw off this sheet,
And go we to attire you for our journey.
Duch. My shame will not be shifted with my sheet:
No; it will hang upon my richest robes,
And show itself, attire me how I can.
Go, lead the way; I long to see my prison.

[Exeunt.

ACT III.

SCENE I.—The Abbey at Bury St. Edmund's.

Sound a sennet. Enter to the Parliament, King Henry, Queen Margaret, Cardinal Beaufort, Suffolk, York, Buckingham, and Others.

K. Hen. I muse my Lord of Gloucester is not come:
'Tis not his wont to be the hindmost man,
Whate'er occasion keeps him from us now.
Q. Mar. Can you not see? or will ye not observe
The strangeness of his altered countenance?
With what a majesty he bears himself,
How insolent of late he is become,
How proud, how peremptory, and unlike himself?

We know the time since he was mild and affable,
An if we did but glance a far-off look,
Immediately he was upon his knee,
That all the court admir'd him for submission:
But meet him now, and, be it in the morn,
When everyone will give the time of day,
He knits his brow and shows an angry eye,
And passeth by with stiff unbow'd knee,
Disdaining duty that to us belongs.
Small curts are not regarded when they grin,
But great men tremble when the lion roars;
And Humphrey is no little man in England.

First note that he is near you in descent,
And should you fall, he is the next will mount.  
Me semeth then it is no policy,  
Respecting what a rancor mind he bears, 24  
And his advantage following your decease,  
That he should come about your royal person  
Or be admitted to your highness' council.  
By flattery hath he won the commons' hearts, 28  
And when he please to make commotion,  
'Tis to be fear'd they all will follow him.  
Now 'tis the spring, and weeds are shallow-rooted;  
Suffer them now and they'll o'ergrow the garden,  32  
And choke the herbs for want of husbandry.  
The reverent care I bear unto my lord  
Made me collect these dangers in the duke.  
If it be fond, call it a woman's fear; 36  
Which fear if better reasons can supplant,  
I will subscribe and say I wrong'd the duke.  
My Lord of Suffolk, Buckingham, and York,  
Reprove my allegation if you can 40  
Or else conclude my words effectual.  
Suf. Well hath your highness seen into this duke;  
And had I first been put to speak my mind,  
I think I should have told your Grace's tale. 44  
The duchess, by his subornation,  
Upon my life, began her devilish practices:  
Or if he were not privy to those faults,  
Yet, by repute of his high descent, 48  
As, next the king he was successive heir,  
And such high vaunts of his nobility,  
Did instigate the bedlam brain-sick duchess,  
By wicked means to frame our sovereign's fall. 52  
Smooth runs the water where the brook is deep,  
And in his simple show he harbores treason.  
The fox barks not when he would steal the lamb:  
No, no, my sov'reign; Gloucester is a man 56  
Unsounded yet, and full of deep deceit.  
Car. Did he not, contrary to form of law,  
Deive strange deaths for small offences done?  
York. And did he not, in his protectorship,  
Levy great sums of money through the realm  
For soldiers' pay in France, and never sent it?  
By means whereof the towns each day revolted.  
Buck. Tut! these are petty faults to faults unknown,  
Which time will bring to light in smooth Duke Humphrey.  
K. Hen. My lords, at once: the care you have of us,  
To mow down thorns that would annoy our foot,  
Is worthy praise; but shall I speak my conscience,  
Our kineman Gloucester is as innocent  
From meaning treason to our royal person,
Because I would not tax the needy commons,
Have I disbursed to the garrisons,
And never ask'd for restitution.

Car. It serves you well, my lord, to say so much.

Glo. I say no more than truth, so help me God!

York. In your protectorship you did devise
Strange tortures for offenders, never heard of,
That England was defam'd by tyranny.

Glo. Why, 'tis well known that, whiles I was protector,

Pity was all the fault that was in me;
For I should melt at an offender's tears,
And lowly words were ransom for their fault.

Unless it were a bloody murderer,
Or foul felonious thief that fleec'd poor passengers,

I never gave them condign punishment:
Murder, indeed, that bloody sin, I tortur'd
Above the felon or what trespass else.

Suf. My lord, these faults are easy, quickly answer'd:
But mightier crimes are laid unto your charge,
Whereof you cannot easily purge yourself.

I do arrest you in your highness' name;
And here commit you to my Lord Cardinal
To keep until your further time of trial.

K. Hen. My Lord of Gloucester, 'tis my special hope
That you will clear yourself from all suspect:
My conscience tells me you are innocent.

Glo. Ah! gracious lord, these days are dangerous.
Virtue is chok'd with foul ambition,
And charity chas'd hence by rancour's hand;
Foul subornation is predominant,
And equity exil'd your highness' land.
I know their complott is to have my life;
And if my death might make this island happy,
And prove the period of their tyranny,
I would expend it with all willingness;
But mine is made the prologue to their play;
For thousands more, that yet suspect no peril,
Will not conclude their plotted tragedy.

Beaufort's red sparkling eyes blab his heart's malice,
And Suffolk's cloudy brow his stormy hate;
Sharp Buckingham unburdens with his tongue
The ensuvious load that lies upon his heart;
And dogged York, that reaches at the moon,
Whose overweening arm I have pluck'd back,
By false accuse doth level at my life:

And you, my sov'reign lady, with the rest,
Causeless have laid disgraces on my head,
And with your best endeavour have stirr'd up
My liestest liege to be mine enemy.
And as the butcher takes away the calf,
And binds the wretch, and beats it when it strays,
Bearing it to the bloody slaughter-house,
Even so, remorseless, have they borne him hence;
And as the dam runs lowing up and down,
Looking the way her harmless young one went,
And can do nought but wall her darling’s loss;
Even so myself bewails good Gloucester’s case,
With sad unhelpful tears, and with dim’d eyes
Look after him, and cannot do him good;
So mighty are his vowed enemies.

His fortunes I will weep; and, ‘twixt each groan,
Say ‘Who’s a traitor, Gloucester he is none.’

Q. Mar. Fair lords, cold snow melts with the sun’s hot beams.
Henry my lord is cold in great affairs,
Too full of foolish pity; and Gloucester’s show
Beguiles him as the mournful crocodile
With sorrow sares relenting passengers;
Or as the snake, roll’d in a flow’ring bank,
With shining checker’d slough, doth sting a child.
That for the beauty thinks it excellent.
Believe me, lords, were none more wise than I,—
And yet herein I judge mine own wit good.—
This Gloucester should be quickly rid the world,
To rid us from the fear we have of him.

Car. That he should die is worthy policy;
And yet we want a colour for his death.

’Tis meet he be condemn’d by course of law.

Suf. But in my mind that were no policy:
The king will labour still to save his life;
The commons haply rise to save his life;
And yet we have but trivial argument,
More than mistrust, that shows him worthy death.

York. So that, by this, you would not have him die.

Suf. Ah! York, no man alive so fain as I.
York. ’Tis York that hath more reason for his death.

But my Lord Cardinal, and you, my Lord of Suffolk,
Say as you think, and speak it from your souls,
Were’t not all one an empty eagle were set
To guard the chicken from a hungry kite,
As place Duke Humphrey for the king’s protector?

Q. Mar. So the poor chicken should be sure of death.

Suf. Madam, ’tis true: and were’t not madness, then,
To make the fox surveyor of the fold?
Who, being accus’d a crafty murderer,
His guilt should be but idly posted over

Because his purpose is not executed.

io; let him die, in that he is a fox,
By nature prov’d an enemy to the flock,
Before his chaps be stain’d with crimson blood,
As Humphrey, prov’d by reasons, to my liege.
And do not stand on quillots how to slay him:
Be it by gins, by snares, by subtilty,
Sleeping or waking, ’tis no matter how,
So he be dead; for that is good deceit.

Which mates him first that first intends deceit.


Suf. Not resolute, except so much were done,
For things are often spoke and seldom meant;
But, that my heart accordeth with my tongue,
Seeing the deed is meritorious,
And to preserve my sovereign from his foe,
Say but the word and I will be his priest.

Car. But I would have him dead, my Lord of Suffolk,
Ere you can take due orders for a priest:
Say you consent and censure well the deed,
And I’ll provide his executioner;

Tender so the safety of my liege.

Suf. Here is my hand, the deed is worthy doing.

Q. Mar. And so say I.

York. And I: and now we three have spoke it,
It skills not greatly who impugns our doom.

Enter a Messenger.

Mess. Great lords, from Ireland am I come amain,
To signify that rebels there are up,
And put the Englishmen unto the sword.

Send succour, lords, and stop the rage betime,
Before the wound do grow uncurable;
For, being green, there is great hope of help.

Car. A breach that craves a quick expedient stop!

What counsel give you in this weighty cause?

York. That Somerset be sent as regent thither.

’Tis meet that lucky ruler be employ’d;
Witness the fortune he hath had in France.

Som. If York, with all his far-fet policy,
Had been the regent there instead of me,
He never would have stay’d in France so long.

York. No, not to lose it all, as thou hast done:

I rather would have lost my life betimes
Than bring a burden of dishonour home,
By staying there so long till all were lost.

Show me one scar character’d on thy skin:

Men’s flesh preserv’d so whole do seldom win.
Q. Mar. Nay then, this spark will prove a raging fire, If wind and fuel be brought to feed it with. No more, good York; sweet Somerset, be still: Thy fortune, York, hadst thou been regent there, Might happily have prov'd far worse than his. York. What! worse than nought? nay, then a shame take all. 

Som. And in the number thee, that wishest shame. 

Car. My Lord of York, try what your fortune is. The uncivil kerns of Ireland are in arms And temper clay with blood of Englishmen: To Ireland will you lead a band of men, Collected choicey, from each county some, And try your hap against the Irishmen? York. I will, my lord, so please his majesty. 

Suf. Why, our authority is his consent, And what we do establish he confirms: Then, noble York, take thou this task in hand. York. I am content: provide me soldiers, lords, While I take order for mine own affairs. Suf. A charge, Lord York, that I will see perform'd, But now return we to the false Duke Humphrey. Car. No more of him; for I will deal with him That henceforth he shall trouble us no more. And so break off; the day is almost spent. Lord Suffolk, you and I must talk of that event. York. My Lord of Suffolk, within fourteen days At Bristol I expect my soldiers; For there I'll ship them all for Ireland. Suf. I'll see it truly done, my Lord of York. [Exeunt all except York. York. Now, York, or never, steel thy fearful thoughts, And change miscourt to resolution: Be that thou hop' st to be, or what thou art Resign to death; it is not worth the enjoying. Let pale-fac'd fear keep with the mean-born man, And find no harbour in a royal heart. Faster than spring-time showers comes thought on thought, And not a thought but thinks on dignity. My brain, more busy than the laboured spider, Weaves tedious snare to trap mine enemies. Well, nobles, well; 'tis politicly done, To send me packing with a host of men: I fear me you but warm the starved snake, Who, cherish'd in your breasts, will sting your hearts. 'Twas men I lack'd, and you will give them me: I take it kindly; yet be well assur'd You put sharp weapons in a madman's hands. While I in Ireland nourish a mighty band, I will stir up in England some black storm Shall blow ten thousand souls to heaven or hell; And this fell tempest shall not cease to rage Until the golden circuit on my head, Like to the glorious sun's transparent beams, Do calm the fury of this mad-bred flaw. And, for a minister of my intent, I have seduc'd a headstrong Kentishman, John Cade of Ashford, To make commotion, as full well he can, Under the title of John Mortimer. In Ireland have I seen this stubborn Cade Oppose himself against a troop of kerns, And fought so long, till that his thighs with darts Were almost like a sharp-quill'd porousine: And, in the end being rescu'd, I have seen Him caper upright like a wild Morisco, Shaking the bloody darts as he his bells. Full often, like a shag-hair'd crafty kern, Hath he conversed with the enemy, And undiscover'd come to me again, And given me notice of their villanies. This devil here shall be my substitute; For that John Mortimer, which now is dead, In face, in gait, in speech, he doth resemble; By this I shall perceive the commons' mind, How they affect the house and claim of York. Say he be taken, rack'd, and tortured, I know no pain they can inflict upon him Will make him say I mov'd him to those arms. Say that he thrive,—as 'tis great like he will,— Why, then from Ireland come I with my strength, And reap the harvest which that rascal sow'd; For, Humphrey being dead, as he shall be, And Henry put apart, the next for me. [Exit]

SCENE II.—Bury St. Edmund's. A Room in the Palace.

Enter certain Murderers, hastily.

First Mur. Run to my Lord of Suffolk; let him know We have dispatch'd the duke, as he commanded. Sec. Mur. O that it were so. What have we done? Didst ever hear a man so penitent? 

Enter Suffolk.

First Mur. Here comes my lord. Suf. Now, airs, have you dispatch'd this thing? First Mur. Ay, my good lord, he's dead.
Act III, Sc. II. SECOND PART OF KING HENRY THE SIXTH

Suf. Why, that's well said. Go, get you to my house; I will reward you for this venturous deed. The king and all the peers are here at hand. Have you laid fair the bed? is all things well, According as I gave directions? 12

First Mur. 'Tis, my good lord. Suf. Away! be gone. [Exeunt Murderers.

Sound trumpets. Enter KING HENRY, QUEEN MARGARET, CARDINAL BEAUFORT, SOMERSET, LORDS, and Others.

K. Hen. Go, call our uncle to our presence straight; Say, we intend to try his Grace to-day, 16 If he be guilty, as 'tis published.

Suf. I'll call him presently, my noble lord. [Exit. Kings. Lords, take your places; and, I pray you all, Proceed no straiter 'gainst our uncle Gloucester Than from true evidence, of good esteem, 21 He be approv'd in practice culpable.

Q. Mar. God forbid any malice should prevail Th' that faultless may condemn a nobleman! 24 Pray God, he may acquit him of suspicion!

K. Hen. I thank thee, Meg; these words content me much.

Re-enter Suffolk.


Suf. Dead in his bed, my lord; Gloucester is dead.

Q. Mar. Marry, God forfend!

Car. God's secret judgment: I did dream tonight

The duke was dumb, and could not speak a word. [The King swoons.

Q. Mar. How fares my lord? Help, lords! the king is dead. 33

Som. Rear up his body; wring him by the nose.

Q. Mar. Run, go, help, help! O Henry, open thine eyes!

Suf. He doth revive again. Madam, be patient. 36

K. Hen. O heavenly God!


K. Hen. What! doth my Lord of Suffolk comfort me?

Come he right now to sing a raven's note, 40

Whose dismal tune bereft my vital powers, And thinks he that the chirping of a wren, By crying comfort from a hollow breast, Can chase away the first-conceived sound? 44

Hide not thy poison with such sugar'd words: Lay not thy hands on me; forbear, I say: Their touch affrights me as a serpent's sting. Thou baleful messenger, out of my sight! 48

Upon thy eyeballs murderous tyranny Sits in grim majesty to fright the world. Look not upon me, for thine eyes are wound ing:

Yet do not go away; come, basilisk, 52
And kill the innocent gazer with thy sight; For in the shade of death I shall find joy, In life but double death, now Gloucester's dead.

Q. Mar. Why do you rate my Lord of Suffolk thus? 56

Although the duke was enemy to him, Yet he, most Christian-like, laments his death: And for myself, foe as he was to me, Might liquid tears or heart-offending groans Or blood-consuming sighs recall his life, I would be blind with weeping, sick with groans, Look pale as primrose with blood-drinking sighs, And all to have the noble duke alive. 64

What know I how the world may deem of me? For it is known we were but hollow friends: It may be judg'd I made the duke away: So shall my name with slander's tongue be wounded, 68

And princes' courts be fill'd with my reproach. This get I by his death. Ay me, unhappy! To be a queen, and crown'd with infamy! 72

K. Hen. Ah! woe is me for Gloucester, wretched man.

Q. Mar. Be woe for me, more wretched than he is.

What! dost thou turn away and hide thy face? I am no loathsome leper; look on me. What! art thou, like the adder, waxen deaf? 76

Be poisonous too and kill thy forlorn queen. Is all thy comfort shut in Gloucester's tomb? Why, then, Dame Margaret was ne'er thy joy: Erect his statua and worship it, 80

And make my image but an alabaster sign. Was I for this nigh wrack'd upon the sea, And twice by awkward wind from England's bank

Drove back again unto my native clime? 84

What bodest this, but well forewarning wind Did seem to say, 'Seek not a scorpion's nest, Nor set no footing on this unkind shore?'

What did I then, but curs'd the gentle gusts
SECOND PART OF KING HENRY THE SIXTH  Act III, Sc. II.

And he that loos’d them forth their brazen caves;  
And bid them blow towards England’s blessed shore,  
Or turn our stern upon a dreadful rock?  
Yet Æolus would not be a murderer,  92  
But left that hateful office unto thee:  
The pretty vaulting sea refus’d to drown me,  
Knowing that thou wouldst have me drown’d on shore  
With tears as salt as sea through thy unkindness:  96  
The splitting rocks cower’d in the sinking sands,  
And would not dash me with their ragged sides,  
Because thy flinty heart, more hard than they,  
Might in thy palace perish Margaret.  100  
As far as I could ken thy chalky cliffs,  
When from thy shore the tempest beat us back,  
I stood upon the hatches in the storm,  
And when the dusky sky began to rob  104  
My earnest-gaping sight of thy land’s view,  
I took a costly jewel from my neck,  
A heart it was, bound in with diamonds,  
And threw it towards thy land: the sea receiv’d it,  108  
And so I wish’d thy body might my heart:  
And even with this I lost fair England’s view,  
And bid mine eyes be packing with my heart,  
And call’d them blind and dusky spectacles  112  
For losing ken of Albion’s wished coast.  
How often have I tempted Suffolk’s tongue—  
The agent of thy foul inconstancy  
To sit and witch me, as Ascanius did  116  
When he to maddening Dido would unfold  
His father’s acts, commen’d in burning Troy!  
Am I not witch’d like her? or thou not false like him?  
Ay me! I can no more. Die, Margaret!  120  
For Henry weeps that thou dost live so long.  

Noise within. Enter Warwick and Salisbury.  

The Commons press to the door.  

War. It is reported, mighty sovereign,  
That good Duke Humphrey trait’rously is murder’d.  
By Suffolk and the Cardinal Beaufort’s means.  
The commons, like an angry hive of bees  125  
That want their leader, scatter up and down,  
And care not who they sting in his revenge.  
Myself have call’d their spleenful mutiny,  128  
Until they hear the order of his death.  

K. Hen. That he is dead, good Warwick,  
’tis too true;  
But how he died God knows, not Henry.  
Enter his chamber, view his breathless corpse,  

And comment then upon his sudden death.  133  
War. That shall I do, my liege. Stay, Salisbury,  
With the rude multitude till I return.  

[Warwick goes into an inner chamber.  

Salisbury retires.  

K. Hen. O! Thou that judgest all things,  
My thoughts that labour to persuade my soul  
Some violent hands were laid on Humphrey’s life.  136  
If my suspect be false, forgive me, God,  
For judgment only doth belong to thee.  140  
Fain would I go to chase his paly lips  
With twenty thousand kisses, and to drain  
Upon his face an ocean of salt tears,  
To tell my love unto his deaf dumb trunk,  144  
And with my fingers feel his hand unfeeling:  
But all in vain are these mean obsequies,  
And to survey his dead and earthy image  
What were it but to make my sorrow greater?  

Re-enter Warwick and Others bearing Gloucester’s body on a bed.  

War. Come hither, gracious sovereign, view  
this body.  149  

K. Hen. That is to see how deep my grave is made;  
For with his soul fled all my worldly solace,  
For seeing him I see my life in death.  152  
War. As surely as my soul intends to live  
With that dread King that took our state upon him  
To free us from his Father’s wrathful curse,  
I do believe that violent hands were laid  156  
Upon the life of this thrice-famed duke.  
Suf. A dreadful oath, sworn with a solemn tongue!  

What instance gives Lord Warwick for his vow?  

War. See how the blood is settled in his face.  
Oft have I seen a timely-parted ghost,  161  
Of ashy semblance, meagre, pale, and bloodless,  
Being all descended to the labouring heart;  
Who, in the conflict that it holds with death,  164  
Attracts the same for aidance ‘gainst the enemy;  
Which with the heart there cools, and ne’er returneth  
To blush and beautify the cheek again.  
But see, his face is black and full of blood,  168  
His eyeballs further out than when he liv’d,  
Staring full ghastly like a strangled man;  
His hair uprear’d, his nostrils stretch’d with struggling:  
His hands abroad display’d, as one that grasp’d  
And tugg’d for life, and was by strength subdu’d.  
Look on the sheets, his hair, you see, is sticking;
His well-proportion'd beard made rough and rugged,
Like to the summer's corn by tempest lodg'd.
It cannot be but he was murder'd here;
The least of all these signs were probable.

Suf. Why, Warwick, who should do the duke
to death?

Myself and Beaufort had him in protection; And we, I hope, sir, are no murderers.

War. But both of you were vow'd Duke Humphrey's foes,
And you, forsooth, had the good duke to keep:
'Tis like you would not feast him like a friend,
And 'tis well seen he found an enemy.

Q. Mar. Then you, belike, suspect these noblemen
As guilty of Duke Humphrey's timeless death.

War. Who finds the heifer dead, and bleeding fresh,
And sees fast by a butcher with an axe,
But will suspect 'twas he that made the slaughter?

Who finds the partridge in the puttock's nest,
But may imagine how the bird was dead?
Although the kite soar with unbloodied beak?
Even so suspicious is this tragedy.

Q. Mar. Are you the butcher, Suffolk?
Where's your knife?

Is Beaufort term'd a kite? where are his talons?
Suf. I wear no knife to slaughter sleeping men;
But here's a vengeful sword, rusted with ease,
That shall be scour'd in his rancorous heart
That slanders me with murder'd crimson badge.
Say, if thou dar'st, proud Lord of Warwickshire,
That I am faulty in Duke Humphrey's death.

[Exeunt Cardinal Beaufort, Somerset, and Others.

War. What dares not Warwick, if false Suffolk dare him?

Q. Mar. He dares not calm his contumelious spirit,
Nor cease to be an arrogant controller,
Though Suffolk dare him twenty thousand times.

War. Madam, be still, with reverence may I say;
For every word you speak in his behalf
Is slander to your royal dignity.

Suf. Blunt-witted lord, ignoble in demeanour!
If ever lady wrong'd her lord so much,
Thy mother took into her blameful bed
Some stern untutor'd churl, and noble stock
Was graft with crab-tree slip; whose fruit thou art,
And never of the Nevils' noble race.

War. But that the guilt of murder bucklers thee,
And I should rob the deathsmen of his fee,
Quitting thee thereby of ten thousand shames,
And that my sov'reign's presence makes me mild,
I would, false mur'd rous coward, on thy knee
Make thee beg pardon for thy passed speech.
And say it was thy mother that thou meant'st;
That thou thyself wast born in bastardy:
And after all this fearful homage done,
Give thee thy hire, and send thy soul to hell,
Pernicious blood-sucker of sleeping men.

Suf. Thou shalt be waking while I shed thy blood,
If from this presence thou dar'st go with me.
War. Away even now, or I will drag thee hence:

Unworthy though thou art, I'll cope with thee,
And do some service to Duke Humphrey's ghost.

[Exeunt Suffolk and Warwick.

K. Hen. What stronger breastplate than a heart untainted?

Thrice is he arm'd that hath his quarrel just,
And he but naked, though lock'd up in steel,
Whose conscience with injustice is corrupted.

Q. Mar. What noise is this? [A noise within.

Re-enter Suffolk and Warwick, with their weapons drawn.

K. Hen. Why, how now, lords! your wrathful weapons drawn

Here in our presence! dare you be so bold?
Why, what tumultuous clamour have we here?

Suf. The traitorous Warwick, with the men of Bury,
Set all upon me, mighty sovereign.

Noise of a crowd within. Re-enter Salisbury.

Sal. [Speaking to those within.] Sirs, stand apart; the king shall know your mind.

Dread lord, the commons send you word by me,
Unless false Suffolk straight be done to death,
Or banished fair England's territories.

They will by violence tear him from your palace,
And torture him with grievous lingering death.

They say, by him the good Duke Humphrey died;
They say, in him they fear your highness' death;
And mere instinct of love and loyalty,
Free from a stubborn opposite intent,
As being thought to contradict your liking,

Makes them thus forward in his banishment.

They say, in care of your most royal person,
That if your highness should intend to sleep,
And charge that no man should disturb your rest

In pain of your dislike or pain of death,
Yet, notwithstanding such a strait edict,
Were there a serpent seen, with forked tongue,
That silyly glided towards your majesty,
It was but necessary you were wake'd,
Lest, being suffer'd in that harmful slumber,
The mortal worm might make the sleep eternal:
And therefore do they cry, though you forbid,
That they will guard you, when you will or no,
From such fell serpents as false Suffolk is;
With whose envenomed and fatal sting,
Your loving uncle, twenty times his worth,
They say, is shamefully bereft of life.

Commons. [Within.] An answer from the
king, my Lord of Salisbury!

Suf. 'Tis like the commons, rude unpolish'd
hinds,
Could send such message to their sovereign; 272
But you, my lord, were glad to be employ'd,
To show how quaint an orator you are
But all the honour Salisbury hath won
Is that he was the lord ambassador,
Sent from a sort of tinkers to the king.

Commons. [Within.] An answer from the
king, or we will all break in!

K. Hen. Go, Salisbury, and tell them all
from me,
I thank them for their tender loving care; 280
And had I not been cited so by them,
Yet did I purpose as they do entreat;
For, sure, my thoughts do hourly prophesy
Mischance unto my state by Suffolk's means:
And therefore, by his majesty I swear,
Whose far unworthy deputy I am,
He shall not breathe infection in this air
But three days longer, on the pain of death. 288

Q. Mar. O Henry! let me plead for gentle
Suffolk.

K. Hen. Ungentle queen, to call him gentle
Suffolk!
No more, I say; if thou dost plead for him
Thou wilt but add increase unto my wrath. 292
Had I but said, I would have kept my word,
But when I swear, it is irrevocable,
To Suffolk.] If after three days' space thou
here be'st found
On any ground that I am ruler of,
The world shall not be ransom for thy life.
Come, Warwick, come, good Warwick, go with me;
I have great matters to impart to thee.

[Exit King Henry, Warwick, Lords, &c.

Q. Mar. Mischance and sorrow go along
with you
Heart's discontent and sour affliction
Be playfellows to keep you company!
There's two of you; the devil make a third,
And threefold vengeance tend upon your steps!

Suf. Cease, gentle queen, these excrescations,
And let thy Suffolk take his heavy leave.

Q. Mar. Fie, coward woman and soft-hearted wretch!
Hast thou not spirit to curse thine enemy? 308
Suf. A plague upon them! Wherefore should
I curse them?
Would curses kill, as doth the mandrake's groan,
I would invent as bitter searching terms,
As curt, as harsh and horrible to hear,
Deliver'd strongly through my fixed teeth,
With full as many signs of deadly hate,
As lean-fac'd Envoy in her loathsome cave.
My tongue should stumble in mine earnest
words;
Mine eyes should sparkle like the beaten flint;
My hair be fix'd on end, as one distract;
Ay, every joint should seem to curse and ban:
And even now my burden'd heart would break
Should I not curse them. Poison be their drink!
Gall, worse than gall, the daintyest that they
taste!
Their sweetest shade a grove of cypress trees!
Their chieuest prospect murdering basilsks!
Their softest touch as smart as lizards' stings!
Their music frightful as the serpent's hiss,
And boding screech-owls make the concert full
All the foul terrors in dark-seated hell—
Q. Mar. Enough, sweet Suffolk; thou tor-
ment'st thyself;
And these dread curses, like the sun 'gainst glass,
Or like an over-charged gun, recoil,
And turn the force of them upon thyself. 332
Suf. You bade me ban, and will you bid me
leave?
Now, by the ground that I am banish'd from,
Well could I curse away a winter's night,
Though standing naked on a mountain top,
Where biding cold would never let grass grow;
And think it but a minute spent in sport.

Q. Mar. O! let me entreat thee, cease! Give
me thy hand,
That I may dew it with my mournful tears;
Nor let the rain of heaven wet this place,
Fo wash away my woeful monuments.
O! could this kiss be printed in thy hand,
[As he spake he kisses her hand.
That thou mightst think upon these by the seal,
Through whom a thousand sighs are breath'd
for thee.

So, get thee gone, that I may know my grief;
'Tis but surmis'd whiles thou art standing by,
As one that surfeits thinking on a want.
I will replea thee, or, be well assur'd,
Adventure to be banished myself;
And banished I am, if but from thee.
Go; speak not to me; even now be gone.
Q. Mar. Away! though parting be a fretful
corsive,
It is applied to a deathful wound. 404
To France, sweet Suffolk: let me hear from
thee;
For wheresoe'er thou art in this world's globe,
I'll have an Iris that shall find thee out.
Suf. I go.
Q. Mar. And take my heart with thee. 408
Suf. A jewel, lock'd into the woefull'st cask
That ever did contain a thing of worth.
Even as a splitted bark, so sunder we:
This way fall I to death.
Q. Mar. This way for me. 412
[Exeunt severely.

SCENE III.—London. CARDINAL BEAUFORT'S
Bedchamber.

Enter KING HENRY, SALISBURY, WARRICK,
and Others. The CARDINAL in bed; Attend-
ants with him.

K. Hen. How fares my lord? speak, Bea-
fort, to thy sovereign.
Car. If thou be'st death, I'll give thee Eng-
land's treasure,
Enough to purchase such another island,
So thou wilt let me live, and feel no pain. 4
K. Hen. Ah! what a sign it is of evil life
Where death's approach is seen so terrible.
War. Beaufort, it is thy sov'reign speaks to
thee.
Car. Bring me unto my trial when you will.

Died he not in his bed? where should he die?
Can I make men live whe'r they will or no?
Ol! torture me no more, I will confess.
Alive again? then show me where he is:
I'll give a thousand pound to look upon him.
He hath no eyes, the dust hath blinded them.
Comb down his hair; look! look! it stands up-
right,

Like lime-twigs set to catch my winged soul.

Give me some drink; and bid the apothecary
Bring the strong poison that I bought of him.

K. Hen. O thou eternal Mover of the
heavens!
Look with a gentle eye upon this wretch;
O! beat away the busy meddling fiend
That lays strong siege unto this wretch's soul,
And from his bosom purge this black despair.
War. See how the pangs of death do make
him grin!
Sal. Disturb him not! let him pass peace-
ably.

K. Hen. Peace to his soul, if God's good
pleasure bel
SECOND PART OF KING HENRY THE SIXTH  Act IV, Sc. I.

Lord Cardinal, if thou think'st on heaven's bliss,
Hold up thy hand, make signal of thy hope. 28
He dies, and makes no sign. O God, forgive him!
War. So bad a death argues a monstrous life.
K. Hen. Forbear to judge, for we are sinners all.
Close up his eyes, and draw the curtain close; 32
And let us all to meditation. [Exeunt.

ACT IV.

SCENE I.—Kent. The Seashore near Dover.

Firing heard at Sea. Then enter from a boat,
a Captain, a Master, a Master's-Mate,
WALTER WHITMORE, and Others; with them
SUFFOLK disguised, and other Gentlemen,
prisoners.

Cap. The gaudy, babbling, and remorseful
day
Is crept into the bosom of the sea,
And now loud-howling wolves arouse the jades
That drag the tragic melancholy night; 4
Who with their drowsy, slow, and flagging wings
Clip dead men's graves, and from their misty jaws
Breathe foul contagious darkness in the air.
Therefore bring forth the soldiers of our prize, 8
For, whilst our pinnace anchors in the Downs
Here shall they make their ransom on the sand,
Or with their blood stain this discolour'd shore.
Master, this prisoner freely give I thee: 12
And thou that art his mate make boot of this;
The other [Pointing to SUFFOLK], Walter
Whitmore, is thy share.

First Gent. What is my ransom, master?
let me know.

Mast. A thousand crowns, or else lay down your head. 16

Male. And so much shall you give, or else go yours.

Cap. What think you much to pay two thousand crowns,
And bear the name and port of gentlemen?
Cut both the villains' throats! for die you shall:
The lives of those which we have lost in fight 21
Cannot be counterpois'd with such a petty sum!
First Gent. I'll give it, sir; and therefore spare my life.

Sec. Gent. And so will I, and write home for it straight.

Whit. I lost mine eye in laying the prize aboard,
[To SUFFOLK.] And therefore to revenge it shalt thou die;
And so should these if I might have my will.

Cap. Be not so rash: take ransom; let him live.

Suf. Look on my George; I am a gentleman:
Rate me at what thou wilt, thou shalt be paid.
Whit. And so am I; my name is Walter
Whitmore.

How now! why start'st thou? what! doth death affright? 32

Suf. Thy name affrights me, in whose sound is death.

A cunning man did calculate my birth,
And told me that by Water I should die:
Yet let not this make thee be bloody-minded; 36
Thy name is—Gaultier, being rightly sounded.
Whit. Gaultier, or Walter, which it is I care not;
Never yet did base dishonour blur our name
But with our sword we wip'd away the blot: 40
Therefore, when merchant-like I sell revenge,
Broke be my sword, my arms torn and defac'd,
And I proclaim'd a coward through the world!
[Ends hold on SUFFOLK.

Suf. Stay, Whitmore; for thy prisoner is a prince, 44

The Duke of Suffolk, William de la Pole.

Whit. The Duke of Suffolk muffled up in rags!
Suf. Ay, but these rags are no part of the duke:
Jove sometimes went disguis'd, and why not I?
Cap. But Jove was never slain, as thou shalt be.

Suf. Obscure and lowly swain, King Henry's blood,
The honourable blood of Lancaster,
Must not be shed by such a jaded groom. 52
Hast thou not kissed thy hand and held my stirrup?

Bare-headed plodding by my foot-cloth mule,
And thought thee happy when I shook my head?
How often hast thou waited at my cup, 56
Fed from my treacherous knee'ld down at the board,
When I have feasted with Queen Margaret?
Remember it and let it make thee crest-fall'n;
Ay, and al'ry thy abortive pride. 60
How in our voiding lobby hast thou stood
And duly waited for my coming forth?

This hand of mine hath writ in thy behalf,
And therefore shall it charm thy riotous tongue.

Whit. Speak, captain, shall I stab the forlorn swain?

Cap. First let my words stab him, as he hath me.

Suf. Base slave, thy words are blunt, and so art thou.

Cap. Convey him hence, and on our long-boat's side

Strike off his head.

635
ACT IV, Sc. I. SECOND PART OF KING HENRY THE SIXTH

Suf. Thou dar'st not for thy own.
Cap. Yes, Pole.
Suf. Pole!
Cap. Pool! Sir Pool! lord!
Ay, kennel, puddle, sink; whose filth and dirt
Troubles the silver spring where England drinks.
Now will I dam up this thy yawning mouth;
For swallowing the treasure of the realm:
Thy lips, that kiss'd the queen, shall sweep the ground;
And thou, that smil'dst at good Duke Humphrey's death,
Against the senseless winds shall grin in vain,
Who in contempt shall hiss at thee again:
And wedded be thou to the hags of hell,
For daring to affy a mighty lord
Unto the daughter of a worthless king,
Having neither subject, wealth, nor diadem.
By devilish policy art thou grown great,
And, like ambitious Sylla, overgorg'd
With goblets of thy mother's bleeding heart.
By thee Anjou and Maine were sold to France,
The false revolted Normans thorough thee
Disdain to call us lord, and Picardy
Hath slain their governors, surpris'd our forts,
And sent the ragged soldiers wounded home.
The princely Warwick, and the Nevils all,
Whose dreadful swords were never drawn in vain,
As hating thee, are rising up in arms:
And now the house of York, thrust from the crown
By shameful murder of a guiltless king,
And lofty proud encroaching tyranny,
Burns with revenging fire; whose hopeful colours
Advance our half-fac'd sun, striving to shine,
Under the which is writ Invitis nubibus.
The commons here in Kent are up in arms;
And to conclude, reproach and beggary
Is crept into the palace of our king,
And all by thee. Away! convey him hence.
Suf. O! that I were a god, to shoot forth thunder
Upon these paltry, servile, abject drudges.
Small things make base men proud: this villain here,
Being captain of a pinnace, threatens more
Than Bargulus the strong Illyrian pirate.
Drones suck not eagles' blood, but rob beehives.
It is impossible that I should die
By such a lowly vassal as thyself.
Thy words move rage, and not remorse in me:
I go of message from the queen to France; I charge thee, waft me safely cross the Channel.
Cap. Walter!

Whit. Come, Suffolk, I must waft thee to thy death.
Whit. Thou shalt have cause to fear before I leave thee.
What! are ye daunted now? now will ye stop?
First Gent. My gracious lord, entreat him, speak him fair.
Suf. Suffolk's imperial tongue is stern and rough,
Us'd to command, untaught to plead for favour.
Far be it we should honour such as these
With humble suit: no, rather let my head
Stoop to the block than these knees bow to any
Save to the God of heaven, and to my king;
And sooner dance upon a bloody pole
Than stand uncover'd to the vulgar groom.
True nobility is exempt from fear:
More can I bear than you dare execute.
Cap. Hale him away, and let him talk no more.
Suf. Come, soldiers, show what cruelty ye can,
That this my death may never be forgot.
Great men oft die by vile bezonians.
A Roman sworder and banditto slave
Murder'd sweet Tully; Brutus' bastard hand
Stabb'd Julius Caesar; savage islanders
Pompey the Great; and Suffolk dies by pirates.
[Exit with Suffolk, Whitmore and Others.
Cap. And as for these whose ransom we have set,
It is our pleasure one of them depart:
Therefore come you with us and let him go.

[Execut all but first Gentleman.

Re-enter Whitmore, with Suffolk's body.
Whit. There let his head and lifeless body lie,
Until the queen his mistress bury it.
[Exit.
First Gent. O barbarous and bloody spectacle!
His body will I bear unto the king:
If he revenge it, yet, will his friends;
So will the queen, that living held him dear.

[Exit with the body.

SCENE II.—Blackheath.

Enter George Bevis and John Holland.
Geo. Come, and get thee a sword, though made of a lath: they have been up these two days.
John. They have the more need to sleep now then.
Geo. I tell thee, Jack Cade the clothier means to dress the commonwealth, and turn it, and set a new nap upon it.

636
SECOND PART OF KING HENRY THE SIXTH  Act IV, Sc. II.

John. So he had need, for 'tis threadbare. Well, I say it was never merry world in England since gentlemen came up.

Geo. O miserable age! Virtue is not regarded in handicrafts-men.

John. The nobility think scorn to go in leather aprons.

Geo. Nay, more; the king's council are no good workmen.

John. True; and yet it is said, 'Labour in thy vocation:' which is as much to say as, let the magistrates be labouring men; and therefore should we be magistrates.

Geo. Thou hast hit it; for there's no better sign of a brave mind than a bard hand.

John. I see them! I see them! There's Best's son, the tanner of Wingham,—

Geo. He shall have the skins of our enemies to make dog's-leather of.

John. And Dick the butcher,—

Geo. Then is sin struck down like an ox, and iniquity's throat cut like a calf.

John. And Smith the weaver,—

Geo. Argo, their thread of life is spun.

John. Come, come, let's fall in with them.

Drum. Enter Cade, Dick the Butcher, Smith the Weaver, and a Sawyer, with infinite numbers.

Cade. We John Cade, so termed of our supposed father,—

Dick. [Aside.] Or rather, of stealing a cado of herrings.

Cade. For our enemies shall fall before us, inspired with the spirit of putting down kings and princes,—Command silence.

Dick. Silence!

Cade. My father was a Mortimer.—

Dick. [Aside.] He was an honest man, and a good bricklayer.

Cade. My mother a Plantagenet,—

Dick. [Aside.] I knew her well; she was a midwife.

Cade. My wife descended of the Lacies,—

Dick. [Aside.] She was, indeed, a pedlar's daughter, and sold many laces.

Smith. [Aside.] But now of late, not able to travel with her furred pack, she washes bucks here at home.

Cade. Therefore am I of an honourable house.

Dick. [Aside.] Ay, by my faith, the field is honourable; and there was he born, under a hedge; for his father had never a house but the cage.

Cade. Valiant I am.

Smith. [Aside.] A' must needs, for beggary is valiant.

Cade. I am able to endure much.

Dick. [Aside.] No question of that, for I have seen him whipped three market-days together.

Cade. I fear neither sword nor fire.

Smith. [Aside.] He need not fear the sword, for his coat is of proof.

Dick. [Aside.] But methinks he should stand in fear of fire, being burnt 't的手 for stealing of sheep.

Cade. Be brave, then; for your captain is brave, and vows reformation. There shall be in England seven halfpenny loaves sold for a penny; the three-hooped pot shall have ten hoops; and I will make it felony to drink small beer. All the realm shall be in common, and in Cheapside shall my palfrey go to grass. And when I am king,—as king I will be,—

All. God save your majesty!

Cade. I thank you, good people: there shall be no money; all shall eat and drink on my score, and I will apparel them all in one livery, that they may agree like brothers, and worship me their lord.

Dick. The first thing we do, let's kill all the lawyers.

Cade. Nay, that I mean to do. Is not this a lamentable thing, that of the skin of an innocent lamb should be made parchment? that parchment, being scribbled o'er, should undo a man? Some say the bee stings; but I say, 'tis the bee's wax, for I did but steal once to a thing, and I was never mine own man since. How now! who's there?

Enter some, bringing in the Clerk of Chatham.

Smith. The clerk of Chatham: he can write and read and cast account.

Cade. O monstrous!

Smith. We took him setting of boys' copies.

Cade. Here's a villain!

Smith. Has a hook in his pocket with red letters in't.

Cade. Nay, then he is a conjurer.

Dick. Nay, he can make obligations, and write court-hand.

Cade. I am sorry for't: the man is a proper man, of mine honour; unless I find him guilty, he shall not die. Come hither, sirrah, I must examine thee. What is thy name?

Clerk. Emmanuel.

Dick. They use to write it on the top of letters. 'Twill go hard with you.

Cade. Let me alone. Dost thou use to write thy name, or hast thou a mark to thyself, like an honest plain-dealing man?

Clerk. Sir, I thank God, I have been so well brought up, that I can write my name.
All. He hath confessed: away with him! he's
a villain and a traitor.

Cade. Away with him! I say: hang him with
his pen and ink-horn about his neck. [Exeunt some with the Clerk.

Enter Michael.

Mich. Where's our general?

Cade. Here I am, thou particular fellow.

Mich. Fly, fly, fly! Sir Humphrey Stafford
and his brother are hard by, with the king's
forces.

Cade. Stand, villain, stand, or I'll fell thee
down. He shall be encountered with a man as
good as himself: he is but a knight, is he?

Mich. No.

Cade. To equal him, I will make myself a
knight presently. [Kneels.] Rise up Sir John
Mortimer. [Rises.] Now have at him.

Enter Sir Humphrey Stafford and William
his Brother, with drum and Forces.

Staf. Rebellious hinds, the fifth and scum of
Kent,
Mark'd for the gallows, lay your weapons
down;
Home to your cottages, forsake this gromm: 136
The king is merciful, if you revolt.

W. Staf. But angry, wrathful, and inclin'd
to blood,
If you go forward: therefore yield, or die.

Cade. As for these silken-coated slaves, I
pass not:
It is to you, good people, that I speak,
O'er whom, in time to come I hope to reign;
For I am rightful heir unto the crown.

Staf. Villain! thy father was a plasterer;
And thou thyself a shearer, art thou not? 145

Cade. And Adam was a gardener.

W. Staf. And what of that?

Cade. Marry, this: Edmund Mortimer, Earl
of March,
Married the Duke of Clarence's daughter, did
he not?

Staf. Ay, sir.

Cade. By her he had two children at one
birth.

W. Staf. That's false.

Cade. Ay, there's the question; but I say,
'tis true:
The elder of them, being put to nurse,
Was by a beggar-woman stole away;
And, ignorant of his birth and parentage, 156
Became a bricklayer when he came to age:
His son am I; deny it if you can.

Dick. Nay, 'tis too true; therefore he shall be
king.

Smith. Sir, he made a chimney in my father's
house, and the bricks are alive at this day to
testify it; therefore deny it not.

Staf. And will you credit this base drudge's
words,
That speaks he knows not what?

All. Ay, marry, will we; therefore get ye
gone.

W. Staf. Jack Cade, the Duke of York hath
taught you this.

Cade. [Aside.] He lies, for I invented it my-
self. Go to, sirrah; tell the king from me, that,
for his father's sake, Henry the Fifth, in whose
time boys went to span-counter for French
crowns, I am content he shall reign; but I'll be
protector over him.

Dick. And furthermore, we'll have the Lord
Say's head for selling the dukedom of Maine.

Cade. And good reason; for thereby is Eng-
land mained, and fail to go with a staff, but
that my puissance holds it up. Fellow kings, I
tell you that that Lord Say hath gelled the
commonwealth, and made it a enuch; and
more than that, he can speak French; and
therefore he is a traitor.

Staf. O gross and miserable ignorance!

Cade. Nay, answer, if you can: the French-
men are our enemies; go to then, I ask but
this, can he that speaks with the tongue of an
enemy be a good counsellor, or no?

All. No, no; and therefore we 'll have his head.

W. Staf. Well, seeing gentle words will not
prevail,
Assail them with the army of the king.

Staf. Herald, away; and throughout every
town
Proclaim them traitors that are up with Cade;
That those which fly before the battle ends 152
May, even in their wives' and children's sight,
Be hang'd up for example at their doors:
And you, that be the king's friends, follow me.

[Exeunt the two Stafford's and Forces.

Cade. And you, that love the commons,
follow me.

Now show yourselves men; 'tis for liberty.
We will not leave one lord, one gentleman:
Spare none but such as go in clouted shoon,
For they are thrifti honest men, and such 200
As would, but that they dare not take our
parts.

Dick. They are all in order, and march
toward us.

Cade. But then are we in order when we are
most out of order. Come, march! forward! 204

[Exeunt.]
SECOND PART OF KING HENRY THE SIXTH  Act IV, Sc. IV.

SCENE III.—Another Part of Blackheath.

Alarums. The two parties enter and fight, and both the Stafford's are slain.

Cade. Where's Dick, the butcher of Ashford?
Dick. Here, sir.
Cade. They fell before thee like sheep and oxen, and thou behavest thyself as if thou hadst been in thine own slaughter-house: therefore thus will I reward thee, the Lent shall be as long again as it is; and thou shalt have a licence to kill for a hundred lacking one.

Dick. I desire no more.
Cade. And, to speak truth, thou deservest no less. This monument of the victory will I bear; [Puts on Sir Humphrey Stafford's armour.] and the bodies shall be dragged at my horse's heels, till I do come to London, where we will have the Mayor's sword borne before us.

Dick. If we mean to thrive and do good, break open the gaols and let out the prisoners.
Cade. Fear not that, I warrant thee. Come; let's march towards London. [Exeunt.

SCENE IV.—London. A Room in the Palace.

Enter King Henry, reading a Supplication; the Duke of Buckingham and Lord Say with him; at a distance, Queen Margaret, mourning over Suffolk's head.

Q. Mar. Oft have I heard that grief softens the mind, and makes it fearful and degenerate; think therefore on revenge, and cease to weep. But who can cease to weep and look on this? Here may his head lie on my throbbing breast; but where's the body that I should embrace?

Duck. What answer makes your Grace to the rebels' supplication?

K. Hen. I'll send some holy bishop to entreat;
For God forbid so many simple souls should perish by the sword! And I myself, rather than bloody war shall cut them short, will parley with Jack Cade their general.

But stay, I'll read it over once again.

Q. Mar. Ah! barbarous villains! hath this lovely face Rul'd like a wandering planet over me, and could it not enforce them to relent, that were unworthy to behold the same?

K. Hen. Lord Say, Jack Cade hath sworn to have thy head.
Say. Ay, but I hope your highness shall have his.

K. Hen. How now, madam! Still lamenting and mourning for Suffolk's death?

I fear me, love, if that I had been dead, thou wou'dst not have mourn'd so much for me.

Q. Mar. No, my love; I should not mourn, but die for thee.

Enter a Messenger.

K. Hen. How now! what news? why com'st thou in such haste?
Mess. The rebels are in Southwark; fly, my lord!
Jack Cade proclaims himself Lord Mortimer, descended from the Duke of Clarence's house, and calls your Grace usurper openly, and vows to crown himself in Westminster. His army is a ragged multitude of hinds and peasants, rude and merciless; Sir Humphrey Stafford and his brother's death hath given them heart and courage to proceed.

All scholars, lawyers, courtiers, gentlemen, they call false caterpillars, and intend their death.

K. Hen. O graceless men! they know not what they do.

Buck. My gracious lord, retire to Killingworth, until a power be rais'd to put them down.

Q. Mar. Alas! were the Duke of Suffolk now alive, these Kentish rebels would be soon appeas'd.

K. Hen. Lord Say, the traitors hate thee, therefore away with us to Killingworth.

Say. So might your Grace's person be in danger.
The sight of me is odious in their eyes; and therefore in this city will I stay, and live alone as secret as I may.

Enter a second Messenger.

Sec. Mess. Jack Cade hath gotten London bridge; the citizens fly and forsake their houses; the rascal people, thirsting after prey, join with the traitor; and they jointly swear to spoil the city and your royal court.

Buck. Then linger not, my lord; away! take horse.

K. Hen. Come, Margaret; God, our hope, will succour us.

Q. Mar. My hope is gone, now Suffolk is deceas'd.

K. Hen. [To Lord Say.] Farewell, my lord: trust not the Kentish rebels.

Buck. Trust nobody, for fear you be betray'd.

Say. The trust I have is in mine innocence, and therefore am I bold and resolute. [Exeunt.

639
SCENE V.—The Same. The Tower.

Enter Lord Scales and Others, on the Walls. Then enter certain Citizens, below.

Scales. How now! is Jack Cade slain?
First Cit. No, my lord, nor likely to be slain; for they have won the bridge, killing all those that withstand them. The Lord Mayor craves aid of your honour from the Tower, to defend the city from the rebels.

Scales. Such aid as I can spare you shall command; But I am troubled here with myself; The rebels have assay’d to win the Tower. But get you to Smithfield and gather head, And thither I will send you Matthew Goffe: Fight for your king, your country, and your lives; And so, farewell, for I must hence again. [Exeunt.

SCENE VI.—London. Cannon Street.

Enter Jack Cade, and his Followers. He strikes his staff on London-stone.

Cade. Now is Mortimer lord of this city. And here, sitting upon London-stone, I charge and command that, of the city’s cost, the pissing-conduit run nothing but claret wine this first year of our reign. And now, henceforward, it shall be treason for any that calls me other than Lord Mortimer.

Enter a Soldier, running.


Smith. If this fellow be wise, he’ll never call you Jack Cade more: I think he hath a very fair warning.

Dick. My lord, there’s an army gathered together in Smithfield.

Cade. Come then, let’s go fight with them. But first, go and set London-bridge on fire, and, if you can, burn down the Tower too. Come, let’s away. [Exeunt.

SCENE VII.—The Same. Smithfield.

Alarums. Enter, on one side, Cade and his company; on the other, Citizens, and the King’s Forces, headed by Matthew Goffe. They fight; the Citizens are routed, and Matthew Goffe is slain.

Cade. So, sirs:—Now go some and pull down the Savoy; others to the inns of court: down with them all.
SECOND PART OF KING HENRY THE SIXTH  Act IV, Sc. VIII.

Dick. And work in their shirt too; as myself, for example, that am a butcher.

Say. You men of Kent,—

Dick. What say you of Kent?

Say. Nothing but this: 'tis bona terra, mala gens.

Cade. Away with him! away with him! he speaks Latin.

Say. Hear me but speak, and bear me where you will.

Kent, in the Commentaries Cesar writ,
Is term'd the civil'st place of all this isle:
Sweet is the country, because full of riches;
The people liberal, valiant, active, wealthy;
Which makes me hope you are not void of pity.
I sold not Maine, I lost not Normandy;
Yet, to recover them, would lose my life.
Justice with favour have I always done;
Prayers and tears have mov'd me, gifts could never.

When have I aught exacted at your hands,
But to maintain the king, the realm, and you?
Large gifts have I bestow'd on learned clerks,
Because my book preferr'd me to the king,
And seeing ignorance is the curse of God,
Knowledge the wing wherewith we fly to heaven,
Unless you be possess'd with devilish spirits,
You cannot but forbear to murder me:
This tongue hath parley'd unto foreign kings.

For your behalf,—

Cade. Tut! when struck'st thou one blow in the field?

Say. Great men have reaching hands; oft have I struck
Those that I never saw, and struck them dead.

Geo. O monstrous coward! what, to come behind folks!

Say. These cheeks are pale for watching for your good.

Cade. Give him a box o' the ear, and that will make 'em red again.

Say. Long sitting, to determine poor men's causes,
Hath made me full of sickness and diseases.

Cade. Ye shall have a hempen cudgel then,
and the help of hatchet.

Dick. Why dost thou quiver, man?.

Say. The palsy, and not fear, provokes me.

Cade. Nay, he nods at us; as who should say,
I'll be even with you: I'll see if his head will stand steadier on a pole, or no. Take him away and behead him.

Say. Tell me wherein have I offended most?
Have I affected wealth, or honour? speak.
Are my cheeks fill'd up with extorted gold?
Is my apparel sumptuous to behold?

Whom have I injur'd, that ye seek my death?
These hands are free from guiltless bloodshedding,
This breast from harbouring foul deceitful thoughts.

O! let me live.

Cade. [Aside.] I feel remorse in myself with his words; but I'll bridle: he shall die, an it be but for pleading so well for his life. Away with him! he has a familiar under his tongue; he speaks not o' God's name. Go, take him away, I say, and strike off his head presently; and then break into his son-in-law's house, Sir James Cromer, and strike off his head, and bring them both upon two poles hither. It shall be done.

Say. Ah, countrymen! if when you make your prayers,
God should be so obdurate as yourselves,
How would it fare with your departed souls?
And therefore yet relent, and save my life.

Cade. Away with him! and do as I command ye. [Exeunt some, with LORD SAY.] The proudest peer in the realm shall not wear a head on his shoulders, unless he pay me tribute; there shall not a maid be married, but she shall pay to me her maidenhead, ere they have it; men shall hold of me in capite; and we charge and command that their wives be as free as heart can wish or tongue can tell.

Dick. My lord, when shall we go to Cheapside and take up commodities upon our bills?

Cade. Marry, presently.

All. O1 brave!

Re-enter Rebels, with the heads of LORD SAY and his Son-in-law.

Cade. But is not this braver? Let them kiss one another, for they loved well while they were alive. Now part them again, lest they consult about the giving up of some more towns in France. Soldiers, defer the spoil of the city until night: for with these borne before us, in stead of maces, will we ride through the streets; and at every corner have them kiss. Away! [Exeunt.

SCENE VIII. — The Same. Southwark.

ALARUM. Enter CADE and all his Rabblemint.

Cade. Up Fish Street! down St. Magnus' corner! kill and knock down! throw them into Thames! [A parley sounded, then a retreat.] What noise is this I hear? Dare any be so bold to sound retreat or parley, when I command them kill?

Y
Enter Buckingham, and Old Clifford, with Forces.

Buck. Ay, here they be that dare and will disturb thee.

Know, Cade, we come ambassadors from the king
Unto the commons whom thou hast misled;
And here pronounce free pardon to them all
That will forsake thee and go home in peace.

Clif. What say ye, countrymen? will ye relent,
And yield to mercy, whilst 'tis offer’d you,
Or let a rebel lead you to your deaths?
Who loves the king, and will embrace his pardon,
Fling up his cap, and say 'God save his majesty!'

Who haileth him, and honours not his father,
Henry the Fifth, that made all France to quake,
Shake he his weapon at us, and pass by.

All. God save the king! God save the king!

Cade. What! Buckingham and Clifford, are ye so brave? And you, base peasants, do ye believe him? Will you needs be hanged with your pardons about your necks? Hath my sword therefore broke through London Gates, that you should leave me at the White Hart in Southwark? I thought ye would never have given out these arms till you had recovered your ancient freedom; but you are all recreants and dastards, and delight to live in slavery to the nobility. Let them break your backs with burdens, take your houses over your heads, ravish your wives and daughters before your faces: for me, I will make shift for one, and so, God’s curse light upon you all!

All. We’ll follow Cade, we’ll follow Cade! 36

Clif. Is Cade the son of Henry the Fifth, That thus you do exclaim you’ll go with him? Will he conduct you through the heart of France, And make the meanest of you earls and dukes? Alas! he hath no home, no place to fly to; 41 Nor knows he how to live but by the spoil, Unless by robbing of your friends and us. Were’t not a shame, that whilst you live at jar, The fearful French, whom you late vanquished, Should make a start o’er seas and vanquish you?

Methinks already in this civil broil
I see them lording it in London streets,
Crying Villain! unto all they meet.
Better ten thousand base-born Cades miscarry,
Than you should stoop unto a Frenchman’s mercy.

To France, to France! and get what you have lost;

Spare England, for it is your native coast.
Henry hath money, you are strong and manly;
God on our side, doubt not of victory.

All. A Clifford! a Clifford! we’ll follow the king and Clifford. 57

Cade. [Aside.] Was ever feather so lightly blown to and fro as this multitude? The name of Henry the Fifth hales them to a hundred muschies, and makes them leave me desolate. I see them lay their heads together to surprise me. My sword make way for me, for here is no staying. In despite of the devils and hell, have through the very middest of you! and heavens and honour be witness, that no want of resolution in me, but only my followers’ base and ignomiuous treasons, makes me betake me to my heels. 62

[Exit.

Buck. What, is he fled? go some, and follow him;
And he that brings his head unto the king
Shall have a thousand crowns for his reward.

[Exeunt some of them. Follow me, soldiers: we’ll devise a mean 72
To reconcile you all unto the king. [Exeunt.

SCENE IX.—Kenilworth Castle.

Trumpets sounded. Enter King Henry, Queen Margaret, and Somerset, on the terrace.

K. Hen. Was ever king that joy’d an earthly throne,
And could command no more content than I?
No sooner was I crept out of my cradle
But I was made a king at nine months old: 4
Was never subject long’d to be a king
As I do long and wish to be a subject.

Enter Buckingham and Old Clifford.

Buck. Health, and glad tidings, to your majesty!

K. Hen. Why, Buckingham, is the traitor Cade surpris’d? 8

Or is he but retir’d to make him strong?

Enter, below, a number of Cade’s followers,
with halters about their necks.

Clif. He’s fled, my lord, and all his powers do yield;
And humbly thus, with halters on their necks,
Expect your highness’ doom, of life, or death. 12

K. Hen. Then, heaven, set ope thy everlasting gates,
To entertain my vows of thanks and praise!
Soldiers, this day have you redeem’d your lives,
And show’d how well you love your prince and country: 16
SECOND PART OF KING HENRY THE SIXTH  Act IV, Sc. X.

Continue still in this so good a mind,
And Henry, though he be unfortunate,
Assure yourselves, will never be unkind;
And so, with thanks and pardon to you all, 10
I do dismiss you to your several countries.
All. God save the king! God save the king!

Enter a Messenger.

Mess. Please it your Grace to be advertised,
The Duke of York is newly come from Ireland;
And with a puissant and a mighty power 25
Of Gallowglasses, and stout kerns,
Is marching hitherward in proud array;
And still proclaimeth, as he comes along, 28
His arms are only to remove from thee
The Duke of Somerset, whom he terms a traitor.

K. Hen. Thus stands my state, 'twixt Cade
and York distress'd;
Like to a ship, that, having scap'd a tempest, 32
Is straightway calm'd, and boarded with a pirate.
But now is Cade driven back, his men dispers'd;
And now is York in arms to second him.
I pray thee, Buckingham, go and meet him, 36
And ask him what's the reason of these arms.
Tell him I'll send Duke Edmund to the Tower;
And, Somerset, we will commit thee thither,
Until his army be dismiss'd from him. 40

Som. My lord,
I'll yield myself to prison willingly,
Or unto death, to do my country good.

K. Hen. In any case, be not too rough in
terms;
For he is fierce and cannot brook hard language.
Buck. I will, my lord; and doubt not so to deal
As all things shall redound unto your good.

K. Hen. Come, wife, let's in, and learn to
govern better; 48
For yet may England curse my wretched reign.
[Exeunt.

SCENE X.—Kent. Iden's Garden.

Enter Cade.

Cade. Fie on ambition! fie on myself, that
have a sword, and yet am ready to famish!
These five days have I hid me in these woods and
durst not peep out, for all the country is laid
for me; but now I am so hungry, that if I might
have a lease of my life for a thousand years I
could stay no longer. Wherefore, on a brick
wall have I climbed into this garden, to see if I
can eat grass, or pick a sallet another while,
which is not amiss to cool a man's stomach this
hot weather. And I think this word 'sallet'
was born to do me good: for many a time, but
for a sallet, my brain-pan had been cleft with a
brown bill; and many a time, when I have been
dry, and bravely marching, it hath served me
instead of a quart-pot to drink in; and now the
word 'sallet' must serve me to feed on. 17

Enter Iden with Servants behind.

Iden. Lord! who would live turmoiled in the
court,
And may enjoy such quiet walks as these?
This small inheritance my father left me
Contenteth me, and worth a monarchy.
I seek not to wax great by others' waning,
Or gather wealth I care not with what envy:
Sufficeth that I have maintains my state, 24
And sends the poor well pleased from my gate.

Cade. [Aside.] Here's the lord of the soil
come to seize me for a stray, for entering his
fee-simple without leave. Ah, villain! thou wilt
betray me, and get a thousand crowns of the
king by carrying my head to him; but I'll make
thee eat iron like an ostrich, and swallow my
sword like a great pin, ere thou and I part. 32

Iden. Why, rude companion, whatsoe'er
thou be,
I know thee not; why then should I betray thee?
Is't not enough to break into my garden,
And like a thief to come to rob my grounds, 36
Climbing my walls in spite of me the owner,
But thou wilt brave me with these saucy terms?

Cade. Brave thee! ay, by the best blood that
ever was broached, and beard thee too. Look on
me well: I have eat no meat these five days;
yet, come thou and thy five men, and if I do
not leave you all as dead as a door-nail, I pray
God I may never eat grass more. 44

Iden. Nay, it shall ne'er be said, while Eng-
land stands,
That Alexander Iden, an esquire of Kent,
Took odds to combat a poor famish'd man.
Oppose thy steadfast-gazing eyes to mine, 48
See if thou canst out-face me with thy looks;
Set limb to limb, and thou art far the lesser;
Thy hand is but a finger to my fist;
Thy leg a stick compared with this truncheon;
My foot shall fight with all the strength thou
hast; 53
And if mine arm be heaved in the air
Thy grave is digg'd already in the earth.
As for more words, whose greatness answers
words,
Let this my sword report what speech forbears.
Cade. By my valour, the most complete
champion that ever I heard! Steel, if thou turn
the edge, or cut not out the burly-boned clown
in chines of beef are thou sleep in thy sheath, I
beseech Jove on my knees, thou mayst be turned
to hobnails. [They fight; CADE falls.] O, I am
slain! Famine and no other hath slain me: let
Act IV, Sc. X.  SECOND PART OF KING HENRY THE SIXTH

ten thousand devils come against me, and give me but the ten meals I have lost, and I’ll defy them all. Wither, garden; and be henceforth a burying-place to all that do dwell in this house, because the unconquered soul of Cade is fled. 69

Iden. Is’t Cade that I have slain, that monstrous traitor?
Sword, I will hallow thee for this thy deed,
And hang thee o’er my tomb when I am dead:
Ne’er shall this blood be wiped from thy point,
But thou shalt wear it as a herald’s coat,
To emblaze the honour that thy master got.

Cade. Iden, farewell; and to proud of thy victory. Tell Kent from me, she hath lost her best man, and exhort all the world to be cowards; for I, that never feared any, am vanquished by famine, not by valour. 74

[Dies.]
Iden. How much thou wrong’st me, heaven be my judge. 81

Die, damned wretch, the curse of her that bare thee!
And as I thrust thy body in with my sword,
So wish I I might thrust thy soul to hell.
Hence will I drag thee headlong by the heels 85
Unto a dunghill which shall be thy grave,
And there cut off thy most ungracious head;
Which I will bear in triumph to the king, 88
Leaving thy trunk for crews to feed upon.

[Exit, with Servants, dragging out the body.

ACT V.

SCENE I.—Kent. Fields between Dartford and Blackheath.

The King’s camp on one side. On the other, enter York, and his army of Irish, with drum and colours.

York. From Ireland thus comes York to claim his right,
And pluck the crown from feeble Henry’s head:
Ring, bells, aloud; burn, bonfires, clear and bright,
To entertain great England’s lawful king. 4

Ah sancta majestas, who would not buy thee dear?
Let them obey that know not how to rule;
This hand was made to handle thought but gold;
I cannot give due action to my words,
Except a sword, or sceptre balance it.
A sceptre shall it have, have I a soul,
On which I’ll toss the flower-de-luce of France.

Enter Buckingham.

Whom have we here? Buckingham, to disturb me?

The king hath sent him, sure; I must dissemble.

Buck. York, if thou meanest well, I greet thee well.

York. Humphrey of Buckingham, I accept thy greeting.

Art thou a messenger, or come of pleasure? 16

Buck. A messenger from Henry, our dread liege,
To know the reason of these arms in peace;
Or why thou,—being a subject as I am,—
Against thy oath and true allegiance sworn, 20
Shouldst raise so great a power without his leave,
Or dare to bring thy force so near the court.

York. [Aside.] Scarce can I speak, my choler is so great:

O! I could hew up rocks and fight with flint, 24
I am so angry at these abject terms;
And now, like Ajax Telaemonius,
On sheep or oxen could I spend my fury.
I am far better born than is the king, 28
More like a king, more kingly in my thoughts;
But I must make fair weather yet awhile,
Till Henry be more weak, and I more strong. 32

[Aloud.] Buckingham, I prithee, pardon me,
That I have given no answer all this while;
My mind was troubled with deep melancholy.
The cause why I have brought this army hither
Is to remove proud Somerset from the king, 36
Seditious to his Grace and to the state.

Buck. That is too much presumption on thy part:

But if thy arms be to no other end,
The king hath yielded unto thy demand: 40
The Duke of Somerset is in the Tower.

York. Upon thine honour, is he a prisoner?
Buck. Upon mine honour, he is a prisoner.
York. Then, Buckingham, I do dismiss my powers. 44

Soldiers, I thank you all; disperse yourselves;
Meet me to-morrow in Saint George’s field,
You shall have pay, and everything you wish,
And let my sovereign, virtuous Henry, 48
Command my eldest son, nay, all my sons,
As pledges of my fealty and love;
I’ll send them all as willing as I live:
Lands, goods, horse, armour, anything I have
Is his to use, so Somerset may die. 53

Buck. York, I command this kind submission:
We twain will go into his highness’ tent.

Enter King Henry, attended.

K. Hen. Buckingham, doth York intend no harm to us, 56

That thus he marcheth with thee arm in arm?

York. In all submission and humility 58
York doth present himself unto your highness.
SECOND PART OF KING HENRY THE SIXTH  Act V. Sc. I.

K. Hen. Then what intend these forces thou dost bring? 60
York. To heave the traitor Somerset from hence,
And fight against that monstrous rebel, Cade,
Who since I heard to be discomfited.

Enter Iden, with Cade's head.

Iden. If one so rude and of so mean condition
May pass into the presence of a king,
Lo! I present your Grace a traitor’s head,
The head of Cade, whom I in combat slew.

K. Hen. The head of Cade! Great God, how just art thou!

O! let me view his visage, being dead,
That living wrought me such exceeding trouble.
Tell me, my friend, art thou the man that slew him?

Iden. I was, an’t like your majesty. 72
K. Hen. How art thou call’d, and what is thy degree?

Iden. Alexander Iden, that’s my name;
A poor esquire of Kent, that loves his king.

Buck. So please it you, my lord, ‘twere not amiss
He were created knight for his good service.

K. Hen. Iden, kneel down. [He kneels.] Rise up a knight.

We give thee for reward a thousand marks;
And will, that thou henceforth attend on us. 80
Iden. May Iden live to merit such a bounty,
And never live but true unto his liege!

K. Hen. See! Buckingham! Somerset comes with the queen:
Go, bid her hide him quickly from the duke. 84

Enter Queen Margaret and Somerset.

Q. Mar. For thousand Yorks he shall not hide his head,
But boldly stand and front him to his face.
York. How now! is Somerset at liberty?

Then, York, unloose thy long-imprison’d thoughts
And let thy tongue be equal with thy heart.
Shall I endure the sight of Somerset?
False king! why hast thou broken faith with me,
Knowing how hardly I can brook abuse? 92
King did I call thee? no, thou art not king;
Not fit to govern and rule multitudes,
Which darst not, no, nor canst not rule a traitor.
That head of thine doth not become a crown;
Thy hand is made to grasp a palmer’s staff, 97
And not to grace an awful princely sceptre.
That gold must round engirt these brows of mine,

Whose smile and frown, like to Achilles’ spear,
Is able with the change to kill and cure. 103
Here is a hand to hold a sceptre up,
And with the same to act controlling laws.
Give place: by heaven, thou shalt rule no mors
O’er him whom heaven created for thy ruler.

Som. O monstrous traitor:—I arrest thee, York,
Of capital treason ‘gainst the king and crown.
Obey, audacious traitor; kneel for grace. 108
York. Wouldst have me kneel? first let me ask of these
If they can brook I bow a knee to man.
Sirrah, call in my sons to be my bail:

[Exit an Attendant.
I know ere they will have me go to ward, 112
They’ll pawn their swords for my enfranchise-

Q. Mar. Call hither Clifford; bid him come amain,
To say if that the bastard boys of York
Shall be the surety for their traitor father. 116

[Exit Buckingham.

York. O blood-bespotted Neapolitan,
Outcast of Naples, England’s bloody scourge!
The sons of York, thy better’s in their birth,
Shall be their father’s bail; and bane to those
That for my surety will refuse the boys! 121

Enter Edward and Richard Plantagenet,
with Forces at one side; at the other, with Forces also, Old Clifford and his Son.

See where they come: I’ll warrant they’ll make it good.

Q. Mar. And here comes Clifford, to deny their bail.
Clif. [Kneeling.] Health and all happiness to my lord the king!
York. I thank thee, Clifford: say, what news with thee?

Nay, do not fright us with an angry look:
We are thy sov’reign, Clifford, kneel again;
For thy mistaking so, we pardon thee. 128
Clif. This is my king, York, I do not mistake;
But thou mistak’st me much to think I do.
To Bedlam with him! is the man grown mad?

K. Hen. Ay, Clifford; a bedlam and ambitious humour

Makes him oppose himself against his king.

Clif. He is a traitor; let him to the Tower,
And chop away that factious pate of his.

Q. Mar. He is arrested, but will not obey: 136
His sons, he says, shall give their words for him.
York. Will you not, sons?
Edw. Ay, noble father, if our words will serve.
Act V, Sc. I. SECOND PART OF KING HENRY THE SIXTH

Rich. And if words will not, then our weapons shall. 140
Clif. Why, what a brood of traitors have we here!
York. Look in a glass, and call thy image so: I am thy king, and thou a false-heart traitor. Call hither to the stake my two brave bears, 144 That with the very shaking of their chains They may astonish these fell-lurking curs: Bid Salisbury and Warwick come to me.

Drums. Enter Warwick and Salisbury, with Forces.

Clif. Are these thy bears? we'll bait thy bears to death, 148 And manacle the bear-ward in their chains, If thou dar'st bring them to the baiting-place.
Rich. Oft have I seen a hot o'erweaning cur Run back and bite, because he was withheld; Who, being suffer'd with the bear's fell paw, 153 Hath clapp'd his tail between his legs, and cried:
And such a piece of service will you do, If you oppose yourselves to match Lord Warwick.
Clif. Hence, heap of wrath, foul indigested lump, As crooked in thy manners as thy shape!
York. Nay, we shall heat you thoroughly anon.
Clif. Take heed, lest by your heat you burn yourselves.
K. Hen. Why, Warwick, hath thy knee forgot to bow?
Old Salisbury, shame to thy silver hair, Thou mad misleader of thy brain-sick son! What wilt thou on thy death-bed play the ruffian, 164
And seek for sorrow with thy spectacles? O! where is faith? O, where is loyalty? If it be banish'd from the frosty head, Where shall it find a harbour in the earth? 168 Wilt thou go dig a grave to find out war, And shame thine honourable age with blood? Why art thou old, and want'st experience? Or wherefore dost abuse it, if thou hast it? 172 For shame! in duty bend thy knee to me, That bows unto the grave with mickle age.
Sal. My lord, I have consider'd with myself The title of this most renowned duke; 176 And in my conscience do repute his Grace The rightful heir to England's royal seat.
K. Hen. Hast thou not sworn allegiance unto me?
Sal. I have. 180
K. Hen. Canst thou dispense with heaven for such an oath?

Sal. It is great sin to swear unto a sin, But greater sin to keep a sinful oath. Who can be bound by any solemn vow To do a murderous deed, to rob a man, To force a spotless virgin's chastity, To reave the orphan of his patrimony, To wring the widow from her custom'd right, And have no other reason for this wrong But that he was bound by a solemn oath?
Q. Mar. A subtle traitor needs no sophister.
K. Hen. Call Buckingham, and bid him arm himself.
York. Call Buckingham, and all the friends thou hast, I am resolv'd for death, or dignity.
Clif. The first I warrant thee, if dreams prove true.
War. You were best to go to bed and dream again, To keep thee from the tempest of the field.
Clif. I am resolv'd to bear a greater storm Than any thou canst conjure up to-day; And that I'll write upon thy burgonet, Might I but know thee by thy household badge.
War. Now, by my father's badge, old Nevil's crest, The rampant bear chain'd to the ragged staff, This day I'll wear aloft my burgonet,— 204 As on a mountain-top the cedar shows, That keeps his leaves in spite of any storm,— Even to affright thee with the view thereof.
Clif. And from thy burgonet I'll rend thy bear, And tread it underfoot with all contempt, Despite the bear-ward that protects the bear. Y. Clif. And so to arms, victorious father, To quell the rebels and their complices.
Rich. Fiel charity! for shame! speak not in spite, For you shall sup with Jesu Christ to-night.
Y. Clif. Foul stigmatic, that's more than thou canst tell.
Rich. If not in heaven, you'll surely sup in hell. [Exeunt severally.

Scene II.—Saint Alban's.

Alarums: Excursions. Enter Warwick.
War. Clifford of Cumberland, 'tis Warwick calls:
And if thou dost not hide thee from the bear, Now, when the angry trumpet sounds alarm, And dead men's cries do fill the empty air, Clifford, I say, come forth, and fight with me! Proud northern lord, Clifford of Cumberland, Warwick is hoarse with calling thee to arms.
SECOND PART OF KING HENRY THE SIXTH  Act V, Sc. II.

Enter York.

How now, my noble lord! what! all afoot? 8
York. The deadly-handed Clifford slew my steed;
But match to match I have encounter’d him,
And made a prey for carrion kites and crows
Even of the bony beast he lov’d so well. 12

Enter Old Clifford.

War. Of one or both of us the time is come.
York. Hold, Warwick! seek thee out some other chase,
For I myself must hunt this deer to death.
War. Then, nobly, York; ’tis for a crown thou fight’st.
16
As I intend, Clifford, to thrive to-day,
It grieveth mine soul to leave thee unassail’d. [Exit.
Cliff. What seest thou in me, York? why dost thou pause?
York. With thy brave bearing should I be in love,
20
But that thou art so fast mine enemy.
Cliff. Nor should thy prowess want praise
And esteem,
But that ’tis shown ignobly and in treason.
York. So let it help me now against thy sword
As I in justice and true right express it.
25
Cliff. My soul and body on the action both!
York. A dreadful lay! address thee instantly.
Cliff. La fin couronne les œuvres. 28

[They fight, and Clifford falls and dies.
York. Thus war hath given thee peace, for thou art still.
Peace with his soul, heaven, if it be thy will! [Exit.

Enter Young Clifford.

Y. Cliff. Shame and confusion! all is on the rout:
Fear frames disorder, and disorder wounds
Where it should guard. O war! thou son of hell,
Whom angry heavens do make their minister,
Throw in the frozen bosoms of our part
Hot coals of vengeance! Let no soldier fly:
He that is truly desire to war
Hath no self-love; nor he that loves himself
Hath not essentially, but by circumstance,
The name of valour. [Seeing his father’s body.
O! let the vile world end,
And the premised flames of the last day
Knit heaven and earth together;
Now let the general trumpet blow his blast,
Particulars and petty sounds
To cease!—Wast thou ordain’d, dear father,
To lose thy youth in peace, and to achieve
The silver livery of advised age,
And, in thy reverence and thy chair-days thus
To die in ruffian battle? Even at this sight
My heart is tur’d to stone: and while ’tis mine
It shall be stony. York not our old men spares:
No more will I their habes: tears virginal
Shall be to me even as the dew to fire;
And beauty, that the tyrant oft reclains,
Shall to my flaming wrath be oil and flax.
Henceforth I will not have to do with pity:
Meet I an infant of the house of York,
Into as many gobbets will I cut it
As wild Medea young Absyrtus did:
In cruelty will I seek out my fame.
Come, thou new ruin of old Clifford’s house:
As did Æneas old Anchises bear,
So bear I thee upon my manly shoulders;
But then Æneas bare a living load,
Nothing so heavy as these woes of mine. [Exit.

Enter Richard and Somerset, fighting;
Somerset is killed.

Rich. So, lie thou there;
For underneath an alehouse’s paltry sign,
The Castle in Saint Alban’s, Somerset
Hath made the wizard famous in his death.
Sword, hold thy temper; heart, be wrathful still;
Priests pray for enemies, but princes kill. [Exit.

Alarums: Excursions. Enter King Henry,
Queen Margaret, and Others, retreatting.
Q. Mar. Away, my lord! you are slow: for shame, away!
K. Hen. Can we outrun the heavens? good Margaret, stay.
Q. Mar. What are you made of? you’ll nor fight nor fly:
Now is it manhood, wisdom, and defence,
To give the enemy way, and to secure us
By what we can, which can no more but fly.

[Alarum afjar off.

If you be ta’en, we then should see the bottom
Of all our fortunes: but if we hapy scape,
As well we may, if not through your neglect,
We shall to London get, where you are lov’d,
And where this breach now in our fortunes made
May readily be stopp’d.

Re-enter Young Clifford.

Y. Cliff. But that my heart’s on future mischief set,
I would speak blasphemy ere bid you fly;
But fly you must: incurable discomfit
Reigns in the hearts of all our present parts.
Away, for your relief and we will live
To see their day and them our fortune give.
Away, my lord, away! [Exeunt.
SCENE III.—Field near Saint Alban's.

Alarum. Retreat. Flourish; then enter YORK, RICHARD, WARWICK, and Soldiers, with drum and colours.

York. Of Salisbury, who can report of him;
That winter lion, who in rage forgets
Aged contusions and all brush of time,
And, like a gallant in the brow of youth,
Repairs him with occasion? this happy day
Is not itself, nor have we won one foot,
If Salisbury be lost.

Rich. My noble father,
Three times to-day I holf him to his horse,
Three times bestrid him; thrice I led him off,
Persuaded him from any further act:
But still, where danger was, still there I met
him;
And like rich hangings in a homely house,
So was his will in his old feeble body.
But, noble as he is, look where he comes.

Enter Salisbury.

Sal. Now, by my sword, well hast thou fought
to-day;

By the mass, so did we all. I thank you, Richard:

God knows how long it is I have to live;
And it hath pleas'd him that three times to-day
You have defended me from imminent death.
Well, lords, we have not got that which we have:

'Tis not enough our foes are this time fled,
Being opposites of such repairing nature.

York. I know our safety is to follow them;
For, as I hear, the king is fled to London,
To call a present court of parliament:
Let us pursue him ere the writs go forth:—
What says Lord Warwick? shall we after them?

War. After them! nay, before them, if we can.

Now, by my hand, lords, 'twas a glorious day:
Saint Alban's battle, won by famous York,
Shall be eternez'd in all age to come.
Sound, drums and trumpets, and to London all:

And more such days as these to us befall!

[Exeunt.]
THE THIRD PART OF
KING HENRY THE SIXTH

DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

KING HENRY THE SIXTH.
EDWARD, Prince of Wales, his Son.
LEWIS THE ELEVENTH, King of France.
DUKE OF SOMERSET,
DUKE OF EXETER,
EARL OF OXFORD,
EARL OF NORTHUMBERLAND, on King Henry's side.
EARL OF WESTMORELAND,
LORD CLIFFORD,
RICHARD PLANTAGENET, Duke of York.
EDWARD, Earl of March, afterwards King Edward the Fourth,
EDMUND, Earl of Rutland,
GEORGE, afterwards Duke of Clarence,
RICHARD, afterwards Duke of Gloucester,
DUKE OF NORFOLK,
MARQUESSE OF MONTAGUE,
EARL OF WARRICK,
EARL OF PEMBROKE,
LORD HASTINGS,
LORD STAFFORD,

SIR JOHN MORTIMER, Uncles to the Duke
SIR HUGH MORTIMER, of York.
HENRY, EARL OF RICHMOND, a Youth.
LORD RIVERS, Brother to Lady Grey.
SIR WILLIAM STANLEY.
SIR JOHN MONTGOMERY.
SIR JOHN SOMERVILLE.
Tutor to Rutland.
Mayor of York.
Lieutenant of the Tower.
A Nobleman.
Two Keepers. A Huntsman.
A Son that has killed his Father.
A Father that has killed his Son.

QUEEN MARGARET.
LADY GREY, afterwards Queen to Edward the Fourth.
BONA, Sister to the French Queen.

Soldiers, and other Attendants on King Henry and King Edward, Messengers, Watchmen, &c.

SCENE.—During part of the Third Act, in France; during the rest of the Play, in England.

ACT I.


Drums. Some Soldiers of York's party break in. Then, enter the DUKE OF YORK, EDWARD, RICHARD, NORFOLK, MONTAGUE, WARRICK, and Others, with white roses in their hats.

War. I wonder how the king escap'd our hands.

York. While we pursu'd the horsemen of the north,
He slyly stole away and left his men:
Whereat the great Lord of Northumberland, Whose warlike ears could never brook retreat, Chas'd up the drooping army; and himself, Lord Clifford, and Lord Stafford, all abreast, Charg'd our main battle's front, and breaking in Were by the swords of common soldiers slain.

Edw. Lord Stafford's father, Duke of Buckingham,

Is either slain or wounded dangerously; I cleft his beaver with a downright blow: That this is true, father, behold his blood. [Showing his bloody sword. Mont. And, brother, here's the Earl of Wiltshire's blood, [To York, showing his Whom I encounter'd as the battles join'd. Rich. Speak thou for me, and tell them what I did. [Throwing down the DUKE OF SOMERSET'S head. York. Richard hath best eserv'd of all my sons. But, is your Grace dead, my Lord of Somerset? Norf. Such hope have all the line of John of Gaunt! Rich. Thus do I hope to shake King Henry's head. War. And so do I. Victorious Prince of York, Before I see thee seated in that throne Which now the house of Lancaster usurps, I vow by heaven these eyes shall never close. This is the palace of the fearful king,
And this the regal seat: possess it, York;
For this is thine, and not King Henry's heirs'.
York. Assist me, then, sweet Warwick, and
I will; 28
For hither we have broken in by force.
Nor. We'll all assist you; he that flies shall
die.
York. Thanks, gentle Norfolk. Stay by me,
my lords;
And, soldiers, stay and lodge by me this night. 32
War. And when the king comes, offer him no
violence,
Unless he seek to thrust you out perforce.

[The Soldiers retire.
York. The queen this day here holds her
parliament,
But little thinks we shall be of her council: 36
By words or blows here let us win our right.
Rich. Arm'd as we are, let's stay within this
house.
War. The bloody parliament shall this be
called,
Unless Plantagenet, Duke of York, be king, 40
And bashful Henry depos'd, whose cowardice
Hath made us by-words to our enemies.
York. Then leave me not, my lords; be
resolute;
I mean to take possession of my right. 44
War. Neither the king, nor he that loves
him best,
The proudest he that holds up Lancaster,
Dares stir a wing if Warwick shake his bells.
I'll plant Plantagenet, root him up who dares.
Resolve thee, Richard; claim the English crown.
[WARWICK leads YORK to the throne,
who seats himself.

Flourish. Enter KING HENRY, CLIFFORD,
NORTHUMBERLAND, WESTMORELAND, EXE-
TER, and Others, with red roses in their hats.
K. Hen. My lords, look where the sturdy
rebel sits,
Even in the chair of state! belike he means—
Back'd by the power of Warwick, that false peer—
To aspire unto the crown and reign as king. 53
Earl of Northumberland, he slew thy father,
And thine, Lord Clifford; and you both have
vow'd revenge
On him, his sons, his favourites, and his friends.
North. If I be not, heavens be reveng'd on me!
Clif. The hope thereof makes Clifford mourn
in steel.
West. What! shall we suffer this? let's pluck
him down:
My heart for anger burns; I cannot brook it. 60
K. Hen. Be patient, gentle Earl of West-
moreland.

Clif. Patience is for poltroons, such as he:
He durst not sit there had your father liv'd.
My gracious lord, here in the parliament
Let us assail the family of York.
North. Well hast thou spoken, cousin: be
it so.
K. Hen. Ah! know you not the city favours
them.
And they have troops of soldiers at their beck?
Exc. But when the duke is slain they'll
quickly fly.
K. Hen. Far be the thought of this from
Henry's heart,
To make a shambles of the parliament-house!
Cousin of Exeter, frowns, words, and threats,
Shall be the war that Henry means to use.
[They advance to the Duke.
Thou factious Duke of York, descend my throne,
And kneel for grace and mercy at my feet;
I am thy sovereign.
York. I am thine. 76
Exc. For shame! come down: he made thee
Duke of York.
York. 'Twas my inheritance, as the earldom
was.
Exc. Thy father was a traitor to the crown.
War. Exeter, thou art a traitor to the crown
In following this usurping Henry. 81
Clif. Whom should he follow but his natural
king?
War. True, Clifford; and that's Richard,
Duke of York.
K. Hen. And shall I stand, and thou sit in
my throne? 84
York. It must and shall be so: content thy-
self.
West. He is both king and Duke of Lancaster;
And that the Lord of Westmoreland shall main-
tain. 88
War. And Warwick shall disprove it. You
forget
That we are those which chas'd you from the
field
And slew your fathers, and with colours spread
March'd through the city to the palace gates. 92
North. Yes, Warwick, I remember it to my
grief;
And, by his soul, thou and thy house shall rue it.
West. Plantagenet, of thee, and these thy
sons,
Thy kinmen and thy friends, I'll have more
lives
Than drops of blood were in my father's veins.
Clif. Urge it no more; lest that instead of
words,
I send thee, Warwick, such a messenger
Third Part of King Henry the Sixth

As shall revenge his death before I stir.

War. Poor Clifford! how I scorn his worthless threats.

York. Will you we show our title to the crown?

If not, our swords shall plead it in the field.

K. Hen. What title hast thou, traitor, to the crown?

Thy father was, as thou art, Duke of York;
Thy grandfather, Roger Mortimer, Earl of March;
I am the son of Henry the Fifth,
Who made the Dauphin and the French to stoop,
And seiz’d upon their towns and provinces.

War. Talk not of France, sith thou hast lost it all.

K. Hen. The Lord Protector lost it, and not I.

When I was crown’d I was but nine months old.

Rich. You are old enough now, and yet, methinks, you lose.

Father, bear the crown from the usurper’s head.

Edw. Sweet father, do so; set it on your head.

Mont. [To York.] Good brother, as thou lov’st and honour’st arms.

Let’s fight it out and not stand cavilling thus.

Rich. Sound drums and trumpets, and the king will fly.

York. Sons, peace!

K. Hen. Peace thou! and give King Henry leave to speak.

War. Plantagenet shall speak first: bear him, lords;
And be you silent and attentive too,
For he that interrupts him shall not live.

K. Hen. Think’st thou that I will leave my kingly throne,

Wherein my grandsire and my father sat?
No: first shall war unpeople this my realm;
Ay, and their colours, often borne in France,
And now in England to our heart’s great sorrow,
Shall be my winding-sheet. Why faint you, lords?

My title’s good, and better far than his.

War. Prove it, Henry, and thou shalt be king.

K. Hen. Henry the Fourth by conquest got the crown.

York. ’Twas by rebellion against his king.


[Aloud.] Tell me, may not a king adopt an heir?

York. What then?

K. Hen. An if he may, then am I lawful king;
For Richard, in the view of many lords,
Resign’d the crown to Henry the Fourth,
Whose heir my father was, and I am his.

York. He rose against him, being his sovereign,
And made him to resign his crown perforce.

War. Suppose, my lords, he did it unconstrai’d,

Think you ’twere prejudicial to his crown?

Exe. No; for he could not so resign his crown
But that the next heir should succeed and reign.

K. Hen. Art thou against us, Duke of Exeter?
Exe. His is the right, and therefore pardon me.

York. Why whisper you, my lords, and answer not?

Exe. My conscience tells me he is lawful king.

K. Hen. [Aside.] All will revolt from me, and turn to him.

North. Plantagenet, for all the claim thou lay’st,

Think not that Henry shall be so depos’d.

War. Depos’d he shall be in despite of all.

North. Thou art deceiv’d: ’tis not thy southern power,
Of Essex, Norfolk, Suffolk, nor of Kent,
Which makes thee thus presumptuous and proud,
Can set the duke up in despite of me.

Clift. King Henry, be thy title right or wrong,
Lord Clifford vows to fight in thy defence:
May that ground gape and swallow me alive,
Where I shall kneel to him that slew my father!

K. Hen. O Clifford, how thy words revive my heart!

What matter you, or what conspire you, lords?
War. Do right unto this princey Duke of York,
Or I will fill the house with armed men,
And o’er the chair of state, where now he sits,
Write up his title with usurping blood.

[He stamps his foot, and the Soldiers show themselves.

K. Hen. My Lord of Warwick, hear me but one word:
Let me for this my life-time reign as king.

York. Confirm the crown to me and to mine heirs,

And thou shalt reign in quiet while thou liv’st.

K. Hen. I am content: Richard Plantagenet,
Enjoy the kingdom after my decease.

Clift. What wrong is thus unto the prince your son?

War. What good is this to England and himself!

West. Base, fearful, and despairing Henry!
Clift. How hast thou injur’d both thyself and us!
Act I, Sc. I.  THIRD PART OF KING HENRY THE SIXTH

West. I cannot stay to hear these articles. 180
North. Nor I.
Cliff. Come, cousin, let us tell the queen these
West. Farewell, faint-hearted and degenerate
king,
In whose cold blood no spark of honour bides.
North. Be thou a prey unto the house of
York,
And die in bands for this unmanly deed!
Cliff. In dreadful war mayst thou be over-
come,
Or live in peace abandon'd and despis'd! 188
[Exeunt Northumberland, Clifford, and Westmoreland.

War. Turn this way, Henry, and regard
them not.
Exe. They seek revenge and therefore will
not yield.
War. Why should you sigh, my lord?
K. Hen. Not for myself, Lord Warwick, but
my son,
Whom I unnaturally shall disinherit.
But be it as it may; I here entail
The crown to thee and to thine heirs for ever;
Conditionally, that here thou take an oath 196
To cease this civil war, and, whilst I live,
To honour me as thy king and sovereign;
And neither by treason nor hostility
To seek to put me down and reign thyself. 200
York. This oath I willingly take and will
perform. [Coming from the throne.
War. Long live King Henry! Plantagenet,
embrace him.
K. Hen. And long live thou and these thy
forward sons!
York. New York and Lancaster are recon-
ciled.'
Exe. Accurs'd be he that seeks to make them
foes! [Senet. The Lords come forward.
York. Farewell, my gracious lord; I'll to my
castle.
War. And I'll keep London with my sol-
diers.
Norf. And I to Norfolk with my followers.208
Mont. And I unto the sea from whence I
came. [Exeunt York and his Sons, Warwick, Norfolk, Montague, Soldiers, and Attendants.
K. Hen. And I, with grief and sorrow, to the
court.

Enter Queen MARGARET and the PRINCE OF
WALES.
Exe. Here comes the queen, whose looks be-
wray her anger:

I'll steal away. [Going.
Q. Mar. Nay, go not from me; I will follow
thee.
K. Hen. Be patient, gentle queen, and I will
stay.
Q. Mar. Who can be patient in such extremities?
A wretched man; would I had died a maid,
And never seen thee, never borne thee son, 217
Seeing thou hast prov'd so unnatural a father.
Hath he deserv'd to lose his birthright thus?
Hadst thou but lov'd him half so well as I, 220
Or felt that pain which I did for him once,
Or nourish'd him as I did with my blood,
Thou wouldst have left thy dearest heart-blood
there,
Rather than have made that savage duke thine
heir,
And disinherited thine only son.
Prince. Father, you cannot disinherit me:
If you be king, why should not I succeed?
K. Hen. Pardon me, Margaret; pardon me,
sweet son; 228
The Earl of Warwick, and the duke, enforc'd
me.
Q. Mar. Enforc'd thee! art thou king, and
will be forc'd?
I shame to hear thee speak. Ah! timorous
wretch;
Thou hast undone thyself, thy son, and me; 232
And given unto the house of York such head
As thou shalt reign but by their sufferance.
To entail him and his heirs unto the crown,
What is it but to make thy sepulchre, 236
And creep into it far before thy time?
Warwick is chancellor and the Lord of Calais;
Stern Faulconbridge commands the narrow
seas;
The duke is made protector of the realm; 240
And yet shalt thou be safe? such safety finds
The trembling lamb environed with wolves.
Had I been there, which am a silly woman,
The soldiers should have toss'd me on their
pikes 244
Before I would have granted to that act;
But thou preferrest thy life before thine honour:
And seeing thou dost, I here divorce myself,
Both from thy table, Henry, and thy bed, 248
Until that act of parliament be repeal'd
Whereby my son is disinherited.
The northern lords that have forsworn thy
colours
Will follow mine, if once they see them spread;
And spread they shall be, to thy foul disgrace,
And utter ruin of the house of York.
Thus do I leave thee. Come, son, let's away;
Our army is ready; come, we'll after them. 252
K. Hen. Stay, gentle Margaret, and hear me speak.

Q. Mar. Thou hast spoke too much already: get thee gone.

K. Hen. Gentle son Edward, thou wilt stay with me?

Q. Mar. Ay, to be murder'd by his enemies.

Prince. When I return with victory from the field 261

I'll see your Grace: till then, I'll follow her.

Q. Mar. Come, son, away; we may not linger thus. [Exeunt QUEEN MARGARET and the PRINCE OF WALES.

K. Hen. Poor queen! how love to me and to her son 264

Hath made her break out into terms of rage,
Revenge'd may she be on that hateful duke,
Whose haughty spirit, winged with desire,
Will cost my crown, and like an empty eagle 268
Tire on the flesh of me and of my son!
The loss of those three lords torments my heart:
I'll write unto them, and entreat them fair.

Come, cousin; you shall be the messenger. 272

Exe. And I, I hope, shall reconcile them all.

[Exeunt.

SCENE II.—A Room in Sandal Castle, near Wakefield, in Yorkshire.

Enter EDWARD, RICHARD, and MONTAGUE.

Rich. Brother, though I be youngest, give me leave.

Edw. No, I can better play the orator.

Mont. But I have reasons strong and forcible.

Enter YORK.

York. Why, how now, sons and brother! at a strifes? 4

What is your quarrel? how began it first?

Edw. No quarrel, but a slight contention.

York. About what?

Rich. About that which concerns your Grace and us;

The crown of England, father, which is yours.


Rich. Your right depends not on his life or death.

Edw. Now you are heir, therefore enjoy it now:

By giving the house of Lancaster leave to breathe,

It will outrun you, father, in the end.

York. I took an oath that he should quietly reign.

Edw. But for a kingdom any oath may be broken:

I would break a thousand oaths to reign one year.

Rich. No; God forbid your Grace should be forsworn.

York. I shall be, if I claim by open war.

Rich. I'll prove the contrary, if you'll hear me speak. 20

York. Thou canst not, son; it is impossible.

Rich. An oath is of no moment, being not took

Before a true and lawful magistrate

That hath authority over him that swears: 24

Henry had none, but did usurp the place;

Then, seeing 'twas he that made you to depose,
Your oath, my lord, is vain and frivolous.

Therefore, to arms! And, father, do but think

How sweet a thing it is to wear a crown,

Within whose circuit is Elysium,

And all that poets feign of bliss and joy.

Why do we linger thus? I cannot rest

Until the white rose that I wear be dy'd

Even in the lukewarm blood of Henry's heart.

York. Richard, enough, I will be king, or die.

Brother, thou shalt to London presently,

And whet on Warwick to this enterprise.

Thou, Richard, shalt unto the Duke of Norfolk,

And tell him privily of our intent.

You, Edward, shall unto my Lord Cobham,

With whom the Kentishmen will willingly rise:

In them I trust; for they are soldiers,

Witty, courteous, liberal, full of spirit.

While you are thus employ'd, what resteth more,

But that I seek occasion how to rise,

And yet the king not privy to my drift,

Nor any of the house of Lancaster?

Enter a Messenger.

But, stay: what news? why com'st thou in such post? 48

Mess. The queen with all the northern earls and lords

Intend here to besiege you in your castle.

She is hard by with twenty thousand men,

And therefore fortify your hold, my lord. 52

York. Ay, with my sword. What! think'st thou that we fear them?

Edward and Richard, you shall stay with me;

My brother Montague shall post to London:

Let noble Warwick, Cobham, and the rest, 56

Whom we have left protectors of the king,

With powerful policy strengthen themselves,

And trust not simple Henry nor his oaths.

Mont. Brother, I go; I'll win them, fear it not:

And thus most humbly I do take my leave. 60

[Exit.
Act I, Sc. II.  THIRD PART OF KING HENRY THE SIXTH

Enter Sir John and Sir Hugh Mortimer.
York. Sir John, and Sir Hugh Mortimer, mine uncles!
You are come to Sandal in a happy hour;
The army of the queen mean to besiege us. 64
Sir John. She shall not need, we’ll meet her
in the field.
York. What! with five thousand men?
Rich. Ay, with five hundred, father, for a
need:
A woman’s general; what should we fear? 68
[A march afar off.
Edw. I hear their drums; let’s set our men
in order,
And issue forth and bid them battle straight.
York. Five men to twenty! though the odds
be great,
I doubt not, uncle, of our victory. 72
Many a battle have I won in France,
When as the enemy hath been ten to one:
Why should I not now have the like success?
[Alarum. Exeunt.

Scene III.—Field of Battle between Sandal
Castle and Wakefield.
Alarums: Excursions. Enter Rutland and
his Tutor.
Rut. Ah, whither shall I fly to ’scape their
hands?
Ahl, tutor, look, where bloody Clifford comes!

Enter Clifford and Soldiers.
Clif. Chaplain, away! thy priesthood saves
thy life.
As for the brat of this accursed duke, 4
Whose father slew my father, he shall die.
Tut. And I, my lord, will bear him company.
Clif. Soldiers, away with him.
Tut. Ah! Clifford, murder not this innocent
child,
Lest thou be hated both of God and man!
[Exit, forced off by Soldiers.
Clif. How now! is he dead already? Or is
it fear
That makes him close his eyes? I’ll open them.
Rut. So looks the pent-up lion o’er the
wrench
That trembles under his devouring paws;
And so he walks, insulting o’er his prey,
And so he comes to rend his limbs asunder.
Ahl, gentle Clifford, kill me with thy sword,
And not with such a cruel threatening look.
Sweet Clifford! hear me speak before I die:
I am too mean a subject for thy wrath;
Be thou reveng’d on men, and let me live. 20

Clif. In vain thou speak’st, poor boy; my
father’s blood
Hath stopp’d the passage where thy words
should enter.
Rut. Then let my father’s blood open it
again:
He is a man, and, Clifford, cope with him. 24
Clif. Had I thy brethren here, their lives and
thine
Were not revenge sufficient for me;
No, if I digg’d up thy forefathers’ graves,
And hung their rotten coffins up in chains, 28
It could not slake mine ire, nor ease my heart.
The sight of any of the house of York
Is as a fury to torment my soul;
And till I root out their accursed line,
And leave not one alive, I live in hell.
Therefore— 32

Scene IV.—Another Part of the Plains.
Alarum. Enter York.
York. The army of the queen hath got the
field:
My uncles both are slain in rescuing me;
And all my followers to the eager foe
Turn back and fly, like ships before the wind, 4
Or lambs pursu’d by hunger-starved wolves.
My sons, God knows what hath bechanc’d them:
But this I know, they have demean’d themselves
Like men born to renown by life or death. 8
Three times did Richard make a lane to me,
And thrice cried, 'Courage, father! fight it out!'
And full as oft came Edward to my side,
With purple falshion, painted to the hilt
In blood of those that had encounter'd him:
And when the hardest warriors did retire,
Richard cried, 'Charge! and give no foot of ground!'
And cried, 'A crown, or else a glorious tomb!
A sceptre, or an earthy sepulchre!'
With this, we charg'd again; but, out, alas!
We bog'd again: as I have seen a swan
With bootless labour swim against the tides,
And spend her strength with over-matching waves.
[A short alarum within.]
Ah, hark! the fatal followers do pursue;
And I am faint and cannot fly their fury;
And were I strong I would not shun their fury.

The sands are number'd that make up my life;
Here must I stay, and here my life must end.

Enter QUEEN MARGARET, CLIFFORD, NORTHUMBERLAND, THE YOUNG PRINCE, and Soldiers.

Come, bloody Clifford, rough Northumberland,
I dare your quenchless fury to more rage:
I am your butt, and I abide your shot.
North. Yield to our mercy, proud Planta-
genet.
Clif. Ay, to such mercy as his ruthless arm
With downright payment shoud unto my father.
Now Phethon hath tumbled from his car,
And made an evening at the noontide prick.
York. My ashes, as the phoenix, may bring forth
A bird that will revenge upon you all;
And in that hope I throw mine eyes to heaven,
Scorning what' er you can affliclt me with.
Whycome you not? what multitudes, and fear?
Clif. So cowards fight when they can fly no further;
So doves do peck the falcon's piercing talons;
So desperate thieves, all hopeles of their lives,
Breathe out invectives 'gainst the officers.
York. O Clifford! but bethink thee once again,
And in thy thought o'er-run my former time;
And, if thou canst for blushing, view this face,
And bite thy tongue, that slanders him with cowardice
Whose frown hath made thee faint and fly ere this.
Clif. I will not bandy with thee word for word.

But buckle with thee blows, twice for one.
Q. Mar. Hold, valiant Clifford! for a thousand causes
I would prolong awhile the traitor's life.
Wrath makes him deaf: speak thou, Northumberland.
North. Hold, Clifford! do not honour him so much
To prick thy finger, though to wound his heart.
What valour were it, when a cur doth grin,
For one to thrust his hand between his teeth,
When he might spurn him with his foot away?
It is war's prize to take all vantages,
And ten to one is no imprech of valour.
[They lay hands on YORK, who struggles.
Clif. Ay, ay; so strives the woodcock with the gin.
North. So doth the cony struggle in the net.
York is taken prisoner.
York. So triumph thieves upon their conquer'd booty;
So true men yield, with robbers so o'er-matched.
North. What would your Grace have done unto him now?
Q. Mar. Brave warriors, Clifford and North-
umberland,
Come, make him stand upon this molehill here,
That raught at mountains with outstretched arms,
Yet parted but the shadow with his hand.
What! was it you that would be England's king?
Wast? you that revell'd in our parliament,
And made a preaching of your high descent?
Where are your mess of sons to back you now?
The wanton Edward, and the Justy George?
And where's that valiant crook-back prodigy,
Dicky your boy, that with his grumbling voice
Was wont to cheer his dad in mutinies?
Or, with the rest, where is your grumbling Rutland?
Look, York: I stain'd this napkin with the blood
That valiant Clifford with his rapier's point
Made issue from the bosom of the boy;
And if thine eyes can water for his death,
I give thee this to dry thy cheeks withal.
Alas, poor York! but that I hate thee deadly,
I should lament thy miserable state.
I pity thee, to make me merry, York.
What! hath thy fiery heart so parch'd thine entrails
That not a tear can fall for Rutland's death?
Why art thou patient, man? thou shouldst be mad;
And I, to make thee mad, do mock thee thus.
Act I, Sc. IV. THIRD PART OF KING HENRY THE SIXTH

Stamp, rave, and fret, that I may sing and
dance.
Thou wouldst be fee’d, I see, to make me sport:
York cannot speak unless he wear a crown. 93
A crown for York! and, lords, bow low to him:
Hold you his hands whilst I do set it on.

[Putting a paper crown on his head.
Ay, marry, sir, now looks he like a king! 96
Ay, this is he that took King Henry’s chair;
And this is he was his adopted heir.
But how is it that great Plantagenet
Is crown’d so soon, and broke his solemn oath?
As I bethink me, you should not be king 101
Till our King Henry had shook hands with
death.
And will you pale your head in Henry’s glory,
And rob his temples of the diadem, 104
Now in his life, against your holy oath?
O! ’tis a fault too-too unpardonable.
Off with the crown; and, with the crown, his head;
And, whilst we breathe, take time to do him
dead. 108
Clif. That is my office, for my father’s sake.
Q. Mar. Nay, stay; let’s hear the orisons he makes.
York. She-wolf of France, but worse than wolves of France,
Whose tongue more poisons than the adder’s tooth! 112
How ill-beseeming is it in thy sex
To triumph, like an Amazonian trull,
Upon their woes whom fortune captivates!
But that thy face is, visor-like, unchanging, 116
Made impudent with use of evil deeds,
I would assay, proud queen, to make thee blush:
To tell thee whence thou cam’st, of whom deriv’d,
Were shame enough to shame thee, wert thou not shameless? 120
Thy father bears the type of King of Naples,
Of both the Sicils and Jerusalem;
Yet not so wealthy as an English yeoman.
Hath that poor monarch taught thee to insult?
It needs not, nor it boots thee not, proud queen, 125
Unless the adage must be verified,
That beggars mounted run their horse to death.
’Tis beauty that doth oft make women proud;
But, God he knows, thy share thereof is small:
’Tis virtue that doth make them most admir’d;
The contrary doth make thee wonder’d at:
’Tis government that makes them seem divine;
The want thereof makes thee abominable. 133
Thou art as opposite to every good
As the Antipodes are unto us,
Or as the south to the septentrion. 136
O tiger’s heart wrapp’d in a woman’s hide!
How couldst thou drain the life-blood of the child,
To bid the father wipe his eyes withal,
And yet be seen to bear a woman’s face? 140
Women are soft, mild, pitiful, and flexible;
Thou stern, obdurate, flinty, rough, remorseless.
Bidd’st thou me rage? why, now thou hast thy wish:
Wouldst have me weep? why, now thou hast thy will; 144
For raging wind blows up incessant showers,
And when the rage alights, the rain begins.
These tears are my sweet Rutland’s obsequies,
And every drop cries vengeance for his death,
‘Gainst thee, fall Clifford, and thee, false
Frenchwoman. 149
North. Beshrew me, but his passion moves
me so
That hardly can I check my eyes from tears.
York. That face of his the hungry cannibals
Would not have touch’d, would not have
stain’d with blood; 153
But you are more inhuman, more inexorable,—
O! ten times more, than tigers of Hyrcania.
See, ruthless queen, a hapless father’s tears: 156
This cloth thou dipp’dst in blood of my sweet boy,
And I with tears do wash the blood away.
Keep thou the napkin, and go boast of this; 160
[Giving the handkerchief.
And if thou tell’st the heavy story right,
Upon my soul, the hearers will shed tears;
Yes, even my foes will shed fast-falling tears,
And say, ‘Alas! it was a piteous deed!’
There, take the crown, and, with the crown my curse, 164
And in thy need such comfort come to thee
As now I reap at thy too cruel hand!
Hard-hearted Clifford, take me from the world;
My soul to heaven, my blood upon your heads! 168
North. Had he been slaughter-man to all
my kin,
I should not for my life but weep with him,
To see how inly sorrow gripes his soul.
Q. Mar. What! weeping-ripe, my Lord
Northumberland? 172
Think but upon the wrong he did us all,
And that will quickly dry thy melting tears.
Clif. Here’s for my oath; here’s for my
father’s death. 176
Q. Mar. And here’s to right our gentle-
hearted king. 179
York. Open thy gate of mercy, gracious
God!

656
My soul flies through these wounds to seek out thee. [Dies.

Q. Mar. Off with his head, and set it on York gates;
So York may overlook the town of York. 189

[Flourish. Exeunt.

ACT II.

SCENE I.—A Plain near Mortimer’s Cross in Herefordshire.

Drums. Enter Edward and Richard, with their Forces, marching.

Edw. I wonder how our princely father ‘scap’d,
Or whether he ‘scap’d away or no
From Clifford’s and Northumberland’s pursuit.
Had he been ta’en we should have heard the news;
Had he been slain we should have heard the news;
Or had he ‘scap’d, methinks we should have heard
The happy tidings of his good escape.
How fares my brother? why is he so sad? 8

Rich. I cannot joy until I be resolv’d
Where our right valiant father is become.
I saw him in the battle range about,
And watch’d him how he singled Clifford forth.
Methought he bore him in the thickest troop
As doth a lion in a herd of neath;
Or as a bear, encompass’d round with dogs,
Who having pinch’d a few and made them cry,
The rest stand all aloof and bark at him. 17
So far’d our father with his enemies;
So fled his enemies my war-like father:
Methinks, ’tis prize enough to be his son.

See how the morning opes her golden gates,
And takes her farewell of the glorious sun;
How well it resembles it the prime of youth,
Trimm’d like a young’ner prancing to his love. 24

Edw. Dazzle mine eyes, or do I see three suns?

Rich. Three glorious suns, each one a perfect sun;
Not separated with the racking clouds,
But sever’d in a pale clear-shining sky. 28
See, see! they join, embrace, and seem to kiss,
As if they vow’d some league inviolable:
Now are they but one lamp, one light, one sun.

In this the heaven figures some event.

Edw. ’Tis wondrous strange, the like yet never heard of.
I think it cites us, brother, to the field;
That we, the sons of brave Plantagenet,
Each one already blazing by our meeds, 36

Should notwithstanding join our lights together,
And over-shine the earth, as this the world.
Whate’er it bodes, henceforward will I bear
Upon my target three fair-shining suns. 40

Rich. Nay, bear three daughters: by your leave I speak it,
You love the breed’er better than the male.

Enter a Messenger.

But what art thou, whose heavy looks foretell
Some dreadful story hanging on thy tongue? 44

Mess. Ah! one that was a woeful looker-on,
When as the noble Duke of York was slain,
Your princely father, and my loving lord.

Edw. O! speak no more, for I have heard too much. 48

Rich. Say how he died, for I will hear it all.

Mess. Environed he was with many foes,
And stood against them, as the hope of Troy
Against the Greeks that would have enter’d Troy.

But Hercules himself must yield to odds;
And many strokes, though with a little axe,
Hew down and fell the hardest-timber’d oak.
By many hands your father was subdu’d; 56
But only slaughter’d by the irreful arm
Of unrelenting Clifford and the queen,
Who crown’d the gracious duke in high despite;
Laugh’d in his face; and when with grief he wept,
The ruthless queen gave him to dry his cheeks,
A napkin steeped in the harmless blood
Of sweet young Rutland, by rough Clifford slain:

And after many scorns, many foul taunts, 64
They took his head, and on the gates of York
They set the same; and there it doth remain,
The saddest spectacle that e’er I view’d.

Edw. Sweet Duke of York! our prop to lean upon,

Now thou art gone, we have no staff, no stay! 68
O Clifford! boist’rous Clifford! thou hast slain
The flower of Europe for his chivalry;
And treacherously hast thou vanquish’d him, 72
For hand to hand he would have vanquish’d thee.

Now my soul’s palace is become a prison:
Aha! would she break from hence, that this my body

Might in the ground be closed up in rest, 76
For never henceforth shall I joy again,
Never, Ol never, shall I see more joy.

Rich. I cannot weep, for all my body’s moisture
Act II, Sc. I.  THIRD PART OF KING HENRY THE SIXTH

Scarse serves to quench my furnace-burning heart:
Nor can my tongue unload my heart’s great burden;
For self-same wind, that I should speak withal
Is kindling coals that fire all my breast,
And burn me up with flames, that tears would quench.
To weep is to make less the depth of grief:
Tears then, for babes; blows and revenge for me!
Richard, I bear thy name; I’ll venge thy death,
Or die renowned by attempting it.
Edw. His name that valiant duke hath left with thee;
His dukedom and his chair with me is left.
Rich. Nay, if thou be that princely eagle’s bird,
Show thy descent by gazing against the sun: o2
For chair and dukedom, throne and kingdom say;
Either that is thine, or else thou wert not his.

March. Enter Warwick and the Marquess of Montague, with Forces.
War. How now, fair lords! What fare? what news abroad?
Rich. Great Lord of Warwick, if we should recount
Our baleful news, and at each word’s deliv’rance
Stab poniards in our flesh till all were told,
The words would add more anguish than the wounds.
O valiant lord! the Duke of York is slain.
Edw. O Warwick! Warwick! that Plantagenet
Which held thee dearly as his soul’s redemption,
Is by the stern Lord Clifford done to death.
War. Ten days ago I drownd these news in tears,
And now, to add more measure to your woes,
I come to tell you things sith then befallen.
After the bloody fray at Wakefield fought,
Where your brave father breath’d his latest expasp,
Tidings, as swiftly as the posts could run,
Were brought me of your loss and his depart.
I, then in London, keeper of the king,
Musterd’ my soldiers, gather’d flocks of friends,
And very well appointed, as I thought.
March’d towards Saint Alban’s to intercept the queen,
Bearing the king in my behalf along;
For by my scouts I was advertised
That she was coming with a full intent

To dash our late decree in parliament,
Touching King Henry’s oath and your succession.
Short tale to make, we at Saint Alban’s met,
Our battles join’d, and both sides fiercely fought:
But whether ’twas the coldness of the king,
Who look’d full gently on his war-like queen,
That robb’d my soldiers of their heated spleen;
Or whether ’twas report of her success;
Or more than common fear of Clifford’s rigour,
Who thunders to his captives blood and death,
I cannot judge: but, to conclude with truth,
Their weapons like to lightning came and went;
Our soldiers—like the night-owl’s lazy flight,
Or like a lazy thresher with a flail—
Fell gently down, as if they struck their friends.
I cheer’d them up with justice of our cause,
With promise of high pay, and great rewards:
But all in vain; they had no heart to fight,
And we in them no hope to win the day;
So that we fled: the king unto the queen;
Lord George your brother, Norfolk, and myself,
In haste, post-haste, are come to join with you;
For in the marches here we heard you were,
Making another head to fight again.
Edw. Where is the Duke of Norfolk, gentle Warwick?
And when came George from Burgundy to England?
War. Some six miles off the duke is with the soldiers;
And for your brother, he was lately sent
From your kind aunt, Duchess of Burgundy,
With aid of soldiers to this needful war.
Rich. ’Twas odds, belike, when valiant Warwick fled:
Oft have I heard his praises in pursuit,
But ne’er till now his scandal of retire.
War. Nor now my scandal, Richard, dost thou hear;
For thou shalt know, this strong right hand of mine
Can pluck the diadem from faint Henry’s head,
And wring the awful sceptre from his flat,
Were he as famous, and as bold in war
As he is fam’d for mildness, peace, and prayer.
Rich. I know it well, Lord Warwick; blame me not:
’Tis love I bear thy glories makes me speak.
But, in this troublous time what’s to be done?
Shall we go throw away our coats of steel,
And wrap our bodies in black mourning gowns,
Numb’ring our Ave-Maries with our beads;
Or shall we on the helmets of our foes
Tell our devotion with revengeful arms?
If for the last, say ‘Ay,’ and to it, lords.
War. Why, therefore Warwick came to seek you out; And therefore comes my brother Montague. Attend me, lords. The proud insulting queen, With Clifford and the haughty Northumberland, And of their feather many more proud birds, Have wrought the easy-melting king like wax.

He swore consent to your succession, His oath enrolled in the parliament; And now to London all the crew are gone, To frustrate both his oath and what beside May make against the house of Lancaster. Their power, I think, is thirty thousand strong: Now, if the help of Norfolk and myself, With all the friends that thou, brave Earl of March, Amongst the loving Welshmen canst procure, Will but amount to five and twenty thousand, Why, Via! to London will we march amain, And once again bestride our foaming steeds, And once again cry, 'Charge upon our foes!' But never once again turn back and fly. Rich. Ay, now methinks I bear great Warwick speak: Ne'er may he live to see a sunshine day, That cries 'Retire,' if Warwick bid him stay. Edw. Lord Warwick, on thy shoulder will I lean; And when thou fail'st—as God forbid the hour!— Must Edward fall, which peril heaven forfend! War. No longer Earl of March, but Duke of York: The next degree is England's royal throne; For King of England shalt thou proclaim'd In every borough as we pass along; And he that throws not up his cap for joy Shall for the fault make forfeit of his head. King Edward, valiant Richard, Montague, Stay we no longer dreaming of renown, But sound the trumpets, and about our task. Rich. Then, Clifford, were thy heart as hard as steel,— As thou hast shown it flinty by thy deeds,— I come to pierce it, or to give thee mine. Edw. Then strike up, drums! God, and Saint George for us! Enter a Messenger. War. How now! what news? Mess. The Duke of Norfolk sends you word by me, The queen is coming with a puissant host; And craves your company for speedy counsel. War. Why then it sorts; brave warriors, let's away. [Exeunt.]

SCENE II.—Before York.

Flourish. Enter King Henry, Queen Margaret, the Prince of Wales, Clifford and Northumberland, with drums and trumpets.

Q. Mar. Welcome, my lord, to this brave town of York.
Yonder's the head of that arch-enemy, That sought to be encompass'd with your crown: Doth not the object cheer your heart, my lord? K. Hen. Ay, as the rocks cheer them that fear their wreck: To see this sight, it irks my very soul. Withhold revenge, dear God! 'tis not my fault, Nor willingly have I infringing'd my vow. Clif. My gracious liege, this too much lenity And harmful pity must be laid aside. To whom do lions cast their gentle looks? Not to the beast that would usurp their den. Whose hand is that the forest bear doth lick? Not his that spoils her young before her face. Who 'scapes the lurking serpent's mortal sting? Not he that sets his foot upon her back. The smallest worm will turn being trodden on, And doves will peck in safeguard of their brood. Ambitious York did level at thy crown; Thou smiling while he knit his angry brows: He, but a duke, would have his son a king, And raise his issue like a loving sire; Thou, being a king, bless'd with a goodly son, Didst yield consent to disinherit him, Which argu'd thee a most unloving father. Unreasonable creatures feed their young; And though man's face be fearful to their eyes, Yet, in protection of their tender ones, Who hath not seen them, even with those wings Which sometime they have us'd with fearful flight, Make war with him that climb'd unto their nest, Offering their own lives in their young's defence? For shame, my liege! make them your precedent. Were it not pity that this goodly boy Should lose his birthright by his father's fault, And long hereafter say unto his child, 'What my great grandfather and grandsire got, My careless father fondly gave away?' Ah! what a shame were this. Look on the boy; And let his manly face, which promiseth Successful fortune, steel thy melting heart To hold thine own and leave thine own with him.

K. Hen. Full well hath Clifford play'd the orator,
Act II. Sc. II. THIRD PART OF KING HENRY THE SIXTH

Inferring arguments of mighty force.  
But, Clifford, tell me, didst thou never hear 
That things ill got had ever bad success? 
And happy always was it for that son 
Whose father for his hoarding went to hell?  48 
I'll leave my son my virtuous deeds behind; 
And would my father had left me no more! 
For all the rest is held at such a rate 
As brings a thousand-fold more care to keep 52 
Than in possession any jot of pleasure. 
Ahi, cousin York, would thy best friends did 
know 
How it doth grieve me that thy head is here! 
Q. Mar. My lord, cheer up your spirits: our 
foes are nigh,  
And this soft courage makes your followers faint. 
You promis'd knighthood to our forward son: 
Unsheathe your sword, and dub him presently. 
Edward, kneel down.  60 
K. Hen. Edward Plantagenet, arise a knight; 
And learn this lesson, draw thy sword in 
right. 
Prince. My gracious father, by your kingly 
leave, 
I'll draw it as apparent to the crown,  64 
And in that quarrel use it to the death. 
Clif. Why, that is spoken like a toward prince. 

Enter a Messenger.

Mess. Royal commanders, be in readiness: 
For with a band of thirty thousand men 68 
Comes Warwick, backing of the Duke of York; 
And in the towns, as they do march along, 
Proclaims him king, and many fly to him: 
Darraign your battle, for they are at hand.  72 
Clif. I would your highness would depart the field: 
The queen hath best success when you are 
absent. 
Q. Mar. Ay, good my lord, and leave us to 
our fortune. 
K. Hen. Why, that's my fortune too; there- 
fore I'll stay.  76 
North. Be it with resolution then to fight. 
Prince. My royal father, cheer these noble 
lords, 
And hearten those that fight in your defence: 
Unsheathe your sword, good father: cry, 'Saint 
George!'  80

March. Enter EDWARD, GEORGE, RICHARD, 
WARWICK, NORFOLK, MONTAGUE, and Sol- 
diers. 
Edw. Now, perjur'd Henry, wilt thou kneel 
for grace, 
And set thy diadem upon my head; 
Or bide the mortal fortune of the field?

Q. Mar. Go, rate thy minions, proud insult- 
ing boy!  84 
Becomes it thee to be thus bold in terms 
Before thy sovereign and thy lawful king? 
Edw. I am his king, and he should bow his 
knee; 
I was adopted heir by his consent;  88 
Since when, his oath is broke; for, as I hear, 
You, that are king, though he do wear the 
crown, 
Have caus'd him, by new act of parliament, 
To blot out me, and put his own son in.  92 
Clif. And reason too: 
Who should succeed the father but the son? 
Rich. Are you there, butcher? Or I cannot 
speak. 
Clif. Ay, crook-back; here I stand to answer 
thee,  96 
Or any he the proudest of thy sort. 
Rich. 'Twas you that kill'd young Rutland, 
was it not? 
Clif. Ay, and old York, and yet not satisfied. 
Rich. For God's sake, lords, give signal to 
the fight. 100 
War. What sayst thou, Henry, wilt thou 
yield the crown? 
Q. Mar. Why, how now, long-tongu'd War- 
wick! dare you speak? 

When you and I met at Saint Alban's last, 
Your legs did better service than your hands. 104 
War. Then 'twas my turn to fly, and now 
'tis thine. 
Clif. You said so much before, and yet you 
flled. 
War. 'Twas not your valour, Clifford, drove 
me thence. 
North. No, nor your manhood that durst 
make you stay. 108 
Break off the parley; for scarce I can refrain 
The execution of my big-swoln heart 
Upon that Clifford, that cruel child-killer.  112 
Clif. I slay thy father: call'st thou him a 
child? 
Rich. Ay, like a bastard and a treacherous 
coward, 
As thou didst kill our tender brother Rutland; 
But ere sun-set I'll make thee curse the deed. 
K. Hen. Have done with words, my lords, and 
hear me speak. 117 
Q. Mar. Defy them, then, or else hold close 
thy lips. 
K. Hen. I prithee, give no limits to my 
tongue: 
I am a king, and privileg'd to speak. 120 
Clif. My liege, the wound that bred this 
meeting here

660
THIRD PART OF KING HENRY THE SIXTH  Act II, Sc. III.

Cannot be cur’d by words; therefore be still.

Rich. Then, executioner, unsheathe thy sword.

By him that made us all, I am resolv’d
That Clifford’s manhood lies upon his tongue.

Edw. Say, Henry, shall I have my right or no?
A thousand men have broke their fasts to-day,
That ne’er shall dine unless thou yield the crown.

War. If thou deny, their blood upon thy head;

For York in justice puts his armour on.

Prince. If that be right which Warwick says is right,
There is no wrong, but everything is right.

Rich. Whoever got thee, there thy mother stands;

For well I wot thou hast thy mother’s tongue.

Q. Mar. But thou art neither like thy sire nor dam,
But like a foul misshapen stigmatic,
Mark’d by the destinies to be avoided,
As venom toads, or lizards’ dreadful stings.

Rich. Iron of Naples hid with English gilt,
Whose father bears the title of a king,—
As if a channel should be call’d the sea,
Sham’st thou not, knowing whence thou art extrauted,
To let thy tongue detect thy base-born heart?

Edw. A wisps of straw were worth a thousand crowns,

To make this shameless callet know herself.
Helen of Greece was fairer far than thou,
Although thy husband may be Menelaus;
And ne’er was Agamemnon’s brother wrong’d
By that false woman as this king by thee.

His father revell’d in the heart of France,
And tam’d the king, and made the Dauphin stoop;

And had he match’d according to his state,
He might have kept that glory to this day;
But when he took a beggar to his bed, And grac’d thy poor sire with his brid’al day,
Even then that sunshine brew’d a shower for him,

That wash’d his father’s fortunes forth of France, And heap’d sedition on his crown at home.
For what hath broach’d this tumult but thy pride?

Hadst thou been meek our title still had slept, And we, in pity of the gentle king,
Had slipp’d our claim until another age.

Geo. But when we saw our sunshine made thy spring, And that thy summer bred us no increase, We set the axe to thy usurping root;

And though the edge hath something hit ourselves, Yet know thou, since we have begun to strike, We’ll never leave, till we have hewn thee down, Or bath’d thy growing with our heated bloods.

Edw. And in this resolution I defy thee; Not willing any longer conference,
Since thou deny’st the gentle king to speak. Sound trumpets!—let our bloody colours wave!


Edw. No, wrangling woman, we’ll no longer stay:

These words will cost ten thousand lives this day [Exeunt.

SCENE III.—A Field of Battle between Towton and Saxton, in Yorkshire.

Alarums: Excursions. Enter Warwick.

War. Forspent with toil, as runners with a race,
I lay me down a little while to breathe;
For strokes receiv’d, and many blows repaid,
Have robb’d my strong-knit sinews of their strength,
And spite of spite needs must I rest a while.

Enter Edward, running.

Edw. Smile, gentle heaven! or strike, ungentle death!

For this world frowns, and Edward’s sun is clouded.

War. How now, my lord! what hap? what hope of good?

Enter George.

Geo. Our hap is lose, our hope but sad despair,
Our ranks are broke, and ruin follows us.
What counsel give you? whither shall we fly?

Edw. Bootless is flight, they follow us with wings;

And weak we are and cannot shun pursuit.

Enter Richard.

Rich. Ah! Warwick, why hast thou withdrawn thyself?
Thy brother’s blood the thirsting earth hath drunk,
Broach’d with the steely point of Clifford’s lance; And in the very pangs of death he cried, Like to a dismal clangor heard from far,
‘Warwick, revenge! brother, revenge my death!’

So, underneath the belly of their steeds,
That stain’d their fetlocks in his smoking blood,
The noble gentleman gave up the ghost.

War. Then let the earth be drunken with our blood:

661
I'll kill my horse because I will not fly.
Why stand we like soft-hearted women here,
Wailing our losses, whiles the foe doth rage;
And look upon, as if the tragedy
Were play'd in jest by counterfeit actors? 28
Here on my knee I vow to God above,
I'll never pause again, never stand still
Till either death hath clos'd these eyes of mine,
Or fortune given me measure of revenge. 32

Edw. O Warwick! I do bend my knee with thine;
And in this vow do chain my soul to thine.
And, ere my knee rise from the earth's cold face,
I throw my hands, mine eyes, my heart to thee,
Thou settest up and plucker down of kings, 37
Beseeching thee, if with thy will it stands
That to my foes this body must be prey,
Yet that thy brazen gates of heaven may ope, 40
And give sweet passage to my sinful soul!
Now, lords, take leave until we meet again,
Where'er it be, in heaven or in earth.
Rich. Brother, give me thy hand; and, gentle
Warwick,
Let me embrace thee in my weary arms:
I, that did never weep, now melt with woe
That winter should cut off our spring-time so.
War. Away, away! Once more, sweet lords,
farewell. 43

Geo. Yet let us all together to our troops,
And give them leave to fly that will not stay,
And call them pillars that will stand to us;
And if we thrive, promise them such rewards 52
As victors wear at the Olympian games.
This may plant courage in their quailing breasts;
For yet is hope of life and victory.
Forslow no longer; make we hence amain. 56

[Exeunt.

SCENE IV.—Another Part of the Field.

Excursions. Enter Richard and Clifford.

Rich. Now, Clifford, I have singed thee alone.
Suppose this arm is for the Duke of York,
And this for Rutland; both bound to revenge,
Wert thou environ'd with a brazen wall. 4

Cliff. Now, Richard, I am with thee here alone.
This is the hand that stabb'd thy father York,
And this the hand that slew thy brother Rutland;
And here's the heart that triumphs in their death
And cheers these hands that slew thy sire and brother,
To execute the like upon thyself;
And so, have at thee!

[They fight. Warwick enters; Clifford flies.

Rich. Nay, Warwick, single out some other chase;
For I myself will hunt this wolf to death.

[Exeunt.

SCENE V.—Another Part of the Field.

Alarum. Enter King Henry.

K. Hen. This battle fares like to the morning's war,
When dying clouds contend with growing light,
What time the shepherd, blowing of his nails,
Can neither call it perfect day nor night.
Now sways it this way, like a mighty sea
For'd by the tide to combat with the wind;
Now sways it that way, like the self-same sea
For'd to retire by fury of the wind;
Sometime the flood prevails, and then the wind;
Now one the better, then another best;
Both tugging to be victors, breast to breast,
Yet neither conqueror nor conquered.

So is the equal poise of this fell war.
Here on this molehill will I sit me down. 12
To whom God will, there be the victory!

For Margaret my queen, and Clifford too,
Have chid me from the battle; swearing both
They prosper best of all when I am thence.
Would I were dead! if God's good will were so;
For what is in this world but grief and woe? 20
O God! methinks it were a happy life,
To be no better than a homely swain;
To sit upon a hill, as I do now,
To carve out dials quaintly, point by point, 24
Therby to see the minutes how they run,
How many make the hour full complete;
How many hours bring about the day;
How many days will finish up the year;
How many years a mortal man may live.
When this is known, then to divide the times:
So many hours must I tend my flock;
So many hours must I take my rest; 32
So many hours must I contemplate;
So many hours must I sport myself;
So many days my ewes have been with young;
So many weeks ere the poor fools will ean; 36
So many years ere I shall shear the fleece:
So minutes, hours, days, months, and years,
Pass'd over to the end they were created,
Would bring white hairs unto a quiet grave. 40
Ah! what a life were this! how sweet! how lovely!
Gives not the hawthorn bush a sweeter shade
To shepherds, looking on their silly sheep,
Than doth a rich embroider'd canopy

To kings, that fear their subjects' treachery?
O, yes! it doth; a thousand-fold it doth.
And to conclude, the shepherd's homely curds,
His cold thin drink out of his leather bottle,
THIRD PART OF KING HENRY THE SIXTH Act II, Sc. V.

His wonted sleep under a fresh tree's shade,
All which secure and sweetly he enjoys,
Is far beyond a prince's delicates,
His viands sparkling in a golden cup, 52
His body couched in a curious bed,
When care, mistrust, and treason wait on him.

Alarum. Enter a Son that hath killed his Father,
with the dead body.

Son. Ill blows the wind that profits nobody.
This man whom hand to hand I slew in fight, 56
May be possessed with some store of crowns;
And I, that haply take them from him now,
May yet ere night yield both my life and them.
To some man else, as this dead man doth me.
60
Who's this? O God! it is my father's face.
Whom in this conflict I unwares have kill'd.
O heavy times, begetting such events!
From London by the king was I press'd forth; 64
My father, being the Earl of Warwick's man,
Came on the part of York, press'd by his master;
And I, who at his hands receiv'd my life,
Have by my hands of life bereaved him. 68
Pardon me, God, I knew not what I did!
And pardon, father, for I knew not thee.
My tears shall wipe away these bloody marks;
And no more words till they have flow'd their fill.

K. Hen. O piteous spectacle! O bloody times!
While lions war and battle for their dens,
Poor harmless lambs abide their enmity.
Weep, wretched man, I'll aid thee tear for tear;
And let our hearts and eyes, like civil war, 77
Be blind with tears, and break o'ercharg'd with grief.

Enter a Father that hath killed his Son, with the
body in his arms.

Fath. Thou that so stoutly hast resisted me,
Give me thy gold, if thou hast any gold, 80
For I have bought it with a hundred blows.
But let me see: is this our foeman's face?
Ah! no, no, no, it is mine only son.
Ah! boy, if any life be left in thee, 84
Throw up thine eye: see, see! what showers arise,
Blown with the windy tempest of my heart,
Upon thy wounds, that kill mine eye and heart.
Of pity, God, this miserable age. 88
What stratagems, how fell, how butcherly,
Erroneous, mutinous, and unnatural,
This deadly quarrel daily doth beget!
O boy! thy father gave thee life too soon, 92
And hast bereft thee of thy life too late.

K. Hen. Woe above woe! grief more than
common grief!
O! that my death would stay thee ruthless deeds.
O! pity, pity; gentle heaven, pity. 96
The red rose and the white are on his face,
The fatal colours of our striving houses:
The one his purple blood right well resembles;
The other his pale cheeks, methinks, presenteth:
Wither one rose, and let the other flourish! 101
If you contend, a thousand lives must wither.

Son. How will my mother for a father's death
Take on with me and ne'er be satisfied! 104
Fath. How will my wife for slaughter of my son
Shed seas of tears and ne'er be satisfied!
K. Hen. How will the country for these woe-
ful chances
Misthink the king and not be satisfied! 108
Son. Was ever son so ru'd a father's death?
Fath. Was ever father so bemoan'd a son?
K. Hen. Was ever king so griev'd for sub-
jects' woe?

Much is your sorrow; mine, ten times so much.
Son. I'll bear thee hence, where I may weep
my fill. [Exit with the body.

Fath. These arms of mine shall be thy wind-
ing-sheet;
My heart, sweet boy, shall be thy sepulchre,
For from my heart thine image ne'er shall go:
My sighing breast shall be thy funeral bell; 117
And so obsequious will thy father be,
E'en for the loss of thee, having no more,
As Pash was for all his valiant sons. 120
I'll bear thee hence; and let them fight that will,
For I have murder'd where I should not kill.

K. Hen. Sad-hearted men, much overgone
with care,
Here sit a king more woeful than you are. 124

Alarum. Excursions. Enter QUEEN MAR-
GARET, PRINCE OF WALES, and EXETER.

Prince. Fly, father, fly! for all your friends
are fled,
And Warwick rages like a chafed bull.
Away! for death doth hold us in pursuit.
Q. Mar. Mount you, my lord; towards Ber-
wick post amain. 128
Edward and Richard, like a brace of greyhounds
Having the fearful flying hare in sight,
With fiery eyes sparkling for very wrath,
And bloody steel grasp'd in their ireful hands,
Are at our backs; and therefore hence amain.

Exe. Away! for vengeance comes along with
them.
Nay, stay not to expostulate; make speed,
Or else come after: I'll away before. 136

K. Hen. Nay, take me with thee, good sweet
Exeter:
Not that I fear to stay, but love to go
Whither the queen intends. Forward! away!

[Exeunt.]
SCENE VI.—The Same.

**A loud alarum. Enter Clifford, wounded.**

*Cliff.* Here burns my candle out; ay, here it dies,
Which, while it lasted, gave King Henry light.
O Lancaster! I fear thy overthrow
More than by my body's parting with my soul. 4
My love and fear gl'd many friends to see;
And, now I fall, thy tough commixtures melt,
Impairing Henry, strengthening misprond York:
The common people swarm like summer flies; 8
And whither fly the gnats but to the sun?
And who shines now but Henry's enemies?
O Phoebus! hast thou never given consent
That Phaethon should check thy fiery steeds, 12
Thy burning car never had scorched the earth;
And, Henry, hast thou sware't as kings should do,
Or as thy father and his father did,
Giving no ground unto the house of York, 16
They never then had sprung like summer flies;
I and ten thousand in this luckless realm
Had left no mourning widows for our death,
And thou this day hast kept thy chair in peace.
For what doth cherish weeds but gentle air? 21
And what makes robbers bold but too much lenity?

Boastless are plaints, and cureless are my wounds;
No way to fly, nor strength to hold out flight: 24
The foe is merciless, and will not pity;
For at their hands I have deserved no pity.
The air hath got into my deadly wounds,
And much effuse of blood doth make me faint.
Come, York and Richard, Warwick and the rest;
I stabb'd your fathers' bosoms, split my breast. 32

[He faints.]


**Egdw.** Now breathe we, lords: good fortune bids us pause,
And smooth the frowns of war with peaceful looks.

Some troops pursue the bloody-minded queen,
That led calm Henry, though he were a king,
As doth a sail, fill'd with a fretting gust,
Command an argosy to stem the waves. 36
But think you, lords, that Clifford fled with them?
**War.** No, 'tis impossible he should escape;
For, though before his face I speak the words,
Your brother Richard mark'd him for the grave;
And wheresoe'er he is, he's surely dead. 41

[Clifford groans and dies.]

**Egdw.** Whose soul is that which takes her heavy leave?

**Rich.** A deadly groan, like life and death's departing.
**Egdw.** See who it is: and now the battle's ended.

If friend or foe let him be gently us'd.
**Rich.** Revoke that doom of mercy, for 'tis Clifford;
Who not contented that he lopp'd the branch
In hewing Rutland when his leaves put forth, 48
But set his murd'ring knife unto the root,
From whence that tender spray did sweetly spring;
I mean our princely father, Duke of York.
**War.** From off the gates of York fetch down the head,
Your father's head, which Clifford placed there;
Instead whereof let this supply the room:
Measure for measure must be answered.

**Egdw.** Bring forth that fatal screech-owl to our house, 56
That nothing sung but death to us and ours:
Now death shall stop his dismal threatening sound,
And his ill-boding tongue no more shall speak.
[Attendants bring the body forward.]

**War.** I think his understanding is bereft. 60
Speak, Clifford; dost thou know who speaks to thee?

Dark cloudy death o'ershades his beams of life,
And he nor sees, nor hears us what we say.
**Rich.** O! would he did; and so perhaps he doth:
'tis but his policy to counterfeit,
Because he would avoid such bitter taunts
Which in the time of death he gave our father.
**Geo.** If so thou think'st, vex him with eager words.

**Rich.** Clifford! ask mercy and obtain no grace.
**Egdw.** Clifford! repent in boastless penitence.
**War.** Clifford! devise excuses for thy faults.
**Geo.** While we devise f ell tortures for thy faults.

**Rich.** Thou didst love York, and I am son to York.

**Egdw.** Thou pitiedst Rutland, I will pity thee.
**Geo.** Where's Captain Margaret, to fence you now?

**War.** They mock thee, Clifford: swear thou wast not.

**Rich.** What! not an oath? nay, then the world goes hard.

When Clifford cannot spare his friends an oath,
I know by that he's dead; and, by my soul,
If this right hand would buy two hours' life, 80
That I in all despite might rile at him,
This hand should chop it off, and with the issuing blood

664
Enter King Henry, disguised, with a prayer-book.

K. Hen. From Scotland am I stol’n, even of pure love,
To greet mine own land with my wishful sight.
No, Harry, Harry, ‘ts no land of thine;
Thy place is fill’d, thy sceptre wrung from thee,
Thy balm wash’d off wherewith thou wast
anointed:
No bended knee will call thee Caesar now,
No humble suitors press to speak for right,
No, not a man comes for redress of thee;
For how can I help them, and not myself?
First Keep. Ay, here’s a deer whose skin’s a
keeper’s fee:
This is the quondam king; let’s seize upon him.
K. Hen. Let me embrace thee, sour adversity,
For wise men say it is the wisest course.
Sec. Keep. Why linger we? let us lay hands
upon him.
First Keep. Forbear awhile; we’ll hear a
little more.
K. Hen. My queen and son are gone to
France for aid;
And, as I hear, the great commanding Warwick
Is thither gone, to crave the French king’s sister
To wife for Edward. If this news be true,
Poor queen and son, your labour is but lost;
For Warwick is a subtle orator,
And Lewis a prince soon won with moving
words.
By this account then Margaret may win him,
For she’s a woman to be pitied much:
Her sighs will make a battery in his breast;
Her tears will pierce into a marble heart;
The tiger will be mild whiles she doth mourn;
And Nero will be tainted with remorse.
To hear and see her plaints, her brimish tears.
Ay, but she’s come to beg; Warwick, to give:
She on his left side craving aid for Henry;
He on his right asking a wife for Edward.
She weeps, and says her Henry is depose’d;
He smiles, and says his Edward is install’d;
That she, poor wretch, for grief can speak no
more:
Whiles Warwick tells his title, smooths the
wrong,
Inferrath arguments of mighty strength,
And in conclusion wins the king from her,
With promise of his sister, and what else,
To strengthen and support King Edward’s place.
O Margaret! thus ’twill be; and thou, poor soul,
Art then forsaken, as thou went’st forlorn.
Sec. Keep. Say, what art thou, that talk’st of
kings and queens?
K. Hen. More than I seem, and less than I
was born to:
A man at least, for less I should not be;
And men may talk of kings, and why not I?  
Sec. Keep. Ay, but thou talk'st as if thou wert a king.
K. Hen. Why, so I am, in mind; and that's enough.
Sec. Keep. But, if thou be a king, where is thy crown?
K. Hen. My crown is in my heart, not on my head;
Not deck'd with diamonds and Indian stones,
Nor to be seen: my crown is call'd content; 64
A crown it is that seldom kings enjoy.
Sec. Keep. Well, if you be a king crown'd with content,
Your crown content and you must be contented
To go along with us; for, as we think, 68
You are the king King Edward hath depos'd;
And we his subjects, sworn in all allegiance,
Will apprehend you as his enemy.
K. Hen. But did you never swear, and break an oath?
Sec. Keep. No, never such an oath; nor will not now.
K. Hen. Where did you dwell when I was King of England?
Sec. Keep. Here in this country, where we now remain.
K. Hen. I was anointed king at nine months old; 70
My father and my grandfather were kings,
And you were sworn true subjects unto me:
And tell me, then, have you not broke your oaths?
First Keep. No; 80
For we were subjects but while you were king.
K. Hen. Why, am I dead? do I not breathe a man?
Ahl simple men, you know not what you swear.
Look, as I blow this feather from my face, 84
And as the air blows it to me again,
Obeying with my wind when I do blow,
And yielding to another when it blows,
Commanded always by the greater gust; 88
Such is the lightness of you common men.
But do not break your oaths; for of that sin
My mild entreaty shall not make you guilty.
Go where you will, the king's shall be commanded;
And be you kings: command, and I'll obey. 93
First Keep. We are true subjects to the king,
King Edward.
K. Hen. So would you be again to Henry,
If he were seated as King Edward is.
First Keep. We charge you, in God's name, 96
And in the king's,
To go with us unto the officers.

K. Hen. In God's name, lead; your king's name be obey'd;
And what God will, that let your king perform;
And what he will, I humbly yield unto. [Execunt.

SCENE II.—London. A Room in the Palace.

Enter King Edward, Gloucester, Clarence, and Lady Grey.

K. Edw. Brother of Gloucester, at Saint Alban's field
This lady's husband, Sir John Grey, was slain,
His lands then seiz'd on by the conqueror:
Her suit is now, to repossess those lands; 4
Which we in justice cannot well deny,
Because in quarrel of the house of York
The worthy gentleman did lose his life.

Glo. Your highness shall do well to grant her suit; 8
It were dishonour to deny it her.

K. Edw. It were no less: but yet I'll make a pause.

Glo. [Aside to Clarence.] Yea; is it so?
I see the lady hath a thing to grant 12
Before the king will grant her humble suit.

Clar. [Aside to Gloucester.] He knows the game:
How true he keeps the wind!

Glo. [Aside to Clarence.] Silence!
K. Edw. Widow, we will consider of your suit, 16
And come some other time to know our mind.

L. Grey. Right gracious lord, I cannot brook delay:
May it please your highness to resolve me now,
And what your pleasure is shall satisfy me. 20

Glo. [Aside to Clarence.] Ay, widow? then
I'll warrant you all your lands,
An if what pleases him shall pleasure you,
Fight closer, or, good faith, you'll catch a blow.

Clar. [Aside to Gloucester.] I fear her not,
Unless she chance to fall. 24

Glo. [Aside to Clarence.] God forbid that!
For he'll take vantages.


Clar. [Aside to Gloucester.] I think he means to beg a child of her.

Glo. [Aside to Clarence.] Nay, whip me, then;
He rather give her two. 28

L. Grey. Three, my most gracious lord.

Glo. [Aside to Clarence.] You shall have four,
If you'll be ruled by him.

K. Edw. 'Twere pity they should lose their father's lands.

L. Grey. Be pitiful, dread lord, and grant it then. 32
K. Edw. Lords, give us leave: I'll try this widow's wit.

Glo. [Aside to CLARENCE.] Ay, good leave have you; for you will have leave,

Till youth take leave and leave you to the crutch. [Retiring with CLARENCE.

K. Edw. Now, tell me, madam, do you love your children? 36

L. Grey. Ay, full as dearly as I love myself.

K. Edw. And would you not do much to do them good?

L. Grey. To do them good I would sustain

some harm.

K. Edw. Then get your husband's lands, to do them good.

40

L. Grey. Therefore I came unto your majesty.

K. Edw. I'll tell you how these lands are to be

got.

L. Grey. So shall you bind me to your high-

ness' service.

K. Edw. What service wilt thou do me, if I give them?

L. Grey. What you command, that rests in

me to do.

K. Edw. But you will take exceptions to my boon.

L. Grey. No, gracious lord, except I cannot
do it.

K. Edw. Ay, but thou canst do what I mean
to ask.

48

L. Grey. Why, then I will do what your Grace

commands.

Glo. [Aside to CLARENCE.] He plies her hard;

and much rain wears the marble.

Clar. [Aside to GLOUCESTER.] As red as fire

racy, then her wax must melt.

L. Grey. Why stops my lord? shall I not

hear my task?

52

K. Edw. An easy task: 'tis but to love a

king.

L. Grey. That's soon perform'd, because I am a subject.

K. Edw. Why then, thy husband's lands I freely give thee.

L. Grey. I take my leave with many thousand thanks.

56

Glo. [Aside to CLARENCE.] The match is made; she seals it with a curtsy.

K. Edw. But stay thee; 'tis the fruits of love I mean.

L. Grey. The fruits of love I mean, my loving

liege.

K. Edw. Ay, but, I fear me, in another sense. What love think'st thou I sue so much to get?

L. Grey. My love till death, my humble thanks, my prayers:

That love which virtue begs and virtue grants.

K. Edw. No, by my troth, I did not mean such love.

64

L. Grey. Why, then you mean not as I thought you did.

K. Edw. But now you partly may perceive

my mind.

L. Grey. My mind will never grant what I perceive

Your highness aims at, if I aim aright.

68

K. Edw. To tell thee plain, I aim to lie with thee.

L. Grey. To tell you plain, I had rather lie in prison.

K. Edw. Why, then thou shalt not have thy husband's lands.

L. Grey. Why, then mine honesty shall be

my dower;

For by that loss I will not purchase them.

K. Edw. Therein thou wrong'st thy children

mightly.

L. Grey. Herein your highness wrongs both them and me.

But, mighty lord, this merry inclination

Accords not with the sadness of my suit:

Please you dismiss me, either with 'ay,' or 'no.'

K. Edw. Ay, if thou wilt say 'ay' to my re-

quest;

No, if thou dost say 'no' to my demand.

80

L. Grey. Then, no, my lord. My suit is at an end.

Glo. [Aside to CLARENCE.] The widow likes him not, she knits her brows.

Clar. [Aside to GLOUCESTER.] He is the bluntest wooer in Christendom.

K. Edw. [Aside.] Her looks do argue her re-

plete with modesty;

84

Her words do show her wit incomparable;

All her perfections challenge sovereignty:

One way or other, she is for a king;

And she shall be my love, or else my queen.

Say that King Edward take thee for his queen?

L. Grey. 'Tis better said than done, my gracious lord:

I am a subject fit to jest withal,

But far unfit to be a sovereign.

92

K. Edw. Sweet widow, by my state I swear to thee,

I speak no more than what my soul intends;

And that is, to enjoy thee for my love.

L. Grey. And that is more than I will yield unto.

96

I know I am too mean to be your queen,

And yet too good to be your concubine.

K. Edw. You cavil, widow: I did mean, my queen.

L. Grey. 'Twill grieve your Grace my sons

should call you father.
K. Edw. No more than when my daughters call thee mother.
Thou art a widow, and thou hast some children;
And, by God’s mother, I, being but a bachelor,
Have other some: why, ’tis a happy thing
To be the father unto many sons.
Answer no more, for thou shalt be my queen.
Glo. [Aside to Clarence.] The ghostly father now hath done his shrift.
Clar. [Aside to Gloucester.] When he was made a shriner, ’twas for shift.
K. Edw. Brothers, you muse what chair we two have had.
Glo. The widow likes it not, for she looks very sad.
K. Edw. You’d think it strange if I should marry her.
Clar. To whom, my lord?
K. Edw. Why, Clarence, to myself.
Glo. That would be ten days’ wonder at the least.
Clar. That’s a day longer than a wonder lasts.
Glo. By so much is the wonder in extremes.
K. Edw. Well, jest on, brothers: I can tell you both
Her suit is granted for her husband’s lands.

Enter a Nobleman.

Nob. My gracious lord, Henry your foe is taken,
And brought as prisoner to your palace gate.
K. Edw. See that he be convey’d unto the Tower:
And go we, brothers, to the man that took him,
To question of his apprehension.
Widow, go you along. Lords, use her honourably.
[Exeunt all but Gloucester.
Glo. Ay, Edward will use women honourably.
Would he were wasted, marrow, bones, and all,
That from his loins no hopeful branch may spring,
To cross me from the golden time I look for!
And yet, between my soul’s desire and me—
The lustful Edward’s title buried,—
Is Clarence, Henry, and his son young Edward,
And all the unlock’d for issue of their bodies,
To take their rooms, ere I can place myself:—
A cold premeditation for my purpose!
Why then, I do but dream on sovereignty;
Like one that stands upon a promontory,
And spies a far-off shore where he would tread,
Wishing his foot were equal with his eye;
And chides the sea that sunders him from thence,
Saying, he’ll lade it dry to have his way:
So do I wish the crown, being so far off,
And so I chide the means that keep me from it,
And so I say I’ll cut the causes off,
Flattering me with impossibilities.
My eye’s too quick, my heart overween too much,
Unless my hand and strength could equal them.
Well, say there is no kingdom then for Richard;
What other pleasure can the world afford?
I’ll make my heaven in a lady’s lap,
And deck my body in gay ornaments,
And witch sweet ladies with my words and looks.
O miserable thought! and more unlikely
Than to accomplish twenty golden crowns.
Why, love foreswear me in my mother’s womb:
And, for I should not deal in her soft laws,
She did corrupt frail nature with some bire,
To shrink mine arm up like a wither’d shrub;
To make an envious mountain on my back,
Where sits deformity to mock my body:
To shape my legs of an unequal size;
To disproportion me in every part,
Like to a chaos, or an unlik’d bear-whelp
That carries no impression like the dam.
And am I then a man to be belov’d?
O monstrous fault! to harbour such a thought.
Then, since this earth affords no joy to me
But to command, to check, to o’erbear such
As are of better person than myself,
I’ll make my heaven to dream upon the crown;
And, whiles I live, to account this world but hell,
Until my mis-shap’d trunk that bears this head
Be round impaled with a glorious crown.
And yet I know not how to get the crown,
For many lives stand between me and home:
And I, like one lost in a thorny wood,
That rents the thorns and is rent with the thorns,
Seeking a way and straying from the way;
Not knowing how to find the open air,
But toiling desperately to find it out,
Torment myself to catch the English crown:
And from that torment I will free myself,
Or kew my way out with a bloody axe.
Why, I can smile, and murder while I smile,
And cry, ‘Content,’ to that which grieves my heart,
And wet my cheeks with artificial tears,
And frame my face to all occasions.
I’ll drown more sailors than the mermaid shall;
I’ll slay more gazers than the basilisk;
I’ll play the orator as well as Nestor,
Deceive more sily than Ulysses could,
And, like a Simon, take another Troy.
I can add colours to the chameleon,
Change shapes with Proteus for advantages,
And set the mur’d rous Machiavel to school.
Can I do this, and cannot get a crown?
Tut! were it further off, I'll pluck it down.

[Exit.

SCENE III.—France. A Room in the Palace.

Flourish. Enter Lewis the French King, his sister Lady Bona, attended: his Admiral called Bourbon; the King takes his state. Then enter Queen Margaret, Prince Edward, and the Earl of Oxford. Lewis sits, and riseth up again.

K. Lew. Fair Queen of England, worthy Margaret,
Sit down with us: it ill befits thy state
And birth, that thou shouldst stand while
Lewis doth sit.

Q. Mar. No, mighty King of France: now Margaret
Must strike her sail, and learn a while to serve
Where kings command. I was, I must confess,
Great Albion's queen in former golden days;
But now mishance hath trod my title down,
And with dishonour laid me on the ground,
Where I must take like seat unto my fortune,
And to my humble seat conform myself.

K. Lew. Why, say, fair queen, whence springs this deep despair?

Q. Mar. From such a cause as fills mine eyes with tears
And stops my tongue, while heart is drown'd in cares.

K. Lew. Whate'er it be, be thou still like thyself,
And sit thee by our side. [Seats her by him.]

Yield not thy neck
To fortune's yoke, but let thy dauntless mind
Still ride in triumph over all mischance.
Be plain, Queen Margaret, and tell thy grief;
It shall be eas'd, if France can yield relief.

Q. Mar. Those gracious words revive my drooping thoughts,
And give my tongue-tied sorrows leave to speak.
Now, therefore, be it known to noble Lewis,
That Henry, sole possessor of my love,
Is of a king become a banish'd man,
And forc'd to live in Scotland a forlorn;
While proud ambitious Edward Duke of York
Usurps the regal title and the seat
Of England's true-anointed lawful king.
This is the cause that I, poor Margaret,
With this my son, Prince Edward, Henry's heir,
Am come to crave thy just and lawful aid;
And if thou fail us, all our hope is done.
Scotland hath will to help, but cannot help;
Our people and our peers are both misled,
Our treasure seiz'd, our soldiers put to flight,

And, as thou seest, ourselves in heavy plight.

K. Lew. Renowned queen, with patience calm the storm,
While we bethink a means to break it off.

Q. Mar. The more we stay, the stronger grows our foe.

K. Lew. The more I stay, the more I'll succour thee.

Q. Mar. O! but impatience waiteth on true sorrow:
And see where comes the breeder of my sorrow.

Enter Warwick, attended.

K. Lew. What's he, approacheth boldly to our presence?


K. Lew. Welcome, brave Warwick! What brings thee to France?

[Descending from his state. Queen Margaret rises.

Q. Mar. Ay, now begins a second storm to rise;
For this is he that moves both wind and tide.

War. From worthy Edward, King of Albion,
My lord and sovereign, and thy vowed friend,
I come, in kindness and unfeigned love,
First, to do greetings to thy royal person;
And then to crave a league of amity;
And lastly to confirm that amity
With nuptial knot, if thou vouchsafe to grant
That virtuous Lady Bona, thy fair sister,
To England's king in lawful marriage.

Q. Mar. If that go forward, Henry's hope is done.

War. [To Bona.] And, gracious madam, in our king's behalf,
I am commanded, with your leave and favour,
Humbly to kiss your hand, and with my tongue
To tell the passion of my sov'reign's heart;
Where fame, late entering at his heedful ears,
Hath plac'd thy beauty's image and thy virtue.

Q. Mar. King Lewis and Lady Bona, hear me speak,

Before you answer Warwick. His demand
Springs not from Edward's well-meant honest love,
But from deceit bred by necessity;
For how can tyrants safely govern home,
Unless abroad they purchase great alliance?
To prove him tyrant this reason may suffice,
That Henry liveth still; but were he dead,
Yet here Prince Edward stands, King Henry's son.

Look, therefore, Lewis, that by this league and marriage
Thou draw not on thy danger and dishonour;
War. The more that Henry was unfortunate.
K. Lew. Then further, all dissembling set aside,
Tell me for truth the measure of his love
Unto our sister Bona.
War. Such it seems
As may be seem a monarch like himself.
Myself have often heard him say and swear
That this his love was an eternal plant,
Whereof the root was fix'd in virtue's ground,
The leaves and fruit maintain'd with beauty's sun,
Exempt from envy, but not from disdain,
Unless the Lady Bona quit his pain.
K. Lew. Now, sister, let us hear your firm resolve.
Bona. Your grant, or your denial, shall be mine:
[To WARWICK.] Yet I confess that often ere this day,
When I have heard your king's desert recounted,
Mine ear hath tempted judgment to desire.
K. Lew. Then, Warwick, thus: our sister shall be Edward's;
And now forthwith shall articles be drawn
Touching the jointure that your king must make,
Which with her dowry shall be counterpois'd.
Draw near, Queen Margaret, and be a witness
That Bona shall be wife to the English king.
Prince. To Edward, but not to the English king.
Q. Mar. Deceitful Warwick! it was thy device
By this alliance to make void my suit:
Before thy coming Lewis was Henry's friend.
K. Lew. And still is friend to him and Margaret:
But if your title to the crown be weak,
As may appear by Edward's good success,
Then 'tis but reason that I be releas'd
From giving aid which late I promised.
Yet shall you have all kindness at my hand
That your estate requires and mine can yield.
War. Henry now lives in Scotland at his ease,
Where having nothing, nothing can he lose.
And as for you yourself, our quandam queen,
You have a father able to maintain you,
And better 'twere you troubled him than France.
Q. Mar. Peace! impudent and shameless Warwick, peace!
Proud setter up and puller down of kings;
I will not hence, till, with my talk and tears,
Both full of truth, I make King Lewis behold
Thy sly conveyance and thy lord's false love;
For both of you are birds of selfsame feather.
[The stand aloof.
K. Lew. Warwick, this is some post to us or thee.
Enter a Post.

Mess. My lord ambassador, these letters are for you,
Sent from your brother, Marquess Montague:
These from our king unto your majesty; 165
[To MARGARET.] And, madam, these for you;
from whom I know not.

[They all read their letters.

Oxf. I like it well that our fair queen and mistress
Smiles at her news, while Warwick frowns at his. 168

Prince. Nay, mark how Lewis stamps as he were nettled:
I hope all's for the best.
K. Lew. Warwick, what are thy news? and yours, fair queen?
Q. Mar. Mine, such as fill my heart with unhop'd joys.
War. Mine, full of sorrow and heart's discontent.
K. Lew. What! has your king married the Lady Grey?
And now, to soothe thy forgery and his,
Sends me a paper to persuade me patience? 176
Is this the alliance that he seeks with France?
Dare he presume to scorn us in this manner?
Q. Mar. I told your majesty as much before:
This proveth Edward's love and Warwick's honesty. 180

War. King Lewis, I here protest, in sight of heaven,
And by the hope I have of heavenly bliss,
That I am clear from this misdeed of Edward's;
No more my king, for he dishonours me; 184
But most himself, if he could see his shame.
Did I forget that by the house of York
My father came untimely to his death?
Did I let pass the abuse done to my niece? 188
Did I impale him with the regal crown?
Did I put Henry from his native right?
And am I guerdon'd at the last with shame?
Shame on himself! for my desert is honour: 192
And, to repair my honour, lost for him,
I here renounce him and return to Henry.
My noble queen, let former grudges pass,
And henceforth I am thy true servitor. 196
I will revenge his wrong to Lady Bona,
And replant Henry in his former state.
Q. Mar. Warwick, these words have turn'd my hate to love;
And I forgive and quite forget old faults, 200
And joy that thou becom'st King Henry's friend.
War. So much his friend, ay, his unfeigned friend,
That, if King Lewis vouchsafe to furnish us
With some few bands of chosen soldiers, 204
I'll undertake to land them on our coast,
And force the tyrant from his seat by war.
'Tis not his new-made bride shall succour him:
And as for Clarence, as my letters tell me, 208
He's very likely now to fall from him,
For matching more for wanton lust than honour,
Or than for strength and safety of our country.
Bona. Dear brother, how shall Bona be reveng'd, 212
But by thy help to this distressed queen?
Q. Mar. Renowned prince, how shall poor Henry live,
Unless thou rescue him from foul despair?
Bona. My quarrel and this English queen's are one. 216
War. And mine, fair Lady Bona, joins with yours.
K. Lew. And mine with hers, and thine and Margaret's.
Therefore, at last, I firmly am resolv'd
You shall have aid.
Q. Mar. Let me give humble thanks for all at once.
K. Lew. Then, England's messenger, return in post,
And tell false Edward, thy supposed king,
That Lewis of France is sending over masquers,
To revel it with him and his new bride. 225
Thou seest what's past; go fear thy kingdom.
Bona. Tell him, in hope he'll prove a widower shortly,
I'll wear the willow garland for his sake. 228
Q. Mar. Tell him, my mourning weeds are laid aside,
And I am ready to put armour on.
War. Tell him from me, that he hath done me wrong,
And therefore I'll uncrown him ere't be long.
There's thy reward: be gone. [Exit Messenger.
K. Lew. But, Warwick, 233
Thou and Oxford, with five thousand men,
Shall cross the seas, and bid false Edward battle;
And, as occasion serves, this noble queen 236
And prince shall follow with a fresh supply.
Yet ere thou go, but answer me one doubt:
What pledge have we of thy firm loyalty?
War. This shall assure my constant loyalty:
That if our queen and this young prince agree,
I'll join mine eldest daughter and my joy
To him forthwith in holy wedlock bands.
Q. Mar. Yes, I agree, and thank you for your motion. 244
Son Edward, she is fair and virtuous,
Therefore delay not, give thy hand to Warwick;
And, with thy hand, thy faith irrevocable,
That only Warwick's daughter shall be thine.
Prince. Yes, I accept her, for she well deserves it; 249
And here, to pledge my vow, I give my hand.

[He gives his hand to Warwick.

K. Lew. Why stay we now? These soldiers shall be levied,
And thou, Lord Bourbon, our high admiral, 252
Shall waft them over with our royal fleet.
I long till Edward fall by war's mischance,
For mocking marriage with a dame of France.

[Exeunt all except Warwick.

War. I came from Edward as ambassador,
But I return his sworn and mortal foe: 257
Matter of marriage was the charge he gave me,
But dreadful war shall answer his demand.
Had he none else to make a stale but me? 260
Then none but I shall turn his jest to sorrow.
I was the chief that rous'd him to the crown,
And I'll be chief to bring him down again:
Not that I pity Henry's misery, 264
But seek revenge on Edward's mockery. [Exit.

ACT IV.


Enter Gloucester, Clarence, Somerset, Montague, and Others.

Glo. Now tell me, brother Clarence, what you think you
Of this new marriage with the Lady Grey?
Hath not our brother made a worthy choice?
Clar. Alas! you know, 'tis far from hence to France;
How could he stay till Warwick made return?
Som. My lords, forbear this talk; here comes
the king.
Glo. And his well-chosen bride.
Clar. I mind to tell him plainly what I think.

Flourish. Enter King Edward, attended;
Lady Grey, as Queen; Pembroke, Stafford, Hastings, and Others.

K. Edw. Now, brother Clarence, how like you
That you stand pensive, as half discontented?
Clar. As well as Lewis of France, or the Earl
of Warwick;
Which are so weak of courage and in judgment
That they'll take no offence at our abuse. 13
K. Edw. Suppose they take offence without a cause,
They are but Lewis and Warwick: I am Edward,
Your king and Warwick's, and must have my will.

Glo. And you shall have your will, because our king:
Yet hasty marriage seldom proveth well.
K. Edw. Yea, brother Richard, are you offended too?
Glo. Not I: 20
No, God forbid, that I should wish them sever'd
Whom God hath join'd together; ay, and 'twere pity
To sunder them that yoke so well together.
K. Edw. Setting your scorns and your mis-like aside,
Tell me some reason why the Lady Grey
Should not become my wife and England's queen:
And you too, Somerset and Montague,
Speak freely what you think.

Clar. Then this is mine opinion: that King
Lewis
Becomes your enemy for mocking him
About the marriage of the Lady Bona.
Glo. And Warwick, doing what you gave in charge,
Is now dishonoured by this new marriage.
K. Edw. What if both Lewis and Warwick be appeas'd
By such invention as I can devise?
Mont. Yet to have join'd with France in such alliance
Would more have strengthen'd this our commonwealth
'Gainst foreign storms, than any home-bred marriage.
Hast. Why, knows not Montague, that of itself
England is safe, if true within itself? 40
Mont. Yes; but the safer when 'tis back'd
with France.
Hast. 'Tis better using France than trusting France:
Let us be back'd with God and with the seas
Which he hath given for fence impregnable, 44
And with their help only defend ourselves:
In them and in ourselves our safety lies.
Clar. For this one speech Lord Hastings well deserves
To have the heir of the Lord Hungerford. 48
K. Edw. Ay, what of that? it was my will
and grant;
And for this once my will shall stand for law.
Glo. And yet methinks your Grace hath not done well,
To give the heir and daughter of Lord Scales 52
Unto the brother of your loving bride:
She better would have fitted me or Clarence:
But in your bride you bury brotherhood.
Clar. Or else you would not have bestow’d
the heir
Of the Lord Bonville on your new wife’s son,
And leave your brothers to go speed elsewhere.
K. Edw. Alas, poor Clarence, is it for a wife
That thou art malecontent? I will provide thee.
Clar. In choosing for yourself you show’d
your judgment,
Which being shallow, you shall give me leave
To play the broker on mine own behalf;
And to that end I shortly mind to leave you.
K. Edw. Leave me, or tarry, Edward will be
king,
And not be tied unto his brother’s will.
Q. Eliz. My lords, before it pleas’d his majesty
To raise my state to title of a queen,
Do me but right, and you must all-confess
That I was not ignoble of descent;
And meaner than myself have had like fortune.
But as this title honours me and mine,
So your dislikes, to whom I would be pleasing,
Do cloud my joys with danger and with sorrow.
K. Edw. My love, forbear to fawn upon their
frowns:
What danger or what sorrow can befall thee,
So long as Edward is thy constant friend,
And their true sovereign, whom they must obey?
Nay, whom they shall obey, and love thee too,
Unless they seek for hatred at my hands;
Which if they do, yet will I keep thee safe,
And they shall feel the vengeance of my wrath.
Glo. [Aside.] I hear, yet say not much, but
think the more.

Enter a Messenger.
K. Edw. Now, messenger, what letters or
what news
From France?
Mess. My sovereign liege, no letters; and
few words;
But such as I, without your special pardon,
Dare not relate.
K. Edw. Go to, we pardon thee: therefore, in
brief,
Tell me their words as near as thou canst guess
them.
What answer makes King Lewis unto our
letters?
Mess. At my depart these were his very
words:
‘Go tell false Edward, thy supposed king,
That Lewis of France is sending over masquers,
To revel it with him and his new bride.’
K. Edw. Is Lewis so brave? belike he thinks
me Henry.
But what said Lady Bona to my marriage?

Mess. These were her words, utter’d with
mild disdain:
‘Tell him, in hope he ’ll prove a widower shortly,
I ’ll wear the willow garland for his sake.’
K. Edw. I blame not her, she could say little
less;
She had the wrong. But what said Henry’s
queen?
For I have heard that she was there in place.
Mess. ‘Tell him,’ quoth she, ‘my mourning
weeds are done,
And I am ready to put armour on.’
K. Edw. Belike she minds to play the Amazon.
But what said Warwick to these injuries?
Mess. He, more incens’d against your majesty
Than all the rest, discharg’d me with these
words:
‘Tell him from me that he hath done me
wrong,
And therefore I ’ll uncrown him ere ’t be long.’
K. Edw. Hal’st thou the traitor breathe out
so proud words?
Well, I will arm me, being thus forewarn’d:
They shall have wars, and pay for their pre-
sumption.
But say, is Warwick friends with Margaret?
Mess. Ay, gracious sovereign; they are so
lunk’d in friendship,
That young Prince Edward marries Warwick’s
daughter.
Clar. Belike the elder; Clarence will have
the younger.
Now, brother king, farewell, and sit you fast,
For I will hence to Warwick’s other daughter;
That, though I want a kingdom, yet in marriage
I may not prove inferior to yourself.
You, that love me and Warwick, follow me.

[Exit CLARENCE, and SOMERSET follows.
Glo. [Aside.] Not I.
My thoughts aim at a further matter; I
Stay not for love of Edward, but the crown.
K. Edw. Clarence and Somerset both gone
to Warwick!
Yet am I arm’d against the worst can happen,
And haste is needful in this desperate case.
Pembroke and Stafford, you in our behalf
Go levy men, and make prepare for war:
They are already, or quickly will be landed:
Myself in person will straight follow you,

[Exeunt PEMBROKE and STAFFORD.
But ere I go, Hastings and Montague,
Resolve my doubt. You twain, of all the
rest,
Are near to Warwick by blood, and by alliance:
Tell me if you love Warwick more than me?
If it be so, then both depart to him;

673
Third Part of King Henry the Sixth

Act IV, Sc. I.

I rather wish you foes than hollow friends: But if you mind to hold your true obedience, Give me assurance with some friendly vow: That I may never have you in suspect. Mont. So God help Montague as he proves true! Hast. And Hastings as he favours Edward's cause! K. Edw. Now, brother Richard, will you stand by us? Glo. Ay, in despite of all that shall withstand you. K. Edw. Why, so then am I sure of victory. Now therefore let us hence; and lose no hour Till we meet Warwick with his foreign power. [Exeunt.

Scene II.—A Plain in Warwickshire.

Enter Warwick and Oxford, with French and other Forces.

War. Trust me, my lord, all hitherto goes well; The common people by numbers swarm to us.

Enter Clarence and Somerset.

But see where Somerset and Clarence come! Speak suddenly, my lords, are we all friends? Clar. Fear not that, my lord. War. Then, gentle Clarence, welcome unto Warwick; And welcome, Somerset: I hold it cowardice, To rest mistrustful where a noble heart Hath pawn'd an open hand in sign of love; Else might I think that Clarence, Edward's brother, Were but a feigned friend to our proceedings: But welcome, sweet Clarence; my daughter shall be thine. And now what rests, but in night's coverture, Thy brother being carelessly encamp'd, His soldiers lurking in the towns about, And but attended by a simple guard, We may surprise and take him at our pleasure? Our scouts have found the adventure very easy: That as Ulysses, and stout Diomedes, With slight and manhood stole to Rhesus' tents, And brought from thence the Thracian fatal steeds; So we, well cover'd with the night's black mantle, At unawares may beat down Edward's guard, And seize himself: I say not, slaughter him. For I intend but only to surprise him. You, that will follow me to this attempt,

Scene III.—Edward's Camp near Warwick.

Enter certain Watchmen to guard the King's tent.

First Watch. Come on, my masters, each man take his stand; The King, by this, is set him down to sleep. Sec. Watch. What, will he not to bed? First Watch. Why, no: for he hath made a solemn vow Never to lie and take his natural rest Till Warwick or himself be quite suppress'd. Sec. Watch. To-morrow then belike shall be the day, If Warwick be so near as men report. Third Watch. But say, I pray, what nobleman is that That with the King here resteth in his tent? First Watch. 'Tis the Lord Hastings, the King's chiefest friend. Third Watch. O! is it so? But why commands the King That his chief followers lodge in towns about him, While he himself keeps in the cold field? Sec. Watch. 'Tis the more honour, because the more dangerous. Third Watch. Ay, but give me worship and quietness; I like it better than a dangerous honour. If Warwick knew in what estate he stands, 'Tis to be doubted he would waken him. First Watch. Unless our halberds did shut up his passage. Sec. Watch. Ay; wherefore else guard we his royal tent, But to defend his person from night-foes?

Enter Warwick, Clarence, Oxford, Somerset, and Forces.

War. This is his tent; and see where stand his guard. Courage, my masters! honour now or never! But follow me, and Edward shall be ours. First Watch. Who goes there? Sec. Watch. Stay, or thou diest. [Warwick and the rest cry all, 'Warwick! Warwick!' and set upon the Guard; who fly, crying, 'Arm! Arm!' Warwick and the rest following them.
Drums beating, and Trumpets sounding, 
re-enter WARWICK and the rest, bringing 
the KING out in his gown, sitting in a 
chair. GLOUCESTER and HASTINGS fly 
over the stage.

Som.  What are they that fly there? 
War. Richard and Hastings: let them go; 
here's the duke. 28 
K. Edw. The duke! Why, Warwick, when 
we parted last, 
Thou call'dst me king!
War. Ay, but the case is alter'd: 
When you disgrac'd me in my embassade, 
Then I degraded you from being king, 32 
And come now to create you Duke of York. 
Alas! how should you govern any kingdom, 
That know not how to use ambassadors, 
Nor how to be contented with one wife, 36 
Nor how to use your brothers brotherly, 
Nor how to study for the people's welfare, 
Nor how to shroud yourself from enemies? 
K. Edw. Yea, brother of Clarence, art thou 
here too? 40 
Nay, then, I see that Edward needs must 
down. 
Yet, Warwick, in despite of all mischance, 
Of thee thyself, and all thy complices, 
Edward will always bear himself as king: 44 
Though Fortune's malice overthrow my 
state, 
My mind exceeds the compass of her wheel.
War. Then, for his mind, be Edward Eng- 
land's king: 
[Take off his crown. But Henry now shall wear the English crown, 48 
And be true king indeed, thou but the shadow. 
My Lord of Somerset, at my request, 
See that forthwith Duke Edward be convey'd 
Unto my brother, Archbishop of York. 52 
When I have fought with Pembroke and his 
followers, 
I'll follow you, and tell what answer 
Lewis and the Lady Bona send to him: 
Now, for a while farewell, good Duke of 
York. 56 
K. Edw. What fates impose, that men must 
needs abide; 
It boote not to resist both wind and tide. 
[Exit, led out; SOMERSET with him.

Oxf. What now remains, my lords, for us to 
do, 
But march to London with our soldiers? 60 
War. Ay, that's the first thing that we have 
to do; 
To free King Henry from imprisonment, 
And see him seated in the regal throne. 
[Exeunt.

SCENE IV.—London. A Room in the Palace.
Enter QUEEN ELIZABETH and RIVERS.
Riv. Madam, what makes you in this sudden 
change?
Q Eliz. Why, brother Rivers, are you yet to 
learn,
What late misfortune is befall'n King Edward?
Riv. What! loss of some pitch'd battle 
against Warwick?
Q. Eliz. No, but the loss of his own royal 
person.
Riv. Then is my sovereign slain?
Q. Eliz. Ay, almost slain, for he is taken 
prisoner;
Either betray'd by falsehood of his guard 
Or by his foe surpris'd at unawares:
And, as I further have to understand, 
Is new committed to the Bishop of York, 
Fell Warwick's brother, and by that our foe. 12
Riv. These news, I must confess, are full of 
grief; 
Yet, gracious madam, bear it as you may:
Warwick may lose, that now hath won the day.
Q. Eliz. Till then fair hope must hinder life's 
decay. 16
And I the rather wean me from despair 
For love of Edward's offspring in my womb: 
This is it that makes me bide passion, 
And bear with mildness my misfortune's cross; 
Ay, ay, for this I draw in many a tear, 21
And stop the rising of blood-sucking sighs, 
Lest with my sighs or tears I blast or drown 
King Edward's fruit, true heir to the English 
crown.
Riv. But, madam, where is Warwick then 
become?
Q. Eliz. I am inform'd that he comes to- 
wards London, 
To set the crown once more on Henry's head: 
Guess thou the rest; King Edward's friends 
must down. 28
But, to prevent the tyrant's violence,— 
For trust not him that hath once broken faith,— 
I'll henceforth with unto the sanctuary, 
To save at least the heir of Edward's right: 32
There shall I rest secure from force and fraud. 
Come, therefore; let us fly while we may fly: 
If Warwick take us we are sure to die. [Exeunt.

SCENE V.—A Park near Middleham Castle 
in Yorkshire.

Enter GLOUCESTER, HASTINGS, SIR WILLIAM 
STANLEY; and Others.

Glo. Now, my Lord Hastings and Sir William 
Stanley,
Act IV, Sc. V. THIRD PART OF KING HENRY THE SIXTH

Leave off to wonder why I drew you hither,
Into this chiefest thicket of the park.
Thus stands the case. You know, our king, my
brother,
Is prisoner to the bishop here, at whose hands
He hath good usage and great liberty,
And often but attended with weak guard,
Comes hunting this way to disport himself.
I have advertis'd him by secret means,
That if about this hour he make this way,
Under the colour of his usual game,
He shall here find his friends, with horse and men
To set him free from his captivity.

Enter King Edward and a Huntsman.

Hunt. This way, my lord, for this way lies
the game.
K. Edw. Nay, this way, man: see where the
huntsmen stand.
Now, brother of Gloucester, Lord Hastings, and
the rest,
Stand you thus close, to steal the bishop's deer?
Glo. Brother, the time and case requireth
haste.
Your horse stands ready at the park corner.
K. Edw. But whither shall we then?
Hast. To Lynn, my lord; and ship from
thence to Flanders.
Glo. Well guess'd, believe me; for that was
my meaning.
K. Edw. Stanley, I will requite thy forward-
ness.
Glo. But wherefore stay we? 'tis no time to
talk.
K. Edw. Huntsman, what sayst thou? wilt
thou go along?
Hunt. Better do so than tarry and be
hang'd.
Glo. Come then, away; let's ha' no more
ado.
K. Edw. Bishop, farewell: shield thee from
Warwick's frown,
And pray that I may repossess the crown.

[Exeunt.

SCENE VI.—A Room in the Tower.

Enter King Henry, Clarence, Warwick,
Somerset, young Richmond, Oxford,
Montague, Lieutenant of the Tower, and
Attendants.

K. Hen. Master lieutenant, now that God
and friends
Have shaken Edward from the regal seat,
And turn'd my captive state to liberty,
My fear to hope, my sorrows unto joys,
At our enlargement what are thy due fees?

Lieu. Subjects may challenge nothing of
their sovereigns;
But if a humble prayer may prevail,
I then crave pardon of your majesty.
K. Hen. For what, lieutenant? for well using
me?
Nay, be thou sure, I'll well requite thy kindness,
For that it made my imprisonment a pleasure;
Ay, such a pleasure as engag'd birds
Conceive, when, after many moody thoughts
At last by notes of household harmony
They quite forget their loss of liberty.
But, Warwick, after God, thou set'st me free, 16
And chiefly therefore I thank God and thee;
He was the author, thou the instrument.
Therefore, that I may conquer Fortune's spite
By living low, where Fortune cannot hurt me, 20
And that the people of this blessed land
May not be punish'd with my thwarting stars,
Warwick, although my head still wear the crown,
I here resign my government to thee, 24
For thou art fortunate in all thy deeds.
War. Your Grace hath still been fam'd for
virtuous;
And now may seem as wise as virtuous,
By spying and avoiding Fortune's malice; 28
For few men rightly temper with the stars:
Yet in this one thing let me blame your Grace,
For choosing me when Clarence is in place.
Clar. No, Warwick, thou art worthy of the
sway,
To whom the heavens, in thy nativity
Adjudg'd an olive branch and laurel crown,
As likely to be blest in peace, and war;
And therefore I yield thee my free consent. 36
War. And I choose Clarence only for pro-
tector.
K. Hen. Warwick and Clarence, give me
both your hands:
Now join your hands, and with your hands
your hearts,
That no dissension hinder government:
I make you both protectors of this land,
While I myself will lead a private life,
And in devotion spend my latter days,
To sin's rebuke and my Creator's praise. 44
War. What answers Clarence to his sove-
reign's will?
Clar. That he consents, if Warwick yield
consent;
For on thy fortune I repose myself.
War. Why then, though loath, yet must I be
content:
We'll yoke together, like a double shadow
To Henry's body, and supply his place;
I mean, in bearing weight of government,
While he enjoys the honour and his ease.
And, Clarence, now then it is more than needful
Forthwith that Edward be pronounce d a traitor,
And all his lands and goods be confiscate.

Clar. What else? and that succession be
determin d. 56

War. Ay, therein Clarence shall not want
his part.

K. Hen. But, with the first of all your chief
affairs,
Let me entreat, for I command no more,
That Margaret your queen, and my son Edward,
Be sent for, to return from France with speed:
For, till I see them here, by doubtful fear
My joy of liberty is half eclips d.

Clar. It shall be done, my so v reign, with all
speed.

K. Hen. My Lord of Somerset, what youth is
that
Of whom you seem to have so tender care?

Som. My liege, it is young Henry, Earl of
Richmond.

K. Hen. Come hither, England’s hope: [Lays
his hand on his head.] If secret powers 68
Suggest but truth to my divining thoughts,
This pretty lad will prove our country’s bliss,
His looks are full of peaceful majesty,
His head by nature fram’d to wear a crown, 72
His hand to wield a sceptre, and himself
Likely in time to bless a regal throne.
Make much of him, my lords; for this is he
Must help you more than you are hurt by me.

Enter a Post.

War. What news, my friend?

Mess. That Edward is escaped from your
brother,
And fled, as he hears since, to Burgundy.

War. Unsavoury news! but how made he
escape?

Mess. He was convey’d by Richard Duke of
Gloucester,
And the Lord Hastings, who attended him
In secret ambush on the forest side,
And from the bishop’s huntsmen rescu’d him:
For hunting was his daily exercise.

War. My brother was too careless of his charge.
But let us hence, my sovereign, to provide
A salve for any sore that may betide. 88

[Exeunt KING HENRY, WARWICK, CLARENCE,
Lieutenant, and Attendant.

Som. My lord, I like not of this flight of
Edward’s;
For doubtless Burgundy will yield him help,
And we shall have more wars before’t be long.
As Henry’s late presaging prophecy
Did glad my heart with hope of this young
Richmond,

So doth my heart misgive me, in these conflicts
What may befall him to his harm and ours:
Therefore, Lord Oxford, to prevent the worst, 96
Forthwith we’ll send him hence to Brittany,
Till storms be past of civil enmity.

Oxf. Ay, for if Edward repossess the crown,
’Tis like that Richmound with the rest shall
down.

Som. It shall be so; he shall to Brittany.
Come, therefore, let’s about it speedily. [Exeunt.

SCENE VII.—Before York.

Enter KING EDWARD, GLOUCESTER, HASTINGS, and Forces.

K. Edw. Now, brother Richard, Lord Hastings,
and the rest,
Yet thus far Fortune maketh us amends,
And says, that once more I shall interchange
My waned state for Henry’s regal crown.
Well have we pass’d, and now repass’d the seas,
And brought desired help from Burgundy:
What then remains, we being thus arriv’d
From Ravenspurgbourn before the gates of
York,
But that we enter, as into our dukedom?

Glo. The gates made fast! Brother, I like not
this;
For many men that stumble at the threshold
Are well foretold that danger lurks within. 12

K. Edw. Tush, man! abodements must not
now affright us.
By fair or foul means we must enter in,
For hither will our friends repair to us.

Hast. My liege, I’ll knock once more to
summon them. 16

Enter, on the Walls, the Mayor of York and
his Brethren.

May. My lords, we were forewarned of your
coming,
And shut the gates for safety of ourselves;
For now we owe allegiance unto Henry. 20

K. Edw. But, Master Mayor, if Henry be
your king,
Yet Edward, at the least, is Duke of York.

May. True, my good lord, I know you for
no less.

K. Edw. Why, and I challenge nothing but
my dukedom,
As being well content with that alone. 24

Glo. [Aside.] But when the fox hath once got
in his nose,
He’ll soon find means to make the body follow.

Hast. Why, Master Mayor, why stand you
in a doubt?

Open the gates; we are King Henry’s friends. 28
Act IV, Sc. VII. THIRD PART OF KING HENRY THE SIXTH

May Ay, say you so? the gates shall then be open'd. [Exit, with Aldermen, above. Glo A wise stout captain, and soon persuaded. Hast. The good old man would fain that all were well, So 'twere not 'long of him; but being enter'd, I doubt not, I, but we shall soon persuade Both him and all his brothers unto reason.

Re-enter the Mayor and two Aldermen.

K. Edw. So, Master Mayor: these gates must not be shut But in the night, or in the time of war. What! fear not, man, but yield me up the keys; [Takes his keys. For Edward will defend the town and thee, And all those friends that deign to follow me.

Enter Montgomery and Forces.

Glo. Brother, this is Sir John Montgomery, Our trusty friend, unless I be deceiv'd. K. Edw. Welcome, Sir John! but why come you in arms? Mont. To help King Edward in his time of storm, As every loyal subject ought to do. K. Edw. Thanks, good Montgomery; but we now forget Our title to the crown, and only claim Our dukedom till God please to send the rest. Mont. Then fare you well, for I will hence again: I came to serve a king and not a duke. Drummer, strike up, and let us march away. [A march begun.

K. Edw. Nay, stay, Sir John, awhile; and we'll debate By what safe means the crown may be recover'd. Mont. What talk you of debating? in few words, If you'll not here proclaim yourself our king, I'll leave you to your fortune, and be gone To keep them back that come to succour you. Why shall we fight, if you pretend no title? Glo. Why, brother, wherefore stand you on nice points?

K. Edw. When we grow stronger then we'll make our claim; Till then, 'tis wisdom to conceal our meaning.

Hast. Away with scrupulous wit! now arms must rule. Glo. And fearless minds climb soonest unto crowns. Brother, we will proclaim you out of hand; The bruht thereof will bring you many friends.

K. Edw. Then be it as you will; for 'tis my right, And Henry but usurps the diadem. Mont. Ay, now my sov'rain speaketh like himself; And now will I be Edward's champion; Hast. Sound, trumpet! Edward shall be here proclaim'd; Come, fellow soldier, make thou proclamation. [Gives him a paper. Flourish. Sold. Edward the Fourth, by the grace of God, King of England and France, and Lord of Ireland, &c. Mont. And whose'er gainsays King Edward's right, By this I challenge him to single fight. [Throws down his gauntlet. All. Long live Edward the Fourth! K. Edw. Thanks, brave Montgomery;—and thanks unto you all:

If Fortune serve me, I'll requite this kindness. Now, for this night, let's harbour here in York; And when the morning sun shall raise his car Above the border of this horizon,

We'll forward towards Warwick, and his mates; For all, I wot that Henry is no soldier. Ah, froward Clarence, how evil it beseeams thee To flatter Henry, and forsake thy brother! Yet, as we may, we'll meet both thee and Warwick. Come on, brave soldiers: doubt not of the day; And, that once gotten, doubt not of large pay. [Exeunt.

SCENE VIII.—London. A Room in the Palace.


War What counsel, lords? Edward from Belgia, With hasty Germans and blunt Hollanders, Hath pass'd in safety through the narrow seas, And with his troops doth march amain to London; And many giddy people flock to him.

Oxf. Let's levy men, and beat him back again. Clar. A little fire is quickly trodden out, Which, being suffer'd, rivers cannot quench. War. In Warwickshire I have true-hearted friends, Not mutinous in peace, yet bold in war; Those will I muster up: and thou, son Clarence, Shalt stir up in Suffolk, Norfolk, and in Kent. The knights and gentlemen to come with thee: Thou, brother Montague, in Buckingham,
THIRD PART OF KING HENRY THE SIXTH Act V, Sc. I.

Northampton, and in Leicestershire, shalt find
Men well inclin’d to hear what thou command’st:
And thou, brave Oxford, wondrous well belov’d
In Oxfordshire, shalt muster up thy friends.
My sov’rign, with the loving citizens,
Like to his island girt in with the ocean,
Or modest Dian circled with her nymphs,
Shall rest in London till we come to him.
Fair lords, take leave, and stand not to reply.
Farewell, my sovereign.

K. Hen. Farewell, my Hector, and my Troy’s true hope.

Clar. In sign of truth, I kiss your highness’ hand.

K. Hen. Well-minded Clarence, be thou fortunate!

Mont. Comfort, my lord; and so, I take my leave.

Oxf. [Kissing HENRY’S hand.] And thus I seal my truth, and bid adieu.

K. Hen. Sweet Oxford, and my loving Montague,
And all at once, once more a happy farewell.

War. Farewell, sweet lords: let’s meet at Coventry.

[Exeunt all but KING Henry and Exeter.

K. Hen. Here at the palace will I rest a while.
Cousin of Exeter, what thinks your lordship?
Methinks the power that Edward hath in field
Should not be able to encounter mine.

Exe. The doubt is that he will seduce the rest.

K. Hen. That’s not my fear; my meed hath got me fame:
I have not stopp’d mine ears to their demands,
Nor posted off their suits with slow delays;
My pity hath been balm to heal their wounds,
My mildness hath alay’d their swelling griefs,
My mercy dried their water-flowing tears;
I have not been desirous of their wealth;
Nor much oppress’d them with great subsidies,
Nor forward of revenge, though they much err’d.
Then why should they love Edward more than me?

No, Exeter, these graces challenge grace:
And, when the lion fawns upon the lamb,
The lamb will never cease to follow him.

[Shout within, ‘A Lancaster! A Lancaster!’

Exe. Hark, hark, my lord! what shouts are these?

Enter KING EDWARD, GLOUCESTER, and Soldiers.

K. Edw. Seize on the shame-fac’d Henry!
bear him hence:
And once again proclaim us King of England.

You are the fount that makes small brooks to flow:
Now stops thy spring; my sea shall suck them dry,
And swell so much the higher by their ebb.
Hence with him to the Tower! let him not speak.

[Exeunt some with KING HENRY.
And, lords, towards Coventry bend we our course,
Where peremptory Warwick now remains:
The sun shines hot; and, if we use delay,
Cold biting winter mars our hop’d-for hay.

Glo. Away betimes, before his forces join,
And take the great-grown traitor unawares:
Brave warriors, march amain towards Coventry.

[Exeunt.

ACT V.

SCENE I.—Coventry.

Enter, upon the Walls, WARWICK, the Mayor of Coventry, two Messengers, and Others.

War. Where is the post that came from valiant Oxford?
How far hence is thy lord, mine honest fellow?
First Mess. By this at Dunsmore, marching hitherward.

War. How far off is our brother Montague?
Where is the post that came from Montague?
Sec. Mess. By this at Dainty, with a puisant troop.

Enter Sir JOHN SOMERVILLE.

War. Say, Somerville, what says my loving son?
And, by thy guess, how nigh is Clarence now?

Som. At Southam I did leave him with his forces,
And do expect him here some two hours hence.

[Drum heard.

War. Then Clarence is at hand, I hear his drum.

Som. It is not his, my lord; here Southam lies:
The drum your honour hears marcheth from Warwick.

War. Who should that be? behike, unlook’d for friends.

Som. They are at hand, and you shall quickly know.

Enter KING EDWARD, GLOUCESTER, and Forces.

K. Edw. Go, trumpet, to the walls, and sound a parle.

Glo. See how the surly Warwick mans the wall.

War. O, unblid spite! is sportful Edward come?
Where aleep our scouts, or how are they seduc’d,
That we could hear no news of his repair? 20
K. Edw. Now, Warwick, wilt thou ope the city gates,
Speak gentle words, and humbly bend thy knee?—
Call Edward king, and at his hands beg mercy?
And he shall pardon thee these outrages. 24
War. Nay, rather, wilt thou draw thy forces hence,—
Confess who set thee up and pluck’d thee down?—
Call Warwick patron, and be penitent;
And thou shalt still remain the Duke of York.
Glo. I thought, at least, he would have said the king; 29
Or did he make the jest against his will?
War. Is not a dukedom, sir, a goodly gift?
Glo. Ay, by my faith, for a poor earl to give:
I’ll do thee service for so good a gift. 33
War. ’Twas I that gave the kingdom to thy brother.
K. Edw. Why then ’tis mine, if but by Warwick’s gift.
War. Thou art no Atlas for so great a weight:
And, weakling, Warwick takes his gift again; 37
And Henry is my king, Warwick his subject.
K. Edw. But Warwick’s king is Edward’s prisoner;
And, gallant Warwick, do but answer this,
What is the body, when the head is off?
Glo. Alas! that Warwick had no more forecast,
But, whiles he thought to steal the single ten,
The king was slily finger’d from the deck. 44
You left poor Henry at the bishop’s palace,
And, ten to one, you’ll meet him in the Tower.
K. Edw. ’Tis even so: yet you are Warwick still.
Glo. Come, Warwick, take the time; kneel down, kneel down:
Nay, when? strike now, or else the iron cools.
War. I had rather chop this hand off at a blow,
And with the other fling it at thy face,
Than bear so low a sail to strike to thee. 52
K. Edw. Sail how thou canst, have wind
And tide thy friend;
This hand, fast wound about thy coal-black hair,
Shall, whiles thy head is warm and new cut off,
Write in the dust this sentence with thy blood: ‘Wind-changing Warwick now can change no more.’ 57

Enter Oxford, with Soldiers, drum, and colours.
War. O cheerful colours! see where Oxford comes!

K. Edw. So other foes may set upon our backs.
Stand we in good array; for they no doubt
Will issue out again and bid us battle;
If not, the city being but of small defence, 64
We’ll quickly rouse the traitors in the same.
War. O! welcome, Oxford! for we want thy help.

Enter Montague, with Soldiers, drum, and colours.
Mont. Montague, Montague, for Lancaster! 68
[He and his Forces enter the city.
Glo. Thou and thy brother both shall buy this treason
Even with the dearest blood your bodies bear.
K. Edw. The harder match’d, the greater victory:
My mind presageth happy gain, and conquest.

Enter Somerset, with Soldiers, drum, and colours.
Som. Somerset, Somerset, for Lancaster! 72
[He and his Forces enter the city.
Glo. Two of thy name, both Dukes of Somerset,
Have sold their lives unto the house of York;
And thou shalt be the third, if this sword hold.

Enter Clarence, with Forces, drum, and colours.
War. And lo! where George of Clarence sweeps along,
Of force enough to bid his brother battle;
With whom an upright zeal to right prevails
More than the nature of a brother’s love.
Coma, Clarence, come; thou wilt, if Warwick call.
Clar. Father of Warwick, know you what this means? 81

[Taking the red rose out of his hat.
Look here, I throw my infamy at thee:
I will not ruinate my father’s house,
Who gave his blood to lime the stones together,
And set up Lancaster. Why, trow’st thou,
Warwick, 85
That Clarence is so harsh, so blunt, unnatural,
To bend the fatal instruments of war
Against his brother and his lawful king? 88
Perhaps thou wilt object my holy oath:
To keep that oath were more impiety
Than Jephthah’s, when he sacrificed his daughter.
I am so sorry for my trespass made
That, to deserve well at my brother’s hands,
I here proclaim myself thy mortal foe;
With resolution, whereasoe’er I meet thee—
As I will meet thee if thou stir abroad— 96
To plague thee for thy foul misleading me.
And so, proud-hearted Warwick, I defy thee,
And to my brother turn my blushing cheeks.
Pardon me, Edward, I will make amends; 100
And, Richard, do not frown upon my faults,
For I will henceforth be no more unconstant.

K. Edw. Now welcome more, and ten times
more belov'd,
Than if thou never hadst deserve'd our hate. 104
Glo. Welcome, good Clarence; this is
brother-like.
War. O passing traitor, perjur'd, and unjust!
K. Edw. What, Warwick, wilt thou leave
the town, and fight?
Or shall we beat the stones about thine ears? 108
War. Alas! I am not coop'd here for defence:
I will away towards Barnet presently,
And bid thee battle, Edward, if thou dar'st.

K. Edw. Yes, Warwick, Edward dares, and
leads the way. 112
Lords, to the field; Saint George and victory!

[March. Exeunt.]

SCENE II.—A Field of Battle near Barnet.

ALARUMS AND EXCERNSIONS. Enter KING EDWARD, bringing in WARWICK, wounded.

K. Edw. So, lie thou there: die thou, and
die our fear;
For Warwick was a bug that fear'd us all.
Now Montague, sit fast; I seek for thee,
That Warwick's bones may keep thine company.

[Exit.]

War. Ah! who is nigh? come to me, friend
or foe,
And tell me who is victor, York or Warwick?
Why ask I that? my mangled body shows,
My blood, my want of strength, my sick heart
shows,
That I must yield my body to the earth,
And, by my fall, the conquest to my foe.
Thus yields the cedar to the axe's edge,
Whose arms gave shelter to the princely eagle,
Under whose shade the ramping lion slept,
Whose top branch overpeer'd Jove's spreading
tree,
And kept low shrubs from winter's powerful wind.

These eyes, that now are dimm'd with death's
black veil,
Have been as piercing as the mid-day sun,
To search the secret treasons of the world:
The wrinkles in my brows, now fill'd with blood,
Were likin'd oft to kingly sepulchres;
For who liv'd king, but I could dig his grave?
And who durst smile when Warwick bent his
brow?

Lo! now my glory smear'd in dust and blood;
My parks, my walks, my manors that I had,
Even now forsake me; and, of all my lands

Is nothing left me but my body's length.
Why, what is pomp, rule, reign, but earth and
dust?
And, live we how we can, yet die we must. 28

Enter OXFORD and SOMERSET.

Som. Ah! Warwick, Warwick, wert thou as
we are,
We might recover all our loss again.
The queen from France hath brought a puiss-
ant power;
Even now we heard the news. Ah! couldst
thou fly.

War. Why, then, I would not fly. Ah!
Montague,
If thou be there, sweet brother, take my hand,
And with thy lips keep in my soul awhile.
Thou lovest me not; for, brother, if thou didst,
Thy tears would wash this cold concealed blood
That glues my lips and will not let me speak.
Come quickly, Montague, or I am dead.

Som. Ah! Warwick, Montague hath breath'd
his last;

And to the latest gasp, cried out for Warwick,
And said, 'Commend me to my valiant brother.'
And more he would have said; and more he
spoke,
Which sounded like a clamour in a vault,
That mought not be distinguish'd: but at last
I well might hear, deliver'd with a groan,
'O! farewell, Warwick!'
War. Sweet rest his soul! Fly, lords, and
save yourselves; 48
For Warwick bids you all farewell, to meet in
heaven.

[Dies.

Oxf. Away, away, to meet the queen's great
power.

[Exeunt, bearing off WARWICK's body.

SCENE III.—Another Part of the Field.

Flourish. Enter KING EDWARD, in triumph:
with CLARENCE, GLOUCESTER, and the rest.

K. Edw. Thus far our fortune keeps an up-
ward course,
And we are grac'd with wreaths of victory.
But in the midst of this bright-shining day,
I spy a black, suspicious, threat'ning cloud,
That will encounter with our glorious sun,
Ere he attain his easeful western bed:
I mean, my lords, those powers that the queen
Hath rais'd in Gallia, have arriv'd our coast,
And, as we hear, march on to fight with us.

Clar. A little gale will soon disperse that
cloud,
And blow it to the source from whence it came:
Thy very beams will dry those vapours up,

681
Act V, Sc. III. THIRD PART OF KING HENRY THE SIXTH

For every cloud engenders not a storm.
Glo. The queen is val’d thirty thousand strong,
And Somerset, with Oxford, fled to her:
If she have time to breathe, be well assur’d
Her faction will be full as strong as ours.
K. Edw. We are advertis’d by our loving friends
That they do hold their course toward Tewksbury.
We, having now the best at Barnet field,
Will thither straight, for willingness rides way;
And, as we march, our strength will be augmented
In every county as we go along.
Strike up the drum! cry ‘Courage!’ and away.
[FLOURISH. EXEUNT.

SCENE IV.—Plains near Tewksbury.

March. Enter QUEEN MARGARET, PRINCE EDWARD, SOMERSET, OXFORD, and Soldiers.
Q. Mar. Great lords, wise men ne’er sit and wail their loss,
But cheerily seek how to redress their harms.
What though the mast be now blown over-board,
The cable broke, the holding anchor lost,
And half our sailors swallow’d in the flood?
Yet lives our pilot still: is’t meet that he
Should leave the helm and like a fearful lad
With tearful eyes add water to the sea,
And give more strength to that which hath too much;
Whiles in his moan the ship splits on the rock,
Which industry and courage might have sav’d?
Ah! what a shame! ah, what a fault were this.
Say, Warwick was our anchor; what of that?
And Montague our top-mast; what of him?
Our slaughter’d friends the tackles; what of these?
Why, is not Oxford here another anchor?
And Somerset, another goodly mast?
The friends of France our shrouds and tacklings?
And, though unskilful, why not Ned and I
For once allow’d the skilful pilot’s charge?
We will not from the helm, to sit and weep,
But keep our course, though the rough wind
say no,
From shelves and rocks that threaten us with wrack.
As good to chide the waves as speak them fair.
And what is Edward but a ruthless sea?
What Clarence but a quicksand of deceit?
And Richard but a ragged fatal rock?
All those the enemies to our poor bark.
Say you can swim; alas! ’tis but a while:
Tread on the sand; why, there you quickly sink:
Bestride the rock; the tide will wash you off,
Or else you famish; that’s a threefold death.
This speak I, lords, to let you understand,
In case some one of you would fly from us,
That there’s no hop’d-for mercy with the brothers
More than with ruthless waves, with sands and rocks.
Why, courage, then! what cannot be avoided
’Twere childish weakness to lament or fear.
Prince. Methinks a woman of this valiant spirit
Should, if a coward heard her speak these words,
Infuse his breast with magnanimity,
And make him, naked, foil a man at arms.
I speak not this, as doubting any here;
For did I but suspect a fearful man,
He should have leave to go away betimes,
Lest in our need he might infect another,
And make him of like spirit to himself.
If any such be here, as God forbid!
Let him depart before we need his help.
Oxf. Women and children of so high a courage,
And warriors faint! why, ’twere perpetual shame.
O brave young prince! thy famous grandfather
Doth live again in thee; long mayst thou live
To bear his image and renew his glories!
Som. And he, that will not fight for such a hope,
Go home to bed, and, like the owl by day,
If he arise, be mock’d and wonder’d at.
Prince. And take his thanks that yet hath nothing else.

Enter a Messenger.

Mess. Prepare you, lords, for Edward is at hand.
Ready to fight; therefore be resolute.
Oxf. I thought no less: it is his policy
To hasle thus fast, to find us unprovided.
Som. But he’s deceiv’d; we are in readiness.
Q. Mar. This cheers my heart to see your forwardness.
Oxf. Here pitch our battle; hence we will not budge.

March. Enter, at a distance, King Edward, CLARENCE, GLOUCESTER, and Forces.
K. Edw. Brave followers, yonder stands the thorny wood,
Which, by the heavens’ assistance, and your strength,
Must by the roots be hewn up yet ere night.

682
I need not add more fuel to your fire,
For well I wot ye blaze to burn them out:
Give signal to the fight, and to it, lords. 72

Q. Mar. Lorda, knights, and gentlemen,
what I should say
My tears gainsay; for every word I speak,
Ye see, I drink the water of mine eyes.
Therefore, no more but this: Henry, your
sovereign,
is prisoner to the foe; his state usurp’d,
His realm a slaughter house, his subjects slain,
His statutes cancel’d, and his treasure spent;
And yonder is the wolf that makes this spoil.
You fight in justice: then, in God’s name, lords,
Be valiant, and give signal to the fight.
[Exeunt both armies.

SCENE V.—Another Part of the Same.

ALARUMS: Excursions: and afterwards a re-
tray. Then enter KING EDWARD, CLARENCE,
GLOUCESTER, and Forces; with QUEEN MAR-
GARET, OXFORD, and SOMERSET prisoners.

K. Edw. Now, here a period of tumultuous
broids.
Away with Oxford to Hames Castle straight:
For Somerset, off with his guilty head.
Go, bear them hence; I will not hear them speak.
Oxf. For my part, I’ll not trouble thee with
words.

Som. Nor I, but stoop with patience to my
fortune.
[Exeunt OXFORD and SOMERSET, guarded.
Q. Mar. So part we sadly in this troubous
world,
To meet with joy in sweet Jerusalem.
K. Edw. Is proclamation made, that who
finds Edward
Shall have a high reward, and he his life?

Glo. It is: and lo, where youthful Edward
comes.

Enter Soldiers, with PRINCE EDWARD.

K. Edw. Bring forth the gallant: let us hear
him speak.

What! can so young a thorn begin to prick?
Edward, what satisfaction canst thou make,
For bearing arms, for stirring up my subjects,
And all the trouble thou hast turn’d me to? 16

Prince. Speak like a subject, proud ambi-
tious York!

Suppose that I am now my father’s mouth:
Resign thy chair, and where I stand kneel thou,
Whilst I propose the self-same words to thee,
Which, traitor, thou wouldst have me answer to.

Q. Mar. Ah! that thy father had been so
resolv’d.

Glo. That you might still have worn the
petticoat,
And nèr have stol’n the breech from Lan-
caster.

Prince. Let Æsop fable in a winter’s night;
His currish riddles sort not with this place.

Glo. By heaven, brat, I’ll plague you for
that word.

Q. Mar. Ay, thou wast born to be a plague
to men.

Glo. For God’s sake, take away this captive
scold.

Prince. Nay, take away this scolding crock-
back rather.

K. Edw. Peace, wilful boy, or I will charm
your tongue.

Clar. Untutor’d lad, thou art too malapert.

Prince. I know my duty; you are all un-
dutiful:

Lascivious Edward, and thou perjur’d George,
And thou mis-shapen Dick, I tell ye all,
I am your better, traitors as ye are;

And thou usurp’st my father’s right and mine.

K. Edw. Take that, the likeness of this railler
here.

Glo. Sprawl’st thou? take that, to end thy
agony.

Clar. And there’s for twitting me with per-
jury.

Q. Mar. O, kill me too!

Glo. Marry, and shall. [Offers to kill her.

K. Edw. Hold, Richard, hold! for we have
done too much.

Glo. Why should she live, to fill the world
with words?

K. Edw. What! doth she swoon? use means
for her recovery.

Glo. Clarence, excuse me to the king, my
brother;
I’ll hence to London on a serious matter:
Ere ye come there, be sure to hear some news.

Clar. What? what?

Glo. The Tower! the Tower! [Exit.

Q. Mar. O Ned, sweet Ned! speak to thy
mother, boy!

Canst thou not speak? O traitors! mur-
derers!

They that stabb’d Caesar shed no blood at all,
Did not offend, nor were not worthy blame,
If this foul deed were by, to equal it:
He was a man; this, in respect, a child;
And men ne’er spend their fury on a child.
What’s worse than murderer, that I may name
it?

No, no, my heart will burst, an if I speak:
And I will speak, that so my heart may burst.
Butchers and villains! bloody cannibals!
Act V, Sc. V.  THIRD PART OF KING HENRY THE SIXTH

How sweet a plant have you untimely cropp’d!  
You have no children, butchers! if you had,  
The thought of them would have stirr’d up  
remorse: 64
But if you ever chance to have a child,  
Look in his youth to have him so cut off  
As, deathsmen, you have rid this sweet young  
prince! 65
K. Edw. Away with her! go, bear her hence  
perforce.
Q. Mar. Nay, never bear me hence, dispatch  
me here:  
- Here sheathe thy sword, I’ll pardon thee my  
death.
What! wilt thou not? then, Clarence, do it  
thou.
Clar. By heaven, I will not do thee so much  
ease. 72
Q. Mar. Good Clarence, do; sweet Clarence,  
do thou do it.
Clar. Didst thou not hear me swear I would  
not do it?
Q. Mar. Ay, but thou usest to forswear thy-  
self:
'Twas sin before, but now 'tis charity. 76
What! wilt thou not? Where is that devil’s  
bucher,
Hard-favour’d Richard? Richard, where art  
you?
Thou art not here: murder is thy alms-deed;
Petitioners for blood thou ne’er put’st back. 80
K. Edw. Away, I say! I charge ye, bear her  
hence.
Q. Mar. So come to you and yours, as to  
this prince!  [Exit, led out forcibly.
K. Edw. Where’s Richard gone?
Clar. To London, all in post; and, as I  
guess, 84
To make a bloody supper in the Tower.
K. Edw. He’s sudden if a thing comes in  
his head.
Now march we hence: discharge the common  
sort
With pay and thanks, and let’s away to London  
And see our gentle queen how well she fares; 89
By this, I hope, she hath a son for me. [Exeunt.

SCENE VI.—London. A Room in the Tower.

KING HENRY is discovered sitting with a book  
in his hand, the Lieutenant attending. Enter  
GLOUCESTER.

Glo. Good day, my lord. What! at your book  
so hard?
K. Hen. Ay, my good lord:—my lord, I  
should say rather;
'Tis sin to flatter, 'good' was little better:

'Good Gloucester' and 'good devil' were alike,  
And both preposterous; therefore, not 'good  
lord.' 4
Glo. Sirrah, leave us to ourselves: we must  
confer.  [Exit Lieutenant.
K. Hen. So flies the reckless shepherd from  
the wolf;
So first the harmless sheep doth yield his fleece,  
And next his throat unto the butcher's knife. 9
What scene of death hath Roscius now to act?  
Glo. Suspicion always haunts the guilty  
mind;
The thief doth fear each bush an officer. 12
K. Hen. The bird that hath been limed in a  
bush,
With trembling wings misdoubteth every bush;  
And I, the hapless male to one sweet bird,  
Have now the fatal object in my eye 16
Where my poor young was lim'd, was caught,  
and kill’d.
Glo. Why, what a peevish fool was that of  
Crete,
That taught his son the office of a fowl!  
And yet, for all his wings, the fool was drown’d.
K. Hen. I, Desdaluus; my poor boy, Icarus;  
Thy father, Minos, that denied our course;  
The sun, that sared the wings of my sweet boy,  
Thy brother Edward, and thyself the sea, 24
Whose envious gulf did swallow up his life.
Ah! kill me with thy weapon, not with words.  
My breast can better brook thy dagger’s point  
Than can my ears that tragic history. 28
But wherefore dost thou come? is’t for my  
life?
Glo. Think’st thou I am an executioner?
K. Hen. A persecutor, I am sure, thou art:  
If mur’d ring innocents be executing, 32
Why, then thou art an executioner.
Glo. Thy son I kill’d for his presumption.  
K. Hen. Hadst thou been kill’d, when first  
thou didst presume,
Thou hadst not liv’d to kill a son of mine. 36
And thus I prophesy: that many a thousand,  
Which now mistrust no parcel of my fear,  
And many an old man’s sigh, and many a  
widow’s,  
And many an orphan’s water-standing eye, 40
Men for their sons’, wives for their husbands’,  
And orphans for their parents’ timeless death,  
Shall rue the hour that ever thou wast born.  
The owl shriek’d at thy birth, an evil sign; 44
The night-crow cried, aboding luckless time;  
Dogs howl’d, and hideous tempest shook down  
trees!
The raven rook’d her on the chimney’s top,  
And chattering pisse in dismal discords sung. 48
Thy mother felt more than a mother’s pain,
And yet brought forth less than a mother's hope;  
To wit an indigest deformed lump,  
Not like the fruit of such a goodly tree.  
Teeth hast thou in thy head when thou wast born,  
To signify thou cam'st to bite the world:  
And, if the rest be true which I have heard,  
Thou cam'st—  
Glo. I'll hear no more: die, prophet, in thy speech: [Stabs him.  
For this, amongst the rest, was I ordain'd.  
K. Hen. Ay, and for much more slaughter after this.  
O, God forgive my sins, and pardon thee! [Dies.  
Glo. What! will the aspiring blood of Lancaster  
Sink in the ground? I thought it would have mounted.  
See how my sword weeps for the poor king's death!  
O! may such purple tears be always shed  
From those that wish the downfall of our house.  
If any spark of life be yet remaining,  
Down, down to hell; and say I sent thee thither,  
[Stabs him again.  
I, that have neither pity, love, nor fear.  
Indeed, 'tis true, that Henry told me of;  
For I have often heard my mother say  
I came into the world with my legs forward.  
Had I not reason, think ye, to make haste,  
And seek their ruin that usurp'd our right?  
The midwife wonder'd, and the women cried  
'O! Jesus bless us, he is born with teeth.'  
And so I was; which plainly signified  
That I should snarl and bite and play the dog.  
Then, since the heavens have shap'd my body  
Let hell make crook'd my mind to answer it.  
I have no brother, I am like no brother;  
And this word 'love,' which greybeards call divine,  
Be resident in men like one another  
And not in me: I am myself alone.  
Clarence, beware; thou keep'st me from the light;  
But I will sort a pitchy day for thee;  
For I will buzz abroad such prophecies  
That Edward shall be fearful of his life;  
And then, to purge his fear, I'll be thy death.  
King Henry and the prince his son are gone:  
Clarence, thy turn is next, and then the rest,  
Counting myself but bad till I be best.  
I'll throw thy body in another room,  
And triumph, Henry, in thy day of doom.  
[Exit with the body.  

SCENE VII.—The Same. A Room in the Palace.  
KING EDWARD is discovered sitting on his throne: QUEEN ELIZABETH with the infant Prince, CLARENCE, GLOUCESTER, HASTINGS, and Others, near him.  
K. Edw. Once more we sit in England's royal throne,  
Re-purchas'd with the blood of enemies.  
What valiant foemen like to autumn's corn,  
Have we mow'd down, in tops of all their pride!  
Three Dukes of Somerset, threefold renown'd  
For hardy and undoubted champions;  
Two Cliffords, as the father and the son;  
And two Northumberlands: two braver men  
Ne'er spurr'd their coursers at the trumpet's sound;  
With them, the two brave bears, Warwick and Montague,  
That in their chains fetter'd the kingly lion,  
And made the forest tremble when they roar'd.  
Thus have we swept suspicion from our seat,  
And made our footstool of security.  
Come hither, Bess, and let me kiss my boy.  
Young Ned, for thee thine uncles and myself  
Have in our armours watch'd the winter's night;  
Went all a-foot in summer's scalding heat,  
That thou might'st repose the crown in peace;  
And of our labours thou shalt reap the gain.  
Glo. [Aside.] I'll blast his harvest, if your head were laid;  
For yet I am not look'd on in the world.  
This should be ordain'd so thick to heave;  
And heave it shall some weight, or break my back:  
Work thou the way, and thou shalt execute.  
K. Edw. Clarence and Gloucester, love my lovely queen;  
And kiss your princely nephew, brothers both.  
Clar. The duty, that I owe unto your majesty,  
I seal upon the lips of this sweet babe.  
K. Edw. Thanks, noble Clarence; worthy brother, thanks.  
Glo. And, that I love the tree from whence thou sprang'st,  
Witness the loving kiss I give the fruit.  
[Aside.] To say the truth, so Judas kiss'd his master,  
And cried 'all hail!' when as he meant all harm.
K. Edw. Now am I seated as my soul delights,
Having my country's peace and brothers' loves.

Clar. What will your Grace have done with
Margaret?
Reignier, her father, to the King of France
Hath pawn'd the Sicils and Jerusalem,
And hither have they sent it for her ransom.

K. Edw. Away with her, and waft her hence to France.
And now what rests but that we spend the time
With stately triumphs, mirthful comic shows,
Such as befit the pleasure of the court?
Sound, drums and trumpets! farewell, sour annoy!
For here, I hope, begins our lasting joy.

[Exeunt.]
THE TRAGEDY OF
KING RICHARD THE THIRD

DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

KING EDWARD THE FOURTH.
Edward, Prince of Wales; afterwards King Edward the Fifth.
Sons to the King.
SIR JAMES TYRELL.
SIR JAMES BLOUNT.
SIR WALTER HERBERT.
SIR ROBERT BRACKENBURY, Lieutenant of the Tower.
SIR WILLIAM BRANDON.
CHRISTOPHER URSWICK, a Priest.
Another Priest.
Lord Mayor of London. Sheriff of Wiltshire.
TRESSSEL and BERKELEY, Gentlemen attending on Lady Anne.
ELIZABETH, Queen of King Edward the Fourth.
MARGARET, Widow of King Henry the Sixth.
DUCHESS OF YORK, Mother to King Edward the Fourth, Clarence, and Gloucester.
LADY ANNE, Widow of Edward, Prince of Wales, Son to King Henry the Sixth; afterwards married to the Duke of Gloucester.
LADY MARGARET PLANTAGENET, a young Daughter of Clarence.

Lords, and other Attendants; two Gentlemen, a Pursuivant, Scrivener, Citizens, Murderers, Messengers, Ghosts of those murdered by Richard the Third, Soldiers, &c.

ACT I.

SCENE I.—London. A Street.

Enter Gloucester.

Glo. Now is the winter of our discontent Made glorious summer by this sun of York; And all the clouds that lour'd upon our house In the deep bosom of the ocean buried. Now are our brows bound with victorious wreaths; Our bruised arms hung up for monuments; Our stern alarums changed to merry meetings; Our dreadful marches to delightful measures. Grim-visag'd war hath smooth'd his wrinkled front; And now,—instead of mounting barbed steeds, To fright the souls of fearful adversaries,—He capers nimbly in a lady's chamber

To the lascivious pleasing of a lute.
But I, that am not shap'd for sportive tricks, Nor made to court an amorous looking-glass; I, that am rudely stamp'd, and want love's majesty
To strut before a wanton ambling nymph; I, that am curb'd of this fair proportion, Cheated of feature by dissembling nature, Deform'd, unfinish'd, sent before my time Into this breathing world, scarce half made up, And that so lamely and unfashionable That dogs bark at me, as I halt by them; Why, I, in this weak piping time of peace, Have no delight to pass away the time, Unless to see my shadow in the sun And descant on mine own deformity: And therefore, since I cannot prove a lover, To entertain these fair well-spoken days,
I am determined to prove a villain, 32
And hate the idle pleasures of these days.
Plots have I laid, inductions dangerous,
By drunken prophecies, libels, and dreams,
To set my brother Clarence and the king
In deadly hate the one against the other:
And if King Edward be as true and just
As I am subtle, false, and treacherous,
This day should Clarence closely be mew'd up,
About a prophecy, which says, that G
Of Edward’s heir the murderer shall be. 40
Dive, thoughts, down to my soul: here Clarence
comes.

Enter CLARENCE, guarded, and BRAKENBURY.
Brother, good day: what means this armed
guard
That waits upon your Grace?
Clar. His majesty,
Tendering my person’s safety, hath appointed
This conduct to convey me to the Tower.
Glo. Upon what cause?
Clar. Because my name is George.
Glo. Alack! my lord, that fault is none of
yours;
He should, for that, commit your godfathers. 48
O! belike his majesty hath some intent
That you should be new-christen’d in the Tower.
But what’s the matter, Clarence? may I know?
Clar. Yea, Richard, when I know; for I protest
As yet I do not: but, as I can learn, 53
He hearkens after prophecies and dreams;
And from the cross-row plucks the letter G,
And says a wizard told him that by G
His issue disinherited should be;
And, for my name of George begins with G,
It follows in his thought that I am these.
These, as I learn, and such like toys as these, 60
Have mov’d his heighten to commit me now.
Glo. Why, this it is, when men are rul’d by
women:
’Tis not the king that sends you to the Tower;
My Lady Grey, his wife, Clarence, ’tis she
That tempers him to this extremity.
Was it not she and that good man of worship,
Antony Woodville, her brother there,
That made him send Lord Hastings to the
Tower, 68
From whence this present day he is deliver’d?
We are not safe, Clarence; we are not safe.
Clar. By heaven, I think there is no man
secure
But the queen’s kindred and night-walking
heralds
That trudge betwixt the king and Mistress
Shore.
Heard you not what a humble suppliant
Lord Hastings was to her for his delivery?
Glo. Humbly complaining to her deity
76
Got my lord chamberlain his liberty.
I’ll tell you what; I think it is our way,
If we will keep in favour with the king,
To be her men and wear her livery: 80
The jealous o’er-worn widow and herself,
Since that our brother dubb’d them gentle-
women,
Are mighty gossips in our monarchy.
Brak. I beseech your Graces both to pardon
me;
His majesty hath straitly given in charge
That no man shall have private conference,
Of what degree soever, with your brother.
Glo. Even so; an please your worship,
Brakenbury, 88
You may partake of anything we say:
We speak no treason, man: we say the king
Is wise and virtuous, and his noble queen
Well struck in years, fair, and not jealous; 92
We say that Shore’s wife hath a pretty foot,
A cherry lip, a bonny eye, a passing pleasing
tongue;
And that the queen’s kindred are made gentle-
folks.
How say you, sir? can you deny all this? 96
Brak. With this, my lord, myself have
nought to do.
Glo. Naught to do with Mistress Shore! I tell
thee, fellow,
He that doth naught with her, excepting one,
Were best to do it secretly, alone. 100
Brak. What one, my lord?
Glo. Her husband, knave. Wouldst thou
betray me?
Brak. I beseech your Grace to pardon me;
and withal
Forbear your conference with the noble duke.
Clar. We know thy charge, Brakenbury, and
will obey. 105
Glo. We are the queen’s abjects, and must
obey.
Brother, farewell: I will unto the king;
And whatsoe’er you will employ me in, 108
Were it to call King Edward’s widow sister,
I will perform it to enfranchise you.
Meantime, this deep disgrace in brotherhood
Touches me deeper than you can imagine. 112
Clar. I know it pleaseth neither of us well.
Glo. Well, your imprisonment shall not be
long;
I will deliver you, or else lie for you:
Meantime, have patience.
Clar. I must perforce: farewell.

[Exeunt CLARENCE, BRAKENBURY, and
Guard]
As for another secret close intent,
By marrying her, which I must reach unto.
But yet I run before my horse to market:
Clarence still breathes; Edward still lives and reigns:
When they are gone, then must I count my gains.

[Exit.

SCENE II.—London. Another Street.

Enter the corpse of KING HENRY THE SIXTH,
borne in an open coffin; Gentlemen bearing haberd to guard it; and LADY ANNE, as mourner.

Anne. Set down, set down your honourable load,
If honour may be shrouded in a hearse,
Whilst I a while obsequiously lament
The untimely fall of virtuous Lancaster.
Poor key-cold figure of a holy king!
Pale ashes of the house of Lancaster!
Thou bloodless remnant of that royal blood!
Be it lawful that I invoke thy ghost,
To hear the lamentations of poor Anne,
Wife to thy Edward, to thy slaughter’d son,
Stabb’d by the self-same hand that made these wounds!
Lo, in these windows that let forth thy life,
I pour the helpless balm of my poor eyes.
Oh cursed be the hand that made these holes;
Cursed the heart that had the heart to do it!
Cursed the blood that let this blood from hence!

More direful hap betide that hated wretch,
That makes us wretched by the death of thee,
Than I can wish to adders, spiders, toads,
Or any creeping venom’d thing that lives!
If ever he have child, abortive be it,
Prodigious, and untimely brought to light,
Whose ugly and unnatural aspect
May fright the hopeful mother at the view;
And that be heir to his unhappiness!
If ever he have wife, let her be made
More miserable by the death of him
Than I am made by my young lord and thee!
Come, now toward Chertsey with your holy load,
Taken from Paul’s to be interred there;
And still, as you are weary of the weight,
Rest you, whiles I lament King Henry’s corse.

[The Bearers take up the corpse and advance.

Enter Gloucester.

Glo. Stay, you that bear the corse, and set it down.

Anne. What black magician conjures up this fiend,
Act I, Sc. II.  

KING RICHARD THE THIRD

To stop devoted charitable deeds?
Glo. Villains! set down the corse; or, by Saint Paul,
I'll make a corse of him that disobeys.
First Gent. My lord, stand back, and let the coffin pass.
Glo. Unmanner'd dog! stand thou when I command:
Advance thy halberd higher than my breast, Or, by Saint Paul, I'll strike thee to my foot,
And spurn upon thee, beggar, for thy boldness.

[The Bearer's set down the coffin.]
Anne. What! do you tremble? are you all afraid?
Alas! I blame you not; for you are mortal, And mortal eyes cannot endure the devil.
Avaunt! thou dreadful minister of hell,
Thou hast but power over his mortal body,
His soul thou canst not have: therefore, be gone.

Glo. Sweet saint, for charity, be not so curst.
Anne. Foul devil, for God's sake hence, and trouble us not;
For thou hast made the happy earth thy hell,
Fill'd it with cursing cries and deep exclamations.
If thou delight to view thy heinous deeds,
Behold this pattern of thy butcheries.
Oh! gentlemen; see, see! dead Henry's wounds
Open their congeal'd mouths and bleed afresh.
Blush, blush, thou lump of foul deformity,
For 'tis thy presence that exhales this blood
From cold and empty veins, where no blood dwells:
Thy deed, inhuman and unnatural,
Provokes this deluge most unnatural.
O God! which this blood mad'st, revenge his death;
O earth! which this blood drink'st, revenge his death;
Either heaven with lightning strike the murderer dead,
Or earth, gape open wide, and eat him quick,
As thou dost swallow up this good king's blood,
Which his hell-govern'd arm hath excluded!

Glo. Lady, you know no rules of charity,
Which renders good for bad, blessings for curses.
Anne. Villain, thou know'st no law of God nor man:
No beast so fierce but knows some touch of pity.
Glo. But I know none, and therefore am no beast.
Anne. O! wonderful, when devils tell the truth.
Glo. More wonderful when angels are so angry.

Vouchsafe, divine perfection of a woman,
Of these supposed evils, to give me leave,
By circumstance, but to acquit myself.
Anne. Vouchsafe, diffuse'd infection of a man,
For these known evils, but to give me leave,
By circumstance, to curse thy cursed self.
Glo. Fairer than tongue can name thee, let me have
Some patient leisure to excuse myself.
Anne. Fouler than heart can think thee, thou canst make
No excuse current, but to hang thyself.
Glo. By such despair I should accuse myself.
Anne. And by despairing shouldst thou stand excus'd
For doing worthy vengeance on thyself,
Which didst unworthy slaughter upon others.
Anne. Say that I slew them not.
Anne. Then say they were not slain:
But dead they are, and, devilish slave, by thee.
Glo. I did not kill your husband.
Anne. Why, then he is alive.
Glo. Nay, he is dead; and slain by Edward's hand.
Anne. In thy foul throat thou liest: Queen Margaret saw
Thy murderous falchion smoking in his blood;
The which thou once didst bend against her breast,
But that thy brothers beat aside the point.
Glo. I was provoked by her stand rous tongue,
That laid their guilt upon my guiltless shoulders.
Anne. Thou wast provoked by thy bloody mind,
That never dreamt on aught but butcheries.
Didst thou not kill this king?
Glo. I grant ye.
Anne. Dost grant me, hedge-hog? Then, God grant me too
Thou mayst be damned for that wicked deed!
O! he was gentle, mild, and virtuous.
Glo. The fitter for the King of heaven, that hath him.
Anne. He is in heaven, where thou shalt never come.
Glo. Let him thank me, that help'd to send him thither;
For he was fitter for that place than earth.
Anne. And thou unfit for any place but hell.
Glo. Yes, one place else, if you will hear me name it.
Anne. Some dungeon.
Glo. Your bed-chamber.
Anne. Ill rest betide the chamber where thou liest!
Glo. So will it, madam, till I lie with you.
Anne. I hope so.
Glo. I know so. But, gentle Lady Anne,
To leave this keen encounter of our wits,
And fall somewhat into a slower method,
Is not the causer of the timeless deaths
Of these Plantagenets, Henry and Edward,
As blameful as the executioner? 120
Anne. Thou wast the cause, and most accurs’d effect.
Glo. Your beauty was the cause of that effect;
Your beauty, that did haunt me in my sleep
To undertake the death of all the world, 124
So might I live one hour in your sweet bosom.
Anne. If I thought that, I tell thee, homicide,
These nails should rend that beauty from my cheeks.
Glo. These eyes could not endure that beauty’s wrack;
You should not blemish it if I stood by:
So I by that; it is my day, my life.
Anne. Black night o’ershade thy day, and
death thine life! 132
Glo. Curse not thyself, fair creature; thou art both.
Anne. I would I were, to be reveng’d on thee.
Glo. It is a quarrel most unnatural,
To be reveng’d on him that loveth thee. 130
Anne. It is a quarrel just and reasonable,
To be reveng’d on him that kill’d my husband.
Glo. He that bereft thee, lady, of thy husband,
Did it to help thee to a better husband. 140
Anne. His better doth not breathe upon the earth.
Glo. He lives that loves thee better than he could.
Anne. Name him.
Glo. Plantagenet.
Anne. Why, that was he.
Glo. The self-same name, but one of better nature. 144
Anne. Where is he?
Glo. Here. [She spitteth at him.] Why dost thou spit at me?
Anne. Would it were mortal poison, for thy sake!
Glo. Never hung poison on so sweet a place.
Anne. Never hung poison on a fouler toad.
Out of my sight! thou dost infect mine eyes. 149
Glo. Thine eyes, sweet lady, have infected mine.
Anne. Would they were basilisks, to strike thee dead!
Glo. I would they were, that I might die at once; 152
For now they kill me with a living death.
Those eyes of thine from mine have drawn salt tears,
Sham’d their aspects with store of childish drops;
These eyes, which never shed remorseful tear;
No, when my father York and Edward wept 157
To hear the piteous moan that Rutland made
When black-fac’d Clifford shook his sword at him;
Nor when thy war-like father like a child, 160
Told the sad story of my father’s death,
And twenty times made pause to sob and weep,
That all the standers-by had wet their cheeks,
Like trees bedash’d with rain: in that sad time,
My manly eyes did scorn an humble tear; 165
And that these sorrows could not thence exhale,
 Thy beauty hath, and made them blind with weeping.
I never su’d to friend, nor enemy; 168
My tongue could never learn sweet smoothing words;
But, now thy beauty is propos’d my fee,
My proud heart sues, and prompts my tongue to speak. [She looks scornfully at him."
Teach not thy lip such scorn, for it was made for kissing, lady, not for such contempt.
If thy revengeful heart cannot forgive,
Lol here I lend thee this sharp-pointed sword;
Which if thou please to hide in this true breast,
And let the soul forth that adoreth thee, 177
I lay it open to the deadly stroke,
And humbly beg the death upon my knee.

[He lays his breast open: she offers at it with his sword.
Nay, do not pause; for I did kill King Henry;
But ’twas thy beauty that provoked me. 131
Nay, now dispatch; ’twas I that stabb’d young Edward; 172
[She again offers at his breast.
But ’twas thy heavenly face that set me on.
[She lets fall the sword.
Take up the sword again, or take up me. 184
Anne. Arise, dissembler: though I wish thy death,
I will not be thy executioner.
Glo. Then bid me kill myself, and I will do it.
Anne. I have already.
Glo. That was in thy rage:
Speak it again, and, even with the word, 189
This hand, which for thy love did kill thy love,
Shall, for thy love, kill a far truer love:
To both their deaths shalt thou be accessory. 192
Anne. I would I knew thy heart.
Glo. ’Tis figur’d in my tongue.
Anne. I fear me both are false.
Glo. Then never man was true. 196
Anne. Well, well, put up your sword.
Glo. Say, then, my peace is made.
Anne. That shall thou know hereafter.
Glo. But shall I live in hope? 200
Anne. All men, I hope, live so.
Glo. Vouchsafe to wear this ring.
Act I, Sc. II.  KING RICHARD THE THIRD

Anne. To take is not to give.

Glo. Look, how my ring encompasseth thy finger,@
Even so thy breast encloseth my poor heart;
Wear both of them, for both of them are thine.
And if thy poor devoted servant may
But beg one favour at thy gracious hand,
Thou dost confirm his happiness for ever.

Anne. What is it?

Glo. That it may please you leave these sad designs
To him that hath most cause to be a mourner,
And presently repair to Crosby-place; 213
Where, after I have solemnly interred
At Chertsey monastery this noble king,
And wet his grave with my repentant tears, 216
I will with all expedient duty see you;
For divers unknown reasons, I beseech you,
Grant me this boon.

Anne. With all my heart; and much it joys me too 220
To see you are become so penitent.
Tressell and Berkeley, go along with me.

Glo. Bid me farewell.

Anne. 'Tis more than you deserve;
But since you teach me how to flatter you, 224
Imagine I have said farewell already.

[Exeunt Lady Anne, Tressell, and Berkeley.

Glo. Sirs, take up the corse.

Gent. Toward Chertsey, noble lord?

Glo. No, to White-Friars; there attend my coming.

[Exeunt all but Gloucester.

Was ever woman in this humour woo'd? 229
Was ever woman in this humour won?
I'll have her; but I will not keep her long.
What! I, that kill'd her husband, and his father,
To take her in her heart's extremest hate;
With curses in her mouth, tears in her eyes,
The bleeding witness of her hatred:
Having God, her conscience, and these bars
against me,
And nothing I to back my suit withal
But the plain devil and dissembling looks,
And yet to win her, all the world to nothing!
Ha!

Hath she forgot already that brave prince,
Edward, her lord, whom I, some three months since,
Stabb'd in my angry mood at Tewksbury?
A sweeter and a lovelier gentleman,
Fram'd in the prodigality of nature,
Young, valiant, wise, and, no doubt, right royal,
The spacious world cannot again afford:
And will she yet abuse her eyes on me, 248

That cropp'd the golden prime of this sweet prince,
And made her widow to a woeful bed?
On me, whose all not equals Edward's moiety?
On me, that halt and am misshapen thus? 252
My dukedom to a beggarly denier
I do mistake my person all this while:
Upon my life, she finds, although I cannot,
Myself to be a marvellous proper man. 256
I'll be at charges for a looking-glass,
And entertain a score or two of tailors,
To study fashions to adorn my body:
Since I am crept in favour with myself, 260
I will maintain it with some little cost.
But first I'll turn you fellow in his grave,
And then return lamenting to my love.
Shine out, fair sun, till I have bought a glass, 264
That I may see my shadow as I pass.  [Exit.


Enter QUEEN ELIZABETH, LORD RIVERS, and L ORD GREY.

Riv. Have patience, madam: there's no doubt his majesty
Will soon recover his accustomed health.

Grey. In that you brook it ill, it makes him worse:
Therefore, for God's sake, entertain good comfort,
And cheer his Grace with quick and merry words.

Q. Eliz. If he were dead, what would betide on me?

Grey. No other harm but loss of such a lord.

Q. Eliz. The loss of such a lord includes all harms. 3

Grey. The heavens have bless'd you with a goodly son,
To be your comforter when he is gone.

Q. Eliz. Ah! he is young; and his minority
Is put into the trust of Richard Gloucester, 12
A man that loves not me, nor none of you.

Riv. Is it concluded he shall be protector?  Q. Eliz. It is determin'd, not concluded yet:
But so it must be if the king miscarry. 16

Enter BUCKINGHAM and STANLEY.

Grey. Here come the Lords of Buckingham and Stanley.

Buck. Good time of day unto your royal Grace!

Stan. God make your majesty joyful as you have been!

Q. Eliz. The Countess Richmond, good my Lord of Stanley,
To your good prayer will scarcely say amen.  
Yet, Stanley, notwithstanding she's your wife,  
And loves not me, be you, good lord, assur'd  
I hate not you for your proud arrogance.  

*Stan.* I do beseech you, either not believe  
The envious slanders of her false accusers;  
Or, if she be accus'd on true report,  
Bear with her weakness, which, I think, proceeds  
From wayward sickness, and nogrounded malice.  

*Q. Eliz.* Saw you the king to-day, my Lord  

*Stan.* But now the Duke of Buckingham  

*Q. Eliz.* What likelihood of his amendment,  

*Buck.* Madam, good hope; his Grace speaks  

*Q. Eliz.* God grant him health! did you con-  

*Buck.* Ay, madam: he desires to make atone-  

Between the Duke of Gloucester and your  

And between them and my lord chamberlain;  

*Q. Eliz.* Would all were well! But that will  

I fear our happiness is at the highest.  

*Enter* *GLOUCESTER, HASTINGS, and DORSET.*  

*Glo.* They do me wrong, and I will not en-  

dure it:  
Who are they that complain unto the king,  
That I, forsooth, am stern and love them not?  
By holy Paul, they love his Grace but lightly  
That fill his ears with such dissentious rumours.  
Because I cannot flatter and speak fair,  
Smile in men's faces, smooth, deceive, and cog,  
Duck with French nods and apish courtesy,  
I must be held a rancorous enemy.  
Cannot a plain man live and think no harm,  
But thus his simple truth must be abus'd  
By sly, sly, insinuating Jacks?  

*Grey.* To whom in all this presence speaks  
your Grace?  

*Glo.* To thee, that hast nor honesty nor grace.  
When have I injur'd thee? when done thee  

Or thee? or thee? or any of your faction?  
A plague upon you all! His royal person,—  
Whom God preserve better than you would  

Cannot be quiet scarce a breathing-while,  
But you must trouble him with lewd complaints.  

*Q. Eliz.* Brother of Gloucester, you mistake  

The king, on his own royal disposition,  
And not provok'd by any suitor else,  
Aiming, beluke, at your interior hatred,  
That in your outward action shows itself  
Against my children, brothers, and myself,  
Makes him to send; that thereby he may  
gather  
The ground of your ill-will, and so remove it.  

*Glo.* I cannot tell; the world is grown so  
bad  
That wrens make prey where eagles dare not  

Since every Jack became a gentleman  
There's many a gentle person made a Jack.  

*Q. Eliz.* Come, come, we know your mean-  

*Glo.* Meantime, God grants that we have need  
of you:  

Our brother is imprison'd by your means,  
Myself disgrac'd, and the nobility  
Held in contempt; while great promotions  
Are daily given to ennable those  
That scarce, some two days since, were worth a  

*Q. Eliz.* By him that rais'd me to this care-  
ful height  
From that contented hap which I enjoy'd,  
I never did incense his majesty  
Against the Duke of Clarence, but have been  
An earnest advocate to plead for him.  
My lord, you do me shameful injury,  
Falsely to draw me in these vile suspects.  

*Glo.* You may deny that you were not the mean  
Of my Lord Hastings' late imprisonment.  

*Riv.* She may, my lord; for—  

*Glo.* She may, Lord Rivers! why, who knows  
not so?  
She may do more, sir, than denying that:  
She may help you to many fair preferments,  
And then deny her aiding hand therein,  
And lay those honours on your high deserts.  
What may she not? She may,—ay, marry,  

*Riv.* What, marry, may she?  

*Glo.* What, marry, may she! marry with a  
king,  
A bachelor, a handsome stripling too.  
I wis your grandam had a wors'er match.  

*Q. Eliz.* My Lord of Gloucester, I have too.  

Long borne  
Your blunt upbraiding and your bitter scoffs;  
By heaven, I will acquaint his majesty  
Of those gross taunts that oft I have endur'd.  
I had rather be a country servantmaid  

Than a great queen, with this condition,  

693
Act I, Sc. III.

KING RICHARD THE THIRD

To be so baited, scorn'd, and stormed at:
Small joy have I in being England's queen.

Enter QUEEN MARGARET, behind.

Q. Mar. [Apart.] And lessen'd be that small,
God, I beseech him!

Thy honour, state, and seat is due to me. 112

Glo. What! threat you me with telling of
the king?

Tell him, and spare not: look, what I have said
I will avouch in presence of the king:
I dare adventure to be sent to the Tower. 116
'Tis time to speak; my pains are quite forgot.

Q. Mar. [Apart.] Out, devil! I remember
them too well:
Thou killest my husband Henry in the Tower,
And Edward, my poor son, at Towksbury. 126

Glo. Ere you were queen, ay, or your hus-
band king,
I was a pack-horse in great affairs,
A woe-out of his proud adversaries,
A liberal rewarder of his friends; 124
To royalize his blood I spilt mine own.

Q. Mar. Ay, and much better blood than bis,
or thine.

Glo. In all which time you and your husband
Grey
Were factious for the house of Lancaster; 128
And, Rivers, so were you. Was not your hus-
band

In Margaret's battle at Saint Alban's slain?
Let me put in your minds, if you forget,
What you have been ere now, and what you are;
Withal, what I have been, and what I am. 133

Q. Mar. A murderous villain, and so still
thou art.

Glo. Poor Clarence did forsake his father,
Warwick,
Ay, and forswore himself,—which Jesu pardon!— 136

Q. Mar. Which God revenge!

Glo. To fight on Edward's party for the crown;
And for his meed, poor lord, he is mew'd up.
I would to God my heart were flint, like Ed-
ward's; 140

Or Edward's soft and pitiful, like mine:
I am too childish-foolish for this world.

Q. Mar. Hie thee to hell for shame, and
leave this world,
Thou cacademon! there thy kingdom is. 144

Riv. My Lord of Gloucester, in those busy
days
Which here you urge to prove us enemies,
We follow'd then our lord, our lawful king;
So should we you, if you should be our king. 148

Glo. If I should be! I had rather be a
pedlar.

Far be it from my heart the thought thereof!
Q. Eliz. As little joy, my lord, as you suppose
You should enjoy, were you this country's king,
As little joy you may suppose in me
That I enjoy, being the queen thereof.
Q. Mar. As little joy enjoys the queen thereof;
For I am she, and altogether joyless.

156

I can no longer hold me patient. [Advancing.

Hear me, you wrangling pirates, that fall out
In sharing that which you have pill'd from
me!

161

Which of you trembles not that looks on me?
If not, that, I being queen, you bow like sub-
jects,
Yet that, by you depos'd, you quake like
rebels?

166

Ahi! gentle villain, do not turn away.

Glo. Foul wrinkled witch, what mak'st thou
in my sight?

Q. Mar. But repetition of what thou hast
marr'd;
That will I make before I let thee go.

Glo. Wert thou not banished on pain of
death?
Q. Mar. I was; but I do find more pain in
banishment 168

Than death can yield me here by my abode.

A husband and a son thou ow'st to me;
And thou, a kingdom; all of you, allegiance:
This sorrow that I have by right is yours, 172
And all the pleasures you usurp are mine.

Glo. The curse my noble father laid on thee,
When thou didst crown his war-like brows
with paper,

And with thy scorns drew'st rivers from his
eyes; 176

And then, to dry them, gav'st the duke a clout

Steep'd in the faultless blood of pretty Rutland;
His curses, then from bitterness of soul

Denounced against thee, are all fall'n upon
thee;

And God, not we, hath plac'd thy bloody deed.
Q. Eliz. So just is God, to right the innocent

Hast. O! 'twas the foulest deed to slay that
babe,

And the most merciless, that e'er was heard of.

Riv. Tyrants themselves wept when it was
reported.

Dors. No man but prophesied revenge for it.

Buck. Northumberland, then present, wept
to see it.

Q. Mar. What! were you snarling all before
I came,

Ready to catch each other by the throat,
And turn you all your hatred now on me?
Did York's dread curse prevail so much with

heaven

694
That Henry's death, my lovely Edward's death, 196
Their kingdom's loss, my woeful banishment,
Should all but answer for that peevish brat?
Can curses pierce the clouds and enter heaven?
Why then, give way, dull clouds, to my quick curses!

Though not by war, by surfeit die your king,
As ours by murder, to make him a king!
Edward, thy son, that now is Prince of Wales,
For Edward, my son, which was Prince of Wales,
Die in his youth by like untimely violence! 201
Thyself a queen, for me that was a queen,
Outlive thy glory, like my wretched self!
Long mayst thou live to wail thy children's loss,
And see another, as I see thee now,
Deck'd in thy rights, as thou art stall'd in mine!
Long die thy happy days before thy death;
And, after many lengthen'd hours of grief, 208
Die neither mother, wife, nor England's queen!
Rivers, and Dorset, you were standers by,—
And so wast thou, Lord Hastings,—when my son
Was stabb'd with bloody daggers: God, I pray him,
That none of you may live your natural age,
But by some unlook'd accident cut off.

Glo. Have done thy charm, thou hateful wither'd hag!

Q. Mar. And leave out thee? stay, dog, for thou shalt hear me. 216

If heaven have any grievous plague in store
Exceeding those that I can wish upon thee,
O! let them keep it till thy sins be ripe,
And then hurled down their indignation 220
On thee, the troubler of the poor world's peace.
The worm of conscience still begueth thy soul!
Thy friends suspect for traitors while thou livest,
And take deep traitors for thy dearest friends!
No sleep close up that deadly eye of thine, 225
Unless it be while some tormenting dream
Affrights thee with a hell of ugly devils,
Thou elvish-mark'd, abortive, rooting hog! 228
Thou that wast seal'd in thy nativity
The slave of nature and the son of hell,
Thou slander of thy mother's heavy womb!
Thou loath'd issue of thy father's loins! 232
Thou rag of honour! thou detested—

Glo. Margaret!

Q. Mar. Richard!

Glo. Ha!

Q. Mar. I call thee not.

Glo. I cry thee mercy then, for I did think
That thou hast'd call'd me all these bitter names.

Q. Mar. Why, so I did; but look'd for no reply.

Oh! let me make the period to my curse.

Glo. 'Tis done by me, and ends in 'Margaret.'

Q. Eliz. Thus have you breath'd your curse
against yourself. 240

Q. Mar. Poor painted queen, vain flourish of my fortune!

Why strew'st thou sugar on that bottled spider,
Whose deadly web ensmarreth thee about?
Fool, fool! thou whet'st a knife to kill thyself.
The day will come that thou shalt wish for me
To help thee curse this pois'nour bunch-back'd toad.

Hast. False-boding woman, end thy frantic curse,

Lest to thy harm thou move our patience. 248

Q. Mar. Foul shame upon you! you have all mov'd mine.

Riv. Were you well serv'd, you would be
taught your duty.

Q. Mar. To serve me well, you all should do
me duty,

Teach me to be your queen, and you my subjects:

Ol! serve me well, and teach yourselves that duty.

Dor. Dispute not with her, she is lunatic.

Q. Mar. Peace! Master marquess, you are
malapert:

Your fire-new stamp of honour is scarce
current.

Ol! that your young nobility could judge

What 'twere to lose it, and be miserable!

They that stand high have many blasts to
shake them,
And if they fall, they dash themselves to pieces.

Glo. Good counsel, marry: learn it, learn it,
marquess.

Dor. It touches you, my lord, as much as me.

Glo. Ay, and much more; but I was born so
high,

Our aery buildeth in the cedar's top, 254
And dallies with the wind, and scorches the sun.

Q. Mar. And turns the sun to shade; alas! alas!

Witness my son, now in the shade of death;
Whose bright out-shining beams thy cloudy
wrath

Hath in eternal darkness folded up.

Your aery buildeth in our aery's nest:

O God! that seest it, do not suffer it;
As it was won with blood, lost be it so! 272

Buck. Peace, peace! for shame, if not for charity.

Q. Mar. Urge neither charity nor shame to
me:

Uncharitably with me have you dealt,
And shamefully my hopes by you are butcher'd.

My charity is outrage, life my shame; 277
And in that shame still live my sorrow’s rage!
_Buck._ Have done, have done.
_Q. Mar._ O prince, Buckingham! I’ll kiss
thy hand,
In sign of league and amity with thee:
Now fair befall thee and thy noble house!
Thy garments are not spotted with our blood,
Nor thou within the compass of my curse.  284
_Buck._ Nor no one here; for curses never pass
The lips of those that breathe them in the air.
_Q. Mar._ I will not think but they ascend the sky,
And there awake God’s gentle-sleeping peace.
O Buckingham! take heed of yonder dog:  289
Look, when he fawns, he bites; and when he bites
His venom tooth will rinkle to the death:
Have not to do with him, beware of him;  292
Sin, death and hell have set their marks on him,
And all their ministers attend on him.
_Glo._ What doth she say, my Lord of Buck-
ingham?
_Buck._ Nothing that I respect, my gracious lord.
_Q. Mar._ What! dost thou scorn me for my gentle counsel,
And soothe the devil that I warn thee from?
O! but remember this another day,
When he shall split thy very heart with sorrow,
And say poor Margaret was a prophetess.
Live each of you the subject to his hate,
And he to yours, and all of you to God’s!  _Exit._
_Hast._ My hair doth stand on end to hear her curses.
_Riv._ And so doth mine. I muse why she’s at liberty.
_Glo._ I cannot blame her: by God’s holy mother,
She hath had too much wrong, and I repent
My part thereof that I have done to her.  308
_Q. Eliz._ I never did her any, to my knowl-
dedge.
_Glo._ Yet you have all the vantage of her wrong.
I was too hot to do somebody good,
That is too cold in thinking of it now.  312
Marry, as for Clarence, he is well repaid;
He is frank’d up to falling for his pains:
God pardon them that are the cause thereof!
_Riv._ A virtuous and a Christian-like con-
clusion,
To pray for them that have done scathe to us.
_Glo._ So do I ever [Aside], being well-adviz’d;
For had I curs’d now, I had curs’d myself.

_Enter Catesby._
_Cates._ Madam, his majesty doth call for you;
And for your Grace; and you, my noble lords.  321
_Q. Eliz._ Catesby, I come. Lords, will you go with me?
_Riv._ We wait upon your Grace.
[Exit all but Gloucester._
_Glo._ I do the wrong, and first begin to brawl.
The secret mischiefs that I set abroach  325
I lay unto the grievous charge of others.
Clarence, whom I, indeed, have cast in dark-
ness,
I do beweep to many simple gulls;  328
Namely, to Stanley, Hastings, Buckingham;
And tell them ‘tis the queen and her allies
That stir the king against the duke my brother.
Now they believe it; and withal whet me  332
To be reveng’d on Rivers, Vaughan, Grey;
But then I sigh, and, with a piece of scripture,
Tell them that God bids us do good for evil:
And thus I clothe my naked villany  336
With odd old ends stol’n forth of holy writ,
And seem a saint when most I play the devil.

_Enter two Murderers._
But soft! here come my executioners.
How now, my hardy, stout resolved mates!  340
Are you now going to dispatch this thing?
_First Murd._ We are, my lord; and come to have the warrant,
That we may be admitted where he is.
_Glo._ Well thought upon; I have it here about me:
[Give the warrant._
When you have done, repair to Crosby-place.  345
But, sirs, be sudden in the execution,
Withal obdurate, do not hear him plead;
For Clarence is well-spoken, and perhaps  348
May move your hearts to pity, if you mark him.
_First Murd._ Tut, tut, my lord, we will not stand to prate;
Talkers are no good doers: be assur’d
We go to use our hands and not our tongues.  352
_Glo._ Your eyes drop millstones, when fools’ eyes fall tears:
I like you, lads; about your business straight;
Go, go, dispatch.
_First Murd._ We will, my noble lord.  _[Exit._

_SCENE IV._—_The Same._ _The Tower._

_Enter Clarence and Brakenbury._
_Brack._ Why looks your Grace so heavily to-
day?
_Clar._ O, I have pass’d a miserable night,
So full of ugly sights, of ghastly dreams,
That, as I am a Christian faithful man,
I would not spend another such a night,  
Though 'twere to buy a world of happy days,  
So full of dismal terror was the time.

_Bruk._ What was your dream, my lord? I pray you, tell me.

_Clar._ Methought that I had broken from the  
Tower,  
And was embark'd to cross to Burgundy;  
In my company my brother Gloucester,  
Who from my cabin tempted me to walk  
Upon the hatches: whence we look'd toward England,  
And cited up a thousand heavy times,  
During the wars of York and Lancaster,  
That had befall'n us. As we pac'd along  
Upon the giddy footing of the hatches,  
Methought that Gloucester stumb'd; and, in falling,  
Struck me, that thought to stay him, overboard,  
Into the tumbling billows of the main.

_Lord, Lord!_ methought what pain it was to drown:  
What dreadful noise of water in mine ears!  
What sights of ugly death within mine eyes!  
Methought I saw a thousand fearful wrack's;  
A thousand men that flishe saw'd upon;  
Wedges of gold, great anchors, heaps of pearl,  
Inestimable stones, unval'd jewels,  
All scatter'd in the bottom of the sea.

Some lay in dead men's skulls; and in those holes  
Where eyes did once inhabit, there were crept,  
As 'twere in scorn of eyes, reflecting gems,  
That woo'd the slimy bottom of the deep,  
And mock'd the dead bones that lay scatter'd by.

_Bruk._ Had you such leisure in the time of death  
To gaze upon those secrets of the deep?

_Clar._ Methought I had; and often did I strive  
To yield the ghost; but still the envious flood  
Stopt in my soul, and would not let it forth.  
To find the empty, vast, and wandering air;  
But smother'd it within my panting bulk,  
Which almost burst to belie it in the sea.

_Bruk._ Awak'd you not with this sore agony?  
_Clar._ No, no, my dream was lengthen'd after life;  
O! then began the tempest to my soul.

I pass'd, methought, the melancholy flood,  
With that grim ferryman which poets write of,  
Unto the kingdom of perpetual night.

The first that there did greet my stranger soul,  
Was my great father-in-law, renowned Warwick;  
Who cried aloud, 'What scourge for perjury  
Can this dark monarchy afford false Clarence?'  
And so he vanish'd: then came wandering by  
A shadow like an angel, with bright hair  
Dabbled in blood; and he shriek'd out aloud,  
'Clarence is come,—false, fleeting, perjur'd Clarence,  
That stab'd me in the field by Tewksbury;—  
Seize on him! Furies, take him unto torment.'  
With that, methought, a legion of foul fiends  
Envir'd me, and howl'd in mine ears  
Such hideous cries, that, with the very noise  
I trembling wak'd, and, for a season after  
Could not believe but that I was in hell,  
Such terrible impression made my dream.

_Bruk._ No marvel, lord, though it affrighted you;  
I am afraid, methinks, to hear you tell it.

_Clar._ O Brakenbury! I have done these things  
That now give evidence against my soul,  
For Edward's sake; and see how he requires me.  
O God! if my deep prayers cannot appease thee,  
But thou wilt be aveng'd on my misdeeds,  
Yet execute thy wrath on me alone:  
O! spare my guiltless wife and my poor children.

I pray thee, gentle keeper, stay by me;  
My soul is heavy, and I fain would sleep.

_Bruk._ I will, my lord. God give your Grace  
Sorrow breaks seasons and reposing hours,  
Makes the night morning, and the noon-tide night.  
Princes have but their titles for their glories,  
An outward honour for an inward toil;  
And, for unfelt imaginations,  
They often feel a world of restless cares:  
So that, between their titles and low names,  
There's nothing differs but the outward fame.

_Enter the two Murderers._

_First Murderer._ Hol! who's here?  
_Bruk._ What wouldst thou, fellow? and how came'st thou hither?

_First Murderer._ I would speak with Clarence, and I came hither on my legs.

_Bruk._ What! so brief?  
_Sec. Murderer._ 'Tis better, sir, than to be tedious.—  
Let him see our commission, and talk no more.

[A paper is delivered to Brakenbury, who reads it.

_Bruk._ I am, in this, commanded to deliver  
The noble Duke of Clarence to your hands:  
I will not reason what is meant hereby,  
Because I will be guiltless of the meaning.  
There lies the duke asleep, and there the keys.  
I'll to the king; and signify to him  
That thus I have resign'd to you my charge.
KING RICHARD THE THIRD

Act I, Sc. IV.

First Murd. You may, sir; 'tis a point of wisdom; fare you well. [Exit Brakenbury.

Sec. Murd. What! shall we stab him as he sleeps?

First Murd. No; he'll say 'twas done cowardly, when he wakes.

Sec. Murd. When he wakes! why, fool, he shall never wake till the judgment-day.

First Murd. Why, then he'll say we stabbed him sleeping.

Sec. Murd. The urging of that word judgment hath bred a kind of remorse in me.

First Murd. What! art thou afraid? There's no warrant for it; but to be damn'd for killing him, from which no warrant can defend me.

First Murd. I thought thou hadst been resolute.

Sec. Murd. So I am, to let him live.

First Murd. I'll back to the Duke of Gloucester, and tell him so.

Sec. Murd. Nay, I prithee, stay a little; I hope my holy humour will change; it was wont to hold me but while one tells twenty.

First Murd. How dost thou feel thyself now?

Sec. Murd. Some certain dregs of conscience are yet within me.

First Murd. Remember our reward when the deed's done.

Sec. Murd. 'Zounds! he dies: I had forgot the reward.

First Murd. Where's thy conscience now?


First Murd. So when he opens his purse to give us our reward, thy conscience flies out.

Sec. Murd. 'Tis no matter; let it go: there's few or none will entertain it.

First Murd. What if it come to thee again?

Sec. Murd. I'll not meddle with it; it makes a man a coward; a man cannot steal, but it accuseth him; a man cannot swear, but it checks him; a man cannot lie with his neighbour's wife, but it detects him: 'tis a blushing shamefast spirit, that mutinies in a man's bosom; it fills one full of obstacles; it made me once restore a purse of gold that I found; it beggars any man that keeps it; it is turned out of all towns and cities for a dangerous thing; and every man that means to live well, endeavours to trust to himself and live without it.

First Murd. 'Zounds! it is even now at my elbow, persuading me not to kill the duke.

Sec. Murd. Take the devil in thy mind, and believe him not: he would insinuate with thee but to make thee sigh.

First Murd. Tut, I am strong-framed; he cannot prevail with me.

Sec. Murd. Spoke like a tall fellow that respects his reputation. Come, shall we to this gear?

First Murd. Take him over the costard with the hilts of thy sword, and then throw him into the malmsey-butt in the next room.

Sec. Murd. O, excellent device! make a sop of him.

First Murd. Soft! he wakes.

Sec. Murd. Strike!

First Murd. No, we'll reason with him.

Clar. Where art thou, keeper? give me a cup of wine.

First Murd. You shall have wine enough, my lord, anon.

Clar. In God's name, what art thou?

First Murd. A man, as you are.

Clar. But not, as I am, royal.

First Murd. Nor you, as we are, loyal.

Clar. Thy voice is thunder, but thy looks are humble.

First Murd. My voice is now the king's, my looks mine own.

Clar. How darkly, and how deadly dost thou speak!

Your eyes do menace me; why look you pale? Who sent you hither? Wherefore do you come?

Both Murd. To, to, to—

Clar. To murder me?

Both Murd. Ay, ay.

Clar. You scarcely have the hearts to tell me so.

And therefore cannot have the hearts to do it.

Wherein, my friends, have I offended you?

First Murd. Offended us you have not, but the king.

Clar. I shall be reconcil'd to him again.

Sec. Murd. Never, my lord; therefore prepare to die.

Clar. Are you call'd forth from out a world of men

To slay the innocent? What is my offence?

Where is the evidence that doth accuse me? Where is the aspersion of poor Clarence' death?

Before I be convict by course of law.

To threaten me with death is most unlawful.

I charge you, as you hope to have redemption

By Christ's dear blood shed for our grievous sins,

That you depart and lay no hands on me;

The deed you undertake is damnable.

First Murd. What we will do, we do upon command.
Sec. Murd. And he that hath commanded is our king.

Clar. Erroneous vassal! the great King of kings

Hath in the table of his law commanded
That thou shalt do no murder: will you, then,
Spurn at his edict and fulfil a man's?
Take heed; for he holds vengeance in his hand,
To hurl upon their heads that break his law.

Sec. Murd. And that same vengeance doth
He hurl on thee,
For false forswearing and for murder too:
Thou didst receive the sacrament to fight
In quarrel of the house of Lancaster.

First Murd. And, like a traitor to the name of God,
Didst break that vow, and, with thy treacherous blade
Unripp'st the bowels of thy sovereign's son.

Sec. Murd. Whom thou wast sworn to cherish and defend,

First Murd. How canst thou urge God's dreadful law to us,
When thou hast broke it in such dear degree?

Clar. Alas! for whose sake did I that ill deed?

For Edward, for my brother, for his sake:
He sends you not to murder me for this;
For in that sin he is as deep as I.
If God will be avenged for the deed,

O! know you yet, he doth it publicly:
Take not the quarrel from his powerful arm;
He needs no indirect or lawless course
To cut off those that have offended him.

First Murd. Who made thee then a bloody minister,
When gallant-springing, brave Plantagenet,
That princely novice, was struck dead by thee?

Clar. My brother's love, the devil, and my rage.

First Murd. Thy brother's love, our duty, and thy fault,
Provoked us hither now to slaughter thee.

Clar. If you do love my brother, hate not me;
I am his brother, and I love him well.
If you are hir'd for meed, go back again,
And I will send you to my brother Gloucester,
Who shall reward you better for your life
Than Edward will for tidings of my death.

Sec. Murd. You are deceiv'd, your brother Gloucester hates you.

Clar. O, weal he loves me, and he holds me dear:
Go you to him from me.

Both Murd. Ay, so we will.

Clar. Tell him, when that our princely father York
Bless'd his three sons with his victorious arm,
And charg'd us from his soul to love each other,
He little thought of this divided friendship:
Bid Gloucester think on this, and he will weep.

First Murd. Ay, millstones; as he lesson'd us to weep.

Clar. O! do not slander him, for he is kind.

First Murd. Right;
As snow in harvest. Thou deceiv'st thyself;
'Tis he that sends us to destroy you here.

Clar. It cannot be; for he bewept my fortune,
And hugg'd me in his arms, and swore, with sobs,
That he would labour my delivery.

First Murd. Why, so he doth, when he delivers you
From this earth's thralldom to the joys of heaven.

Sec. Murd. Make peace with God, for you must die, my lord.

Clar. Hast thou that holy feeling in thy soul,
To counsel me to make my peace with God,
And art thou yet to thy own soul so blind,
That thou wilt war with God by murdering me?
O! sirs, consider, he that set you on
To do this deed, will hate you for the deed.

Sec. Murd. What shall we do?

Clar. Relent and save your souls.

First Murd. Relent! 'tis cowardly, and womanish.

Clar. Not to relent, is beastly, savage, devilish.

Which of you, if you were a prince's son,
Being pent from liberty, as I am now,
If two such mur'd'rers as yourselves came to you,
Would not entreat for life?

My friend, I spy some pity in thy looks;
O! if thine eye be not a flatterer,
Come thou on my side, and entreat for me,
As you would beg, were you in my distress?

A begging prince what beggar pities not?
Sec. Murd. Look behind you, my lord.

First Murd. [Stabs him.] Take that, and that:
I'll drown you in the malmsey-butt within.

[Exit with the body.

Sec. Murd. A bloody deed, and desperately dispatch'd!
How fain, like Pilate, would I wash my hands
Of this most grievous murder.

Re-enter first Murderer.

First Murd. How now! what mean'st thou,
that thou help'st me not?
By heaven, the duke shall know how slack you
have been.

Sec. Murd. I would he knew that I had sav'd
his brother!

Take thou the fee, and tell him what I say;
For I repent me that the duke is slain. [Exit.

First Murd. So do not I: go, coward as thou
art. 289

Well, I'll go hide the body in some hole,
Till that the duke give order for his burial:
And when I have my need, I will away; 292
For this will out, and here I must not stay.

[Exit.

ACT II.


Enter King Edward sick, Queen Elizabeth,
Dorset, Rivers, Hastings, Buckingham,
Grey, and Others.

K. Edw. Why, so: now have I done a good
day's work.

You peers, continue this united league:
I every day expect an embassage
From my Redeemer to redeem me hence; 4
And more in peace my soul shall part to heaven,
Since I have made my friends at peace on earth.
Rivers and Hastings, take each other's hand;
Dissemble not your hatred, swear your love. 8

Riv. By heaven, my soul is purg'd from
grudging hate;

And with my hand I seal my true heart's love.
Hast. So thrive I, as I truly swear the like!
K. Edw. Take heed, you dally not before
your king; 12

Lest he that is the supreme King of kings
Confound your hidden falsehood, and award
Either of you to be the other's end.

Hast. So prosper I, as I swear perfect love!
Riv. And I, as I love Hastings with my heart,
K. Edw. Madam, yourself are not exempt
in this,

Nor you, son Dorset, Buckingham, nor you;
You have been factious one against the other. 20
Wife, love Lord Hastings, let him kiss your hand;
And what you do, do it unfeignedly.

Q. Eliz. There, Hastings; I will never more
remember

Our former hatred, so thrive I and mine! 24

K. Edw. Dorset, embrace him; Hastings,
love lord marquess.

Dor. This interchange of love, I here protest,
Upon my part shall be inviolable.

Hast. And so swear I. [They embrace.

K. Edw. Now, princely Buckingham, seal
thou this league 29

With thy embraces to my wife's allies,

And make me happy in your unity.

Buck. [To the Queen.] Whenever Bucking-
ham doth turn his hate

Upon your Grace, but with all duteous love
Doth cherish you and yours, God punish me

With hate in those where I expect most love!
When I have most need to employ a friend, 36
And most assured that he is a friend,
Deep, hollow, treacherous, and full of guile,
Be he unto me! This do I beg of God,
When I am cold in love to you or yours. 40

[They embrace.

K. Edw. A pleasing cordial, princely Buck-
ingham,
Is this thy vow unto my sickly heart.
There wanteth now our brother Gloucester here
To make the blessed period of this peace. 44

Buck. And, in good time, here comes the
noble duke.

Enter Gloucester.

Glo. Good morrow to my sovereign king and
queen;

And princely peers, a happy time of day!

K. Edw. Happy, indeed, as we have spent
the day.

Gloucester, we have done deeds of charity;

Made peace of enmity, fair love of hate,
Between these swelling wrong-moussed peers.

Glo. A blessed labour, my most sovereign
lord.

Among this princely heap, if any here,
By false intelligence, or wrong surmise,
Hold me a foe;
If I unwittingly, or in my rage,
Have aught committed that is hardly borne
By any in this presence, I desire
To reconcile me to his friendly peace:
'Tis death to me to be at enmity;
I hate it, and desire all good men's love.
First, madam, I entreat true peace of you,
Which I will purchase with my duteous ser-
vice;

Of you, my noble cousin Buckingham, 64
If ever any grudge were lodg'd between us;
Of you, Lord Rivers, and Lord Grey, of you,
That all without desert have frown'd on me;
Of you, Lord Woodville, and Lord Scales, of you;
Dukes, earls, lords, gentlemen; indeed, of all. 69
I do not know that Englishman alive
With whom my soul is any jot at odds
More than the infant that is born to-night: 71
I thank my God for my humility.

Q. Eliz. A holy day shall this be kept here-
after:

I would to God all strifes were well compounded.
My sov'reign lord, I do beseech your highness 76
To take our brother Clarence to your grace.
Glo. Why, madam, have I offer'd love for this,
To be so flouted in this royal presence?
Who knows not that the gentle duke is dead? 80
[They all start.
You do him injury to scorn his corse.
K. Edw. Who knows not he is dead? who knows he is?
Q. Eliz. All-seeing heaven, what a world is this!
Buck. Look I so pale, Lord Dorset, as the rest?
Dor. Ay, my good lord; and no man in the presence
But his red colour hath forsook his cheeks.
K. Edw. Is Clarence dead? the order was revers'd.
Glo. But he, poor man, by your first order died,
And that a winged Mercury did bear;
Some tardy cripple bore the countermand,
That came too lag to see him buried.
God grant that some, less noble and less loyal, 92
Nearer in bloody thoughts, and not in blood,
Deserve not worse than wretched Clarence did,
And yet go current from suspicion.

Enter Stanley.

Stan. A boon, my sov'reign, for my service done!
K. Edw. I prithee, peace: my soul is full of sorrow.
Stan. I will not rise, unless your highness hear me.
K. Edw. Then say at once, what is it thou request'st.
Stan. The forfeit, sovereign, of my servant's life;
Who slew to-day a riotous gentleman
Lately attendant on the Duke of Norfolk.
K. Edw. Have I a tongue to doom my brother's death,
And shall that tongue give pardon to a slave?
My brother kill'd no man, his fault was thought;
And yet his punishment was bitter death.
Who su'd me for him? who, in my wrath,
Kneel'd at my feet, and bade me be advis'd? 108
Who spoke of brotherhood? who spoke of love?
Who told me how the poor soul did forsake
The mighty Warwick, and did fight for me?
Who told me, in the field at Tewksbury, 112
When Oxford had me down, he rescu'd me,
And said, 'Dear brother, live, and be a king,'
Who told me, when we both lay in the field
Frozen almost to death, how he did lap me?
Even in his garments; and did give himself,
All thin and naked, to the numb cold night?

All this from my remembrance brutish wrath
Sinfully pluck'd, and not a man of you
Had so much grace to put it in my mind.
But when your carters or your waiting-vassals
Have done a drunken slaughter, and defac'd
The precious image of our dear Redeemer, 124
You straight are on your knees for pardon, pardon;
And I, unjustly too, must grant it you;
But for my brother not a man would speak,
Nor I, ungracious, speak unto myself 128
For him, poor soul. The proudest of you all
Have been beholding to him in his life,
Yet none of you would once beg for his life.
O God! I fear, thy justice will take hold 132
On me and you and mine and yours for this.
Come, Hastings, help me to my closet. Oh poor Clarence!

[Exeunt King Edward, Queen, Hastings, Rivers, Dorset, and Grey.

Glo. This is the fruit of rashness. Mark'd you not
How that the guilty kindred of the queen
Look'd pale when they did hear of Clarence' death?
Oh! they did urge it still unto the king:
God will revenge it. Come, lords; will you go
To comfort Edward with our company? 149
Buck. We wait upon your Grace.  

SCENE II.—The Same. A Room in the Palace.

Enter the DUCHESS OF YORK, with a Son and Daughter of CLARENCE.

Boy. Goodgrandam, tell us, is our father dead?
Duch. No, boy.
Daugh. Why do you wring your hands, and beat your breast,
And cry—'O Clarence, my unhappy son?' 4
Boy. Why do you look on us, and shake your head,
And call us orphans, wretches, castaways,
If that our noble father be alive?
Duch. My pretty cousins, you mistake me much;
I do lament the sickness of the king,
As loath to lose him, not your father's death;
It were lost sorrow to wall one that's lost.
Boy. Then, grandam, you conclude that he is dead.

The king mine uncle is to blame for it:
God will revenge it; whom I will importune
With earnest prayers all to that effect.
Daugh. And so will I. 16
Duch. Peace, children, peace! the king doth love you well;
Incapable and shallow innocents,
Act II, Sc. II.

KING RICHARD THE THIRD

You cannot guess who caus'd your father's death.

Boy. Grandam, we can; for my good uncle

Gloucester

Told me, the king, provok'd to't by the queen,
Devis'd impeachments to imprison him:
And when my uncle told me so, he wept,
And pitied me, and kindly kiss'd my cheek; 24
Bade me rely on him, as on my father,
And he would love me dearly as his child.

Duch. Ah! that deceit should steal such
gentle shape,
And with a virtuous wizard hide deep vice. 28
He is my son, ay, and therein my shame,
Yet from my dugs he drew not this deceit.

Boy. Think you my uncle did dissemble, grandam?

Duch. Ay, boy.

Boy. I cannot think it. Hark! what noise is
this?

Enter Queen Elizabeth, distractedly; Rivers
and Dorset following her.

Q. Eliz. Oh! who shall hinder me to wail
and weep,
To chide my fortune, and torment myself?
I'll join with black despair against my soul; 36
And to myself become an enemy.

Duch. What means this scene of rude
impatience?

Q. Eliz. To make an act of tragic violence:
Edward, my lord, thy son, our king, is dead! 40
Why grow the branches now the root is wither'd?
Why wither not the leaves that want their sap?
If you will live, lament: if die, be brief,
That our swift-winged souls may catch the
king's;

Or, like obedient subjects, follow him
To his new kingdom of perpetual rest.

Duch. Ah! so much interest have I in thy
sorrow
As I had title in thy noble husband.

I have bewept a worthy husband's death,
And liv'd with looking on his images;
But now two mirrors of his princely semblance
Are crack'd in pieces by malignant death;

And I for comfort have but one false glass,
That greaves me when I see my shame in him.
Thou art a widow; yet thou art a mother,
And hast the comfort of thy children left thee:
But death hath snatch'd my husband from
mine arms;

And pluck'd two crutches from my feeble limbs,
Clarence and Edward. O! what cause have I—

Thine being but a moiety of my grief — 60
To overgo thy plaints, and drown thy cries!

Boy. Ah, aunt, you wept not for our father's
death;

How can we aid you with our kindred tears?

Daugh. Our fatherless distress was left un-
moan'd;

Your widow-dолour likewise be unwept.

Q. Eliz. Give me no help in lamentation;
I am not barren to bring forth complaints:
All springs reduce their currents to mine eyes,
That I, being govern'd by the wat'ry moon, 69
May send forth plenteous tears to drown the
world!

Ah! for my husband, for my dear Lord Edward!

Chil. Ah! for our father, for our dear Lord
Clarence!

Duch. Alas! for both, both mine, Edward
and Clarence!

Q. Eliz. What stay had I but Edward? and
he's gone.

Chil. What stay had we but Clarence? and
he's gone.

Duch. What stays had I but they? and they
are gone.

Q. Eliz. Was never widow had so dear a loss.

Chil. Were never orphans had so dear a loss.

Duch. Was never mother had so dear a loss.

Alas! I am the mother of these griefs:

Their woes are parcel'd, mine are general.
She for an Edward weeps, and so do I;
I for a Clarence weep, so doth not she:

These babes for Clarence weep, and so do I; 84

I for an Edward weep, so do not they:
Alas! you three, on me, threefold distress'd,
Pour all your tears; I am your sorrow's nurse,
And I will pamper it with lamentation.

Dor. Comfort, dear mother: God is much
dispers'd
That you take with unthankfulness his doing.
In common worldly things 'tis call'd ungrateful
With dull unwillingness to repay a debt 92
Which with a bounteous hand was kindly lent;
Much more to be thus opposite with heaven,
For it requires the royal debt it lent you.

Riv. Madam, bethink you, like a careful
mother,

Of the young prince your son: send straight for
him;

Let him be crown'd; in him your comfort lives.
Drown desperate sorrow in dead Edward's grave,
And plant your joys in living Edward's throne.

Enter Gloucester, Buckingham, Stanley,
Hastings, Ratcliff, and Others.

Glo. Sister, have comfort: all of us have cause
To wail the dimming of our shining star;
But none can cure their harms by wailing them.

Madam, my mother, I do cry you mercy; 104
I did not see your Grace: humbly on my knee
I crave your blessing.
KING RICHARD THE THIRD

Act II, Sc. III.

Duch. God bless thee! and put meekness in thy mind, Love, charity, obedience, and true duty. 108
Glo. Amen; [Aside...] and make me die a good old man!
That is the butt-end of a mother's blessing; I marvel that her Grace did leave it out.
Buck. You cloudy princes and heart-sorrowing peers, 112
That bear this heavy mutual load of moan, Now cheer each other in each other's love: Though we have spent our harvest of this king, We are to reap the harvest of his son, 116
The broken rancour of your high-sworn hearts, But lately splinter'd, knelt, and join'd together, Must gently be preserv'd, cherish'd, and kept: Me seemeth good, that, with some little train, Forthwith from Ludlow the young prince be fetch'd 121
Hither to London, to be crown'd our king.

Riv. Why with some little train, my Lord of Buckingham?
Buck. Marry, my lord, lest, by a multitude, The new-heel'd wound of malice should break out; 125
Which would be so much the more dangerous, By how much the estate is green and yet un-govern'd;
Where every horse bears his commanding rein, And may direct his course as please himself, 129
As well the fear of harm, as harm apparent, In my opinion, ought to be prevented.
Glo. I hope the king made peace with all of us; 132
And the compact is firm and true in me.
Riv. And so in me; and so, I think, in all:
Yet, since it is but green, it should be put To no apparent likelihood of breach, 136
Which haply by much company might be urg'd:
Therefore I say with noble Buckingham, That it is meet so few should fetch the prince.
Hast. And so say I. 140
Glo. Then be it so; and go we to determine Who they shall be that straight shall post to Ludlow.
Madam, and you my mother, will you go To give your censure in this business? 144
[Exeunt all except Buckingham and Gloucester.

Buck. My lord, whoever journeys to the prince, For God's sake, let not us two stay at home: For by the way I'll sort occasion, As index to the story we late talk'd of, 148
To part the queen's proud kindred from the prince.
Glo. My other self, my counsel's consistory, My oracle, my prophet! My dear cousin,

I, as a child, will go by thy direction. 152
Towards Ludlow then, for we'll not stay behind. 156
[Exeunt.

Scene III.—The Same. A Street.

Enter two Citizens, meeting.

First Cit. Good morrow, neighbour: whither away so fast?
Sec. Cit. I promise you, I scarcely know myself:

Hear you the news abroad?

First Cit. Ay; that the king is dead. 4
Sec. Cit. Ill news, by'r lady; seldom comes the better:

I fear, I fear, 'twill prove a giddy world.

Enter a third Citizen.

Third Cit. Neighbours, God speed!
First Cit. Give you good morrow, sir.
Third Cit. Doth the news hold of good King Edward's death?
Sec. Cit. Ay, sir, it is too true; God help the while!

Third Cit. Then, masters, look to see a troublous world.
First Cit. No, no; by God's good grace, his son shall reign.
Third Cit. Woe to that land that's govern'd by a child!
Sec. Cit. In him there is a hope of government,

That in his nonage council under him, And in his full and ripe'd years himself, No doubt, shall then and till then govern well.

First Cit. So stood the state when Henry the Sixth

Was crown'd at Paris but at nine months old.

Third Cit. Stood the state so? no, no, good friends, God wot; For then this land was famously enrich'd
With politic grave counsel; then the king Had virtuous uncles to protect his Grace.

First Cit. Why, so hath this, both by his father and mother.

Third Cit. Better it were they all came by his father, Or by his father there were none at all;
For emulation, who shall now be nearest, Will touch us all too near, if God prevent not. O! full of danger is the Duke of Gloucester! And the queen's sons and brothers haught and proud; 28
And were they to be rul'd, and not to rule, This sickly land might solace as before.

First Cit. Come, come, we fear the worst; all will be well.

703
Third Cit. When clouds are seen, wise men
put on their cloaks; 32
When great leaves fall, then winter is at hand;
So long a-growing, and so leisurely,
That, if his rule were true, he should be gracious.

Arch. And so, no doubt, he is, my gracious
madam. 21
Duch. I hope he is; but yet let mothers
doubt.
York. Now, by my troth, if I had been re-
member'd,
I could have given my uncle's grace a flout, 24
To touch his growth nearer than he touch'd mine.
Duch. How, my young York? I prithee, let
me hear it.
York. Marry, they say my uncle grew so fast,
That he could gnaw a crust at two hours old: 28
'Twas full two years ere I could get a tooth.
Grandam, this would have been a biting jest.
Duch. I prithee, pretty York, who told thee
this?
York. Grandam, his nurse. 32
Duch. His nurse! why, she was dead ere
thou wast born.
York. If 'twere not she, I cannot tell who
told me.
Q. Eliz. A parlous boy: go to, you are too
shrewd.
Arch. Good madam, be not angry with the
child. 36

Enter a messenger.

Arch. Here comes a messenger. What news?
Mess. Such news, my lord, as grieves me to
report.
Q. Eliz. How doth the prince?
Mess. Well, madam, and in health.
Duch. What is thy news?
Mess. Lord Rivers and Lord Grey are sent
to Pomfret,
With them Sir Thomas Vaughan, prisoners.
Duch. Who hath committed them?
Mess. The mighty dukes, 44
Gloucester and Buckingham.
Arch. For what offence?
Mess. The sum of all I can I have disclos'd:
Why or for what the nobles were committed
Is all unknown to me, my gracious lord. 48
Q. Eliz. Ah me! I see the ruin of my house!
The tiger now hath seize'd the gentle hind;
Insulting tyranny begins to jet
Upon the innocent and aweless throne: 52
Welcome, destruction, death, and massacre!
I see, as in a map, the end of all.
Duch. Accursed and unquiet wrangling days,
How many of you have mine eyes beheld? 56
My husband lost his life to get the crown,
And often up and down my sons were toss'd,
For me to joy and weep their gain and loss:
And being seated, and domestic broils
Clean over-blown, themselves, the conquerors,  
Make war upon themselves; brother to brother,  
Blood to blood, self against self: O! preposter-  
ous  
And frantic outrage, end thy damned spleen; 64  
Or let me die, to look on death no more.  
Q. Eliz. Come, come, my boy; we will to  
sanctuary.  
Madam, farewell.  
Duch. Stay, I will go with you.  
Q. Eliz. You have no cause.  
Arch. [To the QUEEN.] My gracious lady, go;  
And thither bear your treasure and your goods.  
For my part, I'll resign unto your Grace  
The seal I keep: and so betide to me  
As well I tender you and all of yours! 72  
Come; I'll conduct you to the sanctuary.  
[Exeunt.  

ACT III.  

SCENE I.—The Same. A Street.  

The Trumpets sound. Enter the PRINCE OF  
WALES, Gloucester, Buckingham, Cates-  
by, CARDINAL BOURCHIER, and Others.  

Buck. Welcome, sweet prince, to London, to  
your chamber.  

Glo. Welcome, dear cousin, my thoughts'  
sovereign;  
The weary way hath made you melancholy.  

Prince. No, uncle; but our crosses on the way  
Have made it tedious, wearisome, and heavy:  
I want more uncles here to welcome me.  

Glo. Sweet prince, the untainted virtue of your years  
Hath not yet div'd into the world's deceit: 8  
No more can you distinguish of a man  
Than of his outward show; which, God he knows,  
Seldom or never jumpeth with the heart.  
Those uncles which you want were dangerous;  
Your Grace attended to their sugar'd words,  
But look'd not on the poison of their hearts:  
God keep you from them, and from such false friends!  

Prince. God keep me from false friends! but  
they were none.  
Glo. My lord, the Mayor of London comes to  
greet you.  

Enter the Lord Mayor and his Train.  

May. God bless your Grace with health and  
happy days!  
Prince. I thank you, good my lord; and  
thank you all.  
I thought my mother and my brother York 20  

Would long ere this have met us on the way:  
Fiel! what a slug is Hastings, that he comes not  
To tell us whether they will come or no.  

Enter HASTINGS.  

Buck. And in good time here comes the  
sweating lord.  

Prince. Welcome, my lord. What, will our mother come?  

Hast. On what occasion, God he knows,  
not I,  
The queen your mother, and your brother York,  
Have taken sanctuary: the tender prince  
Would fain have come with me to meet your Grace,  
But by his mother was perforce withheld.  

Buck. Fiel what an indirect and peevish course  
Is this of hers! Lord Cardinal, will your Grace  
Persuade the queen to send the Duke of York  
Unto his princely brother presently?  

If she deny, Lord Hastings, go with him,  
And from her jealous arms pluck him perforce.  

Card. My Lord of Buckingham, if my weak  
oratory  
Can from his mother win the Duke of York,  
Apon expect him here; but if she be obdurate  
To mild entreaties, God in heaven forbid  
We should infringe the holy privilege  
Of blessed sanctuary! not for all this land  
Would I be guilty of so great a sin.  

Buck. You are too senseless-obstinate, my  
lord,  
Too ceremonious and traditional:  
Weigh it but with the grossness of this age,  
You break not sanctuary in seizing him.  
The benefit thereof is always granted  
To those whose dealings have deserve'd the place  
And those who have the wit to claim the place:  
This prince hath neither claim'd it, nor deserve'd it;  
And therefore, in mine opinion, cannot have it:  
Then, taking him from thence that is not there,  
You break no privilege nor charter there.  
Oft have I heard of sanctuary men,  
But sanctuary children ne'er till now. 56  

Card. My lord, you shall o'er-rule my mind  
for once.  

Come on, Lord Hastings, will you go with me?  

Hast. I go, my lord.  

Prince. Good lords, make all the speedy  
haste you may. 60  

[Exeunt CARDINAL BOURCHIER and  
HASTINGS.  

Say, uncle Gloucester, if our brother come,  
Where shall we sojourn till our coronation?
Act III, Sc. I.  
KING RICHARD THE THIRD

Glo. Where it seems best unto your royal self.  
If I may counsel you, some day or two.  
Your highness shall repose you at the Tower:  
Then where you please, and shall be thought most fit  
For your best health and recreation.  
Prince. I do not like the Tower, of any place:  
Did Julius Caesar build that place, my lord?  
Buck. He did, my gracious lord, begin that place,  
Which, since, succeeding ages have re-edified.  
Prince. Is it upon record, or else reported?  
Successively from age to age, he built it?  
Buck. Upon record, my gracious lord.  
Prince. But say, my lord, it were not register'd,  
Methinks the truth should live from age to age,  
As 'twere retail'd to all posterity,  
Even to the general all-ending day.  
Glo. [Aside.] So wise so young, they say, do never live long.  
Prince. What say you, uncle?  
Glo. I say, without characters, fame lives long.  
[Aside.] Thus, like the formal Vice, Iniquity,  
I moralize two meanings in one word.  
Prince. That Julius Caesar was a famous man;  
With what his valour did enrich his wit,  
His wit set down to make his valour live:  
Death makes no conquest of this conqueror,  
For now he lives in fame, though not in life.  
I'll tell you what, my cousin Buckingham, —  
Buck. What, my gracious lord?  
Prince. An if I live until I be a man,  
I'll win our ancient right in France again,  
Or die a soldier, as I liv'd a king.  
Glo. [Aside.] Short summers lightly have a forward spring.

Enter YORK, HASTINGS, and CARDINAL BOURCHIER.

Prince. Richard of York! how fares our loving brother?  
York. Well, my dread lord; so must I call you now.  
Prince. Ay, brother, to our grief, as it is yours:  
Too late he died that might have kept that title,  
Which by his death hath lost much majesty.  
Glo. How fares our cousin, noble Lord of York?  
York. I thank you, gentle uncle. O, my lord,  
You said that idle weeds are fast in growth:  
The prince my brother hath outgrown me far.  
Glo. He hath, my lord.

York. And therefore is he idle?  
Glo. O, my fair cousin, I must not say so.  
York. Then he is more beholding to you than I.  
Glo. He may command me as my sovereign;  
But you have power in me as in a kinsman.  
York. I pray you, uncle, give me this dagger.  
Glo. My dagger, little cousin? with all my heart.  
Prince. A beggar, brother?  
York. Of my kind uncle, that I know will give;  
And, being but a toy, which is no grief to give.  
Glo. A greater gift than that I'll give my cousin.  
York. A greater gift! O, that's the sword to it.  
Glo. Ay, gentle cousin, were it light enough.  
York. O, then, I see, you'll part but with light gifts;  
In weightier things you'll say a beggar nay.  
Glo. It is too weighy for your Grace to wear.  
York. I weigh it lightly, were it heavier.  
Glo. What! would you have my weapon, little lord?  
York. I would, that I might thank you, as you call me.  
Glo. How?  
York. Little.  
Prince. My Lord of York will still be cross in talk.  
Uncle, your Grace knows how to bear with him.  
York. You mean, to bear me, not to bear with me:  
Uncle, my brother mocks both you and me.  
Because that I am little, like an ape,  
He thinks that you should bear me on your shoulders.  
Buck. With what a sharp provided wit he reasons!  
To mitigate the scorn he gives his uncle,  
He prettily and aptly taunts himself:  
So cunning and so young is wonderful.  
Glo. My lord, will 't please you pass along?  
Myself and my good cousin Buckingham will to your mother, to entreat of her  
To meet you at the Tower and welcome you.  
York. What! will you go unto the Tower,  
my lord?  
Prince. My Lord Protector needs will have it so.  
York. I shall not sleep in quiet at the Tower.  
Glo. Why, what would you fear?  
York. Marry, my uncle Clarence's angry ghost:  
My grandam told me he was murder'd there.  
Prince. I fear no uncles dead.  
Glo. Nor none that live, I hope.  
Prince. An if they live, I hope, I need not fear.
But come, my lord; and, with a heavy heart, 
Thinking on them, go I unto the Tower.

[Sennet. Exeunt all but Gloucester, 
BUCKINGHAM, and Catesby.

Buck. Think you, my lord, this little prating 
York
Was not incensed by his subtle mother?
To taunt and scorn you thus opprobriously?
Glo. No doubt, no doubt: Oh 'tis a parlous boy;
Bold, quick, ingenious, forward, capable:
He's all the mother's, from the top to toe.

Buck. Well, let them rest. Come hither, 
Catesby; thou art sworn
As deep to effect what we intend
As closely to conceal what we impart.
Thou know'st our reasons urg'd upon the way:

What think'st thou? is it not an easy matter
To make William Lord Hastings of our mind, 
For the instalment of this noble duke
In the seat royal of this famous isle?

Cate. He for his father's sake so loves the prince
That he will not be won to aught against him. 

Buck. What think'st thou then of Stanley?
what will he?

Cate. He will do all in all as Hastings doth.

Buck. Well then, no more but this: go, 
gentle Catesby,
And, as it were far off, sound thou Lord Hastings,
How he doth stand affected to our purpose; 
And summon him to-morrow to the Tower.

To sit about the coronation.
If thou dost find him tractable to us, 
Encourage him, and tell him all our reasons:
If he be leaden, icy-cold, unwilling;
Be thou so too, and so break off the talk,
And give us notice of his inclination;
For we to-morrow hold divided councils,
Wherein thyself shalt highly be employ'd.

Glo. Command me to Lord William: tell him,
Catesby,
His ancient knot of dangerous adversaries
To-morrow are let blood at Pomfret Castle;
And bid my lord, for joy of this good news,
Give Mistress Shore one gentle kiss the more.

Buck. Good Catesby, go, effect this business soundly.

Cate. My good lords both, with all the heed I

Glo. Shall we hear from you, Catesby, ere we sleep?

Cate. You shall, my lord.

Glo. At Crosby-place, there shall you find us both.

[Exit Catesby.

Buck. Now, my lord, what shall we do if we perceive
Lord Hastings will not yield to our complots?

Glo. Chop off his head; something we will determine:

And, look, when I am king, claim thou of me
The earldom of Hereford, and all the moveables
Whereof the king my brother stood possess'd.

Buck. I'll claim that promise at your Grace's hand.

Glo. And look to have it yielded with all kindness.
Come, let us sup betimes, that afterwards
We may digest our complots in some form.

[Exeunt.

SCENE II.—The Same. Before LORD HASTINGS' House.

Enter a Messenger.

Mess. [Knocking.] My lord! my lord!

Hast. [Within.] Who knocks?

Mess. One from the Lord Stanley.

Hast. [Within.] What is 't o'clock?

Mess. Upon the stroke of four.

Enter Hastings.

Hast. Cannot my Lord Stanley sleep these tedious nights?

Mess. So it appears by that I have to say.
First, he commends him to your noble self.

Hast. What then?

Mess. Then certifies your lordship, that this night
He dreamt the boar had razed off his helm:
Besides, he says there are two councils held; 
And that may be determin'd at the one
Which may make you and him to rue at the other.

Therefore he sends to know your lordship's pleasure,
If you will presently take horse with him,

And with all speed post with him towards the north,

To shun the danger that his soul divines.

Hast. Go, fellow, go, return unto thy lord;
Bid him not fear the separated councils:

His honour and myself are at the one,
And at the other is my good friend Catesby;
Where nothing can proceed that toucheth us
Whereof I shall not have intelligence.

Tell him his fears are shallow, wanting instance:
And for his dreams, I wonder he's so fond
To trust the mockery of unquiet slumbers.
To fly the boar before the boar pursues,

Were to incense the boar to follow us
And make pursuit where he did mean no chase.
Go, bid thy master rise and come to me; 32
And we will both together to the Tower,
Where, he shall see, the boar will use us kindly.
Mees. I'll go, my lord, and tell him what
you say. [Exit.

Enter Catesby.

Cale. Many good morrows to my noble lord!
Hast. Good morrow, Catesby; you are early
stirring. 36
What news, what news, in this our tottering
state?
Cale. It is a reeling world, indeed, my lord;
And I believe will never stand upright
Till Richard wear the garland of the realm. 40
Hast. How! wear the garland! dost thou
mean the crown?
Cale. Ay, my good lord.
Hast. I'll have this crown of mine cut from
my shoulders
Before I'll see the crown so foul misplac'd. 44
But canst thou guess that he doth aim at it?
Cale. Ay, on my life; and hopes to find you
forward
Upon his party for the gain thereof:
And thereupon he sends you this good news, 48
That this same very day your enemies,
The kindred of the queen, must die at Pomfret.
Hast. Indeed, I am no mourner for that
news,
Because they have been still my adversaries; 52
But that I'll give my voice on Richard's side,
To bar my master's heirs in true descent,
God knows I will not do it, to the death.
Cale. God keep your lordship in that gra-cious
mind! 56
Hast. But I shall laugh at this a twelve-
month hence,
That they which brought me in my master's
hate,
I live to look upon their tragedy.
Well, Catesby, ere a fortnight make me older,
I'll send some packing that yet think not on't.
Cale. 'Tis a vile thing to die, my gracious
lord,
When men are unprepar'd and look not for it.
Hast. O monstrous, monstrous! and so falls
it out 64
With Rivers, Vaughan, Grey; and so 'twill do
With some men else, who think themselves as
safe
As thou and I; who, as thou know'st, are dear
To princely Richard and to Buckingham. 68
Cale. The princes both make high account
of you;
[Aside.] For they account his head upon the
bridge.

Hast. I know they do, and I have well
deserv'd it.

Enter Stanley.

Come on, come on; where is your boar-spear,
man? 72
Fear you the boar, and go so unprovided?
Stan. My lord, good morrow; good morrow
Catesby:
You may jest on, but by the holy rood,
I do not like these several councils, I. 76
Hast. My lord, I hold my life as dear as you
do yours;
And never, in my days, I do protest,
Was it so precious to me as 'tis now.
Think you, but that I know our state secure, 80
I would be so triumphant as I am?
Stan. The lords at Pomfret, when they rode
from London,
Were jocund and suppos'd their state was
sure,
And they indeed had no cause to mistrust; 84
But yet you see how soon the day o'ercast.
This sudden stab of rancour I misdoubt;
Pray God, I say, I prove a needless coward!
What, shall we toward the Tower? the day is
spent. 88
Hast. Come, come, have with you. Wot you
what, my lord?
To-day the lords you talk of are beha-ded.
Stan. They, for their truth, might better
wear their heads,
Than some that have accus'd them wear their
hats. 92
But come, my lord, let's away.

Enter a Pursuivant.

Hast. Go on before; I'll talk with this good
fellow. [Exeunt STANLEY AND CATESBY.

How now, sirrah! how goes the world with thee?
Purs. The better that your lordship please
to ask.
Hast. I tell thee, man, 'tis better with me
now
Than when I met thee last where now we
meet:
Then was I going prisoner to the Tower,
By the suggestion of the queen's allies; 100
But now, I tell thee,—keep it to thyself,—
This day those enemies are put to death,
And I in better state than e'er I was.
Purs. God hold it to your honour's good
content!
Hast. Gramercy, fellows: there, drink that
for me. [Throws him his purse.
Purs. God save your lordship. [Exit.
Enter a Priest.

Pr. Well met, my lord; I am glad to see your honour.

Hast. I thank thee, good Sir John, with all my heart. 108

I am in your debt for your last exercise; Come the next Sabbath, and I will content you.

Enter Buckingham.

Buck. What, walking with a priest, lord chamberlain?

Your friends at Pomfret, they do need the priest:
Your honour hath no shrinking work in hand. 113

Hast. Good faith, and when I met this holy man,
The men you talk of came into my mind.

What, go you toward the Tower? 116

Buck. I do, my lord; but long I shall not stay:

I shall return before your lordship thence.

Hast. Nay, like enough, for I stay dinner there.

Buck. [Aside.] And supper too, although thou know'st it not. 120

Come, will you go?

Hast. I'll wait upon your lordship. 124

[Exeunt.

Scene IV.—London. The Tower.

Buckingham, Stanley, Hastings, the Bishop of Ely, Ratcliff, Lovel, and Others, sitting at a table. Officers of the Council attending.

Hast. My lords, at once: the cause why we are met

Is to determine of the coronation:
In God's name, speak, when is the royal day?

Buck. Are all things ready for that royal time?

Stan. It is; and wants but nomination.

Ely. To-morrow then I judge a happy day.

Buck. Who knows the Lord Protector's mind herein?

Who is most inward with the noble duke? 8

Ely. Your Grace, we think, should soonest know his mind.

Buck. We know each other's faces; for our hearts,

He knows no more of mine than I of yours;

Nor I of his, my lord, than you of mine. 12

Lord Hastings, you and he are near in love.

Hast. I thank his Grace, I know he loves me well;

But, for his purpose in the coronation,
I have not sounded him, nor he deliver'd 16
His gracious pleasure any way therein:

But you, my noble lords, may name the time;

And in the duke's behalf I'll give my voice,
Which, I presume, he'll take in gentle part. 20

Enter Gloucester.

Ely. In happy time, here comes the duke himself.

Glo. My noble lords and cousins all, good morrow.

I have been long a sleeper; but, I trust,
My absence doth neglect no great design, 24

Which by my presence might have been concluded.

Buck. Had you not come upon your cue, my lord,
Act III, Sc. IV.

KING RICHARD THE THIRD

William Lord Hastings had pronounce’d your part,
I mean, your voice, for crowning of the king. 28

Glo. Than my Lord Hastings no man might be bolder:
His lordship knows me well, and loves me well.
My Lord of Ely, when I was last in Holborn,
I saw good strawberries in your garden there; 32
I do beseech you send for some of them.

Ely. Marry, and will, my lord, with all my heart. [Exit.

Glo. Cousin of Buckingham, a word with you.

[Takes him aside.

Catesby hath sounded Hastings in our business,
And finds the testy gentleman so hot,
That he will lose his head ere give consent
His master’s child, as worshipfully he terms it,
Shall lose the royalty of England’s throne. 40

Buck. Withdraw yourself a while; I’ll go with you.

[Exit GloUCESTER and BUCKINGHAM.

Stan. We have not yet set down this day of triumph.
To-morrow, in my judgment, is too sudden;
For I myself am not so well provided
As else I would be, were the day prolong’d.

Re-enter Bishop of Ely.

Ely. Where is my lord, the Duke of Gloucester?

I have sent for these strawberries.

Hast. His Grace looks cheerfully and smooth
this morning:
There’s some conceit or other likes him well,
When that he bids good morrow with such spirit.
I think there’s never a man in Christendom
Can lesser hide his hate or love than be; 52
For by his face straight shall you know his heart.

Stan. What of his heart perceiv’d you in his face
By any livelihood he show’d to-day?

Hast. Marry, that with no man here he is offended;

For, were he, he had shewn it in his looks.

Re-enter Gloucester and Buckingham.

Glo. I pray you all, tell me what they deserve
That do conspire my death with devilish plots
Of damned witchcraft, and that have prevail’d so
Upon my body with their hellish charms?

Hast. The tender love I bear your Grace, my lord,
Makes me most forward in this princely presence
To doom th’ offencers, whoseoe’er they be: 64

I say, my lord, they have deserved death.

Glo. Then be your eyes the witness of their evil.

Look how I am bewitch’d; behold mine arm
Is like a blasted sapling, wither’d up: 68
And this is Edward’s wife, that monstrous witch
Consorted with that harlot strumpet Shore,
That by their witchcraft thus have marked me.

Hast. If they have done this thing, my noble lord,— 72

Glo. If thou protector of this damned strumpet,
Talk’st thou to me of ifs? Thou art a traitor:
Off with his head! now, by Saint Paul, I swear,
I will not dine until I see the same. 76

Lovell and Ratcliff, look that it be done:
The rest, that love me, rise, and follow me.

[Exeunt all but Hastings, Ratcliff, and Lovell.

Hast. Woe, woe, for England! not a whit for me;
For I, too fond, might have prevented this. 80
Stanley did dream the boar did raze his helm;
And I did scorn it, and disdain’d to fly.
Three times to-day my foot-cloth horse did stumble,
And started when he looked upon the Tower, 84
As loath to bear me to the slaughter-house.
O! now I need the priest that spake to me: I now repent I told the pursuivant,
As too triumpthing, how mine enemies 88
To-day at Pomfret bloodily were butcher’d
And I myself secure in grace and favour.
O Margaret, Margaret! now thy heavy curse
Is lighted on poor Hastings’ wretched head. 92

Rat. Come, come, dispatch; the duke would be at dinner:
Make a short shrift, he longs to see your head.

Hast. O momentary grace of mortal man,
Which we more hunt for than the grace of God! 96
Who builds his hope in air of your good looks,
Lives like a drunken sailor on a mast;
Ready with every nod to tumble down
Into the fatal bowels of the deep. 100

Lov. Come, come, dispatch; ’tis bootless to exclaim.

Hast. O bloody Richard! miserable England!
I prophesy the fearfull’st time to thee
That ever wretched age hath look’d upon. 104

Come, lead me to the block; bear him my head:
They smile at me who shortly shall be dead.

[Exeunt.
KING RICHARD THE THIRD
Act III, Sc. V.

SCENE V.—London. The Tower Walls.

Enter GLOUCESTER and BUCKINGHAM, in rotten armour, marvellously ill-favoured.

Glo. Come, cousin, canst thou quake, and change thy colour, Murder thy breath in middle of a word, And then again begin, and stop again, As if thou wert distraught and mad with terror?

Buck. Tut! I can counterfeit the deep tragedian, Speak and look back, and pry on every side, Tremble and start at wagging of a straw, Intending deep suspicion: ghostly looks Are at my service, like enforced smiles; And both are ready in their offices, At any time, to grace my stratagems.

But what! is Catesby gone?

Glo. He is; and, see, he brings the mayor along.

Enter the Lord Mayor and CATESBY.

Buck. Lord Mayor—

Glo. Look to the drawbridge there!

Buck. Hark! a drum.

Glo. Catesby, o'erlook the walls.

Buck. Lord Mayor, the reason we have sent—

Glo. Look back, defend thee; here are enemies.

Buck. God and our innocency defend and guard us!

Enter LOVEL and RATCLIFF, with HASTINGS' head.

Glo. Be patient, they are friends, Ratcliff and Lovel.

Lov. Here is the head of that ignoble traitor, The dangerous and unsuspected Hastings.

Glo. So dear I lov'd the man, that I must weep. I took him for the plainest harmless creature That breath'd upon the earth a Christian; Made him my book, wherein my soul recorded The history of all her secret thoughts: So smooth he daub'd his vice with show of virtue, That, his apparent open guilt omitted, I mean his conversation with Shore's wife, He liv'd from all attainder of suspect.

Buck. Well, well, he was the covert's shelter'd traitor That ever liv'd.

Would you imagine, or almost believe,— Were't not that by great preservation We live to tell it, that the subtle traitor This day had plotted, in the council-house,

To murder me and my good Lord of Gloucester?

May. Had he done so?

Glo. What! think you we are Turks or infidels?

Or that we would, against the form of law, Proceed thus rashly in the villain's death, But that the extreme peril of the case, The peace of England and our person's safety, Enforc'd us to this execution?

May. Now, fair fellaw! he deserv'd his death;

And your good Graces both have well proceed'd,

To warn false traitors from the like attempts. I never look'd for better at his hands, After he once fell in with Mistress Shore.

Buck. Yet had we not determin'd he should die,

Until your lordship came to see his end; Which now the loving haste of these our friends, Something against our meaning, hath prevented:

Because, my lord, we would have had you heard The traitor speak, and timorously confess The manner and the purpose of his treason; That you might well have signified the same Unto the citizens, who haply may Misconstrue us in him, and wail his death.

May. But, my good lord, your Grace's word shall serve, As well as I had seen and heard him speak: And do not doubt, right noble princes both, But I'll acquaint our duteous citizens With all your just proceedings in this cause. 

Glo. And to that end we wish'd your lordship here,

To avoid the censures of the carping world.

Buck. But since you come too late of our intent,

Yet witness what you hear we did intend: And so, my good Lord Mayor, we bid farewell.

[Exit Lord Mayor.

Glo. Go, after, after, cousin Buckingham. The mayor towards Guildhall hies him in all post:

There, at your meetest vantage of the time, Infer the bastardy of Edward's children: Tell them how Edward put to death a citizen, Only for saying he would make his son Heir to the crown; meaning indeed his house, Which by the sign thereof was termed so. Moreover, urge his hateful luxury And beastial appetite in change of lust; Which stretch'd unto their servants, daughters, wives, Even where his raging eye or savage heart

711
Act III, Sc. V.

KING RICHARD THE THIRD

Without control lusted to make a prey.
Nay, for a need, thus far come near my
person:

Tell them, when that my mother went with
child

Of that insatiate Edward, noble York.
My princely father then had wars in France;
And, by true computation of the time,
Found that the issue was not his begot;
Which well appeared in his lineaments,
Being nothing like the noble duke my father.
Yet touch this sparingly, as 'twere far off;
Because, my lord, you know your mother lives.

Buck. Doubt not, my lord, I'll play the
orator
As if the golden fee for which I plead
Were for myself: and so, my lord, adieu.

Glo. If you thrive well, bring them to Bay-
nard's Castle;
Where you shall find me well accompanied
With reverend fathers and well-learned bishops.

Buck. I go; and towards three or four
o'clock
Look for the news that the Guildhall affords.

[Exit.

Glo. Go, Lovel, with all speed to Doctor
Shaw;
[To CATESBY.] Go thou to Friar Penker; bid
them both
Meet me within this hour at Baynard's Castle.

[Execut LOVEL and CATESBY.

Now will I in, to take some privy order,
To draw the brats of Clarence out of sight;
And to give notice that no manner person
Have any time recourse unto the princess. [Exit.

SCENE VI.—The Same. A Street.

Enter a Scrivener.

Scriv. Here is the indictment of the good
Lord Hastings;

Which in a set hand fairly is engross'd,
That it may be to-day read o'er in Paul's;
And mark how well the sequel hangs together.
Eleven hours I have spent to write it over,
For yesternight by Catesby was it sent me.
The precedent was full as long a-doing;
And yet within these five hours Hastings liv'd,
Untainted, unexamined, free, at liberty.
Here's a good world the while! Who is so
gross
That cannot see this palpable device?
Yet who so bold but says he sees it not?
Bad is the world; and all will come to
naught,
When such ill dealing must be seen in thought.

[Exit.

SCENE VII.—The Same. The Court of
Baynard's Castle.

Enter GLOUCESTER and BUCKINGHAM, meeting.

Glo. How now, how now! what say the
citizens?

Buck. Now, by the holy mother of our Lord,
The citizens are mum, say not a word.

Glo. Touch'd you the bastardy of Edward's
children?

Buck. I did; with his contract with Lady
Lucy,
And his contract by deputy in France;
The insatiate greediness of his desires,
And his enforcement of the city wives;
His tyranny for trifles; his own bastardy,
As being got, your father then in France,
And his resemblance, being not like the duke:
Withal I did infer your lineaments,
Being the right idea of your father,
Both in your form and nobleness of mind;
Laid open all your victories in Scotland,
Your discipline in war, wisdom in peace,
Your bounty, virtue, fair humility;
Indeed, left nothing fitting for your purpose
Untouch'd or slightly handled in discourse;
And when my oratory drew toward end,
I bade them that did love their country's good
Cry 'God save Richard, England's royal king!'

Glo. And did they so?

Buck. No, so God help me, they spake not a
word;

But, like dumb statues or breathing stones,
Star'd each on other, and look'd deadly pale.
Which when I saw, I reprehended them;
And ask'd the mayor what meant this wilful
silence:

His answer was, the people were not wont
To be spoke to but by the recorder.
Then he was urg'd to tell my tale again:
'Thus saith the duke, thus hath the duke in-
ferr'd;'

But nothing spoke in warrant from himself.
When he had done, some followers of mine own,
At lower end of the hall, hurl'd up their caps,
And some ten voices cried, 'God save King
Richard!'

And thus I took the vantage of those few,
'Thanks, gentle citizens and friends,' quoth I;
'This general applause and cheerful shout
Argues your wisdom and your love to Richard:'
And even here brake off, and came away.

Glo. What tongueless blocks were they!
would they not speak?

Will not the mayor then and his brethren come?

Buck. The mayor is here at hand. Intend
some fear;
Be not you spoke with but by mighty suit:
And lock you get a prayer-book in your hand,
And stand between two churchmen, good my lord:
For on that ground I'll make a holy descent: 48
And be not easily won to our requests;
Play the maid's part, still answer nay, and take it.

Glo. I go; and if you plead as well for them
As I can say nay to thee for myself, 52
No doubt we bring it to a happy issue.

Buck. Go, go, up to the leads! the Lord Mayor knocks.  [Exit GLOUCESTER.

Enter the Lord Mayor, Aldermen, and Citizens.
Welcome, my lord: I dance attendance here;
I think the duke will not be spoke withal. 56

Enter, from the Castle, CATESBY.
Now, Catesby! what says your lord to my request?

Cate. He doth entreat your Grace, my noble lord,
To visit him to-morrow or next day,
He is within, with two right reverend fathers, 60
Divinely bent to meditation;
And in no worldly suit would be be mov'd,
To draw him from his holy exercise.

Buck. Return, good Catesby, to the gracious duke:
Tell him, myself, the mayor and aldermen,
In deep designs in matter of great moment,
No less importing than our general good,
Are come to have some conference with his Grace.

Cate. I'll signify so much unto him straight.  68
[Exit.

Buck. Ah, ha, my lord, this prince is not an Edward!
He is not lolling on a lewd day-bed,
But on his knees at meditation; 72
Not dallying with a brace of courtezans,
But meditating with two deep divines;
Not sleeping, to engross his idle body,
But praying, to enrich his watchful soul. 76
Happy were England, would this virtuous prince
Take on his Grace the sovereignty thereof;
But sure, I fear, we shall not win him to it.

May. Marry, God defend his Grace should say us nay!

Buck. I fear he will. Here Catesby comes again.

Re-enter CATESBY.

Now, Catesby, what says his Grace?

Cate. He wonders to what end you have assembled
Such troops of citizens to come to him, 84
His Grace not being war'd thereof before:
My lord, he fears you mean no good to him.

Buck. Sorry I am my noble cousin should
Suspect me that I mean no good to him. 88
By heaven, we come to him in perfect love;
And so once more return, and tell his Grace.
[Exit CATESBY.

When holy and devout religious men
Are at their beads, 'tis much to draw them thence;
So sweet is zealous contemplation.

Enter GLOUCESTER, in a gallery above, between two Bishops. CATESBY returns.

May. See, where his Grace stands 'twixt two clergymen!

Buck. Two props of virtue for a Christian prince,
To stay him from the fall of vanity; 96
And, see, a book of prayer in his hand;
True ornament to know a holy man.
Famous Plantagenet, most gracious prince,
Lend favourable ear to our requests, 100
And pardon us the interruption
Of thy devotion, and right Christian zeal.

Glo. My lord, there needs no such apology;
I do beseech your Grace to pardon me, 104
Who, earnest in the service of my God,
Deferr'd the visitation of my friends.
But, leaving this, what is your Grace's pleasure?

Buck. Even that, I hope, which pleaseth God above, 108
And all good men of this ungovern'd isle.

Glo. I do suspect I have done some offence
That seems disgraceful in the city's eye;
And that you come to reprehend my ignorance.

Buck. You have, my lord: would it might please your Grace,
On our entreaties to amend your fault!

Glo. Else wherefore breathe I in a Christian land?

Buck. Know then, it is your fault that you resign
The supreme seat, the throne majestical,
The sceptred office of your ancestors,
Your state of fortune and your due of birth,
The lineal glory of your royal house, 120
To the corruption of a blemish'd stock;
While, in the midst of your sleepy thoughts,—
Which here we waken to our country's good,—
This noble isle doth want her proper limbs; 124
Her face deac'd with scars of infamy,
Her royal stock graft with ignoble plants,
And almost shoulder'd in the swallowing gulf
Of dark forgetfulness and deep oblivion. 128
Which to secure we heartily solicit.
Act III, Sc. VII.  KING RICHARD THE THIRD

Your gracious self to take on you the charge
And kingly government of this your land;
Not as protector, steward, substitute, 132
Or lowly factor for another's gain;
But as successively from blood to blood,
Your right of birth, your empery, your own.
For this, consort with the citizens, 136
Your very worshipful and loving friends,
And by their vehement instigation,
In this just cause come I to move your Grace.

Glo. I cannot tell, if to depart in silence 140
Or bitterly to speak in your reproof,
Be thy degree or your condition:
If not to answer, you might haply think
Tongue-tied ambition, not replying, yielded 144
To bear the golden yoke of soverignty,
Which fondly you would here impose on me;
If to reproove you for this suit of yours,
So season'd with your faithful love to me, 148
Then, on the other side, I check'd my friends.
Therefore, to speak, and to avoid the first,
And then, in speaking, not to incur the last,
Definitively thus I answer you. 152

Your love deserves my thanks; but my desert
Unmeritable shuns your high request.
First, if all obstacles were cut away,
And that my path were even to the crown, 156
As the ripe revenue and due of birth,
Yet so much is my poverty of spirit,
So mighty and so many my defects,
That I would rather hide me from your greatness,
Being a bark to brook no mighty sea, 161
Than in my greatness covet to be hid,
And in the vapour of my glory smother'd.
But, God be thank'd, there is no need of me;
And much I need to help you, were there need;
The royal tree hath left us royal fruit,
Which, mellow'd by the stealing hours of time,
Will well become the seat of majesty, 168
And make, no doubt, us happy by his reign.
On him I lay that you would lay on me,
The right and fortune of his happy stars;
Which God defend that I should wring from him! 172

Buck. My lord, this argues conscience in your Grace;
But the respects thereof are nice and trivial,
All circumstances well considered.
You say that Edward is your brother's son: 176
So say we too, but not by Edward's wife;
For first was he contract to Lady Lucy,
Your mother lives a witness to his vow,
And afterward by substitute betroth'd 180
To Bona, sister to the King of France.
These both put by, a poor petitioner,
A care-craz'd mother to a many sons,
A beauty-waning and distressed widow, 184
Even in the afternoon of her best days,
Made prize and purchase of his wanton eye,
Seduc'd the pitch and height of his degree
To base declension and loath'd bigamy: 188
By her, in her unlawful bed, he got
This Edward, whom our manners call the prince.
More bitterly could I expostulate,
Save that, for reverence to some alive, 192
I give a sparing limit to my tongue.
Then, good my lord, take to your royal self
This proffer'd benefit of dignity;
If not to bless us and the land withal, 196
Yet to draw forth your noble ancestry
From the corruption of abusing times,
Unto a lineal true-derived course.

May. Do, good my lord; your citizens entreat you. 200

Buck. Refuse not, mighty lord, this proffer'd love.

Cate. O! make them joyful; grant their lawful suit:

Glo. Alas! why would you heap those cares on me?
I am unfit for state and majesty: 204
I do beseech you, take it not amiss,
I cannot nor I will not yield to you.

Buck. If you refuse it, as, in love and zeal,
Loath to depose the child, your brother's son;
As well we know your tenderness of heart 209
And gentle, kind, effeminate remorse,
Which we have noted in you to your kindred,
And equally, indeed, to all estates, 212
Yet whether you accept our suit or no,
Your brother's son shall never reign our king;
But we will plant some other in the throne,
To the disgrace and downfall of your house: 216
And in this resolution here we leave you.
Come, citizens, we will entreat no more.

[Exit Buckingham and Citizens.

Cate. Call them again, sweet prince; accept their suit:
If you deny them, all the land will rue it. 220

Glo. Will you enforce me to a world of cares?
Call them again: I am not made of stone,
But penetrable to your kind entreats,

[Exit Catesby.

Albeit against my conscience and my soul. 224

Re-enter Buckingham and the rest.

Cousin of Buckingham, and sage, grave men,
Since you will buckle fortune on my back,
To bear her burden, whe'er I will or no,
I must have patience to endure the load: 228
But if black scandal or foul-fac'd reproach
Attend the sequel of your imposition,
Your mere enforcement shall acquittance me From all the impure blot and stains thereof; For God doth know, and you may partly see, How far I am from the desire of this.

May. God bless your Grace! we see it, and will say it.


Buck. To-morrow may it please you to be crown'd?

Glo. Even when you please, for you will have it so.

Buck. To-morrow then we will attend your Grace: And so most joyfully we take our leave.

Glo. [To the Bishops.] Come, let us to our holy work again.

Farewell, my cousin;—farewell, gentle friends. [Exeunt.

ACT IV.

SCENE I.—London. Before the Tower.

Enter on one side, Queen ELIZABETH, Duchess of York, and Marquess of Dorset; on the other, Anne, Duchess of Gloucester, leading lady Margaret Plantagenet, Clarence's young daughter.


Anne. God give your Graces both a happy and a joyful time of day!

Q. Eliz. As much to you, good sister! whither away?

Anne. No further than the Tower; and, as I guess,

Upon the like devotion as yourselves,
To gratulate the gentle princes there.

Q. Eliz. Kind sister, thanks: we'll enter all together:——

Enter SHAKENBURY.

And, in good time, here the lieutenant comes. Master lieutenant, pray you, by your leave, How doth the prince, and my young son of York?

Brak. Right well, dear madam. By your patience,

I may not suffer you to visit them: The king hath strictly charg'd the contrary.

Q. Eliz. The king! who's that?

Brak. I mean the Lord Protector.

Q. Eliz. The Lord protect him from that kingly title! Hath he set bounds between their love and me? I am their mother; who shall bar me from them?

Duch. I am their father's mother; I will see them.

Anne. Their aunt I am in law, in love their mother:

Then bring me to their sights; I'll bear thy blame,

And take thy office from thee, on my peril.

Brak. No, madam, no, I may not leave it so: I am bound by oath, and therefore pardon me. [Exit.

Enter STANLEY.

Stan. Let me but meet you, ladies, one hour hence, And I'll salute your Grace of York as mother, And reverend looker-on of two fair queens. [To the DUCHESS OF GLOUCESTER.] Come, madam, you must straight to Westminster, There to be crowned Richard's royal queen.

Q. Eliz. Ah! cut my face asunder, That my pent heart may have some scope to beat, Or else I swoon with this dead-killing news.

Anne. Despiteful tidings! 0! unpleasing news!

Dor. Be of good cheer: mother, how fares your Grace?

Q. Eliz. O, Dorset! speak not to me, get thee gone;

Death and destruction dog thee at the heels: Thy mother's name is ominous to children. If thou wilt outstrip death, go cross the seas, And live with Richmond, from the reach of hell: Go, hie thee, hie thee, from this slaughter-house, Lest thou increase the number of the dead, And make me die the thrall of Margaret's curse, Nor mother, wife, nor England's counted queen.

Stan. Full of wise care is this your counsel, madam.

[To DORSET.] Take all the swift advantage of the hours;

You shall have letters from me to my son In your behalf, to meet you on the way: Be not ta'en tardy by unwise delay.

Duch. 0 ill-dispensing wind of misery! 0! my accursed womb, the bed of death, A cockatrice hast thou hatch'd to the world, Whose unavoidable eye is murderous!

Stan. Come, madam, come; I in all haste was sent.

Anne. And I with all unwillingness will go. 0! would to God that the inclusive verge Of golden metal that must round my browWere red-hot steel to sear me to the brain.
KING RICHARD THE THIRD

Act IV, Sc. I.

Anointed let me be with deadly venom;
And die, ere men can say 'God save the queen!'
Q. Eliz. Go, go, poor soul, I envy not thy glory;
To feed my humour, wish thyself no harm. 64
Anne. No! why? When he, that is my husband now
Came to me, as I follow'd Henry's corse;
When scarce the blood was well wash'd from
his hands,
Which issu'd from my other angel husband, 68
And that dead saint which then I weeping
follow'd;
O! when I say, I look'd on Richard's face,
This was my wish, 'Be thou,' quoth I, 'accurs'd,
For making me so young, so old a widow!' 72
And, when thou wedd'st, let sorrow haunt thy
bed;
And be thy wife—if any be so mad—
More miserable by the life of thee
Than thou hast made me by my dear lord's
death!' 76
Lol ere I can repeat this curse again,
Within so small a time, my woman's heart
Grossly grew captive to his honey words,
And prov'd the subject of mine own soul's curse:
Which hitherto hath held mine eyes from rest;
For never yet one hour in his bed
Did I enjoy the golden dew of sleep,
But with his timorous dreams was still awak'd.
Besides, he hates me for my father Warwick, 85
And will, no doubt, shortly be rid of me.
Q. Eliz. Poor heart, adieu! I pity thy complaining.
Anne. No more than with my soul I mourn
for yours. 88
Q. Eliz. Farewell! thou woeful welcomer of
glory!
Anne. Adieu, poor soul, that tak'st thy
leave of it!
Duch. [To DORSET.] Go thou to Richmond,
and good fortune guide thee!
[To ANNE.] Go thou to Richard, and good
angels tend thee! 92
[To Q. ELIZABETH.] Go thou to sanctuary, and
good thoughts possess thee!
I to my grave, where peace and rest lie with me!
Eighty odd years of sorrow have I seen,
And each hour's joy wrack'd with a week of teen.
Q. Eliz. Stay yet, look back with me unto
the Tower. 97
Pity, you ancient stones, those tender babes
Whom envy hath immur'd within your walls,
Rough cradle for such little pretty ones! 100
Rude ragged nurse, old sullen playfellow
For tender princes, use my babies well.
So foolish sorrow bids your stones farewell.
[Exeunt.]

SCENE II.—The Same. A Room of State
in the Palace.

Sennet. RICHARD, in pomp, crowned: BUCK-
ingham, CATESBY, a Page, and Others.
K. Rich. Stand all apart. Cousin of Buck-
ingham.
Buck. My gracious sovereign!
K. Rich. Give me thy hand. [He ascends the
throne.] Thus high, by thy advice,
And thy assistance, is King Richard seated: 4
But shall we bear these glories for a day?
Or shall they last, and we rejoice in them?
Buck. Still live they, and for ever let them
last!
K. Rich. Ah! Buckingham, now do I play
the touch,
To try if thou be current gold indeed:
Young Edward lives: think now what I would
speak.
Buck. Say on, my loving lord.
K. Rich. Why, Buckingham, I say, I would
be king. 12
Buck. Why, so you are, my thrice-renowned
liege.
K. Rich. Ha! am I king? 'Tis so: but Ed-
ward lives.
Buck. True, noble prince.
K. Rich. O bitter consequence,
That Edward still should live! 'True, noble
prince!' 16
Cousin, thou wast not wont to be so dull:
Shall I be plain? I wish the bastards dead;
And I would have it suddenly perform'd.
What sayest thou now? speak suddenly, be
brief. 20
Buck. Your Grace may do your pleasure.
K. Rich. Tut, tut! thou art all ice, thy kind-
ness freezes:
Say, have I thy consent that they shall die?
Buck. Give me some little breath, some
pause, dear lord,
Before I positively speak in this:
I will resolve you herein presently. 24
[Exit.
Cate. [Aside to another.] The king is angry:
see, he gnaws his lip.
K. Rich. [Descends from his throne.] I will
converse with iron-witted fools 28
And unrespective boys: none are for me
That look into me with considerate eyes.
High-reaching Buckingham grows circumspect.
Boy! 32
Page. My lord!
K. Rich. Know'st thou not any whom cor-
rupting gold
Will tempt unto a close exploit of death?
Page. I know a discontented gentleman, 36
KING RICHARD THE THIRD

Act IV, Sc. II.

Whose humble means match not his haughty spirit.
Gold were as good as twenty orators,
And will, no doubt, tempt him to anything.

K. Rich. What is his name?

Page. His name, my lord, is Tyrrell.


[Exit Page.

The deep- revolving witty Buckingham
No more shall be the neighbour to my counsel.
Hath he so long held out with me until’d, 44
And stops he now for breath? well, be it so.

Enter Stanley.

How now, Lord Stanley! what’s the news?

Stan. Know, my loving lord,
The Marquess Dorset, as I hear, is fled 48
To Richmond, in the parts where he abides.

K. Rich. Come hither, Catesby: rumour it abroad,
That Anne my wife is very grievous sick;
I will take order for her keeping close. 52
Inquire me out some mean poor gentleman,
Whom I will marry straight to Clarence’s daughter:
The boy is foolish, and I fear not him.
Look, how thou dream’st! I say again, give out
That Anne my queen is sick, and like to die:
About it; for it stands me much upon,
To stop all hopes whose growth may damage me.

[Exit Catesby.

I must be married to my brother’s daughter, 60
Or else my kingdom stands on brittle glass.
Murder her brothers, and then marry her!
Uncertain way of gain! But I am in
So far in blood, that sin will pluck on sin: 64
Tear-falling pity dwells not in this eye.

Re-enter Page, with Tyrrell.

Is thy name Tyrrell?

Tyr. James Tyrrell, and your most obedient subject.

K. Rich. Art thou, indeed?

Tyr. Prove me, my gracious lord. 68
K. Rich. Dar’st thou resolve to kill a friend
of mine?

Tyr. Please you; but I had rather kill two enemies.

K. Rich. Why, then thou hast it: two deep enemies,
Foes to my rest, and my sweet sleep’s disturbers,
Are they that I would have thee deal upon. 73
Tyrrell, I mean those bastards in the Tower.

Tyr. Let me have open means to come to them,
And soon I’ll rid you from the fear of them. 76

K. Rich. Thou sing’st sweet music. Hark, come hither, Tyrrell:
Go, by this token: rise, and lend thine ear. [Whispers.

There is no more but so: say it is done,
And I will love thee, and prefer thee for it. 80
Tyr. I will dispatch it straight. [Exit.

Re-enter Buckingham.

Buck. My lord, I have consider’d in my mind
The late demand that you did sound me in.

K. Rich. Well, let that rest. Dorset is fled
to Richmond. 84

Buck. I hear the news, my lord.

K. Rich. Stanley, he is your wife’s son: well,
look to it.

Buck. My lord, I claim the gift, my due by promise,
For which your honour and your faith is pawn’d;
The earldom of Hereford and the moveables
Which you have promised I shall possess.

K. Rich. Stanley, look to your wife: if she convey
Letters to Richmond, you shall answer it. 92

Buck. What says your highness to my just request?

K. Rich. I do remember me, Henry the Sixth
Did prophesy that Richmond should be king,
When Richmond was a little peevish boy. 96

A king! perhaps—

Buck. My lord!

K. Rich. How chance the prophet could not
at that time
Have told me, I being by, that should kill
him? 100

Buck. My lord, your promise for the earldom,—

K. Rich. Richmond! When last I was at Exeter,
The mayor in courtesy show’d me the castle,
And call’d it Rougemont: at which name I started, 104
Because a bard of Ireland told me once
I should not live long after I saw Richmond.

Buck. My lord!


Buck. I am thus bold to put your Grace in mind

Of what you promis’d me.

K. Rich. Well, but what is ’t o’clock?

Buck. Upon the stroke of ten.

K. Rich. Well, let it strike.

Buck. Why let it strike? 112

K. Rich. Because that, like a Jack, thou keep’st the stroke
Betwixt thy begging and my meditation. 
I am not in the giving vein to-day. 

_Buck._ Why, then resolve me whe’re you will, 
or no. 

_K. Rich._ Thou troublest me: I am not in the 
vein. [Exit] _KING RICHARD and Train_.

_Buck._ And is it thus? repays he my deep 
service 
With such contempt? made I him king for 
this? 

O, let me think on Hastings, and be gone 
To Brecknock, while my fearful head is on. 

[Exit. 

_SCENE III._—The Same. 

_Enter Tyrrell._

_Tyr._ The tyrannous and bloody act is done; 
The most arch deed of piteous massacre 
That ever yet this land was guilty of. 
Dighton and Forrest, whom I did suborn 
To do this piece of ruthless butchery, 
Albeit they were flesh’d villains, bloody dogs, 
Melting with tenderness and mild compassion, 
Wet like to children in their death’s sad story. 
‘Oh! thus,’ quoth Dighton, ‘lay the gentle 
babes.’ ‘

‘Thus, thus,’ quoth Forrest, ‘girdling one 
another 
Within their alabaster innocent arms: 
Their lips were four red roses on a stalk, 
Which in their summer beauty kiss’d each 
other. 
A book of prayers on their pillow lay; 
Which once, quoth Forrest, ‘almost chang’d 
my mind; 
But, O, the devil’—there the villain stopp’d; 
When Dighton thus told on: ‘We smothered 
The most replenish’d sweet work of nature, 
That from the prime creation e’er she fram’d.’ 
Hence both are gone with conscience and 
remorse; 
They could not speak; and so I left them both, 
To bear this tidings to the bloody king: 
And here he comes.

_Enter King Richard._

All health, my sovereign lord! 

_K. Rich._ Kind Tyrrell, am I happy in thy 
news? 

_Tyr._ If to have done the thing you gave in 
charge 
Beget your happiness, be happy then, 
For it is done. 

_K. Rich._ But didst thou see them dead? 
_Tyr._ I did, my lord. 

_K. Rich._ And buried, gentle Tyrrell? 

_Tyr._ The chaplain of the Tower hath buried 
them; 
But how or in what place I do not know. 

_K. Rich._ Come to me, Tyrrell, soon at after 
supper, 
When thou shalt tell the process of their 
death. 

Meantime, but think how I may do thee good, 
And be inheritor of thy desire. 

Farewell till then. 

_Tyr._ I humbly take my leave. [Exit. 

_K. Rich._ The son of Clarence have I pent up 
close; 

His daughter meanly have I match’d in mar 
rriage; 
The sons of Edward sleep in Abraham’s bosom, 
And Anne my wife hath bid the world good 
night. 

Now, for I know the Breton Richmond aims 
At young Elizabeth, my brother’s daughter, 
And, by that knot, looks proudly on the crown, 
To her go I, a jolly thriving wooer.

_Enter Catesby._

_Cates._ My lord! 

_K. Rich._ Good or bad news, that thou com’st 
in so bluntly? 

_Cates._ Bad news, my lord: Morton is fled to 
Richmond; 
And Buckingham, back’d with the hardy 
Welshmen, 
Is in the field, and still his power increaseth. 

_K. Rich._ Ely with Richmond troubles me 
more near 
Than Buckingham and his rash-levied strength. 
Come; I have learn’d that fearful comment 
ing 
Is leaden servitor to dull delay: 
Delay leads impotent and snail-pac’d beggary: 
Then fiery expedition be my wing, 
Jove’s Mercury, and herald for a king! 
Go, muster men: my counsel is my shield; 

We must be brief when traitors brave the field. 

[Exeunt. 

_SCENE IV._—The Same. Before the Palace. 

_Enter Queen Margaret._

_Q. Mar._ So, now prosperity begins to mellow 
And drop into the rotten mouth of death. 
Here in these confines slily have I lurk’d 
To watch the waning of mine enemies. 
A dire induction am I witness to, 
And will to France, hoping the consequence 
Will prove as bitter, black, and tragical. 
 Withdraw thee, wretched Margaret: who comes 
here?
Enter Queen Elizabeth and the Duchess of York.

Q. Eliz. Ah! my poor princes! ah, my tender babes,
My unblown flowers, new-appearing sweets,
If yet your gentle souls fly in the air
And be not fix'd in doom perpetual,
Hover about me with your airy wings,
And hear your mother's lamentation.

Q. Mar. Hover about her; say, that right for right.

Hath dimm'd your infant mourn to aged night.

Duch. So many miseries have craz'd my voice,
That my woe-weared tongue is still and mute.
Edward Plantagenet, why art thou dead?
Q. Mar. Plantagenet doth quit Plantagenet;
Edward for Edward pays a dying debt.
Q. Eliz. Wilt thou, O God! fly from such gentle lambs,
And throw them in the entrails of the wolf?

When didst thou sleep when such a deed was done?

Q. Mar. When holy Harry died, and my sweet son.

Duch. Dead life, blind sight, poor mortal living ghost,
Woe's scene, world's shame, grave's due by life usurp'd,
Brief abstract and record of tedious days,
Rest thy unrest on England's lawful earth.

[Sitting down.

Unlawfully made drunk with innocent blood!
Q. Eliz. Ah! that thou wouldst as soon afford a grave
As thou canst yield a melancholy seat;
Then would I hide my bones, not rest them here.

Ahl who hath any cause to mourn but I?

Q. Mar. If ancient sorrow be most reverend,
Give mine the benefit of seniory,
And let my griefs frown on the upper hand,
If sorrow can admit society.

[Sitting down by her.

Tell o'er thy woes again by viewing mine;
I had an Edward, till a Richard kill'd him; 40
I had a Harry, till a Richard kill'd him;
Thou hadst an Edward, till a Richard kill'd him;
Thou hadst a Richard, till a Richard kill'd him.

Duch. I had a Richard too, and thou didst kill him;
I had a Rutland too, thou holp'st to kill him.

From forth the kennel of thy womb hath crept
A hound that doth hunt us all to death:
That dog, that had his teeth before his eyes,
To worry lambs, and lap their gentle blood,
That foul defacer of God's handiwork,
That excellent grand-tyrant of the earth,
That reigns in galled eyes of weeping souls,
Thy womb let loose, to chase us to our graves.
Of upright, just, and true-disposing God,
How do I thank thee that this carnal our preys
On the issue of his mother's body,
And makes her pew-fellow with others' moan.

Duch. O! Harry's wife, triumph not in my woes:
God witness with me, I have wept for thine.

Q. Mar. Bear with me; I am hungry for revenge,
And now I cloy me with beholding it.
Thy Edward he is dead, that kill'd my Edward;
Thy other Edward dead, to quit my Edward; 64
Young York he is but boot, because both they
Match not the high perfection of my loes:
Thy Clarence he is dead that stabb'd my Edward;
And the beholders of this tragic play,

The adulterate Hastings, Rivers, Vaughan,
Grey,

Untimely smother'd in their dusky graves.
Richard yet lives, hell's black intelligencier,
Only reserv'd their factor, to buy souls
And send them thither: but at hand, at hand,
Ensures his piteous and unpitied end:
Earth gaps, hell burns, floods roar, saints pray,
To have him suddenly convey'd from hence.

Cancel his bond of life, dear God! I pray,
That I may live to say, The dog is dead.

Q. Eliz. O! thou didst prophesy the time would come
That I should wish for thee to help me curse
That bottled spider, that foul bunchback'd toad.

Q. Mar. I call'd thee then vain flourish of my fortune;
I call'd thee then poor shadow, painted queen;
The presentation of but what I was;

The flattering index of a direful pageant;
One heav'n a-high to be hurl'd down below;
A mother only mock'd with two fair babes;
A dream of what thou wert, a breath, a bubble,
A sign of dignity, a garish flag,
To be the aim of every dangerous shot;
A queen in jest, only to fill the scene.

Where is thy husband now? where be thy brothers?

Where are thy children? wherein dost thou joy?

Who sues and kneels and cries God save the queen?
Where be the bending peers that flatter'd thee?
Act IV, Sc. IV.

KING RICHARD THE THIRD

Where be the thronging troops that follow’d thee?
Decline all this, and see what now thou art: 96
For happy wife, a most distressed widow;
For joyful mother, one that wails the name;
For one being su’d to, one that humbly sues; 100
For queen, a very caiff’d crown’d with care;
For one that scorn’d me, now scorn’d of me;
For one being fear’d of all, now fearing one;
For one commanding all, obey’d of none. 104
Thus hath the course of justice whirl’d about,
And left thee but a very prey to time;
Having no more but thought of what thou wert,
To torture thee the more, being what thou art.
Thou didst usurp my place, and dost thou not
Usurp the just proportion of my sorrow? 110
Now thy proud neck bears half my burden’d yoke;
From which even here, I slip my wearied head,
And leave the burden of it all on thee. 113
Farewell, York’s wife, and queen of sad mischance:
These English woes shall make me smile in France.
Q. Eliz. O thou, well skil’d in curses, stay awhile,
And teach me how to curse mine enemies. 116

Q. Mar. Forbear to sleep the night, and fast the day;
Compare dead happiness with living woe;
Think that thy babes were fairer than they were,
And he that slew them fouler than he is: 121
Bettering thy loss makes the bad causer worse:
Revolving this will teach thee how to curse.
Q. Eliz. My words are dull; Oh quicken them with thine! 124
Q. Mar. Thy woes will make them sharp,
And pierce like mine. [Exit.

Duch. Why should calamity be full of words?
Q. Eliz. Windy attorneys to their client woes,
Airy successors of intestate joys, 128
Poor breathing orators of miseries!
Let them have scope: though what they do impart
Help nothing else, yet do they ease the heart.
Duch. If so, then be not tongue-tied: go with me,
And in the breath of bitter words let’s smother
My damned son, that thy two sweet sons smother’d. 132
[A trumpet heard.
The trumpet sounds: be copious in exclains.

Enter KING RICHARD, and his Train, marching.

K. Rich. Who intercepts me in my expedition? 136

Duch. O! she that might have intercepted thee,
By strangling thee in her accursed womb,
From all the slaughters, wretch, that thou hast done!
Q. Eliz. Hid’st thou that forehead with a golden crown,
Where should be branded, if that right were right,
The slaughter of the prince that ow’d that crown,
And the dire death of my poor sons and brothers?
Tell me, thou villain slave, where are my children?

Duch. Thou toad, thou toad, where is thy brother Clarence
And little Ned Plantagenet, his son?
Q. Eliz. Where is the gentle Rivers, Vaughan, Grey?

Duch. Where is kind Hastings?
K. Rich. A flourish, trumpets! Strike alarum, drums!
Let not the heavens hear these tell-tale women
Raill on the Lord’s anointed. Strike, I say!

[Flourish. Alarums.
Either be patient, and entreat me fair,
Or with the clamorous report of war
Thus will I drown your exclamations.

Duch. Art thou my son?
K. Rich. Ay; I thank God, my father, and yourself. 156
Duch. Then patiently hear my impatience.
K. Rich. Madam, I have a touch of your condition,
That cannot brook the accent of reproof.
Duch. O, let me speak!
K. Rich. Do, then; but I’ll not hear. 160
Duch. I will be mild and gentle in my words.
K. Rich. And brief, good mother; for I am in haste.

Duch. Art thou so hasty? I have stay’d for thee,
God knows, in torment and in agony. 164
K. Rich. And came I not at last to comfort you?
Duch. No, by the holy rood, thou know’st it well,
Thou cam’st on earth to make the earth my hell.
A grievous burden was thy birth to me; 168
Tetchy and wayward was thy infancy;
Thy school-days frightful, desperate, wild and furious;
Thy prime of manhood daring, bold, and venturous;
Thy age confirm’d, proud, subtle, sly, and bloody, 172
More mild, but yet more harmful, kind in hatred:
What comfortable hour canst thou name
That ever grace'd me in thy company?

K. Rich. Faith, none, but Humphrey Hour, that call'd your Grace.

To breakfast once forth of my company.
If I be so disgracious in your eye,
Let me march on, and not offend you, madam.

Strike up the drum!

Duch. I prithee, hear me speak.


Duch. Hear me a word;

For I shall never speak to thee again.


Duch. Either thou wilt die by God’s just ordinance,

Ere from this war thou turn a conqueror;
Or I with grief and extreme ahage perish
And never look upon thy face again.

Therefore take with thee my most grievous curse,
Which, in the day of battle, tire thee more
Than all the complete armour that thou wear’st!
My prayers on the adverse party fight;
And there the little souls of Edward’s children
Whisper the spirits of thine enemies
And promise them success and victory.

Bloody thou art, bloody will be thy end;
Shame serves thy life and doth thy death attend.

[Exit.

Q. Eliz. Though far more cause, yet much less spirit to curse.

Abides in me: I say amen to her.

K. Rich. Stay, madam; I must talk a word with you.

Q. Eliz. I have no more sons of the royal blood.

For thee to slaughter: for my daughters, Richard,
They shall be praying nuns, not weeping queens;
And therefore level not to hit their lives.

K. Rich. You have a daughter call’d Elizabeth.

Virtuous and fair, royal and gracious.

Q. Eliz. And must she die for this? O! let her live,

And I’ll corrupt her manners, stain her beauty;
Slander myself as false to Edward’s bed;
Throw over her the veil of infamy:
So she may live unsearr’d of bleeding slaughter,
I will confess she was not Edward’s daughter.

K. Rich. Wrong not her birth; she is of royal blood.

Q. Eliz. To save her life, I’ll say she is not so.

K. Rich. Her life is safest only in her birth.

Q. Eliz. And only in that safety died her brothers.

K. Rich. Lo! at their births good stars were opposite!

Q. Eliz. No, to their lives ill friends were contrary.

K. Rich. All unavoided is the doom of destiny.

Q. Eliz. True, when avoided grace makes destiny.

My babes were destin’d to a fairer death,
If grace had bless’d thee with a fairer life.

K. Rich. You speak as if that I had slain my cousins.

Q. Eliz. Cousins, indeed; and by their uncle cozen’d

Of comfort, kingdom, kindred, freedom, life.

Whose hands soever lanced their tender hearts
Thy head, all indirectly, gave direction:
No doubt the murderous knife was dull and blunt
Till it was whetted on thy stone-hard heart.

To revel in the entrails of my lambs.

But that still use of grief makes wild grief tame,
My tongue should to thy ears not name my boys
Till that my nails were anchor’d in thine eyes;
And I, in such a desperate bay of death,
Lace a poor bark, of sails and tackling reft,
Rush all to pieces on thy rocky bosom.

K. Rich. Madam, so thrive I in my enterprise.

And dangerous success of bloody wars,
As I intend more good to you and yours
Than ever you or yours by me were harm’d.

Q. Eliz. What good is cover’d with the face of heaven,

To be discover’d, that can do me good?


Q. Eliz. Up to some scaffold, there to lose their heads?

K. Rich. No, to the dignity and height of fortune.

The high imperial type of this earth’s glory.

Q. Eliz. Flatter my sorrow with report of it:

Tell me what state, what dignity, what honour,
Canst thou demine to any child of mine?

K. Rich. Even all I have; ay, and myself and all.

Will I withal endow a child of thine;
So in the Lethe of thy angry soul
Thou drown the sad remembrance of those
Wrongful, which thou supposest I have done to thee.

Q. Eliz. Be brief, lest that the process of thy kindness

Last longer telling than thy kindness’ date.

K. Rich. Then know, that from my soul I love thy daughter.
To quicken your increase, I will beget
Mine issue of your blood upon your daughter;
A grandam’s name is little less in love
Than is the doting title of a mother;
They are as children but one step below,
Even of your mettle, of your very blood;
Of all one pain, save for a night of groans
Endur’d of her for whom you bid like sor-
row.
Your children were vexation to your youth,
But mine shall be a comfort to your age.
The loss you have is but a son being king,
And by that loss your daughter is made queen.
I cannot make you what amends I would,
Therefore accept such kindness as I can.
Dorset your son, that with a fearful soul
Leads discontented steps in foreign soil,
This fair alliance quickly shall call home
To high promotions and great dignity:
The king that calls your beauteous daughter wife,
Familiarly shall call thy Dorset brother;
Again shall you be mother to a king,
And all the ruins of distressful times
Repair’d with double riches of content.
What! we have many goodly days to see:
The liquid drops of tears that you have shed
Shall come again, transform’d to orient pearl,
Advantaging their loan with interest
Of ten times double gain of happiness.
Go then, my mother; to thy daughter go:
Make bold her bashful years with your expe-
rience;
Prepare her ears to hear a woer’s tale;
Put in her tender heart the aspiring flame
Of golden sovereignty; acquaint the princess
With the sweet silent hours of marriage joys:
And when this arm of mine hath chastised
The petty rebel, dull-brain’d Buckingham,
Bound with triumphant garlands will I come,
And lead thy daughter to a conqueror’s bed;
To whom I will retain my conquest won,
And she shall be sole victress, Cæsar’s Cæsar.
Q. Eliz. What were I best to say? her fa-
ther’s brother
Would be her lord? Or shall I say, her uncle?
Or, he that slew her brothers and her uncles?
Under what title shall I woo thee,;
That God, the law, my honour, and her love
Can make seem pleasing to her tender years?
K. Rich. Infer fair England’s peace by this
alliance.
Q. Eliz. Which she shall purchase with still
lasting war.
K. Rich. Tell her, the king, that may com-
mand, entreats.
Q. Eliz. That at her hands which the king’s
King forbids.
K. Rich. Say, she shall be a high and mighty
queen. 348
Q. Eliz. To wail the title, as her mother doth.
K. Rich. Say, I will love her everlastingly.
Q. Eliz. But how long shall that title ‘ever’
last?
K. Rich. Sweetly in force unto her fair life’s
end. 352
Q. Eliz. But how long fairly shall her sweet
life last?
K. Rich. As long as heaven and nature
lengthens it.
Q. Eliz. As long as hell and Richard likes of
it.
K. Rich. Say, I, her sovereign, am her sub-
ject low. 356
Q. Eliz. But she, your subject, loathes such
sovereignty.
K. Rich. Be eloquent in my behalf to her.
Q. Eliz. An honest tale speeds best being
plainly told.
K. Rich. Then plainly to her tell my loving
tale. 360
Q. Eliz. Plain and not honest is too harsh a
style.
K. Rich. Your reasons are too shallow and
too quick.
Q. Eliz. O, no! my reasons are too deep and
dead;
Too deep and dead, poor infants, in their graves.
K. Rich. Harp not on that string, madam;
that is past. 365
Q. Eliz. Harp on it still shall I till heart-
strings break.
K. Rich. Now, by my George, my garter,
and my crown,—
Q. Eliz. Profan’d, dishonour’d, and the third
usurp’d. 368
K. Rich. I swear,—
Q. Eliz. By nothing; for this is no oath.
Thy George, profan’d, hath lost his holy honour;
Thy garter, blemish’d, pawn’d his knightly
virtue; 371
Thy crown, usurp’d, disgrac’d his kingly glory.
If something thou wouldst swear to be believ’d,
Swear, then, by something that thou hast not
wrong’d.
K. Rich. Now, by the world,—
Q. Eliz. ’Tis full of thy foul wrongs.
K. Rich. My father’s death,—
Q. Eliz. Thy life hath that dishonour’d.
K. Rich. Then, by myself,—
Q. Eliz. Thyself is self-misus’d. 374
K. Rich. Why, then, by God,—
Q. Eliz. God’s wrong is most of all.
If thou hadst fear’d to break an oath by him,
The unity the king my husband made
Had not been broken, nor my brothers died:
If thou hadst fear’d to break an oath by him,
The imperial metal, circling now thy head,
Had grac’d the tender temples of my child. 384
And both the princes had been breathing here,
Which now, too tender bed-fellows for dust,
Thy broken faith hath made a prey for worms.
What canst thou swear by now?
K. Rich. The time to come. 388
Q. Eliz. That thou hast wronged in the time
o’erpast;
For I myself have many tears to wash
Hereafter time for time past wrong’d by thee.
The children live, whose parents thou hast
slaughter’d, 392
Ungovern’d youth, to wail it in their age:
The parents live, whose children thou hast
butcher’d,
Old barren plants, to wail it with their age.
Swear not by time to come; for that thou hast
Misa’d ere us’d, by times ill-us’d o’erpast. 397
K. Rich. As I intend to prosper, and repent,
So thrive I in my dangerous affairs
Of hostile arms! myself myself confound!
Heaven and fortune bar me happy hours!
Day, yield me not thy light; nor, night, thy
rest!
Be opposite all planets of good luck
To my proceeding, if, with pure heart’s love, 404
Immaculate devotion, holy thoughts,
I tend not thy beauteous princely daughter!
In her consists my happiness and thine;
Without her, follows to myself, and thee, 408
Herself, the land, and many a Christian soul,
Death, desolation, ruin, and decay:
It cannot be avoided but by this;
It will not be avoided but by this. 412
Therefore, dear mother,—I must call you so,—
Be the attorney of my love to her:
Plead what I will be, not what I have been;
Not my deserts, but what I will deserve: 416
Urge the necessity and state of times,
And be not peevish-fond in great designs.
Q. Eliz. Shall I be tempted of the devil thus?
K. Rich. Ay, if the devil tempt thee to do
good. 420
Q. Eliz. Shall I forget myself to be myself?
K. Rich. Ay, if your self’s remembrance
wrong yourself.
K. Rich. But in your daughter’s womb I
bury them: 424
Where, in that nest of spicery, they shall
breed
Selves of themselves, to your recomforture.
Q. Eliz. Shall I go win my daughter to thy will?
K. Rich. And be a happy mother by the deed.
Q. Eliz. I go. Write to me very shortly, 429
And you shall understand from me her mind.
K. Rich. Bear her my true love's kiss; and so farewell.

[Kissing her. Exit QUEEN ELIZABETH. Relenting fool, and shallow changing woman!

Enter RATCLIFF; CATESBY following.

How now! what news? 433
Rat. Most mighty sovereign, on the western coast
Rideth a puissant navy; to the shores
Throng many doubtful hollow-hearted friends,
Unarm'd, and unresolv'd to beat them back. 437
'Tis thought that Richmond is their admiral;
And there they hull, expecting but the aid
Of Buckingham to welcome them ashore. 440
K. Rich. Some light-foot friend post to the
Duke of Norfolk:
Ratcliff, thyself, or Catesby; where is he?
Cate. Here, my good lord.
Cate. I will, my lord, with all convenient haste. 444
K. Rich. Ratcliff, come hither. Post to Salisbury:
When thou com'st thither,—[To CATESBY.] Dull, unmindful villain,
Why stay'st thou here, and go'st not to the duke?
Cate. First, mighty liege, tell me your highness' pleasure,
What from your Grace I shall deliver to him.
K. Rich. Of true, good Catesby: bid him levy straight
The greatest strength and power he can make,
And meet me suddenly at Salisbury. 452
Cate. I go. [Exit. Rat. What, may it please you, shall I do at
Salisbury?
K. Rich. Why, what wouldst thou do there before I go?
Rat. Your highness told me I should post before. 456

Enter STANLEY.

K. Rich. My mind is chang'd. Stanley, what news with you?
Stan. None good, my liege, to please you
with the hearing;
Nor none so bad but well may be reported.
K. Rich. Hoyday, a riddle! neither good nor bad! 460
What need'st thou run so many miles about,

When thou mayst tell thy tale the nearest way?
Once more, what news?
Stan. Richmond is on the seas.
K. Rich. There let him sink, and be the seas
on him! 464
White-liver'd runagate! what doth he there?
Stan. I know not, mighty sovereign, but by
guess.
K. Rich. Well, as you guess?
Stan. Stir'd up by Dorset, Buckingham,
and Morton, 468
He makes for England, here to claim the crown.
K. Rich. Is the chair empty? is the sword
unsway'd?
Is the king dead? the empire unpossess'd?
What heir of York is there alive but we? 472
And who is England's king but great York's
heir?
Then, tell me, what makes he upon the seas?
Stan. Unless for that, my liege, I cannot
guess.
K. Rich. Unless for that he comes to be your
liege, 476
You cannot guess wherefore the Welshman comes.
Thou wilt revolt and fly to him I fear.
Stan. No, my good lord; therefore mistrust
me not.
K. Rich. Where is thy power then to beat
him back?
Where be thy tenants and thy followers?
Are they not now upon the western shore,
Safe-conducting the rebels from their ships?
Stan. No, my good lord, my friends are in
the north. 484
K. Rich. Cold friends to me: what do they
in the north
When they should serve their sovereign in the west?
Stan. They have not been command'd, mighty king:
Pleaseth your majesty to give me leave, 488
I'll muster up my friends, and meet your Grace,
Where and what time your majesty shall please.
K. Rich. Ay, ay, thou wouldst be gone to
join with Richmond:
But I'll not trust thee.
Stan. Most mighty sovereign, 492
You have no cause to hold my friendship doubtfu-
I never was nor never will be false.
K. Rich. Go then and muster men: but
leave behind
Your son, George Stanley: look your heart be
firm,
Or else his head's assurance is but frail.
Stan. So deal with him as I prove true to you. [Exit.

Enter a Messenger.

Mess. My gracious sovereign, now in Devonshire,
As I by friends am well advertised,
Sir Edward Courtney, and the haughty prelate,
Bishop of Exeter, his brother there,
With many more confederates are in arms.

Enter a second Messenger.

Sec. Mess. In Kent, my liege, the Guildfords are in arms;
And every hour more competitors
Flock to the rebels, and their power grows strong.

Enter a third Messenger.

Third Mess. My lord, the army of great Buckingham—
K. Rich. Out on ye, owls! nothing but songs
of death? [He strikes him.
There, take thou that, till thou bring better news.

Third Mess. The news I have to tell your majesty
Is, that by sudden floods and fall of waters,
Buckingham’s army is dispers’d and scatter’d;
And he himself wander’d away alone,
No man knows whither.
K. Rich. I cry thee mercy:
There is my purse, to cure that blow of thine.
Hath any well-advised friend proclaim’d Reward to him that brings the traitor in?
Third Mess. Such proclamation hath been
made, my liege.

Enter a fourth Messenger.

Fourth Mess. Sir Thomas Lovel, and Lord Marquess Dorset,
’Tis said, my liege, in Yorkshire are in arms:
But this good comfort bring I to your highness,
The Breton navy is dispers’d by tempest.
Richmond, in Dorsetshire, sent out a boat
Unto the shore to ask those on the banks
If they were his assistants, yea or no;
Who answer’d him, they came from Buckingham
Upon his party: he, mistrusting them,
Hois’d sail, and made away for Brittany.
K. Rich. March on, march on, since we are
up in arms;
If not to fight with foreign enemies,
Yet to beat down these rebels here at home.

Enter Catesby.

Cate. My liege, the Duke of Buckingham is taken,
That is the best news: that the Earl of Rich-
mond
Is with a mighty power landed at Milford
Is colder news, but yet they must be told.
K. Rich. Away towards Salisbury! while we reason here,
A royal battle might be won and lost.
Some one take order Buckingham be brought
To Salisbury; the rest march on with me.

[Exeunt.

Scene V.—The Same. A Room in Lord Stanley’s House.

Enter Stanley and Sir Christopher Urs-
wick.

Stan. Sir Christopher, tell Richmond this from me:
That in the sty of this most bloody boar
My son George Stanley is frank’d up in hold:
If I revolt, off goes young George’s head;
The fear of that holds off my present aid.
So, get thee gone: commend me to thy lord.
Withal, say that the queen hath heartily con-
"censed
He should espouse Elizabeth her daughter.
But, tell me, where is princely Richmond now?
Chris. At Pembroke, or at Ha’rford-west, in
Wales.

Stan. What men of name resort to him?
Chris. Sir Walter Herbert, a renowned soldier,
Sir Gilbert Talbot, Sir William Stanley,
Oxford, redoubted Pembroke, Sir James Blunt,
And Rice ap Thomas, with a valiant crew;
And many other of great name and worth:
And towards London do they bend their power,
If by the way they be not fought withal.
Stan. Well, hie thee to thy lord; I kiss his hand:
My letter will resolve him of my mind.

Farewell. [Exeunt.

Act V.

Scene I.—Salisbury. An open Place.

Enter the Sheriff and Guard, with Buckingham, led to execution.

Buck. Will not King Richard let me speak with him?
Sher. No, my good lord; therefore be patient.

Buck. Hastings, and Edward’s children, Grey
and Rivers,
Holy King Henry, and thy fair son Edward,
Act V, Sc. I.  KING RICHARD THE THIRD

Vaughan, and all that have miscarried
By underhand corrupted foul injustice,
If that your moody discontented souls
Do through the clouds behold this present hour,
Even for revenge mock my destruction!
This is All-Souls' day, fellows, is it not?
Sher. It is, my lord.
Buck. Why, then All-Souls' day is my body's
doomsday.
This is the day that, in King Edward's time,
I wish'd might fall on me, when I was found
False to his children or his wife's allies;
This is the day wherein I wish'd to fall
By the false faith of him whom most I trusted;
This, this All-Souls' day to my fearful soul
Is the determin'd respite of my wrongs.
That high All-Seer which I dallied with
Hath turn'd my feigned prayer on my head,
And given in earnest what I begg'd in jest.
Thus doth he force the swords of wicked men
To turn their own points on their masters' bosoms:
Thus Margaret's curse falls heavy on my neck:
'When he, quoth she, 'shall split thy heart
with sorrow,
Remember Margaret was a prophetess.'
Come, lead me, officers, to the block of shame:
Wrong hath but wrong, and blame the due of blame.

[Exeunt.]

Scene II.—A Plain near Tamworth.

Enter with drum and colours, RICHMOND, OXFORD, SIR JAMES BLUNT, SIR WALTER HERBERT, and Others, with Forces, marching.

Richm. Fellows in arms, and my most loving friends,
Brui'd underneath the yoke of tyranny,
Thus far into the bowels of the land
Have we march'd on without impediment:
And here receive we from our father Stanley Lines of fair comfort and encouragement.
The wretched, bloody, and usurping boar,
That spoil'd your summer fields and fruitful vines,
Swills your warm blood like wash, and makes his trough
In your embowell'd bosoms, this foul swine
Is now even in the centre of this isle,
Near to the town of Leicester, as we learn:
From Tamworth thither is but one day's march.
In God's name, cheerly on, courageous friends,
To reap the harvest of perpetual peace
By this one bloody trial of sharp war.

Oxf. Every man's conscience is a thousand men,

To fight against this guilty homicide.
Herb. I doubt not but his friends will turn to us.
Blunt. He hath no friends but what are friends for fear.
Which in his dearest need will fly from him.
Richm. All for our vantage: then, in God's name, march:
True hope is swift, and flies with swallow's wings;
Kings it makes gods, and meaner creatures kings.

[Exeunt.]

Scene III.—Bosworth Field.

Enter KING RICHARD and Forces; the DUKE OF NORFOLK, EARL OF SURREY, and Others.

K. Rich. Here pitch our tent, even here in Bosworth field.
My Lord of Surrey, why look you so sad?
Sur. My heart is ten times lighter than my looks.

K. Rich. My Lord of Norfolk.—
Nor. Here, most gracious liege.

K. Rich. Norfolk, we must have knockts; hat must we not?
Nor. We must both give and take, my loving lord.

K. Rich. Up with my tent! here will I lie tonight;

[Soldiers begin to set up the KING's tent.
But where to-morrow? Well, all's one for that.

Who hath descried the number of the traitors?
Nor. Six or seven thousand is their utmost power.

K. Rich. Why, our battalia trebles that account;
Besides, the king's name is a tower of strength,
Which they upon the adverse faction want.

Up with the tent! Come, noble gentlemen,
Let us survey the vantage of the ground;
Call for some men of sound direction:
Let's lack no discipline, make no delay;
For, lords, to-morrow is a busy day.

[Exeunt.]

Enter on the other side of the field, RICHMOND, SIR WILLIAM BRANDON, OXFORD, and other Officers. Some of the Soldiers pitch RICHMOND's tent.

Richm. The weary sun hath made a golden set,
And, by the bright track of his fiery car,
Gives token of a goodly day to-morrow.
Sir William Brandon, you shall bear my standard.

Give me some ink and paper in my tent:
I'll draw the form and model of our battle, 24
Limit each leader to his several charge,
And part in just proportion our small power.
My Lord of Oxford, you, Sir William Brandon,
And you, Sir Walter Herbert, stay with me. 28
The Earl of Pembroke keeps his regiment:
Good Captain Blunt, bear my good-night to
him,
And by the second hour in the morning
Desire the earl to see me in my tent. 32
Yet one thing more, good captain, do for me;
Where is Lord Stanley quarter'd, do you know?
Blunt. Unless I have mista'en his colours
much,—
Which, well I am assur'd, I have not done,— 36
His regiment lies half a mile at least
South from the mighty power of the king.
Richm. If without peril it be possible,
Good Captain Blunt, bear my good-night to
him,
And give him from me this most needful note:
Blunt. Upon my life, my lord, I'll undertake
it;
And so, God give you quiet rest to-night!
Richm. Good-night, good Captain Blunt.
Come, gentlemen, 44
Let us consult upon to-morrow's business;
In to my tent, the air is raw and cold.
[They withdraw into the tent.

Enter, to his tent, KING RICHARD, NORFOLK,
RATCLIFF, and CATESBY.

K. Rich. What is 't o'clock?
Cate. It's supper-time, my lord;
It's nine o'clock.
K. Rich. I will not sup to-night. 48
Give me some ink and paper.
What, is my beaver easier than it was,
And all my armour laid into my tent?
Cate. It is, my liege; and all things are in
readiness.
K. Rich. Good Norfolk, his thee to thy charge;
Use careful watch; choose trusty sentinels.
Nor. I go, my lord.
K. Rich. Stir with the lark to-morrow, gentle
Norfolk.
Nor. I warrant you, my lord. [Exit.
K. Rich. Ratcliff!
Rat. My lord?
K. Rich. Send out a pursuivant at arms
To Stanley's regiment; bid him bring his power
Before sun-rising, lest his son George fall
Into the blind cave of eternal night.
Fill me a bowl of wine. Give me a watch.
Saddle white Surrey for the field to-morrow. 64
Look that my staves be sound, and not too
heavy.

Ratcliff!
Rat. My lord!
K. Rich. Saw'st thou the melancholy Lord
Northumberland?
Rat. Thomas the Earl of Surrey, and himself,
Much about cock-shut time, from troop to troop
Went through the army, cheering up the soldi-
ers.
K. Rich. So, I am satisfied. Give me a bowl
of wine:
I have not that alacrity of spirit,
Nor cheer of mind, that I was wont to have.
Set it down. Is ink and paper ready?
Rat. It is, my lord.
K. Rich. Bid my guard watch; leave me.
Ratcliff, about the mid of night come to my tent
And help to arm me. Leave me, I say.
[KING RICHARD retires into his tent.
Exeunt RATCLIFF and CATESBY.

RICHMOND'S tent opens, and discovers him and
his Officers, &c.

Enter STANLEY.

Stan. Fortune and victory sit on thy helm!
Richm. All comfort that the dark night can
afford
Be to thy person, noble father-in-law!
Tell me, how fares our loving mother?
Stan. I, by attorney, bless thee from thy
mother,
Who prays continually for Richmond's good:
So much for that. The silent hours steal on,
And fally darkness breaks within the east.
In brief, for so the season bids us be, 88
Prepare thy battle early in the morning,
And put thy fortune to the arbitrement
Of bloody strokes and mortal-staring war.
L, as I may,—that which I would I cannot,— 92
With best advantage will deceive the time,
And aid thee in this doubtful shock of arms:
But on thy side I may not be too forward,
Lest, being seen, thy brother, tender George, 96
Be executed in his father's sight.
Farewell: the leisure and the fearful time
Cuts off the ceremonious vows of love
And ample interchange of sweet discourse, 100
Which so long sunder'd friends should dwell
upon:
God give us leisure for these rites of love!
Once more, adieu: be valiant, and speed well!
Richm. Good lords, conduct him to his regi-
ment.
104
I'll strive, with troubled thoughts, to take a
nap.
Lest leaden slumber peise me down to-morrow,
When I should mount with wings of victory.
Act V, Sc. III.  
KING RICHARD THE THIRD

Once more, good-night, kind lords and gentlemen. [Exeunt all but RICHARD.]

O! thou, whose captain I account myself, Look on my forces with a gracious eye; Put in their hands thy bruising irons of wrath, That they may crush down with a heavy fall The usurping helmets of our adversaries! Make us thy ministers of chastisement, That we may praise thee in thy victory! To thee I do commend my watchful soul, Ere I let fall the windows of mine eyes: Sleeping and waking, O! defend me still!

[Sleeps.

The Ghost of PRINCE EDWARD, Son to Henry the Sixth, rises between the two tents.

Ghost. [To KING RICHARD.] Let me sit heavy on thy soul to-morrow!
Think how thou stab'st me in my prime of youth At Tewksbury: despair, therefore, and die!
Be cheerful, Richmond; for the wronged souls Of butcher'd princes fight in thy behalf: King Henry's issue, Richmond, comforts thee.

The Ghost of KING HENRY THE SIXTH rises.

Ghost. [To KING RICHARD.] When I was mortal, my anointed body Was punched full of deadly holes: Think on the Tower and me; despair and die! Henry the Sixth bids thee despair and die.

[To RICHMOND.] Virtuous and holy, be thou conqueror!

Harry, that prophesied thou shouldst be the king,
Doth comfort thee in thy sleep: live thou and flourish!

The Ghost of CLARENCE rises.

Ghost. [To KING RICHARD.] Let me sit heavy on thy soul to-morrow!
I, that was wash'd to death with fulsome wine, Poor Clarence, by thy guile betray'd to death! To-morrow in the battle think on me, And fall thy edgeless sword: despair, and die!

[To RICHMOND.] Thou offspring of the house of Lancaster,
The wronged heirs of York do pray for thee: Good angels guard thy battle! live, and flourish!

The Ghosts of RIVERS, GREY, and VAUGHAN arise.

Ghost of RIVERS. [To KING RICHARD.] Let me sit heavy on thy soul to-morrow!

Rivers, that died at Pomfret! despair, and die!

Ghost of GREY. [To KING RICHARD.] Think upon Grey, and let thy soul despair.

Ghost of VAUGHAN. [To KING RICHARD.]

Think upon Vaughan, and with guilty fear Let fall thy pointless lance: despair, and die!—

All Three. [To RICHMOND.] Awake! and think our wrongs in Richard's bosom Will conquer thee: awake, and win the day!

The Ghost of HASTINGS rises.

Ghost. [To KING RICHARD.] Bloody and guilty, guiltily awake;
And in a bloody battle end thy days!

Think on Lord Hastings, so despair, and die!—

[To RICHMOND.] Quiet, untroubled soul, awake, awake!

Arm, fight, and conquer, for fair England's sake!

'The Ghosts of the two young PRINCES rise.

Ghosts. [To KING RICHARD.] Dream on thy cousins smother'd in the Tower:

Let us be lead within thy bosom, Richard, And weigh thee down to ruin, shame, and death! Thy nephews' souls bid thee despair, and die!

[To RICHMOND.] Sleep, Richmond, sleep in peace, and wake in joy;

Good angels guard thee from the boar's anno'y! Live, and beget a happy race of kings!

Edward's unhappy sons do bid thee flourish.

The Ghost of LADY ANNE rises.

Ghost. [To KING RICHARD.] Richard, thy wife, that wretched Anne thy wife,
That never slept a quiet hour with thee, Now fills thy sleep with perturbations:

To-morrow in the battle think on me, And fall thy edgeless sword: despair, and die!

[To RICHMOND.] Thou quiet soul, sleep thou a quiet sleep;

Dream of success and happy victory! Thy adversary's wife doth pray for thee.

The Ghost of BUCKINGHAM rises.

Ghost. [To KING RICHARD.] The first was I that help'd thee to the crown;

The last was I that felt thy tyranny. O! in the battle think on Buckingham, And die in terror of thy guiltiness! Dream on, dream on, of bloody deeds and death: Fainting, despairing, yield thy breath!

[To RICHMOND.] I died for hope ere I could lend thee aid:

But cheer thy heart, and be thou not dismay'd: God and good angels fight on Richard's side; And Richard falls in height of all his pride.

[The Ghosts vanish. KING RICHARD starts out of his dream.]

K. Rich. Give me another horse! bind up my wounds!
KING RICHARD THE THIRD  Act V, Sc. III.

Have mercy, Jesu! Soft! I did but dream.
O coward conscience, how dost thou afflict me!
The lights burn blue. It is now dead midnight.
Cold fearful drops stand on my trembling flesh.
What! do I fear myself? there’s none else by:
Richard loves Richard, that is, I am I. 184
Is there a murderer here? No. Yes, I am:
Then fly: what! from myself? Great reason
why:
Lest I revenge. What! myself upon myself?
Alack! I love myself. Wherefore? for any good
That I myself have done unto myself? 189
Oh! no: alas! I rather hate myself
For hateful deeds committed by myself.
I am a villain. Yet I lie; I am not. 192
Fool, of thyself speak well: fool, do not flatter.
My conscience hath a thousand several tongues,
And every tongue brings in a several tale,
And every tale condemns me for a villain. 196
Perjury, perjury, in the high’st degree:
Murder, stern murder, in the dir’st degree;
All several sins, all us’d in each degree,
Through to the bar, crying all, ‘Guilty! guilty!’
I shall despair. There is no creature loves me;
And if I die, no soul will pity me:
Nay, wherefore should they, since that I myself
Find in myself no pity to myself? 204
Methought the souls of all that I had murder’d
Came to my tent; and every one did threat
To-morrow’s vengeance on the head of Richard.

Enter RATCLIFF.

Rat. My lord! 208
K. Rich. ‘Zounds! who’s there?
Rat. Ratcliff, my lord; ’tis I. The early village cock
Hath twice done salutation to the morn;
Your friends are up, and buckle on their armour. 212
K. Rich. O Ratcliff! I have dream’d a fearful dream.
What thinkest thou, will our friends prove all true?
Rat. No doubt, my lord.
K. Rich. O Ratcliff! I fear, I fear,—
Rat. Nay, good my lord, be not afraid of shadows. 216
K. Rich. By the apostle Paul, shadows tonight
Have struck more terror to the soul of Richard
Than can the substance of ten thousand soldiers
Armed in proof, and led by shallow Richmond.
It is not yet near day. Come, go with me; 221
Under our tents I’ll play the eaves-dropper,
To hear if any mean to shrink from me.

[Exeunt.

RICHMOND wakes. Enter OXFORD and Others.
Lords. Good morrow, Richmond! 224
Richm. Cry mercy, lords, and watchful gentlemen,
That you have ta’en a tardy sluggard here.
Lords. How have you slept, my lord?
Richm. The sweetest sleep, the fairest-boding dreams
That ever enter’d in a drowsy head,
Have I since your departure had, my lords.
Methought their souls, whose bodies Richard murder’d,
Came to my tent and cried on victory: 232
I promise you, my heart is very joyous
In the remembrance of so fair a dream.
How far into the morning is it, lords?
Lords. Upon the stroke of four. 236
Richm. Why, then ’tis time to arm and give direction.

His oration to his Soldiers.

More than I have said, loving countrymen,
The leisure and enforcement of the time
Forbids to dwell on: yet remember this, 249
God and our good cause fight upon our side;
The prayers of holy saints and wronged souls,
Like high-rear’d bulwarks, stand before our faces;
Richard except, those whom we fight against 244
Had rather have us win than him they follow.
For what is he they follow? truly, gentlemen,
A bloody tyrant and a homicide;
One rais’d in blood, and one in blood establish’d;
One that made means to come by what he hath, 249
And slaughter’d those that were the means to help him;
A base foul stone, made precious by the soil
Of England’s chair, where he is falsely set; 252
One that hath ever been God’s enemy.
Then, if you fight against God’s enemy,
God will in justice, ward you as his soldiers;
If you do sweat to put a tyrant down, 256
You sleep in peace, the tyrant being slain;
If you do fight against your country’s foes,
Your country’s fat shall pay your pains the hire;
If you do fight in safeguard of your wives, 260
Your wives shall welcome home the conquerors;
If you do free your children from the sword,
Your children’s children quit it in your age.
Then, in the name of God and all these rights,
Advance your standards, draw your willing swords. 265
For me, the ransom of my bold attempt
Shall be this cold corse on the earth’s cold face;
But if I thrive, the gain of my attempt 268
The least of you shall share his part thereof.
Sound drums and trumpets, boldly and cheerfully;
God and Saint George! Richmond and victory!

[Exeunt.]

Re-enter King Richard, Ratcliff, Attendants, and Forces.

K. Rich. What said Northumberland as touching Richmond? 272
Rat. That he was never trained up in arms, K. Rich. He said the truth: and what said Surrey then?
Rat. He smil’d, and said, ‘The better for our purpose.’
K. Rich. He was i’ the right; and so, indeed, it is.

[Clock strikes.]
Tell the clock there. Give me a calendar. 277
Who saw the sun to-day?
Rat. Not I, my lord.
K. Rich. Then he disdain’d to shine; for by the book
He should have bravi’d the east an hour ago: 280
A black day will it be to somebody.
Ratcliff!
Rat. My lord?
K. Rich. The sun will not be seen to-day;
The sky doth frown and lower upon our army.
I would these dewy tears were from the ground.
Not shine to-day! Why, what is that to me
More than to Richmond? for the self-same heaven
That frowns on me looks sadly upon him. 288

Enter Norfolk.
Nor. Arm, arm, my lord! the foe vaunts in the field.
K. Rich. Come, bustle, bustle; caparison my horse. Call up Lord Stanley, bid him bring his power:
I will lead forth my soldiers to the plain, 292
And thus my battle shall be ordered:
My foreward shall be drawn out all in length Consisting equally of horse and foot;
Our archers shall be placed in the midst: 296
John Duke of Norfolk, Thomas Earl of Surrey,
Shall have the leading of this foot and horse. They thus directed, we will follow
In the main battle, whose puissance on either side
Shall be well winged with our chiefest horse.
This, and Saint George to boot! What think’st thou, Norfolk?
Nor. A good direction, war-like sovereign.
This found I on my tent this morning. 304

[Giving a scroll.]

K. Rich. Jockey of Norfolk, be not too bold,
For Dickon thy master is bought and sold.

A thing devised by the enemy.
Go, gentlemen; every man to his charge: 308
Let not our babbling dreams affright our souls;
Conscience is but a word that cowards use,
Devis’d at first to keep the strong in awe:
Our strong arms be our conscience, swords our law.

March on, join bravely, let us to ’t pell-mell;
If not to heaven, then hand in hand to hell.

His oration to his Army.
What shall I say more than I have infring’d?
Remember whom you are to cope withal: 316
A sort of vagabonds, rascals, and run-aways,
A scum of Bretons and base lackey peasants,
Whom their o'er-cloyed country vomits forth To desolate adventures and assure destruction. You sleeping safe, they bring you to unrest; 321
You having lands, and bless’d with beauteous wives,
They would restrain the one, distain the other. And who doth lead them but a paltry fellow, 324
Long kept in Britaine at our mother’s cost? A milk-sop, one that never in his life Felt so much cold as over shoes in snow? Let’s whip these stragglers o’er the sea again; Lash hence these overweening rags of France, These famish’d beggars, weary of their lives; Who, but for dreaming on this fond exploit, For want of means, poor rats, had hang’d themselves: 332
If we be conquer’d, let men conquer us, And not these bastard Bretons; whom our fathers Have in their own land beaten, bobb’d, and thump’d, And, on record, left them the heirs of shame. 336
Shall these enjoy our lands? lie with our wives? Ravish our daughters? [Drum ajar off.]
Hark! I hear their drum. Fight, gentlemen of England! fight, bold yeomen! Draw, archers, draw your arrows to the head! Spur your proud horses hard, and ride in blood; Amaze the welkin with your broken staves!

Enter a Messenger.
What says Lord Stanley? will he bring his power?
Mess. My lord, he doth deny to come. 344
K. Rich. Off with his son George’s head!
Nor. My lord, the enemy is pass’d the marsh: After the battle let George Stanley die.
K. Rich. A thousand hearts are great within my bosom: 348
Advance our standards! set upon our foes! Our ancient word of courage, fair Saint George,
KING RICHARD THE THIRD

Act V, Sc. IV.

 Inspire us with the spleen of fiery dragons! Upon them! Victory sits upon our helms. 352
[Exeunt.

SCENE IV.—Another Part of the Field.

Alarum: Excursions. Enter NORFOLK and Forces; to him CATESBY.

Cate. Rescue, my Lord of Norfolk! rescue, rescue!
The king enacts more wonders than a man, Daring an opposite to every danger:
His horse is slain, and all on foot he fights, Seeking for Richmond in the throat of death. Rescue, fair lord, or else the day is lost!

Alarum. Enter KING RICHARD.

K. Rich. A horse! a horse! my kingdom for a horse!
Cate. Withdraw, my lord; I'll help you to a horse.

K. Rich. Slave! I have set my life upon a cast, And I will stand the hazard of the die. I think there be six Richmonds in the field; Five have I slain to-day, instead of him.—

A horse! a horse! my kingdom for a horse!

[Exeunt.

Alarums. Enter from opposite sides KING RICHARD and RICHMOND, and exeunt fighting. Retreat and flourish. Then re-enter RICHMOND, STANLEY, bearing the crown, with divers other Lords, and Forces.

Richm. God and your arms be prais'd, victorious friends; The day is ours, the bloody dog is dead.

Stan. Courageous Richmond, well hast thou acquit thee!

Lon here, this long-usurped royalty From the dead temples of this bloody wretch Have I pluck'd off, to grace thy brows withal: Wear it, enjoy it, and make much of it.

Richm. Great God of heaven, say amen to all!

But, tell me, is young George Stanley living?

Stan. He is, my lord, and safe in Leicester town;
Whither, if you please, we may withdraw us. 24

Richm. What men of name are slain on either side?

Stan. John Duke of Norfolk, Walter Lord Ferrers,
Sir Robert Brakenbury, and Sir William Brandon.

Richm. Inter their bodies as becomes their births:

Proclaim a pardon to the soldiers fled That in submission will return to us; And then, as we have ta'en the sacrament, We will unite the white rose and the red:

Smile, heaven, upon this fair conjunction, That long hath frown'd upon their enmity! What traitor hears me, and says not amen? England hath long been mad, and scarr'd herself;

The brother blindly shed the brother's blood, The father rashly slaughter'd his own son, The son, compell'd, been butcher to the sire: All this divided York and Lancaster, Divided in their dire division, O! now, let Richmond and Elizabeth, The true successors of each royal house, By God's fair ordinance conjoin together; And let their heirs—God, if thy will be so,— Enrich the time to come with smooth-fac'd peace,

With smiling plenty, and fair prosperous days Abate the edge of traitors, gracious Lord, That would reduce these bloody days again, And make poor England weep in streams of blood!

Let them not live to taste this land's increase, That would with treason wound this fair land's peace!

Now civil wounds are stopp'd, peace lives again:
That she may long live here, God say amen!

[Exeunt.

731
THE FAMOUS HISTORY OF THE LIFE OF KING HENRY THE EIGHTH

DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

KING HENRY the Eighth.
CARDINAL WOLSEY.
CARDINAL CAMPEIUS.
CAPUCIUS, Ambassador from the Emperor Charles the Fifth.
CRANMER, Archbishop of Canterbury.
DUKE OF NORFOLK.
DUKE OF SUFFOLK.
DUKE OF BUCKINGHAM.
EARL OF SURREY.
Lord Chancellor.
Lord Chamberlain.
GARDINER, Bishop of Winchester.
BISHOP OF LINCOLN.
LORD ABERGAVERY.
LORD SANDS.
SIR THOMAS LOLLER.
SIR HENRY GUILDFORD.
SIR ANTHONY DENTY.
SIR NICHOLAS VAUX.
Secretaries to Wolsey.
CROMWELL, Servant to Wolsey.
GRIFFITH, Gentleman-Usher to Queen Katharine.

Three Gentlemen.
Garter King-at-Arms.
DOCTOR BUTTS, Physician to the King.
Surveyor to the Duke of Buckingham.
BRANDON, and a Sergeant-at-Arms.
Door-keeper of the Council Chamber.
Porter, and his Man.
Page to Gardiner.
A Crier.

QUEEN KATHARINE, Wife to King Henry; afterwards divorced.
ANNE BULLEN, her Maid of Honour; afterwards Queen.
An Old Lady, Friend to Anne Bullen.
PATIENCE, Woman to Queen Katharine.

Several Lords and Ladies in the Dumb Shows;
Women attending upon the Queen; Spirits which appear to her; Scribes, Officers, Guards, and other Attendants.

SCENE.—Chiefly in London and Westminster; once, at Kimbolton.

PROLOGUE.

I come no more to make you laugh: things now,
That bear a weighty and a serious brow,
Sad, high, and working, full of state and woe,
Such noble scenes as draw the eye to flow,
We now present. Those that can pity, here
May, if they think it well, let fall a tear;
The subject will deserve it. Such as give
Their money out of hope they may believe,
May here find truth too. Those that come to see
Only a show or two, and so agree
The play may pass, if they be still and willing,
I'll undertake may see away their shilling
Richly in two short hours. Only they
That come to hear a merry, bawdy play,
A noise of targets, or to see a fellow
In a long molley coat guarded with yellow,
Will be deceiv'd: for, gentle hearers, know,
To rank our chosen truth with such a show
As Fool and Fight is, besides forgetting
Our own brains, and the opinion that we bring,
To make that only true we now intend,

Will leave us never an understanding friend.
Therefore, for goodness' sake, and as you are known
The first and happiest hearers of the town,
Be sad, as we would make ye: think ye see
The very persons of our noble story
As they were living; think you see them great,
And follow'd with the general throng and sweat
Of thousand friends; then, in a moment see
How soon this mightness meets misery:
And if you can be merry then, I'll say
A man may weep upon his wedding day.

ACT I.


Enter at one door the DUKE OF NORFOLK; at the other, the DUKE OF BUCKINGHAM and the LORD ABERGAVERY.

Buck Good morrow, and well met. How have you done,
Since last we saw in France?

Nor. I thank your Grace, Healthful; and ever since a fresh admirer Of what I saw there.

Buck. An untimely age

Stay'd me a prisoner in my chamber, when Those suns of glory, those two lights of men, Met in the vale of Andren.

Nor. 'Twixt Guynes and Arde:
I was then present, saw them salute on horseback;
Beheld them, when they lighted, how they clung
In their embracement, as they grew together;
Which had they, what four thron'd ones could have weigh'd
Such a compounded one?

Buck. All the whole time
I was my chamber's prisoner.

Nor. Then you lost
The view of earthly glory: men might say,
Till this time, pomp was single, but now married
To one above itself. Each following day
Became the next day's master, till the last
Made former wonders its.
To-day the French
All cinquant, all in gold, like heathen gods,
Shone down the English; and to-morrow they
Made Britain India: every man that stood
Show'd like a mine. Their dwarfish pages were
As cherubins, all girt: the madams, too,
Not us'd to toil, did almost sweat to bear
The pride upon them, that their very labour
Was to them as a painting. Now this masque
Was cried incomparable; and the ensuing night
Made it a fool, and beggar. The two kings,
Equal in lustre, were now best, now worst,
As presence did present them; him in eye,
Still him in praise; and, being present both,
'Twas said they saw but one; and no discernor
Durst wag his tongue in censure. When these
For so they phrase 'em—by their heralds chal-
leng'd
The noble spirits to arms, they did perform
Beyond thought's compass; that former fab-
lous story,
Being now seen possible enough, got credit,
That Bevis was believ'd.

Buck. O! you go far.

Nor. As I belong to worship, and affect
In honour honesty, the tract of every thing
Would by a good disconnector lose some life,
Which action'sself was tongueato. All was royal;
To the disposing of it nought rebell'd,
Order gave each thing view; the office did
Distinctly his full function.

Buck. Who did guide,
I mean, who set the body and the limbs

Of this great sport together, as you guess?

Nor. One certes, that promises no element
In such a business.

Buck. I pray you, who, my lord?

Nor. All this was order'd by the good discretion
Of the right reverend Cardinal of York.

Buck. The devil speed him! no man's pie is freed
From his ambitious finger. What had he
To do in these fierce vanities? I wonder
That such a keech can with his very bulk
Take up the rays of the benefic sun,
And keep it from the earth.

Nor. Surely, sir,
There's in him stuff that puts him to these ends;
For, being not prop'd by ancestry, whose grace
Chalks successors their way, nor call'd upon
For high feats done to the crown; neither allied
To eminent assistants; but, spider-like,
Out of his self-drawing web, he gives us note,
The force of his own merit makes his way;
A gift that heaven gives for him, which buys
A place next to the king.

Aber. I cannot tell
What heaven hath given him: let some graver eye
Pierce into that; but I can see his pride
Peep through each part of him: whence has he
that?
If not from hell, the devil is a niggard,
Or has given all before, and he begins
A new hell in himself.

Buck. Why the devil,
Upon this French going-out, took he upon him,
Without the privy o' the king, to appoint
Who should attend on him? He makes up the file
Of all the gentry; for the most part such
To whom as great a charge as little honour
He meant to lay upon: and his own letter,—
The honourable board of council out,—
Must fetch him in he papers.

Aber. I do know
Kinsmen of mine, three at the least, that have
By this so sicken'd their estates, that never
They shall abound as formerly.

Buck. O! many
Have broke their backs with laying manors on 'em
For this great journey. What did this vanity
But minister communication of
A most poor issue?

Nor. Grievingly I think,
The peace between the French and us not

733
The cost that did conclude it.

_Buck._

After the hideous storm that followed, was
A thing inspir'd; and, not consulting, broke
Into a general prophecy: That this tempest, 92
Dashing the garment of this peace, abode
The sudden breach on't.

_Nor._

Which is budded out;
For France hath flaw'd the league, and hath
attach'd
Our merchants' goods at Bourdeaux.

_Aber._

Is it therefore 96
The ambassador is silenc'd?

_Nor._

Marry, is't.

_Aber._ A proper title of a peace; and purchas'd
At a superfluous rate!

_Buck._

Why, all this business
Our reverend cardinal carried.

_Nor._

Like it your Grace, 100
The state takes notice of the private difference
Betwixt you and the cardinal. I advise you,—
And take it from a heart that wishes towards you
Honour and plenteous safety,—that you read 104
The cardinal's malice and his potency
Together; to consider further that
What his high hatred would effect wants not
A minister in his power. You know his nature,
That he's revengeful; and I know his sword 109
Hath a sharp edge: it's long, and 't may be said,
It reaches far; and where 't will not extend,
Thither he darts it. Bosom up my counsel, 112
You'll find it wholesome. Lo where comes that rock
That I advise your shunning.

_Enter Cardinal WOLSEY,—the Purse borne
before him,—certain of the Guard, and two
Secretaries with papers._

The CARDINAL in his passage fixeth his eye on BUCKINGHAM,
and BUCKINGHAM on him, both full of disdain.

_Wol._ The Duke of Buckingham's surveyor, ha?

Where's his examination?

First Secr._ Here, so please you. 116
_Wol._ Is he in person ready?

First Secr._ Ay, please your Grace.
_Wol._ Well, we shall then know more; and
Buckingham
Shall lessen this big look.

_[Exeunt WOLSEY, and Train._

_Buck._ This butcher's cur is venom-mouth'd, and I
120
Have not the power to muzzle him; therefore best
Not wake him in his slumber. A beggar's book
Outworts a noble's blood.

_Nor._

What! are you chaf'd?
Ask God for temperance; that's the appliance
only
Which your disease requires.

_Buck._

I read in's looks
Matter against me; and his eye revil'd
Me, as his abject object: at this instant
He bores me with some trick: he's gone to the king;
128
I'll follow, and out-stare him.

_Nor._

Stay, my lord,
And let your reason with your choler question
What 'tis you go about. To climb steep hills
Requires slow pace at first: anger is like 132
A full-horse, who being allow'd his way,
Self-mettle tires him. Not a man in England
Can advise me like you: be to yourself
As you would to your friend.

_Buck._

I'll to the king; 136
And from a mouth of honour quite cry down
This Ipswich fellow's insolence, or proclaim
There's difference in no persons.

_Nor._

Be advis'd;
Heat not a furnace for your foe so hot 140
That it do singe yourself. We may outrun
By violent swiftness that which we run at,
And lose by overrunning. Know you not,
The fire that mounts the liquor till it run o'er,
In seeming to augment it wastes it? Be advis'd:
I say again, there is no English soul
More stronger to direct you than yourself,
If with the sap of reason you would quench, 148
Or but alay, the fire of passion.

_Buck._

Sir,
I am thankful to you, and I'll go along
By your prescription: but this top-proud fellow
Whom from the flow of gall I name not, but 152
From sincere motions,—by intelligence, And proofs as clear as founts in July, when
We see each grain of gravel,—I do know
To be corrupt and treasonous.

_Nor._

Say not, 'treasonous.' 156

_Buck._ To the king I'll say't; and make my vouch as strong
As shore of rock. Attend. This holy fox,
Or wolf, or both,—for he is equal ravenous
As he is subtle, and as prone to mischief 160
As able to perform 't, his mind and place
Infesting one another, yea, reciprocally,
Only to show his pomp as well in France
As here at home, suggests the king our master
To this last costly treaty, the interview, 165
That swallow'd so much treasure, and like a glass
Did break 't the ringing.
KING HENRY THE EIGHTH

Act I, Sc. II.

Nor. Faith, and so it did.
  Buck. Pray give me favour, sir. This cunning cardinal
  168

The articles o' the combination drew
As himself pleas'd; and they were ratified
As he cried, 'Thou let be,' to as much end
As give a crutch to the dead. But our count

cardinal
  172

Has done thus, and 'tis well; for worthy Wolsey,
Who cannot err, he did it. Now this follows,—
Which, as I take it, is a kind of puppy
To the old dam, treason, Charles the emperor,
Under pretence to see the queen his aunt,— 177
For 'twas indeed his colour, but he came
To whisper Wolsey,—here makes visitation:
His fears were, that the interview betwixt 180
England and France might, through their rapacity,
Breed him some prejudice; for from this league
Peep'd harms that menac'd him. He privily
Deals with our cardinal, and, as I trod, 184
Which I do well; for, I am sure the emperor
Paid ere he promis'd; whereby his suit was

granted

Ere it was ask'd; but when the way was made,
And pav'd with gold, the emperor thus desir'd:
That he would please to alter the king's course,
And break the foresaid peace. Let the king

know— 192

As soon he shall by me—that thus the cardinal
Does buy and sell his honour as he pleases,
And for his own advantage.

Nor. I am sorry

To bear this of him; and could wish he were
Something mistaken in 't.

Buck. No, not a syllable:
I do pronounce him in that very shape 196
He shall appear in proof.

Enter BRANDON; a Sergeant-at-Arms before him.

Bran. Your office, sergeant; execute it.
Serg. Sir,
My Lord the Duke of Buckingham, and Earl
Of Hereford, Stafford, and Northampton, I
  200

Arrest thee of high treason, in the name
Of our most sovereign king.

Buck. Lo you, my lord,
The net has fall'n upon me! I shall perish
Under device and practice.

Bran. I am sorry

To see you ta'en from liberty, to look on
The business present. 'Tis his highness' pleasure

You shall to the Tower.

Buck. It will help me nothing
To plead mine innocence, for that dye is on me

Which makes my whit'st part black. The will

of heaven
  209

Be done in this and all things! I obey.
O! my Lord Abergavenny, fare you well!

Bran. Nay, he must bear you company. [To

ABERGAVENNY.] The king
  212

Is pleas'd you shall to the Tower, till you know
How he determines further.

Aber. As the duke said,
The will of heaven be done, and the king's pleasure

By me obey'd!

Bran. Here is a warrant from

The king to attach Lord Montacute; and the bodies
Of the duke's confessor, John de la Car,
One Gilbert Peck, his chancellor,—

Buck. So, so;
These are the limbs o' the plot: no more, I hope.
Bran. A monk o' the Chartreux.
Buck. O! Nicholas Hopkins?
Bran. He.

Buck. My surveyor is false; the o'er-great

cardinal
Hath show'd him gold. My life is spann'd already:
I am the shadow of poor Buckingham, 224
Whose figure even this instant cloud puts on,
By dark'ning my clear sun. My lord, farewell.

[Exeunt.

Scene II.—The Council Chamber.

Enter the King, leaning on the Cardinal's shoulder, the Lords of the Council, Sir

THOMAS LOVELL, Officers, and Attendants.
The Cardinal places himself under the

King's feet on the right side.

K. Hen. My life itself, and the best heart of it,
Thanks you for this great care: I stood i' the level

Of a full-charg'd confederacy, and give thanks
To you that chok'd it. Let be call'd us before
That gentleman of Buckingham's, in person
I'll hear him his confessions justify;
And point by point the treasons of his master
He shall again relate.

A noise within, crying, 'Room for the Queen!'
Enter QUEEN KATHARINE, ushered by the

Dukes of Norfolk and Suffolk: she

kneels. The King riseth from his state, takes her up, kisses, and placeth her by him.

Q. Kath. Nay, we must longer kneel: I am a suitor.

K. Hen. Arise, and take place by us: half

your suit.
Never name to us; you have half our power:
The other moiety, ere you ask, is given; 12
Repeat your will, and take it.
Q. Kath. Thank your majesty.
That you would love yourself, and in that love
Not unconsider’d leave your honour, nor
The dignity of your office, is the point 16
Of my petition.
K. Hen. Lady mine, proceed.
Q. Kath. I am solicited, not by a few,
And those of true condition, that your subjects
Are in great grievance: there have been com-
missions 20
Sent down among ’em, which hath flaw’d the
heart
Of all their loyalties: wherein, although,
My good Lord Cardinal, they vent reproaches
Most bitterly on you, as putter-on 24
Of these exactions, yet the king our master,—
Whose honour heaven shield from soil!—even
he escapes not
Language unmannersly; yes, such which breaks
The sides of loyalty, and almost appears 28
In loud rebellion.
Nor. Not almost appears,
It doth appear; for, upon these taxes,
The clothiers all, not able to maintain
The many to them ’longing, have put off 32
The spinsters, carders, fullers, weavers, who,
Unfit for other life, compell’d by hunger
And lack of other means, in desperate manner
Daring the event to the teeth, are all in up-
roar, 36
And danger serves among them.
K. Hen. Taxation!
Wherein? and what taxation? My Lord Car-
dinal,
You that are bland’d for it alike with us,
Know you of this taxation?
Wol. Please you, sir, 40
I know but of a single part in aught
Pertains to the state; and front but in that file
Where others tell steps with me.
Q. Kath. No, my lord,
You know no more than others; but you frame
Things that are known alike; which are not
wholesome 45
To those which would not know them, and yet
must
Perforce be their acquaintance. These exactions,
Whereof my sov’reign would have note, they
are 48
Most pestilent to the hearing; and to bear ’em,
The back is sacrifice to the load. They say
They are devis’d by you, or else you suffer
Too hard an exclamation.
K. Hen. Still exaction! 52

The nature of it? In what kind, let’s know,
Is this exaction?
Q. Kath. I am much too venturesous
In tempting of your patience; but am bolden’d
Under your promis’d pardon. The subjects’
grief 56
Comes through commissions, which compel
from each
The sixth part of his substance, to be levied
Without delay; and the pretence for this
Is nam’d, your wars in France. This makes
bold mouths:
Tongues spit their duties out, and cold hearts
freeze
Allegiance in them; their curses now
Live where their prayers did; and it’s come to
pass,
This tractable obedience is a slave 64
To each incensed will. I would your highness
Would give it quick consideration, for
There is no primer business.
K. Hen. By my life,
This is against our pleasure.
Wol. And for me, 68
I have no further gone in this than by
A single voice, and that not pass’d me but
By learned approbation of the judges. If I am
Traduc’d by ignorant tongues, which neither
know
My faculties nor person, yet will be
The chronicles of my doing, let me say
’Tis but the fate of place, and the rough brake
That virtue must go through. We must not
stint
Our necessary actions, in the fear
To cope malicious censurers; which ever,
As rav’nous fishes, do a vessel follow
That is new-trimm’d, but benefit no further 80
Than vainly longing. What we oft do best,
By sick interpreters, once weak ones, is
Not ours, or not allow’d; what worst, as oft,
Hitting a grosser quality, is cried up
For our best act. If we shall stand still,
In fear our motion will be mock’d or carp’d at,
We should take root here where we sit, or sit
State-statues only.
K. Hen. Things done well, 88
And with a care, exempt themselves from
fear;
Things done without example, in their issue
Are to be fear’d. Have you a precedent
Of this commission? I believe, not any. 92
We must not rend our subjects from our laws,
And stick them in our will. Sixth part of each?
A trembling contribution! Why, we take
From every tree, lop, bark, and part o’ the
 timber;
And, though we leave it with a root, thus
hack’d,
The air will drink the sap. To every county
Where this is question’d, send our letters, with
Free pardon to each man that has denied 100
The force of this commission. Pray, look to ’t;
I put it to your care.

Wol. [To the Secretary.] A word with you.
Let there be letters writ to every shire,
Of the king’s grace and pardon. The griev’d
commons 104
Hardly conceive of me; let it be nois’d
That through our intercession this revokement
And pardon comes: I shall anon advise you
Further in the proceeding. [Exit Secretary.

Enter Surveyor.

Q. Kath. I am sorry that the Duke of Buck-
ingham
Is run in your displeasure.

K. Hen. It grieves many:
The gentleman is learn’d, and a most rare
speaker,
To nature none more bound; his training such
That he may furnish and instruct great teachers,
And never seek for aid out of himself. Yet
see,
When these so noble benefits shall prove
Not well dispos’d, the mind growing once cor-
rupt;
116
They turn to vicious forms, ten times more ugly
Than ever they were fair. This man so com-
plete,
Who was enroll’d ’mongst wonders, and when
we,
Almost with ravish’d listening, could not find
His hour of speech a minute; he, my lady, 121
Hath into monstrous habits put the graces
That once were his, and is become as black
As if basemard in hell. Sit by us; you shall
hear—

This was his gentleman in trust—of him
Things to strike honour sad. Bid him recount
The fore-recited practices; whereof
We cannot feel too little, hear too much. 128
Wol. Stand forth; and with bold spirit relate
what you,
Most like a careful subject, have collected
Out of the Duke of Buckingham.

K. Hen. Speak freely.
Surv. First, it was usual with him, every day
It would infect his speech, that if the king 133
Should without issue die, he’d carry it so
To make the sceptre his. These very words
I’ve heard him utter to his son-in-law, 136
Lord Abergavenny, to whom by oath he
menac’d

Revenge upon the cardinal.

Wol. Please your highness, note
This dangerous conception in this point.
Not friended by his wish, to your high person
His will is most malignant; and it stretches 141
Beyond you, to your friends.

Q. Kath. My learn’d Lord Cardinal,
Deliver all with charity.

K. Hen. Speak on:
How grounded be his title to the crown 144
Upon our fail? to this point hast thou heard
him
At any time speak aught?
Surv. He was brought to this
By a vain prophecy of Nicholas Hopkins.

K. Hen. What was that Hopkins?
Surv. Sir, a Chartreux friar,
His confessor, who fed him every minute 149
With words of sovereignty.

K. Hen. How know’st thou this?
Surv. Not long before your highness sped to
France,
The duke being at the Rose, within the parish
Of Saint Lawrence Powltney, did of me demand 153
What was the speech among the Londoners
Concerning the French journey: I replied,
Men fear’d the French would prove perfidious,
To the king’s danger. Presently the duke 157
Said, ’twas the fear, indeed; and that he
doubted
’Twould prove the verity of certain words
Spoke by a holy monk; ’tis oft,’ says he, 160
‘Hath sent to me, wishing me to permit
John de la Car, my chaplain, a choice hour
To hear from him a matter of some moment:
Whom after under the confession’s seal 164
He solemnly had sworn, that what he spoke,
My chaplain to no creature living but
To me should utter, with demure confidence
This pausingly ens’d: neither the king nor ’s
heirs— 168
Tell you the duke—shall prosper: bid him
strive
To gain the love o’ the commonalty: the duke
Shall govern England.

Q. Kath. If I know you well,
You were the duke’s surveyor, and lost your
office 172
On the complaint o’ the tenants: take good
heed
You charge not in your spleen a noble person,
And spoil your nobler soul. I say, take heed;
Yes, heartily beseech you.

K. Hen. Let him on. 176

Surv. On my soul, I’ll speak but truth.
I told my lord the duke, by the devil’s illusions
The monk might be deceit'd; and that 'twas
dangerous for him
To ruminate on this so far, until
It forg'd him some design, which, being believ'd,
It was much like to do. He answer'd, 'Tush!
It can do me no damage;,' adding further,
That had the king in his last sickness fail'd, 184
The cardinal's and Sir Thomas Lovell's heads
Should have gone off.

*K. Hen.* Hal what, so rank? Ah, ha!
There's mischief in this man. Canst thou say
further?

*Surg.* I can, my liege.

*K. Hen.* Proceed.

*Surg.* Being at Greenwich,
After your highness had reprov'd the duke, 189
About Sir William Blomer, --

*K. Hen.* I remember
Of such a time; being my sworn servant,
The duke retain'd him his. But on; what
hence?

*Surg.* 'If,' quoth he, 'I for this had been
committed,
As, to the Tower, I thought, I would have play'd
The part my father meant to act upon
The usurper Richard; who, being at Salisbury,
Made suit to come in 's presence; which if
granted, 197
As he made semblance of his duty, would
Have put his knife into him.'

*K. Hen.* A giant traitor!

*Wol.* Now, madam, may his highness live
in freedom, 200

And this man out of prison?

*Q. Kath.* God mand all!

*K. Hen.* There's something more would out
of thee? what sayest?

*Surg.* After 'the duke his father,' with 'the
knife.'

He stretch'd him, and, with one hand on his
dagger,
Another spread on 's breast, mounting his eyes,
He did discharge a horrible oath; whose tenour
Was, were he evil us'd, he would outgo
His father by as much as a performance 208
Does an irresolute purpose.

*K. Hen.* There's his period;
To sheathe his knife in us. He is attach'd;
Call him to present trial; if he may
Find mercy in the law, 'tis his; if none, 212
Let him not seek 't of us: by day and night!
He's traitor to the height. [Exeunt.

SCENE III. — A Room in the Palace.

*Enter the Lord Chamberlain and Lord Sands.*

*Cham.* Is't possible the spells of France
should juggle

Men into such strange mysteries?

*Sands.* New customs,
Though they be never so ridiculous,
Nay, let 'em be unmanly, yet are follow'd. 4

*Cham.* As far as I see, all the good our
English
Have got by the late voyage is but merely
A fit or two o' the face; but they are shrewd
ones;
For when they hold 'em, you would swear
directly 8
Their very noses had been counsellors
To Pepin or Clotharius, they keep state so.

*Sands.* They have all new legs, and lame
ones: one would take it,
That never saw 'em pace before, the spavin 12
Or springhalt reign'd among 'em.

*Cham.* Death! my lord,
Their clothes are after such a pagan cut too,
That, sure, they've worn out Christendom.

*Enter Sir Thomas Lovell.*

How now!

*What news, Sir Thomas Lovell?* 17

*Lov.* Faith, my lord,
I hear of none, but the new proclamation
That's clapp'd upon the court-gate.

*Cham.* What is't for?

*Lov.* The reformation of our travell'd gal-
lants,
That fill the court with quarrels, talk, and
tailors. 20

*Cham.* I am glad 'tis there: now I would
pray our monseurs
To think an English courtier may be wise,
And never see the Louvre.

*Lov.* They must either—
For so run the conditions—leave those rem-
nants
Of fool and feather that they got in France,
With all their honourable points of ignorance
Pertaining thereunto,—as fights and fireworks;
Abusing better men than they can be, 28
Out of a foreign wisdom;—renouncing clean
The faith they have in tennis and tall stockings,
Short blister'd breeches, and those types of
travel,
And understand again like honest men; 32
Or pack to their old playfellows: there, I take it,
They may, cum privilegio, wear away
The lag end of their lewdness, and be laugh'd at.

*Sands.* 'Tis time to give 'em physic, their
diseases 36
Are grown so catching.

*Cham.* What a loss our ladies
Will have of these trim vanities!

*Lov.* Ay, marry,
There will be woe indeed, lords: the sly whorsons
Have got a speeding trick to lay down ladies; 40
A French song and a fiddle has no fellow.

Sands. The devil fiddle 'em! I am glad they're going:
For, sure, there's no converting 'em: now an honest country lord, as I am, beaten 44
A long time out of play, may bring his plain-song
And have an hour of hearing; and, by 'r lady, held current music too.

Cham. Well said, Lord Sands; your colt's tooth is not cast yet.

Sands. No, my lord; 48
Nor shall not, while I have a stump.

Cham. Sir Thomas, whither were you a-going?

Lov. To the cardinal's:

Your lordship is a guest too.

Cham. 'O! 'tis true:
This night he makes a supper, and a great one,
To many lords and ladies; there will be 53
The beauty of this kingdom, I'll assure you.

Lov. That churchman bears a bounteous mind indeed,
A hand as fruitful as the land that feeds us; 56
His dews fall everywhere.

Cham. No doubt he's noble;
He had a black mouth that said other of him.

Sands. He may, my lord; he has wherewithal in him
Sparing would show a worse sin than ill doctrine: 60
Men of his way should be most liberal;
They are set here for examples.

Cham. True, they are so;
But few now give so great ones. My barge stays;
Your lordship shall along. Come, good Sir Thomas,
We shall be late else; which I would not be,
For I was spoke to, with Sir Henry Guildford,
This night to be comptrollers.

Sands. I am your lordship's.

[Exeunt.

SCENE IV.—The Presence-chamber in York-Place.

Hautboys. A small table under a state for Cardinal Wolsey, a longer table for the guests.

Enter, at one door, Anne Bullen, and divers Lords, Ladies, and Gentlewomen, as guests;
at another door, enter Sir Henry Guildford.

Gndl. Ladies, a general welcome from his Grace Salutes ye all; this night he dedicates
To fair content and you. None here, he hopes,
In all this noble bevy, has brought with her 4
One care abroad; he would have all as merry
As, first, good company, good wine, good welcome
Can make good people.

Enter Lord Chamberlain, Lord Sands, and Sir Thomas Lovell.

O, my lord! you're tardy:
The very thought of this fair company 8
Clapp'd wings to me.

Cham. You are young, Sir Harry Guildford.

Sands. Sir Thomas Lovell, had the cardinal
But half my lay-thoughts in him, some of these
Should find a running banquet ere they rested,
I think would better please 'em: by my life, 13
They are a sweet society of fair ones.

Lov. 'O! that your lordship were but now
confessor
To one or two of these!

Sands. I would I were; 16
They should find easy penance.

Lov. Faith, how easy?

Sands. As easy as a down-bed would afford it.

Cham. Sweet ladies, will it please you sit?

Sir Harry,
Place you that side, I'll take the charge of this;
His Grace is ent'ring. Nay you must not freeze;
Two women plac'd together makes cold weather:
My Lord Sands, you are one will keep 'em
waking;

Pray, sit between these ladies.

Sands. By my faith, 24
And thank your lordship. By your leave, sweet ladies: [Seats himself between Anne Bul
len and another Lady.

If I chance to talk a little wild, forgive me;
I had it from my father.

Anne. Was he mad, sir?

Sands. 'O! very mad, exceeding mad; in love too:
But he would bite none; just as I do now,
He would kiss you twenty with a breath.

[Kisses her.

Cham. Well said, my lord.

So, now you're fairly seated. Gentlemen,
The penance lies on you, if these fair ladies 22
Pass away frowning.

Sands. For my little cure,
Let me alone.

Hautboys. Enter Cardinal Wolsey, attended,
and takes his state.

Wol. You're welcome, my fair guests: that
noble lady,
Act I, Sc. IV.  

KING HENRY THE EIGHTH

Or gentleman, that is not freely merry, Is not my friend: this, to confirm my welcome; And to you all, good health: [Drinks.
Sands. Your Grace is noble: Let me have such a bowl may hold my thanks, And save me so much talking.
Wol. My Lord Sands, 40 I am beholding to you: cheer your neighbours. Ladies, you are not merry: gentlemen, Whose fault is this?
Sands. The red wine first must rise In their fair cheeks, my lord; then, we shall have 'em 44
Talk us to silence.
Anne. You are a merry gamester, My Lord Sands.
Sands. Yes, if I make my play.
Here's to your ladyship; and pledge it, madam, For 'tis to such a thing,—
Anne. You cannot show me. 48 Sands. I told your Grace they would talk anon. [Drum and trumpets within; chambers discharged.
Wol. What's that?
Cham. Look out there, some of ye.
[Exit a Servant.
Wol. What war-like voice, And to what end, is this? Nay, ladies, fear not;
By all the laws of war you're privil'dg'd. 52
Re-enter Servant.
Cham. How now, what is 't?
Serv. A noble troop of strangers;
For so they seem: they've left their barge and landed;
And hither make, as great ambassadors From foreign princes.
Wol. Good Lord Chamberlain, 56 Go, give 'em welcome; you can speak the French tongue;
And, pray, receive 'em nobly, and conduct 'em Into our presence, where this heaven of beauty Shall shine at full upon them. Some attend him.
[Exit the Lord Chamberlain, attended. All arise, and tables removed.
You have now a broken banquet; but we'll mend it.
A good digestion to you all; and once more I shower a welcome on ye; welcome all.

Hautboys. Enter the KING, and Others, as masquers, habited like shepherds, ushered by the Lord Chamberlain. They pass directly before the CARDINAL, and gracefully salute him.
A noble company! what are their pleasures? 64

Cham. Because they speak no English, thus they pray'd
To tell your Grace: that, having heard by fame Of this so noble and so fair assembly
This night to meet here, they could do no less, Out of the great respect they bear to beauty, 66 But leave their flocks; and, under your fair conduct,
Crave leave to view these ladies, and entreat An hour of revels with 'em.
Wol. Say, Lord Chamberlain, They have done my poor house grace; for which I pay 'em 73 A thousand thanks, and pray 'em take their pleasures.
[They choose Ladies for the dance. The KING chooses ANNE BULLEN.
K. Hen. The fairest hand I ever touch'd! O beauty,
Cham. Your Grace?
Wol. Pray tell them thus much from me: There should be one amongst 'em, by his person, More worthy this place than myself; to whom, If I but knew him, with my love and duty 80 I would surrender it.
Cham. I will, my lord.
[Whispers the Masquers.
Wol. What say they?
Cham. Such a one, they all confess, There is, indeed; which they would have your Grace
Find out, and he will take it.
Wol. Let me see then. 84 [Comes from his state.
By all your good leaves, gentlemen, here I'll make
My royal choice.
K. Hen. [Unmasking.] You have found him, cardinal.
You hold a fair assembly; you do well, lord:
You are a churchman, or, I'll tell you, cardinal, I should judge now unhappily.
Wol. I am glad
Your Grace is grown so pleasant.
K. Hen. My Lord Chamberlain, Prithee, come hither. What fair lady's that?
Cham. An't please your Grace, Sir Thomas Bullen's daughter, 92
The Viscount Rochford, one of her highness' women.
K. Hen. By heaven, she is a dainty one. Sweetheart,
I was unmannersly to take you out, And not to kiss you. A health, gentlemen! Let it go round.
KING HENRY THE EIGHTH

Act II, Sc. I.

Wol. Sir Thomas Lovell, is the banquet ready
I' the privy chamber?

Lov. Yes, my lord.

Wol. Your Grace,
I fear, with dancing is a little heated.

K. Hen. I fear, too much.

Wol. There's fresher air, my lord,
In the next chamber.

K. Hen. Lead in your ladies, every one.
Sweet partner,
I must not yet forsake you. Let's be merry.
Good my Lord Cardinal, I have half a dozen
healths
To drink to these fair ladies, and a measure
To lead 'em once again; and then let's dream
Who's best in favour. Let the music knock it.
[Exeunt with trumpets.

ACT II.

SCENE I.—Westminster. A Street.

Enter two Gentlemen, meeting.

First Gent. Whither away so fast?
E'en to the hall, to hear what shall become
Of the great Duke of Buckingham.

First Gent. I'll save you
That labour, sir. All's now done but the ceremony
Of bringing back the prisoner.

Sec. Gent. Were you there?
First Gent. Yes, indeed, was I.
Sec. Gent. Pray speak what has happen'd.
First Gent. You may guess quickly what.
Sec. Gent. Is he found guilty?
First Gent. Yes, truly is he, and condemn'd
upon't.

Sec. Gent. I am sorry for 't.
First Gent. So are a number more.
Sec. Gent. But, pray, how pass'd it?
First Gent. I'll tell you in a little. The great duke
Came to the bar; where, to his accusations
He pleaded still not guilty, and alleg'd
Many sharp reasons to defeat the law.
The king's attorney on the contrary
Urg'd on the examinations, proofs, confessions
Of divers witnesses, which the duke desir'd
To have brought, vivâ voce, to his face:
At which appear'd against him his surveyor;
Sir Gilbert Peck his chancellor; and John Car,
Confessor to him; with that devil-monk,
Hopkins, that made this mischief.

Sec. Gent. That was he
That fed him with his prophecies?

First Gent. The same.
All these accus'd him strongly; which he fain
Would have flung from him, but, indeed, he
could not:
And so his peers, upon this evidence,
Have found him guilty of high treason. Much
He spoke, and learnedly, for life; but all
Was either pitied in him or forgotten.

Sec. Gent. After all this how did he bear himself?

First Gent. When he was brought again to
the bar, to hear
His knell rung out, his judgment, he was sturr'd
With such an agony, he sweat extremely.
And something spoke in choler, ill, and hasty:
But he fell to himself again, and sweetly
In all the rest shew'd a most noble patience.

Sec. Gent. I do not think he fears death.

First Gent. Sure, he does not;
He never was so womanish; the cause
He may a little grieve at.

Sec. Gent. Certainly
The cardinal is the end of this.

First Gent. 'Tis likely
By all conjectures: first, Kildare's attainer,
Then deputy of Ireland; who, remov'd,
Earl Surrey was sent thither, and in haste too,
Lest he should help his father.

Sec. Gent. That trick of state
Was a deep envious one.

First Gent. At his return,
No doubt he will requite it. This is noted,
And generally, whoever the king favours,
The cardinal instantly will find employment,
And far enough from court too.

Sec. Gent. All the commons
Hate him perniciously, and o' my conscience,
Wish him ten fathom deep: this duke as much
They love and dote on; call him bounteous
Buckingham,
The mirror of all courtesy;

Enter BUCKINGHAM from his arraignment;
Tipstaves before him; the axe with the edge
Towards him; halberds on each side: with him
SIR THOMAS LOVELL, SIR NICHOLAS VAUX,
SIR WILLIAM SANDS, and common people.

Sec. Gent. Let's stand close, and behold him.

Buck. All good people,
You that thus far have come to pity me,
Hear what I say, and then go home and lose me.
I have this day receiv'd a traitor's judgment,
And by that name must die: yet, heaven bear
witness,
And if I have a conscience, let it sink me,
Even as the axe falls, if I be not faithful
The law I bear no malice for my death,
"T has done upon the premises but justice; 64
But those that sought it I could wish more
Christians:
Be what they will, I heartily forgive 'em. 67
Yet let 'em look they glory not in mischief,
Nor build their evils on the graves of great men;
For then my guiltless blood must cry against
'em. 68
For further life in this world I ne'er hope,
Nor will I sue, although the king have mercies
More than I dare make faults. You few that
lovd me,
And dare be bold to weep for Buckingham, 72
His noble friends and fellows, whom to leave
Is only bitter to him, only dying,
Go with me, like good angels, to my end;
And, as the long divorce of steel falls on me, 76
Make of your prayers one sweet sacrifice,
And lift my soul to heaven. Lead on, o' God's
name.

Lov. I do beseech your Grace, for charity,
If ever any malice in your heart 80
Were hid against me, now to forgive me frankly.

Buck. Sir Thomas Lovell, I as free forgive
you
As I would be forgiven: I forgive all,
There cannot be those numberless offences 84
'Gainst me that I cannot take peace with: no
black envy
Shall mark my grave. Commend me to his
Grace;
And, if he speak of Buckingham, pray, tell him
You met him half in heaven. My vows and
prayers 88
Yet are the king's; and, till my soul forsake,
Shall cry for blessings on him: may he live
Longer than I have time to tell his years!
Ever belov'd and loving may his rule be! 92
And when old time shall lead him to his end,
Goodness and he fill up one monument!

Lov. To the water side I must conduct your
Grace;
Then give my charge up to Sir Nicholas Vaux,
Who undertakes you to your end.

Vaux. Prepare there! 97
The duke is coming: see the barge be ready;
And fit it with such furniture as suits
The greatness of his person.

Buck. Nay, Sir Nicholas, 100
Let it alone; my state now will but mock me.
When I came hither, I was Lord High
Constable,
And Duke of Buckingham; now, poor Edward
Bohun:
Yet I am richer than my base accusers, 104
That never knew what truth meant: I now
seal it;
And with that blood will make them one day
groan for't.

My noble father, Henry of Buckingham,
Who first rais'd head against usurping Richard,
Flying for succour to his servant Banister, 109
Being distress'd, was by that wretch betray'd,
And without trial fell: God's peace be with him!
Henry the Seventh succeeding, truly pitying 112
My father's loss, like a most royal prince,
Restor'd me to my honours, and, out of ruins,
Made my name once more noble. Now his son,
Henry the Eighth, life, honour, name, and all 116
That made me happy, at one stroke has taken
For ever from the world. I had my trial,
And, must needs say, a noble one; which makes
me
A little happier than my wretched father: 120
Yet thus far we are one in fortunes: both
Fell by our servants, by those men welov'd most:
A most unnatural and faithless service!
Heaven has an end in all; yet, you that hear me,
This from a dying man receive as certain: 125
Where you are liberal of your loves and counsels
Be sure you be not loose; for those you make
friends
And give your hearts to, when they once per-
ceive
The least rub in your fortunes, fall away
Like water from ye, never found again
But where they mean to sink ye. All good
people,
Pray for me! I must now forsake ye: the last
hour 132
Of my long weary life is come upon me.
Farewell:
And when you would say something that is sad,
Speak how I fell. I have done; and God forgive
me! [Exeunt BUCKINGHAM and Train.

First Gent. Of this is full of pity! Sir, it calls,
I fear, too many curses on their heads
That were the authors.

Sec. Gent. If the duke be guiltless,
'Tis full of woe; yet I can give you inking 140
Of an ensuing evil, if it fall,
Greater than this.

First Gent. Good angels keep it from us!
What may it be? You do not doubt my faith, sir?

Sec. Gent. This secret is so weighty, 'twill re-
quire
A strong faith to conceal it.

First Gent. Let me have it;
I do not talk much.

Sec. Gent. I am confident:
You shall, sir. Did you not of late days hear
A buzzing of a separation 143
Between the king and Katharine?
First Gent. Yes, but it held not; 
For when the king once heard it, out of anger
He sent command to the lord mayor straight
To stop the rumour, and allay those tongues 152
That durst disperse it.

Sec. Gent. But that slander, sir,
Is found a truth now; for it grows again
Fresher than e'er it was; and held for certain
The king will venture at it. Either the cardinal,
Or some about him near, have, out of malice 157
To the good queen, possess'd him with a-scruple
That will undo her: to confirm this too,
Cardinal Campeius is arriv'd, and lately; 160
As all think, for this business.

First Gent. 'Tis the cardinal;
And merely to revenge him on the emperor
For not bestowing on him, at his asking,
The archbishopric of Toledo, this purpos'd.

Sec. Gent. I think you have hit the mark: but
is't not cruel. 165
That she should feel the smart of this? The
cardinal
Will have his will, and she must fall.

First Gent. 'Tis woeful.
We are too open here to argue this; 168
Let's think in private more. [Exeunt.

Scene II.—An Antechamber in the Palace.

Enter the Lord Chamberlain, reading a letter.

Cham. My lord, The horses your lordship
sent for, with all the care I had, I saw well
chosen, ridden, and furnished. They were
young and handsome, and of the best breed in
the north. When they were ready to set out for
London, a man of my Lord Cardinal's, by com-
misson and main power, took them from me; with
this reason: His master would be served
before a subject, if not before the king; which
stopped our mouths, sir.

I fear he will indeed. Well, let him have them:
He will have all, I think. 12

Enter the Dukes of Norfolk and Suffolk.

Nor. Well met, my Lord Chamberlain.

Cham. Good day to both your Grace.

Suf. How is the king employ'd?

Cham. I left him private,

Full of sad thoughts and troubles.

Nor. What's the cause?

Cham. It seems the marriage with his brother's
wife
Has crept too near his conscience.

Suf. No; his conscience
Has crept too near another lady.

Nor. 'Tis so:

This is the cardinal's doing, the king-cardinal:

That blind priest, like the eldest son of Fortune,
Turns what he list. The king will know him one
day.

Suf. Pray God he do! he'll never know him-
self else.

Nor. How holily he works in all his business,
And with what zeal! for, now he has crack'd the
league
Between us and the emperor, the queen's great
nephew,
He dives into the king's soul, and there scatters
Dangers, doubts, wringing of the conscience, 28
Fears, and despairs; and all these for his mar-
rriage:

And out of all these, to restore the king,
He counsels a divorce; a loss of her,
That like a jewel has hung twenty years
About his neck, yet never lost her lustre;
Of her, that loves him with that excellence
That angels love good men with; even of her,
That, when the greatest stroke of fortune falls,
Will bless the king: and is not this course pious?

Cham. Heaven keep me from such counsel!

'Tis most true
These news are every where; every tongue
speaks 'em,
And every true heart weeps for't. All that dare
Look into these affairs, see this main end, 41
The French king's sister. Heaven will one day
open
The king's eyes, that so long have slept upon
This bold bad man.

Suf. And free us from his slavery.

Nor. We had need pray,

And heartily, for our deliverance;
Or this imperious man will work us all
From princes into pages. All men's honours 48
Lie like one lump before him, to be fashion'd
Into what pitch he please.

Suf. For me, my lords,
I love him not, nor fear him; there's my creed.
As I am made without him, so I'll stand, 52
If the king please; his curses and his blessings
Touch me alike, they're breath I not believe in.
I knew him, and I know him; so I leave him
To him that made him proud, the pope.

Nor. Let's in;

And with some other business put the king 57
From these sad thoughts, that work too much
upon him.

My lord, you'll bear us company?

Cham. Excuse me;

The king hath sent me otherwhere: besides, 60
You'll find a most unfit time to disturb him:
Health to your lordships.

Nor. Thanks, my good Lord Chamberlain.

[Exeunt Lord Chamberlain.
This just and learned priest, Cardinal Campeius;
Whom once more I present unto your highness.
K. Hen. And once more in my arms I bid him welcome,
And thank the holy conclave for their loves:
They have sent me such a man I would have wish'd for.
Cam. Your Grace must needs deserve all strangers' loves,
You are so noble. To your highness' hand
I tender my commission, by whose virtue,—
The court of Rome commanding,—you, my Lord
Cardinal of York, are join'd with me, their servant,
In the impartial judging of this business.
K. Hen. Two equal men. The queen shall be acquainted
Forthwith for what you come. Where's Gardiner?
Wol. I know your majesty has always lov'd her
So dear in heart, not to deny her that
A woman of less place might ask by law,
Scholars, allow'd freely to argue for her.
K. Hen. Ay, and the best, she shall have; and my favour
To him that does best: God forbid else. Cardinal,
Prithee, call Gardiner to me, my new secretary:
I find him a fit fellow.
[Exit WOLSEY.

Re-enter WOLSEY, with GARDINER.

Wol. [Aside to GARDINER.] Give me your hand; much joy and favour to you;
You are the king's now.
Gard. [Aside to WOLSEY.] But to be commanded
For ever by your Grace, whose hand has rais'd me.
K. Hen. Come hither, Gardiner.
[They converse apart.

Cam. My Lord of York, was not one Doctor Pace
In this man's place before him?
Wol. Yes, he was.
Cam. Was he not held a learned man?
Wol. Yes, surely.
Cam. Believe me, there's an ill opinion spread then
Even of yourself, Lord Cardinal.
Wol. Howl of me?
Cam. They will not stick to say, you envied him,
And fearing he would rise, he was so virtuous,
Kept him a foreign man still; which so griev'd him
That he ran mad and died.
KING HENRY THE EIGHTH

Act II, Sc. III.

Wol. Heaven's peace be with him! That's Christian care enough: for living murmurers

There's places of rebuke. He was a fool, 132

For he would needs be virtuous: that good fellow,

If I command him, follows my appointment:

I will have none so near else. Learn this, brother,

We live not to be grip'd by meaper persons. 136

K. Hen. Deliver this with modesty to the queen.

[Exit Gardiner.

The most convenient place that I can think of

For such receipt of learning, is Black-Friars;

There ye shall meetabout this weighty business.

My Wolsey, see it furnish'd. O my lord! 141

Would it not grieve an able man to leave

So sweet a bedfellow? But, conscience, conscience!

O! 'tis a tender place, and I must leave her. 144

[Exeunt.

SCENE III.—An Antechamber in the Queen's Apartments.

Enter Anne Bullein and an Old Lady.

Anne. Not for that neither: here's the pang that pinches:

His highness having liv'd so long with her, and she

So good a lady that no tongue could ever

Pronounce dishonour of her; by my life, 4

She never knew harm-doing; O! now, after

So many courses of the sun enthron'd,

Still growing in a majesty and pomp, the which

To leave a thousand-fold more bitter than 8

'Tis sweet at first to acquire, after this process

To give her the avault! it is a pity

Would move a monster.

Old Lady. Hearts of most hard temper

Malt and lament for her.

Anne. O! God's will; much better 12

She ne'er had known pomp: though 't be temporal,

Yet, if that quarrel, Fortune, do divorce

It from the bearer, 'tis a sufferance panging

As soul and body's severing.

Old Lady. Alas! poor lady, 16

She's a stranger now again.

Anne. So much the more

Must pity drop upon her. Verily,

I swear, 'tis better to be lowly born,

And range with humble livers in content, 20

Than to be perk'd up in a glist'ring grief

And wear a golden sbrrow.

Old Lady. Our content

Is our best having.

Anne. By my troth and maidenhead

I would not be a queen.

Old Lady. Beshrew me, I would, 24

And venture maidenhead for't; and so would you,

For all this spice of your hypocrisy.

You, that have so fair parts of woman on you,

Have too a woman's heart; which ever yet 28

Affected eminence, wealth, sovereignty:

Which, to say sooth, are blessings, and which

Saving your mincing—the capacity

Of your soft cheveril conscience would receive,

If you might please to stretch it.

Anne. Nay, good troth. 33

Old Lady. Yes, troth, and troth; you would

not be a queen?

Anne. No, not for all the riches under heaven.

Old Lady. 'Ts strange: a three-pence bow'd

would hire me,

Old as I am, to queen it. But, I pray you,

What think you of a duchess? have you limbs

To bear that load of title?

Anne. No, in truth.

Old Lady. Then you are weakly made. Pluck

off a little:

I would not be a young count in your way,

For more than blushing comes to: if your back

Cannot vouchsafe this burden, 'tis too weak

Ever to get a boy.

Anne. How you do talk! 44

I swear again, I would not be a queen

For all the world.

Old Lady. In faith, for little England

You'd venture an embalming: I myself

Would for Carnarvonshire, although there 'long'd

No more to the crown but that. Lo! who comes here? 49

Enter the Lord Chamberlain.

Cham. Good morrow, ladies. What were't worth to know

The secret of your conference?

Anne. My good lord,

Not your demand; it values not your asking: 52

Our mistress' sorrows we were pitying.

Cham. It was a gentle business, and becoming

The action of good women: there is hope

All will be well.

Anne. Now, I pray God, amen! 56

Cham. You bear a gentle mind, and heavenly blessings

Follow such creatures. That you may, fair lady,

Perceive I speak sincerely, and high note's

Ta'en of your many virtues, the king's majesty
Commends his good opinion of you, and
Does purpose honour to you no less flowing
Than Marchioness of Pembroke; to which title
A thousand pound a year, annual support,
Out of his grace he adds.
Anne. I do not know
What kind of my obedience I should tender;
More than my all is nothing, nor my prayers
Are not words duly hallowed, nor my wishes
More worth than empty vanities; yet prayers
And wishes
Are all I can return. Beseech your lordship,
Vouchsafe to speak my thanks and my obe-
dience,
As from a blushing handmaid, to his highness,
Whose health and royalty I pray for.
Cham. Lady, 73
I shall not fail to approve the fair conceit
The king hath of you. [Aside.] I have perusal’d
her well;
Beauty and honour in her are so mingled
That they have caught the king; and who knows
yet
But from this lady may proceed a gem
To lighten all this isle? [To her.] I’ll to the
king,
And say, I spoke with you.
Anne. My honour’d lord. 80
[Exit Lord Chamberlain.
Old Lady. Why, this it is; see, see!
I have been begging sixteen years in court,
Am yet a courtier beggarly, nor could
Come pat betwixt too early and too late;
84
For any suit of pounds; and you, O fate!
A very fresh-fish here,—fi, fie, upon
This compell’d fortune,—have your mouth fill’d
up
Before you open it.
Anne. This is strange to me. 88
Old Lady. How tastes it? is it bitter? forty
pence, no,
There was a lady once,—’tis an old story,—
That would not be a queen, that would she not,
For all the mud in Egypt: have you heard it?
Anne. Come, you are pleasant.
Old Lady. With your theme I could
O’ermount the lark. The Marchioness of Pem-
broke!
A thousand pounds a year, for pure respect!
No other obligation! By my life
That promises more thousands: honour’s train
Is longer than his foreskirt. By this time
I know your back will bear a duchess: say,
Are you not stronger than you were?
Anne. Good lady, 100
Make yourself mirth with your particular fancy,
And leave me out on’t. Would I had no being;
If this salute my blood a jot: it faints me,
To think what follows.
104
The queen is comfortless, and we forgetful
In our long absence. Pray, do not deliver
What here you’ve heard to her.
Old Lady. What do you think me?
[Exeunt.

SCENE IV.—A Hall in Black-Friars.

Trumpets, senegal, and cornets. Enter two Ver-
gers, with short silver wands; next them, two
Scribes, in the habit of doctors; after them,
the ARCHBISHOP OF CANTERBURY, alone; after
him, the BISHOPS OF LINCOLN, ELY, ROCHES-
ter, and SAINT ASAPH; next them, at some
small distance, follows a Gentleman bearing
the purse, with the great seal, and a cardinal’s
hat; then two Priests, bearing each a silver
cross: then a Gentleman-Usher bare-headed,
accompanied with a Sergeant-at-Arms, bear-
ing a silver mace; then two Gentlemen, bear-
ing two great silver pillars; after them, side
by side, the two CARDINALS; two Noblemen
with the sword and mace. Then enter the
KING and QUEEN, and their Trains. The
KING takes place under the cloth of state; the
two CARDINALS sit under him as judges. The
QUEEN takes place at some distance from the
KING. The BISHOPS place themselves on each
side the court, in manner of a consistory;
below them, the Scribes. The Lords sit near
the BISHOPS. The Crier and the rest of the
Attendants stand in convenient order about the
Stage.

Wol. Whilst our commission from Rome is
read,
Let silence be commanded.
K. Hen. What’s the need?
It hath already publicly been read,
And on all sides the authority allow’d;
You may then spare that time.
Wol. Be’t so. Proceed.
Scribe Say, Henry King of England, come
into the court.
Crier. Henry King of England, come into the
court.
K. Hen. Here.
Scribe. Say, Katharine Queen of England,
come into the court.
Crier. Katharine Queen of England, come
into the court.
[The QUEEN makes no answer, rises out
of her chair, goes about the court, comes to the
KING, and kneels at his
foot; then speaks.
Q. Kath. Sir, I desire you do me right and justice; 
And to bestow your pity on me; for I am a most poor woman, and a stranger, 
Born out of your dominions; having here No judge indifferent, nor no more assurance 
Of equal friendship and proceeding. Alas! sir, In what have I offended you? what cause Hath my behaviour given to your displeasure, That thus you should proceed to put me off And take your good grace from me? Heaven witness, 
I have been to you a true and humble wife, At all times to your will conformable; 
Ever in fear to kindle your dislike, Yea, subject to your countenance, glad or sorry As I saw it inclin’d. When was the hour I ever contradicted your desire, 
Or made it not mine too? Or which of your friends Have I not strove to love, although I knew He were mine enemy? what friend of mine That had to him deriv’d your anger, did I Continue in my liking? nay, gave notice He was from thence discharg’d. Sir, call to mind 
That I have been your wife, in this obedience Upward of twenty years, and have been blest With many children by you: if, in the course And process of this time, you can report, And prove it too, against mine honour aught, My bond to wedlock, or my love and duty, Against your sacred person, in God’s name Turn me away; and let the foulst contempt Shut door upon me, and so give me up To the sharpest kind of justice. Please you, sir, The king, your father, was reputed for A prince most prudent, of an excellent And unmatch’d wit and judgment: Ferdinand, My father, King of Spain, was reckon’d one The wisest prince that there had reign’d by many A year before: it is not to be question’d That they had gather’d a wise council to them Of every realm, that did debate this business, Who deem’d our marriage lawful. Wherefore I humbly Beseech you, sir, to spare me, till I may Be by my friends in Spain advis’d, whose counsel I will implore: if not, i’ the name of God, Your pleasure be fulfill’d. Wol. You have here, lady,— And of your choice,—these reverend fathers; men Of singular integrity and learning, Yea, the elect o’ the land, who are assembled 
To plead your cause. It shall be therefore bootless That longer you desire the court, as well For your own quiet, as to rectify What is unsettled in the king. Cam. His Grace Hath spoken well and justly; therefore, madam, It’s fit this royal session do proceed, And that, without delay, their arguments Be now produc’d and heard.

Q. Kath. Lord Cardinal, To you I speak. Wol. Your pleasure, madam? Q. Kath. Sir, I am about to weep; but, thinking that We are a queen,—or long have dream’d so,—certain The daughter of a king, my drops of tears I’ll turn to sparks of fire. Wol. Be patient yet. Q. Kath. I will, when you are humble; nay, before, Or God will punish me. I do believe, Induc’d by potent circumstances, that You are mine enemy; and make my challenge You shall not be my judge; for it is you Have blown this coal betwixt my lord and me, Which God’s dew quench! Therefore I say again, I utterly abhor, yea, from my soul Refuse you for my judge, whom, yet once more, I hold my most malicious foe, and think not At all a friend to truth. Wol. I do profess You speak not like yourself; who ever yet Have stood to charity, and display’d the effects Of disposition gentle, and of wisdom O’ertopping woman’s power. Madam, you do me wrong: I have no spleen against you; nor injustice For you or any: how far I have proceeded, Or how far further shall, is warranted By a commission from the consistory, Yea, the whole consistory of Rome. You charge me That I have blown this coal: I do deny it. The king is present: if it be known to him That I gainsay my deed, how may he wound, And worthy, my falsehood; yea, as much As you have done my truth. If he know That I am free of your report, he knows I am not of your wrong. Therefore in him It lies to cure me; and the cure is, to Remove these thoughts from you: the which before His highness shall speak in, I do beseech You, gracious madam, to unthink your speaking,
And to say no more.

Q. Kath. My lord, my lord,
I am a simple woman, much too weak
To oppose your cunning. You're meek and
humble-mouth'd;
You sign your place and calling, in full
seeming,
With meekness and humility; but your heart
Is cram'd with arrogancy, spleen, and pride.
You have, by fortune and his highness' favours,
Gone slightly o'er low steps, and now are
mounted
Where powers are your retainers, and your
words,
Domestics to you, serve your will as 't please
112
Yourself pronounce their office. I must tell
you,
You tender more your person's honour than
Your high profession spiritual; that again
I do refuse you for my judge; and here,
116
Before you all, appeal unto the pope,
To bring my whole cause 'fore his holiness,
And to be judged by him.

[She curtseys to the King, and offers to
depart.

Cam. The queen is obstinate,
Stubborn to justice, apt to accuse it, and
120
Disdainful to be tried by 't: 'ts not well.
She's going away.

K. Hen. Call her again.

Crier. Katharine Queen of England, come
into the court.

Grif. Madam, you are call'd back.

Q. Kath. What need you note it? pray you,
keep your way:
When you are call'd, return. Now, the Lord
help!
They vex me past my patience. Pray you, pass
on:
128
I will not tarry; no, nor ever more
Upon this business my appearance make
In any of their courts.

[Exeunt Queen, and her Attendants.

K. Hen. Go thy ways, Kate;
That man i' the world who shall report he has
A better wife, let him in nought be trusted,
133
For speaking false in that: thou art, alone,—
If thy rare qualities, sweet gentlenesses,
Thy meekness saint-like, wife-like government,
Obeying in commanding, and thy parts
137
Sovereign and pious else, could speak thee out,—
The queen of earthly queens. She's noble born;
And, like her true nobility, she has
140
Carried herself towards me.

Wol. Most gracious sir,
In humblest manner I require your highness,
141
That it shall please you to declare, in hearing
Of all these ears,—for where I am robb'd and
bound
144
There must I be unloos'd, although not there
At once, and fully satisfied,—whether ever I
Did broach this business to your highness, or
Laid any scruple in your way, which might
148
Induce you to the question on 't? or ever
Have to you, but with thanks to God for such
A royal lady, spake one the least word that
might
Be to the prejudice of her present state,
152
Or touch of her good person?

K. Hen. My Lord Cardinal, I do excuse you; yea, upon mine honour,
I free you from 't. You are not to be taught
That you have many enemies, that know not
156
Why they are so, but, like to village curs,
Bark when their fellows do: by some of these
The queen is put in anger. You're excus'd:
But will you be more justified? you ever
160
Have wish'd the sleeping of this business; never
Desir'd it to be stirr'd; but oft have hinder'd,
oft,
The passages made toward it. On my honour,
I speak my good Lord Cardinal to this point,
And thus far clear him. Now, what mov'd me
to 't,
165
I will be bold with time and your attention:
Then mark the inducement. Thus it came; give
heed to 't:
My conscience first receiv'd a tenderness,
168
Scruple, and prick, on certain speeches utter'd
By the Bishop of Bayonne, then French ambas-
assador,
Who had been hither sent on the debating
A marriage 'twixt the Duke of Orleans and
172
Our daughter Mary. I' the progress of this
business,
Ere a determinate resolution, he—
176
I mean, the bishop—did require a respite;
Wherein he might the king his lord advertise
Whether our daughter were legitimate,
Respecting this our marriage with the dowager,
Sometimes our brother's wife. This respite
shook
The bosom of my conscience, enter'd me,
180
Yea, with a splitting power, and made to tremble
The region of my breast; which forc'd such way,
That many mad'z considerings did throng,
And press'd in with this caution. First, me-
thought
184
I stood not in the smile of heaven, who had
Commanded nature, that my lady's womb,
If it conceiv'd a male child by me, should
188
Do no more offices of life to 't than
The grave does to the dead; for her male issue
Or died where they were made, or shortly after
KING HENRY THE EIGHTH

Act III, Sc. I.

This world had air'd them. Hence I took a thought
This was a judgment on me; that my kingdom,
Well worthy the best heir o' the world, should not
Be gladled in't by me. Then follows that
I weight'd the danger which my realms stood in
By this my issue's fall; and that gave to me
Many a groaning three. Thus hulling in
The wild sea of my conscience, I did steer
Toward this remedy, whereupon we are
Now present here together; that's to say,
I meant to rectify my conscience, which
I then did feel full sick, and yet not well,
By all the rev'rend fathers of the land
And doctors learn'd. First, I began in private
With you, my Lord of Lincoln; you remember
How under my oppression I did reek,
When I first mov'd you.

K. Hen. Very well, my liege.
Lin. I have spoke long; be pleas'd yourself to say
How far you satisfied me.

K. Hen. So please your highness,
The question did at first so stagger me,
Bearing a state of mighty moment in't,
And consequence of dread, that I committed
The daring' st counsel that I had to doubt;
And did entreat your highness to this course
Which you are running here.

K. Hen. Then I mov'd you,
My Lord of Canterbury, and got your leave
To make this present summons. Unsolicited
I left no reverend person in this court;
But by particular consent proceeded
Under your hands and seals: therefore, go on;
For no dislike i' the world against the person
Of the good queen, but the sharp thorny points
Of my alleged reasons drive this forward.
Prove but our marriage lawful, by my life
And kingly dignity, we are contented
To wear our mortal state to come with her,
Katharine our queen, before the primest creature
That's paragon'd o' the world.

Cam. So please your highness,
The queen being absent, 'tis a needful fitness
That we adjourn this court till further day:
Meanwhile must be an earnest motion
Mado to the queen, to call back her appeal
She intends unto his holiness.

[They rise to depart.]

K. Hen. [Aside.] I may perceive
These cardinals trife with me: I abhor
This dilatory sloth and tricks of Rome,
My learn'd and well-beloved servant Cranmer,
Prithee, return: with thy approach, I know,

My comfort comes along. Break up the court:
I say, set on.

[Execunt, in manner as they entered.

ACT III.

SCENE I.—The Palace at Bridewell. A Room in the QUEEN'S Apartment.

The QUEEN and her Women at work.

Q. Kath. Take thy lute, wench: my soul grows sad with troubles;
Sing and disperse 'em, if thou canst. Leave working.

SONG.

Orpheus with his lute made trees,
And the mountain tops that freeze,
Bow themselves, when he did sing:
To his music plants and flowers
Ever sprung; as sun and showers
There had made a lasting spring.

Every thing that heard him play,
Even the billows of the sea,
Hung their heads, and then lay by.
In sweet music is such art,
Killing care and grief of heart
Fall asleep, or hearing, die.

Enter a Gentleman.

Q. Kath. How now!

Gent. An't please your Grace, the two great cardinals

Wait in the presence.

Q. Kath. Would they speak with me?

Gent. They will'd me say so, madam.

Q. Kath. Pray their Graces
To come near. [Exit Gentleman.] What can be their business

With me, a poor weak woman, fall'n from favour?
I do not like their coming, now I think on't. 21.
They should be good men, their affairs as righteous;
But all hoods make not monks.

Enter WOLSEY and CAMPEIUS.

Wol. Peace to your highness!

Q. Kath. Your Graces find me here part of a housewife, 24

I would be all, against the worst may happen.
What are your pleasures with me, reverend lords?
Wol. May it please you, noble madam, to withdraw

Into your private chamber, we shall give you
The full cause of our coming.

Q. Kath. Speak it here;
There's nothing I have done yet, o' my conscience,
Deserves a corner: would all other women
Could speak this with as free a soul as I do! 32
My lords, I care not—so much I am happy
Above a number—if my actions
Were tried by every tongue, every eye saw 'em,
Envy and base opinion set against 'em,
I know my life so even. If your business
Seek me out, and that way I am wife in,
Out with it boldly: truth loves open dealing.

_Wol._ Tanta est erga me mentis integritas,
regina serenissima._

_Q. Kath._ O, good my lord, no Latin;
I am not such a traitor since my coming
As not to know the language I have liv'd in:
A strange tongue makes my cause more strange,
suspicious;

Pray, speak in English: here are some will thank you,
If you speak truth, for their poor mistress' sake:
Believe me, she has had much wrong. Lord
Cardinal,
The willing'st sin I ever yet committed
May be absolv'd in English.

_Wol._ Noble lady, I am sorry my integrity should breed,—
And service to his majesty and you,—
So deep suspicion, where all faith was meant. We come not by the way of accusation,
To taint that honour every good tongue blesses,
Nor to betray you any way to sorrow,
You have too much, good lady; but to know how you stand minded in the weighty difference Between the king and you; and to deliver, Like free and honest men, our just opinions And comforts to your cause.

_Cam._ Most honour'd madam,
My Lord of York, out of his noble nature,
Zeal and obedience he still bore your Grace,
Forgetting, like a good man, your late censure
Both of his truth and him,—which was too far,—
Offers, as I do, in sign of peace,
His service and his counsel.

_Q. Kath._ [Aside.] To betray me.
My lords, I thank you both for your good wills;
Ye speak like honest men,—pray God, ye prove so!

But how to make ye suddenly an answer,
In such a point of weight, so near mine honour,—
More near my life, I fear,—with my weak wit,
And to such men of gravity and learning,
In truth, I know not. I was set at work
Among my maids; full little, God knows, looking Either for such men or such business.
For her sake that I have been,—for I feel
The last fit of my greatness,—good your Graces
Let me have time and counsel for my cause:
Alas! I am a woman, friendless, hopeless.

_Wol._ Madam, you wrong the king's love with these fears:
Your hopes and friends are infinite.

_Q. Kath._ In England
But little for my profit. Can you think, lords,
That any Englishman dare give me counsel?
Or be a known friend, 'gainst his highness' pleasure,—

Though he be grown so desperate to be honest,—
And live a subject? Nay, forsooth, my friends,
They that must weigh out my afflictions,
They that my trust must grow to, live not here:
They are, as all my other comforts, far hence
In mine own country, lords.

_Cam._ I would your Grace
Would leave your griefs, and take my counsel.

_Q. Kath._ How, sir?
_Cam._ Put your main cause into the king's protection;

He's loving and most gracious: 'twill be much Both for your honour better and your cause;
For if the trial of the law o'ertake ye,
You'll part away disgrac'd.

_Wol._ He tells you rightly.

_Q. Kath._ Ye tell me what ye wish for both;
yet my ruin.

Is this your Christian counsel? out upon ye! Heaven is above all ye; there sits a judge
That no king can corrupt.

_Cam._ Your rage mistakes us.

_Q. Kath._ The more shame for ye! holy men I thought ye,
Upon my soul, two reverend cardinal virtues; But cardinal sins and hollow hearts I fear ye. Mend 'em, for shame, my lords. Is this your comfort?
The cordial that ye bring a wretched lady, A woman lost among ye, laugh'd at, scorn'd? I will not wish ye half my miseries,
I have more charity; but say, I warn'd ye:
Take heed, for heaven's sake, take heed, lest at once
The burden of my sorrows fall upon ye.

_Wol._ Madam, this is a mere distraction;
You turn the good we offer into envy.

_Q. Kath._ Ye turn me into nothing: woe upon ye,
And all such false professors! Would ye have me,—
If ye have any justice, any pity;
If ye be anything but churchmen's habita,—
Put my sick cause into his hands that hates me?
Alas! he has banish'd me his bed already,
His love, too long ago! I am old, my lords,
And all the fellowship I hold now with him Is only my obedience. What can happen
To me above this wretchedness? all your studies Make me a curse like this.

_Cam._ Your fears are worse.
Q. Kath. Have I liv'd thus long—let me speak myself.
Since virtue finds no friends—a wife, a true one?
A woman, I dare say without vain-glory,
Never yet branded with suspicion?
Have I with all my full affections
Still met the king? lov'd him next heaven?
obey'd him?
Been, out of fondness, superstitious to him?
Almost forgot my prayers to content him?
And am I thus rewarded? 'tis not well, lords.
Bring me a constant woman to her husband,
Ono that ne'er dream'd a joy beyond his
pleasure,
And to that woman, when she has done most,
Yet will I add an honour, a great patience.
Wol. Madam, you wander from the good we
aim at.
Q. Kath. My lord, I dare not make myself so
guilty,
To give up willingly that noble title
Your master wed me to: nothing but death
Shall e'er divorce my dignities.
Wol. Pray hear me.
Q. Kath. Would I had never trod this English
earth,
Or felt the flatteries that grow upon it!
Ye have angels' faces, but heaven knows your
hearts.
What will become of me now, wretched lady?
I am the most unhappy woman living.
[To her women.] Alas! poor wenches, where are
now your fortunes?
Shipwreck'd upon a kingdom, where no pity,
No friends, no hope; no kindred weep for me;
Almost no grave allow'd me. Like the lily,
That once was mistress of the field and flourish'd,
I'll hang my head and perish.
Wol. If your Grace
Could but be brought to know our ends are
honest,
You'd feel more comfort. Why should we, good
lady,
Upon what cause, wrong you? alas! our places,
The way of our profession is against it:
We are to cure such sorrows, not to sow them.
For goodness’ sake, consider what you do;
How you may hurt yourself, ay, utterly
Grow from the king's acquaintance, by this
carriage.
The hearts of princess kiss obedience,
So much they love it; but to stubborn spirits
They swell, and grow as terrible as storms.
I know you have a gentle, noble temper,
A soul as even as a calm: pray think us
Those we profess, peace-makers, friends, and ser-
vants.
Cam. Madam, you'll find it so. You wrong
your virtues
With these weak women's fears: a noble spirit,
As yours was put into you, ever casts
Such doubts, as false coin, from it. The king
loves you;
Beware you lose it: not for us, if you please.
To trust us in your business, we are ready
To use our utmost studies in your service.
Q. Kath. Do what ye will, my lords: and,
pray, forgive me
If I have us'd myself unmannishly.
You know I am a woman, lacking wit
To make a seemly answer to such persons.
Pray do my service to his majesty:
He has my heart yet; and shall have my prayers
While I shall have my life. Come, reverence
fathers,
Bestow your counsels on me: she now begs
That little thought, when she set footing here,
She should have bought her dignities so dear.
[Exeunt.

SCENE II.—Antechamber to the King's
Apartment.

Enter the DUKE OF NORFOLK, the DUKE OF
SUFFOLK, the EARL OF SURREY, and the Lord
Chamberlain.

Nor. If you'll now unite in your com-
plaints,
And force them with a constancy, the cardinal
Cannot stand under them: if you omit
The offer of this time, I cannot promise
But that you shall sustain more new disgraces
With these you bear already.

Sur. I am joyful
To meet the least occasion that may give me
Remembrance of my father-in-law, the duke,
To be reveng'd on him.

Suf. Which of the peers
Have uncontrovert'd gone by him, or at least
Strangely neglected? when did he regard
The stamp of nobleness in any person,
Out of himself?

Cham. My lords, you speak your pleasures:
What he deserves of you and me, I know;
What we can do to him,—though now the
time
Gives way to us,—I much fear. If you cannot
Bar his access to the king, never attempt
Any thing on him, for he hath a witchcraft
Over the king in's tongue.

Nor. O! fear him not;
His spell in that is out: the king hath found
Matter against him that for ever mars
The honey of his language. No, he's settled,
Act III, Sc. II.

KING HENRY THE EIGHTH

Not to come off, in his displeasure.

_Sur._ Sir, I should be glad to hear such news as this.

_Once every hour._

_Nor._ Believe it, this is true: In the divorce his contrary proceedings Are all unfolded; wherein he appears As I would wish mine enemy.

_Sur._ How came his practices to light?

_Suf._ Most strangely.

_Sur._ O! how? how? _Suf._ The cardinal’s letter to the pope miscarried,

And came to the eye o’ the king; wherein was read,

That the cardinal did entreat his holiness To stay the judgment o’ the divorce; for if It did take place, ‘I do,’ quoth he, ‘perceive My king is tanged in affection to A creature of the queen’s, Lady Anne Bullen.’

_Sur._ Has the king this?

_Suf._ Believe it.

_Sur._ Will this work?

_Cham._ The king in this perceives him, how he coasts And hedges his own way. But in this point All his tricks founder, and he brings his physic After his patient’s death: the king already Hath married the fair lady.

_Sur._ Would be had!

_Suf._ May you be happy in your wish, my lord!

For I profess, you have it.

_Sur._ Now all my joy.

Trace the conjunction!

_Suf._ My amen to’t!

_Nor._ All men’s.

_Suf._ There’s order given for her coronation: Marry, this is yet but young, and may be left To some ears unreckoned. But, my lords, She is a gallant creature, and complete In mind and feature: I persuade me, from her Will fall some blessing to this land, which shall In it be memoriz’d.

_Sur._ But will the king Digest this letter of the cardinal’s?

The Lord forbid!

_Nor._ Marry, aman!

_Suf._ No, no; There be moe wasps that buzz about his nose Will make this sting the sooner. Cardinal Campeius Is stol’n away to Rome; hath ta’en no leave; Has left the cause o’ the king unhandled; and Is posted, as the agent of our cardinal, To second all his plot. I do assure you

The king cried Ha! at this.

_Cham._ Now, God incense him, And let him cry Ha! louder.

_Nor._ But, my lord, When returns Cranmer?

_Suf._ He is return’d in his opinions, which Have satisfied the king for his divorce, Together with all famous colleges Almost in Christendom. Shortly, I believe, His second marriage shall be publish’d, and Shall be call’d queen, but princess dowager, And widow to Prince Arthur.

_Nor._ This same Cranmer’s A worthy fellow, and hath ta’en much pain In the king’s business.

_Suf._ He has; and we shall see him For it an archbishop.

_Nor._ So I hear.

_Tis so._

The cardinal!

_Enter WOLSIE AND CROMWELL._

_Nor._ Observe, observe; he’s moody.

_Wol._ The packet, Cromwell,

Gave’t you the king?

_Crom._ To his own hand, in his bedchamber.

_Wol._ Look’d he o’ the inside of the paper?

_Crom._ Presently He did unseal them; and the first he view’d, He did it with a serious mind; a head Was in his countenance. You he bade Attend him here this morning.

_Wol._ Is he ready To come abroad?

_Crom._ I think, by this he is.

_Wol._ Leave me awhile. [Exeunt CROMWELL.

[Aside.] It shall be to the Duchess of Alençon, The French King’s sister; he shall marry her. Anne Bullen! No; I’ll no Anne Bullens for him: There’s more in’t than fair visage. Bullen! No, we’ll no Bullens. Speedily I wish To hear from Rome. The Marchioness of Pembroke!

_Nor._ He’s discontented.

_Suf._ May be he hears the king Does what his anger to him.

_Sur._ Sharp enough.

Lord, for thy justice!

_Wol._ The late queen’s gentlewoman, a knight’s daughter,

To be her mistress’ mistress! the queen’s queen! This candle burns not clear: ’tis I must smuff it; Then, out it goes. What though I know her virtuous And well deserving? yet I know her for A spleeny Lutheran; and not wholesome to...
Our cause, that she should lie in the bosom of Our hard-rul'd king. Again, there is sprung up A heretic, an arch one, Cranmer; one Hath crawl'd into the favour of the king, and is his oracle.

Nor. He is vex'd at something.

Sur. I would 'twere something that would fret the string, The master-cord on's heart!

Enter the King, reading a schedule; and Lovell.

Sur. The king, the king!

K. Hen. What piles of wealth hath he accumulated to his own portion! and what expense by the hour Seems to flow from him! How, i' the name of thrift, Does he rake this together? Now, my lords, Saw you the cardinal?

Nor. My lord, we have stood here observing him; some strange commotion Is in his brain: he bites his lip, and starts; Stops on a sudden, looks upon the ground, Then lays his finger on his temple; straight springs out into fast gait; then stops again, Strikes his breast hard; and anon he casts His eye against the moon: in most strange postures We have seen him set himself.

K. Hen. It may well be. There is a mutiny in's mind. This morning Papers of state he sent me to peruse, As I require; and wot you what I found There, on my conscience, put unwittingly? Forsooth, an inventory, thus importing; The several parcels of his plate, his treasure, Rich stuffs and ornaments of household, which I find at such a proud rate that it out-speaks Possession of a subject.

Nor. It's heaven's will. Some spirit put this paper in the packet To bless your eye withal.

K. Hen. If we did think His contemplation were above the earth, And fix'd on spiritual object, he should still Dwell in his musings: but I am afraid His thoughts are below the moon, not worth His serious considering.

[He takes his seat, and whispers to Lovell, who goes to Wolsey.]

Wol. Heaven forgive me! Ever God bless your highness!

K. Hen. Good my lord,
Therein illustrated: the honour of it
Does pay the act of it, as, 'tis the contrary,
The foulness is the punishment. I presume
That as thy hand hath open'd bounty to you,
My heart dropp'd love, my power rain'd honour,
more
On you than any; so your hand and heart,
Your brain, and every function of your power,
Should, notwithstanding that your bond of duty,
As 'twere in love's particular, be more
To me, your friend, than any.

Wol. I do profess, 191
That for your highness' good I ever labour'd
More than mine own; that am, have, and will be.
Though all the world should crack their duty to
you,
And throw it from their soul; though perils did
Abound as thick as thought could make 'em, and
Appear in forms more horrid, yet my duty,
As doth a rock against the chiding flood,
Should the approach of this wild river break,
And stand unshaken yours.

K. Hen. 'Tis nobly spoken. 200
Take notice, lords, he has a loyal breast,
For you have seen him open 't. Read o'er this;

[Giving him papers.
And after, this: and then to breakfast with
What appetite you have.

[Exit King, frowning upon CARDINAL

WOLSEY; the Nobles throng after
him, smiling, and whispering.

Wol. What should this mean? 204
What sudden anger's this? how have I reap'd it?
He parted frowning from me, as if ruin
Leap'd from his eyes: so looks the chafed lion
Upon the daring huntsman that has gall'd him;
Then makes him nothing. I must read this
paper;
I fear, the story of his anger. 'Tis so;
This paper has undone me! 'Tis the account
Of all that world of wealth I have drawn together
For mine own ends; indeed, to gain the popedom,
And see my friends in Rome. O negligence!
Fit for a fool to fall by: what cross devil
Made me put this main secret in the packet 216
I sent the king? Is there no way to cure this?
No new device to beat this from his brains?
I know 'twill stir him strongly; yet I know
A way, if it take right, in spite of fortune
Will bring me off again. What's this?—'To the
Pope!' The letter, as I live, with all the business
I writ to's holiness. Nay then, farewell!
I have touch'd the highest point of all my
greatness;
And from that full meridian of my glory,
I haste now to my setting: I shall fall

Like a bright exhalation in the evening,
And no man see me more.

Re-enter the DUKES OF NORFOLK and SUFFOLK,
the EARL OF SURREY, and the Lord Chamberlain.

Nor. Hear the king's pleasure, cardinal: who
commands you
To render up the great seal presently
Into our hands; and to confine yourself
To Asheer-house, my Lord of Winchester's, 232
Till you hear further from his highness.

Wol. Stay,
Where's your commission, lord? words cannot carry
Authority so weighty.

Suf. Who dare cross 'em,
Bearing the king's will from his mouth expressly?
Wol. Till I find more than will or words to do it,
I mean your malice, know, officious lords,
I dare and must deny it. Now I feel
Of what coarse metal ye are moulded, envy: 240
How eagerly ye follow my disgraces,
As if it fed ye and how sleek and wanton
Ye appear in every thing may bring my ruin
Follow your envious courses, men of malice; 244
You have Christian warrant for 'em, and no
doubt,
In time will find their fit rewards. That seal
You ask with such a violence, the king—
Mine and your master—with his own hand gave
me;
Bade me enjoy it with the place and honours
During my life; and to confirm his goodness,
Tied it by letters-patents: now who'll take it?

Sur. The king, that gave it.

Wol. It must be himself then. 252

Sur. Thou art a proud traitor, priest.

Wol. Proud lord, thou liest:
Within these forty hours Surrey durst better
Have burnt that tongue than said so.

Sur. Thy ambition,
Thou scarlet sin, robb'd this bewailing land 256
Of noble Buckingham, my father-in-law:
The heads of all thy brother cardinals—
With thee and all thy best parts bound to-
gether—
Weigh'd not a hair of his. Plague of your
policy!
You sent me deputy for Ireland,
Far from his succour, from the king, from all
That might have mercy on the fault thou gav'st
him; 263
Whilst your great goodness, out of holy pity,
Absolv'd him with an axe.

Wol. This and all else
This talking lord can lay upon my credit, I answer is most false. The duke by law
Found his deserts: how innocent I was 268
From any private malice in his end,
His noble jury and foul cause can witness.
If I lov’d many words, lord, I should tell you,
You have as little honesty as honour, 272
That in the way of loyalty and truth
Toward the king, my ever royal master,
Dare make a sounder man than Surrey can be,
And all that love his follies.
Sur.
Your long coat, priest, protects you; thou
shouldst feel My sword i’th life-blood of thee else.
My lords, Can ye endure to hear this arrogance?
And from this fellow? If we live thus tamely,
To be thus jaded by a piece of scarlet,
Farewell nobility; let his Grace go forward,
And dare us with his cap like larks.
Wol.
All goodness
Is poison to thy stomach.
Sur.
Yes, that goodness 284
Of gleaning all the land’s wealth into one,
Into your own hands, cardinal, by extortion;
The goodness of your intercepted packets,
You writ to the pope against the king; your
goodness, 288
Since you provoke me, shall be most notorious.
My Lord of Norfolk, as you are truly noble,
As you respect the common good, the state
Of our despis’d nobility, our issues, 292
Who, if he live, will scarce be gentlemen,
Produce the grand sum of his sins, the articles
Collected from his life; I’ll startle you
Worse than the sacring bell, when the brown
wench
Lay kissing in your arms, Lord Cardinal.
Wol. How much, methinks, I could despise
this man, But that I am bound in charity against it!
Nor. Those articles, my lord, are in the king’s
hand; 300
But, thus much, they are foul ones.
Wol. So much fairer
And spotless shall mine innocence arise
When the king knows my trust.
Sur. This cannot save you:
I thank my memory, I yet remember 304
Some of these articles; and out they shall.
Now, if you can blush, and cry ‘guilty,’ cardinal,
You’ll show a little honesty.
Wol. Speak on, sir;
I dare your worst objections; if I blush, 308
It is to see a nobleman want manners.
Sur. I had rather want those than my head.
Have at you!

First, that, without the king’s assent or know
ledge,
You wrought to be a legate; by which power
You main’d the jurisdiction of all bishops. 313
Nor. Then, that in all you writ to Rome, orelse
To foreign princes, Ego et Rex mens
Was still inscrib’d; in which you brought
the king
To be your servant.
Sur. Then, that without the knowledge 317
Either of king or council, when you went
Ambassador to the emperor, you made bold
to carry into Flanders the great seal. 320
Sur. Item, you sent a large commission
To Gregory de Cassado, to conclude,
Without the king’s will or the state’s allowance,
A league between his highness and Ferrara. 324
Sur. That, out of mere ambition, you have
caus’d
Your holy hat to be stamp’d on the king’s coin.
Sur. Then, that you have sent innumerable
substance,—
By what means got I leave to your own con-
science,— 328
To furnish Rome, and to prepare the ways
You have for dignities; to the mere undoing
Of all the kingdom. Many more there are;
Which, since they are of you, and odious, 333
I will not taint my mouth with.
Cham.
O my lord!
Press not a falling man too far; ’tis virtue:
His faults lie open to the laws; let them,
Not you, correct him. My heart weeps to see
him
So little of his great self.
Sur.
I forgive him.
Sur. Lord Cardinal, the king’s further plea-
sure is,
Because all those things you have done of late,
By your power legatine, within this kingdom,
Fall into the compass of a præmunitur, 341
That therefore such a writ be su’d against you;
To forfeit all your goods, lands, tenements,
Chattels, and whatsoever, and to be 344
Out of the king’s protection. This is my charge.
Nor. And so we’ll leave you to your medita-
tions
How to live better. For your stubborn answer
About the giving back the great seal to us, 348
The king shall know it, and, no doubt, shall
thank you.
So fare you well, my little good Lord Cardinal.
[Exeunt all except WOLSEY.
Wol. So farewell to the little good you bear
me. 351
Farewell! a long farewell, to all my greatness!
This is the state of man: to-day he puts forth
The tender leaves of hopes; to-morrow blossoms,
And bears his blushing honours thick upon him;
The third day comes a frost, a killing frost; 356
And, when he thinks, good easy man, full surely
His greatness is a ripening, nips his root,
And then he falls, as I do. I have ventur'd,
Like little wanton boys that swim on bladders,
This many summers in a sea of glory, 360
But far beyond my depth: my high-blown pride
At length broke under me, and now has left me,
Weary and old with service, to the mercy 364
Of a rude stream, that must for ever hide me.
Vain pomp and glory of this world, I hate ye:
I feel my heart new open'd. O! how wretched
Is that poor man that hangs on princes' favours!
There is, betwixt that smile we would asperse to,
That sweet aspect of princes, and their ruin,
More pangs and fears than wars or women have;
And when he falls, he falls like Lucifer, 372
Never to hope again.

Enter CROMWELL, and stands amazed.

Wol. Why, how now, Cromwell!
Crom. I have no power to speak, sir.
Wol. What! amaz'd
At my misfortunes? can thy spirit wonder
A great man should decline? Nay, an you weep,
I am fall'n indeed.
Crom. How does your Grace?
Wol. Why, well; 377
Never so truly happy, my good Cromwell.
I know myself now; and I feel within me
A peace above all earthly dignities,
A still and quiet conscience. The king has cur'd me,
I humbly thank his Grace; and from these shoulders,
These ruin'd pillars, out of pity taken
A load would sink a navy, too much honour: 384
O! 'tis a burden, Cromwell, 'tis a burden
Too heavy for a man that hopes for heaven.
Crom. I am glad your Grace has made that right use of it.
Wol. I hope I have: I am able now, methinks,—
Out of a fortitude of soul I feel,— 389
To endure more miseries and greater far
Than my weak-hearted enemies dare offer.
What news abroad?
Crom. The heaviest and the worst,
Is your displeasure with the king.
Wol. God bless him! 392
Crom. The next is, that Sir Thomas More is chosen
Lord Chancellor in your place.
Wol. That's somewhat sudden:
But he's a learned man. May he continue 396
Long in his highness' favour, and do justice
For truth's sake and his conscience; that his bones,
When he has run his course and sleeps in blessings,
May have a tomb of orphans' tears wept on 'em!
What more?

Crom. That Cranmer is return'd with welcome,
Install'd Lord Archbishop of Canterbury.
Wol. That's news indeed.

Crom. Last, that the Lady Anne,
Whom the king hath in secrecy long married,
This day was view'd in open, as his queen, 405
Going to chapel; and the voice is now
Only about her coronation.
Wol. There was the weight that pull'd me down. O Cromwell!
The king has gone beyond me: all my glories
In that one woman I have lost for ever.
No sun shall ever usher forth mine honours,
Or gild again the noble troops that waited
Upon my smiles. Go, get thee from me, Cromwell;
I am a poor fall'n man, unworthy now
To be thy lord and master: seek the king;—
That sun, I pray, may never set!—I have told him
What, and how true thou art: he will advance thee;
Some little memory of me will stir him—
I know his noble nature—not to let
Thy hopeful service perish too. Good Cromwell,
Neglect him not: make use now, and provide
For thine own future safety.

Crom. O my lord!
Must I then, leave you? must I needs forego
So good, so noble, and so true a master? 420
Bear witness all that have not hearts of iron,
With what a sorrow Cromwell leaves his lord.
The king shall have my service; but my prayers
For ever and for ever, shall be yours. 428
Wol. Cromwell, I did not think to shed a tear
In all my miseries; but thou hast forc'd me,
Out of thy honest truth, to play the woman.
Let's dry our eyes: and thus far hear me, Cromwell; 432
And, when I am forgotten, as I shall be,
And sleep in dull cold marble, where no mention
Of me more must be heard of, say, I taught thee,
Say, Wolsey, that once trod the ways of glory,
And sounded all the depths and shoals of honour, 437
Found thee a way, out of his wrack, to rise in;
A sure and safe one, though thy master miss'd it.
Mark but my fall, and that that ruin'd me. 440
Cromwell, I charge thee, fling away ambition:
By that sin fell the angels; how can man then,
The image of his Maker, hope to win by 't?
Love thyself last: cherish those hearts that hate thee;
Corruption wins not more than honesty.
Still in thy right hand carry gentle peace,
To silence ensnaring tongues: be just, and fear not.
Let all the ends thou aim'st at be thy country's,
Thy God's, and truth's; then if thou fall'st, O Cromwell!
Thou fall'st a blessed martyr. Serve the king,
And,—prithee, lead me in:
There take an inventory of all I have,
To the last penny; 'tis the king's: my robe,
And my integrity to heaven is all
I dare now call mine own. O Cromwell, Cromwell!
Had I but serv'd my God with half the zeal
I serv'd my king, he would not in mine age
Have left me naked to mine enemies.
Crom. Good sir, have patience. Wol.
So I have. Farewell
The hopes of court! my hopes in heaven do dwell. 458

ACT IV.

SCENE I.—A Street in Westminster.

Enter two Gentlemen, meeting.

First Gen. You're well met once again.
Sec. Gen. So are you. First Gen. You come to take your stand here, and behold
The Lady Anne pass from her coronation? Sec. Gen. 'Tis all my business. At our last encounter
The Duke of Buckingham came from his trial.
First Gen. 'Tis very true: but that time offer'd sorrow;
This, general joy.
Sec. Gen. 'Tis well: the citizens,
I am sure, have shown at full their royal minds,
As, let 'em have their rights, they are ever forward,
In celebration of this day with shows,
Pageants, and sights of honour.
First Gen. Never greater;
Nor, I'll assure you, better taken, sir.
Sec. Gen. May I be bold to ask what that contains,
That paper in your hand? First Gen. Yes; 'tis the list

Of those that claim their offices this day
By custom of the coronation.
The Duke of Suffolk is the first, and claims
To be high-steward; next, the Duke of Norfolk,
He to be earl marshal: you may read the rest.
Sec. Gen. I thank you, sir: had I not known those customs,
I should have been belonging to your paper.
But, I beseech you, what's become of Katharine, The princess dowager? how goes her business?
First Gen. That I can tell you too. The Archbishop
Of Canterbury, accompanied with other
Learned and reverend fathers of his order,
Held a late court at Dunstable, six miles off
From Amphill, where the princess lay; to which
She was often cited by them, but appear'd not:
And, to be short, for not appearance and
The king's late scruple, by the main assent
Of all these learned men she was divorc'd,
And the late marriage made of none effect:
Since which she was remov'd to Kimbolton,
Where she remains now sick.
Sec. Gen. Alas! good lady!

The trumpets sound: stand close, the queen is coming.

[Hautboys.

THE ORDER OF THE CORONATION.

A lively flourish of trumpets.

1. Two Judges.
2. Lord Chancellor, with the purse and mace before him.
4. Mayor of London, bearing the mace. Then
Garter, in his coat of arms, and on his head a gilt copper crown.
5. MARQUESS DORSET, bearing a sceptre of gold,
on his head a demi-coronal of gold. With
him, the EARL OF SURREY, bearing the rod of silver with the dove, crowned with an earl's coronet. Collars of SS.
6. DUKE OF SUFFOLK, in his robe of estate, his
 coronet on his head, bearing a long white wand, as high-steward. With him, the
DUKE OF NORFOLK, with the rod of marshalship, a coronet on his head. Collars of SS.
7. A canopy borne by four of the Cinque-ports; under it, the QUEEN in her robe; in her
hair richly adorned with pearl, crowned. On each side of her, the BISHOPS OF LONDON and WINCHESTER.
8. The old DUCHESS OF NORFOLK, in a coronal of gold, wrought with flowers, bearing the
QUEEN's train.
9. Certain Ladys or Countesses, with plain circles of gold without flowers.
They pass over the stage in order and state.

Sec. Gen. A royal train, believe me. These I know;
Who's that that bears the sceptre?
First Gen. Marquess Dorset.
And that the Earl of Surrey with the rod.
Sec. Gen. A bold brave gentleman. That should be
The Duke of Suffolk?
First Gen. 'Tis the same; high-steward.
Sec. Gen. And that my Lord of Norfolk?
First Gen. Yes.
Sec. Gen. [Looking on the Queen.] Heaven bless thee!

Thou hast the sweetest face I ever look'd on.
Sir, as I have a soul, she is an angel;
Our king has all the Indies in his arms,
And more and richer, when he strains that lady:
I cannot blame his conscience.

First Gen. They that bear
The cloth of honour over her, are four barons
Of the Cinque-portes.
Sec. Gen. Those men are happy; and so are
all are near her.
I take it, she that carries up the train
Is that old noble lady, Duchess of Norfolk.
First Gen. It is; and all the rest are countesses.
Sec. Gen. Their coronets say so. These are
stars indeed;
And sometimes falling ones.

First Gen. No more of that.

[Exit Procession, with a great flourish of trumpets.

Enter a third Gentleman.

God save you, sir! Where have you been b roiling?
Third Gen. Among the crowd in the Abbey; where a finger
Could not be wedg'd in more: I am stiffed
With the mere rankness of their joy.

Sec. Gen. The ceremony?
Third Gen. That I did.
First Gen. How was it?
Third Gen. Well worth the seeing.
Sec. Gen. Good sir, speak it to us.
Third Gen. As well as I am able. The rich stream
Of lords and ladies, having brought the queen
To a prepar'd place in the choir, fell off
A distance from her; while her Grace sat down
to rest awhile, some half an hour or so,
In a rich chair of state, opposing freely
The beauty of her person to the people.

Believe me, sir, she is the goodliest woman
That ever lay by man; which when the people
Had the full view of, such a noise arose
As the shrouds make at sea in a stiff tempest,
As loud, and to as many tunes: hats, cloaks,—
Doublets, I think,—flew up; and had their faces
Been loose, this day they had been lost. Such joy
I never saw before. Great-bellied women,
That had not half a week to go, like rams
In the old time of war, would shake the press,
And make 'em reel before them. No man living
Could say, 'This is my wife,' there; all were woven
So strangely in one piece.

Sec. Gen. But, what follow'd?
Third Gen. At length her Grace rose, and
with modest pace
Came to the altar; where she kneel'd, and, saint-like,
Cast her fair eyes to heaven and pray'd devoutly.

Then rose again and bow'd her to the people:
When by the Archbishop of Canterbury
She had all the royal makings of a queen;
As holy oil, Edward Confessor's crown,
The rod, and bird of peace, and all such emblems
Laid nobly on her: which perform'd, the choir,
With all the choicest music of the kingdom,
Together sung Te Deum. So she parted,
And with the same full state pac'd back again
To York-place, where the feast is held.

First Gen. Sir,
You must no more call it York-place, that's past;
For, since the cardinal fell, that title's lost:
'Tis now the king's, and call'd Whitehall.

Third Gen. I know it;
But 'tis so lately alter'd that the old name
Is fresh about me.

Sec. Gen. What two reverend bishops
Were those that went on each side of the queen?

Third Gen. Stokesly and Gardiner; the one
of Winchester,—
Newly preferr'd from the king's secretary,—
The other, London.

Sec. Gen. He of Winchester
Is held no great good lover of the archbishop's,
The virtuous Cranmer.

Third Gen. All the land knows that:
KING HENRY THE EIGHTH  Acr IV, Sc. II.

However, yet there's no great breach; when it comes,
Cranmer will find a friend will not shrink from him.

Sec. Gen. Who may that be, I pray you?

Third Gen. Thomas Cromwell:
A man in much esteem with the king, and truly
A worthy friend. The king
Has made him master o' the jewel house,
And one, already, of the privy-council.

Sec. Gen. He will deserve more.

Third Gen. Yes, without all doubt.
Come, gentlemen, ye shall go my way, which
Is to the court, and there ye shall be my guests:
Something I can command. As I walk thither,
I'll tell ye more.

Both. You may command us, sir. [Exeunt.

SCENE II.—Kimbolton.

Enter Katharine, Dowager, sick: led between
GRIFFITH and PATIENCE.

Griff. How does your Grace?
Kath. O Griffith! sick to death!
My legs, like loaden branches, bow to the earth,
Willing to leave their burden. Reach a chair:
So; now, methinks, I feel a little ease.
Didst thou not tell me, Griffith, as thou ledd'st me,
That the great child of honour, Cardinal
Wolsey,
Was dead?

Griff. Yes, madam; but I think your Grace,
Out of the pain you suffer'd, gave no ear to 't.

Kath. Prithsee, good Griffith, tell me how he died:
If well, he stepp'd before me, happily,
For my example.

Griff. Well, the voice goes, madam:
For after the stout Earl Northumberland
Arrested him at York, and brought him forward,
As a man sorely tainted, to his answer,
He fell sick suddenly, and grew so ill
He could not sit his mule.

Kath. Alas! poor man. 

Griff. At last, with easy roads, he came to
Leicester;
Lodg'd in the abbey, where the reverend abbot,
With all his covent, honourably receiv'd him:
To whom he gave these words: 'O! father abbot,
An old man, broken with the storms of state,
Is come to lay his weary bones among ye;
Give him a little earth for charity.'
So went to bed, where eagerly his sickness
Pursu'd him still; and three nights after this,
About the hour of eight,—which he himself
Foretold should be his last,—full of repentance,
Continual meditations, tears, and sorrows.
He gave his honours to the world again,
His blessed part to heaven, and slept in peace.

Kath. So may he rest; his faults lie gently on him!

Yet thus far, Griffith, give me leave to speak

Lim.

And yet with charity. He was a man
Of an unbounded stomach, ever ranking
Himself with princes; one, that by suggestion
Tied all the kingdom; simony was fair-play;
His own opinion was his law; 't he presence
He would say untruths, and be ever double
Both in his words and meaning. He was never,
But where he meant to ruin, pitiful;

His promises were, as he then was, mighty;
But his performance, as he is now, nothing:
Of his own body he was ill, and gave
The clergy ill example.

Griff. Noble madam,
Men's evil manners live in brass; their virtues
We write in water. May it please your highness
To hear me speak his good now?

Kath. Yes, good Griffith,
I were malicious else.

Griff. This cardinal,
Though from a humble stock, undoubtedly
Was fashion'd to much honour from his cradle.
He was a scholar, and a ripe and good one;
Exceeding wise, fair-spoken, and persuading;
Lofty and sour to them that lov'd him not;
But, to those men that sought him sweet as summer.
And though he were unsatisfied in getting,—
Which was a sin,—yet in bestowing, madam,
He was most princely. Ever witness for him
Those twins of learning that he rais'd in you,
Ipswich, and Oxford! one of which fell with him,
Unwilling to outlive the good that did it; 60
The other, though unfinish'd, yet so famous,
So excellent in art, and still so rising;
That Christendom shall ever speak his virtue,
His overthrow heap'd happiness upon him;
For then, and not till then, he felt himself,
And found the blessedness of being little:
And, to add greater honours to his age
Than man could give him, he died fearing God.

Kath. After my death I wish no other herald,
No other speaker of my living actions,
To keep mine honour from corruption,
But such an honest chronicler as Griffith.

Whom I most hated living, thou hast made me,
With thy religious truth and modesty,
Now in his ashes honour. Peace be with him!
Patience, be near me still; and set me lower: I have not long to trouble thee. Good Griffith, 
Cause the musicians play me that sad note 
I nam'd my knell, whilst I sit meditating 
On that celestial harmony I go to. 80 
[Sad and solemn music. 
Griff. She is asleep: good wench, let's sit 
down quiet, 
For fear we wake her: softly, gentle Patience.

The Vision. Enter, solemnly tripping one after another, six Personages, clad in white robes, 
wearing on their heads garlands of bays, and golden wands on their faces; branches of 
bays or palm in their hands. They first 
congee unto her, then dance; and, at certain 
changes, the first two hold a spare Garland 
over her head; at which, the other four make 
reverend curtseys: then, the two that held the 
garland deliver the same to the other next 
two, who observe the same order in their 
changes, and holding the Garland over her 
head: which done, they deliver the same 
garland to the last two, who likewise observe 
the same order, at which,—as it were by 
inspiration,—she makes in her sleep signs of 
rejoicing, and holdeth up her hands to 
heaven: and so in their dancing they vanish, 
carrying the Garland with them. The music 
continues.

Kath. Spirits of peace, where are ye? Are ye 
all gone, 
And leave me here in wretchedness behind ye? 
Griff. Madam, we are here. 
Kath. It is not you I call for: 85 
Saw ye none enter since I slept? 
Griff. None, madam. 
Kath. No? Saw you not, even now, a blessed 
troop 
Invite me to a banquet; whose bright faces 
Cast thousand beams upon me, like the sun? 
They promis'd me eternal happiness, 
And brought me garlands, Griffith, which I 
feel, 
I am not worthy yet to wear: I shall assuredly. 
Griff. I am most joyful, madam, such good 
dreams 
Possess your fancy. 
Kath. Bid the music leave, 
They are harsh and heavy to me. [Music ceases. 
Pat. Do you note 
How much her Grace is alter'd on the sudden? 
How long her face is drawn? How pale she 
looks, 
And of an earthy cold? Mark her eyes! 
Griff. She is going, wench. Pray, pray. 
Pat. Heaven comfort her! 

Enter a Messenger. 
Mess. An't like your Grace,— 
Kath. You are a saucy fellow: 
Deserve we no more reverence? 
Griff. You are to blame, 
Knowing she will not lose her wonted great-
ness, 
To use so rude behaviour: go to, kneel. 104 
Mess. I humbly do entreat your highness' 
pardon; 
My haste made me unmannerly. There is 
staying 
A gentleman, sent from the king, to see you. 
Kath. Admit him entrance, Griffith: but this 
fellow 
Let me ne'er see again. 
[Exeunt Griffith and Messenger.

Re-enter Griffith, with Capucius. 
If my sight fail not, 
You should be lord ambassador from the 
emperor, 
My royal nephew, and your name Capucius. 
Cap. Madam, the same; your servant. 
Kath. O my lord! 112 
The times and titles now are alter'd strangely 
With me since first you knew me. But, I pray 
you, 
What is your pleasure with me? 
Cap. Noble lady, 
First, mine own service to your Grace; the 
next, 
The king's request that I would visit you; 
Who grieves much for your weakness, and by me 
Sends you his princely commendations, 
And heartily entreats you take good comfort. 120 
Kath. Of my good lord, that comfort comes 
too late; 
'Tis like a pardon after execution: 
That gentle physic, given in time, had cur'd me; 
But now I am past all comforts here but prayers. 
How does his highness? 
Cap. Madam, in good health. 125 
Kath. So may he ever do! and ever flourish, 
When I shall dwell with worms, and my poor 
name 
Banish'd the kingdom. Patience, is that letter 
I caus'd you write, yet sent away? 
Pat. No, madam. 129 
[Giving it to Katharine. 
Kath. Sir, I most humbly pray you to deliver 
This to my lord the king. 
Cap. Most willing, madam. 
Kath. In which I have commanded to his 
goodness.
The model of our chaste loves, his young
daughter:
The dews of heaven fall thick in blessings on
her!
Beseeching him to give her virtuous breeding,—
She is young, and of a noble modest nature, 136
I hope she will deserve well,—and a little
To love her for her mother’s sake, that lov’d
him,
Heaven knows how dearly. My next poor petition
Is, that his noble Grace would have some pity
Upon my wretched women, that so long 141
Have follow’d both my fortunes faithfully:
Of which there is not one, I dare avow,—
And now I should not lie,—but will deserve, 144
For virtue, and true beauty of the soul,
For honesty and decent carriage,
A right good husband, let him be a noble;
And, sure, those men are happy that shall have ’em. 148
The last is, for my men: they are the poorest,
But poverty could never draw ’em from me;
That they may have their wages duly paid ’em,
And something over to remember me by: 152
If heaven had pleas’d to have given me longer life
And able means, we had not parted thus.
These are the whole contents: and, good my lord,
By that you love the dearest in this world, 156
As you wish Christian peace to souls departed,
Stand these poor people’s friend, and urge the king
To do me this last right.
Cap. By heaven, I will,
Or let me lose the fashion of a man! 160
Kath. I thank you, honest lord. Remember me
In all humility unto his highness:
Say his long trouble now is passing
Out of this world; tell him, in death I bless’d him;
164
For so I will. Mine eyes grow dim. Farewell,
My lord. Griffith, farewell. Nay, Patience,
You must not leave me yet: I must to bed;
Call in more women. When I am dead, good
wrench, 168
Let me be us’d with honour: strew me over
With maiden flowers, that all the world may know
I was a chaste wife to my grave: embalm me,
Then lay me forth: although unqueen’d, yet like
172
A queen, and daughter to a king, inter me.
I can no more. [Exeunt, leading KATHARINE.

ACT V.

Enter GARDINER, Bishop of Winchester, a Page
with a torch before him, met by SIR THOMAS
LOVELL.
Gar. It’s one o’clock, boy, is’t not?
Boy. It hath struck.
Gar. These should be hours for necessities,
Not for delights; times to repair our nature
With comforting repose, and not for us 4
To waste these times. Good hour of night, Sir
Thomas!
Whither so late?
Lov. Came you from the king, my lord?
Gar. I did, Sir Thomas; and left him at
primero
With the Duke of Suffolk.
Lov. I must to him too, 8
Before he go to bed. I’ll take my leave.
Gar. Not yet, Sir Thomas Lovell. What’s
the matter?
It seems you are in haste: an if there be
No great offence belongs to’t, give your friend
Some touch of your late business: affairs, that
walk—
As they say spirits do—at midnight, have
In them a wilder nature than the business
That seeks dispatch by day.
Lov. My lord, I love you, 10
And durst commend a secret to your ear
Much weightier than this work. The queen’s in
labour,
They say, in great extremity; and fear’d
She’ll with the labour end.
Gar. The fruit she goes with 20
I pray for heartily, that it may find
Good time, and live: but for the stock, Sir
Thomas,
I wish it grubb’d up now.
Lov. Methinks I could
Cry the amen; and yet my conscience says 24
She’s a good creature, and, sweet lady, does
Deserve our better wishes.
Gar. But, sir, sir,
Hear me, Sir Thomas: you’re a gentleman
Of mine own way; I know you wise, religious;
And, let me tell you, it will ne’er be well, 29
’Twill not, Sir Thomas Lovell, take ’t of me,
Till Cranmer, Cromwell, her two hands, and she,
Sleep in their graves.
Lov. Now, sir, you speak of two
The most remark’d in the kingdom. As for
Cromwell,
Beside that of the jewel-house, is made master
O’ the rolls, and the king’s secretary; further, sir,
Stands in the gap and trade of moe preferments,  
With which the time will load him. The arch-
bishop  
Is the king’s hand and tongue; and who dare  
speak  
One syllable against him?  
Gar. Yes, yes, Sir Thomas,  
There are that dare; and I myself have ventur’d  
To speak my mind of him: and indeed this day,  
Sir,—I may tell it you,—I think I have  
Incens’d the lords o’ the council that he is—  
For so I know he is, they know he is—  
A most arch heretic, a pestilence  
That does infect the land: with which they  
mov’d  
Have broken with the king; who hath so far  
Given ear to our complaint,—of his great grace  
And princely care, foreseeing those fell mischiefs  
Our reasons laid before him,—hath commanded  
To-morrow morning to the council-board  
He be converted. He’s a rank weed, Sir Thomas,  
And we must root him out. From your affairs  
I hinder you too long: good-night, Sir Thomas!  
Lov. Many good-nights, my lord. I rest your  
servant.  
[Exeunt Gardiner and Page.  

Enter the King and Suffolk.  
K. Hen. Charles, I will play no more to-night;  
My mind’s not on’t; you are too hard for me.  
Suf. Sir, I did never win of you before.  
K. Hen. But little, Charles;  
Nor shall not when my fancy’s on my play.  
Now, Lovell, from the queen what is the  
news?  
Lov. I could not personally deliver to her.  
What you commanded me, but by her woman  
I sent your message; who return’d her thanks  
In the great’st humbleness, and desir’d your  
highness  
Most heartily to pray for her.  
K Hen. What sayst thou, ha?  
To pray for her? what! is she crying out?  
Lov. So said her woman; and that her suffer-
ance made  
Almost each pang a death.  
K. Hen. Alas! good lady.  
Suf. God safely quit her of her burden, and  
With gentle travail, to the gladding of  
Your highness with an heir!  
K. Hen. ’Tis midnight, Charles;  
Prithie, to bed; and in thy prayers remember  
The estate of my poor queen. Leave me alone;  
For I must think of that which company  
Would not be friendly to.  
Suf. I wish your highness  
A quiet night; and my good mistress will  
Remember in my prayers.  
K. Hen. Charles, good-night.  
[Exit Suffolk.  

Enter Sir Anthony Denny.  
Well, Sir, what follows?  
Den. Sir, I have brought my lord the arch-
bishop,  
As you commanded me.  
K. Hen. Ha! Canterbury?  
Den. Ay, my good lord.  
K. Hen. ’Tis true: where is he, Denny?  
Den. He attends your highness’ pleasure.  
K. Hen. Bring him to us.  
[Exit Denny.  
Lov. [Aside.] This is about that which the  
bishop spake:  
I am happily come hither.  

Re-enter Denny, with Cranmer.  
K. Hen. Avoid the gallery.  
[LOVELL seems to stay.  
Ha! I have said. Begone.  
What!—  
[Exeunt Lovell and Denny.  
Cran. I am fearful. Wherefore frowns he  
thus?  
’Tis his aspect of terror: all’s not well.  
K. Hen. How now, my lord! You do desire to  
know  
Wherefore I sent for you.  
Cran. [Kneeling.] It is my duty  
To attend your highness’ pleasure.  
K. Hen. Pray you, arise,  
My good and gracious Lord of Canterbury.  
Come, you and I must walk a turn together;  
I have news to tell you: come, come, give me  
your hand.  
Ah! my good lord, I grieve at what I speak,  
And am right sorry to repeat what follows.  
I have, and most unwillingly, of late  
Heard many grievous, I do say, my lord,  
Grievous complaints of you; which, being con-
sider’d,  
Have mov’d us and our council, that you shall  
This morning come before us; where, I know,  
You cannot with such freedom purge yourself,  
But that, till further trial in those charges  
Which will require your answer, you must take  
Your patience to you, and be well contented  
To make your house our Tower: you a brother  
of us,  
It fits we thus proceed, or else no witness  
Would come against you.  
Cran. [Kneeling.] I humbly thank your high-
ness;  
And am right glad to catch this good occasion  
Most thoroughly to be winnow’d, where my chaff
KING HENRY THE EIGHTH

112 And corn shall fly asunder, for I know Than I myself, poor man.

K. Hen. Stand up, good Canterbury: Thy truth and thy integrity is rooted In us, thy friend: give me thy hand, stand up: Prifeth, let’s walk. Now, by my holidame, What manner of man are you? My lord, I look’d You would have given me your petition, that I should have ta’en some pains to bring together Yourself and your accusers; and to have heard you, Without indulgence, further.

Cran. Most dread liege, The good I stand on is my truth and honesty: If they shall fail, I, with mine enemies, Will triumph o’er my person; which I weigh not, Being of those virtues vacant. I fear nothing What can be said against me.

K. Hen. Know you not How your state stands i’ the world, with the whole world? Your enemies are many, and not small; their practices Must bear the same proportion; and not ever The justice and the truth o’ the question carries The due o’ the verdict with it. At what ease Might corrupt minds procure knowles as corrupt To swear against you? such things have been done. You are potently oppos’d, and with a malice Of so great size. Ween you of better luck, I mean in perjur’d witness, than your master, Whose minister you are, whiles here he liv’d Upon this naughty earth? Go to, go to; You take a precipice for no leap of danger, And woo your own destruction.

Cran. God and your majesty Protect mine innocence! or I fall into The trap is laid for me!

K. Hen. Be of good cheer; They shall no more prevail than we give way to. Keep comfort to you; and this morning see You do appear before them. If they shall chance, In charging you with matters, to commit you, The best persuasions to the contrary Fail not to use, and with what vehemency The occasion shall instruct you: if entreaties Will render you no remedy, this ring Deliver them, and your appeal to us. There make before them. Look! the good man sweeps;

He’s honest, on mine honour. God’s best mother! I swear he is true-hearted; and a soul None better in my kingdom. Get you gone, And do as I have bid you. [Exit CRANMER.] He has strangled His language in his tears.

Enter an Old Lady.

Gent. [Within.] Come back: what mean you? Old L. I’ll not come back; the tidings that I bring Will make my boldness manners. Now, good angels Fly o’er thy royal head, and shade thy person Under their blessed wings!

K. Hen. Now, by thy looks I guess thy message. Is the queen deliver’d? Say, ay; and of a boy.

Old L. Ay, ay, my liege; And of a lovely boy: the God of heaven Both now and ever bless her! ’tis a girl, Promises boys hereafter. Sir, your queen Desires your visitation, and to be Acquainted with this stranger: ’tis as like you As cherry is to cherry.

K. Hen. Lovell!

Re-enter Lovell.

Lov. Sir!

K. Hen. Give her a hundred marks. I’ll to the queen. [Exit. Old L. A hundred marks! By this light, I’ll ha’ more. An ordinary groom is for such payment: I will have more, or scold it out of him. Said I for this the girl was like to him? I will have more, or else unsay’t; and now, While it is hot, I’ll put it to the issue. [Exeunt.

SCENE II.—The Lobby before the Council-Chamber.

Enter CRANMER, Pursuivants, Pages, &c., attending.

Cran. I hope I am not too late; and yet the gentleman, That was sent to me from the council, pray’d me To make great haste. All fast? what means this? Ho! Who waits there?

Enter Keeper.

Sure, you know me?

Keep. Yes, my lord; But yet I cannot help you.
Enter Doctor Butts.

Cran. Why?

Cran. Keep. Your Grace must wait till you be call'd for.

Enter Doctor Butts.

Butts. [Aside.] This is a piece of malice. I am glad I came this way so happily: the king shall understand it presently.

Cran. [Aside.] Tis Butts, the king's physician. As he past along, how earnestly he cast his eyes upon me. Pray heaven he sound not my disgrace! For certain, this is of purpose laid by some that hate me,—God turn their hearts! I never sought their malice,—To quench mine honour: they would shame to make me wait else at door, a fellow-counsellor. 'Mong boys, grooms, and lackeys. But their pleasures must be fulfill'd, and I attend with patience.

Enter, at a window above, the King and Butts.

Butts. I'll show your Grace the strangest sight,—

K. Hen. What's that, Butts?

Butts. I think your highness saw this many a day.

K. Hen. Body o' me, where is it?

Butts. There, my lord, the high promotion of his Grace of Canterbury; who holds his state at door, 'mongst pursuivants, pages, and footboys.

K. Hen. Ha! Tis he, indeed: Is this the honour they do one another? 'Tis well there's one above 'em yet. I had thought they had parted so much honesty among 'em,—At least, good manners,—as not thus to suffer A man of his place, and so near our favour, To dance attendance on their lordships' pleasures, And at the door too, like a post with packets. By holy Mary, Butts, there's knavery: Let 'em alone, and draw the curtain close; We shall hear more anon. [Exeunt above.

Scene III.—The Council-Chamber.

Enter the Lord Chancellor, the Duke of Suffolk, the Duke of Norfolk, Earl of Surrey, Lord Chamberlain, Gardiners, and Cromwell. Well. The Chancellor places himself at the upper end of the table on the left hand; a seat being left void above him, as for the Archbishop of Canterbury. The rest seat themselves in order on each side. Cromwell at the lower end as secretary. Keeper at the door.

Chan. Speak to the business, Master secretary:

Why are we met in council?

Crom. Please your honours, the chief cause concerns his Grace of Canterbury.

Gar. Has he had knowledge of it?

Crom. Yes.

Nor. Who waits there? Keep. Without, my noble lords?

Gar. Yes.

Keep. My lord archbishop: And has done half-an-hour, to know your pleasures.

Chan. Let him come in. Keep. Your Grace may enter now.

[Cranmer enters and approaches the council-table.

Chan. My good lord archbishop, I'm very sorry To sit here at this present and behold That chair stand empty: but we all are men, In our own nature frail, and capable Of our flesh; few are angels: out of which frailty And want of wisdom, you, that best should teach us, Have misdemean'd yourself, and not a little, Toward the king first, then his laws, in filling The whole realm, by your teaching and your chaplains,— For so we are inform'd,—with new opinions, Divers and dangerous; which are heresies, And, not reform'd, may prove pernicious. Gar. Which reformation must be sudden too, My noble lords; for those that tame wild horses Pase'em not in their hands to make 'em gentle; But stop their mouths with stubborn bits, and spur 'em.

Till they obey the manage. If we suffer— Out of our easiness and childish pity To one man's honour—this contagious sickness, Farewell all physic: and what follows then? Commotions, uproars, with a general taint Of the whole state: as, of late days, our neighbours,
The upper Germany, can dearly witness, Yet freshly pitted in our memories. Cran. My good lords, hitherto, in all the progress Both of my life and office, I have labour'd, And with no little study, that my teaching...
And the strong course of my authority
Might go one way, and safely; and the end 36
Was ever, to do well: nor is there living,—
I speak it with a single heart, my lords,—
A man that more detests, more stirs against,
Both in his private conscience and his place, 40
Delasers of a public peace, than I do.
Pray heaven the king may never find a heart
With less allegiance in it! Men, that make
Envy and crooked malice nourishment 44
Dare bite the best. I do beseech your lordships
That, in this case of justice, my accusers,
Be what they will, may stand forth face to face,
And freely urge against me.

Suf. Nay, my lord, 48
That cannot be: you are a counsellor,
And by that virtue no man dare accuse you.

Gar. My lord, because we have business of more moment,
We will be short with you. 'Tis his highness' pleasure,
And our consent, for better trial of you,
From hence you be committed to the Tower;
Where, being but a private man again,
You shall know many dare accuse you boldly,
More than I fear, you are provided for. 57

Cran. Ah! my good Lord of Winchester, I thank you;
You are always my good friend: if your will pass,
I shall both find your lordship judge and juror,
You are so merciful. I see your end; 61
'Tis my undoing: love and meekness, lord,
Become a churchman better than ambition:
Win straying souls with modesty again, 64
Cast none away. That I shall clear myself,
Lay all the weight ye can upon my patience,
I make as little doubt, as you do conscience,
In doing daily wrongs. I could say more,
But reverence to your calling makes me modest.

Gar. My lord, my lord, you are a sectary;
That's the plain truth: your painted gloss discov-

To men that understand you, words and weak-

Crom. My Lord of Winchester, you are a little, 72
By your good favour, too sharp; men so noble,
However faulty, yet should find respect
For what they have been: 'Tis a cruelty
To load a falling man.

Gar. Good Master secretary,
I cry your honour mercy; you may, worst
Of all this table, say so.

Crom. Why, my lord?

Gar. Do not I know you for a favourer
Of this new sect? Ye are not sound.

Crom. Not sound, I say.

Crom. Would you were half so honest!
Men's prayers then would seek you, not their fears.

Gar. I shall remember this bold language.

Crom. Remember your bold life too.

Cham. This is too much;
Forbear, for shame, my lords.

Gar. I have done.

Crom. And I.

Cham. Then thus for you, my lord: it stands agreed,
I take it, by all voices, that forthwith 68
You be convey'd to the Tower a prisoner;
There to remain till the king's further pleasure
Be known unto us. Are you all agreed, lords? 76
All. We are.

Cran. Is there no other way of mercy,
But I must needs to the Tower, my lords?

Gar. What other 93
Would you expect? You are strangely trouble-

Let some o' the guard be ready there.

Enter Guard.

Cran. For me?

Gar. Receive him, 96
And see him safe i' the Tower.

Cran. Stay, good my lords;
I have a little yet to say. Look there, my lords;
By virtue of that ring I take my cause
Out of the gripes of cruel men, and give it 100
To a most noble judge, the king my master.

Cham. This is the king's ring.

Suf. 'Tis no counterfeit.

Suf. 'Tis the right ring, by heaven! I told ye all,
When we first put this dangerous stone a-rolling,
'Twould fall upon ourselves.

Nor. Do you think, my lords, 105
The king will suffer but the little finger
Of this man to be vex'd?

Cham. 'Tis now too certain:
How much more is his life in value with him?
Would I were fairly out on't.

Crom. My mind gave me 109
In seeking tales and informations
Against this man—whose honesty the devil
And his disciples only envy at— 112
Ye blew the fire that burns ye: now have at ye!

Enter the KING, frowning on them: he takes
his seat.

Gar. Dread sovereign, how much are we bound to heaven
In daily thanks, that gave us such a prince;
Not only good and wise, but most religious: 116
One that in all obedience makes the Church
The chief aim of his honour; and, to strengthen
That holy duty, out of dear respect,
His royal self in judgment comes to hear
The cause betwixt her and this great offender.

K. Hen. You were ever good at sudden commendations,
Bishop of Winchester; but know, I come not
To hear such flattery now, and in my presence;
They are too thin and bare to hide offences.
To me you cannot reach; you play the spaniel,
And think with wagging of your tongue to win me;
But, whatsoe'er thou tak'st me for, I'm sure
Thou hast a cruel nature and a bloody.
[To Cranmer.] Good man, sit down. Now let me see the proudest
He, that dares most, but wag his finger at thee:
By all that's holy, he had better starve
Than but once think this place becomes thee not.

Sur. May it please your Grace.—

K. Hen. No, sir, it does not please me.
I had thought I had had men of some understanding
And wisdom of my council; but I find none.
Was it discretion, lords, to let this man,
This good man,—few of you deserve that title,—
This honest man, wait like a lousy footboy
At chamber-door? and one as great as you are?
Why, what a shame was this! Did my commission
Bid ye so far forget yourselves? I gave ye
Power as he was a counsellor to try him,
Not as a groom. There's some of ye, I see,
More out of malice than integrity,
Would try him to the utmost, had ye mean;
Which ye shall never have while I live.

Cran. Thus far,
My most dread sov'reign, may it like your Grace
To let my tongue excuse all. What was purpos'd
Concerning his imprisonment, was rather—
If there be faith in men—meant for his trial
And fair purgation to the world, than malice,
I'm sure, in me.

K. Hen. Well, well, my lords, respect him;
Take him, and use him well; he's worthy of it.
I will say thus much for him, if a prince
May be beholding to a subject,
Am, for his love and service, so to him.
Make me no more ado, but all embrace him:
Be friends, for shame, my lords! My Lord of Canterbury,
I have a suit which you must not deny me; that is,
a fair young maid that yet wants baptism,
You must be godfather, and answer for her.

Cran. The greatest monarch now alive may glory
In such an honour: how may I deserve it?
K. Hen. Come, come, my lord, you'd spare your spoons: you shall have two noble partners
with you; the old Duchess of Norfolk, and Lady
Marquess Dorset: will these please you?

Once more, my Lord of Winchester, I charge you,
Embrace and love this man.

Gar. With a true heart
And brother-love I do it.

Cran. And let heaven witness, how dear I hold this confirmation.

K. Hen. Good man! those joyful tears show thy true heart:
The common voice, I see, is verified
Of thee, which says thus, 'Do my Lord of
Canterbury
A shrewd turn, and he is your friend for ever.'
Come, lords, we trifle time away; I long
To have this young one made a Christian.
As I have made ye one, lords, one remain;
So I grow stronger, you more honour gain.

[Exeunt.

SCENE IV.—The Palace Yard.

Noise and tumult within. Enter Porter and his Man.

Port. You'll leave your noise anon, ye rascals.
Do you take the court for Paris-garden? ye rude slaves, leave your gaping.

[Within.] Good Master porter, I belong to the larder.

Port. Belong to the gallows, and be hanged, you rogue! Is this a place to roar in? Fetch me a dozen crab-tree slaves, and strong ones:
these are but switches to 'em. I'll scratch your heads: you must be seeing christenings! Do you look for ale and cakes here, you rude rascals?

Man. Pray, sir, be patient: 'tis as much impossible—
Unless we sweep 'em from the door with cannons—
To scatter 'em, as 'tis to make 'em sleep—
On May-day morning; which will never be.
We may as well push against Paul's as stir 'em.

Port. How got they in, and be hang'd?

Man. Alas, I knownot; how gets the tide in?
As much as one sound veldel of four foot—
You see the poor remainder—could distribute,
I made no spare, sir.

Port. You did nothing, sir.
Man. I am not Samson, nor Sir Guy, nor Colbrand,
To mow 'em down before me; but if I spar'd any
That had a head to hit, either young or old, 25
He or she, cuckold or cuckold-maker,
Let me ne'er hope to see a chine again;
And that I would not for a cow, God save her!

[Within.] Do you hear, Master porter? 29
Port. I shall be with you presently, good
Master puppy. Keep the door close, sirrah.

Man. What would you have me do? 32
Port. What should you do, but knock 'em down by the dozens? Is this Moorfields to muster in? or have we some strange Indian
with the great tool come to court, the women so besiege us? Bless me, what a fry of fornication is at door! On my Christian conscience, this one christening will beget a thousand: here will be father, father-husband, and all together. 40

Man. The spoons will be the bigger, sir. There is a fellow somewhat near the door, he should be a brazier by his face, for, o' my conscience, twenty of the dog days now reign in 's nose: all that stand about him are under the line, they need no other pence. That fire-drake did I hit three times on the head, and three times was his nose discharged against me: he stands there, like a mort-piece, to blow us. There was a haberdasher's wife of small wit near him, that railed upon me till her pinked porringer fell off her head, for kindling such a combustion in the state. I missed the meteor once, and hit that woman, who cried out, 'Clubs!' when I might see from far some forty truncheoners draw to her succour, which were the hope o' the Strand, where she was quartered. They fell on; I made good my place; at length they came to the broomstaff to me; I defied 'em still; when suddenly a file of boys behind 'em, loose shot, delivered such a shower of pebbles, that I was fain to draw mine honour in, and let 'em win the work. The devil was amongst 'em, I think, surely. 64

Port. These are the youths that thunder at a playhouse, and fight for bitten apples; no audience, but the Tribulation of Tower-hill, or the Limbs of Limehouse, their dear brothers, are able to endure. I have some of 'em in Limbo Patrum, and there they are like to dance those three days; besides the running banquet of two beadles, that is to come.

As if we kept a fair here! Where are these porters,
These lazy knaves? Ye have made a fine hand, fellows: 76
There's a trim rabble let in. Are all these
Your faithful friends o' the suburbs? We shall have
Great store of room, no doubt, left for the ladies,
When they pass back from the christening.

Port. An't please your honour, 82
We are but men; and what so many may do,
Not being torn a-pieces, we have done:
An army cannot rule 'em.

Cham. As I live,
If the king blame me for't, I'll lay ye all 84
By the heels, and suddenly; and on your heads
Clap round fines for neglect: ye're lazy knaves;
And here ye lie baiting of bombardes, when
Ye should do service. Hark! the trumpets sound;
They're come already from the christening.
Go, break among the press, and find a way out
To let the troop pass fairly, or I'll find
A Marshalsea shall hold ye play these two months.

Port. Make way there for the princess.

Man. You great fellow,
Stand close up, or I'll make your head ache.

Port. You i' the camlet, get up o' the rail:
I'll pick you o'er the pales else. 88

[Exeunt.]

SCENE V.—The Palace.
Enter trumpets, sounding: then two Aldermen,
Lord Mayor, Garter, Cranmer, Duke of Norfolk,
with his marshal's staff, Duke of Suffolk,
two Noblemen bearing great standing-bowls for the christening gifts; then, four Noblemen bearing a canopy, under which the Duchess of Norfolk, godmother, bearing the child, richly habited in a mantle, &c., train borne by a Lady; then follows the Marchioness of Dorset, the other godmother, and Ladies. The troop pass once about the stage, and Garter speaks.

Gart. Heaven, from thy endless goodness,
send prosperous life, long, and ever happy, to the high and mighty Princess of England, Elizabeth! 4

Flourish. Enter King and Train.

Cran. [Kneeling:] And to your royal Grace,
and the good queen,
My noble partners, and myself, thus pray:
All comfort, joy, in this most gracious lady,
Heaven ever laid up to make parents happy, 3
May hourly fall upon ye!
K. Hen. Thank you, good lord archbishop:
What is her name?
Cran. Elizabeth.
K. Hen. Stand up, lord.
[The King kisses the Child.
With this kiss take my blessing; God protect thee!
Into whose hand I give thy life.
Cran. Amen. 12
K. Hen. My noble gossips, ye have been too prodigal:
I thank ye heartily: so shall this lady
When she has so much English.
Cran. Let me speak, sir,
For heaven now bids me; and the words I utter
Let none think flattery, for they'll find 'em truth.
This royal infant,—heaven still move about her!
Though in her cradle, yet now promises
Upon this land a thousand thousand blessings,
Which time shall bring to ripeness: she shall be—
But few now living can behold that goodness—
A pattern to all princes living with her,
And all that shall succeed: Sabs was never 24
More covetous of wisdom and fair virtue
Than this pure soul shall be: all princely graces,
That mould up such a mighty piece as this is,
With all the virtues that attend the good, 28
Shall still be doubled on her; truth shall nurse her;
Holy and heavenly thoughts still counsel her;
She shall be lov'd and fear'd; her own shall bless her;
Her foes shake like a field of beaten corn, 32
And hang their heads with sorrow; good grows with her.
In her days every man shall eat in safety
Under his own vine what he plants; and sing
The merry songs of peace to all his neighbours.
God shall be truly known; and those about her
From her shall read the perfect ways of honour,
And by those claim their greatness, not by blood.
Nor shall this peace sleep with her; but as when
The bird of wonder dies, the maiden phoenix,
Her ashes new-create another heir
As great in admiration as herself,
So shall she leave her blessedness to one,— 44
When heaven shall call her from this cloud of darkness,—
Who, from the sacred ashes of her honour,
Shall star-like rise, as great in fame as she was,
And so stand fix'd. Peace, plenty, love, truth, terror,
That were the servants to this chosen infant,
Shall then be his, and like a vine grow to him:
Wherever the bright sun of heaven shall shine,
His honour and the greatness of his name 52
Shall be, and make new nations; he shall flourish,
And, like a mountain cedar, reach his branches
To all the plains about him; our children's children
Shall see this, and bless heaven.
K. Hen. Thou speakest wonders.
Cran. She shall be, to the happiness of England,
An aged princess; many days shall see her,
And yet no day without a deed to crown it.
Would I had known no more! but she must die,
She must, the saints must have her, yet a virgin;
A most unspotted lily shall she pass
to the ground, and all the world shall mourn her.
K. Hen. O lord archbishop!
Thou hast made me now a man: never, before
This happy child, did I get any thing.
This oracle of comfort has so pleas'd me,
That when I am in heaven, I shall desire 68
To see what this child does, and praise my Maker.
I thank ye all. To you, my good Lord Mayor,
And your good brethren, I am much beholding;
I have receiv'd much honour by your presence,
And ye shall find me thankful. Lead the way,
lords:
Ye must all see the queen, and she must thank ye;
She will be sick else. This day, no man think
He has business at his house; for all shall stay:
This little one shall make it holiday. [Exeunt.

EPILOGUE.
'Tis ten to one, this play can never please
All that are here: some come to take their ease.
And sleep an act or two; but those, we fear,
We've frighted with our trumpets; so, 'tis clear
They'll say 'tis naught: others, to hear the city
Abus'd extremely, and to cry, 'That's witty!' Which we have not done neither: that, I fear,
All the expected good we're like to hear
For this play of this time, is only in
The merciful construction of good women;
For such a one we show'd 'em: if they smile,
And say 'twill do, I know, within a while
All the best men are ours; for 'tis 'ill hap
If they hold when their ladies bid 'em clap.


TROILUS AND CRESSIDA

DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

PRIAM, King of Troy.
HECTOR,
TROILUS, his Sons.
PARIS,
DEIPHOBUS,
HELENUS,
MARGARELON, a Bastard Son of Priam.
AENEAS, Trojan Commanders.
ANTENOR,
CALCHAS, a Trojan Priest, taking part with the Greeks.
PANDARUS, Uncle to Cressida.
AGAMEMNON, the Grecian General.
MENELAUS, his Brother.
ACHILLES, Ajax, Grecian Commanders.
ULYSSES.

NESTOR, DIOMEDES, Grecian Commanders.
PATROCLUS,
THERSITES, a deformed and scurrilous Grecian.
ALEXANDER, Servant to Cressida.
Servant to Troilus.
Servant to Paris.
Servant to Diomedes.

HELEN, Wife to Menelaus.
ANDROMACHE, Wife to Hector.
CASSANDRA, Daughter to Priam; a prophetess.
CRESSIDA, Daughter to Calchas.

Trojan and Greek Soldiers, and Attendants.

SCENE. — Troy, and the Grecian Camp before it.

PROLOGUE.

In Troy there lies the scene. From isles of Greece
The princes orgulous, their high blood chaf’d,
Have to the port of Athens sent their ships,
Fraught with the ministers and instruments
Of cruel war: sixty and nine, that wore
Their crowns’d regal, from the Athenian bay
Put forth toward Phrygia; and their vow is made
To ransack Troy, within whose strong imures.
The ravish’d Helen, Menelaus’ queen,
With wanton Paris sleeps; and that’s the quarrel.
To Tenedos they come,
And the deep-drawing barks do there disgorge
Their war-like draughtage: now on Dardan plains
The fresh and yet unbruised Greeks do pitch
Their brave pavilions: Priam’s six-gated city,
Dardan, and Tymbria, Ilias, Chelas, Trojan,
And Antenorides, with massy staples
And corresponsive and fulfilling bolts,
Sperr up the sons of Troy.
Now expectation, tickling skittish spirits,
On one and other side, Trojan and Greek,
Sets all on hazard. And hither am I come

A prologue arm’d, but not in confidence
Of author’s pen or actor’s voice, but suited
In like conditions as our argument,
To tell you, fair beholders, that our play
Leaps o’er the vaunt and firstlings of those broils,
Beginning in the middle; starting thence away
To what may be digested in a play.
Like or find fault; do as your pleasures are:
Now good or bad, ’tis but the chance of war.

ACT I.


Enter TROILUS armed, and PANDARUS.

Tro. Call here my varlet, I’ll unarm again:
Why should I war without the walls of Troy,
That find such cruel battle here within?
Each Trojan that is master of his heart,
Let him to field; Troilus, alas! has none.

Pan. Will this gear ne’er be mended?

Tro. The Greeks are strong, and skilful to their strength.
Fierce to their skill, and to their fierceness valiant;
But I am weaker than a woman’s tear,
Tamer than sleep, fonder than ignorance,
Less valiant than the virgin in the night,
And skilless as unpractis’d infancy.
TROILUS AND CRESSIDA

Pan. Well, I have told you enough of this: for my part, I'll not meddle nor make no further. He that will have a cake out of the wheat must marry the grinding. 16

Tro. Have I not married?

Pan. Ay, the grinding; but you must marry the bolting.

Tro. Have I not married?

Pan. Ay, the bolting; but you must marry the leavening.

Tro. Still have I married.

Pan. Ay, to the leavening; but here's yet in the word 'hereafter' the kneading, the making of the cake, the heating of the oven, and the baking; nay, you must stay the cooling too, or you may chance to burn your lips. 28

Tro. Patience herself, what goddess e'er she be, Doth lesser blench at sufferance than I do. At Friam's royal table do I sit; And when fair Cressid comes into my thoughts,— So, traitor! 'when she comes'!—When is she thence? 33

Pan. Well, she looked yesternight fairer than ever I saw her look, or any woman else.

Tro. I was about to tell thee: when my heart, As wedged with a sigh, would rive in twain, 37 Last Hector or my father should perceive me, I have—as when the sun doth light a storm— Buried this sigh in wink of a smile; But sorrow, that is couch'd in seeming gladness, Is like that mirth fate turns to sudden sadness.

Pan. An her hair were not somewhat darker than Helen's,—well, go to,—there were no more comparison between the women: but, for my part, she is my kinswoman; I would not, as they term it, praise her, but I would somebody had heard her talk yesterday, as I did: I will not disparage your sister Cassandra's wit, but— 49

Tro. O Pandarus! I tell thee, Pandarus,— When I do tell thee, there my hopes lie drown'd, Reply not in how many fathoms deep 52 They lie indrench'd. I tell thee I am mad In Cressid's love: thou answer'st, she is fair; Pour'st in the open ulcer of my heart Her eyes, her hair, her cheek, her gait, her voice; Handlest in thy discourse, Of that her hand, In whose comparison all whites are ink, Writing their own reproach; to whose soft seizure The cygnet's down is harsh, and spirit of sense Hard as the palm of ploughman: this thou tell'st me, 61 As true thou tell'st me, when I say I love her; But, saying thus, instead of oil and balm,

Thou lay'st in every gash that love hath given me

The knife that made it.

Pan. I speak no more than truth.

Tro. Thou dost not speak so much.

Pan. Faith, I'll not meddle in't. Let her be as she is: if she be fair, 'tis the better for her; an she be not, she has the mends in her own hands.

Tro. Good Pandarus, how now, Pandarus! 72

Pan. I have had my labour for my travail; ill-thought on of her, and ill-thought on of you: gone between, and between, but small thanks for my labour.

Tro. What! art thou angry, Pandarus? what! with me?

Pan. Because she's kin to me, therefore she's not so fair as Helen: an she were not kin to me, she would be as fair on Friday as Helen is on Sunday. But what care I? I care not an she were a black-a-moor; 'tis all one to me.

Tro. Say I she is not fair?

Pan. Do not care whether you do or no. She's a fool to stay behind her father: let her to the Greeks; and so I'll tell her the next time I see her. For my part, I'll meddle nor make no more i' the matter.

Tro. Pandarus,—

Pan. Not I.

Tro. Sweet Pandarus,—

Pan. Pray you, speak no more to me! I will leave all as I found it, and there an end. 93

[Exit PANDARUS. An alarum.

Tro. Peace, you ungracious clowns! peace, rude sounds!

Fools on both sides! Helen must needs be fair, When with your blood you daily paint her thus. I cannot fight upon this argument; It is too strav'd a subject for my sword. But Pandarus,—O gods! how do you plague me. I cannot come to Cressid but by Pandar; And he's as tetchy to be woo'd to woo As she is stubborn-chaste against all suit. Tell me, Apollo, for thy Daphne's love, What Cressid is, what Pandar, and what we? Her bed is India; there she lies, a pearl; Between our Ilium and where she resides Let it be call'd the wild and wandering flood; Ourselves the merchant, and this sailing Pandar Our doubtful hope, our convoy and our bark. 109

Alarum. Enter AENEAS.

Aene. How now, Prince Troilus! wherefore not afield?

Tro. Because not there: this woman's answer sorts,

For womanish it is to be from thence.
What news, Æneas, from the field to-day?
Æne. That Paris is returned home, and hurt.
Tro. By whom, Æneas?
Æne. Troilus, by Menelaus.
Tro. Let Paris bleed: 'tis but a scar to scorn;
Paris is gor'd with Menelaus' horn. [Alarum.
Æne. Hark, what good sport is out of town to-day! 118
Tro. Better at home, if 'would I might' were 'may'.
But to the sport abroad: are you bound thither?
Æne. In all swift haste.
Tro. Come, go we then together. [Execunt.

SCENE II.—The Same. A Street.

Enter CRESSIDA and ALEXANDER.

Cres. Who were those went by?
Alex. Queen Hecuba and Helen.
Cres. And whither go they?
Alex. Up to the eastern tower,
Whose height commands as subject all the vale,
To see the battle. Hector, whose patience
Is as a virtue fix'd, to-day was mov'd:
He chid Andromache, and struck his armourer;
And, like as there were husbandry in war,
Before the sun rose he was harness'd light,
And to the field goes he; where every flower
Did, as a prophet, weep what it foresaw
In Hector's wrath.

Cres. What was his cause of anger?
Alex. The noise goes, this: there is among
The Greeks a lord of Trojan blood, nephew to Hector;
They call him Ajax.
Cres. Good; and what of him?
Alex. They say he is a very man per se
And stands alone.
Cres. So do all men, unless they are drunk, sick, or have no legs.
Alex. This man, lady, hath robbed many
beasts of their particular additions: he is as
valiant as the lion, churlish as the bear, slow as
the elephant: a man into whom nature hath
so crowded humours that this valour is crushed into
folly, his folly sauced with discretion: there is
no man hath a virtue that he hath not a glimpse of,
or any man an attain but he carries some
stain of it. He is melancholy without cause, and
merry against the hair; he hath the joints of
every thing, but every thing so out of joint that
he is a gouty Briareus, many hands and no use;
or purblind Argus, all eyes and no sight. 31

Cres. But how should this man, that makes
me smile, make Hector angry?
Alex. They say he yesterday coped Hector in
the battle and struck him down; the disdain
and shame whereof hath ever since kept Hector
fasting and waking.
Cres. Who comes here?

Enter PANDARUS.

Alex. Madam, your uncle Pandarus.
Cres. Hector's a gallant man. 40
Alex. As may be in the world, lady.
Pan. What's that? what's that?
Cres. Good morrow, uncle Pandarus.
Pan. Good morrow, cousin Cressid. What
do you talk of? Good morrow, Alexander.
How do you, cousin? When were you at Ilium?
Cres. This morning, uncle. 47
Pan. What were you talking of when I came?
Was Hector armed and gone ere ye
came to Ilium? Helen was not up, was she?
Cres. Hector was gone, but Helen was not up.
Pan. E'en so: Hector was stirring early. 52
Cres. That were we talking of, and of his anger.
Pan. Was he angry?
Cres. So he says here.
Pan. True, he was so; I know the cause too:
he'll lay about him to-day, I can tell them that:
and there's Troy will not come far behind
him; let them take heed of Troy, I can tell
them that too. 60
Cres. What! is he angry too?
Pan. Who, Troilus? Troilus is the better
man of the two.
Cres. O Jupiter! there's no comparison. 64
Pan. What! not between Troilus and Hector?
Do you know a man if you see him?
Cres. Ay, if I ever saw him before and knew
him.
Pan. Well, I say Troilus is Troilus.
Cres. Then you say as I say; for I am sure
he is not Hector.
Pan. No, nor Hector is not Trojan in some
degrees.
Cres. 'Tis just to each of them; he is himself.
Pan. Himself! Alas, poor Troilus, I would
he were. 76
Cres. So he is.
Pan. Condition, I had gone bare-foot to India.
Cres. He is not Hector.
Pan. Himself! no, he's not himself. Would
's were himself: well, the gods are above;
time must friend or end: well, Troilus, well, I
would my heart were in her body. No, Hector
is not a better man than Troilus. 84
Cres. Excuse me.
Pan. He is elder.
Cres. Pardon me, pardon me.
Pan. Th' other's not come to 't; you shall tell
me another tale when the other's come to 't.
Hector shall not have his wit this year.
Cres. He shall not need it if he have his own.
Pan. Nor his qualities.
Cres. No matter.
Pan. Nor his beauty.
Cres. 'Twould not become him; his own's better.
Pan. You have no judgment, niece: Helen herself swore th' other day, that Troilus, for a brown favour,—for so 'tis I must confess,—not brown neither,—
Cres. No, but brown.
Pan. Faith, to say truth, brown and not brown.
Cres. To say the truth, true and not true.
Pan. She prais'd his complexion above Paris.
Cres. Why, Paris hath colour enough.
Pan. So he has.
Cres. Then Troilus should have too much; if she praised him above, his complexion is higher than his: he having colour enough, and the other higher, is too flaming a praise for a good complexion. I had as lief Helen's golden tongue had commended Troilus for a copper nose.
Pan. I swear to you, I think Helen loves him better than Paris.
Cres. Then she's a merry Greek indeed.
Pan. Nay, I am sure she does. She came to him th' other day into the compassed window, and, you know, he has not past three or four hairs on his chin,—
Cres. Indeed, a tapster's arithmetic may soon bring his particulars therein to a total.
Pan. Why, he is very young; and yet will he, within three pound, lift as much as his brother Hector.
Cres. Is he so young a man, and so old a lifter?
Pan. But to prove to you that Helen loves him: she came and puts me her white hand to his cloven chin,—
Cres. Juno have mercy! how came it cloven?
Pan. Why, you know, 'tis dimpled. I think his smiling becomes him better than any man in all Phrygia.
Cres. O! he smiles valiantly.
Pan. Does he not?
Cres. O! yes, an 'twere a cloud in autumn.
Pan. Why, go to, then. But to prove to you that Helen loves Troilus,

Cres. Troilus will stand to the proof, if you'll prove it so.
Pan. Troilus! why he esteems her no more than I esteem an addle egg.
Cres. If you love an addle egg as well as you love an idle head, you would eat chickens in the shell.
Pan. I cannot choose but laugh, to think how she tickled his chin: indeed, she has a marvell's white hand, I must needs confess,—
Cres. Without the rack.
Pan. And she takes upon her to spy a white hair on his chin.
Cres. Alas! poor chin! many a wart is richer.
Pan. But there was such laughing: Queen Hecuba laughed that her eyes ran o'er.
Cres. With millstones.
Pan. And Cassandra laughed.
Cres. But there was more temperate fire under the pot of her eyes: did her eyes run o'er too?
Pan. And Hector laughed.
Cres. At what was all this laughing?
Pan. Marry, at the white hair that Helen spied on Troilus' chin.
Cres. An't had been a green hair, I should have laughed too.
Pan. They laughed not so much at the hair as at his pretty answer.
Cres. What was his answer?
Pan. Quoth she, 'Here's but one-and-fifty hairs on your chin, and one of them is white.'
Cres. This is her question.
Pan. That's true; make no question of that. 'One-and-fifty hairs, quoth he, 'and one white: that white hair is my father, and all the rest are his sons.' 'Jupiter!' quoth she, 'which of these hairs is Paris, my husband?' 'The forked one,' quoth he; 'pluck't out, and give it him.' But there was such laughing, and Helen so blushed, and Paris so chafed, and all the rest so laughed, that it passed.
Cres. So let it now, for it has been a great while going by.
Pan. Well, cousin, I told you a thing yesterday; think on't.
Cres. So I do.
Pan. I'll be sworn 'tis true; he will weep you, an 'twere a man born in April.
Cres. And I'll spring up in his tears, an 'twere a nettle against May. [A retreat sounded.
Pan. Hark! they are coming from the field. Shall we stand up here, and see them as they pass toward Ilium? good niece, do; sweet niece, Cressida.
Cres. At your pleasure.
Pan. Here, here; here's an excellent place: here we may see most bravely. I'll tell you them all by their names as they pass by, but mark Troilus above the rest.
Cres. Speak not so loud.

Æneas passes over the stage.
Pan. That's Æneas: is not that a brave man? he's one of the flowers of Troy, I can tell you: but mark Troilus; you shall see anon.
TROILUS AND CRESSIDA

ACT I, SC. II.

ANTenor passes over.

Cres. Who's that?
Pan. That's Antenor: he has a shrewd wit, I can tell you; and he's a man good enough: he's one o' the soundest judgments in Troy, whosoever, and a proper man of person. When comes Troilus? I'll show you Troilus anon: if he see me, you shall see him nod at me.

Cres. Will he give you the nod?
Pan. You shall see.
Cres. If he do, the rich shall have more.

HECTOR passes over.

Pan. That's Hector, that, that, look you, that; there's a fellow! Go thy way, Hector! There's a brave man, niece. O brave Hector! Look how he looks! there's a countenance! Is't not a brave man?
Cres. O! a brave man.
Pan. Is a' not? It does a man's heart good. Look you what hacks are on his helmet! look you yonder, do you see? look you there: there's no jesting; there's laying on, take off who will, as they say: there be hacks!
Cres. Be those with swords?
Pan. Swords? any thing, he cares not; an the devil come to him, it's all one: by God's lid, it does one's heart good. Yonder comes Paris, yonder comes Paris.

PARIS crosses over.

Look ye yonder, niece: is't not a gallant man too, is't not? Why, this is brave now. Who said he came hurt home to-day? he's not hurt: why, this will do Helen's heart good now, ha! Would I could see Troilus now! You shall see Troilus anon.
Cres. Who's that?

HELENUS passes over.

Cres. Can Helenus fight, uncle?
Pan. Helenus? no, yes, he'll fight indifferent well. I marvel where Troilus is. Hark! do you not hear the people cry, 'Troilus?' Helenus is a priest.
Cres. What sneaking fellow comes yonder?

TROILUS passes over.

Pan. Where? yonder? that's Deiphobus. 'Tis Troilus! there's a man, niece! Hem! Brave Troilus! the prince of chivalry!
Cres. Peace! for shame, peace!
Pan. Mark him; note him: O brave Troilus! look well upon him, niece: look you how his sword is bloodied, and his helmet more hacked than Hector's; and how he looks, and how he goes! O admirable youth! he ne'er saw three-and-twenty. Go thy way, Troilus, go thy way! Had I a sister were a grace, or a daughter a goddess, he should take his choice. O admirable man! Paris? Paris is dirt to him; and, I warrant, Helen, to change, would give an eye to boot.
Cres. Here come more.

Soldiers pass over.

Pan. Asses, fools, dolts! chaff and bran, chaff and bran! porridge after meat! I could live and die i' the eyes of Troilus. Ne'er look, ne'er look; the eagles are gone: crows and daws, crows and daws! I had rather be such a man as Troilus than Agamemnon and all Greece.
Cres. There is among the Greeks Achilles, a better man than Troilus.
Pan. Achilles! a drayman, a porter, a very camel.
Cres. Well, well.
Pan. 'Well, well!' Why, have you any discretion? have you any eyes? Do you know what a man is? Is not birth, beauty, good shape, discourse, manhood, learning, gentleness, virtue, youth, liberality, and so forth, the spice and salt that season a man?
Cres. Ay, a minced man: and then to be baked with no date in the pie, for then the man's date's out.
Pan. You are such a woman! one knows not at what ward you lie.
Cres. Upon my back, to defend my belly; upon my wit, to defend my wiles; upon my secrecy, to defend mine honesty; my mask, to defend my beauty; and you, to defend all these: and at all these wards I lie, at a thousand watches.
Pan. Say one of your watches.
Cres. Nay, I'll watch you for that; and that's one of the chiefest of them too: if I cannot ward what I would not have hit, I can watch you for telling how I took the blow; unless it swell past hiding, and then it's past watching.
Pan. You are such another!

Enter TROILUS' Boy.

Boy. Sir, my lord would instantly speak with you.
Pan. Where?
Boy. At your own house; there he unarm's him.
Pan. Good boy, tell him I come. [Exit Boy.] I doubt he be hurt. Fare ye well, good niece.
Cres. Adieu, uncle.
Pan. I'll be with you, niece, by and by.
TROILUS AND CRESSIDA

Act I, Sc. II.
Cres. To bring, uncle? Pan. Ay, a token from Troilus. Cres. By the same token, you are a bawd. [Exit Pandarus. Words, vows, gifts, tears, and love’s full sacrifice He offers in another’s enterprise; But more in Troilus thousand-fold I see Than in the glass of Pandar’s praise may be. Yet hold I off. Women are angels, wooing: Things won are done; joy’s soul lies in the doing: That she belov’d knows nought that knows not this: Men prize the thing ungain’d more than it is: That she was never yet, that ever knew Love got so sweet as when desire did sue. Therefore this maxim out of love I teach: Achievement is command; ungain’d, beseech: Then though my heart’s content firm love doth bear, Nothing of that shall from mine eyes appear. [Exeunt.

SCENE III.—The Grecian Camp. Before Agamemnon’s Tent.

Senet. Enter Agamemnon, Nestor, Ulysses, Menelaus, and Others.

Agam. Princes, What grief hath set the jaundice on your cheeks? The ample proposition that hope makes In all designs begun on earth below Fails in the promis’d largeness: checks and disasters Grow in the veins of actions highest rear’d; As knots, by the confux of meeting sap, Infect the sound pine and divert his grain Tortive and errant from his course of growth. Nor, princes, is it matter new to us That we come short of our suppose so far That after seven years’ siege yet Troy walls stand; Sith every action that hath gone before, Whereof we have record, trial did draw Bias and thwart, not answering the aim, And that unbodied figure of the thought That gave’t surmised shape. Why then, you princes, Do you with cheeks abaah’d behold our works, And call them shames? which are indeed nought else But the protractive trials of great Jove, To find persistive constancy in men; The fineness of which metal is not found In Fortune’s love; for then, the bold and coward, The wise and fool, the artist and unread, The hard and soft, seem all affin’d and kin:

But, in the wind and tempest of her frown, Distinction, with a broad and powerful fan, Puffing at all, winnows the light away; And what hath mass or matter, by itself Lies rich in virtue and unmingled. Nest. With due observance of thy god-like seat, Great Agamemnon, Nestor shall apply Thy latest words. In the reproof of chance Lies the true proof of men: the sea being smooth, How many shallow bauble boats dare sail Upon her patient breast, making their way With those of nobler bulk! But let the ruffian Boreas once enrage The gentle Thetis, and anon behold The strong-ribb’d bark through liquid mountains cut, Bounding between the two moist elements, Like Perseus’ horse: where’s then the saucy boat Whose weak untimber’d sides but even now Co-rivall’d greatness? either to harbour fled, Or made a toast for Neptune. Even so Doth valour’s show and valour’s worth divide In storms of fortune; for in her ray and brightness The herd hath more annoyance by the breeze Than by the tiger; but when the splitting wind Makes flexible the knees of knotted oaks, And flies fled under shade, why then the thing of courage, As yours’d with rage, with rage doth sympathize, And with an accent tun’d in self-same key, Retorts to chiding fortune.

Ulyss. Agamemnon, Thou great commander, nerve and bone of Greece, Heart of our numbers, soul and only spirit, In whom the tempers and the minds of all Should be shut up, hear what Ulysses speaks. Besides the applause and approbation The which, [To Agamemnon.] most mighty for thy place and sway, [To Nestor.] And thou must reverence for thy stretch’d-out life, I give to both your speeches, which were such As Agamemnon and the hand of Greece Should hold up high in brass; and such again As venerable Nestor, hatch’d in silver, Should with a bond of air, strong as the axletree On which heaven rides, knit all the Greekish ears To his experience’d tongue, yet let it please both, Thou great, and wise, to hear Ulysses speak.
Agam. Speak, Prince of Ithaca; and be’t of
less expect
That matter needless, of importless burden,
Divide thy lips, than we are confident,
When rank Thersites opes his mastick jaws,
We shall hear music, wit, and oracle.
Ulyss. Troy, yet upon his basis, had been
down,
And the great Hector’s sword had lack’d a
master,
But for these instances.
The specialty of rule hath been neglected:
And look, how many Grecian tents do stand
Hollow upon this plain, so many hollow ac-
tions.
When that the general is not like the hive
To whom the foragers shall all repair,
What honey is expected? Degree being vizarded,
The unworthiest shows as fairly in the mask.
The heavens themselves, the planets, and this
centre
Observe degree, priority, and place,
Insistence, course, proportion, season, form,
Office, and custom, in all line of order:
And therefore is the glorious planet Sol
In noble eminence enthron’d and spher’d
Amidst the other; whose med’cinable eye
Corrects the ill aspects of planets evil,
And posts, like the commandment of a king,
Sans check, to good and bad: but when the
planets
In evil mixture to disorder wander,
What plagues, and what portents, what mutiny,
What raging of the sea, shaking of earth,
Commotion in the winds, frights, changes,
Horrors,
Divert and crack, rend and deracinate
The unity and married calm of states
Quite from their fixture! Oh! when degree is
shak’d,
Which is the ladder to all high designs,
The enterprise is sick. How could communities,
Degrees in schools, and brotherhoods in cities,
Peaceful commerce from dividable shores
The primogenitive and due of birth,
Prerogative of age, crowns, sceptres, laurels,
But by degree, stand in authentic place?
Take but degree away, untune that string,
And, hark! what discord follows; each thing
meets
In more oppugnancy: the bounded waters
Should lift their bosoms higher than the shores,
And make a sop of all this solid globe:
Strength should be lord of imbecility,
And the rude son should strike his father dead:
Force should be right; or rather, right and
wrong—
Between whose endless jar justice resides—
Should lose their names, and so should justice
too.
Then every thing includes itself in power,
Power into will, will into appetite;
And appetite, a universal wolf,
So doubly seconded with will and power,
Must make perforse a universal prey,
And last eat up himself. Great Agamemnon,
This chaos, when degree is suffocate,
Follows the choking.
And this neglect of degree it is
That by a pace goes backward, with a purpose
It hath to climb. The general’s disdain’d
By him one step below, he by the next,
That next by him beneath; so every step,
Exemplified by the first pace that is sick
Of his superior, grows to an envious fever
Of pale and bloodless emulation:
And ‘tis this fever that keeps Troy on foot,
Not her own sinews. To end a tale of length,
Troy in our weakness lives, not in her strength.
Nest. Most wisely hast Ulysses here dis-
cover’d
The fever whereof all our power is sick.
Agam. The nature of the sickness found,
Ulysses,
What is the remedy?
Ulyss. The great Achilles, whom opinion
crowns
The sinew and the forehead of our host,
Having his ear full of his airy fame,
Grows dainty of his worth, and in his tent
Lies mocking our designs. With him Patroclus
Upon a lazy bed the livelong day
Breaks scurril jests,
And with ridiculous and awkward action—
Which, slanderer, he imitation calls—
He pageants us. Sometime, great Agamemnon,
Thy topless deputation he puts on
And, like a strutting player, whose conceit
Lies in his hamstring, and doth think it rich
To hear the wooden dialogue and sound
"Twixt his stretch’d scoting and the scaffoldage,—
Such to-be-pitied and o’er-wrested seeming
He acts thy greatness in:—and when he speaks,
"Tis like a chime a mending; with terms un-
squar’d,
Which, from the tongue of roaring Typhon
dropp’d,
Would seem hyperboles. At this dusty stuff
The large Achilles, on his press’d bed lolling,
From his deep chest laughs out a loud applause;
Cries, Excellent! 'tis Agamemnon just.
Now play me Nestor; hem, and stroke thy beard,
As he being drest to some oration."
That’s done; — as near as the extremest ends
Of parallels, like as Vulcan and his wife: — 168
Yet good Achilles still cries, ‘Excellent!
’Tis Nestor right. Now play him me, Patroclus,
Arming to answer in a night alarm.’
And then, forsooth, the faint defects of age 172
Must be the scene of mirth; to cough and spit,
And with a palsy-fumbling on his gorget,
Shake in and out the rivet: and at this sport
Sir Valour dies; cries, ‘Oh enough, Patroclus;
Or give me ribs of steel; I shall split all 177
In pleasure of my spleen.’ And in this fashion,
All our abilities, gifts, natures, shapes,
Severals and generals of grace exact, 180
Achievements, plots, orders, preventions,
Excitaments to the field, or speech for truce,
Success or loss, what is or is not, serves
As stuff for these two to make paradoxes. 184
Nest. And in the imitation of these twain—
Whom, as Ulysses says, opinion crowns
With an imperial voice — many are infec’t.
Ajax is grown self-will’d, and bears his head 188
In such a rein, in full as proud a place
As broad Achilles; keeps his tent like him;
Makes factious feasts; rails on our state of war,
Bold as an oracle, and sets Thersites — 192
A slave whose gall coins slanders like a mint—
To match us in comparison with dirt;
To weaken and discredit our exposure,
How rank soever rounded in with danger. 196

Ulyss. They tax our policy, and call it cowardice;
Count wisdom as no member of the war;
Forestall prescience, and esteem no act
But that of hand: the still and mental parts, 200
That do converse how many hands shall strike,
When fitness calls them on, and know by measure
Of their observant toil the enemies’ weight, —
Why, this hath not a finger’s dignity: 204
They call this bed-work, marappey, closet-war;
So that the ram that butters down the wall,
For the great swing and rudeness of his poise,
They place before his hand that made the engine,
Or those that with the fineness of their souls 209
By reason guides his execution.
Nest. Let this be granted, and Achilles’ horse
Makes many Thetis’ sons.  
[Act II. Sc. III.

Act I. Sc. III.  

TROILUS AND CRESSIDA

Enter Æneas.

Agam. What would you ’fore our tent?

Æne. Is this great Agamemnon’s tent, I pray you?

Agam. Even this.

Æne. May one, that is a herald and a prince,
A prince called Hector,—Priam is his father,—
Who in this dull and long-continu’d truce
Is rusty grown: he bade me take a trumpet,
And to this purpose speak: kings, princes, lords!
If there be one among the fairst of Greece
That holds his honour higher than his ease,
That seeks his praise more than he fears his peril,
That knows his valour, and knows not his fear,
That loves his mistress more than in confession,
With truant vows to her own lips he loves,
And dare avow her beauty and her worth
In other arms than hers,—to him this challenge.
Hector, in view of Trojans and of Greeks,
Shall make it good, or do his best to do it,
He hath a lady wiser, fairer, truer,
Than ever Greek did compass in his arms;
And will to-morrow with his trumpet call,
Mid-way between your tents and walls of Troy,
To rouse a Grecian that is true in love:
If any come, Hector shall honour him;
If none, he’ll say in Troy when he retires,
The Grecian dames are sunburnt, and not worth
The splinter of a lance. Even so much.
AGam. This shall be told our lovers, Lord Æneas;
If none of them have soul in such a kind,
We left them all at home: but we are soldiers;
And may that soldier a mere recreant prove,
That means not, hath not, or is not in love!
If then one is, or hath, or means to be,
That one meets Hector; if none else, I am he.
Nest. Tell him of Nestor, one that was a man
When Hector’s grandsire suck’d: he is old now;
But if there be not in our Grecian host
One noble man that hath one spark of fire
To answer for his love, tell him from me,
I’ll hide my silver beard in a gold beaver,
And in my vambrace put this wether’d brawn;
And, meeting him, will tell him that my lady
Was fairer than his grandam, and as chaste
As may be in the world: his youth in flood,
I’ll prove this truth with my three drops of blood.
Æne. Now heavens forbid such scarcity of youth!
Ulyss. Amen.
AGam. Fair Lord Æneas, let me touch your hand;
To our pavilion shall I lead you first.
Achilles shall have word of this intent; 
So shall each lord of Greece, from tent to tent:
Yourself shall feast with us before you go.
And find the welcome of a noble foe.

[Exeunt all but ULYSSES and NESTOR.
Ulyss. Nestor!
Nest. What says Ulysses?
Ulyss. I have a young conception in my brain;
Be you my time to bring it to some shape.
Nest. What is it?
Ulyss. This ‘tis:
Blunt wedges rive hard knots: the seeded pride
That hath to this maturity blown up
In rank Achilles, must or now be cropp’d,
Or, shedding, breed a nursery of like evil,
To overbulk us all.
Nest. Well, and how?
Ulyss. This challenge that the gallant Hector sends,
However it is spread in general name,
Relates in purpose only to Achilles.
Nest. The purpose is perspicuous even as substance.
Whose grossness little characters sum up:
And, in the publication, make no strain.
But that Achilles, were his brain as barr’d
As banks of Libya,—though, Apollo knows!
‘Tis dry enough,—will with great speed of judgment,
Ay, with celerity, find Hector’s purpose.
Pointing on him.
Ulyss. And wake him to the answer, think you?
Nest. Yes, ‘tis most meet: whom may you else oppose.
That can from Hector bring those honours off.
If not Achilles? Though’t be a sportful combat,
Yet in the trial much opinion dwells;
For here the Trojans taste our dearst repute
With their fairest palate: and trust to me, Ulysses,
Our imputation shall be oddly pois’d
In this wild action; for the success,
Although particular, shall give a scantling
Of good or bad unto the general;
And in such indexes, although small pricks
To their subsequent volumes, there is seen
The baby figure of the giant mass
Of things to come at large. It is supposed
He that meets Hector issues from our choice;
And choice, being mutual act of all our souls,
Makes merit her election, and doth boil,
As ‘twere from forth us all, a man distill’d
Out of our virtues; who miscarrying,
What heart receives from hence the conquering part,
To steal a strong opinion to themselves?
Which entertain’d limbs are his instruments,
In no less working than are swords and bows
Directive by the limbs.
TROILUS AND CRESSIDA

ACT I, Sc. III.

Ulyss. Give pardon to my speech:
Therefore 'tis meet Achilles meet not Hector.
Let us like merchants show our foulest wares,
And think perchance 'twill sell; if not, 360
The lustre of the better yet to show
Shall show the better. Do not consent
That ever Hector and Achilles meet;
For both our honour and our shame in this 364
Are dag'd with two strange followers.
Nest. I see them not with my old eyes: what
are they?
Ulyss. What glory our Achilles shares from
Hector,
Were he not proud, we all should share with
him: 368
But he already is too insolent;
And we were better parch in Afric sun
Than in the pride and salt scorn of his eyes,
Should he 'scape Hector fair: if he were
foil'd, 372
Why then did our main opinion crush
In taint of our best man. No; make a lottery;
And by device let blockish Ajax draw
The sort to fight with Hector: among ourselves
Give him allowance as the worthier man, 377
For that will physic the great Myrmidon
Who broils in loud applause; and make him
fall
His crest that prouder than blue Iris bends. 380
If the dull brainless Ajax come safe off,
We'll dress him up in voices: if he fail,
Yet go we under our opinion still
That we have better men. But, hit or miss, 384
Our project's life this shape of sense assumes:
Ajax employ'd plucks down Achilles' plumes.
Nest. Ulysses,
Now I begin to relish thy advice; 388
And I will give a taste of it forthwith
To Agamemnon: go we to him straight.
Two curs shall tame each other: pride alone
Must tarre the mastiffs on, as 'twere their bone.

[Exeunt.

ACT II.

SCENE I.—A Part of the Grecian Camp.

Enter Ajax and Thersites.

Ajax. Thersites!
Ther. Agamemnon, how if he had boils? full,
all over, generally?
Ajax. Thersites!
Ther. And those boils did run? Say so, did
not the general run then? were not that a
botchy core?
Ajax. Dog!
Ther. Then would come some matter from
him: I see none now.

Ajax. Thou bitch-wolf's son, canst thou not
hear?
Feel, then. [Strikes him.
Ther. The plague of Greece upon thee, thou
mongrel beast-witted lord!
Ajax. Speak then, thou winewasted leaven,
speak: I will beat thee into homeliness. 16
Ther. I shall sooner ral thee into wit and
holiness: but I think thy horse will sooner con
an oration than thou learn a prayer without
book. Thou canst strike, canst thou? a red
murrain o' thy jade's tricks!
Ajax. Toadstool, learn me the proclamation.
Ther. Dost thou think I have no sense, thou
strikest me thus?
Ajax. The proclamation!
Ther. Thou art proclaimed a fool, I think.
Ajax. Do not, porpentine, do not: my fingers
itch.
Ther. I would thou didst itch from head to
foot, and I had the scratching of thee; I would
make thee the loathsomest scab of Greece.
When thou art forth in the incursions, thou
strikest as slow as another.
Ajax. I say, the proclamation!
Ther. Thou grumblest and railest every hour
on Achilles, and thou art as full of envy at his
greatness as Cerberus is at Proserpina's beauty,
ay that thou barest at him.
Ajax. Mistress Thersites!
Ther. Thou shouldst strike him.
Ajax. Cobloaf!
Ther. He would pun thee into shivers with
his fist, as a sailor breaks a biscuit.
Ajax. Thou whoreson cur. [Beating him.
Ther. Do, do.
Ajax. Thou stool for a witch!
Ther. Ay, do, do; thou sodden-witted lord!
thou hast no more brain than I have in mine
elbows; an assenego may tutor thee: thou scurvy-
valiant ass! thou art here but to thrash Trojans;
and thou art bought and sold among those of
any wit, like a barbarian slave. If thou use to
beat me, I will begin at thy heel, and tell what
thou art by inches, thou thing of no bowels, thou!
Ajax. You dog!
Ther. You scurvy lord!
Ther. Mars his idiot! do, rudeness; do,
camel; do, do, do.

Enter Achilles and Patroclus.

Achil. Why, how now, Ajax! wherefore do
you this?
Ther. How now, Thersites! what's the matter, man?
Achil. You see him there, do you?
ACT II, SC. II.

TROILUS AND CRESSIDA

Achil. Ay; what's the matter? Ther. Nay, look upon him. Achil. So I do: what's the matter? Ther. Nay, but regard him well. Achil. 'Well!' why, so I do. Ther. But yet you look not well upon him; for, whosesoever you take him to be, he is Ajax. Achil. I know that, fool. Ther. Ay, but that fool knows not himself. Ajax. Therefore I beat thee. Ther. Lo, lo, lo, lo, what medicums of wit he utters! his evasions have ears thus long. I have bobbed his brain more than he has beat my bones: I will buy nine sparrows for a penny, and his pia mater is not worth the ninth part of a sparrow. This lord, Achilles, Ajax, who wears his wit in his belly, and his guts in his head, I'll tell you what I say of him. Achil. What? Ther. I say, this Ajax,—[Ajax offers to strike him. Achil. Nay, good Ajax. Ther. Has not so much wit— Achil. Nay, I must hold you. Ther. As will stop the eye of Helen's needle, for whom he comes to fight. Achil. Peace, fool! Ther. I would have peace and quietness, but the fool will not: he there; that he; look you there. Ajax. O thou damned cur! I shall— Achil. Will you set your wit to a fool's? Ther. No, I warrant you; for a fool's will shame it. Patr. Good words, Therites. Achil. What's the quarrel? Ajax. I bade the vile owl go learn me the tenour of the proclamation, and he rails upon me. Ther. I serve thee not. Ajax. Well, go to, go to. Ther. I serve here voluntary. Achil. Your last service was sufferance, 'twas not voluntary; no man is beaten voluntary: Ajax was here the voluntary, and you as under an impress. Ther. Even so; a great deal of your wit too lies in your sinewes, or else there he liars. Hector shall have a great catch if he knock out either of your brains: a' were as good crack a dusty nut with no kernel. Achil. What, with me too, Therites? Ther. There's Ulysses and old Nestor, whose wit was moudy are your grandsire's had nails on their toes, yoke you like draught-oxen, and make you plough up the wars. Achil. What, what?
Every thirs, soul, 'mongst many thousand dismes,
Hath been as dear as Helen; I mean, of ours:
If we have lost so many tenths of ours,
To guard a thing not ours nor worth to us,
Had it our name, the value of one ten,
What merit's in that reason which denies
The yielding of her up?

*Tro.* Fie, fie! my brother,
Weigh you the worth and honour of a king
So great as our dread father in a scale
Of common ounces? will you with counters sum
The past proportion of his infinite
And buckle in a waist most fathomless
With spans and inches so diminutive
As fears and reasons? fie, for godly shame!  

*Hel.* No marvel, though you bite so sharp at
Reasons,
You are so empty of them. Should not our
Father
Bear the great sway of his affairs with reasons,
Because your speech hath none that tells him so?

*Tro.* You are for dreams and slumbers, broth-
er priest;
You fur your gloves with reason. Here are
Your reasons:
You know an enemy intends you harm;
You know a sword employ'd is pernicious,
And reason flies the object of all harm:
Who marvels then, when Helenus beholds
A Grecian and his sword, if he do set
The very wings of reason to his heels,
And fly like chidden Mercury from Jove,
Or like a star disorb'd? Nay, if we talk of
Reason,
Let's shut our gates and sleep: manhood and
Honor
Should have hare-hearts, would they but fat
Their thoughts
With this cram'd reason: reason and respect
Makeivers pale, and lusthodieject.

*Hect.* Brother, she is not worth what she
doeth
The holding.

*Tro.* What is aught but as 'tis valued?

*Hect.* But value dwells not in particular will;
It holds his estimate and dignity
As well wherein 'tis precious of itself
As in the prizer. 'Tis mad idolatry
To make the service greater than the god;
And the will dotes that is ineluctable
To what infectiously itself affects,
Without some image of the affected merit.

*Tro.* I take to-day a wife, and my election
Is led on in the conduct of my will;
My will enkindled by mine eyes and ears,
Two traded pilot's twixt the dangerous shores

Of will and judgment. How may I avoid,
Although my will distaste what it elected,
The wife I chose? there can be no evasion.
To blench from this and to stand firm by
 Honour.
We turn not back the silks upon the merchant
When we have soil'd them, nor the remainder
Viands
We do not throw in unrespective sink
Because we now are full. It was thought meet
Paris should do some vengeance on the Greeks:
Your breath of full consent bellied his sails;
The seas and winds—old wranglers—took a true
And did him service: he touch'd the ports
desir'd,
And for an old aunt whom the Greeks held
Captive
He brought a Grecian queen, whose youth and
Freshness
Wrinkles Apollo's, and makes stale the morn-
ing.
Why keep we her? the Grecians keep our aunt:
Is she worth keeping? why, she is a pearl,
Whose price hath launch'd above a thousand
Ships,
And turn'd crown'd kings to merchants.
If you 'll avouch 'twas wisdom Paris went,—
As you must needs, for you all cried 'Go, go,'—
If you 'll confess he brought home noble prize,—
As you must needs, for you all clapp'd your
Hands,
And cry'd 'Inestimable!'—why do you now
The issue of your proper wisdoms rate,
And do a deed that Fortune never did,
Beggar the estimation which you priz'd
Richer than sea and land? Of theft most base,
That we have stol'n what we do fear to keep! 93
But thieves unworthy of a thing so stol'n,
That in their country did them that disgrace
We fear to warrant in our native place.

*Cas.* [Within.] Cry, Trojans, cry!

*Pri.* What noise? what shriek?

*Tro.* 'Tis our mad sister, I do know her voice

*Cas.* [Within.] Cry, Trojans!

*Hect.* It is Cassandra.

Enter CASSANDRA, raving.

*Cas.* Cry, Trojans, cry! lend me ten thousand
eyes,
And I will fill them with prophetic tears.

*Hect.* Peace, sister, peace!

*Cas.* Virgins and boys, mid-age and wrinkled
Eld,
Soft infancy, that nothing canst but cry,
Add to my clamours! let us pay betimes
A moiety of that mass of moan to come.
Cry, Trojans, cry! practise your eyes with tears!
TROILUS AND CRESSIDA

Troy must not be, nor goodly Ilion stand; 109
Our firebrand brother, Paris, burns us all,
Cry, Trojans, cry! a Helen and a woeful! 11
Cry, cry! Troy burns, or else let Helen go. [Exit.

Hec. Now, youthful Troilus, do not these
high strains 113
Of divination in our sister work
Some touches of remorse? or is your blood
So madly hot that no discourse of reason, 116
Nor fear of bad success in a bad cause,
Can qualify the same?

Tro. Why, brother Hector,
We may not think the justness of each act
Such and no other than event doth form it, 120
Nor once deject the courage of our minds,
Because Cassandra’s mad; her brain-sick raptures
Cannot distaste the goodness of a quarrel
Which hath our several honours all engag’d 124
To make it gracious. For my private part,
I am no more touch’d than all Priam’s sons;
And Jove forbid there should be done amongst
us
Such things as might offend the weakest spleen
To fight for and maintain. 129

Par. Else might the world convince of levity
As well my undertakings as your counsels;
But I attest the gods, your full consent 132
Gave wings to my propension and cut off
All fears attending on so dire a project:
For what, alas! can these my single arms?
What propugnation is in one man’s valour, 136
To stand the push and enmity of those
This quarrel would excite? Yet, I protest,
Were I alone to pass the difficulties,
And had as ample power as I have will, 140
Paris should ne’er retract what he hath done,
Nor faint in the pursuit.

Prt. Paris, you speak
Like one besotted on your sweet delights:
You have the honey still, but these the gall; 144
So to be valiant is no praise at all.

Par. Sir, I propose not merely to myself
The pleasure such a beauty brings with it;
But I would have the soil of her fair rape 148
Wip’d off, in honourable keeping her.
What treason were it to the sansack’d queen,
Disgrace to your great worths, and shame to me,
Now to deliver her possession up, 152
On terms of base compulsion! Can it be
That so degenerate a strain as this
Should once set footing in your generous
bosoms?
There’s not the meanest spirit on our party 156
Without a heart to dare or sword to draw
When Helen is defended, nor none so noble
Whose life were ill bestow’d or death unfam’d

Where Helen is the subject: then, I say, 160
Well may we fight for her, whom, we know well,
The world’s large spaces cannot parallel.

Hec. Paris and Troilus, you have both said well;
And on the cause and question now in hand 164
Have gloz’d, but superficially; not much
Unlike young men, whom Aristotle thought
Untit to hear moral philosophy.
The reasons you allege do more conduze 168
To the hot passion of distemper’d blood
Than to make up a free determination
’Twixt right and wrong; for pleasure and revenge
Have ears more deaf than adders to the voice
Of any true decision. Nature craving 173
All dues be render’d to their owners: now,
What nearer debt in all humanity
Than wife is to the husband? if this law
Of nature be corrupted through affection,
And that great minds, of partial indulgence
To their benumbed wills, resist the same;
There is a law in each well-order’d nation 180
To curb those raging appetites that are
Most disobedient and refractory.
If Helen then be wife to Sparta’s king,
As it is known she is, these moral laws
Of nature, and of nations, speak aloud
To have her back return’d: thus to persist
In doing wrong extenuates not wrong,
But makes it much more heavy. Hector’s opinion 188
Is this, in way of truth; yet, ne’ertheless,
My spritely brethren, I propend to you
In resolution to keep Helen still;
For ’tis a cause that hath no mean dependence
Upon our joint and several dignities. 193

Tro. Why, there you touch’d the life of our
design:
Were it not glory that we more affected
Than the performance of our heaving spleens,
I would not wish a drop of Trojan blood 197
Spent more in her defence. But, worthy Hector,
She is a theme of honour and renown,
A spur to valiant and magnanimous deeds, 200
Whose present courage may beat down our foes,
And fame in time to come canonize us;
For, I presume, brave Hector would not lose
So rich advantage of a promis’d glory
As smiles upon the forehead of this action
For the wide world’s revenue.

Hec. I am yours,
You valiant offspring of great Priamus.
I have a roisting challenge sent amongst
The dull and factious nobles of the Greeks
Will strike amazement to their drowsy spirits.

781
I was advertis’d their great general slept
Whilst emulation in the army crept: [212 This, I presume, will wake him. [Exeunt.

SCENE III.—The Grecian Camp. Before
ACHILLES’ Tent.

Enter THERSITES.

Ther. How now, THERSITES! what, lost in the
labyrinth of thy fury! Shalt the elephant Ajax
carry it thus? he beats me, and I rail at him:
O worthy satisfaction! Would it were otherwise;
that I could beat him, whilst he railed at me.
‘Stoofo, I’ll learn to conjure and raise devils, but
I’ll see some issue of my spiteful execrations.
Then there’s Achilles, a rare enginer. If Troy be
not taken till these two undermine it, the walls
will stand till they fall of themselves. O! thou
great thunder-darter of Olympus, forget that
thou art Jove, the king of gods, and, Mercury,
lose all the serpentine craft of thy caduceus, if
ye take not that little little less than little wit
from them that they have; which short-armed
ignorance itself knows is so abundant scarce it
will not in circumvention deliver a fly from a
spider, without drawing their massy irons and
cutting the web. After this, the vengeance on
the whole camp! or, rather, the Neapolitan
bone-ache! for that, methinks, is the curse de-
pendant on those that war for a placet. I have
said my prayers, and devil Envy say Amen. What,
ho! my Lord Achilles! 24

Enter PATROCLUS.

Patr. Who’s there? THERSITES! Good THER-
sites, come in and rail.

Ther. If I could have remembered a gilt
counterfeit, thou wouldst not have slipped out
of my contemplation: but it is no matter; thy
self upon thyself! The common curse of man-
kind, folly and ignorance, be thine in great
revenue! heaven bless thee from a tutor, and
discipline come not near thee! Let thy blood be
thy direction till thy death: then, if she that
lays thee out says thou art a fair corpse, I’ll be
sworn and sworn upon’t she never shrouded
any but lazars. Amen. Where’s Achilles? 37

Patr. What! art thou devout? wast thou in
prayer?

Ther. Ay; the heavens hear me! 40

Enter ACHILLES.

Achil. Who’s there?

Patr. THERSITES, my lord.

Achil. Where, where? Art thou come? Why,
my cheese, my digestion, why hast thou not
served thyself in to my table so many meals?

Come, what’s Agamemnon?

Ther. Thy commander, Achilles. Then tell
me, Patroclus, what’s Achilles?

Patr. Thy lord, THERSITES. Then tell me, I
pray thee, what’s thyself?

Ther. Thy knower, Patroclus. Then tell me,
Patroclus, what art thou?

Patr. Thou mayst tell that knowest.

Achil. O! tell, tell.

Ther. I’ll decline the whole question. Aga-
memnon commands Achilles; Achilles is my
lord; I am Patroclus’ knower; and Patroclus is
a fool.

Patr. You rascal!

Ther. Peace, fool! I have not done. Achilles is
a privileged man. Proceed, THERSITES.

Ther. Agamemnon is a fool; Achilles is a
fool; THERSITES is a fool; and, as aforesaid,
Patroclus is a fool.

Achil. Derive this; come.

Ther. Agamemnon is a fool to offer to com-
mand Achilles; Achilles is a fool to be com-
manded of Agamemnon; THERSITES is a fool to
serve such a fool; and Patroclus is a fool
positive.

Patr. Why am I a fool? 72

Ther. Make that demand to the Creator. It
suffices me thou art. Look you, who comes
here?

Achil. Patroclus, I’ll speak with nobody.

Come in with me, THERSITES. [Exit.

Ther. Here is such patchery, such juggling,
and such knavery! all the argument is a
cuckold and a whore; a good quarrel to draw
emulous factions and bleed to death upon. Now,
the dry serpigo on the subject! and war and
lechery confound all! [Exit.

Enter AGAMEMNON, ULYSSES, NESTOR, DIO-
MEDES, and AJAX.

Agam. Where is Achilles?

Patr. Within his tent; but ill-dispos’d, my
lord.

Agam. Let it be known to him that we are
here.

He shent our messengers; and we lay by
Our appertaining, visiting of him:

Let him be told so; lest perchance he think
We dare not move the question of our place,
Or know not what we are.

Patr. I shall say so to him. [Exit.

Ulys. We saw him at the opening of his
tent:

He is not sick.

Ajax. Yes, lion-sick, sick of proud heart: you
TROILUS AND CRESSIDA  
ACT II, SC. III.

may call it melancholy if you will favour the
man; but, by my head, 'tis pride; but why,
why? let him show us a cause. A word, my
lord. [Takes AGAMEMNON aside.
Nest. What moves Ajax thus to bay at him?
Ulyss. Achilles hath inveigled his fool from
him. 101
Nest. Who, Thersites?
Ulyss. He.
Nest. Then will Ajax lack matter, if he have
lost his argument. 105
Ulyss. No; you see, he is his argument that
has his argument, Achilles.
Nest. All the better; their friction is more
our wish than their faction: but it was a strong
composure a fool could disunite.
Ulyss. The anity that wisdom knits not folly
may easily untie. Here comes Patroclus. 112

Re-enter PATROCLUS.
Nest. No Achilles with him.
Ulyss. The elephant hath joints, but none for
courtesy: his legs are a necessity, not for
flexure.
Patr. Achilles bids me say, he is much sorry
If any thing more than your sport and pleasure
Did move your greatness and this noble state
To call upon him; he hopes it is no other; 120
But, for your health and your digestion sake,
An after-dinner's breath.
Agam. Hear you, Patroclus:
We are too well acquainted with these answers:
But his evasion, wing'd thus swift with scorn,
Cannot oufly our apprehensions. 125
Much attribute he hath, and much the reason
Why we ascribe it to him; yet all his virtues,
Not virtuously on his own part beheld,
Do in our eyes begin to lose their gloss,
Yea, like fair fruit in an unwholesome dish,
Are like to rot untasted. Go and tell him,
We come to speak with him; and you shall not
sin
If you do say we think him over-proud
And under-honest, in self-assumption greater
Than in the note of judgment; and worthier
than himself. 132
Here tend the savage strangeness he puts on,
Disguise the holy strength of their command,
And underwrite in an observing kind
His humorous predominance; yea, watch
His pettish lunes, his ebbs, his flows, as if
140 The passage and whole carriage of this action
Rode on his tide. Go tell him this, and add,
That if he overhold his price so much,
We'll none of him; but let him, like an engine
Not portable, lie under this report:
'Bring action hither, this cannot go to war.'
A stirring dwarf we do allowance give
Before a sleeping giant: tell him so. 148
Patr. I shall; and bring his answer pre-
ently. [Exit.
Agam. In second voice we'll not be satis-
fied;
We come to speak with him. Ulysses, enter
you. [Exit ULYSSES.
Ajax. What is he more than another? 152
Agam. No more than what he thinks he is.
Ajax. Is he so much? Do you not think he
thinks himself a better man than I am?
Agam. No question. 156
Ajax. Will you subscribe his thought, and
say he is?
Agam. No, noble Ajax; you are as strong,
as valiant, as wise, no less noble, much more
gentle, and altogether more tractable. 161
Ajax. Why should a man be proud? How
doth pride grow? I know not what pride is.
Agam. Your mind is the clearer, Ajax, and
your virtues the fairer. He that is proud eats
up himself: pride is his own glass, his own
trumpet, his own chronicle; and whatever
praises itself but in the deed, devours the deed
in the praise.
Agam. I do hate a proud man, as I hate the
engendering of toads.
Nest. [Aside.] Yet he loves himself: is't not
strange?

Re-enter ULYSSES.
Ulyss. Achilles will not to the field to-
morrow.
Agam. What's his excuse?
Ulyss. He doth rely on none,
But carries on the stream of his dispose 176
Without observance or respect of any,
In will peculiar and in self-admission.
Agam. Why will he not upon our fair
request
Untent his person and share the air with us?
Ulyss. Things small as nothing, for request's
sake only, 181
He makes important: possess'd he is with
greatness,
And speaks not to himself but with a pride
That quarrels at self-breath: imagin'd worth
Holds in his blood such swoln and hot dis-
course,
185
That 'twixt his mental and his active parts
Kingdom'd Achilles in commotion rages
And batters down himself: what should I say?
He is so plaguy proud, that the death-tokens
of it
Cry 'No recovery.'
Agam. Let Ajax go to him.
Dear lord, go you and meet him in his tent: 'Tis said he holds you well, and will be led 192 At your request a little from himself.

_Ulyss._ O Agamemnon! let it not be so.

We'll consecrate the steps that Ajax makes When they go from Achilles: shall the proud lord 196 That bastes his arrogance with his own seam, And never suffers matter of the world Enter his thoughts, save such as do revolve And ruminate himself, shall he be worship'd Of that we hold an idol more than he? 201 No, this thrice-worthy and right valiant lord Must not so stale his palm, nobly acquir'd; Nor, by my will, assubjugate his merit, — 204 As amply titled as Achilles is, By going to Achilles:

That were to enlard his fat-already pride, And add more coals to Cancer when he burns With entertaining great Hyperion. 209 This lord go to him! Jupiter forbid, And say in thunder, 'Achilles go to him,' _Nest._ [Aside.] Of this is well; he rubs the vein of him. 213 _Dio._ [Aside.] And how his silence drinks up this applause!

_Ajax._ If I go to him, with my armed fist 216 I'll push him o'er the face.

_Agam._ O, no! you shall not go.

_Ajax._ An a' be proud with me, I'll pheeze his pride.

Let me go to him. 220

_Ulyss._ Not for the worth that hangs upon our quarrel.

_Ajax._ A paltry, insolent fellow!

_Nest._ [Aside.] How he describes himself!

_Ajax._ Can he not be sociable?

_Ulyss._ [Aside.] The raven chides blackness.

_Ajax._ I'll let his humours blood.

_Agam._ [Aside.] He will be the physician that should be the patient. 228

_Ajax._ An all men were o' my mind,—

_Ulyss._ [Aside.] Wit would be out of fashion.

_Ajax._ A' should not bear it so, a' should eat swords first: shall pride carry it? 232

_Nest._ [Aside.] An't would, you'd carry half.

_Ulyss._ [Aside.] A' would have ten shares.

_Ajax._ I will knead 'im; I will make him supplie.

_Nest._ [Aside.] He's not yet through warm: force him with praises: pour in, pour in; his ambition is dry.

_Ulyss._ [To Agamemnon.] My lord, you feed too much on this dislike.

_Nest._ Our noble general, do not do so. 240

_Dio._ You must prepare to fight without Achilles.

_Ulyss._ Why, 'tis this naming of him does him harm.

_Here is a man—but 'tis before his face; I will be silent.

_Nest._ Wherefore should you so? 244

He is not emulous, as Achilles is.

_Ulyss._ Know the whole world, he is as valiant.

_Ajax._ A whoreson dog, that shall palter thus with us! Would he were a Trojan! 248

_Nest._ What a vice were it in Ajax now, —

_Ulyss._ If he were proud,—

_Dio._ Or covetous of praise,—

_Ulyss._ Ay, or surly borne,—

_Dio._ Or strange, or self-affected!

_Ulyss._ Thank the heavens, lord, thou art of sweet composure;

Praise him that got thee, her that gave thee suck:

_Fam'd be thy tutor, and thy parts of nature Thrice-fam'd, beyond all erudition: But be that disciplin'd thy arms to fight, Let Mars divide eternity in twain, And give him half: and, for thy vigour, Bull-bearing Milo his addition yield To sinewy Ajax. I will not praise thy wisdom, Which, like a bourn, a pale, a shore, confines Thy spacious and dilated parts: here's Nestor Instructed by the antiquary times, He must, he is, he cannot but be wise; But pardon, father Nestor, were your days As green as Ajax, and your brain so temper'd, You should not have the eminence of him, But be as Ajax.

_Ajax._ Shall I call you father?

_Ulyss._ Ay, my good son.

_Dio._ Be rul'd by him, Lord Ajax.

_Ulyss._ There is no tarrying here; the heart Achilles Keeps thicket. Please it our great general To call together all his state of war; Fresh kings are come to Troy: to-morrow, We must with all our main of power stand fast: And here's a lord,—come knights from east to west, And call their flower, Ajax shall cope the best.

_Agam._ Go we to council. Let Achilles sleep: Light boats sail swift, though greater hulks draw deep. [Exeunt.

**ACT III.**

**SCENE I.—Troy. Priam's Palace.**

_Enter Pandarus and a Servant._

_Pan._ Friend! you! pray you, a word: do not you follow the young Lord Paris?

_Serv._ Ay, sir, when he goes before me.
Pan. You depend upon him, I mean?  
Serv. Sir, I do depend upon the Lord.  
Pan. You depend upon a noble gentleman;  
I must needs praise him.  
Serv. The Lord be praised!  
Pan. You know me, do you not?  
Serv. Faith, sir, superficially.  
Pan. Friend, know me better. I am the Lord Pandarus.  
Serv. I hope I shall know your honour better.  
Pan. I do desire it.  
Serv. You are in the state of grace.  
Pan. Grace! not so, friend; honour and lordship are my titles. [Music within.] What music is this?  
Serv. I do but partly know, sir: it is music in parts.  
Pan. Know you the musicians?  
Serv. Wholly, sir.  
Pan. Who play they to?  
Serv. To the hearers, sir.  
Pan. At whose pleasure, friend?  
Serv. At mine, sir, and theirs that love music.  
Serv. Who shall I command, sir?  
Pan. Friend, we understand not one another: I am too courtly, and thou art too cunning. At whose request do these men play?  
Serv. That's to't, indeed, sir. Marry, sir, at the request of Paris my lord, who is there in person; with him the mortal Venus, the heart-blood of beauty, love's invisible soul.  
Pan. Who, my cousin Cressida?  
Serv. No, sir, Helen: could you not find out that by her attributes?  
Pan. It should seem, fellow, that thou hast not seen the Lady Cressida. I come to speak with Paris from the Prince Troilus: I will make a complimential assault upon him, for my business seethes.  
Serv. Sodden business: there's a stewed phrase, indeed.  

Enter Paris and Helen, attended.  
Pan. Fair be to you, my lord, and to all this fair company! fair desires, in all fair measures, fairly guide them! especially to you, fair queen! fair thoughts be your fair pillow!  
Helen. Dear lord, you are full of fair words.  
Pan. You speak your fair pleasure, sweet queen. Fair prince, here is good broken music.  
Par. You have broke it, cousin; and, by my life, you shall make it whole again: you shall piece it out with a piece of your performance. Tell, he is full of harmony.  
Pan. Truly, lady, no.

Helen. O, sir!  
Pan. Rude, in sooth; in good sooth, very rude.  
Par. Well said, my lord! Well, you say so in fits.  
Pan. I have business to my lord, dear queen. My lord, will you vouchsafe me a word?  
Helen. Nay, this shall not hedge us out: we'll hear you sing, certainly.  
Pan. Well, sweet queen, you are pleasant with me. But, marry, thus, my lord. My dear lord and most esteemed friend, your brother Troilus—  
Helen. My Lord Pandarus; honey-sweet lord,—  
Pan. Go to, sweet queen, go to: commends himself most affectionately to you.  
Helen. You shall not bob us out of our melody: if you do, our melancholy upon your head!  
Pan. Sweet queen, sweet queen! that's a sweet queen, i' faith.  
Helen. And to make a sweet lady sad is a sour offence.  
Pan. Nay, that shall not serve your turn; that shall it not, in truth, la! Nay, I care not for such words: no, no. And, my lord, he desires you, that if the king call for him at supper, you will make his excuse.  
Helen. My Lord Pandarus,—  
Pan. What says my sweet queen, my very sweet queen?  
Par. What exploit's in hand? where sups he to-night?  
Helen. Nay, but my lord,—  
Pan. What says my sweet queen! My cousin will fall out with you. You must know where he sups.  
Par. I'll lay my life, with my dispser Cressida.  
Pan. No, no, no such matter; you are wide. Come, your dispser is sick.  
Par. Well, I'll make excuse.  
Pan. Ay, good my lord. Why should you say Cressida? no, your poor dispser's sick.  
Par. I spy.  
Helen. Why, this is kindly done.  
Pan. My niece is horribly in love with a thing you have, sweet queen.  
Helen. She shall have it, my lord, if it be not my Lord Paris.  
Pan. Hel no, she'll none of him; they two are twain.  
Helen. Falling in, after falling out, may make them three.
Pan. Come, come, I'll hear no more of this.
I'll sing you a song now. 117
Helen. Ay, ay, prithee now. By my troth,
sweet lord, thou hast a fine forehead.
Pan. Ay, you may, you may. 120
Helen. Let thy song be love: this love will
undo us all. O Cupid, Cupid, Cupid!
Pan. Love! ay, that it shall, i' faith.
Par. Ay, good now, love, love, nothing but
love.
Pan. In good troth, it begins so:
[Sings.]
Love, love, nothing but love, still more!
For, oh! love's bow
Shoots back and doe:
The shaft confounds,
Not that it wounds,
But tickles still the sore.
These lovers cry O! O! they die!
Yet that which seems the wound to kill,
Doth turn O! O! to ha! ha! ha!
So dying love lives still:
O! O! a while, but ha! ha! ha!
O! O! groans out for ha! ha! ha!
Heigh-ho!
Helen. In love, i' faith, to the very tip of the
nose.
Par. He eats nothing but doves, love; and
that breeds hot blood, and hot blood begets hot
thoughts, and hot thoughts beget hot deeds, and
hot deeds is love. 145
Pan. Is this the generation of love? hot
blood? hot thoughts, and hot deeds? Why,
they are vipers: is love a generation of vipers?
Sweet lord, who's a-field to-day? 149
Par. Hector, Deiphobus, Helenus, Antenor,
and all the gallantry of Troy: I would fain have
armed to-day, but my Nell would not have it so.
How chance my brother Troilus went not? 153
Helen. He hangs the lip at something: you
know all, Lord Pandarus.
Pan. Not I, honey-sweet queen. I long to
hear how they sped to-day. You'll remember
your brother's excuse?
Par. To a hair.
Pan. Farewell, sweet queen. 160
Helen. Command me to your niece.
Pan. I will, sweet queen.
[Exit. A retreat sounded.
Par. They're come from field: let us to
Priam's hall
To greet the warriors. Sweet Helen, I must
woo you
To help unarm our Hector: his stubborn buckles,
With these your white enchanting fingers
touch'd,
Shall more obey than to the edge of steel
Or force of Greekish sinews; you shall do
more
Than all the island kings,—disarm great He-
tor.
Helen. 'Twill make us proud to be his ser-
vant, Paris;
Yea, what he shall receive of us in duty
Gives us more palm in beauty than we have, 172
Yea, overshines ourself.
Par. Sweet, above thought I love thee.
[Exeunt.
SCENE II.—The Same. PANDARUS' Orchard.
Enter PANDARUS and TROILUS' Boy, meeting.
Pan. How now! where's thy master? at my
cousin Cressida's?
Boy. No, sir; he stays for you to conduct him
thither.

Enter TROILUS.
Pan. O! here he comes. Hownow, how now!
Tro. Sirrah, walk off. 180
[Exit Boy.
Pan. Have you seen my cousin?
Tro. No, Pandarus: I stalk about her door,
Like a strange soul upon the Stygian banks 9
Staying for waftage. O! be thou my Charon,
And give me swift transportance to those fields
Where I may wallow in the lily-beds
Propos'd for the deseruer! O gentle Pandarus!
From Cupid's shoulder pluck his painted
wings,
And fly with me to Cressid.
Pan. Walk here i' the orchard. I'll bring
her straight.
[Exeunt.
Tro. I am giddy, expectation whirls me round.
The imaginary relish is so sweet
That it enchants my sense. What will it be
When that the watery palate tastes indeed
Love's thrice-repur'd nectar? death, I fear me,
Swounding destruction, or some joy too fine,
Too subtle-potent, tun'd too sharp in sweet-
ness
For the capacity of my ruder powers: 24
I fear it much; and I do fear besides
That I shall lose distinction in my joys;
As doth a battle, when they charge on heaps
The enemy flying.

Re-enter PANDARUS.
Pan. She's making her ready: she'll come
straight: you must be witty now. She does so
blush, and fetches her wind so short, as if she
were fray'd with a sprite: I'll fetch her. It is
the prettiest villain: she fetches her breath as
short as a new-ta'en sparrow.
[Exit.
Tro. Even such a passion doth embrace my
bosom;
My heart beats thicker than a fev'rous pulse; 36
And all my powers do their bestowing lose,
Like vassalage at unawares encountering
The eye of majesty.

Re-enter Pandarus with Cressida.

Pan. Come, come, what need you blush? shame's a baby. Here she is now: swear the oaths now to her that you have sworn to me. What! are you gone again? you must be watched ere you be made tame, must you? Come your ways, come your ways; an you draw backward, we'll put you i' the fields. Why do you not speak to her? Come, draw this curtein, and let's see your picture. Alas the day, how loath you are to offend day-light! an 'twere dark, you'd close sooner. So, so, rub on, and kiss the mistress. How now! a kiss in fee-fi-mo! build there, carpenter; the air is sweet. Nay, you shall fight your hearts out ere I part you. The falcon as the tercel, for all the ducks i' the river: go to, go to.

Tro. You have bereft me of all words, lady. 

Pan. Words pay no debts, give her deeds; but she'll bereave you of the deeds too if she call your activity in question. What! billing again? Here's 'In witness whereof the parties interchangeably'—Come in, come in: I'll go get a fire. [Exit.

Cres. Will you walk in, my lord?

Tro. O Cressida! how often have I wished me thus!

Cres. Wished, my lord! The gods grant,—O my lord!

Tro. What should they grant? what makes this pretty abrupton? What too curious dreg espies my sweet lady in the fountain of our love? Cres. More dregs than water, if my fears have eyes.

Tro. Fears make devils of cherubins; they never see truly.

Cres. Blind fear, that seeing reason leads, finds safer footing than blind reason stumbling without fear: to fear the worst oft cures the worse.

Tro. Oh! let my lady apprehend no fear: in all Cupid's pageant there is presented no monster.

Cres. Nor nothing monstrous neither?

Tro. Nothing but our undertakings; when we vow to weep seas, live in fire, eat rocks, tame tigers; thinking it harder for our mistress to devise imposition enough than for us to undergo any difficulty imposed. This is the monstroucity in love, lady, that the will is infinite, and the execution confined; that the desire is boundless, and the act a slave to limit.

Cres. They say all lovers swear more performance than they are able, and yet reserve an ability that they never perform; vocal more than the perfection of ten and discharging less than the tenth part of one. They that have the voice of lions and the act of hares, are they not monsters?

Tro. Are there such? such are not we. Praise us as we are tasted, allow us as we prove; our head shall go bare, till merit crown it. No perfection in reversion shall have a praise in present: we will not name desert before his birth, and, being born, his addition shall be humble. Few words to fair faith: Troilus shall be such to Cressid, as what envy can say worst shall be a mock for his truth; and what truth can speak truer not truer than Troilus.

Cres. Will you walk in, my lord?

Re-enter Pandarus.

Pan. What! blushing still? have you not done talking yet?

Cres. Well, uncle, what folly I commit, I dedicate to you.

Pan. I thank you for that: if my lord get a boy of you, you'll give him me. Be true to my lord; if he flinch, chide me for it.

Tro. You know now your hostages; your uncle's word, and my firm faith.

Pan. Nay, I'll give my word for her too. Our kindred, though they be long ere they are wooed, they are constant being won: they are burrs, I can tell you; they'll stick where they are thrown.

Cres. Boldness comes to me now, and brings me heart:

Prince Troilus, I have lov'd you night and day For many weary months.

Tro. Why was my Cressid then so hard to win?

Cres. Hard to seem won; but I was won, my lord,

With the first glance that ever—pardon me— If I confess much you will play the tyrant. I love you now; but, till now, not so much. But I might master it: in faith, I lie; My thoughts were like unbridled children, grown Too headstrong for their mother. See, we fools! Why have I blabb'd? who shall be true to us When we are so unsecret to ourselves? But, though I lov'd you well, I wo'd you not; And yet, good faith, I wish'd myself a man. Or that we women had men's privilege Of speaking first. Sweet, bid me hold my tongue; For in this rapture I shall surely speak The thing I shall repent. See, see, your silence, Cuning in dullness, from my weakness draws My very soul of counsel. Stop my mouth.

Tro. And shall, albeit sweet music issues thence.
Act III, Sc. II.

TROILUS AND CRESSIDA

Pan. Pretty, i' faith.
Cres. My lord, I do beseech you, pardon me;
'Twas not my purpose thus to beg a kiss: 145
I am ashamed: O heavens! what have I done?
For this time will I take my leave, my lord.
Tro. Your leave, sweet Cressid? 148
Pan. Leave! an you take leave till to-morrow morning,—
Cres. Pray you, content you.
Tro. What offends you, lady?
Cres. Sir, mine own company. 152
Tro. You cannot shun yourself.
Cres. Let me go and try:
I have a kind of self resides with you;
But an unkind self, that itself will leave, 156
To be another's fool. I would be gone:
Where is my wit? I speak I know not what.
Tro. Well know they what they speak that speak so wisely.
Cres. Perchance, my lord, I show more craft
than love; 160
And fell so roundly to a large confession,
To angle for your thoughts: but you are wise,
Or else you love not, for to be wise, and love,
Exceeds man's might; that dwells with gods above. 164
Tro. O! that I thought it could be in a woman—
As if it can I will presume in you—
To feed for eke your lamp and flame of love;
To keep her constancy in plight and youth, 168
Outliving beauty's outward, with a mind
That doth renew swifter than blood decays:
Or that persuasion could but thus convince me,
That my integrity and truth to you 172
Might be affronted with the match and weight
Of such a winnow'd purity in love;
How were I then uplifted! but, alas!
I am as true as truth's simplicity,
And simpler than the infancy of truth.
Cres. In that I'll war with you.
Tro. O virtuous fight!
When right with right wars who shall be most right.
True swains in love shall in the world to come
Approve their truths by Troilus: when their rime, 181
Full of protest, of oath, and big compare,
Want similes, truth tir'd with iteration,
As true as steel, as plantage to the moon, 184
As sun to day, as turtle to her mate,
As iron to adamant, as earth to the centre,
Yet, after all comparisons of truth,
As truth's authentic author to be cited, 188
'As true as Troilus' shall crown up the verse
And sanctify the numbers.
Cres. Prophet may you be!

If I be false, or swerve a hair from truth,
When time is old and hath forgot itself, 192
When waterdrops have worn the stones of Troy,
And blind oblivion swallow'd cities up,
And mighty states characterless are grated
To dusty nothing, yet let memory,
From false to false, among false maids in love
Upbraid my falsehood! when they have said 'as false
As air, as water, wind, or sandy earth,
As fox to lamb, as wolf to heifer's calf,
Pard to the hind, or stepdame to her son;'
Yea, let them say, to stick the heart of falsehood,
'As false as Cressid.'

Pan. Go to, a bargain made; seal it, seal it:
I'll be the witness. Here I hold your hand, here my cousin's. If ever you prove false one to another, since I have taken such pains to bring you together, let all pitiful goers-between be called to the world's end after my name; call them all Pandars; let all constant men be Troiluses, all false women Cressids, and all brokers-between Pandars! say, Amen. 212

Tro. Amen.

Cres. Amen.

Pan. Amen. Whereupon I will show you a chamber and a bed; which bed, because it shall not speak of your pretty encounters, press it to death: away!

And Cupid grant all tongue-tied maidens here
Bed, chamber, Pandar to provide this gear! 220

[Exeunt.

SCENE III.—The Grecian Camp.

Enter Agamemnon, Ulysses, Diomedes, Nestor, Ajax, Menelaus, and Calchas.

Cal. Now, princes, for the service I have done you,
The advantage of the time prompts me aloud
To call for recompense. Appear it to your mind
That through the sight I bear in things to come,
I have abandon'd Troy, left my possession,
Incur'd a traitor's name; expos'd myself,
From certain and possess'd conveniences,
To doubtful fortunes; sequestering from me all
That time, acquaintance, custom, and condition
Made tame and most familiar to my nature;
And here, to do you service, have become
As new into the world, strange, unacquainted:
I do beseech you, as in way of taste,
To give me now a little benefit,
Out of those many register'd in promise,
Which, you say, live to come in my behalf. 16

Agam. What wouldst thou of us, Trojan?
make demand.
TROILUS AND CRESSIDA

Act III, Sc. III.

Cal. You have a Trojan prisoner, call’d Antenor,
Yesterday took: Troy holds him very dear.
Oft have you—often have you thanks therefore—

Desir’d my Cressid in right great exchange,
Whom Troy hath still denied; but this Antenor
I know is such a wretch in their affairs
That their negociations all must slack,
Wanting his manage; and they will almost
Give us a prince of blood, a son of Priam,
In change of him: let him be sent, great princes,
And he shall buy my daughter; and her presence
Shall quite strike off all service I have done,
In most accepted pain.

Agam. Let Diomedes bear him,
And bring us Cressid hither: Calchas shall have
What he requests of us. Good Diomed,
Furnish you fairly for this interchange:
Withal bring word if Hector will to-morrow
Be answer’d in his challenge: Ajax is ready.

Dio. This shall I undertake; and ’tis a burden
Which I am proud to bear.

[Execut DIOMEDES and CALCHAS.

Enter ACHILLES and PATROCLUS, before their tent.

Ulyss. Achilles stands in the entrance of his tent:

Please it our general to pass strangely by him,
As if he were forgot; and, princes all,
Lay negligent and loose regard upon him:
I will come last. ’Tis like he’ll question me
Why such unpleasing eyes are bent on him:
If so, I have derivation med’civable
To use between your strangeness and his pride,
Which his own will shall have desire to drink.
It may do good: pride hath no other glass
To show itself but pride, for supple knees
Feed arrogance and are the poor man’s fees.

Agam. We’ll execute your purpose, and put on
A form of strangeness as we pass along:
So do each lord, and either greet him not,
Or else disdainfully, which shall shake him more
Than if not look’d on. I will lead the way.

Achil. What! comes the general to speak with me?

You know my mind; I’ll fight no more ’gainst Troy.

Agam. What says Achilles? would he aught with us?

Nest. Would you, my lord, aught with the general?

Achil. No.
To others' eyes: nor doth the eye itself—
That most pure spirit of sense—behold itself,
Not going from itself; but eye to eye oppos'd
Salutes each other with each other's form; 108
For speculation turns not to itself
Till it hath travell'd and is mirror'd there
Where it may see itself. This is not strange
at all.

Ulyss. I do not strain at the position, 112
It is familiar, but at the author's drift;
Who in his circumstance expressly proves
That no man is the lord of any thing—
Though in and of him there be much consist-
ing— 116
Till he communicate his parts to others:
Nor doth he of himself know them for aught
Till he behold them form'd in the applause
Where they're extended; who, like an arch,
reverberates 120
The voice again, or, like a gate of steel
Fronting the sun, receives and renders back
His figure and his heat. I was much rapt in
this;
And apprehended here immediately 124
The unknown Ajax.
Heavens, what a man is there! a very horse,
That has he knows not what. Nature, what
things there are,
Most abject in regard, and dear in use! 128
What things again most dear in the esteem
And poor in worth! Now shall we see to-
morrow,
An act that very chance doth throw upon him,
Ajax renown'd. O heavens! what some men
do;
While some men leave to do.
How some men creep in skittish Fortune's hall,
While others play the idiots in her eyes!
How one man eats into another's pride, 136
While pride is fasting in his wantonness!
To see these Grecian lords! why, even already
They clap the lubber Ajax on the shoulder,
As if his foot were on brave Hector's breast, 140
And great Troy shrinking.

Achil. I do believe it; for they pass'd by me
As misers do by beggars, neither gave to me
Good word or look: what! are my deeds forgot?

Ulyss. Time hath, my lord, a wallet at his
back.

Wherein he puts alms for oblivion,
A great-six'd monster of ingratitude:
Those scars are good deeds past; which are
devoir'd 148
As fast as they are made, forgot as soon
As done: perseverance, dear my lord,
Keeps honour bright: to have done, is to hang
Quite out of fashion, like a rusty mail 152

In monumental mockery. Take the instant
way;
For honour travels in a strait so narrow
Where one but goes abreast: keep, then, the
path;
For emulation hath a thousand sons 156
That one by one pursue: if you give way,
Or hedge aside from the direct forthright,
Like to an enter'd tide they all rush by
And leave you hindmost;
Or, like a gallant horse fall'n in first rank,
Lie there for pavement to the abject rear,
O'errun and trampled on: then what they do in
present,
Though less than yours in past, must o'ertop
yours;
For time is like a fashionable host,
That slightly shakes his parting guest by the
hand,
And with his arms outstretch'd, as he would fly,
Grasps in the corner: welcome ever smiles, 168
And farewell goes out sighing. O! let not virtue
seek
Remuneration for the thing it was;
For beauty, wit,
High birth, vigour of bone, desert in service, 172
Love, friendship, charity, are subjects all
To envious and calumniating time.
One touch of nature makes the whole world kin,
That all with one consent praise new-born
gawds,
Though they are made and moulded of things
past,
And give to dust that is a little gilt
More laud than gilt o'er-dusted.
The present eye praises the present object: 180
Then marvel not, thou great and complete man,
That all the Greeks begin to worship Ajax;
Since things in motion sooner catch the eye
Than what not stirs. The cry went once on
these, 184
And still it might, and yet it may again,
If thou wouldst not entomb thyself alive,
And case thy reputation in thy tent;
Whose glorious deeds, but in these fields of late,
Made emulous missions 'mongst the gods
themselves,
And drave great Mars to faction.

Achil. Of this my privacy
I have strong reasons.

Ulyss. But 'gainst your privacy
The reasons are more potent and heroical. 192
'Tis known, Achilles, that you are in love
With one of Priam's daughters.

Achil. Ha! known!

Ulyss. Is that a wonder? 196
The providence that's in a watchful state
TROILUS AND CRESSIDA
Act III, Sc. III.

Knows almost every grain of Plutus’ gold,
Finds bottom in the uncomprehensive deeps,
Keeps place with thought, and almost, like the
gods, 200
Does thoughts unveil in their dumb cradles.
There is a mystery—with whom relation
Durst never moddle—in the soul of state,
Which hath an operation more divine 204
Than breath or pen can give expressure to.
All the commerce that you had with Troy
As perfectly is ours as yours, my lord;
And better would it fit Achilles much 208
To throw down Hector than Polyxena;
But it must grieve young Pyrrhus now at home,
When fame shall in our islands sound her
trump,
And all the Grecish girls shall tripping sing,
‘Great Hector’s sister did Achilles win, 213
But our great Ajax bravely beat down him.’
Farewell, my lord: I as your lover speak;
The fool slides o’er the ice that you should
break. [Exit.

Patr. To this effect, Achilles, have I mov’d
you. 217

A woman impudent and mannish grown
Is not more loath’d than an effeminate man
In time of action. I stand condemn’d for this:
They think my little stomach to the war 221
And your great love to me restrains you thus,
Sweet, rouse yourself; and the weak wanton
Cupid
Shall from your neck unloose his amorous
fold,
And, like a dew-drop from the lion’s mane, 225
Be shook to air.

Achil. Shall Ajax fight with Hector?

Patr. Ay; and perhaps receive much honour
by him.

Achil. I see my reputation is at stake; 228
My fame is shrewdly gor’d.

Patr. O! then, beware;
Those wounds heal ill that men do give them-
selves:
Omission to do what is necessary
Seals a commission to a blank of danger; 232
And danger, like an ague, subtly taints
Even then when we sit idly in the sun.

Achil. Go call Thersites hither, sweet Patro-
clus:
I’ll send the fool to Ajax and desire him 236
To invite the Trojan lords after the combat
To see us here unarmed. I have a woman’s
lodging,
An appetite that I am sick withal,
To see great Hector in his weeds of peace; 240
To talk with him and to behold his visage,
Even to my full of view. A labour sav’d!
Enter Thersites.

Ther. A wonder!

Achil. What? 244
Ther. Ajax goes up and down the field,
asking for himself.

Achil. How so?

Ther. He must fight singly to-morrow with
Hector, and is so prophetically proud of an
heroical cudgelling that he raves in saying
nothing.

Achil. How can that be? 252
Ther. Why, he stalks up and down like a
peacock, a stride and a stand; ruminates like a
hostess that hath no arithmetic but her brain to
set down her reckoning; bites his lip with a
politic regard, as who should say ‘There were wit
in this head, an’ twould out;’ and so there is,
but it lies as coldly in him as fire in a flint, which
will not show without knocking. The man’s
undone for ever; for if Hector break not his
neck i’ the combat, he’ll break himself in vain-
glory. He knows not me: I said, ’Good morrow, 269
Ajax;’ and he replies, ’Thanks, Agamemnon.’
What think you of this man that takes me for
the general? He’s grown a very land-fish, lan-
guageless, a monster. A plague of opinion! a
man may wear it on both sides, like a leather
jerkin.

Achil. Thou must be my ambassador to him,
Thersites.

Ther. Who, I? why, he’ll answer nobody; he
professes not answering; speaking is for beggars;
he wears his tongue in his arms. I will put on
his presence: let Patroclus make demands to me,
you shall see the pageant of Ajax. 276

Achil. To him, Patroclus: tell him, I humbly
desire the valiant Ajax to invite the most val-
orous Hector to come unarmed to my tent; and to
procure safe-conduct for his person of the mag-
nanimous and most illustrious, six-or-seven-
times-honoured captain-general of the Grecian
army, Agamemnon, et cetera. Do this.

Patr. Jove bless great Ajax! 284
Ther. Hum!

Patr. I come from the worthy Achilles,— 279
Ther. Hal!

Patr. Who most humbly desires you to in-
vite Hector to his tent,—

Ther. Hum!

Patr. And to procure safe-conduct from
Agamemnon.

Ther. Agamemnon!

Patr. Ay, my lord.

Ther. Hal!

Patr. What say you to’t? 296
Ther. God be wi’ you, with all my heart.

Patr. Your answer, sir.
The thing he means to kill more excellently. 24
 Dio. We sympathize. Jove, let Æneas live,
 If to my sword his fate be not the glory,
 A thousand complete courses of the sun!
 But, in mine emulous honour, let him die, 28
 With every joint a wound, and that to-morrow!
 Æne. We know each other well.
 Dio. We do; and long to know each other
 worse.
 Par. This is the most despiteful gentle greet-
ing.
 The noblest hateful love, that e'er I heard of.
 What business, lord, so early?
 Æne. I was sent for to the king; but why,
 I know not.
 Par. His purpose meets you: 'twas to bring
 this Greek
 To Calchas' house, and there to render him,
 For the enfreed Antenor, the fair Cressid.
 Let's have your company; or, if you please,
 Haste there before us. I constantly do think— 40
 Or rather, call my thought a certain know-
 ledge—
 My brother Troilus lodges there to-night;
 Rouse him and give him note of our approach,
 With the whole quality wherefore: I fear 44
 We shall be much unwelcome.
 Æne. That I assure you:
 Troilus had rather Troy were borne to Greece
 Than Cressid borne from Troy.
 Par. There is no help;
 The bitter disposition of the time
 Will have it so. On, lord; we'll follow you.
 Æne. Good morrow, all.  [Exit.
 Par. And tell me, noble Diomed; faith, tell me true,
 Even in the soul of sound good-fellowship, 52
 Who, in your thoughts, merits fair Helen best—
 Myself or Menelaus?
 Dio. Both alike:
 He merits well to have her that doth seek her—
 Not making any scruple of her soile— 56
 With such a hell of pain and world of charge.
 And you as well to keep her that defend her—
 Not palating the taste of her dishonour—
 With such a costly loss of wealth and friends:
 He, like a puling cuckold, would drink up
 The less and dregs of a flat tamed piece;
 You, like a lecher, out of whorish loins
 Are pleas'd to breed out your inheritors: 64
 Both merits pois'd, each weighs nor less nor
 more;
 But he as he, the heavier for a whore.
 Par. You are too bitter to your country-
 woman.
 Dio. She's bitter to her country. Hear me. 68
 Par. Paris:

For every false drop in her bawdy veins
A Grecian's life hath sunk; for every scruple
Of her contaminated carriage weight
A Trojan hath been slain. Since she could speak,
She hath not given so many good words breath
As for her Greeks and Trojans suffer'd death.
Par. Fair Diomed, you do as chapmen do,
Dispraise the thing that you desire to buy; 76
But we in silence hold this virtue well,
We'll not commend what we intend to sell.
Here lies our way.

[Exeunt.

SCENE II.—The Same. A Court before
PANDARUS’ House.

Enter TROILUS and CRESSIDA.

Tro. Dear, trouble not yourself: the morn is cold.
Cres. Then, sweet my lord, I'll call mine uncle down:
He shall unbolt the gates.

Tro. Trouble him not;
To bed, to bed; sleep kill those pretty eyes,
And give as soft attachment to thy senses
As infants' empty of all thought!

Cres. Good morrow then.

Tro. I prithee now, to bed.

Cres. Are you aweary of me?

Tro. O Cressida! but that the busy day,
Wak'd by the lark, hath rous'd the ribald crows,
And dreaming night will hide our joys no longer,
I would not from thee.

Cres. Night hath been too brief.

Tro. Beashrew the witch! with venomous wights she stays
As tedious as hell, but flies the grapse of love
With wings more momentary-swift than thought.
You will catch cold, and curse me.

Cres. Prithee, tarry:
You men will never tarry.
0 foolish Cressid! I might have still held off,
And then you would have tarried. Hark! there's one up.

Pan. [Within.] What! are all the doors open here?

Tro. It is your uncle.
Cres. A pestilence on him! now will he be mocking: I shall have such a life!

Enter PANDARUS.

Pan. How now, how now! how go maidenheads?

Here, you maid! where's my cousin Cressid? 24

Cres. Go hang yourself, you naughty mocking uncle!
You bring me to do—and then you flout me too.
Pan. To do what? to do what? let her say what: what have I brought you to do?
Cres. Come, come; beashrew your heart! you 'll e'er be good,
Nor suffer others.

Pan. Ha, ha! Alas, poor wretch! a poor capocchia! hast not slept to-night? would he not,
A naughty man, let it sleep? a bugbear take him!
Cres. Did not I tell you? 'would he were knock'd o' the head! [Knocking within.
Who's that at door? good uncle, go and see. 36
My lord, come you again into my chamber:
You smile, and mock me, as if I meant naughtily.

Tro. Ha, ha!

Cres. Come, you are deceiv'd, I think of no such thing. [Knocking within.

How earnestly they knock! Pray you, come in:
I would not for half Troy have you seen here.

[Exeunt TROILUS and CRESSIDA.

Pan. [Going to the door.] Who's there? what's the matter? will you beat down the door? How now! what's the matter? 45

Enter ÆNEAS.

Æne. Good morrow, lord, good morrow.

Pan. Who's there? my Lord Æneas! By my troth,
I knew you not: what news with you so early?
Æne. Is not Prince Troilus here?
Pan. Here! what should he do here?
Æne. Come, he is here, my lord: do not deny him: it doth import him much to speak with me.

Pan. Is he here, say you? 'tis more than I know, I'll be sworn: for my own part, I came in late. What should he do here?
Æne. Whol may, then: come, come, you'll do him wrong ere you're ware. You'll be so true to him, to be false to him. Do not you know of him, but yet go fetch him hither; go. 60

Re-enter TROILUS.

Tro. How now! what's the matter?
Æne. My lord, I scarce have leisure to salute you,
My matter is so rash: there is at hand
Paris your brother, and Deiphobus,
The Grecian Diomed, and our Antenor
Deliver'd to us; and for him forthwith,
 Ere the first sacrifice, within this hour,
We must give up to Diomedes' hand
The Lady Cressida.
TROILUS AND CRESSIDA

ACT IV, Sc. II.

Tro. Is it so concluded?
Æne. By Priam, and the general state of Troy:
They are at hand and ready to effect it.
Tro. How my achievements mock me! I will go meet them: and, my Lord Æneas,
We met by chance; you did not find me here.
Æne. Good, good, my lord; the secrets of nature
Have not more gift in taciturnity.

[Exeunt TROILUS and ÆNEAS.

Pan. Is't possible? no sooner got but lost?
The devil take Antenor! the young prince will
go mad; a plague upon Antenor! I would they
had broke 's neck!

Enter CRESSIDA.

Cres. How now! What is the matter? Who was here?
Pan. Ah! ah!
Cres. Why sigh you so profoundly? where's my lord? gone! Tell me, sweet uncle, what's the matter?
Pan. Would I were as deep under the earth as I am above!
Cres. O the gods! what's the matter?
Pan. Prithee, get thee in. Would thou hadst ne'er born! I knew thou wouldst be his death. O poor gentleman! A plague upon Antenor!
Cres. Good uncle, I beseech you, on my knees I beseech you, what's the matter?
Pan. Thou must be gone, wench, thou must be gone; thou art changed for Antenor. Thou must to thy father, and be gone from Troilus: 'twill be his death; 'twill be his bane; he cannot bear it.
Cres. O you immortal gods! I will not go.
Pan. Thou must.
Cres. I will not, uncle: I have forgot my father;
I know no touch of consanguinity;
No kin, no love, no blood, no soul so near me
As the sweet Troilus. O you gods divine!
Make Cressid's name the very crown of falsehood
If ever she leave Troilus! Time, force, and death,
Do to this body what extremes you can;
But the strong base and building of my love
Is as the very centre of the earth,
Drawing all things to it. I'll go in and weep,—

[Exeunt.

Pan. Do, do.
Cres. Tear my bright hair, and scratch my praised cheeks,
Crack my clear voice with sobs, and break my heart
With sounding Troilus. I will not go from Troy.

SCENE III.—The Same. Before PANDARUS' House.

Enter PARIS, TROILUS, ÆNEAS, DEIPHOBUS,
ANTENOR, and DIOMEDES.

Par. It is great morning, and the hour prefix'd
Of her delivery to this valiant Greek
Comes fast upon. Good my brother Troilus,
Tell you the lady what she is to do,
And haste her to the purpose.
Tro. Walk into her house;
I'll bring her to the Grecian presently:
And to his hand when I deliver her,
Think it an altar, and thy brother Troilus
A priest, there offering to it his own heart.[Exit.
Par. I know what 'tis to love;
And would, as I shall pity, I could help!
Please you walk in, my lords.[Exeunt.

SCENE IV.—The Same. A Room in PANDARUS' House.

Enter PANDARUS and CRESSIDA.

Pan. Be moderate, be moderate.
Cres. Why tell you me of moderation?
The grief is fine, full, perfect, that I taste,
And violenteth in a sense as strong
As that which causeth it: how can I moderate it?
If I could temporize with my affection,
Or brew it to a weak and colder palate,
The like assuagement could I give my grief:
My love admits no qualifying dross;
No more my grief, in such a precious loss.

Enter TROILUS.

Pan. Here, here, here he comes. Ah! sweet ducks.
Cres. [Embracing him.] O Troilus! Troilus!
Pan. What a pair of spectacles is here! Let me embrace too. 'O heart,' as the goodly saying is,—
O heart, heavy heart,
Why sigh'st thou without breaking?
when he answers again,
Because thou canst not ease thy smart
By friendship nor by speaking.
There was never a truer rime. Let us cast away nothing, for we may live to have need of such a verse: we see it, we see it. How now, lamb!
Tro. Cressid, I love thee in so strain'd a purity,
That the bless'd gods, as angry with my fancy,
More bright in zeal than the devotion which
Cold lips blow to their deities, take thee from me.
Cres. Have the gods envy?  
Pan. Ay, ay, ay, ay; 'tis too plain a case.  
Cres. And is it true that I must go from Troy?  
Tro. A hateful truth.  
Cres. What! and from Troilus too?  
Tro. From Troy and Troilus.  
Cres. Is it possible?  
Tro. And suddenly; where injury of chance  
Puts back leave-taking, justly roughly by  
All time of pause, rudely beguiles our lips  
Of all rejoindure, forcibly prevents  
Our lock'd embrasures, strangles our dear vows  
Even in the birth of our own labouring breath.  
We two, that with so many thousand sighs  
Did buy each other, must poorly sell ourselves  
With the rude brevity and discharge of one.  
Injurious time now with a robber's haste  
Crams his rich thievish up, he knows not how:  
As many farewells as be stars in heaven,  
With distinct breath and consign'd kisses to  
them,  
He fumbles up into a loose adieu,  
And scants us with a single famish'd kiss,  
Distasted with the salt of broken tears.  
Æne. [Within.] My lord, is the lady ready?  
Tro. Hark! you are call'd: some say the  
Genius so  
Cries 'Come!' to him that instantly must die.  
Bid them have patience; she shall come anon.  
Pan. Where are my tears? rain, to lay this  
wind, or my heart will be blown up by the root!  
[Exit.  
Cres. I must then to the Grecians?  
Tro. No remedy.  
Cres. A woeful Cressid 'mongst the merry  
Greeks!  
When shall we see again?  
Tro. Hear me, my love. Be thou but true of  
heart,—  
Cres. I true! how now! what wicked deem  
is this?  
Tro. Nay, we must use expostulation kindly,  
For it is parting from us:  
I speak not 'be thou true,' as fearing thee,  
For I will throw my glove to Death himself,  
That there's no maculation in thy heart;  
But, 'be thou true,' say I, to fashion in  
My sequent protestation; be thou true,  
And I will see thee.  
Cres. Of you shall be expos'd, my lord, to  
dangers  
As infinite as imminent; but I'll be true.  
Tro. And I'll grow friend with danger. Wear  
this sleeve.  
Cres. And you this glove. When shall I see  
you?
Fair Lady Cressid, 116
So please you, save the thanks this prince expects:
The lustre in your eye, heaven in your cheek,
Pleads your fair usage; and to Diomed
You shall be mistress, and command him wholly.
Tro. Grecian, thou dost not use me courteously,
To shame the zeal of my petition to thee
In praising her: I tell thee, lord of Greece,
She is as far high-soaring o'er thy praises 124
As thou unworthy to be call'd her servant.
I charge thee use her well, even for my charge;
For, by the dreadful Pluto, if thou dost not,
Though the great bulk Achilles be thy guard,
I'll cut thy throat.

O! be not mov'd, Prince Troilus:
Let me be privileged by my place and message
To be a speaker free; when I am hence,
I'll answer to my lust; and know you, lord, 132
I'll nothing do on charge: to her own worth
She shall be priz'd; but that you say 'be't so,'
I'll speak it in my spirit and honour, 'no.'
Tro. Come, to the port. I'll tell thee, Diomed,
This brave shall oft make thee to hide thy head.
Lady, give me your hand, and, as you walk,
To our own selves bend we our needful talk.

Hark! Hector's trumpet. 140
The prince must think me tardy and remiss,
That swor'd to ride before him to the field.
'Tis Troy's fault. Come, come, to field with him.
Let us make ready straight.
Yea, with a bridegroom's fresh alacrity,
Let us address to tend on Hector's heels:
The glory of our Troy doth this day lie
On his fair worth and single chivalry. [Exit.

Scene V.—The Grecian Camp. Lists set out.

Ajax, armed; Agamemnon, Achilles, Patroclus, Menelaus, Ulysses, Nestor, and Others.

Enter Ajax. Here art thou in appointment fresh and fair,
Anticipating time with starting courage.
Give with thy trumpet a loud note to Troy,
Thou dreadful Ajax; that the appalled air
May pierce the head of the great combatant
And hale him hither.

Blow, villain, till thy sphere'd bias cheek
Outswell the colic of puff'd Aquilon.
Come, stretch thy chest, and let thy eyes spout blood;
Thou blow'st for Hector. [Trumpet sounds.

Ulyss. No trumpet answers.
Achil. 'Tis but early days. 12
Agam. Is not yond Diomed with Calchas' daughter?
Ulyss. 'Tis he, I ken the manner of his gait;
He rises on the toe: that spirit of his
In aspiration lifts him from the earth. 16

Enter Diomed, with Cressida.
Agam. Is this the Lady Cressid?

Even she.
Agam. Most dearly welcome to the Greeks, sweet lady.
Nest. Our general doth salute you with a kiss.
Ulyss. Yet is the kindness but particular; 20
'Twere better she were kiss'd in general.
Nest. And very courtly counsel: I'll begin.
So much for Nestor.

Achil. I'll take that winter from your lips,
Fair lady:
Achilles bids you welcome.

Men. I had good argument for kissing once.
Patr. But that's no argument for kissing now;
For thus popp'd Paris in his hardiment, 28
And parted thus you and your argument.
Ulyss. O, deadly gall, and theme of all our scars!
For which we lose our heads to gild his horns.
Patr. The first was Menelaus' kiss; this, mine:
Patroclus kisses you.

Men. I! this is trim.
Men. I'll have my kiss, sir. Lady, by your leave.
Cres. In kissing, do you render or receive? 36
Patr. Both take and give.

Cres. I'll make my match to live,
The kiss you take is better than you give;
Therefore no kiss.

Men. I'll give you boot; I'll give you three for one.

Cres. You're an odd man; give even, or give none.
Men. An odd man, lady! every man is odd.
Cres. No, Paris is not; for, you know 'tis true,

That you are odd, and he is even with you.

Men. You fillip me o' the head.
Cres. No, I'll be sworn.
This Ajax is half made of Hector’s blood:
In love whereof half Hector stays at home; 84
Half heart, half hand, half Hector comes to seek
This blended knight, half Trojan, and half Greek.
Achil. A maiden battle, then? O! I perceive you.

Re-enter DIOMEDES.
Agam. Here is Sir Diomed. Go, gentle knight,
Stand by our Ajax: as you and Lord Æneas
Consent upon the order of their fight,
So be it; either to the uttermost,
Or else a breath: the combatants being kin 92
Half stints their strife before their strokes begin.

[AJAX AND HEKTOR ENTER THE LISTS.
Ulyss. They are oppos’d already.
Agam. What Trojan is that same that looks so heavy?
Ulyss. The youngest son of Priam, a true knight: 96
Not yet mature, yet matchless; firm of word,
Speaking in deeds and deedless in his tongue;
Not soon provok’d, nor being provok’d soon calm’d:
His heart and hand both open and both free; 100
For what he has he gives, what thinks he shows;
Yet gives he not till judgment guide his bounty,
Nor dignifies an impure thought with breath.
Manly as Hector, but more dangerous; 104
For Hector, in his blaze of wrath, subscribes
To tender objects; but he in heat of action
Is more vindicative than jealous love.
They call him Troilus, and on him erect 108
A second hope, as fairly built as Hector.
Thus says Æneas; one that knows the youth
Even to his inches, and with private soul
Did in great Ilion thus translate him to me. 112

[Alarum. HECTOR AND AJAX FIGHT.
Agam. They are in action.
Nest. Now, Ajax, hold thine own!
Tro. Hector, thou sleep’st; awake thee!
Agam. His blows are well dispos’d: there, Ajax!

Dio. You must no more. [Trumpets cease.
Æne. Princes, enough, so please you. 116
Ajax. I am not warm yet; let us fight again.
Dio. As Hector pleases.
Hect. Why, then will I no more:
Thou art, great lord, my father’s sister’s son,
A cousin-german to great Priam’s seed; 120
The obligation of our blood forbids
A gory emulation ’twixt us twain.
Were thy commixture Greek and Trojan so
That thou couldst say, ‘This hand is Grecian all,
And this is Trojan; the sinews of this leg’ 125
All Greek, and this all Troy; my mother’s blood
Runs on the dexter cheek, and this sinister
Bounds in my father’s, by Jove multipotent, 128
Thou shouldst not bear from me a Greekish member
Wherein my sword had not impressure made
Of our rank feud. But the just gods gainsay
That any drop thou borrow’dst from thy mother,
My sacred aunt, should by my mortal sword 133
Be drain’d! Let me embrace thee, Ajax;
By him that thunders, thou hast lusty arms;
Hector would have them fall upon him thus:
Cousin, all honour to thee!

Ajax.  
I thank thee, Hector:
Thou art too gentle and too free a man:
I came to kill thee, cousin, and bear hence
A great addition earned in thy death. 140

Hect. Not Neoptolemus so marible,
On whose bright crest Fame with her loud’st eyes
Cries, ’This is he!’ could promise to himself
A thought of added honour torn from Hector.

Æne. There is expectation here from both
the sides, 145
What further you will do.

Hect. We’ll answer it;
The issue is embracement: Ajax, farewell.

Ajax. If I might in entreaties find success,—
As said I have the chance,—I would desire
My famous cousin to our Grecian tents.

Di. ’Tis Agamemnon’s wish, and great Achilles
Doth long to see unarm’d the valiant Hector.

Hect. Æneas, call my brother Taurlius to me,
And signify this loving interview
To the expectors of our Trojan part;
Desire them home. Give me thy hand, my
cousin; 150
I will go eat with thee and see your knights.

Ajax. Great Agamemnon comes to meet us
here.

Hect. The worthiest of them tell me name
by name;
But for Achilles, mine own searching eyes 160
Shall find him by his large and portly size.

Agam. Worthy of arms! as welcome as to one
That would be rid of such an enemy;
But that’s no welcome; understand more clear,
What’s past and what’s to come is strew’d with
husks 165
And formless ruin of oblivion;
But in this extant moment, faith and truth,
Strain’d purely from all hollowbias-drawing, 168
Bids thee, with most divine integrity,
From heart of very heart, great Hector, wel-
come.

Hect. I thank thee, most imperious Aga-
memnon.

Agam. [To Taurlius.] My well-fam’d Lord of
Troy, no less to you. 172

Men. Let me confirm my princely brother’s
greeting:
You brace of war-like brothers, welcome hither.
Hect. Whom must we answer?

Æne. The noble Menelaus.

Hect. O! you, my lord? by Mars his gaunt-
let, thanks! 176

Mock not that I affect the untraded oath;
Your quondam wife swears still by Venus’ glove:
She’s well, but bade me not commend her to you.

Men. Name her not now, sir; she’s a deadly
theme. 180

Hect. O! pardon; I offend.

Nest. I have, thou gallant Trojan, seen thee
oft,
Labouring for destiny, make cruel way
Through ranks of Greekish youth: and I have
seen thee,

As hot as Perseus, spurn thy Phrygian steed,
Despising many forfeits and subduements,
When thou hast hung thy advanc’d sword i’ th’
air,

Not letting it decline on the declin’d; 188
That I have said to some my standers-by,
’Lo! Jupiter is yonder, dealing life!’
And I have seen thee pause and take thy breath,
When that a ring of Greeks have hemm’d thee
in,

Like an Olympian wrestling: this have I seen;
But this thy countenance, still lock’d in steel,
I never saw till now. I knew thy grandsire,
And once fought with him: he was a soldier
good; 192

But, by great Mars, the captain of us all,
Never like thee. Let an old man embrace thee;
And, worthy warrior, welcome to our tents.

Æne. ’Tis the old Nestor.

Hect. Let me embrace thee, good old chron-
icle,
That hast so long walk’d hand in hand with
time:
Most reverend Nestor, I am glad to clasp thee.

Nest. I would my arms could match thee in
contention,
As they contend with thee in courtesy.

Hect. I would they could.

Nest. Ha!
By this white beard, I’d fight with thee to-
morrow.
Well, welcome, welcome! I have seen the
time.—

Ulyss. I wonder now how yonder city stands,
When we have here her base and pillar by us.
Hec. I know your favour, Lord Ulysses, well. Ah! sir, there's many a Greek and Trojan dead, Since first I saw yourself and Diomed In Ionia, on your Grecian embassy.

Ulyss. Sir, I foretold you then what would ensue: My prophecy is but half his journey yet; For yonder walls, that pertly front your town, Yond towers, whose wanton tops do buss the clouds, Must kiss their own feet.

Hec. I must not believe you: There they stand yet, and modestly I think, The fall of every Phrygian stone will cost A drop of Grecian blood: the end crowns all, And that old common arbitrator, Time, Will one day end it.

Ulyss. So to him we leave it. Most gentle and most valiant Hector, welcome. After the general, I beseech you next To feast with me and see me at my tent.

Achill. I shall forestall thee, Lord Ulysses, thou! Now, Hector, I have fed mine eyes on thee; I have with exact view perus'd thee, Hector, And quoted joint by joint.

Hec. Is this Achilles? Achill. I am Achilles.

Hec. Stand fair, I pray thee: let me look on thee. Achill. Behold thy fill. Hec. Nay, I have done already. Achill. Thou art too brief: I will the second time,

As I would buy thee, view thee limb by limb. Hec. Of like a book of sport thou'lt read me o'er; But there's more in me than thou understand'st. Why dost thou so oppress me with thine eye? Achill. Tell me, you heavens, in which part of his body Shall I destroy him? whether there, or there, or there?

That I may give the local wound a name, And make distinct the very breach whereout Hector's great spirit flew. Answer me, heavens! Hec. It would discredit the bless'd gods, proud man, To answer such a question. Stand again: Think'st thou to catch my life so pleasantly As to prenominat in nice conjecture Where thou wilt hit me dead?

Achill. I tell thee, yea. Hec. Wert thou an oracle to tell me so, I'd not believe thee. Henceforth guard thee well, For I'll not kill thee there, nor there, nor there; But, by the forge that stithied Mars his helm,
Patroclus, let us feast him to the height.

Patr. Here comes Thersites.

Enter THERSITES.

Achil. How now, thou core of envy! Thou crusty batch of nature, what's the news?

Ther. Why, thou picture of what thou seemest, and idol of idiot-worshippers, here's a letter for thee.

Achil. From whence, fragment?

Ther. Why, thou full dish of fool, from Troy.

Patr. Who keeps the tent now?

Ther. The surgeon's box, or the patient's wound.

Patr. Well said, adversity! and what need those tricks?

Ther. Prutheo, be silent, boy; I profit not by thy talk: thou art thought to be Achilles' male varlet.

Patr. Male varlet, you rogue! what's that?

Ther. Why, his masculine whore. Now, the rotten diseases of the south, the guts-gripping, ruptures, catarrhs, loads o' gravel i' the back, lathargies, cold palsies, raw eyes, dirt-rotten livers, wheezing lungs, bladders full of impos-thums, sciaticas, lima-kils i' the palm, incurable bone-ache, and the rivelled fee-simple of the tetter, take and take again such preposterous discoveries!

Patr. Why, thou damnable box of envy, thou, what meanest thou to curse thus?

Ther. Do I curse thee?

Patr. Why, no, you ruinous butt, you whoreson indistinguishable cur, no.

Ther. Nor why art thou then exasperate, thou idle immaterial skein of slave silk, thou green saranet flap for a sore eye, thou tassel of a prodigal's purse, thou? Ah! how the poor world is pestered with such water-flies, diminutives of nature.

Patr. Out, gall!

Ther. Finch egg!

Achil. My swift Patroclus, I am thwarted quite From my great purpose in to-morrow's battle. Here is a letter from Queen Hecuba, A token from her daughter, my fair love, Both taxing me and gazing me to keep An oath that I have sworn. I will not break it: Fall Greeks; fail fame; honour or go or stay; My major vow lies here, this I'll obey. Come, come, Thersites, help to trim my tent; This night in banqueting must all be spent.

Away, Patroclus!

Pat. With too much blood and too little brain, these two may run mad; but if with too much brain, and too little blood they do, I'll be a curer of madmen. Here's Agamemnon, an honest fellow enough, and one that loves quails, but he has not so much brain as ear-wax: and the goodly transformation of Jupiter there, his brother, the bull, the primitive statue, and oblique memorial of cuckold; a thrifty shoeing-horn in a chain, hanging at his brother's leg, to what form but that he is should wit larded with malice and malice forced with wit turn him to? To an ass, were nothing; he is both ass and ox; to an ox, were nothing; he is both ox and ass. To be a dog, a mule, a cat, a fitchew, a toad, a lizard, an owl, a puttock, or a herring without a roe, I would not care; but to be Menelaus! I would conspire against destiny. Ask me not what I would be, if I were not Thersites, for I care not to be the loue of a lazar, so I were not Menelaus. Hey-day! spirits and fires!

Enter HECTOR, TROILUS, AJAX, AGAMEMNON, ULYSSES, NESTOR, MENELAUS, and DIO-MEDES, with lights.

Agam. We go wrong, we go wrong.

Ajax. No, yonder 'tis;

There, where we see the lights.

Hect. I trouble you.

Ajax. No, not a whit.

Ulyss. Here comes himself to guide you.

Re-enter ACHILLES.

Achil. Welcome, brave Hector; welcome, princes all.

Agam. So now, fair prince of Troy, I bid good-night.

Ajax commands the guard to tend on you.

Hect. Thanks and good-night to the Greeks' general.

Men. Good-night, my lord.

Hect. Good-night, sweet Lord Menelaus.

Ther. Sweet draught: 'sweet,' quoth a'! sweet sunk, sweet sewer.

Achil. Good-night and welcome both at once, to those

That go or tarry.

Agam. Good-night.

[Exeunt AGAMEMNON and MENELAUS.

Achil. Old Nestor tarries; and you too, Diomed,

Keep Hector company an hour or two.

Diop. I cannot, lord; I have important business, The tide whereof is now. Good-night, great Hector.

Hect. Give me your hand.

Ulyss. [Aside to TROILUS.] Follow his torch; he goes to Calchas' tent.
I'll keep you company.

_Tro._ Sweet sir, you honour me.

_Hec._ And so, good-night. 96

[Exit Diomedes; Ulysses and Troilus following.

_Achill._ Come, come, enter my tent.

[Exeunt Achilles, Hector, Ajax, and Nestor.

_Thers._ That same Diomed's a false-hearted rogue, a most unjust knav; I will no more trust him when he leers than I will a serpent when he hisses. He will spend his mouth, and promise, like Brabbling the hound; but when he performs, astronomers foretell it: it is prodigious, there will come some change: the sun borrows of the moon when Diomed keeps his word. I will rather leave to see Hector, than not to dog him: they say he keeps a Trojan drab, and uses the traitor Calchas' tent. I'll after. Nothing but lechery! all incontinent varlets.

[Exit.

_SCENE II._—_The Same._ Before Calchas' Tent.

_Enter Diomedes._

_Dio._ What, are you up here, ho! speak.

_Cal._ [Within.] Who calls?

_Dio._ Diomed. Calchas, I think. Where's your daughter?

_Cal._ [Within.] She comes to you.

_Enter Troilus and Ulysses, at a distance; after them Thersites._

_Ulyss._ Stand where the torch may not discover us.

_Enter Cressida._

_Tro._ Cressid comes forth to him.

_Dio._ How now, my charge!

_Cres._ Now, my sweet guardian! Hark! a word with you. [Whispers.

_Tro._ Yea, so familiar!

_Ulyss._ She will sing any man at first sight.

_Thers._ And any man may sing her, if he can take her cliff; she's noted.

_Dio._ Will you remember?

_Cres._ Remember! yes.

_Dio._ Nay, but do, then;

And let your mind be coupled with your words.

_Tro._ What should she remember?

_Ulyss._ List!

_Cres._ Sweet honey Greek, tempt me no more to folly.

_Thers._ Roguery!

_Dio._ Nay, then,—Cres._

_I'll tell you what,—__20__

_Dio._ Foh, foh! come, tell a pin: you are forewarned.

_Cres._ In faith, I cannot. What would you have me do?

_Thers._ A juggling trick,—to be secretly open.

_Dio._ What did you swear you would bestow on me?

_Cres._ I prithee, do not hold me to mine oath;

_Bid me do anything but that, sweet Greek.

_Dio._ Good-night.

_Tro._ Hold, patience! 28

_Ulyss._ How now, Trojan?

_Cres._ Diomed,—

_Dio._ No, no, good-night; I'll be your fool no more.

_Tro._ Thy better must.

_Cres._ Hark! one word in your ear. 32

_Tro._ O plague and madness!

_Ulyss._ You are mov'd, prince; let us depart, I pray you,

_Lest your displeasure should enlarge itself To wrathful terms. This place is dangerous; 36

The time right deadly. I beseech you, go.

_Tro._ Behold, I pray you!

_Ulyss._ Nay, good my lord, go off:

_You flow to great distraction; come, my lord._

_Tro._ I pray thee, stay.

_Ulyss._ You have not patience; come, 40

_Tro._ I pray you, stay. By hell, and all hell's torments,

_I will not speak a word!_

_Dio._ And so, good-night.

_Cres._ Nay, but you part in anger.

_Tro._ Dost that grieve thee? 44

_O wither'd truth!_

_Ulyss._ Why, how now, lord!

_Tro._ By Jove,

_I will be patient._

_Cres._ Guardian!—why, Greek!

_Dio._ Foh, foh! adieu; you palter.

_Cres._ In faith, I do not: come hither once again.

_Ulyss._ You shake, my lord, at something: will you go?

_You will break out._

_Tro._ She strokes his cheek!

_Ulyss._ Come, come.

_Tro._ Nay, stay; by Jove, I will not speak a word:

_There is between my will and all offences A guard of patience: stay a little while._

_Thers._ How the devil! Luxury, with his fat rump and potato finger, tickles these together! Fry, lechery, fry!

_Dio._ But will you, then?

_Cres._ In faith, I will, la; never trust me else.
Dio. Give me some token for the surety of it.
Cres. I'll fetch you one. [Exit
Ulyss. You have sworn patience.
Tro. Fear me not, sweet lord; 60
I will not be myself, nor have cognition
Of what I feel: I am all patience.

Re-enter Cressida.
Ther. Now the pledge! now, now, now!
Cres. Here, Diomed, keep this sleeve. 64
Tro. O beauty! where is thy faith?
Ulyss. My lord,—
Tro. I will be patient; outwardly I will.
Cres. You look upon that sleeve; behold it well.
He lov'd me—O false wench!—Give't to me again.
68
Dio. Whose was't?
Cres. It is no matter, now I have't again.
I will not meet with you to-morrow night.
I prithee, Diomed, visit me no more.
Ther. Now she sharpens: well said, whetsone!
Dio. I shall have it.
Cres. What, this?
Dio. Ay, that.
Cres. O! all you gods. O pretty, pretty pledge!
Thy master now lies thinking in his bed
Of thee and me, and sighs, and takes my glove,
And gives me naiad dainty kisses to it,
As I kiss thee. Nay, do not snatch it from me;
He that takes that doth take my heart withal.
Dio. I had your heart before; this follows it.
Tro. I did swear patience.
Cres. You shall not have it, Diomed; faith
you shall not;
I'll give you something else.
Dio. I will have this. Whose was it?
Cres. 'Tis no matter.
Dio. Come, tell me whose it was.
Cres. 'Twas one's that loved me better than you will.
But, now you have it, take it.
Dio. Whose was it?
Cres. By all Diana's waiting-women yond, 88
And by herself, I will not tell you whose.
Dio. To-morrow will I wear it on my helm,
And grieve his spirit that dares not challenge it.
Tro. Wert thou the devil, and wor'st it on
thy horn, 92
It should be challeng'd.
Cres. Well, well, 'tis done, 'tis past: and yet
it is not:
I will not keep my word.
Dio. Why then, farewell;

Thou never shalt mock Diomed again.
Cres. You shall not go: one cannot speak a word,
But it straight starts you.
Dio. I do not like this foiling.
Ther. Nor I, by Pluto: but that that likes not me
Pleases me best.
Dio. What, shall I come? the hour?
Cres. Ay, come:—O Jove!—
Do come:—I shall be plagu'd.
Dio. Farewell till then.
Cres. Good-night; I prithee, come.—
[Exit Diomedes.
Troilus, farewell! one eye yet looks on thee.
But with my heart the other eye doth see.
Ahh! poor our sex; this fault in us I find,
The error of our eye directs our mind.
What error leads must err. O! then conclude
Minds sway'd by eyes are full of turpitude.

Ther. A proof of strength she could not publish more,
Unless she said, 'My mind is now turn'd whore.'
Ulyss. All's done, my lord.
Tro. It is.
Ulyss. Why stay we, then?
Tro. To make a recordation to my soul
Of every syllable that here was spoke.
But if I tell how these two did co-act,
Shall I not lie in publishing a truth?
Sith yet there is a credence in my heart,
An esperance so obstinately strong,
That doth invert the attest of eyes and ears,
As if those organs had deceptive functions,
Created only to calumniate.

Was Cressid here?
Ulyss. I cannot conjure, Trojan.
Tro. She was not, sure.
Ulyss. Most sure she was.
Tro. Why, my negation hath no taste of
Nariness.
Ulyss. Nor mine, my lord: Cressid was here
but now.
Tro. Let it not be believ'd for womanhood!
Think we had mothers; do not give advantage
To stubborn critics, apt, without a theme.
For depravation, to square the general sex
By Cressid's rule: rather think this not Cressid.
Ulyss. What hath she done, prince, that can
soil our mothers?
Tro. Nothing at all, unless that this were she.
Ther. Will he swagger himself out on's own
eyes?
Tro. This she? no, this is Diomed's Cressida.
If beauty have a soul, this is not she;
If souls guide vows, if vows be sanctimony,
If sanctimony be the gods’ delight,
If there be rule in unity itself,
This is not she. O madness of discourse,
That cause sets up with and against itself; 140
Bi-fold authority! where reason can revolt
Without perditon, and loss assume all reason
Without revolt: this is, and is not, Cressid.
Within my soul there doth conduce a fight 144
Of this strange nature that a thing inseparable
Divides more wider than the sky and earth;
And yet the spacious breadth of this division
Admits no orifice for a point as subtle 148
As Ariadne’s broken woof to enter.
Instance, O instance! strong as Pluto’s gates;
Cressid is mine, tied with the bonds of heaven:
Instance, O instance! strong as heaven itself;
The bonds of heaven are slipp’d, dissolv’d, and
loos’d; 153
And with another knot, five-finger-tied,
The fragments, scraps, the bits, and greasy reliques 156
Of her o’er-eaten faith, are bound to Diomed.
Ulyss. May worthy Troilus be half attach’d
With that which his passion doth express?
Tro. Ay, Greek; and that shall be divulged
well 160
In characters as red as Mars his heart
Inflam’d with Venus: never did young man
fancy
With so eternal and so fix’d a soul.
Hark, Greek: as much as I do Cressid love, 164
So much by weight hate I her Diomed;
That sleeve is mine that he’ll bear on his
helm;
Were it a casque compos’d by Vulcan’s skill,
My sword should bite it. Not the dreadful spout
Which shipmen do the hurricano call, 169
Constring’d in mass by the almighty sun,
Shall dizzy with more clamour Neptune’s ear
In his descent than shall my prompted sword
Falling on Diomed. 173
Ther. He’ll tickle it for his concupisy.
Tro. O Cressid! O false Cressid! false, false,
false!
Let all untruths stand by thy stained name, 176
And they’ll seem glorious.
Ulyss. O! contain yourself;
Your passion draws ears hither.

Enter Æneas.

Æneas. I have been seeking you this hour, my
lord.

Hector, by this, is arming him in Troy: 180
Ajax, your guard, stays to conduct you home.
Tro. Have with you, prince. My courteous
lord, adieu.

Farewell, revolted fair! and Diomed,
Stand fast, and wear a castle on thy head! 184
Ulyss. I’ll bring you to the gates.
Tro. Accept distracted thanks.

[Exit TROILUS, ÆNEAS, and ULYSSES.

Ther. Would I could meet that rogue Diomed! I would croak like a raven; I would ope,
I would bope. Patroclus would give me any thing
for the intelligence of this where: the parrot
will not do more for an almonr than he for a commodious drab.
Lechery, lechery; still, wars and lechery: nothing else holds
fashion. A burning devil take them! [Exit.


Enter HECTOR and ANDROMACHE.

And. When was my lord so much ungently
temper’d,
To stop his ears against admonishment?
Unarm, unarm, and do not fight to-day.
Hect. You train me to offend you; get
you in:
By all the everlasting gods, I’ll go.
And. My dreams will, sure, prove cominous
to the day.
Hect. No more, I say.

Enter CASSANDRA.

Cas. Where is my brother Hector?
And. Here, sister; arm’d, and bloody in
intent.

Consort with me in loud and dear petition;
Pursue we him on knees; for I have drest m’d
Of bloody turbulence, and this whole night
Hath nothing been but shapes and forms of
slaughter. 12

Cas. O! ‘tis true.
Hect. Hol! bid my trumpet sound.
Cas. No notes of sally, for the heavens, sweet
brother.
Hect. Be gone, I say: the gods have heard
me swear.
Cas. The gods are deaf to hot and peevish
vows:
They are polluted offerings, more abhor’d
Than spotted livers in the sacrifice.

And. O! be persuaded: do not count it
holy
To hurt by being just: it is as lawful,
For we would give much, to use violent thefts,
And rob in the behalf of charity.
Cas. It is the purpose that makes strong the
vow;
But vows to every purpose must not hold. 24
Unarm, sweet Hector.

Hect. Hold you still, I say:
Mine honour keeps the weather of my fate:
Life every man holds dear; but the dear man
Holds honour far more precious-dear than life.

Enter Troilus.

How now, young man! mean'st thou to fight
to-day? 29
And. Cassandra, call my father to persuade.

[Exit Cassandra.

Hect. No faith, young Troilus; doff thy harness, youth;
I am to-day 't the vein of chivalry:
Let grow thy sinews till their knots be strong,
And tempt not yet the brushes of the war.
Unarm thee, go, and doubt thou not, brave boy,
I'll stand to-day for thee and me and Troy. 36
Tro. Brother, you have a vice of mercy in you,
Which better fits a lion than a man.

Hect. What vice is that, good Troilus? chide me for it.

Tro. When many times the captive Grecian falls,
Even in the fan and wind of your fair sword,
You bid them rise, and live.
Hect. Of 'tis fair play.
Tro. Fool's play, by heaven, Hector.
Hect. How now! how now!
Tro. For the love of all the gods, 44
Let's leave the hermit pity with our mothers,
And when we have our armours buckled on,
The venom'd vengeance ride upon our swords,
Spur them to ruthless work, rein them from ruth.
48
Hect. Fie, savage, fie!
Tro. Hector, then 'tis wars.

Hect. Troilus, I would not have you fight to-day.

Tro. Who should withhold me?
Not fate, obedience, nor the hand of Mars
Beckoning with fiery truncheon on my retire;
Not Priamus and Hecuba on knees,
Their eyes o'ergalled with recourse of tears;
Nor you, my brother, with your true sword drawn,
Oppos'd to hinder me, should stop my way,
But by my ruin.

Re-enter Cassandra, with Priam.

Cas. Lay hold upon him, Priam, hold him fast:
He is thy crutch; now if thou lose thy stay,
Thou on him leaning, and all Troy on thee,
Fall all together.

Pri. Come, Hector, come; go back:
Thy wife hath dream'd; thy mother hath had visions;
Cassandra doth foresee; and I myself
Am like a prophet suddenly enrapt,
To tell thee that this day is ominous:
Therefore, come back.

Hect. Aeneas is a-field;
And I do stand engag'd to many Greeks,
Even in the faith of valour, to appear
This morning to them.

Pri. Ay, but thou shalt not go.
Hect. I must not break my faith.
You know me dutiful; therefore, dear sir,
Let me not shame respect, but give me leave
To take that course by your consent and voice,
Which you do here forbid me, royal Priam.

Cas. O Priam! yield not to him.
And. Do not, dear father.
Hect. Andromache, I am offended with you:
Upon the love you bear me, get you in.

[Exit Andromache.

Tro. This foolish, dreaming, superstitious girl
Makes all these bodements.

Cas. O farewell! dear Hector. 80
Look! how thou diest; look! how thy eye turns pale;
Look! how thy wounds do bleed at many vents:
Hark! how Troy roars: how Hecuba cries out!
How poor Andromache shrills her doulous forth!
Behold, distraction, frenzy, and amazement,
Like witless antics, one another meet,
And all cry Hector! Hector's dead! O Hector!

Tro. Away! Away!

Cas. Farewell. Yet, soft! Hector, I take my leave:
Thou dost thyself and all our Troy deceive.

[Exit.

Hect. You are amaz'd, my liege, at her claim.
Go in and cheer the town: we'll forth and fight;
Do deeds worth praise and tell you them at night.

Pri. Farewell: the gods with safety stand about thee!

[Exeunt severally Priam and Hector.

Alarms.

Tro. They are at it, hark! Proud Diomed, believe,
I come to lose my arm, or win my sleeve.

As Troilus is going out, enter, from the other side, Pandarus.

Pan. Do you hear, my lord? do you hear? Tro. What now?
Pan. Here's a letter come from yond poor girl.

Tro. Let me read.

Pan. A whore's son tis sick, a whore'son rascally
tisick so troubles me, and the foolish fortune of this girl; and what one thing, what another, that I shall leave you one of these days: and I have a rheum in mine eyes too, and such an ache in my bones that, unless a man were cursed, I cannot tell what to think on't. What says she there? 108

Tro. Words, words, mere words, no matter from the heart;
The effect doth operate another way.

[Tearing the letter.
Go, wind to wind, there turn and change together.
My love with words and errors still she feeds,
But edifies another with her deeds. 113

[Exeunt severally.

SCENE IV.—Between Troy and the Grecian Camp.

Alarums. Excursions. Enter THERSITES.

Ther. Now they are clapper-clawing one another; I'll go look on. That dissembling abominable varlet, Diomed, has got that same scurvy doting foolish young knave's sleeve of Troy there in his helm: I would fain see them meet; that that same young Trojan ass, that loves the whore there, might send that Greekish whore-masternly villain, with the sleeve, back to the dissembling luxurious drab, on a sleeveless errand. O the other side, the policy of those crafty swearing rascals,—that stale old mouse-eaten dry cheese, Nestor, and that same dog fox, Ulysses, is not proved worth a blackberry: they set me up, in policy, that mongrel cur, Ajax, against that dog of as bad a kind, Achilles; and now is the cur Ajax prouder than the cur Achilles, and will not arm to-day; whereupon the Grecians begin to proclaim barbarism, and policy grows into an ill opinion. Soft! here comes sleeve, and t' other.

Enter Diomedes, TROILUS following.

Tro. Fly not; for shouldst thou take the river Styx,
I would swim after.

Dio. Thou dost miscall retire;
I do not fly; but advantageous care
Withdrew me from the odds of multitude. 24

Hec. Have at thee!

Ther. Hold thy whore, Greek! now for thy whore, Trojan! now the sleeve, now the sleeve!

[Exeunt TROILUS and DIOMEDES, fighting.

Enter Hector.

Hect. What art thou, Greek? art thou for Hector's match? 28

Art thou of blood and honour?

Ther. No, no, I am a rascal; a scurvy railing knave; a very filthy rogue.

Hect. I do believe thee: live. 33

Ther. God-a-mercy, that thou wilt believe me; but a plague break thy neck for frightening me! What's become of the wenching rogues? I think they have swallowed one another: I would laugh at that miracle; yet, in a sort, lechery eats it self. I'll seek them. 39

[Exeunt.

SCENE V.—Another Part of the Plains.

Enter DIOMEDES and a Servant.

Dio. Go, go, my servant, take thou Troilus' horse;
Present the fair steed to my Lady Cressida:
Fellow, commend my service to her beauty:
Tell her I have chastis'd the amorous Trojan, 4
And am her knigh by proof.

Serv. I go, my lord. [Exit.

Enter AGAMEMNON.

Agam. Renew, renew! The fierce Polydamas Hath beat down Menon; bastard Margarelon Hath Doreus prisoner, 8
And stands coloseus-wise, waving his beam,
Upon the passed corse of the kings
Epiaphous and Cedius; Polixenes is slain;
Amphimachus, and Thoas, deadly hurt; 12
Patroclus ta'en, or slain; and Palamedes
Sore hurt and bruised; the dreadful Sagittary
Appasa our numbers: haste we, Diomed,
To reinforcement, or we perish all. 16

Enter NESTOR.

Nest. Go, bear Patroclus' body to Achilles;
And bid the snail-pac'd Ajax arm for shame.
There is a thousand Hectors in the field:
Now here he fights on Galathe his horse, 20
And there lacks work; anon he's there afoot,
And there they fly or die, like scalded sculls
Before the belching whale; then is he yonder,
And there the stragy Greeks, ripe for his edge,
Fall down before him, like the mower's swath;
Here, there, and everywhere, he leaves and takes,
Dexterity so obeying appetite
That what he will he does; and does so much
That proof is called impossibility. 29

Enter ULYSSES.

Ulyss. O! courage, courage, princes; great Achilles
Is arming, weeping, cursing, vowing vengeance;
Patroclus' wounds have roused his drowsy blood,
Together with his mangled Myrmidons, 33
That noseless, handleless, hack’d and chipp’d, come to him,
Crying on Hector. Ajax hath lost a friend,
And foams at mouth, and he is arm’d and at it,
Roaring for Troilus, who hath done to-day
Mad and fantastic execution,
Engaging and redeeming of himself
With such a careless force and forceless care
As if that luck, in very spite of cunning,
Bade him win all.

Enter Ajax.
Ay, there, there.
Nest. So, so, we draw together.

Enter Achilles.
Achil. Where is this Hector? Come, come, thou boy-querler, show thy face; know what it is to meet Achilles angry:
Hector! where’s Hector? I will none but Hector. [Exit.

Scene VI.—Another Part of the Plains.

Enter Ajax.
Ajax. Troilus, thou coward Troilus, show thy head!

Enter Diomedes.
Dio. Troilus, I say! where’s Troilus?
Ajax. What wouldst thou?
Dio. I would correct him.
Ajax. Were I the general, thou shouldst have my office ere that correction. Troilus, I say! what, Troilus!

Enter Troilus.
Tro. O traitor Diomed! Turn thy false face, thou traitor!
And pay thy life thou ow’st me for my horse!
Dio. He is my prize; I will not look upon.
Tro. Come, both you coggling Greeks; have at you both! [Exit, fighting.

Enter Hector.
Hect. Yea, Troilus? O, well fought, my youngest brother!

Enter Achilles.
Achil. Now I do see thee. Hal have at thee, Hector!

Hect. Pause, if thou wilt.
Achil. I do disdain thy courtesy, proud Trojan.
Be happy that my arms are out of use: my rest and negligence befriended thee now, But thou anon shalt hear of me again;
Till when, go seek thy fortune. [Exit.
Hect. Fare thee well:—I would have been much more a fresher man, Had I expected thee. How now, my brother!

Re-enter Troilus.
Tro. Ajax hath ta’en Æneas: shall it be?
No, by the flame of yonder glorious heaven, He shall not carry him: I’ll be ta’en too, Or bring him off. Fate, hear me what I say! I reck not though I end my life to-day. [Exit.

Enter One in sumptuous armour.
Hect. Stand, stand, thou Greek; thou art a goodly mark.
No? wilt thou not? I like thy armour well; I’ll flush it, and unlock the rivets all, But I’ll be master of it. Wilt thou not, beast, abide?
Why then, fly on, I’ll hunt thee for thy hide. [Exit.

Scene VII.—Another Part of the Plains.

Enter Achilles, with Myrmidons.
Achil. Come here about me, you my Myrmidons; Mark what I say. Attend me where I wheel: Strike not a stroke, but keep yourselves in breath:
And when I have the bloody Hector found, Empale him with your weapons round about; In fallest manner execute your aims. Follow me, sirs, and my proceedings eye: It is decreed, Hector the great must die. [Exit.

Enter Menelaus and Paris, fighting; then Thersites.

Enter Margarelon.
Mar. Turn, slave, and fight.
Ther. What art thou?
Mar. A bastard son of Priam’s. Ther. I am a bastard too; I love bastards: I am a bastard begot, bastard instructed, bastard
in mind, bastard in valour, in every thing illegitimate. One bear will not bite another, and wherefore should one bastard? Take heed, the quarrel’s most ominous to us: if the son of a whose fight for a whore, he tempts judgment. Farewell, bastard. [Exit. Mar. The devil take thee, coward! [Exit.

SCENE VIII.—Another Part of the Plains.

Enter HECTOR.

Hect. Most putrefied core, so fair without, Thy goodly armour thus hath cost thy life. Now is my day’s work done; I’ll take good breath: Rest, sword; thou hast thy fill of blood and death. [Puts off his helmet, and hangs his shield behind him.

Enter ACHILLES and Myrmidons.

Achil. Look, Hector, how the sun begins to set; How ugly night comes breathing at his heels: Even with the vail and the clos’d up, Hector’s life is done. 8 Hect. I am unarm’d; forgo this vantage, Greek.

Achil. Strike, fellows, strike! this is the man I seek. [HECTOR falls.

Sio, Ilium, fall thou next! now, Troy, sink down! Here lies thy heart, thy sinew, and thy bone. 12 On! Myrmidons, and cry you all amain, ‘Achilles hath the mighty Hector slain.’— [A retreat sounded.

Hark! a retreat upon our Grecian part.

Myr. The Trojan trumpets sound the like, my lord. 16 Achil. The dragon wing of night o’erspreads the earth, And, stickler-like, the armies separates. My half-supp’d sword, that frankly would have fed, Pleas’d with this dainty bait, thus goes to bed.— [Sheathes his sword.

Come, tie his body to my horse’s tail; 21 Along the field I will the Trojan trail. [Exeunt.

SCENE IX.—Another Part of the Plains.

Enter AGAMEMNON, AJAX, MENELAUS, NESTOR, DIOMEDES, and Others marching. Shouts within.


Ajax. If it be so, yet bragless let it be; 4 Great Hector was a man as good as he.

Agam. March patiently along. Let one be sent To pray Achilles see us at our tent.

If in his death the gods have us befriended, 8 Great Troy is ours, and our sharp wars are ended. [Exeunt marching.

SCENE X.—Another Part of the Plains.

Enter AENEAS and Trojans.

Aene. Stand, ho! yet are we masters of the field.

Never go home; here starve we out the night.

Enter TROILUS.

Tro. Hector is slain.

All. Hector! the gods forbid!

Tro. He’s dead; and at the murderer’s horse’s tail, 4 In beastly sort, dragg’d through the shameful field.

Frown on, you heavens, effect your rage with speed!

Sit, gods, upon your thrones, and smile at Troy!

I say, at once let your brief plagues be mercy, 8 And linger not our sure destructions on!

Aene. My lord, you do discomfort all the host.

Tro. You understand me not that tell me so.

I do not speak of flight, of fear, of death; 12 But dare all imminence that gods and men Address their dangers in. Hector is gone: Who shall tell Priam so, or Hecuba? Let him that will a screech-owl ay be call’d 16 Go in to Troy, and say there Hector’s dead: There is a word will Priam turn to stone, Make wells and Nioches of the maids and wives, Cold statues of the youth; and, in a word, 20 Scare Troy out of itself. But march away: Hector is dead; there is no more to say.

Stay yet. You vile abominable tents, Thus proudly pight upon our Phrygian plains, Let Titan rise as early as he dare, 25 I’ll through and through you! And, thou great-six’d coward,

No space of earth shall sunder our two hates: I’ll haunt thee like a wicked conscience still, 28 That mouldeth goblins swift as frenzy’s thoughts.

Strike a free march to Troy! with comfort go: Hope of revenge shall hide our inward woe.

[Exeunt AENEAS and Trojan Forces. 807
As TROILUS is going out, enter, from the other side, PANDARUS.

Pan. But hear you, hear you! Hence, broker lackey! ignomy and shame Pursue thy life, and live aye with thy name! [Exit.

Pan. A goodly medicine for my aching bones! O world! world! world! thus is the poor agent despised. O traitors and bawds, how earnestly are you set a-work, and how ill requited! why should our endeavour be so loved, and the performance so loathed? what verse for it? what instance for it?—Let me see!—

Full merrily the humble-bee doth sing, Till he hath lost his honey and his sting; And being once subdued in armed tail, Sweet honey and sweet notes together fail.

Good traders in the flesh, set this in your painted cloths.

As many as be here of pander's hall, Your eyes, half out, weep out at Pandar's fall; Or if you cannot weep, yet give some groans, Though not for me, yet for your aching bones.

Brethren and sisters of the hold-door trade, Some two months hence my will shall here be made. It should be now, but that my fear is this, Some galled goose of Winchester would hiss. Till then I'll sweat, and seek about for eases; And at that time bequeath you my diseases [Exit.
CO R I O L A N U S

DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

C A I U S  M A R C I U S ,  afterwards Caius Marcius Coriolanus.

T T L U S  L A R T I U S ,  Generals against the Vol-

C O M I N I U S ,  cians.


S I C I N I U S  V E L U T U S ,  Tribunes of the People.

J U N I U S  B R U T U S ,

Y O U N G  M A R C I U S ,  Son to Coriolanus.

A Roman Herald.

T U L L I U S  A U F I D I U S ,  General of the Volsclians.

Lieutenant to Aufidius.

Conspirators with Aufidius.

N I C A N O R ,  a Roman.

A Citizen of Antium.

A D R I A N ,  a Volsc.

Two Volscian Guards.

V O L U M N I A ,  Mother to Coriolanus,

V I R G I L I A ,  Wife to Coriolanus.

V A L E R I A ,  Friend to Virgilia.

Gentlewoman, attending on Virgilia.

Roman and Volscian Senators, Patricians,
Ædiles, Lictors, Soldiers, Citizens, Message

s, Servants to Aufidius, and other

Attendants.

SCENE.—Rome and the Neighbourhood; Corioli and the Neighbourhood; Antium.

ACT I.

SCENE I.—Rome. A Street.

Enter a Company of mutinous Citizens, with

slaves, clubs, and other weapons.

First Cit. Before we proceed any further, hear me speak.

All. Speak, speak.

First Cit. You are all resolved rather to die

than to famish? 5

All. Resolved, resolved.

First Cit. First, you know Caius Marcius is

chief enemy to the people.

All. We know't, we know't.

First Cit. Let us kill him, and we'll have
corn at our own price. Is't a verdict?

All. No more talking on't; let it be done. Away, away!

Sec. Cit. One word, good citizens.

First Cit. We are accounted poor citizens, the patricians good. What authority surfeits
on would relieve us. If they would yield us but
the superfluity, while it were wholesome, we
might guess they relieved us humanely; but they think we are too dear: the leanness that
afflicts us, the object of our misery, is as an
inventory to particularise their abundance; our
sufferance is a gain to them. Let us revenge
this with our pikes, ere we become rakes: for
the gods know I speak this in hunger for bread,
not in thirst for revenge.

Sec. Cit. Would you proceed especially against

Caius Marcius?

First Cit. Against him first: he's a very dog
to the commonalty.

Sec. Cit. Consider you what services he has
done for his country?

First Cit. Very well; and could be content
to give him good report for't, but that he pays
himself with being proud.

Sec. Cit. Nay, but speak not maliciously. 36

First Cit. I say unto you, what he hath done
famously, he did it to that end: though soft-
conscience men can be content to say it was
for his country, he did it to please his mother,
and to be partly proud; which he is, even to the
altitude of his virtue.

Sec. Cit. What he cannot help in his nature,
you account a vice in him. You must in no
way say he is covetous.

First Cit. If I must not, I need not be barren
of accusations: he hath faults, with surplus, to
tire in repetition. [Shouts within.] What shouts
are these? The other side o' the city is risen:
why stay we praying here? to the Capitol?

All. Come, come.

First Cit. Soft! who comes here?


Sec. Cit. Worthy Menenius Agrippa; one

that hath always loved the people.

First Cit. He's one honest enough: would
all the rest were so!

Men. What work's, my countrymen, in

hand? Where go you

With bats and clubs? The matter? Speak, I

pray you.

First Cit. Our business is not unknown to

the senate; they have had inking this fortnight
what we intend to do, which now we'll show 'em
in deeds. They say poor suitors have strong breaths: they shall know we have strong arms too.

**Men.** Why, masters, my good friends, mine honest neighbours,
Will you undo yourselves?

**First Cit.** We cannot, sir; we are undone already.

**Men.** I tell you, friends, most charitable care
Have the patricians of you. For your wants,
Your suffering in this dearth, you may as well
Strike at the heaven with your staves as lift them
Against the Roman state, whose course will on
The way it takes, cracking ten thousand curbs
Of more strong link asunder than can ever
Appear in your impediment. For the dearth,
The gods, not the patricians, make it, and
Your knees to them, not arms, must help.

Alack!
You are transported by calamity
Thither where more attends you; and you slander
The helms o’ the state, who care for you like fathers,
When you curse them as enemies.

**First Cit.** Care for us! True, indeed! They ne’er cared for us yet: suffer us to famish, and
their storehouses crammed with grain; make edicts for usury, to support usurers; repeal daily any wholesome act established against the rich, and provide more piercing statutes daily to chain up and restrain the poor. If the wars eat us not up, they will; and there’s all the love they bear us.

**Men.** Either you must
Confess yourselves wondrous malicious,
Or be accus’d of folly. I shall tell you
A pretty tale: it may be you have heard it;
But, since it serves my purpose, I will venture
To scale ’t a little more.

**First Cit.** Well, I’ll hear it, sir; yet you must not think to fob off our disgrace with a tale; but, an’t please you, deliver.

**Men.** There was a time when all the body’s members
Rebell’d against the belly; thus accus’d it:
That only like a gulf it did remain
I’ the midst o’ the body, idle and unactive,
Still cupboarding the viand, never bearing
Like labour with the rest, where the other instruments
Did see and hear, devise, instruct, walk, feel,
And, mutually participate, did minister
Unto the appetite and affection common
Of the whole body. The belly answer’d,—

**First Cit.** Well, sir, what answer made the belly?

**Men.** Sir, I shall tell you.—With a kind of smile,
Which ne’er came from the lungs, but even thus—
For, look you, I may make the belly smile
As well as speak—it tauntingly replied
To the discontented members, the mutinous parts
That enviéd his receipt; even so much fitly
As you malign our senators for that
They are not such as you.

**First Cit.** Your belly’s answer? What!
The kingly crowned head, the vigilant eye,
The counsellor heart, the arm our soldier,
Our steed the leg, the tongue our trumpeter,
With other muniments and petty helps
In this our fabric, if that they—

**Men.** What then?
’Fore me, this fellow speaks! what then? what then?

**First Cit.** Should by the cormorant belly be restrain’d,
Who is the sink o’ the body,—

**Men.** Well, what then?

**First Cit.** The former agents, if they did complain,
What could the belly answer?

**Men.** I will tell you;
If you’ll bestow a small, of what you have little,
Patieence a while, you’ll hear the belly’s answer.

**First Cit.** You’re long about it.

**Men.** Note me this, good friend; 133
Your most grave belly was deliberate,
Not rash like his accusers, and thus answer’d:
‘True is it, my incorporate friends,’ quoth he,
‘That I receive the general food at first,
Which you do live upon; and fit it is;
Because I am the store-house and the shop
Of the whole body: but, if you do remember,
I send it through the rivers of your blood,
Even to the court, the heart, to the seat o’ the brain;
And, through the cranks and offices of man,
The strongest nerves and small inferior veins
From me receive that natural competency
Whereby they live. And though that all at once,
You, my good friends,—this says the belly,
mark me,—

**First Cit.** Ay, sir; well, well.

**Men.** ‘Though all at once cannot
See what I do deliver out to each,
Yet I can make my audit up, that all
From me do back receive the flour of all,
And leave me but the bran.’ What say you to’t?
And call him noble that was now your hate,
Him vile that was your garland. What's the matter,
That in these several places of the city
You cry against the noble senate, who,
Under the gods, keep you in awe, which else
Would feed on one another? What's their seeking?

Men. For corn at their own rates; whereof
they say
The city is well stor'd.

Mar. Hang 'em! They say! They'll sit by the fire, and presume to know
What's done i' the Capitol; who's like to rise,
Who thrives, and who declines; side factions,
And give out
Conjectural marriages; making parties strong,
And feebing such as stand not in their liking,
Below their cobbled shoes. They say there's grain enough!

Would the nobility lay aside their ruth,
And let me use my sword, I'd make a quarry
With thousands of these quarter'd slaves, as high
As I could pick my lance.

Men. Nay, these are almost thoroughly persuaded;
For though abundantly they lack discretion, yet are they passing cowardly. But, I beseech you,
What says the other troop?

Mar. They are dissolv'd: hang 'em!
They said they were an-hungry; sigh'd forth proverbs:
That hunger broke stone walls; that dogs must eat;
That meat was made for mouths; that the gods sent not
Corn for the rich men only. With these shreds
They vented their complaining; which being answer'd,
And a petition granted them, a strange one,—
To break the heart of generosity,
And make bold power look pale,—they threw their caps
As they would hang them on the horns o' the moon,
Shouting their emulation.

Men. What is granted them?

Mar. Five tribunes to defend their vulgar wisdoms,
Of their own choice: one's Junius Brutus,
Scinius Velutus, and I know not—'Sdeath!
The rabble should have first unroot'd the city,
Ere so prevail'd with me; it will in time
Win upon power, and throw forth greater themes

First Cit. It was an answer: how apply you this?

Men. The senators of Rome are this good belly,
And you the mutinous members; for, examine
Their counsels and their cares, digest things rightly

Touching the weal o' the common, you shall find
No public benefit which you receive
But it proceeds or comes from them to you,
And no way from yourselves. What do you think

You, the great toe of this assembly?

First Cit. I the great toe? Why the great toe?

Men. For that, being one o' the lowest, basest, poorest,
Of this most wise rebellion, thou go'st foremost;
Thou rascal, that art worst in blood to run,
Lead'st first to win some vantage.

But make you reedy your stuff bate and clubs:
Rome and her rats are at the point of battle;
The one side must have bale.

Enter Caius Marcius.

Mar. Thanks. — What's the matter, you dissentious rogues,
That, rubbing the poor itch of your opinion,
Make yourselves scabs?

First Cit. We have ever your good word.

Mar. He that will give good words to thee will flatter

Beneath abhorring. What would you have, you curs,
That like nor peace nor war? the one affrights you,
The other makes you proud. He that trusts to you,

Where he should find you lions, finds you hares;
Where foxes, geese: you are no surer, no,
Than is the coal of fire upon the ice,
Or hailstone in the sun. Your virtue is,

To make him worthy whose offence subdues him,
And curse that justice did it. Who deserves greatness

Deserves your hate; and your affections are
A sick man's appetite, who desires most that

Which would increase his evil. He that depends
Upon your favours swims with fins of lead
And hews down oaks with rushes. Hang ye!
Trust ye?

With every minute you do change a mind,
For insurrection's arguing.

Men. This is strange.

Mar. Go; get you home, you fragments! Enter a Messenger, hastily.

Mess. Where's Caius Marcus?

Mar. Here: what's the matter?

Mess. The news is, sir, the Volsces are in arms.

Mar. I am glad on't; then we shall ha' means to vent Our musty superfluity. See, our best elders.

Enter Cominius, Titus Lartius, and other Senators; Junius Brutus and Sicinius Velutus.

First Sen. Marcus, 'tis true that you have lately told us; The Volsces are in arms.

Mar. They have a leader, Tullus Aufidius, that will put you to 't.

I sin in envying his nobility, And were I anything but what I am, I would wish me only he.

Com. You have fought together.

Mar. Were half to half the world by the ears, and he Upon my party, I'd revolt, to make Only my wars with him: he is a lion That I am proud to hunt.

First Sen. Then, worthy Marcus, Attend upon Cominius to these wars.

Com. It is your former promise.

Mar. Sir, it is; And I am constant. Titus Lartius, thou Shalt see me once more strike at Tullus' face.

What! art thou stiff? stand'st out?

Tit. No, Caius Marcus; I'll lean upon one crutch and fight with t'other,

Ere stay behind this business.

Men. O! true-bred.

First Sen. Your company to the Capitol; where I know Our greatest friends attend us.

Tit. [To Cominius.] Lead you on:

[To MARCIUS.] Follow Cominius; we must follow you;

Right worthy you priority.

Com. Noble Marcus!

First Sen. [To the Citizens.] Hence! to your homes! be gone.

Mar. Nay, let them follow: The Volsces have much corn; take these rats thither To gnaw their garners. Worshipful mutinies,

Your valour puts well forth; pray, follow. [Exeunt Senators, Cominius, Marcius, Titus, and Menenius. Citizens steal away.

Sir. Was ever man so proud as is this Marcius?

Bru. He has no equal.

Sir. When we were chosen tribunes for the people,—

Bru. Mark'd you his lip and eyes?

Sir. Nay, but his taunts.

Bru. Being mov'd, he will not spare to gird the gods.

Sir. Bemock the modest moon.

Bru. The present wars devour him; he is grown Too proud to be so valiant.

Sir. Such a nature, Tickled with good success, disdain's the shadow Which he treads on at noon. But I do wonder His insolence can brook to be commanded Under Cominius.

Bru. Fame, at the which he aims, In whom already he is well grac'd, cannot Better be held nor more attain'd than by A place below the first; for what miscarries Shall be the general's fault, though he perform To the utmost of a man; and giddy censure Will then cry out of Marcius 'O! if he Had borne the business.'

Sir. Besides, if things go well, Opinion, that so sticks on Marcius, shall Of his demerits rob Cominius.

Bru. Come: Half all Cominius' honours are to Marcius, Though Marcius earn'd them not; and all his To Marcius shall be honours, though indeed In aught he merit not.

Sir. Let's hence and hear How the dispatch is made; and in what fashion, More than his singularity, he goes Upon this present action.

Bru. Let's along. [Exeunt.

SCENE II.—Corioli. The Senate-house.

Enter Tullus Aufidius and Senators.

First Sen. So, your opinion is, Aufidius, That they of Rome are enter'd in our counsels, And know how we proceed.

Auf. Is it not yours?

What ever have been thought on in this state, That could be brought to bodily act ere Rome Had circumvention? 'Tis not four days gone Since I heard thence; these are the words: I think I have the letter here; yes, here it is.
They have press'd a power, but it is not known
Whether for east, or west: the dearth is great;
The people mutinous; and it is rumour'd,
Cominius, Marcus, your old enemy,— 12
Who is of Rome worse hated than of you,—
And Titus Lartius, a most valiant Roman,
These three lead on this preparation
Whether 'tis bent: most likely 'tis for you: 16
Consider of it.

First Sen. Our army's in the field:
We never yet made doubt but Rome was ready
To answer us.

Aup. Nor did you think it folly
To keep your great pretences veil'd till when 20
They must needs show themselves; which in
the hatching,
It seem'd, appear'd to Rome. By the discovery
We shall be shorten'd in our aim, which was
To take in many towns are almost Rome 24
Should know we were afoot.

Sec. Sen. Noble Aufidius,
Take your commission; bie you to your bands;
Let us alone to guard Coriol:
If they set down before's, for the remove 28
Bring up your army; but, I think you'll find
They've not prepared for us.

Aup. O! doubt not that;
I speak from certainties. Nay, more;
Some parcels of their power are forth already, 32
And only hitherward. I leave your honours.
If we and Caius Marcus chance to meet,
'Tis sworn between us we shall ever strike
Till one can do no more.

All. The gods assist you! 36
Aup. And keep your honours safe!
First Sen. Farewell.
Sec. Sen. Farewell.
Aup. Farewell. [Exeunt.


Enter VOLUMNIA and VIRGILIA: they set them
down on two low stools and sew.

Vol. I pray you, daughter, sing; or express yourself in a more comfortable sort. If my son were my husband, I would freelier rejoice in that absence wherein he won honour than in the embraces of his bed where he would show most love. When yet he was but tender-bodied and the only son of my womb, when youth with comeliness plucked all gaze his way, when for a day of kings' entreaties a mother should not sell him an hour from her beholding, I, considering how honour would become such a person, that it was no better than picture-like to hang by the wall, if renown made it not stir, was pleased to let him seek danger where he was like to find fame. To a cruel war I sent him; from whence he returned, his brows bound with oak. I tell thee, daughter, I sprang not more in joy at first hearing he was a man-child than now in first seeing he had proved himself a man. 19

Vir. But had he died in the business, madam; how then?

Vol. Then, his good report should have been my son; I therein would have found issue. Hear me profess sincerely: had I a dozen sons, each in my love alike, and none less dear than thine and my good Marcus, I had rather had eleven die nobly for their country than one voluptuously surfet out of action.

Enter a Gentlewoman.

Gen. Madam, the Lady Valeria is come to visit you.

Vir. Beseech you, give me leave to retire myself.

Vol. Indeed, you shall not.

Methinks I hear either your husband's drum,
See him pluck Aufidius down by the hair,
As children from a bear, the Volsces shunning him:
Methinks I see him stamp thus, and call thus:
'Come on, you cowards! you were got in fear,
Though you were born in Rome.' His bloody brow
With his mail'd hand then wiping, forth he goes,
Like to a harvestman that's task'd to mow 40
Or all or lose his hire.

Vir. His bloody brow! O Jupiter! no blood.
Vol. Away, you fool! it more becomes a man
Than gilt his trophy: the breasts of Hecuba, 44
When she did suckle Hector, look'd not lovelier
Than Hector's forehead when it spit forth blood
At Grecian swords, contemning. Tell Valeria
We are fit to bid her welcome. 48

[Exit Gentlewoman.

Vir. Heavens bless my lord from fell Aufidius!

Vol. He'll beat Aufidius' head below his knee,
And tread upon his neck.

Re-enter Gentlewoman, with VALERIA and an Usher.

Val. My ladies both, good day to you. 52
Vol. Sweet madam.
Vir. I am glad to see your ladyship.

Val. How do you both? you are manifest housekeepers. What are you sewing here? A fine spot, in good faith. How does your little son?

Vir. I thank your ladyship; well, good madam.
Vol. He had rather see the swords and hear a drum, than look upon his schoolmaster.

Vol. O' my word, the father's son; I'll swear 'tis a very pretty boy. O' my troth, I looked upon him o' Wednesday half an hour together: he has such a confirmed countenance. I saw him run after a gilded butterfly; and when he caught it, he let it go again; and after it again; and over and over he comes, and up again; caught it again: or whether his fall enraged him, or how 'twas, he did so set his teeth and tear it! O! I warrant, how he hallowed it!

Vol. One on 's father's moods.

Val. Indeed, la, 'tis a noble child.

Vir. A crack, madam.

Val. Come, lay aside your stitchery; I must have you play the idle huswife with me this afternoon.

Vir. No, good madam; I will not out of doors.

Val. Not out of doors!

Val. She shall, she shall.

Vir. Indeed, no, by your patience; I will not over the threshold till my lord return from the wars.

Vol. Fie! you confine yourself most unreasonably. Come; you must go visit the good lady that lies in.

Vir. I will wish her speedy strength, and visit her with my prayers; but I cannot go thither.

Vol. Why, I pray you?

Vir. 'Tis not to save labour, nor that I want love.

Val. You would be another Penelope; yet, they say, all the yarn she spun in Ulysses' absence did but fill Ithaca full of moths; Come; I would your cambric were sensible as your finger, that you might leave pricking it for pity. Come, you shall go with us.

Val. No, good madam, pardon me; indeed, I will not forth.

Val. In truth, la, go with me; and I'll tell you excellent news of your husband.

Vir. O, good madam, there can be none yet.

Val. Verily, I do not jest with you; there came news from him last night.

Vir. Indeed, madam?

Val. In earnest, it's true; I heard a senator speak it. Thus it is: The Volscæ have an army forth; against whom Cominius the general is gone, with one part of our Roman power: your lord and Titus Lartius are set down before their city Corioli; they nothing doubt prevailing and to make it brief wars. This is true, on mine honour; and so, I pray, go with us.

Vir. Give me excuse, good madam; I will obey you in every thing hereafter.

Vol. Let her alone, lady: as she is now she will but disease our better mirth.

Vol. In troth, I think she would. Fare you well then. Come, good sweet lady. Prithee, Virgilia, turn thy solemnness out o' door, and go along with us.

Vir. No, at a word, madam; indeed I must not. I wish you much mirth.

Val. Well then, farewell. [Exeunt.

SCENE IV.—Before Corioli.

Enter, with drum and colours, MARCIUS, TITUS LARTIUS, Officers, and Soldiers. To them a Messenger.

Mar. Yonder comes news: a wager they have met.

Lart. My horse to yours, no.

Mar. 'Tis done.

Lart. Agreed.

Mar. Say, has our general met the enemy?

Mess. They lie in view, but have not spoke as yet.

Lart. So the good horse is mine.

Mar. I'll buy him of you.

Lart. No, I'll nor sell nor give him; lend you him I will

For half a hundred years. Summon the town.

Mar. How far off lie these armies?

Mess. Within this milk and half.

Mar. Then shall we hear their larum, and they ours.

Now, Mars, I prithee, make us quick in work, That we with smoking swords may march from hence, To help our fielded friends! Come, blow thy blast.

A Parley sounded. Enter, on the Walls, two Senators, and Others.

Tullus Aufidius, is he within your walls?

First Sen. No, nor a man that fears you less than he, That's lesser than a little. Hark, our drums [Drums afar off.

Are bringing forth our youth: we'll break our walls, Rather than they shall pound us up: our gates, Which yet seem shut, we have but pin'd with rushes;

They'll open of themselves. Hark you, far off! [Alarum afar off.

There is Aufidius: list, what work he makes Amongst your cloven army.

Mar. 'O! they are at it!

Lart. Their noise be our instruction. Lad- ders, hol!
The Volscæ enter, and pass over the stage.

Mar. They fear us not, but issue forth their city.

Now put your shields before your hearts, and fight

With hearts more proof than shields. Advance, brave Titus:

They do disdain us much beyond our thoughts, Which makes me weep with wrath. Come on, my fellows:

He that retires, I'll take him for a Volscæ, And he shall feel mine edge.

Alarum. The Romans are beaten back to their trenches. Re-enter MARCIUS.

Mar. All the contagion of the south light on you,

You shame of Rome! you herd of—Boils and plagues

Plaster you o'er, that you may be abhorr'd

Further than seen, and one infect another Against the wind a mile! You souls of geese, That bear the shapes of men, how have you run From slaves that apes would beat! Pluto and hell!

All hurt behind; backs red, and faces pale With flight and agony! Mend and charge home,

Or, by the fires of heaven, I'll leave the foe And make my wars on you; look to 't: come on; If you'll stand fast, we'll beat them to their wives,

As they us to our trenches follow'd.

Another alarum. The Volscæ and Romans re-enter, and the fight is renewed. The Volscæ retire into Corioli, and MARCIUS follows them to the gates.

So, now the gates are ope: now prove good seconds:

'Tis for the followers Fortune widens them, Not for the fliers: mark me, and do the like.

[He enters the gates.

First Sol. Foolhardiness! not I.

Sec. Sol. Nor I.

[MARCIUS is shut in.

Third Sol. See, they have shut him in.

All. To the pot, I warrant him.

[Alarum continues.

Re-enter TITUS LARTIUS.

Lart. What is become of Marcius?

All. Slain, sir, doubtless.

First Sol. Following the fliers at the very heels,

With them he enters; who, upon the sudden, Clapp'd to their gates; he is himself alone,

To answer all the city.

Lart. O noble fellow! Who, sensibly, outdarest his senseless sword, And, when it bows, stands up. Thou art left, Marcus: A carbuncle entire, as big as thou art, Were not so rich a jewel. Thou wast a soldier Even to Cato's wish, not fierce and terrible Only in strokes; but, with thy grim looks and The thunder-like percussion of thy sounds, Thou mad'st thine enemies shake, as if the world Were feverous and did tremble.

Re-enter MARCIUS, bleeding, assaulted by the enemy.

First Sol. Look, sir!

Lart. O! 'tis Marcius!

Let's fetch him off, or make remain alike. [They fight, and all enter the city.

SCENE V.—Corioli. A Street.

Enter certain Romans, with spoils.

First Rom. This will I carry to Rome.

Sec. Rom. And I this.

Third Rom. A murrain on 't! I took this for silver. [Alarum continues still afar off.

Enter MARCIUS and TITUS LARTIUS, with a trumpet.

Mar. See here these movers that do prize their hours At a crack'd drachme! Cushions, leaden spoons, Irons of a doit, doublets that hangmen would Bury with those that wore them, these base slaves, Ere yet the fight be done, pack up. Down with them! And hark, what noise the general makes! To him!

There is the man of my soul's hate, Aufidius, Piercing our Romans: then, valiant Titus, take Convenient numbers to make good the city, Whilst I, with those that have the spirit, will haste To help Cominius.

Lart. Worthy sir, thou bleed'st;

Thy exercise hath been too violent For a second course of fight.

Mar. Sir, praise me not; yet My work hath yet not warm'd me: fare you well:

The blood I drop is rather physical Than dangerous to me: to Aufidius thus I will appear, and fight.

Lart. Now the fair goddess, Fortune, 20
Fall deep in love with thee; and her great charms
Misguide thy opposers' swords! Bold gentleman,
Prosperity be thy page!

Mar. Thy friend no less
Than those she places highest! So, farewell. 24
Lart. Thou worthiest Marcius!—

[Exeunt Marcius.

Go, sound thy trumpet in the market-place;
Call thither all the officers of the town,
Where they shall know our mind. Away! 28

[Exeunt.

SCENE VI.—Near the Camp of Cominius.

Enter Cominius and Forces, retreating.

Com. Breathe you, my friends: well fought;
We are come off
Like Romans, neither foolish in our stands,
Nor cowardly in retire: believe me, sirs,
We shall be charg'd again. Whiles we have struck,
By interims and conveying gusts we have heard
The charges of our friends. Ye Roman gods!
Lead their successes as we wish our own,
That both our powers, with smiling fronts encountering,
May give you thankful sacrifice.

Enter a Messenger.

Thy news?

Mess. The citizens of Corioli have issu'd,
And given to Lartius and to Marcius battle:
I saw our party to their trenches driven, 12
And then I came away.

Com. Though thou speak'st truth,
Methinks thou speak'st not well. How long is 't
since?

Mess. Above an hour, my lord.

Com. 'Tis not a mile; briefly we heard their drums:
16
How couldst thou in a mile confound an hour,
And bring thy news so late?

Mess. Spies of the Volsces
Held me in chase, that I was forc'd to wheel
Three or four miles about; else had I, sir, 20
Half an hour since brought my report.

Com. Who's yonder,
That does appear as he were play'd? O gods!
He has the stamp of Marcius; and I have
Before-time seen him thus.

Mar. [Within.] Come I too late? 24
Com. The shepherd knows not thunder from
a tabor,
More than I know the sound of Marcius' tongue
From every meaner man.

Enter Marcius.

Mar. Come I too late?
Com. Ay, if you come not in the blood of others,
But mantled in your own.

Mar. O! let me clip ye
In arms as sound as when I woo'd, in heart
As merry as when our nuptial day was done,
And tapers burn'd to bedward.

Com. Flower of warriors. 32
How is 't with Titus Lartius?

Mar. As with a man busied about decrees:
Condemning some to death, and some to exile;
Ransoming him, or pitying, threatening the other;
Holding Corioli in the name of Rome,
Even like a fawning greyhound in the leash,
To let him slip at will.

Com. Where is that slave
Which told me they had beat you to your trenches?

Where is he? Call him hither.

Mar. Let him alone;
He did inform the truth: but for our gentlemen,
The common file—a plague! tribunes for them!—
The mouse ne'er shunn'd the cat as they did budge
From rascals worse than they.

Com. But how prevail'd you?

Mar. Will the time serve to tell? I do not think.
Where is the enemy? Are you lords o' the field?
If not, why cease you till you are so?

Com. Marcius, we have at disadvantage fought,
And did retire to win our purpose.

Mar. How lies their battle? Know you on which side
They have plac'd their men of trust?

Com. As I guess, Marcius, 52
Their bands i' the vaward are the Antiates,
Of their best trust; o'er them Aufidius,
Their very heart of hope.

Mar. I do beseech you,
By all the battles wherein we have fought, 56
By the blood we have shed together, by the vows
We have made to endure friends, that you
directly
Set me against Aufidius and his Antiates;
And that you not delay the present, but, 60
Filling the air with swords advanc'd and darts,
We prove this very hour.

Com. Though I could wish
You were conducted to a gentle bath,
And balms applied to you, yet dare I never 64
Deny your asking: take your choice of those
That best can aid your action.

Mar. Those are they
That most are willing. If any such be here—
As it were sin to doubt—that love this painting
Wherein you see me smeared; if any fear
Lesser his person than an ill report;
If any think brave death outweighs bad life,
And that his country's dearer than himself; 72
Let him, alone, or so many so minded,
Wave thus, to express his disposition,
And follow Marcius.

[They all shout, and wave their swords;
take him up in their arms, and cast up
their caps.

O! me alone? Make you a sword of me? 76
If these shows be not outward, which of you
But is four Volscæ? None of you but is
Able to bear against the great Aufidius
A shield as hard as his. A certain number, 80
Though thanks to all, must I select from all:
the rest
Shall bear the business in some other fight,
As cause will be obey'd. Please you to march;
And four shall quickly draw out my command,
Which men are best inclin'd.

Com. March on, myfellows: 85
Make good this ostentation, and you shall
Divide in all with us. [Exeunt.

SCENE VII.—The Gates of Coriolanus.

TITUS LARTIUS, having set a guard upon
Coriolanus, going with drum and trumpet to
wards COMINIUS and CAIUS MARCIUS, enters
with a Lieutenant, a party of Soldiers, and a
Scout.

Lart. So; let the ports be guarded: keep
your duties,
As I have set them down. If I do send, dis-
patch
Those centuries to our aid; the rest will serve
For a short holding; if we lose the field, 4
We cannot keep the town.

Lien. Fear not our care, sir.

Lart. Hence, and shut your gates upon us.
Our guider, come; to the Roman camp conduct
us. [Exeunt.

SCENE VIII.—A Field of Battle between the
Roman and the Volscæ Camps.

Alarum. Enter from opposite sides MARCIUS
and AUFIIDUS.

Mar. I'll fight with none but thee; for I do
hate thee
Worse than a promise-breaker.

Auf. We hate alike:

Not Afric owns a serpent I abhor
More than thy fame and envy. Fix thy foot. 4
Mar. Let the first bulge die the other's slave,
And the gods doom him after!

Auf. If I fly, Marcius,
Halloo me like a hare.

Mar. Within these three hours, Tullus, 8
Alone I fought in your Coriolanus walls,
And made what work I pleas'd; 'tis not my
blood
Wherein thou seest me mask'd; for thy revenge
Wrench up thy power to the highest.

Auf. Wert thou the Hector 12
That was the whip of your bragg'd progeny,
Thou shouldst not 'scape me here.—

[They fight, and certain Volscæ come to the
aid of AUFIIDUS.

Officious, and not valiant, you have sham'd me
In your condemned seconds. 16

[Exeunt fighting, all driven in by MARCIUS.

SCENE IX.—The Roman Camp.

Alarum. A retreat sounded. Flourish. Enter
from one side, COMINIUS and Romans; from
the other side, MARCIUS, with his arm in a
scarf, and other Romans.

Com. If I should tell thee o'er this thy day's
work,
Thou'lt not believe thy deeds; but I'll report it
Where senators shall mingle tears with smiles,
Where great patricians shall attend and shrug, 4
I' the end, admire; where ladies shall be
frighted,
And, gladly quak'd, hear more; where the dull
Tribunes,
That, with the dusty plebeians, hate thine
honours,
Shall say, against their hearts,

'Ve thank the gods our Rome hath such a
soldier!' 8
Yet cam'st thou to a morsel of this feast,
Having fully din'd before.

Enter TITUS LARTIUS, with his power, from
the pursuit.

Lart. O general,
Here is the steed, we the caparison: 12
Hadst thou beheld—

Mar. Pray now, no more: my mother,
Who has a charter to extol her blood,
When she doth praise me grieves me. I have
done
As you have done; that's what I can; induc'd
As you have been; that's for my country: 17
He that has but effected his good will
Hath overtak’ en mine act.

Com. You shall not be
The grave of your deserving; Rome must know
The value of her own: 'twere a concealment as
Worse than a theft, no less than a traducement,
To hide your doings; and to silence that,
Which, to the spire and top of praises vouch’d,
Would seem but modest. Therefore, I beseech
you,—

25

In sign of what you are, not to reward
What you have done,—before our army hear
me.

Mar. I have some wounds upon me, and they smart
To hear themselves remember’d.

Com. Should they not.
Well might they fester ’gainst ingratitude,
And tent themselves with death. Of all the
horses,
Whereof we have ta’en good, and good store, of all

32

The treasure, in this field achiev’d and city,
We render you the tenth; to be ta’en forth,
Before the common distribution,
At your only choice.

Mar. I thank you, general; 36
But cannot make my heart consent to take
A bribe to pay my sword: I do refuse it;
And stand upon my common part with those
That have beheld the doing.

[A long flourish. They all cry ‘Mar-
cius! Marcius!’ cast up their caps
and lances: COMINIUS and LARTIUS
stand bare.

Mar. May these same instruments, which
you profane,
Never sound more! When drums and trumpets
shall
I’ the field prove flatterers, let courts and cities be
Made all of false-fac’d soothness?

40

When steel grows soft as is the parasite’s silk,
Let him be made a coverture for the wars!
No more, I say! For that I have not wash’d
My nose that bled, or foil’d some debile wretch,
Which, without note, here’s many else have
done,

49

You shout me forth
In acclamations hyperbolical;
As if I lov’d my little should be dieted
In praises sauc’d with lies.

Com. Too modest are you;
More cruel to your good report than grateful
To us that give you truly. By your patience,
If ‘gainst yourself you be insens’d, we’ll put you,
Like one that means his proper harm, in
manacles,

57

Then reason safely with you. Therefore, be it
known,
As to us, to all the world, that Caius Marcius
Wears this war’s garland; in token of the which,
My noble steed, known to the camp, I give him,
With all his trim belonging; and from this time,
For what he did before Corioli, call him,
With all the applause and clamour of the host,
CAIUS MARCIUS CORIOLANUS! Bear

65

The addition nobly ever!

All. Caius Marcius Coriolanus!

[Flourish. Trumpets sound, and drums.

Cor. I will go wash;

68

And when my face is fair, you shall perceive
Whether I blush, or no: howbeit, I thank you.
I mean to stride your steed, and at all times
To underest your good addition
To the fairness of my power.

Com. So, to our tent;

72

Where, ere we do repose us, we will write
To Rome of our success. You, Titus Lartius,
Must to Corioli back: send us to Rome
The best, with whom we may articulate,
For their own good and ours.

Lart. I shall, my lord.

76

Cor. The gods begin to mock me. I, that now
Refus’d most princely gifts, am bound to beg
Of my lord general.

Com. Take it; ’tis yours. What is’t?

80

Cor. I sometime lay here in Corioli
At a poor man’s house; he us’d me kindly:
He cried to me; I saw him prisoner;
But then Auscius was within my view,
And wrath o’erwhelm’d my pity: I request you
To give my poor host freedom.

Com. O! well begg’d!

84

Were he the butcher of my son, he should
Be free as is the wind. Deliver him, Titus.

Lart. Marcius, his name?

Cor. By Jupiter! forgot.

88

I am weary; yea, my memory is tir’d.
Have we no wine here?

Com. Go we to our tent:

92

The blood upon your visage dries; ’tis time
It should be look’d to: come. [Exeunt.

SCENE X.—The Camp of the Volscæs.

A Flourish. Cornets. Enter TULLUS AUFI-
DIUS, bloody, with two or three Soldiers.

Auf. The town is ta’en!

96

First Sol. ’Twill be deliver’d back on good
condition.

Auf. Condition!

I would I were a Roman; for I cannot,
Being a Volscæ, be that I am. Condition!

What good condition can a treaty find
CORIOLANUS  
ACT II, Sc. I.

I'm the part that is at mercy? Five times, Marcius,
I have fought with thee; so often hast thou
beat me, 8
And wouldst do so, I think, should we encoun-
ter
As often as we eat. By the elements,
If e'er again I meet him beard to beard,
He is mine, or I am his: mine emulation 12
Hath not that honour in't it had; for where
I thought to crush him in an equal force—
True sword to sword—I'll patch at him some
way
Or wrath or craft may get him.

First Sol. He's the devil. 16

Auf. Bolder, though not so subtle. My
valour's poison'd
With only suffering stain by him; for him
Shall fly out of itself. Nor sleep nor sanctuary,
Being naked, sick, nor fane nor Capitol, 20
The prayers of priests, nor times of sacrifice,
Embarcements all of fury, shall lift up
Their rotten privilege and custom 'gainst
My hate to Marcius. Where I find him, were it
At home, upon my brother's guard, even there
Against the hospitable canon, would I
Wash my fierce hand in 's heart. Go you to the

ACT II.

SCENE I.—Rome. A Public Place.

Enter MENE THIUS, SICINNIUS, and BRUTUS.

Men. The augurer tells me we shall have
news to-night.

Bru. Good or bad?

Men. Not according to the prayer of the
people, for they love not Marcius. 5

Sic. Nature teaches beasts to know their
friends.

Men. Pray you, who does the wolf love? 8

Sic. The lamb.

Men. Ay, to devour him; as the hungry
plebeians would the noble Marcius.

Bru. He's a lamb indeed, that baes like a
bear. 13

Men. He's a bear indeed, that lives like a

lamb. You two are old men; tell me one thing
that I shall ask you. 16

Sic. { Well, sir.

Bru. }  

Men. In what enormity is Marcius poor in,
that you two have not in abundance?

Bru. He's poor in no one fault, but stored
with all. 21

Sic. Especially in pride.

Bru. And topping all others in boasting.

Men. This is strange now: do you two know
how you are censured here in the city, I mean
of us o' the right-hand file? Do you? 26

Both. Well, how are we censured?

Men. Because you talk of pride now,—Will
you not be angry?

Both. Well, well, sir; well. 30

Men. Why, 'tis no great matter; for a very
little thief of occasion will rob you of a great
deal of patience: give your dispositions the
reins, and be angry at your pleasures; at the
least, if you take it as a pleasure to you in
being so. You blame Marcius for being proud?

Bru. We do it not alone, sir. 37

Men. I know you can do very little alone;
for your helps are many, or else your actions
would grow wondrous single: your abilities are
too infant-like, for doing much alone. You talk
of pride: O! that you could turn your eyes
towards the napes of your necks, and make but
an interior survey of your good selves. O! that
you could. 45

Bru. What then, sir?

Men. Why, then you should discover a brace
of unmeriting, proud, violent, testy magis-
trates—alias fools—as any in Rome. 49

Sic. Menenius, you are known well enough
too.

Men. I am known to be a humorous patri-
cian, and one that loves a cup of hot wine with
not a drop of allaying Tiber in't; said to be
something imperfect in favouring the first
complaint; hasty and tender-like upon too trivial
motion; one that converses more with the but-
tock of the night than with the forehead of
the morning. What I think I utter, and spend my
malice in my breath. Meeting two such weak-
men as you are,—I cannot call you Lycurguses,
—if the drink you give me touch my palate
adversely, I make a crooked face at it. I cannot
say your worships have delivered the matter
well when I find the ass in compound with the
major part of your syllables; and though I
must be content to bear with those that say you
are reverend grave men, yet they lie deadly that
tell you have good faces. If you see this in the
map of my microcosm, follows it that I am

810
known well enough too? What harm can your bison consequnties glean out of this character, if I be known well enough too? 73

Bru. Come, sir, come, we know you well enough.

Men. You know neither me, yourselves, nor anything. You are ambitious for poor knaves' caps and legs: you wear out a good wholesome forenoon in hearing a cause between an orange-wife and a fosset-seller, and then rejoin the controversy of three-pence to a second day of audience. When you are hearing a matter between party and party, if you chance to be pinched with the colic, you make faces like mummers, set up the bloody flag against all patience, and, in roaring for a chamber-pot, dismiss the controversy bleeding, the more entangled by your hearing: all the peace you make in their cause is, calling both the parties knaves. You are a pair of strange ones.

Bru. Come, come, you are well understood to be a perfecter giber for the table than a necessary bench in the Capitol.

Men. Our very priests must become mockers if they shall encounter such ridiculous subjects as you are. When you speak best unto the purpose it is not worth the wagging of your beards; and your beards deserve not so honourable a grave as to stuff a botcher's cushion, or to be entombed in an ass's pack-saddle. Yet you must be saying Marcus is proud; who, in a cheap estimation, is worth all your predecessors since Deucalion, though peradventure some of the best of 'em were hereditary hangmen. Good den to your worship's: more of your conversa-
tion would infect my brain, being the herdsmen of the beastly plebeians: I will be bold to take my leave of you. [BRUTUS and SICINIUS go aside.

Enter VOLUMNIA, VIRGILIA, and VALERIA.

How now, my as fair as noble ladies, and the moon, were she earthly, no nobler,—whither do you follow your eyes so fast?

Vol. Honourable Menenius, my boy Marcus approaches; for the love of Juno, let's go.

Men. Ha! Marcus coming home?

Vol. Ay, worthy Menenius; and with most prosperous approbation.

Men. Take my cap, Jupiter, and I thank thee. Hoo! Marcus coming home!


Vir. [Nay, 'tis true.

Vol. Look, here's a letter from him: the state hath another, his wife another; and, I think, there's one at home for you.

Men. I will make my very house reel tonight. A letter for me!

Vir. Yes, certain, there's a letter for you; I saw it.

Men. A letter for me! It gives me an estate of seven years' health; in which time I will make a lip at the physician: the most sovereign prescription in Galen is but empiricute, and, to this preservative, of no better report than a horse-drench. Is he not wounded? he was wont to come home wounded.

Vir. 01 no, no, no.

Vol. O! he is wounded, I thank the gods for 't.

Men. So do I too, if it be not too much. Brings a' victory in his pocket? The wounds become him.

Vol. On 's brows, Menenius; he comes the third time home with the oaken garland.

Men. Has he disciplined Aufidius soundly?

Vol. Titus Lartius writes they fought together, but Aufidius got off.

Men. And 'twas time for him too, I'll warrant him that: an he had stayed by him I would not have been so disdained for all the chests in Coriolis, and the gold that's in them. Is the senate possessed of this?

Vol. Good ladies, let's go. Yes, yes, yes; the senate has letters from the general, wherein he gives my son the whole name of the war. He hath in this action outdone his former deeds doubly.

Vol. In troth there's wondrous things spoke of him.

Men. Wondrous! Ay, I warrant you, and not without his true purchasing.

Vir. The gods grant them true!

Vol. True! pow, wow.

Men. True! I'll be sworn they are true. Where is he wounded? [To the Tribunes.] God save your good worship! Marcus is coming home: he has more cause to be proud. [To VOLUMNIA.] Where is he wounded?

Vol. I' the shoulder, and i' the left arm: there will be large cicatrices to show the people when he shall stand for his place. He received in the repulse of Tarquin seven hurts i' the body.

Men. One i' the neck, and two i' the thigh, there's nine that I know.

Vol. He had, before this last expedition, twenty-five wounds upon him.

Men. Now, it's twenty-seven: every gash was an enemy's grave. [A shout and flourish.] Hark! the trumpets.

Vol. These are the ushers of Marcus: before him he carries noise, and behind him he leaves tears:

Death, that dark spirit, in 's nervy arm doth lie; Which, being advanc'd, declines, and then men die.
**CORIOLANUS**

**Act II, Sc. 1.**

**A Senet. Trumpets sound. Enter Cominius and Titus Lartius; between them, Coriolanus, crowned with an oak garland; with Captains, Soldiers, and a Herald.**

_Her._ Know, Rome, that all alone Marcius did fight

Within Corioli gates: where he hath won,
With fame, a name to Caius Marcius; these
In honour follows Coriolanus. 134

_Welcome to Rome, renowned Coriolanus!_ [Flourish.

_All._ Welcome to Rome, renowned Coriolanus!

_Cor._ No more of this; it does offend my heart:

_Pray now, no more._

_Com._ Look, sir, your mother!

_Cor._ O! You have, I know, petition'd all the gods 189

For my prosperity. [Kneels.]

_Vol._ Nay, my good soldier, up;

My gentle Marcius, worthy Caius, and
By deed-achieving honour newly nam'd,— 192

What is it?—Coriolanus must I call thee?

But O! thy wife!—

_Cor._ My gracious silence, hail! Wouldst thou have laugh'd had I come coffin'd home,

That weep'st to see me triumph? Ah! my dear,

Such eyes the widows in Corioli wear, 197

And mothers that lack sons.

_Men._ Now, the gods crown thee!

_Cor._ And live you yet?[_To Valeria._] O my sweet lady, pardon.

_Vol._ I know not where to turn: O! welcome home;

And welcome, general; and ye're welcome all.

_Men._ A hundred thousand welcomes: I could weep,

And I could laugh; I am light, and heavy.

_Welcome._ A curse begnaw at very root on's heart

That is not glad to see thee! You are three

That Rome should dote on; yet, by the faith of men,

We have some old crab-trees here at home that will not

Be grafted to your relish. Yet, welcome, warriors! 208

We call a nettle but a nettle, and

The faults of fools but folly.

_Com._ Ever right.

_Cor._ Menenius, ever, ever.

_Her._ Give way there, and go on!

_Cor._ [To Volumnia and Valeria.] Your hand, and yours:

Ere in our own house I do shade my head,

The good patricians must be visited;

From whom I have receiv'd not only greetings,
But with them change of honours.

_Vol._ I have liv'd 216

To see inherited my very wishes,
And the buildings of my fancy: only
There's one thing wanting, which I doubt not
but

_Our Rome will cast upon thee._

_Cor._ Know, good mother, 220

I had rather be their servant in my way
Than sway with them in theirs.

_Com._ On, to the Capitol!

[Flourish. _Cornets. Evacuit in state, as before._ The Tribunes remain.

_Bru._ All tongues speak of him, and the blear'd sights 224

Are spectacled to see him: your prattling nurse
Into a rapture lets her baby cry
While she chats him: the kitchen malkin pins
Her richest lockram bout her reechy neck, 228
Clambering the walls to oye him: stulls, bulks, windows,

Are smoker'd up, leads fill'd, and ridges hors'd
With variable complexions, all agreeing 231
In earnestness to see him: self-shown flamen
Do press among the popular throngs, and puff
To win a vulgar station: our veil'd dames
Commit the war of white and damask in
Their nicely-gawded checks to the wanton spoil
Of Phoebus' burning kisses: such a pother 237
As if that whatsoever god who leads him
Were silly crept into his human powers,

And gave him graceful posture.

_Sic._ On the sudden 240

I warrant him consul.

_Bru._ Then our office may,

During his power, go sleep.

_Sic._ He cannot temperately transport his honours

From where he should begin and end, but will

Lose those he hath won.

_Bru._ In that there's comfort. 245

_Sic._ Doubt not, the commoners, for whom we stand,

But they upon their ancient malice will
Forget with the least cause these his new honours, 248

Which that he'll give them, make I as little question

As he is proud to do't.

_Bru._ I heard him swear,

_Were he to stand for consul, never would he

Appear i' the market-place, nor on him put 252
The napless vesture of humility;
Nor, showing, as the manner is, his wounds
To the people, beg their stinking breaths._

_Sic._ 'Tis right.
Act II, Sc. I.

Coriolanus

Sec. Off. Three, they say; but 'tis thought of every one Coriolanus will carry it.

First Off. That's a brave fellow; but he's vengeance proud, and loves not the common people.

Sec. Off. Faith, there have been many great men that have flattered the people, who ne'er loved them; and there be many that they have loved, they know not wherefore: so that if they love they know not why, they hate upon no better a ground. Therefore, for Coriolanus neither to care whether they love or hate him manifests the true knowledge he has in their disposition; and out of his noble carelessness lets them plainly see't.

First Off. If he did not care whether he had their love or no, he waved indifferently 'twixt doing them neither good nor harm; but he seeks their hate with greater devotion than they can render it; and leaves nothing undone that may fully discover him their opposite. Now, to seem to affect the malice and displeasure of the people is as bad as that which he dislikes, to flatter them for their love.

Sec. Off. He hath deserved worthy of his country; and his ascent is not by such easy degrees as those who, having been supple and courteous to the people, bonneted, without any further deed to have them at all into their estimation and report; but he hath so planted his honours in their eyes, and his actions in their hearts, that for their tongues to be silent, and not confess so much, were a kind of ingratitude; to report otherwise, were a malice, that, giving itself the lie, would pluck reproof and rebuke from every ear that heard it.

First Off. No more of him; he is a worthy man: make way, they are coming.

A Sennet. Enter, with Lictors before them, COMINIUS the Consul, MENENIUS, CORIOLANUS, many other Senators, SICINIUS and BRUTUS. The Senators take their places; the Tribunes take theirs also by themselves.

Men. Having determin'd of the Volscians, and To send for Titus Lartius, it remains, As the main point of this our after-meeting, To gratify his noble service that Hath thus stood for his country: therefore, please you,
Most reverend and grave elders, to desire The present consul, and last general In our well-found successes, to report A little of that worthy work perform'd By Caius Marcius Coriolanus, whom We meet here both to thank and to remember

Sec. Off. It was his word. O! he would miss it rather
Than carry it but by the suit of the gentry to him
And the desire of the nobles.

Sic. I wish no better
Than have him hold that purpose and to put it
In execution.

Bru. 'Tis most like he will.

Sic. It shall be to him then, as our good wills,
A sure destruction.

Bru. So it must fall out
To him or our authorities. For an end,
We must suggest the people in what hatred
He still hath held them; that to his power he would
Have made them mules, silenced their pleaders,
And
Disproportioned their freedom; holding them,
In human action and capacity.

Of no more soul nor fitness for the world
Than camels in the war; who have their provand
Only for bearing burdens, and sore blows
For sinking under them.

Sic. This, as you say, suggested
At some time when his scorning insolence
Shall teach the people—when time shall not want,
If he be put upon 't; and that's as easy
As to set dogs on sheep—will be his fire
To kindle their dry stubble; and their blaze
Shall darken him for ever.

Enter a Messenger.

Bru. What's the matter?

Miss. You are sent for to the Capitol. 'Tis thought
That Marcius shall be consul.

I have seen the dumb men throng to see him, and
The blind to hear him speak: matrons flung
Gloves, Ladies and maidens their scarfs and handkerchers
Upon him as he pass'd; the nobles bended, As to Jove's statute, and the commons made
A shower and thunder with their caps and shouts:
I never saw the like.

Bru. Let's to the Capitol;
And carry with us ears and eyes for the time,
But hearts for the event.

Sic. Have with you. [Exeunt.

Scene II.—The Same. The Capitol.

Enter two Officers to lay cushions.

First Off. Come, come, they are almost here.
How many stand for consulships?
With honours like himself.

First Sen. Speak, good Cominius: 53
Leave nothing out for length, and make us think
Rather our state's defective for requital,
Than we to stretch it out. [To the Tribunes.] 56
Masters o' the people,
We do request your kindest ears, and, after,
Your loving motion toward the common body,
To yield what passes here.

Sic. We are convened
Upon a pleasing treaty, and have hearts
Inclivable to honour and advance
The theme of our assembly.

Brun. Which the rather
We shall be bless'd to do, if he remember
A kinder value of the people than
He hath hereto priz'd them at.

Men. That's off, that's off;
I would you rather had been silent. Please you
To hear Cominius speak?

Brun. Most willingly;
But yet my caution was more pertinent
Than the rebuke you give it.

Men. He loves your people;
But if he not to be their bedfellow.
Worthy Cominius, speak.

[Coriolanus rises, and offers to go away. Nay, keep your place.
First Sen. Sit, Coriolanus; never shame to hear
What you have nobly done.

Cor. Your honours' pardon:
I had rather have my wounds to heal again
Than hear say how I got them.

Brun. Sir, I hope
My words die benign'd you not.

Cor. No, sir; yet oft, 76
When blows have made me stay, I fled from words.
You sooth'd not, therefore hurt not. But your people,
I love them as they weigh.

Men. Pray now, sit down.
Cor. I had rather have one scratch my head
' i' the sun
When the alarum were struck than idly sit
To hear my nothings monster'd. [Exit.

Men. Masters of the people,
Your multiplying spawn how can he flatter,—
That's thousand to one good one,—when you
now see
He had rather venture all his limbs for honour
Than one on's ears to hear it. Proceed,
Cominius.

Com. I shall lack voice: the deeds of Corio-
lanus
Should not be utter'd feebly. It is held
That valour is the chiepest virtue, and
Most dignifies the haver: if it be,
The man I speak of cannot in the world
Be singly counterpois'd. At sixteen years,
When Tarquin made a head for Rome, he fought
Beyond the mark of others; our then dictator,
Whom with all praise I point at, saw him
fight,
When with his Amazonian chin he drove
The bristled lips before him. Ee testrid
An o'er-press'd Roman, and i' the consul's view
Slew three opposers: Tarquin's self he met,
And struck him on his knee: in that day's
feats,
When he might act the woman in the scene,
He prov'd best man 'i' the field, and for his mind
Was brow-bound with the oak. His pupil age
Man-enter'd thus, he waxed like a sea,
And in the brunt of seventeen battles since
He lurch'd all swords of the garland. For this
last,
Before and in Corioli, let me say,
I cannot speak him home: he stopp'd the fiers,
And by his rare example made the ccward
Turn terror into sport: as weeds before
A vessel under sail, so men obey'd,
And fell below his stem: his sword, death's
stamp,
Where it did mark, it took; from face to foot
He was a thing of blood, whose every motion
Was tim'd with dying cries: alone he enter'd
The mortal gate of the city, which he painted
With shunless destiny; aidless came off,
And with a sudden re-enforcement struck
Corioli like a planet. Now all's his:
When by and by the din of war 'gan pierce
His ready sense; then straight his doubled spirit
Re-quick'en'd what in flesh was fatigate,
And to the battle came he; where he did
Run recking o'er the lives of men, as if
'Twere a perpetual spoil; and till we call'd
Both field and city ours, he never stood
To ease his breast with panting.

Men. Worthy man!
First Sen. He cannot but with measure fit
the honours
Which we devise him.

Ccm. Our spoils he kick'd at,
And look'd upon things precious as they were
The common muck o' the world: he covets less
Than misery itself would give; rewards
His deeds with doing them, and is content
To spend the time to end it.

Men. Ee's right noble:
Let him be call'd for.
First Sen. Call Coriolanus.

Off. He doth appear.
Re-enter Coriolanus.

Men. The senate, Coriolanus, are well pleas'd
To make thee consul.

Cor. I do owe them still
My life and services.

Men. It then remains
That you do speak to the people.

Cor. I do beseech you,
Let me o'erleap that custom, for I cannot
Put on the gown, stand naked, and entreat
them,
For my wounds' sake, to give their suffrage:
please you,
That I may pass this doing.

Sic. Sir, the people
Must have their voices; neither will they bate
One jot of ceremony.

Men. Pray you, go fit you to the custom, and
Take to you, as your predecessors have,
your honour with your form.

Cor. It is a part
That I shall blush in acting, and might well
Be taken from the people.

Bru. [Aside to Sicinius.] Mark you that?
Cor. To brag unto them, thus I did, and thus;
Show them the unaching scars which I should
hide,
as if I had receiv'd them for the hire
Of their breath only!

Men. Do not stand upon't.
We recommend to you, tribunes of the people,
Our purpose to them; and to our noble consul
Wish we all joy and honour.

Sen. To Coriolanus come all joy and honour!
   [Flourish. Exeunt all but SICINIUS and BRUTUS.

Bru. You see how he intends to use the
people.

Sic. May they perceive 's intent! He will
require them,
As if he did contemn what he requested
Should be in them to give.

Bru. Come; we'll inform them
Of our proceedings here: on the market-place
I know they do attend us. [Exeunt.

Scene III.—The Same. The Forum.

Enter several Citizens.

First Cit. Once, if he do require our voices,
we ought not to deny him.

Sec. Cit. We may, sir, if we will.

Third Cit. We have power in ourselves to do
it, but it is a power that we have no power to
do; for if he show us his wounds, and tell us his
deeds, we are to put our tongues into those
wounds and speak for them; so, if he tell us his
noble deeds, we must also tell him our noble
acceptance of them. Ingratitude is monstrous,
and for the multitude to be ingrateful were to
make a monster of the multitude; of the which,
we being members, should bring ourselves to be
monstrous members.

First Cit. And to make us no better thought
of, a little help will serve; for once we stood up
about the corn, he himself stuck not to call us
the many-headed multitude.

Third Cit. We have been called so of many;
not that our heads are some brown, some black,
some abram, some bald, but that our wits are
so diversely coloured: and truly I think, if all
our wits were to issue out of one skull, they
would fly east, west, north, south; and their
consent of one direct way should be at once to
all the points o' the compass.

Sec. Cit. Think you so? Which way do you
judge my wit would fly?

Third Cit. Nay, your wit will not so soon out
as another man's will; 'tis strongly wedged up
in a block-head; but if it were at liberty, 'twould
sure, southward.

Sec. Cit. Why that way?

Third Cit. To lose itself in a fog; where
being three parts melted away with rotten dews,
the fourth would return for conscience' sake, to
help to get thee a wife.

Sec. Cit. You are never without your tricks.
you may, you may.

Third Cit. Are you all resolved to give your
voices? But that's no matter, the greater part
carries it. I say, if he would incline to the
people, there was never a worthier man.

Re-enter Coriolanus, in a gown of humility,
and Menenius.

Here he comes, and in a gown of humility
mark his behaviour. We are not to stay all
together, but to come by him where he stands,
by ones, by twos, and by threes. He's to make
his requests by particulars; wherein every one
of us has a single honour, in giving him our own
voices with our own tongues: therefore follow
me, and I'll direct you how you shall go by him.

All. Content, content. [Exeunt Citizens.

Men. O, sir, you are not right: have you not
known

The worthiest men have done't.

Cor. What must I say?

I pray, sir,'—Plague upon't! I cannot bring
My tongue to such a pace. 'Look, sir, my
wounds!

I got them in my country's service, when
Some certain of your brethren roar'd and ran

824
From the noise of our own drums.'

Men. O me! the gods!
You must not speak of that: you must desire them.

To think upon you.

Cor. Think upon me! Hang 'em!
I would they would forget me, like the virtues
Which our divines lose by 'em.

Men. You'll mar all:
I'll leave you. Pray you, speak to 'em, I pray you,
In wholesome manner.

Cor. Bid them wash their faces,
And keep their teeth clean. [Exit Menenius.

So, here comes a brace.

Re-enter two Citizens.

You know the cause, sir, of my standing here?

First Cit. We do, sir; tell us what hath
brought you to 't.

Cor. Mine own desert.

Sec. Cit. Your own desert!

Cor. Ay, not mine own desire.

First Cit. Holy! not your own desire?

Cor. No, sir, 'twas never my desire yet to
trouble the poor with begging.

First Cit. You must think, if we give you
any thing, we hope to gain by you.

Cor. Well, then, I pray, your price o' the
consulship?

First Cit. The price is, to ask it kindly.

Cor. Kindly! sir, I pray, let me ha 't: I have
wounds to show you, which shall be yours in
private. Your good voice, sir; what say you?

Sec. Cit. You shall ha 't, worthy sir.

Cor. A match, sir. There is in all two worthy
voices begged. I have your alms: adieu.

First Cit. But this is something odd.

Sec. Cit. An 'twere to give again,—but 'tis
no matter. [Exeunt the two Citizens.

Re-enter two other Citizens.

Cor. Pray you now, if it may stand with the
tune of your voices that I may be consul, I
have here the customary gown.

Third Cit. You have deserved nobly of your
country, and you have not deserved nobly.

Cor. Your enmity?

Third Cit. You have been a scourge to her
enemies, you have been a rod to her friends;
you have not indeed loved the common people.

Cor. You should account me the more vir-
tuous that I have not been common in my love,
I will, sir, flatter my sworn brother the people,
to earn a dearer estimation of them; 'tis a con-
dition they account gentle: and since the wis-
dom of their choice is rather to have my hat
than my heart, I will practise the insinuating
nod, and be off to them most counterfeiting; that
is, sir, I will counterfeit the bewitchment of
some popular man, and give it bountifully to
the desirers. Therefore, beseech you, I may be
consul.

Fourth Cit. We hope to find you our friend,
and therefore give you our voices heartily.

Third Cit. You have received many wounds
for your country.

Cor. I will not seal your knowledge with
showing them. I will make much of your voices,
and so trouble you no further.

Both Cit. The gods give you joy, sir, heartily!

[Exeunt.

Cor. Most sweet voices!
Better it is to die, better to starve,
Than crave the hire which first we do deserve.
Why in this woolvish toge should I stand here,
To beg of Hob and Dick, that do appear,
Their needless vouches? Custom calls me to 't:
What custom wills, in all things should we do 't,
The dust on antique time would lie unswept,
And mountainous error be too highly heap'd
For truth to o'er-peer. Rather than fool it so,
Let the high office and the honour go
To one that would do thus. I am half through;
The one part suffer'd, the other will I do.
Here come more voices.

Re-enter three other Citizens.

Your voices: for your voices I have sought;
Watch'd for your voices; for your voices hear
Of wounds two dozen odd; battles thrice six
I have seen and heard of; for your voices have
Done many things, some less, some more; your
voices:

Indeed, I would be consul.

Fifth Cit. He has done nobly, and cannot go
without any honest man's voice.

Sixth Cit. Therefore let him be consul. The
gods give him joy, and make him good friend to
the people!

All. Amen, amen.

God save thee, noble consul! [Exeunt Citizens.

Cor. Worthy v.o.c.e.s.

Re-enter Menenius, with Brutus and Sicinius.

Men. You have stood your limitation; and
the tribunes
Endue you with the people's voice: remains
That, in the official marks invested, you
Anon do meet the senate.

Cor. Is this done?

Sic. The custom of request you have dis-
charg'd:
The people do admit you, and are summon'd

825
To meet anon, upon your approbation. 152
Cor. Where? at the senate-house?
Sic. There, Coriolanus.
Cor. May I change these garments?
Sic. You may, sir.
Cor. That I'll straight do; and, knowing myself again, 156
Repair to the senate-house.
Men. I'll keep you company. Will you along?
Bru. We stay here for the people.
Sic. Fare you well.
[Exeunt CORIOLANUS and MENENIUS.
He has it now; and by his looks, methinks, 160
'Tis warm at 's heart.
Bru. With a proud heart he wore
His humble weeds. Will you dismiss the people?
Re-enter Citizens.
Sic. How now, my masters! have you chose this man?
First Cit. He has our voices, sir. 164
Bru. We pray the gods he may deserve your love.
Sec. Cit. A man, sir. To my poor unworthy notice,
He mock'd us when he begg'd our voices.
Third Cit. Certainly,
He flouted us downright. 168
First Cit. No, 'tis his kind of speech; he did not mock us.
Sec. Cit. Not one amongst us, save yourself, but says
He used us scornfully; he should have show'd us
His marks of merit, wounds receiv'd for 's country. 172
Sic. Why, so he did, I am sure.
All. No, no; no man saw 'em.
Third Cit. He said he had wounds, which he
could show in private;
And with his hat, thus waving it in scorn,
'Would be consul,' says he; 'aged custom, 176
But by your voices, will not so permit me;
Your voices therefore.' when we granted that,
Here was, 'I thank you for your voices, thank you,
Your most sweet voices: now you have left
your voices 180
I have no further with you.' Was not this mockery?
Sic. Why, either were you ignorant to see 't,
Or, seeing it, of such childish friendliness
To yield your voices?
Bru. Could you not have told him
As you were lesson'd, when he had no power, 185
But was a petty servant to the state,
He was your enemy, ever spake against
Your liberties and the charters that you bear
I' the body of the weal; and now, arriving 189
A place of potency and sway o' the state,
If he should still malignantly remain
Fast foe to the plebeii, your voices might 192
Be curses to yourselves? You should have said
That as his worthy deeds did claim no less
Than what he stood for, so his gracious nature
Would think upon you for your voices and 196
Translate his malice towards you into love,
Standing your friendly lord.
Sic. Thus to have said,
As you were fore-advis'd, had touch'd his spirit
And tried his inclination; from him pluck'd 200
Either his gracious promise, which you might,
As cause had call'd you up, have held him to;
Or else it would have gall'd his surly nature,
Which easily endures not article 204
Tying him to aught; so, putting him to rage,
You should have ta'en the advantage of his choler,
And pass'd him unelected.
Bru. Did you perceive
He did solicit you in free contempt 208
When he did need your loves, and do you think
That his contempt shall not be bruising to you
When he hath power to crush? Why, had your bodies
No heart among you? or had you tongues to cry
Against the rectorship of judgment?
Sic. Have you 213
Fie! now denied the asker? and now again
Of him that did not ask, but mock, bestow
Your su'd-for tongues?
Third Cit. He's not confirm'd; we may deny him yet.
Sec. Cit. And will deny him:
I'll have five hundred voices of that sound.
First Cit. Ay, twice five hundred and their friends to piece 'em. 220
Bru. Get you hence instantly, and tell those friends,
They have chose a consul that will from them take
Their liberties; make them of no more voice
Than dogs that are as often heat for barking 224
As therefore kept to do so.
Sic. Let them assemble;
And, on a safer judgment, all revoke
Your ignorant election. Enforce his pride,
And his old hate into you; besides, forget not 228
With what contempt he wore the humble weed;
How in his suit he scorn'd you; but your loves,
Thinking upon his services, took from you
The apprehension of his present portance, 232
Which most gibingly, ungravely, he did fashion
After the inveterate hate he bears you.

Bru. Lay
A fault on us, your tribunes; that we labour'd,—
No impediment between,—but that you must
Cast your election on him.

Sic. Say, you chose him 237
More after our commandment than as guided
By your own true affections; and that, your minds,
Pre-occupied with what you rather must do 240
Than what you should, made you against the grain
To voice him consul: lay the fault on us.

Bru. Ay, spare us not. Say we read lectures to you,
How youngly he began to serve his country, 244
How long continu'd, and what stock he springs of,
The noble house o' the Marcians, from whence came
That Ancus Marcius, Numa's daughter's son, Who, after great Hostilius, here was king; 248
Of the same house Publius and Quintus were;
That our best water brought by conduits hither;
And Censorinus, that was so surnam'd,—
And nobly nam'd so, twice being censor, —252
Was his great ancestor.

Sic. One thus descended,
That hath, beside, well in his person wrought
To be set high in place, we did commend
to your remembrances: but you have found,
Scaling his present bearing with his past, 257
That he's your fixed enemy, and revoke
Your sudden approbation.

Bru. Say you ne'er had done 't—
Harp on that still—but by our putting on; 260
And presently, when you have drawn your number,
Repair to the Capitol.  

All. We will so; almost all
Repent in their election.  [Exeunt Citizens.

Bru. Let them go on;
This mutiny were better put in hazard 264
Than stay, past doubt, for greater.
If, as his nature is, he fall in rage
With their refusal, both observe and answer
The vantage of his anger.

Sic. To the Capitol, come: 268
We will be there before the stream o' the people;
And, this shall seem, as partly 'tis, their own,
Which we have goaded onward.  [Exeunt.

ACT III.

SCENE I.—Rome. A Street.

Corns. Enter CORIOLANUS, MENENIUS, COMINUS, TITUS LARTIUS, Senators, and Patricians.

Cor. Tullus Aufidius then had made new head?   
Lart. He had, my lord; and that it was which caus'd
Our swifter composition.

Cor. So then the Volscs stand but as at first, Ready, when time shall prompt them, to make road
Upon's again.

Com. They are worn, lord consul, so,
That we shall hardly in our ages see
Their banners wave again.

Cor. Saw you Aufidius? 8
Lart. On safe-guard he came to me; and did curse
Against the Volscs, for they had so vilely
Yielded the town: he is retir'd to Antium.

Cor. Spoke he of me?

Lart. He did, my lord.

Cor. How? what? 12
Lart. How often he had met you, sword to sword;
That of all things upon the earth he hated
Your person most, that he would pawn his fortunes
To hopeless restitution, so he might 16
Be call'd your vanquisher.

Cor. At Antium lives he?

Lart. At Antium,
Cor. I wish I had a cause to seek him there,
To oppose his hatred fully. Welcome home. 20

Enter SICINTIUS and BRUTUS.

Behold! these are the tribunes of the people,
The tongues o' the common mouth: I do despise them;
For they do prank them in authority
Against all noble suffrance.

Sic.  Pass no further. 24

Cor. Ha! what is that?

Bru. It will be dangerous to go on: no further.

Cor. What makes this change?

Men. The matter?

Com. Hath he not pass'd the noble and the common? 28

Bru. Cominius, no.

Cor. Have I had children's voices?

First Sen. Tribunes, give way; he shall to the market-place.

Bru. The people are incens'd against him.

Sic. Stop,
Or all will fall in broil.
Act III, Sc. I.

CORIOLANUS

Cor. Are these your herd? 32
Must these have voices, that can yield them now,
And straight disclaim their tongues? What are your offices?
You being their mouths, why rule you not their teeth?
Have you not set them on?
Men. Be calm, be calm. 36
Cor. It is a purpose thing, and grows by plot,
To curb the will of the nobility:
Suffer'd, and live with such as cannot rule
Nor ever will be ruled.
Bru. Call 't not a plot: 40
The people cry you mock'd them, and of late,
When corn was given them gratis, you repin'd;
Scandal'd the suppliants for the people, call'd them
Time-pleasers, flatterers, foes to nobleness. 44
Cor. Why, this was known before.
Bru. Not to them all.
Cor. Have you inform'd them sithence?
Bru. How! I inform them!
Cor. You are like to do such business.
Bru. Not unlike,
Each way, to better yours. 48
Cor. Why then should I be consul? By yond clouds,
Let me deserve so ill as you, and make me
Your fellow tribune.
Sic. You show too much of that
For which the people stir; if you will pass 52
To where you are bound, you must inquire your way,
Which you are out of, with a gentler spirit;
Or never be so noble as a consul,
Nor yoke with him for tribune.
Men. Let's be calm. 56
Com. The people are abus'd; set on. This
paltering
Becomes not Rome, nor has Coriolanus
Deserv'd this so dishonour'd rub, laid falsely
I the plain way of his merit.
Cor. Tell me of corn! 60
This was my speech, and I will speak it again.—
Men. Not now, not now.
First Sen. Not in this heat, sir, now.
Cor. Now, as I live, I will. My nobler friends,
I crave their pardons: 64
For the mutable, rank-scented many, let them
Regard me as I do not flatter, and
Therein behold themselves: I say again,
In soothing them we nourish 'gainst our senate
The cookie of rebellion, insolence, sedition, 69
Which we ourselves have plough'd for, sow'd and scatter'd,
By mingling them with us, the honour'd number;
Who lack'd not virtue, no, nor power, but that
Which they have given to beggars.
Men. Well, no more. 73
First Sen. No more words, we beseech you.
Cor. How! no more!
As for my country I have shed my blood,
Not fearing outward force, so shall my lungs 76
Coin words till they decay against those measles,
Which we disdain should fetter us, yet sought
The very way to catch them.
Bru. You speak o' the people,
As if you were a god to punish, not 80
A man of their infirmity.
Sic. 'Twere well
We let the people know't.
Men. What, what? his choler?
Cor. Choler!
Were I as patient as the midnight sleep, 84
By Jove, 'twould be my mind!
Sic. It is a mind
That shall remain a poison where it is,
Not poison any further.
Cor. Shall remain!
Hear you this Triton of the minnows? mark you 88
His absolute 'shall?'
Com. 'Twas from the canon.
Cor. 'Shall!' 92
O good but most unwise patricians! why,
You grave but reckless senators, have you thus
Given Hydra here to choose an officer,
That with his peremptory 'shall,' being but
The horn and noise o' the monster's, wants not
spirit
To say he'll turn your current in a ditch,
And make your channel his? If he have power,
Then vail your ignorance; if none, awake 97
Your dangerous lenity. If you are learned,
Be not as common fools; if you are not,
Let them have cushions by you. You are plebeians
If they be senators; and they are no less,
When both your voices blended, the great'st taste
Most palates theirs. They choose their magis-
trate,
And such a one as he, who puts his 'shall,' 104
His popular 'shall,' against a graver bench
Than ever crowned in Greece. By Jove himself!
It makes the consuls base; and my soul aches
To know, when two authorities are up;
Neither supreme, how soon confusion
May enter 'twixt the gap of both and take
The one by the other.
Com. Well, on to the market-place.
Cor. Whosever gave that counsel, to give forth
The corn o' the store-house gratis, as 'twas us'd
Sometime in Greece,—

Men. Well, well; no more of that.

Cor. Though there the people had more
absolute power,
I say, they nourish'd disobedience, fed
The ruin of the state.

Bru. Why, shall the people give
One that speaks thus their voice?

Cor. I'll give my reasons,
More worthier than their voices. They know
the corn
Was not our recompense, resting well assur'd
They ne'er did service for 't. Being press'd to
the war,
Even when the navel of the state was touch'd,
They would not thread the gates: this kind of
service
Did not deserve corn gratis. Being i' the war,
Their mutinies and revolts, wherein they shew'd
Most valour, spoke not for them. The accusa-
tion
Which they have often made against the senate,
All cause unborn, could never be the motive
Of our so frank donation. Well, what then?
How shall this bison multitude digest
The senate's courtesy? Let deeds express
What's like to be their words: 'We did request
it;
We are the greater poll, and in true fear
They gave us our demands.' Thus we debase
The nature of our seats, and make the rabble
Call our cares, fears; which will in time break
The locks o' the senate, and bring in the crows
To peck the eagles.

Men. Come, enough.

Bru. Enough, with over-measure.

Cor. No, take more:
What may be sworn by, both divine and human,
Seal what I end withal! This double worship,
Where one part does disdain with cause, the other
Insult without all reason; where gentry, title,
Wisdom,
Cannot conclude, but by the yea and no
Of general ignorance,—it must omit
Real necessities, and give way the while
To unstable slightness: purpose so barr'd, it
follows
Nothing is done to purpose. Therefore, beseech
you,—
You that will be less fearful than discreet,
That love the fundamental part of state
More than you doubt the change on 't, that
prefer
A noble life before a long, and wish

To jump a body with a dangerous physic
That's sure of death without it, at once pluck out
The mutiniduous tongue; let them not lick
The sweet which is their poison. Your dis-
honour
Mangies true judgment, and bereaves the state
Of that integrity which should become it,
Not having the power to do the good it
would,
For the ill which doth control 't.

Bru. He has said enough. As traitors do.

Cor. Thou wretch! despite o'erwhelm thee!
What should the people do with these bale tribunes?
On whom depending, their obedience fails
To the greater bench. In a rebellion,
When what's not meet, but what must be, was
law,
Then were they chosen: in a better hour,
Let what is meet be said it must be meet,
And throw their power i' the dust.

Bru. Manifest treason!

Sic. This a consul? no.

Bru. The ædiles, ho! Let him be appreh-
ended.

Enter an ædile.

Sic. Go, call the people; [Exit ædile] in
whose name, myself
Attach thee as a traitorous innovator,
A foe to the public weal: obey, I charge thee,
And follow to thine answer.

Cor. Hence, old goat! A foe to the public weal: obey, I charge thee,
And follow to thine answer.

Men. On both sides more respect.

Sic. Here's he that would take from you all
your power.

Bru. Seize him,ædiles!

Citizens. Down with him!—down with him!—

Sen. Weapons!—weapons!—weapons!—

They all bustle about CORIOLANUS, crying
Tribunes!—patricians!—citizens!—What ho!—

Sicinius!—Brutus!—Coriolanus!—Citizens!

Peace!—Peace!—Peace!—Stay!—Hold!—Peace!

Men. What is about to be?—I am out of
breath;
Confusion's near; I cannot speak. You, tribunes
To the people! Coriolanus, patience!
Sic. Good, good Sicinius.
      Hear me, people; peace!
Citizens. Let's our tribune:—Peace!—
      Speak, speak, speak. 192
Sic. You are at point to lose your liberties: Marcius would have all from you; Marcius, whom late you have nam'd for consul.
Men. Fie, fie, fie!
This is the way to kindle, not to quench. 196
First Sen. To unbuild the city and to lay all flat.
Sic. What is the city but the people?
Citizens. True,
The people are the city.
    By the consent of all, we were establish'd
The people's magistrates.
Citizens. You so remain. 201
Men. And so are like to do.
Com. That is the way to lay the city flat;
To bring the roof to the foundation, 204
And bury all, which yet distinctly ranges, in heaps and piles of ruin.
Sic. This deserves death.
Bru. Or let us stand to our authority,
    Let us lose it. We do here pronounce, 208
Upon the part of the people, in whose power we were elected theirs, Marcius is worthy of present death.
Sic. Therefore lay hold of him;
Bear him to the rock Tarpeian, and from thence into destruction cast him.
Bru. Ediles, seize him! 213
Citizens. Yield, Marcius, yield!
Men. Hear me one word;
Beseach you, tribunes, hear me but a word.
Ed. Peace, peace!
Men. Be that you seem, truly your country's friends,
And temperately proceed to what you would thus violently redress.
Bru. Sir, those cold waves, that seem like prudent helps, are very poisonous,
Where the disease is violent. Lay hands upon him, 221
And bear him to the rock.
Cor. No, I'll die here.
      [Drawing his sword.
There's some among you have beheld me fighting;
Come, try upon yourselves what you have seen me.
Men. Down with that sword! Tribunes, withdraw awhile.
Bru. Lay hands upon him.

Men. Help Marcius, help,
You that be noble; help him, young and old!
Citizens. Down with him!—down with him!
    [In this mutiny the Tribunes, the Ediles, and the People are beat in.
Men. Go, get you to your house; be gone, away!
229
All will be naught else.
Sec. Sen. Get you gone.
Cor. Stand fast;
We have as many friends as enemies.
Men. Shall it be put to that?
First Sen. The gods forbid!
I prithee, noble friend, home to thy house; 233
Leave us to cure this cause.
Men. For 'tis a sore upon us,
You cannot tent yourself: be gone, beseech you.
Com. Come, sir, along with us. 236
Cor. I would they were barbarians,—as they are,
Though in Rome litter'd,—not Romans,—as they are not,
Though calv'd 'i' the porch o' the Capitol,—
Men. Be gone;
Put not your worthy rage into your tongue; 240
One time will owe another.
Cor.  On fair ground
I could beat forty of them.
Men. I could myself
Take up a brace 'o' the best of them; yea, the two tribunes.
Com. But now 'tis odds beyond arithmetic;
And manhood is call'd foolery when it stands against a falling fabric. Will you hence,
Before the tag return? whose rage doth rend
Like interrupted waters and o'erbear: 248
What they are us'd to bear.
Men. Pray you, be gone.
I'll try whether my old wit be in request
With those that have but little: this must be patch'd
With cloth of any colour.
Com. Nay, come away. 252
[Execunt CORIOLANUS, COMINIUS, and Others.
First Pat. This man has marr'd his fortune.
Men. His nature is too noble for the world:
He would not flatter Neptune for his trident,
Or Jove for 's power to thunder. His heart's his mouth: 256
What his breast forges, that his tongue must vent;
And, being angry, does forget that ever
He heard the name of death.  [A noise within.
Here's goodly work!
Sec. Pat. I would they were a-bed!
Men. I would they were in Tiber! What the vengeance!
Could he not speak 'em fair?
Re-enter Brutus and Sicinius, with the rabble.

Sic. Where is this viper
That would depopulate the city and
Be every man himself?

Men. You worthy tribunes,—
Sic. He shall be thrown down the Tarpeian rock
With rigorous hands: he hath resisted law,
And therefore law shall scorn him further trial
Than the severity of the public power,
Which he so sets at nought.

First Cit. He shall well know
The noble tribunes are the people’s mouths,
And we their hands.

Citizens. He shall, sure on’t.

Men. Sir, sir,—
Sic. Peace!

Men. Do not cry havoc, where you should but hunt
With modest warrant.

Sic. Sir, how comes ’t that you
Have hope to make this rescue?

Men. Hear me speak:
As I do know the consul’s worthiness,
So can I name his faults.

Sic. Consul! what consul?

Men. The Consul Coriolanus.

Brut. He consul!

Citizens. No, no, no, no, no, no.

Men. If, by the tribunes’ leave, and yours,
good people,
I may be heard, I would crave a word or two,
The which shall turn you to no further harm
Than so much loss of time.

Sic. Speak briefly then;
For we are peremptory to dispatch
This viperous traitor. To eject him hence
Were but one danger, and to keep him here
Our certain death; therefore it is decreed
He dies to-night.

Men. Now the good gods forbid
That our renowned Rome, whose gratitude
Towards her deserved children is enroll’d
In Jove’s own book, like an unnatural dam
Should now eat up her own!

Sic. He’s a disease that must be cut away.

Men. Of he’s a limb that has but a disease;
Mortal to cut it off; to cure it easy.

What has he done to Rome that’s worthy death?

Killing our enemies, the blood he hath lost,—
Which, I dare vouch, is more than that he hath
By many an ounce,—he dropp’d it for his country;
And what is left, to lose it by his country,

Were to us all, that do’t and suffer it,
A brand to th’ end o’ the world.

Sic. This is clean kam.

Brut. Merely awry: when he did love his country
It honour’d him.

Men. The service of the foot
Being once gangren’d, is not then respected
For what before it was.

Brut. We’ll hear no more.
Pursue him to his house, and pluck him thence,
Lest his infection, being of catching nature,
Spread further.

Men. One word more, one word.
This tiger-footed rage, when it shall find
The harm of unscann’d swiftness, will, too late,
The leaden pounds to’s heels. Proceed by process;

Brut. Lest parties—as he is belov’d—break out,
And sack great Rome with Romans.

Brut. If ’t were so,—

Sic. What do ye talk?
Have we not had a taste of his obedience?

Men. Consider this: he has been bred i’ the wars
Since he could draw a sword, and is ill-school’d
In bolted language; meal and bran together
He throws without distinction. Give me leave,
I’ll go to him, and undertake to bring him
Where he shall answer by a lawful form,—
In peace,—to his utmost peril.

First Sen. Noble tribunes, it is the humane way: the other course
Will prove too bloody, and the end of it
Unknown to the beginning.

Sic. Noble Menenius,
Be you then as the people’s officer.

Masters, lay down your weapons.

Brut. Go not home.

Sic. Meet on the market-place. We’ll attend you there:
Where, if you bring not Marcius, we’ll proceed
In our first way.

Men. I’ll bring him to you.

[To the Senators.] Let me desire your company.

He must come,
Or what is worst will follow.

First Sen. Pray you, let’s to him.

[Exeunt.

SCENE II.—The Same. A Room in Corio-
lanus’s House.

Enter Coriolanus and Patricians.

Cor. Let them pull all about mine ears; present me
Death on the wheel, or at wild horses’ heels;  
Or pile ten hills on the Tarpeian rock,  
That the precipitation might down stretch  4
Below the beam of sight; yet will I still  
Be thus to them.

First Pat. You do the nobler.

Cor. I muse my mother  
Does not approve me further, who was wont  8
To call them woollen vessels, things created  
To buy and sell with groats, to show bare heads  
In congregations, to yawn, be still, and wonder,  
When one but of my ordinance stood up  12
To speak of peace or war.

Enter Volumnia.

I talk of you:

Why did you wish me milder? Would you have me  
False to my nature? Rather say I play  
The man I am.

Vol. O! sir, sir, sir,  16
I would have had you put your power well on  
Before you had worn it out.

Cor. Let go.

Vol. You might have been enough the man  
you are  
With striving less to be so: lesser had been  20
The thwarting of your dispositions if  
You had not show’d them how you were dispos’d,  
Ere they lack’d power to cross you.

Cor. Let them hang.  24

Vol. Ay, and burn too.

Enter Menenius and Senators.

Men. Come, come; you have been too rough,  
something too rough;  
You must return and mend it.

First Sen. There’s no remedy;  
Unless, by not so doing, our good city  
Cleave in the midst, and perish.

Vol. Pray be counsel’d.  28
I have a heart of mettle apt as yours,  
But yet a brain that leads my use of anger  
To better vantage.

Men. Well said, noble woman!
Before he should thus stoop to the herd, but that  32
The violent fit o’ the time craves it as physic  
For the whole state, I would put mine armour on,  
Which I can scarceley bear.

Cor. What must I do?

Men. Return to the tribunes.

Cor. Well, what then? what then?  36

Men. Repent what you have spoke.

Cor. For them! I cannot do it to the gods;

Must I then do’t to them?

Vol. You are too absolute;  
Though therein you can never be too noble,  40
But when extremities speak. I have heard you say,
Honour and policy, like unsever’d friends,  
I’ the war do grow together: grant that, and tell me,  
In peace what each of them by th’ other lose,  44
That they combine not there.

Cor. Tush, tush!

Men. A good demand.

Vol. If it be honour in your wars to seem  
The same you are not,—which, for your best ends,  
You adopt your policy,—how is it less or worse,  
That it shall hold companionship in peace  49
With honour, as in war, since that to both  
It stands in like request?

Cor. Why force you this?

Vol. Because that now it lies you on to speak  52
To the people; not by your own instruction,  
Nor by the matter which your heart prompts you,  
But with such words that are but rooted in  
Your tongue, though but bastards and syllables  
Of no allowance to your bosom’s truth.  57
Now, this no more dishonours you at all  
Than to take in a town with gentle words,  
Which else would put you to your fortune and  
The hazard of much blood.

I would dissemble with my nature where  
My fortunes and my friends at stake requir’d  
I should do so in honour: I am in this,  61
Your wife, your son, these senators, the nobles;  
And you will rather show our general louts  
How you can frown than spend a fawn upon ’em,  
For the inheritance of their loves and safeguard  63
Of what that want might ruin.

Men. Noble lady!
Come, go with us; speak fair; you may save so,  
Not what is dangerous present, but the loss  
Of what is past.

Vol. I prithee now, my son,  72
Go to them, with this bonnet in thy hand;  
And thus far having stretching’d it,—here be with them,  
Thy knee bussing the stones,—for in such business  
Action is eloquence; and the eyes of the ignorant  76
More learned than the ears,—waving thy head,  
Which often, thus, correcting thy stout heart,  
Now humble as the ripest mulberry.
That will not hold the handling: or say to them, Thou art their soldier, and being bred in broils Hast not the soft way which, thou dost confess, Were fit for thee to use as they to claim, In asking their good loves; but thou wilt frame Thyself, forsooth, hereafter theirs, so far As thou hast power and person.

Men. This but done, Even as she speaks, why, their hearts were yours;
For they have pardons, being ask’d, as free As words to little purpose.
Vol. Prithee now, Go, and be rul’d; although I know thou hast rather
Follow thine enemy in a fiery gulf Than flatter him in a bower. Here is Cominius.

Enter Cominius.

Com. I have been i’ the market-place; and, sir, ’tis fit You make strong party, or defend yourself By calmsness or by absence: all’s in anger.

Men. Only fair speech.

Com. I think ’twill serve if he Can thereto frame his spirit.

Vol. He must, and will. Prithee now, say you will, and go about it.

Cor. Must I go show them my unbarred sconce?

Must I with my base tongue give to my noble heart A lie that it must hear? Well, I will do’t: Yet, were there but this single plot to lose, This mould of Marcius, they to dust should grind it, And throw’t against the wind. To the market-place!

You have put me now to such a part which never I shall discharge to the life.

Com. Come, come, we’ll prompt you.

Vol. I prithee now, sweet son, as thou hast said My praises made thee first a soldier, so,
To have my praise for this, perform a part Thou hast not done before.

Cor. Well, I must do’t: Away, my disposition, and possess me Some harlot’s spirit! My throat of war be turn’d,

Which quivered with my drum, into a pipe Small as a chimney, or the virgin voice That bellies fulls asleep! The smiles of knaves Tent in my cheeks, and school-boys’ tears take up The glasses of my sight! A beggar’s tongue

Make motion through my lips, and my arm’s knees,
Who bow’d but in my stirrup, bend like his That hath receiv’d an alms! I will not do ’t, lest I su cere to honour mine own truth, And by my body’s action teach my mind A most inherent baseness.

Vol. At thy choice then:
To beg of thee it is my more dishonour Than thou of them. Come all to ruin; let Thy mother rather feel thy pride than fear Thy dangerous stoutness, for I mock at death With as big heart as thou. Do as thou list, Thy valiantness was mine, thou suck’dst it from me, But owe thy pride thyself.

Cor. Pray, be content: Mother, I am going to the market-place; Chide me no more. I’ll mountebank their loves, Cog their hearts from them, and come home below Of all the trades in Rome. Look, I am going: Command me to my wife. I’ll return consul, Or never trust to what my tongue can do I’ the way of flattery further.

Vol. Do your will. [Exit. Com. Away! the tribunes do attend you: arm yourself To answer mildly; for they are prepar’d With accusations, as I hear, more strong Than are upon you yet.

Men. The word is ‘mildly.’

Cor. Pray you, let us go: Let them accuse me by invention, I Will answer in mine honour.

Men. Ay, but mildly.

Cor. Well, mildly be it then. Mildly!

[Exeunt.

Scene III.—The Same. The Forum.

Enter Sicinius and Brutus.

Bru. In this point charge him home, that he affects Tyrannical power; if he evade us there, Enforce him with his envy to the people, And that the spoil got on the Antistes Was ne’er distributed.—

Enter an Edile.

What, will he come?

Ed. He’s coming.

Bru. How accompanied?

Ed. With old Menenius, and those senators That always favour’d him.

Sic. ‘Have you a catalogue 3 Of all the voices that we have procured,’
Set down by the poll?

Æd. I have; 'tis ready.

Sic. Have you collected them by tribes?

Æd. I have.

Sic. Assemble presently the people hither; 12 And when they hear me say, 'It shall be so,
I' the right and strength o' the commons,' be it either For death, for fine, or banishment, then let them, If I say, fine, cry 'fine,' — if death, cry 'death,' 16 Insisting on the old prerogative And power i' the truth o' the cause.

Æd. I shall inform them.

Bru. And when such time they have begun to cry,
Let them not cease, but with a din confus'd 20 Enforce the present execution Of what we chance to sentence.

Æd. Very well.

Sic. Make them be strong and ready for this hint,
When we shall hap to give 't them.

Bru. Go about it. 24 [Exit Ædile.

Put him to choler straight. He hath been us'd Ever to conquer, and to have his worth Of contradiction: being once chaf'd, he cannot Be rein'd again to temperance; then he speaks What's in his heart; and that is there which looks 29 With us to break his neck.

Sic. Well, here he comes.

Enter Coriolanus, Menenius, Cominius, Senators, and Patricians.

Men. Calmly, I do beseech you.

Cor. Ay, as an ostler, that for the poorest piece Will bear the knave by the volume. The honour'd gods Keep Rome in safety, and the chairs of justice Supplied with worthy men I plant love among us! Throng our large temples with the shows of peace,

And not our streets with war!

First Sen. Amen, amen.

Men. A noble wish.

Re-enter Ædile, with Citizens.

Sic. Draw near, ye people.

Æd. List to your tribunes; audience; peace! I say.

Cor. First, bear me speak.

Both Tri. Well, say. Peace, ho! 40 Cor. Shall I be charg'd no further than this present?

Must all determine here?

Sic. I do demand, If you submit you to the people's voices, Allow their officers, and are content
To suffer lawful censure for such faults As shall be prov'd upon you?

Cor. I am content.

Men. Lo! citizens, he says he is content: The war-like service he has done, consider; think
Upon the wounds his body bears, which show Like graves i' the holy churchyard.

Cor. Scratches with briers, Scars to move laughter only.

Men. Consider further, That when he speaks not like a citizen, 52 You find him like a soldier: do not take His rougher accents for malicious sounds, But, as I say, such as become a soldier, Rather than envy you.

Com. Well, well; no more. 56 Cor. What is the matter, That being pass'd for consul with full voice I am so dishonour'd that the very hour You take it off again?

Sic. Answer to us.

Cor. Say, then: 'tis true, I ought so.

Sic. We charge you, that you have contrib'd to take From Rome all season's office, and to wind Yourself into a power tyrannical; 64 For which you are a traitor to the people.

Cor. How! Traitor!

Men. Nay, temperately; your promise.

Cor. The fires i' the lowest hell fold in the people! Call me their traitor! Thou injurious tribune! Within thine eyes sat twenty thousand deaths, In thy hands clutch'd as many millions, in Thy lying tongue both numbers, I would say 'Thou liest' unto thee with a voice as free 72 As I do pray the gods.

Sic. Mark you this, people?

Citizens. To the rock! — to the rock with him!

Sic. Peace!

We need not put new matter to his charge: What you have seen him do, and heard him speak,

Beating your officers, cursing yourselves, Opposing laws with strokes, and bare defying Those whose great power must try him; even this, So criminal and in such capital kind, 80 Deserves the extremest death.

Bru. But since he hath

Serv'd well for Rome,—

Cor. What do you mean of service?
CORIOLANUS

Act IV, Sc. I.

[CORIOLANUS, COMINIUS, MENEINUS, Senators, and Patricians.]

Ed. The people's enemy is gone, is gone!

Citizens. Our enemy is banish'd—he is gone!—Hoo! hoo!

[Exeunt CORIOLANUS, COMINIUS, MENEINUS, Senators, and Patricians.]

ACT IV.

SCENE I.—Rome. Before a Gate of the City.

Enter CORIOLANUS, VOLUMCIA, VIRGILIA, MENEINUS, COMINIUS, and several young Patricians.

Cor. Come, leave your tears: a brief farewell: the beast
With many heads butts me away. Nay, mother,
Where is your ancient courage? you were us'd,
To say extremity was the trier of spirits;
That common chances common men could bear;
That when the sea was calm all boats alike
Show'd mastership in floating; fortune's blows,
When most struck home, being gentle wounded,
craves
A noble cunning: you were us'd to load me
With precepts that would make invincible
The heart that conn'd them.

Vir. O heavens! O heavens!

Cor. Nay, I prithee, woman,—

Vol. Now the red pestilence strike all trades
In Rome,

And occupations perish!

Cor. What, what, what!

I shall be lov'd when I am lack'd. Nay, mother,
Resume that spirit, when you were wont to say,
If you had been the wife of Hercules,
Six of his labours you'd have done, and say'd
Your husband so much sweat. Cominius,
Droop not; adieu. Farewell, my wife! my mother!

I'll do well yet. Thou old and true Meneinus,
 Thy tears are saltier than a younger man's.
And venomous to thine eyes. My sometime general,
I have seen thee stern, and thou hast oft beheld Heart-hardening spectacles; tell these sad women 'Tis fond to wait inevitable strokes As 'tis to laugh at them. My mother, you wot well My hazards still have been your solace; and Believe 't not lightly,—though I go alone Like to a lonely dragon, that his fen Makes fear'd and talk'd of more than seen,— your son Will or exceed the common or be caught With cautelous baits and practice.

Vol. My first son, Whither wilt thou go? Take good Cominius With thee awhile: determine on some course, More than a wild exposure to each chance That starts in the way before thee.

Cor. O the gods! I'll follow thee a month, devise with thee Where thou shalt rest, that thou mayst hear of us,
And we of thee: so, if the time thrust forth A cause for thy repeal, we shall not send O'er the vast world to seek a single man, And lose advantage, which doth ever cool I the absence of the needer.

Cor. Fare ye well: Thou hast years upon thee; and thou art too full Of the wars' surfeits, to go rove with one That's yet unbruised: bring me but out at gate. Come, my sweet wife, my dearest mother, and My friends of noble touch, when I am forth, Bid me farewell, and smile. I pray you, come. While I remain above the ground you shall Hear from me still; and never of me aught But what is like me formerly.

Men. That's worthily As any ear can hear. Come, let's not weep. If I could shake off but one seven years From these old arms and legs, by the good gods, I'd with thee every foot.

Cor. Give me thy hand: [Exit.

Come.

SCENE II.—The Same. A Street near the Gate.

Enter Sicinius, Brutus, and an Edile.

Sic. Bid them all home; he's gone, and we'll no further.

The nobility are ver'd, whom we see have sided In his behalf.

Bru. Now we have shown our power, Let us seem humbler after it is done Than when it was a-doing.

Sic. Bid them home; Say their great enemy is gone, and they Stand in their ancient strength.

Bru. Dismiss them home. [Exit Edile.

Enter Volumnia, Virginia, and Menenius. Here comes his mother.

Sic. Let's not meet her.

Bru. Why?

Sic. They say she's mad.

Bru. They have ta'en note of us: keep on your way.

Vol. O! you're well met. The hoarded plague 'o the gods Requite your love!

Men. Peace, peace! be not so loud. Vol. If that I could for weeping, you should hear,— Nay, and you shall hear some. [To Brutus.] Will you be gone?

Vir. [To Sicinius.] You shall stay too. I would I had the power To say so to my husband.

Sic. Are you mankind? Vol. Ay, fool; is that a shame? Note but this fool. Was not a man my father? Hadst thou forship To banish him that struck more blows for Rome Than thou hast spoken words?

Sic. O blessed heavens! Vol. More noble blows than ever thou wise words;

And for Rome's good. I'll tell thee what; yet go: Nay, but thou shalt stay too: I would my son Were in Arabia, and thy tribe before him, His good sword in his hand.

Sic. What then?

Vir. What then!

He'd make an end of thy posterity.

Vol. Bastards and all.

Good man, the wounds that he does bear for Rome!

Men. Come, come: peace!

Sic. I would he had continu'd to his country As he began, and not unknit himself The noble knot he made.

Bru. I would he had.

Vol. 'I would he had! 'Twas you incens'd the rabble.

Cat. that can judge, as tally of his worth As I can of those mysteries which heaven Will not have earth to know.
BRU. Pray, let us go. 36

VOL. Now, pray, sir, get you gone: You have done a brave deed. Are you go, hear this: As far as doth the Capitol exceed The meanest house in Rome, so far my son,— 40 This lady's husband here, this, do you see,— Whom you have banish'd, does exceed you all.

BRU. Well, well, we'll leave you. 45

SIC. Why stay we to be baited With one that wants her wits?

VOL. Take my prayers with you. 50

[Exeunt Tribunes.

I would the gods had nothing else to do But to confirm my curses! Could I meet 'em But once a day, it would uncloud my heart Of what lies heavy to 't. 55

MEN. You have told them home, And, by my troth, you have cause. You'll sup with me?

VOL. Anger's my meat; I sup upon myself, And so shall starve with feeding. Come, let's go.

Leave this faint puling and lament as I do, In anger, Juno-like. Come, come, come.

MEN. Fie, fie, fie! 60

[Exeunt.

SCENE III.—A Highway between Rome and Antium.

Enter a Roman and a Volsean, meeting.

ROM. I know you well, sir, and you know me: your name I think is Adrian.

VOLS. It is so, sir: truly, I have forgot you.

ROM. I am a Roman; and my services are, as you are, against 'em: know you me yet? 65

VOLS. Nicanor? No.

ROM. The same, sir.

VOLS. You had more beard, when I last saw you; but your favour is well approved by your tongue. What's the news in Rome? I have a note from the Volscian state to find you out there: you have well saved me a day's journey.

ROM. There hath been in Rome strange insurrections: the people against the senators, patricians, and nobles. 70

VOLS. Hath been! Is it ended then? Our state thinks not so; they are in a most war-like preparation, and hope to come upon them in the heat of their division. 75

ROM. The main blaze of it is past, but a small thing would make it flame again. For the nobles receive so to heart the banishment of that worthy Coriolanus, that they are in a ripe aptness to take all power from the people and to pluck from them their tribunes for ever. This lies glowing, I can tell you, and is almost mature for the violent breaking out.

VOLS. Coriolanus banished! 80

ROM. Banished, sir.

VOLS. You will be welcome with this intelligence, Nicanor. 85

ROM. The day serves well for them now. I have heard it said, the fittest time to corrupt a man's wife is when she's fallen out with her husband. Your noble Tullus Aufidius will appear well in these wars, his great opposer, Coriolanus, being now in no request of his country. 90

VOLS. He cannot choose. I am most fortunate, thus accidentally to encounter you: you have ended my business, and I will merrily accompany you home.

ROM. I shall, between this and supper, tell you most strange things from Rome; all tending to the good of their adversaries. Have you an army ready, say you?

VOLS. A most royal one: the centurions and their charges distinctly billeted, already in the entertainment, and to be on foot at an hour's warning.

ROM. I am joyful to hear of their readiness, and am the man, I think, that shall set them in present action. So, sir, heartily well met, and most glad of your company.

VOLS. You take my part from me, sir; I have the most cause to be glad of yours. 100

ROM. Well, let us go together. [Exeunt.


Enter Coriolanus, in mean apparel, disguised and muffled.

COR. A goodly city is this Antium. City, 'Tis I that made thy widows: many an heir Of these fair edifices 'fore my wars Have I heard groan and drop: then, know me not, Lest that thy wives with spits and boys with stones In puny battle slay me.

[Enter a Citizen.

CIT. Save you, sir.

COR. And you.

WHERE great Aufidius lies. Is he in Antium? 105

CIT. He is, and feasts the nobles of the state At his house this night.

COR. Which is his house, beseech you?

CIT. This, here before you.

COR. Thank you, sir. Farewell. 110

[Exeunt Citizen.
would I were hanged but I thought there was
more in him than I could think. 168

Sec. Serv. So did I, I'll be sworn: he is simply
the rarest man i' the world.

First Serv. I think he is; but a greater
soldier than he you won't on. 172

Sec. Serv. Who? my master?

First Serv. Nay, it's no matter for that.

Sec. Serv. Worth six on him.

First Serv. Nay, not so neither; but I take
him to be the greater soldier. 177

Sec. Serv. Faith, look you, one cannot tell
how to say that: for the defence of a town our
general is excellent. 180

First Serv. Ay, and for an assault too.

Re-enter Third Servingman.

Third Serv. O slaves! I can tell you news;
news, you rascals.


Third Serv. I would not be a Roman, of all
nations; I had as lief be a condemned man. 186

First Serv. Wherefore? wherefore?

Third Serv. Why, here's he that was wont to
thwack our general, Caius Marcius.

First Serv. Why do you say 'thwack our
general?' 191

Third Serv. I do not say, 'thwack our gene-
ral;' but he was always good enough for him.

Sec. Serv. Come, we are fellows and friends:
he was ever too hard for him; I have heard him
say so himself. 196

First Serv. He was too hard for him,—directly
to say the truth on 't: before Coriolanus he scotched
him and notched him like a carabonado.

Sec. Serv. An he had been cannibally given,
he might have broiled and eaten him too. 202

First Serv. But, more of thy news.

Third Serv. Why, he is so made on here
within, as if he were son and heir to Mars; set
at upper end o' the table; no question asked
him by any of the senators, but they stand bale
before him. Our general himself makes a mistress
of him; sanctifies himself with his hand, and turns
up the white o' the eye to his discourse. But the
bottom of the news is, our general is cut i' the
middle, and but one-half of what he was yester-
day, for the other has half, by the entreaty and
grant of the whole table. He'll go, he says, and
soke the porter of Rome gates by the saris: he
will mow down all before him, and leave his
passage poll'd. 206

Sec. Serv. And he's as like to do it as any
man I can imagine.

Third Serv. Do't! he will do 't; for—look
you, sir—he has as many friends as enemies;
which friends, sir—as it were—durst not—look
you, sir—show themselves—as we term it—his
friends, whilst he's in directitude.

First Serv. Directitude! what's that? 224

Sec. Serv. But when they shall see, sir, his
crest up again, and the man in blood, they will
out of their burrows, like comes after rain, and
revel all with him. 228

First Serv. But when goes this forward?

Third Serv. To-morrow; to-day; presently.
You shall have the drum struck up this after-
noon; 'tis, as it were, a parcel of their feast, and
to be executed ere they wipe their lips. 233

Sec. Serv. Why, then we shall have a stirring
world again. This peace is nothing but to rust
iron, increase tailors, and breed ballad-makers.

First Serv. Let me have war, say I; it exceeds
peace as far as day does night; it's spritely,
waking, audible, and full of vent. Peace is a very
apoplexy, lethargy; mulled, dead, sleepy, insensible; a getter of more bastard
children than war's a destroyer of men. 242

Sec. Serv. 'Tis so: and as war, in some sort,
may be said to be a ravorish, so it cannot be
denied but peace is a great maker of cuckold.

First Serv. Ay, and it makes men hate one
another. 247

Third Serv. Reason: because they then less
need one another. The wars for my money. I
hope to see Romans as cheap as Volscians.
They are rising, they are rising. 251

All. In, in, in, in!

[Exeunt.

SCENE VI.—Rome. A Public Place.

Enter Sicinius and Brutus.

Sec. We hear not of him; neither need we
fear him;

His remedies are tame i' the present peace
And quietness o' the people, which before
Were in wild hurry. Here do we make his
friends:

Blush that the world goes well, who rather
had,

Though they themselves did suffer by 't, behold
Dissentious numbers pestering streets, than see
Our tradesmen singing in their shops and going
About their functions friendly.

Enter Menenius.

Bru. We stood to 't in good time. Is this
Menenius?

Sec. 'Tis he, 'tis he. Of his is grown most kind
Of late. Hail, sir!

Men. Hail to you both! 12

Sec. Your Coriolanus is not much mis'd.
But with his friends: the commonwealth doth stand,
And so would do, were he more angry at it.

Men. All's well; and might have been much better, if 16

He could have temporiz'd.

Sic. Where is he, hear you?

Men. Nay, I hear nothing: his mother and his wife

Hear nothing from him.

Enter three or four Citizens.

Citizens. The gods preserve you both!

Sic. Good den, our neighbours. 20

Brus. Good den to you all, good den to you all.

First Cit. Ourselves, our wives, and children, on our knees,

Are bound to pray for you both.

Sic. Live, and thrive!

Brus. Farewell, kind neighbours: we wish'd

Coriolanus 24

Had lov'd you as we did.

Citizens. Now the gods keep you!

Sic. Farewell, farewell. [Exeunt Citizens.

Brus. This is a happier and more comely time

Than when these fellows ran about the streets

Crying confusion.

Brus. Caius Marcius was 29

A worthy officer i' the war; but insolent,

O'ercome with pride, ambitious past all thinking,

Self-loving.—

Sic. And affecting one sole throne. 32

Without assistance.

Men. I think not so.

Sic. We should by this, to all our lamentation,

If he had gone forth consul, found it so.

Brus. The gods have well prevented it, and Rome

36

Sits safe and still without him.

Enter an Ædile.

Æd. Worthy tribunes,

There is a slave, whom we have put in prison,
Reports, the Volscæ with two several powers
Are enter'd in the Roman territories, 40

And with the deepest malice of the war

Destroy what lies before them.

Men. 'Tis Aufidius,

Who, hearing of our Marcius' banishment,

Thrusts forth his horns again into the world; 44

Which were inabell'd when Marcius stood for

Rome,

And durst not once peep out.

Sic. Ome, what talk you of Marcius?
Men. How! Was it we? We lov'd him; but, like beasts
And cowardly nobles, gave way unto your clusters,
Who did hoot him out o' the city.
Com. But I fear they'll roar him in again. Tullus Aufidius,
The second name of men, obeys his points
As if he were his officer: desperation
Is all the policy, strength, and defence,
That Rome can make against them.

Enter a troop of Citizens.

Men. Here come the clusters.
And is Aufidius with him? You are they
That made the air unwholesome, when you cast
Your stinking greasy caps in hooting at Coriolanus' exile. Now he's coming;
And not a hair upon a soldier's head
Which will not prove a whip: as many coxcombs
As you threw caps up will be tumble down,
And pay you for your voices. 'Tis no matter;
If he could burn us all into one coal,
We have deserv'd it.

Citizens. Faith, we hear fearful news.
First Cit. For mine own part, when I said banish him, I said 'twas pity.
Sec. Cit. And so did I.
Third Cit. And so did I; and, to say the truth, so did very many of us. That we did we
did for the best; and though we willingly consented to his banishment, yet it was against our
will.

Com. You're good things, you voices!
Men. You have made
Good work, you and your cry! Shall's to the
Capitol?
Com. O! ay; what else?
[Exeunt COMINIUS and MENENIUS.
Sic. Go, masters, get you home; be not dismay'd:
These are a side that would be glad to have
This true which they so seem to fear. Go home,
And show no sign of fear.
First Cit. The gods be good to us! Come, masters, let's home. I ever said we were i' the
wrong when we banished him.
Sec. Cit. So did we all. But come, let's home.
[Exeunt Citizens.

Bru. I do not like this news.
Sic. Nor I.
Bru. Let's to the Capitol. Would half my
wealth
Would buy this for a lie!
Sic. Pray let us go. [Exeunt.
Even with the same austerity and garb
As he controll'd the war; but one of these,
As he hath spices of them all, not all,
For I dare so far free him, made him fear'd,
So hated, and so banish'd: but he has a merit
To choke it in the utterance. So our virtues
Lie in the interpretation of the time;
And power, unto itself most commendable,
Hath not a tomb so evident as a chair
To extol what it hath done.
One fire drives out one fire; one nail, one nail;
Rights by rights falter, strengths by strengths do fail.
Come, let's away. When, Caius, Rome is thine,
Thou art poor'st of all; then shortly art thou mine.

[Exeunt.]

ACT V.

SCENE I.—Rome. A Public Place.

Enter MENENIUS, COMINIUS, SICINIUS, BRUTUS, and Others.

Men. No, I'll not go: you hear what he hath said
Which was sometime his general; who lov'd him
In a most dear particular. He call'd me father:
But what o' that? Go, you that banish'd him; 4
A mile before his tent fall down, and kneel
The way into his mercy. Nay, if he coy'd
To hear Cominius speak, I'll keep at home.

Com. He would not seem to know me.

Men. Do you hear? 3

Com. Yet one time he did call me by my name.
I urg'd our old acquaintance, and the drops
That we have bled together. Coriolanus
He would not answer to; forbid all names; 12
He was a kind of nothing, titleless,
Till he had forg'd himself a name o' the fire
Of burning Rome.

Men. Why, so: you have made good work!
A pair of tribunes that have rack'd for Rome, 16
To make coals cheap: a noble memory!

Com. I minded him how royal 'twas to pardon
When it was less expected: he replied,
It was a bare petition of a state
To one whom they had punish'd.

Men. Very well.

Could he say less?

Com. I offer'd to awaken his regard
For 's private friends: his answer to me was, 24
He could not stay to pick them in a pile
Of noisome musty chaff: he said 'twas folly,
For one poor grain or two, to leave unburnt,
And still to nose the offence.
Men. For one poor grain or twelvemot 38
I am one of those; his mother, wife, his child,
And this brave fellow too; we are the grains:
You are the musty chaff, and you are smelt
Above the moon. We must be burnt for you. 32
Sic. Nay, pray, be patient: if you refuse your aid
In this so-never-needed help, yet do not
Upbraid 's with our distress. But, sure, if you
Would be your country's pleader, your good tongue,
More than the instant army we can make,
Might stop our countryman.
Men. No; I'll not meddle.
Sic. Pray you, go to him.
Men. What should I do?
Bru. Only make trial what your love can do
For Rome, towards Marcius.
Men. Well; and say that Marcius
Return me, as Cominius is return'd,
Unheard; what then?
But as a discontented friend, grief-shot
With his unkindess? say 't be so?
Sic. Yet your good will
Must have that thanks from Rome, after the measure
As you intended well.
Men. I'll undertake it: 48
I think he'll hear me. Yet, to bite his lip,
And hum at good Cominius, much unhearts me.
He was not taken well; he had not din'd:
The veins unfill'd, our blood is cold, and then 52
We pout upon the morning, are unapt
To give or to forgive; but when we have stuff'd
These pipes and these conveyances of our blood
With wine and feeding, we have suppler souls 56
Than in our priest-like fasts: therefore, I'll watch him
Till he be dieted to my request,
And then I'll set upon him.
Bru. You know the very road into his kindness,
And cannot lose your way.
Men. Good faith, I'll prove him,
Speed how it will. I shall ere long have knowledge
Of my success.
Com. Against his hear.
Sic. Not?
Com. I tell you he does sit in gold, his eye 64
Red as 'twould burn Rome, and his injury
The gaoler to his pity. I kneel'd before him;
'Twas very faintly he said 'Rise,' dismiss'd me
Thus, with his speechless hand: what he would do 68
He sent in writing after me, what he would not,
Bound with an oath to yield to his conditions:
So that all hope is vain
Unless his noble mother and his wife,
Who, as I hear, mean to solicit him
For mercy to his country. Therefore let's hence,
And with our fair entreaties haste them on.
[Exeunt.

SCENE II.—The Volscian Camp before Rome.
The Guards at their stations.

Enter to them, Menenius.

First Guard. Stay! whence are you?
Sec. Guard. Stand! and go back.
Men. You guard like men; 'tis well; but, by your leave,
I am an officer of state, and come
To speak with Coriolanus.

First Guard. From whence?
Men. From Rome.
First Guard. You may not pass; you must return: our general
Will no more hear from thence.
Sec. Guard. You'll see your Rome embrac'd
with fire before
You'll speak with Coriolanus.

Men. Good my friends,
If you have heard your general talk of Rome, 9
And of his friends there, it is to be blanks
My name hath touch'd your ears: it is Menenius.

First Guard. Be it so; go back: the virtue of your name
Is not here passable.

Men. I tell thee, fellow, Thy general is my lover: I have been
The book of his good acts, whence men have read
His fame unparallel'd, happily amplifid;
For I have ever glorified my friends—
Of whom he's chief—with all the size that verity
Would without lapsing suffer: nay, sometimes,
Like to a bowl upon a subtle ground,
I have tumbled past the throw, and in his praise
Have almost stamp'd the leasing. Therefore, fellow,
I must have leave to pass.

First Guard. Faith, sir, if you had told as many lies in his behalf as you have uttered words in your own, you should not pass here: no, though it were as virtuous to lie as to live chastely. Therefore go back.

Men. Prithee, fellow, remember my name is Menenius, always factionary on the party of your general.

Sec. Guard. Howsoever you have been his liar—as you say you have—I am one that,
telling true under him, must say you cannot pass. Therefore go back.

Men. Has he dined, canst thou tell? for I would not speak with him till after dinner.

First Guard. You are a Roman, are you?

Men. I am as thy general is.

First Guard. Then you should hate Rome, as he does. Can you, when you have pushed out your gates the very defender of them, and, in a violent popular ignorance, given your enemy your shield, think to front his revenges with the easy groans of old women, the virginal palms of your daughters, or with the palsied intercession of such a decayed dotant as you seem to be? Can you think to blow out the intended fire your city is ready to flame in with such weak breath as this? No, you are deceived; therefore, back to Rome, and prepare for your execution: you are condemned, our general has sworn you out of reprieve and pardon.

Men. Sirrah, if thy captain knew I were here, he would use me with estimation.

Sec. Guard. Come, my captain knows you not.

Men. I mean, thy general.

First Guard. My general cares not for you. Back, I say; go, lest I let forth your half-pint of blood; back, that's the utmost of your having: back.

Men. Nay, but, fellow, fellow,—

-Enter Coriolanus and Aufidius.

Cor. What's the matter?

Men. Now, you companion, I'll say an errand for you: you shall know now that I am in estimation; you shall perceive that a Jack guardant cannot o'ertake me from my son Coriolanus: guess, but by my entertainment with him, if thou standest not in the state of hanging, or of some death more long in spectatorship, and crueler in suffering; behold now presently, and wound for what's to come upon thee. [To Coriolanus.] The glorious gods sit in hourly synod about thy particular prosperity, and love thee no worse than thy old father Menenius does! O my son! my son! thou art preparing fire for us; look thee, here's water to quench it. I was hardly moved to come to thee; but being assured none but myself could move thee, I have been blown out of your gates with sighs; and conjure thee to pardon Rome, and thy petitionary countrymen. The good-gods assay thy wrath, and turn the dregs of it upon this varlet here; this, who, like a block, hath denied my access to thee.

Cor. Away!

Men. How! away!

Cor. Wife, mother, child, I know not. My affairs are servanted to others: though I owe My revenge properly, my remission lies In Volscian breasts. That we have been familiar, Ingrate forgetfulness shall poison, rather Than pity note how much. Therefore, be gone: Mine ears against your suits are stronger than Your gates against my force. Yet, for I lov'd thee, Take this along; I writ it for thy sake, [Gives a paper.]

And would have sent it. Another word, Menenius, I will not hear thee speak. This man, Aufidius, Was my belov'd in Rome; yet thou behold'st! Auf. You keep a constant temper.

[Exeunt Coriolanus and Aufidius.]

First Guard. Now, sir, is your name Menenius?

Sec. Guard. 'Tis a spell, you see, of much power. You know the way home again.

First Guard. Do you hear how we are shent for keeping your greatness back?

Sec. Guard. What cause, do you think, I have to swound?

Men. I neither care for the world, nor your general: for such things as you, I can scarce think there's any, ye're so slight. He that hath a will to die by himself fears it not from another. Let your general do his worst. For you, be that you are, long; and your misery increase with your age! I say to you, as I was said to, Away! [Exit.]

First Guard. A noble fellow, I warrant him.

Sec. Guard. The worthy fellow is our general: he is the rock, the oak not to be wind-shaken.

[Exeunt.]

SCENE III.—The Tent of Coriolanus.

Enter Coriolanus, Aufidius, and Others.

Cor. We will before the walls of Rome to-morrow

Set down our host. My partner in this action, You must report to the Volscian lords; how plainly I have borne this business.

Auf. Only their ends

You have respected; stopp'd your ears against The general suit of Rome; never admitted A private whisper; no, not with such friends That thought them sure of you.

Cor. This last old man, Whom with a crack'd heart I have sent to Rome,

Lov'd me above the measure of a father; Nay, godded me indeed. Their latest refuge Was to send him; for whose old love I have, is
Though I show'd sourly to him, once more offer'd
The first conditions, which they did refuse,
And cannot now accept, to grace him only
That thought he could do more. A very little: I
I have yielded to; fresh embassies and suits,
Nor from the state, nor private friends, hereafter.
Will I lend ear to? [Shout within.] Ha! what shout is this?
Shall I be tempted to infringe my vow
In the same time 'tis made? I will not.

Enter, in mourning habits, VIRGILIA, VOLUMINA, leading young MARCIUS, VALERIA, and Attendants.

My wife comes foremost; then the honour'd mould
Wherein this trunk was fram'd, and in her hand
The grandchild to her blood. But out, affection!
All bond and privilege of nature, break!
Let it be virtuous to be obstinate.
What is that curtsy worth? or those doves' eyes,
Which can make gods forsworn? I melt, and am not
Of stronger earth than others. My mother bows,
As if Olympus to a molehill should
In supplication nod; and my young boy
Hath an aspect of intercession, which
Great nature cries, 'Deny not.' Let the Volscas
Plough Rome, and harrow Italy; I'll never
Be such a gosling to obey instinct, but stand
As if a man were author of himself
And knew no other kin.

Vir. My lord and husband!
Cor. These eyes are not the same I wore in Rome.

Vir. The sorrow that delivers us thus chang'd
Makes you think so.

Cor. Like a dull actor now, I have forgot my part, and I am out,
Even to a full disgrace. Best of my flesh, Forgive my tyranny; but do not say
For that, 'Forgive our Romans.' O! a kiss
Long as my exile, sweet as my revenge!
Now, by the jealous queen of heaven, that kiss
I carried from thee, dear, and my true lip
Hath virgins' it e'er since. You gods! I prate,
And the most noble mother of the world
Leave unsaluted. Sink, my knee, i' the earth;
[Shouts.

Of thy deep duty more impression show
Than that of common song.

Cor. Anfius, and you Volscas, mark; for we'll
Hear nought from Rome in private. Your request?

Vol. Should we be silent and not speak, our rainment
And state of bodies would bewray what life
We have led since thy exile. Think with thyself

Whilst, with no softer cushion than the flint,
I kneel before thee, and unproperly
Show duty, as mistaken all this while
Between the child and parent. [Kneels.

Cor. What is this? Your knees to me! to your corrected son!
Then let the pebbles on the hungry beach
Fillip the stars; then let the mutinous winds
Strike the proud cedars 'gainst the fiery sun,
Murd'ring impossibility, to make
What cannot be, slight work.

Vol. Thou art my warrior; I help to frame thee. Do you know this lady?
Cor. The noble sister of Publicola,
The moon of Rome; chastest as the icicle
That's curdied by the frost from purest snow,
And hangs on Dian's temple: dear Valeria!
Vol. This is a poor epitome of yours,
Which by the interpretation of full time
May show like all yourself.

Cor. The god of soldiers,
With the consent of supreme Jove, inform
Thy thoughts with nobleness; that thou mayst prove
To shame unvulnerable, and stick i' the wars
Like a great sea-mark, standing ever flaw,
And saving those that eye thee!
Vol. Your knee, sirrah.
Cor. That's my brave boy!
Vol. Even he, your wife, this lady, and myself,
Are suitors to you.

Cor. I beseech you, peace:
Or, if you'd ask, remember this before:
The things I have forsworn to grant may never
Be held by you denials. Do not bid me
Dismiss my soldiers, or capitulate
Again with Rome's mechanics: tell me not
Wherein I seem unnatural: desire not
To allay my rages and revenges with
Your colder reasons.

Vol. O! no more, no more;
You have said you will not grant us any thing;
For we have nothing else to ask but that
Which you deny already: yet we will ask;
That, if you fail in our request, the blame
May hang upon your hardness. Therefore, hear us.

Cor. Anfius, and you Volscas, mark; for we'll
Hear nought from Rome in private. Your request?

Vol. Should we be silent and not speak, our rainment

848
How more unfortunate than all living women Are we come hither: since that thy sight, which should Make our eyes flow with joy, hearts dance with comforts, Constrain them weep and shake with fear and sorrow; Making the mother, wife, and child to see The son, the husband, and the father tearing His country’s bowels out. And to poor we Thine enmity’s most capital: thou barr’est us Our prayers to the gods, which is a comfort That all but we enjoy; for how can we, Alas! how can we for our country pray, Where to we are bound, together with thy victory, Where to we are bound? Alack! or we must lose The country, our dear nurse, or else thy person, Our comfort in the country. We must find An evident calamity, though we had Our wish, which side should win; for either thou

Must, as a foreign recreant, be led With manacles through our streets, or else Triumphantly tread on thy country’s ruin, And bear the palm for having bravely shed Thy wife and children’s blood. For myself, son, I purpose not to wait on Fortune till These wars determine: if I cannot persuade thee Rather to show a noble grace to both parts Than seek the end of one, thou shalt no sooner March to assault thy country than to tread—Trust to’t, thou shalt not—on thy mother’s womb, That brought thee to this world.

That brought you forth this boy, to keep your name Living to time.

Boy. A’ shall not tread on me: I’ll run away till I am bigger, but then I’ll fight.

Cor. Not of a woman’s tenderness to be, Requires nor child nor woman’s face to see. I have sat too long. [Rising. Vol. Nay, go not from us thus.

If it were so, that our request did tend To save the Romans, thereby to destroy The Volscines whom you serve, you might condemn us, As poisonous of your honour: no; our suit Is, that you reconcile them: while the Volscines May say, ‘This mercy we have shew’d,’ the Romans, ‘This we receiv’d;’ and each in either side

Give the all-hail to thee, and cry, ‘Be bless’d For making up this peace!’ Thou know’st, great son, The end of war’s uncertain; but this certain, That, if thou conquer Rome, the benefit Which thou shalt thereby reap is such a name Whose reputation will be dogg’d with curses; Whose chronicle thus writ: ‘The man was noble, But with his last attempt he wip’d it out, Destroy’d his country, and his name remains To the ensuing age abhor’d.’ Speak to me, son!

Thou hast affected the fine strains of honour, To imitate the graces of the gods; To tear with thunder the wide cheeks o’ the air, And yet to charge thy sulphur with a bolt That should but rive an oak. Why dost not speak?

Think’st thou it honourable for a noble man Still to remember wrongs? Daughter, speak you:

He cares not for your weeping. Speak thou, boy:

Perhaps thy childishness will move him more Than can our reasons. There is no man in the world More bound to ’s mother; yet here he lets me prate Like one i’ the stocks. Thou hast never in thy life

Show’d thy dear mother any courtesy; When she—poor hen! fond of no second brood— Has cluck’d thee to the wars, and safely home, Loaden with honour. Say my request’s unjust, And spurn me back; but if it be not so, Thou art not honest, and the gods will plague thee,

That thou restrain’st from me the duty which To a mother’s part belongs. He turns away: Down, ladies; let us shame him with our knees. To his surname Coriolanus ’longs more pride Than pity to our prayers. Down: an end;

This is the last: so we will home to Rome, And die among our neighbours. Nay, behold us. This boy, that cannot tell what he would have, But kneels and holds up hands for fellowship, Does reason our petition with more strength Than thou hast to deny ’t. Come, let us go:

This fellow had a Volscian to his mother; His wife is in Corioli, and his child Like him by chance. Yet give us our dispatch: I am hush’d until our city be a-fire, And then I’ll speak a little.
Cor. [Holding Volumnia by the hand, silent.]  
O, mother, mother!  
What have you done? Behold! the heavens do ope,  
The gods look down, and this unnatural scene  
They laugh at. O my mother! mother! O!  
You have won a happy victory to Rome;  
But, for your son, believe it, O! believe it,  
Most dangerously you have with him prevailed,  
If not most mortal to him. But let it come.  
Aupidius, though I cannot make true wars,  
I'll frame convenient peace. Now, good Aupidius,  
Were you in my stead, would you have heard  
A mother less, or granted less, Aupidius?  
Aup. I was mov'd withal.  
Cor. I dare be sworn you were:  
And, sir, it is no little thing to make  
Mine eyes to sweat compassion. But, good sir,  
What peace you'll make, advise me; for my part,  
I'll not to Rome, I'll back with you; and pray you,  
Stand to me in this cause. O mother! wife!  
Aup. [Aside.] I am glad thou hast set thy mercy and thy honour  
At difference in thee; out of that I'll work  
Myself a former fortune.  

{The ladies make signs to Coriolanus.  

Cor. Ay, by and by;  
But we will drink together; and you shall bear  
A better witness back than words, which we,  
On like conditions, would have counter-seal'd.  
Come, enter with us. Ladies, you deserve  
To have a temple built you; all the swords  
In Italy, and her confederate arms,  
Could not have made this peace. [Exeunt.  

Scene IV.—Rome. A Public Place.  

Enter Menenius and Sicinius.  

Men. See you yond oogen o' the Capitol, yond corner-stone?  

Sic. Why, what of that?  

Men. If it be possible for you to displace it with your little finger, there is some hope the Ladies of Rome, especially his mother, may prevail with him. But I say, there is no hope in 't. Our throats are sentenced and stay upon execution.  

Sic. Is't possible that so short a time can alter the condition of a man?  

Men. There is difference between a grub and a butterfly; yet your butterfly was a grub. This Marcus is grown from man to dragon: he has wings; he's more than a creeping thing.

Sic. He loved his mother dearly.  

Men. So did he me; and he no more remembers his mother now than an eight-year-old horse. The tartness of his face sours ripe grapes: when he walks, he moves like an engine, and the ground shrinks before his treading: he is able to pierce a corset with his eye; talks like a knell, and his hum is a battery. He sits in his state, as a thing made for Alexander. What he bids be done is finished with his bidding. He wants nothing of a god but eternity and a heaven to throne in.  

Sic. Yes, mercy, if you report him truly.  

Men. I paint him in the character. Mark what mercy his mother shall bring from him: there is no more mercy in him than there is milk in a male tiger; that shall our poor city find: and all this is 'long of you.  

Sic. The gods be good unto us!  

Men. No, in such a case the gods will not be good unto us. When we banished him, we respected not them; and, he returning to break our necks, they respect not us.  

Enter a Messenger.  

Mess. Sir, if you'd save your life, fly to your house:  
The plebeians have got your fellow-tribune,  
And hale him up and down; all swearing, if  
The Roman ladies bring not comfort home,  
They'll give him death by inches.

Enter a second Messenger.  

Sic. What's the news?  

Sec. Mess. Good news, good news! the ladies have prevail'd.  
The Volscians are dislodg'd, and Marcius gone.  
A merrier day did never yet greet Rome,  
No, not the expulsion of the Tarquins.  

Sic. Friand,  
Art thou certain this is true? is it most certain?  

Sec. Mess. As certain as I know the sun is fire:  
Where have you lurk'd that you make doubt  
Of it?  
Ne'er through an arch so hurried the blown tide,  
As the recomforted through the gates. Why,  
Hark you!  

[Trumpets and haulboys sounded, and drums beaten, all together. Shouting also within.  
The trumpets, sackbutts, psalteries, and flutes,  
Tabor, and cymbals, and the shouting Romans,  
Make the sun dance. Hark you! [Aside within.  

Men. This is good news: I will go meet the ladies. This Volumnia
Is worth of consuls, senators, patricians,
A city full; of tribunes, such as you,
A sea and land full. You have pray'd well
to-day:

This morning for ten thousand of your throats
I'd not have given a doit. Hark, how they joy!

[Music still and shouts.

Sic. First, the gods bless you for your tidings; next,
Accept my thankfulness.

Sec. Mess. Sir, we have all
Great cause to give great thanks.

Sic. They are near the city? 64
Sec. Mess. Almost at point to enter.
Sic. We will meet them,
And help the joy. [Going.

Enter the Ladies, accompanied by Senators,
Patricians, and People. They pass over the stage.

First Sen. Behold our patroness, the life of Rome!

Call all your tribes together, praise the gods,
And make triumphant fires; strew flowers before them:
Unshout the noise that banish'd Marcus;
Repeal him with the welcome of his mother;
Cry, 'Welcome, ladies, welcome!'

All. Welcome, ladies, 72
Welcome! [A flourish with drums and trumpets. Exeunt.

SCENE V.—Coriol. A Public Place.

Enter Tullus Aufidius, with Attendants.

Auf. Go tell the lords o' the city I am here:
Deliver them this paper: having read it,
Bid them repair to the market-place; where I,
Even in theirs and in the commons' ears,
Will vouch the truth of it. Him I accuse
The city ports by this hath enter'd, and
Intends to appear before the people, hoping
To purge himself with words: dispatch. 8

[Exeunt Attendants.

Enter three or four Conspirators of Aufidius' faction.

Most welcome!

First Con. How is it with our general?
Auf. Even so
As with a man by his own alms empoin'd,
And with his charity slain.

Sec. Con. Most noble sir,
If you do hold the same intent wherein
You wish'd us parties, we'll deliver you
Of your great danger.

Auf. Sir, I cannot tell.

We must proceed as we do find the people. 16

Third Con. The people will remain uncertain whilst
'Twixt you there's a difference; but the fall of either
Makes the survivor heir of all.

Auf. I know it;
And my pretext to strike at him admits
A good construction. I rais'd him, and I pawn'd
Mine honour for his truth: who being so heighten'd,
He water'd his new plants with dews of flattery,
Seducing so my friends; and, to this end,
He bow'd his nature, never known before
But to be rough, unswayable, and free.
Third Con. Sir, his stoutness
When he did stand for consul, which he lost
By lack of stooping,—

Auf. That I would have spoke of:
Being banish'd for 't, he came unto my heart;
Presented to my knife his throat: I took him;
Made him joint-servant with me; gave him way
In all his own desires; nay, let him choose
Out of my files, his projects to accomplish,
My best and freshest men; serv'd his designs
In mine own person; holf to reap the fame
Which he did end all his; and took some pride
To do myself this wrong: till, at the last,
I seem'd his follower, not partner; and
He wag'd me with his countenance, as if
I had been mercenary.

First Con. So he did, my lord:
The army marvell'd at it; and, in the last,
When we had carried Rome, and that we look'd
For no less spoil than glory,—

Auf. There was it;
For which my sinews shall be stretch'd upon
him.
At a few drops of women's rheum, which are
As cheap as lies, he sold the blood and labouer
Of our great action: therefore shall he die,
And I'll renew me in his fall. But, hark!

[Drums and trumpets sound, with great shouts of the People.

First Con. Your native town you enter'd
like a post,
And had no welcomes home; but he returns,
Splitting the air with noise.

Sec. Con. And patient fools, 52
Whose children he hath slain, their base throats tear
With giving him glory.

Third Con. Therefore, at your vantage,
Ere he express himself, or move the people
With what he would say, let him feel your sword,
Which we will second. When he lies along,
After your way his tale pronounced shall bury
His reasons with his body.

_Auf._ Say no more:

Here come the lords.

_Enter the Lords of the city._

_Lords._ You are most welcome home.

_Auf._ I have not deserv’d it.

But, worthy lords, have you with heed perus’d
What I have written to you?

_Lords._ We have.

_First Lord._ And grieve to hear ’t.

What faults he made before the last, I think 64
Might have found easy fines; but there to end
Where he was to begin, and give away
The benefit of our levies, answering us
With our own charge, making a treaty where 68
There was a yielding, this admits no excuse.

_Auf._ He approaches: you shall hear him.

_Enter CORIOLANUS, with drums and colours; a
  crowd of Citizens with him._

_Cor._ Hail, lords! I am return’d your soldier;
No more infected with my country’s love 72
Than when I parted hence, but still subsisting
Under your great command. You are to know,
That prosperously I have attempted and
With bloody passage lod your wars even to 76
The gates of Rome. Our spoils we have brought
home
Do more than counterpoise a full third part
The charge of the action. We have made peace
With no less honour to the Antiates 80
Than shame to the Romans; and we here
deliver,

Subscrib’d by the consuls and patricians,
Together with the seal o’ the senate, what
We have compounded on.

_Auf._ Read it not, noble lords; 84
But tell the traitor in the highest degree
He hath abus’d your powers.

_Cor._ Traitor! How now?

_Auf._ Ay, traitor, Marcius. 88

_Cor._ Marcius!

_Auf._ Ay, Marcius, Caius Marcius. Dost thou
think

I’ll grace thee with that robbery, thy stol’n
name

Coriolanus in Corioli?
You lords and heads of the state, perfidiously
He has betray’d your business, and given up, 92
For certain drops of salt, your city Rome,
I say ‘your city,’ to his wife and mother;
Breaking his oath and resolution like
A twist of rotten silk, never admitting.

Counsel o’ the war, but at his nurse’s tears

He whin’d and roar’d away your victory,
That pages blush’d at him, and men of heart
Look’d wondering each at other.

_Cor._ Hear’st thou, Mars? 100

_Auf._ Name not the god, thou boy of tears.

_Cor._ Ha!

_Auf._ No more.

_Cor._ Measureless liar, thou hast made my
heart
Too great for what contains it. Boy! O slave!
Pardon me, lords, 'tis the first time that ever 105
I was forc’d to scold. Your judgments, my
grave lords,
Must give this cur the lie: and his own notion—
Who wears my stripes impress’d upon him, that
110
Must bear my beating to his grave—shall join
To thrust the lie unto him.

_First Lord._ Peace, both, and hear me speak.

_Cor._ Cut me to pieces, Volscæ; men and
lads, 112
Stain all your edges on me. Boy! False
bound!
If you have writ your annals true, 'tis there,
That, like an eagle in a dove-cote, I
Flutter’d your Volscians in Corioli: 116
Alone I did it. Boy!

_Auf._ Why, noble lords,
Will you be put in mind of his blind fortune,
Which was your shame, by this unholy brag-gart,

'Fore your own eyes and ears?

_Conspirators._ Let him die for ’t. 120

_All the People._ Tear him to pieces.—Do it
presently.—He killed my son.—My daughter.
—He killed my cousin Marcus.—He killed my
father.

_Sec. Lord._ Peace, ho! no outrage: peace!

The man is noble and his fame foldes in
This orb o’ the earth. His last offences to us
Shall have judicious hearing. Stand, Aufidius,
And trouble not the peace.

_Cor._ O that I had him, 129

With six Aufidiiuses, or more, his tribe,
To use my lawful sword!

_Auf._ Insolvent villain!

_Conspirators._ Kill, kill, kill, kill, kill him!

[AUFDIUS and the Conspirators draw, and kill CORIOLANUS, who falls: AU-
FDIUS stands on his body.

_Lords._ Hold, hold, hold, hold! 132

_Auf._ My noble masters, hear me speak.

_First Lord._ O Tullus!

_Sec. Lord._ Thou hast done a deed whereat
valour will weep.

_Third Lord._ Tread not upon him. Masters
all, be quiet.
Put up your swords.  
_Aufl._ My lords, when you shall know,—as in this rage,  
Provok'd by him, you cannot,—the great danger  
Which this man's life did owe you, you'll rejoice  
That he is thus cut off. Please it your honours  
To call me to your senate, I'll deliver  
Myself your loyal servant, or endure  
Your heaviest censure.

_First Lord._ Bear from hence his body;  
And mourn you for him! Let him be regarded  
As the most noble corse that ever herald  
Did follow to his urn.

_SEC. LORD._ His own impatience  
Takes from Aufidius a great part of blame.  
Let's make the best of it.

_Aufl._ My rage is gone,  
And I am struck with sorrow. Take him up:  
Help, three o' the chiepest soldiers; I'll be one.  
Beat thou the drum, that it speak mournfully;  
Trail your steel pikes. Though in this city he Hath widow'd and unchilded many a one,  
Which to this hour bewail the injury,  
Yet he shall have a noble memory.

_Assist._

_[Exeunt, bearing the body of Coriolanus._  
_A dead march sounded._
TITUS ANDRONICUS

DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

SATURNINUS, Son to the late Emperor of Rome, and afterwards declared Emperor.
BASSIANUS, Brother to Saturninus, in love with Lavinia.
TITUS ANDRONICUS, a Roman, General against the Goths.
MARCUS ANDRONICUS, Tribune of the People, and brother to Titus.
LUCIUS, QUINTUS, MARTIUS, MUTIUS, YOUNG LUCIUS, a Boy, Son to Lucius.
PUBLIUS, Son to Marcus Andronicus.
SEMFRONIUS, CATUS, VALENTINE, Kinsmen to Titus.
ÆMILIUS, a noble Roman.
ALARBUS, DEMETRIUS, Sons to Tamora.
CHIRON,
AARON, a Moor, beloved by Tamora.
A Captain, Tribune, Messenger, and Clown; Romans.
Goths and Romans.
TAMORA, Queen of the Goths.
LAVINIA, Daughter to Titus Andronicus.
A Nurse, and a black Child.
Senators, Tribunes, Officers, Soldiers, and Attendants.

SCENE.—Rome, and the Country near it.

ACT I.

SCENE I.—Rome.
The Tomb of the Andronici appearing. The Tribunes and Senators aloft; and then enter Saturninus and his Followers at one door, and Bassianus and his Followers at the other, with drum and colours.

Sat. Noble patricians, patrons of my right, Defend the justice of my cause with arms; And, countrymen, my loving followers, Plead my successive title with your swords: I am his first-born son that was the last That wore the imperial diadem of Rome; Then let my father’s honours live in me, Nor wrong mine age with this indignity.

Bas. Romans, friends, followers, favourers of my right,
If ever Bassianus, Caesar’s son, Were gracious in the eyes of royal Rome, Keep then this passage to the Capitol, And suffer not dishonour to approach The imperial seat, to virtue consecrate, To justice, contumacy, and nobility; But let desert in pure election shine, And, Romans, fight for freedom in your choice.

Enter MARCUS ANDRONICUS, aloft, with the crown.

Mar. Princes, that strive by factions and by friends Ambitiously for rule and empery, Know that the people of Rome, for whom we stand A special party, have, by common voice, In election for the Roman empery, Chosen Andronicus, surnamed Pius, For many good and great deserts to Rome: A nobler man, a braver warrior, Lives not this day within the city walls: He by the senate is accited home From weary wars against the barbarous Goths; That, with his sons, a terror to our foes, Hath yoked a nation, strong, train’d up in arms.

Ten years are spent since first he undertook This cause of Rome, and chastised with arms Our enemies’ pride: five times he hath return’d Bleeding to Rome, bearing his valiant sons In coffins from the field; And now at last, laden with honour’s spoils, Returns the good Andronicus to Rome, Renowned Titus, flourishing in arms.
Let us entreat, by honour of his name, Whom worthily you would have now succeed,
And in the Capitol and senate’s right,  
Whom you pretend to honour and adore,  
That you withdraw you and abate your strength;  
Dismiss your followers, and, as suitors should,  
Plead your deserts in peace and humbleness. 45

Sat. How far the tribune speaks to calm my thoughts!

Bas. Marcus Andronicus, so I do affy  
In thy uprightness and integrity, 48
And so I love and honour thee and thine,  
Thy noble brother Titus and his sons,  
And her to whom my thoughts are humbled all,  
Gracious Lavinia, Rome’s rich ornament,  
That I will here dismiss my loving friends,  
And to my fortunes and the people’s favour  
Commit my cause in balance to be weigh’d.

[Exeunt the Followers of Bassianus.

Sat. Friends, that have been thus forward in my right, 56
I thank you all and here dismiss you all;  
And to the love and favour of my country  
Commit myself, my person, and the cause.

[Exeunt the Followers of Saturninus.

Rome, be as just and gracious unto me 60
As I am confident and kind to thee.  
Open the gates, and let me in.

Bas. Tribunes, and me, a poor competitor.  
[Flourish. They go up into the Senate-house.

Enter a Captain.

Cap. Romans, make way! the good Andronicus, 64
Patron of virtue, Rome’s best champion,  
Successful in the battles that he fights,  
With honour and with fortune is return’d  
From where he circumscribed with his sword,  
And brought to yoke, the enemies of Rome.

Drums and trumpets sounded, and then enter  
Martiuis and Mutiui; after them two Men  
bearing a coffin covered with black; then  
Lucius and Quintus. After them Titus Andronicus;  
and then Tamora, with Alarbus, Chiron, Demetrius, Aaron, and  
other Goths, prisoners; Soldiers and people following.  
The bearers set down the coffin,  
and Titus speaks.

Tit. Hail, Rome, victorious in thy mourning weeds! 72
Lol as the bark, that hath discharg’d her fraught,  
Returns with precious lading to the bay  
From whence at first she weigh’d her anchorage,  
Cometh Andronicus; bound with laurel-boughs,  
To re-salute his country with his tears,  
Tears of true joy for his return to Rome.

Thou great defender of this Capitol,  
Stand gracious to the rites that we intend!  
Romans, of five-and-twenty valiant sons, 80
Half of the number that King Priam had,  
Behold the poor remains, alive, and dead!  
These that survive let Rome reward with love;  
These that I bring unto their latest home.  
With burial among their ancestors: 84
Here Gotha have given me leave to sheathe my sword.  
Titus, unkind and careless of thine own,  
Why suffer’st thou thy sons, unburied yet  
To hover on the dreadful shore of Styx?  
Make way to lay them by their brethren.

[The tomb is opened.

There greet in silence, as the dead are wont,  
And sleep in peace, slain in your country’s wars!

O sacred receptacle of my joys, 92
Sweet cell of virtue and nobility,  
How many sons of mine hast thou in store,  
That thou wilt never render to me more!

Luc. Give us the proudest prisoner of the Goths, 96
That we may hew his limbs, and on a pile  
Ad manes fratrum sacrifice his flesh,  
Before this earthy prison of their bones;  
That so the shadows be not unappass’d,  
Nor we disturb’d with prodigies on earth,  
Tit. I give him you, the noblest that survives  
The eldest son of this distressed queen.  
Tam. Stay, Roman brethren! Gracious conqueror, 104
Victorious Titus, rue the tears I shed,  
A mother’s tears in passion for her son:  
And if thy sons were ever dear to thee,  
O! think my son to be as dear to me. 108
Sufficeth not that we are brought to Rome,  
To beautify thy triumphs and return,  
Captive to thee and to thy Roman yoke;  
But must my sons be slaughter’d in the streets 112
For valiant doings in their country’s cause?
O! if to fight for king and commonweal  
Were piety in thine, it is in these.
Andronicus, stain not thy tomb with blood: 116
Wilt thou draw near the nature of the gods?  
Draw near them then in being merciful;  
Sweet mercy is nobility’s true badge:  
Thrice-noble Titus, spare my first-born son. 120
Tit. Patient yourself, madam, and pardon me.

These are their brethren, whom your Goths  
beheld  
Alive and dead, and for their brethren slain.  
Religiously they ask a sacrifice: 124
To this your son is mark’d, and die he must.
To appease their groaning shadows that are gone.

Luc. Away with him! and make a fire straight;
And with our swords, upon a pile of wood, let's Hew his limbs till they be clean consumed.

[Exit Lucius, Quintus, Martius, and Mutius, with Alarbus.

Tam. O cruel, irreligious piety!
Chi. Was ever Scythia half so barbarous?
Dem. Oppose not Scythia to ambitious Rome.
Alarbus goes to rest, and we survive to tremble under Titus' threatening look.

Then, madam, stand resolv'd; but hope withal.
The self-same gods, that arm'd the Queen of Troy
With opportunity of sharp revenge
Upon the Thracian tyrant in his tent,
May favour Tamara, the Queen of Goths—
When Goths were Goths, and Tamara was queen—

To quit the bloody wrongs upon her foes.

Re-enter Lucius, Quintus, Martius, and Mutius, with their swords bloody.

Luc. See, lord and father, how we have performed.

Our Roman rites. Alarbus' limbs are lopp'd, and entrails fed the sacrificing fire. Whose nought, like incense, doth perfume the sky.

Remaineth sottish, but to inter our brethren, And with loud laments welcome them to Rome.

Tit. Let it be so; and let Andronicus make this his latest farewell to their souls.

[Trumpets sounded, and the coffin laid in the tomb.

In peace and honour rest you here, my sons;
Rome's readiest champions, repose you here in rest,
Secure from worldly chances and mishaps!

Here lurks no treason, here no envy swells,
Here grow no damned drugs, here are no storms,

No noise, but silence and eternal sleep:
In peace and honour rest you here, my sons!

Enter Lavinia.

Lav. In peace and honour live Lord Titus long;
My noble lord and father, live in fame! Lol! at this tomb my tributary tears I render for my brethren's obsequies;
And at thy feet I kneel, with tears of joy Shed on the earth for thy return to Rome.
Ol! bless me here with thy victorious hand,
Whose fortunes Rome's best citizens applaud.

Tit. Kind Rome, that hast thus lovingly reserved
The cordial of mine age to glad my heart!
Lavinia, live; outlive thy father's days,
And fame's eternal date, for virtue's praise!

Enter Marcus Andronicus and Tribunes; re-enter Saturninus, Bassianus, and Others.

Mar. Long live Lord Titus, my beloved brother,
Gracious triumpfer in the eyes of Rome!

Tit. Thanks, gentle Tribune, noble brother Marcus.

Mar. And welcome, nephews, from successful wars,

You that survive, and you that sleep in fame!
Fair lords, your fortunes are alike in all,
That in your country's service drew your swords;

But safer triumph is this funeral pomp,

That hath inspir'd to Solon's happiness,

And triumphs over chance in honour's bed.

Titus Andronicus, the people of Rome,
Whose friend in justice thou hast ever been,
Send thee by me, their tribune and their trust,
This palliation of white and spotless hue;
And name thee in election for the empire,
With these our late-deceased emperor's sons:
Be candidatus then, and put it on,
And help to set a head on headless Rome.

Tit. A better head her glorious body fits
Than his that shakes for age and feebleness.

What should I do this robe, and trouble you?
Be chosen with proclamations to-day,
To-morrow yield up rule, resign my life,
And set abroad new business for you all?

Rome, I have been thy soldier forty years, And led my country's strength successfully, And buried one-and-twenty valiant sons, Knighted in field, slain manfully in arms,

In right and service of their noble country.

Give me a staff of honour for mine age, But not a sceptre to control the world:
Upright he held it, lords, that held it last.

Mar. Titus, thou shalt obtain and ask the empery.

Sat. Proud and ambitious tribune, canst thou sell?

Tit. Patience, Prince Saturninus.

Sat. Romans, do me right:
Patricians, draw your swords, and awake them not.

Till Saturninus be Rome's emperor.

Andronicus, would thou wert ship'd to hell, Rather than rob me of the people's hearts!
Luc. Proud Saturninus, interrupter of the good.
That noble-minded Titus means to thee!

Tit. Content thee, prince; I will restore to thee
The people’s hearts, and wean them from themselves.

Bas. Andronicus, I do not flatter thee, but honour thee, and will do till I die:
My faction if thou strengthen with thy friends, I will most thankfully be; and thanks to men
Of noble minds is honourable sordid.

Tit. People of Rome, and people’s tribunes here,
I ask your voices and your suffrages:
Will you bestow them friendly on Andronicus?

Tribunes. To gratify the good Andronicus, And gratulate his safe return to Rome,
The people will accept whom he admits.

Tit. Tribunes, I thank you; and this suit I make,
That you create your emperor’s eldest son, Lord Saturnine; whose virtues will, I hope, Reflect on Rome as Titan’s rays on earth, And ripen justice in this commonwealth:
Then, if you will elect by my advice, Crown him, and say, ‘Long live our emperor!’

Mar. With voices and applause of every sort, Patricians and plebeians, we create Lord Saturninus Rome’s great emperor, And say, ‘Long live our Emperor Saturnine!’

[A long flourish.

Sat. Titus Andronicus, for thy favours done To us in our election this day, I give thee thanks in part of thy deserts, And will with deeds requite thy gentleness:
And, for an onset, Titus, to advance Thy name and honourable family,
Lavinia will I make my empress,
Rome’s royal mistress, mistress of my heart, And in the sacred Pantheon her espouse.
Tell me, Andronicus, doth this motion please thee?

Tit. It doth, my worthy lord; and in this match
I hold me highly honour’d of thy Grace:
And here in sight of Rome to Saturnine, King and commander of our commonweal,
The wide world’s emperor, do I consecrate My sword, my chariots, and my prisoners;
Presently worth Rome’s imperious lord. Receive them then, the tribute that I owe, Mine honour’s ensigns humbled at thy feet.

Sat. Thanks, noble Titus, father of my life! How proud I am of thee and of thy gifts Of Rome shall record, and, when I do forget The least of these unspeakable deserts, Romans, forget your fealty to me.

Tit. [To Tamora.] Now, madam, are you prisoner to an emperor;
To him that, for your honour and your state, Will use you nobly and your followers.
Sat. A goodly lady, trust me; of the hue That I would choose, were I to choose anew. Clear up, fair queen, that cloudy countenance: Though chance of war hath wrought this change of cheer,
Thou com’st not to be made a scorn in Rome: Princely shall be thy usage every way.
Rest on my word, and let not discontent Daunt all your hopes: madam, he comforts you Can make you greater than the Queen of Goths. Lavinia, you are not displeas’d with this? Lav. Not I, my lord; sith true nobility Warrants these words in princely courtesy.

Sat. Thanks, sweet Lavinia. Romans, let us go;
Ransomless here we set our prisoners free:
Proclaim our honours, lords, with trump and drum. [Flourish. SATURNINUS courts TAMORA in dumb show.

Bas. Lord Titus, by your leave, this maid is mine.

[Tit. How, sir! Are you in earnest then, my lord?

Bas. Ay, noble Titus; and resolv’d withal To do myself this reason and this right.

Mar. Suum cuique is our Roman justice: This prince in justice seizeth but his own.

Luc. And that he will, and shall, if Lucius live. Tit. Traitors, avaunt! Where is the emperor’s guard?

Treason, my lord! Lavinia is surpris’d.

Sat. Surpris’d! By whom?

Bas. By him that justly may Bear his betroth’d from all the world away. [Exeunt Marcus and Bassianus with Lavinia.

Mut. Brothers, help to convey her hence away,
And with my sword I’ll keep this door safe. [Exeunt Lucius, Quintus, and Martius.

Tit. Follow, my lord, and I’ll soon bring her back.

Mut. My lord, you pass not here.

Tit. What! villain boy; Barr’st me my way in Rome? [Stabs Muttus.


Re-enter Lucius.

Luc. My lord, you are unjust; and, more than so,
In wrongful quarrel you have slain your son.

Tit. Nor thou, nor he, are any sons of mine; My sons would never do dishonour me.
TITUS ANDRONICUS

Act I, Sc. I.

Traitor, restore Lavinia to the emperor. 296
Luc. Dead, if you will; but not to be his wife

That is another’s lawful promis’d love. [Exit.
Sat. No, Titus, no; the emperor needs her not, Nor her, nor thee, nor any of thy stock: 300
I’ll trust, by leisure, him that mocks me once;
Thy never, nor thy traitorous haughty sons, Confederates all thus to dishonour me.
Was none in Rome to make a stale
But Saturnine? Full well, Andronicus,
Agreed these deeds with that proud brag of thine,
That saidst I begg’d the empire at thy hands.
Til. O monstrous! what reproachful words are these!
Sat. But go thy ways; go, give that changing piece
To him that flourish’d for her with his sword.
A valiant son-in-law thou shalt enjoy;
One fit to bandy with thy lawless sons, 312
To ruffle in the commonwealth of Rome.
Til. These words are razors to my wounded heart.
Sat. And therefore, lovely Tamora, Queen of Goths,
That like the stately Phebe ’mongst her nymphs,
Dost overshine the gallant’st dames of Rome,
If thou be pleas’d with this my sudden choice, Behold, I choose thee, Tamora, for my bride,
And will create thee Empress of Rome. 320
Speak, Queen of Goths, dost thou applaud my choice?
And here I swear by all the Roman gods, Sith priest and holy water are so near,
And tapers burn so bright, and every thing 324
In readiness for Hymenaeus stand,
I will not re-salute the streets of Rome,
Or climb my palace, till from forth this place
I lead espous’d my bride along with me. 328
Tam. And here, in sight of heaven, to Rome I swear,
If Saturnine advance the Queen of Goths,
She will a handmaid be to his desires,
A loving nurse, a mother to his youth. 332
Sat. Asceind, fair queen, Pantheon. Lords, accompany
Your noble emperor, and his lovely bride,
Sent by the heavens for Prince Saturnine,
Whose wisdom hath her fortune conquer’d: 336
There shall we consummate our spousal rights.
[Exeunt all but Titus.
Til. I am not bid to wait upon this bride.
Titus, when wilt thou wont to walk alone, 339
Dishonour’d thus, and challenged of wrongs?

Re-enter MARCUS, LUCIUS, QUINTUS, and MARTIUS.
Mar. O! Titus, see, O! see what thou hast done;
In a bad quarrel slain a virtuous son.
Til. No, foolish tribune, no; no son of mine,
Nor thou, nor these, confederates in the deed
That hath dishonour’d all our family:
Unworthy brother, and unworthy sons!
Luc. But let us give him burial, as becomes;
Give Mutius burial with our brethren. 348
Til. Traitors, away! he rests not in this tomb.
This monument five hundred years hath stood,
Which I have sumptuously re-edified:
Here none but soldiers and Rome’s servitors 352
Repose in fame; none basely slain in brawls.
Bury him where you can; he comes not here.
Mar. My lord, this is impiety in you.
My nephew Mutius’ deeds do plead for him; 356
He must be buried with his brethren.
Quin. And shall, or him we will accompany.
Mar. And shall! What villain was it spoke that word?
Quin. He that would vouch it in any place but here. 360
Til. What! would you bury him in my despite?
Mar. No, noble Titus; but entreat of thee
To pardon Mutius, and to bury him.
Til. Marcus, even thou hast struck upon my crest, 364
And, with these boys, mine honour thou hast wounded:
My foes I do repute you every one;
So, trouble me no more, but get you gone.
Mar. He is not with himself; let us with- draw. 368
Quin. Not I, till Mutius’ bones be buried.
[Marcus and the sons of Titus kneel.
Mar. Brother, for in that name doth Titus kneel.
Quin. Father, and in that name doth nature speak,—
Til. Speak thou no more, if all the rest will speed.
Mar. Renowned Titus, more than half my soul,—
Luc. Dear father, soul and substance of us all,—
Mar. Suffer thy brother Marcus to inter
His noble nephew here in virtue’s nest. 376
That died in honour and Lavinia’s cause.
Thou art a Roman; be not barbarous:
The Greeks upon advice did bury Ajax,
That slew himself; and wise Learie’s son— 380
Did graciously plead for his funerals.
Let not young Mutius then, that was thy joy,
Be barr’d his entrance here.

Tut. Rise, Marcus, rise.

The diss’mall’st day is this that e’er I saw,
To be dishonour’d by my sons in Rome!
Well, bury him, and bury me the next.

[MUTIUS IS PUT INTO THE TOMB.

Luc. There lies thy bones, sweet Mutius, with thy friends,
Till we with trophies do adorn thy tomb.

All. [Kneeling.] No man shed tears for noble Mutius;
He lives in fame that died in virtue’s cause.

Mar. My lord,—to step out of these dreary
—dumbs,—
How comes it that the subtle Queen of Goths
Is of a sudden thus advanc’d in Rome?

Tut. I know not, Marcus; but I know it is,
Whether by device or no, the heavens can tell.
Is she not, then, beholding to the man
That brought her for this high good turn so far?

Mar. Yes, and will nobly him remunerate.

Flourish. Re-enter, on one side, SATURNIUS, attended; TAMORA, DEMETRIUS, CHIRON, and AARON: on the other side, BASSIANUS, LAVINIA AND OTHERS.

Sat. So, Bassianus, you have play’d your prize.

God give you joy, sir, of your gallant bride.

Bas. And you of yours, my lord! I say no more,
Nor wish no less; and so I take my leave.

Sat. Traitor, if Rome have law or we have power,
Thou and thy faction shall repent this rape.

Bas. Rape call you it, my lord, to seize my own,
My true-betrothed love and now my wife?
But let the laws of Rome determine all;
Meanwhile, I am possess’d of that is mine.

Sat. ‘Tis good, sir: you are very short with us;
But, if we live, we’ll be as sharp with you.

Bas. My lord, what I have done, as best I may,
Answer I must and shall do with my life.

Tut. Prince Bassianus, leave to plead my deeds:
’Tis thou and those that have dishonour’d me.
Rome and the righteous heavens be my judge,
How I have lov’d and honour’d Saturnine!

Tam. My worthy lord, if ever Tamora
Were gracious in those princely eyes of thine,
Then hear me speak indifferently for all;
And at my suit, sweet, pardon what is past.

Sat. What, madam! be dishonour’d openly,
And basely put it up without revenge?

Tam. Not so, my lord; the gods of Rome forsend
I should be author to dishonour you!
But on mine honour dare I undertake
For good Lord Titus’ innocence in all,
Whose fury not dissembled speaks his griefs.
Then, at my suit, look graciously on him;
Lose not so noble a friend on vain suppose,
Nor with sour looks afflict his gentle heart.

[Aside to SATURNIUS.] My lord, be rul’d by me,
be won at last;
Dissemble all your griefs and discontents:
You are but newly planted in your throne;
Lest then, the people, and patricians too,
Upon a just survey, take Titus’ part,
And so supplant you for ingratitude,
Which Rome reposes to be a heinous sin,
Yield at entreats, and then let me alone.
I’ll find a day to massacre them all,
And raze their faction and their family,
The cruel father, and his traitorous sons;
To whom I sued for my dear son’s life;
And make them know what ’tis to let a queen
Kneel in the streets and beg for grace in vain.
[Aloud.] Come, come, sweet emperor; come,
Andronicus;

Take up this good old man, and cheer the heart
That dies in tempest of thy angry frown:

Sat. Rise, Titus, rise; my empress hath prevail’d.

Tut. I thank your majesty, and her, my lord.
These words, these looks, infuse new life in me.

Tam. Titus, I am incorporate in Rome,
A Roman now adopted happily,
And must advise the emperor for his good.

This day all quarrels die, Andronicus;
And let it be mine honour, good my lord,
That I have reconcil’d your friends and you.
For you, Prince Bassianus, I have pass’d
My word and promise to the emperor,
That you will be more mild and tractable;
And fear not, lords, and you, Lavinia,
By my advice, all humbled on your knees.

You shall ask pardon of his majesty.

Luc. We do; and vow to heaven and to his highness,
That what we did was mildly, as we might,
Tendering our sister’s honour and our own. 476
  
Mar. That on mine honour here I do protest.
  
Sat. Away, and talk not; trouble us no more.
  
Tam. Nay, nay, sweet emperor, we must all
be friends:
The tribune and his nephews kneel for grace; 480
I will not be denied: sweet heart, look back.
  
Sat. Marcus, for thy sake, and thy brother’s
here,
And at my lovely Tamora’s entreaties,
I do remit these young men’s heinous faults: 484
Stand up.
Lavinia, though you left me like a churl,
I found a friend, and sure as death I swore
I would not part a bachelor from the priest. 488
Come; if the emperor’s court can feast two
brides,
You are my guest, Lavinia, and your friends.
This day shall be a love-day, Tamora.
  
Tit. To-morrow, an it please your majesty 492
To hunt the panther and the hart with me,
With horn and hound we’ll give your Grace
bon jour.
  
Sat. Be it so, Titus, and grammar too.

[Trumpets. Exeunt.

ACT II.


Enter AARON.

Aar. Now climbeth Tamora Olympus’ top,
Safe out of Fortune’s shot; and sits aloft,
Secure of thunder’s crack or lightning flash,
Advanc’d above pale envy’s threat’ning reach. 4
As when the golden sun salutes the morn,
And, having girt the ocean with his beams,
Gallops the zodiac in his glistering coach,
And overlooks the highest-peering hills;
So Tamora.
Upon her wit doth earthly honour wait
And virtue stoops and trembles at her frown.
Then, Aaron, arm thy heart, and fit thy thoughts
To mount aloft with thy imperial mistress, 13
And mount her pitch, whom thou in triumph
long
Hast prisoner held, fetter’d in amorous chains,
And faster bound to Aaron’s charming eyes 16
Than is Prometheus tied to Caucasian.
Away with slavish weeds and servile thoughts!
I will be bright, and shine in pearl and gold,
To wait upon this new-made empress. 20
To wait, said I? to wanton with this queen,
This goddess, this Semiramis, this nymph,
This siren, that will charm Rome’s Saturnine,
And see his shipwreck and his commonwealth’s. 24
Holla! what storm is this?

Enter DEMETRIUS and CHIRON, braving.

Dem. Chiron, thy years want wit, thy wit
wants edge
And manners, to intrude where I am grac’d,
And may, for aught thou know’st, affected be. 28
Chi. Demetrius, thou dost over-ween in all
And so in this, to bear me down with braves.
’Tis not the difference of a year or two
Makes me less gracious or thee more fortunate:
I am as able and as fit as thou 33
To serve, and to deserve my mistress’ grace;
And that my sword upon thee shall approve,
And plead my passions for Lavinia’s love. 36
Aar. Clubs, clubs! these lovers will not keep
the peace.

Dem. Why, boy, although our mother, un-
 advis’d,
Gave you a dancing-rapier by your side,
Are you so desperate grown, to threat your
friends? 40
Go to; have your lath glu’d within your sheath
Till you know better how to handle it.
Chi. Meanwhile, sir, with the little skill I
have,
Full well shalt thou perceive how much I dare.
Dem. Ay, boy, grow ye so brave? [They draw.
Aar. Why, how now, lords! 45
So near the emperor’s palace dare you draw,
And maintain such a quarrel openly?
Full well I wot the ground of all this grudge: 48
I would not for a million of gold
The cause were known to them it most con-
cerns;
Nor would your noble mother for much more
Be so dishonour’d in the court of Rome. 52
For shame, put up.

Dem. Not I, till I have sheath’d
My rapier in his bosom, and withal
Thrust those reproachful speeches down his
throat
That he hath breath’d in my dishonour here. 56
Chi. For that I am prepar’d, and full resolv’d,
Foul-spoken coward, that thunder’st with thy
tongue,
And with thy weapon nothing dar’st perform!
Aar. Away, I say!

Now, by the gods that war-like Goths adore,
This petty brabbling will undo us all.
Why, lords, and think you not how dangerous
It is to set upon a prince’s right? 64
What! is Lavinia then become so loose,
Or Bassianus so degenerate,
That for her love such quarrels may be broach’d
Without controlment, justice, or revenge? 68
Young lords, beware! an should the empress
know
This discord's ground, the music would not please.

Chi. I care not, I, knew she and all the world:
I love Lavinia more than all the world. 72

Dem. Youngling, learn thou to make some meainer choice:
Lavinia is thine elder brother's hope.

Aar. Why, are ye mad? or know ye not in Rome
How furious and impatient they be,
And cannot brook competitors in love?
I tell you, lords, you do but plot your deaths
By this device.

Chi. Aaron, a thousand deaths
Would I propose, to achieve her whom I love. 80

Aar. To achieve her! how?

Dem. Why mak'st thou it so strange?
She is a woman, therefore may be woo'd;
She is a woman, therefore may be won;
She is Lavinia, therefore must be lov'd. 84

What, man! more water glideth by the mill
Than wots the miller of; and easy it is
Of a cut loaf to steal a shive, we know:
Though Bassianus be the emperor's brother, 88
Better than he have worn Vulcan's badge.

Aar. [Aside.] Ay, and as good as Saturninus may.

Dem. Then why should he despair that knows
to court it
With words, fair looks, and liberality? 92
What! hast thou not full often struck a doe,
And borne her cleanly by the keeper's nose?

Aar. Why, then, it seems, some certain snatch or so
Would serve your turns.

Chi. Ay, so the turn were serv'd. 96

Dem. Aaron, thou hast hit it.

Aar. Would you had hit it too!
Then should not we be tir'd with this ado.

Chi. Why, hark ye, hark ye! and are you such fools
To square for this? Would it offend you then 100
That both should speed?

Chi. Faith, not me.

Dem. Nor me, so I were one.

Aar. For shame, be friends, and join for
that you jar:
'Tis policy and stratagem must do
That policy; and so must you resolve,
That what you cannot as you would achieve,
You must performe accomplish as you may.

Take this of me: Lucrece was not more chaste
Than this Lavinia, Bassianus' love. 109

A speedier course than lingering languishment
Must we pursue, and I have found the path.

My lords, a solemn hunting is in hand; 112
There will the lovely Roman ladies troop:
The forest walks are wide and spacious,

And many unfrequented plots there are
Fitted by kind for rape and villany: 116
Single you thither then this dainty doe,
And strike her home by force, if not by words:
This way, or not at all, stand you in hope.
Come, come, our empress, with her sacred wit
To villany and vengeance consecrate, 121
Will we acquaint with all that we intend;
And she shall file our engines with advice,
That will not suffer you to square yourselves, 124
But to your wishes' height advance you both.
The emperor's court is like the house of Fame,
The palace full of tongues, of eyes, and ears:
The woods are ruthless, dreadful, deaf, and dull;
There speak, and strike, brave boys, and take
your turns; 129
There serve your lusts, shadow'd from heaven's eye,
And revel in Lavinia's treasury.

Chi. Thy counsel, lad, smells of no cowardice.

Dem. Sit fas aut nefas, till I find the stream
To cool this heat, a charm to calm these fits,
Per Styga, per manes vehor. [Exit.

SCENE II.—A Forest.

Horns and cry of hounds heard. Enter TITUS ANDRONICUS, with Hunters, &c.; MARCUS, LUCIUS, QUINTUS, and MARTIUS.

Tit. The hunt is up, the morn is bright and grey,
The fields are fragrant and the woods are green.
Uncouple here and let us make a bay,
And wake the emperor and his lovely bride, 4
And rouse the prince and ring a hunter's peal,
That all the court may echo with the noise.
Sons, let it be your charge, as it is ours,
To attend the emperor's person carefully:
I have been troubled in my sleep this night,
But dawning day new comfort hath inspir'd.

[A cry of hounds, and horns winded
in a peal.

Enter SATURNINUS, TAMORA, BASSIANUS, LAVINIA, DEMETRIUS, CHIRON, and Attendants.

Many good morrows to your majesty;
Madam, to you as many and as good; 12
I promised your Grace a hunter's peal.

Sat. And you have rung it lustily, my lord;
Somewhat too early for new-married ladies.

Bas. Lavinia, how say you?

Lav. I say, no; 16
I have been broad awake two hours and more.

Sat. Come on, then; horse and chariots let us have,
And to our sport.—[To TAMORA.] Madam, now shall ye see
Act II, Sc. II.  
TITUS. ANDRONICUS

Our Roman hunting.

Mar. I have dogs, my lord, 20
Will rouse the proudest panther in the chase,
And climb the highest promontory top.

Tit. And I have horse will follow where the game
Makes way, and run like swallows o'er the plain.

Dem. [Aside.] Chiron, we hunt not, we,
with horse nor hound,
But hope to pluck a dainty doe to ground.
[Exeunt.

SCENE III.—A lonely Part of the Forest.

Enter Aaron, with a bag of gold.

Aar. He that had wit would think that I had none,
To bury so much gold under a tree,
And never after to inherit it.

Let him that thinks of me so abjectly
Know that this gold must coin a stratagem,
Which, cunningly effected, will beget
A very excellent piece of villany:
And so repose, sweet gold, for their unrest
That have their aims out of the empress's chest.

[Hides the gold.

Enter Tamora.

Tam. My lovely Aaron, wherefore look'st thou sad,
When every thing doth make a gleeful boast?
The birds chant melody on every bush,
The snake lies rolled in the cheerful sun,
And makes a chequer'd shadow on the ground.
Under their sweet shade, Aaron, let us sit,
And, whilst the babbling echo mocks the hounds,
Replying shrilly to the well-tun'd horns,
As if a double hunt were heard at once,
Let us sit down and mark their yelping noise;
And after conflict, such as was suppos'd
The wandering prince and Dido once enjoy'd,
When with a happy storm they were surpris'd,
And curtain'd with a counsel-keeping cave,
We may, each wrested in the other's arms,
Our pastimes done, possess a golden slumber;
Whiles hounds and horns and sweet melodious birds
Be unto us as is a nurse's song.

Aar. Madam, though Venus govern your desires,
Saturn is dominator over mine;
What signifies my deadly-standing syr,
My silence and my cloudy melancholy,
My fleece of woolly hair that now uncurls

Even as an adder when she doth unroll
To do some fatal execution?

No, madam, these are no venereal signs:
Vengeance is in my heart, death in my hand,
Blood and revenge are hammering in my head.
Hark, Tamora, the empress of my soul,
Which never hopes more heaven than rests in thee,
This is the day of doom for Bassianus;
His Philomel must lose her tongue to-day,
Thy sons make pillage of her chastity,
And wash their hands in Bassianus' blood.
Seest thou this letter? take it up, I pray thee,
And give the king this fatal-plotted scroll.
Now question me no more; we are espied;
Here comes a parcel of our hopeful booty,
Which dreads not yet their lives' destruction.

Tam. Ah! my sweet Moor, sweeter to me than life.

Aar. No more, great empress; Bassianus comes:
Be cross with him; and I'll go fetch thy sons
To back thy quarrels, whate'er they be. [Exit.

Enter Bassianus and Lavinia.

Bas. Who have we here? Rome's royal empress,
Unfurnish'd of her well-beseeming troop?
Or is it Dian, habited like her,
Who hath abandoned her holy groves,
To see the general hunting in this forest?

Tam. Saucy controller of our private steps!
Had I the power that some say Dian had,
Thy temples should be planted presently
With horns, as was Actæon's; and the hounds
Should drive upon thy new-transformed limbs,
Unmannerly intruder as thou art!

Lav. Under your patience, gentle empress,
'Tis thought you have a goodly gift in horn-
ing;
And to be doubted that your Moor and you
Are singled forth to try experiments.
Jove shield your husband from his hounds to-day!
'Tis pity they should take him for a stag.

Bas. Believe me, queen, your swarth Cimmerian
Doth make your honour of his body's hue,
Spotted, detested, and abominable.
Why are you sequenter'd from all your train,
Dismounted from your snow-white gallantly steed,
And wander'd hither to an obscure plot,
Accompanied but with a barbarous Moor,
If foul desire had not conducted you?

Lav. And, being intercepted in your sport,
Great reason that my noble lord be rated
For sauciness. I pray you, let us hence.
And let her joy her raven-colour'd love;
This valley suits the purpose passing well. 84
Bus. The king my brother shall have note of
this.
Lav. Ay, for these slips have made him noted
long:
Good king, to be so mightily abus'd!
Tam. Why have I patience to endure all this? 88

Enter DEMETRIUS and CHIRON.

Dem. How now, dear sovereign, and our
gracious mother!

Why doth your highness look so pale and wan?
Tam. Have I not reason, think you, to look
pale?

These two have 'tis'd me hither to this place: 92
A barren detested vale, you see, it is;
The trees, though summer, yet forlorn and lean,
O'ercome with moss and baleful mistletoe:
Here never shines the sun; here nothing breeds,
Unless the nightly owl or fatal raven: 97
And when they show'd me this abhorred pit,
They told me, here, at dead time of the night,
A thousand fiends, a thousand hissing snakes,
Ten thousand swelling toads, as many urchins,
Would make such fearful and confused cries,
As any mortal body hearing it
Should straight fall mad, or else die suddenly.
No sooner had they told this hellish tale, 105
But straight they told me they would bind me
here
Unto the body of a dismal yew,
And leave me to this miserable death: 108
And then they called me foul adulteress,
Lascivious Goth, and all the bitterest terms
That ever ear did hear to such effect;
And, had you not by wondrous fortune come, 112
This vengeance on me had they executed.
Revenge, as you love your mother's life,
Or be ye not henceforth call'd my children.
Dem. This is a witness that I am thy son. 116

[Stabs BASSIANUS.

Chi. And this for me, struck home to show
my strength.
[Also stabs BASSIANUS, who dies.

Lav. Ay, come, Semiramis, nay, barbarous
Tamora;
For no name fits thy nature but thy own.
Tam. Give me thy poniard; you shall know,
my boys,
Your mother's hand shall right your mother's
wrong.

Dem. Slay, madam; here is more belongs
to her:
First thrash the corn, then after burn the straw.
This minion stood upon her chastity, 124
Upon her nuptial vow, her loyalty,
And with that painted hope she braves your
mighness:
And shall she carry this unto her grave?
Chi. An if she do, I would I were an eunuch.
Drag hence her husband to some secret hole, 129
And make his dead trunk pillow to our lust.
Tam. But when ye have the honey ye desire,
Let not this wasp outlive, us both to sting. 132
Chi. I warrant you, madam, we will make
that sure.

Come, mistress, now performe we will enjoy
That nice-preserved honesty of yours.
Lav. O Tamora! thou bear'st a woman's
face,— 136
Tam. I will not hear her speak; away with
her!
Lav. Sweet lords, entreat her bear me but a
word.

Dem. Listen, fair madam: let it be your
glory
To see her tears; but be your heart to them 140
As unrelenting flint to drops of rain.
Lav. When did the tiger's young ones teach
the dam?
O! do not learn her wrath; she taught it
these;
The milk thou suck'dst from her did turn to
marble;

Even at thy teat thou hadst thy tyrann.
Yet every mother breeds not sons alike:
[To CHIRON.] Do thou entreat her show a
woman pity.
Chi. What! wouldst thou have me prove
myself a bastard? 148
Lav. 'Tis true! the raven doth not hatch a
lark:
Yet have I heard, O! could I find it now,
The lion mov'd with pity did endure
To have his princely paws par'd all away. 152
Some say that ravens foster forlorn children,
The whilst their own birds famish in their nests:
O! be to me, though thy hard heart say no,
Nothing so kind, but something pitiful. 156
Tam. I know not what it means; away with
her!
Lav. O, let me teach thee! for my father's
sake,
That gave thee life when well he might have
slain thee,
Be not obdurate, open thy deaf ears. 160
Tam. Hadst thou in person ne'er offended
me,
Even for his sake am I pitiless.
Remember, boys, I pour'd forth tears in vain
To say to your brother from the sacrifice; 164
But fierce Andronicus would not relent:
Therefore, away with her, and use her as you
will.
The worse to her, the better lov'd of me.
Lav. O Tamora! be call'd a gentle queen, And with thine own hands kill me in this place;
For 'tis not life that I have begg'd so long;
Poor I was slain when Bassianus died.
Tam. What begg'st thou then? fond woman,
let me go.
Lav. 'Tis present death I beg; and one thing
more
That womanhood denies my tongue to tell.
O! keep me from their worse than killing lust,
And tumble me into some loathsome pit,
Where never man's eye may behold my body:
Do this, and be a charitable murderer.
Tam. So should I rob my sweet sons of their
fee:
No, let them satisfy their lust on thee.
Dem. Away! for thou hast stay'd us here too
long.
Lav. No grace! no womanhood! Ah, beastly
creature,
The blot and enemy to our general name.
Confusion fall—
Chi. Nay, then I'll stop your mouth. Bring
thou her husband:
This is the hole where Aaron bid us hide him.
[DEMETHRIUS throws the body of BASSIANUS into the pit; then exent
DEMETHRIUS and CHIRON, dragging
off LAVINIA.
Tam. Farewell, my sons: see that you make
her sure.
Ne'er let my heart know merry cheer indeed
Till all the Andronicus be made away.
Now will I hence to seek my lovely Moor,
And let my spleenful sons this truss deflower.
[Exit.

Enter AARON, with QUINTUS and MARTIUS.
Aar. Come on, my lords, the better foot
before:
Straight will I bring you to the loathsome pit
Where I espied the panther fast asleep.
Quin. My sight is very dull, 'twas it
bodes.
Mart. And mine, I promise you: were't not
for shame,
We could I leave our sport to sleep awhile.
[Flies into the pit.
Quin. What! art thou fall'n? What subtle
hole is this,
Whose mouth is cover'd with rude-growing
briers,
Upon whose leaves are drops of new-shed blood
As fresh as morning's dew distill'd on flowers?
A very fatal place it seems to me.
Speak, brother, hast thou hurt thee with the
fall?
Mart. O brother! with the dismal'st object
hurt
That ever eye with sight made heart lament.
Aar. [Aside.] Now will I fetch the king to
find them here,
That he thereby may give a likely guess
How these were they that made away his
brother.
[Exit.
Mart. Why dost not comfort me, and help
me out
From this unhallow'd and blood-stained hole?
Quin. I am surprised with an uncouth fear;
A chilling sweat o'erruns my trembling joints:
My heart suspects more than mine eye can
see.
Mart. To prove thou hast a true-divining
heart,
Aaron and thou look down into this den,
And see a fearful sight of blood and death.
Quin. Aaron is gone; and my compassionate
heart
Will not permit mine eyes once to behold
The thing whereat it trembles by surprize.
O! tell me how it is; for ne'er till now
Was I a child, to fear I know not what.
Mart. Lord Bassianus lies embrewed here,
All on a heap, like to a slaughter'd lamb,
In this detested, dark, blood-drinking pit.
Quin. If it be dark, how dost thou know 'tis
he?
Mart. Upon his bloody finger he doth wear
A precious ring, that lightens all the hole,
Which, like a taper in some monument,
Doth shine upon the dead man's earthy cheeks,
And shows the ragged entrails of the pit:
So pale did shine the moon on Pyramus
When he by night lay bath'd in maiden blood.
O brother! help me with thy fainting hand,
If fear hath made thee faint, as me it hath,
Out of this fell devouring receptacle,
As hateful as Coetus' misty mouth.
Quin. Reach me thy hand, that I may help
thee out;
Or, wanting strength to do thee so much good
I may be pluck'd into the swallowing womb
Of this deep pit, poor Bassianus' grave.
I have no strength to pluck thee to the brink.
Mart. Nor I no strength to climb without
thy help;
Quin. Thy hand once more; I will not loose
again,
Till thou art here aloft, or I below
Thou causst not come to me; I come to thee.
[Flies in.
Re-enter Aaron with Saturninus.

Sat. Along with me: I’ll see what hole is here,
And what he is that now is leap’d into it.
Say, who art thou that lately drudst descend
Into this gaping hollow of the earth?
Mar. The unhappy son of old Andronicus;
Brought hither in a most unlucky hour,
To find thy brother Bassianus dead.
Sat. My brother dead! I know thou dost but jest:
He and his lady both are at the lodge,
Upon the north side of this pleasant chase;
’Tis not an hour since I left him there.
Mar. We know not where you left him all alive;
But, out alas! here have we found him dead.

Enter Tamora, with Attendants; Titus Andronicus, and Lucius.

Tam. Where is my lord, the king?
Sat. Here, Tamora; though griev’d with killing grief.
Tam. Where is thy brother Bassianus?
Sat. Now to the bottom dost thou search my wound:
Poor Bassianus here lies murdered.
Tam. Then all too late I bring this fatal writ,
[Giving a letter.

The comploit of this timeless tragedy;
And wonder greatly that man’s face can fold
In pleasing smiles such murderous tyranny.
Sat. And if we miss to meet him handsomely,
Sweet huntsman, Bassianus ’tis we mean,
Do thou so much as dig the grave for him:
Thou know’st our meaning. Look for thy reward
Among the nettles at the elder-tree
Which overshades the mouth of that same pit
Where we decreed to bury Bassianus:
Do this, and purchase us thy lasting friends.
O Tamora! was ever heard the like?
This is the pit, and this the elder-tree.
Look, sirs, if you can find the huntsman out
That should have murder’d Bassianus here.
Aar. My gracious lord, here is the bag of gold.
Sat. [To Titus.] Two of thy whelps, fell curs
Of bloody kind,
Have here bereft my brother of his life.
Sirs, drag them from the pit unto the prison:
There let them bide until we have devis’d
Some never-heard-of torturing pain for them.
Tam. What! are they in this pit? O wondrous thing!

How easily murder is discovered!
Tit. High emperor, upon my feeble knee.
I beg this boon with tears not lightly shed;
That this fell fault of my accursed sons,
Accursed, if the fault be prov’d in them,—
Sat. If it be prov’d! you see it is apparent.

Who found this letter? Tamora, was it you?
Tam. Andronicus himself did take it up.
Tit. I did, my lord: yet let me be their bail;
For, by my father’s reverend tomb, I vow.
They shall be ready at your highness’ will
To answer their suspicion with their lives.
Sat. Thou shalt not bail them: see thou follow me.

Some bring the murder’d body, some the murderers:
Let them not speak a word; the guilt is plain;
For, by my soul, were there worse end than death,
That end upon them should be executed.
Tam. Andronicus, I will entreat the king.

Fear not thy sons, they shall do well enough.
Tit. Come, Lucius, come; stay not to talk with them.
[Exeunt severally.

SCENE IV.—Another Part of the Forest.

Enter Demetrius and Chiron, with Lavinia, ravished; her hands cut off, and her tongue cut out.

Dem. So, now go tell, an if thy tongue can speak,
Who ’twas that cut thy tongue and ravish’d thee.
Chi. Write down thy mind, bewray thy meaning so;
An if thy stumps will let thee play the scribe.
Dem. See, how with signs and tokens she can scrawl.
Chi. Go home, call for sweet water, wash thy hands.
Dem. She hath no tongue to call, nor hands to wash;
And so let’s leave her to her silent walks.
Chi. An ’twere my case, I should go hang myself.
Dem. If thou hast hands to help thee knit the cord.
[Exeunt Demetrius and Chiron.

Enter Marcus.

Mar. Who’s this? my niece, that flies away so fast?
Cousin, a word; where is your husband?
If I do dream, would all my wealth would wake me!
If I do wake, some planet strike me down,
That I may slumber in eternal sleep!
Speak, gentle niece, what stern ungentle hands
Have lopp’d and hew’d and made thy body bare
Of her two branches, those sweet ornaments,
Whose circling shadows kings have sought to sleep in,
And might not gain so great a happiness
As have thy love? Why dost not speak to me?
Alas! a crimson river of warm blood,
Like to a bubbling fountain stirr’d with wind,
Doth rise and fall between thy roset lips,
Coming and going with thy honey breath.
‘But, sure, some Tereus hath deflower’d thee,
And, lest thou shouldst detect him, cut thy tongue.
Ah! now thou turn’st away thy face for shame;
And, notwithstanding all this loss of blood,
As from a conduit with three issuing spouts,
Yet do thy cheeks look red as Titan’s face,
Blushing to see encounter’d with a cloud.
Shall I speak for thee? shall I say ’tis so?
Or that I knew thy heart; and knew the beast,
That I might rail at him to ease my mind.
Sorrow conceal’d, like to an oven stopp’d,
Doth burn the heart to cinders where it is.
Fair Philomela, she but lost her tongue,
And in a tedious sampler saw’d her mind:
But, lovely niece, that mean is cut from thee;
A crassier Tereus hast thou met withal,
And he hath cut those pretty fingers off.
That could have better sew’d than Philomel.
Oh! had the monster seen those lily hands
Tremble, like aspen-leaves, upon a lute,
And make the silken strings delight to kiss them,
He would not, then, have touch’d them for his life;
Or had he heard the heavenly harmony
Which that sweet tongue hath made,
He would have dropp’d his knife, and fell asleep,
As Cerberus at the Thracian poet’s feet.
Come, let us go, and make thy father blind;
For such a sight will blind a father’s eye:
One hour’s storm will drive the fragrant meads;
What will whole months of tears thy father’s eyes?
Do not draw back, for we will mourn with thee:
Oh! could our mourning ease thy misery.

ACT III.

SCENE I.—Rome. A Street.

Enter Senators, Tribunes, and Officers of Justice, with MARTIUS and QUINTUS bound, passing on to the place of execution; TITUS going before, pleading.

Tit. Hear me, grave fathers! noble tribunes, stay!
For pity of mine age, whose youth was spent
In dangerous wars, whilst you securely slept;
For all my blood in Rome’s great quarrel shed;
For all the frosty nights that I have watch’d;
And for these bitter tears, which now you see
Filling the aged wrinkles in my cheeks;
Be pitiful to my condemned sons,
Whose souls are not corrupted as ’tis thought.
For two and twenty sons I never wept,
Because they died in honour’s lofty bed.
For these, these, tribunes, in the dust I write.

[Hethrows himself on the ground.
My heart’s deep languor and my soul’s sad tears.
Let my tears stalk the earth’s dry appetite;
My sons’ sweet blood will make it shame and blush.

Exeunt Senators, Tribunes, &c., with the Prisoners.

O earth! I will befriend thee more with rain,
That shall distil from these two ancient urns,
Than youthful April shall with all his showers:
In summer’s drought I’ll drop upon thee still;
In winter with warm tears I’ll melt the snow.
And keep eternal spring-time on thy face,
So thou refuse to drink my dear sons’ blood.

Enter Lucius, with his sword drawn.
O reverend tribunes! O gentle, aged men!
Unbind my sons, reverse the doom of death:
And let me say, that never wept before,
My tears are now prevailing orators.

Luc. O noble father, you lament in vain:
The tribunes hear you not, no man is by;
And you recount your sorrows to a stone.

Tit. Ah! Lucius, for thy brethren let me plead.

Grave tribunes, once more I entreat of you,—

Luc. My gracious lord, no tribune hears you speak.

Tit. Why, ’tis no matter, man: if they did hear,
They would not mark me, or if they did mark,
They would not pity me, yet plead I must,
And make the tribunes all bootless unto them.

Therefore I tell my sorrows to the stones.
Who, though they cannot answer my distress,
Yet in some sort they are better than the tribunes.
For that they will not intercept my tale.

When I do weep, they humbly at my feet.
TITUS ANDRONICUS

Act III, Sc. 1

Receive my tears, and seem to weep with me;
And, were they but attired in grave weeds,
Rome could afford no tribute like to these. 44
A stone is soft as wax, tribunes more hard than
stones;
A stone is silent, and offendeth not,
And tribunes with their tongues doom man to
death. [Rises.
But wherefore stand'st thou with thy weapon
drawn? 48
Luc. To rescue my two brothers from their
death;
For which attempt the judges have pronounc'd
My everlasting doom of banishment.
Tit. O happy man! they have befriended
thee.
Why, foolish Lucius, dost thou not perceive
That Rome is but a wilderness of tigers?
Tigers must prey; and Rome affords no prey
But me and mine: how happy art thou then, 56
From these devourers to be banished!
But who comes with our brother Marcus here?

Enter Marcus and Lavinia.
Mar. Titus, prepare thy aged eyes to weep;
Or, if not so, thy noble heart to break: 60
I bring consuming sorrow to thine age.
Tit. Will it consume me? let me see it then.
Mar. This was thy daughter.
Tit. Why, Marcus, so she is.
Luc. Ay me! this object kills me.
Tit. Faint-hearted boy, arise, and look upon
her.
Speak, Lavinia, what accursed hand
Hath made thee handless in thy father's sight?
What fool hath added water to the sea, 69
Or brought a fogged to bright-burning Troy?
My grief was at the height before thou cam'st;
And now, like Niles, it disdaineth bounds. 72
Give me a sword, I'll chop off my hands too;
For they have fought for Rome, and all in vain;
And they have nurs'd this woe, in feeding life;
In rootless prayer have they been held up, 76
And they have serv'd me to effectless use:
Now all the service I require of them
Is that the one will help to cut the other.
Tit well, Lavinia, that thou hast no hands, 80
For hands, to do Rome service, are but vain.
Luc. Speak, gentle sister, who hath martyr'd
thee?
Mar. O! that delightful engine of her
thoughts,
That blabb'd them with such pleasing elo-
quence.
Is born from forth that pretty hollow cage
Where, like a sweet melodious bird, it sung
Sweet varied notes, enchanting every ear.

Luc. O! say thou for her, who hath done
this deed?
Mar. O! thus I found her straying in the
park,
Seeking to hide herself, as doth the deer,
That hath receiv'd some unrecuring wound.
Tit. It was my dear; and he that wounded
her
Hath hurt me more than had he kill'd me
dead:
For now I stand as one upon a rock
Environ'd with a wilderness of sea,
Who marks the waxing tide grow wave by wave,
Expecting ever when some envious surge 97
Will in his brinish bowels swallow him.
This way to death my wretched sons are gone;
Here stands my other son, a banish'd man, 100
And here my brother, weeping at my woes:
But that which gives my soul the greatest
spurn,
Is dear Lavinia, dearer than my soul.
Had I but seen thy picture in this plight 104
It would have madd'd me: what shall I do
Now I behold thy lively body so?
Thou hast no hands to wipe away thy tears,
Nor tongue to tell me who hath martyr'd thee:
Thy husband he is dead, and for his death 109
Thy brothers are condemn'd, and dead by this.
Look! Marcus; ah! son Lucius, look on her:
When I did name her brothers, then fresh tears
Stood on her cheeks, as doth the honey-dew 113
Upon a gather'd lily almost wither'd.
Mar. Perchance she weeps because they
kill'd her husband;
Perchance because she knows them innocent.
Tit. If they did kill thy husband, then be
joyful,
Because the law hath ta'en revenge on them.
No, no, they would not do so foul a deed;
Witness the sorrow that their sister makes. 120
Gentle Lavinia, let me kiss thy lips;
Or make some sign how I may do thee ease.
Shall thy good uncle, and thy brother Lucius,
And thou, and I, sit round about some foun-
tain, 124
Looking all downwards, to behold our cheeks
How they are stain'd, like meadows yet not dry,
With miry slime left on them by a flood;
And in the fountain shall we gaze so long. 128
Till the fresh taste be taken from that clearness,
And made a brine-put with our bitter tears?
Or shall we cut away our hands, like thine?
Or shall we bite our tongues, and in dumb
shows
Pass the remainder of our hateful days?
What shall we do? let us, that have our
tongues,
Plot some device of further misery, 
To make us wonder’d at in time to come. 136
Luc. Sweet father, cease your tears; for at your grief 
See how my wretched sister sob and weeps. 
Mar. Patience, dear niece. Good Titus, dry thine eyes. 
Tit. Ah! Marcus, Marcus, brother; well I wot 
Thy napkin cannot drink a tear of mine, 
For thou, poor man, hast drown’d it with thine own. 
Luc. Ah! my Lavinia, I will wipe thy cheeks, 
Tit. Mark, Marcus, mark! I understand her signs: 
Had she a tongue to speak, now would she say 
That to her brother which I said to thee: 
His napkin, with his true tears all betwixt, 
Can do no service on her sorrowful cheeks. 148
O! what a sympathy of wo is this; 
As far from help as limbo is from bliss.

Enter AARON.

Aar. Titus Andronicus, my lord the emperor 
Sends thee this word: that, if thou love thy 
sons, 152
Let Marcus, Lucius, or thyself, old Titus, 
Or any one of you, chop off your hand, 
And send it to the king: he for the same 
Will send thee hither both thy sons alive; 156
And that shall be the ransom for their fault. 
Tit. O gracious emperor! O gentle Aaron! 
Did ever raven sing so like a lark, 
That gives sweet tidings of the sun’s uprise? 160
With all my heart, I’ll send the emperor my 
hand: 
Good Aaron, wilt thou help to chop it off? 
Luc. Stay, father: for that noble hand of thine, 
That hath thrown down so many enemies, 164
Shall not be sent; my hand will serve the turn: 
My youth can better spare my blood than you; 
And therefore mine shall save my brothers’ lives.

Mar. Which of your hands hath not defended Rome, 
And reard aloft the bloody battle-axe, 
Writing destruction on the enemy’s castle? 
O! none of both but are of high desert: 
My hand hath been but idle; let it serve 172
To ransom my two nephews from their death; 
Then have I kept it to a worthy end. 
Aar. Nay, come, agree whose hand shall go along. 
For fear they die before their pardon come. 
Mar. My hand shall go.

Luc. By heaven, it shall not go! 
Tit. Sirs, strive no more: such wither’d herbs as these 
Are meet for plucking up, and therefore mine. 
Luc. Sweet father, if I shall be thought thy son, 
182
Let me redeem my brothers both from death. 
Mar. And for our father’s sake, and mother’s care, 
Now let me show a brother’s love to thee. 
Tit. Agree between you; I will spare my hand. 
Luc. Then I’ll go fetch an axe. 
Mar. 

[Exeunt LUCIUS and MARCUS. 
Tit. Come hither, Aaron; I’ll deceive them both: 
Lend me thy hand, and I will give thee mine. 
Aar. [Aside.] If that be call’d deceit, I will be honest, 
188
And never, whilst I live, deceive men so: 
But I’ll deceive you in another sort, 
And that you’ll say, ere half an hour pass.

[Cuts off TITUS’ hand.

Re-enter LUCIUS and MARCUS. 
Tit. Now stay your strife: what shall be is dispatch’d. 
Good Aaron, give his majesty my hand: 
Tell him it was a hand that warded him 
From thousand dangers; hid him bury it; 
More hath it merited; that let it have. 196
As for my sons, say I account of them 
As jewels purchas’d at an easy price; 
And yet dear too, because I bought mine own. 
Aar. I go, Andronicus; and for thy hand, 
Look by and by to have thy sons with thee. 
[Aside.] Their heads, I mean. O! how this villany 
Doth fat me with the very thoughts of it. 
Let fools do good, and fair men call for grace, 
Aaron will have his soul black like his face. 205

[Exit. 
Tit. Of! here I lift this one hand up to heaven, 
And bow this feeble ruin to the earth: 
If any power pityes wretched tears, 208
To that I call! [To LAVINIA.] What! wilt thou kneel with me?
Do, then, dear heart; for heaven shall hear our prayers, 
Or with our sighs we’ll breathe the welkin dim, 211
And stain the sun with fog, as sometime clouds 
When they do hug him in their melting bosoms. 
Mar. Of! brother, speak with possibilities, 
And do not break into these deep extremes.
TITUS ANDRONICUS  
Act III, Sc. II.

**Tit.** Is not my sorrow deep, having no
bottom?  

Then be my passions bottomless with them.

**Mar.** But yet let reason govern thy lament.

**Tit.** If there were reason for these miseries,
Then into limits could I bind my woes.

When heaven doth weep, doth not the earth
'overflow?

If the winds rage, doth not the sea wax mad,
Threat'ning the welkin with his big-swoln face?
And wilt thou have a reason for this coil?

I am the sea; hark! how her sighs do blow;
She is the weeping welkin, I the earth:

Then must my sea be moved with her sighs;
Then must my earth with her continual tears
Become a deluge, overflow'd and drown'd;

For why my bowels cannot hide her woes,
But like a drunkard must I vomit them.

Then give me leave, for losers will have leave
To ease their stomachs with their bitter tongues.

**Enter a Messenger, with two heads and
a hand.**

**Mess.** Worthy Andronicus, ill art thou re-
paid

For that good hand thou sent'st the emperor.
Here are the heads of thy two noble sons,

And here's thy hand, in scorn to thee sent
back:

Thy griefs their sports, thy resolution mock'd;
That woe is me to think upon thy woes,

More than remembrance of my father's death.

[Exit.]

**Mar.** Now let hot Ætna cool in Sicily,

And be my heart an ever burning hill!
These miseries are more than may be borne.

To weep with them that weep doth ease some
deal,

But sorrow flouted at is double death.

**Luc.** Ah! that this sight should make so
depth a wound,

And yet detested life not shrink thereat,

That ever death should let life bear his name,

Where life hath no more interest but to breathe.

[LAVINIA kisses TITUS.

**Mar.** Alas! poor heart; that kiss is comfort-
less

As frozen water to a starved snake.

**Tit.** When will this fearful slumber have an
end?

**Mar.** Now, farewell, flattery: die, Andro-
nicus;

Thou dost not slumber: see, thy two sons' heads,

Thy wax-like hand, thy mangled daughter here;

Thy other banish'd son, with this dead sight

Struck pale and bloodless; and thy brother, I,

Even like a stony image, cold and numb.

Ahi now no more will I control thy griefs.
Rent off thy silver hair, thy other hand

Gnawing with thy teeth; and be this dismal sight

The closing up of our most wretched eyes!

Now is a time to storm; why art thou still?

**Tit.** Ha, ha, ha!

**Mar.** Why dost thou laugh? it fits not with
this hour.

**Tit.** Why, I have not another tear to shed:

Besides, this sorrow is an enemy,
And would usurp upon my watery eyes,

And make them blind with tributary tears:

Then which way shall I find Revenge's cave?
For these two heads do seem to speak to me,

And threat me I shall never come to bliss
till all these mischiefs be return'd again

Even in their throats that have committed them.

Come, let me see what task I have to do.

You heavy people, circle me about,

That I may turn me to each one of you,

And swear unto my soul to right your wrongs.
The vow is made. Come, brother, take a head;
And in this hand the other will I bear.

Lavinia, thou shalt be employ'd in these things:

Bear thou my hand, sweet wench, between thy teeth.

As for thee, boy, go get thee from my sight;

Thou art an exile, and thou must not stay.

He to the Goths, and raise an army there:

And if you love me, as I think you do,
Let's kiss and part, for we have much to do.

[Exit TITUS, MARCUS, and LAVINIA.

**Luc.** Farewell, Andronicus, my noble father;
The woefull'st man that ever liv'd in Rome: 289
Farewell, proud Rome; till Lucius come again,
He leaves his pledges dearer than his life.

Farewell, Lavinia, my noble sister;
O! would thou wert as thou before hast been;

But now nor Lucius nor Lavinia lives
But in oblivion and hateful griefs.

If Lucius live, he will requite your wrongs,

And make proud Saturnine and his empress
Beg at the gates like Tarquin and his queen.

Now will I to the Goths, and raise a power,

To be reveng'd on Rome and Saturnine.

[Exit.


**Enter TITUS, MARCUS, LAVINIA, and young LUCIUS, a Boy.**

**Tit.** So, so; now sit; and look you eat no more

867
Than will preserve just so much strength in us
As will revenge these bitter woes of ours.
Marcus, unknot that sorrow-wreathed knot: 4
Thy niece and I, poor creatures, want our hands,
And cannot passionate our ten-fold grief
With folded arms. This poor right hand of mine
Is left to tyrannize upon my breast; 8
And when my heart, all mad with misery,
Beats in this hollow prison of my flesh,
Then thus I thump it down.
[To Lavinia.] Thou map of woe, that thus dost talk in signs! 12
When thy poor heart beats with outrageous beating
Thou canst not strike it thus to make it still.
Wound it with sighing, girl, kill it with groans;
Or get some little knife between thy teeth, 16
And just against thy heart make thou a hole;
That all the tears that thy poor eyes let fall
May run into that sink, and, soaking in,
Drown the lamenting fool in sea-salt tears. 20
Mar. Fie, brother, fie! ther she teach her not thus to lay
Such violent hands upon her tender life.
Tit. How now! has sorrow made thee dote already?
Why, Marcus, no man should be mad but I. 24
What violent hands can she lay on her life?
Ah! wherefore dost thou urge the name of hands;
To bid As you tell the tale twice o'er,
How Troy was burnt and he made miserable? 28
O! handle not the theme, to talk of hands,
Lest we remember still that we have none.
Fie, fie! how fractly I square my talk,
As if we should forget we had no hands, 32
If Marcus did not name the word of hands.
Come, let’s fall to; and, gentle girl, eat this:
Here is no drink. Hark, Marcus, what she says;
I can interpret all her martyr’d signs: 36
She says she drinks no other drink but tears,
Brew’d with her sorrow, mash’d upon her cheeks.
Speechless complainer, I will learn thy thought;
In thy dumb action will I be as perfect
As begging hermits in their holy prayers:
Thou shalt not sigh, nor hold thy stumps to heaven,
Nor wink, nor nod, nor kneel, nor make a sign,
But I of these will wrest an alphabet, 40
And by still practice learn to know thy meaning.
Boy. Good grandair, spare these bitter deep laments:
Make my aunt merry with some pleasing tale.
Mar. Alas! the tender boy, in passion mov’d,
Doth weep to see his grandair’s heaviness. 44
Tit. Peace, tender sapling; thou art made of tears,
And tears will quickly melt thy life away.
[Marous strikes the dish with a knife.
What dost thou strike at, Marcus, with thy knife?
Mar. At that that I have kill’d, my lord; a fly.
Tit. Out on thee, murderer! thou’st kill’d my heart;
Mine eyes are cloy’d with view of tyranny:
A deed of death, done on the innocent,
Becomes not Titus’ brother. Get thee gone;
I see, thou art not for my company.
Mar. Alas! my lord, I have but kill’d a fly.
Tit. But how if that fly had a father and a mother?
How would he hang his slender gilded wings
And buzz lamenting doings in the air?
Poor harmless fly,
That, with his pretty buzzing melody,
Came here to make us merry, and thou hast kill’d him.
Mar. Pardon me, sir; it was a black ill-favour’d fly,
Like to the empress’ Moor; therefore I kill’d him.
Tit. O, O, O!
Then pardon me for reprehending thee,
For thou hast done a charitable deed.
Give me thy knife, I will insult on him;
Flattering myself, as if it were the Moor
Come hither purposely to poison me.
There’s for thyself, and that’s for Tamora.
Ah! sirdh.
Yet I think we are not brought so low,
But that between us we can kill a fly
That comes in likeness of a coal-black Moor.
Mar. Alas! poor man; grief has so wrought on him,
He takes false shadows for true substances. 80
Tit. Come, take away. Lavinia, go with me:
I’ll to thy closet; and go read with thee
Sad stories chanced in the times of old.
Come, boy, and go with me: thy sight is young,
And thou shalt read when mine begins to dazzle.
[Exeunt.

ACT IV.


Enter Titus and Marcus. Then enter young Lucius, Lavinia running after him.

Boy. Help, grandair, help! my aunt Lavinia
Follows me everywhere, I know not why.
Good uncle Marcus, see how swift she comes.
Alas! sweet aunt, I know not what you mean. 4
And rape, I fear, was root of thing annoy.

Mar. See, brother, see! note how she quotes the leaves.

Tit. Lavinia, wert thou thus surpris’d, sweet girl,

Ravish’d and wrong’d, as Philomela was,

Forc’d in the ruthless, vast, and gloomy woods? See, see!

Ay, such a place there is, where we did hunt,—

O! had we never, never hunted there,—

Pattern’d by that the poet here describes,

By nature made for murders and for rapes.

Mar. O! why should nature build so foul a den,

Unless the gods delight in tragedies? 80

Tit. Give signs, sweet girl, for here are none but friends,

What Roman lord it was durst do the deed:

Or slunk not Saturnine, as Tarquin erst,

That left the camp to sin in Lucrece’s bed? 84

Mar. Sit down, sweet niece: brother, sit down by me.

Apollo, Pallas, Jove, or Mercury,

Inspire me, that I may this treason find!

My lord, look here; look here, Lavinia:

This sandy plot is plain; guide, if thou canst,

This after me.

[He writes his name with his staff, and guides it with his feet and mouth.]

I have writ my name

Without the help of any hand at all.

Curs’d be that heart that for’d us to this shift!

Write thou, good niece, and here display at last

What God will have discover’d for revenge. 74

Heaven guide thy pen to print thy sorrows plain,

That we may know the traitors and the truth!

[She takes the staff in her mouth, and guides it with her stumps, and writes.]

Tit. O! do you read, my lord, what she hath writ?

Staprum, Chiron, Demetrius.

Mar. What, what! the lustfulsons of Tamors

Performers of this heinous, bloody deed? 80

Tit. Magni dominator poli,

Tam lentus audis scelerata? tam lentus vides? 84

Mar. O! calm thee, gentle lord; although I know

There is enough written upon this earth

To stir a mutiny in the mildest thoughts

And arm the minds of infants to exclaim.

My lord, kneel down with me; Lavinia, kneel;

And kneel, sweet boy, the Roman, Hector’s hope;

And swear with me, as, with the woeful fere;

And father of that chaste dishonour’d dame,

Lord Junius Brutus aware for Lucrece’s rape;

That we will prosecute by good advice.

Mortal revenge upon these traitorous Goths,
Tit. 'Tis sure enough, an you knew how;  
But if you hunt these bear-whelps, then beware: 
The dam will wake, an if she wind you once: 97  
She's with the lion deeply still in league, 
And lulls him whilst she playeth on her back, 
And when he sleeps will she do what she list. 100  
You're a young huntsman, Marcus; let it alone; 
And, come, I will go get a leaf of brass, 
And with a gale of steel will write these words, 
And lay it by: the angry northern wind 104  
Will blow these sands like Sibyl's leaves abroad, 
And where's your lesson then? Boy, what say you?  

Boy. I say, my lord, that if I were a man, 
Their mother's bed-chamber should not be safe 
For these bad bondmen to the yoke of Rome. 109  
Mar. Ay, that's my boy! Thy father hath full oft 
For his ungrateful country done the like.  

Boy. And, uncle, so will I, an I live. 112  

Tit. Come, go with me into mine armoury: 
Lucius, I'll fit thee; and withal my boy 
Shall carry from me to the empress' sons 
Presents that I intend to send them both: 116  
Come, come; thou'lt do thy message, wilt thou not?  

Boy. Ay, with my dagger in their bosoms, 
grand sire.  

Tit. No, boy, not so; I'll teach thee another 
course.  

Lavinia, come. Marcus, look to my house; 120  
Lucius and I'll go brave it at the court: 
Ay, marry, will we, sir, and we'll be waited on.  

[Exeunt Titus, Lavinia, and Boy.  

Mar. O heavens! can you hear a good man groan, 
And not relent or not compassion him? 124  
Marcus, attend him in his ecstasy, 
That hath more scars of sorrow in his heart 
Than foemen's marks upon his bitter'd shield; 
But yet so just that he will not revenge. 128  
Revenge, ye heavens, for old Andronicus! [Exit.

Scene II.—The Same. A Room in the Palace.  

Enter, from one side; Aar on, Demetrius, and 
Chiron; from the other young Lu cius, and 
an Attendant, with a bundle of weapons, and 
verses writ upon them.  

Chir. Demetrius, here's the son of Lucius;  
He hath some message to deliver us.  

Aar. Ay, some mad message from his mad 
grandfather.  

Boy. My lords, with all the humbleness I 
may, 
I greet your honours from Andronicus;  

[Aside.] And pray the Roman gods, confound you both!  

Dem. Gramercy, lovely Lucius: what's the news?  

Boy. [Aside.] That you are both decipher'd, 
that's the news, 8  

For villains mark'd with rape. [Aloud.] May it 
please you, 

My grandsire, well advis'd, hath sent by me 
The goodliest weapons of his armoury, 
To gratify your honourable youth, 12  

The hope of Rome, for so he bade me say; 
And so I do, and with his gifts present 
Your lordships, that whenever you have need, 
You may be armed and appointed well. 16  
And so I leave you both: [Aside.] like bloody 
villains. [Exeunt Boy and Attendant.  

Dem. What's here? A scroll; and written 
round about?  

Let's see:—  

[Reads.] 'Integre vita, scelerisque purus, 20  
Non eget Mauri jaculis, nec arcu.  

Chir. O! 'tis a verse in Horace; I know it 
well:  
I read it in the grammar long ago.  

Aar. Ay just, a verse in Horace; right, you 
have it. 24  

[Aside.] Now, what a thing it is to be an ass!  
Here's no sound jest! the old man hath found 
their guilt 
And sends them weapons wrapp'd about with 
lines, 
That wound, beyond their feeling, to the quick; 
But were our witty empress well afoot, 29  
She would applaud Andronicus' conceit: 
But let her rest in her unrest awhile.  

[To them.] And now, young lords, was't not a 
happy star 32  

Led us to Rome, strangers, and more than so, 
Captive s, to be advanced to this height? 
It did me good before the palace gate 
To brave the tribunes in his brother's hearing. 36  

Dem. But me more good, to see so great a 

lord  
Basely insinuate and send us gifts.  

Aar. Had he not reason, Lord Demetrius?  

Did you not use his daughter very friendly? 40  

Dem. I would we had a thousand Roman 
dames 
At such a bay, by turn to serve our lust.  

Chir. A charitable wish and full of love.  

Aar. Here lacks but your mother for to say 

aman. 44  

Chir. And that would she for twenty thousand 
more.  

Dem. Come, let me go and pray to all the gods 

For our beloved mother in her pains.
Aar. [Aside.] Pry'g to the devils; the gods have given us over.  
[Trumpets sound.
Dem. Why do the emperor's trumpets flourish thus?
Chi. Belike, for joy the emperor hath a son.
Dem. Soft! who comes here?

Enter a Nurse, with a blackamoor Child.

Nur. Good morrow, lords. O! tell me, did you see
Aar the Moor?
Aar. Well, more or less, or ne'er a whrit at all,
Here Aaron is; and what with Aaron now?
Nur. O gentle Aaron! we are all undone.
Now help, or woe betide thee evermore!
Aar. Why, what a eaterwailing dost thou keep!
What dost thou wrap and fumble in thine arms?
Nur. O! that which I would hide from heaven's eye,
Our empress' shame, and stately Rome's disgrace!
She is deliver'd, lords, she is deliver'd.
Aar. To whom?
Nur. I mean, she's brought a-bed.
Aar. Well, God give her good rest! What hath be sent her?
Aar. Why, then she's the devil's dam: a joyful issue.
Nur. A joyless, dismal, black, and sorrowful issue.
Here is the babe, as loathsome as a toad
Amongst the fairest breeders of our clime.
The empress sends it thee, thy stamp, thy seal,
And bids thee christen it with thy dagger's point.
Aar. 'Zounds, ye whore! is black so base a hue?
Sweet blousse, you are a beauteous blossom, sure.
Dem. Villain, what hast thou done?
Aar. That which thou canst not undo.
Chi. Thou hast undone our mother.
Aar. Villain, I have done thy mother.
Dem. And therein, hellish dog, thou hast undone.
Woe to her chance, and damn'd her loathed choice!
Accurs'd the offspring of so foul a fiend!
Chi. It shall not live.
Aar. It shall not die.
Nur. Aaron, it must; the mother wills it so.
Aar. What! must it, nurse? then let no man but I
Do execution on my flesh and blood.

Dem. I'll broach the tadpole on my rapier's point:
Nurse, give it me; my sword shall soon dispatch it.
Aar. Sooner this sword shall plough thy bowels up.

[Takes the Child from the Nurse, and draws.
Stay, murderous villains! will you kill your brother?
Now, by the burning tapers of the sky,
That shone so brightly when this boy was got,
He dies upon my scimitar's sharp point.
That touches this my first-born son and heir.
I tell you, younglings, not Enceladus,
With all his threatening band of Typhon's brood,
Nor great Alcides, nor the god of war,
Shall seize this prey out of his father's hands.
What, what, ye sanguine, shallow-hearted boys!
Ye white-lim'd walls! ye alchouse painted signs!
Coal-black is better than another hue,
In that it scorns to bear another hue;
For all the water in the ocean
Can never turn the swan's black legs to white,
Although she lave them hourly in the flood.
Tell the empress from me, I am of age
To keep mine own, excuse it how she can.
Dem. Wilt thou betray thy noble mistress thus?
Aar. My mistress is my mistress; this myself;
The vigour, and the picture of my youth:
This before all the world do I prefer;
This maugre all the world will I keep safe,
Or some of you shall smoke for it in Rome.

Dem. By this our mother is for ever sham'd.
Chi. Rome will despise her for this foul escape.
Nur. The emperor in his rage will doom her death.
Chi. I blush to think upon this ignomy.
Aar. Why, there's the privilege your beauty bears.
Fie, treacherous hue! that will betray with blushing
The close enacts and counsels of the heart:
Here's a young lad fram'd of another lear:
Look how the black slavesmiles upon the father,
As who should say, 'Old lad, I am thine own.'
He is your brother, lords, sensibly fed
Of that self blood that first gave life to you;
And from that womb where you imprision'd were
He is enfranchised and come to light:
Nay, he is your brother by the surer side,
Although my seal be stamped in his face.
Nur. Aaron, what shall I say unto the empress?

Dem. Advise thee, Aaron, what is to be done,
And we will all subscribe to thy advice:
Save thou the child, so we may all be safe. 132

Aar. Then sit we down, and let us all consult,
My son and I will have the wind of you:
Keep there; now talk at pleasure of your safety.

[They sit.

Dem. How many women saw this child of his?
Aar. Why, so, brave lords! when we join in league,
I am a lamb; but if you brave the Moor,
The chafed boar, the mountain lioness,
The ocean swells not so as Aaron storms. 140

But say, again, how many saw the child?
Nur. Cornelia the midwife, and myself,
And no one else but the deliver'd empress.

Aar. The empress, the midwife, and yourself:
Two may keep counsel when the third's away.
Go to the empress; tell her this I said:

"Weke, weke!"

So cries a pig prepared to the spit. 148

Dem. What mean'st thou, Aaron? Wherefore didst thou this?

Aar. O lord, sir, 'tis a deed of policy:
Shall she live to betray this guilt of ours,
A long-tongued babbling gossip? no, lords, no.

And now be it known to you my full intent. 153
Not far, one Muli lives, my countryman;
His wife but yesternight was brought to bed.
His child is like to her, fair as you are:

Go pack with him, and give the mother gold,
And tell them both the circumstance of all,
And how by this their child shall be advanc'd,
And be received for the emperor's heir,

And substituted in the place of mine,
To calm this tempest whirling in the court;
And let the emperor dandle him for his own.
Hark ye, lords; you see, I have given her physic,

[Pointing to the Nurse.

And you must needs bestow her funeral; 165

The fields are near, and you are gallant grooms.
This done, see that you take no longer days,
But send the midwife present to me. 168

The midwife and the nurse well made away,
Then let the ladies faille what they please.

Chi. Aaron, I see thou wilt not trust the air
With secrets.

Dem. For this care of Tamora, 172

Herself and hers are highly bound to thee.

[Exeunt DEMETRIUS and CHIRON,

bearing off the Nurse's body.

Aar. Now to the Goths, as swift as swallow's first.

There to dispose this treasure in mine arms,
And secretly to greet the empresse' friends. 176

Come on, you thick-lipp'd slave, I'll bear you hence;
For it is you that puts us to our shifts:
I'll make you feed on berries and on roots,
And feed on curds and whey, and suck the goat,
And cabin in a cave, and bring you up 181
To be a warrior, and command a camp.

[Exit with the Child.

SCENE III.—The Same. A Public Place.

Enter TITUS, bearing arrows, with letters on
the ends of them; with him MARCUS, young LUCIUS, PUBLIUS, SEMPRONIUS, CAIUS, and
other Gentlemen, with bows.

Tit. Come, Marcus, come; kinsmen, this is the way.

Sir boy, now let me see your archery:
Look ye draw home enough, and 'tis there straight.

Terrar Astrea reliquit: 4
Be you remember'd, Marcus, she's gone, she's fled.

Sirs, take you to your tools. You, cousins, shall
Go sound the ocean, and cast your nets;
Happily you may find her in the sea;
Yet there's as little justice as at land.

No; Publius and Sempronius, you must do it;
'Tis you must dig with mattock and with spade,
And pierce the inmost centre of the earth: 12
Then, when you come to Pluto's region,
I pray you, deliver him this petition;
Tell him, it is for justice and for aid,
And that it comes from old Andronicus,

Shaken with sorrows in ungrateful Rome.

Ah! Rome. Well, well; I made thee miserable
What time I threw the people's suffrages
On him that thus doth tyrannize o'er me. 20

Go, get you gone; and pray be careful all,
And leave you not a man-of-war unsearch'd:
This wicked emperor may have shipp'd her hence;

And, kinsmen, then we may go pipe for justice.

Mar. O Publius! is not this a heavy case, 25
To see thy noble uncle thus distract?

Pub. Therefore, my lord, it highly us concerns
By day and night to attend him carefully, 28
And feed his humour kindly as we may,
Till time beget some careful remedy.

Mar. Kinsmen, his sorrows are past remedy.
Join with the Goths, and with revengeful war 32
Take wreak on Rome, for this ingratitude,
And vengeance on the traitor Saturnine.

Tit. Publius, how now! how now, my masters! 36
What! have you met with her?
Sirrah, what tidings? have you any letters? Shall I have justice? what says Jupiter?
Clo. O! the gibbet-maker? He says that he hath taken them down again, for the man must not be hanged till the next week.
Tt. But what says Jupiter, I ask thee?
Clo. Alas! sir, I know not Jupiter; I never drank with him in all my life.
Tt. Why, villain, art not thou the carrier?
Clo. Ay, of my pigeons, sir; nothing else.
Tt. Why, didst thou not come from heaven?
Clo. From heaven! alas! sir, I never came there. God forbid I should be so bold to press to heaven in my young days. Why, I am going with my pigeons to the tribunals plebs, to take up a matter of brawl betwixt my uncle and one of the emperor's men.
Mar. Why, sir, that is as fit as can be to serve for your oration; and let him deliver the pigeons to the emperor from you.
Tt. Tell me, can you deliver an oration to the emperor with a grace?
Clo. Nay, truly, sir, I could never say grace in all my life.
Tt. Sirrah, come hither: make no more ado, But give your pigeons to the emperor: By me thou shalt have justice at his hands: Hold, hold; meanwhile, here’s money for thy charges.
Give me pen and ink.
Sirrah, can you with a grace deliver a supplication?
Clo. Ay, sir.
Tt. Then here is a supplication for you. And when you come to him, at the first approach you must kneel; then kiss his foot; then deliver up your pigeons; and then look for your reward. I’ll be at hand, sir; see you do it bravely.
Clo. I warrant you, sir; let me alone.
Tt. Sirrah, hast thou a knife? Come, let me see it.
Here, Marcus, fold it in the oration; For thou hast made it like a humble suppliant: And when thou hast given it to the emperor, Knock at my door, and tell me what he says.
Clo. God be with you, sir; I will.
Tt. Come, Marcus, let us go. Publius, follow me.
[Exeunt.

SCENE IV.—The Same. Before the Palace.

Enter SATURNINUS, TAMORA, DEMETRIUS, CHIRON, Lords, and Others: SATURNINUS with the arrows in his hand that TITUS shot.
Sat. Why, lords, what wrongs are these!
Was ever seen An emperor of Rome thus overborne,
Troubled, confronted thus; and, for the extent
Of equal justice, us’d in such contempt?
My lords, you know, as do the mighty gods,—
However these disturbers of our peace
Buzz in the people’s ears,—there nought hath pass’d,
But even with law, against the wilful sons
Of old Andronicus. And what an if
His sorrows have so overwhelm’d his wits,
Shall we be thus afflicted in his wrecks,
His fits, his frenzy, and his bitterness?
And now he writes to heaven for his redress:
See, here’s to Jove, and this to Mercury;
This to Apollo; this to the god of war;
Sweet scrolls to fly about the streets of Rome!
What’s this but libelling against the senate,
And blazoning our injustice everywhere?
A goodly humour, is it not, my lords?
As who would say, in Rome no justice were.
But if I live, his feigned ecstasies
Shall be no shelter to these outrages;
But he and his shall know that justice lives
In Saturninus’ health; whom, if she sleep,
He’ll so awake, as she in fury shall
Cut off the proudest conspirator that lives.
Tam. My gracious lord, my lovely Saturnine,
Lord of my life, commander of my thoughts,
Calm thee, and bear the faults of Titus’ age,
The effects of sorrow for his valiant sons,
Whose loss hath pierc’d him deep and scar’d his heart;
And rather comfort his distressed plight
Than prosecute the meanest or the best
For these contempts.—[Aside.] Why, thus it shall become
High-witted Tamora to gloze with all:
But, Titus, I have touch’d thee to the quick,
Thy life-blood out: if Aaron now be wise,
Then is all safe, the anchor’s in the port.

Enter Clown.

How now, good fellow! wouldst thou speak with us?
Clo. Yea, forsooth, an your mistership be emperial.
Tam. Empress I am, but yonder sits the emperor.
Clo. ‘Tis he, God and Saint Stephen give you good den.
I have brought you a letter and a couple of pigeons here.

[SATURNINUS READS THE LETTER.

Sat. Go, take him away, and hang him presently.

Clo. How much money must I have?
Tam. Come, sirrah, you must be hanged.

Clo. Hanged! By ’r lady, then I have brought up a neck to a fair end. [Exit, guard’d.

Sat. Despightful and intolerable wrongs! Shall I endure this monstrous villany?
I know from whence this same device proceeds:
May this be borne? As if his traitorous sons,
That died by law for murder of our brother,
Have by my means been butcher’d wrongfully!
Go, drag the villain hither by the hair;
Nor age nor honour shall shape privilege.
For this proud mock I’ll be thy slavermman;
Sly frantic wretch, that holp’st to make me great,
In hope thyself should govern Rome and me.

Enter EMILIUS.

What news with thee, Emilius?
Emil. Arm, arm, my lord! Rome never had more cause.
The Goths have gather’d head, and with a power
Of high-resolved men, bent to the spoil,
They hither march amain, under conduct
Of Lucius, son to old Andronicus;
Who threats, in course of this revenge, to do
As much as ever Coriolanus did.

Sat. Is war-like Lucius general of the Goths?
These tidings nip me, and I hang the head
As flowers with frost or grass beat down with storms.
Ay, now begin our sorrows to approach:
’Tis he the common people love so much;
Myself hath often heard them say,
When I have walked like a private man,
That Lucius’ banishment was wrongfully,
And they have wish’d that Lucius were their emperor.

Tam. Why should you fear? is not your city strong?

Sat. Ay, but the citizens favour Lucius,
And will revolt from me to succour him.

Tam. King, be thy thoughts imperious, like thy name.

Is the sun dimm’d, that gnats do fly in it?
The eagle suffers little birds to sing,
And is not careful what they mean thereby,
Knowing that with the shadow of his wings
He can at pleasure stint their melody;
Even so mayst thou the giddy men of Rome,
Then cheer thy spirit; for know, thou emperor,
I will enchant the old Andronicus
With words more sweet, and yet more dangerous,
Than baits to fish, or honey-stalks to sheep,
Whenas the one is wounded with the bait,
The other rotted with delicious feed.

Sat. But he will not entertain his son for us.

Tam. If Tamora entreat him, then he will:
For I can smooth and fill his aged ear.
With golden promises, that were his heart
Almost impregnable, his ear old deaf,
Yet should both ear and heart obey my tongue.
[To EMILTIUS.] Go thou before; be our amba-
sador:
Say that the emperor requests a parley
Of war-like Lucius, and appoint the meeting,
Even at his father's house, the old Andronicus.
Sat. EMILTIUS, do this message honourably:
And if he stand on hostage for his safety,
Bid him demand what pledge will please him best.
EMIL. Your bidding shall I do effectually.
[Exit.]

Tam. Now will I to that old Andronicus,
And temper him with all the art I have,
To pluck proud Lucius from the war-like Goths.
And now, sweet emperor, be blithe again,
And bury all thy fear in my devices.
Sat. Then go successively, and plead to him.
[Exeunt.]

ACT V.

SCENE I.—Plains near Rome.

Flourish. Enter LUCIUS, and an army of Goths, with drums and colours.

Luc. Approved warriors, and my faithful friends,
I have received letters from great Rome,
Which signify what hate they bear their emperor,
And how desirous of our sight they are.
Therefore, great lords, be, as your titles witness,
Imperious and impatient of your wrongs;
And wherein Rome hath done you any scathe,
Let him make treble satisfaction.

First Goth. Brave slip, sprung from the great
Andronicus,
Whose name was once our terror, now our comfort;
Whose high exploits and honourable deeds
Ingrateful Rome requites with foul contempt,
Be bold in us: we'll follow where thou lead'st,
Like stinging bees in hottest summer's day
Led by their master to the flower'd fields,
And be aveng'd on cursed Tamora.

Goths. And, as he saith, so say we all with him.

Luc. I humbly thank him, and I thank you all.
But who comes here, led by a lusty Goth?

Enter a Goth, leading AARON, with his Child
in his arms.

Sec. Goth. Renowned Lucius, from our troops
I stray'd,

To gaze upon a ruinous monastery;
And as I earnestly did fix mine eye
Upon the wasted building, suddenly
I heard a child cry underneath a wall.
I made unto the noise; when soon I heard
The crying babe controll'd with this discourse:
'Peace, tawny slave, half me and half thy dam!
Did not thy hue bewray whose brat thou art,
Had nature lent thee but thy mother's look,
Villain, thou mightst have been an emperor:
But where the bull and cow are both milk-
white,
They never do beget a coal-black calf.
Peace, villain, peace!'—even thus he rates the
babe,—
'For I must bear thee to a trusty Goth;
Who, when he knows thou art the empress' babe,
Will hold thee dearly for thy mother's sake.'
With this, my weapon drawn, I rush'd upon
him,
Surpris'd him suddenly, and brought him
hither,
To use as you think needful of the man.

Luc. O worthy Goth, this is the incarnate
'devil
That robb'd Andronicus of his good hand:
This is the pearl that pleas'd your empress' eye,
And here's the base fruit of his burning lust.
Say, wall-eyed slave, whither wouldst thou
convey
This growing image of thy fiend-like face?
Why doest not speak? What! deaf? not a
word?
A halter, soldiers! hang him on this tree,
And by his side his fruit of bastardy.

Aar. Touch not the boy; he is of royal
blood.

Luc. Too like the sire for ever being good.
First hang the child, that he may see it sprawl;
A sight to vex the father's soul withal.

Get me a ladder.

Aar. which AARON is made to ascend.

Lucius, save the child;
And bear it from me to the empress.
If thou do this, I'll show thee wondrous things,
That highly may advantage thee to hear:
If thou wilt not, befall what may befall,
I'll speak no more but 'Vengeance rot you all!'

Luc. Say on; and if it please me which thou
speak'st,
Thy child shall live, and I will see it nourish'd.

Aar. An if it please thee! why, assure thee,
Lucius,
'Twill vex thy soul to hear what I shall speak;
For I must talk of murders, rapes, and mas-
sacres,
Acts of black night, abominable deeds,
Complots of mischief, treason, villainies
Ruthful to hear, yet piteously perform'd:
And this shall all be buried by my death,
Unless thou swear to my child shall live. 58
Luc. Tell on thy mind: I say, thy child shall live.
Aar. Swear that he shall, and then I will begin.
Luc. Who should I swear by? thou believest no god:
That granted, how canst thou believe an oath?
Aar. What if I do not? as, indeed, I do not;
Yet, for I know thou art religious,
And hast a thing within thee called conscience,
With twenty popish tricks and ceremonies, 76
Which I have seen thee careful to observe,
Therefore I urge thy oath; for that I know
An idiot holds his bauble for a god,
And keeps the oath which by that god he swears,
To that I'll urge him: therefore thou shalt vow
By that same god, what god soever it be,
That thou adorest and hast in reverence,
To save my boy, to nourish and bring him up:
Or else I will discovery nought to thee. 85
Luc. Even by my God I swear to thee I will.
Aar. First, know thou, I begot him on the empress.
Luc. O most insatiate and luxurious woman!
Aar. Tut! Lucius, this was but a deed of charity.
To that which thou shalt hear of me anon.
'Twas her two sons that murder'd Bassianus;
They cut thy sister's tongue and ravish'd her, 92
And cut her hands and trimm'd her as thou saw'st.
Luc. O detestable villain! call'st thou that trimming?
Aar. Why, she was wash'd, and cut, and trimm'd, and 'twas
Trim sport for them that had the doing of it. 96
Luc. O barbarous, beastly villains, like thyself!
Aar. Indeed, I was their tutor to instruct
them.
That piddling spirit had they from their mother,
As sure a card as ever won the set; 100
That bloody mind, I think, they learn'd of me.
As true a dog as ever fought at head.
Well, let my deeds be witness of my worth.
I train'd thy brethren to that gulfs hole 104
Where the dead corpse of Bassianus lay;
I wrote the letter that thy father found,
And hid the gold within the letter mentio'n'd,
Confederate with the queen and her two sons;
And what not done, that thou hast cause to me.
Wherein I had no stroke of mischief in it.

I play'd the cheater for thy father's hand,
And, when I had it, drew myself apart, 112
And almost broke my heart with extreme laughter.
I pry'd me through the crevice of a wall
When, for his hand, he had his two sons' heads;
Beheld his tears, and laugh'd so heartily, 116
That both mine eyes were rainy like his:
And when I told the empress of this sport,
She swound almost at my pleasing tale,
And for my tidings gave me twenty kisses. 120

First Goth. What! canst thou say all this,
And never blush?
Aar. Ay, like a black dog, as the saying is.
Luc. Art thou not sorry for these heinous deeds?
Aar. Ay, that I had not done a thousand more. 124

Even now I curse the day, and yet, I think,
Few come within the compass of my curse,
Wherein I did not some notorious ill:
As kill a man, or else devise his death; 128
Ravish a maid, or plot the way to do it;
Accuse some innocent, and forswear myself;
Set deadly enmity between two friends;
Make poor men's cattle break their necks; 132
Set fire on barns and hay-stacks in the night,
And bid the owners quench them with their tears,
Oft have I digg'd up dead men from their graves,
And set them upright at their dear friends' doors, 136
Even when their sorrows almost were forgot;
And on their skins, as on the bark of trees,
Have with my knife carved in Roman letters,
'Let not your sorrow die, though I am dead.' 140
Tut! I have done a thousand dreadful things
As willingly as one would kill a fly,
And nothing grieves me heartily indeed
But that I cannot do ten thousand more. 144
Luc. Bring down the devil, for he must not die
So sweet a death as hanging presently.
Aar. If there be devils, would I were a devil,
To live and burn in everlasting fire, 148
So I might have your company in hell,
But to torment you with my bitter tongue!
Luc. Sirs, stop his mouth, and let him speak no more.

Enter a Goth.

Goth. My Lord, there is a messenger from Rome.

Desires to be admitted to your presence.
Luc. Let him come near.
Enter Amilius.
Welcome, Amilius! what's the news from Rome?
Amil. Lord Lucius, and you princes of the Goths,
The Roman emperor greets you all by me;
And, for he understands you are in arms,
He craves a parley at your father's house,
Willing you to demand your hostages,
And they shall be immediately deliver'd.
First Goth. What says our general?
Luc. Amilius, let the emperor give his pledges
Unto my father and my uncle Marcus,
And we will come. March away. [Exeunt.


Enter Tamora, Demetrius, and Chiron, disguised.

Tam. Thus, in this strange and sad habitation,
I will encounter with Andronicus,
And say I am Revenge, sent from below
To join with him and right his heinous wrongs.
Knock at his study; where, they say, he keeps,
To ruminate strange plots of dire revenge;
Tell him, Revenge is come to join with him,
And work confusion on his enemies.

[They knock.

Enter Titus, above.

Tit. Who doth molest my contemplation?
Is it thy trick to make me ope the door,
That so my sad decrees may fly away,
And all my study be to no effect?
You are deceiv'd; for what I mean to do,
See here, in bloody lines I have set down;
And what is written shall be executed.

Tam. Titus, I am come to talk with thee.

Tit. No, not a word; how can I grace my talk,
Wanting a hand to give it action?
Thou hast the odds of me; therefore no more.

Tam. If thou didst know me, thou wouldst talk with me.

Tit. I am not mad; I know thee well enough:
Witness this wretched stump, witness these crimson lines;
Witness these trenches made by grief and care;
Witness the tiring day and heavy night;
Witness all sorrow, that I know thee well.
For our proud empress, mighty Tamora—
Is not thy coming for my other hand?

Tam. Know, thou sad man, I am not Tamora.
Enter Marcus.

Go, gentle Marcus, to thy nephew Lucius; Thou shalt inquire him out among the Goths: Bid him repair to me, and bring with him 124 Some of the chiefest princes of the Goths; Bid him encamp his soldiers where they are: Tell him, the emperor and the empress too Feast at my house, and he shall feast with them. This do thou for my love; and so let him, 129 As he regards his aged father's life.

Mar. This will I do, and soon return again. 131

[Exit.

Tam. Now will I hence about thy business, 132
And take my ministers along with me.

Tit. Nay, nay, let Rape and Murder stay with me;
Or else I'll call my brother back again,
And cleeve to no revenge but Lucius. 136

Tam. [Aside to her sons.] What say you, boys? will you abide with him,
Whiles I go tell my lord the emperor
How I have governd their determin'd jest?
Yield to his humour, smooth and speak him fair,
And tarry with him till I turn again. 140

Tit. [Aside.] I know them all, though they
suppose me mad;
And will o'er-reach them in their own devices;
A pair of cursed houndhounds and their dam. 144


Tam. Farewell, Andronicus: Revenge now goes
To lay a compot to betray thy foes.

[Exit TAMORA.

Tit. I know thou dost; and, sweet Revenge, farewell. 148

Chf. Tell us, old man, how shall we be employ'd?

Tit. Tut! I have work enough for you to do.
Publius, come hither, Caius, and Valentine!

Enter Publius and Others.

Pub. What is your will?

Tit. Know you these two?

Pub. The empress' sons,
I take them, Chiron and Demetrius.

Tit. Fie, Publius, fie! thou art too much deceiv'd;
The one is Murder, Rape is the other's name;
And therefore bind them, gentle Publius;
Caius and Valentine, lay hands on them;
Oft have you heard me wish for such an hour,
And now I find it: therefore bind them sure, 161
And stop their mouths, if they begin to cry.

[Exit. PUBLIUS, &c., seize CHIRON and DEMETRIUS.
Chi. Villains, forbear! we are the empress’ sons.

Pub. And therefore do we what we are commanded.

Stop close their mouths, let them not speak a word.

Is he sure bound? look that you bind them fast.

Re-enter TITUS, with LAVINIA; she bearing a basin, and he a knife.

TIT. Come, come, Lavinia; look, thy foes are bound.

Sirs, stop their mouths, let them not speak to me,

But let them hear what fearful words I utter.

O villains, Chiron and Demetrius!

Here stands the spring whom you have stain’d with mud.

This goodly summer with your winter mix’d.

You kill’d her husband, and for that vile fault

Two of her brothers were condemn’d to death,

My hand cut off and made a merry jest:

Both her sweet hands, her tongue, and that more dear

Than hands or tongue, her spotless chastity,

Inhuman traitors, you constrain’d and forc’d.

What would you say if I should let you speak?

Villains! for shame you could not beg for grace.

Hark, wretches! how I mean to martyr you.

This one hand yet is left to cut your throats,

Whilst that Lavinia ‘tween her stumps doth hold

The basin that receives your guilty blood.

You know your mother means to feast with me,

And calls herself Revenge, and thinks me mad.

Hark! villains, I will grind your bones to dust,

And with your blood and it I’ll make a paste;

And of the paste a coffin I will rear,

And make two pasties of your shameful heads;

And bid that strumpet, your unhallow’d dam,

Like to the earth swallow her own increase.

This is the feast that I have bid her to,

And this the banquet she shall surfeit on;

For worse than Philomel you us’d my daughter,

And worse than Procris I will be reveng’d.

And now prepare your throats. Lavinia, come.

[He cuts their throats.

Receive the blood: and when that they are dead,

Let me go grind their bones to powder small,

And with this hateful liquor temper it;

And in that paste let their vile heads be bak’d.

Come, come, be every one officious

To make this banquet, which I wish may prove

More stern and bloody than the Centaurs’ feast.

So, now bring them in, for I will play the cook,

And see them ready, ’gainst their mother comes.

[Execunt, bearing the dead bodies.

SCENE III.—The Same. Court of Titus’ House. A banquet set out.

Enter LUCIUS, MARCUS and GOths, with AARON prisoner.

Luc. Uncle Marcus, since it is my father’s mind

That I repair to Rome, I am content.

First Goth. And ours with thine, befall what fortune will.

Luc. Good uncle, take you in this barbarous Moor,

This ravenous tiger, this accursed devil;

Let him receive no sustenance, fetter him,

Till he be brought unto the empress’ face,

For testimony of her foul proceedings:

And see the ambush of our friends be strong;

I fear the emperor means no good to us.

AAR. Some devil whisper curses in mine ear,

And prompt me, that my tongue may utter forth

The venomous malice of my swelling heart!

Luc. Away, inhuman dog! unhallow’d slave!

Sirs, help our uncle to convey him in.

[Execunt Goths, with AARON. Trumpets sound.

The trumpets show the emperor is at hand.

Enter SATURNINUS and TAMORA, with EMILIUS, Senators, Tribunes, and Others.

Sat. What! hath the firmament more suns

Than one?

Luc. What boots it thee, to call thyself a sun?

Mar. Rome’s emperor, and nephew, break the parle;

These quarrels must be quietly debated.

The feast is ready which the careful Titus

Hath ordain’d to an honourable end,

For peace, for love, for league, and good to Rome:

Please you, therefore, draw nigh, and take your places.

Sat. Marcus, we will.

[Hautboys sound.

Enter TITUS, dressed like a cook, LAVINIA, veiled, young LUCIUS, and Others. TITUS places the dishes on the table.

TIT. Welcome, my gracious lord; welcome, dread queen;

Welcome, ye war-like Goths; welcome, Lucius;

And welcome, all. Although the cheer be poor,

’Twill fill your stomachs; please you eat of it.

Sat. Why art thou thus attir’d, Andronicus?

TIT. Because I would be sure to have all well

To entertain your highness, and your empress.

Tam. We are beholding to you, good Andronicus.

879
TITUS ANDRONICUS

ACT V, SC. III.

Titi. An if your highness knew my heart, you were.
My lord the emperor, resolve me this:
Was it well done of rash Virginiius to slay his daughter with his own right hand,
Because she was enforced, stain'd, and deflower'd?
Sat. It was, Andronicus.
Titi. Your reason, mighty lord?
Sat. Because the girl should not survive her shame,
And by her presence still renew his sorrows.
Titi. A reason mighty, strong, and effectual;
A pattern, precedent, and lively warrant,
For me most wretched, to perform the like.
Die, die, Lavinia, and thy shame with thee;
And with thy shame thy father's sorrow die!

[Kills LAVINIA.

Sat. What hast thou done, unnatural and unkind?
Titi. Kill'd her, for whom my tears have made me blind.
I am as woeful as Virginiius was,
And have a thousand times more cause than he
To do this outrage: and it is now done.

Sat. What! was she ravish'd? tell who did the deed.
Titi. 'Tis true, 'tis true; witness my knife's sharp point.

[Kills TAMORA.

Sat. Die, frantic wretch, for this accursed deed!

[Kills TRITUS.

Luc. Can the son's eye behold his father bleed?

[Tills SATURNINUS. A great tumult. The people in confusion disperse. MARCUS, LUCIUS, and their partisans, go up into the balcony.

Marc. You sad-fad'd men, people and sons of Rome,
By nature sever'd, like a flight of toviow
Scatter'd by winds and high tempestuous gusts,
Of let me teach you how to knit again
This scatter'd corn into one mutual sheaf,
These broken limbs again into one body;

Lest Rome herself be bane unto herself,
And she whom mighty kingdoms curtsy to,
Like a forlorn and desperate castaway,
Do shameful execution on herself.
But if my frosty signs and shape of age,
Grave witnesses of true experience,
Cannot induce you to attend my words,
[To LUCIUS.] Speak, Rome's dear friend, as erst our ancestor,
When with his solemn tongue he did discourse
To love-sick Dido's sad attending ear
The story of that baleful burning night
When subtle Greeks surpris'd King Priam's Troy;
Tell us what Sinon hath bewitch'd our ears,
Or who hath brought the fatal engine in
That gives our Troy, our Rome, the civil wound.
My heart is not compact of flint nor steel,
Nor can I utter all our bitter grief,
But floods of tears will drown my oratory,
And break my very utterance, even in the time
When it should move you to attend me most,
Lending your kind commiseration.
Here is a captain, let him tell the tale;
Your hearts will throb and weep to hear him speak.

Luc. Then, noble auditory, be it known to you,
That cursed Chiron and Demetrius
Were they that murdered our emperor's brother;
And they it was that ravished our sister.
For their fell faults our brothers were beheaded,
Our father's tears despis'd, and basely cozen'd
Of that true hand that found Rome's squarrel out,
And sent her enemies unto the grave:
Lastly, myself unkindly banish'd,
The gates shut on me, and turn'd weeping out,
To beg relief among Rome's enemies;
Who drown'd their enmity in my true tears,
And op'd their arms to embrace me as a friend:
And I am the turn'd forth, be it known to you,
That have preserv'd her welfare in my blood,
And from her bosom took the enemy's point,
Shattering the steel in my adventurous body.
Alas! you know I am no vaunter, I;
My scars can witness, dumb although they are,
That my report is just and full of truth.
But, soft! methinks I do digress too much,
Citing my worthless praise: O! pardon me;
For when no friends are by, men praise themselves.

Marc. Now is my turn to speak: Behold this child!

Of this was Tamora delivered.

The issue of an irreligious Moor,
Chief architect and plotter of these woes. The villain is alive in Titus' house, Damn'd as he is, to witness this is true. Now judge what cause had Titus to revenge These wrongs, unspeakable, past patience, Or more than any living man could bear. Now you have heard the truth, what say you Romans? Have we done aught amiss, show us wherein, And, from the place where you behold us now, The poor remainder of Andronicus Will, hand in hand, all headlong cast us down, And on the ragged stones beat forth our brains, And make a mutual closure of our house. Speak, Romans, speak! and if you say we shall, lol hand in hand, Lucius and I will fall. Emill. Come, come, thou reverend man of Rome, And bring our emperor gently in thy hand, Lucius, our emperor; for well I know The common voice do cry it shall be so. Romans. Lucius, all hail! Rome's royal emperor! Mar. [To Attendants.] Go, go into old Titus' sorrowful house, And hither, hale that misbelieving Moor, To be adjudge'd some direful slaughtering death, As punishment for his most wicked life. [Execut Attendants. Lucius, Marcus, and the Others descend. Romans. Lucius, all hail! Rome's gracious governor! Luc. Thanks, gentle Romans: may I govern so, To heal Rome's harms, and wipe away her woe! But, gentle people, give me aim awhile, For nature puts me to a heavy task. Stand all aloof; but, uncle, draw you near, To shed obsequious tears upon this trunk. O! take this warm kiss on thy pale cold lips, [Kisses Titus. These sorrowful drops upon thy blood-stain'd face, The last true duties of thy noble son! Mar. Tear for tear, and loving kiss for kiss, Thy brother Marcus tenders on thy lips: 157 O! were the sum of these I should pay Countless and infinite, yet would I pay them. Luc. Come hither, boy; come, some, and learn of us To melt in showers: thy grandsire lov'd thee well: Many a time he danc'd thee on his knee, Sung thee asleep, his loving breast thy pillow; Many a matter hath he told to thee, Meet and agreeing with thine infancy; In that respect, then, like a loving child, Shed yet some small drops from thy tender spring, Because kind nature doth require it so: 164 Friends should associate friends in grief and woe. Bid him farewell; commit him to the grave; Do him that kindness, and take leave of him. Boy. O grandsire, grandsire! even with all my heart Would I were dead, so you did live again. O Lord! I cannot speak to him for weeping; My tears will choke me if I ope my mouth.

Re-enter Attendants, with Aaron.

First Rom. You sad Andronicus, have done with woes:
Give sentence on this execrable wretch,
That hath been breeder of these dire events.
Luc. Set him breast-deep in earth, and famish him;
There let him stand, and rave, and cry for food:
If any one relieves or pities him,
For the offence he dies. This is our doom:
Some stay to see him fasten'd in the earth.
Acr. O! why should wrath be mute, and fury dumb?
I am no baby, I, that with base prayers
I should repent the evils I have done.
Ten thousand worse than ever yet I did
Would I perform, if I might have my will: 188
If one good deed in all my life I did,
I do repent it from my very soul.
Luc. Some loving friends convey the emperor hence,
And give him burial in his father's grave.
My father and Lavinia shall forthwith
Be closed in our household's monument.
As for that heinous tiger, Tamora,
Of funeral rite, nor man in mournful weeds,
Of mourning bell shall ring her burial;
But throw her forth to beasts and birds of prey.
Her life was beast-like, and devoid of pity;
And, being so, shall have like want of pity. 200
See justice done on Aaron, that damn'd Moor,
By whom our heavy haps had their beginning:
Then, afterwards, to order well the state,
That like events may never it ruinate. [Exeunt.
ROMEO AND JULIET

DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

ESCALUS, Prince of Verona.
PARIS, a young Nobleman, Kinsman to the Prince.
MONTAGUE, Heads of two Houses at variance with each other.
Uncle to Capulet.
ROMEO, son to Montague.
MERCUTIO, Kinsman to the Prince, Friends to Romeo.
BENVOLIO, Nephew to Montague, to Romeo.
TYBALT, Nephew to Lady Capulet.
FRIAR LAURENCE, a Franciscan.
FRIAR JOHN, of the same Order.
BALTHASAR, Servant to Romeo.
SAMPSON, Servant to Capulet.
GREGORY, Servant to Capulet.

PETRUS, Servant to Juliet’s Nurse.
ABRAHAM, Servant to Montague.
An Apothecary.
Three Musicians.
Page to Mercutio; Page to Paris; another Page; an Officer.

LADY MONTAGUE, Wife to Montague.
LADY CAPULET, Wife to Capulet.
JULIET, Daughter to Capulet.
Nurse to Juliet.
Citizens of Verona; male and female Kinsfolk to both Houses; Masquers, Guards, Watchmen and Attendants.

Chorus.

SCENE.—Verona: Once (in the Fifth Act), at Mantua.

PROLOGUE.

Enter Chorus.

Chor. Two households, both alike in dignity,
In fair Verona, where we lay our scene,
From ancient grudge break to new mutiny,
Where civil blood makes civil hands unclean.
From forth the fatal loins of these two foes
A pair of star-cross’d lovers take their life;
Whose misadventur’d piteous overthrows
Do with their death bury their parents’ strife.
The fearful passage of their death-mark’d love,
And the continuance of their parents’ rage,
Which, but their children’s end, nought could remove,
Is now the two hours’ traffic of our stage;
The which if you with patient ears attend,
What here shall miss, our toil shall strive to mend.

[Exit.

ACT I.

SCENE I.—Verona. A Public Place.

Enter Sampson and Gregory, armed with swords and bucklers.

Sam. Gregory, o’ my word, we’ll not carry coals.

Gre. No. for then we should be colliers.

Sam. I mean, an we be in choler, we’ll draw.

Gre. Ay, while you live, draw your neck out o’ the collar.

Sam. I strike quickly, being moved.

Gre. But thou art not quickly moved to strike.

Sam. A dog of the house of Montague moves me.

Gre. To move is to stir, and to be valiant is to stand; therefore, if thou art moved, thou runnest away.

Sam. A dog of that house shall move me to stand: I will take the wall of any man or maid of Montague’s.

Gre. That shows thee a weak slave; for the weakest goes to the wall.

Sam. ’Tis true; and therefore women, being the weaker vessels, are ever thrust to the wall: therefore I will push Montague’s men from the wall, and thrust his maids to the wall.

Gre. The quarrel is between our masters and us their men.

Sam. ’Tis all one, I will show myself a tyrant: when I have fought with the men, I will be cruel with the maids; I will cut off their heads.

Gre. The heads of the maids?

Sam. Ay, the heads of the maids, or their maidenheads; take it in what sense thou wilt.

Gre. They must take it in sense that feel it.
Sam. Me they shall feel while I am able to stand; and 'tis known I am a pretty piece of flesh.

Gre. 'Tis well thou art not fish; if thou hadst, thou hadst been poor John. Draw thy tool; here comes two of the house of the Montagues.

Enter ABRAHAM and BALTHASAR.

Sam. My naked weapon is out; quarrel, I will back thee.

Gre. How! turn thy back and run?

Sam. Fear me not.

Gre. No, marry, I fear thee!

Sam. Let us take the law of our sides; let them begin.

Gre. I will frown as I pass by, and let them take it as they list.

Sam. Nay, as they dare. I will bite my thumb at them; which is a disgrace to them, if they bear it.

Abr. Do you bite your thumb at us, sir?

Sam. Do I bite my thumb, sir.

Abr. Do you bite your thumb at us, sir?

Sam. [Aside to GREGORY.] Is the law of our side if I say ay?

Gre. [Aside to SAMPSON.] No.

Sam. No, sir, I do not bite my thumb at you, sir; but I bite my thumb, sir.

Gre. Do you quarrel, sir?

Abr. Quarrel, sir! no, sir.

Sam. If you do, sir, I am for you: I serve as good a man as you.

Abr. No better.

Sam. Well, sir.

Gre. [Aside to SAMPSON.] Say, 'better; ' here comes one of my master's kinsmen.

Sam. Yes, better, sir.

Abr. You lie.

Sam. Draw, if you be men. Gregory, remember thy swashing blow. [They fight.

Enter BENVOLIO.

Ben. Part, fools!
Put up your swords; you know not what you do. [Beads down their swords.

Enter TYBALT.

Tyb. What! art thou drawn among these heartless hinds?

Ben. I do but keep the peace: put up thy sword,
Or manage it to part these men with me.

Tyb. What! drawn, and talk of peace? I hate the word.

As I hate hell, all Montagues, and thee.

Have at thee, coward! [They fight.

Enter several persons of both houses, who join the fray; then enter Citizens, with clubs and partisans.

Citizens. Clubs, bills, and partisans! strike! beat them down!

Down with the Capulets! down with the Montagues!

Enter CAPULET in his gown, and LADY CAPULET.

Cap. What noise is this? Give me my long sword, ho!

Lady Cap. A crutch, a crutch! Why call you for a sword?

Cap. My sword, I say! Old Montague is come, and flourishes his blade in spite of me.

Enter MONTAGUE and LADY MONTAGUE.

Mon. Thou villain Capulet! Hold me not; let me go.

Lady Mon. Thou shalt not stir one foot to seek a foe.

Enter PRINCE with his Train.

Prin. Rebellious subjects, enemies to peace, profaners of this neighbour-stained steel,—
Will they not hear? What ho! you men, you beasts, that quench the fire of your pernicious rage with purple fountains issuing from your veins, on pain of torture, from those bloody hands 92 Throw your mis-temper'd weapons to the ground, and hear the sentence of your moved prince. Three civil brawls, bred of an airy word, by thee, old Capulet, and Montague, have thrice disturb'd the quiet of our streets, and made Verona's ancient citizens cast by their grave beseeming ornaments, to wield old partisans, in hands as old, and Canker'd with peace, to part your canker'd hate. If ever you disturb our streets again your lives shall pay the forfeit of the peace. For this time, all the rest depart away: You, Capulet, shall go along with me; and, Montague, come you this afternoon to know our further pleasure in this case, to old Free-town, our common judgment-place. Once more, on pain of death, all men depart. [Exeunt all but MONTAGUE, LADY MONTAGUE, and BENVOLIO.

Mon. Who set this ancient quarrel new a-broach?

Speak, nephew, were you by when it began?

Ben. Here were the servants of your adversary:

And yours close-fighting ere I did approach: 
I drew to part them; in the instant came
The fiery Tybalt, with his sword prepar'd,
Which, as he breath'd defiance to my ears, 116
He swung about his head, and cut the winds,
Who, nothing hurt withal his'd him in scorn.
While we were interchanging thrusts and blows,
Came more and more, and fought on part and part,
Till the prince came, who parted either part.

Lady Mon. O! where is Romeo? saw you
him to-day?

Right glad I am he was not at this fray.

Ben. Madam, an hour before the worshipp'd
sun
Peer'd forth the golden window of the east,
A troubled mind drive me to walk abroad;
Where, underneath the grove of sycamore
That westward rooteth from the city's side, 128
So early walking did I see your son:
Towards him I made; but he was ware of me,
And stole into the covert of the wood:
I, measuring his affections by my own, 132
That most are busied when they're most alone,
Pursu'd my humour not pursuing his,
And gladly shunn'd who gladly fled from me.

Mon. Many a morning hath he there been
seen,
With tears augmenting the fresh morning's dew,
Adding to clouds more clouds with his deep
sighs:
But all so soon as the all-cheering sun
Should in the furthest east begin to draw 140
The shady curtains from Aurora's bed,
Away from light steals home my heavy son,
And private in his chamber pens himself,
Shuts up his windows, locks fair daylight out,
And makes himself an artificial night. 245
Black and portentous must this humour prove
Unless good-counsel may the cause remove.

Ben. My noble uncle, do you know the cause?
Mon. I neither know it nor can learn of him.

Ben. Have you import'nd him by any
means?

Mon. Both by myself and many other friends;
But he, his own affections' counsellor, 152
Is to himself, I will not say how true,
But to himself so secret and so close,
So far from sounding and discovery,
As is the bud bit with an envious worm,
Ere he can spread his sweet leaves to the air,
Or dedicate his beauty to the sun.
Could we but learn from whence his sorrows
grow,
We would as willingly give cure as know. 160

Ben. See where he comes; so please you, step aside;
I'll know his grievance, or he much denied.
This is not Romeo, he’s some other where. 204
  Ben. Tell me in sadness, who is that you
  love.
  Rom. What! shall I groan and tell thee?
  Ben. Groan! why, no;
  But sadly tell me who.
  Rom. Bid a sick man in sadness make his
  will; 208
  Ah! word ill urg’d to one that is so ill.
  In sadness, cousin, I do love a woman.
  Ben. I aim’d so near when I suppos’d you
  lov’d.
  Rom. A right good mark-man! And she’s
  fair I love. 212
  Ben. A right fair mark, fair coz, is soonest
  hit.
  Rom. Well, in that hit you miss: she’ll not
  be hit
  With Cupid’s arrow; she hath Dian’s wit;
  And, in strong proof of chastity well arm’d, 216
  From love’s weak childish bow she lives un-
  harm’d.
  She will not stay the siege of loving terms,
  Nor hide the encounter of assailing eyes,
  Nor ope her lap to saint-seducing gold: 220
  O! she is rich in beauty; only poor
  That, when she dies, with beauty dies her
  store.
  Ben. Then she hath sworn that she will still
  live chaste?
  Rom. She hath, and in that sparing makes
  huge waste; 224
  For beauty, starv’d with her severity,
  Cuts beauty off from all posterity.
  She is too fair, too wise, wisely too fair;
  To merit bliss by making me despair:
  She hath forsworn to love, and in that row
  Do I live dead that tell it now.
  Ben. Be rul’d by me; forget to think of her.
  Rom. O! teach me how I should forget to
  think. 232
  Ben. By giving liberty unto thine eyes:
  Examine other beauties.
  Rom. ’Tis the way
  To call here exquisite, in question more.
  These happy marks that kiss fair-ladies’ brows
  Being black put us in mind they hide the
  fair; 237
  He, that is stricken blind cannot forget
  The precious treasure of his eyesight lost:
  Show me a mistress that is passing fair,
  What doth her beauty serve but as a note
  Where I may read who pass’d that passing
  fair?
  Farewell: thou canst not teach me to forget.
  Ben. I’ll pay that doctrine, or else die in
  debt.  [Exeunt.]
never find what names the writing person hath here writ. I must to the learned. In good time.

Enter BENVOLIO and ROMEO.

Ben. Tut! man, one fire burns out another's burning.
One pain is lessen'd by another's anguish; 48
Turn giddy, and be holp by backward turning;
One desperate grief cures with another's languish:
Take thou some new infection to thy eye,
And the rank poison of the old will die. 52

Rom. Your plantain leaf is excellent for that.

Ben. For what, I pray thee?

Rom. For your broken shin.

Ben. Why, Romeo, art thou mad?

Rom. Not mad, but bound more than a madman is;
Shut up in prison, kept without my food,
Whipp'd and tormented, and—Good den, good fellow.

Serv. God gi' good-den. I pray, sir, can you read?

Rom. Ay, mine own fortune in my misery. 60
Serv. Perhaps you have learn'd it without book: but, I pray, can you read any thing you see?

Rom. Ay, if I know the letters and the language. 64
Serv. Ye say honestly; rest you merry!

[Offering to go.

Rom. Stay, fellow; I can read.
Signior Martino and his wife and daughters; County Anselme and his beauteous sisters; the lady widow of Vitruvio; Signior Placento, and his lovely nieces; Mercutio and his brother Valentine; mine uncle Capulet, his wife and daughters; my fair niece Rosaline; Livlia; Signior Valentio and his cousin Tybalt; Lucio and the lively Helena.

A fair assembly: whither should they come?

Serv. Up.

Rom. Whither?

Serv. To supper; to our house.

Rom. Whose house?

Serv. My master's.

Rom. Indeed, I should have asked you that before.

Serv. Now I'll tell you without asking. My master is the great rich Capulet; and if you be not of the house of Montagues, I pray, come and crush a cup of wine. Rest you merry!

[Exit.

Ben. At this same ancient feast of Capulet's,
Bids this fair Rosaline, whom thou so lov'st, 83
With all the admired beauties of Verona:
Go thither; and, with unattainted eye
Compare her face with some that I shall show,
And I will make thee think thy swan a crow. 92

Rom. When the devout religion of mine eye
Maintains such falsehood, then turn tears to fires!
And these, who often drown'd could never die,
Transparent heretics, be burnt for liars! 96
One fairer than my love! the all-seeing sun
Ne'er saw her match since first the world began.

Ben. Tut! you saw her fair, none else being by,
Herself pois'd with herself in either eye; 100
But in that crystal scales let there be weigh'd
Your lady's love against some other maid
That I will show you shining at this feast,
And she shall scant show well that now shows best. 104

Rom. I'll go along, no such sight to be shown,
But to rejoice in splendour of mine own.

[Exeunt.

SCENE III.—The Same. A Room in CAPULET'S House.

Enter LADY CAPULET and Nurse.

Lady Cap. Nurse, where's my daughter? call her forth to me.

Nurse. Now, by my maidenhead, at twelve year old,—
I bade her come. What, lamb! what, lady-bird!
God forbid! where's this girl? what, Juliet! 4

Enter JULIET.

Jul. How now! who calls?

Nurse. Your mother.

Jul. Madam, I am here.

What is your will?

Lady Cap. This is the matter. Nurse, give leave awhile.

We must talk in secret: nurse, come back again; 8
I have remember'd me, thou'st hear our counsel.
Thou know'st my daughter's of a pretty age.

Nurse. Faith, I can tell her age unto an hour:

Lady Cap. She's not fourteen.

Nurse. I'll lay fourteen of my teeth— 12
And yet to my teen be it spoken I have but four—

She is not fourteen. How long is it now
To Lammas-tide?

Lady Cap. 'A fortnight and odd days.

Nurse. Even or odd, of all days in the year,
I came to talk of. Tell me, daughter Juliet, how stands your disposition to be married?  
Jul. It is an honour that I dream not of.  
Nurse. An honour! were not I thine only nurse, I would say thou hast'd suck'd wisdom from thy teat.  
Lady Cap. Well, think of marriage now; younger than you,  
Here in Verona, ladies of esteem,  
Are made already mothers: by my count,  
I was your mother much upon these years.  
That you are now a maid. Thus then in brief,  
The valiant Paris seeks you for his love.  
Nurse. A man, young lady! lady, such a man  
As all the world—why, he's a man of wax.  
Lady Cap. Verona's summer hath not such a flower.  
Nurse. Nay, he's a flower; in faith, a very flower.  
Lady Cap. What say you? can you love the gentleman?  
This night you shall behold him at our feast;  
Read o'er the volume of young Paris' face  
And find delight writ there with beauty's pen;  
Examine every married lineament,  
And see how one another lends content;  
And what obscure'd in this fair volume lies  
Find written in the margin of his eyes.  
This precious book of love, this unbound lover,  
To beantify him, only lacks a cover:  
The fish lives in the sea, and 'tis much pride  
For fair without the fair within to hide:  
That book in many eyes doth share the glory,  
That in gold clasps locks in the golden story.  
So shall you share all that he doth possess,  
By having him making yourself no less.  
Nurse. No less! nay, bigger; women grow by men.  
Lady Cap. Speak briefly, can you like of Paris' love?  
Jul. I'll look to like, if looking liking move;  
But no more deep will I endari mine eye  
Than your consent gives strength to make it fly.  

Enter a Servant.  
Serv. Madam, the guests are come, supper served up, you called, my young lady asked for,  
the nurse cursed in the pantry, and everything in extremity. I must hence to wait, I beseech you, follow straight.  
Lady Cap. We follow thee. Juliet, the county stays.  
Nurse. Go, girl, seek happy nights to happy days.  

[Exeunt.
If thou art Dun, we'll draw thee from the mire,
Or—save your reverence—love, wherein thou
stick'st
Up to the ears. Come, we burn daylight, ho!
Rom. Nay, that's not so.
Mer. I mean, sir, in delay
We waste our lights in vain, like lamps by day.
Take our good meaning; for our judgment sits
Five times in that ere once in our five wits.
Rom. And we mean well in going to this
masque;
But 'tis no wit to go.
Mer. Why, may one ask?
Rom. I dream'd a dream to-night.
Mer. And so did I.
Rom. Well, what was yours?
Mer. That dreamers often lie.
Rom. In bed asleep, while they do dream
things true.
Mer. Or then, I see, Queen Mab hath been
with you.
Ben. Queen Mab! What's she?
Mer. She is the fairies' midwife, and she
comes
In shape no bigger than an agate-stone.
On the fore-finger of an alderman,
Drawn with a team of little atomies
Athwart men's noses as they lie asleep:
Her waggon-spokes made of long spinners' legs;
The cover, of the wings of grasshoppers;
The traces, of the smallest spider's web;
The collars, of the moonshine's watery beams;
Her whip, of cricket's bone; the lash, of film;
Her waggoner, a small grey-coated gnat,
Not half so big as a round little worm
Prick'd from the lazy-finger of a maid;
Her chariot is an empty hazel-nut,
Made by the joiner squirrel or old grub;
Time out o' mind the fairies' coach-makers.
And in this state she gallops night by night
Through lovers' brains, and then they dream of
love;
O'er courtiers' knees, that dream on cursties
straight;
O'er lawyers' fingers, who straight dream on fees;
O'er ladies' lips, who straight on kisses dream;
Which oft the angry Mab with blisters plagues.
Because their breaths with sweetmeats tainted
are.
Sometimes she gallops o'er a courtier's nose,
And then dreams he of smelling out a suit;
And sometimes comes she with a spider's tail,
Tickling a man's nose as a fox attacks;
Then dreams he of another benefice;
Sometimes he driveth o'er a soldier's neck,
And then dreams he of cutting foreign throats,
Of breaches, ambushades, Spanish bullets,
Of healths five fathom deep; and then anon
Drums in his ear, at which he starts and wakes;
And, being thus frighted, swears a prayer or
two,
And sleeps again. This is that very Mab
That plats the manes of horses in the night;
And bakes the elf-locks in foul sluttish hairs;
Which once untangled much misfortune bodes;
This is the bag, when maids lie on their backs,
That presses them and learns them first to bear,
Making them women of good carriage:
This is she—
Rom. Peace, peace! Mercutio, peace! 96
Thou talk'st of nothing.
Mer. True, I talk of dreams,
Which are the children of an idle brain,
Begot of nothing but vain fantasy;
Which is as thin as substance as the air,
And more inconstant than the wind, who woos
Even now the frozen bosom of the north,
And, being anger'd, puffs away from thence,
Turning his face to the dew-dropping south. 104
Ben. This wind you talk of blows us from
ourselves;
Supper is done, and we shall come too late.
Rom. I fear too early; for my mind mis-
gives
Some consequence yet hanging in the stars
Shall bitterly begin his fearful date
With this night's revels, and expire the term
Of a despised life clos'd in my breast
By some vile forfeit of untimely death.
But he, that hath the steward of my course,
Direct my sail! On, lusty gentlemen.
Ben. Strike, drum. [Exeunt.

SCENE V.—The Same. A Hall in CAPULET's
House.

Musicians waiting. Enter Servingmen.

First Serv. Where's Potpan, that he helps
not to take away? he shift a trencher! he scrape
a trencher!

Sec. Serv. When good manners shall lie all
in one or two man's hands, and they unwashed
too, 'tis a foul thing.

First Serv. Away with the joint-stools, re-
move the court-cupboard, look to the plate.
Good thou, save me a piece of marchpane; and,
as thou lovest me, let the porter let in Susan
Grindstone and Nell. Antony! and Potpan!

Sec. Serv. Ay, boy; ready.

First Serv. You are looked for and called
for, asked for and sought for in the great
chamber.

Third Serv. We cannot be here and there
too,

Sec. Serv. Cheerly, boys; be brisk awhile, and
the longer liver take all. [They retire behind.

Enter CAPULET and JULIET and Others of his
house, meeting the Guests and Maskers.

Cap. Welcome, gentlemaal ladies that have
their toes
Unplag'd with corns will walk a bount with you.
Ah ha! my mistresses, which of you all
Will now deny to dance? she that makes dainty,
she,
I'll swear, hath corns; am I come near ye
now?

Welcome, gentlemen! I have seen the day
That I have worn a visor, and could tell
A whispering tale in a fair lady's ear
Such as would please; 'tis gone, 'tis gone, 'tis
gone.

You are welcome, gentlemen! Come, musicians,
play.
A hall! a hall! give room, and foot it, girls.

[Music plays, and they dance.

Cap. By 'r Lady, thirty years.

Cap. What, man! 'tis not so much, 'tis not
so much:
'Tis since the nuptial of Lucentio,
Come Pentecost as quickly as it will,
Some five and twenty years; and then we
mask'd.

Sec. Cap. 'Tis more, 'tis more; his son is
older, sir.

His son is thirty.

Cap. Will you tell me that?

His son was but a ward two years ago.

Rom. What lady is that which doth enrich
the hand
Of yonder knight?

Serv. I know not, sir.

Rom. O! she doth teach the torches to burn
bright.

It seems she hangs upon the cheek of night
Like a rich jewel in an Ethiop's ear;
Beauty too rich for use, for earth too dear!
So shows a snowy dove trussing with crows,
As yonder lady o'er her fellows shows.
The measure done, I'll watch her place of stand,
And, touching hers, make blessed my rude hand.
Did my heart love till now? forewear it, sight!
For I ne'er saw true beauty till this night.
Tyb. This, by his voice, should be a Montague. Fetch me my rapiers, boy. What! dares the slave
Come hither, cover'd with an antick face. 60
To see and scorn at our solemnity?
Now, by the stock and honour of my kin,
To strike him dead I hold it not a sin.

Cap. Why, how now, kinman! wherefore
storm you so?

Tyb. Uncle, this is a Montague, our foe;
A villain that is hither come in spite,
To scorn at our solemnity this night.

Cap. Young Romeo, is it?

Tyb. 'Tis he, that villain Romeo. 68

Cap. Content thee, gentle coz, let him alone:
He bears him like a portly gentleman;
And, to say truth, Verona brandishes of him
To be a virtuous and well-govern'd youth. 72
I would not for the wealth of all this town
Here in my house do him disparagement;
Therefore be patient, take no note of him:
It is my will, the which if thou respect,
Show a fair presence and put off these frowns,
An ill-beeming semblance for a feast.

Tyb. It fits, when such a villain is a guest:
I'll not endure him.

Cap. He shall be endur'd: 80
What! goodman boy; I say, he shall, go to;
Am I the master here, or you, go to.
You'll not endure him! God shall mend my soul!
You'll make a mutiny among my guests! 84
You will set cock-a-hoop! you'll be the man!

Tyb. Why, uncle, 'tis a shame.

Cap. Go to, go to;
You are a saucy boy—is't so indeed?—
This trick may chance to scathe you.—I know what:
You must contrary me! marry, 'tis time.
Well said, my hearts! You are a princeos; go:
Be quiet, or—More light, more light!—For shame!
I'll make you quiet. What! cheerly, my hearts!

Tyb. Patience perforce with willful choler meeting
Makes my flesh tremble in their different greeting.
I will withdraw; but this intrusion shall
Now seeming sweet convert to bitter gall. [Exit.

Rom. [To JULIET.] If I profane with my unworthiest hand
This holy shrine, the gentle sin is this;
My lips, two blushing pilgrims, ready stand
To smooth that rough touch with a tender kiss.

Jul. Good pilgrim, you do wrong your hand
too much,
Which mannerly devotion shows in this:

For saints have hands that pilgrims' hands do touch,
And palm to palm is holy palmers' kiss. 104

Rom. Have not saints lips, and holy palmers too?

Jul. Ay, pilgrim, lips that they must use in prayer.

Rom. O! then, dear saint, let lips do what hands do;
They pray, grant thou, lest faith turn to despair.

Jul. Saints do not move, though grant for prayers' sake.

Rom. Then move not, while my prayers' effect I take.

Thus from my lips, by thine, my sin is pur'd.

Kissing her. 111

Jul. Then have my lips the sin that they have took.

Rom. Sin from my lips? O trespass sweetly urg'd! 112

Give me my sin again.


Nurse. Madam, your mother craves a word with you.

Rom. What is her mother?

Nurse. Marry, bachelor,
Her mother is the lady of the house,
And a good lady, and a wise, and virtuous:
I nurs'd her daughter, that you talk'd withal;
I tell you he that can lay hold of her
Shall have the chinks.

Rom. Is she a Capulet?
O dear account! my life is my foe's debt.

Ben. Away, be gone; the sport is at the best.

Rom. Ay, so I fear; the more is my unrest.

Cap. Nay, gentlemen, prepare not to be gone; 125
We have a trifling foolish banquet towards.
Is it e'en so? Why then, I thank you all;
I thank you, honest gentlemen; good-night. 128
More torches here! Come on then, let's to bed.
Ah! sirrah, by my fay, it waxes late;
I'll to my rest. [Exeunt all except JULIET and Nurse.

Jul. Come hither, nurse. 'What is yond gentleman?' 132

Nurse. The son and heir of old Tiberio.

Jul. What's he that now is going out of door?

Nurse. Marry, that, I think; be young Petruchio.

Jul. What's he, that follows there, that would not dance?

Nurse. I know not.

Jul. Go, ask his name.—If he be married,
My grave is like to be my wedding bed.  
Nurse. His name is Romeo, and a Montague;  
The only son of your great enemy.  
Jul. My only love sprung from my only hate!  
Too early seen unknown, and known too late!  
Prodigious birth of love it is to me,  
That I must love a loathed enemy.  
Nurse. What's this, what's this?  
Jul. A rime I learn'd even now  
Of one I danc'd withal.  
[One calls within, 'Juliet!'  
Nurse. Anon, anon!—  
Come, let's away; the strangers are all gone.  

[Exeunt.

PROLOGUE.

Enter Chorus.

Chor. Now old desire doth in his death-bed lie,  
And young affection gapes to be his heir;  
That fair for which love groan'd for and would die,  
With tender Juliet match'd, is now not fair.  
Now Romeo is belov'd and loves again,  
Alike bewitched by the charm of looks,  
But to his foe suppos'd he must complain,  
And she steal love's sweet bait from fearful hooks:  
Being held a foe, he may not have access  
To breathe such vows as lovers as'd to swear;  
And as she much in love, her means much less  
To meet her new-beloved any where:  
But passion lends them power, time means, to meet,  
Tempering extremity with extreme sweet.  

[Exit.

ACT II.

SCENE I.—Verona. A Lane by the wall of Capulet's Orchard.

Enter ROMEO.

Rom. Can I go forward when my heart is here?  
Turn back, dull earth, and find thy centre out.  
[He climbs the wall, and leaps down within it.

Enter BENVOLIO and MERCUITIO.

Ben. Romeo! my cousin Romeo!  
Mer. He is wise;  
And, on my life, hath stol'n him home to bed.  
Ben. He ran this way, and leap'd this orchard wall:  
Call, good Mercutio.  
Mer. Nay, I'll conjure too.  
Romeo! humours! madman! passion! lover!

SCENE II.—The Same. Capulet's Orchard.

Enter ROMEO.

Rom. He jests at scars, that never felt a wound.  
[Juliet appears above at a window.  
But, soft! what light through yonder window breaks?  
It is the east, and Juliet is the sun!  
Arise, fair sun, and kill the envious moon,  
Who is already sick and pale with grief,  
That thou her maid art far more fair than she:  
Be not her maid, since she is envious;  
Her vestal livery is but sick and green,  
And none but fools do wear it; cast it off.
It is my lady; O! it is my love:
O! that she knew she were.
She speaks, yet she says nothing: what of that?
Her eye discourses; I will answer it. 23
I am too bold, 'tis not to me she speaks:
Two of the fairest stars in all the heaven,
Having some business, do entreat her eyes 16
To twinkle in their spheres till they return.
What if her eyes were there, they in her head?
The brightness of her cheek would shame those stars
As daylight doth a lamp; her eyes in heaven 20
Would through the airy region stream so bright
That birds would sing and think it were not night.

See! how she leans her cheek upon her hand:
O! that I were a glove upon that hand, 24
That I might touch that cheek.

Jul. Ay me!
Rom. She speaks:
O! speak again, bright angel; for thou art
As glorious to this night, being o'er my head, As is a winged messenger of heaven 28
Unto the white-upturned wond'ring eyes
Of mortals, that fall back to gaze on him When he bestrides the lazy-pacing clouds, And sails upon the bosom of the air. 32

Jul. O Romeo, Romeo! wherefore art thou Romeo?
Deny thy father, and refuse thy name;
Or, if thou wilt not, be but sworn my love,
And I'll no longer be a Capulet. 36

Rom. [Aside.] Shall I hear more, or shall I speak at this?

Jul. 'Tis but thy name that is my enemy;
Thou art thyself though, not a Montague.
What's Montague? it is nor hand, nor foot, 40
Nor arm, nor face, nor any part of a man. O! be some other name:
What's in a name? that which we call a rose
By any other name would smell as sweet; 44
So Romeo would, were he not Romeo call'd,
Rotain that dear perfection which he owes Without that title. Romeo, doff thy name; And for that name, which is no part of thee, 48
Take all myself.

Rom. I take thee at thy word.
Call me but love, and I'll be new baptiz'd;
Henceforth I never will be Romeo.

Jul. What man art thou, that, thus bescreen'd in night,
So stumbllest on my counsel?

Rom. By a name
I know not how to tell thee who I am; My name, dear saint, is hateful to myself, Because it is an enemy to thee: 56
Had I it written, I would tear the word.
ROMEO AND JULIET

Act II, Sc. II.

But trust me, gentleman, I'll prove more true
Than those that have more cunning to be strange.

I should have been more strange, I must confess,
But that thou over-heard'st, ere I was ware,
My true love's passion: therefore pardon me,
And not impute this yielding to light love,
Which the dark night hath so discovered.

Rom. Lady, by yonder blessed moon I swear
That tips with silver all these fruit-tree tops,—

Jul. O! swear not by the moon, the inconstant moon,

That monthly changes in her circled orb,
Lest that thy love prove likewise variable.

Rom. What shall I swear by?

Jul. Do not swear at all;
Or, if thou wilt, swear by thy gracious self,
Which is the god of my idolatry,
And I'll believe thee.

Rom. If my heart's dear love—

Jul. Well, do not swear. Although I joy in thee,

I have no joy of this contract to-night:
It is too rash, too unadvis'd, too sudden;
Too like the lightning, which doth cease to be
Ere one can say it lightens. Sweet, good-night!
This bud of love, by summer's ripening breath,
May prove a beauteous flower when next we meet.

Good-night, good-night! as sweet repose and rest
Come to thy heart as that within my breast!

Rom. O! wilt thou leave me so unsatisfied?

Jul. What satisfaction canst thou have to-night?

Rom. The exchange of thy love's faithful vow

For mine.

Jul. I gave thee mine before thou didst request it;

And yet I would it were to give again.

Rom. Wouldst thou withdraw it? for what purpose, love?

Jul. But to be frank, and give it thee again.

And yet I wish but for the thing I have:

My bounty is as boundless as the sea,
My love as deep; the more I give to thee,
The more I have, for both are infinite.

[Nurse calls within.

I hear some noise within; dear love, adieu! Anon, good nurse! 'Sweet Montague, be true.
Stay but a little, I will come again. [Exit above.

Rom. O blessed, blessed night! I am afraid,
Being in night, all this is but a dream,
Too flattering-sweet to be substantial.

Jul. Three words, dear Romeo, and goodnight indeed.

If that thy bent of love be honourable,
Thy purpose marriage, send me word to-morrow,

By one that I'll procure to come to thee,
Where, and when time, thou wilt perform the rite;
And all my fortunes at thy foot I'll lay,
And follow thee my lord throughout the world.

Nurse. [Within.] Madam!

Jul. I come, anon.—But if thou mean'st not well,
I do beseech thee,—

Nurse. [Within.] Madam!

Jul. By and by; I come:—

To cease thy suit, and leave me to my grief:
To-morrow will I send.

Rom. So thrive my soul,—

Jul. A thousand times good-night!

Rom. A thousand times the worse, to want thy light.

Love goes toward love, as schoolboys from their books;
But love from love, toward school with heavy looks.

[Exit above.

Re-enter JULIET, above.

Jul. Hist! Romeo, hist! O! for a falconer's voice,
To lure this tassel-gentle back again.
Bondage is hoarse, and may not speak aloud,
Else would I tear the cage where Echo lies,
And make her airy tongue more hoarse than mine,
With repetition of my Romeo's name.

Rom. It is my soul that calls upon my name:
How silver-sweet sound lovers' tongués by night,
Like softest music to attending ears!

Rom. Romeo!

Jul. My dear!

Jul. At what o'clock to-morrow
Shall I send to thee?

Rom. At the hour of nine.

Jul. I will not fail; 'tis twenty years till then.

I have forgot why I did call thee back.

Rom. Let me stand here till thou remember it.

Jul. I shall forget, to have thee still stand there,
Remembering how I love thy company.

Rom. And I'll still stay, to have thee still forget.

Forgetting any other home but this.

Jul. 'Tis almost morning; I would have thee gone;

And yet no further than a wanton's bird,
Who lets it hop a little from her hand,
Like a poor prisoner in his twisted gyes, 180
And with a silk thread plucks it back again,
So loving-jealous of his liberty.

Rom. I would I were thy bird.

Jul. Sweet, so would I:
Yet I should kill thee with much cherishing.
Good-night, good-night! parting is such sweet
sorrow 184
That I shall say good-night till it be morrow.
[Exit.

Rom. Sleep dwell upon thine eyes, peace in
thy breast!
Would I were asleep and peace, so sweet to rest!
Hence will I to my ghostly father's cell, 188
His help to crave, and my dear hap to tell.
[Exit.

SCENE III.—The Same. FRIAR LAURENCE'S
Cell.

Enter FRIAR LAURENCE, with a basket.

Fri. L. The grey-eyed morn smiles on the
frowning night,
Chequering the eastern clouds with streaks of
light,
And flecked darkness like a drunkard reels
From forth day's path and Titan's fiery wheels:
Now, ere the sun advance his burning eye 5
The day to cheer and night's dank dew to dry,
I must up-fill this osier cage of ours
With baleful weeds and precious-juiced flowers.
The earth that's nature's mother is her tomb; 9
What is her burying grave that is her womb,
And from her womb children of divers kind
We suckling on her natural bosom find, 12
Many for many virtues excellent,
None but for some, and yet all different.
Of mickle is the powerful grace that lies
In herbs, plants, stones, and their true quali-
ties:
For nought so vile that on the earth doth live
But to the earth some special good doth give,
Nor ought so good but strain'd from that fair
use
Revolts from true birth, stumbling on abuse: 20
Virtue itself turns vice, being misapplied,
And vice sometime's by action dignified.
Within the infant mind of this weak flower
Poison hath residence and medicine power: 24
For this, being smelt, with that part cheers each
part;
Being tasted, slays all senses with the heart.
Two such opposed foes encamp them still
In man as well as herbs, grace and rude will; 28
And where the worse is predominant,
Full soon the canker death eats up that plant.

Enter ROMEO.

Rom. Good morrow, father!

Fri. L. Benedicite!

What early tongue so sweet saluteth me? 32
Young son, it argues a distemper'd head
So soon to bid good morrow to thy bed:
Care keeps his watch in every old man's eye,
And where care lodges, sleep will never lie; 36
But where unbruised youth with unstuffed brain
Doth couch his limbs, there golden sleep doth
reign:
Therefore thy earliness doth me assure
Thou art up-rous'd by some distemperature; 40
Or if not so, then here I hit it right,
Our Romeo hath not been in bed to-night.

Rom. That last is true; the sweeter rest was
mine.

Fri. L. God pardon sin! wast thou with
Rosaline? 44

Rom. With Rosaline, my ghostly father? no;
I have forgot that name, and that name's wo.

Fri. L. That's my good son: but where hast
thou been, then?

Rom. I'll tell thee, ere thou ask it me again.
I have been feasting with mine enemy. 49
Where on a sudden one hath wounded me,
That's by me wounded: both our remedies
Within thy help and holy physic lies: 52
I bear no hatred, blessed man; for, lo!
My intercession likewise steads my foe.

Fri. L. Be plain, good son, and homely in
thy drift;
Riddling confession finds but riddling shrift. 56

Rom. Then plainly know my heart's dear
love is set
On the fair daughter of rich Capulet:
As mine on hers, so hers is set on mine;
And all combin'd, save what thou must com-
bine 60
By holy marriage: when and where and how
We met we wo'd and made exchange of vow,
I'll tell thee as we pass; but this I pray,
That thou consent to marry us to-day. 64

Fri. L. Holy Saint Francis! what a change
is here;
Is Rosaline, whom thou didst love so dear,
So soon forsaken? young men's love then lies
Not truly in their hearts, but in their eyes. 68

Jesu Maria! what a deal of brine
Hath wash'd thy sallow cheeks for Rosaline;
How much salt water thrown away in waste,
To season love, that of it doth not taste! 72
The sun not yet thy sighs from heaven clears,
Thy old groans ring yet in my ancient ears;
Lo! here upon thy cheek the stain doth sit
Of an old tear that is not wash'd off yet. 76
If e'er thou wast thyself and these were thine,
Thou and these woes were all for Rosaline: And art thou chang’d? pronounce this sentence then:

Women may fall, when there’s no strength in men.

Rom. Thou chidd’st me oft for loving Rosaline.

Fri. L. For doting, not for loving, pupil mine.

Rom. And bad’st me bury love.

Fri. L. Not in a grave, To lay one in, another out to have.

Rom. I pray thee, chide not; she, whom I love now

Doth grace for grace and love for love allow;
The other did not so.

Fri. L. O! she knew well

Thy love did read by rote and could not spell. But come, young waverer, come, go with me, In one respect I’ll thy assistant be;

For this alliance may so happy prove, To turn your households’ rancour to pure love.

Rom. O! let us hence; I stand on sudden haste.

Fri. L. Wisely and slow; they stumble that run fast. [Exeunt.

SCENE IV.—The Same. A Street.

Enter BENVOLIO and MERCUTIO.

Mer. Where the devil should this Romeo be? Came he not home to-night?

Ben. Not to his father’s; I spoke with his man.

Mer. Why that same pale hard-hearted wench, that Rosaline, Torments him so, that he will sure run mad.

Ben. Tybalt, the kinsman of old Capulet, Hath sent a letter to his father’s house.

Mer. A challenge, on my life.

Ben. Romeo will answer it.

Mer. Any man that can write may answer a letter.

Ben. Nay, he will answer the letter’s master, how he dares, being dared.

Mer. Alas! poor Romeo, he is already dead; stabbed with a white wench’s black eye; shot through the ear with a love-song; the very pin of his heart cleft with the blind bow-boy’s butt-shaft; and is he a man to encounter Tybalt?

Ben. Why, what is Tybalt?

Mer. More than prince of cats, I can tell you. O! he is the courageous captain of compliments. He fights as you sing prick-song, keeps time, distance, and proportion; rests me his minim rest, one, two, and the third in your bosom; the very butcher of a silk button, a duellist, a duellist; a gentleman of the very first house, of the first and second cause. Ah! the immortal passado! the junto revolu! the hat! 28

Ben. The what?

Mer. The apex of such antic, lisping, affecting fantasticoes, these new tuners of accents!—‘By Jesu, a very good blade!—a very tall man! a very good whore.’—Why, is not this a lamentable thing, grandsire, that we should be thus afflicted with these strange flies, these fashion-mongers, these pardonnez-mois, who stand so much on the new form that they cannot sit at ease on the old bench? O, their bons, their bons! 38

Enter ROMEO.

Ben. Here comes Romeo, here comes Romeo. Mer. Without his roe, like a dried herring. O flesh, flesh, how art thou fleshified! Now is he for the numbers that Petrarch flowed in: Laura to his lady was but a kitchen-wench; marry, she had a better love to be-rime her; Dido a dowdy; Cleopatra a gipsy; Helen and Hero hildings and harlots; Thrasie, a grey eye or so, but not to the purpose. Signior Romeo, bon jour! there’s a French salutation to your French slop. You gave us the counterfeit fairly last night.

Rom. Good morrow to you both. What counterfeit did I give you?

Mer. The slip, sir, the slip; can you not conceive?

Rom. Pardon, good Mercutio, my business was great; and in such a case as mine a man may strain courtesy.

Mer. That’s as much as to say, such a case as yours constrains a man to bow in the hams.

Rom. Meaning—to curtsy.

Mer. Thou hast most kindly hit it.

Rom. A most courteous exposition.

Mer. Nay, I am the very pink of courtesy.

Rom. Pink for flower.

Mer. Right.

Rom. Why, then, is my pump well flowered.

Mer. Well said; follow me this jest now till thou hast worn out the pump, that, when the single sole of it is worn, the jest may remain after the wearing sole singular.

Rom. O single-soled jest! solely singular for the singleness.

Mer. Come between us, good Benvolio; my wit faints.

Rom. Switch and spurs, switch and spurs; or I’ll cry a match.

Mer. Nay, if thy wits run the wild-goose chace, I have done, for thou hast more of the wild-goose in one of thy wits than, I am sure,
I have in my whole five. Was I with you there for the goose?

Rom. Thou wast never with me for anything when thou wast not here for the goose.

Mer. I will bite thee by the ear for that jest.

Rom. Nay, good goose, bite not.

Mer. Thy wit is a very bitter sweeting; it is a most sharp sauce.

Rom. And is it not then well served in to a sweet-goose?

Mer. O! here's a wit of cheveril, that stretches from an inch narrow to an ell broad.

Rom. I stretch it out for that word 'broad;' which added to the goose, proves thee far and wide a broad goose.

Mer. Why, is not this better now than groaning for love? now art thou sociable, now art thou Romeo; now art thou what thou art, by art as well as by nature: for this drivelling love is like a great natural, that runs lolling up and down to hide his bauble in a hole.

Ben. Stop there, stop there.

Mer. Thou desir'dest me to stop in my tale against the hair.

Ben. Thou would'st else have made thy tale large.

Mer. O! thou art deceived; I would have made it short; for I was come to the whole depth of my tale, and meant indeed to occupy the argument no longer.

Rom. Here's goodly gear!

Enter Nurse and Peter.

Mer. A sail, a sail!

Ben. Two, two; a shirt and a smock.

Nurse. Peter!

Peter. Anon!

Nurse. My fan, Peter.

Mer. Good Peter, to hide her face; for her fan's the fairer face.

Nurse. God ye good morrow, gentlemen.

Mer. God ye good den, fair gentlewoman.

Nurse. Is it good den?

Mer. 'Tis no less, I tell you; for the bawdy hand of the dial is now upon the prick of noon.

Nurse. Out upon you! what a man are you!

Rom. One, gentlewoman, that God hath made himself to mar.

Nurse. By my troth, it is well said; 'for himself to mar,' quoth a?—Gentlemen, can any of you tell me where I may find the young Romeo?

Rom. I can tell you; but young Romeo will be older when you have found him than he was when you sought him: I am the youngest of that name, for fault of a worse.

Nurse. You say well.

Mer. Yeas! is the worst well? very well look, i' faith; wisely, wisely.

Nurse. If you be he, sir, I desire some con-

fidence with you.

Ben. She will indite him to some supper.

Mer. A bawd, a bawd, a bawd! So ho!

Rom. What hast thou found?

Mer. No hare, sir; unless a hare, sir, in a lenten pie, that is something stale and hoar ere it be spent.

[Sings.

An old hare hoar, and an old hare hoar,
Is very good meat in Lent:
But a hare that is hoar, is too much for a score,
When it hoars ere it be spent.

Romeo, will you come to your father's? we'll to dinner thither.

Rom. I will follow you.

Mer. Farewell, ancient lady; farewell, lady, lady, lady.

[Exeunt Mercutio and Benvolio.

Nurse. Marry, farewell! I pray you, sir, what saucy merchant was this, that was so full of his ropery?

Rom. A gentleman, nurse, that loves to hear himself talk, and will speak more in a minute than he will stand to in a month.

Nurse. An a speak anything against me, I'll take him down, an a' were lustier than he is, and twenty such Jacks; and if I cannot, I'll find those that shall. Scurvy knave! I am none of his flirt-gills; I am none of his skeins-mates.

[To Peter.] And thou must stand by too, and suffer every knave to use me at his pleasure! I saw no man use you at his pleasure; if I had, my weapon should quickly have been out, I warrant you. I dare draw as soon as another man, if I see occasion in a good quarrel, and the law on my side.

Nurse. Now, afore God, I am so vexed, that every part about me quivers. Scurvy knave! Pray you, sir, a word; and as I told you, my young lady bade me inquire you out; what she bid me say I will keep to myself; but first let me tell ye, if ye should lead her into a fool's paradise, as they say, it were a very gross kind of behaviour, as they say: for the gentlewoman is young; and, therefore, if you should deal double with her, truly it were an ill thing to be offered to any gentlewoman, and very weak dealing.

Rom. Nurse, commend me to thy lady and mistress. I protest unto thee.

Nurse. Good heart! and, i' faith, I will tell her as much. Lord, Lord! she will be a joyful woman.

Rom. What wilt thou tell her, nurse? thou dost not mark me.
Nurse. I will tell her, sir, that you do protest; which, as I take it, is a gentlemanlike offer.

Rom. Bid her devise

Some means to come to shrift this afternoon;
And there she shall at Friar Laurence' cell,
Be shriv'd and married. Here is for thy pains.

Nurse. No, truly, sir; not a penny.

Rom. Go to; I say, you shall.

Nurse. This afternoon, sir? well, she shall be there.

Rom. And stay, good nurse; behind the abbey wall:
Within this hour my man shall be with thee,
And bring thee cords made like a tackled stair;
Which to the high top-gallant of my joy
Must be my convoy in the secret night.
Farewell! Be trusty, and I'll quit thy pains.
Farewell! Command me to thy mistress.

Nurse. Now God in heaven bless thee! Hark you, sir.

Rom. What say'st thou, my dear nurse?

Nurse. Is your man secret? Did you ne'er hear say,
Two may keep counsel, putting one away?

Rom. I warrant thee my man's as true as steel.

Nurse. Well, sir; my mistress is the sweetest lady—Lord, Lord!—when 'twas a little prating thing.—O! there's a nobleman in town, one Paris, that would fain lay knife aboard; but she, good soul, had as lief see a toad, a very toad, as see him. I anger her sometimes and tell her that Paris is the properer man; but, I'll warrant you, when I say so, she looks as pale as any clout in the versal world. Doth not rosemary and Romeo begin both with a letter?

Rom. Ay, nurse: what of that? both with an R.

Nurse. Ah! mocker; that's the dog's name.

R is for the—No; I know it begins with some other letter: and she had the prettiest sententious of it, of you and rosemary, that it would do you good to hear it.

Rom. Command me to thy lady.

Nurse. Ay, a thousand times. [Exit ROMEO.]

Peter!

Pet. Anon!

Nurse. Before, and apace. [Exeunt.

SCENE V.—The Same. CAPULET'S GARDEN.

Enter JULIET.

JUL. The clock struck nine when I did send the nurse;
In half an hour she promis'd to return,
Perchance she cannot meet him: that's not so.
Then love-devouring death do what he dare;
It is enough I may but call her mine.

Fri. L. These violent delights have violent ends,
And in their triumph die, like fire and powder,
Which, as they kiss consume: the sweetest honey
Is loathsome in his own deliciousness
And in the taste confounds the appetite:
Therefore love moderately; long love doth so;
Too swift arrives as tardy as too slow.

Enter JULIET.
Here comes the lady: O! so light a foot
Will ne’er wear out, the everlasting flint:
A lover may bestride the gossamer
That idles in the wanton summer air,
And yet not fall; so light is vanity.

Jul. Good even to my ghostly confessor.
Fri. L. Romeo shall thank thee, daughter,
for us both.

Jul. As much to him, else are his thanks too
much.

Rom. Ah! Juliet, if the measure of thy joy
Be hap’st like mine, and that thy skell be more

To blazon it, then sweeten with thy breath
This neighbour air, and let rich music’s tongue
Unfold the imagín’d happiness that both
Receive in either by this dear encounter.

Jul. Conceit, more rich in matter than in words,
Brags of his substance, not of ornament:
They are but bargers that can count their
worth;

But my true love is grown to such excess
I cannot sum up half my sum of wealth.

Fri. L. Come, come with me, and we will
make short work;
For, by your leaves, you shall not stay alone
Till holy church incorporate two in one.

[Exeunt.

ACT III.

SCENE I.—Verona. A Public Place.

Enter MERCUTIO, BENVOLIO, PAGE, and SERVANTS.

Ben. I pray thee, good Mercutio, let’s retire:
The day is hot, the Capulets abroad,
And, if we meet, we shall not ‘scape a brawl;
For now, these hot days, is the mad blood
stirring.

Mer. Thou art like one of those fellows that
when he enters the confines of a tavern claps
me his sword upon the table and says, ‘God
send me no need of thee!’ and by the operation
of the second cup draws him on the drawer, when, indeed, there is no need.

Ben. Am I like such a fellow?

Mer. Come, come, thou art as hot a Jack in thy mood as any in Italy; and as soon moved to be moody, and as soon moody to be moved.

Ben. And what to?

Mer. Nay, an there were two such, we should have none shortly, for one would kill the other. Thou why, thou wilt quarrel with a man that hath a hair more or a hair less in his beard than thou hast. Thou wilt quarrel with a man for cracking nuts, having no other reason but because thou hast hazel eyes. What eye, but such an eye, would spy out such a quarrel? Thy head is as full of quarrels as an egg is full of meat, and yet thy head hath been beaten as addle as an egg for quarrelling. Thou hast quarrelled with a man for coughing in the street, because he hath wakened thy dog that hath lain asleep in the sun. Didst thou not fall out with a tailor for wearing his new doublet before Easter? with another, for tying his new shoes with old riband? and yet thou wilt tutor me from quarrelling.

Ben. An I were so apt to quarrel as thou art, any man should buy the fee-simple of my life for an hour and a quarter.

Mer. The fee-simple! O simple!

Ben. By my head, here come the Capulets.

Mer. By my heel, I care not.

Enter Tybalt, and Others.

Tyb. Follow me close, for I will speak to them. Gentlemen, good den! a word with one of you.

Mer. And but one word with one of us?

Couple it with something; make it a word and a blow.

Tyb. You shall find me apt enough to that, sir, an you will give me occasion.

Mer. Could you not take some occasion without giving?

Tyb. Mercutio, thou consort'st with Romeo,—

Mer. Consort! What! dost thou make us minstrels? an thou make minstrels of us, look to hear nothing but discords: here's my fiddle-stick; here's that shall make you dance. 'Zounds! consort!

Ben. We talk here in the public haunt of men:

Either withdraw unto some private place, or reason coldly of your grievances, or else depart; here all eyes gaze on us.

Mer. Men's eyes were made to look, and let them gaze; I will not budge for no man's pleasure, I.
world. A plague o’ both your houses! ’Zounds, a dog, a rat, a mouse, a cat, to scratch a man to death! a braggart, a rogue, a villain, that fights by the book of arithmetic! Why the devil came you between us? I was hurt under your arm. 109

Rom. I thought all for the best.

Mer. Help me into some house, Benvolio,
Or I shall faint. A plague o’ both your houses! They have made worms’ meat of me: I have it,

And soundly too—your houses!

[Exeunt MERCUTIO and BENVOLIO.]

Rom. This gentleman, the prince’s near ally,
My very friend, hath got his mortal hurt
In my behalf; my reputation stain’d
With Tybalt’s slander, Tybalt, that an hour
Hath been my kinsman. O sweet Juliet!
Thy beauty hath made me effeminate,
And in my temper soft’ned valour’s steel!

Re-enter BENVOLIO.

Ben. O Romeo, Romeo! brave Mercutio’s dead;
That gallant spirit hath aspir’d the clouds,
Which too untimely here did scorn the earth.

Rom. This day’s black fate on more days doth depend;
This but begins the woe others must end.

Re-enter TYBALT.

Ben. Here comes the furious Tybalt back again.

Rom. Alas! in triumph! and Mercutio slain!
Away to heaven, respective lenity,
And fire-eyed fury be my conduct now!
Now, Tybalt, take the villain back again
That late thou gav’st me; for Mercutio’s soul
Is but a little above our heads,
Slaying for thine to keep him company:
Either thou, or I, or both, must go with him.

Tyb. Thou wretched boy, that didst consort him here,

Shalt with him hence.

Rom. This shall determine that.

[They fight: TYBALT falls.]

Ben. Romeo, away! be gone!
The citizens are up, and Tybalt alight.
Stand not amaz’d: the prince will doom thee death
If thou art taken: hence! be gone! away!

Rom. O! I am Fortune’s fool.

Ben. Why dost thou stay?

[Exit ROMEO.

Enter Citizens, &c.

First Cit. Which way ran he that kill’d Mercutio?

Tybalt, that murderer, which way ran he? 144

Ben. There lies that Tybalt.

First Cit. Up, sir, go with me.
I charge thee in the prince’s name, obey.

Enter PRINCE, attended; MONTAGUE, CAPULET, their Wives, and Others.

Prin. Where are the vile beginners of this fray?

Ben. O noble prince! I can discover all
The unlucky manage of this fatal brawl:
There lies the man, slain by young Romeo,
That slew thy kinsman, brave Mercutio.

Lady Cap. Tybalt, my cousin! O my brother’s child!
O prince! O cousin! husband! O! the blood is spill’d
Of my dear kinsman. Prince, as thou art true,
For blood of ours shed blood of Montague.
O cousin, cousin!

Prin. Benvolio, who began this bloody fray?

Ben. Tybalt, here slain, whom Romeo’s hand
did slay:
Romeo, that spoke him fair, bade him bethink
How nice the quarrel was, and urg’d withal
Your high displeasure: all this, uttered
With gentle breath, calm look, knees humbly bow’d,
Could not take truce with the unruly spleen
Of Tybalt deaf to peace, but that he fills
With piercing steel at bold Mercutio’s breast,
Who, all as hot, turns deadly point to point,
And, with a martial scorn, with one hand beats
Cold death aside, and with the other sends
It back to Tybalt, whose dexterity
Retorts it: Romeo he cries aloud,
‘Hold, friends! friends! friends, part!’ and, swifter than
his tongue,
His agile arm beats down their fatal points,
And ’twixt them rushing; underneath whose arm
An envious thrust from Tybalt hit the life
Of stout Mercutio, and then Tybalt fled;
But by and by comes back to Romeo,
Who had but newly entertain’d revenge,
And to ’t they go like lightning; for, ere I
Could draw to part them, was stout Tybalt slain,
And, as he fell, did Romeo turn and fly.

This is the truth, or let Benvolio die.

Lady Cap. He is a kinsman to the Montague;
Affection makes him false, he speaks not true:
Some twenty of them fought in this black strife
And all those twenty could but kill one life. 185
I beg for justice, which thou, prince, must give;
Romeo slew Tybalt, Romeo must not live.

Prin. Romeo slew him, he slew Mercutio;
Who now the price of his dear blood doth owe?
ROMEO AND JULIET  
Act III, Sc. II.

Mon. Not Romeo, prince, he was Mercutio’s friend,
His fault concludes but what the law should end,
The life of Tybalt.

Prin. And for that offence 192
Immediately we do exile him hence:
I have an interest in your hate’s proceeding,
My blood for your rude brawls doth lie a-bleeding:
But I’ll amerce you with so strong a fine
That you shall all repent the loss of mine.
I will be deaf to pleading and excuses;
Nor tears nor prayers shall purchase out abuses;
Therefore use none; let Romeo hence in haste,
Else, when he’s found, that hour is his last. 201
Bear hence this body and attend our will:
Mercy but murders, pardoning those that kill.
[Exeunt.

Enter Nurse with cords.

And she brings news; and every tongue that speaks
But Romeo’s name speaks heavenly eloquence.
Now nurse, what news? What hast thou there?
the cords
That Romeo bade thee fetch?

Nurse. Ay, ay, the cords.

[Throws them down.


Nurse. Ah well-a-day! he’s dead, he’s dead,
he’s dead!
We are undone, lady, we are undone!
Alack the day! he’s gone, he’s killed, he’s dead!

Jul. Can heaven be so envious?

Nurse. Romeo can.

Though heaven cannot. O! Romeo, Romeo;
Who ever would have thought it? Romeo!

Jul. What devil art thou that dost torment me thus?

This torture should be roar’d in dismal hell. 44
Hath Romeo slain himself? say thou but ‘I,’
And that bare vowel, ‘I,’ shall poison more
Than the death-darting eye of cockatrice:
I am not I, if there be such an ‘I;’
Or those eyes shut that make thee answer ‘I.’
If he be slain, say ‘I;’ or if not ‘no:
Brief sounds determine of my weal or woe.

Nurse. I saw the wound, I saw it with mine eyes,
God save the mark! here on his manly breast:
A piteous corse, a bloody piteous corse;
Pale, pale as ashes, all bedaub’d in blood,
All in gore blood; I swounded at the sight. 56

Jul. O break, my heart!—poor bankrupt,
break at once!
To prison, eyes, never look on liberty!
Vile earth, to earth resign; end motion here;
And thou and Romeo press one heavy bier! 60

Nurse. O Tybalt, Tybalt! the best friend I had:
O courteous Tybalt! honest gentleman!
That ever I should live to see thee dead!

Jul. What storm is this that blows so contrary?

Is Romeo slaughter’d, and is Tybalt dead?
My dearest cousin, and my dearest lord?
Then, dreadful trumpet, sound the general doom!

For who is living if those two are gone? 68

Nurse. Tybalt is gone, and Romeo banished;
Romeo, that kill’d him, he is banished.

Jul. O God! did Romeo’s hand shed Tybalt’s blood?

Nurse. It did, it did; alas, the day! it did. 72

Jul. O serpent heart, hid with a flowering face!
Did ever dragon keep so fair a cave?
Beautiful tyrant! flied angelical!
Dove-feather’d raven! wolvish-rav’ning lamb!
Despised substance of divinest soul.
Just opposite to what thou justly seem’st;
A damned saint, an honourable villain!
O, nature! what hadst thou to do in hell
When thou didst bow the spirit of a fiend
In mortal paradise of such sweet flesh?
Was ever book containing such vile matter
So fairly bound? O! that deceit should dwell
In such a gorgeous palace.

Nurse. There’s no trust.
No faith, no honesty in men; all naught,
All perjur’d, all dissemblers, all forsworn.
Ah! where’s my man? give me some aqua vitae:
These griefs, these woes, these sorrows make
Me old.
Shame come to Romeo!
Jul. Blister’d be thy tongue
For such a wish! he was not born to shame:
Upon his brow shame is asham’d to sit;
For ‘tis a throne where honour may be crown’d
Sole monarch of the universal earth.
O! what a beast was I to chide at him.

Nurse. Will you speak well of him that kill’d
Your cousin?
Jul. Shall I speak ill of him that is my husband?
Ah! poor my lord, what tongue shall smooth
thy name,
When I, thy three-hours wife, have mangled it?
But, wherefore, villain, didst thou kill my cousin?
That villain cousin would have kill’d my husband:
Back, foolish tears, back to your native spring;
Your tributary drops belong to woe,
Which you, mistaking, offer up to joy.
My husband lives, that Tybalt would have slain;
And Tybalt’s dead, that would have slain my husband:
All this is comfort; wherefore weep I then?
Some word there was, worser than Tybalt’s death.
That murder’d me: I would forget it faint;
But O! it presseth to my memory,
Like damned guilty deeds to sinners’ minds.
’Tis Tybalt is dead, and Romeo banish’d!
That ‘banish’d,’ that one word ‘banish’d,
Hath slain ten thousand Tybals. Tybalt’s death
Was woe enough, if it had ended there:
Or, if such woe delights in fellowship,
And needly will be rank’d with other griefs,
Why follow’d not, when she said ‘Tybalt’s dead,’

Thy father, or thy mother, nay, or both, Which modern lamentation might have mov’d?
But with a rearward following Tybalt’s death, ‘Romeo is banish’d!’ to speak that word
Is father, mother, Tybalt, Romeo, Juliet,
All slain, all dead: ‘Romeo is banish’d!’
There is no end, no limit, measure, bound
In that word’s death; no words can that woe sound.

Where is my father and my mother, nurse?
Nurse. Weeping and wailing over Tybalt’s corse:
Will you go to them? I will bring you thither.
Jul. Wash they his wounds with tears: mine shall be spent,
When theirs are dry, for Romeo’s banishment.
Take up those cords. Poor ropes, you are beguil’d,
Both you and I, for Romeo is exil’d:
He made you for a highway to my bed,
But I, a maid, die maiden-widowed.
Come, cords; come, nurse; I’ll to my wedding bed;
And death, not Romeo, take my maidenhead!
Nurse. Hie to your chamber; I’ll find Romeo
To comfort you: I wot well where he is.
Hark ye, your Romeo will be here to-night:
I’ll to him; he is hid at Laurence’ cell.
Jul. O! find him; give this ring to my true knight,
And bid him come to take his last farewell.

[Exeunt.

SCENE III.—The Same. Friar Laurence’s Cell.

Enter Friar Laurence.

Fri. L. Romeo, come forth; come forth, thou fearful man:
Affliction is enamour’d of thy parts,
And thou art wedded to calamity.

Enter Romeo.

Rom. Father, what news? what is the prince’s doom?
What sorrow craves acquaintance at my hand,
That I yet know not?

Fri. L. Too familiar
Is my dear son with such sour company:
I bring thee tidings of the prince’s doom.

Rom. What less than doomsday is the prince’s doom?

Fri. L. A gentler judgment vanish’d from his lips;
Not body’s death, but body’s banishment.
ROMEO AND JULIET

Act III, Sc. III.

Rom. Ha! banishment! be merciful, say 'death;'
For exile hath more terror in his look,
Much more than death: do not say 'banishment.'

Fri. L. Hence from Verona art thou banished.
Be patient, for the world is broad and wide.
Rom. There is no world without Verona walls,
But purgatory, torture, hell itself.
Hence banished is banish'd from the world,
And world's exile is death; then 'banished,'
Is death mis-term'd. Calling death 'banished,'
Thou cuttest my head off with a golden axe,
And smil'st upon the stroke that murders me.

Fri. L. O deadly sin! O rude unthankfulness!
Thy fault our law calls death; but the kind prince,
Taking thy part, hath rush'd aside the law,
And turn'd that black word death to banishment:
This is dear mercy, and thou seest it not.

Rom. 'Tis torture, and not mercy: heaven is here,
Where Juliet lives; and every cat and dog
And little mouse, every unworthy thing,
Live here in heaven and may look on her;
But Romeo may not: more validity,
More honourable state, more courtship lives
In carrion flies than Romeo: they may seize
On the white wonder of dear Juliet's hand,
And steal immortal blessing from her lips,
Who, even in pure and vestal modesty,
Still blush, as thinking their own kisses sin;
Flies may do this, but I from this must fly:
They are free men, but I am banished.
And sayst thou yet that exile is not death?
Hast thou no poison mix'd, no sharp-ground knife,
No sudden mean of death, though ne'er so mean,
But 'banished' to kill me? 'Banished!'
O friar! the damned use that word in hell;
Howlings attend it: how hast thou the heart,
Being a divine, a ghastly confessor,
A sin-absolver, and my friend profess'd,
To mangle me with that word 'banished?'

Fri. L. Thou fond mad man, hear me but speak a word.
Rom. O! thou wilt speak again of banishment.

Fri. L. I'll give thee armour to keep off that word;
Adversity's sweet milk, philosophy,
To comfort thee, though thou art banished.

Rom. Yet 'banished!' Hang up philosophy!
Unless philosophy can make a Juliet,
Displant a town, reverse a prince's doom,
It helps not, it prevails not: talk no more.

Fri. L. O! I then see that madmen have no ears.
Rom. How should they, when that wise men have no eyes?
Fri. L. Let me dispute with thee of thy estate.
Rom. Thou canst not speak of that thou dost not feel:
Wert thou as young as I, Juliet thy love,
An hour but married, Tybalt murdered,
Doting like me, and like me banished,
Then mightst thou speak, then mightst thou tear thy hair,
And fall upon the ground, as I do now,

Taking the measure of an unmade grave.

[Knocking within.

Fri. L. Arise; one knocks: good Romeo, hide thyself.
Rom. Not I; unless the breath of heart-sick groans,
Mist-like, infold me from the search of eyes.

[Knocking.

Fri. L. Hark! how they knock. Who's there? Romeo arise;
Thou wilt be taken. Stay awhile! Stand up;

Run to my study. By and by! God's will!
What wilfulness is this! I come, I come!

[Knocking.

Who knocks so hard? whence come you?
what's your will?

Nurse. [Within.] Let me come in, and you shall know my errand:
I come from Lady Juliet.

Fri. L. Welcome, then.

Enter Nurse.

Nurse. O holy friar! O! tell me, holy friar,
Where is my lady's lord? where's Romeo?

Fri. L. There on the ground, with his own tears made drunk.

Nurse. O! he is even in my mistress' case,
Just in her case!

Fri. L. O woeful sympathy!
Piteous predicament! Even so lies she,
Blubbering and weeping, weeping and blubbering.
Stand up, stand up; stand, an you be a man:
For Juliet's sake, for her sake, rise and stand;
Why should you fall into so deep an O?

Rom. Nurse!

Nurse. Ah, sir! ah, sir! Well, death's the end of all.
Rom. Speak'st thou of Juliet? how is it with her?
Act III, Sc. III.

Doth she not think me an old murderer,
Now I have stain’d the childhood of our joy.
With blood remov’d but little from her own?
Where is she? and how doth she? and what
says
My conceal’d lady to our cancell’d love?
Nurse. O! she says nothing, sir, but weeps
and weeps;
And now falls on her bed; and then starts up,
And Tybalt calls, and then on Romeo cries,
And then down falls again.

Rom. As if that name,
Shot from the deadly level of a gun,
Did murder her; as that name’s cursed hand
Murder’d her kinsman. O! tell me, friar, tell
me,
In what vile part of this anatomy
Doth my name lodge? tell me, that I may sack
The hateful mansion. [Drawing his sword.

Fri. L. Hold thy desperate hand:
Art thou a man? thy form cries out thou art:
Thy tears are womanish; thy wild acts denote
The unreasonable fury of a beast:
Unseemly woman in a seeming man;
Or ill-beseeming beast in seeming both!
Thou hast amaz’d me: by my holy order,
I thought thy disposition better temper’d.
Hast thou slain Tybalt? wilt thou slay thyself?
And slay thy lady that in thy life lives,
By doing damned hate upon thyself?
Why rail’st thou on thy birth, the heaven, and
earth?
Since birth, and heaven, and earth, all three do
meet
In thee at once, which thou at once wouldst
lose.

Fie, fie! thou sham’st thy shape, thy love, thy
wit.
Which, like a usurer, abound’st in all,
And wast none in that true use indeed
Which should bedeck thy shape, thy love, thy
wit.

Thy noble shape is but a form of wax,
Digressing from the valour of a man;
Thy dear love, sworn, but hollow perjury,
Killing that love which thou hast vow’d to
cherish;
Thy wit, that ornament to shape and love,
Misshapen in the conduct of them both,
Like powder in a skillless soldier’s flask,
To set a’fire by thine own ignorance,
And thou dismember’d with thine own defence.
What! rouse thee, man; thy Juliet is alive,
For whose dear sake thou wast but lately dead;
There art thou happy: Tybalt would kill thee,
But thou slew’st Tybalt; there art thou happy
too:

The law that threaten’d death becomes thy
friend,
And turns it to exile; there art thou happy:
A pack of blessings light upon thy back;
Happiness courts thee in her best array;
But, like a misbehav’d and sullen wench,
Thou poust’st upon thy fortune and thy love.
Take heed, take heed, for such die miserable.
Go, get thee to thy love, as was decreed,
Ascend her chamber, hence and comfort her;
But look thou stay not till the watch be set,
For then thou canst not pass to Mantua;
Where thou shalt live, till we can find a time
To blaze your marriage, reconcile your friends,
Beg pardon of the prince, and call thee back
With twenty thousand times more joy
Than thou went’st forth in lamentation.
Go before, nurse: commend me to thy lady;
And bid her hasten all the house to bed,
Which heavy sorrow makes them apt unto.
Romeo is coming.

Nurse. O Lord! I could have stay’d here all
the night
To hear good counsel: O! what learning is.
My lord, I’ll tell my lady you will come.

Rom. Do so, and bid my sweet prepare to
chide.

Nurse. Here, sir, a ring she bid me give you,
sir.
Hie you, make haste, for it grows very late.

[Exit.

Rom. How well my comfort is reviv’d by
this!

Fri. L. Go hence; good-night; and here
stands all your state:
Either be gone before the watch be set,
Or by the break of day disguis’d from hence:
Sojourn in Mantua; I’ll find out your man,
And he shall signify from time to time
Every good hap to you that chances here.
Give me thy hand; ’tis late: farewell; good-
night.

Rom. But that a joy past joy calls out on me,
It was a grief so brief to part with thee.

Farewell. [Exeunt.

Scene IV.—The Same. A Room in Capulet’s
House.

Enter Capulet, Lady Capulet, and Paris.

Cap. Things have fall’n out, sir, so unluckily,
That we have no time to move our
daughter:
Look you, she lov’d her kinsman Tybalt dearly,
And so did I; well, we were born to die.
’Tis very late; she’ll not come down to night:
I promise you, but for your company,
I would have been a-bed an hour ago.
Par. These times of woe afford no time to
woo.
Madam, good-night: command me to your
daughter.
Lady Cap. I will, and know her mind early
to-morrow;
To-night she’s mew’d up to her heaviness.
Cap. Sir Paris, I will make a desperate
tender.
Of my child’s love: I think she will be rul’d
In all respects by me; nay, more, I doubt it not.
Wife go you to her ere you go to bed;
Acquaint her here of my son Paris’ love;
And bid her, mark you me, on Wednesday
next—
But, soft! what day is this?
Par. Monday, my lord.
Cap. Monday! ha, ha! Well, Wednesday is
too soon;
O’ Thursday let it be: o’ Thursday, tell her,
She shall be married to this noble earl.
Will you be ready? do you like this haste?
We’ll keep no great ado; a friend or two;
For, hark you, Tybalt being slain so late,
It may be thought we held him carelessly,
Being our kinman, if we revel much.
Therefore we’ll have some half a dozen friends,
And there an end. But what say you to Thurs-
day?
Par. My lord, I would that Thursday were
to-morrow.
Cap. Well, get you gone: o’ Thursday be it
then.
Go you to Juliet ere you go to bed,
Prepare her, wife, against this wedding-day.
Farewell, my lord. Light to my chamber, ho!
Afore me! it is so very late,
That we may call it early by and by.
Good-night.

[Exeunt.

SCENE V.—The Same. JULIET’S Chamber.

Enter ROMEO and JULIET.

Jul. Wilt thou be gone? it is not yet near
day:
It was the nightingale, and not the lark,
That pierc’d the fearful hollow of thine ear;
Nightly she sings on yon pomegranate tree;
Believe me, love, it was the nightingale.
Rom. It was the lark, the herald of the morn,
No nightingale: look, love, what envious streaks
Do lace the severing clouds in yonder east:
Night’s candles are burnt out, and jocund day
Stands tiptoe on the misty mountain tops:
I must be gone and live, or stay and die.
Jul. You light is not daylight, I know it, I:

It is some meteor that the sun exhales,
To be to thee this night a torch-bearer,
And light thee on thy way to Mantua:
Therefore stay yet; thou need’st not to be gone.
Rom. Let me be ta’en, let me be put to
death;
I am content, so thou wilt have it so.
I’ll say you grey is not the morning’s eye,
’Tis but the pale reflex of Cynthia’s brow;
Nor that is not the lark, whose notes do beat
The vaulty heaven so high above our heads:
I have more care to stay than will to go:
Come, death, and welcome! Juliet wills it so.
How is ’t, my soul? let’s talk; it is not day.
Jul. It is, it is; his hence, be gone, away!
It is the lark that sings so out of tune,
Straining harsh discords and unpleasing sharps.
Some say the lark makes sweet division;
This doth not so, for she divideth us:
Some say the lark and loathed toad change
eyes;
O! now I would they had chang’d voices too,
Since arm from arm that voice doth us affray,
Hunting thee hence with hunte-up to the day.
O! now be gone; more light and light it grows.
Rom. More light and light; more dark and
dark our woes.

Enter Nurse.

Nurse. Madam!
Jul. Nurse!
Nurse. Your lady mother is coming to your
chamber:
The day is broke; be wary, look about. [Exit.
Jul. Then, window, let day in, and let life out.
Rom. Farewell, farewell! one kiss, and I’ll
descend. [Descends.
Jul. Art thou gone so? my lord, my love,
my friend!
I must hear from thee every day in the hour,
For in a minute there are many days:
O! by this count I shall be much in years
Ere I again behold my Romeo.
Rom. Farewell!
I will omit no opportunity
That may convey my greetings, love, to thee.
Jul. O! I think’st thou we shall ever meet
again?
Rom. I doubt it not; and all these woes shall
serve
For sweet discourses in our time to come.
Jul. O God! I have an ill-divining soul:
Methinks I see thee, now thou art so low,
As one dead in the bottom of a tomb:
Either my eyesight fails, or thou lookst pale.
Rom. And trust me, love, in my eye so do
you:
Dry sorrow drinks our blood. Adieu! adieu!

Jul. O fortune, fortune! all men call thee fickle:
If thou art fickle, what dost thou with him
That is renown'd for faith? Be fickle, fortune;
For then, I hope, thou wilt not keep him long,
But send him back.

Lady Cap. [Within.] Ho, daughter! are you up?

Jul. Who is’t that calls? is it my lady mother?
Is she not down so late, or up so early?
What unaccustom’d cause procures her hither?

Enter Lady Capulet.

Lady Cap. Why, how now, Juliet!

Jul. Madam, I am not well.

Lady Cap. Evermore weeping for your cousin’s death?

What! wilt thou wash him from his grave with tears?
And if thou couldst, thou couldst not make him live;
Therefore, have done: some grief shows much of love;
But much of grief shows still some want of wit.

Jul. Yet let me weep for such a feeling loss.

Lady Cap. So shall you feel the loss, but not the friend

Which you weep for.

Jul. Feeling so the loss,
I cannot choose but ever weep the friend.

Lady Cap. Well, girl, thou weep’st not so much for his death,
As that the villain lives which slaughter’d him.

Jul. What villain, madam?

Lady Cap. That same villain, Romeo.

Jul. [Aside.] Villain and he be many miles asunder.

God pardon him! I do, with all my heart;
And yet no man like he doth grieve my heart.

Lady Cap. That is because the traitor mur-derer lives.

Jul. Ay, madam, from the reach of these my hands.

Would none but I might venge my cousin’s death?

Lady Cap. We will have vengeance for it,

Then weep no more. I’ll send to one in Mantua,

Where that same banish’d runagate doth live;
Shall give him such an unaccustom’d dram
That he shall soon keep Tybalt company:
And then, I hope, thou wilt be satisfied.

Jul. Indeed, I never shall be satisfied.

With Romeo, till I behold him—dead—
Is my poor heart so for a kinsman vex’d:
Madam, if you could find out but a man To bear a poison, I would temper it,
That Romeo should, upon receipt thereof,
Soon sleep in quiet. Oh! how my heart abhors
To bear him nam’d, and cannot come to him,
To wreak the love I bore my cousin Tybalt
Upon his body that hath slaughter’d him.

Lady Cap. Find thou the means, and I’ll find such a man.

But now I’ll tell thee joyful tidings, girl.
Jul. And joy comes well in such a needy time:

What are they, I beseech your ladyship?

Lady Cap. Well, well, thou hast a careful father, child;
One who, to put thee from thy heaviness,
Hath sorted out a sudden day of joy
That thou expect’s not, nor I look’d not for.

Jul. Madam, in happy time, what day is that?

Lady Cap. Marry, my child, early next Thursday morn

The gallant, young, and noble gentleman,
The County Paris, at Saint Peter’s church,
Shall happily make thee there a joyful bride.

Jul. Now, by Saint Peter’s church, and Peter too,

He shall not make me there a joyful bride.
I wonder at this haste; that I must wed
Ere he that should be husband comes to woo.
I pray you, tell my lord and father, madam,
I will not marry yet; and, when I do, I swear,
It shall be Romeo, whom you know I hate,
Rather than Paris. These are news indeed!

Lady Cap. Here comes your father; tell him so yourself,
And see how he will take it at your hands.

Enter Capulet and Nurse.

Cap. When the sun sets, the air doth drizzle dew;
But for the sunset of my brother’s son
It rains downright.

How now! a conduit, girl? what! still in tears?
Evermore showering? In one little body
Thou counterfeit’st a bark, a sea, a wind;
For still thy eyes, which I may call the sea,
Do ebb and flow with tears; the bark thy body is,
Sailing in this salt flood; the winds, thy sighs;
Who, raging with thy tears, and they with them.
Without a sudden calm, will overset
Thy tempest-tossed body. How now, wife!
Have you deliver’d to her our decree?

Lady Cap. Ay, sir; but she will none, she gives you thanks.
I would the fool were married to her grave!
Cap. Soft! take me with you, take me with you, wife.

How! will she none? doth she not give us thanks?
Is she not proud? doth she not count her bless'd,
Unworthy as she is, that we have wrought.
So worthy a gentleman to be her bridgroom?
Jul. Not proud, you prove; but thankful, that you have:
Proud can I never be of what I hate;
But thankful even for hate, that is meant love.
Cap. How now! how now, chop-logic! What is this?

'Proud,' and 'I thank you,' and 'I thank you not;'
And yet 'not proud;' mistress minion, you,
Thank me no thankings, nor proud me no prouds,
But settle your fine joints against Thursday next,
To go with Paris to Saint Peter's church,
Or I will drag thee on a hurdle thither.

Out, you green-sickness carriyon, out, you baggage!

You tallow face!
Lady Cap. Fie, fie! what, are you mad?
Jul. Good father, I beseech you on my knees,
Hear me with patience but to speak a word.

Cap. Hang thee, young baggage! disobedient wretch!
I tell thee what, get thee to church o' Thursday,
Or never after look me in the face.

Speak not, reply not, do not answer me;
My fingers itch.—Wife, we scarce thought us bless'd
That God had lent us but this only child;
But now I see this one is too much,
And that we have a curse in having her.

Out on her, hilding!
Nurse. God in heaven bless her!

You are to blame, my lord, to rate her so.
Cap. And why, my lady wisdom? hold your tongue,

Good prudence; smatter with your gossip, go.

Nurse. I speak no treason.

Cap. Of God ye good den.

Nurse. May not one speak?
Cap. Peace, ye mumbling fool;
Utter your gravity o'er a gossip's bowl;
For here we need it not.

Lady Cap. You are too hot.

Cap. God's bread! it makes me mad.

Day, night, hour, tide, time, work, play;
Alone, in company, still my care hath been
To have her match'd; and having now provided
A gentleman of noble parentage,

Of fair demesnes, youthful, and nobly train'd,

Stuff'd, as they say, with honourable parts,

Proportion'd as one's thought would wish a man;

And then to have a wretched piling fool,
A whining mammet, in her fortune's tender,
To answer 'I'll not wed,' 'I cannot love,'
'I am too young,' 'I pray you, pardon me';

But, an you will not wed, I'll pardon you:
Graze where you will, you shall not house with me:

Look to 't, think on 't, I do not use to jest.
Thursday is near; lay hand on heart, advise.
An you be mine, I'll give you to my friend;
An you be not, hang, beg, starve, die in the streets,
For, by my soul, I'll ne'er acknowledge thee,
Nor what is mine shall never do thee good.

Trust to't, bethink you; I'll not be forsworn.

Jul. Is there no pity sitting in the clouds,
That sees into the bottom of my grief?
Of sweet my mother, cast me not away;

Delay this marriage for a month, a week;
Or, if you do not, make the bridal bed
In that dim monument where Tybalt lies.

Lady Cap. Talk not to me, for I'll not speak a word.

Do as thou wilt, for I have done with thee.[Exit.

Jul. O God! O nurse! how shall this be prevented?

My husband is on earth, my faith in heaven;
How shall that faith return again to earth,

Unless that husband send it me from heaven
By leaving earth? comfort me, counsel me.

Alack, alack! that heaven should practise stratagems
Upon so soft a subject as myself!

What sayst thou? hast thou not a word of joy?
Some comfort, nurse?

Nurse. Faith, here it is. Romeo

Is banished; and all the world to nothing
That he dares ne'er come back to challenge you;
Or, if he do, it needs must be by stealth.

Then, since the case so stands as now it doth,
I think it best you married with the county.

O! he's a lovely gentleman;

Romeo's a disheall to him: an eagle, madam,
Hath not so green, so quick, so fair an eye
As Paris hath. Behew my very heart,

I think you are happy in this second match,

For it excels your first; or if it did not,
Your first is dead; or 'twere as good he were,
As living here and you no use of him.

Jul. Speakest thou from thy heart?

Nurse. And from my soul too.

Or else beat them both.

Jul. Amens!
Nurse. What! 
Jul. Well, thou hast comforted me marvellous much.
Go in; and tell my lady I am gone,
Having displeas'd my father, to Laurence' cell,
To make confession and to be absolv'd. 233
Nurse. Marry, I will; and this is wisely done.
[Exit.]  
Jul. Ancient damnation! O most wicked fiend!
Is it more sin to wish me thus forsworn, 236
Or to dispraise my lord with that same tongue
Which she hath prais'd him with above compare
So many thousand times? Go, counsellor;
Thou and my bosom henceforth shall be twain.
I'll to the friar, to know his remedy: 241
If all else fail, myself have power to die. [Exit.]

ACT IV.

SCENE I.—Verona. Friar Laurence's Cell.

Enter Friar Laurence and Paris.

Fri. L. On Thursday, sir? the time is very short.
Par. My father Capulet will have it so;
And I am nothing slow to slack his haste.

Fri. L. You say you do not know the lady's mind:
Uneven is the course, I like it not.
Par. Immoderately she weeps for Tybalt's death,
And therefore have I little talk'd of love;
For Venus smiles not in a house of tears.
Now, sir, her father counts it dangerous
That she doth give her sorrow so much sway,
And in his wisdom hastens our marriage
To stop the inundation of her tears;
Which, too much minded by herself alone,
May be put from her by society.

Now do you know the reason of this haste.

Fri. L. [Aside.] I would I knew not why it should be slow'd. 16
Look, sir, here comes the lady towards my cell.

Enter JULIET.

Par. Happily met, my lady and my wife!  
Jul. That may be, sir, when I may be a wife.
Par. That may be must be, love, on Thursday next. 20

Jul. What must be shall be.

Fri. L. [Aside.] That's a certain text.
Par. Come you to make confession to this father? 23

Jul. To answer that, I should confess to you.
Par. Do not deny to him that thou love me.
Jul. I will confess to you that I love him. 25
Par. So will ye, I am sure, that thou love me.

Jul. If I do so, it will be of more price,
Being spoke behind your back, than to your face. 28

Par. Poor soul, thy face is much abus'd with tears.

Jul. The tears have got small victory by that;
For it was bad enough before their spite.

Par. Thou wrong'st it, more than tears, with that report.

Jul. That is no slander, sir, which is a truth;
And what I spake, I spake it to my face.

Par. Thy face is mine, and thou hast slander'd it.

Jul. It may be so, for it is not mine own. 36
Are you at leisure, holy father, now;
Or shall I come to you at evening mass?

Fri. L. My leisure serves me, pensive-daughter, now:
My lord, we must entreat the time alone. 40

Par. God shield, I should disturb devotion! Juliet, on Thursday early will I rouse you:
Till then, adieu; and keep this holy kiss. [Exit.

Jul. Of shut the door! and when thou hast done so,
Come weep with me; past hope, past cure, past help!

Fri. L. Ah! Juliet, I already know thy grief;
It strains me past the compass of my wits:
I hear thou must, and nothing may prorogue it,
On Thursday next be married to this county. 49

Jul. Tell me not, friar, that thou hear'st of this,
Unless thou tell me how I may prevent it:
If, in thy wisdom, thou canst give no help, 52
Do thou but call my resolution wise,
And with this knife I'll help it presently,
God join'd my heart and Romeo's, thou our hands;
And ere this hand, by thee to Romeo seal'd, 56
Shall be the label to another deed,
Or my true heart with treacherous revolt
Turn to another, this shall slay them both.
Therefore, out of thy long-experience'd time,
Give me some present counsel; or behold,
'Twist my extremities and me this bloody knife
Shall play the umpire, arbitrating that
Which the commission of thy years and art 64
Could to no issue of true honour bring.
Be not so long to speak; I long to die,
If what thou speak'st speak not of remedy.

Fri. L. Hold, daughter; I do spy a kind of hope;
Which cries as desperate an execution
As that is desperate which we would prevent.
If, rather than to marry County Paris,
Thou hast the strength of will to slay thyself, 73

908
Then is it likely thou wilt undertake
A thing like death to chide away this shame,
That cop’st with death himself to ’scape from it;
And, if thou dar’st, I’ll give thee remedy. 76

Jul. O! bid me leap, rather than marry
Paris,
From off the battlements of yonder tower;
Or walk in thievish ways; or bid me lurk
Where serpents are; chain me with roaring
bears; 80
Or shut me nightly in a charnel-house,
O’er-cover’d quite with dead men’s rattling
bones,
With reeky shanks, and yellow chapless skulls;
Or bid me go into a new-made grave.
And hide me with a dead man in his shroud.
Things that, to hear them told, have made me
tremble;
And I will do it without fear or doubt,
To live an unstaun’d wife to my sweet love. 88

Fri. L. Hold then; go home, be merry, give
consent
To marry Paris: Wednesday is to-morrow!
To-morrow night look that thou lie alone,
Let not thy nurse lie with thee in thy chamber:
Take thou this vial, being then in bed,
93
And this distilled liquor drink thou off;
When presently through all thy veins shall run
A cold and drowsy humour, for no pulse
Shall keep his native progress, but suecease;
No warmth, no breath, shall testify thou livest;
The roses in thy lips and cheeks shall fade
To paly ashes; thy eyes’ windows fall,
Like death, when he shuts up the day of life;
Each part, depriv’d of supple government,
Shall, stiff and stark and cold, appear like death;
And in this borrow’d likeness of shrunk death
Thou shalt continue two-and-forty hours,
And then awake as from a pleasant sleep.
Now, when the bridgroom in the morning
comes
To rouse thee from thy bed, there art thou dead:
Then—as the manner of our country is—
In thy best robes uncover’d on the bier,
Thou shalt be borne to that same ancient
vault
Where all the kindred of the Capulets lie. 112

In the mean time, against thou shalt awake,
Shall Romeo by my letters know our drift,
And bither shall he come; and he and I
Will watch thy waking, and that very night
Shall Romeo bear thee hence to Mantua.
And this shall free thee from this present shame;
If no unconstant toy, nor womanish fear,
Abate thy valour in the acting it. 116

Jul. Give me, give me! O! tell me not of
fear!

Fri. L. Hold; get you gone, be strong and
prosperous
In this resolve. I’ll send a friar with speed
To Mantua, with my letters to thy lord. 124

Jul. Love, give me strength! and strength
shall help afford.
Farewell, dear father!  [Exeunt.

SCENE II.—The Same. Hall in Capulet’s
House.

Enter CAPULET, LADY CAPULET, Nurse, and
Servingmen.

Cap. So many guests invite as here are writ.
[Exit Servant.

Sirrah, go hire me twenty cunning cooks.
Sec. Serv. You shall have none ill, sir; for
I’ll try if they can lick their fingers.
Cap. How canst thou try them so?
Sec. Serv. Marry, sir, ‘tis an ill cook that
cannot lick his own fingers: therefore he that
cannot lick his fingers goes not with me.

Cap. Go, be gone.  [Exit Second Servant.
We shall be much unfurnish’d for this time.
What is my daughter gone to Friar Laurence?
Nurse. Ay, forsooth.

Cap. Well, he may chance to do some good
on her:
A peevish self-will’d harlotry it is.
Nurse. See where she comes from shrift with
merry look.

Enter JULIET.

Cap. How now, my headstrong! where have
you been gadding?

Jul. Where I have learn’d me to repent the
sin
Of disobedient opposition
To you and your beheseth; and am enjoin’d
By holy Laurence to fall prostrate here,
And beg your pardon. Pardon, I beseech you!
Henceforward I am ever rul’d by you.

Cap. Send for the county; go tell him of
this:
I’ll have this knot knit up to-morrow morning.
Jul. I met the youthful lord at Laurence’
cell;

And gave him what became love I might,
Not stepping o’er the bounds of modesty.

Cap. Why, I’m glad on’t; this is well: stand
up:
This is as’t should be. Let me see the county;
Aye, marry, go, I say, and fetch him hither.
Now, afore God! this reverend holy friar,
All our whole city is much bound to him.

Jul. Nurse, will you go with me into my
closet?
To help me sort such needful ornaments
As you think fit to furnish me to-morrow? 36

Lady Cap. No, not till Thursday; there is
enough.

Cap. Go, nurse, go with her. We'll to church
to-morrow. [Exeunt JULIET and Nurse.

Lady Cap. We shall be short in our pro-
vision:
'Tis now near night.

Cap. Tush! I will stir about, 40
And all things shall be well, I warrant thee,
wife:
Go thou to Juliet, help to deck up her;
I'll not to bed to-night; let me alone;
I'll play the housewife for this once. What, ho!
They are all forth: well, I will walk myself
To County Paris; to prepare him up
Against to-morrow. My heart is wondrous
light,
Since this same wayward girl is so reclaim'd. 48

[Exeunt.

SCENE III.—The Same. JULIET’S Chamber.

Enter JULIET and Nurse.

Jul. Ay, those attires are best; but, gentle
nurse,
I pray thee, leave me to myself to-night;
For I have need of many orisons
To move the heavens to smile upon my state, 4
Which, well thou know'st, is cross and full of
sin.

Enter LADY CAPULET.

Lady Cap. What! are you busy, ho? need
you my help?

Jul. No, madam; we have cull'd such neces-

sary
As are behoefful for our state to-morrow:

So please you, let me now be left alone,
And let the nurse this night sit up with you;
For, I am sure, you have your hands full all
In this so sudden business.

Lady Cap. Good-night: 12

Get thee to bed, and rest; for thou hast need.

[Exeunt LADY CAPULET and Nurse.

Jul. Farewell! God knows when we shall
meet again.

I have a faint cold; fear thrills through my
veins,
That almost freezes up the heat of life:
I'll call them back again to comfort me:
Nurse! What should she do here?

My dismal scene I needs must act alone.
Come, vial.

What if this mixture do not work at all?
Shall I be married than to-morrow morning?

No, no; this shall forbode it: lie thou there.
[laying down a dagger.

What if it be a poison, which the friar 24
Subly hath minister'd to have me dead,
Lest in this marriage he should be dishonour'd
Because he married me before to Romeo?
I fear it is; and yet, methinks, it should not, 28
For he hath still been tried a holy man.
I will not enter so bad a thought.
How if, when I am laid into the tomb,
I wake before the time that Romeo 32
Come to redeem me? there's a fearful point!
Shall I not then be stifled in the vault,
To whose foul mouth no healthsome air
breathes in,
And there die strangled ere my Romeo comes?
Or, if I live, is it not very like,
The horrible conceit of death and night,
Together with the terror of the place,
As in a vault, an ancient receptacle, 40
Where, for these many hundred years, the
bones
Of all my buried ancestors are pack'd;
Where bloody Tybalt, yet but green in earth,
Lies festering in his shroud; where, as they
say,
At some hours in the night spirits resort:
Alack, alack! is it not like that I,
So early waking, what with loathsome smells,
And shrieks like mandrakes torn out of the
earth,

That living mortals, hearing them, run mad:
O! if I wake, shall I not be distraught,
Environed with all these hideous fears,
And madly play with my forefathers' joints, 52
And pluck the mangled Tybalt from his shroud?
And, in this rage, with some great kinsman's
bone,
As with a club, dash out my desperate brains?
O, look! methinks I see my cousin's ghost 56
Seeking out Romeo, that did spit his body
Upon a rapier's point. Stay, Tybalt, stay!
Romeo, I come! this do I drink to thee.
[She falls upon her bed within the curtains.

SCENE IV.—The Same. Hall in CAPULET's
House.

Enter LADY CAPULET and Nurse.

Lady Cap. Hold, take these keys, and fetch
more spices, nurse.

Nurse. They call for dates and quinces in
the pastry.

Enter CAPULET.

Cap. Come, stir, stir, stir; the second cook
 hath crow'd,

The curfew bell hath rang, 'tis three o'clock:
Look to the bak’d meats, good Angelica: 
Spare not for cost.

*Nurse.* 
Go, go, you cot-quean, go; 
Get you to bed; faith, you’ll be sick to-morrow 
For this night’s watching.

*Cap.* No, not a whit; what! I have watch’d 
ere now
All night for lesser cause, and ne’er been sick.

*Lady Cap.* Ay, you have been a mouse-hunt 
in your time;
But I will watch you from such watching now.

[Exeunt *LADY CAPULET* and Nurse.

*Cap.* A jealous-hood, a jealous-hood!

Enter three or four Serving-men, with spits, 
logs, and baskets.

Now, fellow, 13

What’s there?

*First Serv.* Things for the cook, sir; but I know not what.

*Cap.* Make haste, make haste. [*Exit first Serving-man.*] Sirrah, fetch drier logs: 16
Call Peter, he will show thee where they are.

*Sec. Serv.* I have a head, sir, that will find out logs, 
And never trouble Peter for the matter. [*Exit."

*Cap.* Mass, and well said; a merry whore- 
son, ha!

Thou shalt be logger-head. Good faith! ’tis 
day:
The county will be here with music straight, 
For so he said he would. [*Music within.*] I hear
him near.

*Nurse.* Wife! what, ho! What, nurse, I say!

Re-enter Nurse.

Go waken Juliet, go and trim her up; 25
I’ll go and chat with Paris. Hie, make haste, 
Make haste; the bridegroom he is come 
already:

Make haste, I say.  [Exeunt.

SCENE V.—The Same. JULIET’S Chamber.

Enter Nurse.

*Nurse.* Mistress! what, mistress! Juliet! fast, 
I warrant her, she;
Why, lamb! why, lady! fie, you slug-a-bed!
Why, love, I say! madam! sweet-heart! why, 
bride!

What! not a word? you take your pennyworths 
now:

Sleep for a week; for the next night, I warrant, 
The County Paris hath set up his rest, 
That you shall rest but little. God forgive 
me,

Marry, and, amen, how sound is she asleep! 8

I needs must wake her. Madam, madam, 
madam!

Ay, let the county take you in your bed; 
He’ll fright you up, i’ faith. Will it not be?

What, dress’d! and in your clothes! and down 
again!

I must needs wake you. Lady! lady! lady!

Alas! alas! Help! help! my lady’s dead!

O! well-a-day, that ever I was born.

Some *aqua-vite*, ho! My lord! my lady! 16

*Enter Lady Capulet.*

*Lady Cap.* What noise is here?

*Nurse.* O lamentable day!

*Lady Cap.* What is the matter?

*Nurse.* Look, look! O heavy day!

*Lady Cap.* O me, O me! my child, my only 
life,
Revive, look up, or I will die with thee! 20

Help, help! Call help.

*Enter Capulet.*

*Cap.* For shame! bring Juliet forth; her 
Lord is come.

*Nurse.* She’s dead, deceas’d, she’s dead; 
Alack the day!

*Lady Cap.* Alack the day! she’s dead, she’s 
dead! she’s dead!

*Cap.* Ha! let me see her. Out, alas! she’s 
cold;

Her blood is settled, and her joints are stiff;
Life and these lips have long been separated:
Death lies on her like an untimely frost 26

Upon the sweetest flower of all the field.

*Nurse.* O lamentable day!

*Lady Cap.* O woeful time!

*Cap.* Death, that hath ta’en her hence to 
make me wail,

Ties up my tongue, and will not let me speak. 33

*Enter Friar Laurence, and Paris, with 
Musicians.*

*Fri. L.* Come, is the bride ready to go to 
Church?

*Cap.* Ready to go, but never to return.

O son! the night before thy wedding-day

Hath Death lain with thy wife. There she 
lies, 36

Flower as she was, deflowered by him.

Death is my son-in-law, Death is my heir;

My daughter he hath wedded: I will die, 
And leave him all; life, living, all is Death’s! 40

*Par.* Have I thought long to see this morn-
ing’s face;

And doth it give me such a sight as this?

*Lady Cap.* Accurs’d, unhappy, wretched, 
hateful-day!
Most miserable hour, that e’er time saw
In lasting labour of his pilgrimage!
But one, poor one, one poor and loving child,
But one thing to rejoice and solace in,
And cruel death hath catch’d it from my sight!

Nurse. O woel! O woeful, woeful, woeful day!

Most lamentable day, most woeful day,
That ever, ever, I did Yet behold!
O day! O day! O day! O hateful day!

Never was seen so black a day as this:
O woeful day, O woeful day!

Par. Beguil’d, divorced, wronged, spited, slain!

Most dearest death, by thee beguil’d,

By cruel cruel thee quite overthrown!
O love! O life! not life, but love in death!

Cap. Despis’d, distressed, hated, martyr’d, kill’d!

Uncomfortable time, why cam’st thou now
To murder, murder our solemnity?
O child! O child! my soul, and not my child!
Dead art thou! dead! alack, my child is dead;
And with my child my joys are buried!

Fri. L. Peace, ho! for shame! confusion’s
cure lives not

In these confusions. Heaven and yourself
Had part in this fair maid; now heaven hath all,
And all the better is it for the maid:
Your part in her you could not keep from

But heaven keeps his part in eternal life.
The most you sought was her promotion,
For ’twas your heaven she should be advanc’d;
And weep ye now, seeing she is advances.

Above the clouds, as high as heaven itself?
O! in this love, you love your child so ill,
That you run mad, seeing that she is well:
She’s not well married that lives married long;

But she’s best married that dies married young.

Dry up your tears, and stick your rosemery
On this fair corse; and, as the custom is,
In all her best array bear her to church;
For though fond nature bids us all lament,
Yet nature’s tears are reason’s merriment.

Cap. All things that we ordained festival,

Turn from their office to black funeral;
Our instruments to melancholy bells,
Our wedding cheer to a sad burial feast,
Our solemn hymns to sullen dirges change,
Our bridal flowers serve for a buried corse,
And all things change them to the contrary.

Fri. L. Sir, go you in; and, madam, go with him;
And go, Sir Paris; every one prepare.
sound,' because musicians have no gold for
sounding:

Then music with her silver sound
With speedy help doth lend redress.

[Exit.

First Mus. What a pestilent knave is this
same!

Sec. Mus. Hang him, Jack! Come, we'll in
here; tarry for the mourners, and stay dinner.

[Exeunt.

ACT V.

SCENE I.—Mantua. A Street.

Enter ROMEO.

Rom. If I may trust the flattering truth of
sleep,
My dreams presage some joyful news at hand:
My bosom's lord sits lightly in his throne;
And all this day an unaccust'md spirit
Lifts me above the ground with cheerful
thoughts.
I dream my lady came and found me dead;—
Strange dream, that gives a dead man leave to
think,—
And breath'd such life with kisses in my lips,
That I reviv'd, and was an emperor.
Ah me! how sweet is love itself possess'd,
When but love's shadows are so rich in joy!

Enter Balthasar, booted.

News from Verona! How now, Balthasar? 12
Dost thou not bring me letters from the friar?
How doth my lady? Is my father well?
How fares my Juliet? That I ask again;
For nothing can be ill if she be well. 16

Bal. Then she is well, and nothing can be ill;
Her body sleeps in Capel's monument,
And her immortal part with angels lives.
I saw her laid low in her kindred's vault, 20
And presently took post to tell it you.
O! pardon me for bringing these ill news,
Since you did leave it for my office, sir.

Rom. Is it even so? then I defy you, stars!
Thou know'st my lodging: get me ink and
paper,
And hire post-horses; I will hence to-night.

Bal. I do beseech you, sir, have patience:
Your looks are pale and wild, and do import 28
Some misadventure.

Rom. Tush, thou art deceiv'd;
Leave me, and do the thing I bid thee do.
Hast thou no letters to me from the friar?

Bal. No, my good lord.

Rom. No matter; get thee gone, 32
And hire those horses: I'll be with thee straight.

[Exit Balthasar.

Well, Juliet, I will be with thee to-night.
Let's see for means: O mischief! thou art swift
To enter in the thoughts of desperate men. 36
I do remember an apothecary,
And hereabout he dwells, which late I noted
In tatter'd weeds, with overwhelming browns,
Culling of simples; meagre were his looks, 40
Sharp misery had worn him to the bones:
And in his needy shop a tortoise hung,
An alligator stuff'd, and other skins
Of ill-ship'd fishes; and about his shelves
A beggarly account of empty boxes,
Green earthen pots, bladders, and musty seeds,
Remnants of packthread, and old cakes of roses,
Were thinly scatter'd, to make up a show. 48
Noting this penury, to myself I said
An if a man did need a poison now,
Whose sale is present death in Mantua,
Here lives a caitiff wretch would sell it him. 52
O! this same thought did but fore-run my need,
And this same needy man must sell it me.
As I remember, this should be the house:
Being holiday, the beggar's shop is shut. 56
What, hol apothecary!

Enter Apothecary.

Ap. Who calls so loud?
Rom. Come hither, man. I see that thou art
poor;
Hold, there are forty ducats; let me have
A dram of poison, such soon-speeding gear 60
As will disperse itself through all the veins
That the life-wearyaker may fall dead,
And that the trunk may be discharg'd of breath:
As violently as hasty powder fir'd 64
Doth hurry from the fatal cannon's womb.

Ap. Such mortal drugs I have; but Mantua's
law
Is death to any he that utter's them.

Rom. Art thou so bare, and full of wretched-
ness,
And fear'st to die? famine is in thy cheeks,
Need and oppression starveth in thine eyes,
Contempt and beggary hang upon thy back;
The world is not thy friend nor the world's law:
The world affords no law to make thee rich; 73
Then be not poor, but break it, and take this.

Ap. My poverty, but not my will, consents.
Rom. I pay thy poverty, and not thy will. 76
Ap. Put this in any liquid thing you will,
And drink it off; and, if you had the strength
Of twenty men, it would dispatch you straight.
Rom. There is thy gold, worse poison to
men's souls,

Doing more murders in this loathsome world—
Than these poor compounds that thou mayst
not sell:
I sell thee poison, thou hast sold me none.  
Farewell; buy food, and get thyself in flesh. 84  
Come, cordial and not poison, go with me  
To Juliet’s grave, for there must I use thee.  

[Exeunt.

SCENE II.—Verona. Friar Laurence’s Cell.  
Enter Friar John.  
Fri. J. Holy Franciscan friar! brother, hol!  

Enter Friar Laurence.  
Fri. L. This same should be the voice of  
Friar John.  
Welcome from Mantua: what says Romeo?  
Or, if his mind be writ, give me his letter.  
Fri. J. Going to find a bare-foot brother out,  
One of our order, to associate me,  
Here in this city visiting the sick,  
And finding him, the searchers of the town,  
Suspecting that we both were in a house  
Where the infectious pestilence did reign,  
Seal’d up the doors, and would not let us forth;  
So that my speed to Mantua there was stay’d.  
Fri. L. Who bare my letter then to Romeo?  
Fri. J. I could not send it, here it is again,  
Nor get a messenger to bring it thee,  
So fearful were they of infection.  
Fri. L. Unhappy fortune! by my brotherhood,  
The letter was not nice, but full of charge  
Of dear import; and the neglecting it  
May do much danger. Friar John, go hence;  
Get me an iron crow, and bring it straight  
Unto my cell.  
Fri. J. Brother, I’ll go and bring it thee.  

[Exit.  
Fri. L. Now must I to the monument alone;  
Within these three hours will fair Juliet wake:  
She will beshrew me much that Romeo  
Hath had no notice of these accidents;  
But I will write again to Mantua,  
And keep her at my cell till Romeo come:  
Poor living orse, clos’d in a dead man’s tomb!  

[Exit.

SCENE III.—The Same. A Churchyard; in it  
a Monument belonging to the Capulets.  
Enter Paris, and his Page, bearing flowers and  
a torch.  
Par. Give me thy torch, boy: hence, and  
stand aloof;  
Yet put it out; for I would not be seen.  
Under yond yew-trees lay thee all along,  
Holding thine ear close to the hollow ground:  

So shall no foot upon the churchyard tread,  
Being loose, unfirm with digging up of graves,  
But thou shalt hear it: whistle then to me,  
As signal that thou hear’st something approach.  
Give me those flowers. Do as I bid thee; go.  

Page. [Aside.] I am almost afraid to stand alone  
Here in the churchyard; yet I will adventure.  
[Retires.  
Par. Sweet flower, with flowers thy bridal  
bed I strew,  
O woel thy canopy is dust and stones;  
Which with sweet water nightly I will dew,  
Or, wanting that, with tears distill’d by  
moans:  
The obsequies that I for thee will keep  
Nightly shall be to strew thy grave and weep.  
[The Page whistles.  
The boy gives warning something doth approach.  
What cursed foot wanders this way to-night,  
To cross my obsequies and true love’s rite?  
What! with a torch?—muffle me, night, awhile.  
[Retires.  

Enter Romeo and Balthasar, with a torch,  
mattlock, &c.  
Rom. Give me that mattlock, and the wrenching iron.  
Hold, take this letter; early in the morning  
See thou deliver it to my lord and father.  
Give me the light: upon thy life I charge thee,  
Whate’er thou hear’st or seest, stand all aloof,  
And do not interrupt me in my course.  
Why I descend into this bed of death,  
Is partly, to behold my lady’s face;  
But chiefly to take thence from her dead finger  
A precious ring, a ring that I must use  
In dear employment: therefore hence, be gone:  
But, if thou, jealous, dost return to pry  
In what I further shall intent to do,  
By heaven, I will tear thee joint by joint,  
And strew this hungry churchyard with thy limbs.  
The time and my intents are savage-wild,  
More fierce and more inexorable far  
Than empty tigers or the roaring sea.  
Bal. I will be gone, sir, and not trouble you.  
Rom. So shalt thou show me friendship.  
Take thou that:  
Live, and be prosperous; and farewell, good fellow.  
Bal. [Aside.] For all this same, I’ll hide me  
here about:  
His looks I fear, and his intents I doubt.  
[Retires.
Romeo and Juliet

Act V, Sc. III.

Rom. Thou detestable maw, thou womb of death,
Gorg'd with the dearest morsel of the earth,
Thus I enforce thy rotten jaws to open,

[Opens the tomb.]

And, in despite, I'll cram thee with more food!
Par. This is that banish'd haughty Montague,
That murder’d my love’s cousin, with which grief
It is supposed the fair creature died;
And here is come to do some villainous shame
To the dead bodies: I will apprehend him.—

[Comes forward.]

Stop thy unhallow’d toil, vile Montague,
Can vengeance be pursu’d further than death?
Condemned villain, I do apprehend thee.
Obey, and go with me; for thou must die.

Rom. I must, indeed; and therefore came I hither.
Good gentle youth, tempt not a desperate man;
Fly hence and leave me: think upon these gone;
Let them affright thee. I beseech thee, youth,
Put not another sin upon my head
By urging me to fury: O! be gone;
By heaven, I love thee better than myself.
For I come hither arm’d against myself:
Stay not, be gone; live, and hereafter say
A madman’s mercy bade thee run away.

Par. I do defy thy conjurations,
And apprehend thee for a felon here.

Rom. Wilt thou provoke me? then have at thee, boy!

[They fight.]

Page. O Lord! they fight: I will go call the watch.

[Exit.]

Par. [Falls.] O, I am slain! — If thou be merciful,

Open the tomb, lay me with Juliet.

Rom. In faith, I will. Let me peruse this face:
Mercutio’s kinsman, noble County Paris!
What said my man when my betossed soul
Did not attend him as we rode? I think
He told me Paris should have married Juliet:
Said he not so? or did I dream it so?
Or am I mad, hearing him talk of Juliet,
To think it was so? O! give me thy hand,
One writ with me in sour misfortune’s book:
I’ll bury thee in a triumphant grave;
A grave? O, no! a lantern, slaughter’d youth,
For here lies Juliet, and her beauty makes
This vault a feasting presence full of light.
Death, lie thou there, by a dead man inter’d,

[Lyng Paris in the tomb.

How oft when men are at the point of death
Have they been merry! which their keepers call
A lightning before death: O! how may I
Call this a lightning? O my love! my wife!

Death, that hath suck’d the honey of thy breath,
Hath had no power yet upon thy beauty:
Thou art not conquer’d; beauty’s ensign yet
Is crimson in thy lips and in thy cheeks,
And death’s pale flag is not advanced there.
Tybalt, liest thou there in thy bloody sheath?
O! what more favour can I do to thee,
Than with that hand that cut thy youth in twain
To sunder his that was thine enemy?
Forgive me, cousin! Ah! dear Juliet,
Why art thou yet so fair? Shall I believe
That unsubstantial Death is amorous,
And that the lean abhorred monster keeps
Thee here in dark to be his paramour?
For fear of that I still will stay with thee,
And never from this palace of dim night
Depart again: here, here will I remain
With worms that are thy chambermaids; O! here
Will I set up my everlasting rest,
And shake the yoke of inauspicious stars
From this world-wearied flesh. Eyes, look your last!
Arms, take your last embrace! and, lips, O you
The doors of breath, seal with a righteous kiss
A dateless bargain to engrossing death!
Come, bitter conduct, come, unsavoury guide!
Thou desperate pilot, now at once run on
The dashing rocks thy sea-sick weary bark!
Here’s to my love! [Drinks.] O true apothecary!
Thy drugs are quick. Thus with a kiss I die.

[Dies.]

Enter, at the other end of the Churchyard,
Friar Laurence, with a lanthorn, crow,
and spade.

Fri. L. Saint Francis be my speed! how oft
to-night
Have my old feet stumbled at graves! Who’s there?
Bal. Here’s one, a friend, and one that
knows you well.

Fri. L. Blisse be upon you! Tell me, good my friend,
What torch is yond, that vainly lends his light
To grubs and eyeless skulls? so I discern,
It burneth in the Capel’s monument.
Bal. It doth so, holy sir; and there’s my master,

One that you love.

Fri. L. Who is it?
Bal. Romeo.

Fri. L. How long hath he been there?
Bal. Full half an hour.

Fri. L. Go with me to the vault.
Bal. I dare not, sir.
My master knows not but I am gone hence; 132
And fearfully did menace me with death
If I did stay to look on his intents.

Fri. L. Stay then, I'll go alone. Fear comes
upon me;
O! much I fear some ill unlucky thing. 136

Bal. As I did sleep under this yew-tree here,
I dream'd my master and another fought,
And that my master slew him.

Fri. L. [Advances.] Romeo!
Alack, alack! what blood is this which stains 140
The stony entrance of this sepulchre?
What mean these masterless and gory swords
To lie discolor'd by this place of peace?

[Enters the tomb.

Romeo! O, pale! Who else? what! Paris too?
And sleep'd in blood? Ah! what an unkind hour
Is guilty of this lamentable chance.
The lady stirs. [JULIET wakes.

Jul. O, comfortable friar! where is my lord?
I do remember well where I should be, 149
And there I am. Where is my Romeo?

[Noise within.

Fri. L. I hear some noise. Lady, come from
that nest
Of death, contagion, and unnatural sleep: 152
A greater power than we can contradict
Hath thwart'd our intents: come, come away.
Thy husband in thy bosom there lies dead;
And Paris too: come, I'll dispose of thee
Among a sisterhood of holy nuns.
Stay not to question, for the watch is coming;
Come, go, good Juliet.—[Noise again.] I dare
no longer stay.

Jul. Go, get thee hence, for I will not away.

[Exit FRIAR LAURENCE.

What's here? a cup, clos'd in my true love's hand?
Poison, I see, hath been his timeless end.
O churl! drunk all, and left no friendly drop
To help me after! I will kiss thy lips; 164
Haply, some poison yet doth hang on him,
To make me die with a restorative. [Kisses him.
Thy lips are warm!

First Watch. [Within.] Lead, boy: which way?

Jul. Yes, noise? then I'll be brief. O happy
dagger! 170
[Snatching ROMEO's dagger.
This is sheath; [Slabs herself.] there rest,
and let me die.

[Dies on ROMEO's body and dies.

Enter Watch, with the Page of Paris.

Page. This is the place; there where the
torch doth burn.

First Watch. The ground is bloody; search
about the churchyard.

Go, some of you; whose'er you find, attach.

[Exeunt some of the Watch.

Pitiful sight! here lies the county slain,
And Juliet bleeding, warm, and newly dead,
Who here hath lain these two days buried. 176
Go, tell the prince, run to the Capulets,
Raise up the Montagues, some others search:
[Exeunt others of the Watch.

We see the ground whereon these woes do lie;
But the true ground of all these piteous woes
We cannot without circumstance descry. 181

Re-enter some of the Watch, with BAL-
THASAR.

Sec. Watch. Here's Romeo's man; we found
him in the churchyard.

First Watch. Hold him in safety, till the
prince come hither.

Re-enter other of the Watch, with FRIAR
LAURENCE.

Third Watch. Here is a friar, that trembles,
sighs, and weeps;
We took this mattock and this spade from him,
As he was coming from this churchyard side.

First Watch. A great suspicion: stay the
friar too.

Enter the PRINCE and Attendants.

Prince. What misadventure is so early up,
That calls our person from our morning's rest?

Enter CAPULET, LADY CAPULET, and Others.

Cap. What should it be, that they so shriek abroad?

Lady Cap. The people in the street cry
Romeo,
Some Juliet, and some Paris; and all run
With open outcry toward our monument.

Prince. What fear is this which startles in
our ears?

First Watch. Sovereign, here lies the County
Paris slain;
And Romeo dead; and Juliet, dead before, 196
Warm and new kill'd.

Prince. Search, seek, and know how this foul
murder comes.

First Watch. Here is a friar, and slaught'ring
Romeo's man;
With instruments upon them, fit to open
These dead men's tombs.

Cap. O, heaven!—O wise! look how our
daughter bleeds!

This dagger hath mista'en!—for, lo, his house
Is empty on the back of Montague—

And is mis-sheathed in my daughter's bosom.
Lady Cap. O me! this sight of death is as a bell,
That warns my old age to a sepulchre.

Enter Montague and Others.

Prince. Come, Montague: for thou art early up,
To see thy son and heir more early down.

Mon. Alas! my liege, my wife is dead to-night;
Grief of my son’s exile hath stopp’d her breath.
What further woe conspires against mine age?

Prince. Look, and thou shalt see.

Mon. O thou untaught! what manners is in this,
To press before thy father to a grave?

Prince. Seal up the mouth of outrage for a while,
Till we can clear these ambiguities,
And know their spring, their head, their true descent;
And then will I be general of your woes,
And lead you even to death: meantime forbear,
And let mischance be slave to patience.
Bring forth the parties of suspicion.

Fri. L. I am the greatest, able to do least,
Yet most suspected, as the time and place
Doth make against me, of this direful murder;
And here I stand, both to impeach and purge
Myself condemned and myself excus’d.

Prince. Then say at once what thou dost know in this.

Fri. L. I will be brief, for my short date of breath
Is not so long as is a tedious tale.
Romeo, there dead, was husband to that Juliet;
And she, there dead, that Romeo’s faithful wife:
I married them; and their stolen marriage-day
Was Tybalt’s doomsday, whose untimely death
Banish’d the new-made bridgroom from this city;
For whom, and not for Tybalt, Juliet pin’d.
You, to remove that siege of grief from her,
Betroth’d, and would have married her forsooth,
To County Paris: then comes she to me, and,
With wild looks bid me devise some mean
To rid her from this second marriage,
Or in my cell there would she kill herself.
Then gave I her,—so tutor’d by my art,—
A sleeping potion; which so took effect
As I intended, for it wrought on her
The form of death: meantime I writ to Romeo
That he should hither come as this dire night.

To help to take her from her borrow’d grave,
Being the time the potion’s force should cease.
But he which bore my letter, Friar John,
Was stay’d by accident, and yesternight
Return’d my letter back. Then, all alone,
At the prefixed hour of her waking,
Came I to take her from her kindred’s vault,
Meaning to keep her closely at my cell,
Till I conveniently could send to Romeo:
But, when I came,—some minute ere the time
Of her awakening,—here untimely lay
The noble Paris and true Romeo dead.
She wakes; and I entreated her come forth,
And bear this work of heaven with patience;
But then a noise did scare me from the tomb,
And she, too desperate, would not go with me,
But, as it seems, did violence on herself.
All this I know; and to the marriage
Her nurse is privy: and, if aught in this
Miscarried by my fault, let my old life
Be sacrific’d, some hour before his time,
Unto the rigour of severest law.

Prince. We still have known thee for a holy man.
Where’s Romeo’s man? what can he say in this?

Bal. I brought my master news of Juliet’s death;
And then in post he came from Mantua
To this same place, to this same monument.
This letter he early bid me give his father,
And threaten’d me with death, going in the vault,
If I departed not and left him there.

Prince. Give me the letter; I will look on it.
Where is the county’s page that rais’d the watch?
Sirrah, what made your master in this place?

Page. He came with flowers to strew his lady’s grave,
And bid me stand aloof, and so I did;
Anon, comes one with light to ope the tomb;
And by and by my master drew on him;
And then I ran away to call the watch.

Prince. This letter doth make good the friar’s words,
Their course of love, the tidings of her death:
And here he writes that he did buy a poison
Of a poor |pothecary, and therewithal
Came to this vault to die, and lie with Juliet.
Where be these enemies?—Capulet! Montague!
See what a scourge is laid upon your hate,
That heaven finds means to kill your joys with love;
And I, for winking at your discords too,
Have lost a brace of kinamen: all are punish'd.
Cap. O brother Montague! give me thy hand:
This is my daughter's jointure, for no more
Can I demand.
Mon. But I can give thee more;
For I will raise her statue in pure gold;
That while Verona by that name is known.
There shall no figure at such rate be set

As that of true and faithful Juliet.
Cap. As rich shall Romeo by his lady lie;
Poor sacrifices of our enmity!
Prince. A glooming peace this morning with it brings;
The sun, for sorrow, will not show his head:
Go hence, to have more talk of these sad things:
Some shall be pardon'd, and some punished:
For never was a story of more woe
Than this of Juliet and her Romeo. [Exeunt.
TIMON OF ATHENS

DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

TIMON, a noble Athenian.
LUCIUS,
LUCULLUS, flattering Lords.
SEMPRONIUS,
VENTIDIUS, one of Timon’s false Friends.
APEMANTUS, a churlish Philosopher.
ALCIBIADES, an Athenian Captain.
FLAVIUS, Steward to Timon.
FLAMINIUS,
LUCILIUS, Servants to Timon.
SERVILIUS,
CAPHIS,
PHILOTUS,
TITUS,
LUCIUS,
HORTENSIUS, Servants to Timon’s Creditors.
Servants of Ventidius, and of Varro and Isidore (two of Timon’s Creditors).
Three Strangers.
An Old Athenian.
A Page.
A Fool.
Poet, Painter, Jeweller, and Merchant.

PHRYNIA,
TIMANDRA, Mistresses to Alcibiades.

Lords, Senators, Officers, Soldiers, Thieves, and Attendants.
CUPID and Amazons in the Masque.

SCENE.—Athens, and the neighbouring Woods.

— ACT I.


Enter Poet, Painter, Jeweller, Merchant, and Others, at several doors.

Poet. Good day, sir.

Pain. I am glad you’re well.

Poet. I have not seen you long. How goes the world?

Pain. It wears, sir, as it grows.

Poet. Ay, that’s well known; but what particular rarity? what strange, which manifold record not matches? See, magic of bounty! all these spirits thy power hath conjur’d to attend. I know the merchant.

Pain. I know them both; th’ other’s a jeweller.

Mer. ’Tis a worthy lord.

Jew. Nay, that’s most fix’d.

Mer. A most incomparable man, breath’d as it were, to an untirable and continual goodness:

He passes.

Jew. I have a jewel here—

Mer. ’Tis a good piece.

Poet. ’Tis a good piece.

Poet. So ’tis: this comes off well and excellent.

Pain. Indifferent.

Poet. Admirable! How this grace speaks his own standing! what a mental power this eye shoots forth! how big imagination moves in this lip! to the dumbness of the gesture, one might interpret.

Pain. ’Tis a pretty mocking of the life.

Here is a touch; is ’t good?
I'll say of it,
It tutors nature; artificial strife
Lives in these touches, livelier than life.

Enter certain Senators, who pass over the stage.

Pain. How this lord is follow'd!

Poen. The senators of Athens: happy man!

Pain. Look, more!

Poen. You see this confuseness, this great

flood of visitors.

I have, in this rough work, shap'd out a man,
Whom this beneath world doth embrace and hug
With ampest entertainment: my free drift
Halts not particularly, but moves itself
In a wide sea of wax: no levell'd malice
Infests one comma in the course I hold;
But flies an eagle flight, bold and forth on,
Leaving no tract behind.

Pain. How shall I understand you?

Poen. I will unbolt to you.
You see how all conditions, how all minds—
As well of glib and slippery creatures as
Of grave and austere quality—tender down
Their services to Lord Timon: his large fortune,
Upon his good and gracious nature hanging,
Subdues and properties to his love and tendance
All sorts of hearts; yea, from the glass-fac'd

flatterer

To Apemantus, that few things loves better

Than to abhor himself: even he drops down
The knee before him and returns in peace
Most rich in Timon's nod.

Pain. I saw them speak together.

Poen. Sir, I have upon a high and pleasant

hill

Feign'd Fortune to be thron'd: the base o' the

mount

Is rank'd with all deserts, all kind of natures,
That labour on the bosom of this sphere
To propagate their states: amongst them all;
Whose eyes are on this sovereign lady fix'd,
One do I personate of Lord Timon's frame,
Whom Fortune with her ivory hand wafts to

her;

Whose present grace to present slaves and

servants

Translates his rivals.

Pain. 'Tis conceiv'd to scope.

This throne, this Fortune, and this hill, methinks,

With one man beckon'd from the rest below,

Bow'd his head against the steepy mount

To climb his happiness, would be well express'd

In our condition.

Poen. Nay, sir, but hear me on.

All those which were his fellows but of late,
Old Ath. This fellow here, Lord Timon, this thy creature, by night frequents my house. I am a man that from my first have been inclin’d to thrist, and my estate deserves an heir more rais’d than one which holds a trencher.

Tim. Well; what further? One only daughter have I, no kin else, on whom I may confer what I have got; the maid is fair, o’ the youngest for a bride, and I have bred her at my dearest cost in qualities of the best. This man of thine attempts her love: I prithee, noble lord, join with me to forbid her resort; myself have spoke in vain.

Tim. The man is honest.

Old Ath. Therefore he will be, Timon: his honesty rewards him in itself; it must not bear my daughter.

Tim. Does she love him?

Old Ath. She is young and apt: our own precedent passions do instruct us what levity’s in youth.

Tim. [To Lucilius.] Love you the maid? Luc. Ay, my good lord, and she accepts of it. Old Ath. If in her marriage my consent be missing, I call the gods to witness, I will choose mine heir from forth the beggars of the world, and dispossess her all.

Tim. How shall she be endow’d, if she be mated with an equal husband? Three talents on the present; in future, all.

Tim. This gentleman of mine hath serv’d me long: to build his fortune I will strain a little, for ‘tis a bond in men. Give him thy daughter; what thou bestow, in him I’ll counterpoise, and make him weigh with her.

Old Ath. Most noble lord, pawn me to this your honour, she is his.

Tim. My hand to thee; mine honour on my promise.

Luc. Humbly I thank your lordship; never may that state or fortune fall into my keeping which is not ow’d to you.

[Exeunt Lucilius and Old Athenian.]

Post. Vouchsafe my labour, and long live your lordship! Tim. I thank you; you shall hear from me anon: go not away. What have you there, my friend? Pain. A piece of painting, which I do beseech your lordship to accept.

Tim. Painting is welcome. The painting is almost the natural man; for since dishonour traffics with man’s nature, he is but outside: these pencil’d figures are even such as they give out. I like your work, and you shall find I like it: wait attendance till you hear further from me.

Pain. The gods preserve you! Tim. Well fare you, gentleman: give me your hand;

Jew. What, my lord! dispraise?

Tim. A mere satiety of commendations. If I should pay you for ‘t as ’tis extoll’d, it would unclaw me quite.

Jew. My lord, ’tis rated as those which sell would give: but you well know, things of like value, differing in the owners, are prized by their masters. Believe ’t, dear lord, you mend the jewel by the wearing it.

Tim. Well mock’d.

Mer. No, my good lord; he speaks the common tongue, which all men speak with him.

Tim. Look, who comes here. Will you be chid?

Enter Apemantus.

Jew. We’ll bear, with your lordship.

Mer. He’ll spare none.

Tim. Good morrow to thee, gentle Apemantus!

Apem. Till I be gentle, stay thou for thy good morrow;

When thou art Timon’s dog, and these knaves honest.

Tim. Why dost thou call them knaves? thou know’st them not.

Apem. Are they not Athenians?

Tim. Yes.

Apem. Then I repent not.

Jew. You know me, Apemantus?

Apem. Thou know’st I do; I call’d thee by thy name.

Tim. Thou art proud, Apemantus.

Apem. Of nothing so much as that I am not like Timon.

Tim. Whither art going?

Apem. To knock out an honest Athenian’s brains.

Tim. That’s a deed thou’lt die for.

Apem. Right, if doing nothing be death by the law.
Act 1, Sc. 1. TIMON OF ATHENS

Tim. How likest thou this picture, Apemantus?
Apem. The best, for the innocence. 200
Tim. Wrought he not well that painted it?
Apem. He wrought better that made the painter; and yet he’s but a filthy piece of work.
Pain. You’re a dog. 204
Apem. Thy mother’s of my generation; what’s she, if I be a dog?
Tim. Wilt dine with me, Apemantus?
Apem. No; I eat not lords. 208
Tim. An thou shouldst, thou’dest anger ladies. Apem. O! they eat lords; so they come by great bellies.
Tim. That’s a lascivious apprehension. 212
Apem. So thou apprehendest it, take it for thy labour.
Tim. How dost thou like this jewel, Apemantus?
Apem. Not so well as plain-dealing, which will not cost a man a doit.
Tim. What dost thou think ’tis worth?
Apem. Not worth my thinking. How now, poet!
Poet. How now, philosopher!
Apem. Thou liest.
Poet. Art not one?
Apem. Yes.
Poet. Then I lie not.
Apem. Art not a poet?
Poet. Yes.
Apem. Then thou liest: look in thy last work, where thou hast feigned him a worthy fellow.
Poet. That’s not feigned; he is so. 231
Apem. Yes, he is worthy of thee, and to pay thee for thy labour: he that loves to be flattered is worthy o’ the flatterer. Heavens, that I were a lord!
Tim. What wouldst do then, Apemantus?
Apem. Even as Apemantus does now; hate a lord with my heart.
Tim. What, thyself?
Apem. Ay.
Tim. Wherefore?
Apem. That I had no angry wit to be a lord.
Art not thou a merchant?
Mer. Ay, Apemantus.
Apem. Traffic confounds thee, if the gods will not!
Mer. If traffic do it, the gods do it.
Apem. Traffic’s thy god, and thy god confounds thee!

Trumpet sounds. Enter a Servant.
Tim. What trumpet’s that?
Serv. ’Tis Alcibiades, and some twenty horse, All of companionship.

Tim. Pray, entertain them; give them guide to us. [Exeunt some Attendants.
You must needs dine with me. Go not you hence Till I have thanked you; when dinner’s done, Show me this piece. I am joyful of your sights.

Enter Alcibiades, with his Company.

Most welcome, sir!
Apem. So, so, there! 255
Aches contract and starve your supple joints!
That there should be small love mongst these sweet knaves,
And all this courtesy! The strain of man’s bred out
Into baboon and monkey.
Alcib. Sir, you have saw’d my longing, and I feed
Most hungerly on your sight.
Tim. Right welcome, sir!
Ere we depart, we’ll share a bounteous time
In different pleasures. Pray you, let us in. [Exeunt all except APEMANTUS.

Enter two Lords.

First Lord. What time o’day is’t, Apemantus?
Apem. Time to be honest.
First Lord. That time serves still. 268
Apem. The more accru’d thou, that still omit’tst it.
Sec. Lord. Thou art going to Lord Timon’s feast?
Apem. Ay; to see meat full knaves and wine
heat fools. 272
Sec. Lord. Fare thee well, fare thee well.
Apem. Thou art a fool to bid me farewell twice.
Sec. Lord. Why, Apemantus?
Apem. Shouldst have kept one to thyself, for I mean to give thee none.
First Lord. Hang thyself!
Apem. No, I will do nothing at thy bidding: make thy requests to thy friend. 280
Sec. Lord. Away, unpeaceable dog! or I’ll
spurn thee hence.
Apem. I will fly, like a dog, the heels of an ass. [Exeunt Lords.

First Lord. He’s opposite to humanity.
Come, shall we in,
And taste Lord Timon’s bounty? he outgoes The very heart of kindness.
Sec. Lord. He pours it out; Plutus, the god of gold,
Is but his steward: no need but he repays Sevenfold above itself; no gift to him But breeds the giver a return exceeding All use of quittance.
First Lord. The noblest mind he carries That ever govern’d man.
Sec. Lord. Long may he live in fortunes! Shall we in?
First Lord. I'll keep you company. [Exeunt.

SCENE II.—The Same. A Room of State in Timon's House.

Haulboys playing loud music. A great banquet served in; Flavius and Others attending; then enter Lord Timon, Alcibiades, Lords, and Senators, Venti dius and Attendants. Then comes, dropping after all, Apemantus discontentedly, like himself.

Ven. Most honour'd Timon, it hath pleas'd the gods to remember my father's age, and call him to long peace. He is gone happy, and has left me rich: then, as in grateful virtue I am bound to your free heart, I do return those talents, doubled with thanks and service, from whose help I deriv'd liberty.

Tim. O! by no means, Honest Venti dius; you mistake my love; I gave it freely ever; and there's none Can truly say he gives, if he receives: If our betters play at that game, we must not dare To imitate them; faults that are rich are fair.

Ven. A noble spirit. [They all stand ceremoniously looking on Timon.

Tim. Nay, my lords, ceremony was but devis'd at first To set a gloss on faint deeds, hollow welcomes, Recanting goodness, sorry ere 'tis shown; But where there is true friendship, there needs none. Pray, sit; more welcome are ye to my fortunes Than my fortunes to me. [They sit.

First Lord. My lord, we always have confess'd it.

Apem. Ho, ho! confess'd it; hang'd it, have you not?
Tim. O! Apemantus, you are welcome.

Apem. No, you shall not make me welcome:
I come to have thee thrust me out of doors.

Tim. Fie! thou'rt a churl; ye've got a humour there Does not become a man; 'tis much to blame. They say, my lords, fra furor brevis est; But yond man is ever angry. Go, let him have a table by himself. For he does neither affect company, Nor is he fit for it, indeed.

Apem. Let me stay at thine apparel, Timon: I come to observe; I give thee warning on 'e.

Tim. I take no heed of thee; thou'rt an Athenian, therefore, welcome. I myself would have no power; prithee, let my meat make thee silent.

Apem. I scorn thy meat; 'twould choke me, for I should Ne'er flatter thee. O you gods! what a number Of men eat Timon, and he sees them not. It grieves me to see so many dip their meat In one man's blood; and all the madness is, He cheers them up too. I wonder men dare trust themselves with men:

Methinks they should invite them without knives; Good for their meat, and safer for their lives. There's much example for 't; the fellow that sits next him now, parts bread with him, and pledges The breath of him in a divided draught, Is the readiest man to kill him: 't has been prov'd.

If I were a huge man, I should fear to drink at meals; Lest they should spy my wind-pipe's dangerous notes:

Great men should drink with harness on their throats.

Tim. My lord, in heart; and let the health go round.

Sec. Lord. Let it flow this way, my good lord. Apem. Flow this way! A crave fellow! he keeps his tides well. Those healths will make thee and thy state look ill, Timon.

Here's that which is too weak to be a sinner, Honest water, which ne'er left man i' the mire:

This and my food are equals, there's no odds:

Feasts are too proud to give thanks to the gods.

Immortal gods, I crave no pelf; I pray for no man but myself: Grant I may never prove so fond, To trust man on his oath or bond; Or a harlot for her weeping; Or a dog that seems a-sleeping; Or a keeper with my freedom; Or my friends, if I should need 'em. Amen. So fall to't. Rich men sin, and I eat root.

[Eds and drinks.

Much good dich thy good heart, Apemantus!

Tim. Captain Alcibiades, your heart's in the field now.

Alcib. My heart is ever at your service, my lord.
Tim. You had rather be at a breakfast of enemies than a dinner of friends. 86

Alcib. So they were bleeding now, my lord, there’s no meat like ‘em: I could wish my best friend at such a feast.

Apem. ’Would all those flatterers were thine enemies then, that then thou mightst kill ‘em and bid me to ‘em.

First Lord. Might we but have that happiness, my lord, that you would once use our hearts, whereby we might express some part of our zeal, we should think ourselves for ever perfect.

Tim. O! no doubt, my good friends, but the gods themselves have provided that I shall have much help from you: how had you been my friends else? why have you that charitable title from thousands, did not you chiefly belong to my heart? I have told more of you to myself than you can with modesty speak in your own behalf; and thus far I confirm you. O you gods! I think I, what need we have any friends, if we should never have need of ‘em? they were the most needless creatures living should we never have use for ‘em, and would most resemble sweet instruments hung up in cases, that keep their sounds to themselves. Why, I have often wished myself poorer that I might come nearer to you. We are born to do benefits; and what better or properer can we call our own than the riches of our friends? O! what a precious comfor’tis, to have so many, like brothers, commanding one another’s fortunes. O joy! ‘en made away ere it can be born. Mine eyes cannot hold out water, methinks: to forget their faults, I drink to you.

Apem. Thou weepes’t to make them drink.

Tim. O! no doubt, my good friends, but the gods themselves have provided that I shall have much help from you: how had you been my friends else? why have you that charitable title from thousands, did not you chiefly belong to my heart? I have told more of you to myself than you can with modesty speak in your own behalf; and thus far I confirm you. O you gods! I think I, what need we have any friends, if we should never have need of ‘em? they were the most needless creatures living should we never have use for ‘em, and would most resemble sweet instruments hung up in cases, that keep their sounds to themselves. Why, I have often wished myself poorer that I might come nearer to you. We are born to do benefits; and what better or properer can we call our own than the riches of our friends? O! what a precious comfor’tis, to have so many, like brothers, commanding one another’s fortunes. O joy! ‘en made away ere it can be born. Mine eyes cannot hold out water, methinks: to forget their faults, I drink to you.

Apem. Thou weepest to make them drink.

Sec. Lord. Joy had the like conception in our eyes, and, at that instant, living like a babe, sprung up.

Apem. Ho, ho! I laugh to think that babe a bastard.

Third Lord. I promise you, my lord, you mov’d me much.

Apem. Much! [Tucket sounded.

Tim. What means that trump?

Enter a Servant.

How now!

Serv. Please you, my lord, there are certain ladies most desirous of admittance.

Tim. Ladies? What are their wills?

Serv. There comes with them a forerunner, my lord, which bears that office, to signify their pleasures.

Tim. I pray, let them be admitted.
Tim. Flavius!  
Flav. My lord!  
Tim. The little casket bring me hither.  
Flav. Yes, my lord. [Aside.] More jewels yet! There is no crossing him in 's humour; 168 Else I should tell him well, i' faith, I should, When all's spent, he'd be cross'd then, as he could. 'Tis pity bounty had not eyes behind, That man might ne'er be wretched for his mind. [Exit.  

First Lord. Where be our men?  
Serv. Here, my lord, in readiness.  
Sec. Lord. Our horses!  

Re-enter Flavius with the Casket.  
Tim. O, my friends! I have one word to say to you; 176 Look you, my good lord, I must entreat you, honour me so much As to advance this jewel; accept it and wear it, Kind my lord. 180  
First Lord. I am so far already in your gifts—  
All. So are we all.  

Enter a Servant.  
Serv. My lord, there are certain nobles of the senate Newly alighted, and come to visit you. 184  
Tim. They are fairly welcome.  
Flav. I beseech your honour, Vouchsafe me a word; it does concern you near.  
Tim. Near! why then another time I'll hear thee. I prithee, let's be provided to show them entertain'tment. 188  
Flav. [Aside.] I scarce know how.  

Enter another Servant.  
Sec. Serv. May it please your honour, Lord Lucius, Out of his free love, hath presented to you Four milk-white horses, trapp'd in silver. 192  
Tim. I shall accept them fairly; let the presents Be worthily entertain'd.  

Enter a third Servant.  
Third Serv. Please you, my lord, that honourable gentleman, Lord Lucullus, entreat your company to-morrow to hunt with him, and has sent your honour two brace of greyhounds. 198  
Tim. I'll hunt with him; and let them be receiv'd, Not without fair reward.  
Flav. [Aside.] What will this come to? He commands us to provide, and give great gifts, And all out of an empty coffer: Nor will he know his purse, or yield me this, To show him what a beggar his heart is, 204 Being of no power to make his wishes good. His promises fly so beyond his state That what he speaks is all in debt; he owes For every word: he is so kind that he now 208 Pays interest for't; his land's put to their books.  
Well, would I were gently put out of office Before I were fore'd out! 212 Happier he that has no friend to feed Than such as do e'en enemies exceed. I bleed inwardly for my lord. [Exit.  
Tim. You do yourselves Much wrong, you bate too much of your own merits: Here, my lord, a trifle of our love. 216  
Sec. Lord. With more than common thanks I will receive it.  
Third Lord. O! he's the very soul of bounty. Tim. And now I remember, my lord, you gave Good words the other day of a bay courser 220 I rode on: it is yours, because you lik'd it.  
Third Lord. O! I beseech you, pardon me, my lord, in that.  
Tim. You may take my word, my lord; I know no man Can justly praise but what he does affect: 224 I weigh my friend's affection with mine own; I'll tell you true. I'll call to you.  
All Lords. Of none so welcome.  
Tim. I take all and your several visitations So kind to heart, 'tis not enough to give; 228 Methinks, I could deal kingdoms to my friends, And ne'er be weary. Alcibiades, Thou art a soldier, therefore seldom rich; It comes in charity to thee; for all thy living Is 'mongst the dead, and all the lands thou hast Lie in a pitch'd field.  
Alcib. Ay, defil'd land, my lord.  
First Lord. We are so virtuously bound,—  
Tim. And so  

Am I to you.  
Sec. Lord. So infinitely endear'd,— 236  
Tim. All to you. Lights, more lights!  
First Lord. The best of happiness, Honour, and fortunes, keep with you, Lord Timon!  
Tim. Ready for his friends.  

[Exeunt Alcibiades, Lords, &c.  
Apem. What a coil's here!}
Act I, Sc. II. 

TIMON OF ATHENS

Serving of becks and jutting out of bums! I doubt whether their legs be worth the sums That are given for 'em. Friendship's full of frags; Methinks, false hearts should never have sound legs. Thus honest fools lay out their wealth on curt-sies. 

Tim. Now, Apeamantus, if thou wert not sullen, I would be good to thee.

Aperm. No, I'll nothing; for if I should be bribed too, there would be none left to rail upon thee, and then thou wouldst sin the faster. Thou givest so long, Timon, I fear me thou wilt give away thyself in paper shortly: what need these feasts, pomps, and vain-glories?

Tim. Nay, an you begin to rail on society once, I am sworn not to give regard to you. Farewell; and come with better music. [Exit. 

Aperm. So: Thou wilt not hear me now; thou shalt not then; I'll lock thy heaven from thee. O! that men's ears should be To counsel deaf, but not to flattery. [Exit.

ACT II.

SCENE I.—Athens. A Room in a Senator's House.

Enter a Senator, with papers in his hand.

Sen. And late, five thousand: to Varro and to Isidore. He owes nine thousand; besides my former sum, Which makes it five and twenty. Still in motion Of raging waste! It cannot hold; it will not. If I want gold, steal but a beggar's dog And give it Timon, why, the dog coins gold; If I would sell my horse, and buy twenty more Better than he, why, give my horse to Timon; Ask nothing, give it him, it foals me, straight, And able horses. No porter at his gate, But rather one that smiles and still invites All that pass by. It cannot hold; no reason Can find his state in safety. Caphis, ho! Caphis, I say!

Enter Caphis.

Caph. Here, sir; what is your pleasure? 

Sen. Get on your cloak, and haste you to Lord Timon; Importune him for my moneys; be not dead. With slight denial, nor then silence when Command me to your master—and the cap Plays in the right hand, thus—but tell him, My uses cry to me; I must serve my turn.

Out of mine own; his days and times are past, And my reliances on his fracted dates Have smit my credit: I love and honour him, But must not break my back to heal his finger; Immediate are my needs, and my relief Must not be toss'd and turn'd to me in words, But find supply immediate. Get you gone: Put on a most importunate aspect, A visage of demand; for, I do fear, When every feather sticks in his own wing, Lord Timon will be left a naked gull, Which flashes now a phoenix. Get you gone. 

Caph. I go, sir.

Sen. 'I go, sir!' Take the bonds along with you, And have the dates in compt.

Caph. I will, sir.

Sen. Go. [Exeunt. 

SCENE II.—The Same. A Hall in Timon's House.

Enter Flavius, with many bills in his hand.

Flav. No care, no stop! so senseless of expense, That he will neither know how to maintain it, Nor cease his flow of riot: takes no account How things go from him, nor resumes no care Of what is to continue: never mind Was to be so unwise, to be so kind. What shall be done? He will not hear, till feel: I must be round with him, now he comes from hunting.

Fie, fie, fie, fie!

Enter Caphis, and the Servants of Isidore and Varro.

Caph. Good even, Varro. What! You come for money? 

Var. Serv. Is't not your business too? 

Caph. It is: and yours too, Isidore? 

Isid. Serv. It is so.

Caph. Would we were all discharg'd!

Var. Serv. I fear it. 

Caph. Here comes the lord!

Enter Timon, Alcibiades, and Lords, &c.

Tim. So soon as dinner's done, we'll forth again. 

My Alcibiades. With me? what is your will? 

Caph. My lord, here is a note of certain dues. 

Tim. Dues! Whence are you? 

Caph. Of Athens here, my lord. 

Tim. Go to my steward. 

Caph. Please it your lordship, he hath put me off 

To the succession of new days this month: 

926
TIMON OF ATHENS

ACT II, SC. II.

My master is awak'd by great occasion
To call upon his own; and humbly prays you
That with your other noble parts you'll suit
In giving him his right.

Tim. Mine honest friend, 24
I prithee, but repair to me next morning.

Caph. Nay, good my lord,—
Tim. Contayn yourself, good friend.

Var. Serv. Oee Varro's servant, my good lord,—

Isid. Serv. From Isidore;
He humbly prays your speedy payment. 28
Caph. If you did know, my lord, my master's
wants,—

Var. Serv. 'Twas due on forfeiture, my lord, six weeks
And past.

Isid. Serv. Your steward puts me off, my lord;
And I am sent expressly to your lordship.

Tim. Give me breath.
I do beseech you, good my lords, keep on;
I'll wait upon you instantly.

[Exeunt ALCIBIADES and Lords.

[To FLAVIUS.] Come hither: pray you, 36
How goes the world, that I am thus encounter'd
With clamorous demands of date-broke bonds,
And the detention of long-since-due debts,
Against my honour?

Flav. Please you, gentlemen, 40
The time is unagreeable to this business:
Your importunity cease till after dinner,
That I may make his lordship understand Wherefore you are not paid.

Tim. Do so, my friends. 44
See them well entertained. [Exit.

Flav. Pray, draw near. [Exit.

Enter APEMANTUS and Fool.

Caph. Stay, stay; here comes the fool with Apeamantus; let's ha' some sport with 'em.

Var. Serv. Hang him, he'll abuse us. 48

Isid. Serv. A plague upon him, dog!

Var. Serv. How dost, fool?

Apeam. Dost dialogue with thy shadow?

Var. Serv. I speak not to thee.

Apeam. No; 'tis to thyself. [To the Fool.]

Come away.

Isid. Serv. [To Var. Serv.] There's the fool hangs on your back already. 56

Apeam. No, thou stand'st single; thou'rt not on him yet.

Caph. Where's the fool now?

Apeam. He last asked the question. Poor rogues, and usurers' men! haws between gold and want!

All Serv. What are we, Apeamantus?

Apeam. Asses.

All Serv. Why?

Apeam. That you ask me what you are, and do not know yourselves. Speak to 'em, fool.

Fool. How do you, gentlemen?

All Serv. Gramercies, good fool. How does your mistress?

Fool. She's e'en setting on water to scald such chickens as you are. Would we could see you at Corinth!

Apeam. Good! Gramercy.

Enter Page.

Page. Look you, here comes my mistress' page.

Page. [To the Fool.] Why, how now, captain! what do you in this wise company? How dost thou, Apeamantus?

Apeam. Would I had a rod in my mouth, that I might answer thee profitably.

Page. Prithee, Apeamantus, read me the superscription of these letters; I know not which is which.

Apeam. Canst not read?

Page. No.

Apeam. There will little learning die then that day thou art hanged. This is to Lord Timon; this to Alcibiades. Go, thou wast born a bastard, and thou'lt die a bawd.

Page. Thou wast whelped a dog, and thou shalt famish a dog's death. Answer not; I am gone.

[Exit Page.

Apeam. E'en so thou outrunn'st grace.—Fool, I will go with you to Lord Timon's.

Fool. Will you leave me there?

Apeam. If Timon stay at home. You three serve three usurers?

All Serv. Ay; would they served us!

Apeam. So would I, as good a trick as ever hangman served thief.

Fool. Are you three usurers' men?

All Serv. Ay, fool.

Fool. I think no usurer but has a fool to his servant: my mistress is one, and I am her fool. When men come to borrow of your masters, they approach sadly, and go away merry; but they enter my mistresses' house merrily, and go away sadly: the reason of this?

Var. Serv. I could render one.

Apeam. Do it, then, that we may account thee a whoremaster and a knave; which, notwithstanding, thou shalt be no less esteemed.

Var. Serv. What is a whoremaster, fool?

Fool. A fool in good clothes, and something like thee. 'Tis a spirit: sometime 't appears like a lord; sometime like a lawyer; sometime like a philosopher, with two stones more than 'a
artificial one. He is very often like a knight;
and generally in all shapes that man goes up
and down in from fourscore to thirteene, this
spirit walks in.

Var. Serv. Thou art not altogether a fool.
Fool. Nor thou altogether a wise man: as
much foolery as I have, so much wit thou
lackest.

Apen. That answer might have become Apem-

antus.
All Serv. Aside, aside; here comes Lord
Timon.

Re-enter Timon and Flavius.
Apen. Come with me, fool, come.
Fool. I do not always follow lover, elder
brother and woman; sometime the philosopher.

[Exeunt Apenantus and Fool.
Flav. Pray you, walk near: I'll speak with
you anon.

[Exeunt Servants.
Tim. You make me marvel: wherefore, ere
this time,
Had you not fully laid my state before me,
That I might so have rated my expense
As I had leave of means?

Flav. You would not hear me,
At many leisures I propos'd.

Tim. Go to:
Perchance some single vantages you took,
When my indisposition put you back;
And that unaptness made your minister,
Thus to excuse yourself.

Flav. O my good lord!
At many times I brought in my accounts,
Laid them before you; you would throw them
off,
And say you found them in mine honesty.
When for some trifing present you have bid me
Return so much, I have shook my head, and
wept;
Yea, 'gainst the authority of manners, pray'd
you
To hold your hand more close: I did endure
Not seldom, nor no slight checks, when I have
Prompted you in the ebb of your estate
And your great flow of debts. My loved lord,
Though you hear now, too late, yet now's a
time,
The greatest of your having lacks a half
To pay your present debts.

Tim. Let all my land be sold.

Flav. 'Tis all engag'd, some forfeited and
gone;
And what remains will hardly stop the mouth
Of present dues; the future comes amiss:
What shall defend the interim? and at length
How goes our reckoning?

Tim. To Lacedæmon did my land extend.

Flav. O my good lord! the world is but a
word;
Wore it all yours to give it in a breath,
How quickly were it gone!

Tim. You tell me true.

Flav. If you suspect my husbandry or false-

hood,
Call me before the exactest auditors,
And set me on the proof. So the gods bless me,
When all our offices have been oppress'd
With riotous feeders, when our vaults have wept
With drunken spilth of wine, when every room
Hath blaz'd with lights and bray'd with min-
strelsy,
I have retir'd me to a wasteful cock,
And set mine eyes at flow.

Tim. Prithee, no more.

Flav. Heavens! have I said, the bounty of
this lord!
How many prodigal bits have slaves and pea-
sants
This night englutted! Who is not Timon's?

What heart, head, sword, force, means, but is
Lord Timon's?

Great Timon, noble, worthy, royal Timon!
Ah! when the means are gone that buy this
praise,

The breath is gone whereof this praise is made:
Feast-won, fast-lost; one cloud of winter showers,
These fies are couch'd.

Tim. Come, sermon me no further;
No villainous bounty yet hath pass'd my heart;
Unwisely, not ignobly, have I given.

Why dost thou weep? Canst thou the conscience
lack,
To think I shall lack friends? Secure thy heart;
If I would broach the vessels of my love,
And try the argument of hearts by borrowing,
Men and men's fortunes could I frankly use
As I can bid thee speak.

Flav. Assurance bless your thoughts!

Tim. And, in some sort, these wants of mine
are crown'd,
That I account them blessings; for by these
Shall I try friends. You shall perceive how you
Mistake my fortunes; I am wealthy in my friends.
Within there! Flaminius! Servilius!

[Enter Flaminius, Servilius, and other Servants.

Serv. My lord! my lord!

Tim. I will dispatch you severally: you to
Lord Lucius; to Lord Lucullus you: if hunted
with his honour to-day; you, to Sempronius.
Command me to their loves; and I am proud,
say, that my occasions have found time to use
TIMON OF ATHENS
Act III, Sc. I.

ACT III.


FLAMINIUS waiting. Enter a Servant to him.

Serv. I have told my lord of you; he is coming down to you.

Flam. I thank you, sir.

Enter Lucullus.

Serv. Here’s my lord.

Lucul. [Aside.] One of Lord Timon’s men! a gift, I warrant. Why, this hits right; I dreamt of a silver bason and ewer to-night. Flaminus, honest Flaminus, you are veryrespectively welcome, sir. Fill me some wine. [Exit Servant.] And how does that honourable, complete, freehearted gentleman of Athens, thy very bountiful good lord and master?

Flam. His health is well, sir.

Lucul. I am right glad that his health is well, sir. And what hast thou there under thy cloak, pretty Flaminus?

Flam. Faith, nothing but an empty box, sir; which, in my lord’s behalf, I come to entreat your honour to supply; who, having great and instant occasion to use fifty talents, hath sent to your lordship to furnish him, nothing doubting your present assistance therein.

Lucul. La, la, la, la! ‘nothing doubting,’ says he? Alas! good lord; a noble gentleman ‘tis, if he would not keep so good a house. Many a time and often I ha’ dined with him, and told him on ’t; and come again to supper to him, of purpose to have him spend less; and yet he would embrace no counsel, take no warning by my coming. Every man has his fault, and honesty is his; I ha’ told him on’t, but I could ne’er get him from it.

Re-enter Servant with wine.

Serv. Please your lordship, here is the wine.

Lucul. Flaminus, I have noted thee always wise. Here’s to thee.

Flam. Your lordship speaks your pleasure.

Lucul. I have observed thee always for a towadly prompt spirit, give thee thy due, and one that knows what belongs to reason; and canst use the time well, if the time use thee well: good parts in thee. [To the Servant.]—Get you gone, sirrah. [Exit Servant.] Draw nearer, honest Flaminus. Thy lord’s a bountiful gentleman; but thou art wise, and thou knowest well enough, although thou comest to me, that this is no time to lend money, especially upon bare friendship, without security. Here’s three soli-
Enter SERVILIUS.

Servil. See, by good hap, yonder's my lord; I have sweat to see his honour. [To LUCIUS.] My honoured lord!

Luc. Servilius! you are kindly met, sir. Fare thee well: commend me to thy honourable virtuous lord, my very exquisite friend. 32

Servil. May it please your honour, my lord hath sent—

Luc. Hal! what has he sent? I am so much endeared to that lord; he's ever sending: how shall I thank him, thickest thou? And what has he sent now?

Servil. He has only sent his present occasion now, my lord; requesting your lordship to supply his instant use with so many talents. 41

Luc. I know his lordship is but merry with me;

He cannot want fifty-five hundred talents.

Servil. But in the mean time he wants less, my lord. 44

If his occasion were not virtuous, I should not urge it half so faithfully. 38

Luc. Dost thou speak seriously, Servilius?

Servil. Upon my soul, 'tis true, sir. 48

Luc. What a wicked beast was I to disturbish myself against such a good time, when I might ha' shown myself honourable! how unluckily it happened, that I should purchase the day before for a little part, and undo a great deal of honour! Servilius, now, before the gods, I am not able to do; the more beast, I say; I was sending to use Lord Timon myself, these gentlemen can witness; but I would not, for the wealth of Athens, I had done it now. Command me bountifully to his good lordship; and I hope his honour will conceive the fairest of me, because I have no power to be kind: and tell him this from me, I count it one of my greatest afflictions say, that I cannot pleasure such an honourable gentleman. Good Servilius, will you befriend me so far as to use mine own words to him?

Servil. Yes, sir, I shall.

Luc. I'll look you out a good turn, Servilius. [Exit SERVILIUS.

True, as you said, Timon is shrunk indeed; And he that's once denied will hardly speed. [Exit.

First Str. Do you observe this, Hostilius?

Sec. Stran. Ay, too well.

First Stran. Why this is the world's soul; and just of the same piece

Is every flatterer's spirit. Who can call him His friend that dips in the same dish? for, in My knowing, Timon has been this lord's father,
And kept his credit with his purse,
Supported his estate; nay, Timon’s money
Has paid his men their wages: he ne’er drinks
But Timon’s silver treads upon his lip;
And yet, O! see the monstrousness of man,
When he looks out in an ungrateful shape,
He does deny, in respect of his,
What charitable men afford to beggars.

Third Strat. Religion groans at it.

First Siran. For mine own part,
I never tasted Timon in my life,
Nor came any of his bounties over me,
To mark me for his friend; yet, I protest,
For his right noble mind, illustrious virtue,
And honourable carriage,
Had his necessity made use of me,
I would have put my wealth into donation,
And the best half should have return’d to
him,
So much I love his heart. But, I perceive,
Man must learn now with pity to dispense;
For policy sits above conscience.

Exeunt.

SCENE III.—The Same. A Room in
Sempionius’s House.

Enter Sempionius and a Servant of Timon’s.

Sem. Must he needs trouble me in’t? Hum!
’bove all others?
He might have tried Lord Lucius, or Lucullus;
And now Ventidius is wealthy too,
Whom he redeem’d from prison: all these
Owe their estates unto him.

Serv. My lord,
They have all been touch’d and found base
metal, for
They have all denied him.

Sem. How! have they denied him?
Have Ventidius and Lucullus denied him?
And does he send to me? Three? hum!
It shows but little love or judgment in him:
Must I be his last refuge? His friends, like
physicians,
Thrice give him over; must I take the cure
upon me?

He has much disgrace’d me in’t; I’m angry at
him,
That might have known my place. I see no
sense for’t,
But his occasions might have woo’d me first;
For, in my conscience, I was the first man
That e’er received gift from him:
And does he think so backwardly of me now,
That I’ll requite it last? No:
So it may prove an argument of laughter
To the rest, and I monogst lords be thought a
fool.

I had rather than the worth of thrice the
sum,
He had sent to me first, but for my mind’s
sake;
I’d such a courage to do him good. But now
return,
And with their faint reply this answer join;
Who bates mine honour shall not know my
coin.

Serv. Excellent! Your lordship’s a goodly
villain. The devil knew not what he did when
he made man politic; he crossed himself by ‘t:
and I cannot think but in the end the villanies
of man will set him clear. How fairly this lord
strives to appear foull takes virtuous copies to
be wicked, like those that under hot ardent zeal
would set whole realms on fire:
Of such a nature is his politic love.
This was my lord’s best hope; now all are
fled
Save only the gods. Now his friends are dead,
Doors, that were ne’er acquainted with their
wards
Many a bounteous year, must be employ’d
Now to guard sure their master:

And this is all a liberal course allows;
Who cannot keep his wealth must keep his
house.

Exeunt.

SCENE IV.—The Same. A Hall in Timon’s
House.

Enter two Servants of Varro, and the Servant
of Lucius, meeting Titus, Hortensius, and
other Servants to Timon’s Creditors, waiting
his coming out.

First Var. Serv. Well met; good morrow,
Titus and Hortensius.

Tit. The like to you, kind Varro.

Hor. Lucius!

What! do we meet together!

Luc. Ser. Ay, and I think
One business does command us all; for mine
is money.

Tit. So is theirs and ours.

Enter Philotus.

Luc. Serv. And Sir Philotus too!

Philo. Good day at once.

Luc. Serv. Welcome, good brother.

What do you think the hour?

Philo. Labouring for nine.

Luc. Serv. So much?

Philo. Is not my lord seem yet?

Luc. Serv. Not yet.

Philo. I wonder on’t; he was wont to shine at
seven.
Act III, Sc. IV. TIMON OF ATHENS

Luc. Serv. Ay, but the days are waxed shorter with him:
You must consider that a prodigal course is like the sun’s; but not, like his, recoverable.
I fear,
’Tis deepest winter in Lord Timon’s purse;
That is, one may reach deep enough, and yet find little.
Phil. I am of your fear for that.
Tit. I’ll show you how to observe a strange event.
Your lord sends now for money.
Hor. Most true, he does.
Tit. And he wears jewels now of Timon’s gift,
For which I wait for money.
Hor. It is against my heart.
Luc. Serv. Mark, how strange it shows,
Timon in this should pay more than he owes:
And e’en as if your lord should wear rich jewels,
And send for money for ‘em.
Hor. I’m weary of this charge, the gods can witness:
I know my lord hath spent of Timon’s wealth,
And now ingratitude makes it worse than stealth.

First Var. Serv. Yes, mine’s three thousand crowns;
what’s yours?
Luc. Serv. Five thousand mine.
First Var. Serv. ’Tis much deep: and it should seem by the sum,
Your master’s confidence was above mine;
Else, surely, his had equal’d.

Enter Flaminius.

Tit. One of Lord Timon’s men.
Luc. Serv. Flaminius! Sir, a word. Pray, is my lord ready to come forth?
Flam. No, indeed, he is not.
Tit. We attend his lordship; pray, signify so much.
Flam. I need not tell him that; he knows you are too-diligent. [Exit Flaminius.

Enter Flavius in a cloak, muffled.

Luc. Serv. Hav’st not that his steward muffled so?
He goes away in a cloud: call him, call him.
Tit. Do you hear, sir?
Sec. Var. Serv. By your leave, sir.
Flav. What do you ask of me, my friend?
Tit. We wait for certain money here, sir.
Flav. Ay, if money were as certain as your waiting,
’tware sure enough.
Why, then prevailed you not your sums and bills,
When your false masters eat of my lord’s meat?

Then they could smile and fawn upon his debts,
And take down the interest into their glutinous maws.
You do yourselves but wrong to stir me up;
Let me pass quietly:
Believe ’t, my lord and I have made an end; I have no more to reckon, he to spend.
Luc. Serv. Ay, but this answer will not serve.
Flav. If ’twill not serve, ’tis not so base as you;
For you serve knaves. [Exit.

First Var. Serv. How! what does his cash-iered worship mutter?
Sec. Var. Serv. No matter what; he’s poor,
And that’s revenge enough. Who can speak broader than he that has no house to put his head in? such may rail against great buildings.

Enter Servilius.

Tit. O! here’s Servilius; now shall we know some answer.
Servil. If I might beseech you, gentlemen, to repair some other hour, I should derive much from ’t; for, take ’t of my soul, my lord leans wondrously to discontent. His comfortable temper has forsook him; he’s much out of health, and keeps his chamber.
Luc. Serv. Many do keep their chambers are not sick:
And, if it be so far beyond his health,
Methinks he should the sooner pay his debts,
And make a clear way to the gods.
Servil. Good gods!
Tit. We cannot take this for answer, sir.
Flam. [Within.] Servilius, help my lord!

Enter Timon, in a rage; Flaminius following.

Tim. What! are my doors oppos’d against my passage?
Have I been ever free, and must my house
Be my retentive enemy, my gaol?
The place which I have feasted, does it now,
Like all mankind, show me an iron heart?
Luc. Serv. Put in now, Titus,
Tit. My lord, here is my bill.
Luc. Serv. Here’s mine.
Hor. And mine, my lord.
Both Var. Serv. And ours, my lord.
Phil. All our bills.
Tim. Knock me down with ‘em: cleave me to the girdle.
Luc. Serv. Alas! my lord,—
Tim. Cut my heart in sums.
Tit. Mine, fifty talents.
Tim. Tell out my blood.
Luc. Serv. Five thousand crowns, my lord.
Tim. Five thousand drops pays that. What yours? and yours?
First Var. Serv. My lord,—
Sec. Var. Serv. My lord,—
Tim. Tear me, take me; and the gods fall upon you! [Exeunt.
Hor. Faith, I perceive our masters may throw their caps at their money: these debts may well be called desperate ones, for a mad-man owes 'em.
[Exeunt.

Re-enter TIMON and FLAVIUS.
Tim. They have s'en put my breath from me; the slaves:
Creditors? devils!
Flav. My dear lord,—
Tim. What if it should be so?
Flav. My lord,—
Tim. I'll have it so. My steward!
Flav. Here, my lord.
Tim. So sify! Go, bid all my friends again,
Lucius, Lucullus, and Sempronius; all:
I'll once more feast the rascals.
Flav. O my lord!
You only speak from your distracted soul; there is not so much left to furnish out
A moderate table.
Tim. Be's not in thy care: go,
I charge thee, invite them all; let in the tide
Of knaves once more; my cook and I'll provide.
[Exeunt

SCENE V.—The Same. The Senate House.

The Senate sitting.
First Sen. My lord, you have my voice to it; the fault's
Bloody; 'tis necessary he should die;
Nothing emboldens sin so much as mercy.
Sec. Sen. Most true; the law shall bruise him.

Enter ALCIBIADES, attended.
Alcib. Honour, health, and compassion to the senate!
First Sen. Now, captain.
Alcib. I am a humble suitor to your virtues;
For pity is the virtue of the law,
And none but tyrants use it cruelly.
It pleases time and fortune to lie heavy
Upon a friend of mine, who, in hot blood,
Hath stepp'd into the law, which is past depth
To those that without heed do plunge into 't.
He is a man, setting his fate aside,
Of comely virtues;
Nor did he soil the fact with cowardice,—
An honour in him which buys out his fault,—
But, with a noble fury and fair spirit,
Seeing his reputation touch'd to death,
He did oppose his foe;
And with such sober and unnoted passion
He did behave his anger, ere 'twas spent,
As if he had but prov'd an argument.

First Sen. You undergo too strict a paradox,
Striving to make an ugly deed look fair:
Your words have took such pains as if they labour'd
To bring manslaughter into form, and set quarrelling
Upon the head of valour; which indeed
Is valour misbegot, and came into the world
When sects and factions were newly born.
He's truly valiant that can wisely suffer
The worst that man can breathe, and make his wrongs
His outsides, to wear them like his raiment,
carelessly,
And ne'er prefer his injuries to his heart,
To bring it into danger.
If wrongs be evils and enforce us kill,
What folly 'tis to hazard life for ill!
Alcib. My lord,—
First Sen. You cannot make gross sins look clear;
To revenge is no valour, but to bear.
Alcib. My lords, then, under favour, pardon me,
If I speak like a captain.
Why do fond men expose themselves to battle,
And not endure all threats? sleep upon't,
And let the foes quietly cut their throats
Without repugnancy? If there be
Such valour in the bearing, what make we
Abroad? why then, women are more valiant
That stay at home, if bearing carry it,
And the ass more captain than the lion, the felon
Loaden with irons wiser than the judge,
If wisdom be in suffering. O my lords!
As you are great, be pitifully good:
Who cannot condemn rashness in cold blood?
To kill, I grant, is sin's extremest gust;
But, in defence, by mercy, 'tis most just.
To be in anger is impiety;
But who is man that is not angry?
Weigh but the crime with this.
Sec. Sen. You breathe in vain.
Alcib. In vain! his service done
At Lacedæmon and Byzantium
Were a sufficient briber for his life.
First Sen. What's that?
Alcib. I say, my lords, he has done fair service,
And slain in fight many of your enemies.
While they have told their money and let out
Their coin upon large interest; I myself
Rich only in large hurts: all those for this?
Is this the balsam that the usuring senate 112
Pours into captains' wounds? Banishment!
It comes not ill; I hate not to be banish'd;
It is a cause worthy my spleen and fury,
That I may strike at Athens. I'll cheer up 116
My discontented troops, and lay for hearts.
'Tis honour with most lands to be at odds;
Soldiers should brook as little wrongs as gods.

[Exit.

SCENE VI.—The Same. A Room of State in
TIMON'S House.

Enter divers Lords, Senators, and Others, at
several doors.

First Lord. The good time of day to you, sir.
Sec. Lord. I also wish it you. I think this
honourable lord did but try us this other day. 3
First Lord. Upon that were my thoughts
tiring when we encountered: I hope it is not so
low with him as he made it seem in the trial of
his several friends.

Sec. Lord. It should not be, by the persua-
sion of his new feasting.

First Lord. I should think so: he hath sent
me an earnest inviting, which many my near
occasions did urge me to put off; but he hath
conjured me beyond them, and I must needs
appear. 14

Sec. Lord. In like manner was I in debt to
my importunate business, but he would not hear
my excuse. I am sorry, when he sent to borrow
of me, that my provision was out.

First Lord. I am sick of that grief too, as I
understand how all things go.

Sec. Lord. Every man here's so. What would
he have borrowed you?

First Lord. A thousand pieces.
Sec. Lord. A thousand pieces!
First Lord. What of you?
Third Lord. He sent to me, sir.—Here he
comes.

Enter TIMON and Attendants.

Tim. With all my heart, gentlemen both;
and how fare you?

First Lord. Ever at the best, hearing well of
your lordship.

Sec. Lord. The swallow follows not summer
more willing than we your lordship. 33

Tim. [Aside.] Nor more willingly leaves
winter; such summer-birds are men. Gentle-
men, our dinner will not recompense this long
stay: feast your ears with the music awhile,
TIMON OF ATHENS

ACT IV, SC. I.

if they will fare so harshly o’ the trumpet’s
sound; we shall to t presently. 39

First Lord. I hope it remains not unkindly
with your lordship that I returned you an empty
messenger.

Tim. Ol sir, let it not trouble you.

Sec. Lord. My noble lord,— 44

Tim. Ah! my good friend, what cheer?

Sec. Lord. My most honourable lord, I am e’en
sick of shame, that when your lordship this other
day sent to me I was so unfortunate a beggar.

Tim. Think not on’t, sir. 49

Sec. Lord. If you had sent but two hours
before,—

Tim. Let it not cumber your better remem-
brance. [The banquet brought in.] Come, bring
in all together.

Sec. Lord. All covered dishes!

First Lord. Royal cheer, I warrant you. 56

Third Lord. Doubt not that, if money and
the season can yield it.

First Lord. How do you? What’s the news?

Third Lord. Alcibiades is banished: hear you
of it?

First Lord. 61

Sec. Lord. Alcibiades banished!

Third Lord. ’Ts so, be sure of it.

First Lord. How? how?

Sec. Lord. I pray you, upon what?

Tim. My worthy friends, will you draw near?

Third Lord. I’ll tell you more anon. Here’s
a noble feast toward. 68

Sec. Lord. This is the old man still.

Third Lord. Will’t hold? will’t hold?

Sec. Lord. It does; but time will—and so—

Third Lord. I do conceive. 72

Tim. Each man to his stool, with that spur
as he would to the lip of his mistress; your diet
shall be in all places alike. Make not a city
feast of it, to let the meat cool ere we can agree
upon the first place: sit, sit. The gods require
our thanks.—

You great benefactors sprinkle our society
with thankfulness. For your own gifts, make
yourselves praised: but reserve still to give, lest
your deities be despised. Lend to each man
enough, that one need not lend to another; for,
were your godheads to borrow of men, men
would forsake the gods. Make the meat be
beloved more than the man that gives it. Let
no assembly of twenty be without a score of
villains: if there sit twelve women at the table,
let a dozen of them be as they are. The rest of
your fees, O gods! the senators of Athens, to-
gether with the common lag of people, what is
amiss in them, you gods, make suitable for
destruction. For these my present friends, as
they are to me nothing, so in nothing bless
them, and to nothing are they welcome.

Uncover, dogs, and lap. 96

[The dishes uncovered are full
of warm water.

Some speak. What does his lordship mean?

Some other. I know not.

Tim. May you a better feast never behold,

You knot of mouth-friends! smoke and luke-

warm water 100

Is your perfection. This is Timon’s last;

Who, stuck and spangled with your flatteries,

Washes it off, and sprinkles in your faces

[Throwing the water in their faces.

Your reeking villany. Live loath’d, and long, 104
Most smiling, smooth, detested parasites,
Courteous destroyers, affable wolves, meek bears,

You fools of fortune, trencher-friends, time’s
flies,

Cap and kine slaves, vapours, and minute-jacks!

Of man and beast the infinite malady 109

Crust you quite o’er! What dost thou go?

Soft! take thy physic first,—thou too,—and
thou;—

Stay, I will lend thee money, borrow none. 112

[Throws the dishes at them.

What! all in motion? Henceforth be no feast,

Whereat a villain’s not a welcome guest.

Burn, house! sink, Athens! henceforth hated be

Of Timon man and all humanity! 117

[Exit.

Re-enter the Lords, Senators, &c.

First Lord. How now, my lords!

Sec. Lord. Know you the quality of Lord
Timon’s fury?

Third Lord. Push! did you see my cap? 120

Fourth Lord. I have lost my gown.

First Lord. He’s but a mad lord, and nought
but humour aways him. He gave me a jewel th’
other day, and now he has beat it out of my hat:
did you see my jewel?

Third Lord. Did you see my cap?

Sec. Lord. Here ’tis.

Fourth Lord. Here lies my gown. 128

First Lord. Let’s make no stay.

Sec. Lord. Lord Timon’s mad.

Third Lord. I feel it upon my bones.

Fourth Lord. One day he gives us diamonds,
next day stones. 125

[Exeunt.

ACT IV.

SCENE I.—Without the Walls of Athens

Enter Timon.

Tim. Let me look back upon thee. O thou

wall,

That girdlest these wolves, dive in the earth.

935
And fence not Athens! Matrons, turn incontinent!
Obedience fail in children! slaves and fools, 4
Pluck the grave wrinkled senate from the bench,
And minister in their steads! To general filths
Convert, o' the instant, green virginity!
Do't in your parents' eyes! Bankrupts, hold
fast;
Rather than render back, out with your knives,
And cut your trusters' throats! Bound servants, steal!—
Large-handed robbers your grave masters are,—
And pill by law. Maid, to thy master's bed; 12
Thy mistress is o' the brothel! Son of sixteen,
Pluck the lin'd crust from thy old limping sire,
With it beat out his brains! Piety, and fear,
Religion to the gods, peace, justice, truth,
Domestic awe, night-rest and neighbourhood,
Instruction, manners, mysteries and trades,
Degree, observances, customs and laws,
Decline to your confounding contraries, 20
And let confusion live! Plagues incident to men,
Your potent and infectious fevers heap
On Athens, ripe for stroke! Thou cold sciatica,
Cripple our senators, that their limbs may halt
As lamely as their manners! Lust and liberty
Crep in the minds and marrows of our youth,
That against the stream of virtue they may strive,
And drown themselves in riot! Iches, blains, 28
Sow all the Athenian bosoms, and their crop
Be general leprosy! Breath infect breath,
That their society, as their friendship, may
Be merely poison! Nothing I'll bear from thee
But nakedness, thou detestable town! 33
Take thou that too, with multiplying bans!
Timon will to the woods, where he shall find
The unkindest beast more kinder than mankind.
The gods confound—hear me, you good gods all—
The Athenians both within and out that wall!
And grant, as Timon grows, his hate may grow
To the whole race of mankind, high and low! 40
Amen. [Exit.

**Scene II. — Athens. A Room in Timon's House.**

*Enter Flavius, with two or three Servants.*

*First Serv.* Hear you, Master steward! where’s our master?
Are we undone? cast off? nothing remaining?
*Flav.* Alack! my fellows, what should I say to you?
Let me be recorded by the righteous gods,
I am as poor as you.

*First Serv.* Such a house broke!
So noble a master fall'n! All gone! and not
One friend to take his fortune by the arm,
And go along with him!

*Sec. Serv.* As we do turn our backs
From our companion thrown into his grave,
So his familiars to his buried fortunes
Slink all away, leave their false vows with him,
Like empty purses pick’d; and his poor self, 12
A dedicated beggar to the air,
With his disease of all-shunn’d poverty,
Walks, like contempt, alone. More of our fellows.

**Enter other Servants.**

*Flav.* All broken implements of a ruin’d house.

*Third Serv.* Yet do our hearts wear Timon’s livery,
That see I by our faces; we are fellows still,
Serving alike in sorrow. Leak’d is our bark,
And we, poor mates, stand on the dying deck, 20
Hearing the surges threat: we must all part
Into this sea of air.

*Flav.* Good fellows all,
The latest of my wealth I’ll share amongst you.
Wherever we shall meet, for Timon’s sake
Let’s yet be fellows; let’s shake our heads, and say,
As ‘twere a knell unto our master’s fortunes,
‘We have seen better days.’ Let each take some;

*Giving them money.*

Nay, put out all your hands. Not one word more:

Thus part we rich in sorrow, parting poor.

[They embrace, and part several ways.

O! the fierce wretchedness that glory brings us.
Who would not wish to be from wealth exempt,
Since riches point to misery and contempt? 32
Who would be so mock’d with glory? or so live,
But in a dream of friendship?

To have his pomp and all what state compounds
But only painted, like his varnish’d friends? 36
Poor honest lord! brought low by his own heart,
Undone by goodness. Strange, unusual blood,
When man’s worst sin is he does too much good!
Who then dares to be half so kind again? 40
For bounty, that makes gods, does still mar men.

My dearest lord, bless’d, to be most assured,
Rich, only to be wretched, thy great fortunes
Are made thy chief afflictions. Alas! kind lord,
He’s flung in rage from this ingratitude seat
Of monstrous friends;
Nor has he with him to supply his life,
Or that which can command it.

I’ll follow and inquire him out:
I’ll ever serve his mind with my best will;
Whilst I have gold I’ll be his steward still. [Exit.
TIMON OF ATHENS

Act IV, Sc. III.

SCENE III.—Woods and Cave near the Sea-shore.

Enter TIMON from the Cave.

Tim. O blessed breeding sun! draw from the earth
Rotten humidity; below thy sister’s orb
Infest the air! Twin’d brothers of one womb,
Whose procreation, residence and birth,
Scarce is divendant, touch them with several fortunes;
The greater scorns the lesser: not nature,
To whom all sores lay siege, can bear great fortune,
But by contempt of nature.

Raise me this beggar, and deny’t that lord;
The senator shall bear contempt hereditary,
The beggar native honour.
It is the pasture lards the rother’s sides,
The want that makes him lean. Who dares, who dares,
In purity of manhood stand upright,
And say, ‘This man’s a flatterer?’ if one be,
So are they all; for every grize of fortune
Is smooth’d by that below: the learned pate
Ducks to the golden fool: all is oblique;
There’s nothing level in our cursed natures
But direct villany. Therefore, be abhorr’d
All feasts, societies, and throngs of men!
His semblable, yea, himself, Timon disdains:
 Destruction fang mankind! Earth, yield me roots!

Who seeks for better of thee, sauce his palate
With thy most operant poison! What is here?
Gold! yellow, glittering, precious gold! No, gods,
I am no idle votarist. Roots, you clear heavens!
Thus much of this will make black white, foul fair,
Wrong right, base noble, old young, coward valiant.
Ha! you gods, why this? What this, you gods?
Why, this
Will lug your priests and servants from your sides,
Pluck stout men’s pillows from below their head:

This yellow slave
Will knit and break; religions; bless the accurs’d;
Make the hoar leprosy ador’d; place thieves,
And give them title, knee, and approbation,
With senators on the bench; this is it
That makes the wappen’d widow wed again;
She, whom the spital-house and ulcerous sores
Would cast the gorge at, this embalms and spices

To the April day again. Come, damned earth,
Thou common whore of mankind, that putt’st odds
Among the rout of nations, I will make thee
Do thy right nature.—[March afar off.] Ha! a drum? thou’rt quick,
But yet I’ll bury thee: thou’lt go, strong thief,
When gouty keepers of thee cannot stand:
Nay, stay thou out for earnest.

[Keeping some gold.

Enter ALCIBIADES, with drum and sife, in war-like manner; PHRYNIA and TIMANDRA.

Alcib. What art thou there? speak.

Tim. A beast, as thou art. The canker gnaw thy heart,
For showing me again the eyes of man!

Alcib. What is thy name? Is man so hateful to thee,
That art thyself a man?

Tim. I am Misanthropos, and hate mankind.
For thy part, I do wish thou wert a dog,
That I might love thee something.

Alcib. I know thee well,
But in thy fortunes am unlearn’d and strange.

Tim. I know thee too; and more than that
I know thee
I not desire to know. Follow thy drum;
With man’s blood paint the ground, gules, gules;
Religious canons, civil laws are cruel;
Then what should war be? This fell whore of thine
Hath in her more destruction than thy sword
For all her cherubin look.

Phry. Thy lips rot off!

Tim. I will not kiss thee; then the rot returns
To thine own lips again.

Alcib. How came the noble Timon to this change?

Tim. As the moon does, by wanting light to give:
But then renew I could not like the moon;
There were no suns to borrow of.

Alcib. Noble Timon, what friendship may I do thee?

Tim. None, but to maintain my opinion.

Alcib. What is it, Timon?

Tim. Promise me friendship, but perform none: if thou wilt not promise, thy gods plague thee, for thou art a man! if thou dost perform, confound thee, for thou art a man!

Alcib. I have heard in some sort thy miseries.

Tim. Thou saw’st them, when I had prosperity.
Act IV. Sc. III.

TIMON OF ATHENS

Alcib. I see them now; then was a blessed time.
Tim. As thine is now, held with a brace of harlots.
Timan. Is this the Athenian minion, whom the world
Voil'd so regardfully?
Tim. Art thou Timandra?
Timan. Yes.
Tim. Be a whore still; they love thee not
that use thee;
Give them diseases, leaving with thee their lust.
Make use of thy salt hours; season the slaves
For tubs and baths; bring down rose-cheeked youth
To the tub-fast and the diet.
Timan. Hang thee, monster!
Alcib. Pardon him, sweet Timandra, for his wits
Are droll'd and lost in his calamities.
I have but little gold of late, brave Timon,
The want whereof doth daily make revolt
In my penurious hand: I have heard and griev'd
How cursed Athens, mindless of thy worth,
Forgetting thy great deeds, when neighbour states,
But for thy sword and fortune, trod upon them,—
Tim. I prithee, beat thy drum, and get thee gone.
Alcib. I am thy friend, and pity thee, dear Timon.
Tim. How dost thou pity him whom thou dost trouble?
I had rather be alone.
Alcib. Why, fare thee well:
Here is some gold for thee.
Tim. Keep it, I cannot eat it.
Alcib. When I have laid proud Athens on a heap,—
Tim. Warr'st thou 'gainst Athens?
Alcib. Ay, Timon, and have cause.
Tim. The gods confound them all in thy conquest; and
Thee after, when thou hast conquer'd!
Alcib. Why me, Timon?
Tim. That, by killing of villains, thou wast born to conquer
My country.
Put up thy gold: go on,—here's gold,—go on;
Be as a planetary plague, when Jove
Will o'er some high-wic'd city hang his poison
In the sick air: let not thy sword skip one.
Pity not honour'd age for his white beard; 112
He is a usurer. Strike me the counterfeit matron;
It is her habit only that is honest,

Herself's a bawd. Let not the virgin's cheek
Make soft thy trenchant sword; for those milk-paps,
That through the window-bars bore at men's eyes,
Are not within the leaf of pity writ,
But set them down horrible traitors. Spare not
the babe,
Whose dimpled smiles from fools exhaust their mercy;
Think it a bastard, whom the oracle
Hath doubtfully pronounc'd thy throat shall cut,
And mince it sans remorse. Swear against objects;
Put armour on thine ears and on thine eyes,
Whose proof nor yells of mothers, maids, nor babes,
Nor sight of priests in holy vestments bleeding,
Shall pierce a jot. There's gold to pay thy soldiers:
Make large confusion; and, thy fury spent,
Confound be thyself! Speak not, be gone.
Alcib. Hast thou gold yet? I'll take the gold thou giv'st me,
Not all thy counsel.
Tim. Dost thou, or dost thou not, heaven's curse upon thee!
Phr. Give us some gold, good Timon:
Timan. hast thou more?
Tim. Enough to make a whore forswear her trade,
And to make whores a bawd. Hold up, you sluts,
Your aprons mountant: you are not oathable,
Although, I know, you'll swear, terribly swear
Into strong shudders and to heavenly agues:
The immortal gods that hear you, spare your oaths,
I'll trust to your conditions: be whores still;
And he whose pious breath seeks to convert you,
Be strong in whore, allure him, burn him up;
Let your close fire predominate his smoke,
And be no turncoast: yet may your pains, six months,
Be quite contrary: and thatch your poor thin roofs
With burdens of the dead; some that were hang'd,
No matter; wear them, betray with them:
whore still;
Paint till a horse may mire upon your face:
A pox of wrinkles!

Phr. Well, more gold. What then?
Timan. What, that we'll do anything for gold.
Tim. Consumptions now

938
TIMON OF ATHENS
Act IV, Sc. III.

In hollow bones of man; strike their sharp
shins,
And mar men's spurring. Crack the lawyer's
voice,
That he may never more false title plead,
Nor sound his quillets shrilly: hoar the flamen;
That scolds against the quality of flesh, 157
And not believes himself: down with the nose,
Down with it flat; take the bridge quite away
Of him that, his particular to foresee,
Smells from the general weal: make curl'd-pate
ruffians bald,
And let the unscarr'd braggarts of the war
Derive some pain from you: plague all,
That your activity may defeat and quell
The source of all erection. There's more gold;
Do you damn others, and let this damn you,
And ditchesgrave you all!

Phr. More counsel with more money,
Timan. bounteous Timon.
Tim. More whore, more mischief first; I
have given you earnest.

Alcib. Strike up the drum towards Athens!
Farewell, Timon:
If I thrive well, I'll visit thee again.

Tim. If I hope well, I'll never see thee more.

Alcib. I never did thee harm.

Tim. Yes, thou spok'st well of me.

Alcib. Call'st thou that harm?

Tim. Men daily find it. Get thee away, and
take
Thy beagles with thee.

Alcib. We but offend him. Strike!

[Drum beats. Exeunt ALCIBIADES,
PHENIA, and TIMANDRA.

Tim. That nature, being sick of man's un
kindness,
Should yet be hungry! Common mother, thou,

[Digging.

Whose womb unmeasurable, and infinite earth,
Teams, and feeds all; whose self-same mettle,
Whereof thy proud child, arrogant man, is
puff'd,

Engenders the black toad and adder blue,
The gilded newt and eyless venom'd worm,
With all the abhorred births below crisp heaven
Whereon Hyperion's quickening fire doth shine;
Yield him, who all thy human sons doth hate,
From forth thy plenteous bosom, one poor root!
Ensear thy fertile and conceiptious womb,

Let it no more bring out ingratitude man!
Go great with tigers, dragons, wolves, and
bears;
Teem with new monsters, whom thy upward
face
Hath to the marbled mansion all above
Never presented! O! a root; dear thanks:

Dry up thy marrows, vines and plough-torn
leas;
Whereof ingratitude man, with liquorish draughts
And morsels uctious, greases his pure mind,
That from it all consideration slips!

Enter APEMANTUS.

More man! Plague! plague!

Apm. I was directed hither: men report
Thou dost affect my manners, and dost use
them.

Tim. 'Tis, then, because thou dost not keep a
dog
Whom I would imitate: consumption catch thee!

Apm. This is in thee a nature but infected;
A poor unmanly melancholy sprung
From change of fortune. Why this spade? this
place?
This slave-like habit? and these looks of care?
Thy flatterers yet wear silk, drink wine, lie soft,
Hug their diseased perfumes, and have forgot
That ever Timon was. Shame not these woods
By putting on the cunning of a carpenter.
Be thou a flatterer now, and seek to thrive
By that which has undone thee: hinge thy knee,
And let his very breath, whom thou 'lt observe,
Blow off thy cap; praise his most vicious strain,
And call it excellent. Thou wast told thus;
Thou gav'st thine ears, like tapsters that bid
welcome,

To knives and all approachers: 'tis most just
That thou turn rascal; hast thou wealth again,
Rascals should have 't. Do not assume my
likeness.

Tim. Were I like thee I'd throw away myself.

Apm. Thou hast cast away thyself, being
like thyself;

A madman so long, now a fool. What! think'st
That the bleak air, thy boisterous chamberlain,
Will put thy shirt on warm? will these moss'd
trees,

That have outliv'd the eagle, page thy heels
And skip when thou point'st out? will the cold
brook,
Candied with ice, caude thy morning taste
To cure the o'er-night's surfeit? Call the
creatures
Whose naked natures live in all the spite
Of wreakful heaven, whose bare unhoused trunks
To the conflicting elements expos'd,
Answer mere nature; bid them flatter thee; 332
O! thou shalt find——


Apm. I love thee better now than e'er I did.

Tim. I hate thee worse.

Apm. Why?
Were all the wealth I have shut up in thee, 280
I'd give thee leave to hang it. Get thee gone.
That the whole life of Athens were in this!
Thus would I eat it. [Eating a root.

Apen. Here; I will mend thy feast.

Tim. First mend my company, take away
thyself. 284

Apen. So I shall mend mine own, by the
lack of thine.

Tim. 'Tis not well mended so, it is but
boch'd;
If not, I would it were.

Apen. What wouldst thou have to Athens?

Tim. Thee thither in a whirlwind. If thou
wilt,
Tell them there I have gold; look, so I have.

Apen. Here is no use for gold.

Tim. The best and truest;
For here it sleeps, and does no hired harm. 292

Apen. Where liest o' nights, Timon?

Tim. Under that's above me.

Where feed'st thou o' days, Apemantus?

Apen. Where my stomach finds meat; or,
rather, where I eat it. 296

Tim. Would poison were obedient and knew
my mind!

Apen. Where wouldst thou send it?

Tim. To sauce thy dishes.

Apen. The middle of humanity thou never
knewest, but the extremity of both ends. When
thou wast in thy gait and thy perfume, they
mocked thee for too much curiosity; in thy
rags thou knewest none, but art despised for
the contrary. There's a medlar for thee; eat it.

Tim. On what I hate I feed not. 306

Apen. Dost hate a medlar?

Tim. Ay, though it look like thee.

Apen. An thou hadst hated meddlers sooner,
 thou shouldst have loved thyself better now.
What man didst thou ever know unthrifty that
was beloved after his means? 312

Tim. Who, without those means thou talkest
of, didst thou ever know beloved?

Apen. Myself.

Tim. I understand thee; thou hadst some
means to keep a dog. 317

Apen. What things in the world canst thou
nearest compare to thy flatterers?

Tim. Women nearest; but men, men are the
things themselves. What wouldst thou do with
the world, Apemantus, if it lay in thy power?

Apen. Give it the beasts, to be rid of the
men. 324

Tim. Wouldst thou have thyself fall in the
confusion of men, and remain a beast with the
beasts?

Apen. Ay, Timon. 328
TIMON OF ATHENS  

**Act IV, Sc. III.**

**Tim.** A beastly ambition, which the gods grant thee to attain to. If thou wert the lion, the fox would beguile thee; if thou wert the lamb, the fox would eat thee; if thou wert the fox, the lion would suspect thee, when peradventure thou wert accused by the ass; if thou wert the ass, thy dulness would torment thee, and still thou livest but as a breakfast to the wolf; if thou wert the wolf, thy greediness would afflict thee, and oft thou shouldst hazard thy life for thy dinner; wert thou the unicorn, pride and wrath would confound thee and make thine own self the conquest of thy fury; wert thou a bear, thou wouldst be killed by the horse; wert thou a horse, thou wouldst be seized by the leopard; wert thou a leopard, thou wert German to the lion, and the spots of thy kindred were jurors on thy life; all thy safety were remotion, and thy defence absence. What beast couldst thou be, that were not subject to a beast? and what a beast art thou already, that seest not thy loss in transformation! 355

**Apem.** If thou couldst please me with speaking to me, thou mightst have hit upon it here; the commonwealth of Athens is become a forest of beasts.

**Tim.** How has the ass broke the wall, that thou art out of the city? 357

**Apem.** Yonder comes a poet and a painter: the plague of company light upon thee! I will fear to catch it, and give way. When I know not what else to do, I'll see thee again. 361

**Tim.** When there is nothing living but thee, thou shalt be welcome. I had rather be a beggar's dog than Apemantus. 364

**Apem.** Thou art the cap of all the fools alive.

**Tim.** Would thou wert clean enough to spit upon!

**Apem.** A plague on thee! thou art too bad to curse!

**Tim.** All villains that do stand by thee are pure.

**Apem.** There is no leprosy but what thou speak'st.

**Tim.** If I name thee, I'll beat thee, but I should infect my hands.

**Apem.** I would my tongue could rot them off!

**Tim.** Away, thou issue of a mangled dog! 373

Choler does kill me that thou art alive;
I swound to see thee.

**Apem.** Would thou wouldest burst!

**Tim.** Away,
Thou tedious rogue! I am sorry I shall lose 376
A stone by thee.  

**Apem.** [Throws a stone at him.]  

**Apem.** Beast!

**Tim.** Slave!

**Apem.** Toad!

**Tim.** Rogue, rogue, rogue!
I am sick of this false world, and will love nought
But even the mere necessities upon 't.
Then, Timon, presently prepare thy grave; 380
Lie where the light foam of the sea may beat
Thy grave-stone daily: make thine epitaph,
That death in me at others' lives may laugh.

[Looking on the gold.

O thou sweet king-killer, and dear divorce! 384
'Twixt natural son and sire! thou bright defiler
Of Hymen's purest bed! thou valiant Mars!
Thou ever young, fresh, lov'd, and delicate wooer,
Whose blush doth twaw the consecrated snow
That lies on Dion's lap! thou visible god,
That soder'st close impossibilities,
And mak'st them kiss! that speak'st with every tongue,
To every purpose! O thou touch of hearts! 392
Think, thy slave man rebels, and by thy virtue
Set them into confounding odds, that beasts
May have the world in empire.

**Apem.** Would 'twere so:
But not till I am dead; I'll say thou'lt gold:
Thou wilt be throng'd to shortly.

**Tim.** Throng'd to?

**Apem.** Ay.

**Tim.** Thy back, I prithee.

**Apem.** Live, and love thy misery!

**Tim.** Long live so, and so die!

[Exeunt APENANTUS.

I am quit.

More things like men! Eat, Timon, and abhor them.

More things like men! Eat, Timon, and abhor them.

**Enter Thieves.**

**First Thief.** Where should he have this gold?
It is some poor fragment, some slender ort of his remainder. The mere want of gold, and the falling-from of his friends, drove him into this melancholy.

**Sec. Thief.** It is noised he hath a mass of treasure.

**Third Thief.** Let us make the assay upon him: if he care not for 't, he will supply us easily; if he covetously reserve it, how shall's get it?

**Sec. Thief.** True; for he bears it not about him, 'tis hid.

**First Thief.** Is not this he?

**Thieves.** Where?

**Sec. Thief.** 'Tis his description.

**Third Thief.** He; I know him.

**All.** Save thee, Timon.

**Tim.** Now, thieves?
Act IV, Sc. III. TIMON OF ATHENS

All. Soldiers, not thieves.
Tim. Both too; and women's sons. 420
Thieves. We are not thieves, but men that much do want.
Tim. Your greatest want is, you want much of meat.

Why should you want? Behold, the earth hath roots;
Within this mile break forth a hundred springs;
The oaks bear mast, the briars scarlet hips; 425
The bounteous housewife, nature, on each bush
Lays her full mess before you. Want! why want?

First Thief. We cannot live on grass, on berries, water,
As baasts, and birds, and fishes.
Tim. Nor on the beasts themselves, the birds, and fishes;
You must eat men. Yet thanks I must you own
That you are thieves profess'd, that you work not
In holier shapes; for there is boundless theft
In limited professions. Rascal thieves,
Here's gold. Go, suck the subtle blood o' the grape,
Till the high fever seethe your blood to froth,
And so 'scape hanging: trust not the physician;
His antidotes are poison, and he slays
More than you rob: take wealth and lives togeth'er;

Do villany, do, since you protest to do't. 440
Like workmen. I'll example you with thievry:
The sun's a thief, and with his great attraction
Robbs the vast sea; the moon's an arrant thief,
And her pale fire she snatchses from the sun; 444
The sea's a thief, whose liquid surge resolves
The moon into salt tears; the earth's a thief,
That feeds and breeds by a composture stolen
From general excrement, each thing's a thief;
Ths laws, your curb and whip, in their rough power
Have uncheck'd theft. Love not yourselves; away!
Rob one another. There's more gold: cut throats;
All that you meet are thieves. To Athens go,
Break open shops; nothing can you steal 450
But thieves do lose it: steal no less for this
I give you; and gold confound you howsoe'er!
Amen.

Third Thief. He has almost charmed me from my profession, by persuading me to it.

First Thief. 'Tis in the malice of mankind
That he thus advises us; not to have us thrive in our mystery.
Sec. Thief. I'll believe him as an enemy, and give over my trade.

First Thief. Let us first see peace in Athens;
there is no time so miserable but a man may be true.

Enter Flavius.

Flav. O you gods!
Is yond despised and ruinous man my lord? 468
Full of decay and failing? O monument
And wonder of good deeds evilly bestow'd!
What an alteration of honour
Has desperate want made!
What viler thing upon the earth than friends
Who can bring noblest minds to basest ends!
How rarely does it meet with this time's guise,
When man was wish'd to love his enemies! 476
Grant I may ever love, and rather woo
Those that would mischief me than those that do!
He hath caught me in his eye: I will present
My honest grief unto him; and, as my lord, 480
Still serve him with my life. My dearest master!

Timon comes forward.

Tim. Away! what art thou?
Flav. Have you forgot me, sir?
Tim. Why dost ask that? I have forgot all men;
Then, if thou grant'st thou'rt a man, I have forgot thee. 484
Flav. An honest poor servant of yours.
Tim. Then I know thee not:
I never had an honest man about me; ay all,
I kept were knaves, to serve in meat to villains.
Flav. The gods are witness, 488
Ne'er did poor steward wear a truer grief
For his undone lord than mine eyes for you.

Then I love thee,
Because thou art a woman, and disclaim'st 492
Flinty mankind; whose eyes do never give,
But thorough lust and laughter. Pity's sleeping;
Strange times, that weep with laughing, not with weeping!

Flav. I beg of you to know me, good my lord,
To accept my grief and whilst this poor wealth lasts
To entertain me as your steward still.
Tim. Had I a steward
So true, so just, and now so comfortable? 500
It almost turns my dangerous nature mild.
Let me behold thy face. Surely, this man
Was born of woman.
Forgive my general and exceptless rashness, 504
You perpetual sober gods! I do proclaim
One honest man, mistake me not, but one;
No more, I pray, and he's a steward.
How fain would I have hate all mankind! 508
And thou redeem'st thyself: but all, save thee,
I tell with curses.
Methinks thou art more honest now than wise;
For, by oppressing and betraying me,
Thou might'st have sooner got another service:
For many so arrive at second masters
Upon their first lord's neck. But tell me true,—
For I must ever doubt, though ne'er so sure,—
Is not thy kindness subtle, covetous,
If not a usuring kindness and as rich men deal
gifts,
Expecting in return twenty for one?
Flav. No, my most worthy master; in whose
breast
Doubt and suspect, alas! are plac'd too late.
You should have fear'd false times when you
did feast;
Suspect still comes when an estate is least.
That which I shoxw, heaven knows, is merely love,
Duty and zeal to your unmatched mind,
Care of your food and living; and, believe it,
My most honour'd lord,
For any benefit that points to me,
Either in hope, or present, I'd exchange
For this one wish, that you had power and wealth
To require me by making rich yourself.
Tim. Look thee, 'tis so. Thou singly honest
man,
Here, take: the gods out of my misery,
Have sent thee treasure. Go, live rich and
happy;
But thus condition'd: thou shalt build from
men;
Hate all, curse all, shoxw charity to none,
But let the famish'd flesh slide from the bone,
Ere thou relieve the beggar; give to dogs
What thou deny'st to men; let prisons swallow
'em,
Debts wither 'em to nothing; be men like
blasted woods,
And may diseases lick up their false bloods!
And so, farewell and thrive.
Flav. O! let me stay
And comfort you, my master.
Tim. If thou hatest
Ourses, stay not; fly, whilst thou 'rt bless'd and
free:
Ne'er see thou man, and let me ne'er see thee.
[Exeunt, severally.

ACT V.


Enter Poet and Painter.

Pain. As I took note of the place, it cannot
be far where he abides.

Poet. What's to be thought of him? Does
the rumour hold for true that he is so full of
gold?

Pain. Certain: Alcibiades reports it; Phrynias
and Timandra had gold of him: he likewise
enriched poor straggling soldiers with great
quantity. 'Tis said he gave unto his steward a
mighty sum.

Poet. Then this breaking of his has been but
a try for his friends.

Pain. Nothing else; you shall see him a
palm in Athens again, and flourish with the
highest. Therefore 'tis not amiss we tender our
loves to him, in this supposed distress of his: it
will show honestly in us, and is very likely to
load our purposes with what they travel for, if it
be a just and true report that goes of his having.

Poet. What have you now to present unto him?

Pain. Nothing at this time but my visitation;
only, I will promise him an excellent piece.

Poet. I must serve him so too; tell him of an
intent that's coming towards him.

Pain. Good as the best. Promising is the
very air o' the time; it opens the eyes of expec-
tation; performance is ever the diller for his
act; and, but in the plainer and simpler kind of
people, the deed of saying is quite out of use.
To promise is most courtly and fashionable;
performance is a kind of will or testament which
argues a great sickness in his judgment that
makes it.

Enter Timon from his cave.

Tim. [Aside.] Excellent workman! Thou
canst not paint a man so bad as is thyself.

Poet. I am thinking what I shall say I have
provided for him: it must be a personating of
himself; a satire against the softness of pros-
perity, with a discovery of the infinite flatteries
that follow youth and opulence.

Tim. [Aside.] Must thou needs stand for a
villain in thine own work? Wilt thou whip
thine own faults in other men? Do so, I have
gold for thee.

Poet. Nay, let's seek him:
Then do we sin against our own estate,
When we may profit meet, and come too late.

Pain. True;

When the day serves, before black-corner'd
night,
Find what thou want'st by free and offer'd light.

Come.

Tim. [Aside.] I'll meet you at the turn.

What a god's gold,

That he is worship'd in a baser temple
Than where swine feed!
'Tis thou that rigg'st the bark and plough'st
the foam,
TIMON OF ATHENS

Act V, Sc. I.

Solstesl admired reverence in a slave:
To thee be worship; and thy saints for aye
Be crown'd with plagues that thee alone obey.
Fit I meet them. [Advancing.
Poet. Hail, worthy Timon!
Pain. Our late noble master! 60
Tim. Have I once liv'd to see two honest men?
Poet. Sir,
Having often of your open bounty tasted,
Hearing you retir'd, your friends fall'n off,
Whose thankless natures—O abhorred spirits!
Not all the whips of heaven are large enough—
What! to you,
Whose star-like nobleness gave life and influence
To their whole being! I am rapt, and cannot
69
cover
The monstrous bulk of this ingratitude
With any size of words.
Tim. Let it go naked, men may see 't the better.
You, that are honest, by being what you are,
Make them best seen and known.
Pain. 
He and myself
Have travell'd in the great shower of your gifts,
And sweetly felt it.
Tim. Ay, you are honest men. 76
Pain. We are hither come to offer you our service.
Tim. Most honest men! Why, how shall I requite you?
Can you eat roots and drink cold water? no.
Both. What we can do, we'll do, to do you service.
Tim. Ye're honest men. Ye've heard that I have gold;
I am sure you have: speak truth; ye're honest men.
Pain. So it is said, my noble lord; but therefo-
80
Came not my friend nor I.
Tim. Good honest men! Thou draw'st at a counterfeit
Best in all Athens: thou'rt, indeed, the best;
Thou counterfeit'st most lively.
Pain. So, so, my lord.
Tim. E'en so, sir, as I say. And, for thy fiction,
88
Why, thy verse swells with stuff so fine and smooth
That thou art even natural in thine art.
But for all this, my honest-natur'd friends,
I must needs say you have a little fault: 92
Marry, 'tis not monstrous in you, neither wish I
You take much pains to mend.
Both. Beseech your honour
To make it known to us.
Tim. You'll take it ill.
Both. Most thankfully, my lord.
Tim. Will you indeed? 96
Both. Doubt it not, worthy lord.
Tim. There's never a one of you but trusts a knave,
That mightily deceives you.
Both. Do we, my lord?
Tim. Ay, and you hear him cog; see him dis-
semble, 100
Know his gross patchery, love him, feed him,
Keep in your bosom; yet remain assur'd
That he's a made-up villain.
Pain. I know none such, my lord.
Pain. Nor I. 104
Tim. Look you, I love you well; I'll give you gold,
Rid me these villains from your companies:
Hang them or stab them, drown them in a draught,
Confound them by some course, and come to me,
108
I'll give you gold enough.
Both. Name them, my lord; let's know them.
Tim. You that way and you this, but two in company;
Each man apart, all single and alone,
Yet an arch-villain keeps him company.
If, where thou art two villains shall not be,
Come not near him. [To the Poet.] If thou would not reside
But where one villain is, then him abandon.
Hence! pack! there's gold; ye came for gold,
ye slaves: 117
You have done work for me, there's payment: hence!
You are an alchemist, make gold of that.
Out, rascal dogs! [Beats them out and returns to his cave.

Enter Flavius and two Senators.
Flav. It is in vain that you would speak with
Timon;
For he is set so only to himself
That nothing but himself, which looks like man,
Is friendly with him.
First Sen. Bring us to his cave: 124
It is our part and promise to the Athenians
To speak with Timon.
Sec. Sen. At all times alike
Men are not still the same: 'twas time and griefs
That fram'd him thus: time, with his fairer hand,
Offering the fortunes of his former days,
The former man may make him. Bring us to him,
And chance it as it may.
Flav. Here is his cave. 131
Peace and content be here! Lord Timon! Timon!
TIMON OF ATHENS

Act V, Sc. I.

Look out, and speak to friends. The Athenians,
By two of their most reverend senate, greet thee:
Speak to them, noble Timon.

Enter TIMON, from his cave.

Tim. Thou art, that comfort'st, burn! Speak,
and be hang'd:
For each true word, a blister! and each false
Be as a cautery to the root o'the tongue,
Consuming it with speaking!

First Sen. Worthy Timon,—

Tim. Of none but such as you, and you of
Timon.

Sec. Sen. The senators of Athens greet thee,
Timon.

Tim. I thank them; and would send them
back the plague,
Could I but catch it for them.

First Sen. O! forget
What we are sorry for ourselves in thee.

The senators with one consent of love
Entreat thee back to Athens; who have thought
On special dignities, which vacant lie
For thy best use and wearing.

Sec. Sen. They confess
Toward thee forgetfulness too general, gross;
Which now the public body, which doth seldom
Play the recanter, feeling in itself
A lack of Timon's aid, hath sense withal
Of its own fail, restraining aid to Timon;
And send forth us, to make their sorrow'd
render,
Together with a recompense more fruitful
Than their offence can weigh down by the dram;
Ay, even such heaps and sums of love and wealth
As shall to thee block out what wrongs were
theirs,
And write in thee the figures of their love,
Ever to read them thine.

Tim. You witch me in it; I
Surprise me to the very brink of tears,
Lend me a fool's heart and a woman's eyes,
And I'll beweep these comforts, worthy sena-
tors.

First Sen. Therefore so please thee to return
with us,

And of our Athens—thine and ours—to take
The captainship, thou shalt be met with thanks,
Allow'd with absolute power, and thy good
name
Live with authority: so soon we shall drive back
Of Alcibiades the approaches wild;
Who, like a boar too savage, doth root up
His country's peace.

Sec. Sen. And shakes his threat'ning sword
Against the walls of Athens.

First Sen. Therefore, Timon,—

Tim. Well, sir, I will; therefore, I will, sir;
thus:
If Alcibiades kill my countrymen,
Let Alcibiades know this of Timon,
That Timon cares not. But if he sack fair
Athens,
And take our goodly aged men by the beards,
Giving our holy virgins to the stain
Of contumelious, beastly, mad-brain'd war;
Then let him know, and tell him Timon speaks
it,
In pity of our aged and our youth
I cannot choose but tell him, that I care not,
And let him take't at worst; for their knives
care not
While you have threats to answer: for myself,
There's not a whittle in the unruly camp
But I do prize it at my love before
The reverend'st threat in Athens. So I leave
you
To the protection of the prosperous gods,
As thieves to keepers.

Flav. Stay not; all's in vain.

Tim. Why, I was writing of my epitaph;
It will be seen to-morrow. My long sickness
Of health and living now begins to mend,
And nothing brings me all things. Go; live
still:
Be Alcibiades your plague, you his,
And last so long enough!

First Sen. We speak in vain.

Tim. But yet I love my country, and am
not
One that rejoices in the common wrack,
As common bruit doth put it.

First Sen. That's well spoke.

Tim. Commend me to my loving country-
men,—

First Sen. These words become your lips as
they pass through them.

Sec. Sen. And enter in our ears like great
triumpers
In their applauding gates.

Tim. Commend me to them;
And tell them, that, to ease them of their griefs,
Their fears of hostile strokes, their aches, losse,
Their pangs of love, with other incident throes
That nature's fragile vessel doth sustain
In life's uncertain voyage, I will some kindness
do them:
I'll teach them to prevent wild Alcibiades' wrath.

Sec. Sen. I like this well: he will return again.

Tim. I have a tree which grows here in my
close,
That mine own use invites me to cut down,
And shortly must I fell it; tell my friends,
Tell Athens, in the sequence of degree,
From high to low throughout; that whoseo
please
To stop affliction, let him take his haste,
Come hither, ere my tree hath felt the axe, 216
And hang himself. I pray you, do my greeting.
Flav. Trouble him no further; thus you still
shall find him.
Tim. Come not to me again; but say to
Athens,
Timon hath made his everlasting mansion 220
Upon the beached verge of the salt flood;
Who once a day with his embossed froth
The turbulent surge shall cover: thither come,
And let my grave-stone be your oracle. 224
Lips, let sour words go by and language end:
What is amiss plague and infection mend!
Graves only be men's works and death their
gain!
Sun, hide thy beams! Timon hath done his
reign. [Exit.
First Sen. His discontents are unremovably
Coupled to nature.
Sec. Sen. Our hope in him is dead: let us
return,
And strain what other means is left unto us 232
In our dear peril.
First Sen. It requires swift foot. [Exeunt.

SCENE II.—Before the Walls of Athens.

Enter two Senators and a Messenger.
First Sen. Thou hast painfully discover'd:
are his files
As full as thy report?
Mess. I have spoke the least;
Besides, his expedition promises
Present approach.
Sec. Sen. We stand much hazard if they
bring not Timon.
Mess. I met a courier, one mine ancient
friend,
Whom, though in general part we were op-
pos'd,
Yet our old love made a particular force, 8
And made us speak like friends: this man was
riding
From Alcibiades to Timon's cave,
With letters of entreaty, which imported
His fellowship i' the cause against your city, 12
In part for his sake mov'd.
First Sen. Here come our brothers.

Enter Senators from Timon.
Third Sen. No talk of Timon, nothing of
him expect.
The enemies' drum is heard, and fearful scouring

Doth choke the air with dust. In, and prepare:
Ours is the fall, I fear; our foes the snare. 17

[Exeunt.

SCENE III.—The Woods. Timon's Cave, and a
rude Tomb seen.

Enter a Soldier, seeking Timon.
Sold. By all description this should be the
place.
Who's here? speak, ho! No answer! What is
this?
Timon is dead, who hath outstretch'd his
span:
Some beast rear'd this; here does not live a
man. 4
Dead, sure; and this his grave. What's on this
tomb
I cannot read; the character I'll take with wax:
Our captain hath in every figure skill;
An ag'd interpreter, though young in days. 8
Before proud Athens he's set down by this,
Whose fall the mark of his ambition is. [Exit.

SCENE IV.—Before the Walls of Athens.

Trumpets sound. Enter Alcibiades with his
Powers.

Alcib. Sound to this coward and lascivious
town
Our terrible approach. [A parley sounded.

Enter Senators, on the Walls.
Till now you have gone on, and fill'd the time
With all licentious measure, making your wits 4
The scope of justice; till now myself and such
As slept within the shadow of your power
Have wander'd with our travers'd arms, and
breath'd
Our sufferance vainly. Now the time is flush, 8
When crouching narrow, in the bearer strong,
Cries of itself, 'Now more: now breathless wrong
Shall sit and pant in your great chairs of ease,
And pursy insolence shall break his wind 12
With fear and horrid flight.
First Sen. Noble and young,
When thy first griefs were but a mere conceit,
Ere thou hast'd power or we had cause of fear,
We sent to thee, to give thy rages balm, 16
To wipe out our ingratitude with loves
Above their quantity.
Sec. Sen. So did we woo
Transformed Timon to our city's love
By humble message and by promis'd means: 20
We were not all unkind, nor all deserve
The common stroke of war.
First Sen. These walls of ours

948
Were not erected by their hands from whom
You have receiv'd your grief; nor are they such
That these great towers, trophies, and schools
should fall

For private faults in them.

Sec. Sen. Nor are they living

Who were the motives that you first went out;
Shame that they wanted cunning in excess
Hath broke their hearts. March, noble lord,
Into our city with thy banners spread:
By decimation, and a tithed death,—
If thy revenge hunger for that food
Which nature loathes,—take thou the destin’d
tenth,
And by the hazard of the spotted die
Let die the spotted.

First Sen. All have not offended;
For those that were, it is not square to take
On those that are, revenge: crimes, like lands,
Are not inherited. Then, dear countryman,
Bring in thy ranks, but leave without thy rage:
Spare thy Athenian cradle, and those km
Which in the bluster of thy wrath must fall
With those that have offended: like a shepherd,
Approach the fold and cull th’ infected forth,
But kill not all together.

Sec. Sen. What thou wilt,
Thou rather shalt enforce it with thy smile
Than how to’t with thy sword.

First Sen. Set but thy foot
Against our rampir’d gates, and they shall ope,
So thou wilt send thy gentle heart before,
To say thou’lt enter friendly.

Sec. Sen. Throw thy glove,
Or any token of thine honour else,
That thou wilt use the wars as thy redress
And not as our confusion, all thy powers
Shall make their harbour in our town, till we
Have seal’d thy full desire.

Alcib. Then there’s my glove;
Deseend, and open your uncharged ports:

Those enemies of Timon’s and mine own
Whom you yourselves shall set out for reproof,
Fall, and no more; and, to stone your fears
With my more noble meaning, not a man
Shall pass his quarter, or offend the stream
Of regular justice in your city’s bounds,
But shall be render’d to your public laws
At heaviest answer.

Both. ’Tis most nobly spoken.

Alcib. Descend, and keep your words. 64

[The Senators descend, and open the gates.

Enter a Soldier.

Sold. My noble general, Timon is dead;
Entomb’d upon the very hem o’ the sea:
And on his grave-stone this insculpture, which
With wax I brought away, whose soft impression
Interprets for my poor ignorance.

Alcib. Here lies a wretched corse, of wretched
soul bereft:
Seek not my name: a plague consume you
wicked caitiffs left!
Here lie I, Timon; who, alive, all living men
did hate:
Pass by, and curse thy fill; but pass and stay
not here thy gait.

These well express in thee thy latter spirits:
Though thou abhorr’dst in us our human griefs,
Scorn’dst our brain’s flow and those our dropplets
From niggard nature fall, yet rich conceit
Taught thee to make vast Neptune weep for aye
On thy low grave, on faults forgiven. Dead
Is noble Timon; of whose memory
Hereafter more. Bring me into your city,
And I will use the olive with my sword:
Make war breed peace; make peace stint war;
make each
Prescribe to other as each other’s leech.
Let our drums strike.

[Exeunt.
JULIUS CAESAR

DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

JULIUS CAESAR.
OCTAVIUS CAESAR, 
MARCUS ANTONIUS,
M. EMILIVS LEPIUS, 
CICERO,
PUBLIUS,
P. LENA,
MARCUS BRUTUS,
CASSIVS,
CASCA,
TREBONIUS,
LIGARIUS,
DECIVS BRUTUS,
METELVS CIMBER,
CINNA,
FLAVIVS and MARULLIVS, Tribunes.

ARTEMIVDORUS, a Sophist of Cnidus.
A Soothsayer.
CINNA, a Poet.
CINNA, a Poet.
LUCIVLVS, TITIVLVS, MESSALVA, YOUNG CATO,
and VULVIVLNI; Friends to Brutus and Cassivs.
VARIVLVS, CLIVLVS, CLAVIVLVS, STRATO, LIVLVS,
DARDANIVLVS; Servants to Brutus.
PINDIVLVS, Servant to Cassivs.

CALPHVRSIA, Wife to CAESAR.
PORTIA, Wife to Brutus.

Senators, Citizens, Guards, Attendants, &c.

SCENE.—During a great part of the Play, at Rome; afterwards, Sardis and near Philippi.

ACT I.

SCENE I.—Rome. 'A Street.

Enter Flavius, Marullus, and certain Commoners.

Flav. Hence! home, you idle creatures, get you home:
Is this a holiday? What! know you not,
Being mechanical, you ought not walk
Upon a labouring day without the sign
Of your profession? Speak, what trade art thou?
First Com. Why, sir, a carpenter.
Mar. Where is thy best apparel, and thy rule?
What dost thou with thy best apparel on?
You, sir, what trade are you?
Second Com. Truly, sir, in respect of a fine workman, I am but, as you would say, a cobbler.
Sec. Com. A trade, sir, that, I hope, I may use with a safe conscience; which is, indeed, sir, a mender of bad soles.
Mar. What trade, thou knave? thou naughty knave, what trade?
Sec. Com. Nay, I beseech you, sir, be not out with me: yet, if you be out, sir, I can mend you.
Mar. What meanest thou by that? Mend me, thou saucy fellow!
Sec. Com. Why, sir, cobbler you.

Flav. Thou art a cobbler, art thou?
Sec. Com. Truly, sir, all that I live by is with the awl: I meddle with no tradesman's matters, nor women's matters, but with awl. I am, indeed, sir, a surgeon to old shoes; when they are in great danger, I recover them. As proper men as ever trod upon neat's leather have gone upon my handiwork.

Flav. But wherefore art not in thy shop today?
Why dost thou lead these men about the streets?
Sec. Com. Truly, sir, to wear out their shoes, to get myself into more work. But, indeed, sir, we make holiday to see Caesar and to rejoice in his triumph.

Mar. Wherefore rejoices? What conquest brings he home?

What tributaries follow him to Rome?
To grace in captive bonds his chariot wheels? You blocks, you stones, you worse than senseless things!
O you hard hearts, you cruel men of Rome, Knew you not Pompey? Many a time and oft Have you climb'd up to walls and battlements, To towers and windows, yea, to chimney-tops, Your infants in your arms, and there have sat The livelong day, with patient expectation, To see great Pompey pass the streets of Rome; And when you saw his chariot but appear, Have you not made a universal shout,
That Tiber trembled underneath her banks,  
To hear the replication of your sounds  
Made in her concave shores?  
And do you now put on your best attire?  
And do you now full out a holiday?  
And do you now strew flowers in his way,  
That comes in triumph over Pompey's blood?  
Be gone!  
Run to your houses, fall upon your knees,  
Pray to the gods to intermit the plague  
That needs must light on this ingratitude.  
Flav. Go, go, good countrymen, and, for this fault  
Assemble all the poor men of your sort;  
Draw them to Tiber banks, and weep your tears  
Into the channel, till the lowest stream  
Do kiss the most exalted shores of all.  
[Exeunt all the Commoners.  
See whe'r their basest metal be not mov'd;  
They vanish tongue-tied in their guiltiness.  
Go you down that way towards the Capitol;  
This way will I. Disrobe the images  
If you do find them deck'd with ceremonies.  
Mar. May we do so?  
You know it is the feast of Lupercal.  
Flav. It is no matter; let no images  
Be hung with Caesar's trophies. I'll about  
And drive away the vulgar from the streets:  
So do you too where you perceive them thick.  
These growing feathers pluck'd from Caesar's wing  
Will make him fly an ordinary pitch,  
Who else would soar above the view of men  
And keep us all in servile fearfulness. [Exeunt.

SCENE II.—The Same. A Public Place.

Enter, in procession, with music, Caesar; Antony, for the course; Calphurnia, Portia, Decius, Cicero, Brutus, Cassius, and Casca; a great crowd following, among them a Soothsayer.  
Caes. Calphurnia!  
Casca. Peace, ho! Caesar speaks.  
[Music ceases.  
Caes.  
Cal. Here, my lord.  
Cas. Stand you directly in Antonius' way  
When he doth run his course. Antonius!  
Ant. Caesar, my lord.  
Cas. Forget not, in your speed, Antonius,  
To touch Calphurnia; for our elders say,  
The barren, touched in this holy chase,  
Shake off their sterile curse.  
Ant. I shall remember:  
When Caesar says 'Do this,' it is perform'd.

Cas. Set on; and leave no ceremony out.  
[Sooth. Caesar!  
Cas. Hal! Who calls?  
Casca. Bid every noise be still: peace yet again!  
[Sooth. Caesar turns. Speak; Caesar is turn'd to hear.  
[Sooth. Beware the ides of March.  
Caes. What man is that?  
Bru. A soothsayer bids you beware the ides of March.  
Caes. Set him before me; let me see his face.  
Cas. Fellow, come from the throng; look upon Caesar.  
Caes. What sayst thou to me now? Speak once again.  
[Sooth. Beware the ides of March.  
Caes. He is a dreamer; let us leave him: pass.  
[Senet. Exeunt all but Brutus and Cassius.  
Caes. Will you go see the order of the course?  
Bru. Not I.  
Cas. I pray you, do.  
Bru. I am not gamesome: I do lack some part  
Of that quick spirit that is in Antony.  
Let me not hinder, Cassius, your desires;  
I'll leave you.  
Cas. Brutus, I do observe you now of late:  
I have not from your eyes that gentleness  
And show of love as I was wont to have:  
You bear too stubborn and too strange a hand  
Over your friend that loves you.  
Bru. Cassius,  
Be not deceiv'd: if I have veil'd my look,  
I turn the trouble of my countenance  
Merely upon myself. Vexed I am  
Of late with passions of some difference,  
Conceptions only proper to myself,  
Which give some soil perhaps to my behaviours;  
But let not therefore my good friends be griev'd,—  
Among which number, Cassius, be you one,—  
Nor construe any further my neglect,  
Than that poor Brutus, with himself at war,  
Forgets the shows of love to other men.  
Cas. Then, Brutus, I have much mistook your passion;  
By means whereof this breast of mine hath buried  
Thoughts of great value, worthy cogitations.  
Tell me, good Brutus, can you see your face?  
Bru. No, Cassius; for the eye sees not itself,  
But by reflection, by some other things.  
Cas. 'Tis just:
And it is very much lamented, Brutus,
   That you have no such mirrors as will turn
   Your hidden worthiness into your eye,
   That you might see your shadow. I have heard,
   Where many of the best respect in Rome,—
Except immortal Caesar,—speaking of Brutus,
And groaning underneath this age's yoke,
Have wish'd that noble Brutus had his eyes.

Brutus. Into what dangers would you lead me,
Casius,
That you would have me seek into myself
For that which is not in me?
Cas. Therefore, good Brutus, be prepar'd to hear;
And, since you know you cannot see yourself
So well as by reflection, I, your glass,
Will modestly discover to yourself
That of yourself which you yet know not of.
And be not jealous on me, gentle Brutus:
Were I a common laughler, or did use
To stile with ordinary oaths my love
To every new protestor, if you know
That I do fawn on men and hug them hard,
And after scandal them; or if you know
That I profess myself in banqueting
To all the rout, then hold me dangerous.

[Flourish and shout.]

Brutus. What means this shouting? I do fear the people
Choose Caesar for their king.
Cas. Ay, do you fear it?
Then must I think you would not have it so.
Brutus. I would not, Cassius; yet I love him well.
But wherefore do you hold me here so long?
What is it that you would impart to me?
If it be aught toward the general good,
Set honour in one eye and death in the other,
And I will look on both indifferently;
For let the gods so speed me as I love
The name of honour more than I fear death.

Cas. I know that virtue is in you, Brutus,
As well as I do know your outward favour.
Well, honour is the subject of my story.
I cannot tell what you and other men
Think of this life; but, for my single self,
I had as lief be as live to be
In awe of such a thing as myself.
I was born free as Caesar; so were you:
We both have fed as well, and we can both
Endure the winter's cold as well as he:
For once, upon a raw and gusty day,
The troubled Tiber chafing with her shores,
Caesar said to me,—'Dar'at thou, Cassius, now
Leap in with me into this angry flood,
And swim to yonder point.' Upon the word,
Accoutred as I was, I plunged in
And bade him follow; so, indeed he did.
The torrent roar'd, and we did buffet it
With lusty sinews, throwing it aside
And stemming it with hearts of controversy;
But ere we could arrive the point propos'd,
Caesar cried, 'Help me, Cassius, or I sink!'
I, as Aeneas, our great ancestor,
Did from the flames of Troy upon his shoulder
The old Anchises bear, so from the waves of the Tiber
Did I the tired Caesar. And this man
Is now become a god, and Cassius is
A wretched creature and must bend his body
If Caesar carelessly but nod on him.
He had a fever when he was in Spain,
And when the fit was on him, I did mark
How he did shake; 'tis true, this god did shake;
His coward lips did from their colour fly,
And that same eye whose bend doth owe the world
Did lose his lustre; I did hear him groan;
Ay, and that tongue of his that bade the Romans
Mark him and write his speeches in their books,
Alas! it cried, 'Give me some drink, Titinius,'
As a sick girl. Ye gods, it doth amaze me,
A man of such a feeble temper should
So get the start of the majestic world,
And bear the palm alone. [Flourish. Shout.
Brutus. Another general shout! I do believe that these applause are
For some new honours that are heaped on Caesar.

Cas. Why, man, he doth bestride the narrow world
Like a Colossus; and we petty men
Walk under his huge legs, and peep about
To find ourselves dishonourable graves.
Men at some time are masters of their fates:
The fault, dear Brutus, is not in our stars,
But in ourselves, that we are underlings.

Brutus and Caesar: what should be in that 'Caesar?'
Why should that name be sounded more than yours?
Write them together, yours is as fair a name;
Sound them, it doth become the mouth as well;
Weigh them, it is as heavy; conjure with 'em,
'Brutus' will start a spirit as soon as 'Cæsar.'
Now, in the names of all the gods at once,
Upon what meat doth this our Caesar feed,
That he is grown so great? Age, thou art shamed!

Rome, thou hast lost the breed of noble blood!
When went there by an age, since the great flood,
But it was fam'd with more than with one man?
When could they say, till now, that talk'd of Rome, 153
That her wide walls encompass'd but one man?
Now is it Rome indeed and room enough,
When there is in it but one only man. 156
0! you and I have heard our fathers say,
There was a Brutus once that would have brook'd
Th' eternal devil to keep his state in Rome
As easily as a king. 160

Brutus. That you do love me, I am nothing jealous;
What you would work me to, I have some aim:
How I have thought of this and of these times,
I shall recount hereafter; for this present, I
would not, so with love I might entreat you,
Be any further mov'd. What you have said
I will consider; what you have to say
I will with patience hear, and find a time 168
Both meet to hear and answer such high things.
Till then, my noble friend, chew upon this:
Brutus had rather be a villager
Than to repute himself a son of Rome 172
Under these hard conditions as this time
Is like to lay upon us.

Casca. I am glad
That my weak words have struck but thus much show
Of fire from Brutus. 176

Brutus. The games are done and Cæsar is returning.

Casca. As they pass by, pluck Casca by the sleeve,
And he will, after his sour fashion, tell you
What hath proceeded worthy note to-day. 180

Re-enter Cæsar and his Train.

Brutus. I will do so. But, look you, Cassius,
The angry spot doth glow on Cæsar's brow,
And all the rest look like a chidden train:
Calphurnia's cheek is pale, and Cicero
Looks with such ferret and such fiery eyes
As we have seen him in the Capitol,
Being cross'd in conference by some senators.

Casca. Cæsar will tell us what the matter is.

Ces. Antonius!

Ant. Cæsar.

Casca. Let me have men about me that are fat;
Sleek-headed men and such as sleep o' nights.
Yond Cassius has a lean and hungry look; 193
He thinks too much: such men are dangerous

Ant. Fear him not, Cæsar; he's not dangerous;
He is a noble Roman, and well given. 196

Casca. Would he were fatter! but if fear him not:
Yea, if my name were liable to fear,
I do not know the man I should avoid
So soon as that spare Cassius. He reads much;

He is a great observer, and he looks
Quite through the deeds of men; he loves no plays,
As thou dost, Antony; he hears no music;
Seldom he smiles, and smiles in such a sort
As if he mock'd himself, and scorn'd his spirit
That could be mov'd to smile at any thing.
Such men as he be never at heart's ease
Whilsts they behold a greater than themselves,
And therefore are they very dangerous. 209
I rather tell thee what is to be fear'd
Than what I fear, for always I am Cæsar.
Come on my right hand, for this ear is deaf, 212
And tell me truly what thou thinkest of him.

[Senet. Exeunt Cæsar and his Train.
Cæsa stands behind.

Casca. You pull'd me by the cloak; would you
speake with me?

Brutus. Ay, Casca; tell us what hath chanc'd
to-day,
That Cæsar looks so sad.

Casca. Why, you were with him, were you not?

Brutus. I should not then ask Casca what had chanc'd.

Casca. Why, there was a crown offered him;
and, being offered him, he put it by with the
back of his hand, thus; and then the people fell
a-shouting.

Brutus. What was the second noise for?

Casca. Why, for that too.

Casca. They shouted thrice: what was the last
cry for?

Casca. Why, for that too.

Brutus. Was the crown offered him thrice?

Casca. Ay, marry, was 't, and he put it by
thrice, everytime gentler than other; and at every
putting-by mine honest neighbours shouted.

Casca. Who offered him the crown?

Casca. Why, Antony.

Brutus. Tell us the manner of it, gentle Casca.

Casca. I can as well be hanged as tell the
manner of it: it was mere foolery; I did not
mark it. I saw Mark Antony offer him a crown;
yet 'twas not a crown neither, 'twas one of these
coronet's; and, as I told you, he put it by once;
but, for all that, to my thinking, he would fain
have had it. Then he offered it to him again;
then he put it by again; but, to my thinking, he
was very loath to lay his fingers off it. And then
he offered it the third time; he put it the third
time by; and still as he refused it the rabblement
shouted and clapped their chopped hands, and
threw up their sweaty night-caps, and uttered
such a deal of stinking breath because Cæsar
refused the crown, that it had almost choked
Cæsar; for he swounded and fell down at it: and
for mine own part, I durst not laugh, for fear of opening my lips and receiving the bad air.

Cas. But soft, I pray you: what! did Caesar swound?

Casca. He fell down in the market-place, and foamed at mouth, and was speechless.

Bru. 'Tis very like: he hath the falling-sickness.

Cas. No, Caesar hath it not; but you, and I, And honest Casca, we have the falling-sickness.

Casca. I know not what you mean by that; but I am sure Caesar fell down. If the rag-tag people did not clap him and hiss him, according as he pleased and dis pleased them, as they use to do the players in the theatre, I am no true man.

Bru. What said he, when he came unto himself?

Casca. Marry, before he fell down, when he perceived the common herd was glad he refused the crown, he plucked me ope his doublet and offered them his throat to cut. An I had been a man of any occupation, if I would not have taken him at a word, I would I might go to hell among the rogues. And so he fell. When he came to himself again, he said, if he had done or said any thing amiss, he desired their worship to think it was his infirmity. Three or four wenches, where I stood, cried, 'Alas! good soul,' and forgave him with all their hearts: but there's no need to be taken of them; if Caesar had stabbed their mothers, they would have done no less.

Bru. And after that he came, thus sad, away?

Casca. Ay.

Cas. Did Cicero say anything?

Casca. Ay, he spoke Greek.

Cas. To what effect?

Casca. Nay, an I tell you that, I'll ne'er look you in the face again; but those that understood him smiled at one another and shook their heads; but, for mine own part, it was Greek to me. I could tell you more news too; Marullus and Flavius, for pulling scarfs off Caesar's images, are put to shame. Fare you well. There was more foolery yet, if I could remember it.

Cas. Will you sup with me to-night, Casca?

Casca. No, I am promised forth.

Cas. Will you dine with me to-morrow?

Casca. Ay, if I be alive, and your mind hold, and your dinner worth the eating.

Cas. Good; I will expect you.

Casca. Do so. Farewell, both. [Exit.

Bru. What a blunt fellow is this grown to be?

He was quick mettle when he went to school.

Cas. So is he now in execution.

Of any bold or noble enterprise,
However he puts on this tardy form.
This rudeness is a sauce to his good wit,
Which gives men stomach to digest his words
With better appetite.

Bru. And so it is. For this time I will leave you:

To-morrow, if you please to speak with me,
I will come home to you; or, if you will,
Come home to me, and I will wait for you.

Cas. I will do so: till then, think of the world. [Exit Brutus.

Well, Brutus, thou art noble; yet, I see,
Thy honourable metal may be wrought
From that it is dispos'd: therefore 'tis meet
That noble minds keep ever with their likes;
For who so firm that cannot be seduced?
Caesar doth bear me hard; but he loves Brutus:
If I were Brutus now and he were Cassius
He should not humour me. I will this night,
In several hands, in at his windows throw,
As if they came from several citizens,
Writings all tending to the great opinion
That Rome holds of his name; wherein ob-
securely
Caesar's ambition shall be glanced at:
And after this let Caesar seat him sure;
For we will shake him, or worse days endure. [Exit.

SCENE III.—The Same. A Street.

Thunder and lightning. Enter, from opposite sides, CASCA, with his sword drawn, and CICERO.

Cic. Good even, Casca: brought you Caesar home?

Why are you breathless? and why stare you so?

Casca. Are not you mov'd, when all the sway of earth
Shakes like a thing unform'd? O Cicero! 4
I have seen tempests, when the scolding winds
Have riv'd the knotty oaks; and I have seen
The ambitious ocean swell and rage and foam,
To be exalted with the threat'ning clouds: 8
But never till to-night, never till now,
Did I go through a tempest dropping fire.
Either there is a civil strife in heaven,
Or else the world, too saucy with the gods, 12
Incenses them to send destruction.

Cic. Why, saw you anything more wonderful?

Casca. A common slave—you know him well
by sight—

Hold up his left hand, which did flame and burn
Like twenty torches join'd; and yet his hand, 17
Not sensible of fire, remain'd unscorch'd.
Besides,—I have not since put up my sword,—
Against the Capitol I met a lion,
Who glar'd upon me, and went surly by,
Without annoying me; and there were drawn
Upon a heap a hundred ghastly women,
Transformed with their fear, who swore they saw
Men all in fire walk up and down the streets.
And yesterday the bird of night did sit,
Even at noon-day, upon the market-place,
Hooting and shrieking: When these prodigies
Do so conjointly meet, let not men say
'These are their reasons, they are natural:"
For, I believe, they are portentous things
Upto the climate that they point upon.
Cic. Indeed, it is a strange-disposed time:
But men may construe things after their fashion,
Clean from the purpose of the things themselves.
Comes Caesar to the Capitol to-morrow?
Cas. He doth; for he did bid Antonius
Send word to you he would be there to-morrow.
Cic. Good-night then, Casca: this disturbed sky
Is not to walk in.
Casca. Farewell, Cicero. [Exit CICERO.

Enter CASSIUS.

Cas. Who's there?
Casca. A Roman.
Cas. Casca, by your voice.
Casca. Your ear is good, Cassius, what night is this?
Cas. A very pleasing night to honest men.
Casca. Who ever knew the heavens menace so?
Cas. Those that have known the earth so full of faults.
For my part, I have walk'd about the streets,
Submitting me unto the perilous night,
And, thus unbraced, Casca, as you see,
Have bar'd my bosom to the thunder-stone;
And, when the cross blue lightning seem'd to open
The breast of heaven, I did present myself
Even in the aim and very flash of it.
Casca. But wherfore did you so much tempt the heavens?
It is the part of men to fear and tremble
When the most mighty gods by tokens send
Such dreadful heralds to astonish us.
Cas. You are dull, Casca, and those sparks of life
That should be in a Roman you do want,
Or else you use not. You look pale, and gase,
And put on fear, and cast yourself in wonder,
To see the strange impatience of the heavens;
But if you would consider the true cause
Why all these fires, why all these gliding ghosts,
Why birds and beasts, from quality and kind;
Why old men, fools, and children calculate;
Why all these things change from their ordi-
nance,
Their natures, and pre-formed faculties,
To monstrous quality, why, you shall find
That heaven hath infused them with these spirits
To make them instruments of fear and warning
Unto some monstrous state.
Now could I, Cassius, name to thee a man
Most like this dreadful night,
That thunders, lightens, opens graves, and roars
As doth the lion in the Capitol,
A man no mightier than thyself or me
In personal action, yet prodigious grown
And fearful as these strange eruptions are.
Casca. 'Tis Caesar that you mean; is it not, Cassius?
Cas. Let it be who it is: for Romans now have thews and limbs like to their ancestors; But, woe the while! our fathers' minds are dead, And we are govern'd with our mothers' spirits; Our yoke and suffrance show us womanish.
Casca. Indeed, they say the senators to-mor-
row
Mean to establish Caesar as a king;
And he shall wear his crown by sea and land,
In every place, save here in Italy.
Cas. I know where I will wear this dagger then;
Cassius from bondage will deliver Cassius:
Therein, ye gods, you make the weak most strong;
Therein, ye gods, you tyrants do defeat:
Nor stony tower, nor walls of beaten brass,
Nor airless dungeon, nor strong links of iron,
Can be retentive to the strength of spirit;
But life, being weary of those worldly bars,
Never lacks power to dismiss itself.
If I know this, know all the world besides,
That part of tyranny that I do bear
I can shake off at pleasure. [Thunder still.
Casca. So can I:
So every bondman in his own hand bears
The power to cancel his captivity.
Cas. And why should Caesar be a tyrant then?
Poor man! I know he would not be a wolf
But that he sees the Romans are but sheep;
He were no lion were not Romans hinds.
Those that with haste will make a mighty fire
Begin it with weak straws; what trash is Rome,
What rubbish, and what offal, when it serves
For the base matter to illuminate
So vile a thing as Caesar! But, O grief!
Act I, Sc. III.

JULIUS CAESAR

Where hast thou led me? I, perhaps, speak this
Before a willing bondman; then I know
My answer must be made; but I am arm’d,
And dangers are to me indifferent.
Cas. You speak to Casca, and to such a
man
That is no fleering tell-tale. Hold, my hand:
Be facetious for reproof of all these griefs,
And I will set this foot of mine as far
As who goes furthest.
Cas. There’s a bargain made.

Now know you, Casca, I have mov’d already
Some certain of the noblest-minded Romans
To undergo with me an enterprise
Of honourable-dangerous consequence;
And I do know by this they stay for me
In Pompey’s porch: for now, this fearful night,
There is no stir, or walking in the streets;
And the complexion of the element
In favour’s like the work we have in hand,
Most bloody, fiery, and most terrible.
Casca. Stand close awhile, for here comes
one in haste.
Cas. ’Tis Cinna; I do know him by his gait:
He is a friend.

Enter Cinna.

Cinna, where haste you so?
Cas. To find out you. Who’s that? Metellus
Cimber?
Cas. No, it is Casca; one incorporate
To our attempts. Am I not stay’d for, Cinna?
Cin. I am glad on’t. What a fearful night is
this!
There’s two or three of us have seen strange
sights.
Cas. Am I not stay’d for? Tell me.
Cin. Yes, you are.
O Cassius! if you could
But win the noble Brutus to our party—
Cas. Be you content. Good Cinna, take this
paper,
And look you lay it in the praetor’s chair,
Where Brutus may but find it; and throw this
In at his window; set this up with wax
Upon old Brutus’ statue: all this done,
Repair to Pompey’s porch, where you shall find
us.
Is Decius Brutus and Trebonius there?
Cas. All but Metellus Cimber; and he’s gone
To seek you at your house. Well, I will bide,
And so bestow these papers as you bade me.
Cas. That done, repair to Pompey’s theatre.

[Exit Cinna.

Come, Cassa, you and I will yet ere day
See Brutus at his house: three parts of him
Is ours already, and the man entire
Upon the next encounter yields him ours.
Casca. O! he sits high in all the people’s
hearts:
And that which would appear offence in us,
His countenance, like richest alchemy,
Will change to virtue and to worthiness.
Cas. Him and his worth and our great need of
him
You have right well conceited. Let us go,
For it is after midnight; and ere day
We will awake him and be sure of him.

[Exeunt.

ACT II.

SCENE I.—Rome. Brutus’ Orchard.

Enter Brutus.

Bru. What, Lucius! hol!
Cin. I cannot, ’by the progress of the stars,
Give guess how near to day. Lucius, I say!
I would it were my fault to sleep so soundly.

Lucius, when! Awake, I say! what, Lucius!

Enter Lucius.

Luc. Call’d you, my lord?
Bru. Get me a taper in my study, Lucius.

When it is lighted, come and call me here.

Luc. I will, my lord.

[Exit.

Bru. It must be by his death: and, for my
part,
I know no personal cause to spurn at him,
But for the general. He would be crown’d: 12
How that might change his nature, there’s the
question:
It is the bright day that brings forth the adder;
And that craves wary walking. Crown him?—
That!
And then, I grant, we put a sting in him,
That at his will he may do danger with.
The abuse of greatness is when it disjoins
Remorse from power; and, to speak truth of
Cesar,
I have not known when his affections sway’d
More than his reason. But ’tis a common
proof,
That lowliness is young ambition’s ladder,
Whereo the climber-upward turns his face;
But when he once attains the upmost round,
He then unto the ladder turns his back,
Looks in the clouds, scorning the base degrees
By which he did ascend. So Cesar may:
Then, lest he may, prevent. And, since the
quarrel
Will bear no colour for the thing he is,
Fashion it thus: that what he is, augmented,
Would run to these and these extremities;
And therefore think him as a serpent’s egg,
Which, hatch’d, would, as his kind, grow mischievous,
And kill him in the shell.

Re-enter LUCIUS.

Luc. The taper burneth in your closet, sir.
Searching the window for a light, I found
This paper, thus seal’d up; and I am sure
It did not lie there when I went to bed.

Bru. Get you to bed again; it is not day.
Is not to-morrow, boy, the ides of March?

Luc. I know not, sir.

Bru. Look in the calendar, and bring me word.

Luc. I will, sir. [Exit.

Bru. The exhalations whizzing in the air
Give so much light that I may read by them.
[Opens the letter.

Brutus, thou sleepest: awake and see thyself.
Shall Rome, &c. Speak, strike, redress!

Brutus, thou sleepest: awake!

Such instigations have been often dropp’d
Where I have took them up.
‘Shall Rome, &c.’ Thus must I piece it out:
Shall Rome stand under one man’s awe?

What, Rome?

My ancestors did from the streets of Rome
The Tarquin drive, when he was call’d a king.
‘Speak, strike, redress!’ Am I entreated
To speak, and strike? O Rome! I make thee promise;

If the redress will follow, thou receiv’st
Thy full petition at the hand of Brutus!

Re-enter LUCIUS.

Luc. Sir, March is wasted fourteen days.

[Knocking within.

Bru. ’Tis good. Go to the gate: somebody knocks.

[Exit LUCIUS.

Since Cassius first did whet me against Caesar,
I have not slept.

Between the acting of a dreadful thing
And the first motion, all the interim is
Like a phantasma, or a hideous dream:
The genius and the mortal instruments
Are then in council; and the state of man,
Like to a little kingdom, suffers then

The nature of an insurrection.

Re-enter LUCIUS.

Luc. Sir, ’tis your brother Cassius at the door.

Who doth desire to see you?

Bru. Is he alone?

Luc. No, sir, there are more with him.

Bru. Do you know them?

Luc. No, sir; their hats are pluck’d about
Their ears,
And half their faces buried in their cloaks,
That by no means I may discover them
By any mark of favour.

Bru. Let ’em enter. [Exit LUCIUS.

They are the faction. O conspiracy!
Sham’st thou to show thy dangerous brow by
night,
When evils are most free? O! then by day
Where wilt thou find a cavern dark enough
To mask thy monstrous visage? Seek none,
conspiracy;

Hide it in smiles and affability:
For if thou path, thy native semblance on,
Not Erebus itself were dim enough
To hide thee from prevention.

Enter the Conspirators, Cassius, Casca, Decius, Cinna, Metellus Cimber, and Trebonius.

Cas. I think we are too bold upon your rest:
Good morrow, Brutus; do we trouble you?

Bru. I have been up this hour, awake all night.

Know I these men that come along with you?

Cas. Yes, every man of them; and no man here
But honours you; and every one doth wish
You had but that opinion of yourself
Which every noble Roman bears of you.

This is Trebonius.

Bru. He is welcome hither.

Cas. This, Decius Brutus.

Bru. He is welcome too.

Cas. This, Casca; this, Cinna;

And this, Metellus Cimber.

Bru. They are all welcome.

What watchful cares do interpose themselves
Betwixt your eyes and night?

Cas. Shall I entreat a word? [BRUTUS AND CASSIUS WHISPER.

Dec. Here lies the east: doth not the day
break here?

Casca. No.

Cin. O! pardon, sir, it doth; and your grey lines

That fret the clouds are messengers of day.

Casca. You shall confess that you are both deceiv’d.

Here, as I point my sword, the sun arises;
Which is a great way growing on the south,
Weighing the youthful season of the year.

Some two months hence up higher toward the north
He first presents his fire; and the high east.
As to annoy us all; which to prevent,
Let Antony and Caesar fall together.

Brutus. Our course will seem too bloody, Caius Cassius,
To cut the head off and then hack the limbs,
Like wrath in death and envy afterwards; 164
For Antony is but a limb of Caesar.
Let us be sacrificers, but not butchers, Caius.
We all stand up against the spirit of Caesar;
And in the spirit of men there is no blood: 168
Of then that we could come by Caesar's spirit,
And not dismember Caesar. But, alas!
Cæsar must bleed for it. And, gentle friends,
Let's kill him boldly, but not wrathfully; 172
Let's carve him as a duff fit for the gods,
Not hew him as a carcass fit for hounds:
And let our hearts, as subtle masters do,
Stir up their servants to an act of rage, 176
And after seem to chide 'em. This shall make
Our purpose necessary and not envious;
Which so appearing to the common eyes,
We shall be call'd purgers, not murderers. 180
And, for Mark Antony, think not of him;
For he can do no more than Caesar's arm
When Caesar's head is off.

Caesar. Yet I fear him;
For in the engraven love he bears to Caesar— 184
Brutus. Alas! good Cassius, do not think of him:
If he love Caesar, all that he can do
Is to himself, take thought and die for Caesar:
And that were much he should; for he is given
To sports, to wildness, and much company. 189
Tiberius. There is no fear in him; let him not die:
For he will live, and laugh at this hereafter.

[Clock strikes.

Brutus. Peace! count the clock.

Caesar. The clock hath stricken three. 192

Tiberius. 'Tis time to part.

Caesar. But it is doubtful yet
Whether Cæsar will come forth to-day or no;
For he is superstitious grown of late,
Quite from the main opinion he held once
Of fantasy, of dreams, and ceremonies.
It may be, these apparent prodigies,
The unaccustomed terror of this night,
And the persuasion of his augurers,
May hold him from the Capitol to-day.

Decius. Never fear that: if he be so resolv'd,
I can o'erway him; for he loves to hear
That unicorns may be betray'd with trees, 204
And bears with glasses, elephants with holes,
Lions with tails, and men with flatterers;
But when I tell him he hates flatterers,
He says he does, being then most flattered. 208
Let me work;
For I can give his humour the true bent,
And I will bring him to the Capitol.

Cas. Nay, we will all of us be there to fetch
him.

Bru. By the eighth hour: is that the utter-
most?

Cin. By the utmost, and fail not then.

Mel. Caius Ligarius doth bear Caesar hard,
Who rated him for speaking well of Pompey:
I wonder none of you have thought of him. 217

Bru. Now, good Metellus, go along by him:
He loves me well, and I have given him reasons;
Send him but urther, and I’ll fashion him. 220

Cas. The morning comes upon’s: we’ll leave
you, Brutus.

And, friends, disperse yourselves; but all re-
member
What you have said, and show yourselves true
Romans.

Bru. Good gentlemen, look fresh and merrily;
Let not our looks put on our purposes,
But bear it as our Roman actors do,
With untr’d spirits and formal constancy:
And so good morrow to you every one. 228

[Exeunt all except BRUTUS.]

Boy! Lucius! Fast asleep? It is no matter;
Enjoy the honey-heavy dew of slumber:
Thou hast no figures nor no fantasies
Which busy care draws in the brains of men;
Therefore thou sleep’st so sound. 233

Enter PORTIA.

Por. Brutus, my lord!

Bru. Portia, what mean you? Wherefore
rise you now?

It is not for your health thus to commit
Your weak condition to the raw cold morning.

Por. Nor for yours neither. You’ve un-
gently, Brutus,

Slept from my bed; and yesternight at supper
You suddenly arose, and walk’d about,
Musing and sighing, with your arms across.

And when I ask’d you what the matter was,
You star’d upon me with ungenteel looks.
I urg’d you further; then you scratch’d your
head,

And too impatiently stamp’d with your foot;
Yet I insisted, yet you answer’d not,
But, with an angry wafure of your hand.
Gave sign for me to leave you. So I did,
Fearing to strengthen that impatience
Which seem’d too much enkindled, and withal
Hoping it was but an effect of humour,
Which sometime hath his hour with every man.
It will not let you eat, nor talk, nor sleep,

And could it work so much upon your shape
As it hath much prevail’d on your condition,

I should not know you, Brutus. Dear my lord,
Make me acquainted with your cause of grief.

Bru. I am not well in health, and that is
all.

Por. Brutus is wise, and were he not in
health,
He would embrace the means to come by it.

Bru. Why, so I do. Good Portia, go to
bed.

Por. Is Brutus sick, and is it physical

To walk unbraced and suck up the humour
Of the dank morning? What! is Brutus sick,
And will he steal out of his wholesome bed
To dare the vile contagion of the night,
And tempt the rheumy and unpurg’d air
To add unto his sickness? No, my Brutus;
You have some sick offence within your mind,
Which, by the right and virtue of my place,
I ought to know of; and, upon my knees,
I charm you, by my once-commended beauty,
By all your vows of love, and that great vow
Which did incorporate and make us one,
That you unfold to me, your self, your half,
Why are you heavy, and what men to-night
Have had resort to you; for here have been
Some six or seven, who did hide their faces
Even from darkness.

Bru. Kneel not, gentle Portia.

Por. I should not need, if you were gentle
Brutus.

Within the bond of marriage, tell me, Brutus,
Is it excepted, I should know no secrets

That appertain to you? Am I yourself
But, as it were, in sort of limitation,
To keep with you at meals, comfort your bed,
And talk to you sometimes? Dwell I but in the
suburbs
Of your good pleasure? If it be no more,
Portia is Brutus’ harlot, not his wife.

Bru. You are my true and honourable
wife,
As dear to me as are the ruddy drops
That visit my sad heart.

Por. If this were true then should I know
this secret.

I grant I am a woman; but, withal,

A woman that Lord Brutus took to wife;
I grant I am a woman, but, withal,
A woman well-esteemed, Cato’s daughter.

Think you I am no stronger than my sex,

Being so father’d and so husbanded?

Tell me your counsell, I will not disclose ’em.
I have made strong proof of my constancy,
Giving myself a voluntary wound

Here, in the thigh: can I bear that with patience

And not my husband’s secrets?

Bru. O ye gods!
Render me worthy of this noble wife.

[Knocking within.

Hark, hark! one knocks. Portia, go in awhile;
And by and by thy bosom shall partake
The secrets of my heart.
All my engagements I will construe to thee,
All the charactery of my sad brows.
Leave me with haste.[Exit Portia.]

Lucius, who's that knocks?

Re-enter LUCIUS with LIGARIUS.

Luc. Here is a sick man that would speak with you.

Bru. Caius Ligarius, that Metellus spoke of.
Boy, stand aside. Caius Ligarius! how?

Lig. Vouchsafe good morrow from a feeble tongue.

Bru. Of what a time have you chose out, brave Caius,

To wear a kerchief. Would you were not sick.

Lig. I am not sick if Brutus have in hand

Any exploit worthy the name of honour.

Bru. Such an exploit have I in hand, Ligarius,

Had you a healthful ear to hear of it.

Lig. By all the gods that Romans how before

I here discard my sickness. Soul of Rome! Brave son, deriv'd from honourable loins!
Thou, like an exorcist, hast conjur'd up
My mortified spirit. Now bid me run,
And I will strive with things impossible;
Yes, get the better of them. What's to do?

Bru. A piece of work that will make sick men whole.

Lig. But are not some whole that we must make sick?

Bru. That must we also. What it is, my Caius,

I shall unfold to thee as we are going
To whom it must be done.

Lig. Set on your foot,

And with a heart new-fir'd I follow you,

To do I know not what; but it sufficeth
That Brutus leads me on.

Bru. Follow me then.[Exeunt.

SCENE II.—The Same. Cæsar's House.

Thunder and lightning. Enter CAESAR
in his night-gown.

Cæs. Nor heaven nor earth have been at peace to-night:

Thrice hath Calphurnia in her sleep cried out,

'Help, ho! They murder Cæsar!' Who's with

Enter a Servant.

Serv. My lord!

Cæs. Go bid the priests do present sacrifice,

And bring me their opinions of success.

Serv. I will, my lord.[Exit.]

Enter CALPHURNIA.

Cal. What mean you, Cæsar? Think you to walk forth?

You shall not stir out of your house to-day.

Cæs. Cæsar shall forth: the things that threaten'd me

Ne'er look'd but on my back; when they shall see

The face of Cæsar, they are vanished.

Cal. Cæsar, I never stood on ceremonies,

Yet now they fright me. There is one within,

Besides the things that we have heard and seen,

Recounts most horrid sights seen by the watch.

A lioness hath whelp'd in the streets;

And graves have yawn'd and yielded up their dead;

Fierce fiery warriors fought upon the clouds,

In ranks and squadrons and right form of war,

Which drivell'd blood upon the Capitol;

The noise of battle hurld in the air,

Horses did neigh, and dying men did groan,

And ghosts did shriek and squeal about the streets.

O Cæsar! these things are beyond all use,

And I do fear them.

Cæs. What can be avoided

Whose end is purpose'd by the mighty gods?

Yet Cæsar shall go forth; for these predictions

Are to the world in general as to Cæsar.

Cal. When beggars die there are no comets seen;

The heavens themselves blaze forth the death of princes.

Cæs. Cowards die many times before their deaths;

The valiant never taste of death but once.

Of all the wonders that I yet have heard,

It seems to me most strange that men should fear;

Seeing that death, a necessary end,

Will come when it will come.

Re-enter Servant.

Serv. What say the augurs?

Serv. They would not have you to stir forth
to-day.

Plucking the entrails of an offering forth,

They could not find a heart within the beast.

Cæs. The gods do this in shame of cowardice:

Cæsar should be a beast without a heart

If he should stay at home to-day for fear.
No, Caesar shall not; danger knows full well
That Caesar is more dangerous than he:
We are two lions litter’d in one day,
And I the elder and more terrible:
And Caesar shall go forth.

Cal. Alas! my lord,
Your wisdom is consum’d in confidence.
Do not go forth to-day: call it my fear
That keeps you in the house, and not your own.
We’ll send Mark Antony to the senate-house,
And he shall say you are not well to-day:
Let me, upon my knee, prevail in this.

Cas. Mark Antony shall say I am not well;
And, for thy humour, I will stay at home.

Enter Decius.

Here’s Decius Brutus, he shall tell them so.

Dec. Caesar, all hail! Good morrow, worthy Caesar:
I come to fetch you to the senate-house.
Cas. And you are come in very happy time
To bear my greeting to the senators,
And tell them that I will not come to-day:
Cannot, is false, and that I dare not, false;
I will not come to-day: tell them so, Decius.

Cal. Say he is sick.

Cas. Shall Caesar send a lie?
Have I in conquest stretch’d mine arm so far
To be afraid to tell greybeards the truth?
Decius, go tell them Caesar will not come.

Dec. Most mighty Caesar, let me know some cause,
Lest I be laugh’d at when I tell them so.
Cas. The cause is in my will: I will not come;
That is enough to satisfy the senate:
But for your private satisfaction,
Because I love you, I will let you know:
Calphurnia here, my wife, stays me at home:
She dreamt to-night she saw my stat’rs,
Which, like a fountain with a hundred spouts,
Did run pure blood; and many lusty Romans
Came smiling, and did bathe their hands in it:
And these does she apply for warnings and portents,
And evils imminent; and on her knee
Hath begg’d that I will stay at home to-day.

Dec. This dream is all amiss interpreted;
It was a vision fair and fortunate:
Your statue spouting blood in many pipes,
In which so many smiling Romans bath’d,
Signifies that from you great Rome shall suck
Reviving blood, and that great men shall press
For tinctures, stains, relics, and cognizance.
This by Calphurnia’s dream is signified.

Cas. And this way have you well expounded it.

Dec. I have, when you have heard what I can say:
And know it now: the senate have concluded
To give this day a crown to mighty Caesar.
If you shall send them word you will not come,
Their minds may change. Besides, it were a mock
Apt to be render’d, for some one to say
‘Break up the senate till another time,
When Caesar’s wife shall meet with better dreams.’
If Caesar hide himself, shall they not whisper
‘Lo! Caesar is afraid?’
Pardon me, Caesar; for my dear dear love
To your proceeding bids me tell you this,
And reason to my love is liable.

Cas. How foolish do your fears seem now, Calphurnia!
I am ashamed I did yield to them.
Give me my robe, for I will go:

Enter Publius, Brutus, Ligarius, Metellus, Casca, Trebonius, and Cinna.

And look where Publius is come to fetch me.

Pub. Good morrow, Caesar.

Cas. Welcome, Publius.

What! Brutus, are you stirr’d so early too?
Good morrow, Casca. Calus Ligarius,
Caesar was never so much your enemy
As that same age which hath made you lean.

What is’t o’clock?

Bru. Caesar, ’tis strucken eight.

Cas. I thank you for your pains and courtesy.

Enter Antony.

See! Antony, that revels long o’ nights,
Is notwithstanding up. Good morrow, Antony.
Ant. So to most noble Caesar.

Cas. Bid them prepare within:
I am to blame to be thus waited for.
Now, Cinna; now, Metellus; what, Trebonius?
I have an hour’s talk in store for you;
Remember that you call on me to-day:
Be near me, that I may remember you.

Treb. Caesar, I will:—[Aside.] and so near will I be,
That your best friends shall wish I had been further.

Cas. Good friends, go in, and taste some wine with me;
And we, like friends, will straightway go together.

Bru. [Aside.] That every like is not the same,
O Caesar!

The heart of Brutus yearns to think upon.

[Exeunt.]
Scene III.—The Same. A Street near the Capitol.

Enter Artemidorus, reading a paper.

Art. Caesar, beware of Brutus; take heed of Cassius; come not near Caesar; have an eye to Cinna; trust not Trebonius; mark well Metellus Cimber; Decius Brutus loves thee not; thou hast wronged Caius Ligarius. There is but one mind in all these men, and it is bent against Caesar. If thou be'st not immortal, look about you: security gives way to conspiracy. The mighty gods defend thee! Thy lover,

Artemidorus.

Here will I stand till Caesar pass along,
And as a suitor will I give him this.
My heart laments that virtue cannot live
Out of the teeth of emulation.
If thou read this, O Caesar! thou mayst live;
If not, the Fates with traitors do contrive. [Exit.

Scene IV.—The Same. Another Part of the same Street, before the House of Brutus.

Enter Portia and Lucius.

Por. I prithee, boy, run to the senate-house; Stay not to answer me, but get thee gone.
Why dost thou stay?

Luc. To know my errand, madam.

Por. I would have had thee there, and here again,
Ere I can tell thee what thou shouldst do there.
O constancy! be strong upon my side;
Set a huge mountain 'twixt my heart and tongue;
I have a man's mind, but a woman's might.
How hard it is for women to keep counsel!
Art thou here yet?

Luc. Madam, what shall I do?
Run to the Capitol, and nothing else?
And so return to you, and nothing else?

Por. Yes, bring me word, boy, if thy lord look well,
For he went sickly forth; and take good note
What Caesar doth, what suitors press to him.
Hark, boy! what noise is that?

Luc. I hear none, madam.

Por. Prithee, listen well:
I heard a bustling rumour, like a fray,
And the wind brings it from the Capitol.

Luc. Sooth, madam, I hear nothing.

Enter the Soothsayer.

Por. Come hither, fellow: which way hast thou been?

Sooth. At mine own house, good lady.

Por. What is 't o'clock?

Sooth. About the ninth hour, lady.

Por. Is Caesar yet gone to the Capitol? 24

Sooth. Madam, not yet: I go to take my stand,
To see him pass on to the Capitol.

Por. Thou hast some suit to Caesar, hast thou not?

Sooth. That I have, lady: if it will please Caesar
To be so good to Caesar as to hear me,
I shall beseech him to befriend himself.

Por. Why, know'st thou any harm's intended towards him?

Sooth. None that I know will be, much that I fear may chance.

Good morrow to you. Here the street is narrow:
The throng that follows Caesar at the heels,
Of senators, of prelates, common suitors,
Will crowd a feeble man almost to death:
I'll get me to a place more void, and there
Speak to great Caesar as he comes along. [Exit.

Por. I must go in. Ay me! how weak a thing
The heart of woman is. O Brutus!
The heavens speed thee in thine enterprise.
Sure, the boy heard me: Brutus hath a suit
That Caesar will not grant. O! I grow faint.
Run, Lucius, and commend me to my lord;
Say I am merry: come to me again,
And bring me word what he doth say to thee.

[Exit, severally.

ACT III.

Scene I.—Rome. Before the Capitol; the Senate sitting above.

A crowd of People; among them Artemidorus and the Soothsayer. Flourish. Enter Caesar, Brutus, Cassius, Casca, Decius, Metellus, Trebonius, Cinna, Antony, Lepidus, Popilius, Publius, and Others.

Caes. [To the Soothsayer.] The issue of March are come.

Sooth. Ay, Caesar; but not gone.

Art. Hail, Caesar! Read this schedule.

Dec. Trebonius doth desire you to o'er-read, 4
At your best leisure, this his humble suit.

Art. O Caesar! read mine first; for mine's a suit
That touches Caesar nearer. Read it, great Caesar.

Caes. What touches us ourself shall be last serv'd.

Art. Delay not, Caesar; read it instantly.

Caes. What! is the fellow mad?
Pub. Sirrah, give place.
Ces. What! urge you your petitions in the street?
Come to the Capitol.

Cæsar goes up to the Senate-House, the rest following. All the Senators rise.

Pop. I wish your enterprise to-day may thrive.
Ces. What enterprise, Popilius?  
Pop. Fare you well.  

[Advances to Cæsar.

Bru. What said Popilius Lena?
Ces. He wish'd to-day our enterprise might thrive.

I fear our purpose is discovered.

Bru. Look, how he makes to Cæsar: mark him.
Ces. Casca, be sudden, for we fear prevention.

Brutus, what shall be done? If this be known, Cassius or Cæsar never shall turn back, For I will slay myself.

Bru. Cassius, be constant: Popilius Lena speaks not of our purposes; For, look, he smiles, and Cæsar doth not change.

Ces. Trebonius knows his time; for, look you, Brutus, He draws Mark Antony out of the way.

[Exeunt Antony and Trebonius. Cæsar and the Senators take their seats.

Dec. Where is Metellus Cimber? Let him go, And presently prefer his suit to Cæsar.

Bru. He is address'd; press near and second him.

Cin. Casca, you are the first that rears your hand.

Ces. Are we all ready? What is now amiss, That Cæsar and his senate must redress?

Met. Most high, most mighty, and most puissant Cæsar, Metellus Cimber throws before thy seat
A humble heart,— [Kneeling.

Ces. I must prevent thee, Cimber.

These couchings and these lowly courtesies, Might fire the blood of ordinary men, And turn pre-ordination and first decree Into the law of children. Be not fond, To think that Cæsar bears such rebel blood That will be thaw'd from the true quality With that which melteth fools; I mean sweet words, Low-crooked.curtesies, and base spaniel fawning. Thy brother by decree is banished:

If thou dost bend and pray and fawn for him, I spurn thee like a cur out of my way.

Know, Cæsar doth not wrong, nor without cause Will he be satisfied.

Met. Is there no voice more worthy than my own, To sound more sweetly in great Cæsar's ear For the repealing of my banish'd brother?

Bru. I kiss thy hand, but not in flattery, Cæsar;

Desiring thee, that Publius Cimber may Have an immediate freedom of repeal.

Ces. What, Brutus!

Ces. Pardon, Cæsar; Cæsar, pardon:
As low as to thy foot doth Cassius fall, To beg enfranchisement for Publius Cimber.

Ces. I could be well mov'd if I were as you; If I could pray to move, prayers would move me:

But I am constant as the northern star, Of whose true-fix'd and resting quality There is no fellow in the firmament. The skies are painted with unnumber'd sparks, They are all fire and every one doth shine, But there's but one in all doth hold his place: So, in the world; 'tis furnish'd well with men, And men are flesh and blood, and apprehensive; Yet in the number I do know but one That unassailable holds on his rank, Unshak'd of motion: and that I am he, Let me a little show it, even in this, That I was constant Cimber should be banish'd, And constant do remain to keep him so.

Cin. O Cæsar,—

Ces. Hence! Wilt thou lift up Olympus?

Dec. Great Cæsar,—

Ces. Doth not Brutus bootless kneel?

Casca. Speak, hands, for me!

[They stab Cæsar.

Ces. Et tu, Brute? Then fall, Cæsar! [Dies.

Cin. Liberty! Freedom! Tyranny is dead! Run hence, proclaim, cry it about the streets.

Ces. Some to the common pulpits, and cry out, 'Liberty, freedom, and enfranchisement!' Brutus. People and senators be not affrighted; Fly not; stand still; ambition's debt is paid.

Casca. Go to the pulpit, Brutus.

And Cassius too.

Bru. Where's Publius?

Cin. Here, quite confounded with this mutiny.

Met. Stand fast together, lest some friend of Cæsar's Should chance—

Bru. Talk not of standing. Publius, good cheer; There is no harm intended to your person, Nor to no Roman else; so tell them, Publius.
Act III, Sc. I.  

JULIUS CAESAR

Cas. And leave us, Publius; lest that the people,
Rushing on us, should do your age some mischief.
Bru. Do so; and let no man abide this deed
But we the doers.

Re-enter TREBONIUS.

Cas. Where’s Antony?
Tre. Fled to his house amaz’d. 96
Men, wives and children stare, cry out and run
As it were doomsday.
Bru. Fates, we will know your pleasures.
That we shall die, we know; ’tis but the time
And drawing days out, that men stand upon. 100
Cas. Why, he that cuts off twenty years of life
Cuts off so many years of fearing death.
Bru. Grant that, and then is death a benefit;
So are we Caesar’s friends, that have abridg’d 104
His time of fearing death. Stoop, Romans, stoop,
And let us bathe our hands in Caesar’s blood
Up to the elbows, and besmear our swords;
Then walk we forth, even to the market-place;
And waving our real weapons o’er our heads, 109
Let’s all cry, ‘Peace, freedom, and liberty!’
Cas. Stoop, then, and wash. How many ages hence
Shall this our lofty scene be acted o’er,
In states unborn and accents yet unknown!
Bru. How many times shall Caesar bleed in sport,
That now on Pompey’s basis lies along
No worthier than the dust!
Cas. So oft as that shall be, 116
So often shall the knot of us be call’d
The men that gave their country liberty.
Dec. What! shall we forth?
Cas. Ay, every man away:
Brutus shall lead; and we will grace his heels
With the most boldest and best hearts of Rome. 121

Enter a Servant.

Serv. Thus, Brutus, did my master bid me kisse!
Thus did Mark Antony bid me fall down; 124
And, being prostrals, thus he bade me say:
Brutus is noble, wise, valiant, and honest;
Caesar was mighty, bold, royal, and loving:
Say I love Brutus, and I honour him; 128
Say I fear’d Caesar, honour’d him, and lov’d him.
If Brutus will vouchsafe that Antony

May safely come to him, and be resolv’d
How Caesar hath deserved to lie in death, 132
Mark Antony shall not love Caesar dead
So well as Brutus living; but will follow
The fortunes and affairs of noble Brutus
Thorough the hazards of this untried state 136
With all true faith. So says my master Antony.
Bru. Thy master is a wise and valiant Roman;
I never thought him worse.
Tell him, so please him come unto this place,
He shall be satisfied; and, by my honour, 141
Depart untouch’d.
Serv. I’ll fetch him presently. [Exit.
Bru. I know that we shall have him well to friend.
Cas. I wish we may: but yet have I a mind
That fears him much; and my misgiving still
Falls shrewdly to the purpose. 146

Re-enter ANTONY.

Bru. But here comes Antony. Welcome,
Mark Antony.
Ant. O mighty Caesar! dost thou lie so low?
Are all thy conquests, glories, triumphs, spoils,
Shrunken to this little measure? Fare thee well.
I know not, gentlemen, what you intend, 151
Who else must be let blood, who else is rank:
If I myself, there is no hour so fit
As Caesar’s death’s hour, nor no instrument
Of half that worth as those your swords, made rich
With the most noble blood of all this world. 156
I do beseech ye, if ye bear me hard,
Now, whilst your purpled hands do reek and smoke,
Fulfil your pleasure. Live a thousand years,
I shall not find myself so apt to die: 160
No place will please me so, no mean of death,
As here by Caesar, and by you cut off,
The choice and master spirits of this age.
Bru. O Antony! beg not your death of us.
Though now we must appear bloody and cruel,
As, by our hands and this our present act,
You see we do, yet see you but our hands
And this the bleeding business they have done:
Our hearts you see not; they are pitiful; 169
And pity to the general wrong of Rome—
As fire drives out fire, so pity pity—
Hath done this deed on Caesar. For your part,
To you our swords have leadeen points, Mark Antony; 173
Our arms, in strength of malice, and our hearts
Of brothers’ temper, do receive you in
With all kind love, good thoughts, and reverence. 176
Cas. Your voice shall be as strong as any man's
In the disposing of new dignities.

Brut. Only be patient till we have appeas'd
The multitude, beside themselves with fear, 180
And then will we deliver you the cause
Why I, that did love Caesar when I struck him,
Have thus proceeded.

Ant. I doubt not of your wisdom.
Let each man render me his bloody hand: 184
First, Marcus Brutus, will I shake with you;
Next, Caius Cassius, do I take your hand;
Now, Decius Brutus, yours; now yours, Metellus;
Yours, Cinna; and, my valiant Cassius, yours; 188
Though last, not least in love, yours, good Trebonius.

Gentlemen all,—alas! what shall I say?
My credit now stands on such slippery ground,
That one of two bad ways you must consent me,
Either a coward or a flatterer. 193
That I did love thee, Caesar, O 'tis true:
If then thy spirit look upon us now,
Shall it not grieve thee dearer than thy death,
To see thy Antony making his peace, 197
Shaking the bloody fingers of thy foes,
Most noble! in the presence of thy corpse?
Had I as many eyes as thou hast wounds, 200
Weeping as fast as they stream forth thy blood,
It would become me better than to close
In terms of friendship with thine enemies.
Pardon me, Julius! here wast thou bay'd,
Brave hart; 204
Here didst thou fall; and here thy hunters stand,
Sign'd in thy spoil, and crimson'd in thy leth
O world! thou wast the forest to this hart;
And this, indeed, O world! the heart of thee. 208
How like a deer, stricken by many princes,
Dost thou here lie!

Cas. Mark Antony,—

Ant. Pardon me, Caius Cassius:
The enemies of Caesar shall say this; 212
Then, in a friend, it is cold modesty.

Cas. I blame you not for praising Caesar so;
But what compact mean you to have with us?
Will you be prick'd in number of our friends, 216
Or shall we on, and not depend on you?

Ant. Therefore I took your hands, but was indeed
Sway'd from the point by looking down on Caesar.

Friends are I with you all, and love you all, 220
Upon this hope, that you shall give me reasons
Why and wherein Caesar was dangerous.

Brut. Or else were this a savage spectacle,
Our reasons are so full of good regard 224
That were you, Antony, the son of Caesar,
You should be satisfied.

Ant. That's all I seek:
And am moreover suitor that I may
Produce his body to the market place; 228
And in the pulpit, as becomes a friend,
Speak in the order of his funeral.

Brut. You shall, Mark Antony.

Cas. Brutus, a word with you.

[Aside to Brutus.] You know not what you do;
do not consent 232
That Antony speak in his funeral:
Know you how much the people may be mov'd
By that which he will utter?

Brut. By your pardon;
I will myself into the pulpit first, 236
And show the reason of our Caesar's death:
What Antony shall speak, I will protest
He speaks by leave and by permission,
And that we are contented Caesar shall 240
Have all true rites and lawful ceremonies.
It shall advantage more than do us wrong.

Cas. I know not what may fall; I like it not.

Brut. Mark Antony, here, take you Caesar's body.

You shall not in your funeral speech blame us,
But speak all good you can devise of Caesar,
And say you do't by our permission;
Else shall you not have any hand at all 248
About his funeral; and you shall speak
In the same pulpit where I am going,
After my speech is ended.

Ant. Be it so;

I do desire no more. 252

Brut. Prepare the body then, and follow us.

[Exeunt all but Antony.

Ant. O! pardon me, thou bleeding piece of earth,
That I am meek and gentle with these butchers;
Thou art the ruins of the noblest man 256
That ever lived in the tide of times.

Woe to the hand that shed this costly blood!
Over thy wounds now do I prophesy,
Which like dumb mouths do ope their ruby lips,

To beg the voice and utterance of my tongue,
A curse shall light upon the limbs of men;
Domestic fury and fierce civil strife
Shall cumber all the parts of Italy; 264
Blood and destruction shall be so in use,
And dreadful objects so familiar,
That mothers shall but smile when they behold
Their infants quarter'd with the hands of war;
All pity chock'd with custom of fell deeds: 269
And Caesar's spirit, ranging for revenge,
With Ate by his side come hot from hell,
Shall in these confines with a monarch's voice.
Act III, Sc. I. JULIUS CÆSAR

Cry 'Havoc!' and let slip the dogs of war; 273
That this foul deed shall smell above the earth
With carrion men, groaning for burial.

Enter a Servant.

You serve Octavius Cæsar, do you not? 276
Serv. I do, Mark Antony.

Ant. Cæsar did write for him to come to
Rome.

Serv. He did receive his letters, and is
coming;
And bid me say to you by word of mouth — 280
[Seeing the body.

O Cæsar! —

Ant. Thy heart is big, get thee apart and
weep.
Passion, I see, is catching; for mine eyes,
Seeing those heads of sorrow stand in thine, 284
Began to water. Is thy master coming?

Serv. He lies to-night within seven leagues of
Rome.

Ant. Post back with speed, and tell him what
hath chance'd;
Here is a mourning Rome, a dangerous Rome,
No Rome of safety for Octavius yet; 289
Hie hence and tell him so. Yet, stay awhile;
Thou shalt not back till I have borne this corpse
Into the market-place; there shall I try, 292
In my oration, how the people take
The cruel issue of these bloody men;
According to the which thou shalt discourse
To young Octavius of the state of things. 296
Lend me your hand.

[Exeunt, with Cæsar's body.

Scene II.—The Same. The Forum.

Enter Brutus and Cassius, and a throng of
Citizens.

Citizens. We will be satisfied: let us be satis-
fixed.

Bru. Then follow me, and give me audience,
friends.

Cassius, go you into the other street,
And part the numbers.

Those that will hear me speak, let 'em stay here;
Those that will follow Cassius, go with him;
And public reasons shall be rendered
Of Cæsar's death.

First Cit. I will hear Brutus speak. 8
Sec. Cit. I will hear Cassius; and compare
their reasons,
When severally we hear them rendered.

[Exit Cassius, with some of the Citizens;
Bru. goes into the pulpit.

Third Cit. The noble Brutus is ascended:
silence!

Bru. Be patient till the last. 2
Romans, countrymen, and lovers! hear me for
my cause; and be silent, that you may hear:
believe me for mine honour, and have respect to
mine honour, that you may believe: censure me
in your wisdom, and awake your senses, that
you may the better judge. If there be any in this
assembly, any dear friend of Cæsar's, to him I
say, that Brutus' love to Cæsar was no less than
his. If then that friend demand why Brutus
rose against Cæsar, this is my answer: Not that
I loved Cæsar less, but that I loved Rome more.
Had you rather Cæsar were living, and die all
slaves, than that Cæsar were dead, to live all free
men? As Cæsar loved me, I weep for him; as
he was fortunate, I rejoice at it; as he was
valiant, I honour him; but, as he was ambitious,
I slew him. There is tears for his love; joy for
his fortune; honour for his valour; and death
for his ambition. Who is here so base that
would be a bondman? If any, speak; for him
have I offended. Who is here so rude that
would not be a Roman? If any, speak; for him
have I offended. Who is here so vile that will
not love his country? If any, speak; for him
have I offended. I pause for a reply. 37

Citizens. None, Brutus, none.

Bru. Then none have I offended. I have
done no more to Cæsar, than you shall do to
Brutus. The question of his death is enrolled
in the Capitol; his glory not extenuated, where-
in he was worthy, nor his offences enforced,
for which he suffered death.

Enter Antony and Others, with Cæsar's body.

Here comes his body, mourned by Mark Antony:
who, though he had no hand in his death, shall
receive the benefit of his dying, a place in the
commonwealth; as which of you shall not?
With this I depart: that, as I slew my best lover
for the good of Rome, I have the same dagger
for myself, when it shall please my country to
need my death. 52

Citizens. Live, Brutus! live! live!
First Cit. Bring him with triumph home
unto his house.
Sec. Cit. Give him a statue with his ancestors.
Third Cit. Let him be Cæsar.
Fourth Cit. Caesar's better parts
Shall be crown'd in Brutus. 57
First Cit. We'll bring him to his house with
shouts and clamours.
Bru. My countrymen, —
Sec. Cit. Peace! silence! Brutus speaks.
First Cit. Peace, ho!

Bru. Good countrymen, let me depart alone,
And, for my sake, stay here with Antony.
Do grace to Caesar's corpse, and grace his speech.

Tending to Caesar's glories, which Mark Antony,
By our permission, is allow'd to make.
I do entreat you, not a man depart,
Save I alone, till Antony have spoke. [Exit.

First Cit. Stay, ho! and let us hear Mark Antony.

Third Cit. Let him go up into the public chair;

We'll hear him. Noble Antony, go up.

Ant. For Brutus' sake, I am beholding to you.

Fourth Cit. What does he say of Brutus?

Third Cit. He says, for Brutus' sake,

He finds himself beholding to us all.

Fourth Cit. 'Twere best he speak no harm of Brutus here.

First Cit. This Caesar was a tyrant.

Third Cit. Nay, that's certain:

We are bless'd that Rome is rid of him.

Sec. Cit. Peace let us hear what Antony can say.

Ant. You gentle Romans,—


Ant. Friends, Romans, countrymen, lend me your ears; I come to bury Caesar, not to praise him.

The evil that men do lives after them;
The good is oft interred with their bones;
So let it be with Caesar. The noble Brutus
Hath told you Caesar was ambitious; If it were so, it was a grievous fault, And grievously hath Caesar answer'd it.

Here, under leave of Brutus and the rest,—

For Brutus is an honourable man; So are they all, all honourable men,— Come I to speak in Caesar's funeral. He was my friend, faithful and just to me: But Brutus says he was ambitious; And Brutus is an honourable man.

He hath brought many captives home to Rome, Whose ransom did the general coffers fill: Did this in Caesar seem ambitious? When that the poor have cried, Caesar hath wept;

Ambition should be made of sterner stuff: Yet Brutus says he was ambitious; And Brutus is an honourable man.

You all did see that on the Lupercal I thrice presented him a kingly crown, Which he did thrice refuse: was this ambition? Yet Brutus says he was ambitious; And, sure, he is an honourable man.

I speak not to disprove what Brutus spoke, But here I am to speak what I do know.

You all did love him once, not without cause:

What cause withholds you then to mourn for him?

O judgment! thou art fled to brutish beasts, And men have lost their reason. Bear with me; My heart is in the coffin there with Caesar, And I must pause till it come back to me.

First Cit. Methinks there is much reason in his sayings.

Sec. Cit. If thou consider rightly of the matter, Caesar has had great wrong.

Third Cit. Has he, masters? I fear there will a worse come in his place.

Fourth Cit. Mark'd ye his words? He would not take the crown; Therefore 'tis certain he was not ambitious.

First Cit. If it be found so, some will dear abide it.

Sec. Cit. Poor soul! his eyes are red as fire with weeping.

Third Cit. There's not a nobler man in Rome than Antony.

Fourth Cit. Now mark him; he begins again to speak.

Ant. But yesterday the word of Caesar might Have stood against the world; now lies he there, And none so poor to do him reverence. O masters! if I were dispos'd to stir Your hearts and minds to mutiny and rage, I should do Brutus wrong, and Cassius wrong, Who, you all know, are honourable men. I will not do them wrong; I rather choose To wrong the dead, to wrong myself, and you, Than I will wrong such honourable men. But here's a parchment with the seal of Caesar; I found it in his closet, 'tis his will. Let but the commons hear this testament— Which, pardon me, I do not mean to read—And they would go and kiss dead Caesar's wounds, And dip their napkins in his sacred blood, Yea, beg a hair of him for memory, And, dying, mention it within their wills, Bequeathing it as a rich legacy

Unto their issue.

Fourth Cit. We'll hear the will: read it, Mark Antony.

Citizens. The will, the will! we will hear Caesar's will.

Ant. Have patience, gentle friends; I must not read it: It is not meet you know how Caesar lov'd you. You are not wood, you are not stones, but men; And, being men, hearing the will of Caesar, It will inflame you, it will make you mad. 'Tis good you know not that you are his heirs;
For if you should, O! what would come of it.
Fourth Cit. Read the will! we'll hear it, Antony; you shall read us the will, Caesar's will.

Ant. Will you be patient? Will you stay awhile? I have o'ershot myself to tell you of it. I fear I wronged the honourable men. Whose daggers have stabb'd Caesar; I do fear it. Fourth Cit. They were traitors: honourable men!

Citizens. The will! the testament! Sec. Cit. They were villains, murderers. The will! read the will.

Ant. You will compel me then to read the will?

Then make a ring about the corpse of Caesar, And let me show you him that made the will. Shall I descend? and will you give me leave? Citizens. Come down.

Sec. Cit. Descend. [Antony comes down. Third Cit. You shall have leave.

Fourth Cit. A ring; stand round. First Cit. Stand from the hearse; stand from the body.

Sec. Cit. Room for Antony; most noble Antony.

Ant. Nay, press not so upon me; stand far off. Citizens. Stand back! room! bear back!

Ant. If you have tears, prepare to shed them now.

You all do know this mantle: I remember The first time ever Caesar put it on; 'Twas on a summer's evening, in his tent, That day he overcame the Nevil. [Look! in this place ran Cassius' dagger through] See what a rent the envious Casca made: Through this the well-beloved Brutus stabb'd; And, as he pluck'd his cursed steel away, Mark how the blood of Caesar follow'd it, As rushing out of doors, to be resolv'd. If Brutus so unkindly knock'd or no; For Brutus, as you know, was Caesar's angel: Judge, O you gods! how dearly Caesar lov'd him.

This was the most unkindest cut of all; For when the noble Caesar saw him stab, Ingratitude, more strong than traitors' arms, Quite vanquish'd him: then burst his mighty heart;

And, in his mantle muffling up his face, Even at the base of Pompey's statue, Which all the while ran blood, great Caesar fell. Of what a fall was there, my countrymen; Then I, and you, and all of us fell down, Whilst bloody treason flourish'd over us. Of now you weep, and I perceive you feel:

The dint of pity; these are gracious drops. Kind souls, what! weep you when you but behold Our Caesar's vesture wounded? Look you here, Here is himself, marr'd, as you see, with traitors.

First Cit. O piteous spectacle! Sec. Cit. O noble Caesar! Third Cit. O woeful day! Fourth Cit. O traitors! villains! First Cit. O most bloody sight! Sec. Cit. We will be revenged.

Citizens. Revenge!—About!—Seek!—Burn! Fire!—Kill!—Slay! Let not a traitor live.

Ant. Stay, countrymen!

First Citizen. Peace there! Hear the noble Antony.

Sec. Cit. We'll hear him, we'll follow him, we'll die with him.

Ant. Good friends, sweet friends, let me not stir you up To such a sudden flood of mutiny. They that have done this deed are honourable: What private griefs they have, alas! I know not, That made them do it; they are wise and honourable, And will, no doubt, with reasons answer you. I come not, friends, to steal away your hearts: I am no orator, as Brutus is; But, as you know me all, a plain blunt man, That love my friend; and that they know full well That gave me public leave to speak of him, For I have neither wit, nor words, nor worth, Action, nor utterance, nor the power of speech, To stir men's blood: I only speak right-on; I tell you that which you yourselves do know, Show you sweet Caesar's wounds, poor poor dumb mouths, And bid them speak for me: but were I Brutus, And Brutus Antony, there were an Antony Would ruffle up your spirits, and put a tongue In every wound of Caesar, that should move The stones of Rome to rise and mutiny.

Citizens. We'll mutiny.

First Cit. We'll burn the house of Brutus.

Third Cit. Away, then! come, seek the conspirators.

Ant. Yet hear me, countrymen; yet hear me speak.

Citizens. Peace, hol—Hear Antony,—most noble Antony.

Ant. Why, friends, you go to do you know not what.

Wherein hath Caesar thus deserv'd your loves? Alas! you know not: I must tell you then.
You have forgot the will I told you of.  
Citizens. Most true. The will! let's stay and hear the will. 244

Ant. Here is the will, and under Cæsar's seal. To every Roman citizen he gives, To every several man, seventy-five drachmas. 248

Sec. Cit. Most noble Cæsar! we'll revenge his death.  
Third Cit. O royal Cæsar!  
Ant. Hear me with patience.  
Citizens. Peace, ho!  
Ant. Moreover, he hath left you all his walks, His private arbours, and new-planted orchards, On this side Tiber; he hath left them you, And to your hairs for ever; common pleasures, To walk abroad, and recreate yourselves. 256 Here was a Cæsar! when comes such another?  
First Cit. Never, never! Come, away, away! We'll burn his body in the holy place, And with the brands fire the traitors' houses.  
Take up the body. 261  
Sec. Cit. Go fetch fire.  
Third Cit. Pluck down boughs.  
Fourth Cit. Pluck down forms, windows, any thing.  
[Exeunt Citizens, with the body.  
Ant. Now let it work: mischief thou art afoot, 265  
Take thou what course thou wilt!  

Enter a Servant.  

How now, fellow!  
Serv. Sir, Octavius is already come to Rome.  
Ant.—Where is he? 268  
Serv. He and Lepidus are at Cæsar's house.  
Ant. And thither will I straight to visit him. He comes upon a wish. Fortune is merry, And in this mood will give us any thing. 272  
Serv. I heard him say Brutus and Cassius Are rid like madman through the gates of Rome.  
Ant. Belikey they had some notice of the people, 275  
How I had mov'd them. Bring me to Octavius.  
[Exeunt.  

SCENE III.—The Same. A Street.  

Enter CINNA, the Poet.  

Cin. I dreamt to-night that I did feast with Cæsar,  
And things unlucky charge my fantasy: I have no will to wander forth of doors, Yet something leads me forth.  

Enter Citizens.  

First Cit. What is your name?  
Sec. Cit. Whither are you going?  
Third Cit. Where do you dwell?  

Fourth Cit. Are you a married man, or a bachelor?  
Sec. Cit. Answer every man directly.  
First Cit. Ay, and briefly.  
Fourth Cit. Ay, and wisely. 12  
Third Cit. Ay, and truly, you were best.  
Cin. What is my name? Whither am I going? Where do I dwell? Am I a married man, or a bachelor? Then, to answer every man directly and briefly, wisely and truly; wisely I say, I am a bachelor. 18  
Sec. Cit. That's as much as to say, they are fools that marry; you'll bear me a bagg for that, I fear. Proceed; directly. 21  
Cin. Directly, I am going to Cæsar's funeral.  
First Cit. As a friend or an enemy?  
Cin. As a friend. 24  
Sec. Cit. That matter is answered directly.  
Fourth Cit. For your dwelling, briefly.  
Cin. Briefly, I dwell by the Capitol.  
Third Cit. Your name, sir, truly.  
Cin. Truly, my name is Cinna. 28  
Sec. Cit. Tear him to pieces; he's a conspirator.  
Cin. I am Cinna the poet, I am Cinna the poet. 33  
Fourth Cit. Tear him for his bad verses, tear him for his bad verses.  
Cin. I am not Cinna the conspirator.  
Sec. Cit. It is no matter, his name's Cinna; pluck but his name out of his heart, and turn him going. 39  
Third Cit. Tear him, tear him! Come, brands, ho! firebrands! To Brutus', to Cassius'; burn all. Some to Decius' house, and some to Casca's; some to Ligarius'. Away! go! 43  
[Exeunt.  

ACT IV.  


ANTONY, OCTAVIUS, and LEPIDUS, seated at a table.  

Ant. These many then shall die; their names are pricked.  
Oct. Your brother too must die; consent you, Lepidus?  
Lep. I do consent.  
Lep. Upon condition Publius shall not live, 4  
Who is your sister's son, Mark Antony.  
Ant. He shall not live; look, with a spot I damn him.  
But, Lepidus, go you to Cæsar's house;  
Fetch the will hither, and we shall determine. 8  
How to cut off some charge in legacies.  

967
Lep. What shall I find you here?
Oct. Or here or at the Capitol.

[Exit LEPIUS.

Ant. This is a slight unmeritable man,
Meet to be sent on errands: is it fit,
The three-fold world divided, he should stand
One of the three to share it?

Oct. So you thought him;
And took his voice who should be prick’d to die,
In our black sentence and proscription.

Ant. Octavius, I have seen more days than
you:
And though we lay these honours on this man,
To ease ourselves of divers slanderous loads,
He shall but bear them as the ass bears gold,
To groan and sweat under the business,
Either led or driven, as we point the way;
And having brought our treasure where we will,
Then take we down his load, and turn him off,
Like to the empty ass, to shake his ears,
And graze in commons.

Oct. You may do your will;
But he’s a tried and valiant soldier.

Ant. So is my horse, Octavius; and for that
I do appoint him store of provender.
It is a creature that I teach to fight,
To wind, to stop, to run directly on,
His bodily motion govern’d by my spirit.
And, in some taste, is Lepidus but so;
He must be taught, and train’d, and bid go forth;
A barren-spirited fellow; one that feeds
On abject orts, and imitations,
Which, out of use and stall’d by other men,
Begin his fashion: do not talk of him
But as a property. And now, Octavius,
Listen great things: Brutus and Cassius
A-
are-levy ing powers; we must straight make head;
Therefore let our alliance be combin’d,
Our best friends made, and our best means
stretch’d out;
And let us presently go sit in council,
How covert matters may be best disclos’d,
And open perils surest answered.

Oct. Let us do so: for we are at the stake,
And bay’d about with many enemies;
And some that smile have in their hearts I
fear,
Millions of mischiefs.

[Exit.

SCENE II.—Camp near Sardis. Before
BRUTUS’ Tent.

Drum. Enter BRUTUS, LUCILIUS, LUCIUS, and
Soldiers: TITINIUS and PINDARUS meet
them.

Brutus. Stand, ho!
Lucilius. Give the word, ho! and stand.

Brutus. What now, Lucilius! is Cassius near?
Lucilius. He is at hand; and Pindarus is come to
do you salutation from his master.

[PINDARUS gives a letter to BRUTUS.

Brutus. He greets me well. Your master, Pindarus,
In his own change, or by ill officers,
Hath given me some worthy cause to wish
Things done, undone; but, if he be at hand,
I shall be satisfied.

Pindarus. I do not doubt
But that my noble master will appear
Such as he is, full of regard and honour.

Brutus. He is not doubted. A word, Lucilius;
How he receiv’d you, let me be resolv’d.

Lucilius. With courtesy and with respect
enough;
But not with such familiar instances,
Nor with such free and friendly conference,
As he hath us’d of old.

Brutus. Thou hast describ’d
A hot friend cooling. Ever note, Lucilius,
When love begins to sicken and decay,
it useth an enforced ceremony.
There are no tricks in plain and simple faith;
But hollow men, like horses hot at hand,
Make gallant show and promise of their
mettle;
But when they should endure the bloody
spur,
They fall their crests, and, like deceitful jades,
Sink in the trial. Comes his army on?

Lucilius. They mean this night in Sardis to be
quarter’d;
The greater part, the horse in general,
Are come with Cassius.

Brutus. Hark! he is arriv’d.

[Low March within.

March gently on to meet him.

Enter CASSIUS and Soldiers.

Cas. Stand, ho!

Brutus. Stand, ho! Speak the word along.

First Sold. Stand!

Sec. Sold. Stand!

Third Sold. Stand!

Cas. Most noble brother, you have done me
wrong.

Brutus. Judge me, you gods! Wrong I mine

enemies?

And, if not so, how should I wrong a brother?

Cas. Brutus, this sober form of yours hides

wrongs;

And when you do them—

Brutus. Cassius, be content;

Speak your griefs softly: I do know you well.
Before the eyes of both our armies here,
Which should perceive nothing but love from us,
Let us not wrangle: bid them move away;
Then in my tent, Cassius, enlarge your griefs,
And I will give you audience.

Cas. Pindarus,
Bid our commanders lead their charges off
A little from this ground.

Bru. Lucilius, do you the like; and let no man
Come to our tent till we have done our conference.

Let Lucius and Titinius guard our door. 52

[Exeunt.

SCENE III.—Within the Tent of Brutus.

Enter Brutus and Cassius.

Cas. That you have wrong’d me doth appear in this:
You have condemn’d and noted Lucius Pella
For taking bribes here of the Sardians;
Wherein my letters, prating on his side,
Because I knew the man, were slighted off.

Bru. You wrong’d yourself to write in such a case.

Cas. In such a time as this it is not meet
That every nice offence should bear his comment.

Bru. Let me tell you, Cassius, you yourself
Are much condemn’d to have an itching palm;
To sell and mart your offices for gold
To undeservers.

Cas. I an itching palm! 12
You know that you are Brutus that speak this,
Or, by the gods, this speech were else your last.

Bru. The name of Cassius honours this corruption,
And chastisement doth therefore hide his head.

Cas. Chastisement!

Bru. Remember March, the idee of March remember:

Did not great Julius bleed for justice’s sake?
What villain touch’d his body, that did stab,
And not for justice? What! shall one of us,
That struck the foremost man of all this world
But for supporting robbers, shall we now
Contaminate our fingers with base bribes,
And sell the mighty space of our large honours
For so much trash as may be grasped thus?
I had rather be a dog, and bay the moon,
Than such a Roman.

Cas. Brutus, bay not me; 28
I’ll not endure it: you forget yourself,
To hedge me in. I am a soldier, I,
Older in practice, able than yourself
To make conditions.

Bru. Go to; you are not, Cassius. 32
Cas. I am.

Bru. I say you are not.
Cas. Urge me no more, I shall forget myself;
Have mind upon your health; tempt me no further.

Bru. Away, slight man!
Cas. Is’t possible?

Bru. Hear me, for I will speak.
Must I give way and room to your rash choler?
Shall I be frighted when a madman stares?

Cas. O ye gods! ye gods! Must I endure all this?

Bru. All this! ay, more: fret till your proud heart break;
Go show your slaves how choleric you are,
And make your bondmen tremble. Must I budge?

Must I observe you? Must I stand and crouch
Under your testy humour? By the gods,
You shall digest the venom of your spleen,
Though it do split you; for, from this day forth,
I’ll use you for my mirth, yea, for my laughter,
When you are waspish.

Cas. Is it come to this?

Bru. You say you are a better soldier:
Let it appear so; make your vaunting true,
And it shall please me well. For mine own part,
I shall be glad to learn of noble men.

Cas. You wrong me every way; you wrong me, Brutus;
I said an elder soldier, not a better:
Did I say, ’better’?

Bru. If you did, I care not.

Cas. When Caesar liv’d, he durst not thus have mov’d me.

Bru. Peace, peace! you durst not so have tempted him.

Cas. I durst not!

Bru. No.

Cas. What! durst not tempt him!

Bru. For your life you durst not.

Cas. Do not presume too much upon my love;
I may do that I shall be sorry for.

Bru. You have done that you should be sorry for.

There is no terror, Cassius, in your threats;
For I am arm’d so strong in honesty
That they pass by me as the idle wind,
Which I respect not. I did send to you
For certain sums of gold, which you denied me;
For I can raise no money by vile means:
By heaven, I had rather coin my heart,
And drop my blood for drachmas, than to wring
From the hard hands of peasants their vile trash
By any indirect way. I did send
To you for gold to pay my legions,
Which you denied me: was that done like
Cassius?
Should I have answer’d Caius Cassius so?
When Marcus Brutus grows so covetous,
To look such rascals counters from his friends,
Be ready, gods, with all your thunderbolts;
Dash him to pieces!
Cas. I denied you not.
Bru. You did.
Cas. I did not: he was but a fool
That brought my answer back. Brutus hath
riv’d my heart.
A friend should bear his friend’s infirmities,
But Brutus makes mine greater than they are.
Bru. I do not, till you practise them on me.
Cas. You love me not.
Bru. I do not like your faults.
Cas. A friendly eye could never see such
faults.
Bru. A flatterer’s would not, though they do
appear
As huge as high Olympus.
Cas. Come, Antony, and young Octavius,
come,
Revenge yourselves alone on Cassius,
For Cassius is awearie of the world;
Hated by one he loves; brav’d by his brother;
Cheek’d like a bondman; all his faults observ’d,
Set in a note-book; learn’d, and conn’d by rote,
To cast into my teeth. O! I could weep
My spirit from mine eyes. There is my dagger,
And here my naked breast; within, a heart
Dearer than Plutus’ mine, richer than gold:
If that thou be’st a Roman, take it forth;
I, that denied thee gold, will give my heart;
Strike, as thou didst at Caesar; for, I know,
When thou didst hate him worst, thou lov’dst him better
Than ever thou lov’dst Cassius.
Bru. Sheathe your dagger:
Be angry when you will, it shall have scope;
Do what you will, dishonour shall be humour.
O Cassius! you are yoked with a lamb
That carries anger as the flint bears fire,
Who, much enforced, shows a hasty spark,
And straight is cold again.
Cas. Hath Cassius liv’d?
To be but mirth and laughter to his Brutus,
When grief and blood ill-temper’d vexeth him?
Bru. When I spoke that I was ill-temper’d too.
Cas. Do you confess so much? Give me your
hand.
Bru. And my heart too.
Cas. O Brutus!

Bru. What’s the matter?
Cas. Have not you love enough to bear with
me,
When that rash humour which my mother gave
me
Makes me forgetful?
Bru. Yes, Cassius; and from henceforth
When you are over-curst with your Brutus,
He’ll think your mother chides, and leave you
so.
[Noise within.
Poet. [Within.] Let me go in to see the
generals;
There is some grudge between ’em, ’tis not meet
They be alone.
Lucil. [Within.] You shall not come to them.
[Exit Poet. [Within.] Nothing but death shall stay
me.

Enter Poet, followed by Lucilius, Titinius,
and Lucius.
Cas. How now! What’s the matter?
Poet. For shame, you generals! What do you
mean?
Love, and be friends, as two such men should
be;
For I have seen more years, I’m sure, than ye.
Cas. Ha, ha! how vilely doth this cynic rime!
Bru. Get you hence, sirrah; saucy fellow,
hence!
Cas. Bear with him, Brutus; ’tis his fashion.
Bru. I’ll know his humour, when he knows
his time:
What should the wars do with these juggling
fools?
Companion, hence!
Cas. Away, away! be gone.
[Exit Poet.
Bru. Lucilius and Titinius, bid the
commanders
Prepare to lodge their companies to-night.
Cas. And come yourselves, and bring Mes-
sala with you,
Immediately to us.
[Exeunt Lucilius and Titinius.

Bru. Lucius, a bowl of wine! [Exit Lucius.
Cas. I did not think you could have been so
angry.
Bru. O Cassius! I am sick of many griefs.
Cas. Of your philosophy you make no use
If you give place to accidental evils.
Bru. No man bears sorrow better: Portia is
dead.
Cas. Ha! Portia!
Bru. She is dead.
Cas. How ’scap’d I killing when I cross’d you
so?
O insupportable and touching loss!
Upon what sickness?

*Bru.* Impatient of my absence,
And grief that young Octavius with Mark
Antony

Have made themselves so strong;—for with
her death

That tidings came:—with this she fell distract,
And, her attendants absent, swallow'd fire.

*Cas.* And died so?

*Bru.* Even so.

*Cas.* O ye immortal gods! 156

Enter Lucius, with wine and tapers.

*Bru.* Speak no more of her. Give me a bowl
of wine.

In this I bury all unkindness, Cassius. [Drinks.

*Cas.* My heart is thirsty for that noble pledge.

Fill, Lucius, till the wine o'erswell the cup; 160

I cannot drink too much of Brutus' love.

[Drinks.

*Bru.* Come in, Titinius.  [Exit Lucius.

Re-enter Titinius, with Messala.

Welcome, good Messala.

Now sit we close about this taper here,
And call in question our necessities. 164

*Cas.* Portia, art thou gone?

*Bru.* No more, I pray you.

Messala, I have here received letters,
That young Octavius and Mark Antony
Come down upon us with a mighty power, 168

Bending their expedition towards Philippi.

*Mes.* Myself have letters of the self-same

*Bru.* With what addition?

*Mes.* That by proscription and bills of out-

*Octavius, Antony, and Lepidus,

Have put to death an hundred senators.

*Bru.* Therein our letters do not well agree;

Mine speak of seventy senators that died 176

By their proscriptions, Cicero being one.

*Cas.* Cicero is dead,

And by that order of proscription.

Had you your letters from your wife, my lord?

*Bru.* No, Messala.

*Mes.* Nor nothing in your letters writ of

*Bru.* Nothing, Messala.

*Mes.* That, methinks, is strange.

*Bru.* Why ask you? Hear you aught of her

*Cas.* No, my lord.

*Bru.* Now, as you are a Roman, tell me true.

Mes. Then like a Roman bear the truth I
tell:

For certain she is dead, and by strange manner.

*Bru.* Why, farewell, Portia. We must die,

Messala:

With meditating that she must die once,

I have the patience to endure it now.

*Mes.* Even so great men great losses should

endure.

*Cas.* I have as much of this in art as you,

But yet my nature could not bear it so.

*Bru.* Well, to our work alive. What do you

think

Of marching to Philippi presently?

*Cas.* I do not think it good.

*Bru.* Your reason?

*Cas.* This is it:

'Tis better that the enemy seek us:

So shall he waste his means, weary his soldiers,

Doing himself offence; whilst we, lying still, 200

Are full of rest, defence, and nimbleness.

*Bru.* Good reasons must, of force, give place
to better,

The people 'twixt Philippi and this ground

Do stand but in a forc'd affection;

For they have grudg'd us contribution:

The enemy, marching along by them,

By them shall make a fuller number up,

Come on refresh'd, new-added, and encourag'd;

From which advantage shall we cut him off, 209

If at Philippi we do face him there,

These people at our back.

*Cas.* Hear me, good brother.

*Bru.* Under your pardon. You must note

beside,

That we have tried the utmost of our friends,

Our legions are brim-full, our cause is ripe;

The enemy increaseth every day;

We, at the height, are ready to decline. 216

There is a tide in the affairs of men,

Which, taken at the flood, leads on to fortune;

Omitted, all the voyage of their life

Is bound in shallows and in miseries. 220

On such a full sea are we now afloat;

And we must take the current when it serves,

Or lose our ventures.

*Cas.* Then, with your will, go on;

We'll along ourselves, and meet them at

Philippi.

*Bru.* The deep of night is crept upon our
talk,

And nature must obey necessity,

Which we will niggard with a little rest.

There is no more to say?

*Cas.* No more. Good-night: 228

Early to-morrow will we rise, and hence.

*Bru.* Lucius!
Enter Varro and Claudius.

Var. Calls my lord?

Bru. I pray you, sirs, lie in my tent and sleep: It may be I shall raise you by and by
On business to my brother Cassius.

Var. So please you, we will stand and watch your pleasure.

Bru. I will not have it so; lie down, good sirs; It may be I shall otherwise bethink me.
Look, Lucius, here’s the book I sought for so; I put it in the pocket of my gown.

Luc. I was sure your lordship did not give it me.

Bru. Bear with me, good boy, I am much forgetful.

Canst thou hold up thy heavy eyes awhile, And touch thy instrument a strain or two? Luc. Ay, my lord, an’t please you.

Bru. It does, my boy: I trouble thee too much, but thou art willing.

Luc. It is my duty, sir.

Bru. I should not urge thy duty past thy might;

I know young bloods look for a time of rest.

Luc. I have slept, my lord, already.

Bru. It was well slept, and thou shalt sleep again;

I will not hold thee long: if I do live, I will be good to thee.

Enter the Ghost of Caesar.

How ill this taper burns! Hal who comes here?

I think it is the weakness of mine eyes
That shapes this monstrous apparition.

It comes upon me. Art thou any thing?
Art thou some god, some angel, or some devil,
That mak’est my blood cold and my hair to stare?

Speak to me what thou art.

Ghost. Thy evil spirit, Brutus.

Bru. Why com’st thou?

Ghost. To tell thee thou shalt see me at Philippi.

Bru. Well; then I shall see thee again?

Ghost. Ay, at Philippi.

Bru. Why, I will see thee at Philippi then.

[Ghost vanishes.

Now I have taken heart thou vanishest: Ill spirit, I would hold more talk with thee.

Boy, Lucius! Varro! Claudius! Sirs, awake! Claudius!

Luc. The strings, my lord, are false.

Bru. He thinks he still is at his instrument.

Lucius, awake!

Luc. My lord!

Bru. Didst thou dream, Lucius, that thou so criedst out?

Luc. My lord, I do not know that I did cry.

Bru. Yes, that thou didst. Didst thou see any thing?

Luc. Nothing, my lord.

Bru. Sleep again, Lucius. Sirrah, Claudius!

Fellow thou! awake!

Var. My lord!

Clau. My lord!

Bru. Why did you so cry out, sirs, in your sleep?

Var. Did we, my lord?

Bru. Ay: saw you any thing?

Var. No, my lord, I saw nothing.

Clau. Nor I, my lord.

Bru. Go, and commend me to my brother Cassius.

Bid him set on his powers betimes before,
And we will follow.

Var. { It shall be done, my lord.

Claud. } [Exeunt.

ACT V.

SCENE I.—The Plains of Philippi.

Enter Octavius, Antony, and their Army.

Oct. Now, Antony, our hopes are answered:
You said the enemy would not come down,
But keep the hills and upper regions;
It proves not so; their battles are at hand;
They mean to warn us at Philippi here,
Answering before we do demand of them.

Ant. Tutt! I am in their bosoms, and I know
Wherefore they do it: they could be content
To visit other places; and come down
With fearful bravery, thinking by this face
To fasten in our thoughts that they have courage;
But 'tis not so.

Enter a Messenger.

Mess. Prepare you, generals: The enemy comes on in gallant show;
Their bloody sign of battle is hung out,
And something to be done immediately.

Ant. Octavius, lead your battle softly on,
Upon the left hand of the even field.

Oct. Upon the right hand I; keep thou the left.

Ant. Why do you cross me in this exigent? I do not cross you; but I will do so.

[March.

Drum. Enter Brutus, Cassius, and their Army; Lucullus, Titinius, Messalus, and Others.

Bru. They stand, and would have parley.

Cas. Stand fast, Titinius: we must out and talk.

Oct. Mark Antony, shall we give sign of battle?

Ant. No, Caesar, we will answer on their charge.

Make forth; the generals would have some words.

Oct. Stir not until the signal.

Bru. Words before blows: is it so, country-men?

Oct. Not that we love words better, as you do.

Bru. Good words are better than bad strokes, Octavius.

Ant. In your bad strokes, Brutus, you give good words:
Witness the hole you made in Caesar's heart.

Crying, 'Long live! hail, Caesar!'

Cas. Antony, 32
The posture of your blows are yet unknown;
But for your words, they rob the Hybla bees,
And leave them honeyless.

Ant. Not stingless too.

Bru. O! yes, and soundless too; 36
For you have stol'n their buzzing, Antony,
And very wisely threat before you sting.

Ant. Villains! you did not so when your vile daggers
Hack'd one another in the sides of Caesar:
You show'd your teeth like apes, and fawn'd like hounds,
And bow'd like bondmen, kissing Caesar's feet;
Whilst damned Cassius, like a cur, behind
Struck Caesar on the neck. O you flatterers! 44

Cas. Flatterers! Now, Brutus, thank yourself:
This tongue had not offended so to-day,
If Cassius might have rul'd.

Oct. Come, come, the cause: if arguing make us sweat,

The proof of it will turn to redder drops.

Look;
I draw a sword against conspirators;
When think you that the sword goes up again?

Never, till Caesar's three-and-thirty wounds 53
Be well aveng'd; or till another Caesar
Have added slaughter to the sword of traitors.

Bru. Caesar, thou canst not die by traitors' hands,

Unless thou bring'st them with thee.

Ant. Old Cassius still!

Oct. Come, Antony; away!

Defiance, traitors, hurl we in your teeth. 64

Cas. Why now, blow wind, swell billow, and swim bark!

The storm is up, and all is on the hazard. 68

Bru. Hol!

Lucilius hark, a word with you.

Lucil. My lord?

[Brutus and Lucilius talk apart.

Cas. Messals!

Mess. What says my general?
Act V, Sc. 1.

JULIUS CAESAR

Cas. This is my birth-day; as this very day
Was Cassius born. Give me thy hand, Messala:
Be thou my witness that against my will,
As Pompey was, am I compell'd to set
Upon one battle all our liberties.

You know that I held Epicurus strong,
And his opinion; now I change my mind,
And partly credit things that do presage.
Coming from Sardis, on our former ensign
Two mighty eagles fell, and there they perch'd,
Gorging and feeding from our soldiers' hands;
Who to Philippi here consorted us:
This morning are they fled away and gone,
And in their stead do ravens, crows, and kites
Fly 'er our heads, and downward look on us,
As we were sickly prey: their shadows seem
A canopy most fatal, under which
Our army lies, ready to give up the ghost.

Mes. Believe not so.

Cas. I but believe it partly,
For I am fresh of spirit and resolv'd
To meet all perils very constantly.

Bruc. Even so, Lucilius.

Cas. Now, most noble Brutus,
This god's to-day stand friendly, that we may,
Lovers in peace, lead on our days to age!
But since the affairs of men rest still uncertain,
Let's reason with the worst that may befall.
If we do lose this battle, then is this
The very last time we shall speak together:
What are you then, determined to do?

Bruc. Even by the rule of that philosophy
By which I did blame Cato for the death
Which he did give himself; I know not how,
But I do find it cowardly and vile,
For fear of what might fall, so to prevent
The time of life: arming myself with patience,
To stay the providence of some high powers
That govern us below.

Cas. Then, if we lose this battle,
You are contented to be led in triumph
Thro'out the streets of Rome?

Bruc. No, Cassius, no; think not, thou noble
Roman,
That ever Brutus will go bound to Rome;
He bears too great a mind: but this same
day
Must end that work the ides of March begun;
And whether we shall meet again I know not.
Therefore our everlastling farewell take:
For ever, and for ever, farewell, Cassius!
If we do meet again, why, we shall smile;
If not, 'tis true this parting was well made.

Cas. For ever, and for ever, farewell, Brutus!
If we do meet again, we'll smile indeed;
If not, 'tis true this parting was well made.

Bru. Why, then, lead on. O! that a man
might know
The end of this day's business, ere it come;
But it sufficeth that the day will end,
And then the end is known. Come, hol' away!

[Exeunt.

Scene II.—The Same. The Field of Battle.

Alarum. Enter Brutus and Messala.

Bruc. Ride, ride, Messala, ride, and give these
bills
Unto the legions on the other side.

[Loud alarum.

Let them set on at once, for I perceive
But cold demeanour in Octavius' wing,
And sudden push gives them the overthrow.

Ride, ride, Messala: let them all come down.

[Exeunt.

Scene III.—Another Part of the Field.

Alarum. Enter Cassius and Titinius.

Cas. O! look, Titinius, look, the villains fly:
Myself have to mine own turn'd enemy;
This ensign here of mine was turning back;
I slew the coward, and did take it from him.

Tit. O Cassius! Brutus gave the word too
early;
Who, having some advantage on Octavius,
Took it too eagerly: his soldiers fell to spoil,
Whilst we by Antony are all enclos'd.

Enter Pindarus.

Pin. Fly further off, my lord, fly further off;
Mark Antony is in your tents, my lord:
Fly, therefore, noble Cassius, fly far off.
Cas. This hill is far enough.

Look, look, Titinius;
Are those my tents where I perceive the fire?

Tit. They are, my lord.

Cas. Titinius, if thou lovest me,
Mount thou my horse, and hide thy spurs in him,
Till he have brought thee up to yonder troops
And here again; that I may rest assur'd
Whether yond' troops are friend or enemy.

Tit. I will be here again, even with a thought.

[Exil.

Cas. Go, Pindarus, get higher on that hill;
My sight was ever thick; regard Titinius,
And tell me what thou not'st about the field.

[Pin. [Above.] O my lord!

[ INSTANCE CASSIUS' ASCENDS THE HILL.

This day I breathed first; time is come round,
And where I did begin, there shall I end;
My life is run his compass. Sirrah, what news?

Pin. [Above.] By my troth, my lord!
O hateful error, melancholy's child!
Why dost thou show to the apt thoughts of men
The things that are not? O error! soon conceiv'd,
Thou never com'st unto a happy birth,
But kill'st the mother that engender'd thee.

Tit. What, Pindarus! Where art thou, Pindarus?

Mes. Seek him, Titinius, whilst I go to meet
The noble Brutus, trusting this report
Into his ears; I may say, trusting it;
For piercing steel and darts envenomed
Shall be as welcome to the ears of Brutus
As tidings of this sight.

Tit. Hie you, Messala,
And I will seek for Pindarus the while.

[Exeunt MESSALA.]

Why didst thou send me forth, brave Cassius?
Did I not meet thy friends? and did not they
Put on my brows this wreath of victory,
And bid me give it thee? Didst thou not hear
their shouts?

Alas! thou hast misconstru'd every thing.
But, hold thee, take this garland on thy brow;
Thy Brutus bid me give it thee, and I
Will do his bidding. Brutus, come, space,
And see how I regarded Caius Cassius.

By your leave, gods: this is a Roman's part:
Come, Cassius' sword, and find Titinius' heart.

[Kills himself.]

Alarum. Re-enter MESSALA, with BRUTUS,
YOUNG CATO, STRATO, VOLUMNIUS, and LUCILIUS.

Bru. Where, where, Messala, doth his body lie?

Mes. Lo, yonder: and Titinius mourning it.

Bru. Titinius' face is upward.

Cato. He is slain.

Bru. O Julius Caesar! thou art mighty yet!
Thy spirit walks abroad, and turns our swords
In our own proper entrails. [Low alarums.

Cato. Brave Titinius!]

Look whe'r he have not crown'd dead Cassius!

Bru. Are yet two Romans living such as these?

The last of all the Romans, fare thee well!
It is impossible that ever Rome
Should breed thy fellow. Friends, I owe more tears
To this dead man than you shall see me pay.—

I shall find time, Cassius, I shall find time.—
Come therefore, and to Thrasea send his body:
His funerals shall not be in our camp,
Lest it discomfort us. Lucilius, come;
And come, young Cato;—let us to the field.
Labeo and Flavius, set our battles on:—
'Tis three o'clock; and, Romans, yet ere night
We shall try fortune in a second fight. [Exeunt.

SCENE IV.—Another Part of the Field.

Alarum. Enter fighting, Soldiers of both armies; then Brutus, Young Cato, Lu-
cilius, and Others.

Bru. Yet, countrymen, O! yet hold up your heads!
Cato. What bastard doth not? Who will go with me?
I will proclaim my name about the field:
I am the son of Marcus Cato, ho! 4
A foe to tyrants, and my country's friend;
I am the son of Marcus Cato, ho!
Bru. And I am Brutus, Marcus Brutus, I;
Brutus, my country's friend; know me for Brutus!
[Exit, charging the enemy.
Cato is overpowered, and falls.

Lucil. O young and noble Cato, art thou down?
Why, now thou diest as bravely as Titinius,
And mayst be honour'd being Cato's son.
First Sold. Yield, or thou diest.
Lucil. Only I yield to die: 12
There is so much that thou wilt kill me straight.
Kill Brutus, and be honour'd in his death.
First Sold. We must not. A noble prisoner!
Sec. Sold. Room, ho! Tell Antony, Brutus
is ta'en.
First Sold. I'll tell the news: here comes the general.

Enter Antony.

Brutus is ta'en, my lord.
Ant. Where is he?
Lucil. Safe, Antony; Brutus is safe enough:
I dare assure thee that no enemy 21
Shall ever take alive the noble Brutus:
The gods defend him from so great a shame!
When you do find him, or alive or dead, 24
He will be found like Brutus, like himself.
Ant. This is not Brutus, friend; but, I assure you,
A prize no less in worth. Keep this man safe,
Give him all kindness: I had rather have 28
Such men my friends than enemies. Go on,
And see whe'r Brutus be alive or dead;
And bring us word unto Octavius' tent.
How every thing is chanc'd. 36
[Exeunt.

SCENE V.—Another Part of the Field.

Enter Brutus, Dardanius, Clitus, Strato,
and Volumnius.

Bru. Come, poor remains of friends, rest on this rock.
Clit. Statilius show'd the torch-light; but, my lord,
He came not back: he is or ta'en or slain.
Bru. Sit thee down, Clitus: slaying is the word; 4
It is a deed in fashion. Hark thee, Clitus. [Whispers.
Clit. What, I, my lord? No, not for all the world.
Bru. Peace, then! no words.
Clit. I'll rather kill myself.
Dar. Shall I do such a deed? 8
Clit. O, Dardanius!
Dar. O, Clitus!
Clit. What ill request did Brutus make to thee?
Dar. To kill him, Clitus. Look, he meditates.
Clit. Now is that noble vessel full of grief, 13
That it runs over even at his eyes.
Bru. Come hither, good Volumnius: list a word.
Vol. What says my lord?
Bru. Why this, Volumnius: 16
The ghost of Cesar hath appear'd to me
Two several times by night; at Sardis once,
And this last night here in Philippi fields.
I know my hour is come.
Vol. Not so, my lord. 20
Bru. Nay, I am sure it is, Volumnius.
Thou seest the world, Volumnius, how it goes;
Our enemies have beat us to the pit:
It is more worthy to leap in ourselves, 24
Than tarry till they push us. Good Volumnius,
Thou know'st that we two went to school to-
gether:
Even for that our love of old, I prithee,
Hold thou my sword-hills, whilst I run on it. 28
Clit. Fly, fly, my lord! there is no tarrying here.
Bru. Farewell to you; and you; and you, Volumnius.
Strato, thou hast been all this while asleep; 32
Farewell to thee too, Strato. Countrymen,
My heart doth joy that yet, in all my life,
I found no man but he was true to me.
I shall have glory by this losing day; 36
More than Octavius and Mark Antony
By this vile conquest shall attain unto.
for Brutus' tongue
Hath almost ended his life's history:
Night hangs upon mine eyes; my bones would rest,
That have but labour'd to attain this hour.

[Alarum. Cry within, 'Fly, fly, fly!'
Cit. Fly, my lord, fly.
Bru. Hence! I will follow.

[Exeunt Clitus, Dardanius, and Volumnius.
I prithee, Strato, stay thou by thy lord:
Thy art a fellow of a good respect;
Thy life hath had some smatch of honour in it:
Hold then my sword, and turn away thy face,
While I do run upon it. Wilt thou, Strato? Give me your hand first: fare you well, my lord.
Bru. Farewell, good Strato.—[He runs on his sword.] Caesar, now be still;
I kill'd not thee with half so good a will. [Dies.

Alarum. Retreat. Enter Octavius, Antony, Messala, Lucilius, and Army.

Oct. What man is that?
Mes. My master's man. Strato, where is thy master?
Str. Free from the bondage you are in, Messala;
The conquerors can but make a fire of him;
For Brutus only overcame himself,
And no man else hath honour by his death.

Luc. So Brutus should be found. I thank thee, Brutus,
That thou hast prov'd Lucilius' saying true.
Oct. All that serv'd Brutus, I will entertain them.
Fellow, wilt thou bestow thy time with me?

Str. Ay, if Messala will prefer me to you.
Oct. Do so, good Messala.
Mes. How died my master, Strato?

Str. I held the sword, and he did run on it.
Mes. Octavius, then take him to follow thee,
That did the latest service to my master.

Ant. This was the noblest Roman of them all;
All the conspirators save only he
Did that they did in envy of great Caesar;
He only, in a general honest thought
And common good to all, made one of them.
His life was gentle, and the elements
So mix'd in him that Nature might stand up
And say to all the world, 'This was a man!'

Oct. According to his virtue let us use him,
With all respect and rites of burial.
Within my tent his bones to-night shall lie,
Most like a soldier, order'd honourably.
So, call the field to rest; and let's away, To part the glories of this happy day. [Exeunt.
MACBETH

Dramatis Personae.

DUNCAN, King of Scotland.
MALCOLM, his Sons.
DONALBAIN, Generals of the King’s Army.
MACBETH, Noblemen of Scotland.
BANQUO,
MACDUFF,
LENNOX,
ROSS,
MENTEITH,
ANGUS,
CAITHNESS,
FLEANCE, Son to Banquo.
SIWARD, Earl of Northumberland, General of
the English Forces.
YOUNG SIWARD, his Son.
SEYTON, an Officer attending Macbeth.

Boy, Son to Macduff.
An English Doctor.
A Scotch Doctor.
A Sergeant.
A Porter.
An Old Man.

LADY MACBETH.
LADY MACDUFF.
Gentlewoman attending on Lady Macbeth.

HECATE and Three Witches.

Lords, Gentlemen, Officers, Soldiers, Murderers,
Attendants, and Messengers. The Ghost of
Banquo, and other Apparitions.

Scene.—Scotland: England.

ACT I.

Scene I.—A desert Heath.

Thunder and lightning. Enter three Witches.

First Witch. When shall we three meet again
In thunder, lightning, or in rain?

Sec. Witch. When the hurlyburly’s done,
When the battle’s lost and won.

Third Witch. That will be ere the set of sun.

First Witch. Where the place?

Sec. Witch. Upon the heath.

Third Witch. There to meet with Macbeth.

First Witch. I come, Graymalkin!%

Sec. Witch. Paddock calls.

Third Witch. Anon.

All. Fair is foul, and foul is fair:
Hover through the fog and filthy air. [Exeunt.

Scene II.—A Camp near Forres.

Alarum within. Enter King Duncan, Mal-
colm, Donalbain, Lennox, with Atten-
dants, meeting a bleeding Sergeant.

Dun. What bloody man is that? He can report,
As seemeth by his plight, of the revolt
The newest state.

Mal. This is the sergeant
Who, like a good and hardy soldier fought
‘Gainst my captivity. Hail, brave friend!

Say to the king the knowledge of the broil
As thou didst leave it.

Serg. Doubtful it stood;
As two spent swimmers, that do cling together
And choke their art. The merciless Macdon-
wald—

Worthy to be a rebel, for to that
The multiplying villainies of nature
Do swarm upon him—from the western isles
Of kerns and gallowglasses is supplied;
And fortune, on his damned quarrel smiling,
Show’d like a rebel’s whore: but all’s too weak;
For brave Macbeth,—well he deserves that
name,—

Disdaining fortune, with his brandish’d steel,
Which smok’d with bloody execution,
Like valour’s minion carv’d out his passage
Till he fac’d the slave;

Which ne’er shook hands, nor bade farewell to
him,
Till he unseam’d him from the nape to the chaps,
And fix’d his head upon our battlements.

Dun. O valiant cousin! worthy gentleman!

Serg. As whence the sun ’gins his reflection
Shipwrecking storms and direful thunders break,
So from that spring whence comfort seem’d to
come

Discomfort swells. Mark, King of Scotland,
mark:

No sooner justice had with valour arm’d
Compell’d these skipping kerns to trust their heels,
But the Norweyian lord surveying vantage,
With furnish’d arms and new supplies of men
Began a fresh assault.

_Dun._ Dismay’d not this
Our captains, Macbeth and Banquo?

_Serg._ Yes;
As sparrows eagles, or the hare the lion.
If I say sooth, I must report they were
As cannons overcharg’d with double cracks;
So they
Doubly redoubled strokes upon the foe:
Except they meant to bathe in reeking wounds,
Or memorize another Golgotha,
I cannot tell—
But I am faint, my gashes cry for help.

_Dun._ So well thy words become thee as thy wounds;

They smack of honour both. Go, get him surgeons. [Exit Sargeant, attended.

_Enter ROSS._

Who comes here?

_Mal._ The worthy Thane of Ross.

_Len._ What a haste looks through his eyes! So should he look
That seems to speak things strange.

_Ross._ God save the king! 48

_Dun._ Whence cam’st thou, worthy thane?

_Ross._ From Fife, great king;

Where the Norweyan banners flout the sky
And fan our people cold. Norway himself,
With terrible numbers,
Assisted by that most disloyal traitor,
The Thane of Cawdor, began a dismal conflict;
Till that Bellona’s bridgroom, lapp’d in proof,
Confronted him with self-comparisons,
Point against point, rebellious arm against arm,
Curbing his lavish spirit: and, to conclude,
The victory fall on us.—

_Dun._ Great happiness!

_Ross._ That now
Sweno, the Norways’ king, craves composition;
Nor would we deign him burial of his men
Till he disbursed, at Saint Colme’s Inch,
Ten thousand dollars to our general use.

_Dun._ No more that Thane of Cawdor shall deceive
Our bosom interest. Go pronounce his present death,

And with his former title greet Macbeth.

_Ross._ I’ll see it done.

_Dun._ What he hath lost noble Macbeth hath won.

(Scene III.—A Heath.

_Thunder._ Enter the three Witches.

_First Witch._ Where hast thou been, sister?

_Sec. Witch._ Killing swine.

_Third Witch._ Sister, where thou?

_First Witch._ A sailor’s wife had chestnuts in her lap,

And munch’d, and munch’d, and munch’d:
‘Give me,’ quoth I:
‘Aroint thee, witch!’ the rump-fed ronyon cries.
Her husband’s to Aleppo gone, master o’ the Tiger:
But in a sieve I’ll thither sail,
And, like a rat without a tail,
I’ll do, I’ll do, and I’ll do.

_Sec. Witch._ I’ll give thee a wind.

_First Witch._ Thou’rt kind.

_Third Witch._ And I another.

_First Witch._ I myself have all the other;
And the very ports they blow,
All the quarters that they know
I the shipman’s card.
I’ll drain him dry as hay:
Sleep shall neither night nor day
Hang upon his pent-house lid;
He shall live a man forbid.
Weary se’nnights nine times nine
Shall he dwindle, peak and pine:
Though his bark cannot be lost,
Yet it shall be tempest-tost.

Look what I have.

_Sec. Witch._ Show me, show me.

_First Witch._ Here I have a pilot’s thumb, 28
Wrack’d as homeward he did come.

[Drum within.

_Third Witch._ A drum! a drum!

Macbeth doth come.

_All._ The weird sisters, hand in hand,
Posters of the sea and land,
Thus do go about, about:
Thrice to thine, and thrice to mine,
And thrice again, to make up nine.

Peace! the tharm’s wound up.

_Enter MACBETH and BANQUO._

_Macb._ So foul and fair a day I have not seen.

_Ban._ How far is ’t call’d to Forres? What are these,

So wither’d and so wild in their attire,
That look not like th’ inhabitants o’ the earth,
And yet are on ’t? Live you? or are you aught

That man may question? You seem to understand me,

By each at once her choppy finger laying
Upon her skinny lips: you should be women,
And yet your beards forbid me to interpret
That you are so.

**Macb.** Speak, if you can: what are you?

**First Witch.** All hail, Macbeth! hail to thee,
Thane of Glamis! 48

**Sec. Witch.** All hail, Macbeth! hail to thee,
Thane of Cawdor!

**Third Witch.** All hail, Macbeth! that shalt
be king hereafter.

**Ban.** Good sir, why do you start, and seem
to fear
Things that do sound so fair? I' th' name of
truth,
Are ye fantastical, or that indeed
Which outwardly ye show? My noble partner
You greet with present grace and great pre-
diction
Of noble having and of royal hope,
That he seems rapt withal: to me you speak
not.
If you can look into the seeds of time,
And say which grain will grow and which will
not,
Speak then to me, who neither beg nor fear
Your favours nor your hate.

**First Witch.** Hail!

**Sec. Witch.** Hail!

**Third Witch.** Hail!

**First Witch.** Lesser, than Macbeth, and
greater.

**Sec. Witch.** Not so happy, yet much happier.

**Third Witch.** Thou shalt get kings, though
thou be none:
So, all hail, Macbeth and Banquo!

**Macb.** Stay, you imperfect speakers, tell me
more:
By Sinel's death I know I am Thane of Glamis;
But how of Cawdor? the Thane of Cawdor lives,
A prosperous gentleman; and to be king
stands not within the prospect of belief
No more than to be Cawdor. Say, from whence
You owe this strange intelligence? or why
Upon this blasted heath you stop our way
With such prophetic greeting? Speak, I charge
you.

[Witches vanish.

**Ban.** The earth hath bubbles, as the water
has,
And these are of them. Whither are they
vanish'd?

**Macb.** Into the air, and what seem'd corporal
melted
As breath into the wind. Would they had stay'd!

**Ban.** Were such things here as we do speak
about?

Or have we eaten on the insane root
That takes the reason prisoner?

**Macb.** Your children shall be kings.

**Ban.** You shall be king.

**Macb.** And Thane of Cawdor too; went it
not so?

**Ban.** To the selfsame tune and words.

Who's here?

[Enter ROSS and ANGUS.

**Ross.** The king hath happily receiv'd, Mac-
beth,
The news of thy success; and when he reads
Thy personal venture in the rebels' fight,
His wonders and his praises do contend
Which should be thine or his. Silenc'd with
that,
In viewing o'er the rest o' the selfsame day,
He finds thee in the stout Norweyan ranks,
Nothing afeard of what thyself didst make,
Strange images of death. As thick as hail
Came post with post, and every one did bear
Thy praises in his kingdom's great defence,
And pour'd them down before him.

**Ang.** We are sent 100
To give thee from our royal master thanks;
Only to herald thee into his sight,
Not pay thee.

**Ross.** And, for an earnest of a greater honour,
He bade me, from him, call thee Thane of
Cawdor:

**Ang.** In which addition, hail, most worthy thane!

**Ban.** What! can the devil speak true?

**Macb.** The Thane of Cawdor lives: why do
you dress me
In borrowed robes?

**Ang.** Who was the thane lives yet;
But under heavy judgment bears that life
Which he deserves to lose. Whether he was

**Ban.** With those of Norweyan, or did line the rebel

**Ang.** With hidden help or vantage, or that with both

**Ban.** He labour'd in his country's wrack, I know not;

**Ang.** But treasons capital, confess'd and prov'd,

**Ban.** Have overthrown him.

**Macb.** [Aside.] Glamis, and Thane of Caw-
dor:

**Ang.** The greatest is behind. [To ROSS and ANGUS.]
Thanks for your pains.

[To BANQUO.] Do you not hope your children
shall be kings,

When those that gave the Thane of Cawdor to
me
Promis'd no less to them?

**Ban.** That, trusted home, 120
Might yet enkindle you unto the crown,

**Ban.** Besides the Thane of Cawdor. But 'tis strange:

**Ban.** And oftentimes, to win us to our harm,
The instruments of darkness tell us truths, 124
Win us with honest trifles, to betray’s
In deepest consequence.
Cousins, a word, I pray you.

Macb. [Aside.] Two truths are told,
As happy prologues to the swelling act 128
Of the imperial theme. I thank you, gentlemen.
[Aside.] This supernatural soliciting
Cannot be ill, cannot be good; if ill,
Why hath’t given me earnest of success, 132
Commencing in a truth? I am Thane of
Cawdor:
If good, why do I yield to that suggestion
Whose horrid image doth unfix my hair,
And make my seated heart knock at my ribs,
Against the use of nature? Present fears 137
Are less than horrible imaginings;
My thought, whose murder yet is but fantastical,
Shakes so my single state of man that function
Is smother’d in surmise, and nothing is 141
But what is not.

Ban. Look, how our partner’s rapt.
Macb. [Aside.] If chance will have me king,
Why, chance may crown me,
Without my stir.

Ban. New honours come upon him, 144
Like our strange garments, cleave not to their mould
But with the aid of use.

Macb. [Aside.] Come what come may,
Time and the hour runs through the roughest day.

Ban. Worthy Macbeth, we stay upon your leisure.

Macb. Give me your favour: my dull brain was wrought
With things forgotten. Kind gentlemen, your pains
Are registred where every day I turn
The leaf to read them. Let us toward the king,
Think upon what hath chanc’d; and, at more time,
The interim having weigh’d it, let us speak
Our free hearts each to other.

Ban. Very gladly.

Macb. Till then, enough. Come, friends. 156

[Exeunt.

SCENE IV.—Forres. A Room in the Palace.

Flourish. Enter Duncan, Malcolm, Donalbain, Lennox, and Attendants.

Dun. Is execution done on Cawdor? Are not
Those in commission yet return’d?

Mal. My liege,
They are not yet come back; but I have spoke
With one that saw him die; who did report

That very frankly he confess’d his treasons,
Implor’d your highness’ pardon and set forth
A deep repentance. Nothing in his life
Became him like the leaving it; he died 8
As one that had been studied in his death
To throw away the dearest thing he ow’d,
As ’twere a careless trifle.

Dun. There’s no art
To find the mind’s construction in the face: 12
He was a gentleman on whom I built
An absolute trust.

Enter Macbeth, Banquo, Ross and Angus.

O worthiest cousin! The sin of my ingratitude even now
Was heavy on me. Thou art so far before
That swiftest wing of recompense is slow
To overtake thee; would thou hadst less deserv’d,
That the proportion both of thanks and payment
Might have been mine! only I have left to say,
More is thy due than more than all can pay.

Macb. The service and the loyalty I owe,
In doing it, pays itself. Your highness’ part
Is to receive our duties: and our duties
Are to your throne and state, children and servants;
Which do but what they should, by doing every thing
Safe toward your love and honour.

Dun. Welcome hither:
I have begun to plant thee, and will labour To make thee full of growing. Noble Banquo,
That hast no less deserv’d, nor must be known
No less to have done so, let me infold thee
And hold thee to my heart.

Ban. There if I grow, 32
The harvest is your own.

Dun. My plenteous joys
Wanton in fulness, seek to hide themselves
In drops of sorrow. Sons, kinsmen, thanes,
And you whose places are the nearest, know
We will establish our estate upon
Our eldest, Malcolm, whom we name hereafter
The Prince of Cumberland; which honour must
Not unaccompanied invest him only,
But signs of nobleness, like stars, shall shine
On all deservers. From hence to Inverness,
And bind us further to you.

Macb. The rest is labour, which is not us’d for you:
I’ll be myself the harbinger, and make joyful
The hearing of my wife with your approach;
So, humbly take my leave.

Dun. My worthy Cawdor!
Act I, Sc. IV.

MACBETH

Enter a Messenger.

What is your tidings?

Mess. The king comes here to-night.

Lady M. Thou'rt mad to say it. Is not thy master with him? who, were't so, Would have inform'd for preparation.

Mess. So please you, it is true: our thane is coming;

One of my fellows had the speed of him, Who, almost dead for breath, had scarcely more Than would make up his message.

Lady M. Give him tending;
He brings great news.—[Exit Messenger.] The raven himself is hoarse

That croaks the fatal entrance of Duncan Under my battlements. Come, you spirits That tend on mortal thoughts! unsex me here, And fill me from the crown to the toe top full Of direst cruelty; make thick my blood, Stop up the access and passage to remorse, That no compunctious visits of nature Shake my fell purpose, nor keep peace between The effect and it! Come to my woman's breasts, And take my milk for gall, you murdering ministers,

Wherever in your sightless substances You wait on nature's mischief! Come, thick Night, And pall thee in the dunest smoke of hell, That my keen knife see not the wound it makes, Nor heaven peep through the blanket of the dark,

To cry, 'Hold, hold!'

Enter MACBETH.

Great Glamis! worthy Cawdor! Greater than both, by the all-hail hereafter! Thy letters have transported me beyond This ignorant present, and I feel now The future in the instant.

Macb. My dearest love, Duncan comes here to-night.

Lady M. And when goes hence? Macb. To-morrow, as he purposes.

Lady M. O! never Shall sun that morrow see.

Your face, my thane, is as a book where men May read strange matters. To beguile the time, Look like the time; bear welcome in your eye, Your hand, your tongue: look like the innocent flower,

But be the serpent under 't. He that's coming Must be provided for; and you shall put This night's great business into my dispatch; Which shall to all our nights and days to come Give solely sovereign sway and masternom. Macb. We will speak further.
MACBETH

SCENE VI.—The Same. Before the Castle.

Hautboys and torches. Enter DUNCAN, MALCOLM, DONALDSON, BANQUO, LENNOX, MACDUFF, ROSS, ANGUS, and Attendants.

Dun. This castle hath a pleasant seat; the air
Nimbly and sweetly recommends itself
Unto our gentle senses.

Ban. This guest of summer,
The temple-haunting martlet, does approve
By his lov’d mansionry that the heaven’s breath
Smells wooingly here; no juty, frieze,
Buttress, nor coign of vantage, but this bird
Hath made his pendent bed and procreant
cradle:
Where they most breed and haunt, I have
observed
The air is delicate.

Enter LADY MACBETH.

Dun. See, see, our honour’d hostess! The love that follows us sometime is our trouble,
Which still we thank as love. Herein I teach
you
How you shall bid God ‘eyld us for your
pains,
And thank us for your trouble.

Lady M. All our service,
In every point twice done, and then done
double,
Were poor and single business, to contend
Against those honours deep and broad where with
Your majesty loads our house: for those of
old,
And the late dignities heap’d up to them,
We rest your hermits.

Dun. Where’s the Thane of Cawdor? Weours’d him at the heels, and had a purpose
To be his purveyor; but he rides well,
And his great love, sharp as his spur, hath holf
him
To his home before us. Fair and noble hostess,
We are your guest to-night.

Lady M. Your servants ever
Have theirs, themselves, and what is theirs, incompt,
To make their audit at your highness’ pleasure,
Still to return your own.

Dun. Give me your hand; we love him highly,
And shall continue our graces towards him.
By your leave, hostess.

[Exeunt.

SCENE VII.—The Same. A Room in the Castle.

Hautboys and torches. Enter, and pass over
the stage, a Sewer, and divers Servants with
dishes and service. Then, enter MACBETH.

Macb. If it were done when ’tis done, then
’twere well
It were done quickly; if the assassination
Could trammel up the consequence, and catch
With his suacease success; that but this blow 4
Might be the be-all and the end-all here,
But here, upon this bank and shoal of time,
We’d jump the life to come. But in these cases
We still have judgment here; that we but teach
Bloody instructions, which, being taught, return
To plague the inventor; this even-handed
justice
Commends the ingredients of our poison’d
chalice
To our own lips. He’s here in double trust: 12
First, as I am his kinsman and his subject,
Strong both against the deed; then, as his host,
Who should against his murderer shut the door,
Not bear the knife myself. Besides, this Duncan
Hath borne his faculties so meek, hath been 17
So clear in his great office, that his virtues
Will plead like angels trumpet-tong’d against
The deep damnation of his taking-off;
And pity, like a naked new-born babe,
Striding the blast, or heaven’s cherubin, hors’d
Upon the sightless couriers of the air,
Shall blow the horrid deed in every eye, 24
That tears shall drown the wind. I have no spur
To prick the sides of my intent, but only
Vaulting ambition, which o’er-leaps itself
And falls on the other.—

Enter LADY MACBETH.

Lady M. He has almost supp’d: why have
you left the chamber?

Macb. Hath he ask’d for me?

Lady M. Know you not he has?

Macb. We will proceed no further in this
business:

He hath honour’d me of late; and I have
bought
Golden opinions from all sorts of people,
Which would be worn now in their newest gloss,
Not cast aside so soon.

Lady M. Was the hope drunk,
Wherein you dress’d yourself? hath it slept
since,

And wakes it now, to look so green and pale
At what it did so freely? From this time
Such I account thy love. Art thou afeard
To be the same in thine own act and valour 40
As thou art in desire? Wouldst thou have that
Which thou esteemst the ornament of life,
And live a coward in thine own esteem,
Letting 'I dare not' wait upon 'I would,' 44
Like the poor cat i' the adage?

Macb. Prithhe, peace.
I dare do all that may become a man;
Who dares do more is none.

Lady M. What beast was't, then,
That made you break this enterprise to me? 48
When you durst do it then you were a man;
And, to be more than what you were, you would
Be so much more the man. Nor time nor place
Did then adhere, and yet you would make both:

They have made themselves, and their
fitness now
Dose unmake you. I have given suck, and know
How tender 'tis to love the babe that milks me:
I would, while it was smiling in my face, 56
Have pluck'd my nipple from his boneless gums,
And dash'd the brains out, had I so sworn as
you
Have done to this.

Macb. If we should fail,—

Lady M. We fail!
But screw your courage to the sticking-place, 60
And we'll not fail. When Duncan is asleep,
Where'the the rather shall his day's hard journey
Soundly invite him, his two chamberlains
Will I with wine and wassail so convince
That memory, the warden of the brain,
Shall be a fume, and the receipt of reason
A limbeck only; when in swinish sleep
Their drenched natures lie, as in a death,
What cannot I and I perform upon
The unguarded Duncan? what not put upon
His spongy officers, who shall bear the guilt
Of our great quell?

Macb. Bring forth men-children only; 72
For thy undaunted mettle should compose
Nothing but males. Will it not be receiv'd,
When we have mark'd with blood those sleepy two
Of his own chamber and us'd their very daggers,
That they have done 't?

Lady M. Who dares receive it other,
As we shall make our griefs and clamour roar
Upon his death?

Macb. I am settled, and bend up
Each corporal agent to this terrible feat.
Away, and mock the time with fairest show:
False face must hide what the false heart doth
know.

[Exeunt.]
The handle toward my hand? Come, let me clutch thee;  
I have thee not, and yet I see thee still.  
Art thou not, fatal vision, sensible  
To feeling as to sight? or art thou but  
A dagger of the mind, a false creation,  
Proceeding from the heat-oppressed brain?  
I see thee yet, in form as palpable  
As this which now I draw.

Thou marshall'st me the way that I was going;  
And such an instrument I was to use.  
Mine eyes are made the fools o' the other senses,  
Or else worth all the rest: I see thee still;  
And on thy blade and dudgeon gouts of blood,  
Which was not so before. There's no such thing:  
It is the bloody business which informs  
Thus to mine eyes. Now o'er the one half-world

Nature seems dead, and wicked dreams abuse  
The curtain'd sleep; witchcraft celebrates  
Pale Hecate's offerings; and wither'd murder,  
Alarum'd by his sentinel, the wolf,  
Whose howl's his watch, thus with his stealthy pace,

With Tarquin's ravishing strides, toward his design  
Moves like a ghost. Thou sure and firm-set earth,  
Hear not my steps, which way they walk, for fear  
Thy very stones prate of my whereabout,  
And take the present horror from the time,  
Which now suits with it. Whiles I threat he lives:
Words to the heat of deeds too cold breath gives.

[A bell rings.]
I go, and it is done; the bell invites me.  
Hear it not, Duncan; for it is a knoll  
That summons thee to heaven or to hell.

[Exit.]

SCENE II.—The Same.

Enter Lady Macbeth.

Lady M. That which hath made them drunk hath made me bold;  
What hath quench'd them hath given me fire.  
Hark!

Peace!  
It was the owl that shriek'd, the fatal bellman,  
Which gives the stern'st good-night. He is about it:  
The doors are open, and the surfeited grooms  
Do mock their charge with snores: I have  
'drugg'd their possets,
Lady M. What do you mean? Macb. Still it cried, ‘Sleep no more!’ to all the house: ‘Glamis hath murder’d sleep, and therefore Cawdor Shall sleep no more, Macbeth shall sleep no more!’ Lady M. Who was it that thus cried? Why, worthy thanes, You do unbend your noble strength to think So brainsickly of things. Go get some water, And wash this filthy witness from your hand. Why did you bring these daggers from the place? They must lie there: go carry them, and smear The sleepy grooms with blood. Macb. I’ll go no more: I am afraid to think what I have done; Look on ‘t against I dare not. Lady M. Infirm of purpose! Give me the daggers. The sleeping and the dead Are but as pictures; ’tis the eye of childhood That fears a painted devil. If he do bleed, I’ll gild the faces of the grooms withal; For it must seem their guilt. [Exit. Knocking within. Macb. Whence is that knocking? How is’t with me, when every noise appals me? What hands are here! Hal they pluck out mine eyes. Will all great Neptune’s ocean wash this blood Clean from my hand? No, this my hand will rather The multitudinous seas incarnadine, Making the green one red.

Re-enter Lady Macbeth. Lady M. My hands are of your colour, but I shame To wear a heart so white.—[Knocking within.] I hear a knocking At the south entry; retire we to our chamber; A little water clear us of this dead; How easy is it, thou! Your constancy Hath left you unattended. [Knocking within.] Hark! More knocking, Get on your night-gown, lest occasion call us, And show us to be watchers. Be not lost So poorly in your thoughts. Macb. To know my deed were best not know myself. [Knocking within. Warren] Duncan with thy knocking! I would thou coulds! [Exeunt.]

Scene III.—The Same.

Knocking within. Enter a Porter.

Porter. Here’s a knocking, indeed! If a man were porter of hell-gate he should have old turning the key. [Knocking within.] Knock, knock, knock! Who’s there? I’ the name of Beelzebub? Here’s a farmer that hanged himself on the expectation of plenty: come in time; have napkins enough about you; here you’ll sweat for ’t. [Knocking within.] Knock, knock! Who’s there? I’ the other devil’s name! Faith, here’s an equivocator, that could swear in both the scales against either scale; who committed treason enough for God’s sake, yet could not equivocate to heaven: O! come in, equivocator. [Knocking within.] Knock, knock, knock! Who’s there? Faith, here’s an English tailor come hither for stealing out of a French hose: come in, tailor; here you may roast your goose. [Knocking within.] Knock, knock; never at quiet! What are you? But this place is too cold for hell. I’ll devil-porter it no further: I had thought to have let in some of all professions, that go the primrose way to the everlasting bonfire. [Knocking within.] Anon, anon! I pray you, remember the porter. [Opens the gate.]

Enter Macduff and Lennox.

Macb. Was it so late, friend, ere you went to bed, That you do lie so late? Port. Faith, sir, we were carousing till the second cock; and drink, sir, is a great provoker of three things. Macb. What three things does drink especially provoke? Port. Marry, sir, nose-painting, sleep, and urine. Lechery, sir, it provokes, and unpro- voces; it provokes the desire, but it takes away the performance. Therefore much drink may be said to be an equivocator with lechery; it makes him, and it mares him; it sets him on, and it take him off; it persuades him, and dis- heartens him; makes him stand to; and not stand to; in conclusion, equivocates him in a sleep, and giving him the lie, leaves him. Macb. I believe drink gave thee the lie last night. Port. That it did, sir, ’tis very true; but I rogued him for his lie; and, I think, being too strong for him, though he took up my legs sometime, yet I made a shift to cast him. Macb. Is thy master stirring?
MACBETH

Enter Macbeth.
Our knocking has awak’d him; here he comes.
Len. Good morrow, noble sir.
Macb. Good morrow, both.
Macb. Is the king stirring, worthy thane?
Macb. Not yet.
Macb. He did command me to call timely on him:
I have almost slipp’d the hour.
Macb. I’ll bring you to him.
Macb. I know this is a joyful trouble to you;
But yet ’tis one.
Macb. The labour we delight in physics pain.
This is the door.
Macb. I’ll make so bold to call, 57
For ’tis my limited service. [Exit.
Len. Goes the king hence to-day?
Macb. He does: he did appoint so.
Len. The night has been unruly: where we lay,
Ourchimneys were blown down; and, as they say,
Lamentings heard i’ the air; strange screams of death,
And prophesying with accents terrible
Of dire combustion and confus’d events
New hatch’d to the woeful time. The obscure
bird
Clamour’d the livelong night; some say the earth
Was feverous and did shake.
Macb. ’Twas a rough night.
Len. My young remembrance cannot parallel
A fellow to it.

Re-enter Maccbeth.
Macb. O horror! horror! horror! Tongue
nor heart
Cannot conceive nor name thee!
Macb. What’s the matter?
Len. Confusion now hath made his master-
piece!
Most sacrilegious murder hath broke ope
The Lord’s anointed temple, and stole thence
The life o’ the building!
Macb. What is ’t you say? the life?
Len. ’Mean you his majesty?
Macb. Approach the chamber, and destroy
your sight
With a new Gorgon: do not bid me speak;
See, and then speak yourselves.
[Exeunt Macbeth and Lennox.

As from your graves rise up, and walk like
sprites,
To countenance this horror! Ring the bell.
[Bell rings.

Enter Lady Macbeth.
Lady M. What’s the business,
That such a hideous trumpet calls to parley
The sleepers of the house? speak, speak!
Macb. O gentle lady!
’Tis not for you to hear what I can speak;
The repetition in a woman’s ear
Would murder as it fell.

Enter Banquo.
O Banquo! Banquo!
Our royal master’s murder’d!
Lady M. Woe, alas!
What! in our house?
Ban. Too cruel any where.
Dear Duff, I prithee, contradict thyself,
And say it is not so.

Re-enter Macbeth and Lennox.
Macb. Had I but died an hour before this
chance
I had liv’d a blessed time; for, from this instant,
There’s nothing serious in mortality,
All is but toys; renown and grace is dead,
The wine of life is drawn, and the mere lees
Is left this vault to brag of.

Enter Malcolm and Donalbain.
Don. What is amiss?
Macb. You are, and do not know ’t:
The spring, the head, the fountain of your blood
Is stopp’d; the very source of it is stopp’d.
Macb. Your royal father’s murder’d.
Mat. O! by whom?
Len. Those of his chamber, as it seem’d, had
done ’t:
Their hands and faces were all badg’d with blood;
So were their daggers, which unwip’d we found
Upon their pillows: they star’d, and were dis-
tracted; no man’s life
Was to be trusted with them.
Macb. O! I yet I do repent of me my fury,
That I did kill them.
Macb. Wherefore did you so?
Macb. Who can be wise, amaz’d, temperate
and furious,
Loyal and neutral, in a moment? No man:
The expedition of my violent love
Outran the pauser, reason. Here lay Duncan,
His silver skin lac’d with his golden blood;
And his gash’d stabs look’d like a breach in
nature
For ruin's wasteful entrance: there, the murderers,
Sleep'd in the colours of their trade, their daggers
Unmannerly breech'd with gore: who could refrain,
That had a heart to love, and in that heart 124
Courage to make's love known?
Lady M. Help me hence, ho!
Mact. Look to the lady.
Mal. [Aside to DONALBAIN.] Why do we hold our tongues,
That most may claim this argument for ours:
Don. [Aside to MALCOLM.] What should be spoken 128
Here where our fate, hid in an auger-hole,
May rush and seize us? Let's away: our tears
Are not yet brew'd.
Mal. [Aside to DONALBAIN.] Nor our strong sorrow
Upon the foot of motion.
Ban. Look to the lady; 132
[LADY MACBETH is carried out.
And when we have our naked frailties hid,
That suffer in exposure, let us meet,
And question this most bloody piece of work,
To know it further. Fears and scruples shake us:
In the great hand of God I stand, and hence 137
Against the undivulg'd pretence I fight
Of treasonous malice.
Mact. And so do I. 139
All. So all.
Mal. Let's briefly put on manly readiness,
And meet in the hall together.
All. Well contented. 141
[Exeunt all but MALCOLM and DONALBAIN.
Mal. What will you do? Let's not consort with them:
To show an unfelt sorrow is an office
Which the false man does easily. I'll to England.
Don. To Ireland. I; our separated fortune
Shall keep us both the safer: where we are,
There's daggers in men's smiles: the near in blood,
The nearer bloody.
Mal. This murderous shaft that's shot
Hath not yet lighted, and our safest way 149
Is to avoid the aim: therefore, to horse;
And let us not be dainty of leave-taking;
But shift away: there's warrant in that theft
Which steals itself when there's no mercy left.
[Exeunt.

SCENE IV.—The Same. Without the Castle.

Enter ROSS and an Old Man.

Old Man. Threescore and ten I can remember well;

Within the volume of which time I have seen
Hours dreadful and things strange, but this sore
Hath trifled former knowings.
Ross. Ah! good father, 4
Thou seest, the heavens, as troubled with man's act,
Threaten his bloody stage: by the clock 'tis day,
And yet dark night strangles the travelling lamp.
Is 't night's predominance, or doth the shame,
That darkness does the face of earth entomb, 9
When living light should kiss it?
Old Man. 'Tis unnatural,
Even like the deed that's done. On Tuesday last,
A falcon, towering in her pride of place, 12
Was by a mousing owl hawk'd at and kill'd.
Ross. And Duncan's horses,—a thing most strange and certain,—
Beauteous and swift, the minions of their race,
Turn'd wild in nature, broke their stalls, flung out,
Contending 'gainst obedience, as they would
Make war with mankind.
Old Man. 'Tis said they eat each other.
Ross. They did so; to the amazement of mine eyes,
That look'd upon 't. Here comes the good
Macduff.

Enter MACDUFF.
How goes the world, sir, now?
Macd. Why, see you not? 16
Ross. Is 't known who did this more than bloody deed?
Macd. Those that Macbeth hath slain.
Ross. Alas, the day!
What good could they pretend?
Macd. They were suborn'd. 24
Malcolm and Donalbain, the king's two sons,
Are stol'n away and fled, which puts upon them
Suspicion of the deed.
Ross. 'Gainst nature still!
Thriftless ambition, that will ravin up 28
Thine own life's means! Then 'tis most like
The sovereignty will fall upon Macbeth.
Macd. He is already nam'd, and gone to
Scane
To be invested.
Ross. Where is Duncan's body? 32
Macd. Carried to Colmaskill;
The sacred storehouse of his predecessors
And guardian of their bones.
Ross. Will you to Scane?
Macd. No, cousin, I'll to Fife.
Ross. Well, I will thither. 36
ACT III.

SCENE I.—Forres. A Room in the Palace.

Enter Banquo.

Ban. Thou hast it now: King, Cawdor, Glamis, all,
As the weird women promis'd; and, I fear,
Thou play'st most foully for 't; yet it was said
It should not stand in thy posterity,
But that myself should be the root and father
Of many kings. If there come truth from them,—
As upon thee, Macbeth, their speeches shine,—
Why, by the verities on thee made good,
May they not be my oracles as well,
And set me up in hope? But, hush! no more.

Sennet sounded. Enter Macbeth, as king;
Lady Macbeth, as queen; Lennox, Ross,
Lords, Ladies, and Attendants.

Macb. Here's our chief guest.
Lady M. If he had been forgotten
It had been as a gap in our great feast,
And all thing unbecoming.

Macb. To-night we hold a solemn supper, sir,
And I'll request your presence.

Ban. Let your highness
Command upon me; to the which my duties
Are with a most indissoluble tie
For ever knit.

Macb. Ride you this afternoon?
Ban. Ay, my good lord.

Macb. We should have else desir'd your good advice—
Which still hath been both grave and prosperous—
In this day's council; but we'll take to-morrow.

Is 't far you ride?

Ban. As far, my lord, as will fill up the time
'Twixt this and supper; go not my horse the better,
I must become a borrower of the night
For a dark hour or twain.

Macb. Fail not our feast.

Ban. My lord, I will not.

Macb. We hear our bloody cousins are bestow'd
In England and in Ireland, not confessing

Their cruel parricide, filling their hearers
With strange invention; but of that to-morrow,
When therewithal we shall have cause of state
Craving us jointly. Hie you to horse; adieu,
Till you return at night. Goes Fleance with you?

Ban. Ay, my good lord: our time does call
upon's.

Macb. I wish your horses swift and sure of foot;
And so I do commend you to their backs.
Farewell. [Exit Banquo.] Let every man be master of his time
Till seven at night; to make society
The sweeter welcome, we will keep ourself
Till supper-time alone; while then, God be with you!

[Exeunt all but Macbeth and an Attendant.

Sirrah, a word with you. Attend those men Our pleasure?

Alien. They are, my lord, without the palace gate.

Macb. Bring them before us. [Exit Attendant.] To be thus is nothing;
But to be safely thus. Our fears in Banquo
Stick deep, and in his royalty of nature
Reigns that which would be fear'd: 'tis much he dares,
And, to that dauntless temper of his mind,
He hath a wisdom that doth guide his valour
To act in safety. There is none but he
Whose being I do fear; and under him
My genius is rebuk'd, as it is said
Mark Antony's was by Caesar. He chid the sisters
When first they put the name of king upon me,
And bade them speak to him; then, prophet-like,
They hail'd him father to a line of kings.

Upon my head they plac'd a fruitless crown,
And put a barren sceptre in my gripe,
Thence to be wrench'd with an unineal hand,
No son of mine succeeding. If 't be so,
For Banquo's issue have I fil'd my mind;
For them the gracious Duncan have I murder'd;
Put rancours in the vessel of my peace
Only for them; and mine eternal jewel
Given to the common enemy of man,
To make them kings, the seed of Banquo kings!
Rather than so, come fate into the list,
And champion me to the utterance! Who's there?

Re-enter Attendant, with two Murderers.

Now go to the door, and stay there till we call.

[Exit Attendant.

Was it not yesterday we spoke together?

First Mur. It was, so please your highness.

Macb. Well then, now
Have you consider'd of my speeches? Know
Act III, Sc. I.

MACBETH

That it was he in the times past which held you
So under fortune, which you thought had been
Our innocent self. This I made good to you
In our last conference, pass'd in probation with
you,
80
How you were borne in hand, how cross'd, the
instruments,
Who wrought with them, and all things else
that might
To half a soul and to a notion craz'd
Say, 'Thus did Banquo.'

First Mur. You made it known to us. 84
Macb. I did so; and went further, which is
now
Our point of second meeting. Do you find
Your patience so predominant in your nature
That you can let this go? Are you so gospel'd
To pray for this good man and for his issue, 89
Whose heavy hand hath bow'd you to the grave
And beggar'd yours for ever?

First Mur. We are men, my liege.
Macb. Ay, in the catalogue ye go for men; 92
As hounds and greyhounds, mongrels, spaniels,
curs,
Shoughs, water-rugs, and demi-wolves, are cleft
All by the name of dogs: the val'd file
Distinguishes the swift, the slow, the subtle, 96
The housekeeper, the hunter, every one
According to the gift which bounteous nature
Hath in him clos'd; whereby he does receive
Particular addition, from the bill
That writes them all alike: and so of men.
Now, if you have a station in the file,
Not 't he worst rank of manhood, say it;
And I will put that business in your bosoms, 104
Whose execution takes your enemy off,
Grapples you to the heart and love of us,
Who wear our health but sickly in his life,
Which in his death were perfect.

Sec. Mur. I am one, my liege, 108
Whom the vile blows and buffets of the world
Have so incensed that I am reckless what
I do to spite the world.

First Mur. And I another,
So weary with disasters, tugg'd with fortune, 112
That I would set my life on any chance,
To mend it or be rid on 't.
Macb. Both of you
Know Banquo was your enemy.

Sec. Mur. True, my lord.
Macb. So is he mine; and in such bloody
distance
That every minute of his being thrusts
Against my near'st of life: and though I could
With bare-fac'd powers sweep him from my sight
And bid my will avouch it, yet I must not, 120
For certain friends that are both his and mine,
Whose loves I may not drop, but wail his fall
Whom I myself struck down; and thence it is
That I to your assistance do make love,
124
Making the business from the common eye
For sundry weighty reasons.

Sec. Mur. We shall, my lord,
Perform what you command us.

First Mur. Though our lives—
Macb. Your spirits shine through you. With
in this hour at most
128
I will advise you where to plant yourselves,
Acquaint you with the perfect spy o' the time,
The moment on 't; for 't must be done to-night,
And something from the palace; always thought
That I require a clearness: and with him— 133
To leave no rubs nor bitches in the work—
Fleance his son, that keeps him company,
Whose absence is no less material to me 136
Than is his father's, must embrace the fate
Of that dark hour. Resolve yourselves apart;
I'll come to you anon.

Sec. Mur. We are resolv'd, my lord.
Macb. I'll call upon you straight: abide
within. [Exeunt Murderers.
It is concluded: Banquo, thy soul's flight, 141
If it find heaven, must find it out to-night. [Exit.

SCENE II.—The Same. Another Room
in the Palace.

Enter LADY MACBETH and a Servant.

Lady M. Is Banquo gone from court?
Serv. Ay, madam, but returns again to-night.
Lady M. Say so to the king, I would attend his
leisure
For a few words.
Serv. Madam, I will. [Exit.

Lady M. Nought's had, all's spent, 4
Where our desire is got without content:
'Tis safer to be that which we destroy
Than by destruction dwell in doubtful joy.

Enter MACBETH.

How now, my lord! why do you keep alone, 8
Of sorriest fancies your companions making,
Using those thoughts which should indeed have
died
With them they think on? Things without all
remedy
Should be without regard: what's done is done.
Macb. We have scotched the snake, not kill'd
it: 13
She'll close and be herself, whilst our poor
malice
Remains in danger of her former tooth.
But let the frame of things disjoint, both the
worlds suffer,
Ere we will eat our meal in fear, and sleep
In the affiction of these terrible dreams
That shake us nightly. Better be with the dead,
Whom we, to gain our peace, have sent to peace,
Than on the torture of the mind to lie.
In restless ecstasy. Duncan is in his grave;
After life’s fitful fever he sleeps well;
Treason has done his worst: nor steel, nor poison,
Malice domestic, foreign levy, nothing
Can touch him further.

Lady M. Come on;
Gentle my lord, sleek o’er your rugged looks;
Be bright and jovial among your guests to-night.

Macb. So shall I, love; and so, I pray, be you.
Let your remembrance apply to Banquo;
Present him eminence, both with eye and tongue:
Unsafe the while, that we
Must lose our honours in these flattering streams,
And make our faces vizards to our hearts,
Disguising what they are.

Lady M. You must leave this.

Macb. O! full of scorpions is my mind, dear wife;
Thou know’st that Banquo and his Fleance lives.

Lady M. But in them nature’s copy’s not eternally.

Macb. There’s comfort yet; they are assailable:
Then be thou jocund. Ere the bat hath flown
His cloister’d flight, ere, to black Hecate’s summons
The shard-borne beetle with his drowsy hums
Hath rung night’s yawning peal, there shall be done
A deed of dreadful note.

Lady M. What’s to be done? 44

Macb. Be innocent of the knowledge, dearest chuck,
Till thou applaud the deed. Come, seeing night,
Scarf up the tender eye of pitiful day,
And with thy bloody and invisible hand
Cancel and tear to pieces that great bond
Which keeps me pale! Light thickens, and the crow
Makes wing to the rocky wood;
Good things of day begin to droop and drowse,
While night’s black agents to their preys do rouse.

Thou marv’llest at my words: but hold thee still:
Things bad begun make strong themselves by ill:
So, prithee, go with me.

[Exeunt.

SCENE III —The Same. A Park, with a Road leading to the Palace.

Enter three Murderers.

First Mur. But who did bid thee join with us?
Third Mur. Macbeth.
Sec. Mur. He needs not our mistrust, since he delivers
Our offices and what we have to do
To the direction just.

First Mur. Then stand with us. The west yet glimmers with some streaks of day:
Now spurs the lated traveller apace
To gain the timely inn, and near approaches
The subject of our watch.

Sec. Mur. Then ’tis he: the rest
That are within the note of expectation
Already are in the court.

First Mur. His horses go about.
Third Mur. Almost a mile; but he does usually
So all men do, from hence to the palace gate
Make it their walk.

Sec. Mur. A light, a light! ’Tis he.
First Mur. Stand to ’t.

Enter BANQUO and FLEANCE, with a torch.

Ban. It will be rain to-night.

First Mur. Let it come down. [They set upon BANQUO.

Ban. O, treachery! Fly, good Fleance, fly,
fly, fly!

Thou mayst revenge. O slave!

[Dies. FLEANCE escapes.

Third Mur. Who did strike out the light?

First Mur. Was ’t not the way?
Third Mur. There’s but one down; the son
is fled.

Sec. Mur. We have lost

Best half of our affair.

First Mur. Well, let’s away, and say how much is done.

[Exeunt.

SCENE IV.—The Same. A Room of State in the Palace.

A Banquet prepared. Enter MACBETH, LADY MACBETH, ROSS, LENNOX, Lords, and Attendants.

Macb. You know your own degrees; sit down: at first and last,
The hearty welcome.

Lords. Thanks to your majesty.
Macb. Ourself will mingle with society.
Acr III, Sc. IV.  

Macbeth. Here had we now our country's honour roof'd,
Were the grac'd person of our Banquo present;
Who may I rather challenge for unkindness
Than pity for miscarriage!
Ross. His absence, sir,
Lays blame upon his promise. Please 't your highness
To grace us with your royal company.
Macb. The table's full.
Len. Here is a place reserv'd, sir.
Macb. Where?
Len. Here, my good lord. What is 't that moves your highness?
Lords. What, my good lord?
Macb. Thou canst not say I did it: never shake
Thy gory locks at me.
Ross. Gentlemen, rise; his highness is not well.
Lady M. Sit, worthy friends: my lord is often thus,
And hath been from his youth: pray you, keep
seat;
The fit is momentary; upon a thought
He will again be well. If much you note him
You shall offend him and extend his passion:
Feed and regard him not. Are you a man?
Macb. Ay, and a bold one, that dare look on
that
Which might appal the devil.
Lady M. O proper stuff!
This is the very painting of your fear;
This is the air-drawn dagger which, you said,
Led you to Duncan. O! these flaws and starts—
Impostors to true fear—would well become
A woman's story at a winter's fire,
Authoriz'd by her grandam. Shame itself!
Why do you make such faces? When all's done
You look but on a stool.
Macb. Prithie, see there! behold! look! lo!
how say you?
Why, what care I? If thou canst nod, speak too.
If chancel-houses and our graves must send
Those that we bury back, our monuments
Shall be the maws of kites. [Ghost disappears.
Lady M. What! quite unmann'd in folly?
Macb. If I stand here, I saw him.
Lady M. Fie, for shame!
Macb. Blood hath been shed ere now, i' the
olden time,
Ere human statute purg'd the gentle weal; 76
Ay, and since too, murders have been perform'd
Too terrible for the ear: the times have been,
That, when the brains were out, the man would
die,
And there an end; but now they rise again, so
With twenty mortal murders on their crowns,
And push us from our stools: this is more strange
Than such a murder is.

Lady M. My worthy lord,
Your noble friends do lack you.

Macb. I do forget. 
Do not muse at me, my most worthy friends;
I have a strange infirmity, which is nothing
To those that know me. Come, love and health to all;
Then, I'll sit down. Give me some wine; fill full.
I drink to the general joy of the whole table, 93
And to our dear friend Banquo, whom we miss;
Would he were here to all, and him, we thirst,
And all to all.

Lords. Our duties, and the pledge. 

Re-enter Ghost.

Macb. Avaunt! and quit my sight! Let the earth hide thee!
Thy bones are marrowless, thy blood is cold;
Thou hast no speculation in those eyes
Which thou dost glare with.

Lady M. Think of this, good peers,
But as a thing of custom: 'tis no other;
Only it spoils the pleasure of the time.

Macb. What man dare, I dare:
Approach thou like the rugged Russian bear,
The arm'd rhinoceros, or the Hyrcan tiger; 101
Take any shape but that, and my firm nerves
Shall never tremble: or be alive again,
And dare me to the desert with thy sword; 104
If trembling I inhabit then, protest me
The baby of a girl. Hence, horrible shadow!
Unreal mockery, hence! [Ghost vanishes.

Lady M. Why, so; being gone,
I am a man again. Pray you, sit still. 108

Lady M. You have displac'd the mirth,
 broke the good meeting,
With most admir'd disorder.

Macb. Can such things be
And overcome us like a summer's cloud,
Without our special wonder? You make me strange
Even to the disposition that I owe,
When now I think you can behold such sights,
And keep the natural ruby of your cheeks,
When mine are blanch'd with fear.

Ross. What sights, my lord? 116

Lady M. I pray you, speak not; he grows worse and worse;
Question enrages him. At once, good-night:
Stand not upon the order of your going;
But go at once.

Lrn. Good-night; and better health

Attend his majesty!

Lady M. A kind good-night to all!

[Exeunt Lords and Attendants.

Macb. It will have blood, they say; blood will have blood:
Stones have been known to move and trees to speak;
Augurs and understood relations have 120
By maggot-pies and choughs and rooks brought forth
The secret'st man of blood. What is the night?

Lady M. Almost at odds with morning, which is which.

Macb. How sayst thou, that Macduff denies his person 126
At our great bidding?

Lady M. Did you send to him, sir?
Macb. I hear it by the way; but I will send.
There's not a one of them but in his house
I keep a servant fee'd. I will to-morrow— 132
And betimes I will—to the weird sisters:
More shall they speak; for now I am bent to know,
By the worst means, the worst. For mine own good
All causes shall give way: I am in blood 136
Stepp'd in so far, that, should I wade no more,
Returning were as tedious as go o'er,
Strange things I have in head that will to hand,
Which must be acted ere they may be soann'd.

Lady M. You lack the season of all natures, sleep.

Macb. Come, we'll to sleep. My strange and self-abuse
Is the initiate fear that wants hard use:
We are yet but young in deed. [Exeunt.

SCENE V.—A Heath.

Thunder. Enter the three Witches, meeting

HECATE.

First Witch. Why, how now, Hecate! you look angrily.

Hec. Have I not reason, beldams as you are, 4
Saucy and overbold? How did you dare
To trade and traffic with Macbeth
In riddles and affairs of death;
And I, the mistress of your charms,
The close contriver of all harms,
Was never call'd to bear my part,
Or show the glory of our art?

Second Witch. And, which is worse, all you have done
Hath been but for a wayward son,
Spiteful and wrathful; who, as others do, 12
Loves for his own ends, not for you.

Third Witch. But make amends now: get you gone,
And at the pit of Acheron.
Meet me 't the morning; thither he
Will come to know his destiny:
Your vessels and your spells provide,
Your charms and every thing beside.
I am for the air; this night I'll spend
Unto a dismal and a fatal end:
Great business must be wrought ere noon:
Upon the corner of the moon.
There hangs a vaporous drop profound;
I'll catch it ere it come to ground:
And that distill'd by magic sleights
Shall raise such artificial sprites
As by the strength of their illusion
Shall draw him on to his confusion:
He shall spurn fate, scorn death, and bear
His hopes 'bove wisdom, grace, and fear;
And you all know security
Is mortals' chiefest enemy.

Song within, 'Come away, come away,' &c.
Hark! I am call'd; my little spirit, see,
Sits in a foggy cloud, and stays for me. [Exit.
First Witch. Come, let's make haste; she'll soon be back again.

SCENE VI.—Forres. A Room in the Palace.

Enter Lennox and another Lord.
Len. My former speeches have but hit your thoughts,
Which can interpret further: only, I say,
Things have been strangely borne. The gracious Duncan
Was pitied of Macbeth; marry, he was dead: 4
And the right-valiant Banquo walk'd too late;
Whom, you may say, if 't please you, Fleance kill'd,
For Fleance fled: men must not walk too late.
Whose want the thought how monstrous 8
It was for Malcolm and for Donalbain
To kill their gracious father? damned fact!
How it did grieve Macbeth! did he not straight
In pious rage the two delinquents tear,
That were the slaves of drink and thralls of sleep?
Was not that nobly done? Ay, and wisely too;
For 'twould have anger'd any heart alive
To hear the men deny 't. So that, I say,
He has borne all things well; and I do think
That, had he Duncan's sons under his key,—
As, an't please heaven, he shall not,—they
should find
What 'twere to kill a father; so should Fleance.
But, peace! for from broad words, and 'cause
he fail'd.
His presence at the tyrant's feast, I hear,
Macduff lives in disgrace. Sir, can you tell
Where he bestows himself?

Lord. The son of Duncan, 24
From whom this tyrant holds the due of birth,
Lives in the English court, and is receiv'd
Of the most pious Edward with such grace
That the malevolence of fortune nothing 28
Takes from his high respect. Thither Macduff
Is gone to pray the holy king, upon his aid
To wake Northumberland and war-like Siward:
That, by the help of these—with him above 32
To ratify the work—we may again
Give to our tables meat, sleep to our nights,
Free from our feasts and banquets bloody knives,
Do faithful homage and receive free honours;
All which we pine for now. And this report
Hath so exasperate the king that he
Prepares for some attempt at war.

Len. Sent he to Macduff?
Lord. He did: and with an absolute, 'Sir,
not I,' 40
The cloudy messenger turns me his back,
And hums, as who should say, 'You'll rue the time
That clogs me with this answer.'

Len. And that well might
Advise him to a caution to hold what distance
His wisdom can provide. Some holy angel
Fly to the court of England and unfold
His message ere he come, that a swift blessing
May soon return to this our suffering country
Under a hand accrues'd!

Lord. I'll send my prayers with him!

[Exeunt.

ACT IV.

SCENE I.—A Cavern. In the middle, a boiling Cauldron.

Thunder. Enter the three Witches.
First Witch. Thrice the brinded cat hath mew'd.
Sec. Witch. Thrice and once the hedge-pig whin'd.
Third Witch. Harper cries: 'Tis time, 'tis time.

First Witch. Round about the cauldron go, 4
In the poison'd entrails throw,
Toad, that under cold stone
Days and nights hast thirty-one
Sweller'd venom sleeping got,
Boil thou first 't the charmed pot.

All. Double, double toil and trouble;
Fire burn and cauldron bubble.

Sec. Witch. Fillet of a fenny snake,
In the cauldron boil and bake;
Eye of newt, and toe of frog,
Wool of bat, and tongue of dog,
Adder's fork, and blind-worm's sting, 16
Lizard's leg, and howlet's wing,
For a charm of powerful trouble,
Like a hell-broth boil and bubble.
All. Double, double toil and trouble; 20
Fire burn and cauldron bubble.
Third Witch. Scale of dragon, tooth of wolf,
Witches' mummy, maw and gulf
Of the ravin'd salt-sea shark, 24
Root of hemlock digg'd i' the dark,
Liver of blaspheming Jew,
Gall of goat, and slips of yew
Sliver'd in the moon’s eclipse,
Nose of Turk, and Tartar’s lips,
Finger of birth-strangled babe
Ditch-deliver'd by a drab,
Make the gravel thick and slate:
Add thereto a tiger’s chauldon,
For the ingredients of our cauldron.
All. Double, double toil and trouble; 32
Fire burn and cauldron bubble.
Sec. Witch. Cool it with a baboon’s blood,
Then the charm is firm and good.

Enter Hecate.

Hec. O! well done! I command your pains,
And every one shall share i' the gains. 40
And now about the cauldron sing;
Like elves and fairies in a ring,
Enchanting all that you put in.
[Music and a song, 'Black Spirits,' &c.
Sec. Witch. By the pricking of my thumbs, 44
Something wicked this way comes.
Open, locks,
Whoever knocks.

Enter Macbeth.

Macb. How now, you secret, black, and midnight hags! 48
What is 't you do?
All. A deed without a name.
Macb. I conjure you, by that which you profess,—
H owse'er you come to know it,—answer me:
Though you untie the winds and let them fight 52
Against the churches; though the yesty waves
Confound and swallow navigation up;
Though bladed corn be lodged and trees blown down;
Though castles topple on their warders’ heads;
Though palaces and pyramids do slope
Their heads to their foundations; though the treasure
Of Nature's germens tumble all together,
Even till destruction sicken; answer me 60
To what I ask you.

First Witch. Speak.
Sec. Witch. Demand.
Third Witch. We'll answer.
First Witch. Say if thou'dst rather hear it from our mouths,
Or from our masters?
Macb. Call 'em: let me see 'em.
First Witch. Pour in sow's blood, that hath eaten
Her nine farrow; grease, that's sweteen
From the murderer's gibbet throw
Into the flame.
All. Come, high or low;
Thyself and office deftly show. 68

Thunder. First Apparition of an armed Head.
Macb. Tell me, thou unknown power,—
First Witch. He knows thy thought:
Hear his speech, but say thou nought.
First App. Macbeth! Macbeth! Macbeth! beware Macduff;
Beware the Thane of Fife. Dismiss me. Enough. 73
[Descends.
Macb. What' e'er thou art, for thy good
cautious thanks;
Thou hast harp'd my fear aright. But one
word more,—
First Witch. He will not be commanded:
here's another,
More potent than the first. 76

Thunder. Second Apparition, a bloody Child.
Sec. App. Macbeth! Macbeth! Macbeth!—
Macb. Had I three ears, I'd hear thee.
Sec. App. Be bloody, bold, and resolute;
Laugh to scorn
The power of man, for none of woman born 80
Shall harm Macbeth. [Descends.
Macb. Then live, Macduff; what need I fear
of thee?
But yet I'll make assurance double sure,
And take a bond of fate: thou shalt not live; 84
That I may tell pale-hearted fear it lies,
And sleep in spite of thunder.

Thunder. Third Apparition, a Child crowned,
with a tree in his hand.

What is this,
That rises like the issue of a king,
And wears upon his baby brow the round 88
And top of sovereignty?
All. Listen, but speak not to 't.
Third App. Be lion-mettled, proud, and take
no care
Who chafes, who frets, or where conspirers are;
Macbeth shall never vanquish'd be until

995
Great Birnam wood to high Dunsinane hill
Shall come against him. [Descends.]

Macb. That will never be:
Who can impress the forest, bid the tree
Unfix his earth-bound root? Sweet bodements!
good!
Rebellion’s head, rise never till the wood
Of Birnam rise, and our high-plac’d Macbeth
Shall live the lease of nature, pay his breath
To time and mortal custom. Yet my heart
100 Throbs to know one thing: tell me—if your art
Can tell so much,—shall Banquo’s issue ever
Reign in this kingdom?

All. Seek to know no more.

Macb. I will be satisfied: deny me this, 104
And an eternal curse fall on you! Let me know,
Why sinks that cauldron? and what noise is
this? [Hautboys.

First Witch. Show!

Sec. Witch. Show!

Third Witch. Show!

All. Show his eyes, and grieve his heart;
Come like shadows, so depart.

A show of Eight Kings; the last with a glass in
his hand: Banquo’s Ghost following.

Macb. Thou art too like the spirit of Banquo;
down!

Thy crown does sear mine eyeballs: and thy hair,
Thou other gold-bound brow, is like the first:
A third is like the former. Filthy bags!
Why do you show me this? A fourth! Start,
eyes!

What! will the line stretch out to the crack of
doom?
Another yet? A seventh! I’ll see no more:
And yet the eighth appears, who bears a glass
Which shows me many more; and some I see
That two-fold balls and triple sceptres carry.
121 Horrible sight! Now, I see, ’tis true;
For the blood-bolter’d Banquo smiles upon me,
And points at them for his. [Apparitions vanish.

What! is this so? 124

First Witch. Ay, sir, all this is so: but why
Stands Macbeth thus amazedly?
Come, sisters, cheer we up his sprites,
And show the best of our delights.
128 I’ll charm the air to give a sound,
While you perform your antic round,
That this great king may kindly say,
Our duties did his welcome pay.

[Music. The Witches dance, and then

vanish with Hecate.

Macb. Where are they? Gone? Let this
penurious hour
Stand eye-assured in the calendar!
Come in, without there!

Enter Lennox.

Len. What’s your Grace’s will?

Macb. Saw you the weird sisters?

Len. No, my lord. 136

Macb. Came they not by you?

Len. No indeed, my lord.

Macb. Infected be the air whereon they ride,
And damn’d all those that trust them! I did
hear
The galloping of horse: who was ’t came by? 140
Len. ’Tis two or three, my lord, that bring
you word
Macduff is fled to England.

Macb. Fled to England! 144

Len. Ay, my good lord.

Macb. Time, thou anticipat’st my dread ex-
plots;

The flighty purpose never is o’ertook
Unless the deed go with it; from this moment
The very firstlings of my heart shall be
The firstlings of my hand. And even now, 148
To crown my thoughts with acts, be it thought
and done:
The castle of Macduff I will surprise;
Seize upon Fife; give to the edge of the sword
His wife, his babes, and all unfortunate souls 152
That trace him in his line. No boasting like a
fool;

This deed I’ll do, before this purpose cool:
But no more sights! Where are these gentlemen?
Come, bring me where they are. [Exeunt.

SCENE II.—Fife. MACDUFF’S Castle.

Enter Lady Macduff, her Son, and Ross.

L. Macd. What had he done to make him
fly the land?

Ross. You must have patience, madam.

L. Macd. He had none.

His flight was madness: when our actions do
not,

Our fears do make us traitors.

Ross. You know not 4

Whether it was his wisdom or his fear.

L. Macd. Wisdom! to leave his wife, to leave
his babes,

His mansion and his titles in a place
From whence himself does fly? He loves us
not;
8 He wants the natural touch; for the poor
wren,

The most diminutive of birds, will fight—
Her young ones in her nest—against the owl.

All is the fear and nothing is the love;
As little is the wisdom, where the flight

So runs against all reason.

Ross. My dearest cow,
MACBETH

Act IV, Sc. III.

I pray you, school yourself: but, for your husband,
He is noble, wise, judicious, and best knows
The fits o' the season. I dare not speak much further:
But cruel are the times, when we are traitors
And do not know ourselves, when we hold rumour
From what we fear, yet know not what we fear,
But float upon a wild and violent sea:
Each way and move. I take my leave of you:
Shall not be long but I'll be here again.
Things at the worst will cease, or else climb upward.
To what they were before. My pretty cousin,
Blessing upon you!

L. Macd. Father'd he is, and yet he's fatherless.

Ross. I am so much a fool, should I stay longer,
It would be my disgrace, and your discomfort:
I take my leave at once.

[Exit. L. Macd. Sirrah, your father's dead:
And what will you do now? How will you live?
Son. As birds do, mother.
L. Macd. What! With worms and flies?
Son. With what I get, I mean; and so do they.
L. Macd. Poor bird! thou'dst never fear the net nor lime,
The pit-fall nor the gin.
Son. Why should I, mother? Poor birds they are not set for.
My father is not dead, for all your saying.
L. Macd. Yes, he is dead: how wilt thou do for a father?
Son. Nay, how will you do for a husband?
L. Macd. Why, I can buy me twenty at any market.
Son. Then you'll buy 'em to sell again.
L. Macd. Thou speakest with all thy wit; and yet, 't faith,
With wit enough for thee.
Son. Was my father a traitor, mother?
L. Macd. Ay, that he was.
Son. What is a traitor?
L. Macd. Why, one that swears and lies.
Son. And be all traitors that do so?
L. Macd. Every one that does so is a traitor,
And must be hanged.
Son. And must they all be hanged that swear
and lie?
L. Macd. Every one.
Son. Who must hang them?
L. Macd. Why, the honest men.
Son. Then the liars and swearers are fools,
for there are liars and swearers enow to beat the honest men, and hang up them.

L. Macd. Now God help thee, poor monkey!
But how wilt thou do for a father?
Son. If he were dead, you'd weep for him: if
you would not, it were a good sign that I should
quickly have a new father.

L. Macd. Poor prattler, how thou talk'st!

Enter a Messenger.

Mess. Bless you, fair dame! I am not to you known,
Though in your state of honour I am perfect. I doubt
some danger does approach you nearly:
If you will take a homely man's advice,
Be not found here; hence, with your little ones.
To fright you thus, methinks, I am too savage:
To do worse to you were fell cruelty;
Which is too nigh your person. Heaven preserve you!
I dare abide no longer.

[Exit. L. Macd. Whither should I fly?
I have done no harm. But I remember now,
I am in this earthly world, where, to do harm
Is often laudable, to do good sometime
Accounted dangerous folly; why then, alas!
Do I put up that womanly defence,
To say I have done no harm?

Enter Murderers.

What are these faces?

Mur. Where is your husband?
L. Macd. I hope in no place so unsanctified
Where such as thou mayst find him.

Mur. He's a traitor. 8e
Son. Thou liest, thou shag-hair'd villain.
Mur. What! you egg.
Young fry of treachery! [Stabbing him.
Son. He has killed me, mother:
Run away, I pray you!

[Exit Lady Macduff, crying 'Murder,' and pursued by the Murderers.

SCENE III.—England. Before the King's Palace.

Enter Malcolm and Macduff.

Mal. Let us seek out some desolate shade,
and there
Weep our sad bosoms empty.

Macd. Let us rather
Hold fast the mortal sword, and like good men
Bestride our down-fall'n birthdom; each new
morn
New widows howl, new orphans cry, new sorrows:
Strike heaven on the face, that it resounds
As if it felt with Scotland and yell'd out
Like syllable of dolour.

Mal. What I believe I'll wait,
Act IV, Sc. III.

MACBETH

What know believe, and what I can redress,
As I shall find the time to friend, I will.
What you have spoke, it may be so pereance.
This tyrant, whose sole name blisters our tongues,
Was once thought honest: you have lov’d him well;

He hath not touch’d you yet. I am young; but something
You may deserve of him through me, and wisdom
To offer up a weak, poor, innocent lamb
To appease an angry god.

Macc. I am not treacherous.
Mal. But Maccbeth is.
A good and virtuous nature may recoil
In an imperial charge. But I shall crave your pardon;
That which you are my thoughts cannot transpose;
Angels are bright still, though the brightest fell;
Though all things foul would wear the brows of grace,
Yet grace must still look so.

Macc. I have lost my hopes.
Mal. Perchance even there where I did find my doubts.

Why in that rauwness left you wife and child—
Those precious motives, those strong knots of love—
Without leave-taking? I pray you,
Let not my jealousies be your dishonests,
But mine own safeties: you may be rightly just,
Whatever I shall think.

Macc. Bleed, bleed, poor country!
Great tyranny, lay thou thy basis sure;
For goodness dares not check thee! wear thou thy wrong;
The title is affeer’d! Fare thee well, lord:
I would not be the villain that thou think’st
For the whole space that’s in the tyrant’s grasp,
And the rich East to boot.

Mal. Be not offended: I speak not as in absolute fear of you.
I think our country sinks beneath the yoke;
It weeps, it bleeds, and each new day a gash
Is added to her wounds: I think withal,
There would be hands uplifted in my right;
And here from gracious England have I offer
Of goody thousands: but, for all this,
When I shall tread upon the tyrant’s head,
Or wear it on my sword, yet my poor country
Shall have more vices than it had before,
More suffer, and morsundry ways than ever,
By him that shall succeed.

Macc. What should he be?
Mal. It is myself I mean; in whom I know
All the particulars of vice so grafted,
That, when they shall be open’d, black Maccbeth
Will seem as pure as snow, and the poor state
Esteem him as a lamb, being compar’d
With my confineless harms.

Macc. Not in the legions
Of horrid hell can come a devil more damn’d
In evils to top Maccbeth.
Mal. I grant him bloody,
Luxurious, avaricious, false, deceitful,
Sudden, malicious, smacking of every sin
That has a name; but there’s no bottom, none,
In my voluptuousness: your wives, your daughters,
Your matrons, and your maids, could not fill up
The cistern of my lust; and my desire
All continent impediments would o’erbear
That did oppose my will; better Maccbeth
Than such an one to reign.

Macc. Boundless intemperance
In nature is a tyranny; it hath been
Th’ untimely emptying of the happy throne,
And fall of many kings. But fear not yet
To take upon you what is yours; you may
Convey your pleasures in a spacious plenty,
And yet seem cold, the time you may so hoodwink.

We have willing dames enough; there cannot be
That vulture in you, to devour so many
As will to greatness dedicate themselves,
Finding it so inclin’d.

Mal. With this there grows
In my most ill-compso’d affection such
A stanchless avarice that, were I king,
I should cut off the nobles for their lands,
Desire his jewels and this other’s house;
And my more-having would be as a sauce
To make me hunger more, that I should forge
Quarrels unjust against the good and loyal,
Destroying them for wealth.

Macc. This avarice
Sticks deeper, grows with more pernicious root
Than summer-seeming lust, and it hath been
The sword of our alien kings: yet do not fear;
Scotland hath foisons to fill up your will,
Of your mere own; all these are portable,
With other graces weigh’d.

Mal. But I have none: the king-becoming
graces,
As justice, verity, temperance, stableness,
Bounty, perseverance, mercy, lowliness,
Devotion, patience, courage, fortitude,
I have no relish of them, but abound
In the division of each several crime,
Acting it many ways. Nay, had I power, I should
Pour the sweet milk of concord into hell,
MACBETH

Act IV, Sc. III.

Uproar the universal peace, confound
All unity on earth.

Macd. O Scotland, Scotland! 100

Mal. If such a one be fit to govern, speak:
I am as I have spoken.

Macd. Fit to govern!
No, not to live. O nation miserable,
With an untitled, tyrant bloody-scepter’d, 104
When shalt thou see thy wholesome days again,
Since that the truest issue of thy throne
By his own interdiction stands accurs’d,
And does blaspheme his breed? Thy royal
father 108

Was a most sainted king; the queen that bore
thine,
Oft’ner upon her knees than on her feet,
Died every day she liv’d. Fare thee well!
These evils thou repeat’st upon thyself 112
Have banish’d me from Scotland. O my breast,
Thy hope ends here!

Mal. Macduff, this noble passion,
Child of integrity, hath from my soul
Wip’d the blackstrews, reconcil’d my thoughts
To thy good truth and honour. Devilish Macbeth 117

By many of these trains hath sought to win me
Into his power, and modest wisdom plucks me
From over-credulous haste; but God above 120
Deal between thee and me! for even now
I put myself to thy direction, and
Unspeak mine own detraction, here abjure
The taints and blames I laid upon myself, 124
For strangers to my nature. I am yet
Unknown to woman, never was forsworn,
Scarcely have coveted what was mine own;
At no time broke my faith, would not betray 128
The devil to his fellow, and delight
No less in truth than life; my first false speak-
ing
Was this upon myself. What I am truly,
Is thine and my poor country’s to command; 132
Whither indeed, before thy here-approach,
Old Siward, with ten thousand war-like men,
Already at a point, was setting forth.
Now we’ll together; and the chance of goodness
Be like our warranted quarrel. Why are you silent? 137

Macd. Such welcome and unwelcome things
at once
’Tis hard to reconcile.

Enter a Doctor.

Mal. Well; more anon. Comes the king
forth, I pray you?

Docl. Ay, sir; there are a crew of wretched
souls
That stay his cure; their malady convinces

The great assay of art; but, at his touch,
Such sanctity hath heaven given his hand, 144
They presently amend.

Mal. I thank you, doctor.  [Exit Doctor.

Macd. What’s the disease he means?

Mal. ’Tis call’d the evil:
A most miraculous work in this good king,
Which often, since my here-remain in England,
I have seen him do. How he solicits heaven, 149
Himself best knows; but strangely-visited peo-
ple,
All swoln and ulcerous, pitiful to the eye,
The mere despair of surgery, he cures; 152
Hanging a golden stamp about their necks,
Put on with holy prayers; and ’tis spoken
To the succeeding royalty he leaves
The healing benediction. With this strange
virtue, 156

He hath a heavenly gift of prophecy,
And sundry blessings hang about his throne
That speak him full of grace.

Mal. My countryman; but yet I know him
not. 160

Enter Ross.

Mal. My ever-gentle-cousin, welcome hither.

Mal. I know him now. Good God, betimes
remove
The means that make us strangers!

Ross. Sir, amen.

Macd. Stands Scotland where it did?

Ross. Alas! poor country; 164
Almost afraid to know itself. It cannot
Be call’d our mother, but our grave; where
nothing,
But who knows nothing, is once seen to smile;
Where sighs and groans and shrieks that rent
the air 168
Are made, not mark’d; where violent sorrow
seems
A modern ecstasy; the dead man’s knell
Is there scarce ask’d for who; and good men’s
lives
Expire before the flowers in their caps, 172
Dying or ere they sicken.

Mal. O! relation

Too nice, and yet too true!

Ross. What’s the sweetest grief?

Ross. That of an hour’s age doth hiss the
speaker;
Each minute teems a new one.

Mal. How does my wife? 175

Ross. Why, well.

Mal. And all my children?

Ross. Well too.
Act IV, Sc. III.

MACBETH

Macd. The tyrant has not batter'd at their peace?
Ross. No; they were well at peace when I did leave 'em.
Macd. Be not a niggard of your speech: how goes 't? 180
Ross. When I came hither to transport the tidings,
Which I have heavily borne, there ran a rumour
Of many worthy fellows that were out;
Which was to my belief witness'd the rather 184
For that I saw the tyrant's power a-foot.
Now is the time of help; your eye in Scotland
Would create soldiers, make our women fight,
To doff their dire distresses.
Mal. Be 't their comfort. 188
We are coming thither. Gracious England hath
Lent us good Siward and ten thousand men;
An older and a better soldier none
That Christendom gives out.
Ross. Would I could answer 192
This comfort with the like! But I have words
That would be how'd out in the desert air,
Where hearing should not latch them.
Macd. What concern they?
The general cause? or is it a fee-grief 196
Due to some single breast?
Ross. No mind that's honest
But in it shares some woe, though the main
Part
Pertains to you alone.
Macd. If it be mine
Keep it not from me; quickly let me have it. 200
Ross. Let not your ears despise my tongue
for ever,
Which shall possess them with the heaviest sound
That ever yet they heard.
Macd. Hum! I guess at it.
Ross. Your castle is surpris'd; your wife and
babes 204
Savagely slaughter'd; to relate the manner,
Were, on the quarry of these murder'd deer,
To add the death of you.
Mal. Merciful heaven!
What! man; ne'er pull your hat upon your
brows; 208
Give sorrow words; the grief that does not speak
Whispers the o'er-fraught heart and bids it break.
Macd. My children too?
Ross. Wife, children, servants, all
That could be found.
Macd. And I must be from thence! 212
My wife kill'd too?
Ross. I have said.
Mal. Be comforted:
Let's make us medicine of our great revenge,
To cure this deadly grief.
Macd. He has no children. All my pretty ones?
Did you say all? O hell-kite! All?
What! all my pretty chickens and their dam
At one fell swoop?
Mal. Dispute it like a man.
Macd. I shall do so;
But I must also feel it as a man: 220
I cannot but remember such things were,
That were most precious to me. Did heaven
look on,
And would not take their part? Sinful Macduff!
They were all struck for thee. Naught that I am,
Not for their own demerits, but for mine,
Fell slaughter on their souls. Heaven rest them
now!
Mal. Be this the whetstone of your sword:
let grief
Convert to anger; blunt not the heart, enrage
it. 228
Macd. O! I could play the woman with mine
eyes,
And braggart with my tongue. But, gentle
heavens,
Cut short all intermission; front to front 231
Bring thou this fiend of Scotland and myself;
Within my sword's length set him; if he 'scape,
Heaven forgive him too!
Mal. This tune goes manly.
Come, go we to the king; our power is ready;
Our lack is nothing but our leave. Macbeth 236
Is ripe for shaking, and the powers above
Put on their instruments. Receive what cheer
you may;
The night is long that never finds the day.
[Exeunt.

ACT V.

SCENE I.—Dunsinane. A Room in the
Castle.

Enter a Doctor of Physic and a Waiting-Gentle-
woman.

Doc. I have two nights watched with you,
but can perceive no truth in your report. When
was it she last walked?

Gen. Since his majesty went into the field,
I have seen her rise from her bed, throw her
night-gown upon her, unlock her closet, take
forth paper, fold it, write upon 't, read it, after-
wards seal it, and again return to bed; yet all
this while in a most fast sleep.

Doc. A great perturbation in nature, to
receive at once the benefit of sleep and do the
effects of watching! In this slumbery agitation, 
besides her walking and other actual performances, what, at any time, have you heard her say?
Gen. That, sir, which I will not report after 
her.

Doc. You may to me, and 'tis most meet you 
should.

Gen. Neither to you nor any one, having no 
witness to confirm my speech.

Enter LADY MACBETH, with a taper.
Lo you! here she comes:- This is her very guise; 
and, upon my life, fast asleep. Observe her; 
stand close.

Doc. How came she by that light?

Gen. Why, it stood by her: she has light by 
her continually; 'tis her command.

Doc. You see, her eyes are open.

Gen. Ay, but their sense is shut.

Doc. What is it she does now? Look, how 
she rubs her hands.

Gen. It is an accustomed action with her, to 
seem thus washing her hands. I have known her to continue in this a quarter of an hour.

Lady M. Yet here's a spot.

Doc. Haark! she speaks. I will set down 
what comes from her, to satisfy my remem-
brance the more strongly.

Lady M. Out, damned spot! Out, I say! One; 
two: why, then, 'tis time to do't. Hell is murky!
Fie, my lord, fie! a soldier, and afeard? What 
need we fear who knows it, when none can call 
our power to account? Yet who would have 
thought the old man to have had so much 
blood in him?

Doc. Do you mark that?

Lady M. The Thane of Fife had a wife: 
where is she now? What! will these hands ne'er 
be clean? No more o' that, my lord, no more 
o' that: you mar all with this starting.

Doc. Go to, go to; you have known what 
you should not.

Gen. She has spoke what she should not, I 
am sure of that: Heaven knows what she has 
known.

Lady M. Here's the smell of the blood still: 
all the perfumes of Arabia will not sweeten this 
little hand. Oh! oh! oh!

Doc. What a sight is there! The heart is 
sorely charged.

Gen. I would not have such a heart in my 
bosom for the dignity of the whole body.

Doc. Well, well, well.

Gen. Pray God it be, sir.

Doc. This disease is beyond my practice: 
yet I have known those which have walked in 
their sleep who have died holily in their beds.
Act V, Sc. II. 

MACBETH

When all that is within him does condemn itself for being there? 

Caith. Well, march we on, 
To give obedience where 'tis truly ow'd; 
Meet we the medicine of the sickly weal, 
And with him pour we in our country's purge. 
Each drop of us. 

Len. Or so much as it needs 
To dew the sovereign flower and drown the weeds. 
Make we our march towards Birnam. 

[Exeunt, marching.

SCENE III.—Dunsinane. A Room in the Castle.

Enter MACBETH, Doctor, and Attendants.

Macb. Bring me no more reports; let them fly all: 
Till Birnam wood remove to Dunsinane 
I cannot taint with fear. What's the boy Malcolm? 
Was he not born of woman? The spirits that know 
All mortal consequences have pronounce'd me 
thus: 'Fear not, Macbeth; no man that's born of woman 
Shall e'er have power upon thee.' Then fly, 
false thanes, 
And mingle with the English epicures: 
The mind I sway by and the heart I bear 
Shall never sag with doubt nor shake with fear.

Enter a Servant.

The devil damn thee black, thou cream-fac'd loon! 

Where gott'st thou that goose look? 

Serv. There is ten thousand—

Macb. Geese, villain? 

Serv. Soldiers, sir.

Macb. Go, prick thy face, and over-red thy fear, 
Thou likey-liver'd boy. What soldiers, patch? 
Death of thy soul! those linen cheeks of thine 
Are counsellors to fear. What soldiers, why-face? 

Serv. The English force, so please you. 

Macb. Take thy face hence. [Exit Servant.] 

Seyton!—I am sick at heart 

When I behold—Seyton, I say!—This push 
Will cheer me ever or disseat me now. 
I have liv'd long enough: my way of life 
Is fall'n into the sea, the yellow leaf; 
And that which should accompany old age, 
As honour, love, obedience, troops of friends, 
I must not look to have; but, in their stead, 

Curses, not loud but deep, mouth-honour, breath, 
Which the poor heart would fain deny, and dare not.

Seyton!

Enter Seyton.

Sey. What is your gracious pleasure? 

Macb. What news more? 

Sey. All is confirm'd, my lord, which was reported. 

Macb. I'll fight till from my bones my flesh be hack'd. 

Give me my armour. 

Sey. 'Tis not needed yet. 

Macb. I'll put it on. 

Send out more horses, skirt the country round; 
Hang those that talk of fear. Give me mine armour. 

How does your patient, doctor? 

Doct. Not so sick, my lord, 
As she is troubled with thick-coming fancies, 
That keep her from her rest. 

Macb. Cure her of that: 
Canst thou not minister to a mind diseas'd, 
Pluck from the memory a rooted sorrow, 
Raze out the written troubles of the brain, 
And with some sweet oblivion antidote 
Cleanse the stuff'd bosom of that perilous stuff 
Which weighs upon the heart? 

Doct. Therein the patient must minister to himself. 

Macb. Throw physic to the dogs; I'll none of it. 

Come, put mine armour on; give me my staff. 

Seyton, send out.—Doctor, the thanes fly from me.— 

Come, sir, dispatch.—If thou couldst, doctor, 

The water of my land, find her disease, 
And purge it to a sound and pristine health, I would applaud thee to the very echo, 
That should applaud again.—Pull 't off, I say.— 

What rhubarb, senna, or what purgative drug 
Would scour these English hence? Hear'st thou of them? 

Doct. Ay, my good lord; your royal preparation 

Makes us hear something. 

Macb. Bring it after me. 

I will not be afraid of death and bane 
Till Birnam forest come to Dunsinane. 

Doct. [Aside.] Were I from Dunsinane away and clear, 

Profit again should hardly draw me here.

[Exeunt]
MACBETH

Act V, Sc. V.

SCENE IV.—Country near Birnam Wood.

Enter, with drum and colours, MALCOLM, Old Siward and his Son, Macduff, Menteith, Caithness, Angus, Lennox, Ross, and Soldiers marching.

MAL. Cousins, I hope the days are near at hand That chambers will be safe.

MEN. We doubt it nothing.

Siw. What wood is this before us?

MEN. The wood of Birnam.

MAL. Let every soldier hew him down a bough And bear ’t before him: thereby shall we shadow The numbers of our host, and make discovery Err in report of us.

SOLD. It shall be done.

Siw. We learn no other but the confident tyrant Keeps still in Dunsinane, and will endure Our setting down before ’t.

MAL. ’Tis his main hope; For where there is advantage to be given, Both more and less have given him the revolt, And none serve with him but constrained things Whose hearts are absent too.

Macd. Let our just censures Attend the true event, and put we on Industrious soldiership.

Siw. The time approaches That will with due decision make us know What we shall say we have and what we owe, Thoughts speculative their unsure hopes relate, But certain issue strokes must arbitrate, Towards which advance the war.

[Exeunt, marching.

SCENE V.—Dunsinane. Within the Castle.

Enter, with drum and colours, Macbeth, Seyton, and Soldiers.

Macb. Hang out our banners on the outward walls; The cry is still, ‘They come;’ our castle’s strength Will laugh a siege to scorn; here let them lie Till famine cling thee; if thy speech be sooth, I care not if thou dost for me as much. I pull in resolution and begin To doubt the equivocation of the fiend That lies like truth; ‘Fear not, till Birnam wood Do come to Dunsinane;’ and now a wood Comes toward Dunsinane. Arm, arm, and out! If this which he avouches doth appear, There is not flying hence, nor tarrying here. I ’gin to be a wary of the sun, And wish the estate o’ the world were now undone.

Ring the alarum-bell! Blow, wind! come, wreak! At least we’ll die with harness on our back.

[Exeunt.

The time has been my senses would have cool’d To hear a night-shriek, and my fell of hair Would at a dismal treatise rouse and stir As life were in ’t. I have supp’d full with horrors; Direness, familiar to my slaughterous thoughts, Cannot once start me.

Re-enter Seyton.

Wherefore was that cry?

Sey. The queen, my lord, is dead.

Macb. She should have died hereafter; There would have been a time for such a word. To-morrow, and to-morrow, and to-morrow, Creeps in this petty pace from day to day, To the last syllable of recorded time; And all our yesterdays have lighted fools The way to dusty death. Out, out, brief candle! Life’s but a walking shadow, a poor player That struts and frets his hour upon the stage, And then is heard no more; it is a tale Told by an idiot, full of sound and fury, Signifying nothing.

Enter a Messenger.

Thou com’st to use thy tongue; thy story quickly.

Mess. Gracious my lord, I should report that which I say I saw, But know not how to do it.

Macb. Well, say, sir.

Mess. As I did stand my watch upon the hill, I look’d towards Birnam, and anon, methought, The wood began to move.

Macb. Liar and slave!

Mess. Let me endure your wrath if’t be not so:

Within this three mile may you see it coming; I say, a moving grove.

Macb. If thou speak’st false, Upon the next tree shalt thou hang alive, Till famine cling thee; if thy speech be sooth, I care not if thou dost for me as much. I pull in resolution and begin To doubt the equivocation of the fiend That lies like truth; ‘Fear not, till Birnam wood Do come to Dunsinane;’ and now a wood Comes toward Dunsinane. Arm, arm, and out! If this which he avouches doth appear, There is not flying hence, nor tarrying here. I ’gin to be a wary of the sun, And wish the estate o’ the world were now undone.

Ring the alarum-bell! Blow, wind! come, wreak! At least we’ll die with harness on our back.

[Exeunt.
Act V, Sc. VI.

SCENE VI.—The Same. A Plain before the Castle.

Enter, with drum and colours, Malcolm, Old Siward, Macduff, &c., and their Army, with boughs.

Mal. Now near enough; your leavy screens throw down,
And show like those you are. You, worthy uncle,
Shall, with my cousin, your right-noble son,
Lead our first battle; worthy Macduff and we
Shall take upon 's what else remains to do,
According to our order.

Siward. Fare you well.
Do we but find the tyrant’s power to-night,
Let us be beaten, if we cannot fight.

Macduff. Make all our trumpets speak; give
them all breath,
Those clamorous harbingers of blood and death.

[Exeunt.]

SCENE VII.—The Same. Another Part of the Plain.

Alarums. Enter Macbeth.

Macbeth. They have tied me to a stake; I cannot fly,
But bear-like must fight the course. What's he
That was not born of woman? Such a one
Am I to fear, or none.

Enter Young Siward.

Young Siward. What is thy name?

Macbeth. Thou'lt be afraid to hear it.

Young Siward. No; though thou call'st thyself
a hotter name
Than any is in hell.

Macbeth. My name's Macbeth.

Young Siward. The devil himself could not pronounce a title
More hateful to mine ear.

Macbeth. No, nor more fearful.

Young Siward. Thou liest, abhorred tyrant;
with my sword
I'll prove the lie thou speakest.

[They fight and Young Siward is slain.

Macbeth. Thou wast born of woman:
But swords I smile at, weapons laugh to scorn,
Brandish’d by men that's of a woman born. [Exit.

Alarums. Enter Macduff.

Macbeth. That way the noise is. Tyrant, shew thy face:
If thou best slain and with no strokes of mine,
My wife and children's ghosts will haunt me still.

I cannot strike at wretched kerns, whose arms
Are hir’d to bear their staves: either thou,
Macbeth,
Or else my sword with an unbatter’d edge
I sheathe again undeeded. There thou shouldst be;
By this great clatter, one of greatest note
Seems bruited. Let me find him, fortunate!
And more I beg not. [Exit. Alarums.

Enter Malcolm and Old Siward.

Siward. This way, my lord; the castle’s gently render’d:
The tyrant’s people on both sides do fight;
The noble thanes do bravely in the war;
The day almost itself professes yours,
And little is to do.

Malcolm. We have met with foes.

Siward. That strike beside us.

[Exeunt. Alarums.

Re-enter Macbeth.

Macbeth. Why should I play the Roman fool,
and die
On mine own sword? whiles I see lives, the gauches
Do better upon them.

Re-enter Macduff.

Macbeth. Turn, hell-hound, turn! I have avoided thee;
But get thee back, my soul is too much charg’d
With blood of thine already.

Macbeth. I have no words;
My voice is in my sword, thou bloodier villain
Than terms can give thee out! [They fight.

Macbeth. Thou losest labour:
As easy mayst thou the intrenchant air
With thy keen sword impress as make me bleed:
Let fall thy blade on vulnerable crests;
I hear a charmed life, which must not yield
To one of woman born.

Macbeth. Despair thy charm;
And let the angel whom thou still hast serv’d
Tell thee, Macduff was from his mother’s womb
Untimely ripp’d.

Macbeth. Accursed be that tongue that tells me so,
For it hath cow’d my better part of man:
And be these juggling fends no more believ’d,
That pater with us in a double sense;
That keep the word of promise to our ear,
And break it to our hope. I’ll not fight with thee.

Macbeth. Then yield thee, coward,
And live to be the show and gaze o’ the time:
We’ll have thee, as our rarer monsters are,
Painted upon a pole, and underwrit,
'Here may you see the tyrant.'

_Macb._  I will not yield, 56
To kiss the ground before young Malcolm's feet,
And to be baited with the rattle's curse.
Though Birnam wood be come to Dunsinane,
And thou oppos'd, being of no woman born, 60
Yet I will try the last: before my body
I throw my war-like shield. Lay on, Macduff,
And damn'd be him that first cries, 'Hold, enough!' 64

_Exeunt, fighting._

Retreat. Flourish. Re-enter, with drum and colours, MALCOLM, OLD SIWARD, ROSS, Thanes, and Soldiers.

_Mal._ I would the friends we miss were safe arriv'd.

_Siw._ Some must go off; and yet, by these I see,
So great a day as this is cheaply bought.

_Mal._ Macduff is missing, and your noble son.

_Ross._ Your son, my lord, has paid a soldier's debt:

He only liv'd but till he was a man;
The which no sooner had his prowess confirm'd
In the unshrinking station where he fought,
But like a man he died.

_Siw._ Then he is dead? 72

_Ross._ Ay, and brought off the field. Your cause of sorrow
Must not be measur'd by his worth, for then
It hath no end.

_Siw._ Had he his hurts before?

_Ross._ Ay, on the front.

_Siw._ Why then, God's soldier be he! 76

Had I as many sons as I have hairs,
I would not wish them to a fairer death:
And so, his knell is knoll'd.

_Mal._ He's worth more sorrow,
And that I'll spend for him.

_Siw._ He's worth no more; 80
They say, he parted well, and paid his score:
And so, God be with him! Here comes newer comfort.

_Re-enter MACDUFF, with MACBETH'S head._

_Macb._ Hail, king! for so thou art. Behold,
where stands
The usurper's cursed head: the time is free: 84
I see thee compass'd with thy kingdom's pearl,
That speak my salutation in their minds;
Whose voices I desire aloud with mine;
Hail, King of Scotland!

_All._ Hail, King of Scotland! 88

_Flourish._

_Mal._ We shall not spend a large expense of time
Before we reckon with your several loves,
And make us even with you. My thanes and kinsmen,
Henceforth be earls, the first that ever Scotland
In such an honour nam'd. What's more to do, 93
Which would be planted newly with the time,
As calling home our exil'd friends abroad
That fled the snares of watchful tyranny; 96
Producing forth the cruel ministers
Of this dead butcher and his fiend-like queen,
Who, as 'tis thought, by self and violent hands
Took off her life; this, and what needful else 100
That calls upon us, by the grace of Grace
We will perform in measure, time, and place:
So, thanks to all at once and to each one,
Whom we invite to see us crown'd at Scone. 104

_Flourish. Exeunt._
HAMLET
PRINCE OF DENMARK

DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

CLAUDIUS, King of Denmark.
HAMLET, Son to the late, and Nephew to the present King.
FORTINBRAS, Prince of Norway.
HORATIO, Friend to Hamlet.
POLONIUS, Lord Chamberlain.
LAERTES, his Son.
VOLTIMAND,
CORNELIUS,
ROSENCRANTZ,
GUILDENSTERN, } Courtiers.
OSRIC,
A Gentleman,
A Priest.
MARCCELLUS, } Officers.
BERNARDO, }
FRANCISCO, a Soldier.
REYNALDO, Servant to Polonius.
A Captain.
English Ambassadors.
Players. Two Clowns, Grave-diggers.
GERTRUDE, Queen of Denmark and Mother to Hamlet.
OPHELIA, Daughter to Polonius.
Lords, Ladies, Officers, Soldiers, Sailors, Messengers, and Attendants.

Ghost of Hamlet’s Father.

SCENE.—Elsinore.

ACT I.

SCENE I.—Elsinore. A Platform before the Castle.

FRANCISCO at his post. Enter to him BERNARDO.

Ber. Who’s there?
Fran. Nay, answer me; stand, and unfold yourself.
Ber. Long live the king!
Fran. Bernardo?
Ber. He.
Fran. You come most carefully upon your hour.
Ber. ’Tis now struck twelve; get thee to bed, Francisco.
Fran. For this relief much thanks; ’tis bitter cold,
And I am sick at heart.
Ber. Have you had quiet guard?
Fran. Not a mouse stirring.
Ber. Well, good-night.
If you do meet Horatio and Marcellus, The rivals of my watch, bid them make haste.
Fran. I think I hear them. Stand, ho! Who’s there?

Enter HORATIO and MARCELLUS.

Hor. Friends to this ground.
Mar. And liegemen to the Dane.
Fran. Give you good-night.
Mar. O! farewell, honest soldier: 16

Who hath reliev’d you?
Fran. Bernardo has my place.
Give you good-night.  [Exit.
Mar. Holla! Bernardo! Say,

What’s is Horatio there?
Hor. A piece of him.
Ber. Welcome, Horatio; welcome, good Marcellus.
Mar. What! hath this thing appear’d again to-night?
Ber. I have seen nothing.
Mar. Horatio says ’tis but our fantasy, And will not let belief take hold of him
Touching this dreadful sight twice seen of us: Therefore I have entreated him along With us to watch the minutes of this night; That if again this apparition come, He may approve our eyes and speak to it.
Hor. Tush, tush! ’twill not appear.
Ber. Sit down awhile, And let us once again assail your ears, That are so fortified against our story,
What we two nights have seen.

Hor. Well, sit we down, And let us hear Bernardo speak of this.
Ber. Last night of all, When yond same star that’s westward from the pole
Had made his course to illumine that part of heaven Where now it burns, Marcellus and myself,

1096
HAMLET

Act I, Sc. I.

The bell then beating one,—

_Mar._ Peace! break thee off; look, where it comes again!

_Enter Ghost._

_Ber._ In the same figure, like the king that's dead.

_Mar._ Thou art a scholar; speak to it, Horatio.

_Ber._ Looks it not like the king? mark it, Horatio.

_Hor._ Most like: it harrows me with fear and wonder.

_Ber._ It would be spoke to.

_Mar._ Question it, Horatio.

_Hor._ What art thou that usurp'st this time of night,
Together with that fair and war-like form
In which the majesty of buried Denmark
Did sometimes march? by heaven I charge thee, speak!

_Mar._ It is offended.

_Ber._ See! 'tis stalks away.

_Hor._ Stay! speak, speak! I charge thee, speak! [Exit Ghost.

_Mar._ 'Tis gone, and will not answer.

_Ber._ How now, Horatio! you tremble and look pale:
Is not this something more than fantasy?
What think you on 't?

_Hor._ Before my God, I might not this believe
Without the sensible and true avouch
Of mine own eyes.

_Mar._ Is it not like the king?

_Hor._ As thou hast thyself:
Such was the very armour he had on
When he the ambitious Norway combated;
So frown'd he once, when, in an angry parle,
He smote the sledge of Polack with the oxe.
'Tis strange.

_Mar._ Thus twice before, and jump at this dead hour,
With martial stalk hath he gone by our watch.

_Hor._ In what particular thought to work I know not;
But in the gross and scope of my opinion,
This bodes some strange eruption to our state.

_Mar._ Good now, sit down, and tell me, he that knows,
Why this same strict and most observant watch
So nightly toils the subject of the land;
And why such daily cast of brazen cannon,
And foreign mart for implements of war;
Why such impress of shipwrights, whose sore task
Does not divide the Sunday from the week;

What might be toward, that this sweaty haste
Doth make the night joint-labourer with the day:
Who is 't that can inform me?

_Hor._ That can I;
At least, the whisper goes so. Our last king, 80
Whose image even but now appear'd to us,
Was, as you know, by Fortinbras of Norway,
Thereto prickt'd on by a most emulate pride,
Dar'd to the contest; in which our valiant Hamlet—

For so this side of our known world esteem'd him—

Did slay this Fortinbras; who, by a seal'd compact,
Well ratified by law and heraldry,
Did forfeit with his life all those his lands
Which he stood seiz'd of, to the conqueror;
Against the which, a moister competent
Was gaged by our king; which had return'd
To the inheritance of Fortinbras,

Had he been vanquisher; as, by the same coven-

And carriage of the article design'd,
His fell to Hamlet. Now, sir, young Fortinbras,
Of unimproved mettles hot and full,
Hath in the skirts of Norway here and there
Shark'd up a list of lawless resolutes,
For food and diet, to some enterprise
That hast a stomach in 't; which is no other—
As it doth well appear unto our state—
But to recover of us, by strong hand
And terms compulsive, those foresaid lands
So by his father lost. And this, I take it,
Is the main motive of our preparations,
The source of this our watch and the chief head
Of this post-haste and romage in the land.

_Ber._ I think it be no other but 'e'en so; 108
Well may it sort that this portentous figure
Comes armed through our watch, so like the king
That was and is the question of these wars.

_Hor._ A mote it is to trouble the mind's eye.

In the most high and palmy state of Rome,
A little ere the mightiest Julius fell,
The graves stood tenantless and the sheeted dead
Did squeak and gibber in the Roman streets; 116
As stars with trains of fire and dews of blood,
Disasters in the sun; and the moist star
Upon whose influence Neptune's empire stands
Was sick almost to doomsday with eclipse; 120
And even the like precurser of fierce events,
As harbingers preceding still the fates
And prologue to the omen coming on,
Have heaven and earth together demonstrated
Unto our statures and countrymen.

But, soft! behold! lo! where it comes again.
Act I, Sc. I.

Re-enter Ghost.

I'll cross it, though it blast me. Stay, illusion!
If thou hast any sound, or use of voice,
Speak to me:
If there be any good thing to be done,
That may to thee do ease and grace to me.
Speak to me:
If thou art privy to thy country's fate,
Which happily foreknowing may avoid,
O! speak;
Or if thou hast uphoarded in thy life
Extorted treasure in the womb of earth,
For which, they say, you spirits oft walk in death,

[Cock crows.

Speak of it: stay, and speak! Stop it, Marcellus.

Mar. Shall I strike at it with my partisan?
Hor. Do, if it will not stand.
Ber. 'Tis here!
Hor. 'Tis here! [Exit Ghost.

Mar. 'Tis gone!

We do it wrong, being so majestical,
To offer it the show of violence;
For it is, as the air, invulnerable,
And our vain blows malicious mockery.

Ber. It was about to speak when the cock crew.

Hor. And then it started like a guilty thing
Upon a fearful summons. I have heard,

The cock, that is the trumpet to the morn,
Doth with his lofty and shrill-sounding throat
 Awake the god of day; and at his warning,

Whether in sea or fire, in earth or air,
The extravagant and erring spirit hies
To his confine; and of the truth herein
This present object made probation.

Mar. It faded on the crowing of the cock.

Some say that ever 'gainst that season comes
Wherein our Saviour's birth is celebrated,
The bird of dawning singeth all night long;

And then, they say, no spirit can walk abroad;
The nights are wholesome; then no planets strike,
No fairy takes, nor witch hath power to charm,

So hallow'd and so gracious is the time.

Hor. So have I heard and do in part believe it.

But, look, the morn in russet mantle clad,
Walks o'er the dew of yon high eastern hill;
Break we our watch up; and by my advice
Let us impart what we have seen to-night
Unto young Hamlet; for, upon my life,
This spirit, dumb to us, will speak to him.
Do you consent we shall acquaint him with it,
As needful in our loves, fitting our duty?

Mar. Let's do't, I pray; and I this morning know
Where we shall find him most conveniently.

[Exeunt.

Scene II.—A Room of State in the Castle.

Enter the King, Queen, Hamlet, Polonius,
Laertes, Voltimand, Cornelius, Lords, and Attendants.

King. Though yet of Hamlet our dear brother's death
The memory be green, and that it us befitted
To bear our hearts in grief and our whole kingdom
To be contracted in one brow of woe,
Yet so far hath discretion fought with nature
That we with wisest sorrow think on him,
Together with remembrance of ourselves.
Therefore our sometime sister, now our queen,
The imperial jointress of this warlike state,
Have we, as 'twere with a defeated joy,
With one auspicious and one dropping eye,
With mirth in funeral and with dirge in marriage,

In equal scale weighing delight and dole,
Taken to wife: nor have we herein barr'd
Your better wisdoms, which have freely gone
With this affair along: for all, our thanks.

Now follows, that you know, young Fortinbras,
Holding a weak supposal of our worth,
Or thinking by our late dear brother's death
Our state to be disjoint and out of frame,
Colleged, with the dream of his advantage,
He hath not fail'd to pester us with message,
Importing the surrender of those lands
Lost by his father, with all bands of law,
To our most valiant brother. So much for him.
Now for ourself and for this time of meeting.
Thus much the business is: we have here writ
To Norway, uncle of young Fortinbras,
Who, impotent and bed-rid, scarcely hears
Of this his nephew's purpose, to suppress
His further gait herein: in that the levies
The lists and full proportions, are all made
Out of his subject; and we here dispatch
You, good Cornelius, and you, Voltimand,
For bearers of this greeting to old Norway,
Giving to you no further personal power
To business with the king more than the scope
Of these deleted articles allow.

Farewell and let your haste commend your duty.

Cor. In that and all things will we show Vol. our duty.

King. We doubt it nothing: heartily farewell.

[Exeunt Voltimand and Cornelius.]
And now, Laertes, what’s the news with you? 
You told us of some suit; what is’t, Laertes?
You cannot speak of reason to the Dane, 44
And lose your voice; what wouldst thou beg, 
Laertes,
That shall not be my offer, not thy asking?
The head is not more native to the heart,
The hand more instrumental to the mouth, 48
Than is the throne of Denmark to thy father.
What wouldst thou have, Laertes?

Laer. 
Dread my lord,
Your leave and favour to return to France;
From whence though willingly I came to Den-
mark, 52
To show my duty in your coronation,
Yet now, I must confess, that duty done,
My thoughts and wishes bend again toward
France
And bow them to your gracious leave and
pardon.

King. Have you your father’s leave? What
says Polonius?

Pol. He hath, my lord, wrung from me my
slow leave
By laboursome petition, and at last
Upon his will I seal’d my hard consent: 60
I do beseech you, give him leave to go.

King. Take thy fair hour, Laertes; time be
thine,
And thy best graces spend it at thy will.

But now, my cousin Hamlet, and my son, — 64
Ham. [Aside.] A little more than kin, and
less than kind.

King. How is it that the clouds still hang
on you?

Ham. Not so, my lord; I am too much i’ the
sun.

Queen. Good Hamlet, cast thy nights left colour
off, 68
And let thine eye look like a friend on Denmark.
Do not for ever with thy vailed lids
Seek for thy noble father in the dust:
Thou know’st ’tis common; all that live must
die, 72
Passing through nature to eternity.

Ham. Ay, madam, it is common.

Queen. If it be, Why seems it so particular with thee?

Ham. Seems, madam! Nay, it is; I know not
seems.’ 76
’Tis not alone my inky cloak, good mother,
Nor customary suit of solemn black,
Nor windy suspiration of forc’d breath,
No, nor the fruitful river in the eye,
Nor the dejectéd haviour of the visage,
Together with all forms, modes, shows of grief,
That can denote me truly; these indeed seem,
For they are actions that a man might play: 84
But I have that within which passeth show;
These but the trappings and the suits of woe.

King. ’Tis sweet and commendable in your
nature, Hamlet,
To give these mourning duties to your father: 88
But, you must know, your father lost a father;
That father lost, lost his; and the survivor
bound
In filial obligation for some term
To do obsequious sorrow; but to persever 92
In obstinate condolement is a course
Of impious stubbornness; ’tis unmanly grief:
It shows a will most incorrect to heaven,
A heart unfortified, a mind impatient, 96
An understanding simple and unschool’d:
For what we know must be and is as common
As any the most vulgar thing to sense,
Why should we in our peevish opposition 100
Take it to heart? Fie! ’tis a fault to heaven,
A fault against the dead, a fault to nature,
To reason most absurd, whose common theme
Is death of fathers, and who still hath cried, 104
From the first koril till be that died to-day,
‘This must be so.’ We pray you, throw to earth
This unpervailing woe, and think of us
As of a father; for let the world take note, 108
You are the most immediate to our throne;
And with no less nobility of love
Than that which dearest father bears his son
Do I impart toward you. For your intent 112
In going back to school in Wittenberg,
It is most retrograde to our desire;
And we beseech you, bend you to remain
Here, in the cheer and comfort of our eye, 116
Our chiefest courtier, cousin, and our son.

Queen. Let not thy mother lose her prayers.

Hamlet:
I pray thee, stay with us; go not to Wittenberg.

Ham. I shall in all my best obey you, madam.

King. Why, ’tis a loving and a fair reply:
Be as ourself in Denmark. Madam, come;
This gentle and unforc’d accord of Hamlet
Sits smiling to my heart; in grace whereof, 124
No joycond health that Denmark drinks to-day,
But the great cannon to the clouds shall tell,
And the king’s rouse the heavens shall bruit
again,
Re-speaking earthly thunder. Come away. 128
[Exeunt all except HAMLET.

Ham. O! that this too solid flesh would
melt,
Thaw and resolve itself into a dew;
Or that the Everlasting had not fix’d
His canon ‘gainst self-slaughter! O God! O
God!

How weary, stale, flat, and unprofitable

1099
Act I, Sc. II.

Seem to me all the uses of this world.
Fie on't! O fie! 'tis an unweeded garden,
That grows to seed; things rank and gross in
nature. Possess it merely. That it should come to this!
But two months dead: nay, not so much, not
two:
So excellent a king; that was, to this,
Hyperion to a satyr; so loving to my mother
That he might not bestem the winds of heaven
Visit her face too roughly. Heaven and earth!
Must I remember? why, she would hang on him,
As if increase of appetite had grown
By what it fed on; and yet, within a month,
Let me not think on't: Frailty, thy name is
woman!
A little month; or ere those shoes were old
With which she follow'd my poor father's body,
Like Njofe, all tears; why she, even she,—
O God! a beast, that wants discourse of reason,
Would have mourn'd longer,—married with
mine uncle,
My father's brother, but no more like my father
Than I to Hercules: within a month,
Ere yet the salt of most unrighteous tears
Had left the flushing in her galled eyes,
She married. O most wicked speed, to post
With such dexterity to incestuous sheets!
It is not nor it cannot come to good;
But break, my heart, for I must hold my tongue!

Enter Horatio, Marcellus, and Bernardo.

Hor. Hail to your lordship!
Ham. I am glad to see you well:
Horatio, or I do forget myself.

Hor. The same, my lord, and your poor ser-
vant ever.

Ham. Sir, my good friend; I'll change that
name with you.

And what make you from Wittenberg, Horatio?

Mar. My good lord,—

Ham. I am very glad to see you. [To BER-
NARDO.] Good even, sir.
But what, in faith, make you from Wittenberg?

Hor. A truant disposition, good my lord.

Ham. I would not hear your enemy say so,
Nor shall you do mine ear that violence,
To make it truster of your own report
Against yourself; I know you are no truant.
But what is your affair in Elsinore?
We'll teach you to drink deep ere you depart.

Hor. My lord, I came to see your father's
funeral.

Ham. I pray thee, do not mock me, fellow-
student;
I think it was to see my mother's wedding.

Hor. Indeed, my lord, it follow'd hard upon.

Ham. Thrift, thrift, Horatio! the funeral
bak'd meats
Did coldly furnish forth the marriage tables.
Would I had met my dearest foe in heaven
Ere I had ever seen that day, Horatio!

My father, methinks I see my father.

Hor. O! where, my lord?

Ham. In my mind's eye, Horatio.

Hor. I saw him once; he was a goodly king.

Ham. He was a man, take him for all in all,
I shall not look upon his like again.

Hor. My lord, I think I saw him yesternight.

Ham. Saw who?

Hor. My lord, the king your father.

Ham. The king, my father! Hor. Season your admiration for a while
With an atten ear, till I may deliver,
Upon the witness of these gentlemen,
This marvel to you.

Ham. For God's love, let me hear.

Hor. Two nights together had these gentle-
men,
Marcellus and Bernardo, on their watch,
In the dead vast and middle of the night,
Been thus encounter'd: a figure like your
father,
Appears at points exactly, cap-a-pe,
Appears before them, and with solemn march
Goes slow and stately by them: thrice he walk'd
By their oppress'd and fear-surprised eyes,
Within his truncheon's length; whilst they, dis-
till'd
Almost to jelly with the act of fear,
Stand dumb and speak not to him. This to me
In dreadful secrecy impart they did,
And I with them the third night kept the watch;
Where, as they had deliver'd, both in time,
Form of the thing, each word made true and
good,
The apparition comes. I knew your father;
These hands are not more like.

Ham. But where was this?

Mar. My lord, upon the platform where we
watch'd.

Ham. Did you not speak to it?

Hor. My lord, I did;
But answer made it none; yet once methought
It lifted up its head and did address
Itself to motion, like as it would speak;
But even then the morning cock crew loud,
And at the sound it shrank in haste away
And vanish'd from our sight.

Ham. 'Tis very strange.

Hor. As I do live, my honour'd lord, 'tis true;
And we did think it writ down in our duty
To let you know of it.
HAMLET

Scene III.—A Room in Polonius’ House.

Enter Laertes and Ophelia.

Laer. My necessaries are embark’d; farewell:
And, sister, as the winds give benefit
And convoy is assistant, do not sleep,
But let me hear from you.

Oph. Do you doubt that?  4

Laer. For Hamlet, and the trifling of his
favour,
Hold it a fashion and a toy in blood,
A violet in the youth of primy nature,
Forward, not permanent, sweet, not lasting,  8
The perfume and suppliance of a minute;
No more.

Oph. No more but so?

Laer. Think it no more:
For nature, crescent, does not grow alone
In thews and bulk; but, as this temple waxes, 12
The inward service of the mind and soul
Grows wide withal. Perhaps he loves you now,
And now no soil nor cautel doth beamirch
The virtue of his will; but you must bear,  16
His greatness weigh’d, his will is not his own,
For he himself is subject to his birth;
He may not, as unvalu’d persons do,
Carve for himself, for on his choice depends 20
The safety and the health of the whole state;
And therefore must his choice be circumscrib’d
Unto the voice and yielding of that body
Whereof he is the head. Then if he says he
loves you,  24
It fits your wisdom so far to believe it
As he in his particular act and place
May give his saying deed; which is no further
Than the main voice of Denmark goes withal. 28
Then weigh what loss your honour may sustain,
If with too credent ear you list his songs,
Or lose your heart, or your chaste treasure open
To his unmaster’d importunity.  32
Fear it, Ophelia, fear it, my dear sister;
And keep you in the rear of your affection,
Out of the shot and danger of desire.
The choicest maid is prodigal enough 36
If she unmask her beauty to the moon;
Virtue herself ‘scapes not calamious strokes;
The canker galls the infants of the spring
Too oft before their buttons be disclos’d,  40
And in the morn and liquid dew of youth
Contagious blastments are most imminent.
Be wary then; best safety lies in fear:
Youth to itself rebels, though none else near.  44

Oph. I shall the effect of this good lesson keep,
As watchman to my heart. But, good my
brother,
Do not, as some ungracious pastors do,
Show me the steep and thorny way to heaven,
If it be so,—as so 'tis put on me,
And that in way of caution,—I must tell you,
You do not understand yourself so clearly
As it behoves my daughter and your honour.
What is between you? give me up the truth.

Oph. He hath, my lord, of late made many
tenders
Of his affection to me.

Pol. Affection! pooh! you speak like a green
girl,
Unsifted in such perilous circumstance.
Do you believe his tenders, as you call them?
Oph. I do not know, my lord, what I should think.

Pol. Marry, I'll teach you: think yourself
a baby,
That you have ta'en these tenders for true pay,
Which are not sterling. Tender yourself more
dearly;
Or,—not to crack the wind of the poor phrase,
Running it thus,—you'll tender me a fool.

Oph. My lord, he hath importun'd me with love
In honourable fashion.

Pol. Ay, fashion you may call it: go to, go to.
Oph. And hath given countenance to his
speech, my lord,
With almost all the holy vows of heaven.

Pol. Ay, springes to catch woodcocks. I do
know,
When the blood burns, how prodigal the soul
Lends the tongue vows: these blazes, daughter,
Giving more light than heat, extinct in both,
Even in their promise, as it is a-making,
You must not take for fire. From this time
Be somewhat scanter of your maiden presence;
Set your entreatments at a higher rate
Than a command to parley. For Lord Hamlet,
Believe so much in him, that he is young,
And with a larger tether may he walk
Than may be given you: in few, Ophelia,
Do not believe his vows, for they are brokers,
Not of that dye which their investments show,
But mere implorators of unholy suits,
Breathing like sanctified and pious bawds,
The better to beguile. This is for all:
I would not, in plain terms, from this time forth,
Have you so slander any moment's pleasure,
As to give words or talk with the Lord Hamlet.
Look to 't, I charge you; come your ways.

Oph. I shall obey, my lord.

SCENE IV.—The Platform.

Enter HAMLET, HORATIO, and MARCELLUS.

Ham. The air bites shrewdly; it is very cold.
Hor. It is a nipping and an eager air.
HAMLET

Act I, Sc. IV.

Ham. What hour now?

Hor. I think it lacks of twelve.

Mar. No, it is struck.

Hor. Indeed? I heard it not; then it draws near the season

Wherein the spirit held his wont to walk.

[A flourish of trumpets, and ordnance shot off, within.

What does this mean, my lord?

Ham. The king doth wake to-night and takes his rouse,

Keeps wassail, and the swaggering up-spring reels;

And, as he drains his draughts of Rhenish down,

The kettle-drum and trumpet thus bray out

The triumph of his pledge.

Hor. Is it a custom?

Ham. Ay, marry, is ‘t: But to my mind,—though I am native here

And to the manner born,—it is a custom

More honour’d in the breach than the observance.

This heavy-headed revel east and west

Makes us traduc’d and tax’d of other nations;

They clepe us drunkards, and with swinish phrase

Soil our addition; and indeed it takes

From our achievements, though perform’d at height,

The pith and marrow of our attribute.

So, oft it chances in particular men,

That for some vicious mole of nature in them,

As, in their birth,—wherein they are not guilty,

Since nature cannot choose his origin,—

By the o’ergrowth of some complexion,

Oft breaking down the pales and forts of reason,

Or by some habit that too much o’er-leaves

The form of plausible manners; that these men,

Carrying, I say, the stamp of one defect,

Being nature’s livery, or fortune’s star,

Their virtues else, be they as pure as grace,

As infinite as man may undergo,

Shall in the general censure take corruption

From that particular fault: the dram of eale

Doth all the noble substance of a doubt,

To his own scandal.

Enter Ghost.

Hor. Look, my lord, it comes.

Ham. Angels and ministers of grace defend us!

Be thou a spirit of health or goblin damn’d,

Bring with thee airs from heaven or blasts from hell,

Be thy intents wicked or charitable,

Thou com’st in such a questionable shape

That I will speak to thee: I’ll call thee Hamlet,

King, father; royal Dane, OI answer me:

Let me not burst in ignorance; but tell

Why thy canoniz’d bones, hearsed in death,

Have burst their cerements; why the sepulchres,

Wherein we saw thee quietly inurn’d,

Hath op’d his ponderous and marble jaws,

To cast thee up again. What may this mean,

That thou, dead corse, again in complete steel

Revisit’st thus the glimpses of the moon,

Making night hideous; and we fools of nature

So horribly to shake our disposition

With thoughts beyond the reaches of our souls?

Say, why is this? wherefore? what should we do?

[The Ghost beckons HAMLET.

Hor. It beckons you to go away with it,

As if it some impartance did desire

To you alone.

Mar. Look, with what courteous action

It waves you to a more removed ground:

But do not go with it.

Hor. No, by no means.

Ham. It will not speak; then, will I follow it.

Hor. Do not, my lord.

Ham. Why, what should be the fear?

I do not set my life at a pin’s fee;

And for my soul, what can it do to that,

Being a thing immortal as itself?

It waves me forth again; I’ll follow it.

Hor. What if it tempt you toward the flood,

my lord,

Or to the dreadful summit of the cliff

That beetles o’er his base into the sea,

And there assume some other horrible form,

Which might deprive your sovereignty of reason

And draw you into madness? think of it;

The very place puts toys of desperation,

Without more motive, into every brain

That looks so many fathoms to the sea

And hears it roar beneath.

Ham. It waves me still. Go on, I’ll follow thee.

Mar. You shall not go, my lord.

Ham. Hold off your hands! 80

Hor. Be rul’d; you shall not go.

Ham. My fate cries out,

And makes each petty artery in this body

As hardy as the Nemean lion’s nerve.

[Ghost beckons.

Still am I call’d. Unhand me, gentlemen.

[Breaking from them.

By heaven! I’ll make a ghost of him that lets me:

I say, away! Go on, I’ll follow thee.

[Exeunt Ghost and HAMLET.

Hor. He waxes desperate with imagination.

Mar. Let’s follow; ’tis not fit thus to obey him.

1013
Act I, Sc. IV.

HAMLET

Hor. Have after. To what issue will this come?

Mar. Something is rotten in the state of Denmark.

Hor. Heaven will direct it.


[Exeunt.]

SCENE V.—Another Part of the Platform.

Enter Ghost and HAMLET.

Ham. Whither wilt thou lead me? speak; I'll go no further.

Ghost. Mark me.

Ham. I will.

Ghost. My hour is almost come, When I to sulphurous and tormenting flames Must render up myself.

Ham. Alas! poor ghost. My hour is almost come, When I to sulphurous and tormenting flames Must render up myself.

Ghost. Pity me not, but lend thy serious hearing To what I shall unfold.

Ham. Speak; I am bound to hear.

Ghost. So art thou to revenge, when thou shalt hear.

Ham. What?

Ghost. I am thy father's spirit; Doom'd for a certain term to walk the night, And for the day confin'd to fast in fires, Till the foul crimes done in my days of nature Are burnt and purg'd away. But that I am forbid To tell the secrets of my prison-house, I could a tale unfold whose lightest word Would harrow up thy soul, freeze thy young blood, Make thy two eyes, like stars, start from their spheres, Thy knotted and combined locks to part, And each particular hair to stand an end, Like quills upon the fretful porpentine: But this eternal blazon must not be To ears of flesh and blood. List, list, O list! If thou didst ever thy dear father love—

Ham. O God!

Ghost. Revenge his foul and most unnatural murder.

Ham. Murder!

Ghost. Murder most foul, as in the best it is; But this most foul, strange, and unnatural.

Ham. Haste me to know't, that I, with wings as swift As meditation or the thoughts of love, May sweep to my revenge.

Ghost. I find thee apt;
And dullest shouldst thou be than the fat weed That rots itself in ease on Lethe wharf,
Ham. Why, right; you are i’ the right; And so, without more circumstance at all, I hold it fit that we shake hands and part; You, as your business and desire shall point you,— For every man hath business and desire, Such as it is,—and, for mine own poor part, Look you, I’ll go pray.  
Hor. These are but wild and whirling words, my lord.  
Ham. I am sorry they offend you, heartily; Yes, faith, heartily.  
Hor. There’s no offence, my lord.  
Ham. Yes, by Saint Patrick, but there is, Horatio.  
And much offence, too. Touching this vision here, It is an honest ghost, that let me tell you; For your desire to know what is between us, O’ermaster’t as you may. And now, good friends, As you are friends, scholars, and soldiers, Give me one poor request.  
Hor. What is’t, my lord? we will.  
Ham. Never make known what you have seen to-night.  
Hor. My lord, we will not.  
Ham. Nay, but swear’t.  
Hor. In faith, My lord, not I.  
Mar. Nor I, my lord, in faith.  
Ham. Upon my sword.  
Mar. We have sworn, my lord, already.  
Ham. Indeed, upon my sword, indeed.  
Ghost. [Beneath.] Swear.  
Ham. Ah, ha, boy! sayst thou so? art thou there, true-penny? Come on,—you hear this fellow in the cellarage,— Consent to swear.  
Hor. Propose the oath, my lord.  
Ham. Never to speak of this that you have seen, Swear by my sword.  
Ghost. [Beneath.] Swear.  
Ham. Hic et ubique? then we’ll shift our ground.  
Come hither, gentlemen, And lay your hands again upon my sword: Never to speak of this that you have heard, Swear by my sword.  
Ghost. [Beneath.] Swear.  
Ham. Well said, old mole! canst work i’ the earth so fast? A worthy pioneer! once more remove, good friends.
Hamlet

Act I, Sc. V.

Hor. O day and night, but this is wondrous strange!

Ham. And therefore as a stranger give it welcome.

There are more things in heaven and earth, Horatio,

Than are dreamt of in your philosophy.

But come;

Here, as before, never, so help you mercy,

How strange or odd soe’r I bear myself,

As I perchance hereafter shall think meet

To put an antic disposition on,

That you, at such times seeing me, never shall,

With arms encumber’d thus, or this head-shake,

Or by pronouncing of some doubtful phrase,

As, ‘Well, well, we know,’ or, ‘We could, an if we would;’

Or, ‘If we list to speak,’ or, ‘There be, an if they might;’

Or such ambiguous giving out, to note

That you know aught of me: this not to do,

So grace and mercy at your most need help you.

Swear.

Ghost. [Beneath.] Swear. [They swear.

Ham. Rest, rest, perturbed spirit! So, gentlemen,

With all my love I do commend me to you:

And what so poor a man as Hamlet is

May do, to express his love and friend ing to you,

God willing, shall not lack. Let us go in to gether;

And still your fingers on your lips, I pray.

The time is out of joint; O cursed spite,

That ever I was born to set it right!

Nay, come, let’s go together. [Exeunt.

ACT II.

SCENE I.—A Room in Polonius’ House

Enter Polonius and Reynaldo.

Pol. Give him this money and these notes, Reynaldo.

Rey. I will, my lord.

Pol. You shall do marvellous wisely, good Reynaldo,

Before you visit him, to make inquiry

Of his behaviour.

Rey. My lord, I did intend it.

Pol. Marry, well said, very well said. Look you, sir,

Inquire me first what Danakers are in Paris;

And how, and who, what means, and where they keep,

What company, at what expense, and finding

By this encompassment and drift of question

That they do know my son, come you more nearer

Than your particular demands will touch it: 12

Take you, as ‘twere, some distant knowledge of

him;

As thus, ‘I know his father, and his friends,

And, in part, him;’ do you mark this, Reynaldo?

Rey. Ay, very well, my lord.

Pol. ‘And, in part, him; but,’ you may say,

‘not well:

But if’t be he I mean, he’s very wild,

Addicted so and so;’ and there put on him

What forgeries you please; marry, none so rank

As may dishonour him; take heed of that; 21

But, sir, such wanton, wild, and usual slips

As are companions noted and most known

To youth and liberty.

Rey. As gaming, my lord? 24

Pol. Ay, or drinking, fencing, swearing, quarrelling,

Drabbing; you may go so far.

Rey. My lord, that would dishonour him.

Pol. Faith, no; as you may season it in the charge.

You must not put another scandal on him,

That he is open to incontinency;

That’s not my meaning; but breathe his faults

so quaintly

That they may seem the taints of liberty,

The flash and outbreak of a fiery mind,

A savageness in unreclaimed blood,

Of general assault.

Rey. But, my good lord,—

Pol. Wherefore should you do this?

Rey. Ay, my lord, 36

I would know that.

Pol. Marry, sir, here’s my drift;

And, I believe, it is a fetch of warrant:

You laying these slight sullies on my son,

As ‘twere a thing a little soil’d i’ the working, 40

Mark you,

Your party in converse, him you would sound,

Having ever seen in the prenominate crimes

The youth you breathe of guilty, be assured;

He closes with you in this consequence;

‘Good sir,’ or so; or ‘friend,’ or ‘gentleman,’

According to the phrase or the addition

Of man and country.

Rey. Very good, my lord. 48

Pol. And then, sir, does he this,—he does,—

what was I about to say? By the mass I was

about to say something: where did I leave?

Rey. At ‘closes in the consequence.’

At ‘friend or so,’ and ‘gentleman.’

Pol. At ‘closes in the consequence,’ ay,

marry;
He closes with you thus: 'I know the gentle-
man;
I saw him yesterday, or t'other day, 56
Or then, or then; with such, or such; and, as
you say,
There was a gaming; there o'ertook in 's rouse;
There falling out at tennis; or perchance,
'I saw him enter such a house of sale,' 60
Viddiced, a brothel, or so forth.
See you now;
Your bait of falsehood takes this carp of truth;
And thus do we of wisdom and of reach, 64
With windlasses, and with assays of bias,
By indirections find directions out:
So by my former lecture and advice
Shall you my son. You have me, have you not?
Rey. My lord, I have.
Pol. God be wi' you; fare you well. 69
Rey. Good my lord!
Pol. Observe his inclination in yourself.
Rey. I shall, my lord. 72
Pol. And let him ply his music.
Rey. Well, my lord.
Pol. Farewell! [Exit REYNALDO.

Enter OPHELIA.

How now, Ophelia! what's the matter?
Oph. Alas! my lord, I have been so af-
frighted.
Pol. With what, in the name of God? 76
Oph. My lord, as I was sewing in my closet,
Lord Hamlet, with his doublet all unbrac'd;
No hat upon his head; his stockings foul'd,
Ungarter'd, and down-gyved to his ankle; 80
Pale as his shirt; his knees knocking each
other;
And with a look so piteous in purport
As if he had been loosed out of hell
To speak of horrors, he comes before me. 84
Pol. Mad for thy love?
Oph. My lord, I do not know;
But truly I do fear it.
Pol. What said he?
Oph. He took me by the wrist and held me
hard,
Then goes he to the length of all his arm, 88
And, with his other hand thus o'er his brow,
He falls to such perusal of my face
As he would draw it. Long stay'd he so;
At last, a little shaking of mine arm, 92
And thrice his head thus waving up and down,
He rais'd a sigh so piteous and profound
That it did seem to shatter all his bulk
And end his being. That done, he lets me go, 96
And, with his head over his shoulder turn'd,
He seem'd to find his way without his eyes;
For out o' doors he went without their help,
And to the last bended their light on me. 100
Pol. Come, go with me; I will go seek the
king.
This is the very ecstasy of love,
Whose violent property fordoes itself
And leads the will to desperate undertakings
As oft as any passion under heaven 105
That does afflict our natures. I am sorry.
What! have you given him any hard words of
late?
Oph. No, my good lord; but, as you did com-
mand,
I did repel his letters and denied
His access to me.
Pol. That hath made him mad.
I am sorry that with better heed and judgment
I had not quoted him; I fear'd he did but trifle,
And meant to wrack thee; but, beshrew my
jealousy! 113
By heaven, it is as proper to our age
To cast beyond ourselves in our opinions
As it is common for the younger sort
To lack discretion. Come, go we to the king:
This must be known; which, being kept close,
might move
More grief to hide than hate to utter love.
Come. [Exeunt.

SCENE II.—A Room in the Castle.

Enter KING, QUEEN, ROSENCRANTZ, GUILDEN-
STERN, and Attendants.

King. Welcome, dear Rosencrantz and Guil-
denstern!
Moreover that we much did long to see you,
The need we have to use you did provoke
Our hasty sending. Something have you heard
Of Hamlet's transformation; so I call it, 5
Since nor the exterior nor the inward man
Resembles that it was. What it should be
More than his father's death, that thus hath put
him
So much from the understanding of himself,
I cannot dream of: I entreat you both,
That, being of so young days brought up with
him,
And since so neighbour'd to his youth and
humour, 12
That you vouchsafe your rest here in our court
Some little time; so by your companies
To draw him on to pleasures, and to gather,
So much as from occasion you may glean, 16
Who's sought to us unknown afflicts him thus,
That, open'd, lies within our remedy.

Queen. Good gentlemen, he hath much talk'd
of you;
And sure I am two men there are not living 30
To whom he more adheres. If it will please you
To show us so much gentry and good will
As to expend your time with us awhile,
For the supply and profit of our hope,
Your visitation shall receive such thanks
As fits a king’s remembrance.

Ros. Both your majesties
Might, by the sovereign power you have of us,
Put your dread pleasures more into command
Than to entreaty.

Guil. But we both obey,
And here give up ourselves, in the full bent,
To lay our service freely at your feet,
To be commanded.

King. Thanks, Rosencrantz and gentle Guildenstern.
Queen. Thanks, Guildenstern and gentle Rosencrantz;
And I beseech you instantly to visit
My too much changed son. Go, some of you, and bring
these gentlemen where Hamlet is.

Guil. Heavens make our presence, and our practices
Pleasant and helpful to him!

Queen. Ay, amen!
[Exeunt ROSENCRANTZ, GUILDENSTERN, and some Attendants.

Enter Polonius.

Pol. The ambassadors from Norway, my good lord,
Are joyfully return’d.

King. Thou still hast been the father of good news.

Pol. Have I, my lord? Assure you, my good liege,
I hold my duty, as I hold my soul,
Both to my God and to my gracious king;
And I do think—or else this brain of mine
Hunts not the trail of policy so sure
As it hath us’d to do—that I have found
The very cause of Hamlet’s lunacy.

King. O! I speak of that; that do I long to hear.

Pol. Give first admittance to the ambassadors;

My news shall be the fruit to that great feast.

King. Thyself do grace to them, and bring them in.

[Exit Polonius.

He tells me, my sweet queen, that he hath found
The head and source of all your son’s distemper.

Queen. I doubt it is no other but the main;
His father’s death, and our o’erhasty marriage.

King. Well, we shall sit him.

Re-enter Polonius, with Voltimand and Cornelius.

Welcome, my good friends!
Say, Voltimand, what from our brother Norway?

Volt. Most fair return of greetings, and desires.

Upon our first, he sent out to suppress
His nephew’s levies, which to him appear’d
To be a preparation ‘gainst the Polack;
But, better look’d into, he truly found
It was against your highness: whereat griev’d,
That so his sickness, age, and impotence
Was falsely borne in hand, sends out arrests
On Fortinbras; which he, in brief, obays,
Receives rebuke from Norway, and, in fine,
Makes vow before his uncle never more
To give the essay of arms against your majesty.
Whereon old Norway, overcome with joy,
Gives him three thousand crowns in annual fee,
And his commission to employ those soldiers,
So levied as before, against the Polack;
With an entreaty, herein further shown,

[Giving a paper.

That it might please you to give quiet pass
Through your dominions for this enterprise,
On such regards of safety and allowance
As therein are set down.

King. It likes us well;
And at our more consider’d time we’ll read,
Answer, and think upon this business:
Meantime we thank you for your well-took labour.

Go to your rest; at night we’ll feast together:
Most welcome home.

[Exeunt Voltimand and CORNELIUS.

Pol. This business is well ended.

My liege, and madam, to expostulate
What majesty should be, what duty is,
Why day is day, night night, and time is time,
Were nothing but to waste night, day, and time.
Therefore, since brevity is the soul of wit,
And tediousness the limbs and outward flourishes,
I will be brief. Your noble son is mad:
Mad call I it; for, to define true madness,
What is ‘t but to be nothing else but mad?
But let that go.

Queen. More matter, with less art.

Pol. Madam, I swear I use no art at all.

That he is mad, ’tis true; ’tis true ’tis pity;
And pity ’tis ’tis true: a foolish figure;
But farewell it, for I will use no art.

Mad let us grant him, then; and now remains
That we find out the cause of this effect,
or rather say, the cause of this defect,
For this effect defective comes by cause;
Thus it remains, and the remainder thus.

Perpend.
I have a daughter, have while she is mine; 107
Who, in her duty and obedience, mark,
Hath given me this: now, gather, and surmise.
To the celestial, and my soul's idol, the most
beautiful Ophelia.—

That's an ill phrase, a vile phrase; 'beautiful'
is a vile phrase; but you shall hear. Thus:

In her excellent white bosom, these, &c.—
Queen. Came this from Hamlet to her?
Pol. Good madam, stay awhile; I will be
faithful.

Doubt thou the stars are fire;
Doubt that the sun doth move; 116
Doubt truth to be a liar;
But never doubt I love.

O dear Ophelia! I am ill at these numbers:
I have not art to reckon my groans; but that I
love thee best, O most best! believe it. Adieu.
Thine evermore, most dear lady, whilst
this machine is due to him,

HAMLET.
This in obedience hath my daughter shown me;
And more above, hath his solicitings,
As they fell out by time, by means, and place,
All given to mine ear.

King. But how hath she
Pol. What do you think of me?
King. As of a man faithful and honourable.
Pol. I would fain prove so. But what might
you think,
When I had seen this hot love on the wing,—
As I perceiv'd it, I must tell you that,
Before my daughter told me,—what might you,
Or my dear majesty, your queen here, think,
If I had play'd the desk or table-book, 136
Or given my heart a winking, mute, and dumb;
Or look'd upon this love with idle sight;
What might you think? No, I went round towork,
And my young mistress thus I did bespeak: 140
'Lord Hamlet is a prince, out of thy star;
This must not be;' and then I precepts gave her,
That she should lock herself from his resort,
Admit no messengers, receive no tokens.

Which done, she took the fruits of my advice;
And he, repuls'd,—a short tale to make,—
Fall into a sadness, then into a fast,
Thence to a watch, thence to a weakness, 148
Thence to a lightness; and by this declension
Into the madness wherein he raves, and
All we wait for.

King. Do you think 'tis this?
Queen. It may be, very likely.
Pol. Hath there been such a time,—I'd fain
know that,—
That I have positively said, 'Tis so,'
When it prov'd otherwise?

King. Not that I know.
Pol. Take this from this, if this be otherwise:
[Pointing to his head and shoulder.
If circumstances lead me, I will find
Where truth is hid, though it were hid indeed
Within the centre.

King. How may we try it further?
Pol. You know sometimes he walks four hours
together
Here in the lobby.

Queen. So he does indeed.
Pol. At such a time I'll loose my daughter
to him;
Be you and I behind an arras then;
Mark the encounter; if he love her not, 164
And be not from his reason fallen thereon,
Let me be no assistant for a state,
But keep a farm, and carter.

King. We will try it.
Queen. But look, where sadly the poor wretch
comes reading.

Pol. Away! I do beseech you, both away.
I'll board him presently.

[Execute KING, QUEEN, and Attendants.

Enter HAMLET, reading.

O! give me leave.

How does my good Lord Hamlet?

Ham. Well, God a-mercy.
Pol. Do you know me, my lord?
Ham. Excellent well; you are a fishmonger.
Pol. Not I, my lord.
Ham. Then I would you were so honest a
man.
Pol. Honest, my lord!
Ham. Ay, sir; to be honest, as this world
goes, is to be one man picked out of ten thou-
sand.

Pol. That's very true, my lord.
Ham. For if the sun breed maggots in a dead
dog, being a good kissing carrion,—Have you a
daughter?

Pol. I have, my lord.
Ham. Let her not walk i' the sun: conception
is a blessing; but not as your daughter may con-
ceive. Friend, look to 't.

Pol. [Aside.] How say you by that? Still
harping on my daughter: yet he knew me not
at first; he said I was a fishmonger: he is far
gone, far gone: and truly in my youth I suffered
much extremity for love; very near this. I'll
speak to him again. What do you read, my lord?

Ham. Words, words, words.
Pol. What is the matter, my lord?
Ham. Between who?
Pol. I mean the matter that you read, my
lord.
Ham. Slanders, sir: for the satirical rogue says here that old men have grey beards, that their faces are wrinkled, their eyes purging thick amber and plum-tree gum, and that they have a plentiful lack of wit, together with most weak hams: all which, sir, though I most powerfully and potently believe, yet I hold it not honesty to have it thus set down; for you yourself, sir, should be old as I am, if, like a crab, you could go backward.

Pol. [Aside.] Though this be madness, yet there is method in 't. Will you walk out of the air, my lord?

Ham. Into my grave?

Pol. Indeed, that is out o' the air. [Aside.] How pregnant sometimes his replies are! a happiness that often madness hits on, which reason and sanity could not so prosperously be delivered of. I will leave him, and suddenly contrive the means of meeting between him and my daughter. My honourable lord, I will most humbly take my leave of you.

Ham. You cannot, sir, take from me any thing that I will more willingly part withal; except my life, except my life, except my life.

Pol. Fare you well, my lord. [Going.

Ham. These tedious old fools!

Enter ROSENCRantz and GUILDENSTERN.

Pol. You go to seek the Lord Hamlet; there he is.

Ros. [To POLONIUS.] God save you, sir! [Exit POLONIUS.

Gul. Mine honoured lord!

Ros. My most dear lord!

Ham. My excellent good friends! How dost thou, Guildenstern? Ah, Rosencrantz! Good lads, how do ye both?

Ros. As the indissoluble children of the earth.

Gul. Happy in that we are not over happy; On Fortune's cap we are not the very button.

Ham. Nor the soles of her shoe?

Ros. Neither, my lord.

Ham. Then you live about her waist, or in the middle of her favours?

Gul. Faith, her privates we.

Ham. In the secret parts of Fortune? Oh! most true; she is a strumpet. What news?

Ros. None, my lord, but that the world's grown honest.

Ham. Then is doomsday near; but your news is not true. Let me question more in particular: what have you, my good friends, deserved at the hands of Fortune, that she sends you to prison hither?

Gul. Prison, my lord!

Ham. Denmark's a prison.

Ros. Then is the world one.

Ham. A goodly one; in which there are many confines, wards, and dungeons, Denmark being one o' the worst.

Ros. We think not so, my lord.

Ham. Why, then, 'tis none to you; for there is nothing either good or bad, but thinking makes it so: to me it is a prison.

Ros. Why, then your ambition makes it one; 'tis too narrow for your mind.

Ham. O God! I could be bounded in a nutshell, and count myself a king of infinite space, were it not that I have bad dreams.

Gul. Which dreams, indeed, are ambition, for the very substance of the ambitious is merely the shadow of a dream.

Ham. A dream itself is but a shadow.

Ros. Truly, and I hold ambition of so airy and light a quality that it is but a shadow's shadow.

Ham. Then are we beggars bodies, and our monarchs and outstretched heroes the beggars' shadows. Shall we to the court? for, by my fay, I cannot reason.

Ros. [Aside.] We'll wait upon you.

Ham. No such matter; I will not sort you with the rest of my servants, for, to speak to you like an honest man, I am most dreadfully attended. But, in the beaten way of friendship, what make you at Elsinore?

Ros. To visit you, my lord; no other occasion.

Ham. Beggar that I am, I am even poor in thanks; but I thank you: and sure, dear friends, my thanks are too dear a halfpenny. Were you not sent for? Is it your own inclining? Is it a free visitation? Come, come, deal justly with me: come, come; nay, speak.

Gul. What should we say, my lord?

Ham. Why anything, but to the purpose. You were sent for; and there is a kind of confession in your looks which your modesties have not craft enough to colour: I know the good king and queen have sent for you.

Ros. To what end, my lord?

Ham. That you must teach me. But let me conjure you, by the rights of our fellowship, by the consecration of our youth, by the obligation of our ever-preserved love, and by what more dear a better proposer could charge you withal, be even and direct with me, whether you were sent for or no!

Ros. [Aside to GUILDENSTERN.] What say you?

Ham. [Aside.] Nay, then, I have an eye of you. If you love me, hold not off.
Gull. My lord, we were sent for.

Ham. I will tell you why; so shall my anticipation prevent your discovery, and your secrecy to the king and queen mould not feather. I have of late,—but wherefore I know not,—lost all my mirth, forgone all custom of exercises; and indeed it goes so heavily with my disposition that this goodly frame, the earth, seems to me a sterile promontory; this most excellent canopy, the air, look you, this brave o'errhanging firmament, this majestical roof fretted with golden fire, why, it appears no other thing to me but a foul and pestilent congregation of vapours.

What a piece of work is a man! How noble in reason! How infinite in faculty! in form, in moving, how express and admirable! in action how like an angel! in apprehension how like a god! the beauty of the world! the paragon of animals! And yet, to me, what is this quintessence of dust? man delights not me; no, nor woman neither, though, by your smiling, you seem to say so.

Ros. My lord, there was no such stuff in my thoughts.

Ham. Why did you laugh then, when I said, 'man delights not me'?

Ros. To think, my lord; if you delight not in man, what lenten entertainment the players shall receive from you: we cotted them on the way; and hither are they coming, to offer you service.

Ham. He that plays the king shall be welcome; his majesty shall have tribute of me; the adventurous knight shall use his foil and target; the lover shall not sigh gratis; the humorous man shall end his part in peace; the clown shall make those laugh whose lungen are tickle o’ the sere; and the lady shall say her mind freely, or the blank verse shall halt for’t. What players are they?

Ros. Even those you were wont to take delight in, the tragedians of the city.

Ham. How chances it they travel? their residence, both in reputation and profit, was better both ways.

Ros. I think their inhibition comes by the means of the late innovation.

Ham. Do they hold the same estimation they did when I was in the city? Are they so followed?

Ros. No, indeed they are not.

Ham. How comes it? Do they grow rusty?

Ros. Nay, their endeavour keeps in the wound pace: but there is, as we say, an airy of children, little eyes, that cry out on the top of question, and are most tyrannically clapped for’t: these are now the fashion, and so berattle the common stages,—so they call them,—that many wearing rapiers are afraid of goose-quills, and dare scarce come thither.

Ham. What! are these children? who maintains ’em? how are they escoted? Will they pursue the quality no longer than they can sing? will they not say afterwards, if they should grow themselves to common players,—as it is most like, if their means are no better,—their writers do them wrong, to make them exclaim against their own succession?

Ros. Faith, there has been much to-do on both sides: and the nation holds it no sin to tarre them to controversy: there was, for a while, no money bid for argument, unless the poet and the player went to cuffs in the question.

Ham. Is it possible?

Gull. O1 there has been much throwing about of brains.

Ham. Do the boys carry it away?

Ros. Ay, that they do, my lord; Hercules and his lord too.

Ham. It is not very strange; for my uncle is King of Denmark, and those that would make mows at him while my father lived, give twenty, forty, fifty, a hundred ducats a-piece for his picture in little. ’Sblood, there is something in this more than natural, it philosophy could find it out.

[Fleurish of trumpets within.

Gull. There are the players.

Ham. Gentlemen, you are welcome to Elsinore. Your hands, come then; the appurtenance of welcome is fashion and ceremony: let me comply with you in this garb, lest my extent to the players—which, I tell you, must show fairly outward—should more appear like entertain-ment than yours. You are welcome; but my uncle-father and aunt-mother are deceived.

Gull. In what, my dear lord?

Ham. I am but mad north-north-west: when the wind is southerly I know a hawk from a handsaw.

Enter Polonius.

Pol. Well be with you, gentlemen!

Ham. Hark you, Guildenstern; and you too; at each ear a hearer: that great baby you see there is not yet out of his swaddling-clouts.

Ros. Happily he’s the second time come to them; for they say an old man is twice a child.

Ham. I will prophesy he comes to tell me of the players; mark it. You say right, sir; o’ Monday morning; ’twas so indeed.

Pol. My lord, I have news to tell you.

Ham. My lord, I have news to tell you. When Rosencrantz was an actor in Rome,—

Pol. The actors are some hither, my lord.

Ham. Buss, buss!
Pol. Upon my honour,—
Ham. Then came each actor on his ass,—
Pol. The best actors in the world, either for tragedy, comedy, history, pastoral, pastoral-comical, historical-pastoral, tragical-historical, tragical-comical-historical-pastoral, scene indivisible, or poem unlimited: Seneca cannot be too heavy, nor Plautus too light. For the law of writ and the liberty, these are the only men.
Ham. O Jephthah, judge of Israel, what a treasure hast thou!
Pol. What a treasure had he, my lord?
Ham. Why
One fair daughter and no more,
The which he loved passing well.
Pol. [Aside.] Still on my daughter.
Ham. Am I not i' the right, old Jephthah?
Pol. If you call me Jephthah, my lord, I have a daughter that I love passing well.
Ham. Nay, that follows not.
Pol. What follows, then, my lord?
Ham. Why,
As by lot, God wot.
And then, you know,
It came to pass, as most like it was.—
The first row of the pious chanson will show you more; for look where my abridgment comes.

Enter four or five Players.
You are welcome, masters; welcome, all. I am glad to see thee well; welcome, good friends. O, my old friend! Thy face is valanced since I saw thee last: comest thou to bear me in Denmark? What! my young lady and mistress! By 'r lady, your ladyship is nearer heaven than when I saw you last, by the altitude of a shopine. Pray God, your voice, like a piece of uncurrent gold, be not cracked within the ring. Masters, you are all welcome. We'll se'n to't like French falconers, fly at anything we see: we'll have a speech straight. Come, give us a taste of your quality; come, a passionate speech.

First Play. What speech, my good lord?
Ham. I heard thee speak me a speech once, but it was never acted; or, if it was, not above once; for the play, I remember, pleased not the million; 'twas saviare to the general: but it was—
as I received it, and others, whose judgments in such matters cried in the top of mine—an excellent play, well digested in the scenes, set down with as much modesty as cunning. I remember one said there were no sallies in the lines to make the matter savoury, nor no matter in the phrase that might indict the author of affectation; but called it an honest method, as wholesome as sweet, and by very much more handsome than fine. One speech in it I chiefly loved; 'twas Aeneas' tale to Dido; and thereabout of it especially, where he speaks of Priam's slaughter. If it live in your memory, begin at this line: let me see, let me see:—

...
Pol. This is too long.

Ham. It shall to the barber’s, with your beard. Pray, say on: he’s for a joker of a tale of bawdry, or he sleeps. Say on; come to Hecuba.

First Player. But who, O! who had seen the mobled queen—

Ham. ‘The mobled queen?’—

Pol. That’s good; ‘mobled queen’ is good.

First Player. Run barefoot up and down, thread’ning the flames

With bissom rheum; a clout upon that head
Where late the diadem stood; and, for a robe,
About her lank and all o’er-temed loins,
A blanket, in the alarm of fear caught up;
Who this had seen, with tongue in venom sleep’d,
‘Gainst Fortune’s state would treason have pronounced:
But if the gods themselves did see her then,
When she saw Pyrrhus make malicious sport
In mincing with his sword her husband’s limbs,
The instant burst of clamour that she made—
Unless things mortal move them not at all—
Would have made milch the burning eyes of heaven,
And passion in the gods.

Pol. Look! wh’er he has not turned his colour
and has tears in his eyes. Pray, no more.

Ham. ‘Tis well; I’ll have thee speak out the rest soon. Good my lord, will you see the players well bestowed? Do you hear, let them be well used; for they are the abstracts and brief chronicles of the time: after your death you were better have a bad epitaph than their ill report while you live.

Pol. My lord, I will use them according to their desert.

Ham. God’s bodikins, man, much better; use every man after his desert, and who should ‘scape whipping? Use them after your own honour and dignity: the less they deserve, the more merit is in your bounty. Take them in.

Pol. Come, sirs.

Ham. Follow him, friends: we’ll hear a play to-morrow. [Exit POLONIUS, with all the Players but the First.] Dost thou hear me, old friend; can you play the Murder of Gonzago?

First Player. Ay, my lord.

Ham. We’ll ha’ to-morrow night. You could, for a need, study a speech of some dozen or sixteen lines, which I would set down and insert in’t, could you not?

First Player. Ay, my lord.

Ham. Very well. Follow that lord; and look you mock him not. [Exit First Player.] [To Ros.]

Ros. Good my lord!

[Exeunt ROSECRANTZ and GUILDENSTERN.]

Ham. Ay, so, God be wi’ ye! Now I am alone.

O! what a rogue and peasant slave am I!

Is it not monstrous that this player here,
But in a fiction, in a dream of passion,
Could force his soul so to his own conceit
That from her working all his visage wann’d,
Tears in his eyes, distraction in ’s aspect,
A broken voice, and his whole function suiting
With forms to his conceit? and all for nothing!

For Hecuba!

What’s Hecuba to him or he to Hecuba
That he should weep for her? What would he do
Had he the motive and the cue for passion
That I have? He would drown the stage with tears,

And cleave the general ear with horrid speech,
Make mad the guilty and appal the free,
Confound the ignorant, and amaze indeed
The very faculties of eyes and ears.

Yet I,

A dull and muddy-mettled rascal, peak,
Like John-a-dreams, unpregnant of my cause,
And can say nothing: no, not for a king,

Upon whose property and most dear life

A damn’d defeat was made. Am I a coward?

Who calls me villain? breaks my state across?
Plucks off my beard and blows it in my face?

Tweaks me by the nose? gives me the lie i’ the throat,

As deep as to the lungs? Who does me this?

Hal.

Swounds, I should take it, for it cannot be

But I am pigeon-liver’d, and lack gall

To make oppression bitter, or ere this

I should have fatted all the region kites

With this slave’s offal. Bloody, bawdy villain!

Remorseless, treacherous, lecherous, kindless villain!

O! vengeance!

Why, what an ass am I! This is most brave

That I, the son of a dear father murder’d,

Prompted to my revenge by heaven and hell,

Must, like a whore, unpack my heart with words,

And fall a-cursing, like a very drab,

A scullion!

Fie upon’t! fo! About, my brain! I have heard,

That guilty creatures sitting at a play

Have by the very cunning of the scene

 Been struck so to the soul that presently

They have proclaim’d their malefactions;

For murder, though it have no tongue, will speak.
With most miraculous organ. I'll have these players
Play something like the murder of my father 632
Before mine uncle; I'll observe his looks;
I'll tent him to the quick: if he but blech
I know my course. The spirit that I have seen
May be the devil: and the devil hath power 636
To assume a pleasing shape; yea, and perhaps
Out of my weakness and my melancholy—
As he is very potent with such spirits—
Abuses me to damn me. I'll have grounds 640
More relative than this: the play's the thing
Wherein I'll catch the conscience of the king.
[Exit.

ACT III.

SCENE I.—A Room in the Castle.

Enter King, Queen, Polonius, Ophelia, Rosencrantz, and Guildenstern.

King. And can you, by no drift of circumstance,
Get from him why he puts on this confusion,
Grating so harshly all his days of quiet
With turbulent and dangerous lunacy? 4
Ros. He does confess he feels himself distracted;
But from what cause he will by no means speak.
Guil. Nor do we find him forward to be sounded,
But, with a crafty madness, keeps aloof, 8
When we would bring him on to some confession
Of his true state.

Queen. Did he receive you well?
Ros. Most like a gentleman.
Guil. But with much forcing of his disposition. 12
Ros. Niggard of question, but of our demands
Most free in his reply.

Queen. Did you assay him
To any pastime?
Ros. Madam, it so fell out that certain players
We o'er-naughted on the way; of these we told
him,
And there did seem in him a kind of joy
To hear of it: they are about the court,
And, as I think, they have already order
This night to play before him.

Pol. 'Tis most true;
And he beseech'd me to entreat your majesties
To hear and see the matter.

King. With all my heart; and it doth much content me
To hear him so inclin'd.
Good gentlemen, give him a further edge.

And drive his purpose on to these delights.

Ros. We shall, my lord.
[Exeunt Rosencrantz and Guildenstern.

King. Sweet Gertrude, leave us too;
For we have closely set for Hamlet hither, 29
That he, as 'were by accident, may here
Afront Ophelia.
Her father and myself, lawful espials, 32
Will so bestow ourselves, that, seeing, unseen,
We may of their encounter frankly judge,
And gather by him, as he is behav'd,
If 't be the affliction of his love or no 36
That thus he suffers for.

Queen. I shall obey you.
And for your part, Ophelia, I do wish
That your good beauties be the happy cause
Of Hamlet's wildness; so shall I hope your virtues
Will bring him to his wonted way again,
To both your honours.

Oph. Madam, I wish it may. 40
[Exit Queen.

Pol. Ophelia, walk you here. Gracious, so please you,
We will bestow ourselves. [To OPHIELA.] Read
on this book:
That show of such an exercise may colour
Your loneliness. We are oft to blame in this,
'Tis too much prov'd, that with devotion's visage
And pious action we do sugar o'er
The devil himself.

King. [Aside.] O! 'tis too true;
How smart a lash that speech doth give my conscience!
The harlot's cheek, beautied with plastering art,
Is not more ugly to the thing that helps it
Than is my deed to my most painted word:
O heavy burden!

Pol. I hear him coming; let's withdraw, my lord.
[Exeunt King and Polonius.

Enter Hamlet.

Ham. To be, or not to be: that is the question:
Whether 'tis nobler in the mind to suffer
The slings and arrows of outrageous fortune,
Or to take arms against a sea of troubles,
And by opposing end them? To die: to sleep;
No more; and, by a sleep to say we end
The heart-ache and the thousand natural shocks
That flesh is heir to, 'tis a consummation
Devoutly to be wish'd. To die, to sleep;
To sleep: perchance to dream: ay, there's the rub;
For in that sleep of death what dreams may come
When we have shuffled off this mortal coil.
HAMLET  
Act III, Sc. I.

Must give us pause. There’s the respect
That makes calamity of so long life;
For who would bear the whips and scorns of time,
The oppressor’s wrong, the proud man’s contemptfully,
The pangs of dispriz’d love, the law’s delay,
The insolence of office, and spurns
That patient merit of the unworthy takes,
When he himself might his quietus make
With a bare bodkin? who would fardels bear,
To grunt and sweat under a weary life,
But that the dread of something after death,
The undiscover’d country from whose bourn
No traveller returns, puzzles the will,
And makes us rather bear those ills we have
Than fly to others that we know not of?
Thus conscience does make cowards of us all;
And thus the native hue of resolution
Is sicklied o’er with the pale cast of thought,
And enterprises of great pith and moment
With this regard their currents turn awry,
And lose the name of action. Soft you now! 88
The fair Ophelia! Nymph, in thy orisons
Be all my sins rememb’red.

Oph.  
Good my lord,
How does your honour for this many a day?

Ham. I humbly thank you; well, well, well.

Oph. My lord, I have remembrances of yours,
That I have longed long to re-deliver;
I pray you, now receive them.

Ham.  
No, not I;
I never gave you aught.

Oph.  
My honour’d lord, you know right well you did;
And, with them, words of so sweet breath
compos’d
As made the things more rich: their perfume
lost,
Take these again; for to the noble mind
Rich gifts wax poor when givers prove unkind.
There, my lord.

Ham. Ha, ha! are you honest?

Oph. My lord!

Ham. Are you fair?

Oph. What means your lordship?

Ham. That if you be honest and fair, your honesty should admit no discourse to your beauty.

Oph. Could beauty, my lord, have better commerce than with honesty?

Ham. Ay, truly; for the power of beauty will sooner transform honesty from what it is to a bawd than the force of honesty can translate beauty into his likeness: this was sometime a paradox, but now the time gives it proof. I did love thee once.

Oph. Indeed, my lord, you made me believe so.

Ham. You should not have believed me; for virtue cannot so inoculate our old stock but we shall relish of it: I loved you not.

Oph. I was the more deceived.

Ham. Get thee to a nunnery: why wouldst thou be a breeder of sinners? I am myself indifferent honest; but yet I could accuse me of such things that it were better my mother had not borne me. I am very proud, revengeful, ambitious; with more offences at my beck than I have thoughts to put them in, imagination to give them shape, or time to act them in. What should such fellows as I do crawling between heaven and earth? We are arrant knaves, all; believe none of us. Go thy ways to a nunnery. Where’s your father?

Oph. At home, my lord.

Ham. Let the doors be shut upon him, that he may play the fool nowhere but in his own house. Farewell.

Oph. O! help him, you sweet heavens!

Ham. If thou dost marry, I’ll give thee this plague for thy dowry: be thou as chaste as ice, as pure as snow, thou shalt not escape calumny. Get thee to a nunnery, go; farewell. Or, if thou wilt needs marry, marry a fool; for wise men know well enough what monsters you make of them. To a nunnery, go; and quickly too. Farewell.

Oph. O heavenly powers, restore him!

Ham. I have heard of your paintings too, well enough; God hath given you one face, and you make yourselves another: you jig, you amble, and you liep, and nickname God’s creatures, and make your wankniness your ignorance. Go to, I’ll no more on’t; it hath made me mad. I say, we will have no more marriages; those that are married already, all but one, shall live; the rest shall keep as they are. To a nunnery, go.

[Exit.

Oph. O! what a noble mind is here o’erthrown:
The courtier’s, soldier’s, scholar’s, eye, tongue, sword;
The expectancy and rose of the fair state,
The glass of fashion and the mould of form,
The observ’d of all observers, quite, quite down!
And I, of ladies most deject and wretched,
That suck’d the honey of his music vows,
Now see that noble and most sovereign reason,
Like sweet bells jangled, out of tune and harsh;
That unmatch’d form and feature of blown youth
Blasted with ecstasy: O! woe is me,
To have seen what I have seen, see what I see;

[1]
Ham. Be not too tame neither, but let your own discretion be your tutor: suit the action to the word, the word to the action; with this special observance, that you o'erstep not the modesty of nature; for anything so overdone is from the purpose of playing, whose end, both at the first and now, was and is, to hold, as 'twere, the mirror up to nature; to show virtue her own feature, scorn her own image, and the very age and body of the time his form and pressure. Now, this overdone, or come tardy off, though it make the unskilful laugh, cannot but make the judicious grieve; the censure of which one must in your allowance o'erweigh a whole theatre of others. O! there be players that I have seen play, and heard others praise, and that highly, not to speak it profanely, that, neither having the accent of Christians nor the gait of Christian, pagan, nor man, have so strutted and bellowed that I have thought some of nature's journeymen had made men and not made them well, they imitated humanity so abominably.

First Play. I hope we have reformed that indifferently with us.

Ham. O! reform it altogether. And let those that play your clowns speak no more than is set down for them; for there be of them that will themselves laugh, to set on some quantity of barren spectators to laugh too, though in the mean time some necessary question of the play be then to be considered; that's villainous, and shows a most pitiful ambition in the fool that uses it. Go, make you ready. [Exeunt Players.

Enter Polonius, Rosencrantz, and Guildenstern.

How now, my lord! will the king hear this piece of work?

Pol. The queen too, and that presently.

Ham. Bid the players make haste.

[Exeunt Polonius.

Will you two help to hasten them?

Ros. We will, my lord.

Guilt. What, ho! Horatio!

Enter Horatio.

Hor. Here, sweet lord, at your service.

Ham. Horatio, thou art e'en as just a man As e'er my conversation cop'd withal.

Hor. O! my dear lord,—

Ham. Nay, do not think I flatter; For what advancement may I hope from thee, That no revenue hast but thy good spirits To feed and clothe thee? Why should the poor be flatter'd?
No; let the candied tongue lick absurd pomp,
And crook the pregnant hinges of the knee
Where thrift may follow fawning. Dost thou hear?

Since my dear soul was mistress of her choice
And could of men distinguish, her election
Hath seal'd thee for herself; for thou hast been
As one, in suffering all, that suffers nothing,
A man that fortune's buflets and rewards
Hast ta'en with equal thanks; and bless'd are those
Whose blood and judgment are so well mingled
That they are not a pipe for fortune's finger
To sound what stop she please. Give me that man
That is not passion's slave, and I will wear him
In my heart's core, ay, in my heart of heart,
As I do thee. Something too much of this.
There is a play to-night before the king;
One scene of it comes near the circumstance
Which I have told thee of my father's death:
I prithee, when thou seest that act afoot,
Even with the very comment of thy soul
Observe mine uncle; if his occulted guilt
Do not itself unkennel in one speech,
It is a damned ghost that we have seen,
And my imaginations are as foul
As Vulcan's slithy. Give him heedful note;
For mine eyes will rivet to his face,
And after we will both our judgments join
In censure of his seeming.

Hor. Well, my lord: If he steal aught whilst this play is playing,
And 'scape detecting, I will pay the theft.

Ham. They are coming to the play; I must be idle: Get you a place.

Danish March. A Flourish. Enter King, Queen, Polonius, Ophelia, Rosencrantz, Guildenstern, and Others.

King. How fares our cousin Hamlet?

Ham.Excellent, I' faith; of the chameleon's dish: I eat the air, promise-crammed, you cannot feed capons so.

King. I have nothing with this answer, Hamlet; these words are not mine.

Ham. No, nor mine now. [To Polonius.] My lord, you played once I' the university, you say?

Pol. That did I, my lord, and was accounted a good actor.

Ham. And what did you enact?

Pol. I did enact Julius Caesar: I was killed i' the Capitol; Brutus killed me.
Act III, Sc. II.

Ham. Marry, this is miching mallecho; it means mischief.

Oph. Belike this show imports the argument of the play.

Enter Prologue.

Ham. We shall know by this fellow: the players cannot keep counsel; they'll tell all. Oph. Will he tell us what this show meant? Ham. Ay, or any show that you'll show him; be not you ashamed to show, he'll not shame to tell you what it means.

Oph. You are naught, you are naught. I'll mark the play.

Pro. For us and for our tragedy,

Here stooping to your clemency,

We beg your hearing patiently.

Ham. Is this a prologue, or the posy of a ring?

Oph. 'Tis brief, my lord.

Ham. As woman's love.

Enter two Players, King and Queen.

P. King. Full thirty times hath Phæbus' cart gone round

Neptune's salt wash and Tellus' orb'd ground,
And thirty dozen moons with borrow'd sheen
About the world have times twelve threes hundred,
Since love our hearts and Hymen did our hands
Untie committal in most sacred bands.

P. Queen. So many journeys may the sun and moon
Make us again count o'er ere love be done!
But, woe is me! you are so sick of late,
So far from cheer and from your former state,
That I distrust you. Yet, though I distrust,
Discomfit you, my lord, it nothing must;
For women's fear and love holds quantity,
In neither aught, or in extremity.

Now, what my love is, proof hath made you know;
And as my love is siz'd, my fear is so.
Where love is great, the littlest doubts are fear;
Where little fears grow great, great love grows there.

P. King. Faith, I must leave thee, love, and shortly too;

My operant powers their functions must to do:
And thou shalt live in this fair world behind,
Honour'd, belov'd, and happy one as she.
For husband shalt thou—

P. Queen. O! confound the rest;
Such love must needs be treason in my breast:
In second husband let me be accurst;
None wed the second but who kill'd the first.

Ham. [Aside.] Wormwood, wormwood.

P. Queen. The instances that second marriage move,
King. Have you heard the argument? Is there no offence in 't?
Ham. No, no, they do but jest, poison in jest; no offence i' the world. 248

King. What do you call the play?
Ham. The Mouse-trap. Marry, how? Tropically. This play is the image of a murder done in Vienna; Gonzago is the duke's name; his wife, Baptista. You shall see anon; 'tis a knavish piece of work: but what of that? your majesty and we that have free souls, it touches us not: let the galled jade wince, our withers are unwrung. 257

Enter Player as Lucianus.

This is one Lucianus, nephew to the king.

Oph. You are a good chorus, my lord.

Ham. I could interpret between you and your love, if I could see the puppets dallying. 261

Oph. You are keen, my lord, you are keen.

Ham. It would cost you a groaning to take off my edge. 264

Oph. Still better, and worse.

Ham. So you must take your husbands.

Begin, murderer; pox, leave thy damnable faces, and begin. Come; the croaking raven doth bellow for revenge.

Luc. Thoughts black, hands apt, drugs fit, and time agreeing;
Confederate season, else no creature seeing:
Thou mixture rank, of midnight weeds collected,
With Hecate's ban thrice blasphem'd, thrice injected,
Thy natural magic and dire property,
On wholesome life usurp immutably.

[Pour's the poison into the Sleeper's ears.

Ham. He poisons him i' the garden for his estate. His name's Gonzago; the story is extant, and writ in very choice Italian. You shall see anon how the murderer gets the love of Gonzago's wife.

Oph. The king rises.

Ham. What! frightened with false fire?

Queen. How fares my lord?

Pol. Give o'er the play.

King. Give me some light: away!

All. Lights, lights, lights!

[Exit all except Hamlet and Horatio.

Ham. Why, let the stricken deer go weep,
The hart ungalled play;

For some must watch, while some must sleep;

So runs the world away.

Would not this, sir, and a forest of feathres, if the rest of my fortunes turn Turk with me, with two Provincial poses on my rased shoes, get me a fellowing in a cry of players, sir?

Hor. Half a share.

Ham. A whole one, I.

For thou dost know, O Damon dear,
This realm dismantled was
Of Jove himself; and now reigns here
A very, very—pajock.

Hor. You might have rimed.

Ham. O good Horatio! I'll take the ghost's word for a thousand pound. Didst perceive?

Hor. Very well, my lord.

Ham. Upon the talk of the poisoning?

Hor. I did very well note him.

Ham. Ah, ha! Come, some music! come, the recorders!

For if the king like not the comedy,
Why then, belike he likes it not, perdy.

Come, some music!

Re-enter Rosencrantz and Guildenstern.

Gul. Good my lord, vouchsafe me a word with you.

Ham. Sir, a whole history.

Gul. The king, sir,—

Ham. Ay, sir, what of him?

Gul. Is in his retirement marvellous dis-
tempered.

Ham. With drink, sir?

Gul. No, my lord, rather with choler.

Ham. Your wisdom should show itself more richer to signify this to his doctor; for, for me to put him to his purgation would perhaps plunge him into far more choler.

Gul. Good my lord, put your discourse into some frame, and start not so wildly from my affair.

Ham. I am tame, sir; pronounce.

Gul. The queen, your mother, in most great affliction of spirit, hath sent me to you.

Ham. You are welcome.

Gul. Nay, good my lord, this courtesy is not of the right breed. If it shall please you to make me a wholesome answer, I will do your mother's commandment; if not, your pardon and my return shall be the end of my business.

Ham. Sir, I cannot.

Gul. What, my lord?

Ham. Make you a wholesome answer; my wit's diseased; but, sir, such answer as I can make, you shall command; or, rather, as you say, my mother: therefore no more, but to the matter: my mother, you say,—

Roc. Then, thus she says: your behaviour hath struck her into amazement and admiration.

Ham. O wonderful son, that can so astonish a mother! But is there no sequel at the heels of this mother's admiration? Impart...
Act III, Sc. II.

HAMLET

Ros. She desires to speak with you in her closet ere you go to bed.

Ham. We shall obey, were she ten times our mother. Have you any further trade with us?

Ros. My lord, you once did love me.

Ham. So I do still, by these pickers and stealers. 356

Ros. Good my lord, what is your cause of distemper? you do surely bar the door upon your own liberty, if you deny your griefs to your friend.

Ham. Sir, I lack advancement.

Ros. How can that be when you have the voice of the king himself for your succession in Denmark?

Ham. Ay, sir, but 'While the grass grows,'—the proverb is something musty.

Enter Players, with recorders.

O! the recorders: let me see one. To withdraw with you: why do you go about to recover the wind of me, as if you would drive me into a toil?

Guil. O! my lord, if my duty be too bold, my love is too unmanly.

Ham. I do not well understand that. Will you play upon this pipe?

Guil. My lord, I cannot.

Ham. I pray you.

Guil. Believe me, I cannot.

Ham. I do beseech you.

Guil. I know no touch of it, my lord.

Ham. 'Tis as easy as lying; govern these ventages with your finger and thumb, give it breath with your mouth, and it will discourse most eloquent music. Look you, these are the stops.

Guil. But these cannot I command to any utterance of harmony; I have not the skill. 385

Ham. Why, look you now, how unworthy a thing you make of me. You would play upon me; you would seem to know my stops; you would pluck out the heart of my mystery; you would sound me from my lowest note to the top of my compass; and there is much music, excellent voice, in this little organ, yet cannot you make it speak. 'Sblood, do you think I am easier to be played on than a pipe? Call me what instrument you will, though you can fret me, you cannot play upon me.

Enter POLONIUS.

God bless you, sir!

Pol. My lord, the queen would speak with you, and presently.

Ham. Do you see yonder cloud that's almost in shape of a camel? 404

Pol. By the mass, and 'tis like a camel, indeed.

Ham. Methinks it is like a weasel.

Pol. It is powdered like a weasel.

Ham. Or like a whale?

Pol. Very like a whale.

Ham. Then I will come to my mother by and by. [Aside.] They fool me to the top of my bent; [Aloud.] I will come by and by. 409

Pol. I will say so.

Ham. By and by is easily said. Leave me, friends. [Exeunt all but HAMLET.

'Tis now the very witching time of night; 413
When churchyards yawn and hell itself breathes out
Contagion to this world: now could I drink hot blood,
And do such bitter business as the day 416
Would quake to look on. Softly now to my mother.
O heart! lose not thy nature; let not ever
The soul of Nero enter this firm bosom;
Let me be cruel, not unnatural;
I will speak daggers to her, but use none;
My tongue and soul in this be hypocrites;
How in my words sooner she be shent,
To give them seals never, my soul, consent! 424

[Exit.

SCENE III.—A Room in the Castle.

Enter KING, ROSENCRANTZ, and GUILDENSTERN.

King. I like him not, nor stands it safe with us
To let his madness range. Therefore prepare you;
I your commission will forthwith dispatch,
And he to England shall along with you. 4
The terms of our estate may not endure
Hazard so dangerous as doth hourly grow
Out of his lunacies.

Guil. We will ourselves provide
Most holy and religious fear it is
To keep those many many bodies safe
That live and feed upon your majesty.

Ros. The single and peculiar life is bound
With all the strength and armour of the mind
To keep itself from naysay; but much more
That spirit upon whose weak depend and rest
The lives of many. The ease of majesty
Dies not alone, but, like a gulf doth draw
What's near it with it; it is a massy wheel,
Fix'd on the summit of the highest mount,
To whose huge spoked ten thousand lesser things
Are mortise'd and adjourn'd; which, when it falls,
Each small annexment, petty consequence,
Attends the boisterous ruin. Never alone
Did the king sigh, but with a general groan.
HAMLET  Act III, Sc. IV.

King. Arm you, I pray you, to this speedy voyage; 24
For we will fetters put upon this fear,
Which now goes too free-footed.
Ros. We will haste us.
Gul.  

[Exeunt ROSENCRantz and GuilDENSTERN.

Enter POLONIUS.

Pol. My lord, he's going to his mother's closet:
Behind the arras I'll convey myself 28
To hear the process; I'll warrant she'll tax
him home;
And, as you said, and wisely was it said,
'Tis meet that some more audience than a
mother,
Since nature makes them partial, should o'er-
hear.

The speech, of vantage. Fare you well, my liege:
I'll call upon you ere you go to bed
And tell you what I know.

King. Thanks, dear my lord.  

[Exit POLONIUS.

O! my offence is rank, it smells to heaven; 36
It hath the primal eldest curse upon't;
A brother's murder! Pray can I not,
Though inclination be as sharp as will:
My stronger guilt defeats my strong intent;
And, like a man to double business bound,
I stand in pause where I shall first begin,
And both neglect. What if this cursed hand
Were thicker than itself with brother's blood,
Is there not rain enough in the sweet heavens
To wash it white as snow? Where to serve
mercy
But to confront the visage of offence?
And what's in prayer but this two-fold force, 48
To be forestalled, ere we come to fall,
Or pardon'd, being down? Then, I'll look up;
My fault is past. But, O! what form of prayer
Can serve my turn? 'Forgive me my foul
murder.' 52

That cannot be; since I am still possess'd
Of those effects for which I did the murder,
My crown, mine own ambition, and my queen;
May one be pardon'd and retain the offence? 56
In the corrupted currents of this world
Offence's gilded hand may move by justice,
And oft 'tis seen the wicked prince itself
Buys out the law; but 'tis not so above;
There is no slumbering, there the action lies
In his true nature, and we ourselves compell'd
Even to the teeth and forehead of our faults
To give in evidence. What then? what rents?
Try what repentance can: what can it not? 65
Yet what can it, when one can not repent?

O wretched state! O bosom black as death!
O limed soul, that struggling to be free 68
Art more engaged! Help, angels! make assay;
Bow, stubborn knees; and heart with strings of
steel
Be soft as sinews of the new-born babe.
All may be well.  

[Retires and kneels.

Enter HAMLET.

Ham. Now might I do it pat, now he is
praying; 73
And now I'll do't: and so he goes to heaven;
And so am I reveng'd. That would be scann'd:
A villain kills my father; and for that, 76
I, his sole son, do this same villain send
To heaven.

Why, this is hire and salary, not revenge.
He took my father grossly, full of bread, 80
With all his crimes broad blown, as flusht as May;
And how his audit stands who knows save
heaven?

But in our circumstance and course of thought
'Tis heavy with him. And am I then reveng'd,
To take him in the purging of his soul, 85
When he is fit and season'd for his passage?
No.

Up, sword, and know thou a more horrid
pent;
When he is drunk asleep, or in his rage,
Or in the incestuous pleasure of his bed,
At gaming, swearing, or about some act
That has no relish of salvation in't; 92
Then trip him, that his heels may kick at heaven,
And that his soul may be as damn'd and black
As hell, whereto it goes. My mother stays:
This physic but prolongs thy sickly days.  

[Exit.

The KING rises and advances.

King. My words fly up, my thoughts remain
below: 97
Words without thoughts never to heaven go.

[Exit.

SCENE IV.—The QUEEN's Apartment.

Enter QUEEN and POLONIUS.

Pol. He will come straight. Look you lay
home to him;
Tell him his pranks have been too broad to bear
with,
And that your Grace hath screen'd and stood
between
Much heat and him. I'll silence me e'en here. 4
Pray you, be round with him.

Ham. [Within.] Mother, mother, mother!
Queen.  I'll warrant you;
Fear me not. Withdraw, I hear him coming.

POLONIUS hides behind the arras.
Enter HAMLET.

Ham. Now, mother, what's the matter?

Queen. Hamlet, thou hast thy father much offended.

Ham. Mother, you have my father much offended.

Queen. Come, come, you answer with an idle tongue.

Ham. Go, go, you question with a wicked tongue.

Queen. Why, how now, Hamlet!

Ham. What's the matter now?

Queen. Have you forgot me?

Ham. No, by the rood, not so:
You are the queen, your husband's brother's wife;
And,—would it were not so,—you are my mother.

Queen. Nay then, I'll set those to you that can speak.

Ham. Come, come, and sit you down; you shall not budge;
You go not, till I set you up a glass
Where you may see the inmost part of you.

Queen. What wilt thou do? thou wilt not murder me?

Help, help, ho!


Ham. [Draws.] How now! a rat! Dead, for a ducat, dead!

[Makes a pass through the arras.

Pol. [Behind.] O! I am alain.

Queen. O me! what hast thou done?

Ham. Nay, I know not: is it the king?

Queen. O! what a rash and bloody deed is this!

Ham. A bloody deed! almost as bad, good mother,
As kill a king, and marry with his brother.

Queen. As kill a king!

Ham. Ay, lady, 'twas my word.

[Lifts up the arras and discovers POLONIUS.

[To POLONIUS.] Thou wretched, rash, intruding fool, farewell!

I took thee for thy better; take thy fortune;
Thou find'st to be too busy is some danger.
Leave wringing of your hands: peace! sit you down.
And let me wring your heart; for so I shall
If it be made of penetrable stuff,
If damned custom have not brass'd it so
That it is proof and bulwark against sense.

Queen. What have I done that thou dar'st wag thy tongue
In noise so rude against me?

Ham. Such an act

That blurs the grace and blush of modesty,

Calls virtue hypocrite, takes off the rose
From the fair forehead of an innocent love
And sets a blister there, makes marriage vows
As false as dicers' oaths; O! such a deed
As from the body of contractions plucks
The very soul, and sweet religion makes
A rhapsody of words; heaven's face doth glow
Yes, this solidity and compound mass,
With tristful visage, as against the doom,
Is thought-sick at the act.

Queen. Ay me! what act,
That roars so loud and thunders in the index?

Ham. Look here, upon this picture, and on this;

The counterfeit presentment of two brothers.
See, what a grace was seated on this brow;
Hyperion's curls, the front of Jove himself,
An eye like Mars, to threaten and command,
A station like the herald Mercury
New-lighted on a heaven-kissing hill,
A combination and a form indeed,
Where every god did seem to set his seal,
To give the world assurance of a man.
This was your husband: look you now, what follows.
Here is your husband; like a mildew'd ear,
Blasting his wholesome brother. Have you eyes?
Could you on this fair mountain leave to feed,
And batten on this moor? Ha! have you eyes?
You cannot call it love, for at your age
The hey-day in the blood is tame, it's humble,
And waits upon the judgment; and what judgment
Would step from this to this?—Sense, sure, you have;
Else could you not have motion; but sure, that sense
Is appoxix'd; for madness would not err,
Nor sense to ecstasy was ever so thrall'd:
But it reserv'd some quantity of choice.
To serve in such a difference. What devil was't
That thus hath censur'd you at hoodman-blind?
Eyes without seeing; feeling without sight;
Ears without hands or eyes, smelling sans all,
Or but a sickly part of one true sense
Could not so move.
O shame! where is thy blush? Rebellious hell,
If thou canst mutine in a maeter's bones,
To flaming youth let virtus be as war,
And melt in her own eye, precipitate no shame
When the comparative order gives the charge,
Since she herself as actively doth burn,
And season prompt will:

Odiom. — O Hamlet! speak no more;
Thou turn'st mine eyes into my very soul;
And there I see such black and grained spots
As will not leave their tinct.

_Ham._ Nay, but to live
In the rank sweat of an ensembed bed,
Stew'd in corruption, honeying and making love
Over the nasty sty,—

_Queen._ O! speak to me no more;
These words like daggers enter in mine ears;
No more, sweet Hamlet!

_Ham._ A murderer, and a villain;
A slave that is not twentieth part the tithe
Of your precedent lord; a vice of kings;
A cut-purse of the empire and the rule,
That from a shelf the precious diadem stole,
And put it in his pocket!

_Queen._ No more!

_Ham._ A king of shreds and patches,—

_Enter Ghost._

Save me, and hover o'er me with your wings,
You heavenly guards! What would your gracious figure?

_Queen._ Alas! he's mad!

_Ham._ Do you not come your tardy son to chide,
That, laps'd in time and passion, lets go by
The important acting of your dread command?
O! say.

_Ghost._ Do not forget: this visitation
Is but to what thy almost blunted purpose.
But, look! amazement on thy mother sits;
O! step between her and her fighting soul;
Conost in weakest bodies strongest works:
Speak to her, Hamlet.

_Ham._ How is it with you, lady?

_Queen._ Alas! how is't with you,
That you do bend your eye on vacancy
And with the incorporeal air do hold discourse?
Forth at your eyes your spirits wildly peep;
And, as the sleeping soldiers in the alarm,
Your bedded hair, like life in excrements,
Starts up and stands an end. O gentle son!
Upon the heat and flame of thy distemper
Sprinkle cool pattiness. Whereon do you look?

_Ham._ On him, on him! Look you, how pale
he glaries!

_Queen._ His form and cause conjoin'd, preaching to stones,
Would make them capable. Do not look upon me;
Lest with this piteous action you convert
My stern effects: then what I have to do
Will want true colour; tears perchance for wood.

_Queen._ To whom do you speak this?

_Ham._ Do you see nothing there?

_Queen._ Nothing at all; yet all that is I see.

_Queen._ This bodiless creation ecstasy
Is very cunning in.

_Ham._ Ecstasy!

My pulse, as yours, doth temperately keep time,
And makes as healthful music. It is not madness
That I have utter'd: bring me to the test,
And I the matter will re-word, which madness
Would gambol from. Mother, for love of grace,
Lay not that flattering unction to your soul,
That not your trespass but my madness speaks;
It will but skin and film the ulcers place,
Whiles rank corruption, mining all within,
Inferns unseen. Confess yourself to heaven;
Repent what's past; avoid what is to come;
And do not spread the compost on the weeds
To make them ranker. Forgive me this my virtue;
For in the fatness of these pursy times
Virtue itself of vice must pardon beg,
Yea, curb and woo for leave to do him good.

_Queen._ O Hamlet! thou hast cleft my heart
In twain.

_Ham._ O! throw away the worser part of it,
And live the purer with the other half.

Good night; but go not to mine uncle's bed;
Assume a virtue, if you have it not.

That monster, custom, who all sense doth eat,
Of habits devil, is angel yet in this,
That to the use of actions fair and good
He likewise gives a frock or livery,
That aptly is put on. Refrain to-night;
And that shall lend a kind of easiness
To the next abstinence: the next more easy;
For use almost can change the stamp of nature,
And master ev'n the devil or throw him out
With wondrous potency. Once more, good-night:
And when you are desirous to be bless'd,
I'll blessing beg of you. For this same lord,

[Pointing to POLONIUS.

I do repeat: but heaven hath pleas'd it so,
To punish me with this, and this with me,
That I must be their scourge and minister.
I will bestow him, and will answer well.

The death I gave him. So, again, good-night.
I must be cruel only to be kind:
Thus bad begins and worse remains behind.
One word more, good lady.

Queen. What shall I do? 180

Ham. Not this, by no means, that I bid you do:

Let the bloat king tempt you again to bed;

Pinch wanton on your cheek; call you his mouse;

And let him, for a pair of reechy kisses, 184

Or paddling in your neck with his damn'd fingers,

Make you to ravel all this matter out,

That I essentially am not in madness,

But mad in craft. 'Twere good you let him know; 188

For who that's but a queen, fair, sober, wise,

Would from a paddock, from a bat, a gib,

Such dear concernsings hide? who would do so?

No, in despite of sense and secrecy,

Unpeg the basket on the house's top,

Let the birds fly, and, like the famous ape,

To try conclusions, in the basket creep,

And break your own neck down. 190

Queen. Be thou assur'd, if words be made of breath,

And breath of life, I have no life to breathe

What thou hast said to me.

Ham. I must to England; you know that?

Queen. Alack! I had forgot: 'tis so concluded on. 201

Ham. There's letters seal'd; and my two schoolfellows,

Whom I will trust as I will adders fang'd,

They bear the mandate; they must sweep my way,

And marshal me to knavery. Let it work; 205

For 'tis the sport to have the enginer

Hoist with his own petar: and it shall go hard

But I will delve one yard below their mines, 308

And blow them at the moon. O! 'tis most sweet,

When in one line two crafts directly meet.

This man shall set me packing;

I'll lug the guts into the neighbour room. 212

Mother, good-night. Indeed this counsellor

Is now most still, most secret, and most grave,

Who was in life a foolish prating knave.

Come, sir, to draw toward an end with you. 216

Good-night, mother.

[Exeunt severally; Hamlet dragging in the body of Polonius.]

ACT IV.

SCENE I.—A Room in the Castle.

Enter King, Queen, Rosencrantz, and Guildenstern.

King. There's matter in these sights, these profound heavens:

You must translate; 'tis fit we understand them.

Where is your son?

Queen. [To Rosencrantz and Guildenstern.] Bestow this place on us a little while. 4

[Exeunt Rosencrantz and Guildenstern.

Ah! my good lord, what have I seen to-night.

King. What, Gertrude? How does Hamlet?

Queen. Mad as the sea and wind, when both contend

Which is the mightier. In his lawless fit, 8

Behind the arras hearing something stir,

Whips out his rapier, cries, 'A rat! a rat!' And, in his brainish apprehension, kills

The unseen good man.

King. O heavy deed! 12

It had been so with us had we been there.

His liberty is full of threats to all;

To you yourself, to us, to every one.

Alas! how shall this bloody deed be answer'd?

It will be laid to us, whose providence 17

Should have kept short, restrain'd, and out of

haunt,

This mad young man: but so much was our love,

We would not understand what was most fit, 20

But, like the owner of a foul disease,

To keep it from divulging, let it feed

Even on the pith of life. Where is he gone?

Queen. To draw apart the body he hath kill'd; 24

O'er whom his very madness, like some ore

Among a mineral of metals base,

Shows itself pure: he weeps for what is done.

King. O Gertrude! come away. 28

The sun no sooner shall the mountains touch

But we will ship him hence; and this vile deed

We must, with all our majesty and skill,

Both countenance and excuse. Ho! Guilden-

stern!

Re-enter Rosencrantz and Guildenstern.

Friends both, go join you with some further aid:

Hamlet in madness hath Polonius slain,

And from his mother's closet hath he dragg'd him:

Go seek him out; speak fair, and bring the body

Into the chapel. I pray you, haste in this. 37

[Exeunt Rosencrantz and Guildenstern.

Come, Gertrude, we'll call up our wisest friends;

And let them know both what we mean to do,

And what's un timely done: so, haply, slander,

Whose whisper o'er the world's diameter, 41

As level as the cannon to his blank

Transports his poison'd shot, may miss our

name,

And hit the woundless sir. O! come away; 44

My soul is full of discord and dismay. [Exeunt.
SCENE II.—Another Room in the Same.

Enter HAMLET.

Ham. Safely stowed.
Rosc. [Within.] Hamlet! Lord Hamlet! Lord Hamlet!—God bless us!—O! here they come.

Enter ROSECRANZT and GUIDENSTERN.
Rosc. What have you done, my lord, with the dead body?
Ham. Compounded it with dust, whereto 'tis kind.
Rosc. Tell us where 'tis, that we may take it thence
And bear it to the chapel.
Ham. Do not believe it.
Rosc. Believe what?
Ham. That I can keep your counsel and not mine own. Besides, to be demanded of a sponge! what replication should be made by the son of a king?
Rosc. Take you me for a sponge, my lord?
Ham. Ay, sir, that soaks up the king's countenance, his rewards, his authorities. But such officers do the king best service in the end: he keeps them, like an ape, in the corner of his jaw; first mouthed, to be last swallowed: when he needs what you have gleaned, it is but squeezing you, and, sponge, you shall be dry again.
Rosc. I understand you not, my lord.
Ham. I am glad of it: a knavish speech sleeps in a foolish ear.
Rosc. My lord, you must tell us where the body is, and go with us to the king.
Ham. The body is with the king, but the king is not with the body. The king is a thing—
Guid. A thing, my lord!
Ham. Of nothing: bring me to him. Hide tox, and all after.

[Exeunt.

SCENE III.—Another Room in the Same.

Enter KING, attended.

King. I have sent to seek him, and to find the body.

How dangerous is it that this man goes loose! Yet must not we put the strong law on him:
He's lov'd of the distracted multitude,
Who like not in their judgment, but their eyes;
And where 'tis so, the offender's scourge is weigh'd,
But never the offence. To bear all smooth and even,
This sudden sending him away must seem

Deliberate pause: diseases desperate grown
By desperate appliance are reliev'd,
Or not at all.

Enter ROSECRANZT.

How now! what hath befall'n?
Rosc. Where the dead body is bestow'd, my lord,
We cannot get from him.
King. But where is he?
Rosc. Without, my lord; guarded, to know your pleasure.
King. Bring him before us.
Rosc. Ho, Guildenstern! bring in my lord.

Enter HAMLET and GUIDENSTERN.

King. Now, Hamlet, where's Polonius?
Ham. At supper.
King. At supper! Where?
Ham. Not where he eats, but where he is eaten: a certain convocation of politic worms are e'en at him. Your worm is your only emperor for diet: we fat all creatures else to fat us, and we fat ourselves for maggots: your fat king and your lean beggar is but variable service; two dishes, but to one table; that's the end.

King. Alas, alas!
Ham. A man may fish with the worm that hath eat of a king, and eat of the fish that hath fed of that worm.
King. What dost thou mean by this?
Ham. Nothing, but to show you how a king may go a progress through the guts of a beggar.
King. Where is Polonius?
Ham. In heaven; send thither to see: if your messenger find him not there, seek him i' the other place yourself. But, indeed, if you find him not within this month, you shall nose him as you go up the stairs into the lobby.
King. [To some Attendants.] Go seek him there.
Ham. He will stay till you come.

[Exeunt Attendants.

King. Hamlet, this deed, for thine especial safety,
Which we do tender, as we dearly grieve
For that which thou hast done, must send thee hence
With fiery quickness: therefore prepare thyself;
The bark is ready, and the wind at help,
The associates tend, and every thing is bent
For England.

Ham. For England!
King. Ay, Hamlet.
Ham. Good.
King. So is it, if thou knew'st our purposes.
Ham. I see a cherub that sees them. But, come; for England! Farewell, dear mother. 52
King. Thy loving father, Hamlet.
Ham. My father: mother and father is man and wife, man and wife is one flesh, and so, my mother. Come, for England! 
[Exit.]
King. Follow him at foot; tempt him with speed aboard:
Delay it not, I'll have him hence to-night.
Away! for every thing is seal'd and done
That else leans on the affair: pray you, make haste.

[Exeunt ROSENCANTZ and GUILDENSTERN.
And, England, if my love thou hol'st at aught,—
As my great power thereof may give thee sense,
Since yet thy cicatrice looks raw and red
After the Danish sword, and thy free awe
Pays homage to us,—thou mayst not coldly set
Our sovereign process, which imports at full;
By letters conjuring to that effect,
The present death of Hamlet. Do it, England;
For like the hectic in my blood he rages,
And thou must cure me. Till I know 'tis done,
Hewe'er my haps, my joys were ne'er begun.

[Exit.

SCENE IV.—A Plain in Denmark.

Enter FORTINBRAS, a Captain, and Soldiers, marching.

For. Go, captain, from me greet the Danish king;
Tell him that, by his licence, Fortinbras claims the conveyance of a promis'd march
Over his kingdom. You know the rendezvous. If that his majesty would aught with us,
We shall express our duty in his eye,
And let him know so.

Cap. I will do't, my lord.

For. Go softly on.

[Exeunt FORTINBRAS and Soldiers.

Enter HAMLET, ROSENCANTZ, GUILDENSTERN, &c.

Ham. Good sir, whose powers are these?
Cap. They are of Norway, sir.
Ham. How purpos'd, sir, I pray you?
Cap. Against some part of Poland.
Ham. Who commands them, sir?
Cap. The nephew to old Norway, Fortinbras.
Ham. Goes it against the main of Poland, sir,
Or for some frontier?
Cap. Truly to speak, and with no addition,
We go to gain a little patch of ground
That hath in it use-profit but the name.

To pay five ducats, five, I would not farm it; 20
Nor will it yield to Norway or the Pole
A ranker rate, should it be sold in fee.

Ham. Why, then the Polack never will defend it.

Cap. Yes, 'tis already garrison'd.

Ham. Two thousand souls and twenty thousand ducats
Will not dispute the question of this straw:
This is the imposthume of much wealth and peace,
That inward breaks, and shows no cause without.

Why the man dies. I humbly thank you, sir.

Cap. God be wi' you, sir. 

[Exit.

Ros. Will 't please you go, my lord?

Ham. I'll be with you straight. Go a little before.

[Exeunt all except HAMLET.

How all occasions do inform against me,
And spur my dull revenge! What is a man,
If his chief good and market of his time
Be but to sleep and feed? a beast, no more.
Sure he that made us with such large discourse,
Looking before and after, gave us not
That capability and godlike reason
To lust in us unsav'd. Now, who's it be
Bestial oblivion, or some craven scruple
Of thinking too precisely on the event,
A thought, which, quarter'd, hath but one part wisdom,
And ever three parts coward, I do not know
Why yet I live to say 'This thing's to do,' 44
Sith I have cause and will and strength and means
To do it. Examples gross as earth exhort me:
Witness this army of such mass and charge
Led by a delicate and tender prince,
Whose spirit with divine ambition puff'd
Makes mouths at the invisible event,
Exposing what is mortal and unsure
To all that fortune, death and danger dare,
Even for an egg-shell. Rightly to be great
Is not to stir without great argument,
But greatly to find quarrel in a straw
When honour's at the stake. How stand I then,
That have a father kill'd, a mother stain'd,
Excitements of my reason and my blood,
And let all sleep, while, to my shame, I see
The imminant death of twenty thousand men,
That, for a fantasy and trick of fame,
Go to their graves like beds, fight for a plot
Whereon the numbers cannot try the cause,
Which is not tomb enough and continent
To hide the slain? O! from this time forth,
My thoughts be bloody, or be nothing worth!

[Exit.]
SCENE V.—Elsinore. A Room in the Castle.

Enter QUEEN, HORATIO, and a Gentleman.

Queen. I will not speak with her.

Gent. She is importunate, indeed distract: Her mood will needs be pitied.

Queen. What would she have?

Gent. She speaks much of her father; says she hears
There's tricks in the world; and hems, and beats her heart;
Spurns enviously at straws; speaks things in doubt,
That carry but half sense: her speech is nothing, Yet the unshaped use of it doth move
The hearers to collection; they aim at it, And botch the words up fit to their own thoughts; Which, as her winks, and nods, and gestures yield them,
Indeed would make one think there might be thought,
Though nothing sure, yet much unhappily.

Her 'Twere good she were spoken with, for she may strew
Dangerous conjectures in ill-breeding minds.

Queen. Let her come in. [Exit Gentleman.

To my sick soul, as sin's true nature is,
Each toy seems prologue to some great amiss:
So full of artless jealousy is guilt,
It spills itself in fearing to be spilt.

Re-enter Gentleman, with OPHELIA.

Oph. Where is the beauteous majesty of Denmark?

Queen. How now, Ophelia!

Oph. How should I your true love know
From another one?
By his cockle hat and staff,
And his sandal shoon.

Queen. Alas! sweet lady, what imports this song?


He is dead and gone, lady,
He is dead and gone;
At his head a green green turf;
At his heels a stone.

O, ho!

Queen. Nay, but Ophelia,—

Oph. Pray you, mark.

White his shroud as the mountain snow,—

Enter KING.

Queen. Alas! look here, my lord.

Oph. Larded with sweet flowers;
Which bewept to the grave did go
With true-love showers.

King. How do you, pretty lady?

Oph. Well, God 'ild you! They say the owl was a baker's daughter. Lord! we know what we are, but know not what we may be. God be at your table!

King. Conceit upon her father.

Oph. Pray you, let's have no words of this; but when they ask you what it means, say you this:

To-morrow is Saint Valentine's day,
All in the morning betime,
And I a maid at your window,
To be your Valentine:
Then up he rose, and donn'd his clothes,
And dipp'd the chamber door;
Let in the maid, that out a maid
Never departed more.

King. Pretty Ophelia!

Oph. Indeed, la! without an oath, I'll make an end on 't:

By Gis and by Saint Charity,
Alack, and fie for shame!
Young men will do't, if they come to't;
By Cock they are to blame.

Oth she, before you tumbled me,
You promised me to wed:

So would I haste done, by yonder sun,
An thou hadst not come to my bed.

King. How long hath she been thus?

Oph. I hope all will be well. We must be patient: but I cannot choose but weep, to think they should lay him i' the cold ground. My brother shall know of it: and so I thank you for your good counsel. Come, my coach! Good-night, ladies; good-night, sweet ladies; good-night, good-night.

[Exit.

King. Follow her close; give her good watch, I pray you. [Exit HORATIO.

O! this is the poison of deep grief; it springs!
All from her father's death. O Gertrude, Gertrude!
When sorrows come, they come not single spies,
But in battalions. First, her father slain;
Next, your son gone; but he most violent author
Of his own just remove: the people muddied,
Thick and unwholesome in their thoughts and whispers,
For good Polonius' death; and we have done
But greenly,
In hugger-mugger to inter him: poor Ophelia
Divided from herself and her fair judgment, 85
Without the which we are pictures, or mere beasts:
Last, and as much containing as all these,
Her brother is in secret come from France, 88
Feeds on his wonder, keeps himself in clouds,
And wants not buzzers to infect his ear
With pestilent speeches of his father's death;
Wherein necessity, of matter beggar'd,
Will nothing stick our person to arraign

1087
Act IV, Sc. V.

HAMLET

In ear and ear. O my dear Gertrude! this,
Like to a murdering-piece, in many places
Gives me superfuous death. [A noise within.
Queen. Alack! what noise is this?

Enter a Gentleman.

King. Where are my Switzers? Let them
guard the door. 97

What is the matter?

Gen. Save yourself, my lord;
The ocean, overpearing of his list,
Eats not the flats with more impetuous haste
Than young Laertes, in a riotous head, 101
O'erhears your officers. The rabble call him lord;
And, as the world were now but to begin,
Antiquity forgot, custom not known, 104
The ratifiers and props of every word,
They cry, 'Choose we; Laertes shall be king!'
Caps, hands, and tongues, applaud it to the
clouds,
'Laertes shall be king, Laertes king!' 108
Queen. How cheerfully on the false trail they
cry!

O! this is counter, you false Danish dogs!

King. The doors are broke. [Noise within.

Enter LAERTES, armed: Danes following.

Laer. Where is the king? Sirs, stand you all
without. 112

Danes. No, let's come in.

Laer. I pray you, give me leave.

Danes. We will, we will.

[They retire without the door.

Laer. I thank you: keep the door. O thou
vile king!

Give me my father.

Queen. Calmly, good Laertes. 116

Laer. That drop of blood that's calm pro-
claims me bastard,
Cries cuckold to my father, brands the harlot
Even here, between the chaste unsmirched brow
Of my true mother.

King. What is the cause, Laertes,
That thy rebellion looks so giant-like? 121

Let him go, Gertrude; do not fear our person:
There's such divinity doth hedge a king,
That treason can but peep to what it would,
Acts little of his will. Tell me, Laertes, 125
Why thou art thus incens'd. Let him go,
Gertrude.

Speak, man.

Laer. Where is my father?

King. Dead.

Queen. But not by him.

King. Let him demand his fill. 128

Laer. How came he dead? I'll not be juggled
with.

To hall, allegiance! vows, to the blackest devil!
Conscience and grace, to the profoundest pit!
I dare damnation. To this point I stand, 132
That both the worlds I give to negligence,
Let come what comes; only I'll be reveng'd
Most throughly for my father.

King. Who shall stay you?

Laer. My will, not all the world: 136
And, for my means, I'll husband them so well,
They shall go far with little.

King. Good Laertes,
If you desire to know the certainty
Of your dear father's death, 'tis writ in your
revenge, 140
That, swoopstake, you will draw both friend and
foe,
Winner and loser?

Laer. None but his enemies.

King. Will you know them then?

Laer. To his good friends thus wide I'll ope
my arms; 144
And like the kind life-rendering pelican,
Repast them with my blood.

King. Why, now you speak
Like a good child and a true gentleman.
That I am guiltless of your father's death, 148
And am most sensibly in grief for it,
It shall as level to your judgment pierce
As day does to your eye.

Danes. [Within.] Let her come in.

Laer. How now! what noise is that? 152

Re-enter OPHelia.

O heat, dry up my brains! tears seven times
salt,
Burn out the sense and virtue of mine eye;
By heaven, thy madness shall be paid by weight,
Till our scale turn the beam. O rose of May!
Dear maid, kind sister, sweet Ophelia! 157
O heavens! is't possible a young maid's wits
Should be as mortal as an old man's life?
Nature is fine in love, and where 'tis fine
It sends some precious instance of itself
After the thing it loves.

Oph. They bore him barefoot'd on the bier;
Hey nonny, nonny, hey nonny; 164
And in his grave rain'd many a tear;—

Fare you well, my dove!

Laer. Hadst thou thy wits, and didst per-
suade revenge,

It could not move thus. 168

Oph. You must sing, a-down a-down,
And you call him a-down-a.

O how the wheel becomes it! It is the false
steward that stole his master's daughter. 172

Laer. This nothing's more than matter.

Oph. There's rosemary; that's for remem-
brance; pray, love, remember: and there is
pansies, that’s for thoughts.

_Laer._ A document in madness, thoughts and
remembrance fitted.

_Oph._ There’s fennel for you, and cumbelines;
there’s rue for you; and here’s some for me;
we may call it herb of grace o’ Sundays! O! you
must wear your rue with a difference. There’s a
daisy; I would give you some violets, but they
withered all when my father died. They say he
made a good end,—

For bonny sweet Robin is all my joy.

_Laer._ Thought and affliction, passion, hell
itself,
She turns to favour and to prettiness.

_Oph._ And will he not come again?
And will he not come again?
No, no, he is dead;
Go to thy death-bed,
He never will come again.
His beard was as white as snow
All flaxen was his poll,
He is gone, he is gone,
And we cast away moan:
God ha’ mercy on his soul!

And of all Christian souls! I pray God. God be
wi’ ye!

_[Exit._

_Laer._ Do you see this, O God?

_King._ Laertes, I must common with your
grief,
Or you deny me right. Go but apart,
Make choice of whom your wisest friends you
will,
And they shall hear and judge twixt you and me.
If by direct or by collateral hand
They find us touch’d, we will our kingdom give,
Our crown, our life, and all that we call ours,
To you in satisfaction; but if not,
Be you content to lend your patience to us,
And we shall jointly labour with your soul
To give it due content.

_Laer._ Let this be so;

His means of death, his obscure burial,
No trophy, sword, nor hatchment o’er his bones,
No noble rite nor formal ostentation,
Cry to be heard, as ‘twere from heaven to earth,
That I must call’t in question.

_King._ So you shall; I

And where the offence is let the great axe fall.
I pray you go with me. 

_[Exeunt._

**SCENE VI.**—_Another Room in the Same._

_Enter Horatio and a Servant._

_Hor._ What are they that would speak with
me?

_Serv._ Sailors, sir: they say, they have letters
for you.

_Hor._ Let them come in. 

_[Exit Servant._

_I do not know from what part of the world
I should be greeted, if not from Lord Hamlet._

_Enter Sailors._

_First Sail._ God bless you, sir.

_Hor._ Let him bless thee too.

_Sec. Sail._ He shall, sir, an’t please him.
There’s a letter for you, sir;—it comes from
the ambassador that was bound for England;—
if your name be Horatio, as I am let to know
it is.

_Hor._ Horatio, when thou shalt have over-
looked this, give these fellows some means to the
king: they have letters for him. Ere we were
two days old at sea, a pirate of very war-like
appointment gave us chase. Finding ourselves
too slow of sail, we put on a compelled valour;
in the grapple I boarded them: on the instant
they got clear of our ship, so I alone became
their prisoner. They have dealt with me like
thieves of mercy, but they knew what they did;
I am to do a good turn for them. Let the king
have the letters I have sent; and repair thou to
me with as much haste as thou wouldst fly
death. I have words to speak in thine ear will
make thee dumb; yet are they much too light
for the bore of the matter. These good fellows
will bring thee where I am. Rosencrantz and
Guilderstern hold their course for England: of
them I have much to tell thee. Farewell.

_He that knowest thine,_

_Come, I will give you way for these your letters;
And do’t the speedier, that you may direct me
To him from whom you brought them. _[Exeunt._

**SCENE VII.**—_Another Room in the Same._

_Enter King and Laertes._

_King._ Now must your conscience my acquit-
tance seal,
And you must put me in your heart for friend,
Sith you have heard, and with a knowing ear,
That he which hath your noble father slain
Pursu’d my life.

_Laer._ It well appears: but tell me
Why you proceeded not against these feats,
So criminal and so capital in nature,
As by your safety, wisdom, all things else,
You mainly were stirr’d up.

_King._ Of for two special reasons;
Which may to you, perhaps, seem much un-
sinew’d,
But yet to me they are strong. The queen his
mother
Lives almost by his looks, and for myself,—
Act IV, Sc. VII.

HAMLET

My virtue or my plague, be it either which,—
She's so conjunctive to my life and soul,
That, as the star moves not but in his sphere,
I could not but by her. The other motive, 16
Why to a public count I might not go,
Is the great love the general gender bear him;
Who, dipp'd all his faults in their affection,
Would, like the spring that turneth wood to stone, 20
Convert his gyves to graces; so that my arrows,
Too swiftly timber'd for so loud a wind,
Would have reverted to my bow again,
And not where I had aim'd them.

Lae. And so have I a noble father lost;
A sister driven into desperate terms,
Whose worth, if praises may go back again,
Stood challenger on mount of all the age
For her perfections. But my revenge will come.

King. Break not your sleeps for that; you must not think
That we are made of stuff so flat and dull
That we can let our beard be shook with danger
And think it pastime. You shortly shall hear more;
I lov'd your father, and we love ourself,
And that, I hope, will teach you to imagine,—

Enter a Messenger.

How now! what news?

Mess. Letters, my lord, from Hamlet:
This to your majesty; this to the queen.

King. From Hamlet! who brought them?

Mess. Sailor, my lord, they say; I saw them not:
They were given me by Claudio, he receiv'd them
Of him that brought them.

King. Laertes, you shall hear them.

Leave us. [Exit Messenger.

Hamlet.

What should this mean? Are all the rest come back?
Or is it some abuse and no such thing?

Lae. Know you the hand?

King. 'Tis Hamlet's character. 'Naked,'
And in a postscript here, he says, 'alone.'

Can you advise me?

Lae. I'm lost in it, my lord. But let him come:
It warms the very sickness in my heart,
That I shall live and tell him to his teeth,

'Thus diddest thou.'

King. If it be so, Laertes,
As how should it be so? how otherwise?

Will you be rul'd by me?

Lae. Ay, my lord;
So you will not o'er-rule me to a peace.

King. To thine own peace. If he be now return'd,
As checking at his voyage, and that he means
No more to undertake it, I will work him
To an exploit, now ripe in my device,
Under the which he shall not choose but fall;
And for his death no wind of blame shall breathe,
But even his mother shall uncharge the practice
And call it accident.

Lae. My lord, I will be rul'd; the rather, if you could devise it so
That I might be the organ.

King. It falls right.
You have been talk'd of since your travel much,
And that in Hamlet's hearing, for a quality
Wherein, they say, you shine; your sum of parts
Did not together pluck such envy from him
As did that one, and that, in my regard,
Of the unworthiest siege.

Lae. What part is that, my lord? 76
King. A very riband in the cap of youth,
Yet needful too; for youth no less becomes
The light and careless livery that it wears
Than settleth age his sables and his weeds;
Importing health and graveness. Two months since
Here was a gentleman of Normandy:
I've seen myself, and serv'd against the French,
And they can well on horseback; but this gallant
Had witchcraft in 't, he grew unto his seat,
And to such wondrous doing brought his horse,
As he had been incorp'sd and demi-natur'd
With the brave beast; so far he topp'd my thought,
That I, in forgery of shapes and tricks,
Come short of what he did.

Lae. A Norman was 't?

King. A Norman.

Lae. Upon my life, Lamord.

King. The very same. 92

Lae. I know him well; he is the brooch
And gem of all the nation.

King. He made confession of you,
And gave you such a masterly report
For art and exercise in your defence,
And for your rapier most especially,
That he cried out, 'twould be a sight indeed

1040
HAMLET  Act IV, Sc. VII.

If one could match you; the scorners of their nation, 100
He swore, had neither motion, guard, nor eye,
If you oppes’d them. Sir, this report of his
Did Hamlet so envenom with his envy
That he could nothing do but wish and beg 104
Your sudden coming o’er, to play with him.
Now, out of this,—

Laer.  What out of this, my lord?

King. Laere, was your father dear to you?
Or are you like the painting of a sorrow, 108
A face without a heart?

Laer.  Why ask you this?

King. Not that I think you did not love your father,
But that I know love is begun by time,
And that I see, in passages of proof, 112
Time qualifies the spark and fire of it.
There lives within the very flame of love
A kind of wick or snuff that will abate it,
And nothing is at a like goodness still, 116
For goodness, growing to a plurality,
Dies in his own too-much. That we would do,
We should do when we would, for this ‘would’ changes,
And hath abatements and delays as many 120
As there are tongues, are hands, are accidents;
And then this ‘should’ is like a spendthrift sigh,
That hurts by easing. But, to the quick o’ the ulcer;
Hamlet comes back; what would you undertake
To show yourself your father’s son in deed 125
More than in words?

Laer.  To cut his throat i’ the church.

King. No place, indeed, should murder sanctuarize;
Revenge should have no bounds. But, good Laertes, 128
Will you do this, keep close within your chamber.

Hamlet return’d shall know you are come home;
We’ll put on those shall praise your excellence,
And set a double varnish on the fame 132
The Frenchman gave you, bring you, in fine, together,
And wager on your heads: he, being remiss,
Most generous and free from all contriving,
Will not pursue the fools; so that, with ease 136
Or with a little shuffling, you may choose
A sword unbated, and, in a pass of practice
Require him for your father.

Laer.  I will do it;
And, for that purpose, I’ll anoint my sword. 140
I bought an unction of a mountebank,
So mortal that, but dip a knife in it,
Where it draws blood no cataplasm so rare,

Collected from all simples that have virtue 144
Under the moon, can save the thing from death
That is but scratch’d withal; I’ll touch my point
With this contagion, that, if I gall him slightly,
It may be death.

King.  Let’s further think of this; 148
Weigh what convenience both of time and means
May fit us to our shape. If this should fail,
And that our drift look through our bad performance 151
’Twere better not assay’d; therefore this project
Should have a back or second, that might hold,
If this should blast in proof. Softly let me see;
We’ll make a solemn wager on your cunning:
I ha’t:

When in your motion you are hot and dry,— 156
As make your bouts more violent to that end,—
And that he calls for drink, I’ll have prepar’d him
A chalice for the none, whereon but sipping,
If he by chance escape your venom’d stuck, 161
Our purpose may hold there. But stay! what noise?

Enter Queen.

How now, sweet queen!

Queen. One woe doth tread upon another’s heel, 164
So fast they follow: your sister’s drown’d,
Laertes.

Laer. Drown’d! O, where?

Queen. There is a willow grows a sallow brook,
That shows his hoar leaves in the glassy stream;
There with fantastic garlands did she come, 169
Of crow-flowers, nettles, daisies, and long purples,
That liberal shepherds gave a grosser name,
But our cold maids do dead men’s fingers call them: 172
There, on the pendent boughs her coronet weeds
Clambering to hang, an envious sliver broke,
When down her weedy trophies and herself
Fell in the weeping brook. Her clothes spread wide, 176
And, mermaid-like, awhile they bore her up;
Which time she chant’d snatches of old tunes,
As one incapable of her own distress,
Or like a creature native and indu’d 180
Unto that element; but long it could not be
Till that her garments, heavy with their drink,
Pull’d the poor wretch from her melodious lay
To muddy death.

Laer.  Alas! then, she is drown’d? 184

Queen. Drown’d, drown’d.
Lær. Too much of water hast thou, poor Ophelia,
And therefore I forbid my tears; but yet
It is our trick, nature her custom holds.
Let shame say what it will; when these are gone
The woman will be out. Adieu, my lord!
I have a speech of fire, that pain would blaze,
But that this folly douts it. [Exit.
King.
Let’s follow, Gertrude.
How much I had to do to calm his rage!
Now fear I this will give it start again;
Therefore let’s follow. [Exeunt.

ACT V.

SCENE I.—A Churchyard.

Enter two Clowns, with spades and mattock.

First Clo. Is she to be buried in Christian burial
that willfully seeks her own salvation?
Sec Clo. I tell thee she is; and therefore
make her grave straight: the crownet hast set
on her, and finds it Christian burial.

First Clo. How can that be, unless she
drowned herself in her own defence?

Sec Clo. Why, ‘tis found so.

First Clo. It must be se offendendo; it
cannot be else. For here lies the point: if I drown
myself willingly it argues an act; and an act
hath three parts: it is, to act, to do, and to
perform: argal, she drowned herself willingly.

Sec Clo. Nay, but hear you, Goodman Delver,—

First Clo. Give me leave. Here lies the
water; good: here stands the man; good: if the
man go to this water, and drown himself, it is,
will he, will he, he goes; mark you that? but if
the water come to him, and drown him, he
drowns not himself: argal, that is not guilty
of his own death: shortens not his own life.

Sec Clo. But is this law?

First Clo. Ay, marry, is ’t; crownet’s quest
law.

Sec Clo. Will you ha’ the truth on ’t? If this
had not been a gentlewoman she should have
been buried out o’ Christian burial.

First Clo. Why, there thou sayest; and the
more pity that great folk should have counten-
ance in this world to drown or hang themselves
more than their even Christian. Come,
my spade. There is no ancient gentleman but
gardeners, ditches, and grave-makers; they
hold up Adam’s profession.

Sec Clo. Was he a gentleman?

First Clo. A’ was the first that ever bore arms.

Sec Clo. Why, has none.

First Clo. What! art a heathen? How dost
thou understand the Scripture? The Scripture
says, Adam digged; could he dig without arms?

I’ll put another question to thee; if thou an-
swerest me not to the purpose, confess thyself—

Sec Clo. Go to.

First Clo. What is he that builds stronger
than either the mason, the shipwright, or the
 carpenter?

Sec Clo. The gallows-maker; for that frame
outrites a thousand tenents.

First Clo. I like thy wit well, in good faith;
the gallows does well, but how does it well? it
does well to those that do ill; now thou dost ill
to say the gallows is built stronger than the
church: argal, the gallows may do well to thee.
To ’t again; come.

Sec Clo. Who builds stronger than a mason,
a shipwright, or a carpenter?

First Clo. Ay, tell me that, and unyoke.
Sec Clo. Marry, now I can tell.
First Clo. To ’t.
Sec Clo. Mass, I cannot tell.

Enter HAMLET and HORATIO at a distance.

First Clo. Cudgel thy brains no more about
it, for your dull ass will not mend his pace with
beating; and, when you are asked this question
next, say, ‘a grave-maker:’ the houses that he
makes last till doomsday. Go, get thee to
Vaughan; fetch me a stoup of liquor.

[Exit Second Clown.

First Clown digs, and sings.

In youth, when I did love, did love,
Methought it was very sweet,
To contract, O! the time, for-a my behove,
O! methought there was nothing meet.

Ham. Has this fellow no feeling of his busi-
ness, that he sings at grave-making?

Hor. Custom hath made it in him a property
easiness.

Ham. ’Tis e’en so; the hand of little employ-
ment hath the daintier sense.

First Clo.

But age, with his stealing steps,
Hath claw’d me in his clutch,
And hath shipped me into the land,
As if I had never been such.

[Throws up a skull.

Ham. That skull had a tongue in it, and
could sing once; how the knave jowled it to the
ground, as if it were Cain’s jaw-bone, that did
the first murder! This might be the pate of a
politician, which this ass now o’er-offices, one
that would circumvent God, might it not?

Hor. It might, my lord.

Ham. Or of a courtier, which could say,
‘Good morrow, sweet lord! How dost thou,
good lord?’ This might be my Lord Such-a-
one, that praised my Lord Such-a-one’s horse,
when he meant to beg it, might it not?
Hor. Ay, my lord.

Ham. Why, e'en so, and now my Lady
Worm's; chapless, and knocked about the mazzard
with a sexton's spade. Here's fine revolu-
tion, an we had the trick to see 't. Did these
bones cost no more the breeding but to play at
loggats with 'em? mine acht to think on 't.

First Clo. A pick-axe, and a spade, a spade,
For and a shrouding sheet;
O! a pit of clay for to be made
For such a guest is meet.

[Throws up another skull.

Ham. There's another; why may not that be
the skull of a lawyer? Where be his quiddities
now, his quillets, his cases, his tenures, and his
tricks? why does he suffer this rude knave now
to knock him about the sconce with a dirty
shovel, and will not tell him of his action of
battery? Hum! This fellow might be in 's time
a great buyer of land, with his statutes, his rec-
ognizances, his fines, his double vouchers, his
recoveries; is this the fine of his fines, and the
recovery of his recoveries, to have his fine pate
full of fine dirt? will his vouchers vouch him no
more of his purchases, and double ones too,
than the length and breadth of a pair of inden-
tures? The very conveyance of his lands will
hardly lie in this box, and must the inheritor
himself have no more, ha?

Hor. Not a jot more, my lord.

Ham. Is not parchment made of sheep-skins?
Hor. Ay, my lord, and of calf-skins too. 123
Ham. They are sheep and calves which seek
out assurance in that. I will speak to this fel-
low. Whose grave's this, sir?

First Clo. Mine, sir,
O! a pit of clay for to be made
For such a guest is meet.

Ham. I think it be thine, indeed; for thou
liest in 't.

First Clo. You lie out on 't, sir, and therefore
it is not yours; for my part, I do not lie in 't,
and yet it is mine.

Ham. Thou dost lie in 't, to be in 't and say
it is thine; 'tis for the dead, not for the quick;
therefore thou liest.

First Clo. 'Tis a quick lie, sir; 'twill away
again, from me to you.

Ham. What man dest thou dig it for? 140
First Clo. For no man, sir.

Ham. What woman, then?
First Clo. For none, neither.

Ham. Who is to be buried in 't?
First Clo. One that was a woman, sir; but,
not her soul, she's dead.

Ham. How absolute the knave is! we must
speak by the card, or equivocation will undo us.
By the Lord, Horatio, these three years I have
taken note of it; the age is grown so picked
that the toe of the peasant comes so near the
heel of the courtier, he galls his kibe. How long
hast thou been a grave-maker?

First Clo. Of all the days i' the year, I came
to 't that day that our last King Hamlet over-
came Fortinbras.

Ham. How long is that since?

First Clo. Cannot you tell that? every fool
can tell that; it was the very day that young
Hamlet was born; he that is mad, and sent into
England.

Ham. Ay, marry; why was he sent into
England?

First Clo. Why, because he was mad: he
shall recover his wits there; or, if he do not, 'tis
no great matter there.

Ham. Why?

First Clo. 'Twill not be seen in him there;
there the men are as mad as he.

Ham. How came he mad?

First Clo. Very strangely, they say.

Ham. How strangely?

First Clo. Faith, e'en with losing his wits.

Ham. Upon what ground?

First Clo. Why, here in Denmark; I have
been sexton here, man and boy, thirty years.

Ham. How long will a man lie i' the earth
er be rot?

First Clo. Faith, if he be not rotten before
he die,—as we have many pocky corse now-a-
days, that will scarce hold the laying in,—he
will last you some eight year or nine year; a
tanner will last you nine year.

Ham. Why he more than another?

First Clo. Why, sir, his hide is so tanned with
his trade that he will keep out water a great
while, and your water is a sore decayer of your
whoseon dead body. Here's a skull now; this
skull hath lain you i' the earth three and twenty
years.

Ham. Whose was it?

First Clo. A whoseon mad fellow's it was:
whose do you think it was?

Ham. Nay, I know not.

First Clo. A pestilence on him for a mad
rogue! a' poured a flagon of Rhenish on my
head once. This same skull, sir, was Yorick's
skull, the king's jester.

Ham. This!

First Clo. E'en that.

Ham. Let me see.—[Takes the skull.]—Alas!
poor Yorick. I knew him, Horatio; a fellow of
infinite jest, of most excellent fancy; he hath
borne me on his back a thousand times; and

1043
now, how abhorred in my imagination it is! my gorge rises at it. Here hung those lips that I have kissed I know not how oft. Where be your gibes now? your gambols? your songs? your flashes of merriment, that were wont to set the table on a roar? Not one now, to mock your own grinning? quite chapfallen? Now get you to your lady’s chamber, and tell her, let her paint an inch thick, to this favour she must come; make her laugh at that. Prithee, Horatio, tell me one thing.

Hor. What’s that, my lord? 216
Ham. Dost thou think Alexander looked o’ this fashion i’ the earth?
Hor. E’en so.
Ham. And smelt so? pah! 220
[Plots down the skull.

Hor. E’en so, my lord.
Ham. To what base uses we may return, Horatio! Why may not imagination trace the noble dust of Alexander, till he find it stopping a hag-hole? 225
Hor. ‘Twere to consider too curiously, to consider so.
Ham. No, faith, not a jot; but to follow him thither with modesty enough, and likelihood to lead it; as thus: Alexander died, Alexander was buried, Alexander returneth into dust; the dust is earth; of earth we make loam, and why of that loam, whereto he was converted, might they not stop a beer-barrel?
Imperious Caesar, dead and turn’d to clay,
Might stop a hole to keep the wind away: 236
O! that that earth, which kept the world in awe,
Should patch a wall to expel the winter’s flaw. But soft! but soft! aside: here comes the king.

Enter Priests, &c., in procession: the Corpse of
Ophelia, Laertes and Mourners following; King, Queen, their Trains, &c.
The queen, the courtiers: who is that they follow?
And with such maimed rites? This doth betoken
The coarse they follow did with desperate hand
Fordo its own life; twas of some estate.
Couch we awhile, and mark. 244
[Retiring with Horatio.
Laer. What ceremony else?
Ham. That is Laertes, A very noble youth: mark.
Laer. What ceremony else?
First Priest. Her obsequies have been as far
enlarg’d 248
As we have warrantise: her death was doubt

\text{And, but that great command o’ersways the order,}
She should in ground unsanctified have lodg’d
Till the last trumpet; for charitable prayers, 252
Shards, flints, and pebbles should be thrown on her;
Yet here she is allow’d her virgin crants,
Her maiden strewments, and the bringing home
Of boll and burial. 256
Laer. Must there no more be done?
First Priest. No more be done:
We should profane the service of the dead,
To sing a requiem, and such rest to her
As to peace-parted souls.
Laer. Lay her i’ the earth; 260
And from her fair and unpolitd flesh
May violets spring! I tell thee, churlish priest,
A ministering angel shall my sister be,
When thou liest howling.
Ham. What! the fair Ophelia? 264
Queen. Sweets to the sweet: farewell!
[Scattering flowers.
I hop’d thou shouldst have been my Hamlet’s wife;
I thought thy bride-bed to have deck’d, sweet maid,
And not have strew’d thy grave.
Laer. Of treble woe 268
Fall ten times treble on that cursed head
Whose wicked deed thy most ingenious sense
Depriv’d thee of. Hold off the earth awhile,
Till I have caught her once more in mine arms.
[Leaps into the grave.
Now pile your dust upon the quick and dead,
Till of this flat a mountain you have made, 274
To o’er-top old Pelion or the skyish head
Of blue Olympus.
Ham. [Advancing.] What is he whose grief
Bears such an emphasis? whose phrase of sorrow
Conjures the wandering stars, and makes them stand
Like wonder-wounded hearseurs? this is I,
Hamlet the Dane. 278
[Leaps into the grave.
Laer. The devil take thy soul! 280
[Grapples with him.
Laer. Thou pray’st not well.
I prithee, take thy fingers from my throat;
For though I am not splenetic and rash
Yet have I in me something dangerous, 284
Which let thy wisdom fear. Away thy hand!
King. Pluck them asunder.
Queen. All Gentlemen,—
[The Attendants part them, and they
come out of the grave.
HAMLET

Act V, Sc. II.

Ham. Why, I will fight with him upon this theme. Until my eyelids will no longer wag.
Queen. O my son! what theme?
Ham. I lov'd Ophelia; forty thousand brothers
Could not, with all their quantity of love, make up my sum. What wilt thou do for her?
King. O! he is mad, Laertes.
Queen. For love of God, forbear him.
Ham. 'Swounds, show me what thou'lt do:
Woo't wpeep? woo't fight? woo't fast? woo't tear thyself?
Woo't drink up eisel? eat a crocodile?
I'll do't. Dost thou come here to whine?
To outface me with leaping in her grave?
Be buried quick with her, and so will I:
And, if thou prate of mountains, let them throw
Millions of acres on us, till our ground,
Singeing his pate against the burning zone,
Make Ossa like a wart! Nay, an thou'lt mouth,
I'll rant as well as thou.
Queen. This is mere madness:
And thus a while the fit will work on him;
Anon, as patient as the female dove,
When that her golden cuplets are disclos'd,
His silence will sit drooping.
Ham. Hear ye, sir; What is the reason that you use me thus?
I lov'd you ever: but it is no matter;
Let Hercules himself do what he may,
The cat will mew and dog will have his day.
[Exit.]
King. I pray you, good Horatio, wait upon him.
[Exit Horatio.

[To Laertes.] Strengthen your patience in our last night's speech;
We'll put the matter to the present push.
Good Gertrude, set some watch over your son.
This grave shall have a living monument:
An hour of quiet shortly shall we see;
Till then, in patience our proceeding be.

[Exeunt.]

SCENE II.—A Hall in the Castle.

Enter Hamlet and Horatio.

Ham. So much for this, sir: now shall you see the other;
You do remember all the circumstance?
Hor. Remember it, my lord?
Ham. Sir, in my heart there was a kind of fighting
That would not let me sleep; methought I lay
Worse than the mutines in the bilboes. Reauly,—And praise'd be sadness for it, let us know,
Our indiscussion sometimes serves us well.

When our deep plots do pall; and that should teach us
There's a divinity that shapes our ends,
Rough-hew them how we will.
Hor. That is most certain.
Ham. Up from my cabin,
My sea-gown scarf'd about me, in the dark
Grop'd I to find out them, had my desire,
Finger'd their packet, and in fine withdrew
To mine own room again; making so bold—
My fears forgetting manners—to unsheal
Their grand commission; where I found,
Horatio,
O royal knavery! an exact command,
Larded with many several sorts of reasons
Importing Denmark's health, and England's too,
With, hol such bugs and goblins in my life,
That, on the supervise, no leisure bated,
No, not to stay the grinding of the axe;
My head should be struck off.
Hor. Is't possible?
Ham. Here's the commission; read it at more leisure.
But wilt thou hear me how I did proceed?
Hor. I beseech you.
Ham. Being thus be-netted round with villanies,—
Ere I could make a prologue to my brains
They had begun the play,—I sat me down,
Devis'd a new commission, wrote it fair;
I once did hold it, as our statutes do,
A baseness to write fair, and labour'd much
How to forget that learning; but, sir, now
It did me yeoman's service. Wilt thou know
The effect of what I wrote?
Hor. Ay, good my lord.
Ham. An earnest conjuration from the king,
As England was his faithful tributary,
As love between them like the palm should flourish,
As peace should still her wheaten garland wear,
And stand a comma 'tween their amities,
And many such-like 'As'es of great charge,
That, on the view and knowing of these contents,
Without further end, more or less,
He should the bearers put to sudden death,
Not thriving-time allow'd.
Hor. How was this seal'd?
Ham. Why, even in that was heaven ordain'd.
I had my father's signet in my purse,
Which was the model of that Danish seal;
Folded the writ up in form of the other,
Subscrib'd it, gave't th' impress, plac'd it safely,
Act V, Sc. II.

Ham. No, believe me, 'tis very cold; the wind is northerly.

Osr. It is indifferent cold, my lord, indeed.

Ham. But yet methinks it is very sultry and hot for my complexion.

Osr. Exceedingly, my lord; it is very sultry, as 'twere, I cannot tell how. But, my lord, his majesty bade me signify to you that he has laid a great wager on your head. Sir, this is the matter.—

Ham. I beseech you, remember—

[Hamlet moves him to put on his hat.]

Osr. Nay, good my lord; for mine ease, in good faith. Sir, here is newly come to court Laertes; believe me, an absolute gentleman, full of most excellent differences, of very soft society and great show; indeed, to speak feelingly of him, he is the card or calendar of gentry, for you shall find in him the continent of what part a gentleman would see.

Ham. Sir, his denination suffers no perdition in you; though, I know, to divide him inventorially would dizzy the arithmetic of memory, and yet but yaw neither, in respect of his quick sail. But, in the verity of exultation, I take him to be a soul of great article; and his infusion of such dearness and rarity, as, to make true diction of him, his semblable is his mirror; and who else would trace him, his umbrage, nothing more.

Osr. Your lordship speaks most infallibly of him.

Ham. The concernancy, sir? why do we wrap the gentleman in our more rawer breath?

Osr. Sir?

Hor. Is 't not possible to understand in another tongue? You will do 't, sir, really.

Ham. What imports the nomination of this gentleman?

Osr. Of Laertes?

Hor. His purse is empty already; all's golden words are spent.

Ham. Of him, sir.

Osr. I know you are not ignorant—

Ham. I would you did, sir; in faith, if you did, it would not much approve me. Well, sir.

Osr. You are not ignorant of what excellence Laertes is—

Ham. I dare not confess that, lest I should compare with him in excellence; but, to know a man well, were to know himself.

Osr. I mean, sir, for his weapon; but in the imputation laid on him by them, in his meed he's unfellowed.

Ham. What's his weapon?

Osr. Rapier and dagger.

Ham. That's two of his weapons; but, well.

Osr. The king, sir, hath wassoced with him six
Barbary horses; against the which he has imposed, as I take it, six French rapiers and poniards, with their assigns, as girdle, hangers, and so: three of the carriages, in faith, are very dear to fancy, very responsive to the hilts, most delicate carriages, and of very liberal conceit. 160

Ham. What call you the carriages?

Hor. I knew you must be edified by the margin, ere you had done.

Osr. The carriages, sir, are the hangers. 164

Ham. The phrase would be more german to the matter, if we could carry cannon by our sides; I would it might be hangers till then. But, on; six Barbary horses against six French swords, their assigns, and three liberal-conceited carriages; that's the French bet against the Danish. Why is this 'imposed,' as you call it?

Osr. The king, sir, hath laid, that in a dozen passes between yourself and him, he shall not exceed you three hits; he hath laid on twelve for nine, and it would come to immediate trial, if your lordship would vouchsafe the answer. 176

Ham. How if I answer no?

Osr. I mean, my lord, the opposition of your person in trial.

Ham. Sir, I will walk here in the hall; if it please his majesty, 'tis the breathing time of day with me; let the foils be brought, the gentleman willing, and the king hold his purpose, I will win for him as I can; if not, I will gain nothing but my shame and the odd hits. 185

Osr. Shall I re-deliver you so?

Ham. To this effect, sir; after what flourish your nature will.

Osr. I commend my duty to your lordship.

Ham. Yours, yours. [Exit Osr.] He does well to commend it himself; there are no tongues else for 's turn. 192

Hor. This lapwing runs away with the shell on his head.

Ham. He did comply with his dog before he sucked it. Thus has he—and many more of the same boy, that I know the drossy age dotes on—only got the tune of the time and outward habit of encounter, a kind of yeasty collection which carries them through and through the most fond and winnowed opinions; and do but blow them to their trial, the bubbles are out. 202

Enter a Lord.

Lord. My lord, his majesty commended him to you by young Osr, who brings back to him, that you attend him in the hall; he sends to know if your pleasure hold to play with Laertes, or that you will take longer time.

Ham. I am constant to my purposes; they follow the king's pleasure: if his fitness speaks, mine is ready; now, or whosoever, provided I be so able as now.

Lord. The king, and queen, and all are coming down.

Ham. In happy time.

Lord. The queen desires you to use some gentle entertainment to Laertes before you fall to play. 217

Ham. She well instructs me. [Exit Lord.

Hor. You will lose this wager, my lord.

Ham. I do not think so; since he went into France, I have been in continual practice; I shall win at the odds. But thou wouldst not think how ill all's here about my heart; but it is no matter. 224

Hor. Nay, good my lord,—

Ham. It is but foolery; but it is such a kind of gain-giving as would perhaps trouble a woman.

Hor. If your mind dislike any thing, obey it; I will forestal their repair hither, and say you are not fit.

Ham. Not a whit, we defy augury; there's a special providence in the fall of a sparrow. If it be now, 'tis not to come; if it be not to come, it will be now; if it be not now, yet it will come: the readiness is all. Since no man has aught of what he leaves, what is 't to leave betimes? Let be. 238

Enter King, Queen, Laertes, Lords, Osric, and Attendants with foils, &c.

King. Come, Hamlet, come, and take this hand from me.

[The King puts the hand of Laertes into that of Hamlet.

Ham. Give me your pardon, sir; I've done you wrong;
But pardon 't, as you are a gentleman.
This presence knows,
And you must needs have heard, how I am punish'd
With sore distraction. What I have done, 244
That might your nature, honour and exception
Roughly awake, I here proclaim was madness.
Was 't Hamlet wrong'd Laertes? Never Hamlet:
If Hamlet from himself be ta'en away, 248
And when he's not himself does wrong Laertes,
Then Hamlet does it not; Hamlet denies it.
Who does it then? His madness. If 't be so,
Hamlet is of the faction that is wrong'd; 252
His madness is poor Hamlet's enemy.
Sir, in this audience,
Let my disclaimer from a purpose'd evil
Free me so far in your most generous thoughts,
That I have shot mine arrow o'er the house, 257
And hurt my brother.
Act V, Sc. II.

**HAMLET**

Laer. I am satisfied in nature,
Whose motive, in this case, should stir me most
To my revenge; but in my terms of honour
I stand aloof, and will no reconcilement,
Till by some elder masters, of known honour,
I have a voice and precedent of peace,
To keep my name uncor'd. But till that time,
I do receive your offer'd love like love,
And will not wrong it.

Ham. I embrace it freely;
And will this brother's wager frankly play.
Give us the foils. Come on.

Laer. Come, one for me.

Ham. I'll be your foil, Laertes; in mine ignorance
Your skill shall, like a star i' the darkest night,
Stick fiery off indeed.

Laer. You mock me, sir.

Ham. No, by this hand.

King. Give them the foils, young Osric.

Cousin Hamlet,

You know the wager?

Ham. Very well, my lord;
Your Grace hath laid the odds o' the weaker side.

King. I do not fear it; I have seen you both;
But since he is better'd, we have therefore odds.

Laer. This is too heavy; let me see another.

Ham. This likes me well. These foils have all a length?

Osir. Ay, my good lord.

[They prepare to play.

King. Set me the stoups of wine upon that table.

If Hamlet give the first or second hit,
Or quit in answer of the third exchange,
Let all the battlements their ordinance fire;
The king shall drink to Hamlet's better breath;
And in the cup an union shall he throw,
Richer than that which four successive kings
In Denmark's crown have worn. Give me the cups;

And let the kettle to the trumpet speak,
The trumpet to the cannon without,
Treasons to the heavens, the heavens to earth,
'T now the king drinks to Hamlet!' Come, begin;

And you, the judges, bear a wary eye.

Ham. Come on, sir.

Laer. Come, my lord. [They play.

Ham. One.

Laer. No.

Ham. Judgment.

Osir. A hit, a very palpable hit.

Laer. Well; again.

King. Stay; give me drink. Hamlet, this pearl is thine;
Here's to thy health. Give him the cup.
[Trumpets sound; and cannon shot off within.

Ham. I'll play this bout first; set it by awhile.
Come.—[They play.] Another hit; what say you?

Laer. A touch, a touch, I do confess.

King. Our son shall win.

Queen. He's fat, and scant of breath.
Here, Hamlet, take my napkin, rub thy brows;
The queen carouses to thy fortune, Hamlet.

Ham. Good madam!

King. Gertrude, do not drink.

Queen. I will, my lord; I pray you, pardon me.

King. [Aside.] It is the poison'd cup! it is too late.

Ham. I dare not drink yet, madam; by and by.

Queen. Come, let me wipe thy face.

Laer. My lord, I'll hit him now.

King. I do not think 't

Laer. [Aside.] And yet 'tis almost 'gainst my conscience.

Ham. Come, for the third, Laertes. You but dally;

I pray you, pass with your best violence.

I am afraid you make a wanton of me.

Laer. Say you so? come on. [They play.

Osr. Nothing, neither way.

Laer. Have at you now.

[LAERTES wounds HAMLET; then, in scuffling, they change rapiers, and HAMLET wounds LAERTES.

King. Part them! they are incensed.

Ham. Nay, come, again. [The QUEEN falls.

Osr. Look to the queen there, ho!

Hor. They bleed on both sides. How is it, my lord?

Osr. How is it, Laertes?

Laer. Why, as a woodcock to mine own springe, Osric;

I am justly kill'd with mine own treachery.

Ham. How does the queen?

King. She swounds to see them bleed.

Queen. No, no, the drink, the drink,—O my dear Hamlet!

The drink, the drink; I am poison'd. [Dies.

Ham. O villainy! Hol' bed the door be lock'd: Treachery! seek it out. [LAERTES falls.

Laer. It is here, Hamlet. Hamlet, thou art slain;

No medicine in the world can doe thee good;
In thee there is not half an hour of life;
The treacherous instrument is in thy hand,
Unbated and venom'd. The foul practice
Hath turn'd itself on me; hol' here I lie, 332
Never to rise again. Thy mother's poison'd.
I can no more. The king, the king's to blame.

Ham. The point venemous' d too—
Then, venom, to thy work. [Stabs the King.
All. Treason! treason!

King. O! yet defend me, friends; I am but hurt.

Ham. Here, thou incestuous, murderous, damned Dane,
Drink off this potion;—is thy union here? Follow my mother.

Laer. He is justly serv'd;
It is a poison temper'd by himself.
Exchange forgiveness with me, noble Hamlet:
Mine and my father's death come not upon thee, Nor thine on me!

Ham. Heaven make thee free of it! I follow thee.

I am dead, Horatio. Wretched queen, adieu! You that look pale and tremble at this chance,
That are but mutes or audience to this act,
Had I but time,—as this fell sergeant, death,
Is strict in his arrest,—O! I could tell you—
But let it be. Horatio, I am dead;
Thou liv'st; report me and my cause aright
To the unsatisfied.

Hor. Never believe it;
I am more an antique Roman than a Dane: Here's yet some liquor left.

Ham. As thou'rt a man, Give me the cup: let go; by heaven, I'll have 't.
0 God! Horatio, what a named name,
Things standing thus unknown, shall live behind me.
If thou didst ever hold me in thy heart,
Absend thee from felicity awhile,
And in this harsh world draw thy breath in pain,
To tell my story.

[March afar off, and shot within.

What war-like noise is this? Osr. Young Fortinbras, with conquest come from Poland,

To the ambassadors of England gives This war-like volley.

Ham. O! I die, Horatio;
The potent poison quite o'er-crows my spirit:
I cannot live to hear the news from England,
But I do prophesy the election lights
On Fortinbras: he has my dying voice;
So tell him, with the occurrences, more and less,
Which have solicited,—The rest is silence. [Dies.

Hor. Now cracks a noble heart. Good-night, sweet prince,
And sights of angels sing thee to thy rest! Why does the drum come hither?

[March within.

Enter Fortinbras, the English Ambassadors, and Others.

Fort. Whence is this sight?
ACT I.

SCENE I.—A Room of State in King Lear’s Palace.

Enter Kent, Gloucester, and Edmund.

Kent. I thought the king had more affected the Duke of Albany than Cornwall.

Glo. It did always seem so to us; but now, in the division of the kingdom, it appears not which of the dukes he values most; for equalities are so weighed that curiosity in neither can make choice of either’s moiety.

Kent. Is not this your son, my lord?

Glo. His breeding, sir, hath been at my charge: I have so often blushed to acknowledge him, that now I am brazen to it.

Kent. I cannot conceive you.

Glo. Sir, this young fellow’s mother could, whereupon she grew round-womb’d, and had, indeed, sir, a son for her cradle ere she had a husband for her bed. Do you smell a fault?

Kent. I cannot wish the fault undone, the issue of it being so proper.

Glo. But I have a son, sir, by order of law, some year elder than this, who yet is no dearer in my account: though this knave came somewhat saucily into the world before he was sent for, yet was his mother fair; there was good sport at his making, and the whoreson must be acknowledged. Do you know this noble gentleman, Edmund?

Edm. No, my lord.

Glo. My Lord of Kent: remember him hereafter as my honourable friend.

Edm. My services to your lordship.

Kent. I must love you, and sue to know you better.

Edm. Sir, I shall study deserving.

Glo. He hath been out nine years, and away he shall again. The king is coming.

Sennet. Enter Lear, Cornwall, Albany, Goneril, Regan, Cordelia, and Attendants.

Lear. Attend the Lords of France and Burgundy, Gloucester.

Glo. I shall, my liege.

[Exeunt Gloucester and Edmund.

Lear. Meantime we shall express our darker purpose.

Give me the map there. Know that we have divided
In three our kingdom; and ’tis our fast intent
To shake all cares and business from our age,
Conferring them on younger strengths, while we
Unburden’d crawl toward death. Our son of Cornwall,
And you, our no less loving son of Albany,
We have this hour a constant will to publish
Our daughters’ several dowers, that future strife
May be prevented now. The princes, France
and Burgundy,
Great rivals in our youngest daughter’s love,
Long in our court have made their amorous sojourn,
And here are to be answer'd. Tell me, my daughters,—
Since now we will divest us both of rule,
Interest of territory, cares of state,—
Which of you shall we say doth love us most?
That we our largest bounty may extend
Where nature doth with merit challenge.

Goneril,
Our eldest-born, speak first.

Cor. Sir, I love you more than words can
wield the matter;
Dearer than eye-sight, space, and liberty;
Beyond what can be valu'd, rich or rare;
No less than life, with grace, health, beauty,
honour;

As much as child e'er lov'd, or father found;
A love that makes breath poor and speech
unable;

Beyond all manner of so much I love you.

Cor. [Aside.] What shall Cordelia do? Love,
and be silent.

Lear. Of all these bounds, even from this line
to this,
With shadowy forests and with champains
rich'd,
With plenteous rivers and wide-skirted meads,
We make thee lady: to thine and Albany's issue
Be this perpetual. What says our second
daughter,

Our dearest Regan, wife to Cornwall? Speak.

Reg. I am made of that self metal as my
sister,
And prize me at her worth. In my true heart
I find she names my very deed of love;

Only she comes too short: that I profess
Myself an enemy to all other joys
Which the most precious square of sense posses-

And find I am alone felicitate
In your dear highness' love.

Cor. [Aside.] Then, poor Cordelia!

And yet not so; since, I am sure, my love's
More richer than my tongue.

Lear. To thee and thine, hereditary ever,
Remain this ample third of our fair kingdom,
No less in space, validity, and pleasure,
Than that confer'd on Goneril. Now, our joy;

Although our last, not least; to whose young
love
The vines of France and milk of Burgundy
Strive to be interest'd; what can you say to
draw
A third more opulent than your sisters? Speak.

Cor. Nothing, my lord.


Lear. Nothing will come of nothing: speak
again.

Cor. Unhappy that I am, I cannot heave
My heart into my mouth: I love your majesty
According to my bond; nor more nor less.

Lear. How, how, Cordelia! mend your speech
a little,

Lest you may mar your fortunes.

Cor. Good my lord,
You have begot me, bred me, lov'd me: I
Return those duties back as are right fit,
Obey you, love you, and most honour you.

Why have my sisters husbands, if they say
They love you all? Haply, when I shall wed,
That lord whose hand must take my plight
shall carry
Half my love with him, half my care and duty:
Sure I shall never marry like my sisters,
To love my father all.

Lear. But goes thy heart with this?

Cor. Ay, good my lord.

Lear. So young, and so untender?

Cor. So young, my lord, and true.

Lear. Let it be so; thy truth then be thy
dower:

For, by the sacred radiance of the sun,
The mysteries of Hecate and the night,
By all the operation of the orbs
From whom we do exist and cease to be,
Here I disclaim all my paternal care,
Propinquity and property of blood,

And as a stranger to my heart and me
Hold thee from this for ever. The barbarous
Scythian,

Or he that makes his generation messees
To gorge his appetite, shall to my bosom

Be as well neighbour'd, pitied, and reliev'd,
As thou my sometime daughter.

Kent. Good my liege,—

Lear. Peace, Kent!

Come not between the dragon and his wrath.
I lov'd her most, and thought to set my rest
On her kind nursery. Hence, and avoid my
sight!

So be my grave my peace, as here I give
Her father's heart from her! Call France,

Who stirs?

Call Burgundy. Cornwall and Albany,
With my two daughters' dowers digest the third;
Let pride, which she calls plainness, marry
her.

I do invest you jointly with my power,
Pre-eminence, and all the large effects
That troop with majesty. Ourself by monthly
course,

With reservation of a hundred knights,
By you to be sustain'd, shall our abode.
Act I, Sc. I.  KING LEAR

Make with you by due turn. Only we shall retain
The name and all th' addition to a king;
The sway, revenue, execution of the rest,
Beloved sons, be yours: which to confirm,
This coronet part between you.

KENT. Royal Lear,
Whom I have ever honour'd as my king,
Lov'd as my father, as my master follow'd,
As my great patron thought on in my prayers.—
LEAR. The bow is bent and drawn; make
From the shaft. 145
KENT. Let it fall rather, though the fork invade
The region of my heart: be Kent unmanners
When Lear is mad. What wouldst thou do, old
man? 148
Think'st thou -that duty shall have dread to speak
When power to flattery bows? To plainness
honour's bound
When majesty falls to folly. Reserve thy state;
And, in thy best consideration, check
This hideous rashness: answer my life my judgment,
Thy youngest daughter does not love thee least;
Nor are those empty-hearted whose low sound
Reverbs no hollowness.
LEAR. Kent, on thy life, no more.
KENT. My life I never held but as a pawn 157
To wage against thine enemies; nor fear to
lose it,
Thy safety being the motive.
LEAR. Out of my sight! I will not be thought
of
Kent. See better, Lear; and let me still remain
The true blank of thine eye.
LEAR. Now, by Apollo,—
KENT. Now, by Apollo, king,
Thou swear'st thy gods in vain.
LEAR. O vassall miscreant! 160
[Attacking his hand on his sword.

Abb. } Dear sir, forbear.
Corn.}
KENT. Do;
Kill thy physician, and the fee bestow
Upon the foul disease. Revoke thy gift;
Or, whilst I can vent clamour from my throat,
I'll tell thee thou dost evil.
LEAR. Hear me, recreant! 169
On thine allegiance, hear me!
Since thou hast sought to make us break our
vow,—
Which we durst never yet,—and, with strain'd
pride
To come betwixt our sentence and our power,—
Which not our nature nor our place can bear,—
Our potency made good, take thy reward.
Five days we do allot thee for provision
To shield thee from diseases of the world;
And, on the sixth, to turn thy hated back
Upon our kingdom: if, on the tenth day follow-
ing
Thy banish'd trunk be found in our dominions,
The moment is thy death. Away! By Jupiter,
This shall not be revok'd. 185
KENT. Fare thee well, king; sith thou wilt appear,
Freedom lives hence, and banishment is here.
[To CORDELIA.] The gods to their dear shelter
Take thee, maid,
That justly think'st, and hast most rightly said!
[To REGAN and GONERIL.] And your large
speeches may your deeds approve,
That good effects may spring from words of
love.
Thus Kent, O princes! bids you all adieu;
He'll shape his old course in a country new.
[Exit.

Flourish. Re-enter GLOUCESTER, with FRANCE,
BURGUNDY, and Attendants.

GLOUCESTER. Here's France and Burgundy, my noble
lord.
LEAR. My Lord of Burgundy,
We first address toward you, who with this king
Hath rival'd for our daughter. What, in the
least,
Will you require in present dowry with her,
Or cease your quest of love?
BUR. Most royal majesty, 196
I crave no more than hath your highness offer'd,
Nor will you tender less.
LEAR. Right noble Burgundy,
When she was dear to us we did hold her so,
But now her price is fall'n. Sir, there she stands:
If aught within that little-seeming substance,
Or all of it, with our displeasure pick'd,
And nothing more, may fitly like your Grace,
She's there, and she is yours.
BUR. I know no answer. 204
LEAR. Will you, with those infirmities she
owes,
Unfriended, new-adopted to our hate,
Dower'd with our curse, and stranger'd with
our oath,
Take her, or leave her?
BUR. Pardon me, royal sir; 208
Election makes not up on such conditions.
LEAR. Then leave her, sir; for, by the power
that made me,
I tell you all her wealth.—[To FRANCE.] For
you, great king,
I would not from your love make such a stray
To match you where I hate; therefore, beseech you
To avert your liking a more worthier way
Than on a wretch whom nature is asham’d
Almost to acknowledge hers.

France. This is most strange.

That she, who even but now was your best object,
The argument of your praise, balm of your age,
The best, the dearest, should in this trice of time
Commit a thing so monstrous, to dismantle
So many folds of favour. Sure, her offence
Must be of such unnatural degree
That monsters it, or your fore-vouch’d affection
Fall into taint; which to believe of her,
Must be a faith that reason without miracle
Could never plant in me.

Cor. I yet beseech your majesty—If for I want that glib and oily art
To speak and purpose not; since what I well intend,
I’ll do’t before I speak—that you make known
It is no vicious blot nor other foulness,
No unchaste action, or dishonour’d step,
That hath depriv’d me of your grace and favour,
But even for want of that for which I am richer,
A still-soliciting eye, and such a tongue
That I am glad I have not, though not to have it
Hath lost me in your liking.

Lear. Better than you.

France. Hadst not been born than not to have pleas’d me better.

Cor. Is it but this? a tardiness in nature
Which often leaves the history unspoke
That it intends to do? My Lord of Burgundy,
What say you to the lady? Love is not love
When it is mingled with regards that stand
Aloof from the entire point. Will you have her? She is herself a dowry.

Lear. Royal Lear.

Bur. Give but that portion which yourself propos’d,
And here I take Cordelia by the hand,
Duchess of Burgundy.

Lear. Nothing: I have sworn; I am firm.

Bur. I am sorry, then, you have so lost a father
That you must lose a husband.

Cor. Peace be with Burgundy!

France. Fairiest Cordelia, that art most rich,
Most choosy, forsaken; and most lov’d, despis’d!
Shame and thy virtues here I seize upon:
Be it lawful I take up what’s cast away...

Gods, gods! ’tis strange that from their cold’st neglect
My love should kindle to inflam’d respect.
Thy dowerless daughter, king, thrown to my chance,
Is queen of us, of ours, and our fair France: Not all the dukedoms of waterish Burgundy
Shall buy this unpriz’d precious maid of me.
Bid them farewell, Cordelia, though unkind:
Thou lovest here, a better where to find.

Lear. Thou hast her, France; let her be thine, for we
Have no such daughter, nor shall ever see
That face of hers again, therefore be gone
Without our grace, our love, our benison.

Come, noble Burgundy.

[FLOURISH. EXEUNT LEAR, BURGUNDY, CORNWALL, ALBANY, GLOUCESTER, AND ATTENDANTS.]

France. Bid farewell to your sisters.

Cor. The jewels of our father, with wash’d eyes
Cordelia leaves you: I know you what you are;
And like a sister am most loath to call
Your faults as they are nam’d. Use well our father:
To your professed bosoms I commit him:
But yet, alas! stood I within his grace,
I would prefer him to a better place.
So farewell to you both.

Reg. Prescribe not us our duties.

Cor. Be to content your lord, who hath receiv’d you
At fortune’s aim; you have obedience scanted,
And well are worth the want that you have wanted.

Bur. Time shall unfold what plighted cunning hides;
Who covers faults, at last shame them derides.
Well may you prosper!

France. Come, my fair Cordelia.

[Exeunt France and Cordelia.]

Reg. That’s most certain, and with you; next month with us.

Cor. You see how full of changes his age is; the observation we have made of it hath not been little: he always loved our sister most; and with what poor judgment he hath now cast her off appears too grossly.

Reg.’Tis the infirmity of his age; yet he hath ever but slenderly known himself.

Cor. The best and soundest of his time hath been: but rash; then, must we look to receive
from his age, not alone the imperfections of long-engraved condition, but, therewithal the unruly waywardness that infirm and choleric years bring with them. 303

Reg. Such unconstant starts we like to have from him as this of Kent's banishment. 310

Gon. There is further compliment of leave-taking between France and him. Pray you, let us hit together: if our father carry authority with such dispositions as he bears, this last surrender of his will but offend us.

Reg. We shall further think on't. 310

Gon. We must do something, and i' the heat. [Exeunt.

SCENE II.—A Hall in the Earl of Gloucester's Castle.

Enter EDMUND, with a letter.

Edm. Thou, Nature, art my goddess; to thy law
My services are bound. Wherefore should I
Stand in the plague of custom, and permit
The curiosity of nations to deprive me,
For that I am some twelve or fourteen moon-shines
Lag of a brother? Why bastard? wherefore base?
When my dimensions are as well compact,
My mind as generous, and my shape as true, 8
As honest madam's issue? Why brand they us
With base? with baseness? bastardy? base, base?
Who in the lusty stealth of nature take
More composition and fierce quality
Than doth, within a dull, stale, tired bed,
Go to the creating a whole tribe of fops,
Got 'tween asleep and wake? Well then,
Legitimate Edgar, I must have your land: 15
Our father's love is to the bastard Edmund.
As to the legitimate. Fine word, 'legitimate!' Well, my legitimate, if this letter speed,
And my invention thrive, Edmund the base 20
Shall top the legitimate:—I grow, I prosper;
Now, gods, stand up for bastards!

Enter Gloucester.

Glo. Kent banished thus! And France in choler parted!
And the king gone to-night! subscrib'd his power! 24
Confin'd to exhibition! All this done
Upon the spell! Edmund, how now! what news?

Edm. So please your lordship, none. [Putting up the letter,
tested, brutish villain! worse than brutish! Go, sirrah, seek him; I'll apprehend him. Abominable villain! Where is he?

Edm. I do not well know, my lord. If it shall please you to suspend your indignation against my brother till you can derive from him better testimony of his intent, you shall run a certain course; where, if you violently proceed against him, mistaking his purpose, it would make a great gap in your own honour, and shake in pieces the heart of his obedience. I dare pawn down my life for him, that he hath writ this to feel my affection to your honour, and to no other pretence of danger.

Glo. Think you so?

Edm. If your honour judge it meet, I will place you where you shall hear us confer of this, and by an auricular assurance have your satisfaction; and that without any further delay than this very evening.

Glo. He cannot be such a monster—

Edm. Nor is not, sure.

Glo.—to his father, that so tenderly and entirely loves him. Heaven and earth! Edmund, seek him out; wind me into him, I pray you: frame the business after your own wisdom. I would unstate myself to be in a due resolution.

Edm. I will seek him, sir, presently; convey the business as I shall find means, and acquaint you withall.

Glo. These late eclipses in the sun and moon portend no good to us: though the wisdom of nature can reason it thus and thus, yet nature finds itself scourged by the sequent effects. Love cools, friendship falls off, brethren divide: in cities, mutinies; in countries, discord; in palaces, treason; and the bond cracked between son and father. This villain of mine comes under the prediction; there’s son against father: the king falls from bias of nature; there’s father against child. We have seen the best of our time: machinations, hollowness, treachery, and all ruinous disorders, follow us disquietly to our graves. Find out this villain, Edmund; it shall lose thee nothing: do it carefully. And the noble and true-hearted Kent banished! his offence, honesty! 'Tis strange! [Exit.

Edm. This is the excellent forpenny of the world, that, when we are sick in fortune,—often the surfet of our own behaviour,—we make guilty of our disasters the sun, the moon, and the stars; as if we were villains by necessity, fools by heavenly compulsion, knaves, thieves, and traitors by spherical predominaance, drunkards, liars, and adulterers by an enforced obedience of planetary influence; and all that we are evil in, by a divine thrusting on: an admirable evasion of whoremaster man, to lay his goatish disposition to the charge of a star! My father compounded with my mother under the dragon’s tail, and my nativity was under ursa major; so that it follows I am rough and lecherous. ’Sfoot! I should have been that I am had the maidenliest star in the firmament twinkled on my bastardizing. Edgar—

Enter Edgar.

and pat he comes, like the catastrophe of the old comedy: my cue is villainous melancholy, with a sigh like Tom o' Bedlam. O, these eclipses do portend these divisions! Fa, sol, la, mi.

Edg. How now, brother Edmund! What serious contemplation are you in?

Edm. I am thinking, brother, of a prediction I read this other day, what should follow these eclipses.

Edg. Do you busy yourself with that?

Edm. I promise you the effects he writes of succeed unhappily; as of unnaturalness between the child and the parent; death, dearth, dissolutions of ancient amities; divisions in state; menaces and maledictions against king and nobles; needless discontents, banishment of friends, dissipation of cohorts, nuptial breaches, and I know not what.

Edg. How long have you been a sectary astronomical?

Edm. Come, come; when saw you my father last?

Edg. The night gone by.

Edm. Spake you with him?

Edg. Ay, two hours together.

Edm. Parted you in good terms? Found you no displeasure in him by word or countenance?

Edg. None at all.

Edm. Bethink yourself wherein you may have offended him; and at my entreaty forbear his presence till some little time hath qualified the heat of his displeasure, which at this instant so rageth in him that with the mischief of your person it would scarcely allay.

Edg. Some villain hath done me wrong.

Edm. That’s my fear. I pray you have a continent forbearance till the speed of his rage goes slower, and, as I say, retire with me to my lodging, from whence I will fitly bring you to hear my lord speak. Pray you, go; there’s my key. If you do stir abroad, go armed.

Edg. Armed, brother!

Edm. Brother, I advise you to the best; go armed; I am no honest man if there be any good meaning toward you; I have told you what I
have seen and heard; but faintly, nothing like
the image and horror of it; pray you, away.
    Edg. Shall I hear from you anon?
    Edm. I do serve you in this business. 200
    [Exit EDGAR.
A credulous father, and a brother noble,
Whose nature is so far from doing harms
That he suspects none; on whose foolish
honesty
My practices ride easy! I see the business. 204
Let me, if not by birth, have lands by wit:
All with me's meet that I can fashion fit. [Exit.

SCENE III.—A Room in the Duke of Albany's
Palace.

Enter GONERIL and OSWALD her Steward.

Gon. Did my father strike my gentleman for
chiding of his fool?
    Osw. Ay, madam.
    Gon. By day and night he wrongs me; every
hour 4
He flashes into one gross crime or other,
That sets us all at odds: I'll not endure it:
His knights grow riotous, and himself upbraids
us
On every trifle. When he returns from hunting
I will not speak with him; say I am sick:
If you come slack of former services,
You shall do well; the fault of it I'll answer.
    Osw. He's coming, madam; I hear him. 12
    [Horns within.
    Gon. Put on what weary negligence you
please,
You and your fellows; I'd have it come to
question:
If he distaste it, let him to my sister,
Whose mind and mine, I know, in that are
one,
Not to be over-rul'd. Idle old man,
That still would manage those authorities
That he hath given away! Now, by my life,
Old fools are babes again, and must be us'd 20
With checks as flatteries, when they are seen
abus'd.
Remember what I have said.
    Osw. Well, madam.
    Gon. And let his knights have colder looks
among you;
What grows of it, no matter; advise your
fellows so:
I would breed from hence occasions, and I
shall,
That I may speak: I'll write straight to my
sister
To hold my very course. Prepare for dinner. 24
    [Exeunt.

SCENE IV.—A Hall in the Same.

Enter KENT, disguised.

Kent. If but as well I other accents borrow,
That can my speech diffuse, my good intent
May carry through itself to that full issue
For which I raz'd my likeness. Now, banish'd
Kent,
If thou canst serve where thou dost stand con-
demn'd,
So may it come, thy master, whom thou lov'st,
Shall find thee full of labours.

Horns within. Enter LEAR, Knights, and
Attendants.

Lear. Let me not stay a jot for dinner: go,
get it ready. [Exit an Attendant.] How now!
what art thou?
Kent. A man, sir.
Lear. What dost thou profess? What wouldst
thou with us?
Kent. I do profess to be no less than I seem;
to serve him truly that will put me in trust; to
love him that is honest; to converse with him
that is wise, and say's little; to fear judgment; to
fight when I cannot choose; and to eat no fish.
Lear. What art thou?
Kent. A very honest-hearted fellow, and as
poor as the king.
Lear. If thou be as poor for a subject as he
is for a king, thou art poor enough. What
wouldst thou?
Kent. Service.
Lear. Whom wouldst thou serve?
Kent. You.
Lear. Dost thou know me, fellow?
Kent. No, sir; but you have that in your
countenance which I would fain call master.
Lear. What's that?
Kent. Authority.
Lear. What services canst thou do?
Kent. I can keep honest counsel, ride, run,
mar a curious tale in telling it, and deliver a
plain message bluntly; that which ordinary men
are fit for, I am qualified in, and the best of me
is diligence.
Lear. How old art thou?
Kent. Not so young, sir, to love a woman for
singing, nor so old to dote on her for any thing;
I have years on my back forty-eight.
Lear. Follow me; thou shalt serve me: if I
like thee, no worse after dinner I will not part
from thee yet. Dinner, ho! dinner! Where's
my knife? my fool? Go you and call my fool
knight. 32
    [Exeunt.
Enter Oswald.

You, you, sirrah, where's my daughter? 48

Osw. So please you,— [Exit.

Lear. What says the fellow there? Call the clotpoll back. [Exit a Knight.] Where's my fool, ho? I think the world's asleep. How now! where's that mongrel? 53

Re-enter Knight.

Knight. He says, my lord, your daughter is not well.

Lear. Why came not the slave back to me when I called him? 57

Knight. Sir, he answered me in the roundest manner, he would not.

Lear. He would not! 60

Knight. My lord, I know not what the matter is; but, to my judgment, your highness is not entertained with that ceremonious affectation as you were wont; there's a great abatement of kindness appears as well in the general dependants as in the duke himself also and your daughter.

Lear. Hal sayest thou so? 68

Knight. I beseech you, pardon me, my lord, if I be mistaken; for my duty cannot be silent when I think your highness wronged. 71

Lear. Thou but rememberest of mine own conception: I have perceived a most faint neglect of late; which I have rather blamed as mine own jealous curiosity than as a very pretence and purpose of unkindness: I will look further into 't. But where's my fool? I have not seen him this two days.

Knight. Since my young lady's going into France, sir, the fool hath much pined him away.

Lear. No more of that; I have noted it well. Go you and tell my daughter I would speak with her. [Exit an Attendant. Go you, call hither my fool. [Exit an Attendant.

Re-enter Oswald.

O! you sir, you, come you hither, sir. Who am I, sir? 86

Osw. My lady's father.

Lear. 'My lady's father!' my lord's knave; you whoreson dog! you slave! you our! 89

Osw. I am none of these, my lord; I beseech your pardon.

Lear. Do you bandy looks with me, you rascal? [Striking him.

Osw. I'll not be struck, my lord. 94

Kent. Nor tripped neither, you base football player. [Tripping up his heels.

Lear. I thank thee, fellow; thou servest me, and I'll love thee. 98

Kent. Come, sir, arise, away! I'll teach you differences: away, away! If you will measure your lubber's length again, tarry; but away! Go to; have you wisdom? so. 104

[Pushes Oswald out.

Lear. Now, my friendly knave, I thank thee: there's earnest of thy service.

[Gives Kent money.

Enter Fool.


Lear. How now, my pretty knave! how dost thou? 108

Fool. Sirrah, you were best take my coxcomb.

Kent. Why, fool?

Fool. Why? for taking one's part that's out of favour. Nay, an thou canst not smile as the wind sits, thou'lt catch cold shortly: there, take my coxcomb. Why, this fellow has banished two on 's daughters, and did the third a blessing against his will: if thou follow him thou must needs wear my coxcomb. How now, nuncle! Would I had two coxcombs and two daughters!

Lear. Why, my boy? 119

Fool. If I gave them all my living, I'd keep my coxcombs myself. There's mine; beg another of thy daughters.

Lear. Take heed, sirrah; the whip. 123

Fool. Truth's a dog must to kennel; he must be whipt out when Lady the brach may stand by the fire and stink.

Lear. A pestilent gall to me!

Fool. [To Kent.] Sirrah, I'll teach thee a speech. 129

Lear. Do.

Fool. Mark it, nuncle:—

Have more than thou showest,

Speak less than thou knowest,

Lend less than thou owwest,

Ride more than thou goest,

Learn more than thou tronest,

Set less than thou throwest;

Leave thy drink and thy whore,

And keep in-a-door,

And thou shalt have more

Than two tens to a score. 140

Kent. This is nothing, fool.

Fool. Then 'tis like the breath of an unsee'd lawyer, you gave me nothing for 't. Can you make no use of nothing, nuncle? 145

Lear. Why, no, boy; nothing can be made out of nothing.

Fool. [To Kent.] Prithee, tell him, so much the rent of his land comes to: he will not believe a fool. 150

Lear. A bitter fool!

Fool. Dost thou know the difference, my boy;
Act I, Sc. IV.

KING LEAR

between a bitter fool and a sweet fool?

Lear. No, lad; teach me.

Fool. That lord that counsell'd thee
To give away thy land,
Come place him here by me,
Do thou for him stand:
The sweet and bitter fool
Will presently appear;
The one in motley here,
The other found out there.

Lear. Dost thou call me fool, boy?
Fool. All thy other titles thou hast given away; that thou wast born with.

Kent. This is not altogether my lord.
Fool. No, faith, lords and great men will not let me; if I had a monarch out, they would have part on 't, and ladies too: they will not let me have all fool to myself; they'll be snatching. Nunke, give me an egg, and I'll give thee two crowns.

Lear. What two crowns shall they be?
Fool. Why, after I have cut the egg i' the middle and eat up the meat, the two crowns of the egg. When thou clovest thy crown i' the middle, and gavest away both parts, thou borest thine ass on thy back o'er the dirt: thou hadst little wit in thy bald crown when thou gavest thy golden one away. If I speak like myself in this, let him be whipped that first finds it so.

Fools had ne'er less grace in a year;
For wise men are grown foppish,
And know not how their wits to wear,
Their manners are so apish.

Lear. When were you wont to be so full of songs, sirrah?

Fool. I have used it, nunke, ever since thou madest thy daughters thy mothers; for when thou gavest them the rod and puttest down thine own breeches,

Then they for sudden joy did weep,
And I for sparrow sung,
That such a king should play bo-peep,
And go the fools among.

Prithée, nunke, keep a schoolmaster that can teach thy fool to lie: I would fain learn to lie.

Lear. An you lie, sirrah, we'll have you whipped.

Fool. I am marvel what kin thou and thy daughters are: they'll have me whipped for speaking true, thou'll have me whipped for lying; and sometimes I am whipped for holding my peace. I had rather be any kind o' thing than a fool; and yet I would not be thee, nunke; thou hast pared thy wit o' both sides, and left nothing i' the middle: here comes one o' the parings.

Enter GONERIL.

Lear. How now, daughter! what makes that frontlet on? Methinks you are too much of late i' the frown.

Fool. Thou wast a pretty fellow when thou hadst no need to care for her frowning; now thou art an O without a figure. I am better than thou art now; I am a fool, thou art nothing. [To GONERIL.] Yes, forsooth, I will hold my tongue; so your face bids me, though you say nothing.

Mum, mum;
He that keeps nor crust nor crumb,
Weary of all, shall want some.
That's a sheale peasecod. [Pointing to LEAR.

Gon. Not only, sir, this your all-licens'd fool,
But other of your insolent retinue
Do hourly carp and quarrel, breaking forth
In rack and not-to-be-endured riots. Sir,
I had thought, by making this well known unto you,
To have found a safe redress; but now grow fearful,
By what yourself too late have spoke and done.
That you protect this course, and put it on
By your allowance; which if you should, the fault
Would not 'scape censure, nor the redresses's sleep,
Which, in the tender of a wholesome weal,
Might in their working do you that offence,
Which else were shame, that then necessity
Will call discreet proceeding.

Fool. For you brow, nunke,
The hedge-sparrow fed the cuckoo so long,
That it had it head bit off by it young.

So out went the candle, and we were left darkling.

Lear. Are you our daughter?
Gon. I would you would make use of your good wisdom,
Whereof I know you are fraught; and put away
These dispositions which of late transform you
From what you rightly are.

Fool. May not an ass know when the cart
draws the horse? Whoop! Jug! I love thee.

Lear. Does any here know me? This is not
Lear:

Does Lear walk thus? speak thus? Where are his eyes?

Either his notion weakens, his discernings
Are laggard. Ha! waking? 'tis not so.

Who is it that can tell me who I am?

Fool. Lear's shadow.

Lear. I would learn that; for, by the marks
of sovereignty, knowledge and reason, I should
be false persuaded I had daughters.
Fool. Which they will make an obedient father.

Lear. Your name, fair gentlewoman?

Gon. This admiration, sir, is much o’ the favour

Of other your new pranks. I do beseech you
To understand my purposes aright:
As you are old and reverend, should be wise.
Here do you keep a hundred knights and
squires;

Men so disorder’d, so debosh’d, and bold,
That this our court, infected with their manners,
Shows like a riotous inn: epicurism and lust
Make it more like a tavern or a brothel

Than a grac’d palace. The shame itself doth

For instant remedy; be then desir’d
By her that else will take the thing she begs,
A little to disquantity your train;

And the remainder, that shall still depend,
To be such men as may besort your age,
Which know themselves and you.

Lear. Darkness and devils!

Saddle my horses; call my train together.

Degenerate bastard! I’ll not trouble thee:
Yet have I left a daughter.

Gon. You strike my people, and your disorder’d rabble
Make servants of their betters.

Enter Albany.

Lear. Woe, that too late repents;

[To ALBANY.] O sir, are you come?
Is it your will? Speak, sir. Prepare my horses.

Ingratitude, thou marble-hearted fiend,

More hideous, when thou show’st thee in a

child, Than the sea-monster.

Alb. Fray, sir, be patient.

Lear. [To Goneril.] Detested kite! thou liest:

My train are men of choice and rarest parts,

That all particulars of duty know,

And in the most exact regard support

The worship of their name. O most small fault,

How ugly didst thou in Cordelia show!

Which, like an engine, wrench’d my frame of

nature

From the fire place, drew from my heart all

love,

And added to the gall. O Lear, Lear, Lear!

Beat at this gate, that let thy folly in,

[Striking his head.

And thy dear judgment out! Go, go, my people.

Alb. My lord, I am guiltless, as I am ignorant

Of what hath mov’d you.

Lear. It may be so, my lord.

Hear, Nature, hear! dear goddess, hear!

Suspend thy purpose, if thou didst intend

To make this creature fruitful!

Into her womb convey sterility!

Dry up in her the organs of increase,
And from her derogate body never spring

A babe to honour her! If she must teem,

Create her child of spleen, that it may live

And be a thwart dishonour’d torment to her!

Let it stamp wrinkles in her brow of youth,
With cadent tears fret channels in her cheeks,

Turn all her mother’s pains and benefits

To laughter and contempt, that she may feel

How sharper than a serpent’s tooth it is

To have a thankless child! Away, away!

[Exit.

Alb. Now, gods that we adore, whereof
comes this?

Gon. Never afflict yourself to know the cause;

But let his disposition have that scope.

That dotage gives it.

Re-enter Lear.

Lear. What! fifty of my followers at a clap,

Within a fortnight?

Alb. What’s the matter, sir?

Lear. I’ll tell thee. [To GONERIL.] Life and
death! I am ashamed

That thou hast power to shake my manhood

thus,

That these hot tears, which break from me per-

force,

Should make thee worth them. Blasts and fogs

upon thee!

Th’ unvented woundings of a father’s curse

Pierce every sense about thee! Old fond eyes,

Beweep this cause again, I’ll pluck ye out,

And cast you, with the waters that you lose,

To temper clay. Yea, is it come to this?

Let it be so: I have another daughter,

Who, I am sure, is kind and comfortable:

When she shall bear this of thee, with her

nails

She’ll flay thy wolvish visage. Thou shalt find

That I’ll resume the shape which thou dost

think

I have cast off for ever; thou shalt, I warrant

thee. [Exit L. EARP, KENT, and Attendants.

Gon. Do you mark that?

Alb. I cannot be so partial, Goneril,

To the great love I bear you.

Gon. Pray you, content. What, Oswald, ho!

[To the Fool.] You, sir, more knave than fool,

after your master.
Act I, Sc. IV.

**KING LEAR**

**Fool.** Nuncle Lear, nuncle Lear! tarry, and take the fool with thee.  
A fox, when one has caught her,  
And such a daughter,  
Should sure to the slaughter;  
If my cap would buy a halter;  
So the fool follows after.  

**Gon.** This man hath had good counsel. A hundred knights!  
'Tis politic and safe to let him keep  
At point a hundred knights; yes, that on every dream,  
Each buzz, each fancy, each complaint, dislike,  
He may enguard his dotage with their powers,  
And hold our lives in mercy. Oswald, I say!  

**Alb.** Well, you may fear too far.  

**Gon.** Safer than trust too far.  
Let me still take away the harms I fear,  
Not fear still to be taken: I know his heart,  
What he hath utter'd I have writ my sister;  
If she sustain him and his hundred knights,  
When I have show'd the unfitness,—

---

**Re-enter Oswald.**

**How now, Oswald!**  
What! have you writ that letter to my sister?  

**Osw.** Ay, madam.  

**Gon.** Take you some company, and away to horse:  
Inform her full of my particular fear;  
And thereto add such reasons of your own  
As may compact it more. Get you gone,  
And hasten your return. [Exit Oswald.] No, no, my lord,  
This milky gentleness and course of yours  
Though I condemn not, yet, under pardon,  
You are much more attack'd for want of wisdom  
Than prais'd for harmful mildness.  

**Alb.** How far your eyes may pierce I cannot tell:  
Striving to better, oft we mar what's well.  

**Gon.** Nay, then—  

**Alb.** Well, well; the event. [Exeunt.]  

Scene V.—Court before the Same.

**Enter Lear, Kent, and Fool.**

**Lear.** Go you before to Gloucester with these letters. Acquaint my daughter no further with any thing you know than comes from her demand out of the letter. If your diligence be not speedy I shall be there before you.

---

**Kent.** I will not sleep, my lord, till I have delivered your letter.  

**Fool.** If a man's brains were in's heels, were't not in danger of kibes?  

**Lear.** Ay, boy.  

**Fool.** Then, I prithee, be merry; thy wit shall not go slip-shod.  

**Lear.** Ha, ha, ha!  

**Fool.** Shalt see thy other daughter will use thee kindly; for though she's as like this as a crab is like an apple, yet I can tell what I can tell.  

**Lear.** What canst tell, boy?  

**Fool.** She will taste as like this as a crab does to a crab. Thou canst tell why one's nose stands i' the middle on's face?  

**Lear.** No.  

**Fool.** Why, to keep one's eyes of either side's nose, that what a man cannot smell out, he may spy into.  

**Lear.** I did her wrong,—  

**Fool.** Canst tell how an oyster makes his shell?  

**Lear.** No.  

**Fool.** Nor I neither; but I can tell why a snail has a house.  

**Lear.** Why?  

**Fool.** Why, to put his head in; not to give it away to his daughters, and leave his horns without a case.  

**Lear.** I will forget my nature. So kind a father! Be my horses ready?  

**Fool.** Thy asses are gone about 'em. The reason why the seven stars are no more than seven is a pretty reason.  

**Lear.** Because they are not eight?  

**Fool.** Yes, indeed: thou wouldst make a good fool.  

**Lear.** To take it again performe! Monster ingratitude!  

**Fool.** If thou Wert my fool, nuncle, I'd have thee beaten for being old before thy time.  

**Lear.** How's that?  

**Fool.** Thou shouldst not have been old before thou hadst been wise.  

**Lear.** O! let me not be mad, not mad, sweet heaven;  
Keep me in temper; I would not be mad!  

---

**Enter Gentleman.**

How now! Are the horses ready?  

**Gent.** Ready, my lord.  

**Lear.** Come, boy.  

**Fool.** She that's a maid now, and laughs at my departure,  

**Shall not be a maid long, unless things be cut shorter.**  

[Exeunt.]
ACT II.

SCENE I.—A Court within the Castle of the
   EARL OF GLOUCESTER.

Enter EDMUND and CURAN, meeting.

Edm. Save thee, Curan.
Cur. And you, sir. I have been with your
father, and given him notice that the Duke of
Cornwall and Regan his duchess will be here
with him to-night.

Edm. How comes that?
Cur. Nay, I know not. You have heard of
the news abroad? I mean the whispered ones,
for they are yet but ear-kissing arguments? 5

Edm. Not I: pray you, what are they?
Cur. Have you heard of no likely wars toward,
'twixt the Dukes of Cornwall and Albany? 12

Edm. Not a word.
Cur. You may do then, in time. Fare you
well, sir. [Exit.

Edm. The duke be here to-night! The better!
best!

This weaves itself perforce into my business.
My father hath set guard to take my brother;
And I have one thing, of a quesary question,
Which I must act. Briefness and fortune,
work!
Brother, a word; descend: brother, I say! 21

Enter EDGAR.

My father watches: O sir! fly this place;
Intelligence is given where you are hid;
You have now the good advantage of the
night.
Have you not spoken 'gainst the Duke of Corn-
wall?

He's coming hither, now, i' the night, i' the
haste,
And Regan with him; have you nothing said
Upon his party 'gainst the Duke of Albany? 28
Advice yourself.

Edg. I am sure on 't, not a word.

Edm. I hear my father coming; pardon me;
In cunning I must draw my sword upon you;
Draw; seem to defend yourself; now 'quit you
well.

Yield;—come before my father. Light, ho!
here!
Fly, brother. Torches! torches! So, farewell.

[Exit EDGAR.

Some blood drawn on me would beget opinion

[Wounds his arm.

Of my more fierce endeavour: I have seen

drunkards.

Do more than this in sport. Father! father!
Stop, stop! No help!

Enter GLOUCESTER, and Servants with torches.

Glo. Now, Edmund, where's the villain?

Edm. Here stood he in the dark, his sharp
sword out, 40
Mumbling of wicked charms, conjuring the
moon
To stand auspicious mistress.

Glo. But where is he?

Edm. Look, sir, I bleed.

Glo. Where is the villain, Edmund?

Edm. Fled this way, sir. When by no means
he could— 44

Glo. Pursue him, ho! Go after. [Exeunt
some Servants.] 'By no means' what?

Edm. Persuade me to the murder of your
lordship;
But that I told him, the revenging gods
'Gainst parricides did all their thunders bend;
Spoke with how manifold and strong a bond 49
The child was bound to the father; sir, in
fine,

Seeing how loathly opposite I stood
To his unnatural purpose, in fell motion, 52
With his prepared sword he charges home
My unprovided body, lance'd mine arm:
But when he saw my best alarum'd spirits
Bold in the quarrel's right, rous'd to the en-
counter,

Or whether gasted by the noise I made,
Full suddenly he fled.

Glo. Let him fly far:
Not in this land shall he remain uncaught;
And found—dispatch. The noble duke my
master, 60

My worthy arch and patron, comes to-night:
By his authority I will proclaim it,
That he which finds him shall deserve our
thanks,
Bringing the murderous coward to the stake; 64
He that conceals him, death.

Edm. When I dissuaded him from his intent,
And found him pight to do it, with curt speech
I threaten'd to discover him: he replied, 68
'Thou unpossessing bastard! dost thou think,
If I would stand against thee, would the reposa
Of any trust, virtue, or worth, in thee
Make thy words faith'd? No: what I should
deny,— 72
As this I would; ay, though thou didst produce
My very character,—I'd turn it all
To thy suggestion, plot, and damned practice:
And thou must make a dullard of the world, 76
If they not thought the profits of my death
Were very pregnant and potential spurs
To make thee seek it.'
Would he deny his letter? I never got him. 80

[Tucket within.

Hark! the duke's trumpets. I know not why he comes.

All ports I'll bar; the villain shall not escape;
The duke must grant me that: besides, his picture
I will send far and near, that all the kingdom 84
May have due note of him; and of my land,
Loyal and natural boy, I'll work the means
To make thee capable.

Enter CORNWALL, REGAN, and Attendants.

Cron. How now, my noble friend! since I came hither,—

Which I can call but now,—I have heard strange news.

Reg. If it be true, all vengeance comes too short
Which can pursue the offender. How dost, my lord?

Glo. O! madam, my old heart is crack'd, it's crack'd.

Reg. What! did my father's godson seek your life?

He whom my father nam'd? your Edgar?

Glo. O! lady, lady, shame would have it hid.

Reg. Was he not companion with the riotous knights
That tend upon my father?

Glo. I know not, madam; 'tis too bad, too bad.

Edm. Yes, madam, he was of that consort.

Reg. No marvel then though he were ill affected;

'Tis they have put him on the old man's death,
To have the expense and waste of his revenues.

I have this present evening from my sister
Been well-inform'd of them, and with such cautions
That if they come to sojourn at my house,
I'll not be there.

Corn. Nor I, assure thee, Regan.

Edmund, I hear that you have shown your father
A child-like office.

Edm. 'Twas my duty, sir.

Glo. He did bewray his practice; and receiv'd
This hurt you see, striving to apprehend him.

Corn. Is he pursu'd?

Glo. Ay, my good lord.

Corn. If he be taken he shall never more
Be fear'd of doing harm; make your own purpose,

How in my strength you please. For you,

Edmund,
Whose virtue and obedience doth this instant

So much commend itself, you shall be ours: 116
Natures of such deep trust we shall much need;
You we first seize on.

Edm. I shall serve you, sir,

Truly, however else.

Glo. For him I thank your Grace.

Corn. You know not why we came to visit you,—

Reg. Thus out of season, threading dark-ey'd night:

Occasions, noble Gloucester, of some prize,
Wherein we must have use of your advice.
Our father he hath writ, so hath our sister, 124
Of differences, which I best thought it fit
To answer from our home; the several messengers

From hence attend dispatch. Our good old friend,

Lay comforts to your bosom, and bestow
Your needful counsel to our businesses,
Which craves the instant use.

Glo. I serve you, madam.

Your Graces are right welcome.  [Exeunt.

Scene II.—Before Gloucester's Castle.

Enter Kent and Oswald, severally.

Osw. Good dawning to thee, friend: art of this house?

Kent. Ay.

Osw. Where may we set our horses?

Kent. In the mire.

Osw. Prithee, if thou lovest me, tell me.

Kent. I love thee not.

Osw. Why, then I care not for thee.

Kent. If I had thee in Lipsbury pinfold, I would make thee care for me.

Osw. Why dost thou use me thus? I know thee not.

Kent. Fellow, I know thee.

Osw. What dost thou know me for?

Kent. A knave, a rascal, an eater of broken meats; a base, proud, shallow, beggarly, three-suited, hundred-pound, filthy, worsted-stocking knave; a lily-liver'd, action-taking knave; a whoreson, glass-gazing, superserviceable, finical rogue; one-trunk-inheriting slave; one that wasd be a bawd, in any of good service, and art nothing but the composition of a knave, beggar, coward, pandar, and the son and heir of a mongrel bitch: one whom I will beat into clamorous whining if thou demnest the least syllable of thy addition.

Osw. Why, what a monstrous fellow art thou, thus to rail on one that is neither known of thee nor known thee.

Kent. What a brazen-faced varlet art thou,
to deny thou knowest me! Is it two days since
I tripped up thy heels and beat thee before
the king? Draw, you rogue; for, though it be
night, yet the moon shines: I'll make a sop o'
the moonshine of you. [Drawing his sword.] 37
Draw, you whoreson, cullionly, barber-monger,
draw.

Osw. Away! I have nothing to do with thee.

Kent. Draw, you rascal; you come with let-
ters against the king, and take vanity the pup-
pet's part against the royalty of her father.
Draw, you rogue, or I'll so carbonado your
shanks: draw, you rascal; come your ways.

Osw. Help, ho! murder! help! 44

Kent. Strike, you slave; stand, rogue, stand;
you neat slave, strike. [Beating him.

Osw. Help, oh! murder! murder!

Enter EDMUND with his rapier drawn.

Edm. How now! What's the matter? 48

[Parting them.

Kent. With you, goodman boy, if you please:
come,
I'll flesh ye; come on, young master.

Enter CORNWALL, REGAN, GLoucester, and
Servants.

Glo. Weapons! arms! What's the matter
here?

CORN. Keep peace, upon your lives: 52
He dies that strikes again. What is the matter?

Reg. The messengers from our sister and the
king.

CORN. What is your difference? speak.

Osw. I am scarce in breath, my lord. 56

Kent. No marvel, you have so bestirred your
valour. You cowardly rascal, nature disclaims
in thee: a tailor made thee.

CORN. Thou art a strange fellow; a tailor
make a man?

Kent. Ay, a tailor, sir: a stone-cutter or a
painter could not have made him so ill, though
they had been but two hours o' the trade. 64

CORN. Speak yet, how grew your quarrel?

Osw. This ancient ruffian, sir, whose life I
have spard at suit of his grey beard,— 67

Kent. Thou whoreson scd! thou unnecessary
letter! My lord, if you will give me leave, I will
tread this unbolted villain into mortar, and
dumb the wall of a jakes with him. Spare my
grey beard, you wags-tail? 72

CORN. Peace, sirrah!

You beastly knave, know you no reverence?

Kent. Yes, sir; but anger hath a privilege.

CORN. Why art thou angry? 76

Kent. That such a slave as this should wear
a sword,

Who wears no honesty. Such smiling rogues as
these,

Like rats, oft bite the holy cords a-twine

Which are too intrinsic t' unloose; smooth every

That in the natures of their lords rebel;

Bring oil to fire, snow to their colder moods;

Reneg, affirm, and turn their haleyon beaks

With every gale and vary of their masters, 84

Knowing nought, like dogs, but following.

A plague upon your epileptical visage!

Smile you my speeches, as I were a fool?

Goose, if I had you upon Sarum plain,

I'd drive ye cackling home to Camelot.

CORN. What! art thou mad, old fellow?


Kent. No contraries hold more antipathy 92

Than I and such a knife.

CORN. Why dost thou call him knave? What

is his fault?

Kent. His countenance likes me not.

CORN. No more, perchance, does mine, nor

his, nor hers.

Kent. Sir, 'tis my occupation to be plain:

I have seen better faces in my time

Than stands on any shoulder that I see 100

Before me at this instant.

CORN. This is some fellow,

Who, having been prais'd for bluntness, doth

A saucy roughness, and constrains the garb

Quite from his nature: he cannot flatter, he, 104

An honest mind and plain, he must speak truth:

An they will take it, so; if not, he's plain.

These kind of knaves I know, which in this

plainness

Harbour more craft and more corrupter ends

Than twenty silly-ducking observants, 109

That stretch their duties nicely.

Kent. Sir, in good sooth, in sincere verity,

Under the allowance of your grand aspect, 112

Whose influence, like the wreath of radiant fire

On flickering Phoebus' front,—

CORN. What mean'st by this?

Kent. To go out of my dialect, which you
discommend so much. I know, air, I am no

flatterer: he that beguiled you in a plain accent
was a plain knave; which for my part I will not
be, though I should win your displeasure to en-
treat me to 't. 120

CORN. What was the offence you gave him?

Osw. I never gave him any:

It pleas'd the king his master very late

To strike at me, upon his misconstruction; 124

When he, conjunct, and flattering his dis-

pleasure,

Tripp'd me behind; being down, insulted, rail'd,
And put upon him such a deal of man,
That worthied him, got praises of the king.
For him attempting who was self-subdu’d;
And, in the fleshment of this dread exploit,
Drew on me here again.

Kent. None of these rogues and cowards
But Ajax is their fool.

Corn. Fetch forth the stocks! 132
You stubborn ancient knave, you reverend brag-
gart,
We’ll teach you.

Kent. Sir, I am too old to learn,
Call not your stocks for me; I serve the king,
On whose employment I was sent to you;
You shall do small respect, show too bold malice
Against the grace and person of my master,
Stocking his messenger.

Corn. Fetch forth the stocks! As I have life
and honour, 140
There shall he sit till noon.

Reg. Till noon! Till night, my lord; and all
night too.

Kent. Why, madam, if I were your father’s
dog,
You should not use me so.

Reg. Sir, being his knave, I will.

Corn. This is a fellow of the self-same colour
Our sister speaks of. Come, bring away the
stocks. [Stocks brought out.

Glo. Let me beseech your Grace not to do so.
His fault is much, and the good king his
master
Will check him for ’t: your purpos’d low

 correction
Is such as basest and contemned’st wretches
For pillerings and most common trespasses
Are punish’d with: the king must take it ill,
That he, so slightly valu’d in his messenger,
Should have him thus restrain’d.

Corn. I’ll answer that.

Reg. My sister may receive it much more
worse
To have her gentleman abus’d, assaulted,
For following her affairs. Put in his legs.

[Kent is put in the stocks.

Come, my good lord, away.

[Exeunt all but Glocester and Kent.

Glo. I am sorry for thee, friend; ’tis the
duke’s pleasure,
Whose disposition, all the world well knows,
Will not be rubb’d nor stopp’d: I’ll entreat for
thee.

Kent. Pray, do not, sir. I have watch’d and
travell’d hard;
Some time I shall sleep out, the rest I’ll whistle.
A good man’s fortune may grow out at heels: 164
Give you good morrow! 165

Glo. The duke’s to blame in this; ’twill be
ill taken.

Kent. Good king, that must approve the
common saw,
Thou out of heaven’s benediction com’st
To the warm sun.
Approach, thou beacon to this under globe,
That by thy comfortable beams I may
Peruse this letter. Nothing almost sees miracles
But misery: I know ’tis from Cordelia,
Who hath most fortunately been inform’d
Of my obscured course; and shall find time
From this enormous state, seeking to give
Losses their remedies. All weary and o’er-
watch’d,
Take vantage, heavy eyes, not to behold
This shameful lodging.
Fortune, good night, smile once more; turn thy
wheel!

[He sleeps.

Scene III.—A Part of the Heath

Enter Edgar.

Edg. I heard myself proclaim’d;
And by the happy hollow of a tree
Escap’d the hunt. No port is free; no place,
That guard, and most unusual vigilance,
Does not attend my taking. While I may ’scape
I will preserve myself; and am bethought
To take the basest and most poorest shape
That ever penury, in contempt of man,
Brought near to beast; my face I’ll grime with
filth,

Blanket my loins, elf all my hair in knots,
And with presented nakedness outface
The winds and persecutions of the sky.

The country gives me proof and precedent
Of Bedlam beggars, who with roaring voices,
Strike in their numb’d and mortified bare arms
Pins, wooden pricks, nails, sprigs of rosemery;
And with this horrible object, from low farms,
Poor pelting villages, sheep-cotes, and mills,
Sometime with lunatic bans, sometime with
prayers,
Enforce their charity. Poor Turlygood! poor
Tom!

That’s something yet: Edgar I nothing am.

[Exeunt.

Scene IV.—Before Gloucester’s Castle.

Kent in the stocks.

Enter Lear, Fool, and Gentleman.

Lear. ’Tis strange that they should so depart
from home,
And not send back my messenger.

Gent. As I learn’d,
The night before there was no purpose in them
Of this remove.

Kent.  Hail to thee, noble master! 4

Lear.  Ha!

Mak’st thou this shame thy pastime?
Kent.  No, my lord.

Fool.  Ha, ha! he wears cruel garters. Horses are tied by the head, dogs and bears by the neck, monkeys by the loins, and men by the legs: when a man is over-lusty at legs, then he wears wooden nether-stocks.

Lear.  What’s he that hath so much thy place mistook 12

To set thee here?

Kent.  It is both he and she,
Your son and daughter.

Lear.  No.
Kent.  Yes.
Lear.  No, I say.
Kent.  I say, yea.

Lear.  By Jupiter, I swear, no.
Kent.  By Juno, I swear, ay.
Lear.  They durst not do’t;
They could not, would not do’t; ’tus worse than murder,
To do upon respect such violent outrage. 24
Resolve me, with all modest haste, which way
Thou mightst deserve, or they impose, this usage,
Coming from us.

Kent.  My lord, when at their home
I did commend your highness’ letters to them,
Ere I was risen from the place that show’d 29
My duty kneeling, there came a reeking post,
Stew’d in his haste, half breathless, panting forth
From Generil his mistress salutations;
Deliver’d letters, spite of intermission,
Which presently they read: on whose contents
They summon’d up their meany, straight took horse;
Commanded me to follow, and attend 35
The leisure of their answer; gave me cold looks:
And meeting here the other messenger,
Whose welcome, I perceiv’d, had poison’d mine,—
Being the very fellow which of late
Display’d so saucily against your highness,—
Having more man than wit about me,—drew;
He rais’d the house with loud and coward cries.
Your son and daughter found this trespass worth 44
The shame which here it suffers.
Fool.  Winter’s not gone yet, if the wild geese fly that way.

Lear.  O! how this mother swells up toward my heart;
Hysterica passio! down, thou climbing sorrow!
Thy element’s below. Where is this daughter?

Kent.  With the earl, sir: here within.

Lear.  Follow me not; stay here.  

Gent.  Made you no more offence than what you speak of?

Kent.  None.

How chance the king comes with so small a number?

Fool.  An thou hadst been set i’ the stocks for that question, thou hadst well deserved it.

Kent.  Why, fool?

Fool.  We’ll set thee to school to an ant, to teach thee there’s no labouring i’ the winter. All that follow their noses are led by their eyes but blind men; and there’s not a nose among twenty but can smell him that’s stinking. Let go thy hold when a great wheel runs down a hill, lest it break thy neck with following it; but the great one that goes up the hill, let him draw thee after. When a wise man gives thee better counsel, give me mine again: I would have none but knaves follow it, since a fool gives it.

That sir which serves and seeks for gain, 80
And follows but for form,
Will pack when it begins to rain,
And leave thee in the storm.
But I will tarry; the fool will stay,
And let the wise man fly: 84
The knave turns fool that runs away;
The fool no knave, perdy.
Kent.  Where learn’d you this, fool?
Fool.  Not i’ the stocks, fool.

Re-enter Lear, with Gloucester.

Lear.  Deny to speak with me! They are sick! they are weary,
They have travel’d hard to-night! Mere fetches, The images of revolt and flying off.
Fetch me a better answer.

Glo.  My dear lord, 92
You know the fiery quality of the duke;
How unremovable and fix’d he is
In his own course.

Lear.  Vengeance! plague! death! confusion!
Fiery! what quality? Why, Gloucester, Gloucester,
I'd speak with the Duke of Cornwall and his wife.

Glo. Well, my good lord, I have inform'd them so.

Lear. Inform'd them! Dost thou understand me, man? 100

Glo. Ay, my good lord.

Lear. The king would speak with Cornwall; the dear father

Would with his daughter speak, commands her service: 103

Are they inform'd of this? My breath and blood! Fiery! the fiery duke! Tell the hot duke that— No, but not yet; may be he is not well: Infirmitv doth still neglect all office Where-to our health is bound; we are not ourselves 105

When nature, being oppress'd, commands the mind

To suffer with the body. I'll forbear;
And am fall'n out with my more header will,
To take the indispos'd and sickly fit 112
For the sound man. Death on my state! [Looking on KENT.] Wherefore

Should he sit here? This act persuades me That this remotion of the duke and her Is practice only. Give me my servant forth. 115
Go, tell the duke and 's wife I'd speak with them, Now, presently: bid them come forth and hear me,

Or at their chamber-door I'll beat the drum Till it cry sleep to death. 120

Glo. I would have all well betwixt you.

Lear. O, me! my heart, my rising heart! but, down!

Fool. Cry to it, uncle, as the cockney did to the eels when she put 'em i' the paste alive; she knapped 'em o' the oxcombs with a stick, and cried, 'Down, wants, down!' Th' was her brother that, in pure kindness to his horse, buttered his hay.

Enter CORNWALL, REGAN, GLOUCESTER, and Servants.

Lear. Good morrow to you both.

Corn. Hail to your Grace! [KENT is set at liberty.

Reg. I am glad to see your highness.

Lear. Regan, I think you are; I know what reason

I have to think so: if thou shouldst not be glad, I would divorce me from thy mother's tomb, 123 Sepulchring an adultress.—[To KENT.] O! are you free?

Some other time for that. Beloved Regan,
Thy sister's naught: O Regan! she hath tied 126

Sharp-tooth'd unkindness, like a vulture, here: [Points to his heart.

I can scarce speak to thee; thou 'lt not believe With how deprav'd a quality—O Regan!

Reg. I pray you, sir, take patience. I have hope 140

You less know how to value her desert Than she to scant her duty.

Lear. Say, how is that?

Reg. I cannot think my sister in the least Would fail her obligation: if, sir, perchance She have restrain'd the riots of your followers, 'Tis on such ground, and to such wholesome end, As clears her from all blame.

Lear. My curses on her!

Reg. O, sir! you are old; 148
Nature in you stands on the very verge Of her confine: you should be rul'd and led By some discretion that discerns your state Better than you yourself. Therefore I pray you That to our sister you do make return;

Say, you have wrong'd her, sir.

Lear. Ask her forgiveness?

Do you but mark how this becomes the house? [Rising.] 'Dear daughter, I confess that I am old; 156
Age is unnecessary: on my knees I beg [Kneeling.

That you'll vouchsafe me raiment, bed, and food.'

Reg. Good sir, no more; these are unsightly tricks:

Return you to my sister.

Lear. [Rising.] Never, Regan. 160
She hath abated me of half my train;
Lock'd black upon me; struck me with her tongue,
Most serpent-like, upon the very heart.

Most the stord'v vengeance of heaven fall 164
On her ingratitude! Strike her young bones,
You taking airs, with lameness!

Corn. Fie, sir, fie!

Lear. You nimble lightnings, dart your blinding flames Into her scornful eyes! Infect her beauty, 168
You tan-suck'd fogs, drawn by the powerful sun, To fall and blast her pride!

Reg. O the blest gods! So will you wish on me,

When the rash mood is on. 172

Lear. No, Regan, thou shalt never have my curse;
Thy tender-hefted nature shall not give These o'er to harshness: her eyes are fierce, but thine

Do comfort and not burn. 'Tis not in thee 176
To grudge my pleasures, to cut off my train,
To bandy basty words, to scant my sins,
And, in conclusion, to oppose the bolt
Against my coming in: thou better know'st 180
The offices of nature, bond of childhood,
Effects of courtesy, dues of gratitude;
Thy half o' the kingdom hast thou not forgot,
Wherein I thee endow'd.

Reg. Good sir, to the purpose. 184
Lear. Who put my man i' the stocks?

[Tucket within.

Corn. What trumpet's that?
Reg. I know 't, my sister's; this approves her
letter,
That she would soon be here. Is your lady
come?

Enter Oswald.

Lear. This is a slave, whose easy-borrow'd
pride 188
Dwells in the sickle grace of her he follows.
Out, varlet, from my sight!

Corn. What means your Grace?

Lear. Who stock'd my servant? Regan, I
have good hope
Thou didst not know on 't. Who comes here?
O heavens,

Enter Goneril.

If you do love old men, if your sweet sway
Allow obedience, if yourselves are old,
Make it your cause; send down and take my
part!

[To Goneril.] Art not asham'd to look upon
this beard? 192

O Regan, wilt thou take her by the hand?

Gon. Why not by the hand, sir? How have
I offended?
All's not offence that indiscretion finds
And dotage terms so.

Lear. O sides! you are too tough;
Will you yet hold? How came my man i' the
stocks?

Corn. I set him there, sir: but his own dis-
orders
Deserv'd much less advancement.

* Lear. You! did you?

Reg. I pray you, father, being weak, seem so.
If, till the expiration of your month,
You will return and sojourn with my sister,
Dismissing half your train, come then to me:
I am now from home, and out of that provision
Which shall be needful for your entertainment.

Lear. Return to her? and fifty men dis-
miss'd?
No, rather I abjure all roots, and choose
To wage against the enmity o' the air; 212
To be a comrade with the wolf and owl,
Necessity's sharp pinch! Return with her!

Why, the hot-blooded France, that dowerless
took
Our youngest born, I could as well be brought
To kneel his throne, and, squire-like, pension beg
To keep base life afoot. Return with her!
Persuade me rather to be slave and sumpter
To this detested groom. [Pointing at Oswald.

Gon. At your choice, sir. 220
Lear. I prithee, daughter, do not make me
mad:
I will not trouble thee, my child; farewell.
We'll no more meet, no more see one another;
But yet thou art my flesh, my blood, my
daughter; 224
Or rather a disease that's in my flesh,
Which I must needs call mine: thou art a boil,
A plague-sore, an embossed carbuncle,
In my corrupted blood. But I'll not chide
thee;
Let shame come when it will, I do not call it:
I do not bid the thunder-bearer shoot,
Nor tell tales of thee to high-judging Jove.
Mend when thou canst; be better at thy
leisure:

I can be patient; I can stay with Regan,
And my hundred knights.

Reg. Not altogether so:
I look'd not for you yet, nor am provided
For your fit welcome. Give ear, sir, to my
sister; 236
For those that mingle reason with your passion
Must be content to think you old, and so—
But she knows what she does.

Lear. Is this well spoken?
Reg. I dare avouch it, sir: what! fifty
followers?
Is it not well? What should you need of
more?
Yea, or so many, sith that both charge and
danger
Speak 'gainst so great a number? How, in one
house,
Should many people, under two commands, 244
Hold amity? 'Tis hard; almost impossible.

Gon. Why might not you, my lord, receive
attendance
From those that she calls servants, or from
mine?
Reg. Why not, my lord? If then they
chanc'd to slack you 248
We could control them. If you will come to
me,—
For now I spy a danger,—I entreat you
To bring but five and twenty; to no more
Will I give place or notice.

Lear. I gave you all—

Reg. And in good time you gave i
Act II, Sc. IV.

KING LEAR

LEAR. Made you my guardians, my depositaries, But kept a reservation to be follow’d With such a number. What! must I come to you With five-and-twenty? Regan, said you so? REG. And speak’t again, my lord; no more with me. LEAR. Those wicked creatures yet do look well-favour’d, When others are more wicked; not being the worst Stands in some rank of praise. [To GONERIL.] I’ll go with thee: Thy fifty yet doth double five-and-twenty, And thou art twice her love.

GON. Hear me, my lord. What need you five-and-twenty, ten, or five, To follow in a house, where twice so many Have a command to tend you? REG. What need one? LEAR. O! reason not the need; our basest beggars Are in the poorest thing superfluous: Allow not nature more than nature needs, Man’s life is cheap as beast’s. Thou art a lady; If only to go warm were gorgeous, Why, nature needs not what thou gorgeous wear’st, Which scarcely keeps thee warm. But, for true need,— You heavens, give me that patience, patience I need! You see me here, you gods, a poor old man, As full of grief as age; wretched in both! If it be you that stir these daughters’ hearts Against their father, fool me not so much To bear it tamely; touch me with noble anger, And let not women’s weapons, water-drops, Stain my man’s cheeks! No, you unnatural bags, I will have such revenues on you both That all the world shall—I will do such things,— What they are yet I know not,—but they shall be The terrors of the earth. You think I’ll weep; No, I’ll not weep: I have full cause of weeping, but this heart Shall break into a hundred thousand flaws Or ere I’ll weep. O fool! I shall go mad. [Exit Lear, Gloucester, Kent, and Fool. CORN. Let us withdraw; ’twill be a storm.

[The tumult heard at a distance.]

REG. This house is little: the old man and his people Cannot be well bestowed.

GON. ’Tis his own blame; hath put himself from rest, And must needs taste his folly. REG. For his particular, I’ll receive him gladly, But not one follower. GON. So am I purpos’d. Where is my Lord of Gloucester? CORN. Follow’d the old man forth. He is return’d.

Re-enter Gloucester.

GLO. The king is in high rage. CORN. Whither is he going? GLO. He calls to horse; but will I know not whither.

CORN. ’Tis best to give him way; he leads himself. GON. My lord, entreat him by no means to stay. GLO. Alack! the night comes on, and the bleak winds Do sorely ruffle; for many miles about There’s scarce a bush.

REG. O! sir, to wilful men, The injuries that they themselves procure Must be their schoolmasters. Shut up your doors; He is attended with a desperate train, And what they may incense him to, being apt To have his ear abus’d, wisdom bids fear. CORN. Shut up your doors, my lord; ’tis a wild night: My Regan counsels well: come out o’ the storm. [Exeunt.

ACT III.

SCENE I.—A Heath.

A storm, with thunder and lightning. Enter KENT and a Gentleman, meeting.

KENT. Who’s here, beside foul weather? GENT. One minded like the weather, most unquietly.

KENT. I know you. Where’s the king? GENT. Contending with the fretful elements; Bids the wind blow the earth into the sea, Or swell the curled waters ’bove the main, That things might change or cease; tears his white hair, Which the impetuous blastis, with eyesless rage, Catch in their fury, and make nothing of; Strives in his little world of man to out-scorn The to-and-fro-conflicting wind and rain. This night, wherein the cub-drawn bear would couch, The lion and the belly-pinched wolf
Keep their fur dry, unbonneted he runs,
And bids what will take all.

Kent. But who is with him?

Gent. None but the fool, who labours to out-
jest 16

His heart-struck injuries.

Kent. Sir, I do know you;
And dare, upon the warrant of my note,
Commend a dear thing to you. There is divi-

sion,

Although as yet the face of it be cover’d 20
With mutual cunning, 'twixt Albany and Corn-
wall;

Who have—as who have not, that their great
stars
Thron’d and set high—servants, who seem no
less,
Which are to France the spies and speculations
Intelligent of our state; what hath been seen, 25
Either in smuts and packings of the dukes,
Or the hard rein which both of them have
borne
Against the old kind king; or something deeper,
Whereof perchance these are but furnishings; 30
But, true it is, from France there comes a
power
Into this scatter’d kingdom; who already,
Wise in our negligence, have secret feet
32
In some of our best ports, and are at point
To show their open banner. Now to you:
If on my credit you dare build so far
To make your speed to Dover, you shall find
Some that will thank you, making just report
Of how unnatural and bemadding sorrow
The king hath cause to plain.

I am a gentleman of blood and breeding, 40
And from some knowledge and assurance offer
This office to you.

Gent. I will talk further with you.

Kent. No, do not.

For confirmation that I am much more 44
Than my out-wall, open this purse, and take
What it contains. If you shall see Cordelia,—
As doubt not but you shall,—show her this
ring,
And she will tell you who your fellow is
That yet you do not know. Tie on this storm!
I will go seek the king.

Gent. Give me your hand. Have you no
more to say?

Kent. Few words, but, to effect, more than
all yet;
That, when we have found the king,—in which
your pain
That way, I'll this,—be that first lights on
him
Holla the other.  [Exeunt severally.

SCENE II.—Another Part of the Heath.
Storm still.

Enter Lear and Fool.

Lear. Blow, winds, and crack your cheeks!
rage! blow!
You cataracts and hurricanoes, spout
Till you have drench’d our steeples, drown’d
the cocks!
You sulphurous and thought-executing fires, 4
Vaunt-couriers to oak-cleaving thunderbolts,
Singe my white head! And thou, all-shaking
thunder,
Strike flat the thick rotundity o’ the world!
Crack nature’s moulds, all germens spill at once
That make ingratitude man!

Fool. O nuncle, court holy-water in a dry
house is better than this rain-water out o’ door.

Good nuncle, in, and ask thy daughters’ blessing;
here’s a night pities neither wise man nor fool.

Lear. Rumble thy bellyfull! Spit, fire! spout,
rain!

Nor rain, wind, thunder, fire, are my daughters:
I tax not you, you elements, with unkindness;
I never gave you kingdom, call’d you children,
You owe me no subscription: then, let fall
Your horrible pleasure; here I stand, your
slave,
A poor, infirm, weak, and despis’d old man. 20

But yet I call you servile ministers,
That have with two pernicious daughters join’d
Your high-engender’d battles ’gainst a head
So old and white as this. O! O! ’tis foul.

Fool. He that has a house to put his head in
has a good head-piece.

The cod-piece that will house
Before the head has any,
The head and he shall lose;
So beggars marry many.
The man that makes his toe
What he his heart should make,
Shall of a corn cry woe,
And turn his sleep to wake.

For there was never yet fair woman but she
made mouths in a glass. 36

Enter Kent.

Lear. No, I will be the pattern of all patience;
I will say nothing.

Kent. Who’s there?

Fool. Marry, here’s grace and a cod-piece;
that’s a wise man and a fool. 41

Kent. Alas! sir, are you here? things that
love night
Love not such nights as these; the wrathful
skies
Gallow the very wanderers of the dark.
Act III, Sc. II.

KING LEAR

And make them keep their caves. Since I was
man
Such sheets of fire, such bursts of horrid
thunder,
Such groans of roaring wind and rain, I never
Remember to have heard; man’s nature cannot
carry
The affliction nor the fear.

Lear. Let the great gods,
That keep this dreadful pother o’er our heads,
Find out their enemies now. Tremble, thou
wretch,
That hast within thee undivulged crimes, 52
Unwhipp’d of justice; hide thee, thou bloody
hand;
Thou perjur’d, and thou simular of virtue
That art incestuous; caûû ãû, to pieces shake,
That under covert and convenient seeming 56
Hast practis’d on man’s life; close pent-up
guilts,
Rive your concealing continents, and cry
These dreadful summoners grace. I am a man
More sinn’d against than sinning.

Kent. Alack! bare-headed!
Gracious my lord, hard by here is a hovel; 61
Some friendship will it lend you ‘gainst the
tempest.
Repous you there while I to this hard house,—
More harder than the stone whereof ‘tis rais’d,—
Which even but now, demanding after you, 65
Denied me to come in, return and force
Their scanted courtesy.

Lear. My wits begin to turn.
Come on, my boy. How dost, my boy? Art
cold? 68
I am cold myself. Where is this straw, my
fellow?
The art of our necessities is strange,
That can make vile things precious. Come,
your hovel.

Poor fool and knave, I have one part in my
heart
That’s sorry yet for thee.

Fool. He that has a little tiny wit,
With key, ho, the wind and the rain,
Must make content with his fortunes fit,
Though the rain it raineth every day.

Lear. True, my good boy. Come, bring us to
this hovel. [Exeunt LEAR and KENT.

Fool. This is a brave night to cool a cour-
tesan.

I’ll speak a prophecy ere I go:

When priests are more in word than matter;
When brewers mar their malt with water;
When nobles are their tailors’ tutors;
No heretics burn’d, but witches’ suitors; 84
When every case in law is right;
No squire in debt, nor no poor knight;
When slanders do not live in tongues;
Nor entpurves come not to thronges;
When usurers tell their gold i’ the field;
And bawds and whores do churches build;
Then shall the realm of Albion
Come to great confusion;
Then comes the time, who’s to see it,
That going shall be us’d with feet.
This prophecy Merlin shall make; for I live
before his time. [Exit.

SCENE III.—A Room in GLOUCESTER’S
Castle.

Enter GLOUCESTER and EDMUND.

Glo. Alack, alack! Edmund, I like not this
unnatural dealing. When I desired their leave
that I might pity him, they took from me the
use of mine own house; charged me, on pain of
their perpetual displeasure, neither to speak of
him, treat him, nor any way sustain him.

Edm. Most savage, and unnatural! 7

Glo. Go to; say you nothing. There is
division between the dukes, and a worse matter
than that. I have received a letter this night;
’tis dangerous to be spoken; I have locked the
letter in my closet. These injuries the king—now
bears will be revenged home; there’s part of
a power already footed; we must incline to the
king. I will seek him and privily relieve him;
go you and maintain talk with the duke, that
my charity be not of him perceived. If he ask
for me, I am ill and gone to bed. If I die for it,
as no less is threatened me, the king, my old
mater, must be relieve. There is some strange
thing toward, Edmund; pray you, be careful. 21

Edm. This courtesy, forbid thee, shall the
duke
Instantly know; and of that letter too:
This seems a fair deserving, and must draw
me
That which my father loses; no less than all: 25
The younger rises when the old doth fall. [Exit.


Enter LEAR, KENT, and Fool.

Kent. Here is the place, my lord; good my
lord, enter:

The tyranny of the open night’s too rough
For nature to endure. [Storm still

Lear. Let me alone.

Kent. Good my lord, enter here.

Lear. Wilt break my heart? 4
Enter EDGAR disguised as a madman.

Edg. Away! the foul fiend follows me! Through the sharp hawthorn blow the winds. Hum! go to thy cold bed and warm thee.

Lear. Didst thou give all to thy two daughters?

And art thou come to this?

Edg. Who gives anything to poor Tom? whom the foul fiend hath led through fire and through flame, through ford and whirlpool, o'er bog and quagmire; that hath laid knives under his pillow, and halters in his pew; set ratsbane by his porridge; made him proud of heart, to ride on a bay trotting-horse over four-inch bridges, to course his own shadow for a traitor. Bless thy five wits! Tom's a-cold. Oi! do de, do de, do de. Bless thee from whirlwinds, star-blasting, and taking! Dop poor Tom some charity, whom the foul fiend vexes. There could I have him now, and there, and there again, and there.

[Storm still.]

Lear. What! have his daughters brought him to this pass?

Couldst thou save nothing? Didst thou give them all?

Fool. Nay, he reserved a blanket, else we had been all shamed.

Lear. Now all the plagues that in the pendulous air

Hang fated o'er men's faults light on thy daughters!

Kent. He hath no daughters, sir.

Lear. Death, traitor! nothing could have subdu'd nature

To such a lowness, but his unkind daughters.

Is it the fashion that discarded fathers

Should have thus little mercy on their flesh? Judicial punishment! 'twas this flesh begot

Those pelican daughters.

Edg. Pillicock's sat on Pillicock-hill:

Halloo, halloo, loo, loo!

Fool. This cold night will turn us all to fools and madmen.

Edg. Take heed o' the foul fiend. Obey thy parents; keep thy word justly; swear not; commit not with man's sworn spouse; set not thy sweet heart on proud array. Tom's a-cold.

Lear. What hast thou been?

Edg. A servingman, proud in heart and mind; that curled my hair, wore gloves in my cap, served the lust of my mistress's heart, and did the act of darkness with her; swore as many oaths as I spake words, and broke them in the sweet face of heaven; one that slept in the contriving of lust, and waked to do it. Wine loved I deeply, die dearly, and in woman out-para-
moured the Turk: false of heart, light of ear, bloody of hand; hog in sloth, fox in stealth, wolf in greediness, dog in madness, lion in prey. Let not the creaking of shoes nor the rustling of silks betray thy poor heart to woman: keep thy foot out of brothels, thy hand out of plackets, thy pen from lenders' books, and defy the foul fiend. Still through the howthorn blows the cold wind; says suum, mun ha no nonny. Dolphyn my boy, my boy; sessei! let him trot by. [Storm still.

Lear. Why, thou wert better in thy grave than to answer with thy uncovered body this extremity of the skies. Is man no more than this? Consider him well. Thou owest the worm no silk, the beast no hide, the sheep no wool, the cat no perfume. Ha! here's three on's are sophisticated; thou art the thing itself; unaccommoded man is no more but such a poor, bare, forlorn animal as thou art. Off, off, you lendings! Come; unbutton here. [Tearing off his clothes.

Fool. Prithsee, nuncle, be contented; 'tis a naughty night to swim in. Now a little fire in a wide field were like an old lecher's heart; a small spark, all the rest on's body cold. Look! here comes a walking fire.

Enter Gloucester with a torch.

Edg. This is the foul fiend Flibbertigibbet; he begins at curfew, and walks till the first cock; he gives the web and the pin, squints the eye, and makes the harelip; mildews the white wheat, and hurts the poor creature of earth.

Swithinfooted thrice the old; He met the night-mare, and her nine-fold; Bid her aight; And her truth plight, And aroint thee, witch, aroint thee!

Kent. How fares your Grace?

Lear. What's he?

Kent. Who's there? What is't you seek?

Glo. What are you there? Your names?

Edg. Poor Tom; that eats the swimming frog; the toad, the tadpole, the wall-newt, and the water; that in the fury of his heart, when the foul fiend rages, eats cow-dung for sallates; swallows the old rat and the ditch-dog; drinks the green mantle of the standing pool; who is whipped from tithing to tithing, and stock-punished, and imprisoned; who hath had three suits to his back, six shirts to his body, horse to ride, and weapon to wear;

But mice and rats and such small deer Have been Tom's food for seven long year.

Beware my follower. Peace, Smuljin! peace, thou fiend.

Glo. What! hath your Grace no better company?

Edg. The prince of darkness is a gentleman; Mudo he's call'd, and Mahu.

Glo. Our flesh and blood, my lord, is grown so vile,
That it doth hate what gets it. 150

Edg. Poor Tom's a-cold.

Glo. Go in with me. My duty cannot suffer To obey in all your daughters' hard commands: Though their injunction be to bar my doors, 154 And let this tyrannous night take hold upon you,
Yet have I ventur'd to come seek you out 156 And bring you where both fire and food is ready.

Lear. First let me talk with this philosopher. What is the cause of thunder?

Kent. Good my lord, take his offer; go into the house. 160

Lear. I'll talk a word with this same learned Theban.

What is your study?

Edg. How to prevent the fiend, and to kill vermin.

Lear. Let me ask you one word in private.

Kent. Importune him once more to go, my lord;
His wits begin to unsettle.

His daughters seek his death. Ah! that good Kent;
He said it would be thus, poor banish'd man! Thou sayst the king grows mad; I'll tell thee, friend,

I am almost mad myself. I had a son,
Now outlaw'd from my blood; he sought my life,
But lately, very late; I lov'd him, friend, 172
No father his son dearer; true to tell thee,

The grief hath craz'd my wits. What a night's this!

I do beseech your Grace,—

Lear. O! cry you mercy, sir.

Noble philosopher, your company.

Edg. Tom's a-cold.

Glo. In, fellow, there, into the hovel: keep thee warm.

Lear. Come, let's in all.

Kent. This way, my lord.

Lear. With him;

I will keep still with my philosopher. 160

Kent. Good my lord, soothe him; let him take the fellow.

Glo. Take him you on.

Kent. Sirrah, come on; go along with us.

Lear. Come, good Athenian.
SCENE V.—A Room in Gloucester’s Castle.

Enter Cornwall and Edmund.

Corn. I will have my revenge ere I depart his house.

Edm. How, my lord, I may be censured, that
nature thus gives way to loyalty, something
fears me to think of.

Corn. I now perceive it was not altogether
your brother’s evil disposition made him seek
his death; but a provoking merit, set a-work by
a reprovable badness in himself. 9

Edm. How malicious is my fortune, that I
must repent to be just! This is the letter he
spoke of, which approves him an intelligent
party to the advantages of France. O heavens!
that this treason were not, or not I the detector!

Corn. Go with me to the duchess.

Edm. If the matter of this paper be certain,
you have mighty business in hand. 17

Corn. True, or false, it hath made thee Earl
of Gloucester. Seek out where thy father is,
that he may be ready for our apprehension. 20

Edm. [Aside.] If I find him comforting the
king, it will stuff his suspicion more fully. I
will persever in my course of loyalty, though
the conflict be sore between that and my blood.

Corn. I will lay trust upon thee; and thou
shalt find a dearer father in my love. [Exit.

SCENE VI.—A Chamber in a Farmhouse adjoin-
ing the Castle.

Enter Gloucester, Lear, Kent, Fool, and
Edgar.

Glo. Here is better than the open air; take
it thankfully. I will piece out the comfort with
what addition I can: I will not be long from
you.

Kent. All the power of his wits has given way
to his impatience. The gods reward your kind-
ness! [Exit Gloucester.

Edg. Frateretto calls me, and tells me Nero
is an angler in the lake of darkness. Pray,
innocent, and beware the foul fiend.

Fool. Prithée, uncle, tell me whether a
madman be a gentleman or a yeoman!

Lear. A king, a king!

Fool. No; he’s a yeoman that has a gentle-
man to his son; for he’s a mad yeoman that
sees his son a gentleman before him.

Lear. To have a thousand with red burning
spits
Come hizzing in upon ’em,—

Edg. The foul fiend bites my back.

Fool. He’s mad that trusts in the tameness
of a wolf, a horse’s health, a boy’s love, or a
whore’s oath.

Lear. It shall be done; I will arraign them
straight.

[to Edgar.] Come, sit thou here, most learned
justicer;

[to the Fool.] Thou, sapient sir, sit here. Now,
you she foxes!

Edg. Look, where he stands and glares!
wantest thou eyes at trial, madam?

Come o’er the bourn, Bessey, to me,—

Fool. Her boat hath a leak,
And she must not speak
Why she dares not come over to thee.

Edg. The foul fiend haunts poor Tom in the
voice of a nightingale. Hopdence cries in Tom’s
belly for two white herring. Croak not, black
angel; I have no food for thee.

Kent. How do you, sir? Stand you not so
amaz’d:

Will you lie down and rest upon the cushions?

Lear. I’ll see their trial first. Bring in their
evidence.

[to Edgar.] Thou robed man of justice, take
thy place;

[to the Fool.] And thou, his yoke-fellow of
equity,

Bench by his side. [To Kent.] You are o’ the
commission,

Sit you too.

Edg. Let us deal justly.

Sleepest or wakest thou, jolly shepherd?

Thy sheep be in the corn,
And for one blast of thy minikin mouth,
Thy sheep shall take no harm.

Purr! the cat is grey.

Lear. Araign her first; ’tis Goneril. I here
take my oath before this honourable assembly,
she kicked the poor king her father.

Fool. Come hither, mistresses. Is your name
Goneril?

Lear. She cannot deny it.

Fool. Cry you mercy, I took you for a joint-
stoole.

Lear. And here’s another, whose warp’d
looks proclaim

What store her heart is made on. Stop her
there!

Arms, arms, sword, fire! Corruption in the
place!

False justicer, why hast thou let her ‘scape?

Edg. Bless thy five wits!
KENT. O pity! Sir, where is the patience now That you so oft have boasted to retain?  
EDG. [Aside.] My tears begin to take his part so much,  
They'll mar my counterfeiting.  
LEAR. The little dogs and all,  
Tray, Blanch, and Sweet-heart, see, they bark at me.  
EDG. Tom will throw his head at them.  
AUNT. You curse!  
Be thy mouth or black or white,  
Tooth that poisons if it bite;  
Mastiff, greyhound, mongrel grim,  
Hound or spaniel, brach or lym;  
Or bobtail tike or trundle-tail;  
Tom will make them weep and wail:  
For, with throwing thus my head,  
Dogs leap the hatch, and all are fled.  
Do de, de, de. Sessal Come, march to wakes and fairs and market-towns. Poor Tom, thy horn is dry.  
LEAR. Then let them anatomize Regan, see what breeds about her heart. Is there any cause in nature that makes these hard hearts? [To EDGAR.] You, sir, I entertain you for one of my hundred; only I do not like the fashion of your garments: you will say, they are Persian attire; but let them be changed.  
KENT. Now, good my lord, lie here and rest awhile.  
LEAR. Make no noise, make no noise; draw the curtains: so, so, so. We'll go to supper i' the morning: so, so, so.  
FOOL. And I'll go to bed at noon.

Re-enter Gloucester.

GLO. Come hither, friend: where is the king my master?  
KENT. Here, sir; but trouble him not, his wits are gone.  
GLO. Good friend, I prithee, take him in thy arms;  
I have o'erheard a plot of death upon him.  
There is a litter ready; lay him in 't,  
And drive toward Dover, friend, where thou shalt meet  
Both welcome and protection. Take up thy master:  
If thou shouldst daily half an hour, his life, With thine, and all that offer to defend him, Stand in assured loss. Take up, take up;  
And follow me, that will to some provision Give thee quick conduct.  
KENT. Oppress'd nature sleeps:  
This rest might yet have balm'd thy broken sinews,  
Which, if convenience will not allow,  
Stand in hard cure.—[To the Fool.] Come, help to bear thy master; Thou must not stay behind.  
GLO. Come, come, away.  
[Exit Kent, Gloucester, and the Fool, bearing away Lear.  
EDG. When we our betters see bearing our woes,  
We scarce think our miseries our foes.  
Who alone suffers most i' the mind, Leaving free things and happy shows behind; But then the mind much sufferance doth o'er- 
When grief hath mates, and bearing fellow- 
How light and portable my pain seems now, When that which makes me bend makes the king bow;  
He childed as I father'd. Tom, away!  
Mark the high noizes, and thyself bewray  
When false opinion, whose wrong thought defiles thee,  
In thy just proof repeals and reconciles thee.  
What will hap more to-night, safe 'scape the king!  
Lurk, lurk. [Exit]  

SCENE VII.—A Room in Gloucester's Castle.  
Enter Cornwallow, Regan, Goneril, Edmund, and Servants.  
CORN. Post speedily to my lord your husband; show him this letter: the army of France is landed. Seek out the traitor Gloucester.  
[Exit some of the Servants.  
REG. Hang him instantly.  
CORN. Pluck out his eyes.  
CORN. Leave him to my displeasure. Edmund, keep you our sister company: the revenges we are bound to take upon your traitorous father are not fit for your beholding. Advise the duke, where you are going, to a most festinate preparation: we are bound to the like. Our posts shall be swift and intelligent betwixt us. Farewell, dear sister: farewell, my Lord of Gloucester.  

Enter Oswald.

How now? Where's the king?  
OSW. My Lord of Gloucester hath convey'd him hence:  
Some five or six and thirty of his knights, Hot questriers after him, met him at gate;  
Who, with some other of the lord's dependants, Are gone with him toward Dover, where they boast  
To have well-armed friends.  
CORN. Get horses for your mistress.
Gon. Farewell, sweet lord, and sister.
Corn. Edmund, farewell.

[Exeunt Goneril, Edmund, and Oswald.]

Go seek the traitor Gloucester,
Pinion him like a thief, bring him before us.

[Exeunt other Servants.]

Though well we may not pass upon his life
Without the form of justice, yet our power
Shall do a courtesy to our wrath, which men
May blame but not control. Who's there?

The traitor?

Reg. One side will mock another; the other too.
Corn. If you see vengeance.—
First Serv. Hold your hand, my lord:
I have serv’d you ever since I was a child,
But better service have I never done you
Than now to bid you hold.

Reg. How now, you dog!
First Serv. If you did wear a beard upon
your chin,
I’d shake it on this quarrel. What do you
mean?
Corn. My villain! [Draws.]
First Serv. Nay then, come on, and take the
change of anger. [Draws. They fight.]
Corn. Let it see more, prevent it. Out, vile,
Jelly!

Where is thy lustre now?
Glo. All dark and comfortless. Where’s my
son Edmund?
Edmund, enkindle all the sparks of nature
To quit this horrid act.

Reg. Out, treacherous villain!
Thou call’st on him that hates thee; it was he
That made the overture of thy treasons to us,
Who is too good to pity thee.

Glo. O my follies! Then Edgar was abus’d.
Kind gods, forgive me that, and prosper him! as
Reg. Go thrust him out at gates, and let him
smell

Glo. Because I would not see thy cruel nails
Pluck out his poor old eyes; nor thy fierce sister
In his anointed flesh stick boarish fangs.
The sea, with such a storm as his bare head
In hell-black night durst’d, would have buoy’d
up,
And quench’d the stelled fires;
Yet, poor old heart, he help the heavens to rain.
If wolves had at thy gate how’d that derr
time,
Thou shouldst have said, ‘Good porter, turn
the key,’

All cruels else subscribe’d: but I shall see
The winged vengeance overtake such children.
Corn. See ’t shalt thou never. Fellows, hold
the chair.

Upon these eyes of thine I’ll set my foot. [GLOUCESTER’S EYE PUT OUT.]
Glo. He that will think to live till he be old,
Give me some help! O cruel! O ye gods!

Reg. So white, and such a traitor!
Glo. Naughty lady,
These hairs, which thou dost ravish from my
chin,
Will quicken, and accuse thee: I am your host:
With robbers’ hands my hospitable favours
You should not ruffle thus. What will you do?
Corn. Come, sir, what letters had you late
from France?
Reg. Be simple-answer’d, for we know the
truth.
Corn. And what confederacy have you with
the traitors
Late footed in the kingdom?
Reg. To whose hands have you sent the
lunatic king?

Speak.

Glo. I have a letter guessingly set down,
Which came from one that’s of a neutral heart,
And not from one oppo’d.

Corn. Cunning.
Reg. And false.
Corn. Where hast thou sent the king?
Glo. To Dover.
Reg. Wherefore to Dover? What thou not
shag’d at peril—
Corn. Wherefore to Dover? Let him answer
that.
Glo. I am tied to the stake, and I must stand
the course.
Reg. Wherest thou to Dover?
His way to Dover. [Exit one with Gloucester.]  
How is 't, my lord? How look you?  
Corn. I have receiv’d a hurt. Follow me, lady.  
Turn out that eyeless villain; throw this slave  
Upon the dunghill. Regan, I bleed apace: 97  
Untimely comes this hurt. Give me your arm.  
[Exit Cornwall led by Regan.  
Sec. Serv. I’ll never care what wickedness I do  
If this man come to good.  
Third Serv. If she live long, 100  
And, in the end, meet the old course of death,  
Women will all turn monsters.  
Sec. Serv. Let’s follow the old earl, and get  
the Bedlam  
To lead him where he would: his roguish madness 104  
Allows itself to any thing.  
Third Serv. Go thou; I’ll fetch some flax,  
and whites of eggs,  
To apply to his bleeding face. Now, heaven help him!  
[Exeunt severally.

ACT IV.  
SCENE I.—The Heath.  
Enter EDGAR.

Edg. Yet better thus, and known to be contemn’d,  
Than still contemn’d and flatter’d. To be worst,  
The lowest and most dejected thing of fortune,  
Stands still in esperance, lives not in fear: 4  
The lamentable change is from the best;  
The worst returns to laughter. Welcome, then,  
Thou unsubstantial air that I embrace:  
The wretch that thou hast blown unto the worst  
Owes nothing to thy blasts. But who comes here? 9

Enter Gloucester, led by an old Man.  
My father, poorly led? World, world, O world!  
But that thy strange mutations make us hate thee,  
Life would not yield to age.  
Old Man. O my good lord! 13  
I have been your tenant, and your father’s tenant,  
These fourscore years.  
Glo. Away, get thee away; good friend, be gone;  
Thy comforts can do me no good at all; 16  
Thy they may hurt.  
Old Man. You cannot see your way.  
Glo. I have no way, and therefore want no eyes;  
I stumbled when I saw. Full oft 'tis seen,  
Our means secure us, and our mere defects 20  
Prove our commodities. Ah! dear son Edgar.  
The food of thy abused father’s wrath;  
Might I but live to see thee in my touch,  
I’d say I had eyes again.

Old Man. How now! Who's there? 24  
Edg. [Aside.] O gods! Who is 't can say, 'I am at the worst' 28  
I am worse than e'er I was.  
Old Man. 'Tis poor mad Tom.  
Edg [Aside.] And worse I may be yet; the worst is not,  
So long as we can say, 'This is the worst.' 32  
Old Man. Fellow, where goest?  
Glo. Is it a beggar-man?  
Old Man. Madman and beggar too.  
Glo. He has some reason, else he could not beg.  
I' the last night's storm I such a fellow saw, 36  
Which made me think a man a worm: my son  
Came then into my mind; and yet my mind  
Was then scarce friends with him: I have heard  
more since.  
As flies to wanton boys, are we to the gods; 36  
They kill us for their sport.  
Edg. [Aside.] How should this be?  
Bad is the trade that must play fool to sorrow,  
Angering itself and others.—[To Gloucester.]  
Bless thee, master!  
Glo. Is that the naked fellow?  
Old Man. Ay, my lord.  
Glo. Then, prithee, get thee gone. If, for my sake, 41  
Thou wilt o'ertake us, hence a mile or twain,  
I' the way toward Dover, do it for ancient love;  
And bring some covering for this naked soul 44  
Who I'ntreat to lead me.  
Old Man. Alack, sir! he is mad.  
Glo. 'Tis the times' plague, when madmen lead the blind.  
Do as I bid thee, or rather do thy pleasure;  
Above the rest, be gone. 48  
Old Man. I'll bring him the best 'parcel that I have,  
Come on 't what will.  
[Exit.  
Glo. Sirrah, naked fellow,—  
Edg. Poor Tom's a-old. [Aside.] I cannot daub it further. 52  
Glo. Come hither, fellow.  
Edg. [Aside.] And yet I must. Bless thy sweet eyes, they bleed.  
Glo. Know'st thou the way to Dover? 55  
Edg. Both stile and gate, horse-way and foot-path. Poor Tom hath been scared out of his good wits: bless thee, good man's son, from the foul fiend! Five fiends have been in poor Tom  
at once; of lust, asOsibidius; Hobbsidians,  
prince of dumness; Maha, of stealing; Modo,
of murder; and Flibbertigibbet, of mopping and mowing; who since possesses chambermaids and waiting-women. So, bless thee, master! 64

Glo. Here, take this purse, thou whom the heavens' plagues
Have humbled to all strokes: that I am wretched
Makes thee the happier: heavens, deal so still!
Let the superfetuous and lust-dieted man, 68
That slaves your ordinance, that will not see
Because he doth not feel, feel your power quickly;
So distribution should undo excess,
And each man have enough. Dost thou know Dover? 72

Edg. Ay, master.

Glo. There is a cliff, whose high and bending head
Looks fearfully in the confined deep;
Bring me but to the very brim of it, 76
And I'll repair the misery thou dost bear;
With something rich about me; from that place
I shall no leading need.

Edg. Give me thy arm:
Poor Tom shall lead thee. [Exeunt.

SCENE II.—Before the DUKE of ALBANY’S Palace.

Enter GONERIL and EDMUND.

Gon. Welcome, my lord; I marvel our mild husband
Not met us on the way. [Enter OSWALD.] Now, 4
where’s your master?

Osw. Madam, within; but never man so chang’d.
I told him of the army that was landing;
He smil’d at it: I told him you were coming;
His answer was, ‘The worse:’ of Gloucester’s treachery,
And of the loyal service of his son,
When I inform’d him, then he call’d me sot, 8
And told me I had turn’d the wrong side out:
What most he should dislike seems pleasant to him;
What like, offensive.

Gon. [To EDMUND.] Then, shall you go no further.
It is the cowish terror of his spirit 12
That dare not undertake; he’ll not feel wrongs
Which tie him to an answer. Our wishes on the way
May prove effects. Back, Edmund, to my brother;
Hasten his musters and conduct his powers: 16
I must change arms at home, and give the distaff
Into my husband’s hands. This trusty servant
Shall pass between us; ere long you are like to hear,
If you dare venture in your own behalf, 20
A mistress’s command. Wear this; spare speech;
[Giving a favour.
Decline your head: this kiss, if it durst speak,
Would stretch thy spirits up into the air.
Conceive, and fare thee well. 24

Edm. Yours in the ranks of death.

Gon. My most dear Gloucester! [Exit EDMUND.

O! the difference of man and man!
To thee a woman’s services are due:
My fool usurps my bed.

Osw. Madam, here comes my lord. [Exit.

Enter ALBANY.

Gon. I have been worth the whistle.

Alb. O Gonerill! 29
You are not worth the dust which the rude wind
Blows in your face. I fear your disposition:
That nature, which contems its origin, 32
Cannot be border’d certain in itself;
She that herself will sliver and disbranch
From her material sap, perforce must wither
And come to deadly use. 36

Gon. No more; the text is foolish.

Alb. Wisdom and goodness to the vile seem vile;
Filths savour but themselves. What have you done?
Tigers, not daughters, what have you perform’d?
A father, and a gracious aged man, 41
Whose reverence the head-lugg’d bear would lick,
Most barbarous, most degenerate! have you maddened.
Could my good brother suffer you to do it? 44
A man, a prince, by him so benefited!
If that the heavens do not their visible spirits
Send quickly down to tame these vile offences,
It will come, 48
Humanity must performe prey on itself,
Like monsters of the deep.

Gon. Milk-liver’d man!
That bear’st a cheek for blows, a head for wrongs;
Who hast not in thy brows an eye discerning 52
Thine honour from thy suffering; that not know’st
Fools do those villains pity who are punish’d
Ere they have done their mischief. Where’s thy drum?

France spreads his banners in our noiseless land, 56
With plumed helm thy slayer begins threats,
Act IV. Sc. II.  

KING LEAR

Whilst thou, a moral fool, sitt'st still, and criest
'Alack! why does he so?'

Alb.  
Seen thyself, devil!

Proper deformity seems not in the fiend
So horrid as in woman.

Gon.  
O vain fool! Thou changed and self-cover'd thing, for shame,
Be-monster not thy feature. Were 't my fitness
To let these hands obey my blood,
They are apt enough to dislocate and tear
Thy flesh and bones; howse'er thou art a fiend,
A woman's shape doth shield thee.

Gon. Marry, your manhood.—Mew!

Enter a Messenger.

Alb. What news?

Mess. O! my good lord, the Duke of Cornwall's dead;
Slain by his servant, going to put out
The other eye of Gloucester.

Alb. Gloucester’s eyes!

Mess. A servant that he bled, thrill'd with remorse,
Oppos'd against the act, bending his sword
To his great master; who, thereat enrag'd,
Flew on him, and amongst them fell'd him dead;
But not without that harmful stroke, which since
Hath pluck'd him after.

Alb. This shows you are above,
You justicera, that these our nether crimes
So speedily can venge! But, O poor Gloucester:
Lost he his other eye?

Mess. Both, both, my lord.

This letter, madam, craves a speedy answer;
'Tis from your sister.

Gon. [Aside.] One way I like this well;
But being widow, and my Gloucester with her,
May all the building in my fancy pluck
Upon my hateful life: another way,
This news is not so tart. [To Messenger.] I'll read and answer. [Exit.

Alb. Where was his son when they did take
his eyes?

Mess. Come with my lady hither.

Alb. He is not here.

Mess. No, my good lord; I met him back again.

Alb. Knows he the wickedness?

Mess. Ay, my good lord; 'twas he inform'd
against him,

And quit the house on purpose that their punishment
Might have the freer course.

Alb. Gloucester, I live.

KING.
KING LEAR

Act IV, Sc. V.

Enter a Messenger.

Mess. News, madam; 20
The British powers are marching hitherward.
Cor. 'Tis known before; our preparation stands
In expectation of them. O dear father!
It is thy business that I go about; 24
Therefore great France
My mourning and important tears hath pitied,
No blown ambition doth our arms incite,
But love, dear love, and our ag'd father's right,
Soon may I hear and see him! [Exeunt.

Scene V.—A Room in Gloucester's Castle.

Enter Regan and Oswald.

Reg. But are my brother's powers set forth? 4
Osw. Ay, madam.
Reg. Himself in person there? 8
Osw. Madam, with much ado:
Your sister is the better soldier.
Reg. Lord Edmund spake not with your lord at home?
Osw. No, madam.
Reg. What might import my sister's letter to him?
Osw. I know not, lady.
Reg. Faith, he is posted hence on serious matter.
It was great ignorance, Gloucester's eyes being out,
To let him live; where he arrives he moves
All hearts against us. Edmund, I think, is gone, 12
In pity of his misery, to dispatch
Hisighted life; moreover, to descry
The strength o' the enemy.
Osw. I must needs ask him, madam, with my letter.
Reg. Our troops set forth to-morrow; stay with us, 16
The ways are dangerous.
Osw. I may not, madam;
My lady charg'd my duty in this business.
Reg. Why should she write to Edmund?
Might not you Transport her purposes by word? Belike, 20
Something—I know not what. I'll love thee much,
Let me unseal the letter.
Osw. Madam, I had rather—
Reg. I know your lady does not love her husband;
I am sure of that: and at her late being here 24
She gave strange ceiliades and most speaking looks
To noble Edmund. I know you are of her bosom.
Act IV, Sc. V.

KING LEAR

Osw. I, madam!

Reg. I speak in understanding; you are, I know 't: Therefore I do advise you, take this note:

My lord is dead; Edmund and I have talk'd,

And more convenient is he for my hand Than for your lady's. You may gather more. 32 If you do find him, pray you, give him this,

And when your mistress hears thus much from you,

I pray desire her call her wisdom to her: So, fare you well.

If you do chance to hear of that blind traitor, Preferment falls on him that cuts him off.

Osw. Would I could meet him, madam: I would show What party I do follow.

Reg. Fare thee well. [Exeunt.

SCENE VI.—The Country near Dover.

Enter Gloucester, and Edgar dressed like a peasant.

Glo. When shall I come to the top of that same hill?

Edg. You do climb up it now; look how we labour.

Glo. Methinks the ground is even.

Edg. Horrible steep:

Hark! do you hear the sea?

Glo. No, truly. 4

Edg. Why, then your other senses grow imperfect

By your eyes' anguish.

Glo. So may it be, indeed.

Methinks thy voice is alter'd, and thou speak'st In better phrase and matter than thou didst. 8

Edg. Y'are much deceiv'd; in nothing am I chang'd

But in my garments.

Glo. Methinks you're better spoken.

Edg. Come on, sir; here's the place: stand still.

How fearful

And dizz'ry 'tis to cast one's eyes so low!
The crows and crows that wing the midway air

Show scarce so gross as beetles; half way down
Hangs one that gathers samphire, dreadful trade!

Methinks he seems no bigger than his head.
The fishermen that walk upon the beach Appear like mice, and yond tall anchoring bark

Diminish'd to her cock, her cock a buoy 20

Almost too small for sight. The murmuring surge,

That on the unnumber'd idle pebbles chafes,

Cannot be heard so high. I'll look no more, Let my brain turn, and the deficient sight

Topple down headlong.

Glo. Set me where you stand.

Edg. Give me your hand; you are now within a foot

Of the extreme verge: for all beneath the moon Would I not leap upright.

Glo. Let go my hand. 28

Here, friend, 's another purse; in it a jewel

Well worth a poor man's taking: fairies and gods

Prosper it with thee! Go thou further off;

Bid me farewell, and let me hear thee going. 32

Edg. Now fare you well, good sir.

Glo. With all my heart.

Edg. Why I do trifle thus with his despair

Is done to cure it.

Glo. O you mighty gods!

This world I do renounce, and, in your sights, 36

Shake patiently my great affliction off;

If I could bear it longer, and not fall

To quarrel with your great opposeless wills,

My snuff and loathed part of nature should 40

Burn itself out. If Edgar live, O, bless him!

Now, fellow, fare thee well. [He falls forward.

Edg. Gone, sir: farewell.

[Aside.] And yet I know not how conceit may rob

The treasury of life when life itself

Yields to the theft; had he been where he thought

By this had thought been past. Alive or dead?

[To Gloucester.] Ho, you sir! friend! Hear you, sir? speak!

Thus might he pass indeed; yet he revives. 48

What are you, sir?

Glo. Away and let me die.

Edg. Hadst thou been aught but gossamer, feathers, air,

So many fathom down precipitating,

Thou'lt shiver'd like an egg; but thou dost breathe,

Hast heavy substance, bleed'st not, speak'st, art sound.

Ten masts at each make not the altitude Which thou hast perpendicularly fall.

Thy life's a miracle. Speak yet again. 56

Glo. But have I fallen or no?

Edg. From the dread summit of this chalky bourn.

Look up a-height; the shrill-gong'd lark so far Cannot be seen or heard: do but look up. 60

Glo. Alack! I have no eyes.

Is wretchedness depriv'd that benefit

To end itself by death? 'Twas yet some comfort,

When misery could beguile the tyrant's rage, 64
And frustrate his proud will.

Edg. Give me your arm:


Glo. Too well, too well.

Edg. This is above all strangeness.

Upon the crown o' the cliff, what thing was that
Which parted from you?

Glo. A poor unfortunate beggar. 69

Edg. As I stood here below methought his eyes

Were two full moons; he had a thousand noses,
Horns whelk'd and wav'd like the enridged sea:
It was some fiend; therefore, thou happy father,
Think that the clearest gods, who make them honours

Of men's impossibilities, have preserv'd thee.

Glo. I do remember now; henceforth I'll bear
Affliction till it do cry out itself

'Enough, enough,' and die. That thing you speak of

I took it for a man; often 'twould say
'The fiend, the fiend: ' he led me to that place.

Edg. Bear free and patient thoughts. But who comes here?

Enter LEAR, fantastically dressed with flowers.

The safer sense will ne'er accommodate
His master thus.

Lear. No, they cannot touch me for coining;
I am the king himself. 85

Edg. O thou side-piercing sight!

Lear. Nature's above art in that respect.

There's your press-money. That fellow handles
his bow like a crow-keeper: draw me a clothier's
yard. Look, look! a mouse. Peace, peace! this piece of toasted cheese will do 't. There's
my gaunlet; I'll prove it on a giant. Bring
up the brown bills. O! well flown, bird; i' the clout, i' the clout: hewgh! Give me the word.

Edg. Sweet marjoram.

Lear. Pass.

Glo. I know that voice.

Lear. Hal! Goneril, with a white beard!
They flatter'd me like a dog, and told me I had
white hairs in my beard ere the black ones were there. To say 'ay' and 'no' to everything
I said: 'Ay' and 'no' too was no good divinity.
When the rain came to wet me once and the wind to make me chatter, when the thunder
would not peace at my bidding, there I found 'em, there I smelt 'em out. Go to, they are not
men o' their words: they told me I was every thing; 'tis a lie, I am not auge-proof. 108

Glo. The trick of that voice I do well re-

Is 't not the king?

Lear. Ay, every inch a king;

When I do stare, see how the subject quakes.
I pardon that man's life. What was thy cause?

Adultery?

Thou shalt not die: die for adultery! No:
The wren goes to 't, and the small gilded fly

Does lecher in my sight.

Let copulation thrive; for Gloucester's bastard
son

Was kinder to his father than my daughters

Got 'tween the lawful sheets.

To 't luxury, pell-mell! for I lack soldiers.

Behold yond sumpering dame,

Whose face between her forks presses snow;
That minces virtue, and does shake the head

To hear of pleasure's name;

The fitchew nor the soiled horse goes to 't

With a more riotous appetite.

Down from the waist they are Centaurs,

Though women all above:

But to the girdle do the gods inherit,

Beneath is all the fiends:

There's hell, there's darkness, there is the

sulphurous pit,


Burning, scalding, stench, consumption; fie, fie,

fie! pah, pah! Give me an ounce of civet, good

apothecary, to sweeten my imagination: there's

money for thee.

Glo. O! let me kiss that hand!

Lear. Let me wipe it first; it smells of mort-

alitv.

Glo. O ruin'd piece of nature! This great

world

Shall so wear out to nought. Dost thou know
me?

Lear. I remember thine eyes well enough.

Dost thou squiny at me? No, do thy worst,

blind Cupid; I'll not love. Read thou this challenge; mark but the penning of it.

Glo. Were all the letters suns, I could not see.

Edg. [Aside.] I would not take this from

report; it is,

And my heart breaks at it.

Lear. Read.

Glo. What! with the case of eyes?

Lear. O, ho! are you there with me? No

eyes in your head, nor no money in your purse?

Your eyes are in a heavy case, your purse in a

light; yet you see how this world goes.

Glo. I see it feelingly.

Lear. What! art mad? A man may see how

this world goes with no eyes. Look with thine

ears: see how yond justice rails upon you simple

thief. Hark, in thine ear: change places; and,

handy-dandy, which is the justice, which is the
thief? Thou hast seen a farmer’s dog bark at a
beggar?  

Glo. Ay, sir.  

Lear. And the creature run from the cur? There thou mightest behold the great image of
authority; a dog’s obey’d in office.  

Thou rascal beadle, hold thy bloody hand! Why dost thou lash that whore? Stripe thine
own back; Thou holy lust’st to use her in that kind For which thou whipp’st her. The usurer hangs
the cozenor.  

Through tatter’d clothes small vices do appear; Robes and furr’d gowns hide all. Plate sin with
gold, And the strong lance of justice hurtless breaks; Arm it in rags, a pigmy’s straw doth pierce it. No one does offend, none, I say none; I’ll able ’em:

Take that of me, my friend, who have the power To seal the accuser’s lips. Get thee glass eyes; And, like a scurvy politician, seem
To see the things thou dost not. Now, now, now, now; Pull off my boots; harder, harder; so.

Edg. [Aside.] O! matter and impertinency mix’d;

Reason in madness!  

Lear. If thou wilt weep my fortunes, take
my eyes;

I know thee well enough; thy name is Glou-
cester:
Thou must be patient; we came crying hither:
Thou know’st the first time that we smell the
air

We wail and cry. I will preach to thee: mark.  

Glo. Alack! alack the day!

Lear. When we are born, we cry that we are
come
To this great stage of fools. This a good block!
It were a delicate stratagem to shoe
A troop of horse with felt; I’ll put it in proof,
And when I have stol’n upon these sene-in-law,
Then, kill, kill, kill, kill, kill, kill!

Enter Gentleman, with Attendants.

Gent. O! here he is; lay hand upon him. Sir, Your most dear daughter—

Lear. No rescue? What! a prisoner? I am
even

The natural fool of fortune. Use me well; You shall have ransom. Let me have surgeons; I am cut to the brains.

Gent. You shall have any thing.

Lear. No seconds? All myself?

Why this would make a man a man of salt To use his eyes for garden water-pots,

Ay, and laying autumn’s dust.

Gent. Good sir,—

Lear. I will die bravely as a bridegroom.

What! I will be jovial: come, come; I am a king, My masters, know you that?

Gent. You are a royal one, and we obey you. Lear. Then there’s life in it. Nay, an you get it, you shall get it by running. Sa, sa, sa, sa

[Exit. Attendants follow.

Gent. A sight most pitiful in the meanest wretch, Past speaking of in a king! Thou hast one daughter,

Who redeems nature from the general curse Which twain have brought her to.

Edg. Hail, gentle sir!

Gent. Sir, speed you: what’s your will?

Edg. Do you hear aught, sir, of a battle toward?

Gent. Most sure and vulgar; every one hears that,

Which can distinguish sound.

Edg. But, by your favour,

How near’s the other army?

Gent. Near, and on speedy foot; the main
decracy

Stands on the hourly thought.

Edg. I thank you, sir: that’s all

Gent. Though that the queen on special

cause is here, Her army is mov’d on.

Edg. I thank you, sir.  

[Exit Gentleman

Glo. You ever-gentle gods, take my breath from me:

Let not my worse spirit tempt me again

To die before you please!

Edg. Well pray you, father.

Glo. Now, good sir, what are you?

Edg. A most poor man, made tame to fortune’s blows;

Who, by the art of known and feeling sorrows, Am pregnant to good pity. Give me your hand, I’ll lead you to some biding.

Glo.  

Exeunt.

Enter Oswald.

Osw. A proclaim’d prize! Most happy! That eyeless head of thine was first fram’d fresh To raise my fortunes. Thou old unhappy traitor,

Briefly thyself remember: the sword is out That must destroy thee.

Glo. Now let thy friendly hand
Put strength enough to 't. [EDGAR interposes.

Osw. Wherefore, bold peasant, 236
Dar'st thou support a publish'd traitor? Hence;
Lest that infection of his fortune take
Like hold on thee. Let go his arm.

Edg. Chill not let go, zur, without vurther
'session.

Osw. Let go, slave, or thou diest.

Edg. Good gentleman, go your gait, and let
poor volk pass. An chud ha' bin zwaggeder
out of my life, 'twould not ha' bin so long as
'tis by a vortnight. Nay, come not near th' old
man; keep out, che vor ye, or ise try whether
your costard or my ballow be the harder. Chill
be plain with you.

Osw. Out, dunghill!

Edg. Chill pick your teeth, zur. Come; no
matter vor your foins.

[They fight and EDGAR knocks him down.

Osw. Slave, thou hast alain me. Villain,
take my purse.

If ever thou wilt thrive, bury my body;
And give the letters which thou find'st about me
To Edmund Earl of Gloucester; seek him out
Upon the English party: O! untimely death. 257

[Dies.

Edg. I know thee well: a serviceable villain;
As duteous to the vices of thy mistress
As badness would desire.

Glo. What! is he dead? 260

Edg. Sit you down, father; rest you.

Let's see his pockets: these letters he
speaks of
May be my friends. He's dead; I am only sorry
He had no other deaths-man. Let us see: 264
Leave, gentle wax; and, manners, blame us not:
To know our enemies' minds, we'd rip their
hearts;

Their papers, is more lawful.

Let our reciprocal vows be remembered. You
have many opportunities to cut him off; if
your will want not, time and place will be
fruitfully offered. There is nothing done if he
return the conqueror; then am I the prisoner,
and his bed my goal; from the loathed warmth
whereof deliver me, and empty the place for
your labour.

Your—wife, so I would say— 276

Affectionate servant,

Goneril,

O undistinguish'd space of woman's will!
A plot upon her virtuous husband's life, 280
And the exchange my brother! Here, in the
sands,
There I'll raise up, the post unsanctified
Of murderous bethers; and in the mature time
With this ungracious paper strike the sight 284

Of the death-practis'd duke. For him 'tis well
That of thy death and business I can tell.

Glo. The king is mad: how stiff is my vile
sense,
That I stand up, and have ingenious feeling 288
Of my huge sorrows! Better I were distract:
So should my thoughts be sever'd from my
grafs,
And woes by wrong imaginations lose
The knowledge of themselves. [Drums afar off.

Edg. Give me your hand: 292

Far off, methinks, I hear the beaten drum.
Come, father, I'll bestow you with a friend.

[Exeunt.

SCENE VII.—A Tent in the French Camp.

Enter CORDELIA, KENT, Doctor, and Gentle-
man.

Cor. O thou good Kent! how shall I live and
work
To match thy goodness? My life will be too
short,
And every measure fail me.

Kent. To be acknowledg'd, madam, is o'er-
paid.

All my reports go with the modest truth,
Nor more nor clipp'd, but so.

Cor. Be better suited:

These weeds are memories of those worser
hours:
I prithee, put them off.

Kent. Pardon me, dear madam; 8

Yet to be known shortens my made intent:
My boon I make it that you know me not
Till time and I think meet.

Cor. Then be't so, my good lord.—[To the
Doctor.] How does the king? 12

Doc. Madam, sleeps still.

Cor. O you kind gods,
Cure this great breach in his abused nature!

The untun'd and jarring senses, O! wind up

Of this child-changed father!

Doc. So please your majesty
That we may wake the king? he bath slept
long.

Cor. Be govern'd by your knowledge, and
proceed
I the sway of your own will. Is he array'd? 20

Enter Lear in his chair, carried by

Servants.

Gent. Ay, madam; in the heaviness of sleep,
We put fresh garments on him.

Doc. Be by, good madam, when we do awake
him;
I doubt not of his temperance.
Act IV, Sc. VII.

KING LEAR

Methinks I should know you and know this man; 64
Yet I am doubtful: for I am mainly ignorant
What place this is, and all the skill I have
Remembers not these garments; nor I know not
Where I did lodge last night. Do not laugh at
me; 68
For, as I am a man, I think this lady
To be my child Cordelia.

Cor. And so I am, I am.
Lear. Be your tears wet? Yes, faith. I pray, weep not:
If you have poison for me, I will drink it. 72
I know you do not love me; for your sisters
Have, as I do remember, done me wrong:
You have some cause, they have not.

Cor. No cause, no cause.
Lear. Am I in France?

Kent. In your own kingdom, sir.
Lear. Do not abuse me. 77
Doc. Be comforted, good madam; the great rage,
You see, is kill'd in him; and yet it is danger
To make him even o'er the time he has lost. 80
Desire him to go in; trouble him no more
Till further settling.

Cor. Will 't please your highness walk?
Lear. Pray you now, forget and forgive: I am old and foolish. [Exeunt LEAR, CORDELIA, Doc-
tor, and Attendants.

Gent. Holds it true, sir, that the Duke of Cornwall was so slain?

Kent. Most certain, sir.

Gent. Who is conductor of his people? 88

Kent. As 'tis said, the bastard son of Glou-

Gent. They say Edgar, his banished son, is
with the Earl of Kent in Germany.

Kent. Report is changeable. 'Tis time to
look about; the powers of the kingdom
approach apace. 94

Gent. The arbitrement is like to be bloody.
Fare you well, sir. [Exeit.

Kent. My point and period will be throughly
wrought, 97
Or well or ill, as this day's battle's fought.

[Exeit.

ACT V.

SCENE I.—The British Camp near Dover.

Enter, with drum and colours, EDMUND, REGAN,
Officers, Soldiers, and Others.

Edm. Know of the duke if his last purpose
hold,
Or whether since he is advis'd by aught
To change the course; he’s full of alteration
And self-reproving; bring his constant pleasure.

[To an Officer, who goes out.

Reg. Our sister’s man is certainly miscarried.
Edm. ‘Tis to be doubted, madam.

Reg. Now, sweet lord,
You know the goodness I intend upon you:
Tell me, but truly, but then speak the truth,
Do you not love my sister?

Edm. In honour’d love.
Reg. But have you never found my brother’s way
To the foreclosed place?
Edm. That thought abuses you.
Reg. I am doubtful that you have been conjunct
And bosom’d with her, as far as we call hers.
Edm. No, by mine honour, madam.
Reg. I never shall endure her: dear my lord,
Be not familiar with her.

Edm. Fear me not.

She and the duke her husband!

Enter with drums and colours, ALBANY,
GONERIL, and Soldiers.

Gon. [Aside.] I had rather lose the battle than that sister
Should loosen him and me.

Alb. Our very loving sister, well be-met.

Sir, this I heard, the king is come to his daugh-
er,
With others; whom the rigour of our state
Forc’d to cry out. Where I could not be honest
I never yet was valiant: for this business,
It toucheth us, as France invades our land,
Not bolds the king, with others, whom, I fear,
Most just and heavy causes make oppose.

Edm. Sir, you speak nobly.

Reg. Why is this reason’d?

Gon. Combine together ’gainst the enemy;
For these domestic and particular broils
Are not the question here.

Alb. Let’s then determine
With the ancient of war on our proceeding.

Edm. I shall attend you presently at your tent.

Reg. Sister, you’ll go with us?
Gon. No.

Reg. ’Tis most convenient; pray you, go with us.

Gon. [Aside.] O, ho! I know the riddle.
[Aloud.] I will go.

Enter EDGAR, disguised.

Edg. If ever your Grace had speech with man
so poor,
Hear me one word.

Alb. I’ll overtake you. Speak.

[Exeunt EDMUND, REGAN, GONERIL, Officers,
Soldiers, and Attendants.

Edg. Before you fight the battle, ope this letter.

If you have victory, let the trumpet sound
For him that brought it: wretched though I seem,
I can produce a champion that will prove
What is avouched there. If you miscarry,
Your business of the world hath so an end,
And machination ceases. Fortune love you!

Alb. Stay till I have read the letter.

Edg. I was forbid it.

When time shall serve, let but the herald cry,
And I’ll appear again.

Alb. Why, fare thee well: I will o’erlook thy paper.

[Exit EDGAR.

Re-enter EDMUND.

Edm. The enemy’s in view; draw up your powers.
Here is the guess of their true strength and forces
By diligent discovery; but your haste
Is now urg’d on you.

Alb. We will greet the time.

Edm. To both these sisters have I sworn my love;
Each jealous of the other, as the stung
Are of the adder. Which of them shall I take?
Both? one? or neither? Neither can be enjoy’d
If both remain alive: to take the widow
Exasperates, makes mad her sister Goneril;
And hardly shall I carry out my side,
Her husband being alive. Now then, we’ll use
His countenance for the battle; which being done
Let her who would be rid of him devise
His speedy taking off. As for the mercy
Which he intends to Lear, and to Cordelia,
The battle done, and they within our power,
Shall never see his pardon; for my state
Stands on me to defend, not to debate.

[Exit.

SCENE II.—A Field between the two Camps.

Alarum within. Enter, with drum and colours,
LEAR, CORDELIA, and their Forces; and
exeunt. Enter EDGAR and GLOUCESTER.

Edg. Here, father, take the shadow of this tree
For your good host; pray that the right may thrive.

If ever I return to you again,
I’ll bring you comfort.

Glo. Grace go with you, sir. [Exit EDGAR.
KING LEAR

Ere they shall make us weep: we’ll see ’em starve first.

Come. [Exeunt Lear and Cordelia, guarded.]

Edm. Come hither, captain; hark,
Take thou this note; [Giving a paper.] go follow them to prison:

One step I have advanc’d thee; if thou dost
As this instructs thee, thou dost make thy way
To noble fortunes; know thou this, that men
Are as the time is; to be tender-minded
Does not become a sword; thy great employment
Will not bear question; either say thou ’tis don’t,
Or thrive by other means.

Offi. I’ll do’t, my lord.

Edm. About it; and write happy when thou hast done.

Mark,—I say, instantly, and carry it so
As I have set it down.

Offi. I cannot draw a cart nor eat dried oats;
If it be man’s work I will do it. [Exeunt.

Flourish. Enter Albany, Goneril, Regan,
Officers, and Attendants.

Alb. Sir, you have show’d to-day your valiant strain,
And fortune led you well; you have the captives
Who were the opposites of this day’s strife;
We do require them of you, so to use them
As we shall find their merits and our safety
May equally determine.

Edm. Sir, I thought it fit
To send the old and miserable king
To some retention, and appointed guard;
Whose age has charms in it, whose title more,
To pluck the common bosom on his side,
And turn our impress’d lances in our eyes
Which do command them. With him I sent the queen;

My reason all the same; and they are ready
To-morrow, or at further space, to appear
Where you shall hold your session. At this time
We sweat and bleed; the friend hath lost his friend,
And the best quarrels, in the heat, are curs’d
By those that feel their sharpness;
The question of Cordelia and her father
Requires a fitter place.

Alb. Sir, by your patience, I hold you but a subject of this war,
Not as a brother.

Reg. That’s as we list to grace him:
Methinks our pleasure might have been de-
manded,
Ere you had spoke so far. He led our powers, 64
Bore the commission of my place and person;
The which immediacy may well stand up,
And call itself your brother.

Gon. Not so hot;
In his own grace he doth exalt himself 68
More than in your addition.

Reg. In my rights,
By me invested, he compeers the best.
Gon. That were the most, if he should husband you.
Gon. Holla, holla! 72
That eye that told you so look’d but a-squint.
Reg. Lady, I am not well; else I should answer
From a full-flowing stomach. General,
Take thou my soldiers, prisoners, patrimony; 76
Dispose of them, of me; the walls are thine;
Witness the world, that I create thee here
My lord and master.
Gon. Mean you to enjoy him?
Alb. The let-alone lies not in your good will.

Edm. Nor in thine, lord.

Alb. Halfood fellow, yes.
Reg. [To EDMUND.] Let the drum strike, and prove my title thine.

Alb. Stay yet; hear reason. Edmund, I arrest thee
On capital treason; and, in thy arrest,
This gilded serpent. [Pointing to GONERIL.] For your claim, fair sister,
I bar it in the interest of my wife;
’Tis she is sub-contracted to this lord,
And I, her husband, contradict your hands.

If you will marry, make your love to me,
My lady is bespoke.
Gon. An interlude!
Alb. Thou art arm’d, Gloucester; let the trumpet sound:
If none appear to prove upon thy person
Thy heinous, manifest, and many treasons,
There is my pledge; [Throws down a glove.] I’ll prove it on thy heart,
Ere I taste bread, thou art in nothing less
Than I have here proclaim’d thee.

Reg. Sick! O sick! 96
Gon. [Aside.] If not, I’ll ne’er trust medicine.
Edm. There’s my exchange: [Throws down a glove.] what in the world he is
That names me traitor, villain-like he lies.
Call by thy trumpet: he that dares approach,
On him, on you, who not? I will maintain 101
My truth and honour firmly.

Alb. A herald, ho!
Edm. A herald, ho! a herald!

Alb. Trust to thy single virtue; for thy soldiers,
All levied in my name, have in my name
Took their discharge.
Reg. My sickness grows upon me.
Alb. She is not well; convey her to my tent.
[Exit REGAN, led.

Come hither, herald,

Enter a Herald.

Let the trumpet sound,—

And read out this.

Offi. Sound, trumpet! [A trumpet sounds.

Her. If any man of quality or degree within
the lists of the army will maintain upon
Edmund, supposed Earl of Gloucester, that he
is a manifold traitor, let him appear at the
third sound of the trumpet. He is bold in his
defence.

Edm. Sound!

Her. Again!

[First Trumpet.

Her. Again!

[Second Trumpet.

[Third Trumpet.

[Trumpet answers within.

Enter EDGAR, armed, with a Trumpet before

Alb. Ask him his purposes, why he appears
Upon this call o’ the trumpet.

Her. What are you? 121
Your name? your quality? and why you answer
This present summons?

Edg. Know, my name is lost;
By treason’s tooth bare-gnawn and canker-bit:
Yet am I noble as the adversary
I come to cope.

Alb. Which is that adversary?

Edg. What’s he that speaks for Edmund
Earl of Gloucester?

Edm. Himself; what sayst thou to him?

Edg. Draw thy sword, 128
That, if my speech offend a noble heart,
Thy arm may do thee justice; here is mine:
Behold, it is the privilege of mine honours,
My oath, and my profession: I protest,
Maugre thy strength, youth, place, and eminence,
Despite thy victor sword and fire-new fortune,
Thy valour and thy heart, thou art a traitor,
False to thy gods, thy brother, and thy father,
Conspiring gainst this high illustrious prince,
And, from the extremest upward of thy head
To the descent and dust below thy foot,
A most toad-spotted traitor. Say thou ‘No,’
This sword, this arm, and my best spirits are bent
To prove upon thy heart, whereeto I speak,
Thou liest.
Edm. In wisdom I should ask thy name; 
But since thy outside looks so fair and war-like, 
And that thy tongue some say of breeding 
Breathes, 145
What safe and nicely I might well delay 
By rule of knighthood, I disdain and spurn;
Back do I toss these treasons to thy head, 148
With the hell-hated lie o’erwhelm thy heart, 
Which, for they yet glance by and scarcely bruise,
This sword of mine shall give them instant way, 
Where they shall rest for ever. Trumpets, 
speak!
[Alarums. They fight. EDWARD falls.]
Alb. Save him, save him!
Gon. This is practice, Gloucester: 
By the law of arms thou wast not bound to answer
An unknown opponent; thou art not vanquish’d, 
But cozen’d and beguil’d. 156
Alb. Shut your mouth, dame; or with this paper shall I stop it. Hold, sir; 
Thou worse than any name, read thine own 
Evil:
No tearing, lady; I perceive you know it. 159
[Gives the letter to EDMUND.]
Gon. Say, if I do, the laws are mine, not thine:
Who can arraign me for ‘t? 160
[Exit.]
Alb. Most monstrous!
Know’st thou this paper?
Edm. Ask me not what I know.
Alb. Go after her: she’s desperate; govern her.
[Exit an Officer.]
Edm. What you have charg’d me with, that have I done, 164
And more, much more; the time will bring it out: 
’Tis past, and so am I. But what art thou 
That hast this fortune on me? If thou ’rt noble, 
I do forgive thee.
Edg. Let’s exchange charity. 168
I am no less in blood than thou art, Edmund; 
If more, the more thou hast wrong’d me. 
My name is Edgar, and thy father’s son. 
The gods are just, and of our pleasant vices 172
Make instruments to plague us: 
The dark and vicious place where thee he got 
Cost him his eyes.
Edm. Thou hast spoken right, ’tis true; 
The wheel is come full circle; I am here. 176
Alb. Methought thy very gait did signify 
A royal nobleness: I must embrace thee: 
Let sorrow split my heart, if ever I 
Did hate thee or thy father.
Edg. Worthy prince, I know ’t. 180
Alb. Where have you hid yourself?

How have you known the miseries of your father?
Edg. By nursing them, my lord. List a brief tale;
And, when ’tis told, O! that my heart would burst, 184
The bloody proclamation to escape 
That follow’d me so near,—O! our lives’ sweetness, 
That we the pain of death would hourly die 
Rather than die at once!—taught me to shift 188
Into a madman’s rage, to assume a semblance 
That very dogs disdain’d: and in this habit 
Met my father with his bleeding rings, 
Their precious stones new lost; became his guide, 192
Led him, begged for him, sav’d him from despair; 
Never,—O fault!—reveal’d myself unto him, 
Until some half hour past, when I was arm’d; 
Not sure, though hoping, of this good success, 
I ask’d his blessing, and from first to last 197
Told him my pilgrimage: but his flaw’d heart,— 
Alack! too weak the conflict to support; 
’Twixt two extremes of passion, joy and grief, 
Burst smilingly.
Edm. This speech of yours hath mov’d me, 
And shall perchance do good; but speak you on;
You look as you had something more to say.
Alb. If there be more, more woeful, hold it in; 
For I am almost ready to dissolve, 205
Hearing of this.
Edg. This would have seem’d a period 
To such as love not sorrow; but another, 
To amplify too much, would make much more, 
And top extremity. 209
Whilst I was big in clamour came there a man, 
Who, having seen me in my worst estate, 
Shunn’d my abhor’d society; but then, finding 
Who ’twas that so endur’d, with his strong arms 213
He fasten’d on my neck, and bellow’d out 
As he’d burst heaven; threw him on my father; 
Told the most piteous tale of Lear and him 216
That ever ear receiv’d; which in recounting 
His grief grew puissant, and the strings of life 
Began to crack: twice then the trumpet sounded, 
And there I left him trance’d.
Alb. But who was this? 220
Edg. Kent, sir, the banish’d Kent; who in disguise 
Follow’d his enemy king, and did him service 
Improper for a slave.

Enter a Gentleman, with a bloody knife.
Gent. Help, help! O help!
Edg. What kind of help?

Alb. Speak, man. 224

Edg. What means that bloody knife?

Gent. 'Tis hot, it smokes; It came even from the heart of—O! she's dead.


Gent. Your lady, sir, your lady: and her sister 228

By her is poison'd; she confesses it.

Edm. I was contracted to them both: all three

Now marry in an instant.

Edg. Here comes Kent.

Alb. Produce the bodies, be they alive or dead: 232

This judgment of the heavens, that makes us tremble,

Touches us not with pity. [Exit Gentleman.

Enter Kent. 235

O! is this he?

The time will not allow the compliment Which very manners urges.

Kent. I am come 236

To bid my king and master aye good-night;

Is he not here?

Alb. Great thing of us forgot!

Speak, Edmund, where's the king? and where's Cordelia?

Seest thou this object, Kent? 240

[The bodies of Goneril and Regan are brought in.

Kent. Alack! why thus?

Edm. Yet Edmund was belov'd:

The one the other poison'd for my sake,

And after slew herself.

Alb. Even so. Cover their faces. 244

Edm. I pant for life: some good I mean to do

Despite of mine own nature. Quickly send,

Be brief in it, to the castle; for my writ Is on the life of Lear and on Cordelia. 248

Nay, send in time.

Alb. Run, run! O run!

Edg. To whom, my lord? Who has the office? send

Thy token of reprieve.

Edm. Well thought on: take my sword, 252

Give it the captain.

Alb. Haste thee, for thy life. [Exit Edgar.

Edm. He hath commission from my wife and me

To hang Cordelia in the prison, and

To lay the blame upon her own despair, 256

That she fordid herself.

Alb. The gods defend her! Bear him hence awhile. [Edmund is borne off.

Enter Lear, with Cordelia dead in his arms;

Edgar, Officer, and Others.

Lear. Howl, howl, howl, howl! O! you are men of stones:

Had I your tongues and eyes, I'd use them so

That heaven's vaults should crack. She's gone for ever. 261

I know when one is dead, and when one lives;

She's dead as earth. Lend me a looking-glass;

If that her breath will mist or stain the stone,

Why, then she lives.

Kent. Is this the promis'd end? 265

Edg. Or image of that horror?

Alb. Fall and cease?

Lear. This feather stirs; she lives! if it be so,

It is a chance which does redeem all sorrows 268

That ever I have felt.

Kent. [Kneeling] O, my good master!

Lear. Priftee, away.

Edg. 'Tis noble Kent, your friend.

Lear. A plague upon you, murderers, traitors all!

I might have say'd her; now, she's gone for ever!

Cordelia, Cordelia! stay a little. Ha! 273

What is 't thou say'st? Her voice was ever soft,

Gentle and low, an excellent thing in woman.

I kill'd the slave that was a hanging thee. 276

Off. 'Tis true, my lord, he did.

Lear. Did I not, fellow?

I have seen the day, with my good biting falshion

I would have made them skip: I am old now, And these same crosses spoil me. Who are you? Mine eyes are not o' the best: I'll tell you straight. 281

Kent. If fortune brag of two she lov'd and hated,

One of them we behold.

Lear. This is a dull sight. Are you not Kent?

Kent. The same, 284

Your servant Kent. Where is your servant Caius?

Lear. He's a good fellow, I can tell you that; He'll strike, and quickly too. He's dead and rotten.

Kent. No, my good lord; I am the very man— 288

Lear. I'll see that straight.

Kent. That, from your first of difference and decay,

Have follow'd your sad steps.

Lear. You are welcome hither.

Kent. Nor no man else; all's cheerless, dark, and deadly: 292
Your eldest daughters have forborne themselves, 
And desperately are dead.

Lear. Ay, so I think.

Alb. He knows not what he says, and vain it is.

That we present us to him.

Edg. Very bootless. 296

Enter an Officer.

Of. Edmund is dead, my lord.

Alb. That's but a trifle here.
You lords and noble friends, know our intent;
What comfort to this great decay may come,
Shall be applied: for us, we will resign,
During the life of this old majesty,
To him our absolute power:—[To Edgar and

Kent.] You, to your rights;
With boot and such addition as your honours
Have more than merited. All friends shall taste
The wages of their virtue, and all foes
The cup of their deservings. O! see, see!

Lear. And my poor fool is hang'd! No, no, no life!

Why should a dog, a horse, a rat, have life, 308
And thou no breath at all? Thou'll come no more,
Never, never, never, never, never!

Pray you, undo this button: thank you, sir.
Do you see this? Look on her, look, her lips, 312
Look there, look there! [Dies.

Edg. He faints!—my lord, my lord!

Kent. Break, heart; I prithee, break.

Edg. Look up, my lord.

Kent. Vex not his ghost: O! let him pass;
he hates him.

That would upon the rack of this tough world
Stretch him out longer.

Edg. He is gone, indeed. 317

Kent. The wonder is he hath endure'd so long:

He but usurp'd his life.

Alb. Bear them from hence. Our present business

Is general woe. [To Kent and Edgar.]

Friends of my soul, you twain,
Rule in this realm, and the gend'm state sustain.

Kent. I have a journey, sir, shortly to go;

My master calls me, I must not say no. 324

Alb. The weight of this sad time we must obey;

Speak what we feel, not what we ought to say.
The eldest hath borne most: we that are young,
Shall never see so much, nor live so long. 328

[Exeunt, with a dead march.]
OTHELLO
THE MOOR OF VENICE

DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

DUKE of VENICE.
BRABANTIO, a Senator. Other Senators.
GARATTANO, Brother to Brabantio.
LODOVICO, Kinsman to Brabantio.
OTHELLO, a noble Moor; in the service of the
Venetian State.
CASSIO, his Lieutenant.
IAGO, his Ancient.
RODERIGO, a Venetian Gentleman.
MONTANO, Othello’s predecessor in the Govern-
ment of Cyprus.

Clown, Servant to Othello.

DESDEMONA, Daughter to Brabantio, and
Wife to Othello.
EMILIA, Wife to Iago.
BIANCA, Mistress to Cassio.

Sailor, Officers, Gentlemen, Messengers, Musi-
cians, Heralds, Attendants.

SCENE.—For the first Act, in Venice; during the rest of the Play, at a Sea-Port in Cyprus.

ACT I.

SCENE I.—Venice. A Street.

Enter RODERIGO and IAGO.

Rod. Tush! Never tell me; I take it much
unkindly
That thou, Iago, who hast had my purse
As if the strings were thine, shouldst know of
this.
Iago. ’Sblood, but you will not hear me: 4
If ever I did dream of such a matter,
Abhor me.

Rod. Thou told’st me thou didst hold him in
thy hate.

Iago. Despise me if I do not. Three great
ones of the city, 8
In personal suit to make me his lieutenant,
Off-capp’d to him; and, by the faith of man,
I know my price, I am worth no worse a place;
But he, as loving his own pride and purposes, 12
Evades them, with a bombast circumstance
Horribly stuff’d with epithets of war;
And, in conclusion,
Nonsuits my mediators; for, ‘Certe,’ says he, 16
‘I have already chose my officer.’
And what was he?
Forsooth, a great arithmetician,
One Michael Cassio, a Florentine, 20
A fellow almost damn’d in a fair wife;
That never set a squadron in the field,
Nor the division of a battle knows
More than a spinster; unless the bookish theoretic,
Wherein the tog’d consuls can propose

As masterly as he: mere prattle, without prac-
tice,
Is all his soldiership. But he, sir, nan the
election;
And I—of whom his eyes had seen the proof 28
At Rhodes, at Cyprus, and on other grounds
Christian and heathen—must be be-leed and
caim’d
By debitor and creditor; this counter caster,
He, in good time, must his lieutenant be, 32
And I—God bless the mark!—his Moorship’s
ancient.

Rod. By heaven, I rather would have been
his hangman.

Iago. Why, there’s no remedy: ’tis the curse
of the service,
Prestement goes by letter and affection, 36
Not by the old gradation, where each second
Stood heir to the first. Now, sir, be judge your-
self,
Whe’r I in any just term am affin’d
To love the Moor.

Rod. I would not follow him then. 40

Iago. O! sir, content you;
I follow him to serve my turn upon him;
We cannot all be masters, nor all masters
Cannot be truly follow’d. You shall mark 44
Many a duteous and knee-crooking knave,
That, doting on his own obsequious bondage,
Wears out his time, much like his master’s ass,
For nought but provender, and when he’s old,
cashi’d; 48
Whip me such honest knaves. Others there are
Awake the snorting citizens with the bell,  
Or else the devil will make a grandsire of you.  
Arise, I say.

_Bra._ What! have you lost your wits? 92  
_Rod._ Most reverend signior, do you know my voice?  
_Bra._ Not I, what are you?  
_Rod._ My name is Roderigo.

_Bra._ The worser welcome:  
I have charg’d thee not to haunt about my doors: 96  
In honest plainness thou hast heard me say  
My daughter is not for thee; and now, in madness,  
Being full of supper and distempering draughts,  
Upon malicious knavery dost thou come 100  
To start my quiet.

_Rod._ Sir, sir, sir!  
_Bra._ But thou must needs be sure  
My spirit and my place have in them power  
To make this bitter to thee.

_Rod._ Patience, good sir. 104  
_Bra._ What tell’st thou me of robbing? this is Venice;  
My house is not a grange.

_Rod._ Most grave Brabantio,  
In simple and pure soul I come to you. 107  
_Iago._ 'Zounds! sir, you are one of those that will not serve God if the devil bid you. Because we come to do you service and you think we are ruffians, you’ll have your daughter covered with a Barbary horse; you’ll have your nephews neigh to you; you’ll have coursers for cousins and gennets for Germans. 114

_Bra._ What profane wretch art thou?  
_Iago._ I am one, sir, that comes to tell you, your daughter and the Moor are now making the beast with two backs.

_Bra._ Thou art a villain.

_Iago._ You are—a senator.

_Bra._ This thou shalt answer; I know thee,  
_Roderigo.

_Rod._ Sir, I will answer any thing. But, I beseech you,  
If ’t be your pleasure and most wise consent,—  
As partly, I find, it is,—that your fair daughter,  
At this odd-even and dull-watch o’ the night, 124  
Transported with no worse nor better guard  
But with a knife of common hire, a gondolier,  
To the gross clasps of a lascivious Moor,— 127  
If this be known to you, and your allowance,  
We then have done you bold and saucy wrongs;  
But if you know not this, my manners tell me  
We have your wrong rebuke. Do not believe,  
That, from the sense of all civility, 132

_Iago._ I thus would play and trifle with your reverence:  
Your daughter, if you have not given her leave,
I say again, hath made a gross revolt;
Tying her duty, beauty, wit and fortunes
In an extravagant and wheeling stranger
Of her and every where. Straight satisfy your-
self:
If she be in her chamber or your house,
Let loose on me the justice of the state
For thus deluding you.

*Bra.* Strike on the tinder, ho!
Give me a taper! call up all my people!
This accident is not unlike my dream;
Belief of it oppresses me already.

Light, I say! light!

[Exit, from above.

*Iago.* Farewell, for I must leave you:
It seems not meet nor wholesome to my place
To be produc'd, as, if I stay, shall,
Against the Moor; for, I do know the state,
However this may gall him with some check,
Cannot with safety cast him; for he's embark'd
With such loud reason to the Cyprus wars,—
Which even now stand in act,—that, for their
souls,
Another of his fathom they have none,
To lead their business; in which regard,
Though I do hate him as I do hell-pains,
Yet, for necessity of present life,
I must show out a flag and sign of love,
Which is indeed but sign. That you shall
surely find him,
Lead to the Sagittary the raised search;
And there will I be with him. So, farewell.

[Exit.

Enter below, *BRABANTIO,* and *SERVANTS with torches.*

*Bra.* It is too true an evil: gone she is,
And what's to come of my despised time
Is nought but bitterness. Now, Roderigo,
Where didst thou see her? O, unhappy girl!
With the Moor, sayest thou? Who would be a
father!

How didst thou know 'twas she? O, she de-
ceives me

Past thought. What said she to you? Get
more tapers!

*Rais.* All my kindred! Are they married, think
you?

*Rod.* Truly, I think they are.

*Bra.* O heaven! How got she out? O,
treason of the blood:

Fathers, from hence trust not your daughters' minds
By what you see them act. Are there not charms
By which the property of youth and maidhood
May be abus'd? Have you not read, Roderigo,
Of some such thing?

*Rod.* Yes, sir, I have indeed.

*Bra.* Call up my brother. O! that you had
had her.

Some one way, some another! Do you know
Where we may apprehend her and the Moor?

*Rod.* I think I can discover him, if you
please
To get good guard and go along with me.

*Bra.* Pray you, lead on. At every house I'll
call;
I may command at most. Get weapons, ho!
And raise some special officers of night.
On, good Roderigo; I'll deserve your pains.

[Exit.

SCENE II.—Another Street.

Enter OTHELLO, IAGO, and Attendants, with

*torches.*

*Iago.* Though in the trade of war I have slain

men,
Yet do I hold it very stuff o' the conscience
To do no contriv'd murder: I lack iniquity

Sometimes to do me service. Nine or ten

times

I had thought to have yerk'd him here under
the ribs.

*Oth.* 'Tis better as it is.

*Iago.* Nay, but he prated,
And spoke such scurvy and provoking terms
Against your honour

That, with the little godliness I have,
I did full hard forbear him. But, I pray, sir,
Are you fast married? Be asur'd of this,
That the magnifico is much belov'd,
And hath in his effect a voice potential
As double as the duke's; he will divorce you,
Or put upon you what restraint and grievance
The law—with all his might to enforce it on—
Will give him cable.

*Oth.* Let him do his spite:
My services which I have done the signiory
Shall out-tongue his complaints. 'Tis yet to

know,

Which when I know that boasting is an honour
I shall promulgate, I fetch my life and being
From men of royal siege, and my demerits
May speak unbonneted to as proud a fortune
As this that I have reach'd; for know, Iago, but
That I love the gentle Desdemona,
I would not my unhoused free condition
Put into circumscription and confine
For the sea's worth. But, look! what lights
Come yond?

*Iago.* Those are the raised father and his

friends:

You were best go in.

*Oth.* Not I; I must be found:
My parts, my title, and my perfect soul
Shall manifest me rightly. Is it they? 32
Iago. By Janus, I think no.

Enter Cassio and certain Officers, with torches.

Oth. The servants of the duke, and my lieuten
The goodness of the night upon you, friends!
What is the news?
Cas. The duke does greet you, general, 36
And he requires your haste-post-haste appearance.

Even on the instant.
Oth. What is the matter, think you?
Cas. Something from Cyprus, as I may divine.
It is a business of some heat; the galleys
Have sent a dozen sequent messengers
This very night at one another’s heels,
And many of the consuls, rais’d and met,
Are at the duke’s already. You been most hotly
call’d for;
When, being not at your lodging to be found,
The senate hath sent about several quests
To search you out.
Oth. ‘Tis well I am found by you.
I will but spend a word here in the house, 48
And go with you. [Exit.
Cas. Ancient, what makes he here?
Iago. Faith, he to-night hath boarded a land
carrack;
If it prove lawful prize, he’s made for ever.
Cas. I do not understand.
Iago. He’s married.
Cas. To who? 52

Re-enter Othello.
Iago. Marry, lo—Come, captain, will you go?
Oth. Have with you.
Cas. Here comes another troop to seek for
you.
Iago. It is Brabantio. General, be advis’d;
He comes to bad intent.

Enter Brabantio, Roderigo, and Officers,
with torches and weapons.

Oth. Holla! stand there! 56
Rod. Signior, it is the Moor.
Bra. Down with him, thief!
[They draw on both sides.
Iago. You, Roderigo! come, sir, I am for you.
Oth. Keep up your bright swords, for the
dew will rust them.
Good signior, you shall more command with
years
Than with your weapons.

Bra. O thou foul thief! where hast thou
stow’d my daughter?
Damn’d as thou art, thou hast enchanted her;
For I’ll refer me to all things of sense,
If she in chains of magic were not bound,
Whether a maid so tender, fair, and happy,
So opposite to marriage that she shunn’d
The wealthy curled darlings of our nation,
Would ever have, to incur a general mock
Run from her guardage to the sooty bosom
Of such a thing as thou; to fear, not to delight.
Judge me the world, if ‘tis not gross in sense
That thou hast practis’d on her with foul charms,
Abus’d her delicate youth with drugs or
minerals
That weaken motion: I’ll have’t disputed on;
’Tis probable, and palpable to thinking.
Therefore apprehend and do attach thee
For an abuser of the world, a practiser
Of arts inhibited and out of warrant.
Lay hold upon him: if he do resist,
Subdue him at his peril.
Oth. Hold your hands,
Both you of my inclining, and the rest:
Were it my cue to fight, I should have known it
Without a prompter. Where will you that I go
To answer this your charge?
Bra. To prison; till fit time
Of law and course of direct session
Call thee to answer.
Oth. What if I do obey?
How may the duke be therewith satisfied,
Whose messengers are here about my side,
Upon some present business of the state
To bring me to him?
Off. ‘Tis true, most worthy signior;
The duke’s in council, and your noble self,
I am sure, is sent for.
Bra. How! the duke in council!
In this time of the night! Bring him away.
Mine’s not an idle cause: the duke himself,
Or any of my brothers of the state,
Cannot but feel this wrong as ’twere their own;
For if such actions may have passage free,
Bond-slaves and pagans shall our statesmen be.

[Exeunt.

SCENE III.—A Council Chamber. The Duke
and Senators sitting at a table. Officers
attending.

Duke. There is no composition in these news
That gives them credit.

First Sen. Indeed, they are disproportion’d;
My letters say a hundred and seven galleys.

Duke. And mine, a hundred and forty.

Sec. Sen. And mine, two hundred: 4
But though they jump not on a just account,—

1094
As in these cases, where the aim reports, 'Tis off with difference,—yet do they all confirm
A Turkish fleet, and bearing up to Cyprus.

Duke. Nay, it is possible enough to judgment:
I do not so assure me in the error,
But the main article I do approve
In fearful sense.

Sailor. [Within.] What, hol what, hol what, hol
Off. A messenger from the galleys.

Enter a Sailor.

Duke. Now, what's the business?
Sail. The Turkish preparation makes for Rhodes;
So was I bid report here to the state
By Signior Angelo.

Duke. How say you by this change?
First Sen. This cannot be,
By no assay of reason; 'tis a pageant
To keep us in false case. When we consider
The importance of Cyprus to the Turk,
And let ourselves again but understand,
That as it more concerns the Turk than Rhodes,
So may he with more facile question bear it,
For that it stands not in such war-like brace,
But altogether lacks the abilities
That Rhodes is dress'd in: if we make thought of this,
We must not think the Turk is so unskilful
To leave that latest which concerns him first,
Neglecting an attempt of ease and gain,
To wake and wage a danger profitless.

Duke. Nay, in all confidence, he's not for Rhodes.

Off. Here is more news.

Enter a Messenger.

Mess. The Ottomites, reverend and gracious,
Steering with due course toward the Isle of Rhodes,
Have there injointed them with an after fleet.

First Sen. Ay, so I thought. How many, as you guess?

Mess. Of thirty sail; and now they do re-stem
Their backward course, bearing with frank appearance
Their purposes toward Cyprus. Signior Montano,
Your trusty and most valiant servitor,
With his free duty recommends you thus,
And prays you to believe him.

Duke. 'Tis certa'n then, for Cyprus.
Marcus Luccio, is not he in town?

First Sen. He's now in Florence.
Hath this extent, no more. Rude am I in my
speech,
And little bless'd with the soft phrase of peace;
For since these arms of mine had seven years' pith,
Till now some nine moons wasted, they have us'd
Their dearest action in the tented field;
And little of this great world can I speak,
More than pertains to feats of broil and battle;
And therefore little shall I grace my cause
In speaking for myself. Yet, by your gracious patience,
I will a round unvarnish'd tale deliver
Of my whole course of love; what drugs, what charms,
What conjuration, and what mighty magic,
For such proceeding I am charg'd withal,
I won his daughter.

Bra. A maiden never bold;
Of spirit so still and quiet, that her motion
Blush'd at herself; and she, in spite of nature,
Of years, of country, credit, every thing,
To fall in love with what she fear'd to look on!
It is a judgment maim'd and most imperfect
That will confess perfection so could err
Against all rules of nature, and must be driven
To find out practices of cunning hell,
Why this should be. I therefore vouch again
That with some mixtures powerful o'er the blood,
Or with some dram conjur'd to this effect,
He wrought upon her.

Duke. To vouch this, is no proof,
Without more certain and more overt test
Than these thin habits and poor likenesses
Of modern seeming do prefer against him.

First Sen. But, Othello, speak:
Did you by indirect and forced courses
Subdue and poison this young maid's affections;
Or came it by request and such fair question
As soul to soul affordeth?

Oth. I do beseech you,
Send for the lady to the Sagittary,
And let her speak of me before her father:
If you do find me foul in her report,
The trust, the office I do hold of you,
Not only take away, but let your sentence
Even fall upon my life.


Oth. Ancient, conduct them; you best know
the place.

[Exeunt IAGO and Attendants.

And, till she come, as truly as to heaven
I do confess the vices of my blood,
So justly to your grave ears I'll present
How I did thrive in this fair lady's love,
And she in mine.

Duke. Say it, Othello.

Oth. Her father lov'd me; oft invited me;
Still question'd me the story of my life
From year to year, the battles, sieges, fortunes
That I have pass'd.
I ran it through, even from my boyish days
To the very moment that he made me tell it;
Wherein I spake of most disastrous chances,
Of moving accidents by flood and field,
Of hair-breadth scapes i' the imminent deadly breach,
Of being taken by the insolent foe
And sold to slavery, of my redemption thence
And portance in my travel's history;
Wherein of antres vast and deserts idle,
Rough quarries, rocks and hills whose heads touch heaven,
It was my hint to speak, such was the process;
And of the Cannibals that each other eat,
The Anthropophagi, and men whose heads
Do grow beneath their shoulders. This to hear
Would Desdemona seriously incline;
But still the house-affairs would draw her thence;
Which ever as she could with haste dispatch,
She 'd come again, and with a greedy ear
Devour up my discourse. Which I observing,
Took once a plaint hour, and found good means
To draw from her a prayer of earnest heart
That I would all my pilgrimage dilate,
Whereof by parcels she had something heard,
But not intentionally: I did consent;
And often did beguile her of her tears,
When I did speak of some distressful stroke
That my youth suffer'd. My story being done,
She gave me for my pains a world of sighs:
She swore, in faith, 'twas strange, 'twas passing strange;
'Twas pitiful; 'twas wondrous pitiful:
She wish'd she had not heard it, yet she wish'd
That heaven had made her such a man; she thank'd me,
And bade me, if I had a friend that lov'd her,
I should but teach him how to tell my story,
And that would woo her. Upon this hint I spoke:
She lov'd me for the dangers I had pass'd,
And I lov'd her that she did pity them.
This only is the witchcraft I have us'd:
Here comes the lady; let her witness it.

Enter DESDEMONA, IAGO, and Attendants.

Duke. I think this tale would win my daughter too.

Good Brabantio,

Take up this mangled matter at the best;
Men do their broken weapons rather use
Than their bare hands.

_Bra._ I pray you, hear her speak:
If she confess that she was half the wooer, 176
 Destruction on my head, if my bad blame
 Light on the man! Come hither, gentle mistress:
Do you perceive in all this noble company
Where most you owe obedience?

_Des._ My noble father, I do perceive here a divided duty: 181
To you I am bound for life and education;
My life and education both do learn me
How to respect you; you are the lord of duty,
I am hitherto your daughter: but here's my husband;
And so much duty as my mother show'd
To you, preferring you before her father,
So much I challenge that I may profess 188
Due to the Moor my lord.

_Bra._ God be with you! I have done.

_Please it your Grace, on to the state affairs:
I had rather to adopt a child than get it.

Come hither, Moor: 192
I here do give thee that with all my heart
Which, but thou hast already, with all my heart
I would keep from thee. For your sake, jewel,
I am glad at soul I have no other child; 196
For thy escape would teach me tyranny,
To hang clogs on them. I have done, my lord.

_Duke._ Let me speak like yourself and lay a sentence,
Which as a grize or step, may help these lovers
Into your favour. 201

When remedies are past, the griefs are ended
By seeing the worst, which late on hopes depended.
To mourn a mischief that is past and gone
Is the next way to draw new mischief on.
What cannot be preserved when Fortune takes,
Patience her injury a mockery makes.
The rob'd that smiles steals something from the thief; 208
He robs himself that spends a bootless grief.

_Bra._ So let the Turk of Cyprus us beguile;
We lose it not so long as we can smile.
He hears the sentence well that nothing bears
But the free comfort which from thence he hears;
But he bears both the sentence and the sorrow
That, to pay grief, must of poor patience borrow.

These sentences, to sugar, or to gall,
Being strong on both sides, are equivocal:
But words are words; I never yet did hear
That the bruised heart was pierced through the ear.

I humbly beseech you, proceed to the affairs of state.

_Duke._ The Turk with a most mighty preparation
makes for Cyprus. Othello, the fortitude of the place is best known to you; and though
we have there a substitute of most allowed sufficiency, yet opinion, a sovereign mistress of
effects, throws a more safer voice on you: you
must therefore be content to slumber the gloss
of your new fortunes with this more stubborn and
boisterous expedition.

_Oth._ The tyrant custom, most grave senators,
Hath made the finity and steel couch of war
My thrice-driven bed of down: I do agnize
A natural and prompt alacrity
I find in hardness, and do undertake
These present wars against the Ottomites.
Most humbly therefore bending to your state,
I crave fit disposition for my wife,
Due reference of place and exhibition,
With such accommodation and beseot
As levels with her breeding.

_Duke._ If you please, 240
Be't at her father's.

_Bra._ I'll not have it so.

_Oth._ Nor I.

_Des._ Nor I; I would not there reside,
To put my father in impatient thoughts
By being in his eye. Most gracious duke,
To my unfolding lend your gracious ear;
And let me find a charter in your voice
To assist my simplicity.

_Duke._ What would you, Desdemona?

_Des._ That I did love the Moor to live with him,
My downright violence and storm of fortunes
May trumpet to the world; my heart's subdu'd
Even to the very quality of my lord; 253
I saw Othello's visage in his mind,
And to his honours and his valiant parts
Did I my soul and fortunes consecrate.
So that, dear lords, if I be left behind,
A moth of peace, and he go to the war,
The rites for which I love him are bereft me,
And a heavy interim shall support
By his dear absence. Let me go with him.

_Oth._ Let her have your voices.

_Vouch with me, heaven, I therefore beg it not
To please the palate of my appetite, 264
Nor to comply with heat,—the young affects
In me defunct,—and proper satisfaction,
But to be free and bounteous to her mind;
And heaven defend your good souls that you think
I will your serious and great business scan
For she is with me. No, when light-wing'd toys
Of feather'd Cupid seek with wanton dulness
Act I, Sc. III.

ORELLO

My speculative and offic’d instruments, 272
That my disports corrupt and taint my business,
Let housewives make a skil’st of my helm,
And all indignt and base adversities
Make head against my estimation! 276

Duke. Be it as you shall privately determine,
Either for her stay or going. The affair cries haste,
And speed must answer it.
First Sen. You must away to-night.
Oth. With all my heart. 280
Duke. At nine i’ the morning here we’ll meet again.

Othello, leave some officer behind,
And he shall our commission bring to you;
With such things else of quality and respect 284
As doth import you.

Oth. So please your Grace, my ancient;
A man he is of honesty and trust:
To his conveyance I assign my wife,
With what else needful your good grace shall think 288
To be sent after me.

Duke. Let it be so.

Good night to every one. [To BRABANTIO.]
And, noble signior,
If virto no delighted beauty lack,
Your son-in-law is far more fair than black. 292
First Sen. Adieu, brave Moor! use Desdemona well.

Bra. Look to her, Moor, if thou hast eyes to see:
She has devise’d her father, and may thee:

[Exeunt DUKE, Senators, Officers, &c.

Oth. My life upon her faith! Honest Iago,
My Desdemona must I leave to thee: 297
I prithee, let thy wife attend on her;
And bring them after in the hour. 300
Come, Desdemona; I have but an hour
Of love, of worldly matters and direction,
To spend with thee: we must obey the time.

[Exeunt OTHELLO and DESDEMONA.

Rod. Iago.
Iago. What says thou, noble heart? 304
Rod. What will I do, think’st thou?
Iago. Why, go to bed, and sleep.
Rod. I will incontinently drown myself.
Iago. Well, if thou dost, I shall never love thee after. Why, thou silly gentleman! 309
Rod. It is silliness to live when to live is torment; and then have we a prescription to die when death is our physician. 312

Iago. O! villainous; I have looked upon the world for four times seven years, and since I could distinguish betwixt a benefit and an injury, I never found man that knew how to love himself. Ere I would say, I would drown myself for the love of a guinea-hen, I would change my humanity with a baboon. 319

Rod. What should I do? I confess it is my shame to be so fond; but it is not in my virtue to amend it.

Iago. Virtue a fig! ’tis in ourselves that we are thus, or thus. Our bodies are our gardens, to the which our wills are gardeners; so that if we will plant net’tes or sow lettuce, set hyssop and weed up thyme, supply it with one gender of herbs or distract it with many, either to have it sterile with idleness or manured with industry, why, the power and corrigible authority of this lies in our wills. If the balance of our lives had not one scale of reason to poise another of sensuality, the blood and baseness of our natures would conduct us to most preposterous conclusions; but we have reason to cool our raging motions, our carnal stings, our untitled lusts, whereof I take this that you call love to be a sect or scion.

Rod. It cannot be.

Iago. It is merely a lust of the blood and a permission of the will. Come, be a man. Drown thyself! drown cats and blind puppies. I have professed me thy friend, and I confess me knit to thy deserving with cables of perdurable toughness; I could never better stead thee than now. Put money in thy purse; follow these wars; defeat thy favour with a usurped beard; I say, put money in thy purse. It cannot be that Desdemona should long continue her love to the Moor,—put money in thy purse,—nor he his to her. It was a violent commencement in her, and thou shalt see an answerable sequestration; put but money in thy purse. These Moors are changeable in their wills;—all thy purse with money:—the food that to him now is as tuscious as locusts, shall be to him shortly as bitter as coloquintida. She must change for youth: when she is seated with his body, she will find the error of her choice. She must have change, she must: therefore put money in thy purse. If thou wilt needs damn thyself, do it a more delicate way than drowning. Make all the money thou canst. If sanctimony and a frail vow betwixt an erring barbarian and a supersubtle Venetian be not too hard for my wits and all the tribe of hell, thou shalt enjoy her; therefore make money. A pot of drowning thyself! it is clean out of the way: seek thou rather to be hanged in compassing thy joy than to be drowned and go without her.

Rod. Wilt thou be fast to my hopes, if I depend on the issue?

Iago. Thou art sure of me: go, make money. I have told thee often, and I re-tell thee again and again, I hate the Moor: my cause is hearted: thine hath no less reason. Let us be conjunct...
tive in our revenge against him; if thou canst
cuckold him, thou dost thyself a pleasure, me a
sport. There are many events in the womb of
time which will be delivered. Traverse; go:
provide thy money. We will have more of this
to-morrow. Adieu. 380

Rod. Where shall we meet i’ the morning?
Iago. At my lodging.
Rod. I’ll be with thee botimes.
Iago. Go to; farewell. Do you hear, Roderi-

Rod. What say you?
Iago. No more of drowning, do you hear?
Rod. I am changed. I’ll sell all my land.
Iago Go to; farewell! put money enough in
your purse. [Exit RODERIGO.

Thus do I ever make my fool my purse; 389
For I mine own gain’d at knowledge should pro-
fane,
If I would time expend with such a snipe
But for my sport and profit. I hate the Moor,
And it is thought abroad that ’twixt my sheets
He has done my office: I know not if ’t be true,
But I, for mere suspicion in that kind,
Will do as if for surety. He holds me well; 396
The better shall my purpose work on him.
Cassio’s a proper man; let me see now:
To get his place; and to plume up my will
In double knavery; how, how? Let’s see: 400
After some time to abuse Othello’s ear
That he is too familiar with his wife:
He hath a person and a smooth dispose
To be suspected; framed to make women false.
The Moor is of a free and open nature,
That thinks men honest that but seem to be so,
And will as tenderly be led by the nose
As asses are. 408
I have ’t; it is engender’d: hell and night
Must bring this monstrous birth to the world’s
light. [Exit.

ACT II.

SCENE I.—A Sea-port Town in Cyprus.
An open place near the Quay.

Enter MONTANO and two Gentlemen.

Mon. What from the cape can you discern at
sea?
First Gent. Nothing at all: it is a high
wrought flood;
I cannot ’twixt the heaven and the main
descrie a sail.

Mon. Methinks the wind hath spoke aloud at
land;
A fuller blast ne’er shook our battlements;
If it hath ruffian’d so upon the sea,
What ribs of oak, when mountains melt on them,

Can hold the mortise? what shall we bear of
this?

Sec. Gent. A segregation of the Turkish fleet;
For do but stand upon the foaming shore,
The chidden billow seems to pelt the clouds; 12
The wind-shak’d surge, with high and mon-
strous mane,
Seems to cast water on the burning bear
And quench the guards of the ever-fixed pole:
I never did like molestation view 16
On the enchafed flood.

Mon. If that the Turkish fleet
Be not enshelter’d and embay’d, they are
drown’d;
It is impossible they bear it out.

Enter a third Gentleman.

Third Gent. News, lads! our wars are done.
The desperate tempest hath so bang’d the Turks
That their desigment halts; a noble ship of
Venice
Hath seen a grievous wrack and sufferance
On most part of their fleet.

Mon. How! is this true?
Third Gent. The ship is here put in,
A Veronese; Michael Cassio,
Lieutenant to the war-like Moor Othello,
Is come on shore: the Moor himself’s at sea, 24
And is in full commission here for Cyprus.

Mon. I am glad on ’t; ’tis a worthy governor.

Third Gent. But this same Cassio, though he
speak of comfort
Touching the Turkish loss, yet he looks sadly 32
And prays the Moor be safe; for they were
parted
With foul and violent tempest.

Mon. Pray heaven he be;
For I have serv’d him, and the man commands
Like a full soldier. Let’s to the sea-side, ho! 36
As we’ll to see the vessel that’s come in
As to throw out our eyes for brave Othello,
Even till we make the main and the aerial blue
An indistinct regard.

Third Gent. Come, let’s do so; 40
For every minute is expectancy
Of more arrivance.

Enter CASIO.

Cas. Thanks, you the valiant of this war-like
isle,
That so approve the Moor. O! let the heavens
Give him defence against the elements, 45
For I have lost him on a dangerous sea.

Mon. Is he well shipp’d?

Cas. His bark is stoutly timber’d, and his
pilot

Of very expert and approv’d allowance;
Therefore my hopes, not surfeited to death,  
Stand in bold cure.  

[Within, 'A sail—a sail—a sail!']  

Enter a Messenger.  

Cas. What noise?  
Mess. The town is empty; on the brow of the sea  
Stand ranks of people, and they cry, 'A sail!'  
Cas. My hopes do shape him for the governor.  

[Gun heard.]

Sec. Gent. They do discharge their shot of courtesy;  

Our friends at least.  

Cas. I pray you, sir, go forth,  
And give us truth who 'tis that is arriv'd.  

Sec. Gent. I shall.  

[Exit.]

Mon. But, good lieutenant, is your general wiv'd?  

Cas. Most fortunately: he hath achiev'd a maid  
That paragons description and wild fame;  
One that excels the quirks of blazoning pens,  
And in the essential vesture of creation  
Does tire the ingener.  

Re-enter second Gentleman.  

How now! who has put in?  
Sec. Gent. 'Tis one Iago, ancient to the general.  
Cas. He has had most favourable and happy speed:  
Tempests themselves, high seas, and howling winds,  
The gutter'd rocks, and congregated sands,  
Traitors ensteep'd to clag the guiltless keel,  
As having sense of beauty, do omit  
Their mortal nature, letting go safely by  
The divine Desdemona.  

Mon. What is she?  
Cas. She that I spake of, our great captain's,  
Left in the conduct of the bold Iago,  
Whose footing here anticipates our thoughts  
A se'nnight's speed. Great Jove, Othello guard,  
And swell his sail with thine own powerful breath,  
That he may bless this bay with his tall ship,  
Make love's quick pants in Desdemona's arms,  
Give renew'd fire to our exulted spirits,  
And bring all Cyprus comfort!  

Enter DESDEMONA, EMILIA, IAGO, RODERIGO,  
and Attendants.  

O! behold,  
The riches of the ship is come on shore.  
Ye men of Cyprus, let her have your knees.  

Hail to thee, lady! and the grace of heaven,  
Before, behind thee, and on every hand,  
Enwheel thee round!  

Des. I thank you, valiant Cassio.  
What tidings can you tell me of my lord?  
Cas. He is not yet arriv'd; nor know I aught  
But that he's well, and will be shortly here.  

Des. Oh! but I fear—How lost you company?  
Cas. The great contention of the sea and skies  
Parted our fellowship. But hark! a sail.  

[Cry within, 'A sail—a sail!']  

[Gun heard.]

Sec. Gent. They give their greeting to the citadel:  
This likewise is a friend.  

Cas. See for the news!  

[Exit Gentleman.]

Good ancient, you are welcome:—[To EMILIA.]  
Welcome, mistress.  
Let it not gail your patience, good Iago,  
That I extend my manners; 'tis my breeding  
That gives me this bold show of courtesy.  

[Iago. Sir, would she give you so much of her lips  
As of her tongue she oft bestows on me,  
You'd have enough.]

Des. Alas! she has no speech.  

Iago. In faith, too much;  
I find it still when I have list to sleep:  
Marry, before your ladyship, I grant,  
She puts her tongue a little in her heart,  
And obides with thinking.  

Iago. You have little cause to say so.  

Iago. Come on, come on; you are pictures  
Out of doors,  
Bells in your parlours, wildcats in your kitchens,  
Saints in your inquisitions, devils being offended,  
Players in your housewifery, and housewifes in your beds.  

Des. O! fix upon thee, slanderer.  

Iago. Nay, it is true, or else I am a Turk:  
You rise to play and go to bed to work.  

Iago. You shall not write my praise.  

Iago. No, let me not.  

Des. What wouldst thou write of me, if  
Thou shouldst praise me?  

Iago. O gentle lady, do not put me to't,  
For I am nothing if not critical.  

Des. Come on; essay. There's one gone to the harbour?  

Iago. Ay, madam.  

Des. I am not merry, but I do beguile  
The thing I am by seeming otherwise.  
Come, how wouldst thou praise me?  

Iago. I am about it; but indeed my invention
Comes from my pate as birdlime does from frize;
It plucks out brains and all: but my muse
labours,
And thus she is deliver’d.

If she be fair and wise, fairness and wit,
The one’s for use, the other useth it.

Des. Well prais’d! How if she be black and witty?

Iago. If she be black, and thereto have a wit,
She’ll find a white that shall her blackness fit.

Des. Worse and worse.

Emil. How if fair and foolish?

Iago. She never yet was foolish that was fair,
For even her folly help’d her to an heir.

Des. These are old fond paradoxes to make fools laugh i’ the alehouse. What miserable praise hast thou for her that’s foul and foolish?

Iago. There’s none so foul and foolish thereunto.

But does foul pranks which fair and wise ones do.

Des. O heavy ignorance! thou praisest the worst best. But what praise couldst thou bestow on a deserving woman indeed, one that, in the authority of her merit, did justly put on the vouch of very malice itself?

Iago. She that was ever fair and never proud,
Had tongue at will and yet was never loud,
Never lack’d gold and yet never gay,
Fled from her wish and yet said ‘Now I may’,
She that was anger’d, her revenge being nigh,
Bade her wrong stay and her displeasure fly,
She that in wisdom never was so frail
To change the cod’s head for the salmon’s tail,
That she could think and ne’er disclose her mind,
See suitors following and not look behind,
She was a wight, if ever such wight were,—

Des. To do what?

Iago. To suckle fools and chronicle small beer.

Des. O most lame and impotent conclusion! Do not learn of him, Emilia, though he be thy husband. How say you, Cassio? is he not a most profane and liberal counsellor?

Cas. He speaks home, madam; you may relish him more in the soldier than in the scholar.

Iago. [Aside.] He takes her by the palm; ay, well said, whisper; with as little a web as this will I ensnare as great a fly as Cassio. Ay, smile upon her, do; I will gyve thee in thine own courtship. You say true, ’tis so, indeed. If such tricks as these strip you out of your lieutenantry, it had been better you had not kissed your three fingers so oft, which now again you are most apt to play the sir in.

Very good; well kissed! an excellent courtesy! ’tis so, indeed. Yet again your fingers to your lips? would they were oyster-pipes for your sake! [A trumpet heard.] The Moor! I know his trumpet.

Cas. ’Tis truly so.

Des. Let’s meet him and receive him.

Cas. Lo! where he comes.

Enter Othello and Attendants.

Oth. O my fair warrior!

Des. My dear Othello!

Oth. It gives me wonder great as my content
To see you here before me. O my soul’s joy!
If ever after tempest come such calms,
May the winds blow till they have waken’d death!
And let the labouring bark climb hills of seas
Olympus-high, and duck again as low
As hell’s from heaven! If it were now to die,
’Twere now to be most happy, for I fear
My soul hath her content so absolute
That not another comfort like this
Succeeds in unknown fate.

Des. The heavens forbid
But that our loves and comforts should increase
Even as our days do grow!

Oth. Amen to that, sweet powers! I cannot speak enough of this content;
It stops me here; it is too much of joy:

And this, and this, the greatest discords be,

[Smiling her.

That e’er our hearts shall make!]

Iago. [Aside.] O! you are well tun’d now,
But I’ll set down the pegs that make this music,
As honest as I am.

Oth. Come, let us to the castle. News, friends; our wars are done, the Turks are drown’d.
How does my old acquaintance of this isle?
Honey, you shall be well desir’d in Cyprus;
I have found great love amongst them. 0 my sweet,

I prattle out of fashion, and I dote
In mine own comforts. I prithee, good Iago,
Go to the bay and disembark my coffers.
Bring thou the master to the citadel;

He is a good one, and his worthiness
Does challenge much respect. Come, Desdemona,

Once more well met at Cyprus.

[Exeunt all except Iago and Roderigo.

Iago. Do thou meet me presently at the harbour. Come hither. If thou be’st valiant, as they say base men being in love have them a nobility in their natures more than is native to them, list me. The lieutenant to-night watches
on the court of guard: first, I must tell thee this, Desdemona is directly in love with him.

Roderigo. With him! why, 'tis not possible. 223

Iago. Lay thy finger thus, and let thy soul be instructed. Mark me with what violence she first loved the Moor but for bragging and telling her fantastical lies; and will she love him still for praying? let not thy discreet heart think it. Her eye must be fed; and what delight shall she have to look on the devil? When the blood is made dull with the act of sport, there should be, again to inflame it, and to give satiety a fresh appetite, loveliness in favour, sympathy in years, manners, and beauties; all which the Moor is defective in. Now, for want of these required conveniences, her delicate tenet will find itself abused, begin to heave the gorge, disrelish and abhor the Moor; very nature will instruct her in it, and compel her to some second choice. Now, sir, this granted, as it is a most pregnant and unforfeited position, which stands so eminently in the degree of this fortune as Cassio does? a knave very volatile, no further conscionable than in putting on the mere form of civil and humane seeming, for the better compassing of his salt and most hidden loose affection? why, none; why, none: a slipper and subtle knave, a finder-out of occasions, that has an eye can stamp and counterfeit advantages, though true advantage never present itself; a devilish knave! Besides, the knave is handsome, young, and hath all those requisites in him that folly and green minds look after; a pestilent complete knave! and the woman hath found him already.

Rodrigo. I cannot believe that in her; she is full of most blessed condition.

Iago. Blessed fig's end! the wine she drinks is made of grapes; if she had been blessed she would never have loved the Moor; blessed pudding! Didst thou not see her paddle with the palm of his hand? didst not mark that?

Rodrigo. Yes, that I did; but that was but courtesy.

Iago. Lechery, by this hand! an index and obscure prelude to the history of lust and foul thoughts. They met so near with their lips, that their breaths embraced together. Villaneous thoughts, Roderigol when these mutualities so marshial the way, hard at hand comes the master and main exercise, the incorporate conclusion. Pish! But, sir, be you ruled by me: I have brought you from Venice. Watch you to-night; for the command, I'll lay 't up on you: Cassio knows you not. I'll not be far from you: do you find some occasion to anger Cassio, either by speaking too loud, or tainting his discipline; or from what other course you please, which the time shall more favourably minister.

Rodrigo. Well.

Iago. Sir, he is rash and very sudden in choler, and haply may strike at you: provoke him, that he may; for even out of that will I cause these of Cyprus to mutiny, whose qualification shall come into no true taste again but by the displauching of Cassio. So shall you have a shorter journey to your desires by the means I shall then have to prefer them; and the impediment most profitably removed, without the which there were no expectation of our prosperity.

Rodrigo. I will do this, if I can bring it to any opportunity.

Iago. I warrant thee. Meet me by and by at the citadel: I must fetch his necessaries ashore. Farewell.

Rodrigo. Adieu. [Exit.

Iago. That Cassio loves her, I do well believe it;
That she loves him, 'tis apt, and of great credit:
The Moor, howbeit that I endure him not, Is of a constant, loving, noble nature; And I dare think he'll prove to Desdemona A most dear husband. Now, I do love her too; Not out of absolute lust,—though peradventure I stand accountable for as great a sin,— But partly led to diet my revenge,
For that I do suspect the lusty Moor Hath leap'd into my seat; the thought whereof Doth like a poisonous mineral gnaw my inwards;
And nothing can or shall content my soul Till I am even'd with him, wife for wife; Or failing so, yet that I put the Moor At least into a jealousy so strong That judgment cannot cure. Which thing to do, If this poor trash of Venice, whom I trash For his quick hunting, stand the putting-on, I'll have our Michael Cassio on the hip; Abuse him to the Moor in the rank garb, For I fear Cassio with my night-cap too, Make the Moor thank me, love me, and re- ward me
For making him egregiously an ass And practising upon his peace and quiet Even to madness. 'Tis here, but yet confus'd: Knavery's plain face is never seen till us'd. 324

[Exit.

SCENE II.—A Street.

Enter a Herald with a proclamation; People following.

Her. It is Othello's pleasure, our noble and valiant general, that, upon certain tides now
arrived, importing the mere perdition of the Turkish fleet, every man put himself into triumph; some to dance, some to make bonfires, each man to what sport and revels his addiction leads him; for, besides these beneficial news, it is the celebration of his nuptial. So much was his pleasure should be proclaimed. All offices are open, and there is full liberty of feasting from this present hour of five till the bell have told eleven. Heaven bless the isle of Cyprus and our noble general Othello! [Exeunt.

SCENE III.—A Hall in the Castle.

Enter Othello, Desdemona, Cassio, and Attendants.

Oth. Good Michael, look you to the guard tonight:
Let’s teach ourselves that honourable stop,
Not to outstrip discretion.
Cas. Iago hath direction what to do;
But, notwithstanding, with my personal eye
Will I look to’t.
Oth. Iago is most honest.
Michael, good night; to-morrow with your earliest
Let me have speech with you. [To Desdemona.
Come, my dear love,
The purchase made, the fruits are to enure;
That profit’s yet to come ‘twixt me and you.
Good night.

[Exeunt Othello, Desdemona, and Attendants.

Enter Iago.

Cas. Welcome, Iago; we must to the watch.
Iago. Not this hour, lieutenant; ’tis not yet ten o’ the clock. Our general cast us thus early for the love of his Desdemona, who let us not therefore blame; he hath not yet made wanton the night with her, and she is sport for Jove. 17
Cas. She’s a most exquisite lady.
Iago. And, I’ll warrant her, full of game.
Cas. Indeed, she is a most fresh and delicate creature.
Iago. What an eye she has! methinks it sounds a parley of provocation.
Cas. An inviting eye; and yet methinks right modest.
Iago. And when she speaks, is it not an alarum to love?
Cas. She is indeed perfection.
Iago. Well, happiness to their sheets! Come, lieutenant, I have a stoup of wine, and here without are a brace of Cyprus gallants that would fain have a measure to the health of black Othello.

Cas. Not to-night, good Iago: I have very poor and unhappy brains for drinking: I could well wish courtesy would invent some other custom of entertainment.
Iago. O! they are our friends; but one cup:
I’ll drink for you.
Cas. I have drunk but one cup to-night, and that was craftily qualified too, and, behold, what innovation it makes here: I am unfortuniate in the infirmity, and dare not task my weakness with any more.
Iago. What, man! ’tis a night of revels; the gallants desire it.
Cas. Where are they?
Iago. Here at the door; I pray you, call them in.
Cas. I’ll do’t; but it dislikes me. [Exit.
Iago. If I can fasten but one cup upon him,
With that which he hath drunk to-night already,
He’ll be as full of quarrel and offence
As my young mistress’ dog. Now, my sick fool Roderigo,
Whom love has turn’d almost the wrong side out,
To Desdemona hath to-night carous’d
Potations pottle deep; and he’s to watch.
Three lads of Cyprus, noble swelling spirits,
That hold their honours in a wary distance,
The very elements of this war-like isle,
Have I to-night fluster’d with flowing cups,
And they watch too. Now, ’mongst this flock of drunkards,
Am I to put our Cassio in some action
That may offend the isle. But here they come.
If consequence do but approve my dream,
My boat sails freely, both with wind and stream.

Re-enter Cassio, with him Montano, and Gentlemen. Servant following with wine.

Cas. ’Fore God, they have given me a rouse already.
Mont. Good faith, a little one; not past a pint, as I am a soldier.
Iago. Some wine, ho!
And let me the canakin clink, clink;
And let me the canakin clink:
A soldier’s a man;
A life’s but a span;
Why then let a soldier drink.

Some wine, boys!
Cas. ’Fore God, an excellent song.
Iago. I learned it in England, where indeed they are most potent in potting; your Dane,
your German, and your swag-bellied Hollander,—drink, ho!—are nothing to your English.
Cas. Is your Englishman so expert in his drinking?
Iago. Why, he drinks you with facility your Dane dead drunk; he sweats not to overthrow your Almain; he gives your Hollander a vomit ere the next bottle can be filled. 88

Cas. To the health of our general!
Mon. I am for it, lieutenant; and I’ll do you justice.
Iago. O sweet England! 92

King Stephen was a worthy peer,
His breeches cost him but a crown;
He held them sixpence all too dear,
With that he call’d the tailor low. 96
He was a weight of high renown,
And thou art but of low degree:
’Tis pride that pulls the country down,
Then take thine aslant cloak about thee. 100

Some wine, ho!
Cas. Why, this is a more exquisite song than the other.
Iago. Will you hear ’t again? 104
Cas. No; for I hold him to be unworthy of his place that does those things. Well, God’s above all; and there be souls must be saved, and there be souls must not be saved.
Iago. It’s true, good lieutenant.
Iago. For mine own part,—no offence to the general, nor any man of quality,—I hope to be saved. 112
Iago. And so do I too, lieutenant.

Cas. Ay; but, by your leave, not before me; the lieutenant is to be saved before the ancient.
Let’s have no more of this; let’s to our affairs. God forgive us our sins! Gentlemen, let’s look to our business. Do not think, gentlemen, I am drunk: this is my ancient; this is my right hand, and this is my left hand. I am not drunk now; I can stand well enough, and speak well enough. 122

All. Excellent well.
Cas. Why, very well, then; you must not think then that I am drunk. [Exit.]
Mon. To the platform, masters; come, let’s set the watch.

Iago. You see this fellow that is gone before;
He is a soldier fit to stand by Caesar
And give direction; and do but see his face;
’Tis to his virtue a just equinox,
The one as long as the other; ’tis pity of him.
I fear the trust Othello puts him in,
On some odd time of his infirmity,
Will shake this island. 132

Mon. But is he often thus?
Iago. ’Tis evermore the prologue to his sleep;
He’ll watch the horologe a double set, 136
If drink rock not his cradle.
Mon. It were well
The general were put in mind of it.

Perhaps he sees it not; or his good nature
Prizes the virtue that appears in Cassio,
And looks not on his evils. Is not this true?

Enter Roderigo.
Iago. [Aside to him.] How now, Roderigo?
I pray you, after the lieutenant; go.

[Exit Roderigo.
Mon. And ’tis great pity that the noble Moor
Should hazard such a place as his own second
With one of an ingraft infirmity;
It were an honest action to say
So to the Moor.
Iago. Not I, for this fair island: 148
I do love Cassio well, and would do much
To cure him of this evil. But hark! what noise?

[Cry within, ’Help! Help!’

Re-enter Cassio, driving in Roderigo.
Cas. You rogue! you rascel! 152
Mon. What’s the matter, lieutenant?
Cas. A knave teach me my duty!
I’ll beat the knave into a twiggien bottle. 156
Rod. Beat me!
Cas. Dost thou prate, rogue? 160
[Striking Roderigo.
Mon. [Staying him.] Nay, good lieutenant; I pray you, sir, hold your hand.
Cas. Let me go, sir. 162
Or I’ll knock you o’er the mazzard.
Mon. Come, come; you’re drunk. 164
Cas. Drunk! 168
[They fight.
Iago. [Aside to Roderigo.] Away, I say! go out, and cry a mutiny. 168
[Exit Roderigo.

Nay, good lieutenant! God’s will, gentlemen! Help, ho! Lieutenant sir! Montano! sir! Help, masters! Here’s a goodly watch indeed! 172

[Bell rings.

Who’s that that rings the bell? Diablo, ho! The town will rise: God’s will! lieutenant, hold! You will be sham’d for ever.

Re-enter Othello and Attendants.

Oth. What is the matter here? 165
Mon. ’Zounds! I bleed still; I am hurt to the death.

Of i. Hold, for your lives!
Iago. Hold, ho, lieutenant! Sir! Montano! gentlemen! 168
Have you forgot all sense of place and duty? Hold! the general speaks to you; hold for shame!

Oth. Why, how now, ho! from whence ariseth this?

Are we turn’d Turks, and to ourselves do that
Which heaven hath forbid the Ottomites? 173
For Christian shame put by this barbarous brawl;
He that stirs next to carve for his own rage
Holds his soul light; he dies upon his motion.
Silence that dreadful bell! it frights the Isle 177
From her property. What is the matter, masters?

Honest Iago, that look'st dead with grieving,
Speak, who began this? on thy love, I charge thee.

Iago. I do not know; friends all but now,
even now.

In quarter and in terms like bride and groom
Devising them for bed; and then, but now,—
As if some planet had unwitted men,—
Swords out, and tilting one at other's breast,
In opposition bloody. I cannot speak
Any beginning to this peevish odds,
And would in action glorious I had lost
Those legs that brought me to a part of it!

Oth. How comes it, Michael, you are thus forgot?

Cas. I pray you, pardon me; I cannot speak.

Oth. Worthy Montano, you were wont be civil;
The gravity and stillness of your youth
The world hath noted, and your name is great
In mouths of wisest censure: what's the matter,
That you unlace your reputation thus
And spend your rich opinion for the name
Of a night-brawler? give me answer to it.

Mon. Worthy Othello, I am hurt to danger;
Your officer, Iago, can inform you,
While I spare speech, which something now
offends me,
Of all that I do know; nor know I aught
By me that's said or done amiss this night,
Unless self-charity be sometimes a vice,
And to defend ourselves it be a sin
When violence assails us.

Oth. Now, by heaven,
My blood begins my safer guides to rule,
And passion, having my best judgment collied,
Assays to lead the way. If I once stir,
Or do but lift this arm, the best of you
Shall sink in my rebuke. Give me to know
How this foul rout began, who set it on;
And he that is approv'd in this offence,
Though he had twinn'd with me—both at a birth—
Shall lose me. What! in a town of war,
Yet wild, the people's hearts brimful of fear,
To manage private and domestic quarrel,
In night, and on the court and guard of safety!
'Tis monstrous. Iago, who began 't?

Mon. If partially affin'd, or leagu'd in office,
Thou dost deliver more or less than truth,

Thou art no soldier.

Iago. Touch me not so near;
I had rather have this tongue out from my mouth
Than it should do offence to Michael Cassio; 224
Yet, I persuade myself, to speak the truth
Shall nothing wrong him. Thus it is, general
Montano and myself being in speech,
There comes a fellow crying out for he'p, 228
And Cassio following with determin'd sword
To execute upon him. Sir, this gentleman
Steps in to Cassio, and entreats his pause;
Myself the crying fellow did pursue,

Lest by his clamour, as it so fell out,
The town might fall in fright; he, swift of foot,
Outran my purpose, and I return'd the rather
For that I heard the clink and fall of swords,
And Cassio high in oath, which till to-night 237
I ne'er might say before. When I came back,—
For this was brief,—I found them close together,
At blow and thrust, even as again they were 240
When you yourself did part them.

More of this matter can I not report:
But men are men; the best sometimes forget:
Though Cassio did some little wrong to him, 244
As men in rage strike those that wish them best,

Yet, surely Cassio, I believe, receiv'd
From him that fled some strange indignity,
Which patience could not pass.

Oth. I know, Iago, 248

Thy honesty and love doth move this matter,
Making it light to Cassio. Cassio, I love thee;
But never more be officer of mine.

Enter Desdemona, attended.

Look! if my gentle love be not rais'd up; 252

[To CASSIO.] I'll make thee an example.

Des. What's the matter?

Oth. All's well now, sweeting; come away to bed.

Sir, for your hurts, myself will be your surgeon.
Lead him off.

[Montano is led off.

Iago, look with care about the town,

And silence those whom this vile brawl distracted.

Come, Desdemona; 'tis the soldiers' life,
To have their balmy slumbers wak'd with strife.

[Exit all but Iago and Cassio.

Iago. What! are you hurt, lieutenant? 261

Cas. Ay; past all surgery.

Iago. Marry, heaven forbid!

Cas. Reputation, reputation, reputation! O!
I have lost my reputation. I have lost the immortal part of myself, and what remains is beastial. My reputation, Iago, my reputation!
Act II, Sc. III.

OTHELLO

Iago. As I am an honest man, I thought you had received some bodily wound; there is more offence in that than in reputation. Reputation is an idle and most false imposition; oft got without merit, and lost without deserving: you have lost no reputation at all, unless you repute yourself such a loser. What! man; there are ways to recover the general again; you are but now cast in my mood, a punishment more in policy than in malice; even so as one would beat his offenceless dog to affright an imperious lion. Sue to him again, and he is yours.

Cas. I will rather sue to be despised than to deceive so good a commander with so slight, so drunken, and so indiscreet an officer. Drunk! and speak parrot! and squabble, swagger, swear, and discourse fustian with one’s own shadow! O thou invisible spirit of wine! if thou hast no name to be known by, let us call thee devil!

Iago. What was he that you followed with your sword? What had he done to you?

Cas. I know not.

Iago. Is’t possible?

Cas. I remember a mass of things, but nothing distinctly; a quarrel, but nothing wherefore. O God! that men should put an enemy in their mouths to steal away their brains; that we should, with joy, pleasance, revel, and applause, transform ourselves into beasts.

Iago. Why, but you are now well enough; how came you thus recovered?

Cas. It hath pleased the devil drunkenness to give place to the devil wrath; one unperfectness shows me another, to make me frankly despise myself.

Iago. Come, you are too severe a moraler. As the time, the place, and the condition of this country stands, I could heartily wish this had not befallen, but since it is as it is, mend it for your own good.

Cas. I will ask him for my place again; he shall tell me I am a drunkard! Had I as many mouths as Hydra, such an answer would stop them all. To be now a sensible man, by and by a fool, and presently a beast! 0 strange! Every inordinate cup is unblest and the ingredient is a devil.

Iago. Come, come; good wine is a good familiar creature if it be well used; exclaim no more against it. And, good lieutenant, I think you think I love you.

Cas. I have well approved it, sir. I drank!

Iago. You or any man living may be drunk at some time; man. I’ll tell you what you shall do. Our general’s wife is now the general: I may say so in this respect, for that he hath devoted and given up himself to the contemplation, mark, and denotement of her parts and graces: confess yourself freely to her; importune her; she’ll help to put you in your place again. She is of so free, so kind, so apt, so blessed a disposition, that she holds it a vice in her goodness not to do more than she is requested. This broken joint between you and her husband entreat her to splinter; and my fortunes against any lay worth naming, this crack of your love shall grow stronger than it was before.

Cas. You advise me well.

Iago. I protest, in the sincerity of love and honest kindness.

Cas. I think it freely; and betimes in the morning I will beseech the virtuous Desdemona to undertake for me. I am desperate of my fortunes if they check me here.

Iago. You are in the right. Good night, lieutenant; I must to the watch.

Cas. Good night, honest Iago! [Exit.

Iago. And what’s he then that says I play the villain?

When this advice is free I give and honest, Probal to thinking and indeed the course To win the Moor again? For, ’tis most easy The inclining Desdemona to subdue In any honest suit; she’s fram’d as fruitful As the free elements. And then for her To win the Moor, were ’t to renounce his baptism,

All seals and symbols of redeemed sin, His soul so enfrister’d to her love, That she may make, unmake, do what she list, Even as her appetite shall play the god With his weak function. How am I then a villain To counsel Cassio to this parallel course, Directly to his good? Divinity of hell! When devils will the blackest aims put on, They do suggest at first with heavenly shows, As I do now; for while this honest fool Plies Desdemona to repair his fortunes, And she for him pleads strongly to the Moor, I’ll pour this pestilence into his ear That she repeals him for her body’s lust; And, by how much she strives to do him good, She shall undo her credit with the Moor. So will I turn her virtue into pitch, And out of her own goodness make the net That shall enmesh them all.

Re-enter RODERIGO.

Rod. How now, Roderigo!

Rod. I do follow here in the chase, not like a hound that hunts, but one that fills up the cry. My money is almost spent; I have been to-night exceedingly well cudgel’d; and I think the issue will be, I shall have so much experience for my
Othello

Act III, Sc. II.

Cas. Dost thou hear, mine honest friend?
Clo. No, I hear not your honest friend; I hear you.
Cas. Prithee, keep up thy quilletts. There's a poor piece of gold for thee. If the gentlewoman that attends the general's wife be stirring, tell her there's one Cassio entreats her a little favour of speech: wilt thou do this?
Clo. She is stirring, sir; if she will stir hither, I shall seem to notify unto her.
Cas. Do, good my friend. [Exit Clown.

Enter Iago.

In happy time, Iago. 32

Iago. You have not been a-bed, then?
Cas. Why, no; the day had broke
Before we parted. I have made bold, Iago,
To send in to your wife; my suit to her
Is, that she will to virtuous Desdemona
Procure me some access.

Iago. I'll send her to you presently;
And I'll devise a mean to draw the Moor
Out of the way, that your converse and business
May be more free.

Cas. I humbly thank you for 't. [Exit Iago.

I never knew

A Florentine more kind and honest.

Enter Emilia.

Emil. Good morrow, good lieutenant: I am sorry
For your displeasure; but all will soon be well.
The general and his wife are talking of it,
And she speaks for you stoutly: the Moor replies
That he you hurt is of great fame in Cyprus.

He might not but refuse you; but he protests he
loves you,
And needs no other suitor but his liking
To take the saf't occasion by the front
To bring you in again.

Cas. Yet, I beseech you,
If you think fit, or that it may be done,
Give me advantage of some brief discourse
With Desdemona alone.

Emil. Pray you, come in: I will bestow you where you shall have time
To speak your bosom freely.

Cas. I am much bound to you. [Exit.

Scene II.—A Room in the Castle.

Enter Othello, Iago, and Gentlemen.

Oth. These letters give, Iago, to the pilot,
And by him do my duties to the senate;
Act III, Sc. II.

That done, I will be walking on the works; Repair there to me.

Iago. Well, my good lord, I'll do t. 4

Oth. This fortification, gentlemen, shall we see 't?

Gent. We'll wait upon your lordship.

[Exeunt.

Scene III.—Before the Castle.

Enter DESDEMONA, CASSIO, and EMILIA.

Des. Be thou assured, good Cassio, I will do All my abilities in thy behalf.

Emil. Good madam, do: I warrant it grieves my husband, As if the case were his.

Des. Of that's an honest fellow. Do not doubt, Cassio, But I will have my lord and you again As friendly as you were.

Cas. Bounteous madam, Whatever shall become of Michael Cassio, He's never anything but your true servant.

Des. I know 't; I thank you. You do love my lord; You have known him long; and be you well assur'd He shall in strangeness stand no further off Than in a politic distance.

Cas. Ay, but, lady, That policy may either last so long, Or feed upon such nice and waterish diet, Or breed itself so out of circumstance, That, being absent and my place supplied, My general will forget my love and service. Des. Do not doubt that; before Emilia here I give thee warrant of thy place. Assure thee, If I do vow a friendship, I'll perform it To the last article; my lord shall never rest; I'll watch him tame, and talk him out of patience; His bed shall seem a school, his board a shrift; I'll intermingle every thing he does With Cassio's suit. Therefore be merry, Cassio; For thy solicitor shall rather die Than give thy cause away.

Enter OTHELLO, and IAGO at a distance.

Emil. Madam, here comes my lord.

Cas. Madam, I'll take my leave.

Des. Why, stay, and hear me speak.

Cas. Madam, not now; I am very ill at ease, Unfit for mine own purposes.

Des. Well, do your discretion. [Exit CASSIO. Iago. Ha! I like not that. Oth. What dost thou say?

Iago. Nothing, my lord; or if—I know not what. 36

Oth. Was not that Cassio parted from my wife?

Iago. Cassio, my lord? No, sure, I cannot think it That he would steal away so guilty-like, Seeing you coming.

Oth. I do believe 'twas he. 40

Des. How now, my lord! I have been talking with a suitor here, A man that languishes in your displeasure.

Oth. Who is 't you mean? 44

Des. Why, your lieutenant, Cassio. Good my lord, If I have any grace or power to move you, His present reconciliation take; For if he be not one that truly loves you, That errs in ignorance and not in cunning, I have no judgment in an honest face. I prithee call him back.

Oth. Went he hence now?

Des. Ay, sooth; so humbled, That he hath left part of his grief with me, To suffer with him. Good love, call him back. Oth. Not now, sweet Desdemona; some other time.

Des. But shall 't be shortly?

Oth. The sooner, sweet, for you. 56

Des. Shall 't be to-night at supper?

Oth. No, not to-night. 60

Des. To-morrow dinner then?

Oth. I shall not dine at home; I meet the captains at the citadel.

Des. Why then, to-morrow night; or Tuesday-morn; On Tuesday noon, or night; on Wednesday morn:

I prithee name the time, but let it not Exceed three days: in faith, he's penitent; And yet his trespass, in our common reason,— Save that they say, the wars must make examples —Out of their best,—is not almost a fault To incur a private check. When shall he come? Tell me, Othello: I wonder in my soul, What you could ask me that I should deny, Or stand so hammering on. What! Michael Cassio,

That came a wooing with you, and so many a time, When I have spoke of you dispraisingly, Hath ta'en on your part; to have so much to do To bring him in! Trust me, I could do much.— Oth. Prithee, no more; let him come when he will;

I will deny thee nothing.
Des. Why, this is not a boon; 76
’Tis as I should entreat you wear your gloves,
Or feed on nourishing dishes, or keep you warm,
Or sue to you to do a peculiar profit
To your own person; nay, when I have a suit 80
Wherein I mean to touch your love indeed,
It shall be full of poise and difficult weight,
And fearful to be granted.

Oth. I will deny thee nothing:
Whereon, I do beseech thee, grant me this, 84
To come to thee a little to myself.

Des. Shall I deny you? no: farewell, my lord.
Oth. Farewell, my Desdemona: I’ll come to thee straight.

Des. Emilia, come. Be as your fancies teach you; 88
What’er you be, I am obedient.

[Exit, with EMILIA.

Oth. Excellent wretch! Perdition catch my soul
But I do love thee! and when I love thee not,
Chaos is come again.

Iago. My noble lord,—

Oth. What dost thou say, Iago?

Iago. Did Michael Cassio, when you woo’d my lady,
Know of your love?

Oth. He did, from first to last: why dost thou ask?

Iago. But for a satisfaction of my thought;
No further harm.

Oth. Why of thy thought, Iago?

Iago. Did Michael Cassio, when you woo’d my lady,
Know of thy love?

Oth. Yes; and went between us very oft.

Iago. Indeed!

Oth. Indeed! ay, indeed; discern’st thou aught in that?

Iago. What dost thou think?

Oth. Think, my lord!

By heaven, he echoes me,
As if there were some monster in his thought
Too hideous to be shown. Thou dost mean something:

Iago. I heard thee say but now, thou lik’st not that,
When Cassio left my wife; what didst not like?
And when I told thee he was of my counsel
In my whole course of wooing, thou criedst,
‘Indeed!’

And didst contract and purse thy brow together,
As if thou then hadst shut up in thy brain
Some horrible conceit. If thou dost love me,

Show me thy thought.

Iago. My lord, you know I love you.

Oth. I think thou dost;
And, for I know thou art full of love and honesty,
And weight’s thy words before thou gav’st them breath,
Therefore these steps of thine fright me the more;
For such things in a false disloyal knave
Are tricks of custom, but in a man that’s just
They are close delusions, working from the heart.

That passion cannot rule.

Iago. For Michael Cassio.

Oth. I dare be sworn I think that he is honest.

Iago. Men should be what they seem;
Or those that be not, would they might seem none!

Oth. Certain, men should be what they seem.

Iago. Why then, I think Cassio’s an honest man.

Oth. Nay, yet there’s more in this.

I pray thee, speak to me as to thy thinkings,
As thou dost ruminate, and give thy worst of thoughts
The worst of words.

Iago. Good my lord, pardon me;
Though I am bound to every act of duty,
I am not bound to that all slaves are free to,
Utter my thoughts? Why, say they are vile
And false;
As where’s that palace whereinto foul things
Sometimes intrude not? who has a breast so pure
But some uncleanly apprehensions
Keep leets and law days, and in session sit
With meditations lawful.

Oth. Thou dost conspire against thy friend,
Iago,
If thou but think’st him wrong’d, and mak’st his ear
A stranger to thy thoughts.

Iago. I do beseech you.

Though I perchance am vicious in my guess,—
As, I confess, it is my nature’s plague
To spy into abuses, and oft my jealousy
Shapes faults that are not,—that your wisdom yet,
From one that so imperfectly conceits,
Would take no notice, nor build yourself a trouble
Out of his scattering and unsure observance.

Oth. What dost thou mean?
Iago. Good name in man and woman, dear my lord,
Is the immediate jewel of their souls: 156
Who steals my purse steals trash; 'tis something, nothing;
'Twas mine, 'tis his, and has been slave to thousands;
But he that fitches from me my good name
Robbs me of that which not enriches him, 160
And makes me poor indeed.

Oth. By heaven, I'll know thy thoughts.

Iago. You cannot, if my heart were in your hand;
Nor shall not, whilst 'tis in my custody. 164

Oth. Aye!

Iago. O! beware, my lord, of jealousy;
It is the green-ey'd monster which doth mock
The meat it feeds on; that cuckold lives in bliss
Who, certain of his fate, loves not his wronger;
But, O! what damned minutes tells he o'er 169
Who dotes, yet doubts; suspects, yet soundly loves!

Oth. O misery!

Iago. Poor and content is rich, and rich enough, 172
But riches finessles is as poor as winter
To him that ever fears he shall be poor.

Good heaven, the souls of all my tribe defend
From jealousy!

Oth. Why, why is this? 176

Iago. Think'st thou I'd make a life of jealousy,
To follow still the changes of the moon
With fresh suspicions? No; to be once in doubt
Is once to be resolved. Exchange me for a goat
When I shall turn the business of my soul 181:
To such exsufficate and blown surmises,
Matching thy inference. 'Tis not to make me jealous,
To say my wife is fair, feeds well, loves company,
Is free of speech, sings, plays, and dances well;
Where virtue is, these are more virtuous:
Nor from mine own weak merits will I draw
The smallest fear, or doubt of her revolt. 188
For she had eyes, and chose me. No, Iago;
I'll see before I doubt; when I doubt, prove,
And, on the proof, there is no more but this,
Away at once with love or jealousy! 192

Iago. I am glad of it; for now I shall have reason
To show the love and duty that I bear you
With framer spirit; therefore, as I am bound,
Receive it from me; 196

Look to your wife; observe her well with Cassio;
Wear your eye thus, not jealous nor secure:
I would not have your free and noble nature
Out of self-bounty be abus'd; look to 't; 200

I know our country disposition well;
In Venice they do let heaven see the pranks
They dare not show their husbands; their best conscience
Is not to leave 't undone, but keep 't unknown.

Oth. Dost thou say so? 205

Iago. She did deceive her father, marrying you:
And when she seem'd to shake and fear your looks,
She lov'd them most.

Oth. And so she did.

Iago. Why, go to, then; she

She that so young could give out such a seeming,
To see her father's eyes up close as oak,
He thought 'twas witchcraft; but I am much to blame;
I humbly do beseech you of your pardon
For too much loving you.

Oth. I am bound to thee for ever.

Iago. I see, this hath a little dash'd your spirits.

Oth. Not a jot, not a jot.

Iago. I' faith, I fear it has.

I hope you will consider what is spoke

Comes from my love. But, I do see you're mov'd;

I am to pray you not to strain my speech
To grosser issues nor to larger reach
Than to suspicion.

Oth. I will not.

Iago. Should you do so, my lord,
My speech should fall into such vile success
As my thoughts aim not at. Cassio's my worthy friend—

My lord, I see you're mov'd.

Oth. No, not much mov'd: 224
I do not think but Desdemona's honest.

Iago. Long live she so! and long live you to think so!

Oth. And, yet, how nature erring from itself,—

Iago. Ay, there's the point: as, to be bold with you,

Not to affect many proposed matches
Of her own clime, complexion, and degree,
Whereeto, we see, in all things nature tends;
Foh! one may smell in such, a will most rank,
Foul disproportion, thoughts unnatural. 233
But pardon me; I do not in position
Distinctly speak of her, though I may fear
Her will, recoiling to her better judgment, 236
May fail to match you with her country forms
And happily repent.

Oth. Farewell, farewell:

If more thou dost perceive, let me know more;
Set on thy wife to observe. Leave me, Iago. 240

Iago. My lord, I take my leave. 241

Oth. Why did I marry? This honest creature, doubtless,
sees and knows more, much more, than he unfolds.

Iago. [Returning.] My lord, I would I might entreat your honour 244
To scan this thing no further; leave it to time.

Although 'tis fit that Cassio has his place,
For, sure he fills it up with great ability,
Yet, if you please to hold him off awhile, 248
You shall by that perceive him and his means:
Note if your lady strain his entertainment
With any strong or vehement importunity;
Much will be seen in that. In the mean time, 252
Let me be thought too busy in my fears,
As worthy cause I have to fear I am,
And hold her free, I do beseech your honour.

Oth. Fear not my government. 256

Iago. I once more take my leave. [Exit. 257

Oth. This fellow's of exceeding honesty,
And knows all qualities, with a learned spirit,
Of human dealings; if I do prove her haggard,
Though that her jesses were my dear heartstrings,

I'd whistle her off and let her down the wind,
To prey at fortune. Haply, for I am black,
And have not those soft parts of conversation
That chamberers have, or, for I am declin'd 265
Into the vale of years—yet that's not much—
She's gone, I am abus'd; and my relief
Must be to lose the her. O curse of marriage! 268
That we can call these delicate creatures ours,
And not their appetites. I had rather be a toad,
And live upon the vapour of a dungeon,
Than keep a corner in the thing I love 272
For others' uses. Yet, 'tis the plague of great ones;
Prerogativ'd are they less than the base;
'Tis destiny unshunnable, like death:
Even then this forlorn plague is fated to us 276
When we do quicken.

Look! where she comes.
If she be false, O! then heaven mocks itself.
I'll not believe it.

Re-enter Desdemona and Emilia.

Des. How now, my dear Othello?
Your dinner and the generous islanders 280
By you invited, do attend your presence.
Oth. I am to blame.

Des. Why do you speak so faintly?
Are you not well?
Oth. I have a pain upon my forehead here. 284

Des. Faith, that's with watching; 'twill away again:
Let me but bind it hard, within this hour
It will be well.

Oth. Your napkin is too little:
[She drops her handkerchief.
Let it alone. Come, I'll go in with you. 288

Des. I am very sorry that you are not well.

Enter Othello and Desdemona.

Emil. I am glad I have found this napkin;
This was her first remembrance from the Moor;
My wayward husband hath a hundred times 292
Woo'd me to steal it, but she so loves the token,
For he conjur'd her she should ever keep it,
That she reserves it evermore about her.
To kiss and talk to. I'll have the work ta'en out,
And give 't Iago: 297

What he will do with it heaven knows, not I;
I nothing but to please his fantasy.

Enter Iago.

Iago. How now! what do you here alone? 300

Emil. Do not you chide; I have a thing for you.

Iago. A thing for me? It is a common thing—

Emil. Ha!

Iago. To have a foolish wife. 304

Emil. O! is that all? What will you give me now
For that same handkerchief?

Iago. What handkerchief?

Emil. What handkerchief!

Why, that the Moor first gave to Desdemona:
That which so often you did me steal. 309

Iago. Hast stol'n it from her?

Emil. No, faith; she let it hang by negligence,
And, to the advantage, I, being there, took 't up.
Look, here it is.

Iago. A good wench; give it me. 313

Emil. What will you do with 't, that you have been so earnest
To have me flitch it?

Iago. Why, what's that to you? [Snatches it.

Emil. If it be not for some purpose of import

Give 't me again; poor lady! she'll run mad
When she shall lack it.

Iago. Be not allacken on 't; I have use for it. 320

Go, leave me. [Exit Emilia.

I will in Cassio's lodging lose this napkin,
And let him find it; trifles light as air
Are to the jealous confirmations strong 324
As proofs of holy writ; this may do something.
The Moor already changes with my poison:
Dangerous conceits are in their natures poisons,
Which at the first are scarce found to distaste,
Act III, Sc. III.

Othello

But with a little act upon the blood,
Burn like the mines of sulphur. I did say so:
Look! where he comes!

Enter Othello.

Not poppy, nor mandragora,
Nor all the drowsy syrups of the world,
Shall ever medicine this; to that sweet sleep
Which thou ow'st yesterday.

Oth. Ha! ha! false to me?
Iago. Why, how now, general! no more of
that.
Oth. Avant! be gone! thou hast set me on
the rack;
I swear 'tis better to be much abus'd
Than but to know 't a little.

Iago. How now, my lord!
Oth. What sense had I of her stol'n hours of
lust?
I saw 't not, thought it not, it harm'd not me;
I slept the next night well, was free and merry;
I found not Cassio's kisses on her lips;
He that is robb'd, not wanting what is stol'n,
Let him not know 't and he's not robb'd at all.

Iago. I am sorry to hear this.

Oth. I had been happy, if the general camp,
Pioneers and all, had tasted her sweet body,
So I had nothing known. Of now, for ever
Farewell the tranquil mind; farewell content!
Farewell the plumed troop and the big wars
That make ambition virtue! O, farewell!
Farewell the neighing steed, and the shrill
trump,
The spirit-stirring drum, the ear-piercing fife,
The royal banner, and all quality,
Pride, pomp, and circumstance of glorious war!
And, O you mortal engines, whose rude throats
The immortal Jove's dread clamours counterfeit,
Farewell! Othello's occupation's gone!

Iago. Is it possible, my lord?
Oth. Villain, be sure thou prove my love a
whore,
Be sure of it; give me the ocular proof;
Or, by the worth of mine eternal soul,
Thou hadst been better have been born a dog
Than answer my wak'd wrath.

Iago. Is 't come to this?
Oth. Make me to see 't; or, at the least, so
prove it,
That the probation bear no hinge nor loop
To hang a doubt on; or woe upon thy life!

Iago. My noble lord,—

Oth. If thou dost slander her and torture
me,
Never pray more; abandon all remorse;
On horror's head horrors accumulate;

Do deeds to make heaven weep, all earth
amaz'd;
For nothing canst thou to damnation add
Greater than that.

Iago. O grace! O heaven forgive me!
Are you a man! have you a soul or sense?
God be wi' you; take mine office. O wretched
fool!
That liv'st to make thine honesty a vice.
O monstrous world! Take note, take note, O
world!
To be direct and honest is not safe.
I thank you for this profit, and, from hence
I'll love no friend, sith love breeds such
offence.

Oth. Nay, stay; thou shouldst be honest.
Iago. I should be wise; for honesty's a fool,
And loses that it works for.

Oth. By the world,
I think my wife be honest and think she is not;
I think that thou art just and think thou art
not.
I'll have some proof. Her name, that was as
fresh
As Dian's visage, is now begrimed and black
As mine own face. If there be cords or knives,
Poison or fire or suffocating streams,
I'll not endure it. Would I were satisfied!

Iago. I see, sir, you are eaten up with pas
sion.

I do repent that I put it to you.
You would be satisfied?

Oth. Would! nay, I will.

Iago. And may; but how? how satisfied, my
lord?

Would you, the supervisor, grossly gape on;
Behold her tup'd?

Oth. Death and damnation! O!

Iago. It were a tedious difficulty, I think,
To bring them to that prospect; damn them
then,
If ever mortal eyes do see them bolster
More than their own! What then? how then?
What shall I say? Where's satisfaction?
It is impossible you should see this,
Were they as prime as goats, as hot as monkeys,
As salt as wolves in pride, and fools as gross
As ignorance made drunk; but yet, I say,
If imitation, and strong circumstances,
Which lead directly to the door of truth,
Will give you satisfaction, you may have it.

Oth. Give me a living reason she's disloyal.

Iago. I do not like the office;
But, sith I am enter'd in this cause so far,
Prick'd to 't by foolish honesty and love,
I will go on. I lay with Cassio lately;
And, being troubled with a raging tooth,
I could not sleep.  
There are a kind of men so loose of soul  
That in their sleeps will mutter their affairs;  
One of this kind is Cassio.  
In sleep I heard him say, 'Sweet Desdemona.  
Let us be wary, let us hide our loves!'  
And then, sir, would he gripe and wring my hand,  
Cry, 'O, sweet creature!' and then kiss me hard,  
As if he pluck'd up kisses by the roots,  
That grew upon my lips; then laid his leg  
Over my thigh, and sigh'd, and kiss'd; and then  
Cried, 'Cursed fate, that gave thee to the Moor!'  

*Oth.* O monstrous! monstrous!  
*Iago.* Nay, this was but his dream.  
*Oth.* But this denoted a foregone conclusion:  
'Tis a shrewd doubt, though it be but a dream.  
*Iago.* And this may help to thicken other proofs  
That do demonstrate thinly.  
*Oth.* I'll tear her all to pieces.  
*Iago.* Nay, but be wise; yet we see nothing done;  
She may be honest yet. Tell me but this:  
Have you not sometimes seen a handkerchief  
Spotted with strawberries in your wife's hand?  
*Oth.* I gave her such a one; 'twas my first gift.  

*Iago.* I know not that; but such a handkerchief—  
I am sure it was your wife's—did I to-day  
See Cassio wipe his beard with.  
*Oth.* If it be that, —  
*Iago.* If it be that, or any that was hers,  
It speaks against her with the other proofs.  
*Oth.* O! that the slave had forty thousand lives;  
One is too poor, too weak for my revenge.  
Now do I see 'tis true. Look here, Iago;  
All my fond love thus do I blow to heaven:  
'Tis gone.  

*Arise, black vengeance, from the hollow hell!*  
Yield up, O love! thy crown and hearted throne  
To tyrannous hate. Swall, bosom, with thy fraught,  
For 'tis of aspics' tongues!  

*Iago.* Yet be content.  
*Oth.* O! blood, blood, blood!  
*Iago.* Patience, I say; your mind, perhaps,  
may change.  
*Oth.* Never, Iago. Like to the Pontick sea,  
Whose icy current and compulsive course  
Ne'er feels retiring ebb, but keeps due on  
To the Propontic and the Hallespont,  
Even so my bloody thoughts, with violent pace,  
Shall ne'er look back, ne'er ebb to humble love.
Emil. I know not, madam.
Des. Believe me, I had rather have lost my
purs.
Full of cruzadoes; and, but my noble Moor
Is true of mind, and made of no such base-
ess.
As jealous creatures are, it were enough
To put him to ill thinking.
Emil. Is he not jealous?
Des. Who! he? I think the sun where he
was born
Drew all such humours from him.
Emil. Look! where he comes.
Des. I will not leave him now till Cassio
Be call’d to him.

Enter Othello.

How is ’t with you, my lord?
Oth. Well, my good lady. [Aside.] O! hard-
ess to dissemble.
How do you, Desdemona?
Des. Well, my good lord.
Oth. Give me your hand. This hand is moist,
my lady.
Des. It yet has felt no age nor known no
sorrow.
Oth. This argues fruitfulness and liberal
heart;
Hot, hot, and moist; this hand of yours re-
quires
A sequester from liberty, fasting and prayer,
Much castigation, exercise devout;
For here’s a young and sweating devil here,
That commonly rebels. ’Tis a good hand, 44
A frank one.
Des. You may, indeed, say so;
For ’twas that hand that gave away my heart.
Oth. A liberal hand; the hearts of old gave
hands,
But our new heraldry is hands not hearts. 48
Des. I cannot speak of this. Come now,
your promise.
Oth. What promise, chuck?
Des. I have sent to bid Cassio come speak
with you.
Oth. I have a salt and sorry rheum offends
me.
Lend me thy handkerchief.
Des. Here, my lord.
Oth. That which I gave you.
Des. I have it not about me.
Oth. Not?
Des. No, indeed, my lord.
Oth. That is a fault.
That handkerchief
Did an Egyptian to my mother give;
She was a charmer, and could almost read

The thoughts of people; she told her, while she
kept it,
’Twould make her amiable and subdue my
father
Entirely to her love, but if she lost it
Or made a gift of it, my father’s eye
Should hold her loathed, and his spirits should
hunt
After new fancies. She dying gave it me; 64
And bid me, when my fate would have me wife,
To give it her. I did so: and take heed on’t;
Make it a darling like your precious eye;
To lose’t or give’t away, were such perdition 68
As nothing else could match.
Des. Is ’t possible?
Oth. ’Tis true; there’s magic in the web of
it;
A sibyl, that had number’d in the world
The sun to course two hundred compasses, 72
In her prophetic fury sew’d the work;
The worms were hallow’d that did breed the
silk,
And it was dy’d in mummy which the skilful
Conserv’d of maidens’ hearts.
Des. Indeed! is ’t true? 76
Oth. Most veritable; therefore look to ’t well.
Des. Then would to heaven that I had never
seen it!
Oth. Ha! wherefore?
Des. Why do you speak so startlingly and
rash?
Oth. Is ’t lost? is ’t gone? speak, is it out o’
the way?
Des. Heaven bless us!
Oth. Say you?
Des. It is not lost: but what an if it were?
Oth. How!
Des. I say, it is not lost.
Oth. Fetch ’t, let me see ’t.
Des. Why, so I can, sir, but I will not now.
This is a trick to put me from my suit:
Pray you let Cassio be receiv’d again. 88
Oth. Fetch me the handkerchief; my mind
misgives.
Des. Come, come;
You’ll never meet a more sufficient man.
Oth. The handkerchief!
Des. I pray, talk me of Cassio. 92
Oth. The handkerchief!
Des. A man that all his time
Hath founded his good fortunes on your love,
Shar’d dangers with you,—
Oth. The handkerchief!
Des. In sooth you are to blame. 96
Oth. Away! [Exit.]
Emil. Is not this man jealous?
Des. I never saw this before.
Sure, there's some wonder in this handkerchief; I am most unhappy in the loss of it.

Em. 'Tis not a year or two shows us a man;
They are all but stomachs, and we all but food;
They eat us hungry, and when they are full
They belch us. Look you! Cassio and my husband.

Enter Iago and Cassio.

Iago. There is no other way; 'tis she must do't:
And, lo! the happiness: go and importune her.

Des. How now, good Cassio! what's the news with you?

Cas. Madam, my former suit: I do beseech you
That by your virtuous means I may again
Exist, and be a member of his love
Whom I with all the office of my heart
Entirely honour; I would not be delay'd,
If my offence be of such mortal kind
That nor my service past, nor present sorrows,
Nor purpos'd merit in futurity,
Can ransom me into his love again,
But to know so must be my benefit;
So shall I clothe me in a for'r'd content,
And shut myself up in some other course
To fortune's arms.

Des. Alas! thrice-gentle Cassio!
My advocacy is not now in tune;
My lord is not my lord; nor should I know him,
Were he in favour as in humour alter'd.

So help me every spirit sanctified,
As I have spoken for you all my best
And stood within the blank of his displeasure
For my free speech. You must awhile be patient;
What I can do I will, and more I will
Than for myself I dare: let that suffice you.

Iago. Is my lord angry?

Em. He went hence but now,
And, certainly, in strange unquietness.

Iago. Can he be angry? I have seen the cannon,
When it hath blown his ranks into the air,
And, like the devil, from his very arm
Puff'd his own brother; and can he be angry?
Something of moment then; I will go meet him;
There's matter in 't indeed, if he be angry.

Des. I prithee, do so. [Exit Iago.] Something, sure, of state,
Either from Venice, or some unhatch'd practice
Made demonstrable here in Cyprus to him,
Hath puddled his clear spirit; and, in such cases

Men's natures wrangle with inferior things,
Though great ones are their object. 'Tis even so;
For let our finger ache, and it indues
Our other healthful members ev'n to that sense
Of pain. Nay, we must think men are not gods,
Nor of them look for such observancy
As fits the bridal. Beshrew me much, Emilia,
I was—unhandsome warrior as I am—
Arraigning his unkindness with my soul;
But now I find I had suborn'd the witness,
And he's indicted falsely.

Em. Pray heaven it be state-matters, as you think,
And no conception, nor no jealous toy
Concerning you.

Des. Alas the day! I never gave him cause.

Em. But jealous souls will not be answer'd so;
They are not ever jealous for the cause,
But jealous for they are jealous; 'tis a monster
Begot upon itself, born on itself.

Des. Heaven keep that monster from Othello's mind!

Em. Lady, amen.

Des. I will go seek him. Cassio, walk here-about;
If I do find him fit, I'll move your suit
And seek to effect it to my uttermost.

Cas. I humbly thank your ladyship.

[Execut DESDEMONA and EMILIA.

Enter Bianca.

Bian. Save you, friend Cassio!

Cas. What make you from home?

Bian. How is it with you, my most fair Bianca?

Cas. I faith, sweet love, I was coming to your house.

Bian. And I was going to your lodging, Cassio.

What! keep a week away? seven days and nights?

Eight score eight hours? and lovers' absent hours,
More tedious than the dial eight score times?

O weary reckoning!

Cas. Pardon me, Bianca,
I have this while with leaden thoughts been press'd,
But I shall, in a more continue time,
Strike off this score of absence. Sweet Bianca.

[Giving her DESDEMONA’S handkerchief.

Take me this work out.

Bian. O Cassio! whence came this?
This is some token from a newer friend;
To the felt absence now I feel a cause;
Is 't come to this? Well, well.

Cas. Go to, woman!

Throw your vile guesses in the devil’s teeth.

1115
From whence you have them. You are jealous now.
That this is from some mistress, some remembrance:
No, in good truth, Bianca.
Bian. Why, whose is it?
Cas. I know not, sweet; I found it in my chamber.
I like the work well; ere it be demanded,—
As like enough it will,—I'd have it copied;
Take it and do't; and leave me for this time.
Bian. Leave you! wherefore?
Cas. I do attend here on the general,
And think it no addition nor my wish
To have him see me woman'd.
Bian. Why, I pray you?
Cas. Not that I love you not.
Bian. But that you do not love me.
I pray you, bring me on the way a little
And say if I shall see you soon at night.
Cas. 'Tis but a little way that I can bring you,
For I attend here; but I'll see you soon.
Bian. 'Tis very good; I must be circum-

ACT IV.

SCENE I.—Cyprus. Before the Castle.

Enter Othello and Iago.

Iago. Will you think so?
Oth. Think so, Iago!

Iago. To kiss in private?
Oth. An unauthorized kiss.
Iago. Or to be naked with her friend a-bed
An hour or more, not meaning any harm?
Oth. Naked a-bed, Iago, and not mean harm?
It is hypocrisy against the devil:
They that mean virtuously, and yet do so,
The devil their virtue tempts, and they tempt
heaven.
Iago. If they do nothing, 'tis a venial slip;
But if I give my wife a handkerchief,—
Oth. What then?
Iago. Why, then, 'tis hers, my lord; and,
being hers,

She may, I think, bestow 't on any man.
Oth. She is protectress of her honour too;
May she give that?
Iago. Her honour is an essence that's not
seen;
They have it very oft that have it not:
But for the handkerchief,—
Oth. By heaven, I would most gladly have
forgotten it:
Thou saidst,—O! it comes 'er my memory, so

As doth the raven o'er the infected house,
Boding to all,—he had my handkerchief.
Iago. Ay, what of that?
Oth. That's not so good now.
Iago. What,
If I had said I had seen him do you wrong? 24
Or heard him say, as knaves be such abroad,
Who having, by their own importunate suit,
Or voluntary dogates of some mistress,
Convinced or supplied them, cannot choose
But they must blab.
Oth. Hath he said any thing?
Iago. He hath, my lord; but be you well
assur'd,
No more than he'll unswear.
Oth. What hath he said?
Iago. Faith, that he did—I know not what
he did.
Oth. What? what?
Iago. Lie—
Oth. With her?
Iago. With her, on her; what you will.
Oth. Lie with her! lie on her! We say, lie on
her, when they belie her. Lie with her! that's
fulsome. Handkerchief,—confessions,—hand-
kerchief! To confess, and be hanged for his
labour. First, to be hanged, and then to confess:
I tremble at it. Nature would not invest herself
in such shadowing passion without some instruc-
tion. It is not words that shake me thus. Pish!
Noses, ears, and lips. Is it possible?—Confess!
—Handkerchief!—O devil! [Falls in a trance.
Iago. Work on,
My medicine, work! Thus credulous fools are
captured;
And many worthy and chaste dames even thus,
All guiltless, meet reproach. What, ho! my
lord!
My lord, I say! Othello!

Enter Cassio.

How now, Cassio!

Cas. What's the matter?
Iago. My lord is fallen into an epilepsy;
This is his second fit; he had one yesterday.
Cas. Rub him about the temples.
Iago. No, forbear;
The lethargy must have his quiet course,
If not he foams at mouth, and by and by
Breaks out to savage madness. Look! he stirs;
Do you withdraw yourself a little while,
He will recover straight; when he is gone,
I would on great occasion speak with you.
[Exit Cassio.

How is it, general? have you not hurt your
head?

Oth. Dost thou mock me?
Iago. I mock you! no, by heaven. Would you would bear your fortune like a man! Oth. A horned man's a monster and a beast. Iago. There's many a beast then, in a populous city, And many a civil monster. Oth. Did he confess it? Iago. Good sir, be a man; Think every bearded fellow that's but yok'd May draw with you; there's millions now alive That nightly lie in those improper beds Which they dare swear peculiar; your case is better. O! 'tis the spite of hell, the fiend's arch-mock, To lip a wanton in a secure couch, And to suppose her chaste. No, let me know; And knowing what I am I know what she shall be.

Oth. O! thou art wise; 'tis certain. Iago. Stand you awhile apart; Confine yourself but in a patient list. Whilst you were here o'erwhelmed with your grief,— A passion most unsuiting such a man,— Cassio came hither; I shifted him away, And laid good 'scuses upon your ecstasy; Bade him anon return and here speak with me; Which he promis'd. Do but encave yourself, And mark the fleers, the gibes, and notable scorned, That dwell in every region of his face;

For I will make him tell the tale anew, Where, how, how oft, how long ago, and when He hath, and is again to cope your wife: I say, but mark his gesture. Marry, patience; Or I shall say you are all in all in spleen, And nothing of a man.

Oth. Dost thou hear, Iago? I will be found most cunning in my patience; But—dost thou hear?—most bloody.

Iago. That's not amiss; But yet keep time in all. Will you withdraw?

[OTHELLO goes apart.]

Now will I question Cassio of Bianca, A housewife that by selling her desires Buys herself bread and clothes; it is a creature That doles on Cassio; as 'tis the strumpet's plague To beguile many and be beguil'd by one. He, when he hears of her, cannot refrain From the excess of laughter. Here he comes:

Re-enter Cassio.

As he shall smile, Othello shall go mad; And his unbookish jealousy must construe Poor Cassio's smiles, gestures, and light behaviour Quite in the wrong. How do you now, lieutenant? Cas. The worser that you give me the addition Whose want even kills me. Iago. Fly Desdemona well, and you are sure on 't.

[Speaking lower.] Now, if this suit lay in Bianca's power, How quickly should you speed! Cas. Alas! poor caitiff! Oth. Look! how he laughs already! Iago. I never knew woman love man so. Cas. Alas! poor rogue, I think, I' faith, she loves me. Oth. Now he denies it faintly, and laughs it out.

Iago. Do you hear, Cassio? Oth. Now he importunes him To tell it o'er: go to; well said, well said. Iago. She gives it out that you shall marry her;

Do you intend it? Cas. Ha, ha, ha! Oth. Do you triumph, Roman? do you triumph? Cas. I marry her! what? a customer? I prithee, bear some charity to my wit; do not think it so unwholesome. Ha, ha, ha! Oth. So, so, so, so. They laugh that win. Iago. Faith, the cry goes that you shall marry her.

Cas. Prithee, say true. Iago. I am a very villain else. Oth. Have you scored me? Well. Cas. This is the monkey's own giving out: she is persuaded I will marry her, out of her own love and flattery, not out of my promise. Oth. Iago beckons me; now he begins the story.

Cas. She was here even now; she haunts me in every place. I was the other day talking on the sea bank with certain Venetians, and thither came this bauble, and, by this hand, she falls me thus about my neck;—

Oth. Crying, 'O dear Cassio!' as it were; his gesture imports it.

Cas. So hangs and lolls and weeps upon me; so halts and pulls me; ha, ha, ha! Oth. Now he tells how she plucked him to my chamber. O! I see that nose of yours, but not the dog I shall throw it to.

Cas. Well, I must leave her company. Iago. Before me! look, where she comes. Cas 'Tis such another fitchew! marry, a perfumed one.
Enter Bianca.

What do you mean by this haunting of me?

Bian. Let the devil and his dam haunt you! What did you mean by that same handkerchief you gave me even now? I was a fine fool to take it. I must take out the work! A likely piece of work, that you should find it in your chamber, and not know who left it there! This is some minx’s token, and I must take out the work! There, give it your hobby-horse; wheresoever you had it I’ll take out no work on ’t.

Cas. How now, my sweet Bianca! how now, how now!

Oth. By heaven, that should be my handkerchief!

Bian. An you’ll come to supper to-night, you may; an you will not, come when you are next prepared for.

[Exit.

Iago. After her, after her.

Cas. Faith, I must; she’ll rail in the street else.

Iago. Will you sup there?

Cas. Faith, I intend so.

Iago. Well, I may chance to see you, for I would very fain speak with you.

Cas. Prithee, come; will you?

Iago. Go to; say no more. [Exit Cassio.

Oth. [Advancing.] How shall I murder him, Iago?

Iago. Did you perceive how he laughed at his vice?

Oth. O! Iago!

Iago. And did you see the handkerchief?

Oth. Was that mine?

Iago. Yours, by this hand; and to see how he prises the foolish woman your wife! she gave it him, and he hath given it his whore.

Oth. I would have him nine years a-killing.

A fine woman! a fair woman! a sweet woman!

Iago. Nay, you must forget that.

Oth. Ay, let her rot, and perish, and be damned to-night; for she shall not live. No, my heart is turned to stone; I strike it, and it hurts my hand. O! the world hath not a sweeter creature; she might lie by an emperor’s side and command him tasks.

Iago. Nay, that’s not your way.

Oth. Hang her! I do but say what she is. So delicate with her needle! An admirable musician! O, she will sing the savageness out of a bear. Of so high and plenteous wit and invention!

Iago. She’s the worse for all this.

Oth. O! a thousand, a thousand times. And then, of so gentle a condition!

Iago. Ay, too gentle.

Enter Lodovico, Desdemona, and Attendants.

Lod. God save you, worthy general!

Oth. With all my heart, sir.

Lod. The duke and senators of Venice greet you. [Gives him a packet.

Oth. I kiss the instrument of their pleasures. [Opens the packet, and reads.

Des. And what’s the news, good cousin Lodovico?

Lod. I am very glad to see you, signior; Welcome to Cyprus.

Lod. I thank you. How does Lieutenant Cassio?

Iago. Lives, sir.

Des. Cousin, there’s fall’n between him and my lord

An unkind breach; but you shall make all well.

Oth. Are you sure of that?

Des. My lord?

Oth. This fail you not to do, as you will — Lod. He did not call; he’s busy in the paper.

Is there division ’twixt my lord and Cassio?

Des. A most unhappy one; I would do much To stone them, for the love I bear to Cassio. 245

Oth. Fire and brimstone!

Des. My lord?

Oth. Are you wise?

Des. What! is he angry?

Lod. May be the letter mov’d him;
For, as I think, they do command him home,
Deputing Cassio in his government. 249

Des. Trust me, I am glad on 't.

Oth. Indeed!

Des. My lord?

Oth. I am glad to see you mad.

Des. Why, sweet Othello?

Oth. Devill! [Strikes her.

Des. I have not deserved this. 252

Lod. My lord, this would not be believ'd in Venice,
Though I should swear I saw 't: 'tis very much;
Make her amends, she weeps.

Oth. O devil, devil!
If that the earth could teem with woman's tears,
Each drop she falls would prove a crocodile. 257
Out of my sight!

Des. I will not stay to offend you. [Going.

Lod. Truly, an obedient lady;
I do beseech your lordship, call her back. 260

Oth. Mistress!

Des. My lord?

Oth. What would you with her, sir?

Lod. Who, I, my lord?

Oth. Ay; you did wish that I would make
her turn:
Sir, she can turn, and turn, and yet go on, 264
And turn again; and she can weep, sir, weep;
And she's obedient, as you say, obedient,
Very obedient. Proceed you in your tears.
Concerning this, sir,—O well-painted passion!—
I am commanded home. Get you away; 269
I'll send for you anon. Sir, I obey the mandate,
And will return to Venice. Hence! avaunt!
[Exit Desdemona.

Cassio shall have my place. And, sir, to-night,
I do entreat that we may sup together; 273
You are welcome, sir, to Cyprus. Goats and
monkeys! [Exit.

Lod. Is this the noble Moor whom our full
senate
Call all-in-all sufficient? is this the noble nature
Whom passion could not shake? whose solid
virtue 277
The shot of accident nor dart of chance
Could neither graze nor pierce?

Iago. He is much chang'd.

Lod. Are his wits safe? is he not light of
brain? 280

Iago. He's that he is; I may not breathe my
sensure.

What he might be, if, what he might, he is not,
I would to heaven he were!

Lod. What! strike his wife!

Iago. Faith, that was not so well; yet would
I knew 284

That stroke would prove the worst!

Lod. Is it his use?
Or did the letters work upon his blood,
And new-create this fault?

Iago. Alas, alack!
It is not honesty in me to speak 288
What I have seen and known. You shall ob-
serve him,
And his own courses will denote him so
That I may save my speech. Do but go after
And mark how he continues. 292

Lod. I am sorry that I am deserv'd in him.
[Exeunt.

SCENE II.—A Room in the Castle.

Enter Othello and Emilia.

Oth. You have seen nothing, then?

Emil. Nor ever heard, nor ever did suspect.

Oth. Yes, you have seen Cassio and her
together.

Emil. But then I saw no harm, and then I
heard
Each syllable that breath made up between
them.

Oth. What! did they never whisper?

Emil. Never, my lord.

Oth. Nor send you out o' the way?

Emil. Never.

Oth. To fetch her fan, her gloves, her mask,
nor nothing? 8

Emil. Never, my lord.

Oth. That's strange.

Emil. I durst, my lord, to wager she is
honest,
Lay down my soul at stake: if you think other,
Remove your thought; it doth abuse your bosom.
If any wretch have put this in your head,
Let heaven requite it with the serpent's curse!
For, if she be not honest, chaste, and true, 11
There's no man happy; the purest of their
wives
Is foul as slander.

Oth. Bid her come hither; go. 14

[Exit Emilia.

She says enough; yet she's a simple bawd
That cannot say as much. This is a subtle
whore,
A closet lock and key of villainous secrets;
And yet she'll kneel and pray; I have seen her
do 't.

Re-enter Emilia with Desdemona.

Des. My lord, what is your will?

Oth. Pray, chuck, come hither.

Des. What is your pleasure?

Oth. Let me see your eyes; 24

1119
Look in my face.

Des. What horrible fancy's this?

Oth. [To EMILIA.] Some of your function, mistress;

Leave procurers alone and shut the door;

Cough or cry 'hem' if any body come;

Your mystery, your mystery; nay, dispatch.

Exit EMILIA.

Des. Upon my knees, what doth your speech import?

I understand a fury in your words,

But not the words.

Oth. Why, what art thou?

Des. Your wife, my lord; your true

And loyal wife.

Oth. Come, swear it, damn thyself;

Lest, being like one of heaven, the devils themselves

Should fear to seize thee; therefore be double-

damn'd;

Sware thou art honest.

Des. Heaven doth truly know it.

Oth. Heaven truly knows that thou art false

as hell.

Des. To whom, my lord? with whom? how

am I false?

Oth. Ah! Desdemona; away, away, away! 40

Des. Alas, the heavy day!—Why do you weep?

Am I the motive of these tears, my lord?

If haply you my father do suspect

An instrument of this your calling back,

Lay not your blame on me; if you have lost

him,

Why, I have lost him too.

Oth. Had it pleas'd heaven

To try me with affliction, had he rain'd

All kinds of sores, and shames, on my bare

head,

Strook'd me in poverty to the very lips, 52

Given to captivity me and my utmost hopes,

I should have found in some part of my soul

A drop of patience; but, alas! to make me

The fixed figure for the time of scorn

To point his slow and moving finger at;

Yet could I bear that too; well, very well:

But there, where I have grasper'd up my heart,

Where either I must live or bear no life,

The fountain from which my current runs

Or else dries up; to be discarded thence!

Or keep it as a cistern for foul toads.

To knot and gender in! Turn thy complexion there,

Patience, thou young and rose-lipp'd cherubin;

Ay, there, look grim as hell!

Des. I hope my noble lord esteems me honest.

Oth. O! ay; as summer flies are in the

shambles,

That quicken even with blowing. O thou weed!

Who art so lovely fair and smell'st so sweet

That the sense aches at thee, would thou hadst

ne'er been born.

Des. Alas! what ignorant sin have I com-

mitted?

Oth. Was this fair paper, this most goodly

book,

Made to write 'whore' upon? What com-

mitted!

Committed! O thou public commoner! 72

I should make very forges of my cheeks,

That would to cinders burn up modesty,

Did I but speak thy deeds. What committed!

Heaven stops the nose at it and the moon winks,

The bawdy wind that kisses all it meets

Is hush'd within the hollow mine of earth,

And will not hear it. What committed!

Impudent strumpet!

Des. By heaven, you do me wrong. 80

Oth. Are not you a strumpet?

Des. No, as I am a Christian.

If to preserve this vessel for my lord

From any other foul unlawful touch

Be not to be a strumpet, I am none.

Oth. What! not a whore?

Des. No, as I shall be sav'd.

Oth. Is it possible?

Des. O! heaven forgive us.

Oth. I cry you mercy, then;

I took you for that cunning whore of Venice

That married with Othello. You, mistress,

That have the office opposite to Saint Peter,

And keep the gate of hell!

Re-enter EMILIA.

You, you, ay, you!

We have done our course; there's money for

your pains. 92

I pray you, turn the key and keep our counsel. 94

[Exit.

Emil. Alas! what does this gentleman con-

ceive?

How do you, madam? how do you, my good

lady?

Des. Faith, half asleep.

Emil. Good madam, what's the matter with

my lord?

Des. With who?

Emil. Why, with my lord, madam.

Des. Who is thy lord?

Emil. He that is yours, sweet lady. 105

Des. I have none; do not talk to me, Emilia;

I cannot weep, nor answer have I none,

But what should go by water. Prithsee, to-night

Rpt.

I120
Lay on my bed my wedding sheets: remember: 105
And call thy husband hither.

Emil. Here is a change indeed! [Exit.

Des. 'Tis meet I should be us'd so, very meet.
How have I been behav'd, that he might stick
The small'st opinion on my least misuse? 108

Re-enter EMILIA, with IAGO.

Iago. What is your pleasure, madam? How
is it with you?
Des. I cannot tell. Those that do teach
young babes
Do it with gentle means and easy tasks; 112
He might have chid me so; for, in good faith,
I am a child to chiding.
Iago. What's the matter, lady?
Emil. Alas! Iago, my lord hath so bewhor'd
her,
Thrown such despite and heavy terms upon her,
As true hearts cannot bear. 117

Des. Am I that name, Iago?
Iago. What name, fair lady?
Des. Such as she says my lord did say I was.
Emil. He call'd her whore; a beggar in his
drink 120
Could not have laid such terms upon his callat.
Iago. Why did he so?
Des. I do not know; I am sure I am none
such.
Iago. Do not weep, do not weep. Alas the
day! 124
Emil. Has she forsok'd so many noble
matches,
Her father and her country and her friends,
To be call'd whore? would it not make one
weep?
Des. It is my wretched fortune.
Iago. Behewr him for it! 128

How comes this trick upon him?
Des. Nay, heaven doth know.
Emil. I will be hang'd, if some eternal villain,
Some busy and insinuating rogue,
Some cogging cozening slave, to get some
office, 132
Have not devis'd this slander; I'll be hang'd
else.
Iago. Fie! there is no such man; it is im-
possible.
Des. If any such there be, heaven pardon
him!
Emil. A halter pardon him, and hell gnaw
his bones! 136
Why should he call her whore? who keeps her
company?
likelihood?

The Moor's abus'd by some most villainous
knave,
Some base notorious knave, some scurvy fellow.
O heaven! that such companions thou'lt un-
fold,
And put in every honest hand a whip
To lash the rascals naked through the world,
Even from the east to the west!
Iago. Speak within door. 144
Emil. O! fits upon them. Some such squire
he was
That turn'd your wit the seamy side without,
And made you to suspect me with the Moor.
Iago. You are a fool; go to.

Des. O good Iago, 148
What shall I do to win my lord again?
Good friend, go to him; for, by this light of
heaven,
I know not how I lost him. Here I kneel:
If e'er my will did trespass 'gainst his love, 153
Either in discourse of thought or actual deed,
Or that mine eyes, mine ears, or any sense,
Delighted them in any other form;
Or that I do not yet, and ever did,
And ever will, though he do shake me off
To beggarly divorcement, love him dearly,
Comfort forswear me! Unkindness may do
much;
And his unkindness may defeat my life, 160
But never taint my love. I cannot say 'whore:'
It does abhor me now I speak the word;
To do the act that might the addition earn
Not the world's mass of vanity could make me.
Iago. I pray you be content, 'tis but his
humour; 165
The business of the state does him offence,
And he does chide with you.

Des. If 'twere no other,—
Iago. 'Tis but so, I warrant. [Trumpets.
Hark! how these instruments summon to sup-
per; 169
The messengers of Venice stay the meat:
Go in, and weep not; all things shall be well.
[Exeunt DESDEMONA and EMILIA.

Enter RODERIGO.

How now, Roderigo! 172
Rod. I do not find that thou dealesst justly
with me.
Iago. What in the contrary?
Rod. Every day thou dauest me with some
device, Iago; and rather, as it seems to me now,
keepest from me all conveniency, than suppliest
me with the least advantage of hope. I will in-
deed no longer endure it, nor am I yet persuaded
to put up in peace what already I have foolishly
suffered.
Iago. Will you hear me, Roderigo?
Rod. Faith, I have heard too much, for your words and performances are no kin together.
Iago. You charge me most unjustly. 186
Rod. With nought but truth. I have wasted myself out of my means. The jewels you have had from me to deliver to Desdemona would half have corrupted a votarist; you have told me she has received them, and returned me expectations and comforts of sudden respect and acquaintance, but I find none. 193
Iago. Well; go to; very well.
Rod. Very well! go to! I cannot go to, man; nor 'tis not very well: by this hand, I say, it is very scurvy, and begin to find myself fooled in it.
Iago. Very well. 198
Rod. I tell you 'tis not very well. I will make myself known to Desdemona; if she will return me my jewels, I will give over my suit and repent my unlawful solicitation; if not, assure yourself I will seek satisfaction of you.
Iago. You have said now. 204
Rod. Ay, and said nothing, but what I protest intendment of doing.
Iago. Why, now I see there's mettle in thee, and even from this instant do build on thee a better opinion than ever before. Give me thy hand, Roderigo; thou hast taken against me a most just exception; but yet, I protest, I have dealt most directly in thy affair. 212
Rod. It hath not appeared.
Iago. I grant indeed it hath not appeared, and your suspicion is not without wit and judgment. But, Roderigo, if thou hast that in thee indeed, which I have greater reason to believe now than ever, I mean purpose, courage, and valour, this night show it: if thou the next night following enjoy not Desdemona, take me from this world with treachery and devise engines for my life.
Rod. Well, what is it? is it within reason and compass? 224
Iago. Sir, there is especial commission come from Venice to depose Cassio in Othello's place.
Rod. Is that true? why, then Othello and Desdemona return again to Venice. 228
Iago. O, no! he goes into Mauritania, and takes away with him the fair Desdemona, unless his abode be lingered here by some accident; wherein none can be so determinate as the removing of Cassio. 233
Rod. How do you mean, removing of him?
Iago. Why, by making him incapable of Othello's place; knocking out his brains.
Rod. And that you would have me do? 237
Iago. Ay; if you dare do yourself a profit and a right. He sups to-night with a harlots, and thither will I go to him; he knows not yet of his honourable fortune. If you will watch his going thence,—which I will fashion to fall out between twelve and one,—you may take him at your pleasure; I will be near to second your attempt, and he shall fall between us. Come, stand not amazed at it, but go along with me; I will show you such a necessity in his death that you shall think yourself bound to put it on him. It is now high supper-time, and the night grows to waste; about it. 250
Rod. I will hear further reason for this.
Iago. And you shall be satisfied. [Exeunt.

SCENE III.—Another Room in the Castle.

Enter Othello, Lodovico, Desdemona, Emilia, and Attendants.

Lod. I do beseech you, sir, trouble yourself no further.
Oth. 0! pardon me; 'twill do me good to walk.
Lod. Madam, good night; I humbly thank your ladyship.
Des. Your honour is most welcome.
Oth. Will you walk, sir? 5
Des. My lord?
Oth. Get you to bed on the instant; I will be returned forthwith; dismiss your attendant there; look it be done.
Des. I will, my lord. [Exeunt Othello, Lodovico, and Attendants.

Emil. How goes it now? he looks gentler than he did.
Des. He says he will return incontinent; 12
He hath commanded me to go to bed,
And bade me to dismiss you.
Emil. Dismiss me!
Des. It was his bidding; therefore, good Emilia,
Give me my nightly wearing, and adieu: 16
We must not now displease him.
Emil. I would you had never seen him.
Des. So would not I; my love doth so approve him,
That even his stubborness, his checks and frowns,— 20
Prithee, unpin me,—have grace and favour in them.
Emil. I have laid those sheets you bade me on the bed.
Des. All's one. Good faith! how foolish are our minds!
If I do die before thee, prithee, shroud me In one of those same sheets.
Emil. Come, come, you talk.
Des. My mother had a maid call’d Barbara; She was in love, and he lov’d prov’d mad And did forsake her; she had a song of ‘wil- 
low;’
An old thing ’twas, but it express’d her fort-
une,
And she died singing it; that song to-night Will not go from my mind; I have much to do But to go hang my head all at one side, 32 And sing it like poor Barbara. Prathee, dispatch.
Emil. Shall I go fetch your night-gown?
Des. No, unpin me here.
This Lodovico is a proper man.
Emil. A very handsome man.
Des. He speaks well.
Emil. I know a lady in Venice would have walked barefoot to Palestine for a touch of his nether lip.
Des. The poor soul sat sighing by a sycamore tree, Sing all a green willow; 40
Her hand on her bosom, her head on her knee, Sing willow, willow, willow, Sing willow, willow, willow; 44
The fresh streams ran by her, and murmur’d her moans; Sing willow, willow, willow; 48
Her salt tears fell from her, and soften’d the stones;—
Lay by these:—
Sing willow, willow, willow;
Prathee, hee thee; he’ll come anon.—
Sing all a green willow must be my garland. Let nobody blame him, his scorn I approve,—
Nay, that’s not next. Hark! who is it that knocks?
Emil. It is the wind.
Des. I call’d my love false love; but what said he then? 56
Sing willow, willow, willow; If I court mee women, you’ll couch with mee men.
So, get thee gone; good night. Mine eyes do itch;
Doth that bode weeping?
Emil. ’Tis neither here nor there. Des. I have heard it said so. Of these men, these men! 61
Dost thou in conscience think, tell me, Emilia, That there be women do abuse their husbands In such gross kind?
Emil. There be some such, no question. Des. Wouldst thou do such a deed for all the world? 65
Emil. Why, would not you? Des. No, by this heavenly light! Emil. Nor I neither by this heavenly light; might do ’t as well i’ the dark. 68
Des. Wouldst thou do such a deed for all the world?
Emil. The world is a huge thing; ’tis a great price
For a small vice.
Des. In troth, I think thou wouldst not. Emil. In troth, I think I should, and undo’t when I had done. Marry, I would not do such a thing for a joint-ring, nor measures of lawn, nor for gowns, petticoats, nor caps, nor any petty exhibition; but for the whole world, who would not make her husband a cuckold to make him a monarch? I should venture purgatory for ’t.
Des. Beshrew me, if I would do such a wrong For the whole world.
Emil. Why, the wrong is but a wrong i’ the world; and having the world for your labour, ’tis a wrong in your own world, and you might quickly make it right.
Des. I do not think there is any such woman. Emil. Yes, a dozen; and as many to the vantage, as would store the world they played for.
But I do think it is their husbands’ faults If wives do fall. Say that they slack their duties,
And pour our treasures into foreign laps, Or else break out in peevish jealousies, 92 Throwing restraint upon us; or, say they strike us, Or scant our former having in despite; Why, we have galls, and though we have some grace,
Yet have we some revenge. Let husbands know Their wives have sense like them; they see and smell, 97
And have their palates both for sweet and sour, As husbands have. What is it that they do When they change us for others? Is it sport? I think it is; and doth affection breed it? 101 I think it doth: is’t frailty that thus errs? It is so too; and have not we affections, Desires for sport, and frailty, as men have? 104
Then, let them use us well; else let them know, The ills we do, their ills instruct us so.
Des. Good night, good night; heaven me such usage send, Not to pick bad from bad, but by bad mend! [Exeunt.

ACT V.

SCENE I.—Cyprus. A Street.

Enter IAGO and RODERIGO.

Iago. Here, stand behind this bulk; straight will he come:
Wear thy good rapier bare, and put it home.
Quick, quick; fear nothing; I'll be at thy elbow. It makes us, or it mars us; think on that. And fix most firm thy resolution.  

Rod. Be near at hand; I may miscarry in 't. Iago. Here, at thy hand; be bold, and take thy stand.  

[Retires.  

Rod. I have no great devotion to the deed; 8 And yet he has given me satisfying reasons: 'Tis but a man gone: forth, my sword; he dies. Iago. I have rubb'd this young quat almost to the sense, And he grows angry. Now, whether he kill Cassio, 12 Or Cassio him, or each do kill the other, Every way makes my gain: live Roderigo, He calls me to a restitution large Of gold and jewels that Iobb'd from him, 16 As gifts to Desdemona; It must not be: if Cassio do remain, He hath a daily beauty in his life That makes me ugly; and, besides, the Moor 20 May unfold me to him; there stand I in much peril. 

No, he must die. But so; I hear him coming.  

Enter Cassio.  

Rod. I know his gait; 'tis he. Villain, thou diest! [Makes a pass at Cassio.  

Cas. That thrust had been mine enemy indeed 24 But that my coat is better than thou know'st; I will make proof of thine.  

[Draws, and wounds Roderigo.  

Rod. O! I am slain.  

Iago from behind wounds Cassio in the leg, and exit.  

Cas. I am main'd for ever. Help, ho! murder! murder!  

[Draws, and wounds Roderigo.  

Rod. O! I am slain.  

[Stabs Roderigo.  

Rod. O damn'd Iago! O inhuman dog! Iago. Kill men i' the dark! Where be these bloody thieves? How silent is this town! Hol murder! murder! What may you be? are you of good or evil? 65 Lod. As you shall prove us, praise us. Iago. Signior Lodovico? Lod. He, sir. Iago. I cry you mercy. Here's Cassio hurt by villains.  

[Stabs Iago.  

Cas. My leg is cut in two. Iago.  

[Stabs Cassio.  

Iago. How is it, brother? Cas. My leg is cut in two. Iago. Marry, heaven forbid, 72
Enter Bianca.

Bian. What is the matter, ho? who is 't that cried?

Iago. Who is 't that cried!

Bian. O my dear Cassio! my sweet Cassio! 76

O Cassio, Cassio, Cassio!

Iago. O notable trumpet! Cassio, may you
suspect

Who they should be that have thus mangled
you?

Cas. No. 80

Gra. I am sorry to find you thus; I have
been to seek you.

Iago. Lend me a garter. So. O! for a
chair,

To bear him easily hence!

Bian. Alas! he faints! O Cassio, Cassio, Cassio!

Iago. Gentlemen all, I do suspect this trash
To be a party in this injury.

Patience awhile, good Cassio. Come, come.

Lend me a light. Know we this face, or no? 88

Alas! my friend and my dear countryman,

Roderigo? no: yes, sure, O heaven! Roderigo.

Gra. What! of Venice?

Iago. Even he, sir: did you know him?

Gra. Know him! ay, 92

Iago. Signior Gratiano? I cry you gentle
pardon;

These bloody accidents must excuse my manners,
That so neglected you.

Gra. I am glad to see you.

Iago. How do you, Cassio? O! a chair, a
chair! 96

Gra. Roderigo! [A chair brought in.

Iago. He, he, 'tis he.—O! that's well said;
the chair:

Some good men bear him carefully from hence;
I'll fetch the general's surgeon. [To Bianca.]

For you, mistress, 100

Save you your labour. He that lies slain here,

Cassio,

Was my dear friend. What malice was between
you?

Cas. None in the world; nor do I know the
man.

Iago. [To Bianca.] What! look you pale? O!
bear him out o' the air—

[CASSIO AND RODERIGO are borne off.

Stay you, good gentlemen. Look you pale,
mistress?—

Do you perceive the gappiness of her eye?

Nay, if you stare, we shall hear more anon.

Behold her well; I pray you, look upon her: 108

Do you see, gentlemen? nay, guiltiness will
speak

Though tongues were out of use.
But they are cruel tears; this sorrow's heavenly,
It strikes where it doth love. She wakes.

Des. Who's there? Othello?

Oth. Ay, Desdemona.

Des. Will you come to bed, my lord? 24

Oth. Have you prayed to-night, Desdemona?

Des. Ay, my lord.

Oth. If you bethink yourself of any crime
Unreconcil'd as yet to heaven and grace,
Sollicit for it straight. 8

Des. Alas! my lord, what may you mean by
that?

Oth. Well, do it, and be brief; I will walk by:
I would not kill thy unprepared spirit;
No; heaven forfend! I would not kill thy soul.

Des. Talk you of killing?

Oth. Ay, I do.

Des. Then heaven 33

Have mercy on me!

Oth. Amen! with all my heart.

Des. If you say so, I hope you will not kill
me.

Oth. Hum!

Des. And yet I fear you; for you are fatal
then

When your eyes roll so. Why I should fear I
know not,

Since guiltiness I know not; but yet I feel I fear.

Oth. Think on thy sins.

Des. They are loves I bear to you. 40

Oth. Ay, and for that thou diest.

Des. That death's unnatural that kills for
loving.

Alas! why gnaw you so your nether lip?
Some bloody passion shakes your very frame;
These are portents, but yet, I hope, I hope
They do not point on me.

Oth. Peace, and be still!

Des. I will so. What's the matter?

Oth. That handkerchief which I so lov'd and
gave thee 48

Thou gav'st to Cassio.

Des. No, by my life and soul!

Send for the man and ask him.

Oth. Sweet soul, take heed,

Take heed of perjury; thou 'rt on thy death-bed.

Des. Ay, but not yet to die.

Oth. Yes, presently; 52

Therefore confess the; freely of thy sin;
For to deny each article with oath
Cannot remove nor choke the strong conception
That I do groan withal. Thou art to die. 56

Des. Then Lord have mercy on me!

Oth. I say, amen.

Des. And have you mercy too! I never did
Offend you in my life; never lov'd Cassio
But with such general warranty of heaven 60

As I might love; I never gave him token.

Oth. By heaven, I saw my handkerchief in 's
hand.

O perjur'd woman! thou dost stone my heart,
And mak'st me call what I intend to do
A murder, which I thought a sacrifice:
I saw the handkerchief.

Des. He found it then;

I never gave it him. Send for him hither;
Let him confess a truth.

Oth. He hath confess'd. 68

Des. What, my lord?

Oth. That he hath us'd thee.

Des. How? unlawfully?

Oth. Ay.

Des. He will not say so.

Oth. No; his mouth is stopp'd:

Honest Iago hath ta'en order for 't. 72

Des. O! my fear interprets. What! is he
dead?

Oth. Had all his hairs been lives, my great
revenge

Had stomach for them all.

Des. Alas! he is betray'd and I undone. 76

Oth. Out, strumpet! Weep'st thou for him
to my face?

Des. O! banish me, my lord, but kill me not!

Oth. Down, strumpet!

Des. Kill me to-morrow; let me live to-night!

Oth. Nay, if you strive,— 81

Des. But half an hour!

Oth. Being done, there is no pause.

Des. But while I say one prayer!

Oth. It is too late. [He smother her.

Emil. [Within.] My lord, my lord! what, ho! my lord, my lord!

Oth. What noise is this? Not dead? not yet
quite dead?

I that am cruel am yet merciful;
I would not have thee linger in thy pain.

So, so.

Emil. [Within.] What, ho! my lord, my lord!

Oth. Who's there? 88

Emil. [Within.] O! good my lord, I would
speak a word with you!

Oth. Yes; 'tis Emilia: by and by. She's dead.
'Tis like she comes to speak of Cassio's death;
The noise was high. Ha! no more moving? 92

Still as the grave. Shall she come in? Were 't
good?

I think she stirs again: no. What's best to do?
If she come in she'll sure speak to my wife:
My wife! my wife! what wife? I have no wife:
O, insupportable! O heavy hour! 97

Methinks it should be now a huge eclipse
Of sun and moon, and that the affrighted globe
Should yawn at alteration.
Enter EMILIA.

What's the matter with thee now? 104

Emil. O! my good lord, yonder's foul murder done.

Oth. What! now?

Emil. But now, my lord.

Oth. It is the very error of the moon;
She comes more near the earth than she was wont,
And makes men mad.

Emil. Cassio, my lord, has kill'd a young Venetian
Call'd Roderigo.

Oth. Roderigo kill'd!

And Cassio kill'd?

Emil. No, Cassio is not kill'd. 112

Oth. Not Cassio kill'd; then murder's out of tune,
And sweet revenge grows harsh.

Des. O! falsely, falsely murder'd.

Emil. Alas! what cry is that?

Oth. That! what? 116

Emil. Out, and alas! that was my lady's voice:
Help! Help! ho! help! O lady, speak again!
Sweet Desdemona! O! sweet mistress, speak.

Des. A guiltless death I die.

Emil. O! who hath done this deed?

Des. Nobody; I myself; farewell:
Command me to my kind lord. O! farewell!

[Dies.]

Oth. Why, how should she be murder'd?

Emil. Alas! who knows? 124

Oth. You heard her say herself it was not I.

Emil. She said so; I must needs report the truth.

Oth. She's like a liar gone to burning hell;
'Twas I that kill'd her.

Emil. O! the more angel she,
And you the blacker devil. 129

Oth. She turn'd to folly, and she was a whore.

Emil. Thou dost belie her, and thou art a devil.

Oth. She was false as water.

Emil. Thou art rash as fire to say
That she was false: O! she was heavenly true.

Oth. Cassio did tup her; ask thy husband else,
O! I were damned beneath all depth in hell
But that I did proceed upon just grounds.

To this extremity. Thy husband knew it all.

Emil. My husband!

Oth. Thy husband.

Emil. That she was false to wedlock? 140

Oth. Ay, with Cassio. Nay, had she been true,
If heaven would make me such another world
Of one entire and perfect chrysolite,
I'd not have sold her for it. 144

Emil. My husband!

Oth. Ay, 'twas he that told me first:
An honest man he is, and hates the slime
That sticks on filthy deeds.

Emil. My husband!

Oth. What needs this iterance, woman? I say thy husband.

Emil. O mistress! villainy hath made mocks
With love.

My husband say that she was false!

Oth. He, woman;
I say, thy husband: dost understand the word?

My friend, thy husband, honest, honest Iago. 152

Emil. If he say so, may his pernicious soul
Rot half a grain a day! he lies to the heart;
She was too fond of her most filthy bargain.

Oth. Hal! 156

Emil. Do thy worst:
This deed of thine is no more worthy heaven
Than thou wast worthy her.

Oth. Peace! you were best.

Emil. Thou hast not half the power to do me harm.

As I have to be hurt. O gull! O doll!
As ignorant as dirt! thou hast done a deed,—
I care not for thy sword; I'll make thee known,
Though I lost twenty lives. Help! help, ho! help!

The Moor has kill'd my mistress! Murder! murder!

Enter MONTANO, GRATIANO, IAGO, and Others.

Mon. What is the matter? How now, general!

Emil. O! are you come, Iago? you have done well,
That men must lay their murders on your neck.

Gra. What is the matter? 169

Emil. Disprove this villain if thou best a man:
He says thou told'st him that his wife was false.
I know thou didst not, thou'rt not such a villain,
Speak, for my heart is full. 173

Iago. I told him what I thought, and told no more.

Than what he found himself was apt and true.

Emil. But did you ever tell him she was false?

Iago. I did.
All, all, cry shame against me, yet I’ll speak. 220
Iago. Be wise, and get you home.
Emil. I will not.

IAGO offers to stab EMILIA.
Gra. Fie!

Your sword upon a woman?
Emil. O thou dull Moor! that handkerchief thou speak’st of
I found by fortune and did give my husband;
For often, with a solemn earnestness,
More than, indeed, belong’d to such a trifle,
He begg’d of me to steal it.

Iago. Villainous whore!
Emil. She give it Cassio! no, alas! I found it,
And I did give ‘t my husband.

Iago. Filth, thou liest!
Emil. By heaven, I do not, I do not, gentlemen.

O murderous coxcomb! what should such a fool
Do with so good a wife?

Oth. Are there no stones in heaven
But what serve for the thunder? Precious villain! [He runs at IAGO. IAGO stabs EMILIA, and exit.

Gra. The woman falls; sure, he has kill’d his wife.

Emil. Ay, ay; O! lay me by my mistress’ side.
Gra. He’s gone; but his wife’s kill’d.

Mon. ‘Tis a notorious villain. Take you this weapon,
Which I have here recover’d from the Moor.

Come, guard the door without; let him not pass,
But kill him rather. I’ll after that same villain,
For ‘tis a damned slave.

[Exeunt MONTANO and GRATIANO.

Oth. I am not valiant neither, 241
But every puny whipster gets my sword.

But why should honour outlive honesty?
Let it go all.

Emil. What did thy song bode, lady? 244
Hark, canst thou hear me? I will play the swan,
And die in music:—

Willow, willow, willow.

Moor, she was chaste; she lov’d thee, cruel Moor;
So come my soul to bliss as I speak true; 249
So speaking as I think, I die, I die.

[Dies.

Oth. I have another weapon in this chamber;
It is a sword of Spain, the ice brook’s temper.
Oh! here it is. Uncle, I must come forth. 253

Gra. [Within.] If thou attempt it, it will cost thee dear;
Thou hast no weapon, and perforce must suffer.

Oth. Look in upon me then, and speak with me,
Or, naked as I am, I will assault thee.
Re-enter Gratiano.

Gra. What is the matter?

Oth. Behold! I have a weapon;
A better never did itself sustain
Upon a soldier's thigh: I have seen the day, 260
That with this little arm, and this good sword,
I have made my way through more impediments
Than twenty times your stop: but, O vain boast!
Who can control his fate? 'tis not so now. 264
Be not afraid, though you do see me weapon'd;
Here is my journey's end, here is my butt,
And very sea-mark of my utmost sail.

Do you go back dismay'd? 'tis a lost fear; 268
Man but a rush against Othello's breast,
And he retires. Where should Othello go?
Now how dost thou look now? O ill-star'd wench!

Pale as thy smock! when we shall meet at
compt, 272
This look of thine will hurl my soul from heaven,
And fiends will snatch at it. Cold, cold, my girl!
Even like thy chastity.

O! cursed, cursed slave. Whip me, ye devils, 276
From the possession of this heavenly sight!
 Blow me about in winds! roast me in sulphur!
Wash me in steep-down gulfs of liquid fire!
O Desdemona! Desdemona! dead!

Oh! Oh! Oh!

Enter Lodovico, Montano, Cassio carried in
a chair, and Officers with Iago, prisoner.

Lod. Where is this rash and most unfortunate
man?

Oth. That's he that was Othello; here I am.

Lod. Where is that viper? bring the villain forth.

Oth. I look down towards his feet; but that's
a fable.

If that thou best a devil, I cannot kill thee.  * [Wounds Iago.]

Lod. Wrench his sword from him.

Iago. I bleed, sir; but not kill'd.

Oth. I am not sorry neither; I'd have thee
live; 288
For, in my sense, 'tis happiness to die.

Lod. O thou Othello! that wert once so
good.

Fall'n in the practice of a damned slave,
What shall be said to thee?

Oth. Why, any thing: 292
An honourable murderer, if you will;
For nought did I in hate, but all in honour.

Lod. This wretch hath part confess'd his
villany:
Did you and he consent in Cassio's death? 296

Oth. Ay.
Act V, Sc. II.  

Nor set down aught in malice: then, must you speak
Of one that lov'd not wisely but too well; 343
Of one not easily jealous, but, being wrought,
Perplex'd in the extreme; of one whose hand,
Like the base Indian, threw a pearl away
Richer than all his tribe; of one whose subdu'd eyes
Albeit unused to the melting mood, 348
Drop tears as fast as the Arabian trees
Their medicable gum. Set you down this;
And say besides, that in Aleppo once,
Where a malignant and a turban'd Turk 352
Beat a Venetian and traduced the state,
I took by the throat the circumcised dog,
And amote him thus.  [Stabs himself.

Lod  O bloody period!

Gra.  All that's spoke is marr'd.

Oth. I kiss'd thee ere I kill'd thee; no way but this,  [Falling upon Desdemona.
Killing myself to die upon a kiss.  [Dies.

Cas. This did I fear, but thought he had no weapon;
For he was great of heart.

Lod.  [To Iago.] O Spartan dog! 360
More fell than anguish, hunger, or the sea.
Look on the tragic loading of this bed;
This is thy work; the object poisons sight;
Let it be hid. Gratiano, keep the house, 364
And seize upon the fortunes of the Moor,
For they succeed on you. To you, lord governor,
Remains the censure of this hellish villain,
The time, the place, the torture; O! enforce it.
Myself will straight aboard, and to the state 369
This heavy act with heavy heart relate.

[Exeunt.]
ANTONY AND CLEOPATRA

DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

MARK ANTONY,  
OCTAVIUS CÆSAR,  
M. AEMILIUS LEPIDUS,  
SEXTUS POMPEIUS,  
DOMITIUS ENOBARBUS,  
VENTIDIUS,  
EROS,  
SCARUS,  
DERCETAS,  
DEMETRIUS,  
PHILO,  
MECAenas,  
AGRIPPA,  
DOLABELLA,  
PROCULIUS,  
THYREUS,  
GALLUS,  
MENAS,  
MENECRATES,  
VARRIUS,  
Taurus, Lieutenant-General to Cæsar.  
CANTDIUS, Lieutenant-General to Antony.  
Silius, an Officer under Ventidius.  
EUPHRONIUS, Ambassador from Antony to Cæsar.  
ALEXAS,  
MARDIAN,  
Seleucus,  
DIOMEDES,  
A Soothsayer.  
A Clown.  
CLEOPATRA, Queen of Egypt.  
OCTAVIA, sister to Cæsar, and wife to Antony.  
CHARMIAN,  
IRAS,  
Attendants on Cleopatra.  
Attendants on Cleopatra.  
Officers, Soldiers, Messengers, and other Attendants.

SCENE.—In several parts of the Roman Empire.

ACT I.

SCENE I.—Alexandria. A Room in Cleopatra’s Palace.

Enter Demetrius and Philo.

Phi. Nay, but this dotage of our general’s O’erflows the measure; those his fondly eyes, That o’ter the files and musters of the war Have glow’d like plated Mars, now bend, now turn The office and devotion of their view Upon a tawny front; his captain’s heart, Which in the scuffles of great fights hath burst The buckles on his breast, reneges all temper, And is become the bellows and the fan To cool a gipsy’s lust. Look! where they come.

Flourish. Enter Antony and Cleopatra, with their Trains; Eunuchs fanning her.

Take but good note, and you shall see in him The triple pillar of the world transform’d Into a strumpet’s fool; behold and see.

Cleo. If it be love indeed, tell me how much.  
Ant. There’s beggary in the love that can be reckon’d.

Cleo. I’ll set a bourn how far to be belov’d.

Ant. Then must thou needs find out new heaven, new earth.

Enter an Attendant.

Att. News, my good lord, from Rome.

Ant. Grates me; the sum.

Cleo. Nay, hear them, Antony; Fulvia, perchance, is angry; or, who knows not If the scarce-bearded Cæsar have not sent His powerful mandate to you, ‘Do this, or this; Take in that kingdom, and enfranchise that; Perform ’t, or else we damn thee.’

Ant. How, my love!  
Cleo. Perchance! nay, and most like; You must not stay here longer; your dispatch Is come from Cæsar; therefore hear it, Antony. Where’s Fulvia’s process? Cæsar’s I would say both?

Call in the messengers. As I am Egypt’s queen, Thou blushest, Antony, and that blood of thine Is Cæsar’s homager; else so thy cheek pays shame When shrill-tongu’d Fulvia scolds. The messengers!

Ant. Let Rome in Tiber melt, and the wide arch
Of the rang'd empire fall! Here is my space.
Kingdoms are clay; our dungy earth alike
Feeds beast as man; the nobleness of life
Is to do thus; when such a mutual pair

[Embracing.]
And such a twain can do 't, in which I bind,
On pain of punishment, the world to wect
We stand up peerless.

Cleo. Excellent falsehood! Why did he marry Fulvia and not love her?
I'll seem the fool I am not; Antony
Will be himself.

Ant. But stirr'd by Cleopatra.
Now, for the love of Love and her soft hours,
Let's not confound the time with conference harsh;
There's not a minute of our lives should stretch
Without some pleasure now. What sport to-night?

Cleo. Hear the ambassadors.

Ant. Fie, wrangling queen! Whom' every thing becomes, to chide, to laugh,
To weep; whose every passion fully strives
To make itself, in thee, fair and admir'd.
No messenger, but thine; and all alone,
To-night we'll wander through the streets and note
The qualities of people. Come, my queen;
Last night you did desire it: speak not to us.

[Exeunt Antony and Cleopatra, with their Train.

Dem. Is Caesar with Antonius pris'd so slight?
Phil. Sir, sometimes, when he is not Antony,
He comes too short of that great property
Which still should go with Antony.

Dem. I am full sorry
That he approves the common liar, who
Thus speaks of him at Rome; but I will hope
Of better deeds to-morrow. Rest you happy!

[Exeunt.

Scene II.—The Same. Another Room.

Enter Charmian, Iras, Alexas, and a Soothsayer.

Char. Lord Alexas, sweet Alexas, most any thing Alexas, almost most absolute Alexas,
where's the soothsayer that you praised so to the queen? Oh that I knew this husband,
which, you say, must charge his horns with garlands.

Alex. Soothsayer!
Sooth. Your will?
Char. Is this the man? Is 't you, sir, that know things?

Sooth. In nature's infinite book of secrecy
A little I can read.

Alex. Show him your hand.

Enter Enobarbus.

Eno. Bring in the banquet quickly; wine enough
Cleopatra's health to drink.

Char. Good sir, give me good fortune.
Sooth. I make not, but foresee.
Char. Pray then, foresee me one.
Sooth. You shall be yet far fairer than you are.

Char. He means in flesh.
Iras. No, you shall paint when you are old.
Char. Wrinkles forbid!
Alex. Vex not his prescience; be attentive.
Char. Hush!
Sooth. You shall be more beloved than
belov'd.
Char. I had rather heat my liver with drinking.
Alex. Nay, hear him.
Char. Good now, some excellent fortune!
Let me be married to three kings in a forenoon,
and widow them all; let me have a child at fifty,
to whom Herod of Jewry do make homage; find
me to marry me with Octavius Caesar, and companion
me with my mistress.

Sooth. You shall outlive the lady whom you serve.

Char. O excellent! I love long life better than figs.
Sooth. You have seen and prov'd'd a fairer former fortune
Than that which is to approach.
Char. Then, belike, my children shall have no names; prithee, how many boys and wenches must I have?

Sooth. If every of your wishes had a womb,
And fertile every wish, a million.
Char. Out, fool! I forgive thee for a witch.
Alex. You think none but your sheets are privy to your wishes.

Char. Nay, come, tell Iras here.
Alex. We'll know all our fortunes.
Eno. Mine, and most of our fortunes, to-night, shall be,—drunk to bed.
Iras. There's a palm presages chastity, if nothing else.
Char. E'en as the overflowing Nilus presageth famine.

Iras. Go, you wild bedfellow, you cannot soothe.
Char. Nay, if an oily palm be not a fruitful prognostication, I cannot scratch mine ear. Prithee, tell her but a worky-day fortune.
Sooth. Your fortunes are alike.
Sooth. I have said.
Iras. Am I not an inch of fortune better than she?
Char. Well, if you were but an inch of fortune better than I, where would you choose it?
Iras. Not in my husband's nose.
Char. Our worsest thoughts heaven mend! Alexas,—come, his fortune, his fortune. O! let him marry a woman that cannot go, sweet Isis, I beseech thee; and let her die too, and give him a worse; and let worse follow worse, till the worst of all follow him laughing to his grave, fifty-fold a cuckold. Good Isis, hear me this prayer, though thou deny me a matter of more weight; good Isis, I beseech thee.
Iras. Amen. Dear goddess, hear that prayer of the people! for, as it is a heart-breaking to see a handsome man loose-wived, so it is a deadly sorrow to behold a foul knave uncuckolded: therefore, dear Isis, keep decorum, and fortune him accordingly.
Char. Amen.
Alex. Lo, now! if it lay in their hands to make me a cuckold, they would make themselves whose, but they'd do't.
Char. Not he; the queen.

Enter Cleopatra.
Cleo. Saw you my lord?
Eno. No, lady.
Cleo. Was he not here?
Char. No, madam.
Cleo. He was dispos'd to mirth; but on the sudden
A Roman thought hath struck him. Enobarbus! Eno. Madam!
Cleo. Seek him, and bring him hither.
Where's Alexas?
Alex. Here, at your service. My lord approaches.

Enter Antony, with a Messenger and Attendants.
Cleo. We will not look upon him; go with us.
[ExeuntCLEOPATRA, ENOBARBUS, ALEXAS, IRAS, CHARMIAN, SOOTHSAYER, and Attendants.
Mess. Fulvia thy wife first came into the field.
Ant. Against my brother Lucius?
Mess. Ay:
But soon that war had end, and the time's state
Made friends of them, jointing their force
'gainst Caesar,
Whose better issue in the war, from Italy
Upon the first encounter drave them.
Ant. Well, what worst?
Mess. The nature of bad news infects the teller.
Ant. When it concerns the fool, or coward.
On;
Things that are past are done with me. 'Tis thus:
Who tells me true, though in his tale lay death,
I hear him as he flatter'd.
Mess. Labienus—
This is stiff news—hath, with his Parthian force
Extended Asia; from Euphrates
His conquering banner shook from Syria
To Lydia and to Ionia; whilst—
Ant. Antony, thou wouldst say,—
Mess. O! my lord.
Ant. Speak to me home, mince not the general tongue;
Name Cleopatra as she is call'd in Rome;
Rail thou in Fulvia's phrase; and taunt my faults
With such full licence as both truth and malice
Have power to utter. O! then we bring forth weeds
When our quick winds lie still; and our ills told us
Is as our earing. Fare thee well awhile. [Exit.
Ant. From Sicyon, ho, the news! Speak there!
First Att. The man from Sicyon, is there such an one?
Sec. Att. He stays upon your will.
Ant. Let him appear. [Exit
These strong Egyptian fetters I must break,
Or lose myself in dotage.

Enter another Messenger.
What are you?
Sec. Mess. Fulvia thy wife is dead.
Ant. Where died she?
Sec. Mess. In Sicyon:
Her length of sickness, with what else more serious
Importeth thee to know, this bears.
[Giving a letter.
Ant. Forbear me.
[Exit Second Messenger.
There's a great spirit gone! Thus did I desire it:
What our contempts do often hurl from us.
We wish it ours again; the present pleasure,
By revolution lowering, does become
The opposite of itself: she's good, being gone;
The hand could pluck her back that shov'd her on.
I must from this enchanting queen break off;
Ten thousand harms, more than the ills I know,
My idleness doth hatch. How now! Enobarbus!

Re-enter Enobarbus.
Eno. What's your pleasure, sir?
Ant. I must with haste from hence.
Eno. Why, then, we kill all our women. We see how mortal an unkindness is to them; if they suffer our departure, death's the word. Ant. I must be gone.
Eno. Under a compelling occasion let women die; it were pity to cast them away for nothing; though between them and a great cause they should be esteemed nothing. Cleopatra, catching but the least noise of this, dies instantly; I have seen her die twenty times upon far poorer moment. I do think there is mettle in death which commits some loving act upon her, she hath such a celerity in dying.
Ant. She is cunning past man's thought.
Eno. Alack! sir, no; her passions are made of nothing but the finest part of pure love. We cannot call her winds and waters sighs and tears; they are greater storms and tempests than almanacs can report: this cannot be cunning in her; if it be, she makes a shower of rain as well as Jove.
Ant. Would I had never seen her!
Eno. O, sir! you had then left unseen a wonderful piece of work which not to have been blessed withal would have discredited your travel.
Ant. Fulvia is dead.
Eno. Sir?
Ant. Fulvia is dead.
Eno. Fulvia!
Ant. Dead.
Eno. Why, sir, give the gods a thankful sacrifice. When it pleaseth their deities to take the wife of a man from him, it shows to man the tailors of the earth; comforting therein, that when old robes are worn out, there are members to make new. If there were no more women but Fulvia, then had you indeed a cut, and the case to be lamented: this grief is crowned with consolation: your old smock brings forth a new petticoat; and indeed the tears live in an onion that should water this sorrow.
Ant. The business she hath broached in the state
Cannot endure my absence.
Eno. And the business you have broached here cannot be without you; especially that of Cleopatra's, which wholly depends on your abode.
Ant. No more light answers. Let our officers Have notice what we purport. I shall break

The cause of our expedience to the queen,
And get her leave to part. For not alone
The death of Fulvia, with more urgent touches, Do strongly speak to us, but the letters too
Of many our contriving friends in Rome
Petition us at home. Sextus Pompeius
Hath given the dare to Caesar, and commands
The empire of the sea; our slippery people—
Whose love is never linked to the deserver
Till his deserts are past—begin to throw
Pompey the Great and all his dignities
Upon his son; who, high in name and power,
Higher than both in blood and life, stands up
For the main soldier, whose quality, going on,
The sides o' the world may danger. Much is breeding,
Which, like the courser's hair, hath yet but life,
And not a serpent's poison. Say, our pleasure.
To such whose place is under us, requires
Our quick remove from hence.
Eno. I shall do it. [Exeunt.

SCENE III.—The Same. Another Room.

Enter Cleopatra, Charmian, Iras, and Alexas.

Cleo. Where is he?
Char. I did not see him since.
Cleo. See where he is, who's with him, what he does;
I did not send you: if you find him sad,
Say I am dancing; if in mirth, report
That I am sudden sick: quick, and return.

[Exit Alexas.
Char. Madam, methinks, if you did love him dearly,
You do not hold the method to enforce
The like from him.
Cleo. What should I do I do not? Char. In each thing give him way, cross him in nothing.
Cleo. Thou teachest like a fool; the way to lose him.
Char. Tempt him not so too far; I wish, torbear:
In time we hate that which we often fear. But here comes Antony.

Enter Antony.

Cleo. I am sick and sullen.
Ant. I am sorry to give breathing to my purpose,—
Cleo. Help me away, dear Charmian, I shall fall:
It cannot be thus long, the sides of nature
Will not sustain it.
ANTONY AND CLEOPATRA

ACT I, SC. III.

ANT. Now, my dearest queen,—
CLEO. Pray you, stand further from me.
ANT. What's the matter?
CLEO. I know, by that same eye, there's some good news.
What says the married woman? You may go:
Would she had never given you leave to come!
Let her not say 'tis I that keep you here;
I have no power upon you; hers you are.
ANT. The gods best know,—
CLEO. O! never was there queen 24
So mightily betray'd; yet at the first
I saw the treasons planted.
ANT. Cleopatra,—
CLEO. Why should I think you can be mine
and true,
Though you in swearing shake the throned
 gods,
Who have been false to Fulvia? Riotous mad-
 nesses,
To be entangled with those mouth-made vows,
Which break themselves in swearing!
ANT. Most sweet queen,—
CLEO. Nay, pray you, seek no colour for your going,
But bid farewell, and go: when you su'd stay-
ing
Then was the time for words; no going then:
Eternity was in our lips and eyes,
Bliss in our brows bent; none our parts so
But was a race of heaven; they are so still,
Or thou, the greatest soldier of the world,
Art turn'd the greatest liar.
ANT. How now, lady!
CLEO. I would I had thy inches; thou shouldst
know
There were a heart in Egypt.
ANT. Hear me, queen:
The strong necessity of time commands
Our services awhile, but my full heart
Remains in use with you. Our Italy
Shines o'er with civil swords; Sextus Pompeius
Makes his approaches to the port of Rome;
Equality of two domestic powers
Breeds scrupulous faction. The hated, grown
to strength,
Are newly grown to love; the condemn'd
Pompey,
Rich in his father's honour, creeps aside
Into the hearts of such as have not thriv'd
Upon the present state, whose numbers threaten;
And quietness, grown sick of rest, would purge
By any desperate change. My more particular,
And that which most with you should safe my
going,
In Fulvia's death.

CLEO. Though age from folly could not give
me freedom,
It does from childishness: can Fulvia die?
ANT. She's dead, my queen:
Look here, and at thy sovereign leisure read
The garboils she awak'd; at the last, best,
See when and where she died.
CLEO. O most false love!
Where be the sacred vials thou shouldst fill
With sorrowful water? Now I see, I see,
In Fulvia's death, how mine receiv'd shall be.
ANT. Quarrel no more, but be prepar'd to
know
The purposes I bear, which are or cease
As you shall give the advice. By the fire
That quickens Nilus' slime, I go from hence
Thy soldier, servant, making peace or war
As thou affect'st.
CLEO. Cut my lace, Charmian, come;
But let it be: I am quickly ill, and well;
So Antony loves.
ANT. My precious queen, forbear,
And give true evidence to his love which stands
An honourable trial.
CLEO. So Fulvia told me.
I prithee, turn aside and weep for her;
Then bid adieu to me, and say the tears
Belong to Egypt: good now, play one scene
Of excellent dissembling, and let it look
Like perfect honour.
ANT. You'll beat my blood; no more.
CLEO. You can do better yet, but this is
meestly.
ANT. Now, by my sword,—
CLEO. And target. Still he mends;
But this is not the best. Look, prithee, Char-
man,
How this Herculean Roman does become
The carriage of his chafe.
ANT. I'll leave you, lady.
CLEO. Courteous lord, one word.
Sir, you and I must part, but that's not it:
Sir, you and I have lov'd; but there's not it;
That you know well: something it is I would,—
O! my oblivion is a very Antony,
And I am all forgotten.
ANT. But that your royalty
Holds idleness your subject, I should take you
For idleness itself.
CLEO. 'Tis sweating labour
To bear such idleness so near the heart
As Cleopatra this. But, sir, forgive me;
Since my becoming kill me when they do not
Eye well to you: your honour calls you hence;
Therefore be deaf to my unpitied folly,
And all the gods go with you! Upon your sword
Sit laurel victory! and smooth success.
Be strew'd before your feet!

Ant. Let us go. Come;
Our separation so abides and flies,
That thou, residing here, go'st yet with me,
And I, hence fleeting, here remain with thee. 104
Away!  

[Exeunt.

Scene IV.—Rome. A Room in Cæsar's House.

Enter Octavius Cæsar, Lepidus, and Attendants.

Cæs. You may see, Lepidus, and henceforth know,
It is not Cæsar's natural vice to hate
Our great competitor. From Alexandria
This is the news: he fishes, drinks, and wastes
The lamps of night in revel; is not more manly
Than Cleopatra, nor the queen of Ptolemy
More womanly than he; hardly gave audience,
or Vouchsafe'd to think he had partners: you shall
find there
A man who is the abstract of all faults
That all men follow.

Lep. I must not think there are
Evils so near to darken all his goodness;
His faults in him seem as the spots of heaven; 12
More fiery by night's blackness; hereditary
Rather than purchas'd; what he cannot change
Than what he chooses.

Cæs. You are too indulgent. Let us grant
it is not
Amiss to tumble on the bed of Ptolemy,
To give a kingdom for a mirth, to sit
And keep the turn of tippling with a slave,
To reel the streets at noon, and stand the buffet
With knives that smell of sweat; say this
becomes him,—
As his composure must be rare indeed
Whom these things cannot blemish,—yet must
Antony
No way excuse his spoils, when we do bear
So great weight in his lightness. If he fill'd
His vacancy with his voluptuousness,
Full surfits and the dryness of his bones
Call on him for't; but to confound such time
That drums him from his sport, and speaks as loud
As his own state and ours, 'tis to be chid
As we rate boys, who, being mature in knowledge,
Pawn their experience to their present pleasure,
And so rebel to judgment.

Lep. Here's more news. 33
Mess. Thy biddings have been done, and every hour,
Most noble Cæsar, shalt thou have report
How 'tis abroad. Pompey is strong at sea, 36
And it appears he is belov'd of those
That only have fear'd Cæsar; to the ports
The discontented repair, and men's reports
Give him much wrong'd.

Cæs. I should have known no less.
It hath been taught us from the primal state, 47
That he which is was wish'd until he were;
And the ebb'd man, ne'er lov'd till ne'er worth love,
Comes dear'd by being lack'd. This common body,
Like to a vagabond flag upon the stream,
Goes to and back, lackeying the varying tide,
To rot itself with motion.

Mess. Caesar, I bring thee word,
Menocrates and Menas, famous pirates, 48
Make the sea serve them, which they ear and wound
With keels of every kind: many hot inroads
They make in Italy; the borders maritime
Lack blood to think on't, and flush youth revolt; 52
No vessel can peep forth, but 'tis as soon
Taken as seen; for Pompey's name strikes more
Than could his war resisted.

Cæs. Antony,
Leaves thy lascivious wassails. When thou once
Wast beaten from Modena, where thou slew'st
Hirtius and Pansa, consuls, at thy heel
Did famine follow, whom thou fought'st against,
Though daintily brought up, with patience more
Than savages could suffer; thou didst drink
The stale of horses and the gilded puddle
Which beasts would cough at; thy palate then did deign
The roughest berry on the rudest hedge; 64
Yea, like the stag, when snow the pasture sheets,
The barks of trees thou browsed'st; on the Alps
It is reported thou didst eat strange flesh,
Which some did die to look on; and all this— 68
It wounds thy honour that I speak it now—
Was borne so like a soldier, that thy cheek
So much as taint'd not.

Lep. 'Tis pity of him.

Cæs. Let his shame's quickly

Mess. Drive him to Rome. 'Tis time we twain
Did show ourselves i' the field; and to that end
Assemble me immediate council; Pompey
Thrives in our idleness.
ACT I, Sc. V.

ANTONY AND CLEOPATRA

Lep. To-morrow, Caesar, I shall be furnish’d to inform you rightly Both what by sea and land I can be able To front this present time.

Cas. Till which encounter, It is my business too. Farewell.

Lep. Farewell, my lord. What you shall know meantime Of stirs abroad, I shall beseech you, sir, To let me be partaker.

Cas. Doubt not, sir; I knew it for my bond. [Exeunt.

SCENE V.—Alexandria. A Room in the Palace.

Enter Cleopatra, Charmian, Iras, and Mardian.

Cleo. Charmian!
Char. Madam!
Cleo. Ha, ha! Give me to drink mandragora.
Char. Why, madam? 4
Cleo. That I might sleep out this great gap of time My Antony is away.
Char. Madam, I trust, not so.
Cleo. Thou, enuch Mardian!
Mar. What’s your highness’ pleasure? 8
Cleo. Not now to hear thee sing; I take no pleasure
In aught a enuch has. ’Tis well for thee, That, being unseemly’d, thy freer thoughts May not fly forth of Egypt. Hast thou affections?
Mar. Yes, gracious madam.
Cleo. Indeed!
Mar. Not in deed, madam; for I can do nothing
But what in deed is honest to be done; Yet have I fierce affections, and think What Venus did with Mars.
Cleo. O Charmian! Where think’st thou he is now? Stands he, or sits he?
Or does he walk? or is he on his horse? 20 O happy horse, to bear the weight of Antony! Do bravely, horse, for wot’st thou whom thou mov’st?
The demi-Atlas of this earth, the arm And burgonet of men. He’s speaking now, Or murmuring ‘Where’s my serpent of old Nile?’ For so he calls me. Now I feed myself With most delicious poison. Think on me,

That am with Phoebus’ amorous pinches black, And wrinkled deep in time? Broad-fronted Caesar,
When thou wast here above the ground I was A morsel for a monarch, and great Pompey Would stand and make his eyes grow in my brow;
There would he anchor his aspect and die With looking on his life.

Enter Alexes.

Alex. Sovereign of Egypt, hail!
Cleo. How much unlike art thou Mark Antony!
Yet, coming from him, that great medicine hath
With his tinct gilded thee. How goes it with my brave Mark Antony?
Alex. Last thing he did, dear queen, He kiss’d, the last of many doubled kisses, 40 This orient pearl. His speech sticks in my heart.
Cleo. Mine ear must pluck it thence. Alex. ‘Good friend,’ quoth he, ‘Say, the firm Roman to great Egypt sends This treasure of an oyster; at whose foot, To mend the petty present, I will piece Her opulent throne with kingdoms; all the east, Say thou, shall call her mistress.’ So he nodded, And soberly did mount an arm-gaunt steed, 49 Who neigh’d so high that what I would have spoke
Was beastly dumb’d by him.
Cleo. What! was he sad or merry?
Alex. Like to the time o’ the year between the extremes
Of hot and cold; he was nor sad nor merry. 52
Cleo. O well-divided disposition! Note him, Note him, good Charmian, ’tis the man; but note him:
He was not sad, for he would shine on those That make their looks by his; he was not merry, Which seem’d to tell them his remembrance lay In Egypt with his joy; but between both: O heavenly mingle! Be’st thou sad or merry, The violence of either thee becomes, So does it no man else. Met’t’st thou my poets?
Alex. Ay, madam, twenty several messengers. Why do you send so thick?
Cleo. Who’s born that day
When I forget to send to Antony, 64 Shall die a beggar. Ink and paper, Charmian, Welcome, my good Alexes. Did I, Charmian, Ever love Caesar so?
Char. Of that brave Caesar.
ACT I, Sc. V.  

ANTONY AND CLEOPATRA

Cleo. Be chok'd with such another emphasis!  
Say the brave Antony.  
Char. The valiant Caesar!  
Cleo. By this, I will give thee bloody teeth,  
If thou with Caesar paragon again  
My man of men.  
Char. By your most gracious pardon,  
I sing but after you.  
Cleo. My salad days,  
When I was green in judgment, cold in blood,  
To say as I said then! But come, away;  
Get me ink and paper:  
He shall have every day a several greeting,  
Or I'll unpeople Egypt.  
[Exeunt.

ACT II.

SCENE I.—Messina. A Room in Pompey’s House.

Enter Pompey, Menecrates, and Menas.

Pom. If the great gods be just, they shall assist  
The deeds of justest men.  
Mene. Know, worthy Pompey,  
That what they do delay, they not deny.  
Pom. While we are suitors to their throne,  
decays  
The thing we sue for.  
Mene. We, ignorant of ourselves,  
Beg often our own harms, which the wise powers  
Deny us for our good; so find we profit  
By losing of our prayers.  
Pom. I shall do well:  
The people love me, and the sea is mine;  
My powers are crescent, and my auguring hope  
Says it will come to the full. Mark Antony  
In Egypt sits at dinner, and will make  
No wars without doors; Caesar gets money  
where his love: hearts; Lepidus flatters both,  
Of both is flat’t: but he neither loves,  
Nor either cares for him.  
Mene. Caesar and Lepidus  
Are in the field; a mighty strength they carry.  
Pom. Where have you this? ’tis false.  
Mene. From Silvius, sir.  
Pom. He dreams; I know they are in Rome together,  
Looking for Antony. But all the charms of love,  
Salt Cleopatra, soften thy wan’d lip!  
Let witchcraft join with beauty, lust with both!  
Tie up the libertine in a field of feasts,  
Keep his brain fuming; Epicurean cooks  
Sharpen with cloysters same his appetite,  
That sleep and feeding may prorogue his honour  
Even till a Lethe’d dulness!  

Enter Varrius.

Var. How now, Varrius!  
This is most certain that I shall deliver:  
Mark Antony is every hour in Rome  
Expected; since he went from Egypt ‘tis  
A space for further travel.  
Pom. I could have given less matter  
A better ear. Menas, I did not think  
This amorous surfeiter would have donn’d his helm  
For such a petty war; his soldiership  
Is twice the other twain. But let us rear  
The higher our opinion, that our stirring  
Can from the lap of Egypt’s widow pluck  
The ne’er-lust-wearied Antony.  
Mene. I cannot hope  
Cesar and Antony shall well greeet together;  
His wife that’s dead did trespasses to Caesar,  
His brother warr’d upon him, although I think  
Not mov’d by Antony.  
Pom. I know not, Menas,  
How lesser enmities may give way to greater.  
Were ’t not that we stand up against them all  
’Twere pregnant they should square between themselves,  
For they have entertained cause enough  
To draw their swords; but how the fear of us  
May cement their divisions and bind up  
The petty differences, we yet not know.  
Be it as our gods will have ’t! It only stands  
Our lives upon, to use our strongest hands.  
Come, Menas.  
[Exeunt.


Enter Enobarbus and Lepidus.

Lep. Good Enobarbus, ’tis a worthy deed,  
And shall become you well, to entreat your captain  
To soft and gentle speech.  
Eno. I shall entreat him  
To answer like himself: if Caesar move him,  
Let Antony look over Caesar’s head,  
And speak as loud as Mars. By Jupiter,  
Were I the wearer of Antonius’ beard,  
I would not shave ’t to-day.  
Lep. ’Tis not a time  
For private stomaching.  
Eno. Every time  
Serves for the matter that is then born in ’t.  
Lep. But small to greater matters must give way.  
Eno. Not if the small come first.  
Lep. Your speech is passion;
But, pray you, stir no embers up. Here comes
The noble Antony.

Enter Antony and Ventidius.

Eno. And yonder, Caesar.

Enter Caesar, Mecenas, and Agrippa.

Ant. If we compose well here, to Parthia:
Hark ye, Ventidius.

Cas. I do not know,

Mecenas; ask Agrippa.

Lep. Noble friends,
That which combin’d us was most great, and
let not
A leaner action rend us. What’s amiss,
May it be gently heard; when we debate
Our trivial difference loud, we do commit
Murder in healing wounds; then, noble partners,—
The rather for I earnestly beseech,—
Touch you the sourest points with sweetest terms,
Nor curstness grow to the matter.

Ant. ’Tis spoken well.

Were we before our armes, and to fight,
I should do thus.

Cas. Welcome to Rome.

Ant. Thank you.

Cas. Sit.

Ant. Sit, sir.

Cas. Nay, then.

Ant. I learn, you take things ill which are not so,
Or being, concern you not.

Cas. I must be laugh’d at
If, or for nothing or a little, I
Should say myself offended, and with you
Chiefly i’ the world; more laugh’d at that I should
Once name you derogately, when to sound your name
It not concern’d me.

Ant. My being in Egypt, Caesar,

Cas. No more than my residing here at Rome
Might be to you in Egypt; yet, if you there
Did practise on my state, your being in Egypt
Might be my question.

Ant. How intend you, practis’d? You may be pleas’d to catch at mine intent
By what did here befall me. Your wife and brother
Made wars upon me, and their contestation
Was theme for you, you were the word of war.

Ant. You do mistake your business; my brother never
Did urge me in his act; I did inquire it;
And have my learning from some true reports,
That drew their swords with you. Did he not rather
Discredit my authority with yours,
And make the wars alike against my stomach,
Having alike your cause? Of this my letters
Before did satisfy you. If you’ll patch a quarrel,
As matter whole you n’ have to make it with,
It must not be with this.

Cas. You praise yourself
By laying defects of judgment to me, but
You patch’d up your excuses.

Ant. Not so, not so; I know you could not lack, I am certain on’t,
Very necessity of this thought, that I,
Your partner in the cause ’gainst which he fought,
Could not with graceful eyes attend those wars
Which fronted mine own peace. As for my wife,
I would you had her spirit in such-another:
The third o’ the world is yours, which with a snaffle
You may pace easy, but not such a wife.

Eno. Would we had all such wives, that the men might go to wars with the women!

Ant. So much uncurbable, her garboils,
Caesar,
Made out of her impatience,—which not wanted
Shrewdness of policy too,—I grieving grant
Did you too much disquiet; for that you must
But say I could not help it.

Cas. I wrote to you
When rioting in Alexandria; you
Did pocket up my letters, and with taunts
Did give my missive out of audience.

Ant. Sir,

He fell upon me, ere admitted: then
Three kings I had newly feasted, and did want
Of what I was i’ the morning; but next day
I told him of myself, which was as much
As to have ask’d him pardon. Let this fellow
Be nothing of our strife; if we contend,
Out of our question wipe him.

Cas. You have broken
The article of your oath, which you shall never
Have tongue to charge me with.

Lep. Soft, Caesar!

Ant. No,

Lepidus, let him speak:

The honour’s sacred which he talks on now,
Supposing that I lack’d it. But on, Caesar;
The article of my oath.
Antony and Cleopatra

Act II, Sc. II.

Cæs. To lend me arms and aid when I requir'd them. 92
The which you both denied.
Ant. Neglected, rather;
And then, when poison'd hours had bound me up
From mine own knowledge. As nearly as I may,
I'll play the penitent to you; but mine honesty
Shall not make poor my greatness, nor my power
97
Work without it. Truth is, that Fulvia,
To have me out of Egypt, made wars here;
For which myself, the ignorant motive, do 100
So far ask pardon as befits mine honour
To stoop in such a case.
Lep. 'Tis noble spoken.
Mec. If it might please you, to enforce no further
The griefs between ye: to forget them quite 104
Were to remember that the present need
Speaks to stone you.
Lep. Worthy spoken, Mæcænas,
Eno. Or, if you borrow one another's love for the instant, you may, when you hear no more words of Pompey, return it again: you shall have time to wrangle in when you have nothing else to do. 111
Ant. Thou art a soldier only; speak no more.
Eno. That truth should be silent I had almost forgot.
Ant. You wrong this presence; therefore speak no more.
Eno. Go to, then; your considerate stone. 116
Cæs. I do not much dislike the matter, but
The manner of his speech; for it cannot be
We shall remain in friendship, our conditions
So differing in their acts. Yet, if I knew 120
What hoop should hold us stanch, from edge to edge
O' the world I would purse it.
Agr. Give me leave, Caesar.
Cæs. Speak, Agrippa.
Agr. Thou hast a sister by the mother's side,
Admir'd Octavia; great Mark Antony 125
Is now a widower.
Cæs. Say not so, Agrippa:
If Cleopatra heard you, your reproof
Were well deserve'd of rashness. 128
Ant. I am not married, Caesar; let me hear
Agrippa further speak.
Agr. To hold you in perpetual amity,
To make you brothers, and to knit your hearts
132
With an unslipping knot, take Antony
Octavia to his wife; whose beauty claims
No worse a husband than the best of men,
Whose virtue and whose general graces speak

That which none else can utter. By this marriage,
All little jealousies which now seem great,
And all great fears which now import their dangers,
Would then be nothing; truths would be but tales
Where now half tales be truths; her love to both
Would each to other and all loves to both
Draw after her. Pardon what I have spoke,
For 'tis a studied, not a present thought. 144
By duty ruminated.
Ant. Will Caesar speak?
Cæs. Not till he hears how Antony is touch'd
With what is spoke already.
Ant. What power is in Agrippa,
If I would say, 'Agrippa, be it so,' 148
To make this good?
Cæs. The power of Caesar, and
His power unto Octavia.
Ant. May I never
To this good purpose, that so fairly shows,
Dream of impediment! Let me have thy hand;
Further this act of grace, and from this hour 153
The heart of brothers govern in our love.
And sway our great designs!
Cæs. There is my hand.
A sister I bequeath you, whom no brother
Did ever love so dearly; let her live 157
To join our kingdoms and our hearts, and never
Fly off our loves again!
Lep. Happily, amen!
Ant. I did not think to draw my sword
'gainst Pompey, 160
For he hath laid strange courtesies and great
Of late upon me; I must thank him only,
Lest my remembrance suffer ill report;
At heel of that, defy him.
Lep. Time calls upon 's: 164
Of us must Pompey presently be sought,
Or else he seeks out us.
Ant. Where lies he?
Cæs. About the Mount Misenum.
Ant. What's his strength
By land?
Cæs. Great and increasing; but by sea 168
He is an absolute master.
Ant. So is the fame.
Would we had spoke together! Haste we for it;
Yet, ere we put ourselves in arms, dispatch we
The business we have talk'd of.
Cæs. With most gladness; 172
And do invite you to my sister's view,
Whither straight I'll lead you.
Ant. Let us, Lepidus,
Not lack your company.
Lep. Noble Antony,
Not sickness should detain me. 176
[FLOURISH. EXEUNT CAESAR, ANTONY, and LEPIDUS.

Mec. Welcome from Egypt, sir.
Eno. Half the heart of Caesar, worthy Mecenas! My honourable friend, Agrippa!
Agr. Good Enobarbus!
Mec. We have cause to be glad that matters are so well digested. You stayed well by 't in Egypt.
Eno. Ay, sir; we did sleep day out of countenance, and made the night light with drinking.
Mec. Eight wild boars roasted whole at a breakfast, and but twelve persons there; is this true?

Eno. This was but as a fly by an eagle; we had much more monstrous matter of feast, which worthy deserved noting.

Mec. She's a most triumphant lady, if report be square to her.

Eno. When she first met Mark Antony she pursed up his heart, upon the river of Cydnus. Agr. There she appeared indeed, or my reporter devised well for her.

Eno. I will tell you.
The barge she sat in, like a burnish'd throne,
Burn'd on the water; the poop was beaten gold,
Purple the sails, and so perfumed, that
The winds were love-sick with them, the oars
Which to the tune of flutes kept stroke, and made
The water which they beat to follow faster, 204
As amorous of their strokes. For her own person,
It beggar'd all description; she did lie
In her pavilion,—cloth-of-gold of tissue,—
O'er-picturing that Venus where we see
The fancy outwork nature; on each side her
Stood pretty-dimpled boys, like smiling Cupids,
With divers-colour'd fans, whose wind did seem
To blow the delicate cheeks which they did cool,
And what they undid.

Agr. O! rare for Antony. 213
Eno. Her gentlewomen, like the Nereides,
So many mermaids, tended her i' the eyes,
And made their bends adorning; at the helm
A seeming mermaid steers; the silken tackle
Swell with the touches of those flower-soft hands,
That rarely frame the office. From the barge
A strange invisible perfume hits the sense
Of the adjacent wharfs. The city cast
Her people out upon her, and Antony,
Enthron'd i' the market-place, did sit alone,
Whistling to the air; which, but for vacancy,

Had gone to gaze on Cleopatra too
And made a gap in nature.

Agr. Rare Egyptian!
Eno. Upon her landing, Antony sent to her,
Invited her to supper; she replied
It should be better he became her guest,
Which she entreated. Our courteous Antony,
Whom ne'er the word of 'No' woman heard speak,
Being barber'd ten times o'er, goes to the feast,
And, for his ordinary pays his heart
For what his eyes eat only.

Agr. Royal wench!
She made great Caesar lay his sword to bed;
He plough'd her, and she cropp'd.

Eno. I saw her once
Hop forty paces through the public street;
And having lost her breath, she spoke, and panted
That she did make defect perfection,
And, breathless, power breathe forth.

Mec. Now Antony must leave her utterly.

Eno. Never; he will not:
Age cannot wither her, nor custom stale
Her infinite variety; other women cloy
The appetites they feed, but she makes hungry
Where most she satisfies; for vilen things
Become themselves in her, that the holy priests
Bless her when she is riggish.

Mec. If beauty, wisdom, modesty, can settle
The heart of Antony, Octavia is
A blessed lottery to him.

Agr. Let us go.

Good Enobarbus, make yourself my guest
Whilst you abide here.

Eno. Humbly, sir, I thank you.

[EXEUNT.

SCENE III.—The Same  A Room in CAESAR'S House.

Enter CAESAR, ANTONY, OCTAVIA between them;
Attendants.

Ant. The world and my great office will sometimes
Divide me from your bosom.

Oct. All which time
Before the gods my knee shall bow my prayers
To them for you.

Ant. Good night, sir. My Octavia, 4
Read not my blumishes in the world's report;
I have not kept my square, but that to come
Shall all be done by the rule. Good night, dear lady.

Oct. Good night, sir.

CAESAR. Good night.

[EXEUNT CAESAR AND OCTAVIA,
ACT II, SC. III.

ANTONY AND CLEOPATRA

Enter Soothsayer.

Ant. Now, sirs; you do wish yourself in Egypt?
Sooth. Would I had never come from thence, nor you
Thither!

Thou, if you can, your reason?

Sooth. I see it in
My motion; have it not in my tongue; but yet
His you to Egypt again.

Ant. Say to me,
Whose fortunes shall rise higher, Caesar’s or mine?

Sooth. Caesar’s.
Therefore, O Antony! stay not by his side;
Thy demon—that’s thy spirit which keeps thee,
is
Noble, courageous, high, unmatchable;
Where Caesar’s is not; but near him thy angel
Becomes a fear, as being overpowered; therefore
Make space enough between you.

Ant. Speak this no more.

Sooth. To none but thee; no more but when to thee.

If thou dost play with him at any game
Thou art sure to lose, and, of that natural luck,
Beats thee ’gainst the odds; thy lustre
Thickens
When he shines by. I say again, thy spirit
Is all afraid to govern thee near him,
But he away, ’tis noble.

Ant. Get thee gone;
Say to Ventidius I would speak with him.

[Exit Soothsayer.

He shall to Parthia. Be it art or hap
He hath spoken true; the very dice obey him.
And in our sports my sport burns faints
Under his chance; if we draw lots he speeds,
His cock do win the battle still of mine
When it is all to nought, and his quails ever
Beat mine, in hoop’d, at odds. I will to Egypt;
And though I make this marriage for my peace,
I e’er my pleasure lies.

Enter VENTIDIUS.

O! come, Ventidius, you must to Parthia; your commission’s ready;
Follow me, and receive ’t.

[Exeunt.

SCENE IV.—The Same. A Street.

Enter LEPIIUS, MECAENAS, and AGrippa.

Lep. Trouble yourselves no further; pray you hasten
Your generals after.

Agr. Sir, Mark Antony
Will come but kiss Octavia, and we’ll follow.

Lep. Till I shall see you in your soldier’s dress,
Which will become you both, farewell.

Mec. We shall, as I conceive the journey, be at the Mount
Before you, Lepidus.

Lep. Your way is shorter;
My purposes do draw me much about:

You’ll win two days upon me.

Mec. Sir, good success!

Lep. Farewell.

[Exeunt.

SCENE V.—Alexandria. A Room in the Palace.

Enter CLEOPATRA, CHARMIAN, IRAS, ALEXAS, and Attendant.

Cleo. Give me some music; music, moody

Of us that trade in love.

Attend. The music, ho!

Enter MARDIAN.

Cleo. Let it alone; let’s to billiards: come, Charmian.

Char. My arm is sore; best play with Mardian.

Cleo. As well a woman with a eunuch play’d
As with a woman. Come, you’ll play with me, sir?

Mar. As well as I can, madam.

Cleo. And when good will is show’d, though’t
come too short,
The actor may plead pardon. I’ll none now.
Give me mine angle; we’ll to the river: there—
My music playing far off—I will betray
Tawny-finn’d fishes; my bended hook shall pierce
Their slimy jaws; and, as I draw them up,
I’ll think them every one an Antony,
And say, ‘Ah, ha!’ you’re caught.

Char. ’Twas merry when
You wager’d on your angling; when your diver
Did hang a salt-fish on his hook, which he
With fervency drew up.

Cleo. That time—O times!—
I laugh’d him out of patience; and that night
I laugh’d him into patience: and next morn, so
Ere the ninth hour, I drunken him to his bed;
Then put my tires and mantles on him, whilst
I wore his sword Philphan.

Enter a Messenger.

O! from Italy;

Ram! thy fruitful tidings in mine ears,
That long time have been barren.

Mess. Madam, madam,
Cleo. Antony's dead! if thou say so, villain, 
Thou kill'st thy mistress; but well and free, 
If thou so yield him, there is gold, and here 28 
My bluest veins to kiss; a hand that kings 
Have lipp'd, and trembled kissing.  
**Mess.** First, madam, he is well. 
Cleo. Why, there's more gold. 
But, sirrah, mark, we use 32 
To say the dead are well: bring it to that, 
The gold I give thee will I melt, and pour 
Down thy ill-uttering throat.  
**Mess.** Good madam, hear me. 
Cleo. Well, go to, I will; 36 
But there's no goodness in thy face; if An-
Tony 
Be free and healthful, so tart a favour 
To trumpet such good tidings! if not well, 
Thou shouldst come like a Fury crown'd with 
snakes, 40 
Not like a formal man.  
**Mess.** Will 't please you hear me? 
Cleo. I have a mind to strike thee ere thou 
speak'st: 
Yet, if thou say Antony lives, is well, 
Or friends with Caesar, or not captive to him, 
I'll set thee in a shower of gold, and hail 45 
Rich pearls upon thee.  
**Mess.** Madam, he's well. 
Cleo. Well said. 
**Mess.** And friends with Caesar. 
Cleo. Thou'rt an honest man.  
**Mess.** Caesar and he are greater friends than 
ever. 48 
Cleo. Make thes a fortune from me.  
**Mess.** But yet, madam,——  
Cleo. I do not like 'but yet,' it does allay 
The good precedence; tie upon 'but yet!' 
'But yet' is as a goar to bring forth 52 
Some monstrous malefactor. Frithe, friend, 
Pour out the pack of matter to mine ear, 
The good and bad together. He's friends with 
Caesar; 
In state of health, thou sayst; and thou sayst, 
free. 56 
**Mess.** Free, madam! no; I made no such 
report: 
He's bound unto Octavia. 
Cleo. For what good turn?  
**Mess.** For the best turn i' the bed. 
Cleo. I am pale, Charmian!  
**Mess.** Madam, he's married to Octavia. 60 
Cleo. The most infectious pestilence upon 
thee! [Strikes him down. 
**Mess.** Good madam, patience. 
Cleo. What say you? Hence,  
[Strikes him again.  
Horrible villain! or I'll spurn thine eyes 
Like balls before me; I'll unhair thy head: 64 
[She hales him up and down. 
Thou shalt be whipp'd with wire, and stew'd in 
brine, 
Smarting in lingering pickle.  
**Mess.** Gracious madam, 
I, that do bring the news made not the 
match, 
Cleo. Say 'tis not so, a province I will give 
thee, 68 
And make thy fortunes proud; the blow thou 
hadst 
Shall make thy peace for moving me to rage, 
And I will boot thee with what gift beside 
Thy modesty can beg.  
**Mess.** He's married, madam. 72 
Cleo. Rogue! thou hast liv'd too long. 
[Draws a knife. 
**Mess.** Nay, then I'll run. 
What mean you, madam? I have made no 
fault.  
[Exit. 
**Char.** Good madam, keep yourself within 
yourself; 
The man is innocent. 76 
Cleo. Some innocents 'scape not the thunder-
bolt. 
Melt Egypt into Nile! and kindly creatures 
Turn all to serpents! Call the slave again! 
Though I am mad, I will not bite him. Call. 80 
**Char.** He is afraid to come. 
Cleo. I will not hurt him.  
[Exit CHARMIAN. 
These hands do lack nobility, that they strike 
A meaner than myself; since I myself 
Have given myself the cause. 

Re-enter CHARMIAN, and Messenger. 

Come hither, sir. 84 
Though it be honest, it is never good 
To bring bad news; give to a gracious message 
A host of tongues, but let ill tidings tell 
Themselves when they be felt.  
**Mess.** I have done my duty. 
Cleo. Is he married? 89 
I cannot hate thee worse than I do 
If thou again say 'Yes.' 
**Mess.** He's married, madam.  
Cleo. The gods confound thee! dost thou 
hold there still? 92 
**Mess.** Should I lie, madam? 
Cleo. 0! I would thou didst, 
So half my Egypt were submers'd and made 
A cistern for seal'd snakes. Go, get thee hence; 
Hadst thou Narcissus in thy face, to me 96 
Thou wouldst appear most ugly. He is married? 
**Mess.** I crave your highness' pardon. 
Cleo. He is married?
Mess. Take no offence that I would not offend you; To punish me for what you make me do 100 Seems much unequal; he's married to Octavia. Cleo. O! that his fault should make a knave of thee, That art not what thou'rt sure of. Get thee hence; The merchandise which thou hast brought from Rome 104 Are all too dear for me; lie they upon thy hand And be undone by 'em!  [Exit Messenger. Char. Good your highness, patience. Cleo. In praising Antony I have disprais'd Caesar. Char. Many times, madam. Cleo. I am paid for 't now, 108 Lead me from hence; I faint. O Ira! Charmian! 'Tis no matter. Go to the fellow, good Alexa's; bid him Report the feature of Octavia, her years, 112 Her inclination, let him not leave out The colour of her hair: bring me word quickly.  [Exit ALEXAS. Let him forevergo:—let him not—Charmian!— Though he be painted one way like a Gorgon, The other way's a Mars. [To MARDIAN.] Bid you Alexa's 117 Bring me word how tall she is. Pity me, Charmian, But do not speak to me. Lead me to my chamber.  [Exeunt.]

SCENE VI.—Near Misenum.

Flourish. Enter POMPEY and MENAS, at one side, with drum and trumpet; at the other, CESAR, ANTONY, LEPIDUS, ENOBARBUS, MECENAS, with Soldiers marching.  Pom. Your hostages I have, so have you mine; And we shall talk before we fight.  Cas. Most meet That first we come to words, and therefore have we Our written purposes before us sent; Which if thou hast consider'd, let us know If 'twill tie up thy discontented sword, And carry back to Sicily much tail youth That else must perish here.  Pom. To you all three, 8 The senators alone of this great world, Chief factors for the gods, I do not know Wherefore my father should revengers want, Having a son and friends; since Julius Caesar, Who at Philippi the good Brutus ghosted, 13 There saw you labouring for him. What was 't That mov'd pale Cassius to conspire? and what Made the all-honour'd, honest Roman, Brutus, With the arm'd rest, courtiers of beauteous freedom, 17 To drench the Capitol, but that they would Have one man but a man? And that is it Hath made me rig my navy, at whose burden 20 The anger'd ocean foams, with which I meant To scourge the ingratitude that despiteful Rome Cast on my noble father.  Cas. Take your time. Ant. Thou canst not fear us, Pompey, with thy sails; 24 We'll speak with thee at sea: at land, thou know'st How much we do o'er-count thee.  Pom. At land, indeed, Thou dost o'er-count me of my father's house; But, since the cuckoo builds not for himself, 28 Remain in 't as thou mayst.  Lep. Be pleas'd to tell us— For this is from the present—how you take The offers we have sent you.  Cas. There's the point. Ant. Which do not be entreated to, but weigh 32 What it is worth embrac'd.  Cas. And what may follow, To try a larger fortune.  Pom. You have made me offer Of Sicily, Sardinia; and I must Rid all the sea of pirates; then, to send Measures of wheat to Rome; this 'greed upon, To part with unback'd edges, and bear back Our targets undinted.  Cas. That's our offer.  Ant. I have heard it, Pompey; And am well studied for a liberal thanks Which I do owe you.  Pom. Let me have your hand: 45 I did not think, sir, to have met you here. Ant. The beds i' the east are soft; and thanks to you, That call'd me timelier than my purpose hither,
ANTONY AND CLEOPATRA Act II, Sc. VI.

For I have gain’d by ’t.
Ces. Since I saw you last, 52
There is a change upon you.
Pom. Well, I know not
What counts harsh Fortune casts upon my face,
But in my bosom shall she never come
To make my heart her vassal.
Lep. Well met here. 56
Pom. I hope so, Lepidus. Thus we are agreed.
I crave our composition may be written
And seal’d between us.
Ces. That ‘s the next to do.
Pom. We ’ll feast each other ere we part; and let’s
Draw lots who shall begin.
Ant. That will I, Pompey.
Pom. No, Antony, take the lot:
But, first or last, your fine Egyptian cookery
Shall have the fame. I have heard that Julius
Cæsar
Grew fat with feasting there.
Ant. You have heard much.
Pom. I have fair meanings, sir.
Ant. And fair words to them.
Pom. Then, so much have I heard;
And I have heard Apollodorus carried— 68
Eno. No more of that: he did so.
Pom. I know thee now; how far st thou, soldier?
Eno. Well;
And well am like to do; for I perceive 72
Four feasts are toward.
Pom. Let me shake thy hand;
I never hated thee. I have seen thee fight,
When I had envied thy behaviour.
Eno. Sir,
I never lov’d you much, but I ha’ prais’d ye 76
When you have well deserv’d ten times as much
As I have said you did.
Pom. Enjoy thy plainness,
It nothing ill becomes thee.
Aboard my galley I invite you all: 80
Will you lead, lords?
Ces. 
Ant. 
Lep. 
Pom. 
Eno. At sea, I think.
Men. We have, sir.
Eno. You have done well by water.
Men. And you by land.

Eno. I will praise any man that will praise me; though it cannot be denied what I have done by land.
Men. Nor what I have done by water.
Eno. Yes, something you can deny for your own safety; you have been a great thief by sea.
Men. And you by land.
Eno. There I deny my land service. But give me your hand, Menas; if our eyes had authority, here they might take two thieves kissing.
Men. All men’s faces are true, whatsoe’er their hands are.
Eno. But there is never a fair woman has a true face.
Men. No slander; they steal hearts.
Eno. We came hither to fight with you.
Men. For my part, I am sorry it is turned to a drinking. Pompey doth this day laugh away his fortune.
Eno. If he do, sure, he cannot weep it back again.
Men. You have said, sir. We looked not for Mark Antony here: pray you, is he married to Cleopatra?
Eno. Caesar’s sister is called Octavia.
Men. True, sir; she was the wife of Caius Marcellus.
Eno. But she is now the wife of Marcus Antonius.
Men. Pray ye, sir?
Eno. ’Tis true.
Men. Then is Caesar and he for ever knit together.
Eno. If I were bound to divine of this unity,
I would not prophesy so.
Men. I think the policy of that purpose made more in the marriage than the love of the parties.
Eno. I think so too; but you shall find the hand that seems to tie their friendship together will be the very strangler of their amity. Octavia is of a holy, cold, and still conversation.
Men. Who would not have his wife so?
Eno. Not he that himself is not so; which is Mark Antony. He will to his Egyptian dish again; then, shall the sighs of Octavia blow the fire up in Caesar, and, as I said before, that which is the strength of their amity shall prove the immediate author of their variance. Antony will use his affection where it is; he married but his occasion here.
Men. And thus it may be. Come, sir, will you aboard? I have a health for you.
Eno. I shall take it, sir: we have used our throats in Egypt.
Men. Come; let’s away. 

[Exeunt.
SCENE VII.—On board Pompey’s Galley off Misenum.

Music. Enter two or three Servants, with a banquet.

First Serv. Here they’ll be, man. Some o’ their plants are ill-rooted already; the least wind i’ the world will blow them down.

Sec. Serv. Lepidus is high-coloured.

First Serv. They have made him drink alms-drink.

Sec. Serv. As they pinch one another by the disposition, he cries out, ‘No more;’ reconciles them to his entreaty, and himself to the drink.

First Serv. But it raises the greater war between him and his discretion.

Sec. Serv. Why, this it is to have a name in great men’s fellowship; I had as lief have a reed that will do me no service as a partisan I could not heave.

First Serv. To be called into a huge sphere, and not to be seen to move in’t, are the holes where eyes should be, which pitifully disaster the cheeks.

A senet sounded. Enter CAESAR, ANTONY, LEPIDUS, POMPEY, AGrippa, MECEMNAS, ENOBARBUS, MENAS, with other Captains.

Ant. Thus do they, sir. They take the flow o’ the Nile

By certain scales i’ the pyramid; they know
By the height, the lowness, or the mean, if deearth

Or poison follow. The higher Nilus swells
The more it promises; as it ebbs, the seedman
Upon the slime and ooze scatters his grain,

And shortly comes to harvest.

Lep. You’ve strange serpents there.

Ant. Ay, Lepidus.

Lep. Your serpent of Egypt is bred now of your mud by the operation of your sun; so is your crocodile.

Ant. They are so.

Pom. Sit,—and some wine! A health to Lepidus!

Lep. I am not so well as I should be, but I’ll set out.

Ent. Not till you have slept; I fear me you’ll be in till then.

Lep. Nay, certainly, I have heard the Ptolemies’ pyramids are very goodly things; without contradiction, I have heard that.

Men. Pompey, a word.

Pom. Say in mine ear; what is’t?

Men. Forsake thy seat, I do beseech thee, captain,

And hear me speak a word.

Pom. Forbear me till anon.

This wine for Lepidus!

Lep. What manner o’ thing is your crocodile?

Ant. It is shaped, sir, like itself, and it is as broad as it hath breadth; it is just so high as it is, and moves with it own organs; it lives by that which nourisheth it; and the elements once out of it, it transmigrates.

Lep. What colour is it of?

Ant. Of it own colour too.

Lep. ’Tis a strange serpent.

Ant. ’Tis so; and the tears of it are wet.

Caes. Will this description satisfy him?

Ant. With the health that Pompey gives him, else he is a very epicure.

Pom. Go hang, sir, hang! Tell me of that away!

Do as I bid you. Where’s this cup I call’d for?

Men. If for the sake of merit thou wilt hear me,

Rise from thy stool.


Men. I have ever held my cap off to thy fortunes.

Pom. Thou hast serv’d me with much faith.

What’s else to say?

Be jolly, lords.

Ant. These quick-sands, Lepidus,

Keep off them, for you sink.

Men. Wilt thou be lord of all the world?

Pom. What sayst thou? 6s

Men. Wilt thou be lord of the whole world? That’s twice.

Pom. How should that be?

Men. But entertain it,

And though thou think me poor, I am the man

Will give thee all the world.

Pom. Hast thou drunk well? 7s

Men. No, Pompey, I have kept me from the cup.

Thou art, if thou dar’st be, the earthy Jove:
What’er the ocean pales, or sky inclips,
Is thine, if thou wilt ha’.

Pom. Show me which way.

Men. These three world-sharers, these competitors,

Are in thy vessel: let me cut the cable;
And, when we are put off, fall to their throats:
All there is thine.

Pom. Ah! this thou shouldst have done,

And not have spoke on’t. In me’tis villany;

In thee’t had been good service. Thou must know
ACT III, SC. I.

Tis not my profit that does lead mine honour;
Mine honour it. Repent that e'er thy tongue
Hath so betray'd thine act; being done unknown,
I should have found it afterwards well done,
But must condemn it now. Desist, and drink.

Men. [Aside.] For this, I'll never follow thy pall'd fortunes more.
Who seeks, and will not take when once 'tis offered,
Shall never find it more.

Pom. This health to Lepidus!
Ant. Bear him ashore. I'll pledge it for him,
Pompey.

Eno. Here's to thee, Menas!
Men. Enobarbus, welcome!

Pom. Fill till the cup be hid.
Eno. There's a strong fellow, Menas.
[Pointing to the Attendant who carries off LEPIDUS.

Men. Why?

Eno. A' bears the third part of the world,
man; see'st not?

Men. The third part then is drunk; would it were all,
That it might go on wheels!

Eno. Drink thou; increase the reels.

Men. Come.

Pom. This is not yet an Alexandrian feast.
Ant. It ripens towards it. Strike the vessels, ho!

Here is to Caesar!

Cas. I could well forbear't.
It's monstrous labour, when I wash my brain,
And it grows fouler.

Ant. Be a child o' the time.
Cas. Possess it, I'll make answer;
But I had rather fast from all four days
Than drink so much in one.

Eno. [To Antony.] Ha! my brave emperor;
Shall we dance now the Egyptian Bacchanals,
And celebrate our drink?

Pom. Let's ha't, good soldier.

Ant. Come, let's all take hands,
Till that the conquering wine hath steep'd our sense
In soft and delicate Letha.

Eno. All take hands.
Make battery to our ears with the loud music;

The while I'll place you; then the boy shall sing,
The holding every man shall bear as loud
As his strong sides can volley.

[Music plays. ENOBARBUS places them hand in hand.

SONG.

Come, thou monarch of the vine,
Plumpy Bacchus, with pink eyne!
In thy Yang our cares be drown'd,
With thy grapes our hairs be crown'd:
Cup us, till the world go round,
Cup us, till the world go round!

Cas. What would you more? Pompey, good night. Good brother,
Let me request you off; our graver business
Frowns at this levity. Gentile lords, let's part;
You see we have burnt our cheeks; strong
We are weak, the mine own tongue
Splits what it speaks; the wild disguise hath almost
Antick'd us all. What needs more words? Good night.

Good Antony, your hand.

Pom. I'll try you on the shore.
Ant. And shall, sir. Give's your hand.

Pom. O, Antony! You have my father's house,—But, what? we are friends.
Come down into the boat.

Eno. Take heed you fall not.

[Exeunt Pompey, Caesar, Antony, and Attendants.

Menas, I'll not on shore.

Men. No, to my cabin.
These drums! these trumpets, flutes! what!
Let Neptune hear we bid a loud farewell
To these great fellows: sound and be hang'd! sound out!

[A flourish of trumpets with drums.

Eno. Hoo! says a'. There's my cap.
Men. Hoo! noble captain! come. [Exeunt

ACT III.

SCENE I.—A Plain in Syria.

Enter VENTIDIUS, in triumph, with SILLUS and other Romans, Officers, and Soldiers; the dead body of PACOBUS borne before him.

Ven. Now, darting Parthia, art thou struck; and now
Plead'st fortune does of Marcus Crassus' death
Make me revenger. Bear the king's son's body
Before our army. Thy Pacorus, Orodes, PAYS this for Marcus Crassus.
SIL. Noble Ventidius,
Whilst yet with Parthian blood thy sword is warm,
The fugitive Parthians follow; spur through Media,
Mesopotamia, and the shelters whither
The routed fly; so thy grand captain Antony
Shall set thee on triumphant chariots and
Act III, Sc. I.

ANTONY AND CLEOPATRA

Put garlands on thy head.

Ven. O Silius, Silius!
I have done enough; a lower place, note well, to
May make too great an act; for learn this,
Silius,
Better to leave undone than by our deed
Acquire too high a fame when he we serve's
away.

Caesar and Antony have ever won
More in their officer than person; Sossiuri,
One of my place in Syria, his lieutenant,
For quick accumulation of renown,
Which he achiev'd by the minute, lost his
favour.

Who does'the wars more than his captain can
Becomes his captain's captain; and ambition,
The soldier's virtue, rather makes choice of less
Than gain which darkens him.

I could do more to do Antonius good,
But 'twould offend him; and in his offence
Should my performance perish.

Silius. Thou hast, Ventidius, that
Without the which a soldier, and his sword,
Grants scarce distinction. Thou wilt write to
Antony?

Ven. I'll humbly signify what in his name,
That magical word of war, we have effected;
How, with his banners and his well-paid ranks,
The ne'er-yet-beaten horse of Parthia
We have jaded out o' the field.

Silius. Where is he now?

Ven. He purposeth to Athens; whither, with
The weight we must convey with's will permit,
We shall appear before him. On, there; pass
along. [Exeunt.


Enter Agrippa and Enobarbus, meeting.

Agrippa. What are the brothers parted?

Enobarbus. They have dispatch'd with Pompey;
he is gone;
The other three are sealing. Octavia weeps
To part from Rome; Caesar is sad; and Lepidus,
Since Pompey's feast, as Menas says, is troubled
With the green sickness.

Agrippa. Tis a noble Lepidus.

Enobarbus. A very fine one. O! how he loves
Caesar.

Agrippa. Nay, but how dearly he adores Mark
Antony!

Agrippa. What is Antony? The god of Jupiter.

Enobarbus. Speak you of Caesar? How! the non-
pareil!

Agrippa. O, Antony! O thou Arabian bird!

Enobarbus. Would you praise Caesar, say, 'Caesar,'
go no further.

Agrippa. Indeed, he plied them both with ex-
cellent praises.

Enobarbus. But he loves Caesar best; yet he loves
Antony.

Hoo! hearts, tongues, figures, scribes, boards,
poets, cannot
Think, speak, cast, write, sing, number; hoo!
His love to Antony. But as for Caesar,
Kneel down, kneel down, and wonder.

Agrippa. Both he loves.

Enobarbus. They are his shreds, and he their beetle.

[Trumpets within.] So;

This is to horse. Adieu, noble Agrippa.

Agrippa. Good fortune, worthy soldier, and farewell.

Enter Caesar, Antony, Lepidus, and Octavia.

Antony. No further, sir.

Caesar. You take from me a great part of
myself;
Use me well in't. Sister, prove such a wife
As my thoughts make thee, and as my furthest
band
Shall pass on thy approbation. Most noble Antony,
Let not the piece of virtue, which is set
Betwixt us as the cement of our love
To keep it builded, be the ram to batter
The fortress of it; for better might we
Have lov'd without this mean, if on both parts
This be not cherish'd.

Antony. Make me not offended
In your distrust.

Caesar. I have said.

Antony. You shall not find,
Though you be therein curious, the least cause
For what you seem to fear. So, the gods keep you,
And make the hearts of Romans serve your ends;
We will here part.

Caesar. Farewell, my dearest sister, fare thee
well:
The elements be kind to thee, and make
Thy spirits all of comfort! fare thee well.

Octavia. My noble brother!

Antony. The April's in her eyes; it is love's
spring,
And these the showers to bring it on. Be

Octavia. Chearful.

Octavia. Sir, look well to my husband's house; and—

Caesar. What?

Octavia. I'll tell you in your ear.

Antony. Her tongue will not obey her heart,
not can
Her heart obey her tongue; the swan’s down-feather,
That stands upon the swell at full of tide,
And neither way inclines.

Eno. [Aside to Agrippa.] Will Caesar weep?
Agr. He has a cloud in his face.
Eno. He were the worse for that were he a horse;
So is he, being a man.

Agr. Why, Enobarbus,
When Antony found Julius Caesar dead
He cried almost to roaring; and he wept
When at Philippi he found Brutus slain.
Eno. That year, indeed, he was troubled
With a rheum;
What willingly he did confound he wail’d,
Believe ’t, till I wept too.

Caes. No, sweet Octavia,
You shall hear from me still; the time shall not
Outgo my thinking on you.

Ant. Come, sir, come; I’ll wrestle with you in my strength of love:
Look, here I have you; thus I let you go,
And give you to the gods.

Caes. Adieu; be happy! Let all the number of the stars give
To thy fair way!

Caes. Farewell, farewell! [Kisses Octavia.]

Ant. Farewell! [Trumpets sound. Exeunt.]

Scene III.—Alexandria. A Room in the Palace.

Enter Cleopatra, Charmian, Iras, and Alexas.

Cleo. Where is the fellow?
Alex. Half afeard to come.
Cleo. Go to, go to.

Enter a Messenger.
Come hither, sir.

Alex. Good majesty, Herod of Jewry dare not look upon you
But when you are well pleas’d.
Cleo. That Herod’s head I’ll have; but how, when Antony is gone
Through whom I might command it? Come thou near.

Mess. Most gracious majesty!

Cleo. Didst thou behold Octavia?
Mess. Ay, dread queen.
Cleo. Where?
Mess. Madam, in Rome; I look’d her in the face, and saw her led
Between her brother and Mark Antony.

Cleo. Is she as tall as me?
Mess. She is not, madam.
Cleo. Didst hear her speak? is she shrill-tongu’d, or low?
Mess. Madam, I heard her speak; she is low-voic’d.
Cleo. That’s not so good. He cannot like her long.

Char. Like her! O Isis! ’tis impossible.
Cleo. I think so, Charmian: dull of tongue, and dwarfish!
What majesty is in her gait? Remember,
If e’er thou look’dst on majesty.

Mess. She creeps;
Her motion and her station are as one;
She shows a body rather than a life, A statue than a breather.

Cleo. Is this certain?
Mess. Or I have no observance.
Char. Three in Egypt Cannot make better note.
Cleo. He’s very knowing,
I do perceive ’t. There’s nothing in her yet.
The fellow has good judgment.

Char. Excellent.
Cleo. Guess at her years, I prithee.
Mess. Madam, She was a widow,—
Mess. Widow! Charmian, hark.
Cleo. And I do think she’s thirty.
Cleo. Bear’st thou her face in mind? is ’t long
Or round?
Mess. Round even to faultiness.
Cleo. For the most part, too, they are foolish
That are so.
Her hair, what colour?

Mess. Brown, madam; and her forehead
As low as she would wish it.

Cleo. There’s gold for thee:
Thou must not take my former sharpness ill.
I will employ thee back again; I find thee
Most fit for business. Go, make thee ready;
Our letters are prepar’d. [Exit Messenger.

Char. A proper man.
Cleo. Indeed, he is so; I repent me much
That so I harried him. Why, methinks, by him,
This creature’s no such thing.

Char. Nothing, madam.

Cleo. The man hath seen some majesty, and
should know.
Char. Hath he seen majesty? Isis else defend,
And serving you so long!
Cleo. I have one thing more to ask him yet,
good Charmian:
But 'tis no matter; thou shalt bring him to me
Where I will write. All may be well enough. [Exit.
Char. I warrant you, madam. [Exeunt.

SCENE IV.—Athens. A Room in Antony's House.

Enter Antony and Octavia.

Ant. Nay, nay, Octavius, not only that,
That were excusable, that, and thousands more
Of semblable import, but he hath wag'd
New wars 'gainst Pompey; made his will, and
read it
To public ear:
Spoke scantly of me; when performe he could not
But pay me terms of honour, cold and sickly
He vented them; most narrow measure lent me;
When the best hint was given him, he not took 't,
Or did it from his teeth.

Oct. O my good lord!
Believe not all; or, if you must believe,
Stomach not all. A more unhappy lady,
If this division chance, ne'er stood between,
Praying for both parts:
The god of love will mock me presently,
When I shall pray, 'O! bless my lord and husband;'

Undo that prayer, by crying out as loud,
'O! bless my brother!' Husband win, win brother,
Prays, and destroys the prayer; no midway
'Twixt these extremes at all.

Ant. Gentle Octavia, let your best love draw to that point which
seeks
Best to preserve it. If I lose mine honour
I lose myself; better I were not yours
Than yours so branchless. But, as you re-
quested,
Yourself shall go between's; the mean time,
lady,
I'll raise the preparation of a war
Shall stain your brother; make your soonest haste,
So your desires are yours.

Oct. Thanks to my lord. The
the Jove of power make me most weak, most weak,
Your reconciler! Wars 'twixt you twain would be
As if the world should cleave, and that slain
men
Should sodder up the rift.

Ant. When it appears to you where this begins,
Turn your displeasure that way; for our faults
Can never be so equal that your love,
Can equally move with them. Provide your going;
Choose your own company, and command what cost
Your heart has mind to. [Exeunt.

SCENE V.—The Same. Another Room.

Enter Enobarbus and Eros, meeting.

Eno. How now, friend Eros!
Eros. There's strange news come, sir.
Eno. What, man?
Eros. Cæsar and Lepidus have made wars upon Pompey.

Eno. This is old: what is the success?
Eros. Cæsar, having made use of him in the
wars 'gainst Pompey, presently denied him
rivalry, would not let him partake in the glory
of the action; and not resting here, accuses him
of letters he had formerly wrote to Pompey;
upon his own appeal, seizes him: so the poor
third is up, till death enlarge his confine.

Eno. Then, world, thou hast a pair of chaps,
no more;
And throw between them all the food thou hast,
They'll grind the one the other. Where's
Antony?

Eros. He's walking in the garden—thus:
spurns
The rush that lies before him; cries, 'Fool,
Lepidus!'
And threats the throat of that his officer
That murder'd Pompey.

Eno. Our great navy's rigg'd.
Eros. For Italy and Cæsar. More, Domitius;
My lord desires you presently: my news
I might have told hereafter.

Eno. 'Twill be naught;
But let it be. Bring me to Antony. [Exeunt.
Eros. Come, sir.

SCENE VI.—Rome. A Room in Caesar's House.

Enter Cæsar, Agrrippa, and Mecenas.

Ces. Contemning Rome, he has done all this
and more
In Alexandria; here's the manner of it;
I the market-place, on a tribunal silver'd,
Cleopatra and himself in chairs of gold
Wore publicly enthron'd; at the feet sat
Cæsarion, whom they call my father's son,
And all the unlawful issue that their lust
Since then hath made between them. Unto her
He gave the 'establishment of Egypt; made her 9
Of Lower Syria, Cyprus, Lydia, Absolute queen.

_Mec._ This in the public eye?

_Cas._ I the common show-place, where they exercise. 12

His sons he there proclaim'd the kings of kings;
Great Media, Parthia, and Armenia
He gave to Alexander; to Ptolemy he assign'd
Syria, Cilicia, and Phoenicia. She 16
In the habitments of the goddess Isis
That day appear'd; and oft before gave audience,
As 'tis reported, so.

_Mec._ Let Rome be thus Informed.

_Agr._ Who, queasy with his insolence 20
Already, will their good thoughts call from him.

_Cas._ The people know it; and have now receiv'd
His accusations.

_Agr._ Whom does he accuse?

_Cas._ Caesar; and that, having in Sicily 24
Sextus Pompeius spoil'd, we had not rated him
His part o' the isle; then does he say, he lent me
Some shipping unrestor'd; lastly, he frets
That Lepidus of the triumvirate 28
Should be depos'd; and, being, that we detain
All his revenue.

_Agr._ Sir, this should be answer'd.

_Cas._ 'Tis done already, and the messenger gone.
I have told him, Lepidus was grown too cruel; 32
That he his high authority abus'd,
And did deserve his change: for what I have conquer'd,
I grant him part; but then, in his Armenia,
And other of his conquer'd kingdoms, I 36
Demand the like.

_Mec._ He'll never yield to that.

_Cas._ Nor must not then be yielded to in this.

Enter OCTAVIA, with her Train.

_Oct._ Hail, Caesar, and my lord! hail, most dear Caesar!

_Cas._ That ever I should call thee cast-away!

_Oct._ You have not call'd me so, nor have you cause.

_Cas._ Why have you stol'n upon us thus?

You come not
Like Caesar's sister; the wife of Antony
Should have an army for an usher, and
The neighs of horse to tell of her approach
Long ere she did appear; the trees by the way

Should have borne men; and expectation fainted,
Longing for what it had not; nay, the dust 48
Should have ascended to the roof of heaven,
Rais'd by your populous troops. But you are come
A market-maid to Rome, and have prevented
The ostentation of our love, which, left unknown,
Is often left unlov'd: we should have met you
By sea and land, supplying every stage
With an augmented greeting.

_Oct._ Good my lord,
To come thus was I not constrain'd, but did it 56
On my free-will. My lord, Mark Antony,
Hearing that you prepar'd for war, acquainted
My griefed ear withal; whereon, I begg'd
His pardon for return.

_Cas._ Which soon he granted, 60
Being an obstruct 'tween his lust and him.

_Oct._ Do not say so, my lord.

_Cas._ I have eyes upon him,
And his affairs come to me on the wind.
Where is he now?

_Oct._ My lord, in Athens.

_Cas._ No, my most wrong'd sister; Cleopatra
Hath nodded him to her. He hath given his empire
Up to a whore; who now are levying
The kings o' the earth for war. He hath assembled
Bocchus, the King of Libya; Archelaus,
Of Cappadocia; Philadephos, King
Of Paphlagonia; the Thracian king, Adallas;
King Malchus of Arabia; King of Pont; 72
Herod of Jewry; Mithridates, King
Of Comagene; Polemon and Amintas,
The Kings of Mede and Lycaonia,
With a more larger list of sceptres.

_Oct._ Ay me, most wretched, 76
That have my heart part'd betwixt two friends
That do afflict each other!

_Cas._ Welcome hither:
Your letters did withhold our breaking forth,
Till we perceiv'd both how you were wrong led 80
And we in negligent danger. Cheer your heart;
Be you not troubled with the time, which drives
O'er your content these strong necessities,
But let determin'd things to destiny 84
Hold unbewail'd their way. Welcome to Rome;
Nothing more dear to me. You are absus'd
Beyond the mark of thought, and the high gods,
To do you justice, make their ministers 88
Of us and those that love you. Best of comfort,
And ever welcome to us.

_Agr._ Welcome, lady.

_Mec._ Welcome, dear madam.
Act III, Sc. VI.

ANTONY AND CLEOPATRA

Each heart in Rome does love and pity you; 92
Only the adulterous Antony, most large
In his abominations, turns you off,
And gives his potent regiment to a trull,
That noises it against us.
Oct. Is it so, sir? 96
Ces. Most certain. Sister, welcome; pray you,
Be ever known to patience; my dearest sister!

[Exeunt.

SCENE VII.—ANTONY'S Camp, near to the
Promontory of ACTIUM.

Enter CLEOPATRA and ENOBARBUS.

Cleo. I will be even with thee, doubt it not.
Eno. But why, why, why?
Cleo. Thou hast forsook my being in these
wars,
And sayest it is not fit.
Eno. Well, is it, is it? 4
Cleo. If not denounc'd against us, why should
not we
Be there in person?
Eno. [Aside.] Well, I could reply:
If we should serve with horse and mares to-
gether,
The horse were merely lost; the mares would
bear
A soldier and his horse.

Cleo. What is 't you say?
Eno. Your presence needs must puzzle An-
ty;
Take from his heart, take from his brain, from's
time,
What should not then be spar'd. He is already
Traduc'd for levity, and 'tis said in Rome 13
That Photimus a eunuch and your maids
Manage this war.
Cleo. Sink Rome, and their tongues rot
That speak against us! A charge we bear i' the
war;
And, as the president of my kingdom, will
Appear there for a man. Speak not against it;
I will not stay behind.
Eno. Nay, I have done.
Have comes the emperor.

Enter ANTONY and CANIDIUS.

Ant. Is it not strange, Canidius, 20
That from Tarentum and Brundusium
He could so quickly cut the Ionian sea,
And take in Toryne? You have heard on 't,
sweet?
Cleo. Celerity is never more admir'd
Than by the negligent.
Ant. A good rebuke,
Which might have well becom'd the best of men,
To taunt at slackness. Canidius, we
Will fight with him by sea.

Cleo. By sea! What else? 28
Can. Why will my lord do so?
Ant. For that he dares us to 't.
Eno. So hath my lord dar'd him to single
fight.
Can. Ay, and to wage his battle at Pharsalia,
Where Caesar fought with Pompey; but these
offers,
Which serve not for his vantage, he shaks off;
And so should you.
Eno. Your ships are not well mann'd;
Your mariners are muleteers, reapers, people
Ingross'd by swift impress; in Caesar's fleet 36
Are those that often have gainst Pompey fought:
Their ships are yare; yours, heavy. No disgrace
Shall fall you for refusing him at sea,
Being prepar'd for land.
Ant. By sea, by sea. 40
Eno. Most worthy sir, you therein throw
away
The absolute soldiership you have by land;
Distract your army, which doth most consist
Of war-mark'd footmen; leave unexecuted 44
Your own renowned knowledge; quite forego
The way which promises assurance; and
Give up yourself merely to chance and hazard
From firm security.
Ant. I'll fight at sea. 48
Cleo. I have sixty sails, Caesar none better.
Ant. Our overplus of shipping will we burn;
And with the rest, full-mann'd, from the head of
Actium
Beat the approaching Caesar. But if we fail, 52
We then can do 't at land.

Enter a Messenger.

Thy business?
Mess. The news is true, my lord; he is de-
scribed;
Cesar has taken Toryne.
Ant. Can he be there in person? 'tis impos-
sible;
Strange that his power should be. Canidius,
Our nineteen legions thou shalt hold by land,
And our twelve thousand horse. We'll to our
ship:

Away, my Thetis!

Enter a Soldier.

How now, worthy soldier! 60
Sold. O noble emperor! do not fight by sea;
Trust not to rotten planks: do you misdoubt
This sword and these my wounds? Let the
Egyptians
And the Phisansians go a-duking; we
Have used to conquer, standing on the earth,
And fighting foot to foot.

_Ant._ Well, well: away!

[Exeunt ANTONY, CLEOPATRA, and ENOBARBUS.

_Sold._ By Hercules, I think I am i' the right.
_Can._ Soldier, thou art; but his whole action grows
Not in the power on 't: so our leader's led,
And we are women's men.

_Sold._ You keep by land
The legions and the horse whole, do you not?
_Can._ Marcus Octavius, Marcus Justeius, Publicola, and Cælius, are for sea;
But we keep whole by land. This speed of Caesar's
Carries beyond belief.

_Sold._ While he was yet in Rome
His power went out in such distractions as
Beguil'd all spies.
_Can._ Who's his lieutenant, hear you?
_Sold._ They say, one Taurus.
_Can._ Well I know the man.

Enter a Messenger.

_Mess._ The emperor calls Canidius.
_Can._ With news the time's with labour, and thrues forth
Each minute some.

_Exeunt._

SCENE VIII.—A Plain near Actium.

Enter Cæsar, Taurus, Officers, and Others.

_Cæs._ Taurus!
_Taur._ My lord?
_Cæs._ Strike not by land: keep whole: provoke not battle.
Till we have done at sea. Do not exceed
The prescript of this scroll: our fortune lies
Upon this jump.

_Exeunt._

Enter Antony and Enobarbus.

_Ant._ Set we our squadrons on yond side o' the hill,
In eye of Cæsar's battle; from which place
We may the number of the ships behold,
And so proceed accordingly.

_Exeunt._

Enter Canidius, marching with his land army
one way over the stage; and Taurus, the
lieutenant of Cæsar, the other way. After
their going in is heard the noise of a sea-fight.

_Alarm._ Re-enter Enobarbus.

_Eno._ Naught, naught, all naught! I can
behold no longer.

_The Antoniad, the Egyptian admiral,
With all their sixty, fly, and turn the rudder;
To see 't mine eyes are blasted.

Enter Scæbus.

_Scar._ Gods and goddesses,
All the whole synod of them!

_Eno._ What's thy passion?
_Scar._ The greater calt of the world is lost
With very ignorance; we have kiss'd away 17
Kingdoms and provinces.

_Eno._ How appears the fight?
_Scar._ On our side like the token'd pestilence,
Where death is sure. Yon ribauded nag of Egypt,
Whom leprosy o'ertake! 'tis midst o' the fight,
When vantage like a pair of twins appear'd,
Both as the same, or rather ours the elder,
The breese upon her, like a cow in June,
Hoists sails and flies.

_Eno._ That I beheld:
Mine eyes did sicken at the sight, and could not
Endure a further view.

_Scar._ She once being loof'd,
The noble ruin of her magic, Antony,
Clasped on his sea-wing, and like a doting mallard,
Leaving the fight in height, flies after her.
I never saw an action of such shame;
Experience, manhood, honour, ne'er before
Did violate so itself.

_Eno._ Alack, alack!

_Exeunt._

Enter Canidius.

_Can._ Our fortune on the sea is out of breath,
And sinks most lamentably. Had our general
Been what he knew himself, it had gone well: 36
Of he has given example for our flight
Most grossly by his own.

_Eno._ Ay, are you thereabouts?
Why, then, good night, indeed.
_Can._ Towards Peloponnesus are they fled.
_Scar._ 'Tis easy to 't; and there I will attend
What further comes.

_Can._ To Cæsar will I render
My legions and my horse; six kings already
Show me the way of yielding.

_Eno._ I'll yet follow
The wounded chance of Antony, though my
Sits in the wind against me.

_Exeunt._

SCENE IX.—Alexandria. A Room in the Palace.

Enter Antony and Attendants.

_Ant._ Hurri! the land bids me tread no more
It is ashamed to bear me. Friends, come hither:
I am so lated in the world that I
Have lost my way for ever. I have a ship
Laden with gold; take that, divide it; fly,
Act III, Sc. IX.

ANTONY AND CLEOPATRA

And make your peace with Cæsar.

Ant. Fly! not we.

Ant. I have fled myself, and have instructed cowards
To run and show their shoulders. Friends, be gone;
I have myself resolv’d upon a course
Which has no need of you; be gone:
My treasure’s in the harbour, take it. O!
I follow’d that I blush to look upon:
My very hairs do mutiny, for the white
Reprove the brown for rashness, and they them
For fear and doing. Friends, be gone; you shall
Have letters from me to some friends that will
Sweep your way for you. Pray you, look not sad,
Nor make replies of loathness; take the hint
Which my despair proclaims; let that be left
Which leaves itself; to the sea-side straightway;
I will possess you of that ship and treasure. Leave me, I pray, a little; pray you now:
Nay, do so; for, indeed, I have lost command,
Therefore I pray you. I’ll see you by and by.

[Sits down.]

Enter Eros following Cleopatra, led by Charmian and Iras.

Eros. Nay, gentle madam, to him, comfort him.

Iras. Do, most dear queen.

Charm. Do! Why, what else?

Cleo. Let me sit down. O Juno.

Ant. No, no, no, no, no.

Eros. See you here, sir?

Ant. O fie, fie, fie!

Charm. Madam!

Iras. Madam; O good empress!

Eros. Sir, sir!

Ant. Yes, my lord, yes. He, at Philippi kept
His sword e’en like a dancer, while I struck
The lean and wrinkled Cassius; and ’twas I
That the mad Brutus ended: he alone
Dealt on lieutenancy, and no practice had
In the brave squares of war: yet now—No matter.

Cleo. Ah! stand by.

Eros. The queen, my lord, the queen.

Iras. Go to him, madam, speak to him;
He is unqualified with very shame.

Cleo. Well then, sustain me: O!

Eros. Most noble sir, arise; the queen approaches:
Her head’s declin’d, and death will seize her, but
Your comfort makes the rescue.

Ant. I have offended reputation,
A most unnoble swerving.

Eros. Sir, the queen.

Ant. O! whither hast thou led me, Egypt?

See, How I convey my shame out of thine eyes
By looking back what I have left behind
‘Stroy’d in dishonour.

Cleo. O my lord, my lord!

Forgive my fearful sails: I little thought
You would have follow’d.

Ant. Egypt, thou knew’st too well
My heart was to thy rudder tied by the strings,
And thou shouldst tow me after; o’er my spirit
Thy full supremacy thou knew’st, and that
Thy beck might from the bidding of the gods
Command me.

Cleo. O! my pardon.

Ant. Now I must
To the young man send humble treaties, dodge
And palter in the shifts of lowness, who
With half the bulk o’ the world play’d as I pleas’d,
Making and marring fortunes. You did know
How much you were my conqueror, and that
My sword, made weak by my affection, would
Obey it on all cause.

Cleo. Pardon, pardon!

Ant. Fall not a tear, I say; one of them rates
All that is won and lost. Give me a kiss;
Even this repays me. We sent our school-master;
Is he come back? Love, I am full of lead.

SOME WINE, WITHIN THERE, AND OUR VIANDS! Fortune knows,
We scorn her most when most she offers blows.

[Exeunt.

SCENE X.—Egypt. Caesar’s Camp.

Enter Caesar, Dolabella, Thyreus, and Others.

Caes. Let him appear that’s come from Antony.

Know you him?

Dol. Caesar, ’tis his schoolmaster:
An argument that he is pluck’d, when hither
He sends so poor a pinion of his wing,
Which had superfluous kings for messengers
Not many moons gone by.

Enter Euphronius.

Caes. Approach, and speak.

Euph. Such as I am, I come from Antony:
I was of late as petty to his ends
As is the morn-dew on the myrtle-leaf
To his grand sea.

Caes. Be’t so. Declare thine office.

Euph. Lord of his fortunes he salutes thee, and
Requires to live in Egypt; which not granted, 12
He lessens his requests, and to thee sues
To let him breathe between the heavens and
earth,
A private man in Athens; this for him.
Next, Cleopatra does confess thy greatness, 16
Submits her to thy might, and of thee craves
The circle of the Ptolemies for her heirs,
Now hazarded to thy grace.
Ces. For Antony,
I have no ears to his request. The queen 20
Of audience nor desire shall fail, so she
From Egypt drive her all-disgraced friend,
Or take his life there; this if she perform,
She shall not sue unheard. So to them both. 24
Euph. Fortune pursue thee!
Ces. Bring him through the bands.
[Exit EUPHRONIUS.
[To THYREUS.] To try thy eloquence, now 'tis
time; dispatch.
From Antony win Cleopatra; promise,
And in our name, what she requires; add
more, 28
From thine invention, offers. Women are not
In their best fortunes strong, but want will
perjure
The ne'er-touch'd vestal. Try thy cunning,
Thyreus;
Make thine own edict for thy pains, which we 32
Will answer as a law.
Thyr. Caesar, I go.
Ces. Observe how Antony becomes his flaw,
And what thou think'st his very action speaks
In every power that moves.
Thyr. Caesar, I shall. [Exit.

SCENE XI.—Alexandria. A Room in the
Palace.

Enter CLEOPATRA, ENOBARBUS, CHARMIAN,
and IRAS.

Cleo. What shall we do, Enobarbus?
Eno. Think, and die.
Cleo. Is Antony or we, in fault for this?
Eno. Antony only, that would make his will
Lord of his reason. What though you fled
From that great face of war, whose several
ranges
Frighted each other, why should he follow?
The itch of his affection should not then
Have nick'd his captainship; at such a point, 8
When half to half the world oppos'd, he being
The merest question. 'Twas a shame no less
Than was his loss, to course your flying flags,
And leave his navy gazing.
Cleo. Prithhee, peace. 12

Enter ANTONY, with EUPHRONIUS.
Ant. Is that his answer?
Euph. Ay, my lord.
Ant. The queen shall then have courtesy,
so she
Will yield us up?
Euph. He says so.
Ant. Let her know 't. 16
To the boy Caesar send this grizzled head,
And he will fill thy wishes to the brim
With principalities.
Cleo. That head, my lord?
Ant. To him again. Tell him he wears the
rose 20
Of youth upon him, from which the world
should note
Something particular; his coin, ships, legions,
May be a coward's, whose ministers would pre-
vail
Under the service of a child as soon
As i' the command of Caesar: I dare him there-
fore
To lay his gay comparisons apart,
And answer me declin'd, sword against sword,
Ourselves alone. I'll write it: follow me. 28
[Exeunt ANTONY and EUPHRONIUS.
Eno. [Aside.] Yes, like enough, high-battled
Caesar will
Unstate his happiness, and be stag'd to the show
Against a sworder! I see men's judgments are
A parcel of their fortunes, and things outward
Do draw the inward quality after them, 33
To suffer all alike. That he should dream,
Knowing all measures, the full Caesar will
Answer his emptiness! Caesar, thou hast sub-
du'd
His judgment too.

Enter an Attendant.
Att. A messenger from Caesar.
Cleo. What! no more ceremony? See! my
women;
Against the blow'n rose may they stop their nose,
That kneel'd unto the buds. Admit him, sir. 40
[Exit Attendant.
Eno. [Aside.] Mine honesty and I begin to
square.
The loyalty well held to toils does make
Our faith mere folly; yet he that can endure
To follow with allegiance a fall'n lord, 44
Does conquer him that did his master conquer,
And earns a place i' the story.

Enter THYREUS.
Cleo. Caesar's will?
Thyr. Hear it apart.
Cleo. None but friends; say boldly.
Thyr. So, haply, are they friends to Antony.
Eno. He needs as many, sir, as Caesar has, or needs not us. If Caesar please, our master will leap to be his friend; for you, you know Whose he is we are, and that is Caesar's.
Thyr. Thus then, thou most renown'd: Caesar entertains,
Not to consider in what case thou stand'st,
Further than he is Caesar.
Cleo. Go on; right royal.
Thyr. He knows that you embrace not Antony
As you did love, but as you fear'd him.
Cleo. O!
Thyr. The scars upon your honour therefore he
Does pity, as constrained blemishes,
Not as deserv'd.
Cleo. He is a god, and knows
What is most right. Mine honour was not yielded,
But conquer'd merely.
Eno. [Aside.] To be sure of that, I will ask Antony. Sir, sir, thou'rt so leaky, That we must leave thee to thy sinking, for Thy dearest quit thee.
Thyr. Shall I say to Caesar What you require of him? for he partly begs To be desir'd to give. It much would please him,
That of his fortunes you should make a staff To lean upon; but it would warm his spirits To hear from me you had left Antony, And put yourself under his shroud, The universal landlord.
Cleo. What's your name? 72
Thyr. My name is Thyreus.
Cleo. Most kind messenger, Say to great Caesar this: in deputation I kiss his conquering hand; tell him, I am prompt To lay my crown at 's feet, and there to kneel; Tell him, from his all-obeying breath I hear The doom of Egypt.
Thyr. 'Tis your noblest course.
Wisdom and fortune combatting together, If that the former dare but what it can, No chance may shake it. Give me grace to lay My duty on your hand.
Cleo. Your Caesar's father oft, When he hath mus'd of taking kingdoms in, Bestow'd his lips on that unworthy place, As it rain'd kisses.
You know not what it is.
Cleo. Wherefore is this?
Ant. To let a fellow that will take rewards
And say 'God quit you!' be familiar with My playfellow, your hand; this kingly seal
And plighter of high hearts. Of that I were
Upon the hill of Basan, to outroar
The horned herd; for I have savage cause;
And to proclaim it civilly were like
A halter'd neck, which does the hangman thank
For being yare about him.

Re-enter Attendants, with Thyreus.

First Att. Soundly, my lord.
Ant. Cried he? and begg'd a' pardon?
First Att. He did ask favour.
Ant. If that thy father live, let him repent
Thou wast not made his daughter; and be thou sorry
To follow Caesar in his triumph, since
Thou hast been whipp'd for following him:

The white hand of a lady fever thee,
Shake thou to look on't. Get thee back to Caesar,
Tell him thy entertainment; look, thou say
He makes me angry with him; for he seems
Proud and disdainful, harping on what I am,
Not what he knew I was: he makes me angry;
And at this time most easy 'tis to do 't,
When my good stars, that were my former guides,
Have empty left their orbs, and shot their fires
Into the abyss of hell. If he mislike
My speech and what is done, tell him he has
Hipparchus, my enfranchised bondman, whom
He may at pleasure whip, or hang, or torture,
As he shall like, to quit me: urge it thou:
Hence with thy stripes; be gone!
[Exit THYREUS.

Cleo. Have you done yet?
Ant. Alack! our terrene moon
Is now eclips'd; and it portends alone
The fall of Antony.
Cleo. I must stay his time.
Ant. To flatter Caesar, would you mingle eyes
With one that ties his points?
Cleo. Not know me yet?
Ant. Cold-hearted toward me?
Cleo. Ah! dear, if I be so,
From my cold heart let heaven engender hail,
And poison it in the source; and the first stone
Drop in my neck: as it determines, so
Dissolve my life. The next Caesarion smile,
Till by degrees the memory of my womb,
Together with my brave Egyptians all,
By the discarding of this pelleted storm,
Lest graveless, till the flies and gnats of Nile
Have buried them for prey!
Ant. I am satisfied.
Cesar sits down in Alexandria, where
I will oppose his fate. Our force by land
Hath nobly held; our seuer'd navy too
Have knit again, and fleet, threaten'ing most sea-like.
Where hast thou been, my heart? Dost thou hear, lady?
If from the field I shall return once more
To kiss these lips, I will appear in blood;
And my sword will earn our chronicle:
There's hope in 't yet.
Cleo. That's my brave lord! 176
Ant. I will betrothe-sinew'd, hearted, breath'd,
And fight maliciously; for when mine hours
Were nice and lucky, men did ransom lives
Of me for jests; but now I'll set my teeth,
And send to darkness all that stop me. Come,
Let's have one other gaudy night: call to me
All my sad captains; fill our bowls once more;
Let's mock the midnight bell.
Cleo. It is my birth-day: 184
I had thought to have held it poor; but, since
Is Antony again, I will be Cleopatra.
Ant. We will yet do well.
Cleo. Call all his noble captains to my lord.
Ant. Do so, we will speak to them; and to-night
I'll force
The wine peep through their scars. Come on,

[Exeunt all but ENOBARBUS.
Eno. Now he'll outstare the lightning. To be
Is to be frightened out of fear, and in that mood
The dove will peck the estridge; and I see
A diminution in our captain's brain
Restores his heart. When valour preys on reason
It casts the sword it fights with. I will seek
Some way to leave him.

ACT IV.

Enter CAESAR, reading a letter; AGrippa, Mecenas, and Others.
Caes. He calls me boy, and chides as he had power
To beat me out of Egypt; my messenger
He hath whipp'd with rods; dares me to personal combat,
Cæsar to Antony. Let the old Russian know
I have many other ways to die; meantime
Laugh at his challenge.

Mec. Cæsar must think,
When one so great begins to rage, he's hunted
Even to falling. Give him no breath, but now 8
Make boot of his distraction: never anger
Made good guard for itself.

Cæs. Let our best heads
Know that to-morrow the last of many battles
We mean to fight. Within our files there are, 12
Of those that serv'd Mark Antony but late,
Enough to fetch him in. See it done;
And feast the army; we have store to do 't,
And they have earn'd the waste. Poor Antony!

[Exeunt.

SCENE II.—Alexandria. A Room in the Palace.

Enter Antony, Cleopatra, Enobarbus, Charmian, Iras, Alexas, and Others.

Ant. He will not fight with me, Domitius.

Eno. No.

Ant. Why should he not?

Eno. He thinks, being twenty times of better fortune,
He is twenty men to one.

Ant. To-morrow, soldier, 4
By sea and land I'll fight: or I will live,
Or bathes my dying honour in the blood
Shall make it live again. Woo! thou fight well?

Eno. I'll strike, and cry, 'Take all.'

Ant. Well said; come on. 8

Call forth my household servants; let's to-night
Be bounteous at our meal.

Enter three or four Servitors.

Give me thy hand,
Thou hast been rightly honest; so hast thou;
Thou; and thou, and thou; you have serv'd me well, 12
And kings have been your fellows.

Cleo. What means this?

Eno. [Aside to Cleopatra.] 'Tis one of those odd tricks which sorrow shoots
Out of the mind.

Ant. And thou art honest too.

I wish I could be made so many men, 16
And all of you clapp'd up together in
An Antony, that I might do you service
So good as you have done.

Servants. The gods forbid!

Ant. Well, my good fellows, wait on me to-night, 20
Scant not my cups, and make as much of me
As when mine empire was your fellow too,
And suffer'd my command.

Cleo. [Aside to Enobarbus.] What does he mean?

Eno. [Aside to Cleopatra.] To make his followers weep.

Ant. Tend me to-night; 24
May be it is the period of your duty:
Haply, you shall not see me more; or if,
A mangled shadow: perchance to-morrow
You'll serve another master. I look on you as one that takes his leave. Mine honest friends,
I turn you not away; but, like a master
Married to your good service, stay till death.
Tend me to-night two hours, I ask no more, 32
And the gods yield you for 't!

Eno. What mean you, sir,
To give them this discomfort? Look, they weep;
And I, an ass, am onion-eyed: for shame,
Transform us not to women.

Ant. Ho, ho, ho! 36
Now, the witch take me, if I meant it thus!
Grace grow where those drops fall! My hearty friends,
You take me in too dolorous a sense,
For I spake to you for your comfort; did desire 40
To burn this night with torches. Know, my hearts,
I hope well of to-morrow; and will lead you
Where rather I'll expect victorious life
Than death and honour. Let's to supper,
come, 44
And drown consideration.

[Exeunt.

SCENE III.—The Same. Before the Palace.

Enter two Soldiers to their guard.

First Sold. Brother, good night; to-morrow is the day.
Sec. Sold. It will determine one way; fare you well.

Heard you of nothing strange about the streets?

First Sold. Nothing. What news? 4
Sec. Sold. Belike, 'tis but a rumour. Good night to you.

First Sold. Well, sir, good night.

Enter two other Soldiers.

Sec. Sold. Soldiers, have careful watch.
Third Sold. And you. Good night, good night.

[The first two place themselves at their posts.
We shall thrive now. Seest thou, my good fellow?  
Go put on thy defences.  
Eros. Briefly, sir.  
Cleo. Is not this buckled well?  
Ant. Rarely, rarely:  
He that unbuckles this, till we do please  
To daft 't for our repose, shall hear a storm.  
Thou fumblest, Eros; and my queen's a squire  
More tight at this than thou: dispatch. O love!  
That thou couldst see my wars to-day, and knew'st  
The royal occupation, thou shouldst see  
A workman in 't.  

Enter an armed Soldier.  
Good morrow to thee; welcome;  
Thou look'st like him that knows a war-like charge:  
To business that we love we rise betime,  
And go to 't with delight.  
Sold. A thousand, sir,  
Early though 't be, have on their riveted trim,  
And at the port expect you.  

[Shout. Trumpets flourish.  

Enter Captains and Soldiers.  
Cap. The morn is fair. Good morrow, general.  
All. Good morrow, general.  
Ant. 'Tis well blown, lads.  
This morning, like the spirit of a youth  
That means to be of note, begins betimes.  
So, so; come, give me that: this way; well said.  
Fare thee well, dame, whate'er becomes of me;  
This is a soldier's kiss. [Kisses her.] Rebukeable  
And worthy shameful check it were, to stand  
On more mechanic compliment; I'll leave thee  
Now, like a man of steel. You that will fight,  
Follow me close; I'll bring you to 't. Adieu.  

[Exeunt Antony, Eros, Captains, and Soldiers.  
Char. Please you, retire to your chamber.  
Cleo. Lead me.  
He goes forth gallantly. That he and Caesar might  
Determine this great war in single fight!  
Then, Antony,—but now.—Well, on. [Exeunt.  

Scene V.—Alexandria. ANTONY'S Camp.  
Trumpets sound. Enter ANTONY and EROS; a  
Soldier meeting them.  
Sold. The gods make this a happy day to  
Antony!
Act IV, Sc. V.

ANTONY AND CLEOPATRA

Ant. Would thou and those thy scars had once prevail'd
To make me fight at land!

Sold. Hadst thou done so,
The kings that have revolted, and the soldier
That has this morning left thee, would have still
Follow'd thy heels.

Ant. Who's gone this morning?

Sold. Who!

One ever near thee: call for Enobarbus,
He shall not hear thee; or from Caesar's camp
Say, 'I am none of thine.'

Ant. What sayst thou?

Sold. Sir,

He is with Caesar.

Eros. Sir, his chest's and treasure
He has not with him.

Ant. Is he gone?

Sold. Most certain.

Ant. Go, Eros, send his treasure after; do it;
Detain no jot, I charge thee. Write to him—
I will subscribe—gentle adieu and greetings;
Say that I wish he never find more cause
To change a master. Of my fortunes have

SCENE VI.—Before Alexandria. Caesar's Camp.

Flourish. Enter Caesar, with Agrippa, Enobarbus, and Others.

Ces. Go forth, Agrippa, and begin the fight:
Our will is Antony be took alive;
Make it so known.

Agr. Caesar, I shall. [Exit.

Ces. The time of universal peace is near:
Prove this a prosperous day, the three-nook'd
world
Shall bear the olive freely.

Enter a Messenger.

Mess. Antony,

Is come into the field.

Ces. Go charge Agrippa;
Plant those that have revolted in the van,
That Antony may seem to send his fury
Upon himself. [Exeunt Caesar and his Train.

Ero. Alexas did revolt, and went to Jewry on
Affairs of Antony; there did persuade
Great Herod to incline himself to Caesar,
And leave his master Antony: for this pains
Cesar hath hang'd him. Candius and the rest
That fell away have entertainment, but
No honourable trust. I have done ill,
Of which I do accuse myself so sorely
That I will joy no more.

Enter a Soldier of Caesar's.

Sold. Enobarbus, Antony
Hath after thee sent all thy treasure, with
His bounty overplus: the messenger
Came on my guard; and at thy tent is now
Unloading of his mules.

Eno. I give it you. [Exit.

Sold. Mock not, Enobarbus.
I tell you true: best you sat'd the bringer
Out of the host; I must attend mine office
Or would have done 't myself. Your emperor
Continues still a Jove.

Eno. I am alone the villain of the earth,
And feel I am so most. O Antony!
Thou mine of bounty, how wouldst thou have paid
My better service, when my turpitude
Thou dost so crown with gold! This blows my heart:
If swift thought break it not, a swifter mean
Shall outstrike thought; but thought will do 't,
I feel.

I fight against thee! No: I will go seek
Some ditch, wherein to die; the foul'est fits
My latter part of life. [Exit.

SCENE VII.—Field of Battle between the Camps.

Alarum. Drums and trumpets. Enter Agrippa and Others.

Agr. Retire, we have engag'd ourselves too far.
Cesar himself has work, and our oppression
Exceeds what we expected. [Exeunt.

Alarum. Enter Antony, and Scarus wounded.

Scar. O my brave emperor, this is fought
Indeed!

Had we done so at first, we had droven them home
With clouts about their heads.

Ant. Thou blest space.

Scar. I had a wound here that was like a T,
But now 'tis made an H.

Ant. They do retire.

Scar. We'll beat 'em into bench-holes: I have yet
Room in six scotch's more.

Enter Eros.

Eros. They are beaten, sir; and our advant-
age serves
For a fair victory.

Scar. Let us score their backs.

And snatch 'em up, as we take hares, behind:
'Tis sport to masl a runner.

Ant. I will reward thee
Once for thy sprightly comfort, and ten-fold
For thy good valour. Come thee on.
Scar.  I’ll halt after. [Exeunt.

SCENE VIII.—Under the Walls of Alexandria.

Alarum. Enter Antony, marching; Scarus, and Forces.

Ant. We have beat him to his camp; run one before
And let the queen know of our gage. To-morrow,
Before the sun shall see us, we’ll spill the blood
That has to-day escap’d. I thank you all; 4
For doughty-handed are you, and have fought
Not as you serv’d the cause, but as ‘t had been
Each man’s like mine; you have shown all
Hectors.
Enter the city, clip your wives, your friends, 8
Tell them your seats; whilst they with joyous
Tears
Wash the congealment from your wounds, and kiss
The honour’d gashes whole. [To Scarus.] Give me thy hand:

Enter Cleopatra, attended.

To this great fairy I’ll commend thy acts, 12
Make her thanks bless thee. O thou day o’ the
world!
Chain mine arm’d neck; leap thou, attire and all,
Through proof of harness to my heart, and there
Ride on the pants triumphing.

Cleo.  Lord of lords! 16
O infinite virtue! oom’st thou smiling from
The world’s great snare unescap’d?
Ant.  My nightingale,
We have beat them to their beds. What, girl! though grey
Do something mingle with our younger brown,
yet ha’ we 20
A brain that nourishes our nerves, and can
Get goal for goal of youth. Behold this man;
Commend unto his lips thy favouring hand:
Kiss it, my warrior: he hath fought to-day 24
As if a god, in hate of mankind, had
Destroy’d in such a shape.

Cleo.  I’ll give thee, friend,
An armour all of gold; it was a king’s.

Ant. He has deserv’d it, were it carbuncled
Like holy Phoebus’ car. Give me thy hand: 29
Through Alexandria make a jolly march;
Bear our hack’d targets like the men that owe
them:
Had our great palace the capacity 32
To camp this host, we all would sup together
And drink carouses to the next day’s fate,
Which promises royal peril. Trumpeters,
With brazen dun blast you the city’s ear, 36
Make mingle with our rattling tabournes,
That heaven and earth may strike their sounds
Together,
Appraising our approach. [Exeunt.

SCENE IX.—Caesar’s Camp.

First Sold. If we be not reliev’d within this
hour,
We must return to the court of guard: the
night
Is shuny, and they say we shall embattle
By the second hour ‘t the morn.
Sec. Sold.  This last day was 4
A shrewd one to ’s.

Enter Enobarbus.

Eno.  O! bear me witness, night,—
Third Sold. What man is this?
Sec. Sold.  Stand close and list him.
Eno.  Be witness to me, O thou blessed
moon,
When men revolted shall upon record 3
Bear hateful memory, poor Enobarbus did
Before thy face repent!
First Sold.  Enobarbus!
Third Sold.  Peace!
Hark further.

Eno.  O sovereign mistress of true melancholy,
The poisonous damp of night dispone upon
me, 13
That life, a very rebel to my will,
May hang no longer on me; throw my heart
Against the flint and hardness of my fault, 16
Which, being dried with grief, will break to
powder,
And finish all foul thoughts. O Antony!
Nobler than my revolt is infamous,
Forgive me in thine own particular; 20
But let the world rank me in register
A master-leaver and a fugitive.
O Antony! O Antony!  [Dies.
Sec. Sold.  Let’s speak to him.
First Sold.  Let’s hear him, for the things he
speaks
May concern Caesar.

Third Sold.  Let’s do so. But he sleeps.
First Sold.  Swounds rather; for so bad a
prayer as his
Was never yet for sleep.

Sec. Sold.  Go we to him.  28
Third Sold.  Awake, sir, awake! speak to us.
Sec. Sold.  Hear you, sir?
I have done all. Bid them all fly; be gone. [Exit SCARUS.]

O sun! thy uprise shall I see no more;
Fortune and Antony part here; even here 32
Do we shake hands. All come to this! The hearts
That spak’st me at heels, to whom I gave
Their wishes, do discard, melt their sweet's
On blossoming Caesar; and thus pine is bark’d,
That overtopp’d them all. Betray’d I am. 37
O this false soul of Egypt! this grave charm,
Whose eyes beck’st forth my wars, and call’d
Them home,
Whose bosom was my crownet, my chief end, 40
Like a right gipsy, hath, at fast and loose,
Beguil’d me to the very heart of loss.
What, Eros! Eros!

Enter CLEOPATRA.

Ah! thou spell. Avaunt!

Cleo. Why is my lord enrag’d against his love? 44
Ant. Vanish, or I shall give thee thy deserving,
And blemish Caesar’s triumph. Let him take thee.

And hoist thee up to the shouting plebeians;
Follow his chariot, like the greatest 48
Of all thy sex; most monster-like, he shown
For poor’st diminutives, for doits; and let
Patent Octavia plough thy visage up
With her prepared nails. [Exit CLEOPATRA.

’Tis well thou’rt gone, 52
If it be well to live; but better ’twere
Thou fell’st into my fury, for one death
Might have prevented many. Eros, ho!
The shirt of Nessus is upon me; teach me, 56
Alcides, thou mine ancestor, thy rage;
Let me lodge Lichas on the horns o’ the moon;
And with those hands, that grasp’d the heaviest club,
Subdue my worthiest self. The witch shall die:
To the young Roman boy she hath sold me, and
I fall
Under this plot; she dies for ’t. Eros, ho! 61

Enter CLEOPATRA, CHARMIAN, IRAS, and MARDIAN.

Cleo. Help me, my women! O! he is more mad
Than Telamon for his shield; the boar of
Thessaly
Was never so emboss’d.

Scene XI.—Alexandria. A Room in the Palace.

Re-enter ANTONY.

This soul Egyptian hath betrayed me;
My fleet hath yielded to the foe, and yonder
They cast their caps up and carouse together
Like friends long lost. Triple-turn’d whore!
’Tis thou
Hast sold me to this novice, and my heart
Makes only wars on thee. Bid them all fly; 88
For when I am reveng’d upon my charm,
ANTONY AND CLEOPATRA  Act IV, Sc. XII.

CHAR.  To the monument! There lock yourself, and send him word you are dead.

CLE.  To the monument! The soul and body rive not more in parting Than greatness going off.

MARDIAN, go tell him I have slain myself; Say that the last I spoke was 'Antony,' And word it, prithee, piteously. Hence, Mardian, and bring me how he takes my death. To the monument! [Exeunt.

SCENE XII.—The Same. Another Room.

Enter ANTONY and EROS.

ANT. Eros, thou yet behold'st me? EROS. Ay, noble lord.

ANT. Sometimes we see a cloud that's dragonish; A vapour sometime like a bear or lion, A tower'd citadel, a pendant rock, A forked mountain, or blue promontory With trees upon 't, that nod unto the world And mock our eyes with air: thou hast seen these signs; They are black vesper's pageants.

EROS. Ay, my lord.

ANT. That which is now a horse, even with a thought The rack dislimns, and makes it indistinct, As water is in water.

EROS. It does, my lord.

ANT. My good knave, Eros, now thy captain is Even such a body: here I am Antony; Yet cannot hold this visible shape, my knave. I made these wars for Egypt; and the queen, Whose heart I thought I had, for she had mine, Which whilst it was mine had annex'd unto 't A million more, now lost; she, Eros, ha's Pack'd cards with Caesar, and false-play'd my glory Unto an enemy's triumph.

Nay, weep not, gentle Eros; there is left us Ourselves to end ourselves.

Enter MARDIAN.

O! thy vile lady; She has robb'd me of my sword.

MAR. No, Antony; My mistress lov'd thee, and her fortunes mingled With thine entirely.

ANT. Hence, saucy sultan; peace! She hath betray'd me and shall die the death. MAR. Death of one person can be paid but once;

And that she has discharg'd. What thou wouldst do Is done unto thy hand; the last she spake Was, 'Antony! most noble Antony!'

Then in the midst a tearing groan did break The name of Antony; it was divided Between her heart and lips. Sherender'd life, Thy name so buried in her.

ANT. Dead, then?

MAR. Dead.

ANT. Unarm, Eros; the long day's task is done, And we must sleep. [To MARDIAN.] That thou depart'st hence safe, Does pay thy labour richly; go. [Exit MARDIAN. Off, pluck off:
The seven-fold shield of Ajax cannot keep The battery from my heart. Of cleave, my sides;

Heart, once be stronger than thy continent, Crack thy frail case! Apace, Eros, apace.

No more a soldier; bruised pieces, go; You have been nobly borne. From me awhile. [Exit EROS.

I will o'ertake thee, Cleopatra, and Weep for my pardon. So it must be, for now All length is torture; since the torch is out, Lie down, and stray no further. Now all labour Mars what it does; yea, very force entangles Itself with strength; seal then, and all is done. Eros!—I come, my queen.—Eros!—Stay for me:
Where souls do couch on flowers, we'll hand in hand, And with our sprightly port make the ghosts gaze;

Dido and her Æneas shall want troops, And all the haunt be ours. Come, Eros! Eros!

Re-enter EROS.

EROS. What would my lord?

ANT. Since Cleopatra died, I have liv'd in such dishonour, that the gods Detest my baseless. I, that with my sword Quartred the world, and o'er green Neptune's back With ships made cities, condemn myself to lack The courage of a woman; less noble mind Than she, which by her death our Caesar tells 'I am conqueror of myself.' Thou art sworn, Eros, That, when the exigent should come,—which now Is come indeed,—when I should see behind me The inevitable prosecution of Disgrace and horror, that, on my command,

1163
Thou then wouldst kill me: do 't; the time is come.
Thou strik'st not me, 'tis Caesar thou defeat'st.
Put colour in thy cheek.
Eros. The gods withhold me!
Shall I do that which all the Parthian darts,
Though enemy, lost aim and could not?
Ant. Eros, Wouldst thou be window'd in great Rome, and see
Thy master thus with pleas'd arms, bending down
His corrigible neck, his face subdu'd
To penetrative shame, whilst the wheel'd seat
Of fortunate Caesar, drawn before him, branded
His baseness that ensu'd?
Eros. I would not see't.
Ant. Come, then; for with a wound I must be cur'd.
Draw that thy honest sword, which thou hast worn
Most useful for thy country.
Eros. O, sir! pardon me. 80
Ant. When I did make thee free, sword'st thou
not then
To do this when I bade thee? Do it at once,
Or thy precedent services are all
But accidents unpurpos'd. Draw, and come. 84
Eros. Turn from me then that noble countenance,
Wherein the worship of the whole world lies.
Ant. Lo thee! [Turning from him.
Eros. My sword is drawn.
Ant. Then let it do at once 88
The thing why thou hast drawn it.
Eros. My dear master,
My captain, and my emperor, let me say,
Before I strike this bloody stroke, farewell.
Ant. 'Tis said, man; and farewell. 92
Eros. Farewell, great chief. Shall I strike now?
Ant. Now, Eros.
Eros. Why, there then; thus do I escape the sorrow
Of Antony's death.
Ant. Thrice-nobler than myself!
Thou teachest me, O valiant Eros, what 96
I should, and thou couldst not. My queen and
Eros
Have by their brave instruction got upon me
A nobleness in record; but I will be
A bridegroom in my death, and run into 't
As to a lover's bed. Come, then; and, Eros,
Thy master dies thy scholar: to do thus
[Falls on his sword.
I learn'd of thee. How! not dead? not dead?
The guard, ho! O! dispatch me.

Enter Dercetas and Guard.
First Guard. What's the noise? 104
Ant. I have done my work ill, friends: O!
make an end
Of what I have begun.
Sec. Guard. The star is fallen.
First Guard. And time is at his period.
All. Alas, and woe!
Ant. Let him that loves me strike me dead.
First Guard.
Not I. 108
Sec. Guard. Nor I.
Third Guard. Nor any one. [Exeunt Guard.
Der. Thy death and fortunes bid thy followers fly.
This sword but shown to Caesar, with this tidings,
Shall enter me with him.

Enter Diomedes.
Dio. Where's Antony?
Der. There, Diomed, there.
Dio. Lives he?
Will thou not answer, man? [Exit Dercetas.
Ant. Art thou there, Diomed? Draw thy sword, and give me
Sufficing strokes for death.
Dio. Most absolute lord,
My mistress Cleopatra sent me to thee.
Ant. When did she send thee?
Dio. Now, my lord.
Ant. Where is she?
Dio. Lock'd in her monument. She had a
prophesying fear
Of what hath come to pass; for when she saw—
Which never shall be found—you did suspect
She had dispos'd with Caesar, and that your rage
Would not be purg'd, she sent you word she
was dead; 124
But, fearing since how it might work, hath sent
Me to proclaim the truth; and I am come,
I dread, too late.
Ant. Too late, good Diomed. Call my guard,
I prithee.
Dio. What, ho! the emperor's guard! The
guard, what, ho!
Come, your lord calls!

Enter four or five of the Guard of Antony.
Ant. Bear me, good friends, where Cleopatra
hides;
'Tis the last service that I shall command you.
First Guard. Woe, woe are we, sir, you may
not live to wear
All your true followers out.
All. Most heavy day!
Ant. Nay, good my fellows, do not please
sharp fate
To grace it with your sorrows; bid that welcome
Which comes to punish us, and we punish it.  137
Seeming to hear it lightly. Take me up;
I have led you oft; carry me now, good friends,
And have my thanks for all.  140

[Exeunt, bearing Antony.

SCENE XIII.—The Same. A Monument.

Enter Cleopatra and her maids aloft, with Charmian and Iras.

Cle. O Charmian! I will never go from hence.
Char. Be comforted, dear madam.
Cleo. No, I will not.
All strange and terrible events are welcome,
But comforts we despise; our size of sorrow,
Proportion'd to our cause, must be as great
As that which makes it.

Enter, below, Diomedes.

Dio. How now! is he dead?

Cleo. His death's upon him, but not dead.
Look out o' the other side your monument; 8
His guard have brought him thither.

Enter, below, Antony, borne by the Guard.

Cleo. O sun!
Burn the great sphere thou mov'st in; darkling stand
The varying star o' the world. O Antony,
Antony, Antony! Help, Charmian, help, Iras; help;
Help, friends below! let's draw him hither. 12

Ant. Peace! Not Caesar's valour hath o'erthrown Antony,
But Antony's hath triumph'd on itself.
Cleo. So it should be, that none but Antony 16
Should conquer Antony; but woe 'tis so!
Ant. I am dying, Egypt, dying; only
I here impromptu death awhile, until
Of many thousand kisses the poor last
I lay upon thy lips.
Cleo. I dare not, dear,—
Dear my lord, pardon,—I dare not,
Lest I be taken: not the imperious show
Of the full-fortune'd Caesar ever shall 24
Be brooch'd with me; if knife, drugs, serpents, have
Edge, sting, or operation, I am safe:
Your wife Octavia, with her modest eyes
And still conclusion, shall acquire no honour
Demurring upon me. But come, come, Antony,—Help me, my women,—we must draw thee up.
Assist, good friends.

Ant. O! quick, or I am gone.
Cleo. Here's sport indeed! How heavy weighs my lord!

Our strength is all gone into heaviness,
That makes the weight. Had I great Juno's power,
The strong-wing'd Mercury should fetch thee up,
And set thee by Jove's side. Yet come a little, 36
Wishers were ever fools. O! come, come, come;

[They kneel ANTONY aloft to CLEOPATRA.
And welcome, welcome! die where thou hast liv'd;
Quicken with kissing; had my lips that power,
Thus would I wear them out.

All. A heavy sight! 40

Ant. I am dying, Egypt, dying:
Give me some wine, and let me speak a little.
Cleo. No, let me speak; and let me rail so high,
That the false housewife Fortune break her wheel, 44
Provok'd by my offence.

Ant. One word, sweet queen.
Of Caesar seek your honour with your safety. O! 48
Cleo. They do not go together.
Ant. Gentle, hear me:
None about Caesar trust, but Proculeius. 52
Cleo. My resolution and my hands I'll trust;
None about Caesar.

Ant. The miserable change now at my end
Lament nor sorrow at; but please your thoughts In feeding them with those my former fortunes Wherein I liv'd, the greatest prince o' the world, The noblest; and do now not basely die,
Not cowardly put off my helmet to 56
My countryman; a Roman by a Roman
Valiantly vanquish'd. Now my spirit is going; I can no more.

Cleo. Noblest of men, woot 'tis die?
Hast thou no care of me? shall I abide 60
In this dull world, which in thy absence is
No better than a sty? O! see my women,

[ANTONY dies.

The crown o' the earth doth melt. My lord! 64
O! wither'd is the garland of the war;
The soldier's pole is fall'n; young boys and girls
Are level now with men; the odds is gone,
And there is nothing left remarkable.

Beneath the visiting moon.

Swoons.

Char. O, quietness, lady! 68
Iras. She is dead too, our sovereign.
Char. Lady!
Iras. Madam!
Char. O madam, madam, madam!
Iras. Royal Egypt!

Empress!

Char. Peace, peace, Iras! 72
Cleo. No more, but 'e'en a woman, and commanded.

By such poor passion as the maid that milks

1165
And does the meanest chares. It were for me
To throw my sceptre at the injurious gods; 76
To tell them that this world did equal theirs
Till they had stol'n our jewel. All's but
naught;
Patience is soothed, and impatience does
Become a dog that's mad; then is it sin 80
To rush into the secret house of death,
Ere death dare come to us? How do you, women?
What, what! good cheer! Why, how now,
Charman!
My noble girls! Ah, women, women, look! 84
Our lamp is spent, it's out. Good sirs, take
heart;—
We'll bury him; and then, what's brave, what's
noble,
Let's do it after the high Roman fashion,
And make death proud to take us. Come, away;
88
This case of that huge spirit now is cold;
Ahl! women, women. Come; we have no friend
But resolution, and the briefest end.

[Exeunt; those above bearing
off ANTONY's body.

ACT V.

SCENE I.—Alexandria. CAESAR's Camp.

Enter CAESAR, AGrippa, Dolabella, Mecenas, Gallus, Proculeius, and Others.

Cas. Go to him, Dolabella, bid him yield;
Being so frustrate, tell him he mocks
The purposes that he makes.

Dol. CAESAR, I shall. [Exit.

Enter DECETIAS, with the sword of ANTONY.

Cas. Wherefore is that? and what art thou
that dar'st
Appear thus to us?

Der. I am call'd Decetias;
Mark Antony I serv'd, who best was worthy
Best to be serv'd; whilst he stood up and spoke
He was my master, and I wore my life
To spend upon his haters. If thou please
To take me to thee, as I was to him
I'll be to CAESAR; if thou pleasest not,
I yield thee up my life.

Cas. What is 't thou say'st? 13

Der. I say, O CAESAR, Antony is dead.

Cas. The breaking of so great a thing should
make
A greater crack; the round world
Should have shook lions into civil streets, 16
And citizens to their demes. The death of
Antony
Is not a single doom; in the name lay
A moister of the world.

Der. He is dead, CAESAR; 20
Not by a public minister of justice,
Nor by a hired knife; but that self hand,
Which writ his honour in the acts it did,
Hath, with the courage which the heart did
lend it,
Splitted the heart. This is his sword; 24
I robb'd his wound of it; behold it stain'd
With his most noble blood.

Cas. Look you sad, friends?
The gods rebuke me, but it is tiding
To wash the eyes of kings.

Agr. And strange it is, 28
That nature must compel us to lament
Our most persisted deeds.

Mec. His taints and honours
Wag'd equal with him.

Agr. A rarer spirit never
Did steer humanity; but you, gods, will give us
Some faults to make us men. CAESAR is touch'd.
Mec. When such a spacious mirror's set
before him,
He needs must see himself.

Cas. O Antony!
I have follow'd thee to this; but we do lank 36
Diseases in our bodies: I must perforce
Have shown to thee such a declining day,
Or look on thine; we could not stall together
In the whole world. But yet let me lament, 40
With tears as sovereign as the blood of
hearts,
That thou, my brother, my competitor
In top of all design, my mate in empire,
Friend and companion in the front of war, 44
The arm of mine own body, and the heart
Where mine his thoughts did kindle, that our
stare,
Unreconcilable, should divide
Our equalness to this. Hear me, good friends,—

Enter an Egyptian.

But I will tell you at some meeter season: 49
The business of this man looks out of him;
We'll hear him what he says. Whence are you?

Egyp. A poor Egyptian yet. The queen my
mistress, 52
Comfim'd in all she has, her monument,
Of thy intents desires instruction,
That she preparedly may frame herself
To the way she's forc'd to.

Cas. Bid her have good heart; 56
She soon shall know of us, by some of ours,
How honourable and how kindly we
Determine for her; for CAESAR cannot live
To be ungentle.
ANTONY AND CLEOPATRA
Act V, Sc. II.

Egyp. So the gods preserve thee! [Exit.

Caes. Come hither, Proculeius. Go and say,
We purpose her no shame; give her what com-
forts
The quality of her passion shall require,
Lest, in her greatness, by some mortal stroke
She do defeat us; for her life in Rome
Would be eternal in our triumph. Go,
And with your speediest bring us what she says,
And how you find of her.

Pro. Caesar, I shall. [Exit.

Caes. Gallus, go you along. [Exit GALLUS.

Where's Dolabella,
To second Proculeius?

Agr. { Dolabella!

Mec. { Cæs. Let him alone, for I remember now
How he's employ'd, I shall in time be ready.
Go with me to my tent; where you shall see
How hardly I was drawn into this war;
How calm and gentle I proceeded still
In all my writings. Go with me, and see
What I can show in this. [Exeunt.

SCENE II.—The Same. The Monument.

Enter aloft, CLEOPATRA, CHARMIAN, and IRAS.

Cleo. My desolation does begin to make
A better life. 'Tis paltry to be Caesar;
Not being Fortune, he's but Fortune's knave,
A minister of her will; and it is great
To do that thing that ends all other deeds,
Which shackles accidents, and bolts up change,
Which sleeps, and never palates more the dug,
The beggar's nurse and Caesar's.

Enter, below, PROCULEIUS, GALLUS, and Soldiers.

Pro. Caesar sends greeting to the Queen of
Egypt;
And bids thee study on what fair demands
Thou mean'st to have him grant thee.

Cleo. What's thy name?

Pro. My name is Proculeius.

Cleo. Antony

Did tell me of you, bade me trust you; but
I do not greatly care to be deceiv'd,
That have no use for trusting. If your master
Would have a queen his beggar, you must tell
him,
That majesty, to keep decorum, must
No less beg than a kingdom: if he please
To give me conquer'd Egypt for my son,
He gives me so much of mine own as I
Will kneel to him with thanks.

Pro. Be of good cheer; You're fall'n into a princely hand, fear no-
thing.

Make your full reference freely to my lord,
Who is so full of grace, that it flows over
On all that need; let me report to him
Your sweet dependency, and you shall find
A conqueror that will pray in aid for kindness
Where he for grace is kneel'd to.

Cleo. Pray you, tell him I am his fortune's vassal, and I send him
The greatness he has got. I hourly learn
A doctrine of obedience, and would gladly
Look him i' the face.

Pro. This I'll report, dear lady: Have comfort, for I know your plight is pitied
Of him that caus'd it.

Gal. You see how easily she may be sur-
pris'd.

[PROCULEIUS and two of the Guard ascend the monument by a ladder, and
come behind CLEOPATRA. Some of the Guard unbar and open the gates, dis-
covering the lower room of the monu-
ment.

[To PROCULEIUS and the Guard.] Guard her
till Caesar come. [Exit.

Iras. Royal queen! [Exit.

Char. O Cleopatra! thou art taken, queen.

Cleo. Quick, quick, good hands.

[Drawing a dagger. Hold, worthy lady, hold!

Seizes and disarms her.

Do not yourself such wrong, who are in this
Reliev'd, but not betray'd.

Cleo. What, of death too, That rids our dogs of languish?

Pro. Cleopatra,
Do not abuse my master's bounty by
The undoing of yourself; let the world see
His nobleness well acted, which your death
Will never let come forth.

Cleo. Where art thou, death?
Come hither, come! come, come, and take a
queen
Worth many babes and beggars!

Pro. Of temperance, lady.

Cleo. Sir, I will eat no meat, I'll not drink
air;
If idle talk will once be necessary,
I'll not sleep neither. This mortal house I'll
ruin,
Do Caesar what he can. Know, air, that I

Wilt not wait pinion'd at your master's court,
Nor once be chastis'd with the sober eye
Of dull Octavia. Shall they hoist me up
And show me to the shouting variety
Of censoring Rome? Rather a ditch in Egypt.
Be gentle grave unto me! rather on Nilus’ mud
Lay me stark nak’d, and let the water-flyes
Blow me into abhorring! rather make
My country’s high pyramides my gibbet,
And hang me up in chains!

Pro. You do extend
These thoughts of horror further than you shall
Find cause in Caesar.

Enter DOLABELLA.

Dol. Proculeius, What thou hast done thy master Caesar knows,
And he hath sent for thee; as for the queen,
I’ll take her to my guard.

Pro. So, Dolabella,
It shall content me best; be gentle to her. [To CLEOPATRA.] To Caesar I will speak what you shall please,
If you’ll employ me to him.

Cleo. Say, I would die.

[Execunt PROCULEIUS and Soldiers.

Dol. Most noble empress, you have heard of me?

Cleo. I cannot tell.

Dol. Assuredly you know me. 72

Cleo. No matter, sir, what I have heard or
known.

You laugh when boys or women tell their
dreams;

Is’t not your trick?

Dol. I understand not, madam.

Cleo. I dream’d there was an Emperor
Antony:

O! such another sleep, that I might see
But such another man.

Dol. If it might please ye,—

Cleo. His face was as the heavens, and
therein stuck
A sun and moon, which kept their course, and
lighted

The little O, the earth.

Dol. Most sovereign creature,—

Cleo. His legs bestrid the ocean; his rear’d arm
Crested the world; his voice was propertied
As all the tuned spheres, and that to friends; 84
But when he meant to quail and shake the orb,
He was as rattling thunder. For his bounty,
There was no winter in ’t, an autumn ’twas
That grew the more by reaping; his delights 88
Were dolphin-like, they show’d his back above
The element they liv’d in; in his livery
Walk’d orowns and crownels, realms and islands
were
As plates dropp’d from his pocket.

Cleo. Think you there was, or might be, such
a man

As this I dream’d of?

Dol. Gentle madam, no.

Cleo. You lie, up to the hearing of the gods.
But, if there be, or ever were, one such, 96
It’s past the size of dreaming; nature wants stuff
To vie strange forms with fancy; yet to imagine
An Antony were nature’s piece ’gainst fancy,
Condemning shadows quite.

Dol. Hear me, good madam. 100
Your loss is as yourself, great; and you bear it
As answering to the weight: would I might never
O’ertake pursu’d success, but I do feel,
By the rebound of yours, a grief that smiles 104
My very heart at root.

Cleo. I thank you, sir.

Know you what Caesar means to do with me?

Dol. I am loath to tell you what I would you
know.

Cleo. Nay, pray you, sir,—

Dol. Though he be honourable,— 108

Cleo. He’ll lead me then in triumph?

Dol. Madam, he will; I know’t.

[Within, ‘Make way there,—Caesar!’

Enter CÉSAR, GALLUS, PROCULEIUS, MECÉNAS, SELEUGUS, and Attendants.

Cés. Which is the Queen of Egypt?

Dol. It is the emperor, madam. 112

[CLEOPATRA kneels.

Cés. Arise, you shall not kneel.

I pray you, rise; rise, Egypt.

Cleo. Sir, the gods
Will have it thus; my master and my lord
I must obey.

Cés. Take to you no hard thoughts; 116

The record of what injuries you did us,
Though written in our flesh, we shall remember
As things done by chance.

Cleo. Sole sir o’ the world,
I cannot project mine own causes so well
To make it clear; but do confess I have
Been laden with like frailties which before
Have often sham’d our sex.

Cés. Cleopatra, know,
We will extermiinate rather than enforce; 124
If you apply yourself to our intents,—
Which towards you are most gentle,—you shall

find

A benefit in this change; but if you seek
To lay on me a cruelty, by taking 128
Antony’s course, you shall bereave yourself
Of my good purposes, and put your children
To that destruction which I’ll guard them from,

If therefore you rely. I’ll take my leave. 132

1168
Cleo. And may through all the world: 'tis yours; and we,
Your scuttleons, and your signs of conquest,
 Hang in what place you please. Here, my good lord.
Cas. You shall advise me in all for Cleopatra.
Cleo. [Giving a Scroll.] This is the brief of money, plate, and jewels,
I am possess'd of: 'tis exactly valued;
Not petty things admitted. Where's Seleucus?
Sel. Here, madam. 140
Cleo. This is my treasurer; let him speak, my lord,
Upon his peril, that I have reserv'd
To myself nothing. Speak the truth, Seleucus.
Sel. Madam, I had rather seal my lips, than, to my peril,
Speak that which is not.
Cleo. What have I kept back? 144
Sel. Enough to purchase what you have made known.
Cas. Nay, blush not, Cleopatra; I approve Your wisdom in the deed.
Cleo. See! Caesar! O, behold, how pomp is follow'd; mine will now be yours;
And, should we shift estates, yours would be mine.
The ingratitude of this Seleucus does even make me wild. O slave! of no more trust
Than love that's hir'd. What! goest thou back? thou shalt
Go back, I warrant thee; but I'll catch thine eye,
Though they had wings: slave, soulless villain, dog! 156
O rarely base!
Cas. Good queen, let us entreat you.
Cleo. O Caesar! what a wounding shame is this,
That thou, vouchsafing here to visit me,
Doing the honour of thy lordliness,
To one so meek, that mine own servant should
Parse the sum of my disgraces by addition of his envy. Say, good Caesar,
That I some lady trifles have reserv'd,
Immortal toys, things of such dignity
As we great modern friends withal; and say,
Some nobler token I have kept apart
For Livia and Octavia, to induce
Their mediation; must I be unfolded
With one that I have bred? The gods! it amities me
Beneath the fall I have. [To Seleucus.] Pray, go hence;
Or I shall show the cinders of my spirits 172
Through the ashes of my chance. Wert thou a man,
Thou wouldst have mercy on me.
Cas. Forbear, Seleucus. [Exit Seleucus.
Cleo. Be it known that we, the greatest, are misthought
For things that others do; and, when we fall, we answer others' merits in our name,
Are therefore to be pitied.
Cas. Cleopatra,
Not what you have reserv'd, nor what acknowledg'd,
Put we i' the roll of conquest; still be 't yours,
Bestow it at your pleasure; and believe, Caesar's no merchant, to make prize with you
Of things that merchants sold. Therefore be cheer'd;
Make not your thoughts your prisons: no, dear queen;
For we intend so to dispose you as
Yourself shall give us counsel. Feed, and sleep:
Our care and pity is so much upon you,
That we remain your friend; and so, adieu. 188
Cleo. My master, and my lord!
Cleo. He words me, girls; he words me, that I should not
Be noble to myself: but, hark thee, Charmian.
[Whispers Charmian.
Iras. Finish, good lady; the bright day is done,
And we are for the dark.
Cleo. Hee thee again:
I have spoke already, and it is provided;
Go, put it to the haste.
Char. Madam, I will.
Re-enter Dolabella.
Dol. Where is the queen?
Char. Behold, sir. [Exit.
Cleo. Dolabella! 196
Dol. Madam, as thereto sworn by your command,
Which my love makes religion to obey,
I tell you this: Caesar through Syria
Intends his journey; and within three days you with your children will be send before.
Make your best use of this; I have perform'd
Your pleasure and my promise.
Cleo. Dolabella,
I shall remain your debtor.
Dol. I your servant. 204
Adieu, good queen; I must attend on Caesar.
Cleo. Farewell, and thanks.
[Exit Dolabella.
Hast thou the pretty worm of Nilus there,
That kills and pains not?

Clo. Truly, I have him; but I would not
be the party that should desire you to touch
him, for his biting is immortal; those that do
die of it do seldom or never recover.

Clo. Remember'st thou any that have died
on 't? 248

Clo. Very many, men and women too. I
heard of one of them no longer than yesterday;
a very honest woman, but something given to
lie, as a woman should not do but in the way of
honestly, how she died of the biting of it, what
pain she felt. Truly, she makes a very good
report o’ the worm; but he that will believe all
that they say shall never be saved by half that
they do. But this is most fallible, the worm’s
an odd worm.

Clo. Get thee hence; farewell.

Clo. I wish you all joy of the worm. 260

Clo. Farewell.

Clo. You must think this, look you, that the
worm will do his kind.

Clo. Ay, ay; farewell. 264

Clo. Look you, the worm is not to be
trusted but in the keeping of wise people; for
indeed there is no goodness in the worm.

Clo. Take thou no care; it shall be heeded.

Clo. Very good. Give it nothing, I pray you,
for it is not worth the feeding.

Clo. Will it eat me?

Clo. You must not think I am so simple
but I know the devil himself will not eat a
woman; I know that a woman is a dish for the
gods, if the devil dress her not. But, truly,
these same whoreson devils do the gods great
harm in their women, for in every ten that
they make, the devils mar five. 278

Clo. Well, get thee gone; farewell.

Clo. Yes, forsooth; I wish you joy of the
worm. 278

Re-enter Ira, with a robe, crown, &c.

Clo. Give me my robe, put on my crown; I
have
Immortal longings in me; now no more
The juice of Egypt’s grape shall moist this lip.
Yare, yare, good Ira; quick. Methinks I hear
Antony call; I see him rouse himself
To praise my noble act; I hear him mock
The luck of Caesar, which the gods give men 288
To excuse their after wrath: husband, I come:
Now to that name my courage prove my title!
I am fire, and air; my other elements
I give to baser life. So; have you done? 292
Come then, and take the last warmth of my lips.
ANTONY AND CLEOPATRA  Act V, Sc. II.

Farewell, kind Charmian; Iras, long farewell.
[Kisses them. IRAS falls and dies.
Have I the aspic in my lips? Dost fall?
If thou and nature can so gently part,
The stroke of death is as a lover's pinch,
Which hurts, and is desir'd. Dost thou lie still?
If thus thou vanishest, thou tell'st the world
It is not worth leave-taking.
Char. Dissolve, thick cloud, and rain; that I may say,
The gods themselves do weep.
Cleo. This proves me base:
If she first meet the curled Antony,
He'll make demand of her, and spend that kiss
Which is my heaven to have. Come, thou mortal wretch,
[To the asp, which she applies to her breast.
With thy sharp teeth this knot intricate
Of life at once unites; poor venomous fool,
Be angry, and dispatch. O! couldnst thou speak,
That I might hear thee call great Caesar ass
Unpolicied.
Char. O eastern star!
Cleo. Peace, peace!
Dost thou not see my baby at my breast,
That sucks the nurse asleep?
Char. O, break! O, break! 312
Cleo. As sweet as balm, as soft as air, as gentle,—
O Antony!—Nay, I will take thee too.
[Applying another asp to her arm.
What should I stay—
Char. In this vile world? So, fare thee well.
Now boast thee, death, in thy possession lies
A less unparallel'd. Downy windows, close;
And golden Phœbus never be beheld
Of eyes again so royal! Your crown's awry; 320
I'll mend it, and then play.

Enter the Guard, rushing in.
First Guard. Where is the queen?
Char. Speak softly, wake her not.
First Guard. Caesar hath sent—
Char. Too slow a messenger.
[Applies an asp.
Ol! come space, dispatch; I partly feel thee. 324
First Guard. Approach, ho! All's not well;
Caesar's beguil'd.
Sec. Guard. There's Dolabella sent from Caesar; call him.
First Guard. What work is here! Charmian, is this well done?
Char. It is well done, and fitting for a princess
Descended of so many royal kings.
Ah! soldier.  
[Dies.

Re-enter DOLABELLA.

Dol. How goes it here?
Sec. Guard. All dead.
Dol. Caesar, thy thoughts
Touch their effects in this; thyself art coming
To see perform'd the dreadful act which thou so soughtst to hinder.
[Within, 'A way there!—a way for Caesar!'

Re-enter CESAR and all his Train.

Dol. O! sir, you are too sure an augurer;
That you did fear is done.
Ces. Bravest at the last, 336
She level'd at our purposes, and, being royal,
Took her own way. The manner of their deaths?
I do not see them bleed.
Dol. Who was last with them?
First Guard. A simple countryman that brought her figs:
This was his basket.
Ces. Poison'd then.
First Guard. O Caesar!
This Charmian liv'd but now; she stood, and spake:
I found her trimming up the diadem
On her dead mistress; tremblingly she stood, 344
And on the sudden dropp'd.
Ces. O noble weakness!
If they had swallow'd poison 'twould appear
By external swelling; but she looks like sleep,
As she would catch another Antony 348
In her strong toil of grace.
Dol. Here, on her breast,
There is a vent of blood, and something blown;
The like is on her arm.
First Guard. This is an aspic's trail; and these fig-leaves
Have alime upon them, such as the aspic leaves.
Upon the caves of Nile.
Ces. Most probable
That so she died; for her physician tells me
She hath pursu'd conclusions infinite
Of easy ways to die. Take up her bed;
And bear her women from the monument.
She shall be buried by her Antony:
No grave upon the earth shall clip in it
A pair so famous. High events as these
Strike those that make them; and their story
Is no less in pity than his glory which
Brought them to be lamented. Our army shall
In solemn show, attend this funeral.
And then to Rome. Come, Dolabella, see
High order in this great solemnity.  
[Exeunt.
CYMBELINE

DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

Cymbeline, King of Britain.
Cloten, Son to the Queen by a former Husband.
Posthumus Leonatus, a Gentleman, Husband to Imogen.
Belarius, a banished Lord, disguised under the name of Morgan.
    Sons to Cymbeline, disguised
Guiderius, under the names of Polydore
Arviragus, and Cadwal, supposed Sons to Morgan.
Philario, Friend to Posthumus, Italians.
Iachimo, Friend to Philario,
A French Gentleman, Friend to Philario.
Caius Lucius, General of the Roman Forces.
A Roman Captain.
Two British Captains.

Pisanio, Servant to Posthumus.
Cornelius, a Physician.
Two Lords of Cymbeline's Court.
Two Gentlemen of the same.
Two Gaolers.
Queen, Wife to Cymbeline.
Imogen, Daughter to Cymbeline by a former Queen.
Helen, a Lady attending on Imogen.
Lords, Ladies, Roman Senators, Tribunes, a Dutch Gentleman, a Spanish Gentleman, a Soothsayer, Musicians, Officers, Captains, Soldiers, Messengers, and other Attendants.

Apparitions.

Scene.—Sometimes in Britain, sometimes in Italy.

ACT I.

Scene I.—Britain. The Garden of Cymbeline's Palace.

Enter two Gentlemen.

First Gent. You do not meet a man but frowns; our bloods
No more obey the heavens than our courtiers
Still seem as does the king.

Sec. Gent. But what's the matter?
First Gent. His daughter, and the heir of her kingdom, whom
He purposed to his wife’s sole son,—a widow
That late he married,—hath refer’d herself
Unto a poor but worthy gentleman. She’s wedded;
Her husband banish’d, she imprison’d: all
Is outward sorrow, though I think the king
Be touch’d at very heart.

Sec. Gent. None but the king?
First Gent. He that hath lost her too; so is the queen,
That most desir’d the match; but not a courtier,
Although they wear their faces to the best
Of the king’s looks, hath a heart that is not
Glad at the thing they scowl at.

Sec. Gent. And why so?
First Gent. He that hath miss’d the princess
is a thing

Too bad for bad report; and he that hath her,—
I mean that married her, alack! good man! And therefore banish’d—is a creature such
As, to seek through the regions of the earth
For one his like, there would be something failing
In him that should compare. I do not think
So fair an outward and such stuff within
Endows a man but he.

Sec. Gent. You speak him fair.
First Gent. I do extend him, sir, within himself,
Crush him together rather than unfold
His measure duly.

Sec. Gent. What’s his name and birth?
First Gent. I cannot delve him to the root:
his father

Was called Sicius, who did join his honour
Against the Romans with Cassibelan,
But had his titles by Tenanius whom
He serv’d with glory and admir’d success,
So gain’d the sur-addition Leonatus;
And had, besides this gentleman in question,
Two other sons, who in the wars o’ the time
Died with their swords in hand; for which their father—

Then old and fond of issue—took such sorrow
That he quit being; and his gentle lady,
Big of this gentleman, our theme, deceas’d

1172
As he was born, the king, he takes the babe on
To his protection; calls him Posthumus Leonatus;
Bred him and makes him of his bedchamber,
Puts to him all the learnings that his time
Could make him the receiver of; which he took,
As we do air, fast as 'twas minister'd,
And in's spring a became a harvest; liv'd in court,
Which rare it is to do—most prais'd, most lov'd;
A sample to the youngest, to the more mature
A glass that feasted them, and to the graver
A child that guided dotards; to his mistress,
For whom he now is banish'd, her own price
Proclaims how she esteem'd him and his virtue;
By her election may be truly read
What kind of man he is.

Sec. Gent. I honour him,
Even out of your report. But pray you, tell me,
Is she sole child to the king?

First Gent. His only child. He had two sons,—if this be worth your hearing,
Mark it,—the eldest of them at three years old,
I' the swathing clothes the other, from their nursery
Were stol'n; and to this hour no guess in knowledge
Which way they went.

Sec. Gent. How long is this ago?
First Gent. Some twenty years.
Sec. Gent. That a king's children should be
So slacked guarded, and the search so slow,
That could not trace them!
First Gent. Howsoe'er 'tis strange,
Or that the negligence may well be laugh'd at,
Yet is it true, sir.
Sec. Gent. I do well believe you.
First Gent. We must forbear. Here comes
the gentleman,
The queen, and princess.

Enter the Queen, Posthumus, and Imogen.

Queen. No, be assur'd you shall not find me,
daughter,
After the slander of most step-mothers,
Evil-ey'd unto you; you're my prisoner, but
Your gaoler shall deliver you the keys
That lock up your restraint. For you, Posthumus,
So soon as I can win the offended king,
I will be known your advocate; marry, yet
The fire of rage is in him, and 'twere good
You lean'd unto his sentence with what patience
Your wisdom may inform you.

Post. Please your highness,
I will from hence to-day.

Queen. You know the peril:
I'll fetch a turn about the garden, pitying
The pangs of barr'd affections, though the king
Hath charg'd you should not speak together.

[Exit.]

Imo.
Dissembling courtesy. How fine this tyrant
Can tickle where she wounds! My dearest husband,
I something fear my father's wrath; but nothing,—
Always reserve my holy duty,—what
His rage can do on me. You must be gone; and
And I shall here abide the hourly shot
Of angry eyes, not comforted to live,
But that there is this jewel in the world
That I may see again.

Post. O! My queen! my mistress! 92
O lady, weep no more, lest I give cause
To be suspected of more tenderness
Than doth become a man. I will remain
The loyal husband that did e'er plight troth.
My residence in Rome at one Philario's,
Who to my father was a friend, to me
Known but by letter; thither write, my queen,
And with mine eyes I'll drink the words you send,
Though ink be made of gall.

Re-enter Queen.

Queen. Be brief, I pray you;
If the king come, I shall incur I know not
How much of his displeasure. [Aside.] Yet I'll
move him
To walk this way. I never do him wrong, 104
But he does buy my injuries to be friends,
Pays dear for my offences.

Post. Should we be taking leave
As long a term as yet we have to live,
The loathness to depart would grow: Adieu!

Imo. Nay, stay a little:
Were you but riding forth to air yourself
Such parting were too petty. Look here, love;
This diamond was my mother's; take it, heart;
But keep it till you woo another wife,
When Imogen is dead.

Post. How! how! another?
You gentle gods, give me but this I have,
And sear up my embracements from a next
With bonds of death!—Remain, remain thou
here
[Putting on the ring.
While sense can keep it on! And, sweetest,
fairest,
As I my poor self did exchange for you,
To your so infinite loss, so our trifles
Still win of you; for my sake wear this;
It is a manacle of love; I'll place it
Act I, Sc. I.

Upon this fairest prisoner. [Putting a bracelet on her arm.]

Imo. O the gods! When shall we see again?

Enter CYMBELINE and Lords.

Post. Alack! the king! 124
Cym. Thou basest thing, avoid! hence, from my sight!
If after this command thou fraught the court
With thy unworthiness, thou diest. Away!
Thou’rt poison to my blood.

Post. The gods protect you 128
And bless the good remainders of the court!
I am gone. [Exit.]

Imo. There cannot be a pinch in death
More sharp than this.

Cym. O disloyal thing,
That shouldst repair my youth, thou heap’st instead
A year’s age on me.

Imo. I beseech you, sir,
Harm not yourself with your vexation;
I am senseless of your wrath; a touch more rare
Subdues all pangs, all fears.

Cym. Past grace? obedience?
Imo. Past hope, and in despair; that way,
Past grace.

Cym. That mightst have had the sole son of my queen!
Imo. O bless’d, that I might not! I chose an eagle
And did avoid a puttock.

Cym. Thou tookst a beggar; wouldst have made my throne
A seat for baseness.
Imo. No; I rather added
A lustre to it.

Cym. O thou vile one!

Imo. Sir,
It is your fault that I have lov’d Posthumus;
You bred him as my playfellow, and he is
A man worth any woman, overbuys me
Almost the sum he pays.

Cym. What! art thou mad?
Imo. Almost, sir; heaven restore me! Would I were
A ne’er-herd’s daughter, and my Leonatus
Our neighbour shepherd’s son!

Cym. Thou foolish thing!

Re-enter QUEEN.

They were again together; you have done
Not after our command. Away with her, 152
And pen her up.

Queen. Beseech your patience. Peace!
Dear lady daughter, peace! Sweet sovereign,

Leave us to ourselves, and make yourself some comfort.

Out of your best advice.

Cym. Nay, let her languish 156
A drop of blood a day; and, being aged,
Die of this folly!  

[Exeunt CYMBELINE and Lords.

Queen. Fie! you must give way:

Enter PISANIO.

Here is your servant. How now, sir! What news?

Pis. My lord your son drew on my master.

Queen. Hal! 160
No harm, I trust, is done?

Pis. There might have been,
But that my master rather play’d than fought,
And had no help of anger; they were parted
By gentlemen at hand.

Queen. I am very glad on’t. 164
Imo. Your son’s my father’s friend; he takes
his part.

To draw upon an exile! O brave sir!
I would they were in Afric both together,
Myself by with a needle, that I might prick
The goer-back. Why came you from your master?

Pis. On his command: he would not suffer me
To bring him to the haven; left these notes
Of what commands I should be subject to, 172
When ’t pleas’d you to employ me.

Queen. This hath been
Your faithful servant; I dare lay mine honour
He will remain so.

Pis. I humbly thank your highness.

Queen. Pray, walk awhile.

Imo. [To PISANIO.] About some half-hour hence,
I pray you, speak with me. You shall at least
Go see my lord aboard; for this time leave me.

[Exeunt.

SCENE II.—The Same. A Public Place.

Enter CLODEN and two Lords.

First Lord. Sir, I would advise you to shift a shirt; the violence of action hath made you reek as a sacrifice. Where air comes out, air comes in; there’s none abroad so wholesome as that you vant.

Clo. If my shirt were bloody, then to shift it.

Have I hurt him?

Sec. Lord. [Aside.] No faith; not so much as his patience.

First Lord. Hurt him! his body’s a passable
carcass if he be not hurt; it is a thoroughfare
for steel if it be not hurt.
Sec. Lord. [Aside.] His steel was in debt; it went o' the backside the town.
Clo. The villain would not stand me.
Sec. Lord. [Aside.] No; but he fled forward still, toward your face.
First Lord. Stand you! You have land enough of your own; but he added to your having, gave you some ground.
Sec. Lord. [Aside.] As many inches as you have oceans. Puppies!
Clo. I would they had not come between us.
Sec. Lord. [Aside.] So would I till you had measured how long a fool you were upon the ground.
Clo. And that she should love this fellow and refuse me!
Sec. Lord. [Aside.] If it be a sin to make a true election, she is damned.
First Lord. Sir, as I told you always, her beauty and her brain go not together: she's a good sign, but I have seen small reflection of her wit.
Sec. Lord. [Aside.] She shines not upon fools, lest the reflection should hurt her.
Clo. Come, I'll to my chamber. Would there had been some hurt done!
Sec. Lord. [Aside.] I wish not so; unless it had been the fall of an ass, which is no great hurt.
Clo. You'll go with us?
First Lord. I'll attend your lordship.
Clo. Nay, come, let's go together.
Sec. Lord. Well, my lord. [Exeunt.

SCENE III.—A Room in CYMBELINE'S Palace.

Enter IMOGEN and PISANO.

Imo. I would thou grew'st unto the shores of the haven.
And question'st every sail: if he should write,
And I not have it, 'twere a paper lost,
As offer'd mercy is. What was the last
That he spake to thee?

Pis. It was his queen, his queen!
Imo. Then waw'd his handkerchief?

Pis. And kiss'd it, madam.

Imo. Senseless linen, happier therein than I!
And that was all?

Pis. No, madam; for so long
As he could make me with this eye or ear
Distinguish him from others, he did keep
The deck, with glove, or hat, or handkerchief,
Still waving, as the fits and stirs of 's mind
Could best express how slow his soul sail'd on,

How swift his ship.

Imo. Thou shouldst have made him
As little as a crow, or less, ere left
To after-eye him.

Pis. Madam, so I did.
Imo. I would have broke mine eye-strings,
crack'd them, but
To look upon him, till the diminution
Of space had pointed him sharp as my needle,
Nay, follow'd him, till he had melted from
The smallness of a gnat to air, and then
Have turn'd mine eye, and wept. But, good
Pisano,

When shall we hear from him?

Pis. Be assur'd, madam,
With his next vantage.

Imo. I did not take my leave of him, but
had
Most pretty things to say; ere I could tell him
How I would think on him at certain hours
Such thoughts and such, or I could make him
swear
The shoes of Italy should not betray
Mine interest and his honour, or have charg'd him,
At the sixth hour of morn, at noon, at mid-night,
To encounter me with orisons, for then
I am in heaven for him; or ere I could
Give him that parting kiss which I had set
Betwixt two charming words, comes in my
father,
And like the tyrannous breathing of the north
Shakes all our buds from growing.

Enter a Lady.

Lady. The queen, madam, desires your highness' company.

Imo. Those things I bid you do, get them dispatch'd.

I will attend the queen.

Pis. Madam, I shall. [Exeunt.


Enter PHILARIO, IACHIMO, a Frenchman, a Dutchman, and a Spaniard.

Iach. Believe it, sir, I have seen him in Britain; he was then of a crescent note, expected to prove so worthy as since he hath been allowed the name of; but I could then have looked on him without the help of admiration, though the catalogue of his endowments had been tabled by his side and I to peruse him by items.
furnished than now he is with that which makes him both without and within.

French. I have seen him in France: we had very many there could behold the sun with as firm eyes as he.

Iach. This matter of marrying his king's daughter,—wherein he must be weighed rather by her value than his own,—words him, I doubt not, a great deal from the matter.

French. And then, his banishment.

Iach. Ay, and the approbation of those that weep this lamentable divorce under her colours are wonderfully to extend him; be it but to fortify her judgment, which else an easy battery might lay flat, for taking a beggar without less quality. But how comes it, he is to sojourn with you? How creeps acquaintance?

Phi. His father and I were soldiers together; to whom I have been bound for no less than my life. Here comes the Briton: let him be so entertained amongst you as suits, with gentlemen of your knowing, to a stranger of his quality.

Enter Posthumus.

I beseech you all, be better known to this gentleman, whom I commend to you, as a noble friend of mine; how worthy he is I will leave to appear henceforth, rather than story him in his own hearing.

French. Sir, we have known together in Orleans.

Post. Since when I have been debtor to you for courtesies, which I will be ever to pay and yet pay still.

French. Sir, you o'er-rate my poor kindness. I was glad I did atone my countryman and you; it had been pity you should have been put together with so mortal a purpose as then each bore, upon importance of so slight and trivial a nature.

Post. By your pardon, sir, I was then a young traveller; rather shunned to go even with what I heard than in my every action to be guided by others' experiences; but, upon my mended judgment,—if I offend not to say it is mended,—my quarrel was not altogether slight.

French. Faith, yes, to be put to the arbitrement of swords, and by such two that would by all likelihood have confounded one the other, or have fallen both.

Iach. Can we, with manners, ask what was the difference?

French. Safely, I think. 'Twas a contention in public, which may, without contradiction, suffer the report. It was much like an argument that fall out last night, where each of us fell in praise of our country mistresses; this gentleman at that time vouching—and upon warrant of bloody affirmation—his to be more fair, virtuous, wise, chaste, constant, qualified, and less attemptable, than any the rarest of our ladies in France.

Iach. That lady is not now living, or this gentleman's opinion by this worn out.

Post. She holds her virtue still and I my mind.

Iach. You must not so far prefer her 'fore ours of Italy.

Post. Being so far provoked as I was in France, I would abate her nothing, though I profess myself her adorer, not her friend.

Iach. As fair and as good—a kind of hand-in-hand comparison—had been something too far and too good for any lady in Britain. If she went before others I have seen, as that diamond of yours outstares many I have beheld, I could not but believe she excelled many; but I have not seen the most precious diamond that is, nor you the lady.

Post. I praised her as I rated her; so do I my stone.

Iach. What do you esteem it at?

Post. More than the world enjoys.

Iach. Either your unparagoned mistress is dead, or she's outprized by a trifle.

Post. You are mistaken; the one may be sold, or given; or if there were wealth enough for the purchase, or merit for the gift; the other is not a thing for sale, and only the gift of the gods.

Iach. Which the gods have given you?

Post. Which, by their graces, I will keep.

Iach. You may wear her in title yours, but, you know, strange fowlish light upon neighbouring ponds. Your ring may be stolen, too; so your brace of unprizeable estimations, the one is but frail and the other casual; a cunning thief, or a that way accomplished courtier, would hazard the winning both of first and last.

Post. Your Italy contains none so accomplished a courtier to convince the honour of my mistress, if, in the holding or loss of that, you term her frail. I do nothing doubt you have store of thieves; notwithstanding I fear not my ring.

Phi. Let us leave here, gentlemen.

Post. Sir, with all my heart. This worthy signior, I thank him, makes no stranger of me; we are familiar at first.

Iach. With five times so much conversation I should get ground of your fair mistress, make her go back, even to the yielding, had I admittance and opportunity to friend.
Post. No, no.

Iach. I dare thereupon pawn the moisty of my estate to your ring, which, in my opinion, o’ervalues it something; but I make my wager rather against your confidence than her reputation; and, to bar your offence herein too, I durst attempt it against any lady in the world.

Post. You are a great deal abused in too bold a persuasion; and I doubt not you sustain what you’re worthy of by your attempt.

Iach. What’s that?

Post. A repulse; though your attempt, as you call it, deserves more,—a punishment too.

Phi. Gentlemen, enough of this; it came in too suddenly; let it die as it was born, and, I pray you, be better acquainted.

Iach. Would I had put my estate and my neighbour’s on the approbation of what I have spoke!

Post. What lady would you choose to assail?

Iach. Yours; whom in constancy you think stands so safe. I will lay you ten thousand ducats to your ring, that commit me to the court where your lady is, with no more advantage than the opportunity of a second conference, and I will bring from thence that honour of hers which you imagine so reserved.

Post. I will wage against your gold, gold to it: my ring I hold dear as my finger; ’tis part of it.

Iach. You are afraid, and therein the wiser. If you buy ladies’ flesh at a million a dram, you cannot preserve it from tainting. But I see you have some religion in you, that you fear.

Post. This is but a custom in your tongue; you bear a graver purpose, I hope.

Iach. I am the master of my speeches, and would undergo what’s spoken, I swear.

Post. Will you? I shall but lend my diamond till your return. Let there be covenants drawn between ’s: my mistress exceeds in goodness the hugeness of your unworthy thinking; I dare you to this match. Here’s my ring.

Phi. I will have it no lay.

Iach. By the gods, it is one. If I bring you no sufficient testimony that I have enjoyed the dearest bodily part of your mistress, my ten thousand ducats are yours; so is your diamond too: if I come off, and leave her in such honour as you have trust in, she your jewel, this your jewel, and my gold are yours: provided I have your commendation for my more free entertainment.

Post. I embrace these conditions; let us have articles betwixt us. Only, thus far you shall answer: if you make your voyage upon her and give me directly to understand that you have prevailed, I am no further your enemy; she is not worth our debate: if she remain un- seduced,—you not making it appear otherwise,—for your ill opinion, and the assault you have made to her chastity, you shall answer me with your sword.

Iach. Your hand; a covenant. We will have these things set down by lawful counsel, and straight away for Britain, lest the bargain should catch cold and starve. I will fetch my gold and have our two wagers recorded.

Post. Agreed.

[Exit POSTHUMUS and IACHIMO.

French. Will this hold, think you?

Phi. Signior Iachimo will not from it. Pray, let us follow ’em.

[Exit.

SCENE V.—Britain. A Room in Cymbeline’s Palace.

Enter QUEEN, LADIES, and CORNELIUS.

Queen. Whiles yet the dew’s on ground, gather those flowers:

Make haste; who has the note of them?

First Lady. I, madam.

Queen. Dispatch. [Exit Ladies.

Now, Master doctor, have you brought those drugs?

Cor. Pleseth your highness, ay; here they are, madam: [Presenting a small box.

But I beseech your Grace, without offence,—My conscience bids me ask,—wherefore you have

Commanded of me these most poisonous compounds,

Which are the movers of a languishing death,
But though slow, deadly?

Queen. I wonder, doctor,
Thou ask’st me such a question: have I not been
Thy pupil long? Hast thou not learn’d me how
To make perfumes? distill? preserve? yes, so 
That our great king himself doth woo me oft
For my confections? Having thus far proceeded,—

Unless thou think’st me devilish,—is’t not true
That I did amplify my judgment in
Other conclusions? I will try the forces
Of these thy compounds on such creatures as
We count not worth the hanging,—but none
human,—

To try the vigour of them and apply
Allayments to their act, and by them gather
Their several virtues and effects.

Cor. Your highness shall from this practice but harden your heart;
It is an earnest of a further good
That I mean to thee. Tell thy mistress how
The case stands with her; do not as from thyself.
Think what a chance thou changest on, but think
Thou hast thy mistress still, to boot, my son,
Who shall take notice of thee. I'll move the king
To any shape of thy preferment such
As thou'lt desire; and then myself, I chiefly, 72
That set thee on to this desert, am bound
To load thy merit richly. Call my women;
Think on my words.  

[Exit PISANIO.]

A sly and constant knave,
Not to be shak'd; the agent for his master,
And the remembrancer of her to hold
The hand-fast to her lord. I have given him that
Which, if he take, shall quite unpeople her
Of leigres for her sweet, and which she after,
Except she bend her humour, shall be assur'd To taste of too.

Re-enter PISANIO and Ladies.

So, so;—well done, well done.
The violets, cowslips, and the prime-roses
Bear to my closet. Fare thee well, Pisanio: 84
Think on my words.

[Exeunt QUEEN and Ladies.]

Pis. And shall do:
But when to my good lord I prove untrue,
I'll choke myself; there's all I'll do for you.

[Exit.

SCENE VI.—The Same. Another Room in the Palace.

Enter IMOGEN.

Imo. A father cruel, and a step-dame false;
A foolish suitor to a wedded lady,
That hath her husband banish'd: Of that husband,
My supreme crown of grief! and those repeated Verzations of it! Had I been thief-stol'n, 5
As my two brothers, happy! but most miserable
Is the desire that's glorious: bless'd be those,
How mean so're, that have their honest wills, 8
Which seasons comfort. Who may this be?
Fis!

Enter PISANIO and IACHIMO.

Pis. Madam, a noble gentleman of Rome,
Comes from my lord with letters.
Iach. Change you, madam?

The worthy Leonatus is in safety,
And greets your highness dearly.

[Presents a letter.

Imo. Thanks, good sir:
You are kindly welcome.

Iach. [Aside.] All of her that is out of door
most rich!
If she be furnish'd with a mind so rare, She is alone the Arabian bird, and I
Have lost the wager. Boldness be my friend! Arm me, audacity, from head to foot!
Or, like the Parthian, I shall flying fight; Rather, directly fly.

Imo. He is one of the noblest note, to whose kindnesses I am most infinitely tied. Reflect upon him accordingly, as you value your trust

Leonatus.

So far I read aloud;
But even the very middle of my heart
Is warm'd by the rest, and takes it thankfully. You are as welcome, worthy sir, as I Have words to bid you; and shall find it so In all that I can do.

Iach. Thanks, fairest lady.

What! are men mad? Hath nature given them eyes
To see this vaulted arch, and the rich crop Of sea and land, which can distinguish 'twixt The fiery orbs above and the twinn'd stones Upon the number'd beach? and can we not Partition make with spectacles so precious 'Twixt fair and foul?

Imo. What makes your admiration?

Iach. It cannot be 't the eye; for apes and monkeys 'Twixt two such she's would chattering this way and Contemn with mows the other; nor 't the judgment,

For idiots in this case of favour would Be wisely definite; nor 't the appetite; Sluttiness to such neat excellence oppos'd Should make desire vomit emptiness, Not so allure'd to feed.

Imo. What is the matter, trow?

Iach. The cloyed will,—
That satiate yet unsatisfied desire, that tub Both fill'd and running,—ravening first the lamb,

Longs after for the garbage.

Imo. What, dear sir, Thus rep's you? are you well?

Iach. Thanks, madam, well.

To Pisanio.] Beseech you, sir,
Desire my man's abode where I did leave him; He's strange and peevish.

Pis. I was going, sir,
To give him welcome. [Exit.

Imo. Continues well my lord his health, beseech you?

Iach. Well, madam.

Imo. Is he dispos'd to mirth? I hope he is.

Iach. Exceeding pleasant; none a stranger there So merry and so gamesome: he is call'd The Briton reveller.

Imo. When he was here He did incline to sadness, and oft-times Not knowing why.

Iach. I never saw him sad.

There is a Frenchman his companion, one, An eminent monsieur; that, it seems, much loves A Gallican girl at home; he furnaces The thick sighs from him, whiles the jolly Briton— Your lord, I mean—laughs from 's free lungs, cries, 'O! Can my sides hold, to think that man, who knows By history, report, or his own proof, What woman is, yea, what she cannot choose But must be, will his free hours languish for Assured bondage?

Imo. Will my lord say so?

Iach. Ay, madam, with his eyes in flood with laughter:
It is a recreation to be by And hear him mock the Frenchman; but, heavens know,

Some men are much to blame.

Imo. Not he, I hope.

Iach. Not he; but yet heaven's bounty towards him might Be us'd more thankfully. In himself, 'tis much; In you,—which I account his beyond all talents,— Whilst I am bound to wonder, I am bound To pity too.

Imo. What do you pity, sir?

Iach. Two creatures, heartily.

Imo. Am I one, sir?

You look on me: what wrack discern you in me

Deserves your pity?

Iach. Lamentable! What! To hide me from the radiant sun and solace I' the dungeon by a snuff!

Imo. I pray you, sir, Deliver with more openness your answers To my demands. Why do you pity me?

Iach. That others do, I was about to say, enjoy your—But It is an office of the gods to venge it, Not mine to speak on 't.

1179
Act I, Sc. VI.

Cymbeline

Imo. You do seem to know something of me, or what concerns me; pray you,—

Since doubting things go ill often hurts more Than to be sure they do; for certainties Either are past remedies, or, timely knowing, The remedy then born,—discover to me What both you spur and stop.

Iach. Had I this cheek To bathe my lips upon; this hand, whose touch, Whose every touch, would force the feeler's soul To the oath of loyalty; this object, which Takes prisoner the wild motion of mine eye, Firing it only here; should I—damn'd then—Slaver with lips as common as the stairs That mount the Capitol; join gripe with hands Made hard with hourly falsehood,—falsehood, as With labour;—then by-peeping in an eye, Base and illustrious as the smoky light That's fed with stinking tallow; it were fit That all the plagues of hell should at one time Encounter such revolts.

Imo. My lord, I fear, Has forgot Britain.

Iach. And himself. Not I, Inclin'd to this intelligence, pronounce The beggary of his change; but 'tis your graces That from my mutest conscience to my tongue Charms this report out.

Imo. Let me hear no more. Iach. O dearest soul! your cause doth strike my heart With pity, that doth make me sick. A lady So fair,—and fasten'd to an empery Would make the great'st king double,—to be partner'd With tom-boy's hir'd with that self-exhibition Which your own coffers yield! with diseas'd ventures That play with all infirmities for gold Which rottenness can lend nature! such boil'd stuff As well might poison poison! Be reveng'd; Or she that bore you was no queen, and you Recoil from your great stock.

Imo. Reveng'd! How should I be reveng'd? If this be true,— As I have such a heart, that both mine ears Must not in haste abuse,—if it be true, How should I be reveng'd?

Iach. Should be make me as Live like Diana's priest, betwixt cold sheets, While he is vaulting variable ramps, In your despite, upon your person? Revenge it, I dedicate myself to your sweet pleasure, More noble than that runagate to your bed, And will continue fast to your affection, Still close as sure.

Imo. What ho, Pisaniol! Iach. Let me service tender on your lips. Imo. Away! I do condemn mine ears that have So long attended thee. If thou wert honourable, Thou wouldst have told this tale for virtue, not For such an end thou seek'st; as base as strange. Thou wrong'st a gentleman, who is as far From thy report as thou from honour, and Solicit'st here a lady that disdains Thee and the devil alike. What ho, Pisaniol! The king my father shall be made acquainted Of thy assault; if he shall think it fit, A saucy stranger in his court to mart As in a Romish stew and to expound His beastly mind to us, he hath a court He little cares for and a daughter who He not respects at all. What ho, Pisaniol! Iach. O happy Leonatus! I may say: The credit that thy lady hath of thee Deserves thy trust, and thy most perfect goodwill Her assur'd credit. Blessed live you long! A lady to the worthi'est that ever Country call'd his; and you his mistress, only For the most worthi'est fit. Give me your pardon. I have spoken this, to know if your affiance Were deeply rooted, and shall make your lord That which he is, new o'er; and he is one Country call'd his; and you his mistress, only For the most worthi'est fit. Give me your pardon.

Iach. You make amends. Iach. He sits 'mongst men like a descended god: He hath a kind of honour sets him off, More than a mortal seeming. Be not angry, Most mighty princess, that I have adventur'd To try your taking of a false report; which hath Honour'd with confirmation your great judgment In the election of a sir so rare, Which you know cannot err. The love I bear him Made me to fan you thus; but the gods made you, Unlike all others, chaffless. Pray, your pardon. Iach. My humble thanks. I had almost forgot To entreat your Grace but in a small request.
And yet of moment too, for it concerns
Your lord, myself, and other noble friends,
Are partners in the business.

_Imo._ Pray, what is ‘t? 184

_Iach._ Some dozen Romans of us and your lord,
The best feather of our wing, have mingled sums
To buy a present for the emperor;
Which I, the factor for the rest, have done 188
In France; ‘tis plate of rare device, and jewels
Of rich and exquisite form; their values great;
And I am something curious, being strange,
To have them in safe stowage. May it please you
To take them in protection?

_Imo._ Willingly;
And pawn mine honour for their safety: since
My lord hath interest in them, I will keep them
In my bedchamber.

_Iach._ They are in a trunk, 196
Attended by my men; I will make bold
To send them to you, only for this night;
I must aboard to-morrow.

_Imo._ O! no, no.

_Iach._ Yes, I beseech, or I shall short my word
By lengthening my return. From Gallia
I cross’d the seas on purpose and on promise
To see your Grace.

_Imo._ I thank you for your pains;
But not away to-morrow!

_Iach._ O! I must, madam: 204
Therefore I shall beseech you, if you please
To greet your lord with writing, do ‘t to-night:
I have outstood my time, which is material
To the tender of our present.

_Imo._ I will write. 208
Send your trunk to me; it shall safe be kept,
And truly yielded you. You’re very welcome.

_Exeunt._

**ACT II.**

**SCENE I.—Britain. Before Cymbeline’s Palace.**

_Enter Clooten and two Lords._

_Clo._ Was there ever man had such luck! when I kissed the jack, upon an up-cast to be hit away! I had a hundred pound on ‘t; and then a whoseon jackenapes must take me up for swearing, as if I borrowed mine oaths of him and might not spend them at my pleasure.

_First Lord._ What got he by that? You have broke his pate with your bowl.

_Sec. Lord._ [Aside.] If his wit had been like him that broke it, it would have run all out.

_Clo._ When a gentleman is disposed to swear, it is not for any standers-by to curtail his oaths, ha?

_Sec. Lord._ No, my lord; [Aside.] nor crop the ears of them.

_Clo._ Whoreson dog! I give him satisfaction! Would he had been one of my rank!

_Sec. Lord._ [Aside.] To have smelt like a fool.

_Clo._ I am not vexed more at any thing in the earth. A pox on ‘t! I had rather not be so noble as I am. They dare not fight with me because of the queen my mother. Every Jack-slave hath his bellyful of fighting, and I must go up and down like a cock that nobody can match.

_Sec. Lord._ [Aside.] You are cock and capon too; and you crow, cock, with your comb on.

_Clo._ Sayest thou? 28

_Sec. Lord._ It is not fit your lordship should undertake every companion that you give offence to.

_Clo._ No, I know that; but it is fit I should commit offence to my inferiors. 33

_Sec. Lord._ Ay, it is fit for your lordship only.

_Clo._ Why, so I say.

_First Lord._ Did you hear of a stranger that’s come to court to-night?

_Clo._ A stranger, and I not know on ‘t!

_Sec. Lord._ [Aside.] He’s a strange fellow himself, and knows it not.

_First Lord._ There’s an Italian come; and ‘tis thought, one of Leonatus’ friends.

_Clo._ Leonatus! a banished rascal; and he’s another, whatsoever he be. Who told you of this stranger?

_First Lord._ One of your lordship’s pages.

_Clo._ Is it fit I went to look upon him? Is there no derogation in ‘t?

_First Lord._ You cannot derogate, my lord.

_Clo._ Not easily, I think.

_Sec. Lord._ [Aside.] You are a fool, granted; therefore your issues, being foolish, do not derogate.

_Clo._ Come, I’ll go see this Italian. What I have lost to-day at bowls I’ll win to-night of him. Come, go.

_Sec. Lord._ I’ll attend your lordship.

_Exeunt Clooten and First Lord._

That such a crafty devil as is his mother Should yield the world this ass! a woman that so Bears all down with her brain, and this her son Cannot take two from twenty for his heart And leave eighteen. Alas! poor princess, Thou divine Imogen, what thou endurest Betwixt a father by thy step-dame govern’d, A mother hourly coining plots, a wooer...
More hateful than the soul expulsion is
Of thy dear husband, than that horrid act
Of the divorce he’d make. The heavens hold
The walls of thy dear honour; keep unshak’d
That temple, thy fair mind; that thou mayst
To enjoy thy banish’d lord and this great land!
[Exit.

SCENE II.—A Bedchamber; in one part of
it a Trunk.

IMOGEN reading in her bed; a Lady attending.

Imo. Who’s there? my woman Helen?
Lady. Please you, madam.
Imo. What hour is it?
Lady. Almost midnight, madam.
Imo. I have read three hours then; mine eyes
are weak;
Fold down the leaf where I have left; to bed: 4
Take not away the taper, leave it burning,
And if thou canst awake by four o’ the clock,
I prithee, call me. Sleep has seized me wholly.
[Exit Lady.

To your protection I command me, gods!
From fairies and the tempters of the night
Guard me, beseech ye!

[Sleeps. IACHIMO comes from the trunk.

Iach. The crickets sing, and man’s o’er-
labour’d sense
Repairs itself by rest. Our Tarquin thus
Did softly press the rushes ere he waken’d
The chastity he wounded. Cytherea,
How bravely thou becomst thy bed! fresh
lily,
And whiter than the sheets! That I might
touch!
But kiss: one kiss! Rubies unparagon’d,
How dearly they do ’t! ’Tis her breathing that
Perfumes the chamber thus; the flame of the
taper
Bows toward her, and would under-peeple her
lids,
To see the enclosed lights, now canopied
Under these windows, white and asure lac’d
With blue of heaven’s own tint. But my
design,
To note the chamber: I will write all down:
Such and such pictures; there the window;
such
Th’ adornment of her bed; the arras, figures,
Why, such and such; and the contents o’ the
story.
All! but some natural notes about her body, 28
Above ten thousand meaner moveables
Would testify, to enrich mine inventory.

O sleep! thou ape of death, lie dull upon her;
And be her senses but as a monument
Thus in a chapel lying. Come off, come off;—
[Taking off her bracelet.
As slippery as the Gordian knot was hard!
’Tis mine; and this will witness outwardly,
As strongly as the conscience does within, 36
To the madding of her lord. On her left breast
A mole cinque-spotted, like the crimson drops
I’ the bottom of a cowslip: here’s a voucher;
Stronger than ever law could make: this
secret
Will force him think I have pick’d the lock and
’t’en
The treasure of her honour. No more. To what
end?
Why should I write this down, that’s riveted,
Screw’d to my memory? She hath been reading
late
The tale of Tereus; here the leaf’s turn’d down
Where Philomel gave up. I have enough:
To the trunk again, and shut the spring of it.
Swift, swift, you dragons of the night, that
dawning
May bare the raven’s eye! I lodge in fear;
Though this a heavenly angel, hell is here.

One, two, three: time, time!

[Clock strikes.

SCENE III.—An Ante-chamber adjoining
IMOGEN’S Apartments.

ENTER CLOTHEN and Lords.

First Lord. Your lordship is the most patient
man in loss, the most coldest that ever turned
up aso.

Clo. It would make any man cold to lose. 4
First Lord. But not every man patient after
the noble temper of your lordship. You are
most hot and furious when you win.

Clo. Winning will put any man into courage.
If I could get this foolish Imogen, I should have
gold enough. It’s almost morning, is’t not?
First Lord. Day, my lord. 11

Clo. I would this music would come. I am
advised to give her music o’ mornings; they say
it will penetrate.

ENTER Musicians.

Come on; tune. If you can penetrate her with
your fingering, so; we’ll try with tongue too:
if none will do, let her remain; but I’ll never
give o’er. First, a very excellent good-conceited thing; after, a wonderful sweet air, with
admirable rich words to it: and then let her
consider.
SONG.
Hark! hark! the lark at heaven's gate sings,
And Phoebus' gins arise,
His steeds to water at those springs,
And winking Mary-buds begin
To ope their golden eyes:
With every thing that pretty is,
My lady sweet, arise.
Arise, arise!

So, get you gone. If this penetrate, I will consider your music the better; if it do not, it is a vice in her ears, which horse-hairs and calves'-guts, nor the voice of unpaved eunuch to boot, can never amend.

[Exeunt Musicians.]

Sec. Lord. Here comes the king.

Clo. I am glad I was up so late, for that's the reason I was up so early; he cannot choose but take this service I have done fatherly.

Enter CYMBELINE and QUEEN.

Good morrow to your majesty and to my gracious mother.

Cym. Attend you here the door of our stern daughter?

Will she not forth?

Clo. I have assailed her with musics, but she vouchsafes no notice.

Cym. The exile of her minion is too new,
She hath not yet forgot him; some more time
Must wear the print of his remembrance out,
And then she's yours.

Queen. You are most bound to the king,
Who lets go by no vantages that may
Prefer you to his daughter. Frame yourself
To orderly soliciting, and befriended
With aptness of the season; make denials
Increase your services; so seem as if
You were inspir'd to do those duties which
You tender to her; that you in all obey her
Save when command to your dismission tends,
And therein you are senseless.

Clo. Senseless! not so.

Enter a Messenger.

Mess. So like you, sir, ambassadors from Rome;
The one is Caius Lucius.

Cym. A worthy fellow,
Albeit he comes on angry purpose now;
But that's no fault of his: we must receive him
According to the honour of his sender;
And towards himself, his goodness forespent
on us,
We must extend our notice. Our dear son,
When you have given good morning to your mistress,
Attend the queen and us; we shall have need

To employ you towards this Roman. Come,
our queen. [Exeunt all but CLODEN.

Clo. If she be up, I'll speak with her; if not,
Let her lie still, and dream. By your leave, ho!

[Knocks.

I know her women are about her. What
If I do line one of their hands? 'Tis gold
Which buys admittance; oft it doth; yea, and makes
Diana's rangers false themselves, yield up
Their deer to the stand o' the stealer; and 'tis gold
Which makes the true man kill'd and saves the
Nay, sometime hangs both thief and true man.
What
Can it not do and undo? I will make
One of her women lawyer to me, for
I yet not understand the case myself.

By your leave. [Knocks.

Enter a Lady.

Lady. Who's there, that knocks?

Clo. A gentleman.

Lady. No more?

Clo. Yes, and a gentlewoman's son.

Lady. [Aside.] That's more
Than some whose tailors are as dear as yours.

Can justly boast of. What's your lordship's
pleasure?

Clo. Your lady's person: is she ready?

Lady. Ay,
To keep her chamber.

Clo. There's gold for you; sell me your good
report.

Lady. How! my good name? or to report of
you
What I shall think is good? — The princess!

Enter IMOGEN.

Clo. Good morrow, fairest; sister, your sweet
hand. [Exit Lady.

Imo. Good morrow, sir. You lay out too
much pains
For purchasing but trouble; the thanks I give
Is telling you that I am poor of thanks
And scarce can spare them.

Clo. Still, I swear I love you.

Imo. If you but said so, 'twere as deep with me:

If you swear still, your recompense is still
That I regard it not.

Clo. This is no answer.

Imo. But that you shall not say I yield being silent
I would not speak. I pray you, spare me: faith,
I shall unfold equal discourtesy
Act II, Sc. III.

To your best kindness. One of your great know-
ing
Should learn, being taught, forbearance.
Clo. To leave you in your madness, 'twere
my sin; 104
I will not.

Imo. Fools cure not mad folks.
Clo. Do you call me fool?

Imo. As I am mad, I do:
If you'll be patient, I'll no more be mad; 108
That cures us both. I am much sorry, sir,
You put me to forget a lady's manners,
By being so verbal; and learn now, for all,
That I, which know my heart, do here pronounce
By the very truth of it, I care not for you; 113
And am so near the lack of charity,—
To accuse myself,—I hate you; which I had
rather
You felt than make 't my boast.

Clo. You sin against 116
Obedience, which you owe your father.
For
The contract you pretend with that base wretch,
One bred of alms and foster'd with cold dishes,
With scraps o' the court, it is no contract,
none; 120
And though it be allow'd in meaner parties—
Yet who than be more mean?—to knit their
souls—
On whom there is no more dependancy
But brats and beggary—in self-figur'd knot; 124
Yet you are curb'd from that enlargement by
The consequence o' the crown, and must not soil
The precious note of it with a base slave,
A hilding for a livery, a squire's cloth, 128
A pantler, not so eminent.

Imo. Profane fellow!
Wert thou the son of Jupiter, and no more
But what thou art besides, thou wert too base
To be his groom; thou wert dignified enough,
Even to the point of envy, if 'twere made 133
Comparative for your virtues, to be styl'd
The under-hangman of his kingdom, and hated
For being prefer'd so well,
Clo. The south-fog rot him!

Imo. He never can meet more mischance
than come 137
To be but nam'd of thee. His meanest garment
That ever hath but clipp'd his body, is dearer
In my respect than all the hairs above thee, 140
Were they all made such men. How now,

Pisanio!

Enter Pisanio.

Clo. 'His garment!' Now, the devil—

Imo. To Dorothy my woman bid thee pres-
ently,—

Clo. 'His garment!'
Worthy his frowning at: their discipline,—
Now winged,—with their courage will make
known
To their approvers they are people such
That mend upon the world.

Phi. See! Iachimo!

Enter Iachimo.

Post. The swiftest harts have posted you by
land,
And winds of all the corners kiss’d your sails, 28
To make your vessel nimble.

Phi. Welcome, sir.

Post. I hope the briefness of your answer
made
The speediness of your return.

Iach. Your lady
Is one of the fairest that I have look’d upon. 32

Post. And therewithal the best; or let her
beauty
Look through a casement to allure false hearts
And be false with them.

Iach. Here are letters for you.

Post. Their tenour good, I trust.

Iach. ’Tis very like. 36

Phi. Was Caius Lucius in the Britain court
When you were there?

Iach. He was expected then,

But not approach’d.

Post. All is well yet.

Sparkles this stone as it was wont? or is’t not 40
Too dull for your good wearing?

Iach. If I have lost it,
I should have lost the worth of it in gold.
I’ll make a journey twice as far to enjoy
A second night of such sweet shortness which 44
Was mine in Britain; for the ring is won.

Post. The stone’s too hard to come by.

Iach. Not a whit,

Your lady being so easy.

Post. Make not, sir,
Your loss your sport: I hope you know that we
Must not continue friends.

Iach. Good sir, we must, 49
If you keep covenant. Had I not brought
The knowledge of your mistress home, I grant
We were to question further, but I now 52
Profess myself the winner of her honour,
Together with your ring; and not the wronger
Of her or you, having proceeded but
By both your wills.

Post. If you can make ’t apparent 56
That you have tasted her in bed, my hand
And ring is yours; if not, the foul opinion
You had of her pure honour gains or loses
Your sword or mine or masterless leaves both 60
To who shall find them.

Iach. Sir, my circumstances
Being so near the truth as I will make them,
Must first induce you to believe: whose strength
I will confirm with oath; which, I doubt not, 64
You’ll give me leave to spare, when you shall
find
You need it not.

Post. Proceed.

Iach. First, her bedchamber,—
Where I confess I slept not, but profess
Had that was well worth watching,—it was
hang’d 68
With tapestry of silk and silver; the story
Proud Cleopatra, when she met her Roman,
And Cydnuus swell’d above the banks, or for
The press of boats or pride; a piece of work 72
So bravely done, so rich, that it did strive
In workmanship and value; which I wonder’d
Could be rarely and exactly wrought,
Since the true life on ’t was—

Post. This is true; 76
And this you might have heard of here, by me,
Or by some other.

Iach. More particulars
Must justify my knowledge.

Post. So they must,
Or do your honour injury.

Iach. The chimney 80
Is south the chamber, and the chimney-piece
Chaste Dian bathing; never saw I figures
So likely to report themselves; the cutter
Was as another nature, dumb; outwent her, 84
Motion and breath left out.

Post. This is a thing
Which you might from relation likewise reap,
Being, as it is, much spoke of.

Iach. The roof o’ the chamber
With golden cherubins is fretted; her and-
irons— 88
I had forgot them—were two winking Cupids
Of silver, each on one foot standing, nicely
Depending on their brands.

Post. This is her honour!
Let it be granted you have seen all this,—and
praise
92
Be given to your remembrance,—the descrip-
tion
Of what is in her chamber nothing saves
The wager you have laid.

Iach. Then, if you can,
Be pale: I beg but leave to air this jewel; see!
[Showing the bracelet.
And now ’tis up again; it must be married 97
To that your diamond; I’ll keep them.

Post. Jove!

Once more let me behold it. Is it that
Which I left with her?
Another stain, as big as hell can hold,
Were there no more but it.

Iach. Will you hear more?
Post. Spare your arithmetic; never count the turns;
Once, and a million!

Iach. I'll be sworn,—
Post. No swearing.
If you will swear you have not done 't, you lie;
And I will kill thee if thou dost deny
Thou'st made me cuckold.

Iach. I'll deny nothing.
Post. O! that I had her here, to tear her
limb-meal.
I will go there and do 't, i' the court, before
Her father. I'll do something— [Exit.

Phi. Quite besides
The government of patience! You have won:
Let's follow him, and pervert the present wrath
He hath against himself.

Iach. With all my heart. [Exeunt.

SCENE V.—The Same. Another Room in the
Same.

Enter Posthumus.

Post. Is there no way for men to be, but women
Must be half-workers? We are all bastards; all,
And that most venerable man which I
Did call my father was I know not where
When I was stamp'd; some coiner with his tools
Made me a counterfeit; yet my mother seem'd
The Dian of that time; so doth my wife
The nonpareil of this. O! vengeance, vengeance;
Me of my lawful pleasure she restrain'd
And pray'd me oft forbearance; did it with
A pudency so rosy the sweet view on 't
Might well have warm'd old Saturn; that I
thought her
As chaste as unsunn'd snow. O! all the devils!
This yellow Iachino, in an hour,—was 't not?
Or less—at first?—perchance he spoke not, but
Like a full-acorn'd boar, a German one:
Cried 'O!' and mounted; found no opposition
But what he look'd for should oppose and she
Should from encounter guard. Could I find out
The woman's part in me! For there's no motion
That tends to vice in man but I affirm
It is the woman's part; be it lying, note it,
The woman's; flattering, hers; deceiving, hers;
Lust and rank thoughts, hers, hers; revenge, hers;
Ambitions, covetings, change of prides, disdain,
Nice longings, slander, mutability,
Cymbeline

ACT III, Sc. I.

All faults that man may name, nay, that hell knows,
Why, hers, in part, or all; but rather, all; 28
For even to vice
They are not constant, but are changing still
One vice but of a minute old for one
Not half so old as that. I'll write against them,
Detest them, curse them. Yet 'tis greater skill 33
In a true hate to pray they have their will:
The very devils cannot plague them better.

[Exit.

ACT III.

SCENE I.—Britain. A Hall in Cymbeline's Palace.

Enter at one door Cymbeline, Queen, CLOTEN, and Lords; and at another CAIUS LUCIUS and Attendants.

Cym. Now say what would Augustus Caesar
with us?

Luc. When Julius Caesar—whose remembrance
Lives in men's eyes, and will to ears and tongues
Be theme and hearing ever—was in this Brittain,
And conquer'd it, Cassibelan, thine uncle,— 5
Famous in Caesar's praises, no whit less
Than in his feats deserving it,—for him
And his succession, granted Rome a tribute, 8
Yearly three thousand pounds, which by thee
Lately
Is left unrender'd.

Queen. And, to kill the marvel,
Shall be so ever.

Clo. There be many Cæsars
Ere such another Julius. Britain is 12
A world by itself, and we will not pay
For wearing our own noses.

Queen. That opportunity,
Which then they had to take from 's, to resume,
We have again. Remember, sir, my liege, 16
The kings your ancestors, together with
The natural bravery of your isle, which stands
As Neptune's park, ribbed and paled in
With rocks unscalable and roaring waters, 20
With sands, that will not bear your enemies' boats,
But suck them up to the topmast. A kind of conquest
Cæsar made here, but made not here his brag
Of 'came, and saw, and overcame:' with shame— 24
The first that ever touch'd him—he was carried
From off our coast, twice beaten; and his ship-
ing—
Poor ignorant baubles!—on our terrible seas,
Like egg-shells mov'd upon their surges, crack'd
As easily 'gainst our rocks: for joy whereof 29
The fam'd Cassibelan, who was once at point—
O gigot fortune!—to master Cæsar's sword,
Made Lud's town with rejoicing—fires bright, 32
And Britons stiût with courage.

Clo. Come, there's no more tribute to be paid.
Our kingdom is stronger than it was at that
time; and, as I said, there is no more such
Cæsars; other of them may have crooked noses,
but to owe such straight arms, none.

Cym. Son, let your mother end. 39

Clo. We have yet many among us can grieve
as hard as Cassibelan; I do not say I am one,
but I have a hand. Why tribute? why should
we pay tribute? If Cæsar can hide the sun from
us with a blanket, or put the moon in his pocket,
we will pay him tribute for light; else, sir, no
more tribute, pray you now.

Cym. You must know,
Till the injurious Romans did extortion 48
This tribute from us, we were free; Cæsar's ambition—
Which swell'd so much that it did almost stretch
The sides o' the world—against all colour here
Did put the yoke upon 's; which to shake off 52
Become a war-like people, whom we reckon
Ourselves to be. We do say then to Cæsar
Our ancestor was that Mulvutius which
Ordain'd our laws, whose use the sword of Cæsar
Hath too much mangled; whose repair and franchise
57
Shall, by the power we hold, be our good deed,
Though Rome be therefore angry. Mulvutius
made our laws,
Who was the first of Britain which did put 60
His brows within a golden crown, and call'd
Himself a king.

Luc. I am sorry, Cymbeline,
That I am to pronounce Augustus Cæsar—
Cæsar, that hath more kings his servants than
Thyself domestic officers—the enemy. 65
Receive it from me, then: war and confusion
In Cæsar's name pronounce I 'gainst thee: look
For fury not to be resisted. Thus defied, 68
I thank thee for myself.

Cym. Thou art welcome, Caius.

Luc. Let proof speak. 77

Clo. His majesty bids you welcome. Make
pastime with us a day or two, or longer; if you
Act III, Sc. I.

Cymbeline

seek us afterwards in other terms, you shall find
us in our salt-water girdle; if you beat us out of
it, it is yours; if you fall in the adventure, our
crows shall fare the better for you; and there's
an end. 84

Luc. So, sir.

Cym. I know your master's pleasure and he
mine:
All the remain is 'Welcome!' [Exeunt.

Scene II.—Another Room in the Same.

Enter PISANIO, reading a letter.

Pis. How! of adultery! Wherefore write you
not
What monster's her accuser? Leonatus!
O master! what a strange infection
Is fall'n into thy ear! What false Italian— 4
As poisonous-tongued as handed—hath pre-
vail'd
On thy too ready hearing? Disloyal! No:
She's punish'd for her truth, and undergoes,
More goddess-like than wife-like, such assaults 6
As would take in some virtue. O my master!
Thy mind to her is now as low as were
Thy fortunes. How! that I should murder her?
Upon the love and truth and vows which I 12
Have made to thy command? I, her? her
blood?
If it be so to do good service, never
Let me be counted serviceable. How look I,
That I should seem to lack humanity 16
So much as this fact comes to?—Do 't: the letter
That I have sent her by her own command
Shall give thee opportunity:—O damn'd paper!
Black as the ink that's on thee. Senseless
bauble, 20
Art thou a foedary for this act, and look'st
So virgin-like without? Lo! here she comes.
I am ignorant in what I am commanded.

Enter IMOGEN.

Imo. How now, Pisanio! 24

Pis. Madam, here is a letter from my lord.

Imo. Who? thy lord? that is my lord, Le-

onatus.

O! learn'd indeed were that astronomer
That knew the stars as his characters; 28
He'd lay the future open. You good gods,
Let what is here contain'd relish of love,
Of my lord's health, of his content, yet not
That we two are asunder; let that grieve him,—
Some griefs are med'c'nable; that is one of
them, 33
For it doth physic love,—of his content,
All but in that! Good wax, thy leave. Bless'd be

You bees that make these locks of counsel!
Lovers 36
And men in dangerous bonds pray not alike;
Though forfeiters you cast in prison, yet
You clasp young Cupid's tables. Good news, god!

Justice, and your father's wrath, should he
take me in his dominion, could not be so cruel to
me, as you, O the dearest of creatures, would not
even renew me with your eyes. Take notice that
I am in Cambria, at Milford-Haven; what
your own love will out of this advise you, fol-
low. So, he wishes you all happiness, that re-
mains loyal to his vow, and your, increasing in
love,

Leonatus Posthumus.

O! for a horse with wings! Hear'st thou,
Pisanio? 49

He is at Milford-Haven; read, and tell me
How far 'tis thither. If one of mean affairs
May plod it in a week, why may not I 52
Glide thither in a day? Then, true Pisanio,—
Who long'st, like me, to see thy lord; who
long'st,—
O! let me hate,—but not like me; yet long'st,
But in a fainer kind:—O! not like me, 56
For mine's beyond beyond; say, and speak
thick;—
Love's counsellor should fill the bores of hear-
ing,
To the smothering of the sense,—how far it is
To this same blessed Milford; and, by the way,
Tell me how Wales was made so happy as 61
T' inherit such a haven; but, first of all,
How we may steal from hence, and, for the
gap
That we shall make in time, from our hence-
going 64

And our return, to excuse; but first, how get
hence.
Why should excuse be born or ere begot?
We'll talk of that hereafter. Prithee, speak,
How many score of miles may we well ride 68
'Twixt hour and hour?

Pis. One score 'twixt sun and sun,
Madam, 's enough for you, and too much too.
Ime. Why, one that rode to 's execution,
man,
Could never go so slow: I have heard of riding
wagers, 72
Where horses have been nimbler than the sands
That run i' the clock's behalf. But this is
foolery;
Go bid my woman feign a sickness; say
She'll home to her father; and provide me pre-
sently 76
A riding-suit, no costlier than would fit
A franklin's housewife.

1188
Pis. Madam, you’re best consider.
Imo. I see before me, man; nor here, nor
here,
Nor what ensues, but have a fog in them, 80
That I cannot look through. Away, I prithee;
Do as I bid thee. There’s no more to say;
Accessible is none but Milford way. [Exeunt.

SCENE III.—Wales. A mountainous Country
with a Cave.

Enter from the Cave, BELARIUS, GUIDERIUS,
and ARVIRAGUS.

Bel. A good day not to keep house, with such
Whose roof’s as low as ours! Stoop, boys; thus
gate
Instructs you how to adore the heavens, and
bows you
To a morning’s holy office; the gates of
monarchs
Are arch’d so high that giants may jet through
And keep their impious turbans on, without
Good morrow to the sun. Hail, thou fair
heaven!

We house i’ the rock, yet use thee not so hardly
As prouder livers do.

Gui. Hail, heaven!

Arv. Hail, heaven!

Bel. Now for our mountain sport. Up to
yon hill;
Your legs are young; I’ll trea these flats.
Consider,
When you above perceive me like a crow, 12
That it is place which lessens and sets off;
And you may then revolve what tales I have
told you
Of courts, of princes, of the tricks in war;
This service is not service, so being done,
But being so allow’d; to apprehend thus
Draws us a profit from all things we see,
And often, to our comfort, shall we find
The sharded beetle in a safer hold
Than is the full-wing’d eagle. O! this life
Is nobler than attending for a check,
Richer than doing nothing for a brieve,
Prouder than rustling in unpaid-for silk; 24
Such gain the cap of him that makes ‘em fine,
Yet keeps his book uncurse’d; no life to ours.

Gui. Out of your proof you speak; we, poor
unfledg’d,
Have never wing’d from view o’ the nest, nor
know not 28
What air’s from home. Haply this life is best,
If quiet life be best; sweeter to you
That have a sharper known, well corresponding
With your stiff age; but unto us it is

A cell of ignorance, traveling a-see,
A prison for a debtor, that not cares
To strid a limit.

Arv. What should we speak of
When we are old as you? when we shall hear 36
The rain and wind beat dark December, how
In this our pinching cave shall we discourse
The freezing hours’ away? We have seen
nothing;
We are beastly, subtle as the fox for prey, 40
Like war-like as the wolf for what we eat;
Our valour is to chase what flies; our cage
We make a quire, as doth the prison’d bird,
And sing our bondage freely.

Bel How you speak! 44
Did you but know the city’s usuries
And felt them knowingly; the art o’ the bourt,
As hard to leave as keep, whose top to climb
Is certain falling, or so slippery that
The fear’s as bad as falling; the toil of the
war,
A pain that only seems to seek out danger
I’ the name of fame and honour; which dies
i’ the search,
And hath as oft a slanderous epitaph 52
As record of fair act; nay, many times,
Doth ill deserve by doing well; what’s worse,
Must courtly at the censure: O boys! this story
The world may read in me; my body’s mark’d
With Roman swords, and my report was once
First with the best of note; Cymbeline lov’d me,
And when a soldier was the theme, my name
Was not far off; then was I as a tree 60
Whose boughs did bend with fruit, but, in one
night,
A storm or robbery, call it what you will,
Shook down my mellow hangings, nay, my
leaves,
And left me bare to weather.

Gui. Uncertain favour! 64

Bel. My fault being nothing,—as I have told
you oft,—
But that two villains, whose false oaths pre-
vail’d
Before my perfect honour, swore to Cymbeline
I was confederate with the Romans; so 68
Follow’d my banishment, and this twenty years
This rock and these demesnes have been my
world,
Where I have liv’d at honest freedom, paid
More pious debts to heaven than in all
The fore-end of my time. But, up to the moun-
tains!

This is not hunter’s language. He that strikes
The venison first shall be the lord o’ the feast;
To him the other two shall minister; 76
And we will fear no poison which attends
In place of greater state, I'll meet you in the
valleys.

[Exeunt Guiderius and Arviragus.

How hard it is to hide the sparks of nature!
These boys know little they are sons to the king;
Nor Cymbeline dreams that they are alive. 85
They think they are mine; and, though train'd
up thus meanly
I' the cave wherein they bow, their thoughts do
hit
The roofs of palaces, and nature prompts them
In simple and low things to prize it much.
Beyond the trick of others. This Polydore,
The heir of Cymbeline and Britain, who
The king his father call'd Guiderius.—Jove! 88
When on my three-foot stool I sit and tell
The war-like feats I have done, his spirits fly out
Into my story: say, 'Thus mine enemy fell,
And thus I set my foot on 's neck;' even then 92
The princely blood flows in his cheek, he sweats,
Strains his young nerves, and puts himself in
posture
That acts my words. The younger brother,
Cadwal,—
Once Arviragus,—in as like a figure, 96
Strikes life into my speech and shows much
more
His own conceiving. Hark! the game is rous'd.
O Cymbeline! heaven and my conscience knows
Thou didst unjustly banish me; whereon, 100
At three and two years old, I stole these babes,
Thinking to bar thee of succession, as
Thou reft'st me of my lands. Euriphile,
Thou wast their nurse; they took thee for their
mother, 104
And every day do honour to her grave:
Myself, Belarius, that am Morgan call'd,
They take for natural father. The game is up.

[Exit.

SCENE IV.—Near Milford-Haven.

Enter Pisanio and Imogen.

Imo. Thou told'st me, when we came from
horse, the place
Was near at hand: ne'er long'd my mother so
To see me first, as I have now. Pisanio! man!
Where is Posthumus? What is in thy mind, 4
That makes thee stare thus? Wherefore breaks
that sigh
From the inward of thee? One, but painted
thus,
Would be interpreted a thing perplex'd
Beyond self-explication; put thyself!
Into a behaviour of less fear, ere wildness
Vanquish my staider senses. What's the
matter?

Why tender'st thou that paper to me with
A look untender? If 't be summer news, 12
Smile to 't before; if winterly, thou need'st
But keep that count'nance still. My husband's
hand!
That drug-damn'd Italy hath out-craftied
him,
And he's at some hard point. Speak, man; thy
tongue
May take off some extremity, which to read
Would be even mortal to me.

Pis. Please you, read;
And you shall find me, wretched man, a thing
The most disdain'd of fortune. 20

Imo. Thy mistress, Pisanio, hath played the
strumpet in my bed; the testimonies whereof
lie bleeding in me. I speak not out of weak
surmises, but from proof as strong as my grief
and as certain as I expect my revenge. That
part thou, Pisanio, must act for me, if thy faith
be not tainted with the breach of hers. Let
thine own hands take away her life; I shall
give thee opportunity at Milford-Haven; she
hath my letter for the purpose; where, if thou
fear to strike, and to make me certain it is
done, thou art the pandar to her dishonour and
equally to me disloyal.

Pis. What shall I need to draw my sword?
the paper
Hath cut her throat already. No, 'tis slander,
Whose edge is sharper than the sword, whose
tongue
Outvenoms all the worms of Nile, whose breath
Rides on the posting winds and doth belie
All corners of the world; kings, queens, and
states,
Maids, matrons, nay, the secrets of the grave.
This vipers' slander enters. What cheer,
madam?

Imo. False to his bed! What is it to be false?
To lie in watch there and to think on him?
To weep 'twixt clock and clock? if sleep charge
nature,
To break it with a fearful dream of him,
And cry myself awake? that's false to 's bed, is
it?

Pis. Alas! good lady,

Imo. I false! Thy conscience witness!

Iachimo,

Thou didst accuse him of incontinency;
Thou then look'dst like a villain; now methinks
Thy favour's good enough. Some joy of Italy,
Whose mother was her painting, hath betray'd
him:

Poor I am stale, a garment out of fashion,
And, for I am richer than to hang by the walls,
I must be ripp'd; to pieces with me! O!
Men's vows are women's traitors! All good seeming,
By thy revolt, O husband! shall be thought
Put on for villany; not born where 't grows,
But worn a bait for ladies.

Pis. Good madam, hear me.

Imo. True honest men being heard, like false Aeneas,
Were in his time thought false, and Sinon's weeping
Did scandal many a holy tear, took pity
From most true wretchedness; so thou, Posthumus,
Wilt lay the leaven on all proper men;
Goodly and gallant shall be false and perjurd
From thy great fail. Come, fellow, be thou honest;
Do thou thy master's bidding. When thou seest him,
A little witness my obedience; look!
I draw the sword myself; take it, and hit
The innocent mansion of my love, my heart.
Fear not, 'tis empty of all things but grief;
Thy master is not there, who was indeed
The riches of it: do his bidding; strike.
Thou mayst be valiant in a better cause,
But now thou seem'st a coward.

Pis. Hence, vile instrument!

Imo. Thou shalt not damn my hand.

Why, I must die; and if I do not by thy hand, thou art
No servant of thy master's. Against self-slaughter
There is a prohibition so divine
That cravens my weak hand. Come, here's my heart.

Something's afore't; soft, soft! we'll no defence;
Obedient as the scabbard. What is here?
The scriptures of the loyal Leonatus
All turn'd to heresy! Away, away!
Corrupters of my faith; thou shall no more
Be stomachers to my heart. Thus may poor fools
Believe false teachers; though those that are
Betray'd
Do feel the treason sharply, yet the traitor
Stands in worse case of woe.

And thou, Posthumus, thou that didst set up
My disobedience 'gainst the king my father,
And make me put into contempt the suits
Of princely fellows, shalt hereafter find
It is no act of common passage, but
A strain of rareness; and I grieve myself
To think, when thou shalt be disdained by her
That now thou tir'st on, how thy memory
Will then be pang'd by me. Prithy, dispatch;
Are they not but in Britain? I' the world's volume
Our Britain seems as of it, but not in 't;
In a great pool a swan's nest: prithee, think
There's livers out of Britain.

Pis. I am most glad
You think of other place. The ambassador,
Lucius the Roman, comes to Milford-Haven
To-morrow; now, if you could wear a mind
Dark as your fortune is, and but disguise
That which, 't appear itself, must not yet be
But by self-danger, you should tread a course
Pretty, and full of view; yes, haply, near
The residence of Posthumus; so nigh at least
That though his actions were not visible, yet
Report should render him hourly to your ear
As truly as he moves.

Imo. O! for such means:
Though peril to my modesty, not death on 't,
I would adventure.

Pis. Well, then, here's the point:
You must forget to be a woman; change
Command into obedience; fear and niceness—
The handmaids of all women, or more truly
Woman it pretty self—into a waggish courage;
Ready in gibes, quick-answer'd, saucy, and
As quarrelous as the weasel; nay, you must
Forget that rarest treasure of your cheek,
Exposing it—but, O! the harder heart;
Alack! no remedy—to the greedy touch
Of common-kissing Titan, and forget
Your laboursome and dainty trims, wherein
You made great Juno angry.

Imo. Nay, be brief: I see into thy end, and am almost
A man already.

Pis. First, make yourself but like one.
For thinking this, I have already fit—
'Tis in my cloak-bag—doublet, hat, hose, all
That answer to them; would you in their serv-
ing.

And with what imitation you can borrow
From youth of such a season, 'fore noble Lucius
Present yourself, desire his service, tell him
Wherein you are happy,—which you'll make
him know,
If that his head have ear in music,—doubtless
With joy he will embrace you, for he's honour-
able;
And, doubting that, most holy. Your means
abroad,
You have me, rich; and I will never fail
Beginning nor supplyment.

Imo. Thou art all the comfort.
The gods will diet me with. Prithee, away;
There's more to be consider'd, but we'll even
All that good time will give us; this attempt

I'm soldier to, and will abide it with
A prince's courage. Away, I prithee.

Pis. Well, madam, we must take a short
farewell,
Lest, being miss'd, I be suspected of
Your carriage from the court. My noble mist-
ress,
Here is a box, I had it from the queen,
What's in 't is precious; if you are sick at
sea,
Or stomach-qualm'd at land, a dram of this
Will drive away distemper. To some shade,
And fit you to your manhood. May the gods
Direct you to the best!

Imo. Amen. I thank thee. [Exeunt.

SCENE V.—A Room in Cymbeline's Palace.

Enter Cymbeline, Queen, Clothin, Lucius,
Lords, and Attendants.

Cym. Thus far; and so farewell.
Luc. Thanks, royal sir.

My emperor hath wrote, I must from hence;
And am right sorry that I must report ye
My master's enemy.

Cym. Our subjects, sir,
Will not endure his yoke; and for ourself
To show less sovereignty than they, must needs
Appear unking-like.

Luc. So, sir: I desire of you
A conduct over land to Milford-Haven.

Madmam, all joy befall your Grace.

Queen. And you!

Cym. My lords, you are appointed for that
office;
The due of honour in no point omit.
So, farewell, noble Lucius.

Luc. Your hand, my lord. Receive it friendly; but from this time
forth
I wear it as your enemy.

Luc. Sir, the event
Is yet to name the winner. Fare you well.

Cym. Leave not the worthy Lucius, good
my lords.
Till he have cross'd the Severn. Happiness!

[Exeunt Lucius and Lords.

Queen. He goes hence frowning; but it
honours us
That we have given him cause.

Cym. 'Tis all the better;
Your valiant Britons have their wishes in it.

Cym. Lucius hath wrote already to the
emperor
How it goes here. It fits us therefore ripe,
Our chariots and horsemen be in readiness;
The powers that he already hath in Galatia.

1192
Will soon be drawn to head, from whence he moves
His war for Britain.
Queen. 'Tis not sleepy business;
But must be look’d to speedily and strongly. 27
Cym. Our expectation that it would be thus
Hath made us forward. But, my gentle queen,
Where is our daughter? She hath not appear’d
Before the Roman, nor to us hath tender’d
The duty of the day; she looks us like 32
A thing more made of malice than of duty:
We have noted it. Call her before us, for
We have been too slight in sufferance.

[Exit an Attendant.

Queen. Royal sir.
Since the exil of Posthumus, most retir’d 36
Hath her life been; the cure whereof, my lord,
'Tis time must do. Beseech your majesty,
Forbear sharp speeches to her; she's a lady
So tender of rebukes that words are strokes, 40
And strokes death to her.

Re-enter Attendant.

Cym. Where is she, sir? How
Can her contempt be answer’d?

Att. Please you, sir,
Her chambers are all lock’d, and there’s no answer
That will be given to the loudest noise we make.

Queen. My lord, when last I went to visit her,
She pray’d me to excuse her keeping close,
Whereunto constrain’d by her infirmity,
She should that duty leave unpaid to you, 48
Which daily she was bound to proffer; this
She wish’d me to make known, but our great court
Made me to blame in memory.

Cym. Her doors lock’d!
Not seen of late! Grant, heavens, that which
I fear
Prove false! 52

Exit.

Queen. Son, I say, follow the king.
Clo. That man of hers, Pisanio, her old servant,
I have not seen these two days.

Queen. Go, look after.

Exit CLOTEN.

Pisanib, thou stand’st so for Posthumus! 56
He hath a drug of mine; I pray his absence
Proceed by swallowing that; for he believes
It is a thing most precious. But for her,
Where is she gone? Haply, despair hath seiz’d her,
Or, wing’d with fervour of her love, she’s flown
To her desir’d Posthumus. Gone she is
To death or to dishonour, and my end

Can make good use of either; she being down, 64
I have the placing of the British crown.

Re-enter CLOTEN.

How now, my son!
Clo. 'Tis certain she is fled.
Go in and cheer the king; he rages, none
Dare come about him.

Queen. [Aside.] All the better; may 68
This night forecast him of the coming day!

[Exit.

Clo. I love and hate her; for she’s fair and royal,
And that she hath all courtly parts more exquisite
Than lady, ladies, woman; from every one 72
The best she hath, and she, of all compound’d,
Outsells them all. I love her therefore; but
Disdaining me and throwing favours on
The low Posthumus slander’d so her judgment 76
That what’s else rare is chok’d, and in that point
I will conclude to hate her, nay, indeed,
To be reveng’d upon her. For, when fœls 79
Shall—

Enter PISANIO.

Who is here? What! are you packing, sirrah? Come hither. Ah! you precious pandar. Villain,
Where is thy lady? In a word; or else
Thou art straightforward with the fiends.

Pis. O! good my lord.

Clo. Where is thy lady? or, by Jupiter 84
I will not ask again. Close villain,
I’ll have this secret from thy heart, or rip
The heart to find it. Is she with Posthumus?
From whose so many weights of baseness
cannot 88
A dram of worth be drawn.

Pis. Alas! my lord,
How can she be with him? When was she miss’d?

He is in Rome.

Clo. Where is she, sir? Come nearer,
No further halting; satisfy me home 92
What is become of her?

Pis. O! my all-worthy lord.

Clo. All-worthy villain!
Discover where thy mistress is at once.
At the next word; no more of ‘worthy lord!’ 96
Speak, or thy silence on the instant is
Thy condemnation and thy death.

Pis. Then, sir,
This paper is the history of my knowledge
Touching her flight. 99

Clo. Let’s see 't. I will pursue her 100
Even to Augustus’ throne.
Act III, Sc. V.

Cymbeline

Pis. [Aside.] Or this, or perish. She’s far enough; and what he learns by this May prove his travel, not her danger.

Clo. Hum!

Pis. [Aside.] I’ll write to my lord she’s dead.

O Imogen!

Safe mayst thou wander, safe return again!

Clo. Sirrah, is this letter true?

Pis. Sir, as I think.

Clo. It is Posthumus’ hand; I know it. Sirrah, if thou wouldest not be a villain, but do me true service, undertake those employments whereunto I should have cause to use thee with a serious industry, that is, what villany soever I bid thee do, to perform it directly and truly, I would think thee an honest man; thou shouldst not want my means for thy relief nor my voice for thy preferment.

Pis. Well, my good lord.

Clo. Wilt thou serve me? For since patiently and constantly thou hast stuck to the bare fortune of that beggar Posthumus, thou canst not, in the course of gratitude, but be a diligent follower of mine. Wilt thou serve me?

Pis. Sir, I will.

Clo. Give me thy hand; here’s my purse. Hast any of thy late master’s garments in thy possession?

Pis. I have, my lord, at my lodging, the same suit he wore when he took leave of my lady and mistress.

Clo. The first service thou dost me, fetch that suit hither: let it be thy first service; go.

Pis. I shall, my lord. [Exit.

Clo. Meet thee at Milford-Haven!—I forgot to ask him one thing; I’ll remember ’t anon,—even there, thou villain Posthumus, will I kill thee. I would these garments were come. She said upon a time,—the bitterness of it I now feel from my heart,—that she held the very garment of Posthumus in more respect than my noble and natural person, together with the adornment of my qualities. With that suit upon my back will I ravish her: first kill him, and in her eyes; there shall she see my valour, which will then be a torment to her contempt. He on the ground, my speech of insultment ended on his dead body, and when my lust hath dined,—which, as I say, to vex her, I will execute in the clothes that she so praised,—to the court I’ll knock her back, foot her home again. She hath despised me rejoicingly, and I’ll be merry in my revenge.

Re-enter PISANIO, with the clothes.

Be those the garments?

Pis. Ay, my noble lord.

Clo. How long is ’t since she went to Milford-Haven?

Pis. She can scarce be there yet.

Clo. Bring this apparel to my chamber; that is the second thing that I have commanded thee: the third is, that thou wilt be a voluntary mute to my design. Be but duteous, and true preferment shall tender itself to thee. My revenge is now at Milford; would I had wings to follow it! Come, and be true. [Exit.

Pis. Thou bidd’st me to thy loss; for true to thee Were to prove false, which I will never be, To him that is most true. To Milford go, And find not her whom thou pursu’st. Flow, flow, You heavenly blessings, on her! This fool’s speed Be cross’d with slowness; labour be his meed! [Exit.

Scene VI.—Wales. Before the Cave of Belarius.

Enter IMOGEN, in boy’s clothes.

Imo. I see a man’s life is a tedious one; I have tir’d myself, and for two nights together Have made the ground my bed; I should be sick But that my resolution helps me. Milford, When from the mountain-top Pisanio shew’d thee, Thou wast within a ken. O Jove! I think Foundations fly the wretched; such, I mean, Where they should be relied. Two beggars told me I could not miss my way; will poor folks lie, That have afflictions on them, knowing ’tis A punishment or trial? Yes; no wonder, When rich ones scarce tell true. To lapse in fulness Is soreer than to lie for need, and falsehood Is worse in kings than beggars. My dear lord! Thou art one o’ the false ones. Now I think on thee, My hunger’s gone, but even before I was At point to sink for food. But what is this? Here is a path to ’t; ’tis some savage hold; I were best not call, I dare not call, yet famine, Ere clean it o’erthrow nature, makes it valiant. Plenty and peace breeds cowards; hardness ever Of hardness is mother. Ho! Who’s here? If any thing that’s civil, speak; if savage, Take or lend. Ho! No answer? Then I’ll enter. Best draw my sword; and if mine enemy But fear the sword like me, he’ll scarcely look on ’t.

Such a foe, good heavens! [Exit to the cave.
By this rude place we live in. Well encount-
er'd!
'Tis almost night; you shall have better cheer
Ere you depart, and thanks to stay and eat it.
Boys, bid him welcome.
Gu. Were you a woman, youth, 68
I should woo hard but be your groom. In
honesty,
I bid for you, as I do buy.
Arv. I'll make 't my comfort
He is a man; I'll love him as my brother;
And such a welcome as I'd give to him 72
After a long absence, such is yours: most wel-
come!
Be sprightly, for you fall 'mongst friends.
Imo. 'Mongst friends,
If brothers. [Aside.] Would it had been so,
that they
Had been my father's sons; then had my
prize 76
Been less, and so more equal ballasting
To thee, Posthumus.
Bel. He wrings at some distress.
Gu. Would I could free 't!
Arv. Or I, what'er it be,
What pain it cost, what danger. Gods!
Bel. Hark, boys. [Whispering.
Imo. Great men,
That had a court no bigger than this cave,
That did attend themselves and had the virtue
Which their own conscience seal'd them,—
laying by
That nothing-gift of differing multitudes,—
Could not out-peep these twain. Pardon me,
gods!
I'd change my sex to be companion with them,
Since Leonatus' false.
Bel. It shall be so. 88
Boys, we'll go dress our hunt. Fair youth,
come in:
Discourse is heavy, fasting; when we have
supp'd,
We'll mannerly demand thee of thy story,
So far as thou wilt speak it.
Gu. Pray, draw near. 92
Arv. The night to the owl and morn to the
lark less welcome.
Imo. Thanks, sir.
Arv. I pray, draw near. [Exit.

SCENE VII.—Rome. A Public Place.

Enter two Senators and Tribunes.

First Sen. This is the tenour of the em-
peror's writ:
Scene II.—Before the Cave of Belarius.

Enter, from the Cave, Belarius, Guiderius, Arviragus, and Imogen.

Bel. [To Imogen.] You are not well; remain here in the cave;
We'll come to you after hunting.

Arv. [To Imogen.] Brother, stay here;
Are we not brothers?

Imo. So sick am I now; yet I am not well;
But not so citizen a wight as 8
To seem to die ere sick. So please you, leave me;
Stick to your journal course; the breach of custom
Is breach of all. I am ill; but your being by me
Cannot amend me; society is no comfort 12
To one not sociable. I am not very sick,
Since I can reason of it; pray you, trust me here,
I'll rob none but myself, and let me die,
Stealing so poorly.

Gui. I love thee; I have spoke it;
How much the quantity, the weight as much, 17
As I do love my father.

Bel. What! how! how!

Arv. If it be sin to say so, sir, I yoke me
In my good brother's fault: I know not why 20
I love this youth; and I have heard you say,
Love's reason's without reason: the hier at door,
And a demand who is 't shall die, I'd say
'My father, not this youth.'

Bel. [Aside.] O noble strain! 24
O worthiness of nature! breed of greatness!
Cowards father cowards, and base things sire base:
Nature hath meal and bran, contempt and grace.

I'm not their father; yet who this should be, 28
Doth miracle itself, lov'd before me.
'Tis the ninth hour o' the morn.

Arv. Brother, farewell.

Imo. I wish ye sport.


Imo. [Aside.] These are kind creatures.

Gods, what lies I have heard!

Our courtiers say all's savage but at court:
Experience, O! thou disagree'st report.
The imperious sea breed monsters, for the dish
Poor tributary rivers as sweet fish.

Act IV.

Scene I.—Wales. The Forest, near the Cave of Belarius.

Enter Clooten.

Clo. I am near to the place where they should meet, if Pisanio have mapped it truly. How fit his garments serve me! Why should his mistress, who was made by him that made the tailor, not be fit too? the rather,—saving reverence of the word,—for 'tis said a woman's fitness comes by fits. Therin I must play the workman. I dare speak it to myself,—for it is not vain-glory, for a man and his glass to confer in his own chamber,—I mean, the lines of my body are as well drawn as his; no less young, more strong, not beneath him in fortunes, beyond him in the advantage of the time, above him in birth, alike conversant in general services, and more remarkable in single oppositions; yet this imper- ceiverant thing loves him in my despite. What mortality is! Posthumus, thy head, which now is growing upon thy shoulders, shall within this hour be off, thy mistress enforced, thy garments cut to pieces before thy face; and all this done, spurn her home to her father, who may haply be a little angry for my so rough usage, but my mother, having power of his testiness, shall turn all into my commendations. My horse is tied up safe; out, sword, and to a sore purpose! Fortune, put them into my hand! This is the very description of their meeting-place; and the fellow dares not deceive me.

[Exeunt.]
That fly me thus? some villain mountaineers? I have heard of such. What slave art thou? A thing More slavish did I ne'er than answering A ‘slave’ without a knock. 

Clo. Thou art a robber, A law-breaker, a villain. Yield thee, thief. 

Gui. To who? to thee? What art thou? Have not I An arm as big as thine? a heart as big? Thy words, I grant, are bigger, for I wear not My dagger in my mouth. Say what thou art, Why I should yield to thee? 

Clo. Thou villain base, 80 Know’st me not by my clothes? 

Gui. No, nor thy tailor, rascal, Who is thy grandfather: he made those clothes, Which, as it seems, make thee. 

Clo. Thou precious varlet, My tailor made them not. 

Gui. Hence then, and thank The man that gave them thee. Thou art some fool; 

I am loath to beat thee. 

Clo. Thou injurious thief, Hear but my name, and tremble. 

Gui. What’s thy name? 

Clo. Cloten, thou villain. 

Gui. Cloten, thou double villain, be thy name, I cannot tremble at it; were it Toad, or Adder, Spider, ‘Twould move me sooner. 

Clo. To thy further fear, Nay, to thy mere confusion, thou shalt know 93 I am son to the queen. 

Gui. I’m sorry for ’t, not seeming So worthy as thy birth. 

Clo. Art not afraid? 

Gui. Those that I reverence those I fear, the wise; At fools I laugh, not fear them. 

Clo. Die the death: 96 When I have slain thee with my proper hand, I’ll follow those that even now fled hence, And on the gates of Lud’s town set your heads: Yield, rustic mountaineer. [Exit fighting. 

Re-enter Belarius and Arviragus. 

Bel. No companies abroad. 

Arv. None in the world. You did mistake him, sure. 

Bel. I cannot tell; long is it since I saw him, But time hath nothing blur’d those lines of favour 

\today\ Which then he wore; the snatches in his voice, And burst of speaking, were as his. Iam absolute
'Twas very Cloten.

Arv. In this place we left them:
I wish my brother make good time with him, 108
You say he is so fell.

Bel. Being scarce made up,
I mean, to man, he had not apprehension
Of roaring terrors; for defect of judgment
Is oft the cause of fear. But see, thy brother. 112

Re-enter GUIDERIUS, with Cloten's head.

Gui. This Cloten was a fool, an empty purse,
There was no money in 't. Not Hercules
Could have knock'd out his brains, for he had none;
Yet I not doing this, the fool had borne 116
My head as I do his.

Bel. What hast thou done?
Gui. I am perfect what: cut off one Cloten's head,
Son to the queen, after his own report;
Who call'd me traitor, mountaineer, and swore,
With his own single hand he'd take us in, 121
Displace our heads where—thank the gods!—
they grow,
And set them on Lud's town.

Bel. We are all undone.
Gui. Why, worthy father, what have we to lose,
But that he swore to take, our lives? The law
Protects not us; then why should we be tender
To let an arrogant piece of flesh thrust us,
Play judge and executioner all himself, 128
For we do fear the law? What company
Discover you abroad?

Bel. No single soul
Can we set eye on; but in all safe reason
He must have some attendants. Though his humour
Was nothing but mutation, ay, and that
From one bad thing to worse; not frenzy, not
Absolute madness could so far have rav'd
To bring him here alone. Although, perhaps,
It may be heard at court that such as we 132
Cave here, hunt here, are outlaws, and in time
May make some stronger head; the which he hearing;
As it is like him,—might break out, and swear
He'd fetch us in; yet is 't not probable 141
To come alone, either he so undertaking,
Or they so suffering; then, on good ground we fear,
If we do fear this body hath a tail 144
More perilous than the head.

Arv. Let ordinance
Come as the gods foresay it; howso'ever,
My brother hath done well.

Bel. I had no mind
To hunt this day; the boy Fidèle's sickness 148

Did make my way long forth.
Gui. With his own sword,
Which he did wave against my throat, I have
'ta'en
His head from him; I'll throw 't into the creek
Behind our rock, and let it to the sea, 152
And tell the fishes he's the queen's son, Cloten:
That's all I reck. [Exit.

Bel. I fear 'twill be reveng'd.
Would, Polydore, thou hadst not done 't! though valour
Becomes thee well enough.

Arv. Would I had done 't 156
So the revenge alone pursu'd me! Polydore,
I love thee brotherly, but envy much
Thou hast robb'd me of this deed; I would
revenge,
That possible strength might meet, would seek
us through 163
And put us to our answer.

Bel. Well, 'tis done. We'll hunt no more to-day, nor seek for danger
Where there's no profit. I prithee, to our rock;
You and Fidèle play the cooks; I'll stay 164
Till hasty Polydore return, and bring him
To dinner presently.

Arv. Poor sick Fidèle!
I'll willingly to him; to gain his colour
I'd let a parish of such Clotens blood, 168
And praise myself for charity. [Exit.

Bel. O thou goddess!
Thou divine Nature, how thyself thou blazon'at
In these two princely boys. They are as gentle
As zephyrs, blowing below the violet, 172
Not wagging his sweet head; and yet as rough,
Their royal blood encafl'd, as the rudd'st wind,
That by the top doth take the mountain pine,
And make him stoop to the vale. 'Tis wonder
That an invisible instinct should frame them
To royalty unlearn'd, honour untaught,
Civility not seen from other, valour
That wildly grows in them, but yields a crop 180
As if it had been sow'd! Yet still it's strange
What Cloten's being here to us portends,
Or what his death will bring us.

Re-enter GUIDERIUS.

Gui. Where's my brother?
I have sent Cloten's clotpoll down the stream,
In embassy to his mother; his body's hostage
For his return. [Solo man music.

Bel. My ingenious instrument!
Hark! Polydore, it sounds; but what occasion
Hath Cadwal now to give it motion? Hark! 188

Gui. Is he at home?
Bel. He went hence even now.
Gui. What does he mean? since death of my dear'st mother
It did not speak before. All solemn things
Should answer solemn accidents. The matter?
Triumphs for nothing and lamenting toys. 193
Is jollity for apes and grief for boys.
Is Cadwal mad?

Re-enter ARVIRAGUS, with IMOGEN, as dead,
  bearing her in his arms.

Bel. Look! here he comes,
And brings the due occasion in his arms. 196
Of what we blame him for.

Arv. The bird is dead
That we have made so much on. I had rather
Have skipp'd from sixteen years of age to sixty,
To have turn'd my leaping-time into a crutch,
Than have seen this.

Gui. O, sweetest, fairest lily! 201
My brother wears thee not the one half so well
As when thou grew'st thyself.

Bel. O melancholy!
Who ever yet could sound thy bottom? find
The oozie, to show what coat thy sluggish crare
Might easiest harbour in? Thou blessed thing!
Jove know'st what man thou might'st have made;
but I,
Thou diest, a most rare boy, of melancholy. 208
How found you him?

Arv. Stark, as you see:
Thus smiling, as some fly had tickled slumber,
Not as death's dart, being laugh'd at; his right cheek
Reposing on a cushion.

Gui. Where?

Arv. O' the floor. 213
His arms thus leagu'd; I thought he slept, and
put
My clouted brogues from off my feet, whose
rudeness
Answer'd my steps too loud.

Gui. Why, he but sleeps:
If he be gone, he'll make his grave a bed; 216
With female fairies will his tomb be haunted,
And worms will not come to thee.

Arv. With fairest flowers
While summer lasts and I live here, Fidele,
I'll sweeten thy sad grave; thou shalt not lack
The flower that's like thy face, pale primrose,

Gui. nor
The azur'd hare-bell, like thy veins, no, nor
The leaf of egliantine, whom not to slander,
Out-sweeten'd not thy breath: the ruddock
would, 224
With charitable hill,—O bill! sore-shaming
Those rich-left heirs, that let their fathers lie
Without a monument,—bring thee all this;
Yea, and furr'd moss besides, when flowers are
none,
To winter-ground thy corse.

Gui. Prithee, have done,
And do not play in wench-like words with that
Which is so serious. Let us bury him,
And not protract with admiration what
Is now due debt. To the grave!

Arv. Say, where shall's lay him?
Gui. By good Euriphile, our mother.

Arv. Be't so:
And let us, Polydore, though now our voices
Have got the mannish crack, sing him to the
ground, 236
As once our mother; use like note and words,
Save that Euriphile must be Fidele.

Gui. Cadwal,
I cannot sing; I'll weep, and word it with thee;
For notes of sorrow out of tune are worse
Than priests and fanes that lie.

Arv. We'll speak it then.

Bel. Great griefs, I see, medicine the less, for
Clooten
Is quite forgot. He was a queen's son, boys, 244
And though he came our enemy, remember
He was paid for that; though mean and mighty
rotting
Together, have one dust, yet reverence—
That angel of the world—doth make distinction
Of place 'tween high and low. Our foe was
princely,
And though you took his life, as being our foe,
Yet bury him as a prince.

Gui. Pray you, fetch him hither.
Thersites' body is as good as Ajax. 253
When neither are alive.

Arv. If you'll go fetch him,
We'll say our song the whilst. Brother, begin.

Gui. Nay, Cadwal, we must lay his head to
the east;
My father hath a reason for 't.

Arv. 'Tis true. 256

Gui. Come on then, and remove him.

Arv. So, begin.

Gui. Fear no more the heat o' the sun,
Nor the furious winter's rages;
Thou thy worldly task hast done,
Home art gone, and ta'en thy wages;
Golden lads and girls all must,
As chimney-sweepers, come to dust.

Arv. Fear no more the morn o' the great,
Thou art past the tyrant's stroke;
Care no more to clothe and eat;
To thee the reed is as the oak:
The sceptre, learning, physic must
All follow this, and come to dust.
Fear no more the lightning-flash,
Nor the all-dreaded thunder-stone;
Fear not slander, censure rash;
Thou hast finish'd joy and moan.
All lovers young, all lovers must
Consign to thee, and come to dust.
No exorciser harm thee!
Nor witchcraft charm thee!
Ghost unlaud forbear thee!
Nothing ill come near thee!
Quiet consummation have;
And renowned be thy grave!

Re-enter BELIARUS, with the body of CLOTEN.

We have done our obsequies. Come, lay him down.
Here's a few flowers, but 'bout midnight, more;
The herbs that have on them cold dew o' the night
Are strewings fit'st for graves. Upon their faces
You were as flowers, now wither'd; even so
These herblets shall, which we upon you strew,
Come on, away; apart upon our knees.
The ground that gave it first has them again;
Their pleasures here are past, so is their pain.

[Exeunt BELIARUS, GUIDERIUS, and ARVIRAGUS.]

I thank you. By yond bush? Pray, how far thither?
'ods pittikins! can it be six mile yet?
I have gone all night: Faith, I'll lie down and sleep.
[Seeing the body of CLOTEN.] But, soft! no bed-fellow! O gods and goddesses!
These flowers are like the pleasures of the world;
This bloody man, the care on 't. I hope I dream;
For so I thought I was a cave-keeper,
And cook to honest creatures; but 'tis not so,
'Twas but a bolt of nothing, shot at nothing,
Which the brain makes of fumes. Our very eyes
Are sometimes like our judgments, blind. Good faith,
I tremble still with fear; but if there be
Yet left in heaven as small a drop of pity
As a wren's eye, fear'd gods, a part of it!
The dream's here still; even when I wake, it is
Without me, as within me; not imagin'd, felt.
A headless man! The garments of Posthumus!
I know the shape of 's leg, this is his hand,
His foot Mercurial, his Martial thigh,
The brawns of Hercules, but his Jovial face—
Murder in heaven? How! 'Tis gone. Pisani, All curses madded Hecuba gave the Greeks, And mine to boot, be darta'd on thee! Thou, Conspir'd with that irregulous devil, Cloten, Hast here cut off my lord. To write and read Be henceforth treacherous! Damn'd Pisani! Hath with his forged letters, damn'd Pisani, From this most braggart vessel of the world Struck the main-top! O Posthumus! alas! Where is thy head? where's that? Ay me! where's that? Pisani might have kill'd thee at the heart, And left this head on. How should this be? Pisani?
'Tis he and Cloten; malice and lucre in them.
Have laid this woe here. O! 'tis pregnant, pregnant!
The drug he gave me, which he said was precious
And cordial to me, have I not found it.
Murderous to the senses? That confirms it home;
This is Pisani's deed, and Cloten's: O!
Give colour to my pale cheek with thy blood,
That we the horrid may seem to those
Which chance to find us. O! my lord, my lord.

Enter LUCIUS, a Captain, other Officers, and a Soothsayer.

To them the legions garrison'd in Gallia,
After your will, have cross'd the sea, attending
You here at Milford-Haven with your ships:
They are in readiness.

But what from Rome? 336
Cap. The senate hath stirr'd up the confiners
And gentlemen of Italy, most willing spirits,
That promise noble service; and they come
Under the conduct of bold Ishimno,
Sienna's brother.

When expect you them?
Cap. With the next benefit o' the wind.

This forwardness
Makes our hopes fair. Command our present numbers
Be muster'd; bid the captains look to 't. Now, sir,
What have you dream'd of late of this war's purpose?

Last night the very gods showed me a vision,—
I fast and pray'd for their intelligence, thus:
I saw Jove's bird, the Roman eagle, wing'd From the spongy south to this part of the west,
There vanish'd in the sunbeams; which portends,
Unless my sins abuse my divination,
Success to the Roman host.

LUC. Dream often so, 352
And never false. Soft, hol! what trunk is here
Without his top? The ruin speaks that some-
time
It was a worthy building. How! a page!
Or dead or sleeping on him? But dead rather,
For nature doth abhor to make his bed 357
With the defunct, or sleep upon the dead.
Let's see the boy's face.

CAP. He's alive, my lord.
LUC. He'll, then, instruct us of this body.
Young one,
Inform us of thy fortunes, for it seems
They crave to be demanded. Who is this
Thou mak'st thy bloody pillow? Or who was he
That, otherwise than noble nature did, 364
Hath alter'd that good picture? What's thy interest
In this sad wrack? How came it? Who is it?
What art thou?

IMO. I am nothing; or if not,
Nothing to be were better. This was my master,
A very valiant Briton and a good, 369
That here by mountaineers lies slain. Alas!
There are no more such masters; I may wander
From east to occident, cry out for service, 372
Try many, all good, serve truly, never
Find such another master.

LUC. 'Lack, good youth!
Thou mov'st no less with thy complaining than
Thy master in bleeding. Say his name, good friend.

IMO. Richard du Champ.—[Aside.] If I do lie and do
No harm by it, though the gods hear, I hope
They'll pardon it.—Say you, sir?

LUC. Thy name?

IMO. Fidele, sir.

LUC. Thou dost approve thyself the very
same;
Thy name well fits thy faith, thy faith thy name.
Wilt take thy chance with me? I will not say
Thou shalt be so well master'd, but be sure
No less belov'd. The Roman emperor's letters,
Sent by a consul to me, should not sooner 385
Than thine own worth prefer thee. Go with me.

IMO. I'll follow, sir. But first, an't please
the gods,
I'll hide my master from the flies, as deep 388
As these poor pickaxes can dig; and when
With wild wood-leaves and weeds I ha' strew'd
his grave,
And on it said a century of prayers,
Such as I can, twice o'er, I'll weep and sigh; 392
And, leaving so his service, follow you,
So please you entertain me.

LUC. Ay, good youth,
And rather father thee than master thee.
My friends, 396
The boy hath taught us manly duties; let us
Find out the prettiest daisied plot we can,
And make him with our pikes and partisans
A grave; come, arm him. Boy, he is preferr'd
By thee to us, and he shall be inter'd 401
As soldiers can. Be cheerful; wipe thine eyes:
Some falls are means the happier to arise.

[Exeunt.

SCENE III.—A Room in Cymbeline's Palace.

Enter Cymbeline, Lords, Pisario, and
Attendants.

CYM. Again; and bring me word how 'tis with her.
[Exit an Attendant.

A fever with the absence of her son,
A madness, of which her life's in danger.
Heavens!
How deeply you at once do touch me. Imogen,
The great part of my comfort, gone; my queen
Upon a desperate bed, and in a time
When fearful wars point at me; her son gone,
So needful for this present: it strikes me, past 8
The hope of comfort. But for thee, fellow,
Who needs must know of her departure and
Dost seem so ignorant, we'll enforce it from thee
By a sharp torture.

PIS. Sir, my life is yours, 13
I humbly set it at your will; but, for my mistres,
I nothing know where she remains, why gone,
Nor when she purposes return. Beseech your highness,
Hold me your loyal servant.

FIRST LORD. Good my liege, 16
The day that she was missing he was here;
I dare be bound he's true and shall perform
All parts of his subjection loyally. For Cloten,
There wants no diligence in seeking him, 20
And will, no doubt, be found.

CYM. The time is troublesome.
[To Pisario.] We'll slip you for a season; but
our jealousy
Does yet depend.

FIRST LORD. So please your majesty,
The Roman legions, all from Gallia drawn, 24
Are landed on your coast, with a supply
Of Roman gentlemen, by the senate sent.

CYM. Now for the counsel of my son and
queen!
I am amaz'd with matter.
Act IV, Sc. III.

First Lord.
Your preparation can affront no less
Than what you hear of; come more, for more
you're ready:
The want is, but to put those powers in motion
That long to move.

Cym. I thank you. Let's withdraw; 32
And meet the time as it seeks us. We fear not
What can from Italy annoy us, but
We grieve at chances here. Away!

[Exit all but PISANIO.

Pis. I heard no letter from my master since
I wrote him Imogen was slain; 'tis strange; 37
Nor hear I from my mistress, who did promise
To yield me often tidings; neither know I
What is betid to Cloten; but remain 40
Perplex'd in all: the heavens still must work.
Wherein I am false I am honest; not true to be true:
These present wars shall find I love my country,
Even to the note o' the king, or I'll fall in them.
All other doubts, by time let them be clear'd; 45
Fortune brings in some boats that are not steer'd.

[Exit.

SCENE IV.—Wales. Before the Cave of BELARIUS.

Enter BELARIUS, GUIDERIUS, and ARVIRAGUS.

Gui. The noise is round about us.

Bel. Let us from it.

Arv. What pleasure, sir, find we in life, to
lock it
From action and adventure?

Gui. Nay, what hope
Have we in hiding us? this way, the Romans 4
Must or for Britons slay us, or receive us
For barbarous and unnatural revolts
During their use, and slay us after.

Bel. Sons,
We'll higher to the mountains; there secure us.
To the king's party there's no going; newness 9
Of Cloten's death,—we being not known, not
mustard'd
Among the bands,—may drive us to a render
Where we have liv'd, and so evert from 's that
Which we have done, whose answer would be death

Drawn on with torture.

Gui. This is, sir, a doubt
In such a time nothing becoming you,
Nor satisfying us.

Arv. It is not likely
That when they hear the Roman horses neigh,
Behold their quarter'd fires, have both their eyes
And ears so cloy'd importantly as now,

That they will waste their time upon our note,
To know from whence we are.

Bel. 0! I am known 21
Of many in the army; many years,
Though Cloten then but young, you see, not
wore him
From my remembrance. And, besides, the king
Hath not deserved my service nor your loves 25
Who find in my exile the want of breeding,
The certainty of this hard life; aye hopeless
To have the courtesy your cradle promised,

But to be still hot summer's tanlings and
The shrinking slaves of winter.

Gui. Than be so
Better to cease to be. Pray, sir, to the army:
I and my brother are not known; yourself, 32
So out of thought, and thereto so o'ergrown,
Cannot be question'd.

Arv. By this sun that shines,
I'll thither: what thing is it that I never
Did see man die! scarce ever look'd on blood 36
But that of coward hares, hot goats, and veni-
son!

Never bestrid a horse, save one that had
A rider like myself, who ne'er wore rowel
Nor iron on his heel! I am ashamed 40
To look upon the holy sun, to have
The benefit of his bless'd beams, remaining
So long a poor unknown.

Gui. By heavens! I'll go:
If you will bless me, sir, and give me leave, 44
I'll take the better care; but if you will not,
The hazard therefore due fall on me by
The hands of Romans.

Arv. So say I; amen.

Bel. No reason I, since of your lives you set
So slight a valuation, should reserve 49
My crack'd one to more care. Have with you, boys!

If in your country wars you chance to die,
That is my bed too, lads, and there I'll lie: 52
Lead, lead.—[Aside.] The time seems long;
their blood think's scorned,
Till it fly out and show them princes born.

[Exeunt.

ACT V.

SCENE I.—Britain. The Roman Camp.

Enter POSTHUMUS, with a bloody handkerchief.

Post. Yes, bloody cloth, I'll keep thee, for I wish'd
Thou shouldst be colour'd thus. You married one,
If each of you should take this course, how many
CYMBELINE

Act V, Sc. III.

If that thy gentry, Britain, go before
This lust as he exceeds our lords, the odds
Is that we scarce are men and you are gods.
[Exit.

The battle continues; the Britons fly; Cymbeline is taken; then enter, to his rescue, Belarius, Guiderius, and Arviragus.
Bel. Stand, stand! We have the advantage of the ground.
The lane is guarded; nothing routs us but
The villany of our fears.
Gui.}
Arv.}

Re-enter Posthumus, and seconds the Britons; they rescue Cymbeline, and execute. Then, re-enter Lucius, Iachimo, and Imogen.
Luc. Away, boy, from the troops, and save thyself;
For friends kill friends, and the disorder's such
As war were hoodwink'd.
Iach. 'Tis their fresh supplies. 16
Luc. It is a day turn'd strangely; or betimes
Let's re-inforce, or fly.
[Exeunt.

SCENE III.—Another Part of the Field.

Enter Posthumus and a British Lord.

Lord. Cam'st thou from where they made the stand?
Post.  I did:

Though you, it seems, come from the fliers.
Lord.  I did.
Post. No blame be to you, sir; for all was lost,
But that the heavens fought. The king himself
Of his wings destitute, the army broken,
And but the backs of Britons seen, all flying
Through a strait lane; the enemy full-hearted,
Lolling the tongue with slaughtering, having work
More plentiful than tools to do 't, struck down
Some mortally, some slightly touch'd, some falling
Merely through fear; that the strait pass was damm'd
With dead men hurt behind, and cowards living
To die with lengthen'd shame.

Lord. Where was this lane? 13
Post. Close by the battle, ditch'd, and wall'd
with turf;
Which gave advantage to an ancient soldier,
An honest one, I warrant; who deserv'd 16
So long a breeding as his white beard came to,
In doing this for his country; athwart the lane,
He, with two striplings,—lads more like to run
The country base than to commit such slaughter,—

With faces fit for masks, or rather fairer
Than those for preservation was’d, or shame,
Made good the passage; cried to those that fled,
‘Our Britain’s harts die flying, not our men:’
To darkness fleet souls that fly backwards.

Or we are Romans, and will give you that
Like beasts which you shun beastly, and may save,
But to look back in frown: stand, stand!’
These three.

Three thousand confident, in act as many,—
For three performers are the file when all
The rest do nothing,—with this word, ‘Stand, stand!’

Accommodated by the place, more charming
With their own nobleness,—which could have
A distaff to a lance,—gilded pale looks,
Part shame, part spirit renew’d; that some, turn’d cowards.

But by example,—O! a sin of war,
Darn’d in the first beginners,—’gan to look
The way that they did, and to grin like lions
Upon the pikes o’ the hunters. Then began
A stop i’ the chaser, a retire, anon,
A rout, confusion thick; forthwith they fly
Chickens, the way which they stoop’d eagles;

The strides they victors made. And now our cowards—
Like fragments in hard voyages—became
The life o’ the need; having found the back door open
Of the unguarded hearts, Heavens! how they wound;
Some slain before; some dying; some their friends
O’er-borne i’ the former wave; ten, chas’d by one,

Are now each one the slaughter-man of twenty;
Those that would die or can resist are grown
The mortal bugs o’ the field.

This was strange chance:
A narrow lane, an old man, and two boys!

Nay, do not wonder at it; you are made
Rather to wonder at the things you hear
Than to work any. Will you ride upon’t,
And vent it for a mockery? Here is one:
‘Two boys, an old man twice a boy, a lane,
Preserv’d the Britons, was the Romans’ bane.’

Nay, be not angry, sir.

‘Lock! to what end?
Who dares not stand his foe, I’ll be his friend;
For if he’ll do, as he is made to do,
I know he’ll quickly fly my friendship too.
You have put me into rime.

Farewell; you’re angry. [Exit.

Post. Still going?—This is a lord! O noble misery!

To be i’ the field, and ask, ‘What news?’ of me!
To-day how many would have given their honours
To have sav’d their carcasses! took heel to do it,
And yet died too! I, in mine own woe charm’d,
Could not find death where I did hear him groan.

Nor feel him where he struck: being an ugly monster,
’Tis strange he hides him in fresh cups, soft beds,
Sweet words; or hath more ministers than we
That draw his knives i’ the war. Well, I will find him;

For being now a favourer to the Briton,
No more a Briton, I have resum’d again
The part I came in; fight I will no more,
But yield me to the veriest hind that shall
Once touch my shoulder. Great the slaughter is
Here made by the Roman; great the answer be
Britons must take. For me, my ransom’s death;

On either side I come to spend my breath,
Which neither here I’ll keep nor bear again,
But end it by some means for Imogen.

Enter two British Captains, and Soldiers.

First Cap. Great Jupiter be prais’d! Lucius is taken.

’Tis thought the old man and his sons were
Angels.

Sec. Cap. There was a fourth man, in a silly habit,
That gave th’ affront with them.

First Cap. So ’tis reported;
But none of ’em can be found. Stand! who is there?

Post. A Roman,
Who had not now been drooping here, if seconds
Had answer’d him.

Sec. Cap. Lay hands on him; a dog!
A lag of Rome shall not return to tell
What crowns have peck’d them here. He brags
his service
As if he were of note: bring him to the king.

Enter Cymbeline, attended: Belarius, Guiderius, Aaronagus, Pisanius, and Roman Captives. The Captains present Posthumus to Cymbeline, who delivers him over to a choker; then executing others.
SCENE IV.—Britain. A Prison.

Enter Posthumus and two Gaolers.

First Gaol. You shall not now be stol’n, you have locks upon you; So graze as you find pasture.

Sec. Gaol. Ay, or a stomach. [Execunt Gaolers.

Post. Most welcome, bondage! for thou art a way,
I think, to liberty. Yet am I better Than one that’s sick o’ the gout, since he had rather Groan so in perpetuity than be cur’d By the sure physician death; who is the key To unbar these locks. My conscience, thou art better’d.

More than my shanks and wrists: you good gods, give me The penitent instrument to pick that bolt; Then, free for ever! Is ’t enough I am sorry? So children temporal fathers do appease; Gods are more full of mercy. Must I repent? I cannot do it better than in gyves, Desir’d more than constrain’d; to satisfy, If of my freedom ’tis the main part, take No stricter render of me than my all. I know you are more clement than vile men, Who of their broken debtors take a third, A sixth, a tenth, letting them thrive again On their abatement: that’s not my desire; For Imogen’s dear life take mine; and though ’Tis not so dear, yet ’tis a life; you coin’d it; ’Tween man and man they weigh not every stamp; Though light, take pieces for the figure’s sake: You rather mine, being yours; and so great powers, If you will take this audit, take this life, And cancel these cold bonds. O Imogen! I’ll speak to thee in silence. [Sleeps.

Solemne music. Enter as in an apparition
Sicilius Leonatus, father to Posthumus, an old man, attired like a warrior; leading in his hand an ancient matron, his wife, and mother to Posthumus, with music before them. Then, after other music, follow the two young Leonati, brothers to Posthumus, with wounds, as they died in the wars. They circle Posthumus round, as he lies sleeping.

Sici. No more, thou thunder-master, show Thy spite on mortal flies; With Mars fall out, with Juno chide, That thy adulteries Rates and revenges.

Hath my poor boy done aught but well, Whose face I never saw?
I died whilst in the womb he stay’d,
Attending nature’s law:
Whose father then—as men report,
Thou orphans’ father art—
Thou shouldst have been, and shielded him
From this earth-vexing smart.

Moth. Lucina lent me her aid,
But took me in my throes;
That from me was Posthumus ript,
Came crying ’mongst his foes,
A thing of pity!

Sici. Great nature, like his ancestry,
Moulded the stuff so fair,
That he deserv’d the praise o’ the world,
As great Sicilius’ heir.

First Bro. When once he was mature for man,
In Britain where was he
That could stand up his parallel,
Or fruitful object be
In eye of Imogen, that best
Could deem his dignity?

Moth. With marriage wherefore was he mock’d,
To be exil’d, and thrown
From Leonati’s seat, and cast
From her his dearest one,
Sweet Imogen?

Sici. Why did you suffer Iachimo,
Slight thing of Italy,
To taint his nobler heart and brain
With needless jealousy;
And to become the gkck and scorn
O’ the other’s villany?

Sec. Bro. For this from stiller seats we came,
Our parents and us twain,
That striking in our country’s cause
Fell bravely and were slain;
Our fealty and Tenantius’ right
With honour to maintain.

First Bro. Like hardiment Posthumus hath
To Cymbeline perform’d:
Then Jupiter, thou king of gods,
Why hast thou thus adjourn’d
The graces for his merits due,
Being all to dolours turn’d?

Sici. Thy crystal window ope; look out;
No longer exercise
Upon a valiant race thy harsh
And potent injuries.

Moth. Since, Jupiter, our son is good,
Take off his miseries.
Act V, Sc. IV.

Cymbeline

Sicili. Peep through thy marble mansion; help!
Or we poor ghosts will cry
To the shining synd of the rest
Against thy deity.

Both Bro. Help, Jupiter! or we appeal,
And from thy justice fly.

Jupiter descends in thunder and lightning, sitting upon an eagle: he throws a thunderbolt.
The Ghosts fall on their knees.

Jup. No more, you petty spirits of region low,
Offend our hearing; hush! How dare you ghosts
Accuse the thunderer, whose bolt, you know,
Sky-planted, batters all rebelling coast? Poor shadows of Elysium, hence; and rest
Upon your never-withering banks of flowers:
Be not with mortal accidents opprest;
No care of yours it is; you know 'tis ours. Whom best I love I cross; to make my gift,
The more delay'd, delighted. Be content;
Your low-laid son our godhead will uplift:
His comforts thrive, his trials well are spent.
Our Jovial star reign'd at his birth, and in our temple was he married. Rise, and fade! He shall be lord of Lady Imogen,
And happier much by his affliction made. This tablet lay upon his breast, wherein
Our pleasure his full fortune doth confine;
And so, away: no further with your din
Express impatience, lest you stir up mine. Mount, eagle, to my palace crystalline.

[Ascends.

Sicili. He came in thunder; his celestial breath
Was sulphurous to smell; the holy eagle
Swoop'd, as to foot us; his ascension is
More sweet than our bless'd fields; his royal bird
Prunes the immortal wing and cloys his beak,
As when his god is pleas'd.

All. Thanks, Jupiter!

Sicili. The marble pavement closes; he is enter'd
His radiant roof. Away! and, to be blest,
Let us with care perform his great behest.

[The Ghosts vanish.

Post. [Awaking.] Sleep, thou hast been a grand sire, and begot
A father to me; and thou hast created
A mother and two brothers. But—O scorn!—
Gone! they went hence so soon as they were born:
And so I am awake. Poor wretches, that depend
On greatness' favour dream as I have done; Wake, and find nothing. But, alas! I swerve:
Many dream not to find, neither desire,
And yet are sleep'd in favours; so am I,
That have this golden chance and know not why.
What fairies haunt this ground? A book? O rare one!
Be not, as is our fanged world, a garment
Nobler than that it covers: let thy effects
So follow, to be most unlike our courtiers,
As good as promise.

Whenas a lion's whelp shall, to himself unknown, without seeking find, and be embraced by a piece of tender air; and when from a stately cedar shall be topp'd branches, which, being dead many years, shall after revoir, be jointed to the old stock, and freshly grow, then shall Posthumus end his miseries, Britain be fortunate, and flourish in peace and plenty. 'Tis still a dream, or else such stuff as madmen Tongue and brain not; either both or nothing; Or senseless speaking, or a speaking such As sense cannot unite. Be what it is, The action of my life is like it, which I'll keep, if but for sympathy.

Re-enter Gaoler.

First Gaol. Come, sir, are you ready for death?

Post. Over-roasted rather; ready long ago.

First Gaol. Hanging is the word, sir: if you be ready for that, you are well cooked.

Post. So, if I prove a good repast to the spectators, the dish pays the shot.

First Gaol. A heavy reckoning for you, sir; but the comfort is, you shall be called to no more payments, fear no more tavern-bills, which are often the sadness of parting, as the procuring of mirth. You come in faint for want of meat, depart reeling with too much drink, sorry that you have paid too much; and sorry that you are paid too much; purse and brain both empty; the brain the heaver for being too light, the purse too light, being drawn of heaviness of this contradiction you shall now be quit. Of the charity of a penny cord; it sums up thousands in a trice: you have no true debitor and creditor but it; of what's past, is, and to come, the discharge. Your neck, sir, is pen, book and counters; so the acquaintance follows.

Post. I am merrier to die than thou art to live.

First Gaol. Indeed, sir, he that sleeps feels not the toothache; but a man that were to sleep your sleep, and a hangman to help him to bed, I think he would change places with his officer; for look you, sir, you know not which way you shall go.

Post. Yes, indeed do I, fellow.

First Gaol. Your death has eyes in 's head, then; I have not seen him so pictured: you
must either be directed by some that take upon
them to know, or take upon yourself that which
I am sure you do not know, or jump the after
inquiry on your own peril: and how you shall
speed in your journey's end, I think you'll
never return to tell one.

Post. I tell thee, fellow, there are none want
eyes to direct them the way I am going but such
as wink and will not use them.

First Gaq. What an infinite mock is this,
that a man should have the best use of eyes to
see the way of blindness! I am sure hanging's
the way of winking.

Enter a Messenger.

Mess. Knock off his manacles; bring your
prisoner to the king.

Post. Thou bring'st good news; I am called
to be made free.

First Gaq. I'll be hang'd, then.

Post. Thou shalt be then freer than a gaoler;
no bolts for the dead.

[Exeunt all but first Gaoler.

First Gaq. Unless a man would marry a
gallows and beget young gibbets, I never saw
one so prone. Yet, on my conscience, there are
verier knaves desire to live, for all he be a
Roman; and there be some of them too, that
die against their wills; so should I, if I were
one. I would we were all of one mind, and
one mind good; O! there were desolation of
gallowers and gallowses. I speak against my pre-
sent profit, but my wish hath a preferment in 't.

[Exit.

SCENE V.—CYMBELINE'S Tent.

Enter CYMBELINE, BELARIUS, GUIDERIUS,
ARVIRAGUS, PISANIO, Lords, Officers, and
Attendants.

Cym. Stand by my side, you whom the gods
have made
Preservers of my throne. Woe is my heart
That the poor soldier that so richly fought,
Whose rags sham'd gilded arms, whose naked
breast
Stepp'd before targes of proof, cannot be found:
He shall be happy that can find him, if
Our grace can make him so.

Bel. I never saw
Such noble fury in so poor a thing;
Such precious deeds in one that promis'd nought
But beggary and poor looks.

Cym. No tidings of him?

Pis. He hath been search'd among the dead
and living,
But no trace of him.

Cym. To my grief, I am
The heir of his reward; which I will add
[To BELARIUS, GUIDERIUS, and ARVIRAGUS.
To you, the liver, heart, and brain of Britain,
By whom, I grant, she lives. 'Tis now the time
To ask of whence you are: report it.

Bel. Sir, In Cambria are we born, and gentlemen:
Further to boast were neither true nor modest,
Unless I add, we are honest.

Cym. Bow your knees.

Arise, my knights o' the battle: I create you
Companions to our person, and will fit you
With dignities becoming your estates.

Enter CORNELIUS and Ladies.

There's business in these faces. Why so sadly
Greet you our victory? you look like Romans,
And not o' the court of Britain.

Cor. Hail, great king!

To sour your happiness, I must report
The queen is dead.

Cym. Whom worse than a physician
Would this report become? But I consider,
By medicine life may be prolong'd, yet death
Will seize the doctor too. How ended she?

Cor. With horror, madly dying, like her life;
Which, being cruel to the world, concluded
Most cruel to herself. What she confess'sd
I will report, so please you: these her women
Can trip me if I err; who with wet cheeks
Were present when she finish'd.

Cym. Prithee, say.

Cor. First, she confess'sd she never lov'd you,
only
Affected greatness got by you, not you;
Married your royalty, was wife to your place;
Abhor'd your person.

Cym. She alone knew this;

And, but she spoke it dying, I would not
Believe her lips in opening it. Proceed.

Cor. Your daughter, whom she bore in hand
to love
With such integrity, she did confess
Was as a scorpion to her sight; whose life,
But that her flight prevented it, she had
Ta'en off by poison.

Cym. O most delicate friend!

Who is't can read a woman? Is there more?

Cor. More, sir, and worse. She did confess
she had
For you a mortal mineral; which, being took,
Should by the minute feed on life, and ling'ring,
By inches waste you; in which time she pur-
pso'd.

By watching, weeping, tendance, kissing, to
O'ercome you with her show; yea, and in time—
When she had fitted you with her craft—
work
Her son into the adoption of the crown; 56
But failing of her end by his strange absence,
Grew shameless—desperate; open’d, in despite
Of heaven and men, her purposes; repented
The evils she hatch’d were not effected: so, 60
Despairing died.

Cym. 

Heard you all this, her women?

First Lady. 

We did, so please your highness.

Cym. 

Mine eyes

Were not in fault, for she was beautiful;
Mine ears, that heard her flattery; nor my
heart,
That thought her like her seeming: it had been
vicious
To have mistrusted her: yet, O my daughter!
That it was folly in me, thou mayst say,
And prove it in thy feeling. Heaven mend all!

Enter Lucius, Iachimo, the Soothsayer, and
other Roman Prisoners, guarded: Posthumus
behind, and Imogen.

Thou com’st not, Caius, now for tribute; that 69
The Britons have raz’d out, though with the
loss
Of many a bold one; whose kinsmen have made
suit
That their good souls may be appeas’d with
slaughter 72
Of you their captives, which ourself have
granted:
So, think of your estate.

Luc. Consider, sir, the chance of war: the
day
Was yours by accident; had it gone with us, 76
We should not, when the blood was cool, have
threaten’d
Our prisoners with the sword. But since the
gods
Will have it thus, that nothing but our lives
May be call’d ransom, let it come; sufficeth, 80
A Roman with a Roman’s heart can suffer;
Augustus lives to think on’t; and so much
For my peculiar care. This one thing only
I will entreat; my boy, a Briton born,
Let him be ransom’d; never master had
A page so kind, so duteous, diligent,
So tender over his occasions, true,
So feat, so nurse-like. Let his virtue join 88
With my request, which I’ll make bold your
highness
Cannot deny; he hath done no Briton harm,
Though he have serv’d a Roman. Save him, sir,
And spare no blood beside.

Cym. I have surely seen him;
His favour is familiar to me. Boy,

Thou hast look’d thyself into my grace,
And art mine own. I know not why nor where-
fore,

To say, ’live, boy!’ ne’er thank thy master; live:
And ask of Cymbeline what boon thou wilt,
Fitting my bounty and thy state, I’ll give it;
Yea, though thou do demand a prisoner, 100
The noblest ta’en.

Imo. I humbly thank your highness.

Luc. I do not bid thee beg my life, good lad;
And yet I know thou wilt.

Imo. No, no; slack!
There’s other work in hand. I see a thing 104
Bitter to me as death; thy life, good master,
Must shuffle for itself.

Luc. The boy disdains me,
He leaves me, scorns me; briefly die their joys
That place them on the truth of girls and boys.
Why stands he so perplex’d?

Cym. What wouldst thou, boy? 109
I love thee more and more; think more and
more
What’s best to ask. Know’st him thou look’st
on? speak;
Wilt have him live? Is he thy kin? thy friend?

Imo. He is a Roman; no more kin to me 113
Than I to your highness; who, being born your
vassal,
Am something nearer.

Cym. Wherefore ey’st him so?

Imo. I’ll tell you, sir, in private, if you please
To give me hearing.

Cym. Ay, with all my heart, 117
And lend my best attention. What’s thy name?

Imo. Fidele, sir.

Cym. Thou’rt my good youth, my page:
I’ll be thy master: walk with me; speak freely.

[Cymbeline and Imogen converse apart.

Bel. Is not this boy reviv’d from death?

Arv. One sand another 121
Not more resembles;—that sweet rosy lad
Who died, and was Fidele. What think you?

Guil. The same dead thing alive. 124

Bel. Peace, peace! see further; he eyes us
not; forbear;
Creatures may be alike; were ’t he, I am sure
He would have spoke to us.

Guil. But we saw him dead.

Bel. Be silent; let’s see further.

Pis. [Aside.] It is my mistress: 128
Since she is living, let the time run on
To good, or bad.

[Cymbeline and Imogen come forward.

Cym. Come, stand thou by our side:
Make thy demand aloud.—[To Iachimo] Sir,
step you forth;
Give answer to this boy, and do it freely.

1208
Or, by our greatness and the grace of it, Which is our honour, bitter torture shall Winnow the truth from falsehood. On, speak to him. Imo. My boon is, that this gentleman may render
Of whom he had this ring. Post. [Aside.] What's that to him? Cym. That diamond upon your finger, say How came it yours? Iach. Thou'lt torture me to leave unspoken that
Which, to be spoke, would torture thee. Cym. Howl me? Iach. I am glad to be constrain'd to utter that Which torments me to conceal. By villany I got this ring; 'twas Leonatus' jewel, Whom thou didst banish, and—which more may grieve thee, As it doth me—a nobler sir ne'er liv'd 'Twixt sky and ground. Wilt thou hear more, my lord? Cym. All that belongs to this. Iach. That paragon, thy daughter,— For whom my heart drops blood, and my false spirits Quail to remember,—Give me leave; I faint. Cym. My daughter! what of her? Renew thy strength; I had rather thou shouldst live while nature will Than die ere I hear more. Strive, man, and speak. Iach. Upon a time,—unhappy was the clock That struck the hour!—it was in Rome,— accurs'd The mansion where!—'twas at a feast—O, would Our viands had been poison'd, or at least Those which I heav'd to head!—the good Posthumus,— What should I say? he was too good to be Where ill men were; and was the best of all Amongst the rar'est of good ones;—sitting sadly Hearing us praise our loves of Italy For beauty that made barren the swell'd boast Of him that best could speak; for feature laming The shrine of Venus, or straight-pight Minerva, Postures beyond brief nature; for condition, A show of all the qualities that man Loves woman for; besides that hook of wiving, Fairness which strikes the eye. Cym. I stand on fire. Come to the matter. Iach. All too soon I shall,

Unless thou wouldst grieve quickly. This Posthumus— Most like a noble lord in love, and one That had a royal lover—took his hint; And, not dispraising whom we prais'd,—therein He was as calm as virtue,—he began His mistress' picture; which by his tongue being made, And then a mind put in 't, either our brags Were crack'd of kitchen trulls, or his description Prov'd us unspeaking sots.

Cym. Nay, nay, to the purpose. Iach. Your daughter's chastity, there it begins. He spake of her as Dian had hot dreams, And she alone were cold; whereat I, wretch, Made scruple of his praise, and wager'd with him Pieces of gold 'gainst this, which then he wore Upon his honour'd finger, to attain In suit the place of his bed, and win this ring By hers and mine adultery. He, true knight, No lesser of her honour confident Than I did truly find her, stakes this ring; And would so, had it been a carbuncle Of Phoebus' wheel; and might so safely, had it Been all the worth of 's car. Away to Britain Post in this design. Well may you, sir, Remember me at court, where I was taught Of your chaste daughter the wide difference Twixt amorous and villainous. Being thus quench'd Of hope, not longing, mine Italian brain 'Can in your duller Britain operate Most vilely; for my vantage, excellent; And, to be brief, my practice so prevail'd, That I return'd with simular proof enough To make the noble Leonatus mad, By wounding his belief in her renown With tokens thus, and thus; averring notes Of chanter-hanging, pictures, this her bracelet;— Oh cunning! how I got it!—nay, some marks Of secret on her person, that he could not But think her bond of chastity quite crack'd, I having ta'en the forfeit. Whereupon,— Methinks I see him now,—

Post. [Coming forward.] Ay, so thou dost, Italian fiend!—Ay me, most credulous fool, Egregious murderer, thief, any thing That's due to all the villains past, in being, To come. Of give me cord, or knife, or poison, Some upright justicer. Thou king, send out For torturers ingenious; it is I That all the abhorred things o' the earth amend By being worse than they. I am Posthumus,
There was an error.

Gui. This is, sure, Fidele.

Imo. Why did you throw your wedded lady from you?

Think that you are upon a rock; and now
Throw me again.

[Embracing him.

Post. Hang there like fruit, my soul,
Till the tree die!

Cym. How now, my flesh, my child!
What, mak'st thou me a durlard in this act?

Wilt thou not speak to me?

Imo. [Kneeling.] Your blessing, sir.
Bel.[To GUIDERIUS and ARVIRAGUS.] Though you did love this youth, I blame ye not;
You had a motive for 't.

Cym. My tears that fall prove holy water on thee! Imogen, Thy mother's dead.

Imo. I am sorry for 't, my lord.

Cym. O, she was naught; and long of her it was

That we meet here so strangely; but her son Is gone, we know not how, nor where.

Pis. My Lord, now fear is from me, I'll speak truthe. Lord Cloten,

Upon my lady's missing, came to me

With his sword drawn, foam'd at the mouth, and swore

If I discover'd not which way she was gone,

It was my instant death. By accident,

I had a seignior letter of my master's

Then in my pocket, which directed him

To seek her on the mountains near to Milford;

Where, in a frenzy, in my master's garments,

Which he enforc'd from me, away he posted

With unchaste purpose and with oath to violate

My lady's honour; what became of him

I further know not.

Gui. Let me end the story:

I slew him there.

Cym. Marry, the gods forswore! I would not thy good deeds should from my lips

Pluck a hard sentence: prithee, valiant youth, Deny 't again.

Gui. I have spoke it, and I did it.

Cym. He was a prince.

Gui. A most incivile one. The wrongs he did me

Were nothing princes-like; for he did provoke me

With language that would make me spurn the sea;

If it could so roar to me. I cut off 's head;

And am right glad he is not standing here

To tell this tale of mine.

Cym. I am sorry for thee:
By thine own tongue thou art condemn'd, and must
Endure our law. Thou'rt dead.

Imo. That headless man 300
I thought had been my lord.
Cym Bind the offender, And take him from our presence.

Bel. Stay, sir king: This man is better than the man he slew, As well descended as thyself; and hath 304 More of thee merited than a band of Cloten's Had ever scar for. [To the Guard.] Let his arms alone;
They were not born for bondage.
Cym. Why, old soldier, Wilt thou undo the worth thou art unpaid for, By tasting of our wrath? How of descent 309 As good as we?
Arv. In that he spake too far. Cym. And thou shalt die for 't.

Bel. We will die all three: But I will prove that two on 's are as good 312 As I have given out him. My sons, I must For mine own part unfold a dangerous speech, Though, haply, well for you.
Arv. Your danger's ours.
Gui. And our good his.

Bel. Have at it, then, by leave. 316 Thou hadst, great king, a subject who was call'd Belarius.
Cym. What of him? he is A banish'd traitor.

Bel. He it is that hath Assum'd this age: indeed, a banish'd man; 320 I know not how a traitor.
Cym. Take him hence: The whole world shall not save him.

Bel. Not too hot: First pay me for the nursing of thy sons; And let it be confiscate all so soon 324 As I have receiv'd it.
Cym. Nursing of my sons! Bel. I am too blunt and saucy; here's my knee: Ere I arise I will prefer my sons; Then spare not the old father. Mighty sir, 328 These two young gentlemen, that call me father, And think they are my sons, are none of mine; They are the issue of your loins, my liege, And blood of your begetting.

Cym. How! my issue! 332
Bel. So sure as you your father's, I, old Morgan,
Am that Belarius whom you sometime banish'd: Your pleasure was my more offence, my punish-

Itself, and all my treason; that I suffer'd 336

Was all the harm I did. These gentle princes— For such and so they are—these twenty years Have I train'd up; those arts they have as I Could put into them; my breeding was, sir, as Your highness knows. Their nurse, Euriphile, Whom for the theft I wedded, stole these children
Upon my banishment: I mov'd her to 't,
Having receiv'd the punishment before, 344 For that which I did then; beaten for loyalty Excited me to treason. Their dear loss, The more of you 'twas felt the more it shap'd Unto my end of stealing them. But, gracious sir,

Here are your sons again; and I must lose Two of the sweetest companions in the world. The benediction of these covering heavens Fall on their heads like dew! for they are worthy

To inlay heaven with stars.

Cym. Thou weep'st, and speak'st.
The service that you three have done is more Unlike than this thou tell'st. I lost my children: If these be they, I know not how to wish 355 A pair of worthier sons.

Bel. Be pleas'd awhile. This gentleman, whom I call Polydore, Most worthy prince, as yours, is true Guiderius; This gentleman, my Cadwal, Arviragus, 360 Your younger princely son; he, sir, was lapp'd In a most curious mantle, wrought by the hand Of his queen mother, which, for more proba-
tion,
I can with ease produce.

Gui. Guiderius had 364

Bel. Upon his neck a mole, a sanguine star; It was a mark of wonder.

Gui. This is he, Who hath upon him still that natural stamp. It was wise nature's end in the donation, 368 To be his evidence now.

Cym. O! what, am I A mother to the birth of three? Ne'er mother Rejoic'd deliverance more. Blest pray you be, That, after this strange starting from your orbs, You may reign in them now. O Imogen! 373 Thou hast lost by this a kingdom.

Cym. Thou hast lost by this a kingdom.

Bel. No, my lord; I have got two worlds by 't. O my gentle brothers!

Imo. Have we thus met? O, never say hereafter 376 But I am truest speaker: you call'd me brother, When I was but your sister; I you brothers
When ye were so indeed.

Cym. Did you e'er meet?
Arv. Ay, my good lord.

Gui. And at first meeting lov'd; 380
Continu'd so, until we thought he died.
Cor. By the queen's dram she swallow'd.
Cym. O rare instinct!
When shall I hear all through? This fierce abridgment
Hath to it circumstantial branches, which 384
Distinction should be rich in. Where? how liv'd you?
And when came you to serve our Roman captive?
How parted with your brothers? how first met them?
Why fled you from the court, and whither?
These, 388
And your three motives to the battle, with
I know not how much more, should be demanded,
And all the other by-dependences,
From chance to chance, but nor the time nor place 392
Will serve our long intergatories. See,
Posthumus anchors upon Imogen,
And she, like harmless lightning, throws her eye
On him, her brothers, me, her master, hitting
Each object with a joy: the counterchange 397
Is severally in all. Let's quit this ground,
And smoke the temple with our sacrifices.
[To BELARIUS.] Thou art my brother; so we'll hold thee ever.
Imo. You are my father too; and did relieve me,
To see this gracious season.
Cym. All o'erjoy'd
Save these in bonds; let them be joyful too,
For they shall taste our comfort.
Imo. My good master, 404
I will yet do you service.
Luc. Happy be you!
Cym. The forlorn soldier, that so nobly fought
He would have well besom'd this place and grac'd
The thankings of a king.
Post. I am, sir, 408
The soldier that did company these three
In poor beseeching; 'twas a fitment for
The purpose I then follow'd. That I was he,
Speak, Iachimo; I had you down and might 412
Have made you finish.
Iach. [Kneeling.] I am down again;
But now my heavy conscience sinks my knee,
As then your force did. Take that life, beseech you,
Which I so often owe, but your ring first, 416
And here the bracelet of the truest princess
That ever swore her faith.
Post. Kneel not to me:
Whom heavens—in justice both on her and hers—
Have laid most heavy hand.
Sooth. The fingers of the powers above do tune
The harmony of this peace. The vision 468
Which I made known to Lucius ere the stroke
Of this yet scarce-cold battle, at this instant
Is full accomplish’d; for the Roman eagle,
From south to west on wing soaring aloft, 472
Lessen’d herself, and in the beams o’ the sun
So vanish’d: which foreshow’d our princely eagle,
The imperial Caesar, should again unite
His favour with the radiant Cymbeline, 476
Which shines here in the west.
Cym. Laud we the gods;
And let our crooked smokes climb to their nostrils
From our bless’d altars. Publish we this peace
To all our subjects. Set we forward: let 480
A Roman and a British ensign wave
Friendly together; so through Lud’s town march:
And in the temple of great Jupiter
Our peace we’ll ratify; seal it with feasts. 484
Set on there. Never was a war did cease,
Ere bloody hands were wash’d, with such a peace. [Exeunt.
PERICLES
PRINCE OF TYRE

DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

ANTIOCHUS, King of Antioch.
PERICLES, Prince of Tyre.

HELICANUS, two Lords of Tyre.
ESCANES, two Lords of Tyre.
SNUMIDES, King of Pentapolis.
CLEON, Governor of Tarsus.
LYSIMACHUS, Governor of Mitylene.
CERIMON, a Lord of Ephesus.
THAIAX, a Lord of Antioch.
PHILEMOM, Servant to Cerimon.
LEONINE, Servant to Dionyzia.

A Pandar.
BOULT, his Servant.
The Daughter of Antiochus.
DIONYZA, Wife to Cleon.
THAIAX, Daughter to Simonides.
MARINA, Daughter to Pericles and Thaisa.
LYCHORIDA, Nurse to Marina.
A Bawd.

Lords, Ladies, Knights, Gentlemen, Sailors, Pirates, Fishermen, and Messengers.

Diana.

GOWER, as Chorus.

SCENE.—Dispersely in various Countries.

ACT I.

Before the Palace of Antioch.

Enter Gower.

To sing a song that old was sung,
From ashes ancient Gower is come,
Assuming man’s infirmities,
To glad your ear, and please your eyes.

It hath been sung at festivals,
On ember-dances, and holy-ales;
And lords and ladies in their lives
Have read it for restoratives:

The purchase is to make men glorious; Et bonum quo antiquius, eo melius.
If you, born in these latter times,
When wit’s more ripe, accept my rimes,

And that to hear an old man sing
May to your wishes pleasure bring,
I live would wish, and that I might
Waste it for you like taper-light.

This Antioch, then, Antiochus the Great
Built up, this city, for his chiefest seat,
The fairest in all Syria,
I tell you what mine authors say:

This king unto him took a fere,
Who died and left a female heir,
So buxom, blithe, and full of face
As heaven had lent her all his grace;

With whom the father liking took,
And her to incest did provoke.

Bad child, worse father! to entice his own
To evil should be done by none.
By custom what they did begin
Was with long use account no sin.
The beauty of this sinful dame
Made many princes theither frame
To seek her as a bed-fellow,
In marriage-pleasures play-fellow:
Which to prevent, he made a law,
To keep her still, and men in awe,
That whose ask’d her for his wife,
His riddle told not, lost his life:
So for her many a wight did die,
As you grim looks do testify.
What now ensues, to the judgment of your eye
I give, my cause who best can justify. [Exit.

SCENE I.—Antioch. A Room in the Palace.

Enter ANTIOCHUS, PERICLES, and Attendants.

Ant. Young Prince of Tyre, you have at large receiv’d
The danger of the task you undertake.
Per. I have, Antiochus, and, with a soul
Embolden’d with the glory of her praise,
Think death no hazard in this enterprise.

Ant. Bring in our daughter, clothed like a bride,
For the embracements even of Jove himself;

1214
At whose conception, till Lucina reign’d,
Nature this dowry gave, to glad her presence,
The senate-house of planets did sit,
To knit in her their best perfections. [Music.

Enter the Daughter of Antiochus.

Per. See, where she comes apparell’d like the spring,
Graces her subjects, and her thoughts the king
Of every virtue gives renown to men!
Her face the book of praises, where is read
Nothing but curious pleasures, as from thence
Sorrow were ever raz’d, and testy wrath
Could never be her mild companion.
You gods, that made me man, and sway in love,
That hast inflam’d desire in my breast
To taste the fruit of your celestial tree
Or die in the adventure, be my help,
As I am son and servant to your will,
To compass such a boundless happiness!

Ant. Prince Pericles,—

Per. That would be son to great Antiochus.

Ant. Before thee stands this fair Hesperides,
With golden fruit, but dangerous to be touch’d;
For death-like dragons here affright thee hard:
Her face, like heaven, enticeth thee to view
Her countless glory, which desert must gain;
And which, without desert, because thine eye
Presumes to reach, all thy whole heap must die.
Yon sometime famous prince, like thyself,
Drawn by report, adventurous by desire,
Tell thee with speechless tongues and semblance pale,
That without covering, save you field of stars,
They here stand martyrs, slain in Cupid’s wars;
And with dead cheeks advise thee to desist
For going on death’s net, whom none resist.

Per. Antiochus, I thank thee, who hast taught
My frail mortality to know itself,
And by those fearful objects to prepare
This body, like to them, to what I must;
For death remember’d should be like a mirror,
Who tells us life’s but breath, to trust it error.
I’ll make my will then; and as sick men do,
Who know the world, see heaven, but feeling woe,
Gripe not at earthly joys as erst they did:
So I bequeath a happy peace to you
And all good men, as every prince should do;
My riches to the earth from whence they came,

[To the Daughter of Antiochus.

But my unspotted fire of love to you.
Thus ready for the way of life or death,
I wait the sharpest blow.

Ant. Scorning advice, read the conclusion then;

Which read and not expounded, ‘ts decreed,
As these before thee thou thyself shalt bleed.

Daugh Of all say’d yet, mayst thou prove prosperous!
Of all say’d yet, I wish thee happiness!
Per Like a bold champion, I assume the lists,
Nor ask advice of any other thought
But faithfulness and courage.

I am no viper, yet I feed
On mother’s flesh which did me breed;
I sought a husband, in which labour
I found that kindness in a father.
He’s father, son, and husband mild,
I mother, wife, and yet his child.
How they may be, and yet in two,
As you will live, resolve it you.

Sharp physic is the last: but, O you powers!
That give heaven countless eyes to view men’s acts,
Why cloud they not their sights perpetually,
If this be true, which makes me pale to read it?
Fair glass of light, I lov’d you, and could still,
Were not this glorious casket stor’d with ill:
But I must tell you now my thoughts revolt;
For he’s no man on whom perfections wait
That, knowing sin within, will touch the gate.
You’re a fair viol, and your sense the strings,
Who, finger’d to make men his lawful music,
Would draw heaven down and all the gods to hearken;
But being play’d upon before your time,
Hell only danceth at so harsh a chime.
Good sooth, I care not for you.

Ant. Prince Pericles, touch not, upon thy life,
For that’s an article within our law,
As dangerous as the rest. Your time’s expir’d:
Either expound now or receive your sentence.

Per. Great king,
Few love to hear the sins they love to act;
’Twould braid yourself too near for me to tell it.
Who has a book of all that monarchs do,
He’s more secure to keep it shut than shown;
For vice repeated is like the wandering wind,
Blows dust in others’ eyes, to spread itself;
And yet the end of all is bought thus dear,
The breath is gone, and the sore eyes see clear
To stop the air would hurt them. The blind
Mole casts

Copp’d hills towards heaven, to tell the earth is throng’d
By man’s oppression; and the poor worm doth die for’t.
Kings are earth’s gods; in vice their law’s their will;
And if Jove stray, who dares say Jove doth ill?
It is enough you know; and it is fit,
What being more known grows worse, to
smother it.
All love the womb that their first being bred,
Then give my tongue like leave to love my head.

_Ant. [Aside.]_ Heaven! that I had thy head;
he has found the meaning;
But I will glaze with him. Young Prince of Tyre,
Though by the tenour of our strict edict,
Your exposition misinterpreting,
We might proceed to cancel of your days;
Yet hope, succeeding from so fair a tree
As your fair self, doth tune us otherwise:
Forty days longer we do respite you;
If by which time our secret be undone,
This mercy shows we'll joy in such a son:
And until then your entertain shall be
As doth befit our honour and your worth.

[Exeunt all but _PERICLES._]

_Per._ How courtesy would seem to cover sin,
When what is done is like a hypocrite,
The which is good in nothing but in sight!
If it be true that I interpret false,
Then were it certain you were not so bad
As with foul incest to abuse your soul;
Where now you're both a father and a son,
By your untimely clasplings with your child,—
Which pleasure fits a husband, not a father;—
And she an eater of her mother's flesh,
By the defiling of her parent's bed;
And both like serpents are, who though they
feed
On sweetest flowers, yet they poison breed.
_Ant._ Antioch, farewell! for wisdom sees, those men
Blush not in actions blacker than the night,
Will shun no course to keep them from the light.
One sin, I know, another doth provoke;
Murder's as near to lust as flame to smoke.
Poison and treason are the hands of sin,
_Ay, and the targets, to put off the shame:
Then, lest my life be cropp'd to keep you clear,
By flight I'll shun the danger which I fear.

[Exit.

_Re-enter ANTIOCHUS._

_Ant._ He hath found the meaning, for which
we mean
To take his head.
He must not live to trumpet forth my infamy,
Nor tell the world Antiochus doth sin
In such a loathed manner;
And therefore instantly this prince must die,
For by his fall my honour must keep high,
Who attends us there?

_Enter THALIARD._

_Thal._ Doth your highness call?

_Ant._ Thaliard,
You're of our chamber, and our mind partakes
Her private actions to your secrecy;
And for your faithfulness we will advance you.
Thaliard, behold, here's poison, and here's
gold:
We hate the Prince of Tyre, and thou must kill
him:
It fits thee not to ask the reason why,
Because we bid it. Say, is it done?
_Thal._ My lord, 'tis done.

_Ant._ Enough.

_Enter a Messenger._
Let your breath cool yourself, telling your haste.
_Mess._ My lord, Prince Pericles is fled. [Exit._

_Ant._ [To THALIARD.] As thou
Wilt live, fly after; and, as an arrow shot
From a well-experienced archer hits the mark
His eye doth level at, so thou ne'er return
Unless thou say 'Prince Pericles is dead.'

_Thal._ My lord,
If I can get him within my pistol's length,
I'll make him sure enough: so, farewell to your
highborn.

_Ant._ Thaliard, adieu! [Exit THALIARD._

_Till Pericles be dead,
My heart can lend no succour to my head. [Exit._

_SCENE II._—Tyre. A Room in the Palace.

_Enter PERICLES._

_Per._ [To those without.] Let none disturb us.—
Why should this change of thoughts,
The sad companion, dull-eyed melancholy,
Be my so us'd a guest, as not an hour
In the day's glorious walk or peaceful night—
The tomb where grief should sleep—can breed
me quiet?
Here pleasures court mine eyes, and mine eyes
shun them,
And danger, which I feared, is at Antioch,
Whose arm seems far too short to hit me here;
Yet neither pleasure's art can joy my spirits,
Nor yet the other's distance comfort me.
Then it is thus: the passions of the mind,
That have their first conception by mis-dread;
Have after-nourishment and life by care;
And what was first but fear what might be done,
Grows elder now and cares it be not done.
And so with me: the great Antiochus,—
'Gainst whom I am too little to contend,
Since he's so great can make his will his act,—
Will think me speaking, though I swear to
silence;
Nor boots it me to say I honour him,
If he suspect I may dishonour him;
And what may make him blush in being known,
He'll stop the course by which it might be known.

With hostile forces he'll o'erspread the land,
And with the extent of war will look so huge,
Amazement shall drive courage from the state,
Our men be vanquish'd ere they do resist,
And subjects punish'd that ne'er thought offence:

Which care of them, not pity of myself,—
Who am no more but as the tops of trees,
Which fence the roots they grow by and defend them,—
Make both my body pine and soul to languish,
And punish that before that he would punish.

Enter HELICANUS and other Lords.

First Lord. Joy and all comfort in your sacred breast!
Sec. Lord. And keep your mind, till you return to us,
Peaceful and comfortable.

Hel. Peace, peace! and give experience tongue.
They do abuse the king that flatter him;
For flattery is the bellows blows up sin;
The thing which is flatter'd, but a spark,
To which that blast gives heat and stronger glowing;
Whereas reproof, obedient and in order,
Fits kings, as they are men, for they may err:
When Signior Sooth here does proclaim a peace,
He flatters you, makes war upon your life.
Prince, pardon me, or strike me, if you please;
I cannot be much lower than my knees.

Per. All leave us else; but let your cares o'erlook
What shipping and what lading's in our haven,
And then return to us. [Exeunt Lords.

Helicanus, thou
Hast mov'd us; what seest thou in our looks?
Hel. An angry brow, dread lord.

Per. If there be such a dart in prince's frowns,
How durst thy tongue move anger to our face?
Hel. How dare the plants look up to heaven,
From whence
They have their nourishment?

Per. Thou know'st I have power
To take thy life from thee.

Hel. [Kneeling.] I have ground the axe myself;
Do you but strike the blow.

Rise, prithee, rise;
Sit down; thou art no flatterer:
I thank thee for it; and heaven forbid

That kings should let their ears hear their faults hid!
Fit counsellor and servant for a prince,
Who by thy wisdom mak'st a prince thy servant,

What wouldst thou have me do?
Hel. To bear with patience
Such griefs as you yourself do lay upon your self.

Per. Thou speak'st like a physician, Helicanus,
That minister's a potion unto me
That thou wouldst tremble to receive thyself.
Attend me then: I went to Antioch,
Whereas thou know'st, against the face of death
I sought the purchase of a glorious beauty,
From whence an issue I might propagate
Are arms to princes and bring joys to subjects.
Her face was to mine eye beyond all wonder;
The rest, hark in thine ear, as black as incest;
Which by my knowledge found, the sinful father
Seem'd not to strike, but smooth; but thou know'st this,
'Tis time to fear when tyrants seem to kiss.
Which fear so grew in me, I hither fled,
Under the covering of a careful night,
Who seem'd my good protector; and, being here,
Bethought me what was past, what might succeed.

I knew him tyrannous; and tyrants' fears
Decrease not, but grow faster than the years.
And should he doubt it, as no doubt he doth,
That I should open to the listening air
How many worthy princes' bloods were shed,
To keep his bed of blackness unlaid ope,
To lop that doubt he'll fill this land with arms,
And make pretence of wrong that I have done him;
When all, for mine, if I may call 't, offence,
Must feel war's blow, who spares not innocence:
Which love to all, of which thyself art one,
Who now repro'vst me for it,—

Hel. Alas! sir.

Per. Drew sleep out of mine eyes, blood from my cheeks,
Musings into my mind, with thousand doubts
How I might stop this tempest, ere it came;
And finding little comfort to relieve them,
I thought it princely charity to grieve them.

Hel. Well, my lord, since you have given me leave to speak,
Freely will I speak. Antiochus you fear,
And justly too, I think, you fear the tyrant,
Who either by public war or private treason
Will take away your life.
Therefore, my lord, go travel for a while,
Till that his rage and anger be forgot,
Or till the Destinies do cut his thread of life. 108
Your rule direct to any; if to me,
Day serves not light more faithful than I'll be. 112
Per. I do not doubt thy faith;
But should he wrong my liberties in my absence?
Heli. We'll mingle our bloods together in the earth,
From whence we had our being and our birth. 116
Per. Tyre, I now look from thee then, and to Tarsus
Intend my travel, where I'll hear from thee,
And by whose letters I'll dispose myself.
The care I had and have of subjects' good
On thee I'll lay, whose wisdom's strength can bear it.
I'll take thy word for faith, not ask thine oath;
Who shuns not to break one will sure crack both. 127
But in our orbs we'll live so round and safe,
That time of both this truth shall ne'er convince,
Thou show'st a subject's shine, I a true prince.
[Exeunt.

SCENE III.—The Same. An Antechamber in
the Palace.

Enter Thaliard.

Thal. So this is Tyre, and this the court.
Here must I kill King Pericles; and if I do not, I
am sure to be hanged at home: 'tis dangerous.
Well, I perceive he was a wise fellow, and had
good discretion, that, being bid to ask what he
would of the king, desired he might know none
of his secrets: now do I see he had some reason
for it; for if a king bid a man be a villain, he is
bound by the indenture of his oath to be one.
Hush! here come the lords of Tyre. 20

Enter Helicanus, Escanias, and other Lords.

Heli. You shall not need, my fellow peers of
Tyre,
Further to question me of your king's depart-
ure:
His seal'd commission, left in trust with me,
Both speak sufficiently he's gone to travel.
Thal. [Aside.] How! the king gone! 23
Heli. If further yet you will be satisfied,
Why, as it were unitesed'd of your loves,
He would depart, I'll give some light unto you.
Being at Antioch—
Thal. [Aside.] What from Antioch?
Heli. Royal Antiochus—on what cause I
know not—

Took some displeasure at him, at least he judg'd
so;
And doubting lest that he had err'd or sinn'd,
To show his sorrow he'd correct himself;
So puts himself unto the shipman's toil,
With whom each minute threatens life or death.
Thal. [Aside.] Well, I perceive I shall not be hang'd now, although I would;
But since he's gone, the king it sure must please:
He 'scap'd the land, to perish at the sea.
I'll present myself. [Aloud.] Peace to the lords
of Tyre.
Heli. Lord Thaliard from Antiochus is wel-
come.
Thal. From him I come,
With message unto princely Pericles;
But since my landing I have understood
Your lord hath betook himself to unknown
travels,
My message must return from whence it came.
Heli. We have no reason to desire it,
Commended to our master, not to us:
Yet, ere you shall depart, this we desire,
As friends to Antioch, we may feast in Tyre. 40

SCENE IV.—Tarsus. A Room in the
Governor's House.

Enter Cleon, Dionyzia, and Attendants.

Cle. My Dionyzia, shall we rest us here,
And by relating tales of others' griefs,
See if 'twill teach us to forget our own?
Dio. That were to blow at fire in hope to
quench it;
For who diggs hills because they do aspire
Throws down one mountain to cast up a higher.
O my distressed lord! even such our griefs are:
Here they're but felt, and seen with mischief's
eyes,
But like to groves, being topp'd, they higher
rise.
Cle. O Dionyzia,
Who wasteth food, and will not say he wants it,
Or can conceal his hunger till he famish?
Our tongues and sorrows do sound deep
Our woes into the air; our eyes do weep
Till tongues fetch breath that may proclaim
them louder;
That if heaven slumber while their creatures
want,
They may awake their helps to comfort them.
I'll then discourse our woes, felt several years,
And wanting breath to speak help me with tears.
Dio. I'll do my best, sir.

Cle. This Tarsus, o'er which I have the government,
A city on whom plenty held full hand,
For riches strew'd herself even in the streets;
Whose towers bore heads so high they kiss'd
the clouds,
And strangers ne'er beheld but wonder'd at;
Whose men and dames so jetted and adorn'd,
Like one another's glass to trim them by:
Their tables were stor'd full to glad the sight,
And not so much to feed on as delight;
All poverty was scorn'd, and pride so great,
The name of help grew odious to repeat.

Dio. O' tis too true.

Cle. But see what heaven can do! By this our change,
These mouths, whom but of late earth, sea, and air
Were all too little to content and please,
Although they gave their creatures in abundance,
As houses are defil'd for want of use,
They are now starv'd for want of exercise;
Those palates who, not yet two summers younger,
Must have inventions to delight the taste,
Would now be glad of bread, and beg for it;
Those mothers who, to nodle up their babes,
Thought nought too curious, are ready now
To eat those little darlings whom they lov'd.
So sharp are hunger's teeth, that man and wife
Draw lots who first shall die to lengthen life.
Here stands a lord, and there a lady weeping;
Here many sink, yet those which see them fall
Have scarce strength left to give them burial.

Is not this true?

Dio. Our cheeks and hollow eyes do witness it.

Cle. O! let those cities that of plenty's cup
And her prosperities so largely taste,
With their superfluous riots, hear these tears:
The misery of Tarsus may be theirs.

Enter a Lord.

Lord. Where's the lord governor?

Cle. Here.

Speak out thy sorrows which thou bring'st in haste,
For comfort is too far for us to expect.

Lord. We have descried, upon our neighbour's shore,
A portly sail of ships make.hitherward.

Cle. I thought as much.

One sorrow never comes but brings an heir
That may succeed as his inheritor;
And so in ours. Some neighbouring nation,
Taking advantage of our misery,
Hath stuff'd these hollow vessels with their power,
To beat us down, the which are down already;
And make a conquest of unhappy me,
Whereas no glory's got to overcome.

Lord. That's the least fear; for by the semblance
Of their white flags display'd, they bring us peace,
And come to us as favourers, not as foes.

Cle. Thou speak'st like him 's untutor'd to repeat:
Who makes the fairest show means most deceit,
But bring they what they will and what they can,
What need we fear?
The ground's the lowest and we are half way there.
Go tell their general we attend him here,
To know for what he comes, and whence he comes,
And what he craves.

Lord. I go, my lord.

Cle. Welcome is peace if he on peace consist;
If wars we are unable to resist.

Enter PERICLES, with Attendants.

Per. Lord governor, for so we hear you are,
Let not our ships and number of our men,
Be like a beacon fir'd to amase your eyes.
We have heard your miseries as far as Tyre,
And seen the desolation of your streets:
Nor come we to add sorrow to your tears,
But to relieve them of their heavy load;
And these our ships, you happily may think are like the Trojan horse was stuff'd within
With bloody veins, expecting overthrow,
Are stor'd with corn to make your needy bread,
And give them life whom hunger starv'd half dead.

All. The gods of Greece protect you!
And we'll pray for you.

Per. Arise, I pray you, rise:
We do not look for reverence, but for love,
And harbourship for ourself, our ships, and men.

Cle. The which when any shall not gratify,
Or pay you with unthankfulness in thought,
Be it our wives, our children, or ourselves,
The curse of heaven and men succeed their evils!
Till when—the which, I hope, shall ne'er be seen—

Your Grace is welcome to our town and us.

Per. Which welcome we'll accept; feast here awhile,
Until our stars that frown lend us a smile.

[Exeunt.]
ACT II.

Enter Gower.

Here have you seen a mighty king
His child, I wis, to incest bring;
A better prince and benigne lord,
That will prove awful both in deed and word.
Be quiet, then, as men should be,
Till he hath pass’d necessity.
I’ll show you those in troubles reign,
Losing a mite, a mountain gain.
The good in conversation,
To whom I give my benison,
Is still at Tarsus, where each man
Thinks all is writ he spoken can;
And, to remember what he does,
Build his statue to make him glorious:
But tis the contrary
Are brought your eyes; what need speak I?

DUMB SHOW.

Enter, from one side, PERICLES, talking with CLEON; all their Train with them. Enter, at another door, a Gentleman, with a letter to PERICLES; who shows the letter to CLEON; then gives the Messenger a reward, and knights him. Exeunt PERICLES, CLEON, &c., several.

Good Heïcane had stay’d at home,
Not to eat honey like a drone
From others’ labours; for though he strive
To killen bad, keep good alive,
And to fulfill his prince’s desire,
Sends word of all that hapns in Tyre:
How Thalidam came full bent with sin
And had intent to murder him;
And that in Tarsus was not best
Longer for him to make his rest.
He, doing so, put forth to seas,
Where when men been, there’s seldom ease;
For now the wind begins to blow;
Thunder above and deeps below
Make such unquiet, that the ship
Should house him safe is wrack’d and split;
And he, good prince, having all lost,
By waves from coast to coast is toss’d.
All perishen of man, of pest,
Ne might escapen but himself;
Till Fortune, tir’d with doing bad,
Threw him ashore, to give him glad;
And here he comes. What shall be next,
Pardon old Gower, this longs the text. [Exit.
bells, that he should never have left till he cast
bells, steeple, church, and parish, up again. But
if the good King Simonides were of my mind,—

Per. [Aside.] Simonides!

Third Fish. We would purge the land of
these drones, that rob the bee of her honey. 52

Per. [Aside.] How from the finny subject of
the sea
These fishers tell the infirmities of men;
And their watery empire recollect
All that may men approve or men detect! 56
[Aside.] Peace be at your labour, honest fisher-
men.

Sec. Fish. Honest! good fellow, what's that?
if it be a day fits you, search out of the calendar,
and nobody look after it.

Per. Y' may see the sea hath cast me on your
coast.

Sec. Fish. What a drunken knave was the
sea, to cast thee in our way!

Per. A man whom both the waters and the
wind,
In that vast tennis-court, have made the ball
For them to play upon, entreat you pity him;
He asks of you, that never us'd to beg.

First Fish. No, friend, cannot you beg? here's
them in our country of Greece gets more with
begging than we can do with working.

Sec. Fish. Canst thou catch any fishes then?
Per. I never practised it.

Sec. Fish. Nay then thou wilt starve, sure;
for here's nothing to be got now-a-days unless
thou canst fish for 't.

Per. What have I been I have forgot to
know,
But what I am want teaches me to think on;
A man throng'd up with cold; my veins are
chill,
And have no more of life than may suffice
To give my tongue that heat to ask your help;
Which if you shall refuse, when I am dead, 82
For that I am a man, pray see me buried.

First Fish. Die, quoth-a? Now, gods forbid!
I have a gown here; come, put it on; keep
these warm. Now, afore me, a handsome fellow!
Come, thou shalt go home, and we'll have flesh
for holidays, fish for fasting-days, and more' er
puddings and flap-jacks; and thou shalt be
welcome.

Per. I thank you, sir.

First Fish. Hark y'ou, my friend; you said
you could not beg.

Per. I did but crave.

Sec. Fish. But crave! Then I'll turn craver
too, and so I shall 'scape whipping.

Per. Why, are all your beggars whipped,
then?

Sec. Fish. O! not all, my friend, not all; for
if all your beggars were whipped, I would wish
no better office than to be beadle. But, master,
I'll go draw up the net.

[Exit with Third Fisherman.

Per. How well this honest mirth becomes
their labour!

First Fish. Hark you, sir; do you know
where ye are?

Per. Not well.

First Fish. Why, I'll tell you: this is called
Pentapolis, and our king the good Simonides.
Per. The good King Simonides do you call
him?

First Fish. Ay, sir; and he deserves to be
so called for his peaceable reign and good
government.

Per. He is a happy king, since he gains from
his subjects the name of good by his government.
How far is his court distant from this shore?

First Fish. Marry, sir, half a day's journey;
and I'll tell you, he hath a fair daughter, and
to-morrow is her birthday; and there are princes
and knights come from all parts of the world to
just and tourney for her love.

Per. Were my fortunes equal to my desires,
I could wish to make one there.

First Fish. O! sir, things must be as they
may; and what a man cannot get, he may law-
fully deal for his wife's soul,—

Sec. Fish. Help, master, help! here's a fish
hangs in the net, like a poor man's right in the
law; 'twill hardly come out. Ha! bots on 't, 'tis
come at last, and 'tis turned to a rusty armour.

Per. An armour, friends! I pray you, let
me see it.

Thanks, Fortune, yet, that after all my crosses
Thou giv'st me somewhat to repair myself; 132
And though it was mine own, part of mine
heritage,
Which my dead father did bequest to me,
With this strict charge, even as he left his
life,
'Keep it, my Pericles, it hath been a shield 136
'Twirt me and death;—and pointed to this
brace;
'For that it sav'd me, keep it; in like necessity—
The which the gods protect thee from!—'t may
defend thee.'

It kept where I kept, I so dearly lov'd it;

Till the rough seas, that spare not any man,
Took it in rage, though calm'd they have given
't again.

I thank thee for 't; my shipwreck now's no ill,
Since I have here my father's gift in 's will. 144
First Fish. What mean you, sir?
Per. To beg of you, kind friends, this coat of worth,
For it was sometime target to a king;
I know it by this mark. He lov'd me dearly, 148
And for his sake I wish the having of it;
And that you'd guide me to your sovereign's court,
Where with it I may appear a gentleman;
And if that ever my low fortunes better, 152
I'll pay your bounties; till then rest your debtor.
First Fish. Why, wilt thou tourney for the lady?
Per. I'll show the virtue I have borne in arms. 157
First Fish. Why, do'e take it; and the gods give thee good on 't!
Sec. Fish. Ay, but hark you, my friend; 'twas we that made up this garment through the rough seams of the water; there are certain condolences, certain vails. I hope, sir, if you thrive, you'll remember from whence you had it.
Per. Believe it, I will. 165
By your furtherance I am cloth'd in steel;
And spite of all the rapture of the sea,
This jewel holds his biding on my arm: 168
Unto thy will I will mount myself
Upon a courser, whose delightful steps
Shall make the gazer joy to see him tread.
Only, my friend, I yet am unprovided
Of a pair of bases.
Sec. Fish. We'll sure provide; thou shalt have my best gown to make thee a pair, and I'll bring thee to the court of York. 176
Per. Then honour be but a goal to my will!
This day I'll rise, or else add ill to ill. [Exeunt.

SCENE II.—The Same. A public Way. Platform leading to the Lists. A Pavilion near it, for the reception of the KING, Princess, Ladies, Lords, &c.

Enter Simonides, Thaisa, Lords, and Attendants.

Sim. Are the knights ready to begin the triumph?
First Lord. They are, my liege;
And stay your coming to present themselves.
Sim. Return them, we are ready; and our daughter,
In honour of whose birth these triumphs are,
Sits here, like beauty's child, whom nature gat
For men to see, and seeing wonder at.
[Exit a Lord.

Thai. It pleaseth you, my royal father, to express
My commendations great, whose merit's less.
Sim. 'Tis fit it should be so; for princes are
A model, which heaven makes like to itself:
As jewels lose their glory if neglected,
So princes their renowns if not respected.
'Tis now your honour, daughter, to explain
The labour of each knight in his device.
Thai. Which, to preserve mine honour, I'll perform. 16
Enter a Knight; he passes over the stage,
and his Squire presents his shield to the Princess.
Sim. Who is the first that doth prefer himself?
Thai. A knight of Sparta, my renowned father;
And the device he bears upon his shield
Is a black Ethiop reaching at the sun; 20
The word, Lux tua vita mithi.
Sim. He loves you well that holds his life of you. [The Second Knight passes over.
Who is the second that presents himself?
Thai. A prince of Macedon, my royal father;
And the device he bears upon his shield
Is an arm'd knight that's conquer'd by a lady;
The motto thus, in Spanish, Piu por dulzura que por fuerza.
[The Third Knight passes over.
Sim. And what's the third?
Thai. The third of Antioch; 28
And his device, a wreath of chivalry;
The word, Me pompa provexit apex.
[The Fourth Knight passes over.
Sim. What is the fourth?
Thai. A burning torch that's turned upside down;
The word, Quod me ali me extinguit.
Sim. Which shows that beauty hath his power and will,
Which can as well inflame as it can kill.
[The Fifth Knight passes over.
Thai. The fifth, a hand environed with clouds,
Holding out gold that's by the touchstone tried;
The motto thus, Sic spectanda fides.
[The Sixth Knight, Pericles, passes over.
Sim. And what's
The sixth and last, the which the knight himself
With such a graceful courtesy deliver'd? 41
Thai. He seems to be a stranger; but his present is
A winder'd branch, that's only green at top;
The motto, In hac ope vivo.
Sim. A pretty moral;
From the dejected state wherein he is,
He hopes by you his fortune yet may flourish.
First Lord. He had need mean better than
his outward show.
Can any way speak in his just commend;
For, by his rusty outside he appears
To have practis’d more the whipstock than the
lance.
Sec. Lord. He well may be a stranger, for he
comes
To an honour’d triumph strangely furnished.
Third Lord. And on set purpose let his
armours rust
Until this day, to scour it in the dust.
Sim. Opinion’s but a fool, that makes us
scan
The outward habit by the inward man.
But stay, the knights are coming; we’ll withdraw
Into the gallery.
[Exeunt. Great shouts, and all cry, ‘The mean knight!’

SCENE III.—The Same. A Hall of State.
A Banquet prepared.

Enter Simonides, Thaisa, Marshal, Ladies,
Lords, Knights from tilting, and Attendants.

Sim. Knights,
To say you’re welcome were superfluous.
To place upon the volume of your deeds,
As in a title-page, your worth in arms,
Were more than you expect, or more than’s fit,
Since every worth in show commends itself.
Prepare for mirth, for mirth becomes a feast:
You are princes and my guests.

That. But you, my knight and guest;
To whom this wreath of victory I give,
And crown you king of this day’s happiness.

Per. ‘Tis more by fortune, lady, than by
merit.

Sim. Call it by what you will, the day is
yours;
And here, I hope, is none that envies it.
In framing an artist art hath thus decreed,
To make some good, but others to exceed;
And you’re her labour’d scholar. Come, queen
o’ the feast,—
For, daughter, so you are,—here take your
place;

Marshal the rest, as they deserve their grace.

Knights. We are honour’d much by good
Simonides.

Sim. Your presence glades our days; honour
we love,
For who hates honour, hates the gods above.

Marshal. Sir, yonder is your place.

Per. Some other is more fit.
First Knight. Contend not, sir; for we are
gentlemen
That neither in our hearts nor outward eyes
Envy the great nor do the low despise.
Per. You are right courteous knights.
Sim. Sit, sir; sit.

Per. By Jove, I wonder, that is king of
thoughts,
These caves resist me, she but thought upon.

That. [Aside.] By Juno, that is queen of
marriage,
All viands that I eat do seem unsavoury,
Wishing him my meat. Sure, he’s a gallant
gentleman.

Sim. He’s but a country gentleman;
He has done no more than other knights have
done;
He has broken a staff or so; so let it pass.

That. To me he seems like diamond to glass.
Per. You king’s to me like to my father’s
picture,
Which tells me in that glory once he was;
Had princes sit, like stars, about his throne,
And he the sun for them to reverence.

None that beheld him, but like lesser lights
Did vail their crowns to his supremacy;
Where now his son’s like a glow-worm in the
night,
The which hath fire in darkness, none in light:
Whereby I see that Time’s the king of men; 45
He’s both their parent, and he is their grave,
And gives them what he will, not what they
crave.

Sim. What, are you merry, knights? 48
First Knight. Who can be other in this royal
presence?

Sim. Here, with a cup that’s stor’d unto the
brim,
As you do love, fill to your mistress’ lips,
We drink this health to you.

Knights. We thank your Grace.
Sim. Yet pause awhile;

You knight doth sit too melancholy,
As if the entertainment in our court
Had not a show might counterfoil his worth. 55
Note it not you, Thaisa?

That. What is it

To me, my father?

Sim. O! attend, my daughter:
Princes in this should live like gods above,
Who freely give to every one that comes
To honour them;
And princes not doing so are like to gnats,
Which make a sound, but kill’d are wonder’d
at.

Therefore to make his entrance more sweet.
Here say we drink this standing-bowl of wine to him.

_Thas._ Alas! my father, it befits not me
Unto a stranger knight to be so bold;
He may my proffer take for an offence,
Since men take women’s gifts for impudence.

_Sim._ How!

Do as I bid you, or you’ll move me else.

_Thas._ [Aside.] Now, by the gods, he could not please me better.

_Sim._ And further tell him, we desire to know of him,

Of whence he is, his name, and parentage.

_Thas._ The king, my father, sir, has drunk to you.

_Per._ I thank him.

_Thas._ Wishing it so much blood unto your life.

_Per._ I thank both him and you, and pledge him freely.

_Thas._ And further he desires to know of you,

Of whence you are, your name and parentage.

_Per._ A gentleman of Tyre, my name, Pericles;

My education been in arts and arms;
Who, looking for adventures in the world,
Was by the rough seas reft of ships and men,
And after shipwreck, driven upon this shore.

_Thas._ He thanks your Grace; names himself Pericles,

A gentleman of Tyre,
Who only by misfortune of the sea
Bereft of ships and men, cast on this shore.

_Sim._ Now, by the gods, I pity his misfortune,
And will awake him from his melancholy.
Come, gentlemen, we sit too long on trifles,
And waste the time which looks for other revels.
Even in your armour, as you are address’d,
Will very well become a soldier’s dance.
I will not have excuse, with saying this
Loud music is too harsh for ladies’ heads
Since they love men in arms as well as beds.

_The Knights dance._

So this was well ask’d, ’twas so well perform’d.

_Come, sir;

Here is a lady that wants breathing too:
And I have often heard, you knights of Tyre
Are excellent in making ladies trip,
And that their measures are as excellent.

_Per._ In those that practise them they are, my lord.

_Sim._ O! that’s as much as you would be denied

Of your fair courtesy.

_The Knights and Ladies dance._

Unclap, unclasp,

Thanks, gentlemen, to all; all have done well,

_The Knights and Ladies dance._

[To _Pericles._] But you the best. Pages and lights, to conduct.

These knights unto their several lodgings!

_Yours, sir,
We have given order to be next our own._

_Per._ I am at your Grace’s pleasure.

_Sim._ Princes, it is too late to talk of love,
And that’s the mark I know you level at;
Therefore each one betake him to his rest;
To-morrow all for speeding do their best.

_Exeunt._

_SCENE IV._—_Tyre_. A Room in the Governor’s House.

_Enter Helicanus and Escanes._

_Hel._ No, Escanes, know this of me,

Antiochus from incest liv’d not free;

For which, the most high gods not minding longer

To withhold the vengeance that they had in store,

Due to this heinous capital offence,

Even in the height and pride of all his glory,

When he was seated in a chariot

Of an inestimable value, and his daughter with him,

A fire from heaven came and shrivell’d up

Their bodies, even to loathing; for they so stunk,

That all those eyes ador’d them ere their fall
Scorn now their hand should give them burial.

_Escu._ ’Twas very strange.

_Hel._ And yet but just; for though

This king were great, his greatness was no guard

To bar heaven’s shaft, but sin had his reward.

_Escu._ ’Tis very true.

_Enter two or three Lords._

_First Lord._ See, not a man in private conference

Or council has respect with him but he.

_Sec. Lord._ It shall no longer grieve without reproof.

_Third Lord._ And curs’d be he that will not second it.

_First Lord._ Follow me then. Lord Helicanus, a word.

_Hel._ With me? and welcome. Happy day, my lords.

_First Lord._ Know that our griefs are risen to the top,

And now at length they overflow their banks.

_Hel._ Your griefs! for what? wrong not the prince you love.
First Lord. Wrong not yourself then, noble Helicane;
But if the prince do live, let us salute him,
Or know what ground’s made happy by his
breath.  28
If in the world he live, we’ll seek him out;
If in his grave he rest, we’ll find him there;
And be resolv’d he lives to govern us,
Or dead, give’s cause to mourn his funeral, 32
And leaves us to our free election.

Sec. Lord. Whose death’s indeed the strongest
in our censure:
And knowing this kingdom is without a head,
Like goodly buildings left without a roof 36
Soon fall to ruin, your noble self,
That best know’st how to rule and how to reign,
We thus submit unto, our sovereign.

All. Live, noble Helicane!

Hel. For honour’s cause forbear your suffrages:
If that you love Prince Pericles, forbear.
Take I your wish, I leap into the seas,
Where’s hourly trouble for a minute’s ease. 44
A twelvemonth longer, let me entreat you
To forbear the absence of your king;
If in which time expir’d he not return,
I shall with aged patience bear your yoke. 48
But if I cannot win you to this love,
Go search like nobles, like noble subjects,
And in your search spend your adventurous
worth;
Whom if you find, and win unto return, 52
You shall like diamonds sit about his crown.

First Lord. To wisdom he’s a fool that will not yield;
And since Lord Helicane enjoineth us,
We with our travels will endeavour it. 56

Hel. Then you love us, we you, and we’ll clasp hands:
When peers thus knit, a kingdom ever stands.

[Exeunt.

Scene V.—Pendapolis. A Room in the Palace.

Enter Simonides, reading a letter; the Knights
meet him.

First Knight. Good morrow to the good Simonides.

Sim. Knights, from my daughter this I let you know,
That for this twelvemonth she’ll not undertake
A married life.
Her reason to herself is only known,
Which yet from her by no means can I get.

Sec. Knight. May we not get access to her,
my lord?

Sim. Faith, by no means; she hath so strictly
tied
Her to her chamber that ’tis impossible.
One twelve moons more she’ll wear Diana’s
livery;
This by the eye of Cynthia hath she vow’d,
And on her virgin honour will not break it. 12

Third Knight. Though loath to bid farewell,
we take our leaves.  [Exeunt Knights.

Sim. So,
They’re well dispatch’d; now to my daughter’s
letter.
She tells me here, she’ll wed the stranger knight,
Or never more to view nor day nor light. 17
’Tis well, mistress; your choice agrees with
mine;
I like that well: how absolute she’s in ’t,
Not minding whether I dislike or no! 20
Well, I do commend her choice;
And will no longer have it be delay’d.
Soft! here he comes: I must dissemble it.

Enter Pericles.

Per. All fortune to the good Simonides! 24

Sim. To you as much, sir! I am beholding
to you
For your sweet music this last night: I do
Protest my ears were never better fed
With such delightful pleasing harmony 28

Per. It is your Grace’s pleasure to commend,
Not my desert.

Sim. Sir, you are music’s master.

Per. The worst of all her scholars, my good
lord.

Sim. Let me ask you one thing. 33
What do you think of my daughter, sir?

Per. A most virtuous princess.

Sim. And she is fair too, is she not?

Per. As a fair day in summer; wondrous fair.

Sim. My daughter, sir, thinks very well of
you;
Ay, so well, that you must be her master,
And she will be your scholar: therefore look to it.

Per. I am unworthy for her schoolmaster. 40

Sim. She thinks not so; peruse this writing
e else.

Per. [Aside.] What’s here?
A letter that she loves the knight of Tyre!
’Tis the king’s subtilty to have my life.
O! seek not to entrap, gracious lord,
A stranger and distressed gentleman,
That never aim’d so high to love your daughter,
But bent all offices to honour her. 48

Sim. Thou hast bewitch’d my daughter, and
thou art
A villain.
PERICLES

ACT II, Sc. V.

Per. By the gods, I have not:
Never did thought of mine levy offence;
Nor never did my actions yet commence
A deed might gain her love or your displeasure.
Sim. Traitor, thou liest.
Per. Traitor!
Sim. Ay, traitor.
Per. Even in his throat, unless it be the
king,
That calls me traitor, I return the lie.
Sim. [Aside.] Now, by the gods, I do applaud
his courage.
Per. My actions are as noble as my thoughts,
That never relish’d of a base descent.
I came unto your court for honour’s cause,
And not to be a rebel to her state;
And he that otherwise accounts of me,
This sword shall prove he’s honour’s enemy. 64
Sim. No?
Here comes my daughter, she can witness it.

Enter Thaisa.

Per. Then, as you are as virtuous as fair,
Resolve your angry father, if my tongue
Did e’er solicit, or my hand subscribe
To any syllable that made love to you.
Thai. Why, sir, say if you had,
Who takes offence at that would make me
glad? 72
Sim. Yea, mistress, are you so peremptory?
[Aside.] I am glad on’t, with all my heart.
I’ll tame you; I’ll bring you in subjection.
Will you, not having my consent,
Bestow your love and your affections
Upon a stranger? [Aside.] who, for aught I
know,
May be, nor can I think the contrary,
As great in blood as I myself.— 80
[Aside.] Therefore, hear you, mistress; either frame
Your will to mine; and you, sir, hear you,
Either be rul’d by me, or I will, make you—
Man and wife.
Nay, come, your hands and lips must seal it
too;
And being join’d, I’ll thus your hopes destroy;
And for a further grief,—God give you joy!
What are you both pleas’d?
Thai. Yes, if you love me, sir.
Per. Even as my life, or blood that fosters it.
Sim. What are you both agreed?
Thai. Yes, if ’t please your majesty.
Per. Sim. It pleaseth me so well, that I will see
you wed;
Then with what haste you can get you to bed.

[Exeunt.]

ACT III.

Enter Gower.

Now sleep yslaked hath the rout;
No din but snores the house about,
Made louder by the o’er-fed breast
Of this most pompous marriage-feast.
The cat, with eyne of burning coal,
Now couches fore the mouse’s hole;
And crickets sing at the oven’s mouth,
E’er the blither for their drouth.
Hymen hath brought the bride to bed,
Where, by the loss of maidenhead,
A babe is moulded. Be attent;
And time that is so briefly spent
With your fine fancies quaintly eche;
What’s dumb in show I’ll plain with speech.

DUMB SHOW.

Enter, from one side, Pericles and Simonides,
with Attendants; a Messenger meets them,
kneels, and gives Pericles a letter. Pericles
shows it to Simonides; the Lords kneel to
Pericles. Then enter Thaisa with child,
and Lychorida: Simonides shows his
daughter the letter; she rejoices; she and
Pericles take leave of her father, and all
depart.

By many a dern and painful perch,
Of Pericles the careful search
By the four opposing coigns,
Which the world together joins,
Is made with all due diligence
That horse and sail and high expense,
Can steal the quest. At last from Tyre,—
Fame answering the most strange inquire—
To the court of King Simonides
Are letters brought, the tenour these:
Antiochus and his daughter dead;
The men of Tyrus on the head
Of Helicanus would set on
The crown of Tyre, but he will none:
The mutiny he there hastens t’ oppress;
Says to ‘em, if King Pericles
Come not home in twice six moons,
He, obedient to their dooms,
Will take the crown. The sum of this,
Brought hither to Pentapolis,
Yravished the regions round,
And every one with claps can sound,
‘Our heir-apparent is a king’
Who dream’d, who thought of such a thing?’
Brief, he must hence depart to Tyre:
His queen, with child, makes her desire,—
Which shall cross?—along to go;
Omit we all their dole and woe;
Lychorida, her nurse, she takes,
And so to sea. Their vessel shakes
On Neptune's billow; half the flood
Hath their keel cut; but Fortune's mood
Varies again; the grisled north
Disgorges such a tempest forth,
That, as a duck for life that dives,
So up and down the poor ship drives.
The lady shrieks, and well-a-near
Does fall in travail with her fear;
And what ensues in this fell storm
Shall for itself itself perform.
I will relate, action may
Conveniently the rest convey,
Which might not what by me is told.
In your imagination hold
This stage the ship, upon whose deck
The sea-lost Pericles appears to speak.

[Exit.]

SCENE I.

Enter PERICLES, on shipboard.

Per. Thou God of this great vast, rebuke
these surges,
Which wash both heaven and hell; and thou,
that hast
Upon the winds command, bind them in brass,
Having call'd them from the deep. O! still
Thy deafening, dreadful thunders; gently
quench
Thy nimble, sulphurous flashes. O! how Lychorida,
How does my queen? Thou stormest venomously;
Wilt thou spit all thyself? The seaman's whistle
Is as a whisper in the ears of death,
Unheard. Lychorida! Lucina, O!
Divinest patroness, and midwife gentle
To those that cry by night, convey thy deity to
Aboard our dancing boat; make swift the pangs
Of my queen's travails!

Enter LYCHORIDA, with an Infant.

Lyc. Here is a thing too young for such a
place,
Who, if it had conceit, would die, as I
Am like to do: take in your arms this piece
Of your dead queen.

Per. How, how, Lychorida!
Lyc. Patience, good sir; do not assist the
storm.
Here's all that is left living of your queen,
A little daughter: for the sake of it,
Be manly, and take comfort.

Per. O you gods!
Why do you make us love your godly gifts,
And snatch them straight away? We here
below,
Recall not what we give, and therein may
Use honour with you.

Lyc. Patience, good sir,
Even for this charge.

Per. Now, mild may be thy life!
For a more blust'rous birth had never babe:
Quiet and gentle thy conditions!
For thou art the rudest welcome to this world
That e'er was prince's child. Happy what fol-

Thou hast as chiding a nativity
As fire, air, water, earth, and heaven can make,
To herald thee from the womb; even at the
first
Thy loss is more than can thy portage quit,
With all thou canst find here. Now, the good
gods

Throw their best eyes upon 't!

Enter two Sailors.

First Sail. What courage, sir? God save you!
Per. Courage enough. I do not fear the flaw;
It hath done to me the worst. Yet for the love
Of this poor infant, this fresh-new sea-farer, I
would it would be quiet.

First Sail. Slack the hollars there! thou wilt
not, wilt thou? Blow, and split thyself.

Sec. Sail. But sea-room, an the brine and
cloudy billow kiss the moon, I care not.

First Sail. Sir, your queen must overboard:
the sea works high, the wind is loud, and will
not lie till the ship be cleared of the dead.

Per. That's your superstition.

First Sail. Pardon us, sir; with us at sea it
hath been still observed, and we are strong in
custom. Therefore briefly yield her, for she
must overboard straight.

Per. As you think meet. Most wretched
queen!

Lyc. Here she lies, sir.

Per. A terrible child-bed hast thou had, my
dear;

No light, no fire: the unfriendly elements
Forgot thee utterly; nor have I time
To give thee hallow'd to thy grave, but straight
Must cast thee, scarcely coffin'd, in the ooze;
Where, for a monument upon thy bones,
And aye-remaining lamps, the belching whale
And humming water must o'erwhelm thy
corpse,

Lying with simple shells! O Lychorida!
Bid Nestor bring me spices, ink and paper,
My casket and my jewels; and bid Nicander
Bring me the satin coffer: lay the babe
Upon the pillow. His thee, whiles I say

1227
A priestly farewell to her: suddenly, woman.  
[Exit LYCHORIA.

Sec. Sail. Sir, we have a chest beneath the hatches, caulk'd and bitumed ready.  
Per. I thank thee. Mariner, say what coast is this?

Sec. Sail. We are near Tarsus.
Per. Thither, gentle mariner, make for Tarsus.
Alter thy course for Tyre. When canst thou reach it?
Sec. Sail. By break of day, if the wind cease.
Per. O! make for Tarsus. There will I visit Cleon, for the babe
Cannot hold out to Tyrus; there I'll leave it At careful nursing. Go thy ways, good mariner; 
I'll bring the body presently.  
[Exeunt.

SCENE II.—Ephesus. A Room in Cerimon's House.

Enter Cerimon, a Servant, and some Persons who have been shipwrecked.

Cer. Philemon, ho!

Enter PHILEMON.

Phil. Doth my lord call?
Cer. Get fire and meat for these poor men; 'T has been a turbulent and stormy night.  
Ser. I have been in many; but such a night as this
Till now I ne'er endured.  
Cer. Your master will be dead ere you return; There's nothing you can't do for nature That can recover him. [To PHILEMON.] Give this to the 'pothecary, And tell me how it works.

[Exeunt all except Cerimon.

Enter two Gentlemen.

First Gent. Good morrow, sir.
Sec. Gent. Good morrow to your lordship.
Cer. Gentlemen, Why do you stir so early?

First Gent. Sir, 
Our lodgings, standing bleak upon the sea, 
Shook as the earth did quake; 
The very principals did seem to rend, And all to topple. Pure surprise and fear 
Made me to quit the house.
Sec. Gent. That is the cause we trouble you so early;
'Tis not our husbandry.
Cer. O! you say well.  
First Gent. But I much marvel that your lordship, having 
Rich tire about you, should at these early hours 
Shake off the golden slumber of repose.

'Tis most strange,  
Nature should be so conversant with pain, Being thereto not compell'd.

Cer. I hold it ever, Virtue and cunning were endowments greater Than nobleness and riches; careless heirs May the two latter darken and expend, But immortality attends the former, Making a man a god. 'Tis known I ever Have studied physic, through which secret art, By turning o'er authorities, I have— Together with my practice—made familiar To me and to my aid the blest infusions That dwell in vegetives, in metals, stones; And can speak of the disturbances That nature works, and of her cures; which doth give me
A more content in course of true delight Than to be thirsty after tottering honour, Or tie my treasure up in silken bags, To please the fool and death.

Sec. Gent. Your honour has through Ephesus pour'd forth Your charity, and hundreds call themselves Your creatures, who by you have been restor'd: And not your knowledge, your personal pain, but even Your purse, still open, hath built Lord Cerimon
Such strong renown as time shall ne'er decay.

Enter two Servants, with a chest.

First Serv. So; lift there.
Cer. What is that?
First Serv. Sir, even now Did the sea toss upon our shore this chest:
'Tis of some wrack.

Cer. Set it down; let's look upon 't.
Sec. Gent. 'Tis like a coffin, sir.
Cer. Whate'er it be, 'Tis wondrous heavy. Wrench it open straight; If the sea's stomach be o'ercharg'd with gold, 'Tis a good constraint of fortune it behoves upon us.

Sec. Gent. 'Tis so, my lord.
Cer. How close 'tis caulk'd and bitumed? Did the sea cast it up?
First Serv. I never saw so huge a billow, sir, As toss'd it upon shore.

Cer. Come, wrench it open.
Soft! it smells most sweetly in my sense.

Sec. Gent. A delicate odour.
Cer. As ever hit my nostril. So, up with it. O you most potent gods! what's here? a cove!  
First Gent. Most strange!
Cer. Shrouded in cloth of state; balm'd and entresur'd
PERICLES

Act III, Sc. III.

With full bags of spices! A passport too!
Apollo, perfect me in the characters!
Here I give to understand,
If e'er this coffin drive a-land,
I, King Pericles, have lost
This queen worth all our mundane cost.
Who finds her, give her burying;
She was the daughter of a king:
Besides this treasure for a fee,
The gods requite his charity!

If thou liv'st, Pericles, thou hast a heart
That even cracks for woe! This chance'd to-night.

Sec. Gent. Most likely, sir.

Cer. Nay, certainly to-night;
For look, how fresh she looks. They were too rough
That threw her in the sea. Make fire within; 80
Fetch hither all the boxes in my closet.

[Exit Second Servant.

Death may usurp on nature many hours,
And yet the fire of life kindle again
The overpress'd spirits. I heard
Of an Egyptian, that had nine hours lien dead,
Who was by good appliances recovered.

Re-enter Servant, with boxes, napkins, and
fire.

Well said, well said; the fire and cloths.
The rough and woeful music that we have,
Cause it to sound, beseech you.
The viol once more;—how thou stirrest, thou block!
The music there! I pray you, give her air.

Gentlemen,
This queen will live; nature awakes, a warmth
Breathes out of her; she hath not been entranc'd
Above five hours. See! how she 'gins to blow
Into life's flower again.

First Gent. Through the heavens
Your fame for ever.

Cer. She is alive! behold,
Her eyelids, cases to those heavenly jewels
Which Pericles hath lost
Begin to part their fringes of bright gold;
The diamonds of a most praised water
Do appear, to make the world twice rich.
Live,
And make us weep to hear your fate, fair creature,
Rare as you seem to be!

She moves.

That. O dear Diana!

Where am I? Where's my lord? What world is this?

Sec. Gent. Is not this strange?
First Gent. Most rare.

Cer. Hush, gentle neighbours!
Lend me your hands; to the next chamber bear
her.

Get linen; now this matter must be look'd to,
For her relapse is mortal. Come, come;
AndÆsculapius guide us!

[Exeunt, carrying Thaisa away.

SCENE III.—Tarsus. A Room in Cleon's House.

Enter PERICLES, CLEON, DIONYZA, and LYCHO-
RIDA, with MARINA in her arms.

Per. Most honour'd Cleon, I must needs be
gone;
My twelve months are expir'd, and Tyrus stands
In a litigious peace. You and your lady
Take from my heart all thankfulness; the gods
Make up the rest upon you!

Cle. Your shafts of fortune, though they hurt
you mortally,
Yet glance full wanderingly on us.

Dion. O your sweet queen!
That the strict fates had pleas'd you had
brought her hither,

To have bless'd mine eyes with her!

Per. We cannot but obey
The powers above us. Could I rage and roar
As doth the sea she lies in, yet the end
Must be as 'tis. My gentle babe Marina—
whom,
For she was born at sea, I have nam'd so—
here
I charge your charity withal, and leave her
The infant of your care, beseeching you
To give her princely training, that she may be
Manner'd as she is born.

Cle. Fear not, my lord, but think
Your Grace, that fed my country with your
corn—
For which the people's prayers still fall upon
you—

Must in your child be thought on. If neglect
Should therein make me vile, the common body,
By you reliev'd, would force me to my duty;
But if to that my nature need a spur,
The gods revenge it upon me and mine,

To the end of generation!

Per. I believe you;
Your honour and your goodness teach me to 't,
Without your vows. Till she be married,

madam,

By bright Diana, whom we honour, all

Unscissarm'd shall this hair of mine remain,
Act III, Sc. III.

PERICLES

Though I shew ill in 't. So I take my leave.
Good madam, make me blessed in your care
In bringing up my child.

Dion. I have one myself, 32
Who shall not be more dear to my respect
Than yours, my lord.

Per. Madam, my thanks and prayers.

Cle. We'll bring your Grace e'en to the edge
o' the shore;
Then give you up to the mask'd Neptune and 36
The gentliest winds of heaven.

Per. I will embrace
Your offer. Come, dearest madam. O! no tears,
Lychorida, no tears:
Look to your little mistress, on whose grace 40
You may depend hereafter. Come, my lord.

[Exeunt.

SCENE IV.—Ephesus. A Room in Cerimon's

House.

Enter Cerimon and Thaisa.

Cer. Madam, this letter, and some certain
jewels,
Lay with you in your coffer; which are now
At your command. Know you the character?
That. It is my lord's.

That I was ship'd at sea, I well remember,
Even on my eaning time; but whether there
Deliver'd, by the holy gods,
I cannot rightly say. But since King Pericles, 8
My wedded lord, I ne'er shall see again,
A vestal livery will I take me to,
And never more have joy.

Cer. Madam, if this you purpose as you
speak, 12
Diana's temple is not distant far,
Where you may abide till your date expire.
Moreover, if you please, a niece of mine
Shall there attend you.

That. My recompense is thanks, that's all;
Yet my good will is great, though the gift small.

[Exeunt.

ACT IV.

Enter Gower.

Imagine Pericles arriv'd at Tyre,
Welcom'd and settled to his own desire.
His woeful queen we leave at Ephesus,
Unto Diana there a votress.
Now to Marina bend your mind,
Whom our fast-growing scene must find
At Tarsus, and by Cleon train'd
In music, letters; who hath gain'd
Of education all the grace,
Which makes her both the heart and place
Of general wonder. But, alack!
That monster envy, off the wreck
Of earned praise, Marina's life
Seeks to take off by treason's knife.
And in this kind hath our Cleon
One daughter, and a wench full grown,
Even ripe for marriage-rite; this maid
Hight Philoten, and it is said
For certain in our story, she
Would ever with Marina be:
Be 't when she wear'd the sleided silk
With fingers, long, small, white as milk,
Or when she would with sharp needle wound
The cambric, which she made more sound 24
By hurting it; when to the lute
She sung, and made the night-bird mute,
That still records with moan; or when
She would with rich and constant pen
Vail to her mistress Nian; still
This Philoten contends in skill
With absolute Marina: so
With the dove of Paphos might the crow
Vie feathers white. Marina gets
All praises, which are paid as debts,
And not as given. This so darts
In Philoten all graceful marks,
That Cleon's wife, with envy rare,
A present murderer does prepare
For good Marina, that her daughter
Might stand peerless by this slaughter.
The sooner her vile thoughts to stead,
Lychorida, our nurse, is dead:
And cursed Dionyza hath
The pregnant instrument of wrath
Pres't for this blow. The unborn event
I do commend to your content:
Only I carry winged time
Post on the lame feet of my rime;
Which never could I so convey,
Unless your thoughts went on my way.
Dionyza doth appear,
With Leonine, a murderer.

[Exit.

SCENE I.—Tarsus. An open Place near the

Sea-shore.

Enter Dionyza and Leonine.

Dion. Thy oath remember; thou hast sworn
to do 't:
'Tis but a blow, which never shall be known.
Thou canst not do a thing 't the world so soon,
To yield thee so much profit. Let not con-
science,
Which is but cold, inflaming love 't thy bosom,
Infame too nicely; nor let pity, which
Even women have cast off, melt thee, but be
A soldier to thy purpose.

1930
PERICLES  Act IV, Sc. I.

Leon. I'll do 't; but yet she is a goodly creature.

Dion. The fitter, then, the gods should have her. Here

She comes weeping for her only mistress' death.

Thou art resolv'd?

Leon. I am resolv'd. 12

Enter MARINA, with a basket of flowers.

Mar. No, I will rob Tellus of her weed,
To strew thy green with flowers; the yellows,

The purple violets, and marigolds,

Shall as a carpet hang upon thy grave. 16

While summer days do last. Ay me! poor maid,

Born in a tempest, when my mother died,

This world to me is like a lasting storm,

Whirring me from my friends.

Dion. How now, Marina! why do you keep alone?

How chance my daughter is not with you? Do not

Consume your blood with sorrowing; you have

A nurse of me. Lord! how your favour's chagr'd

24

With this unprofitable woo. Come, Give me your flowers, ere the sea mar it.

Walk with Leonine; the air is quick there,

And it pierces and sharpens the stomach.

Come.

Leonine, take her by the arm, walk with her.

Mar. No, I pray you;

I'll not bereave you of your servant.

Dion. Come, come; I love the king your father, and yourself. 32

With more than foreign heart. We every day

Expect him here; when he shall come and find

Our paragon to all reports thus blasted,

He will repent the breadth of his great voyage;

Blame both my lord and me, that we have taken

No care to your best courses. Go, I pray you;

Walk, and be cheerful once again; reserve

That excellent complexion, which did steal

The eyes of young and old. Care not for me; I can go home alone.

Mar. Well, I will go;

But yet I have no desire to it. 43

Dion. Come, come, I know 'tis good for you.

Walk half an hour, Leonine, at least.

Remember what I have said.

Leon. I warrant you, madam.

Dion. I'll leave you, my sweet lady, for a while;

Pray you walk softly, do not heat your blood:

What! I must have care of you.

Mar. My thanks, sweet madam. 47

[Exit Dionylla.

Is this wind westerly that blows?

Leon. South-west.

Mar. When I was born, the wind was north.

Leon. Was 't so?

Mar. My father, as nurse said, did never fear,
But cried 'Good seamen!' to the sailors, calling

His kingly hands haling ropes;

And, clasping to the mast, endur'd a sea

That almost burst the deck.

Leon. When was this?

Mar. When I was born:

Never were waves nor wind more violent;

And from the ladder-tackle washes off

A canvas-climber. 'Hai!' says one, 'will on?'

And with a dropping industry they skip

From stem to stern; the boatswain-whistles, and

The master calls, and trebles their confusion. 64

Leon. Come; say your prayers.

Mar. What mean you?

Leon. If you require a little space for prayer,

I grant it. Pray; but be not tedious.

For the gods are quick of ear, and I am sworn

To do my work with haste.

Mar. Why will you kill me?

Leon. To satisfy my lady.

Mar. Why would she have me kill'd? 72

Now, as I can remember, by my troth,

I never did her hurt in all my life;

I never spake bad word, nor did ill turn

To any living creature; believe me, I,

I never kill'd a mouse, nor hurt a fly;

I trod upon a worm against my will,

But I wept for it. Have I offended,

Wherein my death might yield her any profit,

Or my life imply her any danger? 81

Leon. My commission

Is not to reason of the deed, but do 't.

Mar. You will not do 't for all the world, I hope.

You are well favour'd, and your looks foreshow

You have a gentle heart. I saw you lately,

When you caught hurt in parting two that fought;

Good sooth, it show'd well in you; do so now;

Your lady seeks my life; come you between, 89

And save poor me, the weaker. 90

Leon. I am sworn,

And will dispatch.

Enter Pirates, whilst MARINA is struggling.

First Pirate. Hold, villain! 92

[Leonine runs away.

Sec. Pirate. A prize! a prize!

Third Pirate. Half-part, mates, half-part.

Come, let's have her aboard suddenly.

[Exeunt Pirates with MARINA.
Re-enter LEONINE.

Leon. These roguing thieves serve the great pirate Valdes; And they have seiz’d Marina. Let her go; There’s no hope she’ll return. I’ll swear she’s dead, And thrown into the sea. But I’ll see further; Perhaps they will but please themselves upon her, Not carry her aboard. If she remain, Whom they have ravish’d must by me be slain. [Exit.

Scene II.—Mitylene. A Room in a Brothel.

Enter Pandar, Bawd, and BOULT.

Pand. Boult, Boult. Sir?

Boult. Search the market narrowly; Mitylene is full of gallants; we lost too much money this mart by being too wenchless.

Bawd. We were never so much out of creatures. We have but poor three, and they can do no more than they can do; and they with continual action are even as good as rotten.

Pand. Therefore, let’s have fresh ones, whatever we pay for them. If there be not a conscience to be used in every trade, we shall never prosper.

Bawd. Thou sayst true; ’tis not the bringing up of poor bastards, as, I think, I have brought up some eleven—

Boult. Ay, to eleven; and brought them down again. But shall I search the market?

Bawd. What else, man? The stuff we have a strong wind will blow it to pieces, they are so pitifully sodden.

Pand. Thou sayst true; they’re too unwholesome, ’o conscience. The poor Transylvanian is dead, that lay with the little baggage.

Boult. Ay, she quickly pooped him; she made him roast-meat for worms. But I’ll go search the market. [Exit.

Pand. Three or four thousand cheques were as pretty a proportion to live quietly, and so give over.

Bawd. Why to give over, I pray you? is it a shame to get when we are old?

Pand. O! our credit comes not in like the commodity, nor the commodity wages not with the danger; therefore, if in our youths we could pick up some pretty estate, ’twere not amiss to keep our door hatched. Besides, the sore terms we stand upon with the gods will be strong with us for giving over.

Bawd. Come, other sorts offend as well as we.

Pand. As well as we! ay, and better too; we offend worse. Neither is our profession any trade; it’s no calling. But here comes Boult.

Re-enter BOULT, with the Pirates and MARINA.

Boult. Come your ways. My masters, you say she’s a virgin?

First Pirate. O sir, we doubt it not.

Boult. Master, I have gone through for this piece, you see: if you like her, so; if not, I have lost my earnest.

Bawd. Boult, has she any qualities?

Boult. She has a good face, speaks well, and has excellent good clothes; there’s no further necessity of qualities can make her be refused.

Bawd. What’s her price, Boult?

Boult. I cannot be bated one doit of a thousand pieces.

Pand. Well, follow me, my masters, you shall have your money presently. Wife, take her in; instruct her what she has to do, that she may not be raw in her entertainment.

[Execunt Pandar and Pirates.

Bawd. Boult, take you the marks of her, the colour of her hair, complexion, height, age, with warrant of her virginity; and cry, ‘He that will give most, shall have her first.’ Such a maidenhead were no cheap thing, if men were as they have been. Get this done as I command you.

Boult. Performance shall follow. [Exit.

Mar. Alack! that Leonine was so slack, so slow.

He should have struck, not spoke; or that these pirates—

Not enough barbarous—had not o’erboard thrown me

For to seek my mother!

Bawd. Why lament you, pretty one?

Mar. That I am pretty.

Bawd. Come, the gods have done their part in you.

Mar. I accuse them not.

Bawd. You are lit into my hands, where you are like to live.

Mar. The more my fault

To ‘scape his hands where I was like to die.

Bawd. Ay, and you shall live in pleasure.

Mar. No.

Bawd. Yes, indeed, shall you, and taste gentlemen of all fashions. You shall fare well; you shall have the difference of all complexion.

What! do you stop your ears?

Mar. Are you a woman?

Bawd. What would you have me be, an I be not a woman?

Mar. An honest woman, or not a woman.

Bawd. Marry, whip thee, going; I think I
shall have something to do with you. Come, you are a young foolish sapling, and must be bowed as I would have you.

Mar. The gods defend me!

Bawd. If it please the gods to defend you by men, then men must comfort you, men must feed you, men must stir you up. Boult's returned.

Enter BOULI.

Now, sir, hast thou cried her through the market?

Boult. I have cried her almost to the number of her hairs; I have drawn her picture with my voice.

Bawd. And I prithee, tell me, how dost thou find the inclination of the people, especially of the younger sort?

Boult. Faith, they listened to me, as they would have hearkened to their father's testament. There was a Spaniard's mouth so watered, that he went to bed to her very description.

Bawd. We shall have him here to-morrow with his best ruff on.

Boult. To-night, to-night. But, mistress, do you know the French knight that cowers i' the hams?

Bawd. Who? Monsieur Verolez?

Boult. Ay; he offered to cut a caper at the proclamation; but he made a groan at it, and swore he would see her to-morrow.

Bawd. Well, well; as for him, he brought his disease hither; here he does but repair it. I know he will come in our shadow, to scatter his crowns in the sun.

Boult. Well, if we had of every nation a traveller, we should lodge them with this sign.

Bawd. [To MARINA.] Pray you, come hither awhile. You have fortunes coming upon you. Mark me: you must seem to do that fearfully, which you commit willingly; to despise profit where you have most gain. To weep that you live as ye do makes pity in your lovers; seldom but that pity begats you a good opinion, and that opinion a mere profit.

Mar. I understand you not.

Boult. O! take her home, mistress, take her home; these blushes of hers must be quenched with some present practice.

Bawd. Thou says true, i' faith, so they must; for your bride goes to that with shame which is her way to go with warrant.

Boult. Faith, some do, and some do not. But, mistress, if I have bargained for the joint.—144

Bawd. Thou mayst cut a morsel off the spit.

Boult. I may so?
And of how coward a spirit.

Cle. To such proceeding
Who ever but his approbation added,
Though not his prime consent, he did not flow
From honourable sources.

Dion. Be it so, then; 28
Yet none does know but you how she came dead,
Nor none can know, Leonine being gone.
She did distress my child, and stood between
Her and her fortunes; none would look on her,
But cast their gazes on Marina's face, 33
Whilst ours was blunted and held a malkin
Not worth the time of day. It pier'd me
thorough;
And though you call my course unnatural, 36
You not your child well loving, yet I find
It grieves me as an enterprise of kindness
Perform'd to your sole daughter.

Cle. Heavens forgive it! 39
Dion. And as for Pericles, 40
What should he say? We wept after her hearse,
And even yet we mourn; her monument
Is almost finish'd, and her epitaph
In glittering golden characters express 44
A general praise to her, and care in us
At whose expense 'tis done.

Cle. Thou art like the harpy,
Which, to betray, dost with thine angel's
face,
Seize with thine eagle's talons. 48

Dion. You are like one that superstitionally
Doth swear to the gods that winter kills the
fies;
But yet I know you'll do as I advise. [Exeunt.

Scene IV.—Before the Monument of Marina
at Tarsus.

Enter Gower.

Thus time we waste, and longest leagues make
short;
Salt seas in cockles, have an wish but for 't;
Making—to take your imagination—
From born to born, region to region. 4
By you being pardon'd, we commit no crime
To use one language in each several clime
Where our scenes seem to live. I do beseech you
To learn of me, who stand i' the gaps to teach
you,
The stages of our story. Pericles
Is now again thwarting the wayward seas,
Attended on by many a lord and knight,
To see his daughter, all his life's delight. 11
Old Helicanus goes along. Behind
Is left to govern it, you bear in mind,
Old Escanes, whom Helicanus late
Advanc'd in time to great and high estate. 16

Well-sailing ships and bounteous winds have
brought
This king to Tarsus, think his pilot thought,
So with his steereage shall your thoughts grow on,
To fetch his daughter home, who first is gone. 20
Like mores and shadows seem they move awhile;
Your ears unto your eyes I'll reconcile.

Dumb Show.
Enter at one door Pericles, with his Train;
Cleon and Dionysa at the other. Cleon
shows Pericles the tomb of Marina; whereat
Pericles makes lamentation, puts on sack-
cloth, and in a mighty passion departs.
Exeunt Cleon and Dionysa.

See how belief may suffer by soul show!
This borrow'd passion stands for true old wo;
And Pericles, in sorrow all devour'd, 25
With sighs shot through, and biggest tears o'er-
shower'd,
Leave: Tarsus and again embarks. He swears
Never to wash his face, nor cut his hairs; 28
He puts on sackcloth, and to sea. He bears
A tempest, which his mortal vessel tears,
And yet he rides it out. Now please you wit
The epitaph is for Marina writ
By wicked Dionysa.

[Reads inscription on Marina's monument.

The fairest, sweetest, and best lies here,
Who wither'd in her spring of year:
She was of Tybus the king's daughter,
On whom foul death hath made this
slaughter.
Marina was she call'd; and at her
birth,
Thetis, being proud, swallow'd some
part o' the earth:
Therefore the earth, fearing to be
o'erflow'd,
Hath Thetis' birth-child on the heavens
bestow'd:
Wherefore she does, and swears she'll
never stint,
Make raging battery upon shores of
flint.

No visor does become black villany
So well as soft and tender flattery.
Let Pericles believe his daughter's dead,
And bear his courses to be ordered
By Lady Fortune; while our scene must play
His daughter's wo and heavy well-a-day
In her ministers service. Patience then,
And think you now are all in Mitylen. [Exit.}
Scene V.—Mitylene. A Street before the Brothel.

Enter, from the brothel, two Gentlemen.

First Gent. Did you ever hear the like?

Sec. Gent. No, nor never shall do in such a place as this, she being once gone.

First Gent. But to have divinity preached there! did you ever dream of such a thing?

Sec. Gent. No, no. Come, I am for no more bawdy-houses. Shall ’s go bear the vestals sing?

First Gent. I’ll do any thing now that is virtuous; but I am out of the road of rutting for ever.

[Exeunt.

Scene VI.—The Same. A Room in the Brothel.

Enter Pandar, Bawd, and Boult.

Pand. Well, I had rather than twice the worth of her she had ne’er come here.

Bawd. Fie, fie upon her! she is able to freeze the god Friapus, and undo a whole generation; we must either get her ravished, or be rid of her. When she should do for clients her fitment, and do me the kindness of our profession, she has me her quirks, her reasons, her master-reasons, her prayers, her knees; that she would make a puritan of the devil if he should cheapen a kiss of her.

Boult. Faith, I must ravish her, or she’ll disfurnish us all of our cavaliers, and make all our swearers priests.

Pand. Now, the pox upon her green-sickness for me!

Bawd. Faith, there’s no way to be rid on’t but by the way to the pox. Here comes the Lord Lysimachus, disgraced.

Boult. We should have both lord and lown if the peevish baggage would but give way to customers.

Enter Lysimachus.

Lys. How now! How a dozen of virginities?

Bawd. Now, the gods to-bless your honour!

Boult. I am glad to see your honour in good health.

Lys. You may so; ’tis the better for you that your resorters stand upon sound legs. How now! wholesome iniquity, have you that a man may deal withal, and defy the surgeon?

Bawd. We have here one, sir, if she would—but there never came her like in Mitylene.

Lys. If she’d do the deed of darkness, thou wouldnst say.

Bawd. Your honour knows what ’tis to say well enough.

Lys. Well; call forth, call forth.

Boult. For flesh and blood, sir, white and red, you shall see a rose; and she were a rose indeed if she had but—

Lys. What, prithee?

Boult. O! sir, I can be modest.

Lys. That dignifies the renown of a bawd no less than it gives a good report to a number to be chaste.

[Exit Boult.

Bawd. Here comes that which grows to the stalk; never plucked yet, I can assure you.—

Re-enter Boult with Marina.

Is she not a fair creature?

Lys. Faith, she would serve after a long voyage at sea. Well, there’s for you; leave us.

Bawd. I beseech your honour, give me leave; a word, and I’ll have done presently.

Lys. I beseech you do.

Bawd. [To Marina.] First, I would have you note, this is an honourable man.

Mar. I desire to find him so, that I may worthily note him.

Bawd. Next, he’s the governor of this country, and a man whom I am bound to.

Mar. If he govern the country, you are bound to him indeed; but how honourable he is in that I know not.

Bawd. Pray you, without any more virginal fencing, will you use him kindly? He will line your apron with gold.

Mar. What he will do graciously, I will thankfully receive.

Lys. Ha! you done?

Bawd. My lord, she’s not paced yet; you must take some pains to work her to your manage. Come, we will leave his honour and her together.

Lys. Go thy ways. [Exeunt Bawd, Pandar, and Boult.] Now, pretty one, how long have you been at this trade?

Mar. What trade, sir?

Lys. Why, I cannot name ’t but I shall offend.

Mar. I cannot be offended with my trade.

Please you to name it.

Lys. How long have you been of this profession?

Mar. E’er since I can remember.

Lys. Did you go to ’t so young? Were you a gamester at five or at seven?

Mar. Earlier too, sir, if now I be one.

Lys. Why, the house you dwell in proclaims you to be a creature of sale.

Mar. Do you know this house to be a place of such resort, and will come into ’t? I hear say you are of honourable parts, and are the governor of this place.
Lys. Why, hath your principal made known unto you who I am? 92

Mar. Who is my principal?

Lys. Why, your herb-woman; she that sets seeds and roots of shame and iniquity. Oh! you have heard something of my power, and so stand aloof for more serious wooing. But I protest to thee, pretty one, my authority shall not see thee, or else look friendly upon thee. Come, bring me to some private place; come, come. 100

Mar. If you were born to honour, show it now;
If put upon you, make the judgment good
That thought you worthy of it.

Lys. How’s this? how’s this? Some more;
be sage. 104

Mar. For me,
That am a maid, though most ungentle fortune
Hath plac’d me in this sty, where, since I came,
Diseases have been sold dearer than physic, 108
Oh! that the gods
Would set me free from this unhallow’d place,
Though they did change me to the meanest

That flies i’ the purer air!

Lys. I did not think
Thou couldst have spoke so well; ne’er dream’d thou couldst.

Had I brought hither a corrupted mind,
Thy speech had alter’d it. Hold, here’s gold for thee;

Persever in that clear way thou goest,
And the gods strengthen thee!

Mar. The good gods preserve you!

Lys. For me, be you thoughten
That I came with no ill intent, for to me
The very doors and windows savour vilely.
Farewell. Thou art a piece of virtue, and I doubt not but thy training hath been noble.
Hold, here’s more gold for thee. 124

A curse upon him, die he like a thief,
That robs thee of thy goodness! If thou dost
Hear from me, it shall be for thy good.

Re-enter Boult.

Boult. I beseech your honour, one piece for me.

Lys. Avaunt! thou damned door-keeper.

Your house,
But for this virgin that doth prop it, would Sink and overwhelm you. Away! [Exit.

Boult. How’s this? We must take another course with you. If your peevish chastity, which is not worth a breakfast in the cheapest country under the cope, shall undo a whole household, let me be gabled like a spaniel. Come your ways.

Mar. Whither would you have me? 139

Boult. I must have your maidenhead taken off, or the common hangman shall execute it. Come your ways. We’ll have no more gentlemen driven away. Come your ways, I say.

Re-enter Bawd.

Bawd. How now! what’s the matter? 144

Boult. Worse and worse, mistress; she has here spoken holy words to the Lord Lysimachus.

Bawd. Oh! abominable.

Boult. She makes our profession as it were to stink afore the face of the gods.

Bawd. Marry, hang her up for ever!

Boult. The nobleman would have dealt with her like a nobleman, and she sent him away as cold as a snowball; saying his prayers too.

Bawd. Boult, take her away; use her at thy pleasure; crack the glass of her virginity, and make the rest malleable.

Boult. An if she were a thornier piece of ground than she is, she shall be ploughed.

Mar. Hark, hark, you gods! 160

Bawd. She conjures; away with her! Would she had never come within my doors! Marry, hang you! She’s born to undo us. Will you not go the way of women-kind? Marry, come up, my dish of chastity with rosemary and bays! 165 [Exit.

Boult. Come, mistress; come your ways with me.

Mar. Whither wilt thou have me?

Boult. To take from you the jewel you hold so dear.

Mar. Prithee, tell me one thing first.

Boult. Come now, your one thing.

Mar. What canst thou wish thine enemy to be?

Boult. Why, I could wish him to be my master, or rather, my mistress.

Mar. Neither of these are so bad as thou art, Since they do better thee in their command. Thou hold’st a place, for which the pained’st friend
Of hell would not in reputation change;
Thou art the damned door-keeper to every Coystril that comes inquiring for his Tib,
To the choleric fist of every rogue
Thy ear is liable, thy food is such
As hath been belch’d on by infected lungs. 184

Boult. What would you have me do? go to the wars, would you? where a man may serve seven years for the loss of a leg, and have not money enough in the end to buy him a wooden one?

1236
PERICLES

Act V, Sc. I.

Mar. Do any thing but this thou doest.
Empty

Old receptacles, or common sewers, of filth;
Serve by indention to the common hangman:
Any of these ways are yet better than this; 193
For what thou professest, a baboon, could he
speak,
Would own a name too dear. O! that the gods
Would safely deliver me from this place. 196
Here, here’s gold for thee.

If that thy master would gain by me,
Proclaim that I can sing, weave, sew, and
dance,
With other virtues, which I’ll keep from boast;
And I will undertake all these to teach. 201
I doubt not but this populous city will
Yield many scholars.

Boul. But can you teach all this you speak of?

Mar. Prove that I cannot, take me home
again,
And prostitute me to the basest groom
That doth frequent your house.

Boul. Well, I will see what I can do for thee;
if I can place thee, I will. 209


Boul. Faith, my acquaintance lies little a-
mongst them. But since my master and mistress
have bought you, there’s no going but by their
consent; therefore I will make them acquainted
with your purpose, and I doubt not but I shall
find them tractable enough. Come; I’ll do for
thee what I can; come your ways. [Exeunt.

ACT V.

ENTER GOWER.

Marina thus the brothel ’scapes, and chances
Into an honest house, our story says.
She sings like one immortal, and she dances
As goddess-like to her admired lays;
Deep clerks she dumbs; and with her neeld com-
poses
Nature’s own shape, of bud, bird, branch, or
berry,
That even her art sisters the natural roses;
Her inkle, silk, twin with the rubied cherry; 8
That pupils lacks she none of noble race,
Who pour their bounty on her; and her gain
She gives the cursed bawd. Here we her place;
And to her father turn our thoughts again, 12
Where we left him, on the sea. We there him
lost,
Whence, driven before the winds, he is arriv’d
Here where his daughter dwells; and on this
coast
Suppose him now at anchor. The city striv’d 16

God Neptune’s annual feast to keep; from
whence
Lysimachus our Tyrian ship espies,
His banners sable, trimm’d with rich expense;
And to him in his barge with favour击es. 20
In your supposing once more put your sight
Of heavy Pericles; think this his bark:
Where what is done in action, more, if might,
Shall be discover’d; please you, sit and hark.
[Exit.

SCENE I.—On board Pericles’ Ship, off Mity-
lene. A Pavilion on deck, with a curtain
before it; PERICLES within, reclined on a
couch. A barge lying beside the Tyrian
vessel.

Enter two Sailors, one belonging to the Tyrian
vessel, the other to the barge; to them HELI-
CANUS.

Tyr. Sail. [To the Sailor of Mitylene.] Where’s
the Lord Helicanus? he can resolve you.
O! here he is.—
Sir, there’s a barge put off from Mitylene,
And in it is Lysimachus, the governor, 4
Who craves to come aboard. What is your will?
Hel. That he have his. Call up some gentle-
men.

Tyr. Sail. Ho, gentlemen! my lord calls.

Enter two or three Gentlemen.

First Gent. Doth your lordship call? 8
Hel. Gentlemen, there’s some of worth would
come aboard;
I pray ye, greet them fairly.
[ Gentlemen and Sailors descend, and go on
board the barge.

Enter from thence, LYSIMACHUS and Lords; the
Gentlemen and the two Sailors.

Tyr. Sail. Sir,
This is the man that can, in aught you would,
Resolve you. 13
Lys. Hail, reverend sir! The gods preserve
you!
Hel. And you, sir, to outlive the age I am,
And die as I would do.

Lys. You wish me well. 16

Being on shore, honouring of Neptune’s
triumphs,
Seeing this goodly vessel ride before us,
I made to it to know of whence you are.

Hel. First, what is your place? 20
Lys. I am the governor of this place you lie
before.

Hel. Sir,
Our vessel is of Tyre, in it the king;
A man who for this three months hath not
spoken
To any one, nor taken sustenance
But to prorogue his grief.
Lys. Upon what ground is his distempera-
ture?
Hel. 'Twould be too tedious to repeat;
But the main grief springs from the loss
Of a beloved daughter and a wife.
Lys. May we not see him?
Hel. You may;
But bootless is your sight: he will not speak
To any.
Lys. Yet let me obtain my wish.
Hel. Behold him. [PERICLES DISCOVERED.] This
was a goodly person,
Till the disaster that, one mortal night,
Drove him to this.
Lys. Sir king, all hail! the gods preserve you!
Hail, royal sir!
Hel. It is in vain; he will not speak to you.
First Lord. Sir,
We have a maid in Mitylene, I durst wager,
Would win some words of him.
Lys. 'Tis well bethought. She questionless with her sweet harmony
And other chosen attractions, would allure,
And make a battery through his deafen'd ports
Which now are midway stopp'd:
She is all happy as the fairst of all,
And with her fellow maids is now upon
The leafy shelter that abuts against
The island's side.
[Whispers first Lord, who puts off in
the barge of LYSIMACHUS.
Hel. Sure, all's effectless; yet nothing we'll
omit,
That bears recovery's name. But, since your
kindness
We have stretch'd thus far, let us beseech you,
That for our gold we may provision have,
Wherein we are not destitute for want,
But weary for the stalesness.
Lys. Sir, a courtesy,
Which if we should deny, the most just gods
For every graff would send a caterpillar,
And so afflict our province. Yet once more
Let me entreat to know at large the cause
Of your king's sorrow.
Hel. Sit, sir, I will recount it to you;
But see, I am prevented.

Re-enter, from the barge, Lord, with MARINA
and a young Lady.
Lys. O! here is
The lady that I sent for. Welcome, fair one!
Is't not a goodly presence?

Hel. She's a gallant lady.
Lys. She's such a one, that were I well assur'd
Came of a gentle kind and noble stock,
I'd wish no better choice, and think me rarely
wed.
Fair one, all goodness that consists in bounty
Expect even here, where is a kingly patient:
If that thy prosperous and artificial feat
Can draw him but to answer thee in aught,
Thy sacred physic shall receive such pay
As thy desires can wish.
Mar. Sir, I will use
My utmost skill in his recovery,
Provided
That none but I and my companion maid
Be suffer'd to come near him.
Lys. Come, let us leave her;
And the gods make her prosperous!
[MARINA SINGS.
Hel. Mark'd he your music?
Mar. No, nor look'd on us.
Lys. See, she will speak to him.
Mar. Hail, sir! my lord, lend ear.
Per. Hum! ha!
Mar. I am a maid,
My lord, that ne'er before invited eyes,
But have been gaz'd on like a comet; she speaks,
My lord, that may be, hast endur'd a grief
Might equal yours, if both were justly weigh'd.
Though wayward Fortune did malign my state,
My derivation was from ancestors
Who stood equivalent with mighty kings;
But time hath root'd out my parentage,
And to the world and awkward casualties
Bound me in servitude. [Aside.] I will desist;
But there is something glows upon my cheek,
And whispers in mine ear, 'Go not till he speak.'
Per. My fortunes—parentage—good parent-
age—
To equal mine!—was it not thus? what say you?
Mar. I said, my lord, if you did know my
parentage,
You would not do me violence.
Per. I do think so. Pray you, turn your eyes
upon me.
You are like something that—What country-
woman?
Here of these shores?
Mar. No, nor of any shores;
Yet I was mortally brought forth, and am
No other than I appear.
Per. I am great with woe, and shall deliver
weeping.
My dearest wife was like this maid, and such a
one
My daughter might have been: my queen's
square brows;
Her stature to an inch; as wand-like straight;  
As silver-voic’d; her eyes as jewel-like;  
And cas’d as richly; in pace another Juno;  
Who starves the ears she feeds, and makes them hungry,
The more she gives them speech. Where do you live?

Mar. Where I am but a stranger; from the deck.  
You may discern the place.

Per. Where were you bred?  
And how achiev’d you these endowments, which  
You make more rich to owe?

Mar. Should I tell my history, it would seem  
Like lies, disdain’d in the reporting.

Per. Prithee, speak;  
Falseness cannot come from thee, for thou look’st  
Modest as justice, and thou seem’st a palace  
For the crow’d truth to dwell in. I believe thee,  
And make my senses credit thy relation  
To points that seem impossible; for thou look’st  
Like one I lov’d indeed. What were thy friends?  
Didst thou not say when I did push thee back,—  
Which was when I perceive’d thee,—that thou cam’st

From good descending?

Mar. So indeed I did.

Per. Report thy parentage. I think thou saidst  
Thou hadst been toss’d from wrong to injury,  
And that thou thought’st thy griefs might equal mine,

If both were open’d.

Mar. Some such thing  
I said, and said no more but what my thoughts  
Did warrant me was likely.

Per. Tell thy story;  
If thine consider’d prove the thousandth part  
Of my endurance, thou art a man, and I  
Have suffer’d like a girl; yet thou dost look  
Like Patience gazing on kings’ graves, and smiling

Extremity out of act. What were thy friends?  
How lost thou them? Thy name, my most kind virgin?

Recount, I do beseech thee. Come, sit by me.

Mar. My name is Marina.

Per. Of I am mock’d,  
And thou by some incensed god sent hither  
To make the world to laugh at me.

Mar. Patience, good sir,  
Or here I’ll cease.

Per. Nay, I’ll be patient.  
Thou little know’st how thou dost startle me,  
To call thyself Marina.

Mar. The name

Was given me by one that had some power;  
My father, and a king.

Per. How! a king’s daughter?

And call’d Marina?

Mar. You said you would believe me;  
But, not to be a trouble of your peace,  
I will end here.

Per. But are you flesh and blood?  
Have you a working pulse? and are no fairy?  
Motion!—Well; speak on. Where were you born?

And wherefore call’d Marina?

Mar. Call’d Marina

For I was born at sea.

Per. At sea! what mother?

Mar. My mother was the daughter of a king;

Who died the minute I was born,  
As my good nurse Lychorida hath oft  
Deliver’d weeping.

Per. O! stop there a little.  
This is the rarest dream that e’er dull sleep  
Did mock sad fools withal; this cannot be.  
My daughter’s buried. Well; where were you bred?

I’ll hear you more, to the bottom of your story,  
And never interrupt you.

Mar. You’ll scorn to believe me; ’twere best  
I did give o’er.

Per. I will believe you by the syllable  
Of what you shall deliver. Yet, give me leave:  
How came you in these parts? where were you bred?

Mar. The king my father did in Tarsus leave me,  
Till cruel Cleon, with his wicked wife,  
Did seek to murder me; and having woo’d  
A villain to attempt it, who having drawn to do ’t,  
A crew of pirates came and rescu’d me;  
Brought me to Mitylene. But, good sir,  
Whither will you have me? Why do you weep?  
It may be  
You think me an impostor; no, good faith;  
I am the daughter to King Pericles,  
If good King Pericles be.

Per. Ho, Helicanus!

Hel. Calls my lord?

Per. Thou art a grave and noble counsellor,  
Most wise in general; tell me, if thou canst,  
What this maid is, or what is like to be,  
That thus hath made me weep?

Hel. I know not; but  
Here is the regent, sir, of Mitylene,

Speaks nobly of her.

Lys. She never would tell  
Her parentage; being demanded that,
Act V, Sc. I.  

PERICLES

Hangs upon mine eyes; let me rest. [Sleeps.  
Lys. A pillow for his head. 237
So, leave him all. Well, my companion friends,  
If this but answer to my just belief,  
I'll well remember you. 240

[Exeunt all but PERICLES.

DIANA appears to PERICLES as in a vision.
Día. My temple stands in Ephesus; his thee  
therer,  
And do upon mine altar sacrifice.  
There, when my maiden priests are met to-  
tgether,  
Before the people all, 244
Reveal how thou at sea didst lose thy wife;  
To mourn thy crosses, with thy daughter's, call  
And give them repetition to the life.  
Perform my bidding, or thou liv'st in woe; 248
Do it, and happy; by my silver bow!  
Awake, and tell thy dream! [Disappears.
Per. Celestial Dian, goddess argentine,  
I will obey thee! Helicanus!

Enter HELICANUS, LYSIMACHUS, and MARINA.
Hel. Sir? 252
Per. My purpose was for Tarsus, there to  
strike  
The inhospitable Cleon: but I am  
For other service first: toward Ephesus  
Turn our blown sails; elsesoons I'll tell thee  
why.
[To LYSIMACHUS.] Shall we refresh us, sir,  
upon your shore,  
And give you gold for such provision  
As our intents will need?
Lys. Sir, 260
With all my heart; and when you come ashore,  
I have another suit.
Per. You shall prevail,  
Were it to woo my daughter; for it seems  
You have been noble towards her.
Lys. Sir, lend me your arm. 264
Per. Come, my Marina. [Exeunt.

SCENE II.—Before the Temple of DIANA at  
Ephesus.

Enter GOWER.

Now our sands are almost run;  
More a little, and then dumb.  
This, my last boon, give me,  
For such kindness must relieve me, 4
That you aptly will suppose  
What pageantry, what feats, what shows,  
What minstrelsy, and pretty din,  
The regent made in Mitylen 8
To greet the king. So he thriv'd,  
That he is promis'd to be wis'd
To fair Marina; but in no wise
Till he had done his sacrifice,
As Dian bade: whereby being bound,
The interim, pray you, all confound.
In feather'd briefness sails are fill'd,
And wishes fall out as they're will'd.
At Ephesus, the temple see,
Our king and all his company.
That he can hither come so soon,
Is by your fancy's thankful doom. [Exit.

SCENE III.—The Temple of Diana at Ephesus;
Thaisa standing near the altar, as high
priestess; a number of Virgins on each side;
Cerimon and other Inhabitants of Ephesus
attending.

Enter PERICLES, with his Train; LYSIMACHUS,
Helicanus, Marina, and a Lady.

Per. Hail, Dian! to perform thy just com-
mand, I here confess myself the King of Tyre;
Who, frightened from my country, did wed
At Pentapolis the fair Thaisa,
At sea in childbed died she, but brought
forth
A maid-child call'd Marina; who, O goddess!
Wears yet thy silver livery. She at Tarasus
Was nurs'd with Cleon, whom at fourteen
years
He sought to murder; but her better stars
Brought her to Mitylene, 'gainst whose shore
Riding, her fortunes brought the maid aboard
us,
Where, by her own most clear remembrance,
she

Made known herself my daughter.
That. Voice and favour!
You are, you are—O royal Pericles!—

[She faints.

Per. What means the nun? she dies! help, gentlemen!

Cer. Noble sir, If you have told Diana's altar true,
This is your wife.

Per. Reverend appearer, no;
I threw her o'erboard with these very arms.

Cer. Upon this coast, I warrant you.

Per. 'Tis most certain.

Cer. Look to the lady. O! she's but o'er-
joy'd.
Early in bustling morn this lady was
Thrown upon this shore. I op'd the coffin,
Found there rich jewels; recover'd her, and
plac'd her
Here in Diana's temple.

Per. May we see them?

Cer. Great sir, they shall be brought you to
my house,
Whither I invite you. Look! Thaisa is
Recovered.

Tha. O! let me look!

If he be none of mine, my sanctity
Will to my sense bend no licentious ear,
But curb it, spite of seeing. O! my lord,
Are you not Pericles? Like him you speak,
Like him you are. Did you not name a
tempest;
A birth, and death?

Per. The voice of dead Thaisa!

Tha. That Thaisa am I, supposed dead
And drown'd.

Per. Immortal Dian!

Tha. Now I know you better.

When we with tears parted Pentapolis,
The king my father gave you such a ring.

[Shows a ring.

Per. This, this: no more, you gods! your
present kindness
Makes my past miseries sport: you shall do
well,
That on the touching of her lips I may
Melt and no more be seen. O! come, be buried
A second time within these arms.

Mar. My heart Leaps to be gone into my mother's bosom.

[Kneels to Thaisa.

Per. Look, who kneels here! Flesh of thy
flesh, Thaisa;
Thy burden at the sea, and call'd Marina,
For she was yielded there.

Tha. Bless'd, and mine own! 48

He. Hail, madam, and my queen!

Tha. I know you not.

Per. You have heard me say, when I did fly
from Tyre,
I left behind an ancient substitute;
Can you remember what I call'd the man?

I have nam'd him oft.

Tha. 'Twas Helicanus then.

Per. Still confirmation!

Embrace him, dear Thaisa; this is he.

Now do I long to hear how you were found; 56
How possibly preserv'd, and whom to thank;
Besides the gods, for this great miracle.

Tha. Lord Cerimon, my lord; this man,
Through whom the gods have shown their
power; that can
From first to last resolve you.

Per. Reverend sir,
The gods can have no mortal officer
More like a god than you. Will you deliver
How this dead queen re-lives?

Cer. I will, my lord.
Beseech you, first go with me to my house,
Where shall be shown you all was found with her;
How she came placed here in the temple;
No needful thing omitted.
Per. Pure Dian! bless thee for thy vision; I
Will offer night-oblations to thee. Thaisa,
This prince, the fair-betrothed of your daughter,
Shall marry her at Pentapolis. And now
This ornament
Makes me look dismal will I clip to form;
And what this fourteen years no razor touch'd,
To grace thy marriage-day I'll beautify.
That. Lord Cerimon hath letters of good
credit, sir,
My father's dead.
Per. Heavens make a star of him! Yet
there, my queen,
We'll celebrate their nuptials, and ourselves so
Will in that kingdom spend our following days;
Our son and daughter shall in Tyrus reign.
Lord Cerimon, we do our longing stay
To hear the rest untold. Sir, lead's the way.

[Exeunt.

Enter Gower.
In Antiochus and his daughter you have
heard
Of monstrous lust the due and just reward:
In Pericles, his queen, and daughter, seen—
Although assail'd with fortune fierce and keen—
Virtue preserv'd from fell destruction's blast,
Led on by heaven, and crown'd with joy at last.
In Helianus may you well descry
A figure of truth, of faith, of loyalty.
In reverend Cerimon there well appears
The worth that learned charity aye wears.
For wicked Cleon and his wife, when fame
Had spread their cursed deed, and honour'd name
Of Pericles, to rage the city turn,
That him and his they in his palace burn:
The gods for murder seemed so content
To punish them; although not done, but meant.
So on your patience evermore attending,
New joy wait on you! Here our play hath ending.

[Exit.
POEMS
VENUS AND ADONIS

‘Vilia miretur vulgus; mihi flavus Apollo
Pocula Castalia plena ministret aqua.’

TO THE RIGHT HONOURABLE HENRY WRIOTHESLY,
EARL OF SOUTHAMPTON, AND BARON OF TIFIELD.

RIGHT HONOURABLE,

I know not how I shall offend in dedicating my unpolished lines to your lordship, nor how the world will censure me for choosing so strong a prop to support so weak a burden: only, if your honour seem but pleased, I account myself highly praised, and vow to take advantage of all idle hours, till I have honoured you with some graver labour. But if the first heir of my invention prove deformed, I shall be sorry it had so noble a godfather, and never after ear so barren a land, for fear it yield me still so bad a harvest. I leave it to your honourable survey, and your honour to your heart’s content; which I wish may always answer your own wish and the world’s hopeful expectation.

Your honour’s in all duty,

WILLIAM SHAKESPEARE.

EVEN as the sun with purple-colour’d face
Had ta’en his last leave of the weeping morn,
Rose cheek’d Adonis hied him to the chase;
Hunting he lov’d, but love he laugh’d to scorn;

5 Sick-thoughted Venus makes amain unto him,
And like a bold-fac’d suitor ’gins to woo him.

‘Thrice fairer than myself,’ thus she began,
‘The field’s chief flower, sweet above compare,
Stain to all nymphs, more lovely than a man,
More white and red than doves or roses are;
Nature that made thee, with herself at strife,

10 Saith that the world hath ending with thy life.

Vouchsafe, thou wonder, to alight thy steed,
And rein his proud head to the saddle-bow;
If thou wilt deign this favour, for thy need
A thousand honey secrets shalt thou know:

16 Here come and sit, where never serpent hisses; And being set, I’ll smother thee with kisses:

‘And yet not cloy thy lips with loath’d satiety,
But rather famish them amid their plent,y;
Making them red and pale with fresh variety;
Ten kisses short as one, one long as twenty:
A summer’s day will seem an hour but short,
Being wasted in such time-beguiling sport.’

With this she seizeth on his sweating palm,
The precedent of pith and livelihood,
And, trembling in her passion, calls it balm,
Earth’s sovereign salve to do a goddess good: 23
Being so enrag’d, desire doth lend her force
Courageously to pluck him from his horse.

Over one arm the lusty courser’s rein,
Under her other was the tender boy,
Who blush’d and pouted in a dull disdain,
With leaden appetite, unapt to toy;
She red and hot as coals of glowing fire,
He red for shame, but frothy in desire. 36

The studded bridle on a ragged bough
Nimbly she fastens;—O! how quick is love:—
The steed is stalled up, and even now
To tie the rider she begins to prove:

42 Backward she push’d him, as she would be thrust,
And govern’d him in strength, though not in

So soon was she along, as he was down,
Each leaning on their elbows and their hips:
Now doth she stroke his cheek, now doth he frown,
And ’gins to chide, but soon she stops his lips; And kissing speaks, with lustful language broken,

49 ‘If thou wilt chide, thy lips shall never open.’
VENUS AND ADONIS

He burns with bashful shame; she with her tears
Doth quench the maiden burning of his cheeks;
Then with her windy sighs and golden hairs
To fan and blow them dry again she seeks: 52
He saith she is immodest, blames her miss;
What follows more she murders with a kiss.

Even as an empty eagle, sharp by fast,
Tires with her beak on feathers, flesh and bone,
Shaking her wings, devouring all in haste, 57
Till either gorge be stuff'd or prey be gone;
Even so she kiss'd his brow, his cheek, his chin,
And where she ends she doth anew begin. 60

Forc'd to content, but never to obey,
Panting he lies, and breatheth in her face;
She feedeth on the steam, as on a prey,
And calls it heavenly moisture, air of grace; 64
Wishing her cheeks were gardens full of flowers,
So they were dew'd with such distilling showers.

Look! how a bird lies tangled in a net,
So fasten'd in her arms Adonis lies; 68
Pure shame and aw'd resistance made him fret,
Which bred more beauty in his angry eyes:
Rain added to a river that is rank
Perforce will force it overflow the bank. 7

Still she entreats, and prettily entreats,
For to a pretty ear she tunes her tale;
Still is he sullen, still he lowers and frets,
'Twixt crimson shame and anger ashy-pale; 76
Being red, she loves him best; and being white,
Her best is better'd with a more delightful.

Look how he can, she cannot choose but love;
And by her fair immortal hand she swears,
From his soft bosom never to remove,
Till he take truce with her contending tears,
Which long have rain'd, making her cheeks all wet;
And one sweet kiss shall pay this countless debt. 84

Upon this promise did he raise his chin
Like a dive-dapper peering through a wave,
Who, being look'd on, ducks as quickly in;
So offers he to give what she did crave;
But when her lips were ready for his pay,
He winks, and turns his lips another way.

Never did passenger in summer's heat
More thirst for drink than she for this good turn.
Her help she sees, but help she cannot get;
She bathes in water, yet her fire must burn:
'O! pity,' gan she cry, 'flint-hearted boy:
'Tis but a kiss I beg; why art thou coy? 96

'I have been woo'd, as I entreat thee now,
Even by the stern and direful god of war,
Whose sinewy neck in battle ne'er did bow,
Who conquers where he comes in every jar; 100
Yet hath he been my captive and my slave,
And begg'd for that which thou unask'd shalt have.

'Over my altars hath he hung his lance,
His batter'd shield, his uncontrolled crest, 104
And for my sake hath learn'd to sport and dance,
To toy, to wanton, dally, smile, and jest;
Scorning his churlish drum and ensign red,
Making my arms his field, his tent my bed.

'Thus he that overruled I oversway'd,
Leading him prisoner in a red-rose chain:
Strong-temper'd steel his stronger strength obey'd,
Yet was he servile to my coy disdain. 112
O! be not proud, nor brag not of thy might,
For mastering her that foil'd the god of fight.

'Touch but my lips with those fair lips of thine,—
Though mine be not so fair, yet are they red,—
The kiss shall be thine own as well as mine: 117
What seest thou in the ground? hold up thy head:
Look in mine eyeballs, there thy beauty lies;
Then why, not lips on lips, since eyes in eyes?

'Art thou asham'd to kiss? then wink again,
And I will wink; so shall the day seem night;
Love keeps his revels where there are but twain;
Be bold to play, our sport is not in sight: 124
These blue-vein'd violets wherever we lean
Never can blab, nor know not what we mean.

'The tender spring upon thy tempting lip
Shows thee unripe, yet mayst thou well be tasted.
Make use of time, let not'advantage slip;
Beauty within itself should not be wasted:
Fair flowers that are not gather'd in their prime
Rot and consume themselves in little time.

'Were I hard-favour'd, foil, or wrinkled-old,
Ill-nurtur'd, crooked, churlish, harash in voice,
O'erworn, despaised, rheumatic, and cold,
Thick-sighted, barren, lean, and lacking juice,
Then mightst thou pause, for then I were not for thee;
But having no defects, why dost abhor me?
'Thou canst not see one wrinkle in my brow;
Mine eyes are grey and bright, and quick in turning;
140
My beauty as the spring doth yearly grow;
My flesh is soft and plump, my marrow burn-
ing;
My smooth moist hand, were it with thy hand felt,
Would in thy palm dissolve, or seem to melt.
'Bid me discourse, I will enchant thine ear,
145
Or like a fairy trip upon the green,
Or, like a nymph, with long dishevell'd hair,
Dance on the sands, and yet no footing seen:
Love is a spirit all compact of fire,
149
Not gross to sink, but light, and will aspire.
'Witness this primrose bank whereon I lie;
These forceless flowers like sturdy trees support
me;
152
Two strengthless doves will draw me through the sky,
From morn till night, even where I list to sport
me:
Is love so light, sweet boy, and may it be
That thou shouldst think it heavy unto thee?
'Is thine own heart to thine own face affected?
Can thy right hand seize love upon thy left?
Then woo thyself, be of thyself rejected,
Steal thine own freedom, and complain on theft.
160
Narcissus so himself himself forsook,
And died to kiss his shadow in the brook.
'Torches are made to light, jewels to wear,
Dainties to taste, fresh beauty for the use,
Herbs for their small, and sappy plants to bear;
Things growing to themselves are growth's abuse:
Seeds spring from seeds, and beauty breedeth beauty;
168
Thou wast begot; to get it is thy duty.
'Upon the earth's increase why shouldst thou feed,
Unless the earth with thy increase be fed?
By law of nature thou art bound to breed,
That thine may live when thou thyself art dead;
And so in spite of death thou dost survive,
173
In that thy likeness still is left alive.'
By this the love-sick queen began to sweat,
For where they lay the shadow had forsook them,
176
And Titan, tired in the mid-day heat,
With burning eye did boldly overlook them;
Wishing Adonis had his team to guide,
So he were like him and by Venus' side.
180
And now Adonis with a lazy spright,
And with a heavy, dark, disliking eye,
His louring brows o'erwhelming his fair sight,
Like misty vapours when they blot the sky;
184
Souring his cheeks, cries, 'Fie! no more of love:
The sun doth burn my face; I must remove.'
'Ay me,' quoth Venus, 'young, and so unkind?
What bare excuses mak'st thou to be gone;
I'll see celestial breath, whose gentle wind
Shall cool the heat of this descending sun:
I'll make a shadow for thee of my hairs;
If they burn too, I'll quench them with my tears.
192
'The sun that shines from heaven shines but warm,
And lo! I lie between that sun and thee:
The beat I have from thence doth little harm,
Thine eye darts forth the fire that burneth me;
And were I not immortal, life were done
197
Between this heavenly and earthly sun.
'Art thou obdurate, flinty, hard as steel?
Nay, more than flint, for stone at rain re-
199
lenteth.'
Art thou a woman's son, and canst not feel
What 'tis to love? how want of love torment-
eth?
O! had thy mother borne so hard a mind.
She had not brought forth thee, but died unkind.
204
'What am I that thou shouldst contemn me this?
Or what great danger dwells upon my suit?
What were thy lips the worse for one poor kiss?
Speak, fair; but speak fair words, or else be mute:
208
Give me one kiss, I'll give it thee again,
And one for interest, if thou wilt have twain.
'Fie! lifeless picture, cold and senseless stone,
Well-painted idol, image dull and dead,
212
Statue contempting but the eye alone,
Thing like a man, but of no woman bred:
Thou art no man, though of a man's com-
216
plexion,
For men will kiss even by their own direction.'
This said, impatience chokes her pleasing tongue,
217
And swelling passion doth provoke a pause;
Red cheeks and fiery eyes blaze forth her wrong;
Being judge in love, she cannot right her cause:
221
And now she weeps, and now she fain would speak,
And now her sobs do her intentions break.
Sometimes she shakes her head, and then his hand;
Now gazeth she on him, now on the ground; 224
Sometimes her arms infold him like a band;
She would, he will not in her arms be bound;
And when from thence he struggles to be gone,
She locks her lily fingers one in one. 228

‘Fondling,’ she saith, ‘since I have hemm’d thee here
Within the circuit of this ivory pale,
I’ll be a park, and thou shalt be my deer;
Feed where thou wilt, on mountain or in dale:
Graze on my lips, and if those hills be dry, 233
Stray lower, where the pleasant fountains lie.

‘Within this limit is relief enough,
Sweet bottom-grass and high delightful plain,
Round rising hillocks, brakes obscure and rough,
To shelter thee from tempest and from rain:
Then be my deer, since I am such a park;
No dog shall rouse thee, though a thousand bark.’ 240

At this Adonis smiles as in disdain,
That in each cheek appears a pretty dimple:
Love made those hollows, if himself were slain,
He might be buried in a tomb so simple; 244
Foreknowing well, if there he came to lie,
Why, then Love liv’d and there he could not die.

These lovely caves, these round enchanting pits,
Open’d their mouths to swallow Venus’ liking.
Being mad before, how doth she now for wits?
Struck dead at first, what needs a second striking?
Poor queen of love, in thine own law forlorn,
To love a cheek that smiles at thee in scorn!

Now which way shall she turn? what shall she say?
Her words are done, her woes the more increasing;
The time is spent, her object will away,
And from her twining arms doth urge releasing:
‘Pity,’ she cries; ‘some favour, some remorse!’ 257
Away he springs, and hasteth to his horse.

But, lo! from forth a cope that neighbours by,
A breeding jennet, lusty, young, and proud, 260
Adonis’ trampling coursers doth espy,
And forth she rushes, snorts and neighs aloud:
The strong-neck’d steed, being tied unto a tree,
Breaketh his rein, and to her straight goes he.

Imperiously he leaps, he neighs, he bounds, 265
And now his woven girths he breaks asunder;
The bearing earth with his hard hoof he wounds,
Whose hollow womb resounds like heaven’s thunder;

The iron bit he crushes ’tween his teeth,
Controlling what he was controlled with.

His ears up-prick’d; his braided hanging mane
Upon his compass’d crest now stand on end;
His nostrils drink the air, and forth again,
As from a furnace, vapours doth he send:
His eye, which scornfully glisters like fire,
Shows his hot courage and his high desire.

Sometime he trots, as if he told the steps, 277
With gentle majesty and modest pride;
Anon he rears upright, curvets and leaps,
As who should say, ’Lo! thus my strength is tried;
And this I do to captivate the eye
Of the fair breeder that is standing by.’

What recketh he his rider’s angry stir,
His flattering ‘Holla,’ or his ‘Stand, I say?’ 284
What cares he now for curb or pricking spur?
For rich caparisons or trapping gay?
He sees his love, and nothing else he sees,
Nor nothing else with his proud sight agrees.

Look, when a painter would surpass the life,
In limning out a well-proportion’d steed,
His art with nature’s workmanship at strife,
As if the dead the living should exceed; 292
So did this horse excel a common one,
In shape, in courage, colour, pace and bone.

Round-hoof’d, short-jointed, fetlocks shag and long,
Broad breast, full eye, small head, and nostril wide,
High crest, short ears, straight legs and passing strong,
Thin mane, thick tail, broad buttock, tender hide:
Look, what a horse should have he did not lack,
Save a proud rider on so proud a back. 300

Sometimes he scuds far off, and there he stays;
Anon he starts at stirring of a feather;
To bid the wind a base he now prepares,
And who’s he run or fly they know not whether;
For through his mane and tail the high wind sings,
Fanning the hairs, who wave like feather’d wings.
VENUS AND ADONIS

He looks upon his love, and neigs unto her; 
She answers him as if she knew his mind; 308
Being proud, as females are, to see him woo her, 
She puts on outward strangeness, seems unkind,

Spurns at his love and scorrs the heat he feels,

Beating his kind embracements with her heels.

Then, like a melancholy discontent, 313
He vails his tail that, like a falling plume
Cool shadow to his melting buttock lent:
He stamps, and bites the poor flies in his fume.

His love, perceiving how he is enraged, 317
Grew kinder, and his fury was assuaged.

His testy master goeth about to take him;
When lo! the unback’d breeder, full of fear, 320
Jealous of catching, swiftly doth forsake him,
With her the horse, and left Adonis there.

As they were mad, unto the wood they hie them,

Out-stripping crows that strive to over-fly them. 324

All swomn with chafing, down Adonis sits,
Banning his boisterous and unruly beast:
And now the happy season once more fits,
That love-sick Love by pleasing may be blest;
For lovers say, the heart hath treble wrong
When it is barr’d the aidance of the tongue.

An oven that is stopp’d, or river stay’d,
Burneth more hotly, swelith with more rage:
So of concealed sorrow may be said; 333
Free vent of words love’s fire doth assuage;
But when the heart’s attorney once is mute,
The client breaks, as desperate in his suit. 336

He sees her coming, and begins to glow,—
Even as a dying coal revives with wind,—
And with his bonnet hides his angry brow;
Looks on the dull earth with disturbed mind,
Taking no notice that she is so nigh,

For all askance he holds her in his eye.

O! what a sight it was, wistfully to view
How she came stealing to the wayward boy;
To note the fighting conflict of her hue.

How white and red each other did destroy:
But now her cheek was pale, and by and by
It flash’d forth fire, as lightning from the sky.

Now was she just before him as he sat, 349
And like a lowly lover down she kneels;
With one fair hand she heaveth up his hat,
Her other tender hand his fair cheek feels: 352
His tenderer cheek receives her soft hand’s print,

As apt as new-fall’n snow takes any dint.

O! what a war of looks was then between them;
Her eyes petitioners to his eyes suing; 356
His eyes saw her eyes as they had not seen them;
Her eyes woo’d still, his eyes disdain’d the wooing;
And all this dumb play had his acts made plain
With tears, which, chorus-like, her eyes did rain. 360

Full gently now she takes him by the hand,
A lily prison’d in a gauz of snow,
Or ivory in an alabaster band;
So white a friend engirts so white a foe: 364
This beauteous combat, wilful and unwilling,
Show’d like two silver doves that sit a-billing.

Once more the engine of her thoughts began:
‘O fairest mover on this mortal round, 368
Would thou wert as I am, and I a man,
My heart all whole as thine, thy heart my wound;
For one sweet look thy help I would assure thee,
Though nothing but my body’s bane would cure thee.’ 372

‘Give me my hand,’ saith he, ‘why dost thou feel it?’
‘Give me my heart,’ saith she, ‘and thou shalt have it;’

O! give it me, lest thy hard heart do steel it,
And being steel’d, soft sighs can never grave it:
Then love’s deep groans I never shall regard,
Because Adonis’ heart hath made mine hard.’

‘For shame,’ he cries, ‘let go, and let me go;
My day’s delight is past, my horse is gone, 380
And ’tis your fault I am bereft him so;
I pray you hence, and leave me here alone:
For all my mind, my thought, my busy care,
Is how to get my palfrey from the mare.’ 384

Thus she replies: ‘Thy palfrey, as he should, Welcomes the warm approach of sweet desire: Affection is a coal that must be cool’d;
Else, suffer’d, it will set the heart on fire: 388
The sea hath bounds, but deep desire hath none;
Therefore no marvel though thy horse be gone.

‘How like a jade he stood, tied to the tree, Servilely master’d with a leathern rein! 392
But when he saw his love, his youth’s fair foe, He held such petty bondage in disdain;
Throwing the bare thong from his bending crest,
Enfranchising his mouth, his back, his breast.’ 396
VENUS AND ADONIS

'Who sees his true-love in her naked bed,
Teaching the sheets a whiter hue than white,
But, when his gluton eye so full hath fed,
His other agents aim at like delight?
Who is so faint, that dare not be so bold
To touch the fire, the weather being cold?

'Let me excuse thy courser, gentle boy;
And learn of him, I heartily beseech thee,
To take advantage on presented joy;
Though I were dumb, yet his proceedings teach thee.
O learn to love; the lesson is but plain,
And once made perfect, never lost again.'

'I know not love,' quoth he, 'nor will not know it,
Unless it be a boar, and then I chase it;
'Tis much to borrow, and I will not owe it;
My love to love is love but to disgrace it;
For I have heard it is a life in death,
That laughs and weeps, and all but with a breath.

'Who wears a garment shapeless and unfinished?
Who plucks the bud before one leaf put forth?
If springing things be any jot diminish'd,
They wither in their prime, prove nothing worth:
The colt that's back'd and burden'd being young
Loseth his pride and never waxeth strong.

'You hurt my hand with wringing; let us part,
And leave this idle theme, this bootless chat:
Remove your siege from my unyielding heart;
To love's alarms it will not ope the gate:
Dismiss your vows, your signed tears, your flattery;
For where a heart is hard, they make no battery.'

'What! canst thou talk?' quoth she, 'hast thou a tongue?
Oh would thou hadst not, or I had no hearing;
Thy mermaid's voice hath done me double wrong;
I had my load before, now press'd with bearing:
Melodious discord, heavenly tune, harsh-sounding;
Ear's deep-sweet music, and heart's deep-sore wounding.

'Had I no eyes, but ears, my ears would love
That inward beauty and invisible;
Or were I deaf, thy outward parts would move
Each part in me that was but sensible:
Though neither eyes nor ears, to hear nor see,
Yet should I be in love by touching thee.

'Say, that the sense of feeling were bereft me,
And that I could not see, nor hear, nor touch,
And nothing but the very smell were left me,
Yet would my love to thee be still as much;
For from the still'ry of thy face excelling
Comes breath perfum'd that breedeth love by smelling.

'But O! what banquet wert thou to the taste,
Being nurse and feeder of the other four;
Would they not wish the feast might ever last,
And bid Suspicion double-lock the door;
Lest Jealousy, that sour unwelcome guest,
Should, by his stealing in, disturb the feast?

Once more the ruby-colour'd portal open'd,
Which to his speech did honey passage yield;
Like a red morn, that ever yet betoken'd
Wrack to the seaman, tempest to the field,
Sorrow to shepherds, woe unto the birds,
Gruas and foul flaws to herdmen and to herds.

This ill presage advisedly she marketh:
Even as the wind is hush'd before it raineth,
Or as the wolf doth grin before he barks,
Or as the berry breaks before it staineth,
Or like the deadly bullet of a gun,
His meaning struck her ere his words begun.

And at his look she flatly falleth down,
For looks kill love and love by looks reviveth;
A smile revives the wounding of a frown;
But blessed bankrupt, that by love so thriveth!
The silly boy, believing she is dead,
Claps her pale cheek, till clapping makes it red;

And all-amas'd brake off his late intent,
For sharply he did think to reprehend her,
Which cunning love did wittily prevent:
Fair fell the wit that can so well defend her!
For on the grass she lies as she were slain,
Till his breath breatheth life in her again.

He wrings her nose, he strikes her on the cheeks,
He bends her fingers, holds her pulses hard;
He chases her tips; a thousand ways he seeks
To mend the hurt that his unkindness marr'd:
He kisses her; and she, by her good will,
Will never rise, so he will kiss her still.

The night of sorrow now is turn'd to day:
Her two blue windows faintly she up-beaveth, Like the fair sun, when in his fresh array
He cheers the morn and all the world relieveth:
And as the bright sun glorifieth the sky,
So is her face illumin'd with her eye.
VENUS AND ADONIS

Whose beams upon his hairless face are fix'd,
As if from thence they borrow'd all their shine.
Were never four such lamps together mix'd,
Had not his clouded with his brows' repine;
But hers, which through the crystal tears gave light,
Shone like the moon in water seen by night.

'O! where am I?' quoth she, in earth or heaven,
Or in the ocean drench'd, or in the fire?
What hour is this? or mourn or weary even?
Do I delight to die, or life desire?
But now I liv'd, and life was death's annoy;
But now I died, and death was lively joy.

'O! thou didst kill me; kill me once again:
Thy eyes,' she said, 'shrewd tutor, that hard heart of thine,
Hath taught them scornful tricks and such disdain
That they have murder'd this poor heart of mine;
And these mine eyes, true leaders to their queen,
But for thy piteous lips no more had seen.

'Long may they kiss each other for this cure!
O! never let their crimson livers wear;
And as they last, their venery still endure,
To drive infection from the dangerous year:
That the star-gazers, having writ on death,
May say, the plague is banish'd by thy breath.

'Pure lips, sweet seals in my soft lips imprinted,
What bargains may I make, still to be sealing?
To sell myself I can be well contented,
So thou wilt buy and pay and use good dealing;
Which purchase if thou make, for fear of slips
Set thy seal-manual on my wax-red lips.

'A thousand kisses buys my heart from me;
And pay them at thy leisure, one by one.
What is ten hundred touches unto thee?
Are they not quickly told and quickly gone?
Say, for non-payment that the debt should double,
Is twenty hundred kisses such a trouble?'

'Fair queen,' quoth he, 'if any love you owe me,
Measure my strangeness with my unripe years;
Before I know myself, seek not to know me;
No fisher but the ungrown fry forbears:
The mellow plum doth fall, the green sticks fast
Or being early pluck'd is sour to taste.

'Look! the world's comforter, with weary gait,
His day's hot task hath ended in the west;
The owl, night's herald, shrieks, 'tis very late;
The sheep are gone to fold, birds to their nest,
And coal-black clouds that shadow heaven's light
Do summon us to part and bid good night.

'Now let me say good night, and so say you;
If you will say so, you shall have a kiss.'
'Good night,' quoth she; and ere he said adieu,
The honey fee of parting tender'd is:
Her arms do lend his neck a sweet embrace;
Incorporate then they seem, face grows to face.

Till, breathless, he disjoin'd, and backward drew
The heavenly moisture, that sweet coral mouth,
Whose precious taste her thirsty lips well knew,
Whereon they surfeit, yet complain on drouth:
He with her plenty press'd, she faint with dearth,
Their lips together glid, fall to the earth.

Now quick desire hath catched the yielding prey,
And gluton-like she feeds, yet never filleth;
Her lips are conquerors, his lips obey,
Paying what ransom the insolent wileth;
Whose vulture thought doth pitch the price so high,
That she will draw his lips' rich treasure dry.

And having felt the sweetness of the spoil,
With blindfold fury she begins to forage;
Her face doth reek and smoke, her blood doth boil,
And careless lust stirs up a desperate courage;
Planting oblivion, beating reason back,
Forgetting shame's pure blush and honour's wrack.

Hot, faint, and weary, with her hard embrac-
ing,
Like a wild bird being tam'd with too much handling,
Or as the fleet-foot roe that's tir'd with chasing,
Or like the froward infant still'd with dandling,
He now obeys, and now no more resiseth,
While she takes all she can, not all she listeth.

What wax so frozen but dissolves with temper-
ing,
And yields at last to every light impression?
Things out of hope are compass'd oft with venturing,
Chiefly in love, whose leave exceeds commis-
sion:
Affection faints not like a pale-fac'd coward,
But then wont best when most his choice is froward.
VENUS AND ADONIS

When he did frown, O! had she then gave over,
Such nectar from his lips she had not suck'd.
Foul words and frowns must not repel a lover;
What though the rose have prickles, yet 'tis pluck'd:
Were beauty under twenty locks kept fast,
Yet love breaks through and picks them all at last.

For pity now she can no more detain him;
The poor fool prays her that he may depart;
She is resolv'd no longer to restrain him,
Bids him farewell, and look well to her heart,
The which, by Cupid's bow she doth protest,
He carries thence incaged in his breast.

'Sweet boy,' she says, 'this night I'll waste in sorrow,
For my sick heart commands mine eyes to watch.
Tell me, Love's master, shall we meet to-morrow?
Say, shall we? shall we? wilt thou make the match?'
He tells her, no; to-morrow he intends
To hunt the boar with certain of his friends.

'The boar!' quoth she; whereat a sudden pale,
Like lawn being spread upon the blushing rose,
Usurps her cheeks, she trembles at his tale,
And on his neck her yoking arms she throws:
She sinketh down, still hanging by his neck,
He on her belly falls, she on her back.

Now is she in the very lists of love,
Her champion mounted for the hot encounter:
All is imaginary she doth prove,
He will not manage her, although he mount her;
That worse than Tantalus is her annoy,
To clip Elysium and to lack her joy.

Even as poor birds, deceiv'd with painted grapes,
Do surfeit by the eye and pine the maw,
Even so she languisheth in her misshapes,
As those poor birds that helpless berries saw.
The warm effects which she in him finds missing,
She seeks to kindle with continual kissing.

But all in vain; good queen, it will not be:
She hath assayed as much as may be prov'd:
Her pleading hath deserv'd a greater fee;
She's Love, she loves, and yet she is not lov'd.
'Fie, fie!' he says, 'you crush me; let me go;
You have no reason to withhold me so.'

'Thou hadst been gone,' quoth she, 'sweet boy, ere this,
But that thou told'st me thou wouldst hunt the boar.
O! be advis'd; thou know'st not what it is
With javelin's point a churlish swine to gore,
Whose tushes never sheath'd he whettest still,
Like to a mortal butcher, bent to kill.

'On his bow-back he hath a battle set
Of bristly pikes, that ever threat his foes;
His eyes like glow-worms shine when he doth fret;
His snout digs sepulchres where'er he goes;
Being mov'd, he strikes whatever is in his way,
And whom he strikes his crooked tushes slay.

'His brawny sides, with hairy bristles arm'd,
Are better proof than thy spear's point can enter;
His short thick neck cannot be easily harm'd;
Being irdful, on the lion he will venture:
The thorny brambles and embracing bushes,
As fearful of him part, through whom he rushes.

'Alas! he nought esteems that face of thine,
To which Love's eyes pay tributary gazes;
Nor thy soft hands, sweet lips, and crystal eyne,
Whose full perfection all the world amazes;
But having thee at vantage, wondrous dread! Would root these beauties as he roots the mead.

'O! let him keep his loathsome cabin still;
Beauty hath nought to do with such foul fiends:
Come not within his danger by thy will;
They that thrive well take counsel of their friends.

When thou didst name the boar, not to dissemble,
I fear'd thy fortune, and my joints did tremble.

'Didst thou not mark my face? was it not white?
Saw'st thou not signs of fear lurk in mine eye? Grew I not faint? And felt I not downright? Within my bosom, whereon thou dost lie,
My boding heart pants, beats, and takes no rest.
But, like an earthquake, shakes thee on my breast.
VENUS AND ADONIS

For where Love reigns, disturbing Jealousy
Doth call himself Affection’s sentinel;
Gives false alarms, suggesteth mutiny,
And in a peacefull hour doth cry “Kill, kill!”

Distempering gentle Love in his desire,
As air and water do abate the fire.

This sour informer, this bate-breeding spy,
This canker that eats up Love’s tender spring,
This carry-tale, dissidentious Jealousy,
That sometime true news, sometime false doth bring,
Knocks at my heart, and whispers in mine ear
That if I love thee, I thy death should fear:

And more than so, presenteth to mine eye
The picture of an angry-chafing boar,
Under whose sharp fangs on his back doth lie
An image like thyself, all stain’d with gore;
Whose blood upon the fresh flowers being shed
Doth make them droop with grief and hang the head.

What should I do, seeing thee so indeed,
That tremble at the imagination?
The thought of it doth make my faint heart bleed,
And fear doth teach it divination:
I prophesy thy death, my living sorrow,
If thou encounter with the boar to-morrow.

But if thou needs wilt hunt, be rul’d by me;
Uncouple at the timorous flying hare,
Or at the fox which lives by subtlety,
Or at the roe which no encounter dare:
Pursue these fearful creatures o’er the downs,
And on thy well-breath’d horse keep with thy hounds.

And when thou hast on foot the purblind hare,
Mark the poor wretch, to overshoot his troubles
How he outruns the winds, and with what care

He “cranks and crosses with a thousand doubles:
The many musits through the which he goes
Are like a labyrinth to amaze his foes.”

Sometime he runs among a flock of sheep,
To make the cunning hounds mistake their smell,
And sometime where earth-delving omes keep
To stop the loud pursuers in their yell,
And sometime sorteth with a herd of deer;
Danger deviseth shifts; wit waits on fear:

For there his smell with others being mingled,
The hot scent-snuffing hounds are driven to doubt,
Ceasing their clamorous cry till they have singled
With much ado the cold fault cleanly out;
Then do they spend their mouths: Echo replies,
As if another chase were in the skies.

By this, poor Wat, far off upon a hill,
Stands on his hinder legs with listening ear,
To hearken if his foes pursue him still:
Anon their loud alarums he doth hear;
And now his grief may be compared well
To one sore sick that hears the passing-bell.

Then shalt thou see the dew-bedabbled wretch
Turn, and return, indenting with the way;
Each envious briar his weary legs doth scratch,
Each shadow makes him stop, each murmur stay:
For misery is trodden on by many,
And being low never reliev’d by any.

Lie quietly, and hear a little more;
Nay, do not struggle, for thou shalt not rise:
To make thee hate the hunting of the boar,
Unlike myself thou hear’st me moralize,
Applying this to that, and so to so;
For love can comment upon every woe.

Where did I leave? ‘No matter where,’ quoth he;
‘Leave me, and then the story aptly ends.’
The night is spent;’ Why, what of that?’ quoth she.
‘I am,’ quoth he, ‘expected of my friends;
And now ’tis dark, and going I shall fall.’
‘In night,’ quoth she, ‘desire sees best of all.’

But if thou fall, O! then imagine this,
The earth, in love with thee, thy footing trips,
And all is but to rob thee of a kiss.
Rich preys make true men thieves; so do thy lips
Make modest Dian cloudy and forlorn,
Lest she should steal a kiss and die forsworn.

Now of this dark night I perceive the reason:
Cynthia for shame obscures her silver shine,
Till forking Nature be condemn’d of treason,
For stealing moulds from heaven that were divine;
Wherein she fram’d thee in high heaven’s despite,
To shame the sun by day and her by night.
'And therefore hath she brib’d the Destinies, 736
To cross the curious workmanship of nature,
To mingle beauty with infortunes, 740
And pure perfection with impure defeature;
Making it subject to the tyranny 749
Of mad mischances and much misery;
As burning fevers, aques pale and faint, 752
Life-poisoning pestilence and frenzies wood, 745
The marrow-eating sickness, whose attaint 749
Disorder breeds by heating of the blood; 753
Surfeits, imposthumes, grief, and damn’d despair, 757
Swear nature’s death for framing thee so fair.

And not the least of all these maladies
But in one minute’s fight brings beauty under:
Both favour, savour, hue, and qualities, 769
Whereat the impartial gazer late did wonder, 740
Are on the sudden wasted, thaw’d and done, 749
As mountain-snow melts with the mid-day sun.

Therefore, despite of fruitless chastity, 745
Love-lacking vestals and self-loving nuns, 752
That on the earth would breed a scarcity 757
And barren dearth of daughters and of sons, 760
Be prodigal: the lamp that burns by night 763
Dries up his oil to lend the world his light.

What is thy body but a swallowing grave, 757
Seeming to bury that posterity
Which by the rights of time thou needs must have, 764
If thou destroy them not in dark obscurity? 767
If so, the world will hold thee in disdain, 770
Sith in thy pride so fair a hope is slain.

So in thyself thyself art made away; 769
A mischief worse than civil home-bred strife, 773
Or theirs whose desperate hands themselves do slay, 776
Or butcher-sire that reaves his son of life, 769
Foul-Canterbury rust the hidden treasure frets,
But gold that’s put to use more gold begets.

Nay then,’ quoth Adon, ‘you will fall again 769
Into your idle over-handled theme;
The kiss I gave you is bestow’d in vain, 772
And all in vain you strive against the stream;
For by this black-su’d night, desire’s foul nurse, 775
Your treatment makes me like you worse and worse.

If love have lent you twenty thousand tongues, 782
And every tongue more moving than your own, 776
Bewitching like the wanton mermaid’s songs, 789
Yet from mine ear the tempting tune is blown;
For know, my heart stands armed in mine ear, 792
And will not let a false sound enter there; 795
Lest the deceiving harmony should run 798
Into the quiet closure of my breast;
And then my little heart were quite undone, 799
In his bedchamber to be barr’d of rest. 802
No, lady, no; my heart longs not to groan, 805
But soundly sleeps, while now it sleeps alone.

What have you urg’d that I cannot reprove? 808
The path is smooth that leadeth on to danger; 815
I hate not love, but your device in love, 812
That lends embraces unto every stranger.
You do it for increase: O strange excuse! 815
When reason is the hard to lust’s abuse. 818

Call it not love, for Love to heaven is fled, 821
Since sweating Lust on earth usurp’d his name; 824
Under whose simple semblance he hath fed 827
Upon fresh beauty, blotting it with blame; 829
Which the hot tyrant stains and soon be-reaves, 832
As caterpillars do the tender leaves.

Love comforteth like sunshine after rain, 835
But Lust’s effect is tempest after sun;
Love’s gentle spring doth always fresh remain, 838
Lust’s winter comes ere summer half be done. 840
Love surfeits not, Lust like a glutton dies; 843
Love is all truth, Lust full of forged lies. 846

More I could tell, but more I dare not say; 849
The text is old, the orator too green.
Therefore, in sadness, now I will away; 852
My face is full of shame, my heart of teen: 855
Mine ears, that to your wanton talk attended, 858
Do burn themselves for having so offended.

With this he breaketh from the sweet embrace 861
Of those fair arms which bound him to her breast, 864
And homeward through the dark laund runs 867
Leaves Love upon her back deeply distress’d. 870
Look, how a bright star shooteth from the sky, 873
So glides he in the night from Venus’ eye;
VENUS AND ADONIS

Which after him she darts, as one on shore
Gazing upon a late-embarked friend,
Till the wild waves will have him seen no more,
Whose ridges with the meeting clouds contend:
So did the merciless and pitchy night
Fold in the object that did feed her sight.

Whereat amaz’d, as one that unaware
Hath dropp’d a precious jewel in the flood,
Or ’stonish’d as night-wanderers often are,
Their light blown out in some mistrustful wood;
Even so confounded in the dark she lay,
Having lost the fair discovery of her way. 828

And now she beats her heart, whereat it groans,
That all the neighbour caves, as seeming troubled,
Make verbal repetition of her moans;
Passion on passion deeply is redoubled:
‘Ay me!’ she cries, and twenty times, ‘Woe, woe!’
And twenty echoes twenty times cry so.

She marking them, begins a wailing note,
And sings extemporally a woeful ditty;
How love makes young men thrill and old men dole;
How love is wise in folly, foolish-witty:
Her heavy anthem still concludes in woe,
And still the choir of echoes answer so. 840

Her song was tedious, and outwore the night,
For lovers’ hours are long, though seeming short:
If pleas’d themselves, others, they think, delight
In such like circumstance, with such like sport:
Their copious stories, oftentimes begun,
End without audience, and are never done.

For who hath she to spend the night withal,
But idle sounds resembling parasites;
Like shrill-tongu’d tapsters answering every call,
Soothing the humour of fantastic wits?
She says, ’Tis so:’ they answer all, ’Tis so;
And would say after her, if she said ‘No.’ 852

Lot here the gentle lark, weary of rest,
From his moist cabinet mounts up on high,
And wakes the morning, from whose silver breast
The sun ariseth in his majesty;
Who doth the world so gloriously behold,
That cedar-tops and hills seem burnish’d gold.

Venus salutes him with this fair good morrow:
‘O thou clear god, and patron of all light,’ 860
From whom each lamp and shining star doth borrow
The beauteous influence that makes him bright,
There lives a son that suck’d an earthly mother,
May lend thee light, as thou dost lend to other.’ 864

This said, she hasteth to a myrtle grove,
Musing the morning is so much o’erworn,
And yet she hears no tidings of her love;
She hearkens for his hounds and for his horn:
Anon she hears them chant it lustily,
And all in haste she coasteth to the cry.

And as she runs, the bushes in the way
Some catch her by the neck, some kiss her face,
Some twine about her thigh to make her stay:
She wildly breaketh from their strict embrace,
Like a milch doe, whose swelling dugado ache,
Hastening to feed her fawn hid in some brake.

By this she hears the hounds are at a bay; 877
Whereat she starts, like one that spies an adder
Wreath’d up in fatal folds just in his way,
The fear whereof doth make him shake and shudder;
Even so the timorous yelping of the hounds
Appals her senses, and her spirit confounds.

For now she knows it is no gentle chase,
But the blunt boar, rough bear, or lion proud,
Because the cry remaineth in one place,
Where fearfully the dogs exclain aloud:
Finding their enemy to be so curt,
They all strain courtesy who shall cope him first. 888

This dismal cry rings sadly in her ear,
Through which it entereth to surprise her heart;
Who, overcome by doubt and bloodless fear,
With cold-pale weakness numbs each feeling part;
Like soldiers, when their captain once doth yield,
Theybasely fly and dare not stay the field.

Thus stands she in a trembling ecstasy,
Till, cheering up her senses sore dismay’d,
She tells them ’tis a causeless fantasy,
And childish error, that they are afraid;
Bids them leave quaking, bids them fear no more:
And with that word she spied the hunted boar,

1254
VENUS AND ADONIS

Whose frothy mouth bepainted all with red,
Like milk and blood being mingled both together,
A second fear through all her sinews spread,
Which madly hurries her she knows not whither:
This way she runs, and now she will no further,
But back retires to rate the boar for mutter.
A thousand spleens bear her a thousand ways,
She treads the path that she untreads again;
Her more than haste is meted with delays, 909
Like the proceedings of a drunken brain,
Full of respects, yet nought at all respecting,
In hand with all things, nought at all effecting. 912

Here kennel'd in a brake she finds a hound,
And asks the weary caitiff for his master,
And there another licking of his wound,
'Gainst venom dores the only sovereign plaster;
And here she meets another sadly scowling,
To whom she speaks, and he replies with howling.

When he hath ceas'd his ill-resounding noise,
Another flap-mouth'd mourner, black and grim,
Against the welkin volleys out his voice;
Another and another answer him,
Clapping their proud tails to the ground below,
Shaking their scratch'd ears, bleeding as they go. 924

Look, how the world's poor people are amaz'd
At apparitions, signs, and prodigies,
Whereon with fearful eyes they long have gaz'd,
Infusing them with dreadful prophesies; 928
So she at these sad sighs draws up her breath,
And, sighing it again, exclaims on Death.

'Hard-favour'd tyrant, ugly, meagre, lean,
Hateful divorce of love,'—thus chides she Death,—
'Grim-grinning ghost, earth's worm, what dost thou mean
To stifle beauty and to steal his breath,
Who when he liv'd, his breath and beauty set
Gloss on the rose, smell to the violet? 936

'If he be dead, O not! it cannot be,
Seeing his beauty, thou should'st strike at it;
O yes! it may; thou hast no eyes to see,
But hateful at random dost thou hit. 940
Thy mark is feeble age, but thy false dart
Mistakes that aim and cleaves an infant's heart.

'Hadst thou but bid beware, then he had spoke,
And, hearing him, thy power had lost his power.
The Destinies will curse thee for this stroke;
They bid thee crop a weed, thou pluck'st a flower.
Love's golden arrow at him should have fle'd,
And not Death's ebon dart, to strike him dead. 948
'Dost thou drink tears, that thou provok'st such weeping?
What may a heavy groan advantage thee?
Why hast thou cast into eternal sleeping
Those eyes that taught all other eyes to see?
Now Nature cares not for thy mortal vigour,
Since her best work is ruin'd with thyngour.'

Here overcome, as one full of despair,
She vail'd her eyelids, who, like sluices, stopp'd
The crystal tide that from her two cheeks fair
In the sweet channel of her bosom dropp'd;
But through the flood-gates breaks the silver rain,
And with his strong course opens them again.

O! how her eyes and tears did lend and borrow;
Her eyes seen in the tears, tears in her eye;
Both crystals, where they view'd each other's sorrow,
Sorrow that friendly sighs sought still to dry;
But like a stormy day, now wind, now rain,
Sighs dry her cheeks, tears make them wet again.

Variable passions throng her constant woe,
As striving who should best become her grief;
All entertain'd, each passion labours so,
That every present sorrow seemeth chief,
But none is best; then join they all together,
Like manyclouds consulting for foul weather.

By this, far off she hears some huntsman holls;
A nurse's song ne'er pleas'd her babe so well;
The dire imagination she did follow
This sound of hope doth labour to expel; 975
For now reviving joy bids her rejoice,
And flatters her it is Adonis' voice.

Whereat her tears began to turn their tide,
Being prison'd in her eye, like pearls in glass;
Yet sometimes falls an orient drop beside,
Which her cheek melts, as scorning it should pass,
To wash the foul face of the sluttish ground,
Who is but drunken when she seemeth drown'd.
VENUS AND ADONIS

O hard-believing love! how strange it seems
Not to believe, and yet too credulous;
Thy woe and woe are both of them extremes;
Despair and hope make thee ridiculous: 988
The one doth flatter thee in thoughts unlikely,
In likely thoughts the other kills thee quickly.

Now she unwraps the web that she hath wrought,
Adonis lives, and Death is not to blame; 992
It was not she that call'd him all to naught,
Now she adds honours to his hateful name;
She eleps him king of graves, and grave for kings,
Imperious supreme of all mortal things. 996

'No, no,' quoth she, 'sweet Death, I did but jest;
Yet pardon me, I felt a kind of fear
Whenas I met the boar, that bloody beast,
Which knows no pity, but is still severe;
Then, gentle shadow,—truth I must confess,—
I rail'd on thee, fearing my love's decease.

'Tis not my fault: the boar provok'd my tongue;
Be wreak'd on him, invisible commander; 1004
'Tis he, foul creature, that hath done thee wrong;
I did but act, he's author of my slander:
Grief hath two tongues: and never woman yet,
Could rule them both without ten women's wit.' 1008

Thus hoping that Adonis is alive,
Her rash suspect she doth extenuate;
And that his beauty may the better thrive,
With Death she humbly doth insinuate;
Tells him of trophies, statues, tombs; and stories
His victories, his triumphs, and his glories.

'O Jove!' quoth she, 'how much a fool was I,
To be of such a weak and silly mind 1016
To wail his death who lives and must not die
Till mutual overthrow of mortal kind;
For he being dead, with him is beauty slain,
And, beauty dead, black chaos comes again.

'Tis, he, fond love! thou art so full of fear
As one with treasure laden, besm'd with thieves;
Trifles, unwitnessed with eye or ear,
Thy coward heart with false rebinding grievances.'
'Even at this word she tears a merry horn,
Whereas she leaps that was but late forlorn.

As falcon to the lure, away she flies;
The grass stoops not, she treads on it so light;
And in her haste unfortunately spies
The foul boar's conquest on her fair delight;
Which seen, her eyes, as murder'd with the view,
Like stars asham'd of day, themselves withdrew: 1032

Or, as the snail, whose tender horns being hit,
Shrinks backwards in his shelly cave with pain,
And there, all smother'd up, in shade doth sit,
Long after fearing to creep forth again;
So, at his bloody view, her eyes are fled
Into the deep dark cabins of her head:

Where they resign their office and their light
To the disposing of her troubled brain; 1040
Who bids them still consort with ugly night,
And never wound the heart with looks again;
Who, like a king perplexed in his throne,
By their suggestion gives a deadly groan,

Whereat each tributary subject quakes;
As when the wind, imprison'd in the ground,
Struggling for passage, earth's foundation shakes,
Which with cold terror doth men's minds confound.
This mutiny each part doth so surprise
That from their dark beds once more leap her eyes;

And, being open'd, threw unwilling light
Upon the wide wound that the boar had trench'd
In his soft flank; whose wonted lily white
With purple tears, that his wound wept, was drench'd:
No flower was nigh, no grass, herb, leaf, or
But stole his blood and seem'd with him to bleed.

This solemn sympathy poor Venus noteth,
Over one shoulder doth she hang her head,
Dumbly she passions, frantically she doth
She thinks he could not die, he is not dead:
Her voice is stopp'd, her joints forget to bow,
Her eyes are mad that they have wept till now.

Upon his hurt she looks so steadfastly,
That her right dazzling makes the wound seem threes;
And then she reprehends her mangling eye,
That makes more gashes where no breach should be:
His face seems twain, each several limb is
For off the eye mistaken, the brain being troubled.

1238
"Tis true, 'tis true; thus was Adonis slain:
He ran upon the boar with his sharp spear, 1112
Who did not whet his teeth at him again,
But by a kiss thought to persuade him there;
And nuzzling in his flank, the loving swine
Sheathed unaware the tusk in his soft groin.

'Had I been tooth'd like him, I must confess,
With kissing him I should have kill'd him first;
But he is dead, and never did he bless
My youth with his; the more am I accurst.' 1120
With this she fellath in the place she stood,
And stains her face with his concealed blood.
She looks upon his lips, and they are pale;
She takes him by the hand, and that is cold;
She whispers in his ears a heavy tale,
As if they heard the woeful words she told;
She lifts the coffers lids that close his eyes,
Where, lo! two lamps, burnt out, in darkness lies; 1128
Two glasses where herself herself beheld
A thousand times, and now no more reflect;
Their virtue lost, wherein they late excel'd,
And every beauty robb'd of his effect:
'Wonder of time,' quoth she, 'this is my spittle,
That, you being dead, the day should yet be light.

'Since thou art dead, lo! here I prophesy,
Sorrow on love hereafter shall attend: 1136
It shall be wait'd on with jealousy,
Find sweet beginning, but unsavoury end;
Ne'er settled equally, but high or low;
That all love's pleasure shall not match his woe.

'It shall be fickle, false, and full of fraud,
Bud and be blasted in a breathing-while,
The bottom poison, and the top o'erstraw'd
With sweets that shall the trusting sight beguile:
The strongest body shall it make most weak,
Strike the wise dumb and teach the fool to speak.

'It shall be sparing and too full of riot,
Teaching decrepit age to tread the measures;
The staring ruffian shall it keep in quiet, 1149
Pluck down the rich, enrich the poor with treasures;
It shall be raging mad, and silly mild,
Make the young old, the old become a child.

'It shall suspect where is no cause of fear; 1153
It shall not fear where it should most mistrust;
It shall be merciful, and too severe,
And most deceiving when it seems most just;
Perverse it shall be, where it shows most toward,
Put fear to valour, courage to the coward.
VENUS AND ADONIS

'It shall be cause of war and dire events,
And set dissension 'twixt the son and sire; 1160
Subject and servile to all discontented,
As dry combustious matter is to fire:
Sith in his prime Death doth my love destroy,
They that love best their love shall not enjoy.'

By this, the boy that by her side lay kill'd 1165
Was melted like a vapour from her sight,
And in his blood that on the ground lay spill'd,
A purple flower sprung up, chequer'd with white;
Resembling well his pale cheeks, and the blood
Which in round drops upon their whiteness stood.

She bows her head, the new-sprung flower to smell,
Comparing it to her Adonis' breath; 1172
And says within her bosom it shall dwell,
Since he himself is rest from her by death:
She crops the stalk, and in the breach appears
Green dropping sap, which she compares to tears.

'Poor flower,' quoth she, 'this was thy father's guise,
Sweet issue of a more sweet-smelling sire
For every little grief to wet his eyes:
To grow unto himself was his desire, 1180
And so 'tis thine; but know, it is as good
To wither in my breast as in his blood.

'Here was thy father's bed, here in my breast;
Thou art the next of blood, and 'tis thy right:
Lo! in this hollow cradle take thy rest, 1185
My throbbing heart shall rock thee day and night:
There shall not be one minute in an hour
Wherein I will not kiss my sweet love's flower.'

Thus weary of the world, away she hies,
And yokes her silver doves; by whose swift aid
Their mistress, mounted, through the empty skies
In her light chariot quickly is convey'd; 1192
Holding their course to Paphos, where their queen
Means to immure herself and not be seen.
THE RAPE OF LUCRECE

TO THE RIGHT HONOURABLE HENRY Wriothesly

EARL OF SOUTHAMPTON AND BARON OF TICHFIELD.

The love I dedicate to your lordship is without end; whereof this pamphlet, without beginning, is but a superfluous moiety. The warrant I have of your Honourable disposition, not the worth of my untutored lines, makes it assured of acceptance. What I have done is yours; what I have to do is yours; being part in all I have, devoted yours. Were my worth greater, my duty would show greater; meanum, as it is, it is bound to your lordship, to whom I wish long life, still lengthened with happiness.

Your lordship's in all duty,

William Shakespeare.

THE ARGUMENT.

LUCIUS TARQUINIUS,—for his excessive pride surnamed Superbus,—after he had caused his own father-in-law, Servius Tullius, to be cruelly murdered, and contrary to the Roman laws and customs, not requiring or staying for the people's suffrages, had possessed himself of the kingdom, went, accompanied with his sons and other noblemen of Rome, to besiege Ardea. During which siege the principal men of the army meeting one evening at the tent of Sextus Tarquinius, the king's son, in their discourses after supper, every one commended the virtues of his own wife: among whom Collatinus extolled the incomparable chastity of his wife Lucretia. In that pleasant humour they all posted to Rome; and intending, by their secret and sudden arrival, to make trial of that which every one had before avouched, only Collatinus finds his wife,—though it were late in the night,—spinning amongst her maids: the other ladies were all found dancing and revelling, or in several disports. Whereupon the noblemen yielded Collatinus the victory, and his wife the fame. At that time Sextus Tarquinius, being inflamed with Lucrece's beauty, yet smothering his passions for the present, departed with the rest back to the camp; from whence he shortly after privily withdrew himself, and was, according to his estate, royally entertained and lodged by Lucrece at Collatium. The same night he treacherously stealth into her chamber, violently ravished her, and early in the morning speedeth away. Lucrece, in this lamentable plight, hastily dispatcheth messengers, one to Rome for her father, and another to the camp for Collatine. They came, the one accompanied with Junius Brutus, the other with Publius Valerius; and finding Lucrece attired in mourning habit, demanded the cause of her sorrow. She, first taking an oath of them for her revenge, revealed the actor, and the whole manner of his dealing, and withal suddenly stabbed herself. Which done, with one consent they all vowed to root out the whole hated family of the Tarquins; and, bearing the dead body to Rome, Brutus acquainted the people with the doer and manner of the vile deed, with a bitter invective against the tyranny of the king: wherewith the people were so moved, that with one consent and a general acclamation the Tarquins were all exiled, and the state government changed from kings to consuls.
THE RAPE OF LUCRECE

FROM the besieged Ardea all in post,
Borne by the trustless wings of false desire,
Lust-breathed Tarquin leaves the Roman host,
And to Collatium bears the lightless fire
Which, in pale embers hid, lurks to aspire,
And girdle with embracing flames the waist
Of Collatine’s fair love, Lucrece the chaste.

Haply that name of chaste unhappily set
This baseless edge on his keen appetite;
When Collatine unwisely did not let
To praise the clear unmatched red and white
Which triumph’d in that sky of his delight,
Where mortal stars, as bright as heaven’s beauties,
With pure aspects did him peculiar duties.
For he the night before, in Tarquin’s tent,
Unlock’d the treasure of his happy state;
What priceless wealth the heavens had him lent
In the possession of his beauteous mate;
Reckoning his fortune at such high-prong rate,
That kings might be espoused to more fame,
But king nor peer to such a peerless dame.

O happiness enjoy’d but of a few!
And, if possess’d, as soon decay’d and done
As is the morning’s silver-melting dew
Against the golden splendour of the sun;
An expir’d date, cancel’d are well begun:
Honour and beauty, in the owner’s arms,
Are weakly fortress’d from a world of harms.

Beauty itself doth of itself persuade
The eyes of men without an orator;
What needeth then apology be made
To set forth that which is so singular?
Or why is Collatine the publisher
Of that rich jewel he should keep unknown
From thievish ears, because it is his own?

Perchance his boast of Lucrece’ sovereignty
Suggested this proud issue of a king;
For by our ears our hearts oft tainted be:
Perchance that envy of so rich a thing,
Braving compare, disdainfully did sting
His high-pitch’d thoughts, that meaner men
should vaunt
That golden hop which their superiors want.

But some untimely thought did instigate
His all-too-timeless speed, if none of those:
His honour, his affairs, his friends, his state,
Neglected all, with swift intent he goes
To quench the coal which in his liver glows.
Of rash false heat, wrap’d in repentant cold,
Thy hasty spring still blaze, and ne’er grows old.

When at Collatium this false lord arriv’d,
Well was he welcom’d by the Roman dame,
Within whose face beauty and virtue striv’d
Which of them both should underprop her fame:
When virtue bragg’d, beauty would blush for shame;
When beauty boasted blushes, in despite
Virtue would stain that o’er with silver white.

But beauty, in that white intituled,
From Venus’ doves doth challenge that fair field;
Then virtue claims from beauty’s red,
Which virtue gave the golden age to gild
Their silver cheeks, and call’d it then their shield;
Teaching them thus to use it in the fight,
When shame assail’d, the red should fence the white.

This heraldry in Lucrece’ face was seen,
Argu’d by beauty’s red and virtue’s white;
Of either’s colour was the other queen,
Proving from world’s minority their right:
Yet their ambition makes them still to fight;
The sovereignty of either being so great,
That oft they interchange each other’s seat.

This silent war of lilies and of roses,
Which Tarquin view’d in her fair face’s field,
In their pure ranks his traitor eye enclous’d;
Where, lest between them both it should be kill’d,
The coward captive vanquished doth yield
To those two armes that would let him go,
Rather than triumph in so false a foe.

Now thinks he that her husband’s shallow tongue—
The niggard prodigal that prais’d her so—
In that high task hath done her beauty wrong,
Which far exceeds his barren skill to show:
Therefore that praise which Collatine doth owe
Enchanted Tarquin answers with surmise,
In silent wonder of still-gazing eyes.

This earthly saint, adored by this devil,
Little suspecteth the false worshipper;
For unstead’s thoughts do seldom dream on evil,
Birds never tim’d no secret bushes fear:
So guiltless she securely gives good cheer
And reverend welcome to her princely guest,
Whose inward ill no outward harm express’d:
THE RAPE OF LUCRECE

For that he colour'd with his high estate, 92
Hiding base sin in plaits of majesty;
That nothing in him seem'd inordinate,
Save sometime too much wonder of his eye,
Which, having all, all could not satisfy;
But, poorly rich, so wanteth in his store,
That, cloy'd with much, he pineth still for more.

But she, that never cop'd with stranger eyes,
Could pick no meaning from their parling looks,
Nor read the subtle-shining secrecyes
Writ in the glassy margents of such books:
She touch'd no unknown baits, nor fear'd no hooks;
Nor could she moralize his wanton sight,
More than his eyes were open'd to the light.

He stories to her ears her husband's fame,
Won in the fields of fruitful Italy;
And decks with praises Collatine's high name,
Made glorious by his manly chivalry
With bruised arms and wreaths of victory:
Her joy with heav'd-up hand she doth express,
And, wordless, so greets heaven for his success.

Far from the purpose of his coming thither,
He makes excuses for his being there:
No cloudy show of stormy blustering weather
Doth yet in this fair wealkin once appear; 116
Till sable Night, mother of Dread and Fear,
Upon the world dim darkness doth display,
And in her vaulty prison stows the Day.

For then is Tarquin brought unto his bed,
Intending weariness with heavy spright;
For after supper long he questioned
With modest Lucrece, and wore out the night:
Now leaden slumber with life's strength doth fight
And every one to rest themselves betake,
Save thieves, and cares, and troubled minds, that wake.

As one of which doth Tarquin lie revolving
The sundry dangers of his will's obtaining; 128
Yet ever to obtain his will resolving,
Though weak-built hopes persuade him to abstaining:
Despair to gain doth traffic oft for gaining;
And when great treasure is the most propos'd.
Though death be adjunct, there's no death propos'd.

Those that much covet are with gain so fond,
For what they have not, that which they possess
They scatter and unloose it from their bond, 136
And so, by hoping more, they have but less;
Or, gaining more, the profit of excess
Is but to surfeit, and such griefs sustain,
That they prove bankrupt in this poor-rich gain.

The aim of all is but to nurse the life
With honour, wealth, and ease, in waning age;
And in this aim there is such thwarting strife,
That one for all, or all for one we wage;
As life for honour in fell battles' rage;
Honour for wealth; and oft that wealth doth cost
The death of all, and all together lost.

So that in venturing ill we leave to be 148
The things we are for that which we expect;
And this ambitious foul infirmity,
In having much, torments us with defect
Of that we have: so then we do neglect 152
The thing we have: and, all for want of wit,
Make something nothing by augmenting it.

Such hazard now must doting Tarquin make,
Pawning his honour to obtain his lust, 156
And for himself himself he must forsake:
Then where is truth, if there be no self-trust?
When shall he think to find a stranger just,
When he himself himself confounds, betrays
To slanderous tongues and wretched hateful days? 161

Now stole upon the time the dead of night,
When heavy sleep had close'd up mortal eyes;
No comfortable star did lend his light, 164
No noise but owls' and wolves' death-boding cries;
Now serves the season that they may surprise
The silly lambs; pure thoughts are dead and still,
While lust and murder wake to stain and kill.

And now this lustful lord leap'd from his bed,
Throwing his mantle rudely o'er his arm;
Is madly tos'd between desire and dread;
Th' one sweetly flatters, th' other feareth harm;
But honest fear, bewitch'd with lust's foul charm,
Doth too oft betake him to retire,
Beaten away by brain-sick rude desire.

His falchion on a flint he softly smiteth, 176
That from the cold stone sparks of fire do fly;
Whereas a waxon torch forthwith he lighteth,
Which must be lode-star to his lustful eye;

1981
THE RAPE OF LUCE RE

And to the flame thus speaks advisedly: 120
‘As from this cold flint I enforc’d this fire,
So Lucrece must I force to my desire.’

Here pale with fear he doth premeditate
The dangers of his loathsome enterprise,
And in his inward mind he doth debate
What following sorrow may on this arise:
Then looking scornfully, he doth despise
His naked armour of still-slaughter’d lust,
And justly thus controls his thoughts unjust:

‘Fair torch, burn out thy light, and lend it not
To darken her whose light excelleth thine;
And die, unhallow’d thoughts, before you biot
With your uncleanness that which is divine;
Offer pure incense to so pure a shrine:
Let fair abhorrence abate the deed
That spots and stains love’s modest snow-white weed.

‘O shame to knighthood and to shining arms!
O foul dishonour to my household’s grave!
O impious act, including all foul harms!
A martial man to be soft fancy’s slave!
True valour still a true respect should have;
Then my digression is so vile, so base,
That it will live engraven in my face.

‘Yes, though I die, the scandal will survive,
And be an eye-sore in my golden coat;
Some loathsome dash the herald will contrive,
To eiper how fondly I did dote;
That my posterity shan’t with the note,
Shall curse my bones, and hold it for no sin
To wish that I had never had been.

‘What win I if I gain the thing I seek?
A dream, a breath, a froth of fleeting joy.
Who buys a minute’s mirth to wait a week?
Or sells eternity to get a toy?
For one sweet grape who will the vine destroy?
Or what fond beggar, but to touch the crown,
Would with the sceptre straight be strucken down?

‘If Collatinus dream of my intent,
Will he not wake, and in a desperate rage
Post hither, this vile purpose to prevent?
This siege that hath engirt his marriage,
This blur to youth, this sorrow to the sage,
This dying virtue, this surviving shame,
Whose crime will bear an ever-during blame?

‘O! what excuse can my invention make,
When thou shalt charge me with so black a deed?
[shake,
Will not my tongues be mute, my frail joints
Mine eyes forego their light, my false heart
bleed?’

The guilt being great, the fear doth still exceed;
And extreme fear can neither fight nor fly,
But coward-like with trembling terror die.

‘Had Collatinus kill’d my son or sire,
Or lain in ambush to betray my life,
Or were he not my dear friend, this desire
Might have excuse to work upon his wife,
As in revenge or quittal of such strife:
But as he is my kinsman, my dear friend,
The shame and fault finds no excuse nor end.

‘Shameful it is; ay, if the fact be known;
Hateful it is; there is no hate in loving:
I’ll beg her love; but she is not her own;
The worst is but denial and reproving;
My will is strong, past reason’s weak removing.
Who fears a sentence, or an old man’s saw,
Shall by a painted cloth be kept in awe.’

Thus, graceless, holds he disputation
’Tween frozen conscience and hot-burning will,
And with good thoughts makes dispensation,
Urging the worse sense for vantage still:
Which in a moment doth confound and kill
All pure effects, and doth so far proceed,
That what is vile shows like a virtuous deed.

Quoth he, ‘She took me kindly by the hand,
And gaz’d for tidings in my eager eyes,
Fearing some hard news from the war-like band
Where her beloved Collatinus lies.’
O! how her fear did make her colour rise:
First red as roses that on lawn we lay,
Then white as lawn, the roses took away.

‘And how her hand, in my hand being lock’d,
For’d it to tremble with her loyal fear!
Which struck her sad, and then it faster rock’d,
Until her husband’s welfare she did bear;
Whereat she smiled with so sweet a cheer,
That had Narcissus seen her as she stood,
Self-love had never drown’d him in the flood.

‘Why hunt I then for colour or excuses?
All orators are dumb when beauty pleaseth;
Poor wretches have remorse in prudent abuses;
Love thrives not in the heart that shadows dreadeth:
Affection is my captain, and he leadeth;
And when his gaudy banner is display’d,
The coward fights and will not be dismay’d.

‘Then, childish fear, avast! debating, die!
Respect and reason, wait on wrinkled age!
My heart shall never countermand mine eye:
Sad pause and deep regard beseech the sage;
My part is youth, and beats thee from the stage.

Desire my pilot is, beauty my prize;
Then who fears sinking where such treasure lies?’
THE RAPE OF LUCRECE

As corn o'ergrown by weeds, so heedful fear
Is almost chok'd by unresisted lust.
Away he steals with open listening ear,
Full of foul hope, and full of fond mistrust; 284
Both which, as servitors to the unjust,
So cross him with their opposite persuasion,
That now he vows a league, and now invasion.
Within his thought her heavenly image sits, 288
And in the selfsame seat sits Collatine:
That eye which looks on her confounds his wits;
That eye which him beholds, as more divine,
Unto a view so false will not incline; 292
But with a pure appeal seeks to the heart,
Which once corrupted, takes the worser part;
And therein heartens up his servile powers,
Who, flatter'd by their leader's jocund show,
Stuff up his lust, as minutes fill up hours; 297
And as their captain, so their pride doth grow,
Pay ing more slavish tribute than they owe.
By reprobate desire thus madly led, 300
The Roman lord marcheth to Lucrece's bed.
The locks between her chamber and his will,
Each one by him enforc'd, retire his ward;
But as they open they all rate his ill, 304
Which drives the creeping thief to some regard:
The threshold grates the door to have him heard;
Night-wandering weasels shriek to see him
They fright him, yet he still pursues his fear.
As each unwilling portal yields him way, 309
Through little vents and crannies of the place
The wind wars with his torch to make him stay,
And blows the smoke of it into his face, 312
Extinguishing his conduct in this case;
But his hot heart, which fond desire doth scorch,
Puffs forth another wind that fires the torch:
And being lighted, by the light he spies 316
Lucretia's glove, wherein her needle sticks:
He takes it from the rushes it lies,
And gripping it, the needl his finger pricks;
As who should say, 'This glove to wanton tricks
Is not inur'd; return again in haste;
Thou seest our mistress' ornaments are chaste.'

But all these poor forbiddings could not stay him;
He in the worst sense construes their denial: 324
The door, the wind, the glove, that did delay him,
He takes for accidental things of trial;
Or as those bars which stop the hourly dial,
Who with a ling'ring stay his course doth let,
Till every minute pays the hour his debt. 329

'So, so,' quoth he, 'these lets attend the time,
Like little frosts that sometime threat the spring,
To add a more rejoicing to the prime,
And give the snaped birds more cause to sing.
Pain pays the income of each precious thing;
Huge rocks, high winds, strong pirates,
Shelves and sands,
The merchant fears, ere rich at home he lands.' 336

Now is he come unto the chamber door,
That shuts him from the heaven of his thought,
Which with a yielding latch, and with no more,
Hath barr'd him from the blessed thing he sought. 340
So from himself impiety hath wrought,
That for his prey to pray he doth begin,
As if the heavens should countenance his sin.

But in the midst of his unfruitful prayer, 344
Having solicited the eternal power
That his foul thoughts might compass his fair
And they would stand auspicious to the hour,
Even there he starts: quoth he, 'I must de-flower;
The powers to whom I pray abhor this fact,
How can they then assist me in the act?

'Then Love and Fortune be my gods, my guide!
My will is back'd with resolution:
Thoughts are but dreams till their effects be tried;
The blackest sin is clear'd with absolution;
Against love's fire fear's frost hath dissolution.
The eye of heaven is out, and misty night 356
Covers the shame that follows sweet delight.'

This said, his guilty hand pluck'd up the latch,
And with his knee the door he opens wide.
The dove asleep that this night-owl will catch:
Thus treason works are traitors be espied.
Who sees the lurking serpent's step aside;
But she, sound sleeping, fearing no such thing,
Lies at the mercy of his mortal sting. 364

Into the chamber wickedly he stalks,
And gazeth on her yet unstained bed.
The curtains being close, about he walks,
Rolling his greedy eyeballs in his head: 368
By their high treason is his heart misled;
Which gives the watchword to his hand full soon,
To draw the cloud that hides the silver moon.
Look, as the fair and Flery-pointed sun, 372
Rushing from forth a cloud, bereaves our sight;
Even so, the curtain drawn, his eyes begun
To wink, being blinded with a greater light:
Whether it is that she reflects so bright,
That dazzleth them, or else some shame
supposed,
But blind they are, and keep themselves en-
closed.

Oh! had they in that darksome prison died,
Then had they seen the period of their ill;
Then Collatine again, by Lucrece’s side,
In his clear bed might have reposed still:
But they must ope, this blessed league to kill,
And holy-thoughted Lucrece to their sight
Must sell her joy, her life, her world’s delight.

Her lily hand her rosy cheek lies under,
Cozening the pillow of a lawful kiss;
Who, therefore angry, seems to part in sunder,
Swelling on either side to want his bliss;
Between whose hills her head entombed is:
Where, like a virtuous monument she lies,
To be admir’d of lewd unhallow’d eyes.

Without the bed her other fair hand was,
On the green coverlet; whose perfect white
Show’d like an April daisy on the grass,
With pearly sweat, resembling dew of night.
Her eyes, like marigolds, had sheath’d their light,
And canopied in darkness sweetly lay,
Till they might open to adorn the day.

Her hair, like golden threads, play’d with her breath;
O modest wants! wanton modesty!
Shewing life’s triumph in the map of death,
And death’s dim look in life’s mortality:
Each in her sleep themselves so beautify,
As if between them twain there were no strife,
But that life liv’d in death, and death in life.

Her breasts, like ivory globes circled with blue,
A pair of maiden words unconquerd,
Save of their lord no bearing yoke they knew,
And him by oath they truly honoured.
These words in Tarquin new ambition bred;
Who, like a foul usurper, went about
From this fair throne to heave the owner out.

What could he see but mightily he noted?
What did he note but strongly he desire’d?
What he beheld, on that he firmly sot’d,
And in his will his wifil eye he tir’d.
With more than admiration he admir’d
THE RAPE OF LUCRECE

His hand, that yet remains upon her breast,
Rude ram to batter such an ivory wall!
May feel her heart,—poor citizen,—distress'd
Wounding itself to death, rise up and fall,
Beating her bulk, that his hand shakes withal.
This moves in him more rage, and less pity,
To make the breach and enter this sweet city.

First, like a trumpet, doth his tongue begin
To sound a parley to his heartless foe;
Who o'er the white sheet peers her whiter chin,
The reason of this rash alarm to know,
Which he by dumb demeanour seeks to show;
But she with vehement prayers urgeth still
Under what colour he commits this ill.

Thus he replies: 'The colour in thy face,—
That even for anger makes the lily pale,
And the red rose blush at her own disgrace,
Shall plead for me and tell my loving tale;
Under that colour am I come to scale.'

'Thy never-conquer'd fort: the fault is thine,
For those thine eyes betray thee unto mine.'

'Thus I forestall thee, if thou mean to chide:
Thy beauty hath ensnar'd thee to this night,
Where thou with patience must my will abide,
My will that marks thee for my earth's delight,
Which I to conquer sought with all my might;
But as reproach and reason beat it dead,
By thy bright beauty was it newly bred.'

'I see what crosses my attempt will bring;
I know what thorns the growing rose defends;
I think the honey guarded with a sting;
All this, beforehand, counsel comprehendeth;
But will is deaf and bears no heedful friends:
Only he hath an eye to gaze on beauty,
And doth on what he looks, 'gainst law or duty.'

'I have debated, even in my soul,
What wrong, what shame, what sorrow I shall breed;
But nothing can affection's course control,
Or stop the headlong fury of his speed.
I know repentant tears ensue the deed,
Reproach, disdain, and deadly enmity;
Yet strive I to embrace mine infamy.'

This said, he shakes aloft his Roman blade,
Which like a falcon towering in the skies,
Coucheth the fowl below with his wings' shade,
Whose crooked beak threats if he mount he dies:
So under his insulting falshion lies

Harmless Lucretia, marking what he tells
With trembling fear, as fowl hear falcon's bells.

'Lucerce,' quoth he, 'this night I must enjoy thee:
If thou deny, then force must work my way,
For in thy bed I purpose to destroy thee:
That done, some worthless slave of thine I'll slay,
To kill thine honour with thy life's decay;
And in thy dead arms do I mean to place him,
Swearing I slew him, seeing thee embrace him.

'So thy surviving husband shall remain
The scornful mark of every open eye;
Thy kinsmen hang their heads at this disdain,
The issue blurr'd with nameless baserty:
And thou, the author of their obloquy,
Shalt have thine trespass cited up in times,
And sung by children in succeeding times.'

'But if thou yield, I rest thy secret friend:
The fault unknown is as a thought unacted:
A little harm done to a great good end,
For lawful policy remains enacted.
The poisonous simple sometimes is compacted
In a pure compound; being so applied,
His venom in effect is purified.'

'Then for thy husband and thy children's sake,
Tender my suit: bequeath not to their lot
The shame that from them no device can take,
The blemish that will never be forgot;
Worse than a slavish wipe or birth-hour's blot:
For marks descared in men's nativity
Are nature's faults, not their own infamy.'

Here with a cockatrice' dead-killing eye
He routeth up himself, and makes a pause;
While she, the picture of pure piety,
Like a white hind under the gripe's sharp claws,
Pleads in a wilderness where are no laws,
To the rough beast that knows no gentle right,
Nor aught obeys but his foul appetite.

But when a black-fac'd cloud the world doth threat,
In his dim mist the aspiring mountains hiding,
From earth's dark womb some gentle gust doth get,
Which blows these pitchy vapours from their biding,
Hindering their present fall by this dividing;
So his unhallow'd haste her words delays,
And moody Pluto winks while Orpheus plays.
THE RAPE OF LUCRECE

Yet, foul night-waking cat, he doth but daily, While in his hold-fast foot the weak mouse panteth: Her sad behaviour feeds his vulture folly, A swallowing gulf that even in plenty wanteth; His ear her prayers admits, but his heart granteth No penetrable entrance to her plaining: Tears harden lust though marble wear with raining.

Her pity-pleading eyes are sadly fix'd In the remorseless wrinkles of his face; Her modest eloquence with sighs is mix'd, Which to her oratory adds more grace. She puts the period often from his place; And midst the sentence so her accent breaks, That twice she doth begin ere once she speaks.

She conjures him by high almighty Jove, By knighthood, gentry, and sweet friendship's oath, By her untimely tears, her husband's love, By holy human law, and common troth, By heaven and earth, and all the power of both, That to his borrow'd bed he make retire, And stoop to honour, not to foul desire. Quoth she, 'Reward not hospitality With such black payment as thou hast pretended;

Mud not the fountain that gave drink to thee; Mar not the thing that cannot be amended; End thy ill aim before thy shoot be ended; He is no woodman that doth bend his bow To strike a poor unseasonable doe.

'My husband is thy friend, for his sake spare me; Thyself art mighty, for thine own sake leave me; Myself a weakling, do not, then, ensnare me; Thou look'rt not like deceit, do not deceive me. My sighs, like whirlwinds, labour hence to heave thee; If ever man were mov'd with woman's moans, Be moved with my tears, my sighs, my groans.

All which together, like a troubled ocean, Beat at thy rocky and wrath-threatening heart, To soften it with their continual motion; For stones dissolv'd to water do convert. O! if no harder than a stone thou art, Melt at my tears, and be compassionate; Soft pity enters at an iron gate.'

In Tarquin's likeness I did entertain thee; Hast thou put on his shape to do him shame? To all the host of heaven I complain me, Thou wrong'st his honour, wound'st his princely name. Thou art not what thou seem'st; and if the same, Thou seem'st not what thou art, a god, a king; For kings like gods should govern every thing. How will thy shame be seeded in thine age, When thus thy vices bud before thy spring! If in thy hope thou dar'st do such outrage, What dar'st thou not when once thou art a king? O! be remembered no outrageous thing From vassal actors can be wip'd away; Then kings' misdeeds cannot be hid in clay.

This deed will make thee only lov'd for fear; But happy monarchs still are fear'd for love: With foul offenders thou performe must bear, When they in thee the like offences prove: If but for fear of this, thy will remove; For princes are the glass, the school, the book, Where subjects' eyes do learn, do read, do look.

And wilt thou be the school where Lust shall learn? Must he in thee read lectures of such shame? Wilt thou be glass wherein it shall discern Authority for sin, warrant for blame? To privilege dishonour in thy name? Thou back'st reproach against long-living laud, And mak'st fair reputation but a bawd.

Hast thou command? by him that gave it thee, From a pure heart command thy rebel will: Draw not thy sword to guard iniquity, For it was lent thee all that brood to kill. Thy princely office how canst thou fulfill, When, pattern'd by thy fault, foul sin may say, He learn'd to sin, and thou didst teach the way?

Think but how vile a spectacle it was, To view thy present trespass in another. Men's faults do seldom to themselves appear; Their own transgressions partially they smother: This guilt would seem death-worthy in thy brother. O! how are they wrapp'd in with infamies That from their own misdeeds askance their eyes.
THE RAPE OF LUCRECE

'To thee, to thee, my heav'd-up hands appeal, 
Not to seducing lust, thy rash reliever: 
I sue for exil'd majesty's repeal; 640 
Let him return, and flattering thoughts retire: 
His true respect will prison false desire, 
And wipe the dim mist from thy doting eyene, 
That thou shalt see thy state and pity mine.' 

'Have done,' quoth he; 'my uncontrolled tide 
Turns not, but swells the higher by this let. 
Small lights are soon blown out, huge fires abide, 
And with the wind in greater fury fret: 
The petty streams that pay a daily debt 
To their salt sovereign, with their fresh falls' haste 
Add to his flow, but alter not his taste.' 

'Thou art,' quoth she, 'a sea, a sovereign king; 652 
And lo! there falls into thy boundless flood 
Black lust, dishonour, shame, misgoverning, 
Who seek to stain the ocean of thy blood. 
If all these petty ills shall change thy good, 656 
Thy sea within a puddle's womb is hears'd, 
And not the puddle in thy sea dispers'd.' 

'So shall these slaves be king, and thou face their slave; 
Thou nobly base, they basely dignified; 660 
Thou their fair life, and they thy fouler grave; 
Thou loathed in their shame, they in their pride: 
The lesser thing should not the greater hide; 
The cedar stoops not to the base shrub's foot, 664 
But low shrubs wither at the cedar's root.' 

'So let thy thoughts, low vassals to thy state— 
'No more,' quoth he; 'by heaven, I will not hear thee: 
Yield to my love; if not, enforced hate, 668 
Instead of love's coy touch, shall rudely tear thee; 
That done, despitefully I mean to bear thee 
Unto the base bed of some rascall groom, 
To be thy partner in this shameful doom.' 672

'Thus said, he saw his foot upon the light, 
For light and lust are deadly enemies; 
Shame folded up in blind concealing night, 
When most unseen, then most doth tyrannise 
The wolf hath seis'd his prey, the poor lamb cries; 677 
Till with her own white fleece her voice control'd 
Entombe her outcry in her lips' sweet fold:

For with the nightly linen that she wears 
He pens her piteous clamours in her head, 
Cooling his hot face in the chastest tears 
That ever modest eyes with sorrow shed. 
O! that prone lust should stain so pure a bed, 
The spots whereof could weeping purify, 
Her tears should drop on them perpetually. 

But she hath lost a dearer thing than life, 
And he hath won what he would lose again; 
This forced league doth force a further strife; 
This momentary joy breeds months of pain; 
This hot desire converts to cold disdain: 
Pure Chastity is rifled of her store, 692 
And Lust, the thief, far poorer than before. 

Look! as the full-fed hound or gorged hawk, 
Unapt for tender smell or speedy flight, 
Make slow pursuit, or altogether balk 696 
The prey wherein by nature they delight; 
So surfeit-taking Tarquin fares this night: 
His taste delicious, in digestion souring, 
Devours his will, that liv'd by foul devouring. 

O! deeper sin than bottomless conceit 
Can comprehend in still imagination; 
Drunken Desire must vomit his receipt, 
Ere he can see his own abomination. 
While Lust is in his pride, no exclamation 
Can curb his heat, or rein his rash desire, 
Till like a jade Self-will himself doth tire. 704

And then with lank and lean discouler'd cheek, 
With heavy eye, knit brow, and strengthless pace, 
Feeble Desire, all recreant, poor, and meek, 
Like to a bankrupt beggar wails his case: 
The flesh being proud, Desire doth fight with Grace, 712 
For there it revels; and when that decays, 
The guilty rebel for remission prays.

So fares it with this faithful lord of Rome, 
Who this accomplishment so hotly chas'd; 716 
For now against himself he sounds this doom, 
That through the length of times he stands disgrac'd; 
Besides, his soul's fair temple is defac'd; 
To whose weak ruins muster troops of cares, 
To ask the spotted princess how she fares. 722

She says, her subjects with foul insurrection 
Have batter'd down her consecrated wall, 
And by their mortal fault brought in subjection 
Her immortality, and made her thrall 725 
To living death, and pain perpetual: 
Which in her prudence she controlled still, 
But her foresight could not forestall their will.
THE RAPE OF LUCRECE

Even in this thought through the dark night he stealeth,
A captive victor that hath lost in gain;
Bearing away the wound that nothing healeth,
The scar that will despite of cure remain; 732
Leaving his spoil perplex'd in greater pain.
She bears the load of lust he left behind,
And he the burden of a guilty mind.

He like a thievish dog creeps sadly thence, 736
She like a wearied lamb lies panting there;
He scowls and hates himself for his offence,
She desperate with her nails her flesh doth tear;
He faintly flies, sweating with guilty fear, 740
She stays, exclaiming on the direful night;
He runs, and chides his vanish'd, loath'd delight.

He thence departs a heavy convertile,
She there remains a hopeless castaway; 744
He in his speed looks for the morning light,
She prays she never may behold the day;
'For day,' quoth she, 'night's 'scapes doth open lay,
And my true eyes have never prais'd how
To cloak offences with a cunning brow.' 749

'They think not but that every eye can see
The same disgrace which they themselves behold;
And therefore would they still in darkness be,
To have their unseen sin remain untold; 753
For they their guilt with weeping will unfold,
And grave, like water that doth eat in steel,
Upon my cheeks what helpless shame I feel.'

Here she exclaims against repose and rest, 757
And bids her eyes hereafter still be blind.
She wakes her heart by beating on her breast,
And bids it leap from thence where it may find
Some purer chest to close so pure a mind. 761

Frantic with grief thus breathes she forth her spite
Against the unseen secrecy of night:
'O comfort-killing Night, image of hell! 764
Dim register and notary of shame!
Black stage for tragedies and murders fell!
Vast sin-concealing chace! nurse of blame!
Blind muffled bawd! dark harbour for defame!
Grim cave of death! whispering conspirator
With close-tongued treason and the ravisher!

'O hateful, vaporous, and foggy Night!
Since thou art guilty of my curseless crime, 772
Muster thy mists to meet the eastern light,
Make war against proportion'd course of time;
Or if thou wilt permit the sun to shine
His wonted height, yet are we go to bed, 776
Knit poisonous clouds about his golden head.'

With rotten damp revish the morning air;
Let their exhal'd unwholesome breaths make sick
The life of purity, the supreme fair,
Ere he arrive his weary noontide priz;
And let thy misty vapours march so thick
That in their smoky ranks his smother'd light
May set at noon and make perpetual night.

'Were Tarquin Night, as he is but Night's child,
785
The silver-shining queen he would disdain;
Her twinkling handmaids too, by him defil'd,
Through Night's black bosom should not peep again:
788
So should I have co-partners in my pain;
And fellowship in woe doth woe assuage,
As palmers' chat makes short their pilgrim-age.

'Where now I have no one to blush with me,
To cross their arms and hang their heads with mine,
793
To mask their brows and hide their infamy;
But I alone alone must sit and pine,
Seasoning the earth with showers of silver brine,
796
Mingling my talk with tears, my grief with groans,
Poor wasting monuments of lasting moans.

'O Night! thou furnace of foul-reeking smoke,
Let not the jealous Day behold that face
800
Which underneath thy black all-hiding cloak
Immodestly lies martyr'd with disgrace;
Keep still possession of thy gloomy place,
That all the faults which in thy reign are made
May likewise be sepulchred in thy shade.

'Make me not object to the tell-tale Day!
The light will show, character'd in my brow,
The story of sweet chastity's decay,
The impious breach of holy wedlock vow:
Yea, the illiterate, that know not how
To cipher what is writ in learned books,
Will quote my loathsome trespass in my looks.

'The nurse, to still her child, will tell my story,
And fright her crying babe with Tarquin's name;
The orator, to deck his oratory,
Will couple my reproach to Tarquin's shame;
Festive minstrels, touting my defence,
Will tie the hearers to attend each line,
How Tarquin wronged me, I Collatine.
THE RAPE OF LUCRECE

'Let my good name, that senseless reputation, For Collatine's dear love be kept unspotted: 821 If that be made a theme for disputation, The branches of another root are rotted, And undeserv'd reproach to him allotted 824 That is as clear from this attaint of mine, As I ere this was pure to Collatine.

'O unseen shame! invisible disgrace! O unseal sore! crest-wounding, private scar! 828 Reproach is stamp'd in Collatinus' face, And Tarquin's eye may read the mot afar, How he in peace is wounded, not in war. 832 Alas! how many bear such shameful blows, Which not themselves, but he that gives them knows. 833

'If, Collatine, thine honour lay in me, From me by strong assault it is bereft. My honey lost, and I, a drone-like bee, 836 Have no perfection of my summer left, But robb'd and rapin'd by injurious theft: In thy weak hive a wandering wasp hath crept, And suck'd the honey which thy chaste bee kept. 840

'Yet am I guilty of thy honour's wrack; Yet for thy honour did I entertain him; Coming from thee, I could not put him back, For it had been dishonour to disdain him: 844 Besides, of weariness he did complain him, And talk'd of virtue: O! unlock'd for evil, When virtue is profan'd in such a devil.

'Why should the worm intrude the maiden bud? Or hateful cuckoo hatch in sparrows' nests? Or toads infect fair founts with venom mud? Or tyrant folly lurk in gentle breasts? Or kings be breakers of their own behests? 852 But no perfection is so absolute, That some impurity doth not pollute.

'The aged man that coffers up his gold Is plagu'd with cramps and gouts and painful fits; 856 And scarce hath eyes his treasure to behold, But like still-pining Tantalus he sits, And useless harms the harvest of his wits; Having no other pleasure of his gain But torment that it cannot cure his pain.

'So then he hath it when he cannot use it, And leaves it to be master'd by his young; Who in their pride do presently abuse it: 864 Their father was too weak, and they too strong, To hold their cursed-blessed fortune long, The sweets we wish for turn to loathed sours Even in the moment that we call them ours.

'Unruly blasts wait on the tender spring; 869 Unwholesome weeds take root with precious flowers; The adder hisses where the sweet birds sing; What virtue breeds iniquity devours: 872 We have no good that we can say is ours, But ill-annexed Opportunity Or kills his life, or else his quality.

'O Opportunity! thy guilt is great, 876 'Tis thou that execut'st the traitor's treason; Thou set'st the wolf where he the lamb may get; Whoever plots the sin, thou point'st the season; 'Tis thou that spur'st at right, at law, at reason; 880 And in thy shady cell, where none may spy him, Sits Sin to seize the souls that wander by him. 884 'Thou mak'st the vestal violate her oath; Thou blow'st the fire when temperance is thaw'd; Thou smother'st honesty, thou murder'st troth; Thou foul abettor! thou notorious bawd! Thou plantest scandal and displaceth laud; Thou ravisher, thou traitor, thou false thief, Thy honey turns to gall, thy joy to grief! 889

'Thy secret pleasure turns to open shame, Thy private feasting to a public fast, Thy smoothing titles to a ragged name, Thy sugar'd tongue to bitter wormwood taste: Thy violent vanities can never last. How comes it, then, vile Opportunity, Being so bad, such numbers seek for thee? 897

'When wilt thou be the humble supplicant's friend, And bring him where his suit may be obtained? When wilt thou sort an hour great strides to end? Or free that soul which wretchedness hath chains'd? 900 Give physic to the sick, ease to the pain'd? The poor, lame, blind, halt, creep, cry out for thee; But they ne'er meet with Opportunity.

'The patient dies while the physician sleeps; 904 The orphan pines while the oppressor feeds; Justice in feasting while the widow weeps; Advice is sporting while infection breeds; Thou grant'st no time for charitable deeds: 908 Wrath, envy, treason, rape, and murder's rages, Thy heinous hours wait on them as their pages.
"When Truth and Virtue have to do with thee,
A thousand crosses keep them from thy side: 912
They buy thy help; but Sin ne'er gives a fee,
He gratis comes; and thou art well appaid
As well to hear as grant what he hath said.

My Collatine would else have come to me 916
When Tarquin did, but he was stay'd by thee.

'Guilty thou art of murder and of theft,
Guilty of perjury and subornation,
Guilty of treason, forgery, and shift, 920
Guilty of incest, that abomination;
An accessory by thine inclination
To all sins past, and all that are to come,
From the creation to the general doom.' 924

'Mis-shapen Time, copesmate of ugly Night,
Swift stealth post, carrier of grisly care,
Eater of youth, false slave to false delight,
Base watch of woes, sin's pack-horse, virtue's
snare;
Thou nursest all, and murderest all that are;
O! hear me, then, injurious, shifting Time,
Be guilty of my death, since of my crime.

'Why hath thy servant, Opportunity, 932
Betray'd the hours thou gav'st me to repose?
Cancell'd my fortunes, and enchained me
To endless date of never-ending woes?
Time's office is to fixe the hate of foes;
To eat up errors by opinion bred,
Not spend the dowry of a lawful bed.

'Time's glory is to calm contending kings,
To unmask falsehood and bring truth to light,
To stamp the seal of time in aged things, 941
To wake the morn and sentinell the night,
To wrong the wronger till he render right,
To ruinate proud buildings with thy hours,
And smear with dust their glittering golden
towers;

'To fill with worm-holes stately monuments,
To feed oblivion with decay of things,
To blot old books and alter their contents, 948
To pluck the quills from ancient raven's wings,
To dry the old oak's sap and cherish springs,
To spoil antiquities of hammer'd steel,
And turn the giddy round of Fortune's
wheel;

'To show the beldam daughters of her daugh-
ter,
To make the child a man, the man a child,
To slay the tiger that doth live by slaughter,
To tame the unicorn and lion wild, 956
To mock the subtle, in themselves beguil'd,
To cheer the ploughman with increaseful
creeps,
And waste huge stones with little water.

'Why work'st thou mischief in thy pilgrimage,
Unless thou couldst return to make amends?
One poor retiring minute in an age
Would purchase thee a thousand thousand
friends,
Lending him wit that to bad debtors lends: 964
O! this dread night, wouldst thou one hour
come back,
I could prevent this storm and shun thy
wrack.

'Thou ceaseless lackey to eternity,
With some mischance cross Tarquin in his
flight: 968
Devises extremes beyond extremity,
To make him curse this cursed crimeful night:
Let ghastly shadows his low eyes affright,
And the dire thought of his committed evil
Shape every bush a hideous shapeless devil.

'Disturb his hours of rest with restless trances,
Afflict him in his bed with bedrid groans;
Let there bechance him pitiful mischances 976
To make him moan, but pity not his moans;
Stone him with harden'd hearts, harder than
stones;
[ness,
And let mild women to him lose their mild-
Wilder to him than tigers in their wildness.

'Let him have time to see his friends his foes,
And merry fools to mock at him resort; 989
Let him have time to mark how slow time goes
In time of sorrow, and how swift and short
His time of folly and his time of sport; 992
And ever let his unrecalling crime
Have time to wail the abusing of his time.

'O Time! thou tutor both to good and bad,
Teach me to curse him that thou taught'st this
ill;
At his own shadow let the thief run mad,
Himself himself seek every hour to kill;
Such wretched hands such wretched blood
should spill;

For who so base would such an office have
As slanderous deathman to so base a slave?

'The base is he, coming from a king,
To shame his hope with deeds degenerate:
The mightier man, the mightier is the thing 1004
That makes him honour'd, or begins him hate;
For greatest scandal waits on greatest state.
THE RAPE OF LUCRECE

The moon being clouded presently is miss'd,
But little stars may hide them when they list.

'The crow may bathe his coal-black wings in mire,
And unperceiv'd fly with the filth away;
But if the like the snow-white swan desire,
The stain upon his silver down will stay.

Poor grooms are sightless night, kings glorious day.
Gnats are unnoticed where'er they fly,
But eagles gaz'd upon with every eye.

'Out, idle words! servants to shallow fools,
Unprofitable sounds, weak arbitrators!
Busies yourselves in skill-contending schools;
Debate where leisure serves with dull debaters;
To trembling clients be you mediators:
For me, I force not argument a straw,
Since that my case is past the help of law.

In vain I rail at Opportunity,
At Time, at Tarquin, and uncheerful Night;
In vain I cavil with my infamy,
In vain I spurn at my confirm'd despite;
This helpless smoke of words doth me no right.
The remedy indeed to do me good,
Is to let forth my foul-defiled blood.

'Poor hand, why quiver'st thou at this decree?
Honour thyself to rid me of this shame;
For if I die, my honour lives in thee,
But if I live, thou liv'st in my defame;
Since thou couldst not defend thy loyal dame,
And wast afraid to scratch her wicked foe,
Kill both thyself and her for yielding so.'

This said, from her be-tumbled couch she starteth,
To find some desperate instrument of death;
But this no slaughter-house no tool imparteth
To make more vent for passage of her breath;
Which, thronging through her lips, so vanishest
As smoke from Ἐτών, that in air consumes,
Or that which from discharged cannon fumes.

'In vain,' quoth she, 'I live, and seek in vain
Some happy mean to end a hapless life:
I fear'd by Tarquin's falchion to be slain,
Yet for the self-same purpose seek a knife:
But when I fear'd I was a loyal wife:
So am I now: O not that cannot be;
Of that true type hath Tarquin rif't me.

'Oh that is gone for which I sought to live,
And therefore now I need not fear to die.
To clear this spot by death, at least I give
A badge of fame to slander's livery;
A dying life to living infamy.
Poor helpless help, the treasure stol'n away,
To burn the guiltless casket where it lay?'

'Well, well, dear Collatine, thou shalt not know
The stained taste of violated trutht
I will not wrong thy true affection so,
To flatter thee with an infringed oath;
This bastard graft shall never come to growth;
He shall not boast who did thy stock pollute
That thou art doting father of his fruit.

'Nor shall he smile at thee in secret thought,
Nor laugh with his companions at thy state;
But thou shalt know thy interest was not bought
Basely with gold, but stol'n from forth thy gate.
For me, I am the mistress of my fate,
And with my trespass never will dispense,
Till life to death acquit my fore'd offence.

'I will not poison thee with my attain:
Nor fold my fault in cleanly-cover'd excuses;
My sable ground of sin I will not paint,
To hide the truth of this false night's abuses;
My tongue shall utter all; mine eyes, like sluices,
As from a mountain-spring that feeds a dale,
Shall gush pure streams to purge my impure tale.'

By this, lamenting Philomel had ended
The well-tun'd warble of her nightly sorrow,
And solemn night with slow sad gait descended
To ugly hall; when, lo! the blushing morrow
Lends light to all fair eyes that light will borrow:
But cloudy Lucrece shames herself to see,
And therefore still in night would cloister'd be.

Revealing day through every cran'sy spies,
And seems to point her out where she sits weeping;
To whom she sobbing speaks: 'O eye of eyes!
Why pry'st thou through my window? leave thy peeping;
Mock with thy tickling beams eyes that are sleeping:
Brand not my forehead with thy piercing light,
For day hath nought to do what's done by night.'

Thus cavils she with everything she sees:
True grief is fond and testy as a child,
Who wayward once, his mood with nought agrees:
Old woes, not infant sorrows, bear them mild;
Continuance tames the one; the other wild,
Like an unpractic'd swimmer plunging still,
With too much labour drowns for want of skill.
THE RAPE OF LUCRECE

So she, deep-drenched in a sea of care,
Holds disputation with each thing she views,
And to herself all sorrow doth compare;
No object but her passion's strength renewes,
And as one shifts, another straight ensues: 1104
Sometime her grief is dumb and hath no words;
Sometime 'tis mad and too much talk affords.

The little birds that tune their morning's joy
Make her moans mad with their sweet melody:
For mirth doth search the bottom of annoy;
Sad souls are slain in merry company;
Grief best is pleas'd with grief's society:
True sorrow then is feelingly suff'rd
When with like semblance it is sympathetic.

'Tis double death to drown in ken of shore;
He ten times pines that pines beholding food;
To see the salve doth make the wound ache more;
Great grief grieves most at that would do it good;
Deep woes roll forward like a gentle flood,
Who, being stopp'd, the bounding banks o'erflows;
Grief daliied with nor law nor limit knows.

'You mocking birds,' quo'th she, 'your tunes entomb
Within your hollow-swelling feather'd breasts,
And in my bearing be you mute and dumb:
My restless discord loves no stops nor rests;
A woeful hostess brooks not merry guests:
Relish your nimble notes to pleasing ears;
Distress like dums when time is kept with tears.

'Come, Philomel, that sing'st of ravishment,
Make thy sad grove in my dishevell'd hair:
As the dank earth weeps at thy languishment,
So I at each sad strain will strain a tear,
And with deep groans the diapason bear;
For burthen-wise I'll hum on Tarquin still,
While thou on Tereus descant'st better skill.

'And whilsts against a thorn thou bear'st thy part
To keep thy sharp woes waking, wretched I,
To imitate thee well, against my heart
Will fix a sharp knife to affright mine eye,
Who, if it wink, shall thereon fall and die.
These means, as frets upon an instrument,
Shall tune our heart-strings to true languish-
ment.

'And for, poor bird, thou sing'st not in the day,
As shaming any eye should thee behold,
Some dark deep desert, seated from the way,
That knows nor parching heat nor freezing cold;
We will find out; and there we will unfold
To creatures stern sad tunes, to change their kinds:
Since men prove beasts, let beasts bear gentle minds.'

As the poor frightened deer, that stands at gaze,
Wildly determining which way to fly,
Or one encompass'd with a winding maze,
That cannot tread the way out readily;
So with herself is she in mutiny,
To live or die which of the twain were better,
When life is sham'd, and death reproach'd debtor.

'To kill myself,' quo'th she, 'alack! what were it
But with my body my poor soul's pollution?
They that lose half with greater patience bear it
Than they whose whole is swallow'd in con-
fusion.
That mother tries a merciless conclusion,
Who, having two sweet babes, when death takes one,
Will slay the other and be nurse to none.

'My body or my soul, which was the dearer,
When the one pure, the other made divine?
Whose love of either to myself was nearer,
When both were kept for heaven and Collatine?
Ay me! the bark peal'd from the lofty pine,
His leaves will wither and his sap decay;
So must my soul, her bark being peal'd away.

'Her house is sack'd, her quiet interrupted,
Her mansion better'd by the enemy;
Her sacred temple spotted, spoil'd, corrupted,
Grossly engraft with daring infamy:
Then let it not be call'd impiety,
If in this blemish'd fort I make some hole
Through which I may convey this troubled soul.

'Yet die I will not till my Collatine
Have heard the cause of my untimely death;
That he may vow, in that sad hour of mine,
Revenge on him that made me stop my breath.
My stained blood to Tarquin I'll heaquarter,
Which by him tainted, shall for him be spent,
And as his due writ in my testament.

1272
THE RAPE OF LUCRECE

'Mine honour I'll bequeath unto the knife. That wounds my body so dishonoured.
'Tis honour to deprive dishonour'd life;
The one will live, the other being dead:
So of shame's ashes shall my fame be bred; 1188
For in my death I murder shameful scorn:
My shame so dead, mine honour is new-born.

'Dear lord of that dear jewel I have lost,
What legacy shall I bequeath to thee? 1192
My resolution, love, shall be thy boast,
By whose example thou reveng'd mayst be.
How Tarquin must be us'd, read it in me:
Myself, thy friend, will kill myself, thy foe,
And for my sake serve thou false Tarquin so.

'This brief abridgment of my will I make:
My soul and body to the skies and ground;
My resolution, husband, do thou take; 1200
Mine honour be the knife's that makes my wound;
My shame be his that did my fame confound;
And all my fame that lives disbursed be
To those that live, and think no shame of me.

'Thou, Calpurnia, shalt oversee this will; 1205
How was I overseen that thou shalt see it!
My blood shall wash the slander of mine ill;
My life's soul deed, my life's fair end shall free it.
Faint not, faint heart, but stoutly say, "So be it:"

Yield to my hand; my hand shall conquer thee:
Thou dead, both die, and both shall victors be.'

This plot of death when sadly she had laid, 1212
And wip'd the brinish pearl from her bright eyes,
With untun'd tongue she hoarsely call'd her maid,
Whose swift obedience to her mistress hie:
For fleet-wing'd duty with thought's feathers flies.
1216
Poor Lucrece' cheeks unto her maid seem so
As winter meads when sun doth melt their snow.

Her mistress she doth give demure good-morrow,
With soft slow tongue, true mark of modesty,
And sorts a sad look to her lady's sorrow,
For why her face wore sorrow's livery;
But durst not ask of her audaciously
Why her two suns were cloud-eclipsed so,
Nor why her fair cheeks overshadow'd with woe.
1225

But as the earth doth weep, the sun being set,
Each flower moisten'd like a melting eye;
Even so the maid with swelling drops 'gan wet
Her circled eyne, enforc'd by sympathy.
Of those fair suns set in her mistress' sky,
Who in a salt-way'd ocean quench their light,
Which makes the maid weep like the dewy night.

A pretty while these pretty creatures stand,
Like ivory conduits coral cisterns filling;
One justly weeps, the other takes in hand
No cause but company of her drops spilling.
Their gentle sex to weep are often willing,
Grieving themselves to guess at others' smarts,
And then they drown their eyes or break their hearts:
For men have marble, women waxen minds,
And therefore are they form'd as marble will;
The weak oppress'd, the impression of strange kinds
Is form'd in them by force, by fraud, or skil;
Then call them not the authors of their ill.
No more than wax shall be accounted evil
Wherein is stamp'd the semblance of a devil.
Their smoothness, like a goodly champaign plain,
Lays open all the little worms that creep;
In men, as in a rough-grown grove, remain
Cave-keeping evils that obscurely sleep:
Through crystal walls each little mote will peep;
Though men can cover crimes with bold stern looks.
Poor women's faces are their own faults' books.

No man inveigh against the wither'd flower,
But chide rough winter that the flower hath kill'd:
Not that devour'd, but that which doth devour,
Is worthy blame. O! let it not be hild.
Poor women's faults, that they are so fulfill'd
With men's abuses: these proud lords, to blame,
Make weak-made women tenants to their shame.

The precedent whereof in Lucrece view,
Assail'd by night with circumstances strong
Of present death, and shame that might ensue
By that her death, to do her husband wrong:
Such danger to resistance did belong,
That dying fear through all her body spread;
And who cannot abuse a body dead?
THE RAPE OF LUCRECE

By this, mild patience bid fair Lucrece speak
To the poor counterfeit of her complaining:
‘My girl,’ quoth she, ‘on what occasion break
Those tears from thee, that down thy cheeks
are raining?
If thou dost weep for grief of my sustaining,
Know, gentle wench, it small avails my
mood:’
If tears could help, mine own would do me
good.

‘But tell me, girl, when went’—and there she
stay’d
Till after a deep groan—‘Tarquin from
hence?’—

‘Madam, ere I was up,’ replied the maid,
‘The more to blame my sluggard negligence:
Yet with the fault I thus far can dispense;
Myself was stirring ere the break of day,
And, ere I rose, was Tarquin gone away.

‘But, lady, if your maid may be so bold,
She would request to know your heaviness.’
‘O! peace,’ quoth Lucrece; ‘if it should be
told,
The repetition cannot make it less;
For more it is than I can well express:
And that deep torture may be call’d a hell,
When more is felt than one hath power to
tell.

‘Go, get me hither paper, ink, and pen;
Yet save that labour, for I have them here.
What should I say? One of my husband’s men
Bid thou be ready by and by, to bear
A letter to my lord, my love, my dear:
Bid him with speed prepare to carry it;
The cause crave haste, and it will soon be
writ.’

Her maid is gone, and she prepares to write,
First hovering o’er the paper with her quill:
Conceit and grief an eager combat fight;
What wit sets down is blotted straight with
will;
This is too curious-good, this blunt and ill:

Much like a press of people at a door,
Throng her inventions, which shall go before.

At last she thus begins: ‘Thou worthy lord
Of that unworthy wife that grieves thee,
Health to thy person! next vouchsafe t’afford,
If ever, love, thy Lucrece thou wilt see,
Some present speed to come and visit me.
So I commend me from our house in grief:
My woes are tedious, though my words are
brevi.’

Here folds she up the tenour of her woe,
Her certain sorrow writ uncertainly.
By this short schedule Collatine may know
Her grief, but not her grief’s true quality:
She dares not thereof make discovery,
Lest he should hold it her own gross abuse,
Ere she with blood had stain’d her stain’d
excuse.

Besides, the life and feeling of her passion
She hoards, to spend when he is by to hear her;
When sighs, and groans, and tears may grace
the fashion
Of her disgrace, the better so to clear her
From that suspicion which the world might
bear her.

To shun this blot, she would not blot the
letter
With words, till action might become them
better.

To see sad sights moves more than bear them
told;
For then the eye interprets to the ear
The heavy motion that it doth behold,
When every part a part of woe doth bear:
’Tis but a part of sorrow that we hear;

Deep sounds make lesser noise than shallow
fords,
And sorrow ebbs, being blown with wind of
words.

Her letter now is seal’d, and on it writ
‘At Ardea to my lord, with more than haste.’
The post attends, and she delivers it,
Charging the sour-fac’d groom to hie as fast
As lagging fowls before the northern blast.

Speed more than speed but dull and slow she
deems:
Extremity still urgeth such extremes.

The homely villein curtsies to her low;
And, blushing on her, with a steadfast eye
Receives the scroll without or yes or no,
And forth with bashful innocence doth his:
But they whose guilt within their bosoms lie
Imagine every eye beholds their blame;
For Lucrece thought he blush’d to see her
shame:

When, silly groom! God wot, it was defect
Of spirit, life, and bold audacity.
Such harmless creatures have a true respect
To talk in deeds, while others saucily
Promise more speed, but do it leisurely:
Even so this pattern of the worm-out age
Pawn’d honest looks, but laid no words to
gage.
His kindled duty kindled their mistrust; 1352
That two red fires in both their faces blaz'd;
She thought he blus'h'd, as knowing Tarquin's
lust,
And, blushing with him, wistly on him gaz'd;
Her earnest eye did make him more amaz'd:
The more she saw the blood his cheeks re-
plenish,
\[\text{The more she thought he spied in her some}
blemish.\]

But long she thinks till he return again,
And yet the duteous vassal scarce is gone. 1360
The weary time she cannot entertain.
For now 'tis stale to sigh, to weep, and groan:
So woe hath wearied woe, moan tired moan,
That she her plaints a little while doth stay,
Pausing for means to mourn some newer
way. 1365

At last she calls to mind where hangs a piece
Of skilful painting, made for Priam's Troy;
Before the which is drawn the power of Greece,
For Helen's rape the city to destroy, 1369
Threatning cloud-kissing Ilion with annoy;
Which the conceited painter drew so proud,
As heaven, it seem'd, to kiss the turrets bow'd.

A thousand lamentable objects there, 1373
In scorn of nature, art gave lifeless life;
Many a dry drop seem'd a weeping tear,
Shed for the slaughter'd husband by the wife:
The red blood reek'd, to show the painter's
 strife;
And dying eyes gleam'd forth their ashy
lights,
Like dying coals burnt out in tedious nights.

There might you see the labouring pioneer, 1380
Begrím'd with sweat, and smeared all with
dust;
And from the towers of Troy there would
appear
The very eyes of men through loop-holes thrust,
Gazing upon the Greeks with little lust: 1384
Such sweet observance in this work was had,
That one might see those far-off eyes look sad.

In great commanders grace and majesty
You might behold, triumphing in their faces;
In youth quick bearing and dexterity; 1389
And here and there the painter interlaces
Pale cowards, marching on with trembling
paces;
Which heartless peasants did so well re-
semble,
That one would swear he saw them quake and
tremble.

In Ajax and Ulysses, O! what art
Of physiognomy might one behold;
The face of either cipher'd either's heart; 1396
Their face their manners most expressly told:
In Ajax' eyes blunt rage and rigour roll'd;
But the mild glance that sly Ulysses lent
Show'd deep regard and smiling government.

There pleading might you see grave Nestor
stand, 1401
As 'twere encouraging the Greeks to fight;
Making such sober action with his hand,
That it beguil'd attention, charm'd the sight.
In speech, it seem'd, his beard, all silver white,
Wagg'd up and down, and from his lips did
fly
Thin winding breath, which pur'd up to the
sky.

About him were a press of gaping faces, 1408
Which seem'd to swallow up his sound advice;
All jointly listening, but with several graces,
As if some mermaid did their ears entice,
Some high, some low, the painter was so
nice; 1412
The scalps of many, almost hid behind,
To jump up higher seem'd, to mock the mind.

Here one man's hand lean'd on another's head,
His nose being shadow'd by his neighbour's ear;
Here one being throng'd bears back, all boll'n and red; 1417
Another smother'd, seems to pelt and swear;
And in their rage such signs of rage they bear,
As, but for loss of Nestor's golden words, 1420
It seem'd they would debate with angry
swords.

For much imaginary work was there;
Conceit deceitful, so compact, so kind,
That for Achilles' image stood his spear, 1424
Grip'd in an armed hand; himself behind,
Was left unseen, save to the eye of mind:
A hand, a foot, a face, a leg, a head,
Stood for the whole to be imagined. 1428

And from the walls of strong-besieged Troy,
When their brave hope, bold Hector, march'd to
field,
Stood many Trojan mothers, sharing joy
To see their youthful sons bright weapons
wield; 1432
And to their hope they such odd action yield,
That through their light joy seemed to
appear,—
Like bright things stain'd—a kind of heavy
fear.
THE RAPE OF LUCRECE

And, from the strand of Dardan, where they fought, To Simois' reedy banks the red blood ran, Whose waves to imitate the battle sought With swelling ridges; and their ranks began To break upon the galled shore, and then Retire again, till meeting greater ranks They join and shoot their foam at Simois' banks.  

To this well-painted piece is Lucrece come, To find a face where all distress is stoll'd. Many she sees where cares have carved some, But none where all distress and dolour dwell'd, Till desiring Hecuba beheld, Staring on Priam's wounds with her old eyes, Which bleeding under Pyrrhus' proud foot lies. In her the painter had anatomiz'd Time's ruin, beauty's wrack, and grim care's reign: Her cheeks with chaps and wrinkles were disguis'd; Of what she was no semblance did remain; Her blue blood chang'd to black in every vein, Wanting the spring that those shrunk pipes had fed, Show'd life imprison'd in a body dead. On this sad shadow Lucrece spends her eyes, And shapes her sorrow to the balm'd woes, Who nothing wants to answer her but cries, And bitter words to ban her cruel foes: The painter was no god to lend her those; And therefore Lucrece swears he did her wrong, To give her so much grief and not a tongue. 'Poor instrument,' quoth she, 'without a sound, I'll tune thy woes with my lamenting tongue, And drop sweet balm in Priam's painted wound, And rail on Pyrrhus that hath done him wrong, And with my tears quench Troy that burns so long, And with my knife scratch out the angry eyes Of all the Greeks that are thine enemies. 'Show me the strumpet that began this stir, That with my nails her beauty I may tear. Thy heart of lust, fond Paris, did incur This load of wrath that burning Troy doth bear: Thy eye kindled the fire that burneth here; And here in Troy, for trespass of thine eye, The sire, the son, the dame, and daughter die. Why should the private pleasure of some one Become the public plague of many moe? Let sin, alone committed, light alone Upon his head that hath transgress so; Let guiltless souls be freed from guilty woe; For one's offence why should so many fall, To plague a private sin in general? 'Lo! here weeps Hecuba, here Priam dies, Here manly Hector faints, here Troilus swoonds, Here friend by friend in bloody channel lies, And friend to friend gives unadvised wounds, And one man's lust these many lives confounds: Had doting Priam check'd his son's desire, Troy had been bright with fame and not with fire. Here feelingly she weeps Troy's painted woes; For sorrow, like a heavy-hanging bell, Once set on ringing, with his own weight goes; Then little strength rings out the doleful knell: So Lucrece, set a work, sad tales doth tall To pencil'd pensiveness and colour'd sorrow; She lends them words, and she their looks doth borrow. She throws her eyes about the painting round, And whom she finds forlorn she doth lament: At last she sees a wretched image bound, That piteous looks to Phrygian shepherds lent; His face, though full of cares, yet show'd content; Onward to Troy with the blunt swains he goes, So mild, that Patience seem'd to scorn his In him the painter labour'd with his skill To hide deceit, and give the harmless show An humble gait, calm looks, eyes waiting still, A brow unbent that seem'd to welcome woe; Cheeks neither red nor pale, but mingled so That blushing red no guilty instance gave, Nor saby pale the fear that false hearts have. But, like a constant and confirmed devil, He entertain'd a show so seeming-just, And therein so ensconce'd his secret evil, That jealousy itself could not mistrust False-creeping craft and perjury should thrust Into so bright a day such black-fac'd storms, Or blot with hell-born sin such saint-like forms.

The well-skil'd workman this mild image drew For perjur'd Simon, whose enchanting story The treacherous old Priam after slew; Whose words, like wildfire, burnt the shining glory

Of rich-built Ilium, that the skies were sorry.
And little stars shot from their fixed places, When their glass fell wherein they view'd their faces.

This picture she advisedly perus'd, And chid the painter for his wondrous skill, Saying, some shape in Simon's was abus'd; So fair a form lodg'd not a mind so ill: And still on him she gaz'd, and gazing still, Such signs of truth in his plain face she spied, That she concludes the picture was belied.

'It cannot be,' quoth she, 'that so much guile,'—
She would have said,—can lurk in such a look;— But Tarquin's shape came in her mind the while, 1536
And from her tongue 'can lurk' from 'cannot' took: 'It cannot be,' she in that sense forsook, And turn'd it thus: 'It cannot be, I find, But such a face should bear a wicked mind:

For even as subtle Simon here is painted, 1541
So sober-sad, so weary, and so mild, As if with grief or travail he had fainted, To me came Tarquin armed; so beguil'd 1544
With outward honesty, but yet delil'd
With inward vice: as Priam him did cherish, So did I Tarquin; so my Troy did perish.

'Look, look, how listening Priam wets his eyes, To see those borrow'd tears that Simon sheds! Priam, why art thou old and yet not wise? For every tear he falls a Trojan bleeds: His eye drops fire, no water thence proceeds; Those round clear pearls of his, that move thy pity, 1553
Are balls of quenchless fire to burn thy city.

'Such devils steal effects from lightless hell; For Simon in his fire doth quake with cold, 1556
And in that cold hot-burning fire doth dwell; These contraries such unity do hold, Only to flatter fools and make them bold:
So Priam's trust false Simon's tears doth flatter,
That he finds means to burn his Troy with water.'

Here, all enrag'd, such passion her assails, That patience is quite beaten from her breast, She tears the senseless Simon with her nails, Comparing him to that unhappy guest 1565
Whose deed hath made herself herself detest: At last she smilingly with this gives o'er; 'Fool, fool!' quoth she, 'his wounds will not be sore.' 1568

Thus ebbs and flows the current of her sorrow, And time doth weary time with her complaining. She looks for night, and then she longs for morrow, And both she thinks too long with her remaining: 1572
Short time seems long in sorrow's sharp sustaining:
Though woe be heavy, yet it seldom sleeps; And they that watch see time how slow it creeps.

Which all this time hath overslip'd her thought, 1576
That she with painted images hath spent;
Being from the feeling of her own grief brought By deep surmise of others' detriment;
Losing her woes in shows of discontent. 1580
It easeth some, though none it ever cur'd,
To think their dolour others have endur'd.

But now the mindful messenger, come back, Brings home his lord and other company; 1584
Who finds his Lucrece clad in mourning black; And round about her tear-distained eye
Blue circles stream'd, like rainbows in the sky:
These water-galls in her dim element Foretell new storms to those already spent.

Which when her sad-beholding husband saw, Amazedly in her sad face he stares:
Her eyes, though sod in tears, look'd red and raw, 1593
Her lively colour kill'd with deadly cares;
He hath no power to ask her how she fares: Both stood like old acquaintance in a trance, Met far from home, wondering each other's chance.

At last he takes her by the bloodless hand, And thus begins: 'What unseath ill event Hath thee befell'n, that thou dost trembling stand? Sweet love, what spite hath thy fair colour spent? 1600
Why art thou thus attir'd in discontent? Unmask, dear dear, this moody heaviness, And tell thy grief, that we may give redress.'

Three times with sighs she gives her sorrow fire, Ere once she can discharge one word of woe: At length address'd to answer his desire, She modestly prepares to let them know Her honour is ta'en prisoner by the foe; 1608
While Collatine and his consorted lords With sad attention long to hear her words.
THE RAPE OF LUCRECE

And now this pale swan in her watery nest
Begins the sad dirge of her certain ending. 1612
'Few words,' quoth she, 'shall fit the trespass
best,
Where no excuse can give the fault amending:
In me moe woe than words are now depending;
And my laments would be drawn out too long,
To tell them all with one poor tired tongue.

'Then be this all the task it hath to say:
Dear husband, in the interest of thy bed
A stranger came, and on that pillow lay 1620
Where thou wast wont to rest thy weary head;
And what wrong else may be imagined
By foul enforcement might be done to me,
From that, alas! thy Lucrece is not free. 1624

'For in the dreadful dead of dark midnight,
With shining falchion in my chamber came
A creeping creature with a flaming light,
And softly cried, 'Awake, thou Roman dame,
And entertain my love; else lasting shame 1629
On thee and thine this night I will inflict,
If thou my love's desire do contradict.

"'For some hard-favoured'groom of thine,'"
quoth he, 1632
"Unless thou yoke thy liking to my will,
I'll murder straight, and then I'll slaughter thee,
And swear I found you where you did fulfill
The loathsome act of lust, and so did kill 1636
The lechers in their deed: this act will be
My fame, and thy perpetual infamy.'"

'With this I did begin to start and cry,
And then against my heart he set his sword,
Swearing, unless I took all patiently, 1641
I should not live to speak another word;
So should my shame still rest upon record,
And never be forgot in mighty Rome 1644
The adulterate death of Lucrece and her

'When enemy was strong, my poor self weak,
And far the weaker with so strong a fear:
My bloody judge forbade my tongue to speak;
No rightful plea might plead for justice there:
His scarlet lust came evidence to swear.

That my poor beauty had purloin'd his eyes;
And when the judge is robb'd the prisoner
dies. 1652

'O! teach me how to make mine own excuse,
Or, at the least, this refuge let me find;
Though my gross blood be stain'd with this
abuse,
Immaculate and spotless is my mind; 1656
That was not forc'd; that never was inclin'd
To accessory yieldings, but still pure
Both in her poison'd closet yet endure.'

Lo! here the helpless merchant of this loss, 1660
With head declin'd, and voice damm'd up with
woe,
With sad-set eyes, and wretched arms across,
From lips new-waxen pale begins to blow
The grief away that stops his answer so: 1664
But, wretched as he is, he strives in vain;
What he breathes out his breath drinks up
again.

As through an arch the violent roaring tide
Outruns the eye that doth behold his haste,
Yet in the eddy boundeth in his pride 1669
Back to the strait that for'd him on so fast;
In rage sent out, recall'd in rage, being past:
Even so his sighs, his sorrows, make a saw,
To push grief on, and back the same grief
draw. 1673

Which speechless woe of his poor she attendeth,
And his untimely frenzy thus awaketh:
'Dear lord, thy sorrow to my sorrow lendest
Another power; no flood by raining slaketh.
My woe too sensible thy passion maketh 1678
More feeling-painful: let it then suffice
To drown one woe, one pair of weeping eyes.

'And for my sake, when I might charm thee so,
For she that was thy Lucrece, now attend me:
Be suddenly revenged on my foe,
Thine, mine, his own: suppose thou dost
defend me 1684
From what is past: the help that thou shalt
lend me

Comes all too late, yet let the traitor die;
For sparing justice feeds iniquity.

'But ere I name him, you, fair lords,' quoth she,—
Speaking to those that came with Collatine,—
'Shall plight your honourable faiths to me,
With swift pursuit to venge this wrong of mine;
For 'tis a meritorious fair design 1692
To chase injustice with revengeful arms:
Knights, by their oaths, should right poor
ladies' harms.

At this request, with noble disposition
Each present lord began to promise aid, 1696
As bound in knighthood to her imposition,
Longing to hear the hateful foe bewray'd:
But she, that yet her sad task hath not said,
The protestation stops. 'O! speak,' quoth she,
'How may this forced stain be wip'd from
me?' 1701

'What is the quality of mine offence,
Being constrain'd with dreadful circumstance?
May my pure mind with the soul act dispense,
My low-declined honour to advance? 1705
May any terms acquit me from this chance?'
The poison'd fountain clears itself again;  
And why not I from this compelled stain?"  

With this, they all at once began to say, 1799  
Her body's stain her mind untainted clears;  
While with a joyless smile she turns away  
The face, that map which deep impression bears  
Of hard misfortune; carv'd in it with tears. 1713  
'No, no, quoth she, 'no dame, hereafter living,  
By my excuse shall claim excuse's giving.'  

Here with a sigh, as if her heart would break,  
She throws forth Tarquin's name, 'He, he,' she says, 1717  
But more than 'he' her poor tongue could not speak;  
Till after many accents and delays,  
Untimely breathings, sick and short essay's,  
She utters this, 'He, he, fair lords, 'tis she,  
That guides this hand to give this wound to me.'  

Even here she sheathed in her harmless breast  
A harmful knife, that thence her soul unsheath'd: 1724  
That blow did bail it from the deep unrest  
Of that polluted prison where it breath'd;  
Her contrite sighs unto the clouds bequesth'd  
Her winged sprite, and through her wounds doth fly 1728  
Life's lasting date from cancell'd destiny.  

Stone-still, astonish'd with this deadly deed,  
Stood Collatine and all his lordly crew;  
Till Lucrce's father, that beholds her blood, 1732  
Himself on her self-slaughter'd body threw;  
And from the purple fountain Brutus drew  
The murderous knife, and as it left the place  
Her blood, in poor revenge, held it in chase;  

And babbling from her breast, it doth divide  
In two slow rivers, that the crimson blood  
Circles her body in on every side,  
Who, like a late-sack'd island, vasty stood, 1740  
Bare and unpooled in this fearful flood  
Some of her blood still pure and red remain'd,  
And some look'd black, and that false Tarquin stain'd.  

About the mourning and congealed face, 1744  
Of that black blood a watery rigol goes,  
Which seems to weep upon the tainted place:  
And ever since, as pitying Lucrce's woes,  
Corrupted blood some watery token shows;  
And blood untainted still doth red abide,  
Blushing at that which is so putrid.  

'Daughter, dear daughter!' old Lucretius cries,  
That life was mine which thou hast here depriv'd 1752  
If in the child the father's image lies,  
Where shall I live now Lucrce is unliv'd?  
Thou wast not to this end from me deriv'd.  
If children predecease progenitors, 1756  
We are their offspring, and they none of ours.  
'Poor broken glass, I often did behold  
In thy sweet semblance my old age new born;  
But now that fair fresh mirror, dim and old,  
Shows me a bare-bond death by time outworn,  
0! from thy cheeks my image thou hast torn,  
And shiver'd all the beauty of my glass,  
That I no more can see what once I was. 1764  
'O Time! cease thou thy course, and last no longer,  
If they succeed to be that should survive.  
Shall rotten death make conquest of the stronger,  
And leave the faltering feeble souls alive? 1768  
The old bees die, the young possess their hive:  
Then live, sweet Lucrce, live again and see  
Thy father die, and not thy father thee!'  

By this, starts Collatine as from a dream, 1772  
And bids Lucretius give his sorrow place;  
And then in key-cold Lucrce's bleeding stream  
He falls, and bathes the pale fear in his face,  
And counterfeits to die with her a space; 1776  
Till manly shame bids him possess his breath  
And live to be revenged on her death.  

The deep vexation of his inward soul  
Hath serv'd a dumb arrest upon his tongue;  
Who, mad that sorrow should his use control  
Or keep him from heart-easing words so long,  
Begins to talk; but through his lips do throng  
Weak words so thick, come in his poor heart's aid, 1784  
That no man could distinguish what he said.  

Yet sometime 'Tarquin' was pronounced plain,  
But through his teeth, as if the name he tore.  
This windy tempest, till it blow up rain, 1788  
Held back his sorrow's tide to make it more;  
At last it rains, and busy winds give o'er:  
Then son and father weep with equal strife  
Who should weep most, for daughter or for wife. 1792  

The one doth call her his, the other his,  
Yet neither may possess the claim they lay.  
The father says, 'She's mine.' 'O! mine she is,'  
Replies her husband; 'do not take away 1796  
My sorrow's interest; let no mourner say  
He weeps for her, for she was only mine,  
And only must be wail'd by Collatine.'
THE RAPE OF LUCRECE

'O!' quoth Lucretius, 'I did give that life
Which she too early and too late hath spill'd.'
'Woe, woe,' quoth Collatine, 'she was my wife,
I ow'd her, and 'tis mine that she hath kill'd.'
'My daughter' and 'my wife' with clamours
fill'd
The dispers'd air, who, holding Lucrece' life,
Answer'd their cries, 'my daughter' and 'my wife.'

Brutus, who pluck'd the knife from Lucrece' side,
Seeing such emulation in their woe,
Began to clothe his wit in state and pride,
Burying in Lucrece' wound his folly's show.
He with the Romans was esteemed so
As silly-jearing idiots are with kings,
For sportive words and uttering foolish things:

But now he throws that shallow habit by,
Wherein deep policy did him disguise;
And arm'd his long-hid wits advisedly,
To check the tears in Collatinus' eyes.
'Thou wronged lord of Rome,' quoth he,
'arise:
Let my unsounded self, suppos'd a fool,
Now set thy long-experienced wit to school.

'Why, Collatine, is woe the cure for woe?
Do wounds help wounds, or grief help grievous deeds?
Is it revenge to give thyself a blow
For his foul act by whom thy fair wife bleeds?
Such childish humour from weak minds proceeds:
Thy wretched wife mistook the matter so,
To slay herself, that should have slain her foe.

'Courageous Roman, do not steep thy heart
In such relenting dew of lamentations;
But kneel with me and help to bear thy part,
To rouse our Roman gods with invocations,
That they will suffer these abominations,
Since Rome herself in them doth stand disgrac'd,
By our strong arms from forth her fair streets chase'd.

'Now, by the Capitol that we adore,
And by this chaste blood so unjustly stain'd,
By heaven's fair sun that breeds the fat earth's store,
By all our country rights in Rome maintain'd,
And by chaste Lucrece' soul, that late complain'd
Her wrongs to us, and by this bloody knife,
We will revenge the death of this true wife.'

This said, he struck his hand upon his breast,
And kiss'd the fatal knife to end his vow;
And to his protestation urg'd the rest,
Who, wondering at him, did his words allow:
Then jointly to the ground their knees they bow;
And that deep vow, which Brutus made before,
He doth again repeat, and that they swore.

When they had sworn to this advised doom,
They did conclude to bear dead Lucrece thence;
To show her bleeding body thorough Rome,
And so to publish Tarquin's foul offence:
Which being done with speedy diligence,
The Romans plausible did give consent
To Tarquin's everlasting banishment.
SONNETS
TO THE ONLIE REGETTER OF.
THESE INSUING SONNETS,
Mr. W. H., ALL HAPPINESSE
AND THAT ETERNITIE
PROMISED.
BY
OUR EVER-LIVING POET
WISHETH.
THE WELL-WISHING
ADVENTURER IN
SETTING.
FORTH.
T. T.

I.
From fairest creatures we desire increase,
That thereby beauty's rose might never die,
But as the riper should by time decease,
His tender heir might bear his memory:
But thon, contracted to thine own bright eyes,
Feeld st thy light's flame with self-substantial
fuel,
Making a famine where abundance lies,
Thysel thy foe, to thy sweet self too cruel.
Thou that art now the world's fresh ornament
And only herald to the gaudy spring,
Within thine own bud buried thy content
And tender shril, mak'st waste in niggarding.
Pity the world, or else this glutton be,
To eat the world's due, by the grave and thee.

For where is she so fair whose unear'd womb
Disdains the tillage of thy husbandry?
Or who is he so fond will be the tomb
Of his self-love, to stop posterity?
Thou art thy mother's glass, and she in thee
Calls back the lovely April of her prime;
So thou through windows of thine age shalt see,
Despite of wrinkles, this thy golden time.

But if thou live, remember'd not to be,
Die single, and thine image dies with thee.

IV.
Unthrifty loveliness, why dost thou spend
Upon thyself thy beauty's legacy?
Nature's bequest gives nothing, but doth lend,
And being frank, she lends to those are free:
Then, beauteous niggard, why dost thou abuse
The bounteous largess given thee to give?
Profitless usurer, why dost thou use
So great a sum of sums, yet canst not live?
For having traffic with thyself alone,
Thou of thyself thy sweet self dost deceive:
Then how, when Nature calls thee to be gone,
What acceptable audit canst thou leave?
Thy unus'd beauty must be tomb'd with thee,
Which used, lives th' executor to be.

V.
Those hours, that with gentle work did frame
The lovely glass where every eye doth dwell,
Will play the tyrants to the very same
And that unfair which fairly doth excel;
For never-resting time leads summer on
To hideous winter, and confounds him there;
Sap check'd with frost, and lusty leaves quite gone,
Beauty o'erthrown and barreness every where:
Then, were not summer's distillation left,
A liquid prison pent in walls of glass,
Beauty's effect with beauty were bereft,
Nor it, nor no remembrance what it was.
SONNETS

But flowers distill’d, though they with winter meet,
Leese but their show; their substance still lives sweet.

VI.
Then let not winter’s ragged hand deface
In thee thy summer, ere thou be distill’d:
Make sweet some vial; treasure thou some place
With beauty’s treasure, ere it be self-kill’d.
That use is not forbidden usury,
Which happiest those that pay the willing loan;
That’s for thyself to breed another thee,
Or ten times happier, be it ten for one;
Ten times thyself were happier than thou art,
If ten of thine ten times refrigur’d thee;
Then what could death do, if thou shouldst depart,
Leaving thee living in posterity?
Be not self-will’d, for thou art much too fair
To be death’s conquest and make worms thine heir.

VII.
Lo! in the orient when the gracious light
Lifts up his burning head, each under eye
Doth homage to his new-appearing sight,
Serving with looks his sacred majesty;
And having climb’d the steep-up heavenly hill,
Resembling strong youth in his middle age,
Yet mortal looks adore his beauty still,
Attending on his golden pilgrimage;
But when from highmost pitch, with weary ear,
Like feeble age, he reeleth from the day,
The eyes, ’fore duteous, now converted are
From his low tract, and look another way:
So thou, thyself outgoing in thy noon,
Unlook’d on diest, unless thou get a son.

VIII.
Music to hear, why hear’st thou music sadly?
Sweets with sweets war not, joy delights in joy:
Why lov’st thou that which thou receiv’st not gladly,
Or else receiv’st with pleasure thine annoy?
If the true concord of well-tuned sounds,
By union married, do offend thine ear,
They do but sweetly chide thee, who confounds
In singleness the parts that thou shouldst bear.
Mark how one string, sweet husband to another,
Strikes each in each by mutual ordering;
Resembling sire and happy mother,
Who, all in one, one pleasing note do sing:
Whose speechless song, being many, seeming one,
Sings this to thee: ‘Thou single wilt prove

IX.
Is it for fear to wet a widow’s eye
That thou consum’st thyself in single life?
Ah! if thou issueless shalt hap to die,
The world will wail thee, like a makeless wife;
The world will be thy widow, and still weep
That thou no form of thee hast left behind,
When every private widow well may keep
By children’s eyes her husband’s shape in mind.
Look! what an unthrift in the world doth spend
Shifts but his place, for still the world enjoys it;
But beauty’s waste hath in the world an end,
And kept unus’d, the user so destroys it.
No love toward others in that bosom sits
That on himself such murderous shame commits.

X.
For shame! deny that thou bear’st love to any
Who for thyself art so unprovided.
Grant, if thou wilt, thou art below’d of many,
But that thou none lov’st is most evident;
For thou art so posses’d with murderous hate
That ’gainst thyself thou stick’st not to conspire,
Seeking that beauteous roof to ruinate
Which to repair should be thy chief desire.
O! change thy thought, that I may change my mind:
Shall hate be fairer lodg’d than gentle love?
Be, as thy presence is, gracious and kind,
Or to thyself at least kind-hearted prove:
Make thee another self, for love of me,
That beauty still may live in thine or thee.

XI.
As fast as thou shalt wane, so fast thou grow’st
In one of thine, from that which thou departest;
And that fresh blood which youngly thou bestow’st
Thou mayst call thine when thou from youth convertest.
Herein lives wisdom, beauty and increase;
Without this, folly, age and cold decay;
If all were minded so, the times should cease
And threescore year would make the world away.
Let those whom Nature hath not made for store,
Harah, featureless and rude, barrenly perish:
Look, whom she best endow’d she gave the more;
Which bounteous gift thou shouldst in bounty cherish:
She carv’d thee for her seal, and meant thereby
Thou shouldst print more, nor let that copy die.
SONNETS

XII.
When I do count the clock that tells the time,
And see the brave day sunk in hideous night;
When I behold the violet past prime,
And sable curls, all silver'd o'er with white;
When lofty trees I see barren of leaves,
Which erst from heat did canopy the herd,
And summer's green all girded up in sheaves,
Borne on the bier with white and briskly beard,
Then of thy beauty do I question make,
That thou among the wastes of time must go,
Since sweets and beauties do themselves forsake
And die as fast as they see others grow; 12
And nothing 'gainst Time's scythe can make defence
Save breed, to brave him when he takes thee hence.

XIII.
O! that you were yourself; but, love, you are
No longer yours than you yourself here live:
Against this coming end you should prepare,
And your sweet semblance to some other give:
So should that beauty which you hold in lease
Find no determination; then you were
Yourself again, after yourself's decease,
When your sweet issue your sweet form should bear.
Who lets so fair a house fall to decay,
Which husbandry in honour might uphold
Against the stormy gusts of winter's day
And barren rage of death's eternal cold? 12
O! none but unthrifty. Dear my love, you know
You had a father; let your son say so.

XIV.
Not from the stars do I my judgment pluck;
And yet methinks I have astronomy,
But not to tell of good or evil luck,
Of plagues, of deaths, or seasons' quality;
Nor can I fortune to brief minutes tell,
Pointing to each his thunder, rain, and wind,
Or say with princes if it shall go well,
By oft predict that I in heaven find:
But from thine eyes my knowledge I derive,
And, constant stars, in them I read such art
As 'Truth and beauty shall together thrive,' 11
If from thyself to store thou wouldest convert;
Or else of thee this I prognosticate:
'Thy end is truth's and beauty's doom and date.'

XV.
When I consider everything that grows
Holds in perfection but a little moment,
That this huge stage presents nought but shows
Whereon the stars in secret influence comment;
When I perceive that men as plants increase, 5
Cheered and check'd e'en by the self-same sky,
Vaunt in their youthful sap, at height decrease,
And wear their brave state out of memory;
Then the concit of this inconstant stay
Sets you most rich in youth before my sight,
Where wasteful Time debateth with Decay, 11
To change your day of youth to sullied night;
And, all in war with Time for love of you,
As he takes from you, I engrave you new.

XVI.
But wherefore do not you a mightier way
Make war upon this bloody tyrant, Time?
And fortify yourself in your decay
With means more blessed than my barren rime?
Now stand you on the top of happy hours,
And many maidens gardens, yet unset,
With virtuous wish would bear you living flowers
Much liker than your painted counterfeit:
So should the lines of life that life repair,
Which this, Time's pencil, or my pupil pen,
Neither in inward worth nor outward fair,
Can make you live yourself in eyes of men. 12
To give away yourself keeps yourself still;
And you must live, drawn by your own swee' skill.

XVII.
Who will believe my verse in time to come,
If it were fill'd with your most high deserts?
Though yet, heaven knows, it is but as a tomb
Which hides your life and shows not half your parts.
If I could write the beauty of your eyes 5
And in fresh numbers number all your graces,
The age to come would say, 'This poet lies;
Such heavenly toucheth ne'er touch'd earthly faces.'
So should my papers, yellow'd with their age,
Be scorn'd, like old men of less truth than tongue,
And your true rights be term'd a poet's rage
And stretched metre of an antique song: 12
But were some child of yours alive that time,
You should live twice,—in it and in my rime.

XVIII.
Shall I compare thee to a summer's day?
Thou art more lovely and more temperate:
Rough winds do shake the darling buds of May,
And summer's lease hath all too short a date:
SONNETS

Sometime too hot the eye of heaven shines,
And often is his gold complexion dimm’d;
And every fair from fair sometime declines,
By chance, or nature’s changing course untrimm’d;
But thy eternal summer shall not fade,
Nor lose possession of that fair thou ow’st,
Nor shall death brag thou wander’st in his shade,
When in eternal lines to time thou grow’st; 12
So long as men can breathe, or eyes can see,
So long lives this, and this gives life to thee.

XIX.

Devouring Time, blind thou the lion’s paws,
And make the earth devour her own sweet brood;
Pluck the keen teeth from the fierce tiger’s jaws,
And burn the long-liv’d phoenix in her blood;
Make glad and sorry seasons as thou flees,
And do whatever thou wilt, swift-footed Time, 6
To the wide world and all her fading sweets;
But I forbid thee one most heinous crime:
O! carve not with thy hours my love’s fair brow,
Nor draw no lines there with thine antique pen;
Him in thy course untainted do allow
For beauty’s pattern to succeeding men. 12
Yet, do thy worst, old Time: despite thy wrong,
My love shall in my verse ever live young.

XX.

A woman’s face with Nature’s own hand painted
Hast thou, the master-mistress of my passion;
A woman’s gentle heart, but not acquainted
With shifting change, as is false women’s fashion;
An eye more bright than theirs, less false in rolling,
Gilding the object whereupon it gazeth; 6
A man in hue all hues in his controlling,
Which steals men’s eyes and women’s souls amazeth.
And for a woman wert thou first created;
Till Nature, as she wrought thee, fell a-doting,
And by addition of me thee didst endear,
By adding one thing to my purpose nothing. 12
But since she prick’d thee out for women’s pleasure,
Mine be thy love, and thy love’s use their treasure.

XXI.

So is it not with me as with that Muse
Stirr’d by a painted beauty to his verse,
Who heaven itself for ornament doth use
And every fair with his fair doth rehearse,
Making a couplement of proud compare,
With sun and moon, with earth and sea’s rich gems,
With April’s first-born flowers, and all things rare
That heaven’s air in this huge roundure hems.
O! let me, true in love, but truly write,
And then believe me, my love is as fair
As any mother’s child, though not so bright
As those gold candles fix’d in heaven’s air:
Let them say more that like of hear-say well;
I will not praise that purpose not to sell.

XXII.

My glass shall not persuade me I am old,
So long as youth and thou are of one date;
But when in thee time’s furrows I behold,
Then look I death my days should expire.
For all that beauty that doth cover thee
Is but the semblance of my heart,
Which in thy breast doth live, as thine in me:
How can I then, be elder than thou art?
O! therefore, love, be of thyself so wary
As I, not for myself, but for thee would;
Bearing thy heart, which I will keep so chary
As tender nurse her babe from faring ill. 12
Presume not on thy heart when mine is alane;
Thou gav’st me thine, not to give back again.

XXIII.

As an unperfect actor on the stage,
Who with his fear is put beside his part,
Or some fierce thing replete with too much rage,
Whose strength’s abundance weakens his own heart;
So I, for fear of trust, forget to say
The perfect ceremony of love’s rite,
And in mine own love’s strength seem to decay,
O’ercharg’d with burden of mine own love’s might.
O! let my books be but the eloquence
And dumb presagers of my speaking breast,
Who plead for love, and look for recompense,
More than that tongue that more hath more express’d. 12
O! learn to read what silent love hath writ:
To hear with eyes belongs to love’s fine wit.

XXIV.

Mine eye hath play’d the painter and hath staid
Thy beauty’s form in table of my heart;
My body is the frame wherein ’tis held,
And perspective it is best painter’s art.
For through the painter must you see his skill;
To find where your true image piet’r’d lies. 6
Which in my bosom’s shop is hanging still;
That hath his windows-glass’d with thine eyes.
SONNETS

Now see what good turns eyes for eyes have done:
Mine eyes have drawn thy shape, and thine for me
Are windows to my breast, where-through the sun
Delights to peep, to gaze therein on thee; 12
Yet eyes this cunning want to grace their art,
They draw but what they see, know not the heart.

XXV.

Let those who are in favour with their stars
Of public honour and proud titles boast,
Whilst I, whom fortune of such triumph bars,
Unlook'd for, joy in that I honour most.
Great princes' favourites their fair leaves spread
But as the marigold at the sun's eye, 6
And in themselves their pride lies buried,
For at a frown they in their glory die.
The painful warrior famoused for fight,
After a thousand victories once foil'd,
Is from the book of honour razed quite,
And all the rest forgot for which he toil'd: 12
Then happy I, that love and am belov'd,
Where I may not remove nor be remov'd.

XXVI.

Lord of my love, to whom in vassalage
Thy merit hath my duty strongly knitt,
To thee I send this written ambassage,
To witness duty, not to show my wit:
Duty so great, which wit so poor as mine
May make seem bare, in wanting words to show it,
But that I hope some good conceit of thine
In thy soul's thought, all naked, will bestow it;
Till whatsoever star that guides my moving
Points on me graciously with fair aspect,
And puts apparel on my tatter'd loving,
To show me worthy of thy sweet respect: 12
Then may I dare to boast how I do love thee;
Till then not show my head where thou mayst prove me.

XXVII.

Weary with toil, I haste me to my bed,
The dear repose for limbs with travel tired;
But then begins a journey in my head
To work my mind, when body's work's expir'd:
For then my thoughts—from far where I abide—
Intend a jealous pilgrimage to thee,
And keep my drooping eyestids open wide,
Looking on darkness which the blind do see:

Save that my soul's imaginary sight
Presents thy shadow to my sightless view,
Which, like a jewel hung in ghastly night,
Makes black night beauteous and her old face new.
Lo! thus, by day my limbs, by night my mind,
For thee, and for myself no quiet find.

XXVIII.

How can I then return in happy plight,
That am debarr'd the benefit of rest?
When day's oppression is not eas'd by night,
But day by night, and night by day oppress'd,
And each, though enemies to either's reign,
Do in consent shake hands to torture me,
The one by toil, the other to complain:
How far I toil, still further off from thee.
I tell the day, to please him thou art bright
And dost him grace when clouds do blot the heaven:
So flatter I the swart-complexion'd night;
When sparkling stars twire not thou gild'st the even.
But day doth daily draw my sorrows longer,
And night doth nightly make grief's strength seem stronger.

XXIX.

When in disgrace with fortune and men's eyes
I all alone beweep my outcast state,
And trouble deaf heaven with my bootless cries,
And look upon myself, and curse my fate,
Wishing me like to one more rich in hope,
Featur'd like him, like him with friends possess'd,
Desiring this man's art, and that man's scope,
With what I most enjoy contented least;
Yet in these thoughts myself almost despising,
Haply I think on thee,—and then my state,
Like to the lark at break of day arising
From sullen earth, sings hymns at heaven's gate;
For thy sweet love remember'd such wealth brings
That then I scorn to change my state with kings.

XXX.

When to the sessions of sweet silent thought
I summon up remembrance of things past,
I sigh the lack of many a thing I sought,
And with old woes new wail my dear times' waste:
Then can I drown an eye, unused to flow, 5
For precious friends hid in death's dateless night,
And weep afresh love's long since cancell'd woe,
And moan the expense of many a vanish'd sight:
SONNETS

XXXI.
Thy bosom is endeared with all hearts,
Which I by looking have supposed dead;
And there arose and, love, and all Love's loving parts,
And all those friends which I thought buried.
How many a holy and obsequious tear
Hath dear religious love stol'n from mine eye,
As interest of the dead, which now appear
But things remov'd that hidden in thee lie!
Thou art the grave where buried love doth live,
Hung with the trophies of my lovers gone,
Who all their parts of thee to thee did give,
That due of many now is thine alone:
Their images I lov'd I view in thee,
And thou—all they—hast all the all of me.

XXXII.
If thou survive my well-contented day,
When that churl Death my bones with dust shall cover,
And shalt by fortune once more re-survey
These poor rude lines of thy deceased lover,
Compare them with the bettering of the time,
And though they be outstripp'd by every pen,
Reserve them for my love, not for their rime,
Exceeded by the height of happier men.
O! then vouchsafe me but this loving thought:
'Had my friend's Muse grown with this growing age,
A dearer birth than this his love had brought,
To march in ranks of better equipage:
But since he died, and poets better prove,
Theirs for their style I'll read, his for his love.'

XXXIII.
Full many a glorious morning have I seen
Flatter the mountain-tops with sovereign eye,
Kissing with golden face the meadows green,
Gilding pale streams with heavenly alchemy;
Anon permit the basest clouds to ride
With ugly rack on his celestial face,
And from the forlorn world his visage hide,
Stealing unseen to west with this disgrace:
Even so my sun one early morn did shine
With all triumphant splendour on my brow;
But out! alas! he was but one hour mine,
The region cloud hath mask'd him from me now.
Yet him for this my love no whit disdaineth;
Some of the world may stain when heaven's sun staineth.

XXXIV.
Why didst thou promise such a beauteous day,
And make me travel forth without my cloak,
To let base clouds o'er-take me in my way,
Hiding thy bravery in their rotten smoke?
'Tis not enough that through the cloud thou break,
To dry the rain on my storm-beaten face,
For no man well of such a salve can speak
That heals the wound and cureth not the disgrace:
Nor can thy shame give physic to my grief;
Though thou repent, yet I have still the loss:
The offender's sorrow lends but weak relief
To him that bears the strong offence's cross.
Ahl! but those tears are pearl which thy love sheds,
And they are rich and ransom all ill deeds.

XXXV.
No more beguilest at that which thou hast done:
Roses have thorns, and silver fountains mud; Clouds and eclipses stain both moon and sun, And loathsome canker lives in sweetest bud.
All men make faults, and even I in this,
Authorising thy trespass with compare,
Myself corrupting, salving thy amiss,
Excusing thy sins more than thy sins are;
For to thy sensual fault I bring in sense,—
Thy adverse party is thy advocate,—
And 'gainst myself a lawful plea commence:
Such civil war is in my love and hate,
That I an accessory needs must be
To that sweet thief which sourly robs from me.

XXXVI.
Let me confess that we two must be twain,
Although our undivided loves are one:
So shall those blot's that do with me remain,
Without thy help, by me be borne alone.
In our two loves there is but one respect,
Though in our lives a separable spite,
Which, though it alter not love's sole effect,
Yet doth it steal sweet hours from love's delight.
I may not overmore acknowledge thee,
Lest my bewailed guilt should do thee shame;
Nor thou with public kindness honour me,
Unless thou take that honour from thy name:
But do not so; I love thee in such sort
As thou being mine, mine is thy good report.

XXXVII.
As a decrepit father takes delight
To see his active child do deeds of youth,
So I, made lame by fortune's dearest spite,
Take all my comfort of thy worth and truth;
SONNETS

For whether beauty, birth, or wealth, or wit, 6
Or any of these all, or all, or more,
Entitled in thy parts do crown’d sit,
I make my love engraven to this store:
So then I am not lame, poor, nor despis’d,
Whilst that this shadow doth such substance give
That in thy abundance am suffic’d;
And by a part of all thy glory live, 12
Look what is best, that best I wish in thee:
This wish I have; then ten times happy me!

XXXVIII.

How can my Muse want subject to invent,
While thou dost breathe, that pour’st into my verse
Thine own sweet argument, too excellent
For every vulgar paper to rehearse?
O！give thyself the thanks, if aught in me
Worthy perusal stand against thy sight;
For who’s so dumb that cannot write to thee,
When thou thyself dost give invention light?
Be thou the tenth Muse, ten times more in worth
Than those old nine which rimeres invoke;
And be that calls on thee, let him bring forth
Eternal numbers to outlive long date. 12
If my slight Muse do please these curious days,
The pain be mine, but thine shall be the praise.

XXXIX.

O！how thy worth with manners may I sing,
When thou art all the better part of me?
What can mine own praise to mine own self bring?
And what is’t but mine own when I praise thee?
Even for this let us divide lives,
And our dear love lose name of single one,
That by this separation may give
That due to thee, which thou deserv’st alone.
O absence! what a torment wouldst thou prove,
Were it not thy sour leisure gave sweet leave
To entertain the time with thoughts of love,
Which time and thoughts so sweetly doth deceive,
And that thou teachest how to make one twain,
By praising him here who doth hence remain.

XL.

Take all my loves, my love, yea, take them all;
What hast thou then more than thou hadst before?
No love, my love, that thou mayst true love call;
All mine was thine before thou hadst this more
Then, if for my love thou my love receivest,
I cannot blame thee for my love thou us’st;
But yet be blam’d, if thou thyself deceivest
By wilful taste of what thyself refusest.
I do forgive thy robbery, gentle thief,
Although thou steal’st all my poverty;
And yet, love knows it is a greater grief
To bear love’s wrong than hate’s known injury.
Lascivious grace, in whom all ill well shows,
Kill me with spite; yet we must not be foes.

XLI.

Those pretty wrongs that liberty commits,
When I am sometimes absent from thy heart,
Thy beauty and thy years full well besitts,
For still temptation follows where thou art.
Gentle thou art, and therefore to be won,
Beauteous thou art, therefore to be assail’d; 6
And when a woman woos, what woman’s son
Will sourly leave her till she have prevail’d?
Ay me! but yet thou mightst my seat forbear,
And chide thy beauty and thy straying youth,
Who lead thee in their riot even there
Where thou art forc’d to break a twofold truth;— 12
Here, by thy beauty tempting her to thee,
Thine, by thy beauty being false to me.

XLII.

That thou hast her, it is not all my grief,
And yet it may be said I lov’d her dearly;
That she hath thee, is of my wailing chief,
A loss in love that touches me more nearly.
Loving offenders, thus I will excuse ye:
Thou dost love her, because thou know’st I love her; 6
And for my sake even so doth she abuse me,
Suffering my friend for my sake to approve her.
If I lose thee, my loss is my love’s gain,
And losing her, my friend hath found that loss;
Both find each other, and I lose both twain,
And both for my sake lay on me this cross: 12
But here’s the joy; my friend and I are one;
Sweet flattery! then she loves but me alone.

XLIII.

When most I wink, then do mine eyes best see,
For all the day they view things unrespected;
But when I sleep, in dreams they look on that,
And darkly bright, are bright in dark directed.
Then thou, whose shadow shadows doth make bright,
How would thy shadow’s form form happy show
To the clear day with thy much clearer light,
When to unseeing eyes thy shade shines so!
SONNETS

How would, I say, mine eyes be blessed made
By looking on thee in the living day,
When in dead night thy fair imperfect shade
Through heavy sleep on sightless eyes doth stay! 12
All days are nights to see till I see thee,
And nights bright days when dreams do show thee me.

XLIV.

If the dull substance of my flesh were thought,
Injurious distance should not stop my way;
For then, despite of space, I would be brought,
From limits far remote, where thou dost stay.
No matter then although my foot did stand
Upon the furthest earth remov'd from thee; 6
For nimble thought can jump both sea and land,
As soon as think the place where he would be.
But, ah! thought kills me that I am not thought,
To leap large lengths of miles when thou art gone,
But that, so much of earth and water wrought,
I must attend time's leisure with my moan; 12
Receiving nought by elements so slow
But heavy tears, badges of either's woe.

XLV.

The other two, slight air and purging fire,
Are both with thee, wherever I abide;
The first my thought, the other my desire,
These present-absent with swift motion slide.
For when these quicker elements are gone
In tender embassy of love to thee, 6
My life, being made of four, with two alone
Sinks down to death, oppress'd with melancholy;
Until life's composition be recur'd
By those sweet messengers return'd from thee,
Who even but now come back again, assur'd
Of thy fair health, recounting it to me: 12
This told, I joy; but then no longer glad,
I send them back again, and straight grow sad.

XLVI.

Mine eye and heart are at a mortal war,
How to divide the conquest of thy sight;
Mine eye my heart thy picture's sight would bar,
My heart mine eye the freedom of that right.
My heart doth plead that thou in him dost lie,—
A cloister never pierc'd with crystal eyes,—
But the defendant doth that plea deny,
And says in him thy fair appearance lies.

To 'cide this title is impannelled
A quest of thoughts, all tenants to the heart;
And by their verdict is determined
The clear eye's moistness and the dear heart's part: 12
As thus; mine eye's due is thine outward part,
And my heart's right thine inward love of heart.

XLVII.

Betwixt mine eye and heart a league is took,
And each doth good turns now unto the other:
When that mine eye is famish'd for a look,
Or heart in love with sighs himself doth smother,
With my love's picture then my eye doth feast,
And to the painted banquet bids my heart;
Another time mine eye is my heart's guest,
And in his thoughts of love doth share a part;
So, either by thy picture or my love,
Thyself away art present still with me;
For thou not further than my thoughts canst move,
And I am still with them and they with thee;
Or, if they sleep, thy picture in my sight
Awakes my heart to heart's and eye's delight.

XLVIII.

How careful was I when I took my way,
Each trifle under trust to bars to thrust,
That to my use it might unused stay
From hands of falsehood, in sure wards of trust!
But thou, to whom my jewels trifles are,
Most worthy comfort, now my greatest grief, 6
Thou, best of dearest and mine only care,
Art left the prey of every vulgar thief.
Thee have I not lock'd up in any chest,
Save where thou art not, though I feel thou art,
Within the gentle closure of my breast,
From whence at pleasure thou mayst come and part; 12
And even thence thou wilt be stol'n, I fear,
For truth proves thievish for a prize so dear.

XLIX.

Against that time, if ever that time come,
When I shall see thee roused on my defects,
When as thy love hath cast his utmost sum,
Call'd to that audit by advis'd respects;
Against that time when thou shalt strangely pass,
And scarcely greet me with that sun, thine eye,
When love, converted from this thing it was,
Shall reasons find of settled gravity;
Against that time do I enconce me here
Within the knowledge of mine own desert,
And this my hand against myself uprear,
To guard the lawful reasons on thy part: 12
To leave poor me thou hast the strength of laws,
Since why to love I can allege no cause.

L.
How heavy do I journey on the way,
When what I seek, my weary travel's end,
Doth teach that ease and that reose to say,
‘Thus far the miles are measured from thy friend!’
The beast that bears me, tired with my woe,
Plods dully on, to bear that weight in me,
As if by some instinct the wretch did know
His rider lov'd not speed, being made from thee:
The bloody spur cannot provoke him on
That sometimes anger thrusts into his side:
Which heavily he answers with a groan
More sharp to me than spurring to his side; 12
For that same groan doth put this in my mind:
My grieve lies onward, and my joy behind.

LI.
Thus can my love excuse the slow offence
Of my dull usher when from thee I speed:
From where thou art why should I haste me thence?
Till I return, of posting is no need.
O! what excuse will my poor beast then find,
When swift extremity can seem but slow? 6
Then should I spur, though mounted on the wind,
In winged speed no motion shall I know:
Then can no horse with my desire keep pace;
Therefore desire, of perfect'st love being made,
Shall neigh—no dull flesh—in his fiery race; 11
But love, for love, thus shall excuse my jade,—
'Since from thee going he went wilful slow,
Towards thee I'll run and give him leave to go.'

LII.
So am I as the rich, whose blessed key
Can bring him to his sweet up-locked treasure,
The which he will not every hour survey,
For blunting the fine point of seldom pleasure.
Therefore are fasts so solemn and so rare,
Since, seldom coming, in the long year set,
Like stones of worth they thinly placed are,
Or captain jewels in the casquet.
So is the time that keeps you as my chest,
Or as the wardrobe which the robe doth hide,
To make some special instant special blest
By now unfolding him imprison'd pride. 12
Blessed are you, whose worthiness gives scope,
Being bad, to triumph; being bad, to hope.
SONNETS

LVI.
Sweet love, renew thy force; be it not said
Thy edge should blunter be than appetite,
Which but to-day by feeding is allay’d,
To-morrow sharpen’d in his former might:
So, love, be thou; although to-day thou fill
Thy hungry eyes, even till they wink with fulness,
To-morrow see again, and do not kill
The spirit of love with a perpetual dulness.
Let this sad interim like the ocean be
Which parts the shore, where two contracted new
Come daily to the banks, that, when they see
Return of love, more bless’d may be the view;
Or call it winter, which, being full of care,
Makes summer’s welcome thrice more wish’d,
more rare.

LVII.
Being your slave, what should I do but tend
Upon the hours and times of your desire?
I have no precise time at all to spend,
Nor services to do, till you require.
Nor dare I chide the world without-end hour
Whilst I, my sovereign, watch the clock for you,
Nor think the bitterness of absence sour
When you have bid your servant once adieu;
Nor dare I question with my jealous thought
Where you may be, or your affairs suppose,
But, like a sad slave, stay and think of nought,
Save, where you are, how happy you make those
So true a fool is love that in your will,
Though you do anything, he thinks no ill.

LVIII.
That god forbid that made me first your slave,
I should in thought control your times of pleasure,
Or at your hand the account of hours to crave,
Being your vassal, bound to stay your leisure.
Oh! let me suffer, being at your beck,
The imprison’d absence of your liberty;
And patience, tame to sufferance, hide each check,
Without accusing you of injury.
Be where you list, your charter is so strong
That you yourself may privilege your time
To what you will; to you it doth belong
Yourself to pardon of self-doing crime.
I am to wait, though waiting so be hell,
Not blame your pleasure, be it ill or well.

LIX.
If there be nothing new, but that which is
Haft been before, how are our brains beguil’d,
Which, labouring for invention, bear amiss
The second burden of a former child!

Of that record could with a backward look,
Even of five hundred courses of the sun,
Show me your image in some antique book,
Since mind at first in character was done!
That I might see what the old world could say
To this composed wonder of your frame;
Wher’e we are mended, or wher’e better they,
Or whether revolution be the same.
If sure I am, the wits of former days
to subjects worse have given admiring praise.

LX.
Like as the waves make towards the pebbled shore,
So do our minutes hasten to their end;
Each changing place with that which goes before,
In sequent toil all forwards do contend.
Nativity, once in the main of light,
Crawls to maturity, wherewith being crown’d,
Crooked eclipses ’gainst his glory fight.
And time that gave doth now his gift confound.
Time doth transfuse the flourisht set on youth.
And delves the parallels in beauty’s brow,
Feeds on the rarities of nature’s truth.
And nothing stands but for his scythe to mow:
And yet to times in hope my verse shall stand,
Praising thy worth, despite his cruel hand.

LXI.
Is it thy will thy image should keep open
My heavy eyelids to the weary night?
Dost thou desire my slumbers should be broken,
While shadows, like to thee, do mock my sight?
Is it thy spirit that thou send’st from thee
So far from home, into my deeds to pry?
To find out shamees and idle hours in me,
The scope and tenour of thy jealousy?
O, no! thy love, though much, is not so great:
It is my love that keeps mine eye awake:
Mine own true love that doth my rest defeat,
To play the watchman ever for thy sake.
For thee watch I whilst thou dost wake elsewhere,
From me far off, with others all too near.

LXII.
Sin of self-love possesseth all mine eye
And all my soul and all my every part;
And for this sin there is no remedy,
It  is  so ground’d inward in my heart.
Methinks no face so gracious is as mine,
No shape so true, no truth of such account;
And for myself mine own worth do define,
As I all other in all worthes surmount.
SONNETS

But when my glass shows me myself indeed,
Beated and chopp’d with tann’d antiquity,
Mine own self-love quite contrary I read;
Self so self-loving were iniquity.  
’Tis thee, myself,—that for myself I praise,
Painting my age with beauty of thy days.

LXIII.
Against my love shall be, as I am now,
With Time’s injurious hand crush’d and o’er-worn;
When hours have drain’d his blood and fill’d his brow
With lines and wrinkles; when his youthful morn
Hath travell’d on to age’s steepy night;
And all those beauties whereof now he’s king
Are vanishing or vanish’d out of sight,
Stealing away the treasure of his spring;
For such a time do I now wontify
Against confounding age’s cruel knife,
That he shall never cut from memory
My sweet love’s beauty, though my lover’s life:
His beauty shall in these black lines be seen,
And they shall live, and be in them still green.

LXIV.
When I have seen by Time’s fell hand defac’d
The rich-proud cost of outworn buried age;
When sometime lofty towers I see down-ra’d,
And brass eternal slave to mortal rage;
When I have seen the hungry ocean gain
Advantage on the kingdom of the shore,
And the firm soil win of the watery main,
Increasing store with less, and less with store;
When I have seen such interchange of state,
Or state itself confounded to decay;
Ruin hath taught me thus to ruminate—
That Time will come and take my love away.  
This thought is as a death, which cannot choose
But weep to have that which it fears to lose.

LXV.
Since brass, nor stone, nor earth, nor boundless sea,
But sad mortality o’er-ways their power,
How with this rage shall beauty hold a plea,
Whose action is no stronger than a flower?  
O! how shall summer’s honey breath hold out
Against the wrathful siege of battering days?
When rocks impregnable are not so stout,
Nor gates of steel so strong, but Time decays?

O fearful meditation! where, alack,
Shall Time’s best jewel from Time’s chest lie hid?
Or what strong hand can hold his swift foot back?
Or who his spoil of beauty can forbid?
O! none, unless this miracle have might,
That in black ink my love may still shine bright.

LXVI.
Tir’d with all these, for restful death I cry
As to behold desert a beggar born,
And needy nothing trimm’d in jollity,
And purest faith unhappily forsworn,
And gilded honour shamefully misplace’d,
And maiden virtue rudely strumpeted,  
And right perfection wrongfully disgraced,
And strength by limping sway disabled,
And art made tongue-tied by authority,
And folly—doctor-like—controlling skill,
And simple truth miscall’d simplicity,
And captive good attending captain ill:
Tir’d with all these, from these would I be gone,
Save that, to die, I leave my love alone.

LXVII.
Ah! wherefore with infection should be live,
And with his presence grace impyest,
That sin by him advantage should achieve,
And lace itself with his society?
Why should false-painting imitate his cheek,
And steal dead seeing of his living hue?
Why should poor beauty indirectly seek
Roses of shadow, since his rose is true?
Why should be live, now Nature bankrupt is,
Beggar’d of blood to blush through lively veins?
For she hath no exchequer now but his,
And, proud of many, lives upon his gains.
Of him she stores, to show what wealth she had
In days long since, before these last so bad.

LXVIII.
Thus is his cheek the map of days outworn,
When beauty liv’d and died as flowers do now,
Before these bastard signs of fair were born,
Or durst inhabit on a living brow;
Before the golden tresses of the dead,
The right of sepulchres, were shorn away,
To live a second life on second head;
Ere beauty’s dead fleece made another gay:
In him those holy antique hours are seen,
Without all ornament, itself and true,
Making no summer of another’s green,
Robbing no old to dress his beauty new;
And him as for a map doth Nature store,
To show false Art what beauty was of yore.
SONNETS

LXIX.

Those parts of thee that the world’s eye doth view
Want nothing that the thought of hearts can mend;
All tongues—the voice of souls—give thee that due,
Uttering bare truth, even so as foes commend.
Thy outward thus with outward praise is crown’d;
But those same tongues, that give thee so thine own,
In other accents do this praise confound
By seeing farther than the eye hath shown.
They look into the beauty of thy mind,
And that, in guess, they measure by thy deeds;
Then,—churlis,—their thoughts, although their eyes were kind,
To thy fair flower add the rank smell of weeds:
But why thy odour matcheth not thy show,
The soil is this, that thou dost common grow.

LXX.

That thou art blam’d shall not be thy defect,
For slander’s mark was ever yet the fair;
The ornament of beauty is suspect,
A crow that flies in heaven’s sweetest air.
So thou be good, slander doth but approve
Thy worth the greater, being woo’d of time;
For canker vice the sweetest buds doth love,
And thou present’st a pure unstained prime.
Thou hast pass’d by the ambush of young days,
Either not assail’d, or victor being charg’d;
Yet this thy praise cannot be so thy praise,
To tie up envy evermore enlarg’d:
If some suspect of ill mask’d not thy show,
Then thou alone kingdoms of hearts shouldst owe.

LXXI.

No longer mourn for me when I am dead
Than you shall hear the surly sullen bell
Give warning to the world that I am fled
From this vile world, with vilest worms to dwell:
Nay, if you read this line, remember not
The hand that writ it; for I love you so,
That I in your sweet thoughts should be forgot,
If thinking on me then should make you wo.
O! if—I say, you look upon this verse,
When I perhaps compound am with clay,
Do not so much as my poor name rehearse,
But let your love even with my life decay;
Lest the wise world should look into your reason,
And mock you with me after I am gone.

LXXII.

O! lest the world should task you to recite
What merit lived in me, that you should love
After my death,—dear love, forget me quite,
For you in me can nothing worthy prove;
Unless you would devise some virtuous lie,
To do more for me than mine own desert,
And hang more praise upon deceased I
Than niggard truth would willingly impart:
O! lest your true love may seem false in this,
That you for love speak well of me untrue,
My name be buried where my body is,
And live no more to shame nor me nor you.
For I am sham’d by that which I bring forth,
And so should you, to love things nothing worth.

LXXIII.

That time of year thou mayst in me behold
When yellow leaves, or none, or few, do hang
Upon those boughs which shake against the cold,
Bare ruin’d choirs, where late the sweet birds sang.
In me thou see’st the twilight of such day
As after sunset fadeth in the west;
Which by and by black night doth take away,
Death’s second self, that seals up all in rest.
In me thou see’st the glowing of such fire
That on the ashes of his youth doth lie,
As the death-bed whereon it must expire
Consum’d with that which it was nourish’d by.
This thou perceiv’st, which makes thy love more strong,
To love that well which thou must leave ere long.

LXXIV.

But be contented: when that fell arrest
Without all bail shall carry me away,
My life hath in this line some interest,
Which for memorial still with thee shall stay.
When thou reviewest this, thou dost review
The very part was consecrate to thee:
The earth can have but earth, which is his due;
My spirit is thine, the better part of me:
So then thou hast but lost the dregs of life,
The prey of worms, my body being dead;
The coward conquest of a wretch’s knife,
Too base of thee to be remembered.
The worth of that is that which it contains,
And that is this, and this with thee remains.

LXXV.

So are you, to my thoughts as food to life,
Or so sweet-savour’d shadows are to the ground;
And for the peace of you I hold such store
As twist a miser and his wealth is found;
SONNETS

Now proud as an enjoyer, and anon
Doubting the filching age will steal his treasure;
Now counting best to be with you alone,
Then better’d that the world may see my pleasure:
Sometime, all full with feasting on your sight,
And by and by clean starved for a look;
Possessing or pursuing no delight,
Save what is bad or must from you be took. 12
Thus do I pine and surfeit day by day,
Or gluttoning on all, or all away.

LXXVI.
Why is my verse so barren of new pride,
So far from variation or quick change?
Why with the time do I not glance aside
To new-found methods and to compounds strange?
Why write I still all one, ever the same,
And keep invention in a noted weed,
That every word doth almost tell my name,
Showing their birth, and where they did proceed?
O! know, sweet love, I always write of you,
And you and love are still my argument;
So all my best is dressing old words new,
Spending again what is already spent: 12
For as the sun is daily new and old,
So is my love still telling what is told.

LXXVII.
Thy glass will show thee how thy beauties wear,
Thy dial how thy precious minutes waste;
The vacant leaves thy mind’s imprint will bear,
And of this book this learning mayst thou taste.
The wrinkles which thy glass will truly show
Of mouthed graves will give thee memory;
Thou by thy dial’s shady stealth mayst know
Time’s thievish progress to eternity.
Look! what thy memory cannot contain,
Commit to these waste blanks, and thou shalt find
Those children nursed, deliver’d from thy brain,
To take a new acquaintance of thy mind. 12
These offices, so oft as thou wilt look,
Shall profit thee and much enrich thy book.

LXXVIII.
So oft have I invok’d thee for my Muse
And found such fair assistance in my verse
As every alien pen hath got my use
And under thee their poesy disperse.
Thrice-eyes, that taught the dumb on high to sing
And heavy ignorance afoot to fly,
Have added feathers to the learned’s wing
And given grace a double majesty.

Yet be most proud of that which I compile,
Whose influence is thine, and born of thee:
In others’ works thou dost but mend the style,
And arts with thy sweet graces grace be;
But thou art all my art, and dost advance
As high as learning my rude ignorance.

LXXXIX.
Whilst I alone did call upon thy aid,
My verse alone had all thy gentle grace;
But now my gracious numbers are decay’d,
And my sick muse doth give another place.
I grant, sweet love, thy lovely argument
Deserves the travail of a worthier pen;
Yet what of thee thy poet doth invent
He robs thee of, and pays it thee again.
He lends thee virtue, and he stole that word
From thy behaviour; beauty doth he give,
And found it in thy cheek; he can afford
No praise to thee but what in thee doth live. 12
Then thank him not for that which he doth say,
Since what he owes thee thou thyself dost pay.

LXXX.
O! how I faint when I of you do write,
Knowing a better spirit doth use your name,
And in the praise thereof spends all his might,
To make me tongue-tied, speaking of your fame!
But since your worth—wide as the ocean is,—
The humble as the proudest sail doth bear,
My saucy bark, inferior far to his,
On your broad main doth wilfully appear.
Your shallowest help will hold me up afloat,
Whilst he upon your soundless deep doth ride;
Or, being wreck’d, I am a worthless boat,
He of tall building and of goodly pride: 12
Then if he thrive and I be cast away,
The worst was this,—my love was my decay.

LXXXI.
Or I shall live your epitaph to make,
Or you survive when I in earth am rotten;
From hence your memory death cannot take,
Although in me each part will be forgotten.
Your name from hence immortal life shall have,
Though I, once gone, to all the world must die: 6
The earth can yield me but a common grave,
When you entombed in men’s eyes shall lie.
Your monument shall be my gentle verse,
Which eyes not yet created shall o’er-read;
And tongues to be your being shall rehearse, 12
When all the breathing of this world are dead;
You still shall live,—such virtue hath my pen,—
Where breath most breathes,—even in the mouths of men.
LXXXII.
I think good thoughts, while others write good words,
And, like unletter’d clerk, still cry ‘Amen’
To every hymn that able spirit affords,
In polish’d form of well-refined pen.
Hearing you prais’d, I say, ’’Tis so, ’tis true,’
And to the most of praise adding something more;

But that is in my thought, whose love to you,
Though words come hindmost, holds his rank before.

Then others for the breath of words respect,
Me for my dumb thoughts, speaking in effect.

LXXXVI.
Was it the proud full sail of his great verse,
Bound for the prize of all too precious you,
That did my ripe thoughts in my brain inhearse,
Making their tomb the womb wherein they grew?

Was it his spirit, by spirits taught to write
Above a mortal pitch, that struck me dead?
No, neither he, nor his compere by night
Giving him aid, my verse astonished.

He, nor that unblest familiar ghost
Which nightly gulls him with intelligence,
As victors of my silence cannot boast;
I was not sick of any fear from thence:

But when your countenance fill’d up his line,
Then lack’d I matter; that enfeebled mine.

LXXXVII.
Farewell! thou art too dear for my possessing,
And like enough thou know’st thy estimate:
The charter of thy worth gives thee releasing;
My bonds in thee are all determinate.
For how do I hold thee but by thy granting?
And for that riches where is my deserving?
The cause of this fair gift in me is wanting,
And so my patent back again is swerving.

Thyself thou gav’st, thy own worth then not knowing,
Or me, to whom thou gav’st it, else mistaking;
So thy great gift, upon misprision growing,
Comes home again, on better judgment making.

Thus have I had thee, as a dream doth flatter,
In sleep a king, but waking, no such matter.

LXXXVIII.
When thou shalt be dispon’d to set me light,
And place my merit in the eye of scorn,
Upon thy side against myself I’ll light,
And prove thee virtuous, though thou art forsworn.
SONNETS

With mine own weakness, being best acquainted,
Upon thy part I can set down a story
Of faults conceal’d, wherein I am attainted;
That thou in losing me shalt win much glory:
And I by this will be a gainer too;
For bending all my loving thoughts on thee,
The injuries that to myself I do,
Doing thee vantage, double-vantage me. 12

Such is my love, to thee I so belong,
That for thy right myself will bear all wrong.

LXXXIX.
Say that thou didst forsake me for some fault,
And I will comment upon that offence:
Speak of my lameness, and I straight will halt,
Against thy reasons making no defence.
Thou canst not, love, disgrace me half so ill,
To set a form upon desired change,
As I’ll myself disgrace; knowing thy will,
I will acquaintance strange, and look strange;
Be absent from my walks; and in my tongue
Thy sweet beloved name no more shall dwell,
Lest I, too much profane, should do it wrong,
And haply of our old acquaintance tell. 12

For thee, against myself I’ll vow debate,
For I must ne’er love him whom thou dost hate.

XC.
Then hate me when thou wilt; if ever, now;
Now, while the world is bent my deeds to cross,
Join with the spite of fortune, make me bow,
And do not drop in for an after-loss:
Ah! do not, when my heart hath ’scap’d this sorrow,
Come in the rearward of a conquer’d woe;
Give not a windy night a rainy morrow,
To linger out a purpose’d overthrow.
If thou wilt leave me, do not leave me last,
When other petty griefs have done their spite,
But in the onset come: so shall I taste
At first the very worst of fortune’s might; 12
And other strains of woe, which now seem woe,

Compar’d with loss of thee will not seem so.

XCI.
Some glory in their birth, some in their skill,
Some in their wealth, some in their body’s force;
Some in their garments, though new-fangled ill;
Some in their hawks and hounds, some in their home;
And every humour hath his adjunct pleasure,
Whencein it finds a joy above the rest.
But these particulars are not my measure;
All these I better in one general best.

Thy love is better than high birth to me,
Richer than wealth, prouder than garments’cost,
Of more delight than hawks or horses be;
And having thee, of all men’s pride I boast: 12
Wretched in this alone, that thou mayst take
All this away, and me most wretched make.

XCII.
But do thy worst to steal thyself away,
For term of life thou art assured mine;
And life no longer than thy love will stay,
For it depends upon that love of thine.
Then need I not to fear the worst of wrongs,
When in the least of them my life hath end. 6
I see a better state to me belongs
Than that which on thy humour doth depend:
Thou canst not vex me with inconstant mind,
Since that my life on thy revolt doth lie.
Oh! what a happy title do I find,
Happy to have thy love, happy to die: 12
But what’s so blessed, fair that fears no blot?
Thou mayst be false, and yet I know it not.

XCIII.
So shall I live, supposing thou art true,
Like a deceived husband; so love’s face
May still seem love to me, though alter’d new;
Thy looks with me, thy heart in other place:
For there can live no hatred in thine eye,
Therefore in that I cannot know thy change. 6
In many’s looks the false heart’s history
Is writ in moods, and frowns, and wrinkles strange,
But heaven in thy creation did decree
That in thy face sweet love should ever dwell;
Whate’er thy thoughts or thy heart’s workings be,
Thy looks should nothing thence but sweetness tell.
12
How like Eve’s apple doth thy beauty grow,
If thy sweet virtue answer not thy show!

XCIV.
They that have power to hurt and will do none,
That do not do the thing they most do show;
Who, moving others, are themselves as stone,
Unmoved, cold, and to temptation slow;
They rightly do inherit heaven’s graces,
And husband nature’s riches from expense; 6
They are the lords and owners of their faces,
Others but stewards of their excellence.
The summer’s flower is to the summer sweet,
Though to itself it only live and die,
But if that flower with base infection meet,
The basest weed outshines his dignity: 19
For sweetest things turn sourest by their deeds;
Lilies that foster smell far worse than weeds.
SONNETS

XCV.
How sweet and lovely dost thou make the
shame
Which, like a canker in the fragrant rose,
Doth spot the beauty of thy budding name!
O! in what sweets dost thou thy sins enclose.
That tongue that tells the story of thy days,
Making lascivious comments on thy sport,
Cannot dispraise but in a kind of praise;
Naming thy name blesses an ill report.
O! what a mansion have those vices got
Which for their habitation chose out thee,
Where beauty’s veil doth cover every blot
And all things turn to fair that eyes can see!
Take heed, dear heart, of this large privilege;
The hardest knife ill-used doth lose his edge.

XCVI.
Some say thy fault is youth, some wantonness;
Some say thy grace is youth and gentle sport;
Both grace and faults are lov’d of more and less:
Thou makest faults grace that to thee resort.
As on the finger of a throned queen
The basest jewel will be well esteem’d,
So are those errors that in thee are seen
To truths translated and for true things deem’d.
How many lambs might the stern wolf betray,
If like a lamb he could his looks translate!
How many gazers mightst thou lead away,
If thou wouldst use the strength of all thy state!
But do not so; I love thee in such sort,
As, thou being mine, mine is thy good report.

XCVII.
How like a winter hath my absence been
From thee, the pleasure of the fleeting year!
What freezeings have I felt, what dark days seen!
What old December’s bareness every where!
And yet this time remov’d was summer’s time;
The teeming autumn, big with rich increase,
Bearing the wanton burden of the prime,
Like widow’d wombs after their lords’ decease:
Yet this abundant issue seem’d to me
But hope of orphans and unfather’d fruit;
For summer and his pleasures wait on thee,
And, thou away, the very birds are mute:
Or, if they sing, ’tis with so dull a cheer,
That leaves look pale, dreading the winter’s near.

XCVIII.
From you have I been absent in the spring.
When proud-pied April, dress’d in all his trim,
 Hath put a spirit of youth in every thing,
That heavy Saturn laugh’d and leap’d with him.
Yet nor the lays of birds, nor the sweet smell
Of different flowers in odour and in hue,
Could make me any summer’s story tell,
Or from their proud lap pluck them where they grew:
Nor did I wonder at the lily’s white,
Nor praise the deep vermillion in the rose;
They were but sweet, but figures of delight,
Drawn after you, you pattern of all those.
Yet seem’d it winter still, and, you away,
As with your shadow I with these did play.

XCIX.
The forward violet thus did I chide:
Sweet thief, whence didst thou steal thy sweet
that smells,
If not from my love’s breath? The purple pride
Which on thy soft cheek for complexion dwells
In my love’s veins thou hast too grossly dy’d.
The lily I condemned for thy hand,
And buds of marjoram had stol’n thy hair;
The roses fearfully on thorns did stand,
One blushing shame, another white despair;
A third, nor red nor white, had stol’n of both,
And to his robbery had annex’d thy breath;
But, for his theft, in pride of all his growth
A veneful canker eat him up to death.
More flowers I noted, yet I none could see
But sweet or colour it had stol’n from thee.

C.
Where art thou, Muse, that thou forget’st so long
To speak of that which gives thee all thy might?
Spend’st thou thy fury on some worthless song,
Darkening thy power to lead base subjects light?
Return, forgetful Muse, and straight redeem
In gentle numbers time so idly spent;
Sing to the ear that doth thy lays esteem
And gives thy pen both skill and argument.
Rise, resty Muse, my love’s sweet face survey,
If Time have any wrinkles graven there;
If any, be a satire to decay,
And make Time’s spoils despised every where.
Give my love fame faster than Time wastes life;
So thou prevent’st his scythe and crooked knife.

O.
O truant Muse, what shall thy amends
For thy neglect of truth in beauty dy’d?
Both truth and beauty on my love depends;
So dost thou too, and therein dignified.
Make answer, Muse: will them not hastily say, 5
‘Truth needs no colour, with his colour art’;
Beauty no pencil, beauty’s truth to lay;
But best is best, if never intermixed’?
SONNETS

Because he needs no praise, wilt thou be dumb?
Excease not silence so; for 'tis lies in thee
To make him much outlive a gilded tomb
And to be praised of ages yet to be. 12

Then do thy office, Muse; I teach thee how
To make him seem long hence as he shows now.

CIII

My love is strengthen'd, though more weak in
seemance;
I love not less, though less the show appear:
That love is merchandiz'd whose rich esteeming
The owner's tongue doth publish every where.
Our love was new, and then but in the spring,
When I was wont to greet it with my lays; 6
As Philomel in summer's front doth sing,
And stops her pipe in growth of riper days:
Not that the summer is less pleasant now
Than when her mournful hymns did hush the night,
But that wild music burthens every bough,
And sweets grown common lose their dear delight. 12
Therefore, like her, I sometime hold my tongue,
Because I would not dull you with my song.

CIII

Alack! what poverty my Muse brings forth,
That having such a scope to show her pride,
The argument, all bare, is of more worth
Than when it hath my added praise beside!
O! blame me not, if I no more can write;
Look in your glass, and there appears a face
That overgoes my blunt invention quite,
Dulling my lines and doing me disgrace.
Were it not sinful then, striving to mend,
To mar the subject that before was well?
For to no other pass my verses tend
Than of your graces and your gifts to tell; 12
And more, much more, than in my verse can sit,
Your own glass shows you when you look in it.

CIV

To me, fair friend, you never can be old,
For as you were when first your eye I ey'd,
Such seems your beauty still. Three winters
cold
Have from the forests shook three summers' pride,
Three heautuous springs to yellow summer turn'd
In places of the seasons have I seen, 6
Three April perfumes in three hot Junes burn'd,
Since first I saw you fresh, which yet are green.

Ah! yet doth beauty, like a dial-hand,
Steal from his figure, and no pace perceiv'd;
So your sweet hue, which methinks still doth stand,
Hath motion, and mine eye may be deceiv'd: 12
For fear of which, hear this, thou age unbred:
Ere you were born was beauty's summer dead.

CV

Let not my love be call'd idolatry,
Nor my beloved as an idol show,
Since all alike my songs and praises be
To one, of one, still such, and ever so.
Kind is my love to-day, to-morrow kind,
Still constant in a wondrous excellence; 6
Therefore my verse, to constancy confin'd,
One thing expressing, leaves out difference.
'Fair, kind, and true,' is all my argument,
'Fair, kind, and true,' varying to other words;
And in this change is my invention spent,
Three themes in one, which wondrous scope affords. 12
'Fair, kind, and true,' have often liv'd alone,
Which three till now never kept seat in one.

CVI

When in the chronicle of wasted time
I see descriptions of the fairest wights,
And beauty making beautiful old time,
In praise of ladies dead and lovely knights,
Then, in the blason of sweet beauty's best,
Of hand, of foot, of lip, of eye, of brow,
I see their antique pen would have express'd
Even such a beauty as you master now.
So all their praises are but prophecies
Of this our time, all you prefiguring;
And, for they look'd but with divining eyes, 11
They had not skill enough your worth to sing:
For we, which now behold theses present days,
Have eyes to wonder, but lack tongues to praise.

CVII

Not mine own fears, nor the prophetic soul
Of the wide world dreaming on things to come,
Can yet the lease of my true love control,
Suppos'd as forfeit to a comin'd doom.
The mortal moon hath her eclipse endure'd,
And the sad augurs mock their own presage; 6
Incertainties now crown themselves assur'd,
And peace proclaims olives of endless age.
Now with the drops of this most balmy time
My love looks fresh, and Death to me subscribes,
Since, spite of him, I'll live in this poor room, 11
While he insults o'er dull and speechless tribes:
And thou in this shalt find thy monument,
When tyrants' crests and tombs of brass are spent.
SONNETS

CVII.
What's in the brain, that ink may character,
Which hath not figur'd to thee my true spirit?
What's new to speak, what new to register,
That may express my love, or thy dear merit?
Nothing, sweet boy; but yet, like prayers divine,
I must each day say o'er the very same;
Counting no old thing old, thou mine, I shun,
Even as when first I ballow'd thy fair name.
So that eternal love in love's fresh case
Weighs not the dust and injury of age,
Nor gives to necessary wrinkles place,
But makes antiquity for eye his page;
Finding the first conceit of love there bred,
Where time and outward form would show it dead.

CIX.
O! never say that I was false of heart,
Though absence seem'd my flame to qualify.
As easy might I from myself depart
As from my soul, which in thy breast doth lie:
That is my home of love: if I have rang'd,
Like him that travels, I return again;
Just to the time, not with the time exchange'd,
So that myself bring water for my stain.
Never believe, though in my nature reign'd
All frailties that besiege all kinds of blood,
That it could so preposterously be stain'd,
To leave for nothing all thy sum of good;
For nothing this wide universe I call,
Save thou, my rose; in it thou art my all.

CX.
Alas! 'tis true I have gone here and there,
And made myself a motley to the view,
Gor'd mine own thoughts, sold cheap what is
most dear,
Made old offences of affections new;
Most true it is that I have look'd on truth
Askrance and strangely; but, by all above,
These blenches gave my heart another youth,
And worse essays prov'd thee my best of love.
Now all is done, save what shall have no end:
Mine appetite I never more will grind
On newer proof, to try an older friend,
A god in love, to whom I am confin'd.
Then give me welcome, next my heaven the best,
Even to thy pure and most most loving breast.

CXI.
O! for my sake do you with Fortune chide
The guilty goddess of my harmful deeds,
That did not better for my life provide
Than public means which public manners breeds.

Thence comes it that my name receives a brand,
And almost thence my nature is subdu'd
To what it works in, like the dyer's hand:
Pity me, then, and wish I were renew'd;
Whilst, like a willing patient, I will drink
Potions of eisel 'gainst my strong infection;
No bitterness that I will bitter think,
Nor double pence, to correct correction.
Pity me, then, dear friend, and assure ye
Even that your pity is enough to cure me.

CXII.
Your love and pity doth the impression fill
Which vulgar scandal stamp'd upon my brow;
For what care I who calls me well or ill,
So you o'er-green my bad, my good allow?
You are all the-world, and I must strive
To know my shames and praises from your tongue;
None else to me, nor I to none alive,
That my steel'd sense or changes right or wrong.
In so profound abyss I throw all care
Of other's voices, that my adder's sense
To critic and to flatterer stopped are.
Mark how with my neglect I do dispense:
You are so strongly in my purpose bred,
That all the world besides methinks are dead.

CXIII.
Since I left you, mine eye is in my mind;
And that which governs me to go about
Doth part his function and is partly blind
Seems seeing, but effectually is out;
For it no form delivers to the heart
Of bird, of flower, or shape, which it doth latch:
Of his quick objects hath the mind no part,
Nor his own vision holds what it doth catch;
For if it see the rud'st or gentlest sight,
The most sweet favour or deformed'st creature,
The mountain or the sea, the day or night,
The crow or dove, it shapes them to your feature:
Incapable of more, replets with you,
My most true mind thus maketh mine untrue.

CXIV.
Or whether doth my mind being crown'd with
you,
Drink up the monarch's plague, this flattery?
Or whether shall I say, mine eye saith true,
And that your love taught it this archimony,
To make her monsters and things indigust
Such cherubins as your sweet self resemble,
Creating every had a perfect best,
As fast as objects to his beams assemble?
SONNETS

Ol 'tis the first, 'tis flattery in my seeing,
And my great mind most kindly drinks it up;
Mine eye well knows what with his gust is
12
greasing,
And to his palate doth prepare the cup:  
If it be poison'd, 'tis the lesser sin
That mine eye loves it and doth first begin.

CXV.
Those lines that I before have writ do lie,
Even those that said I could not love you
dearer:
Yet then my judgment knew no reason why
My most full flame should afterwards burn clearer.
But reckoning Time, whose million'd accidents
Creep in 'twixt vows, and change decrees of kings,
Tan sacred beauty, blunt the sharp'st intents,
Divert strong minds to the course of altering things;
Alas! why, fearing of Time's tyranny,
Might I not then say, 'Now I love you best,'
When I was certain o'er incertainty,
Crowning the present, doubting of the rest?  
12
Love is a babe; then might I not say so,
To give full growth to that which still doth grow?

CXVI.
Let me not to the marriage of true minds
Admit impediments. Love is not love
Which alters when it alteration finds,
Or bends with the remover to remove:
O, no! it is an ever-fixed mark
That looks on tempests and is never shaken;
It is the star to every wandering bark,
Whose worth is unknown, although his height be taken.
Love's not Time's fool, though rosy lips and cheeks
Within his bending sickle's compass come;
Love alters not with his brief hours and weeks,
But bears it out even to the edge of doom.  
If this be error, and upon me prov'd,
I never writ, nor no man ever lov'd

CXVII.
Accuse me thus: that I have scanted all
Wherein I should your great deserts repay,
Forgot upon your dearest love to call,
Whereat all bonds do tie me day by day;
That I have frequent seen with unknown minds,
And given to time your own dear purchase dight;
That I have hoisted sail to all the winds
Which should transport me furthest from your sight.

Book both my wilfulness and errors down,
And on just proof surmise accumulate;
Bring me within the level of your frown,
But shoot not at me in your waken'd hate;  
12
Since my appeal says I did strive to prove
The constancy and virtue of your love.

CXVIII.
Like as, to make our appetites more keen,
With eager compounds we our palate urge;
As, to prevent our maladies unseen,
We sicken to shun sickness when we purge;
Even so, being full of your ne'er-dying sweetness,
To bitter sauces did I frame my feeding;
And, sick of welfare, found a kind of meetness
To be diseas'd, ere that there was true need.
Thus policy in love, to anticipate
The ills that were not, grew to faults assured,
And brought to medicine a healthful state;
11
Which, rank of goodness, would by ill be cur'd;
But thence I learn, and find the lesson true,
Drugs poison him that so fell sick of you.

CXIX.
What potions have I drunk of Siren tears,
Distill'd from limbecks foul as hell within,
Applying fears to hopes, and hopes to fears,
Still losing when I saw myself to win!
What wretched errors hath my heart committed,
Whilst it hath thought itself so blessed never!
6
How have mine eyes out of their spheres been fitted,
In the distraction of this maddening fever!
O benefit of ill! now I find true
That better is by evil still made better;
And ruin'd love, when it is built anew,
11
Grows fairer than at first, more strong, far greater.
So I return rebuk'd to my content,
And gain by ill thrice more than I have spent.

CXX.
That you were once unkind befriends me now,
And for that sorrow, which I then did feel,
Needs must I under my transgression bow,
Unless my nerves were brass or hammer'd steel.
For if you were by my unkindness shaken,
As I by yours, you've pass'd a half of time;
And I, a tyrant, have no leisure taken
To weigh how once I suffer'd in your crime.
O that our night of woe might have remember'd
My deepest sense, how hard true sorrow hits,
And soon to you, as you to me, then tender'd
The humble salve which wounded bosoms fits!
But that your trespass now becomes a fee;
Mine ransoms yours, and yours must ransom me.
SONNETS

CXXI.
'Tis better to be vile than vile esteem'd,
When not to be receiv'd reproach of being;
And the just pleasure lost, which is so deem'd
Not by our feeling, but by others' seeing:
For why should others' false adulator eyes
Give salutation to my sportive blood?
Or on my frailties why are frailer spies,
Which in their wills count bad what I think good?
No, I am that I am, and they that level
At my abuses reckon up their own:
I may be straight though themselves be bevel;
By their rank thoughts my deeds must not be shown;
Unless this general evil they maintain,
All men are bad and in their badness reign.

CXXII.
Thy gift, thy tables, are within my brain
Full character'd with lasting memory,
Which shall above that idle rank remain,
Beyond all date, even to eternity:
Or, at the least, so long as brain and heart
Have faculty by nature to subsist;
Till each to raz'd oblivion yield his part
Of thee, thy record never can be miss'd.
That poor retention could not so much hold,
Nor need I tallies thy dear love to score;
Therefore to give them from me was I bold,
To trust those tables that receive thee more:
To keep an adjunct to remember thee
Were to import forgetfulness in me.

CXXIII.
No, Time, thou shalt not boast that I do change:
Thy pyramids built up with newer might
To me are nothing novel, nothing strange;
They are but dressings of a former sight.
Our dates are brief, and therefore we admire
What thou dost foist upon us that is old;
And rather make them born to our desire
Than think that we before have heard them told.
Thy registers and thee I both defy,
Not wondering at the present nor the past,
For thy records and what we doth doth lie,
Made more or less by thy continual haste.
This I do vow, and this shall ever be;
I will be true, despite thy seythe and thee.

CXXIV.
If my dear love were but the child of state,
It might for Fortune's bastard be unfather'd,
As subject to Time's love or to Time's hate,
Weeds among weeds, or flowers with flowers gather'd.
No, it was builded far from accident;
It suffers not in smiling pomp, nor falls
Under the blow of thrall'd discontent,
Whereo'the inviting time our fashion calls:
It fears not policy, that heretic,
Which works on leases of short number'd hours,
But all alone stands hugely politic,
That it nor grows with heat, nor drowns with showers.
To this I witness call the fools of time,
Which die for goodness, who have liv'd for crime.

CXXV.
Were 't aught to me I bore the canopy,
With my extern the outward honouring,
Or laid great bases for eternity,
Which prove more short than waste or ruining?
Have I not seen dwellers on form and favour
Lose all and more by paying too much rent,
For compound sweet foregoing simple savour
Pitiful thrivers, in their gazing spent?
No; let me be obsequious in thy heart,
And take thou my oblation, poor but free,
Which is not mix'd with seconds, known no art,
But mutual render, only me for thee.
Hence, thou suborn'd informer! a true soul
When most impeach'd stands least in thy control.

CXXVI.
O thou, my lovely boy, who in thy power
Dost hold Time's fickle glass, his sickle hour;
Who hast by waning grown, and therein show'st
Thy lovers withering as thy sweet self grow'st;
If Nature, sovereign mistress over wreck,
As thou goest onwards, still will pluck thee back,
She keeps thee to this purpose, that her skill
May time disgrace and wretched minutes kill.
Yet fear her, O thou minion of her pleasure!
She may detain, but not still keep, her treasure:
Her audit, though delay'd, answer'd must be,
And her quietus is to render thee.

CXXVII.
In the old age black was not counted fair,
Or if it were, it bore not beauty's name;
But now is black beauty's successive heir,
And beauty slander'd with a bastard's shame:
For since each hand hath put on Nature's power,
Fairing the foul with Art's false borrow'd face;
Sweet beauty hath no name, no lady hower,
But is prou'd, if not lives in disgrace.
Therefore my mistress' brows are raven black,
Her eyes so suiated, and they mourners seem
At such who, not born fair, no beauty lack,
Sland'ring creation with a false esteem:
12
Yet so they mourn, becoming of their woe,
That every tongue says beauty should look so.

CXXVIII.
How oft, when thou, my music, music play'st,
Upon that blessed wood whose motion sounds
With thy sweet fingers, when thou gently sway'st
The wiry concord that mine ear confounds,
Do I envy those jacks that nimble leap
To kiss the tender inward of thy hand,
Whilst my poor lips, which should that harvest reap,
At the wood's boldness by thee blushing stand!
To be so tickli'd, they would change their state
And situation with those dancing chips,
O'er whom thy fingers walk with gentle gait,
Making dead wood more bless'd than living lips.
Since saucy jacks so happy are in this,
Give them thy fingers, me thy lips to kiss.

CXXIX.
The expense of spirit in a wage of shame
Is lust in action; and till action, lust
Is perjur'd, murderous, bloody, full of blame,
Savage, extreme, rude, cruel, not to trust;
Enjoy'd no sooner but despisèd straight;
Past reason hunted; and no sooner had,
Past reason hated, as a swallow'd bait,
On purpose laid to make the taker mad:
Mad in pursuit, and in possession so;
Had, having, and in quest to have, extreme;
A bliss in proof,—and prov'd, a very woe;
Before a joy propos'd; behind, a dream.
6
12
All this the world well knows; yet none
Knows well
To shun the heaven that leads men to this hell.

CXXX.
My mistress' eyes are nothing like the sun;
Coral is far more red than her lips' red;
If snow be white, why then her breasts are dun;
If hairs be wires, black wires grow on her head.
I have seen roses damask'd, red and white,
But no such roses see I in her cheeks;
6
And in some perfumes is there more delight
Than in the breath that from my mistress reeks.
I love to hear her speak, yet well I know
That music hath a far more pleasing sound:
I grant I never saw a goddess go,—
My mistress, when she walks, treads on the ground:
12
And yet, by heaven, I think my love as rare
As any she belied with false compare.

CXXXI.
Thou art as tyrannous, so as thou art,
As those whose beauties proudly make them cruel;
For well thou know'st to my dear doing heart
Thou art the fairest and most precious jewel.
Yet, in good faith, some say that thee behold,
Thy face hath not the power to make love growan:
6
To say they err I dare not be so bold,—
Although I swear it to myself alone.
And to be sure that is not false I swear,
A thousand groans, but thinking on thy face,
One on another's neck, do witness bear
Thy black is fairest in my judgment's place, 12
In nothing art thou black save in thy deeds,
And thence this slander, as I think, proceeds.

CXXXII.
Thine eyes I love, and they, as pitying me,
Knowing thy heart torments me with disdain,
Have put on black and loving mourners be,
Looking with pretty ruth upon my pain.
And truly not the morning sun of heaven
Better becomes the grey cheeks of the west,
Nor that full star that ushers in the even,
Doth half that glory to the sober west,
As those two mourning eyes become thy face:
O! let it then as well beseech thy heart
To mourn for me, since mourning doth thee grace,
And suit thy pity like in every part.
12
Then will I swear beauty herself is black,
And all they foul that thy complexion lack.

CXXXIII.
Beshrew that heart that makes my heart to groan
For that deep wound it gives my friend and me!
Is 't not enough to torture me alone,
But slave to slavery my sweetest friend must be?
Me from myself thy cruel eye hath taken,
And my next self thou harder hast engraven:'
6
Of him, myself, and thee, I am forsaken.
A torment thrice threefold thus to be cross'd,
Prison my heart in thy steel bosom's ward,
But then my friend's heart let my poor heart bail;
Who'er keeps me, let my heart be his guard;
Thou canst not then use rigour in my jail:
12
And yet thou wilt; for I, being pent in thee,
Perforce am thine, and all that is in me.

CXXXIV.
So, now I have confess'd that he is thine,
And I myself am mortgage'd to thy will,
Myself I'll forfeit, so that other mine
Thou wilt restore, to be my comfort still:
SONNETS

But thou wilt not, nor he will not be free,
For thou art covetous and he is kind;
He learn'd but surety-like to write for me,
Under that bond that he as fast doth bind.
The statue of thy beauty thou wilt take,
Thou usurer, that put'st forth all to use,
And sue a friend came debtor for my sake;
So him I lose through my unkind abuse.

Him have I lost; thou hast both him and me:
He pays the whole, and yet am I not free.

CXXXV.
Whoever hath her wish, thou hast thy will,
And will to boot, and will in overplus;
More than enough am I that vex thee still,
To thy sweet will making addition thus.
Wilt thou, whose will is large and spacious,
Not once vouchsafe to hide my will in thine?
Shall will in others seem right gracious,
And in my will no fair acceptance shine?
The sea, all water, yet receives rain still,
And in abundance addeth to his store;
So thou, being rich in will, add to thy will
One will of mine, to make thy large will more.
Let no unkind 'No' fair beseechers kill;
Think all but one, and me in that one will.

CXXXVI.
If thy soul check thee that I come so near,
Swear to thy blind soul that I was thy will,
And will, thy soul knows, is admitted there;
Thus far for love, my love-suit, sweet, fulfill.
Will will fulfill the treasure of thy love,
Ay, fill it full with wills, and my will one.
In things of great receipt with ease we prove
Among a number one is reckoned none:
Then in the number let me pass untold,
Though in thy stores' account I one must be;
For nothing hold me, so it please thee hold
That nothing me, a something sweet to thee:
Make but my name thy love, and love that still,
And then thou lov'st me,—for my name is will.

CXXXVII.
Thou blind fool, Love, what dost thou to mine eyes,
That they behold, and see not what they see?
They know what beauty is, see where it lies,
Yet what the best is take the worst to be.
If eyes, corrupt by over-partial looks,
Be anchor'd in the bay where all men ride,
Why of eyes' falsehood hast thou forg'd books,
Where to the judgment of my heart is tied?

Why should my heart think that a several plot
Which my heart knows the wide world's common place?
Or mine eyes, seeing this, say this is not,
To put fair truth upon so foul a face?
In things right true my heart and eyes have err'd,
And to this false plague are they now transfer'd.

CXXXVIII.
When my love swears that she is made of truth,
I do believe her, though I know she lies,
That she might think me some untutor'd youth,
Unlearned in the world's false subtleties.
Thus vainly thinking that she thinks me young,
Although she knows my days are past the best,
Simply I credit her false-speaking tongue:
On both sides thus is simple truth suppress'd.
But wherefore says she not she is unjust?
And wherefore say not I that I am old?
O! love's best habit is in seeming trust,
And age in love lives not to have years told:
Therefore I lie with her, and she with me,
And in our faults by lies we flatter'd be.

CXXXIX.
O! call not me to justify the wrong
That thy unkindness lays upon my heart;
Wound me not with thine eye, but with thy tongue:
Use power with power, and slay me not by art.
Tell me thou lovest elsewhere; but in my sight,
Dear heart, forbear to glance thine eye aside:
What need'st thou wound with cunning, when thy might
Is more than my o'erpress'd defence can hide?
Let me excuse thee: all my love well knows
Her pretty looks have been my enemies;
And therefore from my face she turns my foes,
That they elsewhere might dart their injuries:
Yet do not so; but since I am near slain,
Kill me outright with looks, and rid my pain.

CXL.
Be wise as thou art cruel; do not press
My tongue-tied patience with too much disdain;
Lest sorrow bend me words, and words express
The manner of my pity-wanting pain.
If I might teach thee wit, better it were,
Though not to love, yet, love, to tell me so;—
As they sick men, when their deaths be near,
No news but health from their physicians know;—
SONNETS

For, if I should despair, I should grow mad,
And in my madness might speak ill of thee:
Now this ill-wresting world is grown so bad,
Mad slanderers by mad ears believed be. 12
That I may not be so, nor thou belied,
Bear thine eyes straight, though thy proud
heart go wide.

CXLII.
In faith, I do not love thee with mine eyes,
For they in thee a thousand errors note;
But 'tis my heart that loves what they de-
spise,
Who, in despite of view, is pleas'd to dote.
Nor are mine ears with thy tongue's tune de-
lighted;
Nor tender feeling, to base touches prone. 6
Nor taste nor smell desire to be invited
To any sensual feast with thee alone:
But my five wits nor my five senses can
Dissuad one foolish heart from serving thee,
Who leaves unwary'd the likeness of a man,
Thy proud heart's slave and vassal wretch to
be:
Only my plague thus far I count my gain,
That she that makes me sin awards me
pain.

CXLII.
Love is my sin, and thy dear virtue hate,
Hate of my sin, grounded on sinful loving:
O! but with mine compare thou thine own
state,
And thou shalt find it merits not reproving;
Or, if it do, not from those lips of thine,
That have profan'd their scarlet ornaments
And seal'd false bonds of love as oft as mine,
Robb'd others' beds' revenues of their rents.
Be it lawful I love thee, as thou lov'st those
Whom thine eyes woo as mine importune
thee:
Root pity in thy heart, that when it grows,
Thy pity may deserve to pitied be. 12
If thou dost seek to have what thou dost
hide,
By self-example mayst thou be denied!

CXLIII.
Let, as a careful housewife runs to catch
One of her feather'd creatures broke away,
Sets down her babe, and makes all quick dis-
patch
In pursuit of the thing she would have stay;
Whilst her neglected child holds her in chase,
Cries to catch her whose busy care is bent
To follow that which flies before her face,
Not prizing her poor infant's discontent:

So runn'st thou after that which flies from thee,
Whilst I thy babe chase thee afar behind;
But if thou catch thy hope, turn back to me,
And play the mother's part, kiss me, be kind; 12
So will I pray that thou mayst have thy
Will.
If thou turn back and my loud-crying still.

CXLIV.
Two loves I have of comfort and despair,
Which like two spirits do suggest me still:
The better angel is a man right fair,
The worser spirit a woman, colour'd ill.
To win me soon to hell, my female evil
Tempteth my better angel from my side, 6
And would corrupt my saint to be a devil,
Wooing his purity with her foul pride.
And whether that my angel be turn'd fiend
Suspect I may, but not directly tell;
But being both from me, both to each friend,
I guess one angel in another's hell: 12
Yet this shall I ne'er know, but live in doubt,
Till my bad angel fire my good one out.

CXLV.
Those lips that Love's own hand did make,
Breath'd forth the sound that said 'I hate,'
To me that languish'd for her sake:
But when she saw my woeful state,
Straight in her heart did mercy come,
Chiding that tongue that ever sweet
Was us'd in giving gentle doom;
And taught it thus anew to greet;
'I hate,' she alter'd with an end,
That follow'd it as gentle day
Doth follow night, who like a fiend
From heaven to hell is flown away. 12
'I hate' from hate away she threw,
And sav'd my life, saying—'Not you.'

CXLVI.
Poor soul, the centre of my sinful earth,
Fool'd by these rebel powers that thee array,
Why dost thou pine within and suffer dearth,
Painting thy outward wall so costly gay? 6
Why so large cost, having so short a lease,
Dost thou upon thy fading mansion spend?
Shall worms, inheritors of this excess,
Eat up thy charge? Is this thy body's end?
Then, soul, live thou upon thy servant's loss,
And let that pine to aggravate thy store;
Buy terms divine in selling hours of dress;
Within be fed, without be rich no more: 12
So shalt thou feed on Death, that feeds on
men,
And Death once dead, there's no more dying
then.
CXLVII.
My love is as a fever, longing still
For that which longer nurses the disease;
Feeding on that which doth preserve the ill,
The uncertain sickly appetite to please.
My reason, the physician to my love,
Angry that his prescriptions are not kept,
Hath left me, and I desperate now approve
Desire is death, which physic did except.
Past cure I am, now Reason is past care,
And frantic mad with evermore unrest;
My thoughts and my discourse as madmen’s are,
At random from the truth vainly express’d: 12
For I have sworn thee fair, and thought thee bright,
Who art as black as hell, as dark as night.

CXLVIII.
O me! what eyes hath Love put in my head,
Which have no correspondence with true sight;
Or, if they have, where is my judgment fled,
That censures falsely what they see aright?
If that be fair whereon my false eyes dote,
What means the world to say it is not so? 6
If it be not, then love doth well denote
Love’s eye is not so true as all men’s: no.
How can it? O! how can Love’s eye be true,
That is so vex’d with watching and with tears?
No marvel then, though I mistake my view;
The sun itself sees not till heaven clears. 12
O cunning Love! with tears thou keep’st me blind,
Lest eyes well-seeing thy foul faults should find.

CXLIX.
Canst thou, O cruel! say I love thee not,
When I against myself with thee partake?
Do I not think on thee, when I forget
Am of myself, all tyrant, for thy sake?
Who hath thee that I do call my friend?
On whom frowns’st thou that I do fawn upon? 6
Nay, if thou lovest on me, do I not spend
Revenge upon myself with present mean?
What merit do I in myself respect,
That so proud thy service to despise?
When all my best doth worship thy defect,
Commanded by the motion of thine eyes? 23
But, love, hate on, for now I know thy mind;
Those that can see thou lov’st, and I am blind.

CL.
O! from what power hast thou this powerful might,
With insufficiency my heart to sway?
To make me give the lie to true sight,
And swear that brightness doth not grace the day?
Whence hast thou this becoming of things ill,
That in the very refuse of thy deeds 6
There is such strength and warrantise of skill,
That, in my mind, thy worst all best exceeds?
Who taught thee how to make me love thee more,
The more I hear and see just cause of hate?
O! though I love what others do abhor,
With others thou shouldst not abhor my state: 12
If thy unworthiness rais’d love in me,
More worthy I to be belov’d of thee.

CLI.
Love is too young to know what conscience is;
Yet who knows not conscience is born of love?
Then, gentle cheater, urge not my amiss,
Lest guilty of my faults thy sweet self lose;
For, thou betraying me, I do betray
My nobler part to my gross body’s treason; 6
My soul doth tell my body that he may
Triumph in love; flesh stays no further reason,
But rising at thy name doth point out thee
As his triumphant prize. Proud of this pride,
He is contented thy poor drudge to be,
To stand in thy affairs, fall by thy side. 12
No want of conscience hold it that I call
Her ‘love’ for whose dear love I rise and fall.

CLI.
In loving thee thou know’st I am forsworn,
But thou art twice forsworn, to me love swearing;
In act thy bed-vow broke, and new faith torn,
In vowing new hate after new love bearing.
But why of two oaths’ breach do I accuse thee,
When I break twenty? I am perjur’d most; 6
For all my vows are oaths but to misuse thee,
And all my honest faith in thee is lost:
For I have sworn deep oaths of thy deep kindless,
Oaths of thy love, thy truth, thy constancy: 10
And, to enlighten thee, gave eyes to blindness,
Or made them swear against the thing they see;
For I have sworn thee fair; more perjur’d I,
To swear against the truth so foul a list.
CLIII.
Cupid laid by his bane and fell asleep;
A maid of Dian's this advantage found,
And his love-kindling fire did quickly steep
In a cold valley-fountain of that ground;
Which borrow'd from this holy fire of Love
A dateless lively heat, still to endure,
And grew a seething bath, which yet men prove
Against strange maladies a sovereign cure.
But at my mistress' eye Love's brand new-fired,
The boy for trial needs would touch my breast;
I, sick withal, the help of bath desired,
And thither hied, a sad distemper's guest,
But found no cure: the bath for my help lies
Where Cupid got new fire, my mistress' eyes.

CLIV.
The little Love-god lying once asleep
Laid by his side his heart-inflaming brand,
Whilst many nymphs that vow'd chaste life to keep
Came tripping by; but in her maiden hand
The fairest votary took up that fire
Which many legions of true hearts had warm'd;
And so the general of hot desire
Was, sleeping, by a virgin hand disarm'd.
This brand she quenched in a cool well by,
Which from Love's fire took heat perpetual,
Growing a bath and healthful remedy
For men diseas'd; but I, my mistress' thrall,
Came there for cure, and this by that I prove,
Love's fire heats water, water cools not love.

A LOVER'S COMPLAINT

FROM off a hill whose concave womb re-worded
A plaintive story from a sistering vale,
My spirits to attend this double voice accorded,
And down I laid to list the sad-tun'd tale;
Ere long espied a fickle maid full pale,
Tearing of papers, breaking rings a-twine,
Storming her world with sorrow's wind and rain.

Upon her head a platted hive of straw,
Which fortified her visage from the sun,
Whereon the thought might think sometime it saw
The carcass of a beauty spent and done:
Time had not scythed all that youth begun,
Nor youth all quit; but, spite of heaven's fall rage,
Some beauty peep'd through lattice of see'd-age.

Oft did she heave her napkin to her eyene,
Which on it had conceived characters,
Laugher the silken figures in the brine
That season'd woe had pelleted in tears,
And often reading what content it bears;
As oft shrieking undistinguish'd woe
In clamours of all size, both high and low.

Sometimes her level'd eyes their carriage ride,
As they did battery to the spheres intend;
Sometimes diverted, their poor sails are tied
To the orb'd earth; sometimes they do extend
Their view right on; anon their gasses land
To every place at once, and nowhere fix'd,
The mind and sight distractedly commix'd.

Her hair, nor loose nor tied in formal plat,
Proclaim'd in her a careless hand of pride;
For some, untuck'd, descended her sheav'd hat,
Hanging her pale and pined cheek beside;
Some in her threaden fillet still did bide,
And true to bondage would not break from thence
Though slackly braided in loose negligence.

A thousand favours from a maund she drew
Of amber, crystal, and of beaded jet,
Which one by one she in a river threw,
Upon whose weeping margent she was set;
Like usury, applying wet to wet,
Or monarch's hands that let not bounty fall,
Where want cries some, but where excess begs all.

Of folded schedules had she many a one,
Which she perus'd, sigh'd, tore, and gave the flood;
Crack'd many a ring of poised gold and bone,
Bidding them find their sepulchres in mud;
Found yet more letters sadly penn'd in blood,
With slei'ded silk feast and affectionately
Enswath'd, and seal'd to curious secrecy.

These often bath'd she in her luxuive eyes,
And often kiss'd, and often 'gan to tear;
Cried 'O false blood! thou register of lies,'
What unapproved witness dost thou bear?
Ink would have seem'd more black and damned here.'
This said, in top of rage the lines she rants,
Big discontent so breaking their contents.
A reverend man that graz'd his cattle nigh—
Sometime a blusterer, that the ruffie knew.
Of court, of city, and had let go by
The swiftest hours, observed as they flew—
Towards this afflicted fancy fastly drew;
And, privileg'd by age, desires to know
In brief the grounds and motives of her woe.

So slides he down upon his grained hat,
And comely distant sits he by her side;
When he again desires her, being sat,
Her grievance with his hearing to divide:
If that from him there may be aught applied
Which may her suffering easesty assuage,
'Tis promis'd in the charity of age.

'Father,' she says, 'though in me you behold
The injury of many a blasting hour,
Let it not sell your judgment I am old;
Not age, but sorrow, over me hath power:
I might as yet have been a spreading flower,
Fresh to myself, if I had self-applied
Love to myself and to no love beside.

'But woe is me! too early I attended
A youthful suit, it was to gain my grace,
Of one by nature's outwards so commended,
That maidens' eyes stuck over all his face.
Love lack'd a dwelling, and made him her place;
And when in his fair parts she did abide,
She was new lodg'd and newly defiled.

'His browny locks did hang in crooked curls,
And every light occasion of the wind
Upon his lips their silken parcels hurl.
What's sweet to do, to do will aptly find:
Each eye that saw him did enchant the mind,
For on his visage was in little drawn
What largeness thinks in Paradise was sown.

'Small show of man was yet upon his chin;
His phoenix down began but to appear
Like unshorn velvet on that termless skin
Whose bare out-bragg'd the web it seem'd to wear;
Yet show'd his visage by that cost more dear,
And nice affections wavering stood in doubt
If best were as it was, or best without.

'His qualities were beauteous as his form,
For maiden-tongu'd he was, and thereof free;
Yet, if men mov'd him, was he such a storm
As oft 'twixt May and April is to see,
When winds breathe sweet, unruly though they be.
His rudeness so with his authoris'd youth
Dit livery falseness in a pride of truth.

Well could he ride, and often men would say
"That horse he mettle from his rider takes:
Proud of subjection, noble by the sway,
What rounds, what bounds, what course, what stop he makes!"

And controversy hence a question takes,
Whether the horse by him became his deed,
Or he his manage by the well-doing steed.

'But quickly on this side the verdict went:
His real habitude gave life and grace
To appurtenances and to ornament,
Accomplish'd in himself, not in his case:
All aids, themselves made fairer by their place,
Came for additions; yet their purpos'd trim
Piec'd not his grace, but were all grac'd by him.

'So on the tip of his subduing tongue
All kind of arguments and question deep,
All replication prompt, and reason strong,
For his advantage still did wake and sleep:
To make the weeper laugh, the laughers weep,
He had the dialect and different skill,
Catching all passions in his craft of will:

'That he did in the general bosom reign
Of young, of old; and sexes both enchanted,
To dwell with him in thoughts, or to remain
In personal duty, following where he haunted:
Consents bewiti'd, are he desire, have granted;
And dialogu'd for him what he would say,
Ask'd their own wills, and made their wills obey.

'Many there were that did his picture get,
To serve their eyes, and in it put their mind;
Like fools that in the imagination set
The goodly objects which abroad they find
Of lands and mansions, theirs in thought assign'd;
And labouring in more pleasures to bestow them
Than the true gouty landlord which doth owe them.

'So many hare, that never touch'd his hand,
Swestly suppos'd them mistress of his heart.
My woe full self, that did in freedom stand,
And was my own ise-simple, not in part,
What with his art in youth, and youth in art,
Threw my affections in his charmed power,
Reserv'd the stalk and gave him all my flower.

'Yet did I not, as some my equals did,
Demand of him, nor being desired yielded;
Finding myself in honour so forbid,
With safest distance I mine honour shielded.
Experience for me many bulwarks built
Of proofs new-blessing, which remain'd the foil
Of this false jewel, and his amorous spoil.
'But, ah! who ever shunn'd by precedent
The destin’d ill she must herself assay? 156
Or forc’d examples, ’gainst her own content,
To put the by-pass’d perils in her way?
Counsel may stop awhile what will not stay;
For when we rage, advice is often seen 160
By blunting us to make our wits more keen.

'Nor gives it satisfaction to our blood,
That we must curb it upon others’ proof;
To be forbid the sweets that seem so good, 164
For fear of harms that preach in our behalf.
O appetite! from judgment stand aloof;
The one a palate bath that needs will taste, 167
Though Reason weep, and cry “It is thy last.”

'For further I could say “This man’s untrue,”
And knew the patterns of his foul beguiling;
Heard where his plants in others’ orchards grew,
Saw how deceits were gilded in his smiling; 172
Knew vows were ever brokers to desiring;
Thought characters and words merely but art,
And bastards of his foul adulterate heart.

'And long upon these terms I held my city, 176
Till thus he ‘gan besiege me: “Gentle maid,
Have of my suffering youth some feeling pity,
And be not of my holy vows afraid:
That’s to ye sworn to none was ever said; 180
For feasts of love I have been call’d unto,
Till now did ne’er invite, nor never woo.

"All my offences that abroad you see
Are errors of the blood, none of the mind; 184
Love made them not: with acture they may be,
Where neither party is nor true nor kind:
They sought their shame that so their shame
And so much less of shame in me remains, 188
By how much of me their reproach contains.

"Among the many that mine eyes have seen,
Not one whose flame my heart so much as
Or my affection put to the smallest teen, 192
Or any of my pleasures ever charm’d:
Harm have I done to them, but ne’er was
Kept hearts in liveries, but mine own was free,
And reign’d, commanding in his monarchy. 196

"Look here, what tributes wounded fancies
Of palest pearls and rubies red as blood;
Figuring that they their passions likewise lent
Of grief and blushes, aptly understood
In bloodless white and the emrison’d mood;
Effects of terror and dear modesty,
Encamp’d in hearts, but fighting outwardly.

"And, lo! behold these talents of their hair,
With twisted metal amorously impleach’d, 205
I have receiv’d from many a severall fair,
Their kind acceptance weepingly beseech’d,
With the annexions of fair gems enrich’d, 208
And deep-brain’d sonnets, that did amplify
Each stone’s dear nature, worth, and quality.

"The diamond; why, ’twas beautiful and hard,
Where to his invis’d properties did tend; 212
The deep-green emerald, in whose fresh regard
Weak sights their sickly radiance do amend;
The heaven-hu’d sapphire and the opal blend
With objects manifold: each several stone, 216
With wit well blazon’d, smil’d or made some
moan.

"O! all these trophies of affections hot,
Of pensiv’d and subdu’d desires the tender, 219
Nature hath charg’d me that I hoard them not,
But yield them up where I myself must render,
That is, to you, my origin and ender;
For these, of force, must your oblations be,
Since I their altar, you enpatron me. 224

"O! then, advance of yours that phraseless
Whose white weighs down the airy scale of
praise;
Take all these similes to your own command,
Hallow’d with sighs that burning lungs did
raise;
What me your minister, for you obeys,
Works under you; and to your audit comes
Their distract parcels in combined sums.

"O! this device was sent me from a nun, 232
Or sister sanctified, of holiest note;
Which late her noble suit in court did shun,
Whose rarest havings made the blossoms dote;
For she was sought by spirits of richest coat, 236
But kept cold distance, and did thence remove,
To spend her living in eternal love.

"But, O my sweet! what labour is ’t to leave
The thing we have not, mastering what not
strives,
Paling the place which did no form receive,
Playing patient sports in unconstrained gyves?
She that her fame so to herself contrives,
The scars of battle ’scapeth by the flight, 244
And makes her absence valiant, not her might.

"O! pardon me, in that my boast is true;
The accident which brought me to her eye
Upon the moment did her force subdue, 248
And now she would the caged cloister fly;
Religious love put out Religion’s eye:
Not to be tempted, would she be immur’d,
And now, to tempt, all liberty procur’d."
A LOVER'S COMPLAINT

"How mighty then you are, O! hear me tell: 256
The broken bosoms that to me belong,
Have emptied all their fountains in my well,
And mine I pour your ocean all among: 256
I strong o'er them, and you o'er me being
strong,
Must for your victory us all congeat,
As compound love to physic your cold breast.

"My parts had power to charm a sacred nun,
Who, disciplin'd, ay, dieted in grace, 261
Believ'd her eyes when they to assail begun,
All vows and consecrations giving place.
O most potential! vow, bond, nor space,
In thee hath neither sting, knot, nor confine,
For thou art all, and all things else are thine.

"When thou impressest, what are precepts worth
Of stale example? When thou wilt inflame, 268
How coldly those impediments stand forth
Of wealth, of flail fear, law, kindred, fame!
Love's arms are peace, 'gainst rule, 'gainst sense, 'gainst shame,
And sweetens, in the suffering pangs it bears,
The aloe of all forces, shocks, and fears. 273

"Now all these hearts that do on mine depend,
Feeling it break, with bleeding groans they pine;
And suppliant their sighs to you extend, 276
To leave the battery that you make 'gainst mine,
Lending soft audience to my sweet design,
And credent soul to that strong-bonded oath
That shall prefer and undertake my troth." 280

"This said, his watery eyes he did dismount,
Whose sights still then were levell'd on my face;
Each cheek a river running from a fount 283
With brinish current downward flow'd space.
O! how the channel to the stream gave grace;
Who gliss'd with crystal gate the glowing roses
That flame through water which their hue
endless.

"O father! what a hell of witchcraft lies 288
In the small orb of one particular tear,
But with the inundation of the eyes
What rocky heart to water will not wear?
What breast so cold that is not warmed here?
O cleft effect! cold modesty, hot wrath, 293
Both fire from hence and chill extinguise hath.

"For, lo! his passion, but an art of craft,
Even there resolv'd my reason into tears; 296
There my white stole of chastity I daff'd,
Shook off my sober guards and civil fears;
Appeal to him, as he to me appears,
All melting; though our drops this difference bore,
His poison'd me, and mine did him restore.

"In him a plenitude of subtle matter,
Applied to cautels, all strange forms receives,
Of burning blushes, or of weeping water, 304
Or swounding paleness; and he takes and leaves,
In either aptness, as it best deceives,
To blush at speeches rank, to weep at woes,
Or to turn white and swound at tragic shows:

"That not a heart which in his level came 309
Could 'scape the hail of his all-hurting aim,
Showing fair nature is both kind and tame;
And, veil'd in them, did win whom he would
maim: 312
Against the thing he sought he would exclaim;
When he most burn'd in heart-wish'd luxury,
He preach'd pure maid, and praise'd cold chas-
tiety.

"Thus merely with the garment of a Grace 316
The naked and concealed fiend he cover'd;
That the unexperient gave the tempter place,
Which like a cherubin above them hover'd.
Who, young and simple, would not be so
lover'd? 320
Ay me! I fell; and yet do question make
What I should do again for such a sake.

"O! that infected moisture of his eye,
O! that false fire which in his cheek so glow'd,
O! that for'd thunder from his heart did fly,
O! that sad breath his spongy lungs bestow'd,
O! all that borrow'd motion seeming ow'd,
Would yet again betray the fore-betray'd, 323
And new pervert a reconciled maid.'

1308
THE PASSIONATE PILGRIM

I.

When my love swears that she is made of truth,
I do believe her, though I know she lies,
That she might think me some untutor'd youth,
Unskill'd in the world's false forgeries.
Thus vainly thinking that she thinks me young,
Although I know my years be past the best,
I smiling credit her false-speaking tongue,
Outfacing faults in love with love's ill rest.
But wherefore says my love that she is young?
And wherefore says not I that I am old?
O! love's best habit is a soothing tongue,
And age, in love, loves not to have years

told.

Therefore I'll lie with love, and love with me,
Since that our faults in love thus smoother'd be.

II.

Two loves I have of comfort and despair,
Which like two spirits do suggest me still;
The better angel is a man, right fair,
The worse spirit a woman, colour'd ill.
To win me soon to hell, my female evil
Tempteth my better angel from my side,
And would corrupt a saint to be a devil,
Wooing his purity with her fair pride:
And whether that my angel be turn'd fiend
Suspect I may, but not directly tell;
For being both to me, both to each friend,
I guess one angel in another's hell.

The truth I shall not know, but live in doubt,
Till my bad angel fire my good one out.

III.

Did not the heavenly rhetoric of thine eye,
'Gainst whom the world could not hold argument,
Persuade my heart to this false perjury?
Vows for thee broke deserve not punishment.
A woman I forswore; but I will prove,
Thou being a goddess, I forswore not thee:
My vow was earthy, thou a heavenly love;
Thy grace being gain'd cures all disgrace in me.
My vow was breath, and breath a vapour is;
Then thou, fair sun, that on this earth dost shine,

Exhale this vapour vow; in thee it is:
If broken, then it is no fault of mine.
If by me broke, what fool is not so wise
To break an oath, to win a paradise?

IV.

Sweet Cytherea, sitting by a brook
With young Adonis, lovely, fresh, and green,
Did court the lad with many a lovely look,
Such looks as none could look but beauty's queen.
She told him stories to delight his ear;
She show'd him favours to allure his eye;
To win his heart, she touch'd him here and there,—

Touches so soft still conquer chastity.
But whether unripe years did want conceit,
Or he refus'd to take her figur'd proffer,
The tender nibbler would not touch the bait,
But smile and jest at every gentle offer:

Then fell she on her back, fair queen, and toward:

He rose and ran away; ah! fool too froward.

V.

If love make me forsworn, how shall I swear to love?
O! never faith could hold, if not to beauty vow'd:
Though to myself forsworn, to thee I'll constant prove;
Those thoughts, to me like oaks, to thee like osiers bow'd.
Study his bias leaves, and makes his book thine eyes,

Where all those pleasures live that art can comprehend.

If knowledge be the mark, to know thee shall suffice;
Well learned is that tongue that well can thee commend;
All ignorant that soul that sees thee without wonder;

Which is to me some praise, that I thy parts admire:

Thine eye Jove's lightning seems, thy voice his dreadful thunder,
Which, not to anger bent, is music and sweet fire.

Celestial as thou art, O! do not love that wrong,

To sing heaven's praise with such an earthly tongue.

VI.

Scarce had the sun dried up the dewy morn,
And scarce the herd gone to the hedge for shade,
When Cytherea, all in love forlorn,

A longing tardiance for Adonis made.
The Passionate Pilgrim

Under an osier growing by a brook,
A brook where Adon us'd to cool his spleen:
Hot was the day; she hotter that did look
For his approach, that often there had been.
Anon he comes, and throws his mantle by,
And stood stark naked on the brook's green brim:
The sun look'd on the world with glorious eye,
Yet not so wistly as this queen on him:
He, spying her, bounc'd in, whereas he stood:
'O Jove,' quoth she, 'why was not I a flood!'  

VII.
Fair is my love, but not so fair as sickle;
Mild as a dove, but neither true nor trusty;
Brighter than glass, and yet, as glass is, brittle;
Softer than wax, and yet, as iron, rusty:
A lily pale, with damask dye to grace her,
None fairer, nor none fairer to deface her.

Her lips to mine how often hath she join'd,
Between each kiss her oaths of true love swearing!
How many tales to please me hath she coin'd,
Dreading my love, the less thereof still fearing!
Yet in the midst of all her pure protestings,
Her faith, her oaths, her tears, and all were jestings.

She burn'd with love, as straw with fire flameth;
She burn'd out love, as soon as straw outburneth;
She fram'd the love, and yet she foil'd the framing;
She bade love last, and yet she fell a-turning;
Was this a lover, or a lecher whether?
Bad in the best, though excellent in neither.

VIII.
If music and sweet poetry agree,
As they must needs, the sister and the brother,
Then must the love be great 'twixt thee and me,
Because thou lov'st the one, and I the other.
Dowland to thee is dear, whose heavenly touch
Upon the lute doth ravish human sense;
Spenser to me, whose deep conceit is such
As, passing all conceit, needs no defence.
Thou lov'st to hear the sweet melodious sound
That Phoebus' lute, the queen of music, makes;
And I in deep delight am chiefly drown'd
Whenas himself to singing he betakes.

One god is god of both, as poets feign;
One knight loves both, and both in thee remain.

IX.
Fair was the morn when the fair queen of love,
Faler for sorrow than her milk-white dove,
For Adon's sake, a youngster proud and wild;
Her stand she takes upon a steep-up hill:
Anon Adonis comes with horn and hounds:
She, silly queen, with more than love's good will,
Forbade the boy he should not pass those grounds:
'Once,' quoth she, 'did I see a fair sweet youth
Here in these brakes deep-wounded with a boar,
Deep in the thigh, a spectacle of ruth!
'See, in my thigh,' quoth she, 'here was the sore.
She showed hers; he saw more wounds than one,
And blushing fled, and left her all alone.

X.
Sweet rose, fair flower, untimely pluck'd, soon vaded,
Pluck'd in the bud, and vaded in the spring!
Bright orient pearl, alack! too timely shaded;
Fair creature, kill'd too soon by death's sharp sting!
Like a green plum that hangs upon a tree,
And falls, through wind, before the fall should be.
I weep for thee, and yet no cause I have;
For why thou left'st me nothing in thy will:
And yet thou left'st me more than I did crave;
For why I craved nothing of thee still:
'O yes, dear friend, I pardon crave of thee,
Thy discontent thou didst bequeath to me.

XI.
Venus, with young Adonis sitting by her
Under a myrtle shade, began to woo him:
She told the youngling how god Mars did try her,
And as he fell to her, so fall she to him.
'Even thus,' quoth she, 'the war-like god embrac'd me,'
And then she clipp'd Adonis in her arms:
'Even thus,' quoth she, 'the war-like god unlac'd me,'
As if the boy should use like loving charms.
'Even thus,' quoth she, 'he seized on my lip,'
And with her lips on his did act the seizure;
And as she fetched breath, away he skips,
And would not take her meaning nor her pleasure.

Ah! that I had my lady at this bay,
To kiss and clip me till I ran away.

XII.
Crabbed age and youth cannot live together:
Youth is full of pleasure, age is full of care;
Youth like summer morn, age like winter weather;
Youth like summer brave, age like winter bare.
THE PASSIONATE PILGRIM

Youth is full of sport, age's breath is short;
Youth is nimble, age is lame;
Youth is hot and bold, age is weak and cold;
Youth is wild, and age is tame.
Age, I do abhor thee, youth, I do adore thee;
O! my love, my love is young:
Age, I do defy thee: Oh! sweet shepherd, hie thee,
For methinks thou stay'st too long.

XIII.
Beauty is but a vain and doubtful good;
A shinning gloss that vadeth suddenly;
A flower that dies when first it 'gins to bud;
A brittle glass that's broken presently:
A doubtful good, a gloss, a glass, a flower,
Lost, vaded, broken, dead within an hour.
And as goods lost are sold or never found,
As vaded gloss no rubbing will refresh,
As flowers dead lie wither'd on the ground,
As broken glass no cement can redress,
So beauty blemish'd once 's for ever lost,
In spite of physic, painting, pain, and cost.

Good night, good rest. Ah! neither be my share:
She bade good night that kept my rest away;
And dash'd me to a cabin hang'd with care,
To descend on the doubts of my decay.
-Farewell," quoth she, 'and come again to-morrow':
Fare well I could not, for I supp'd with sorrow.

Yet at my parting sweetly did she smile,
In scorn of friendship, nill I construe whether:
'T may be, she joy'd to jest at my exile,
'T may be, again to make me wander thither:
'Wander,' a word for shadows like myself,
As take the pain, but cannot pluck the pelf.
Lord! how mine eyes throw gaze to the east;
My heart doth charge the watch; the morning rise
Doth cite each moving sense from idle rest.
Not daring trust the office of mine eyes,
While Philomela sits and sings, I sit and mark,
And wish her lays were tuned like the lark;
For she doth welcome day-light with her ditty,
And drives away dark dismal-dreaming night:
The night so pack'd, I post unto my pretty;
Heart hath his hope, and eyes their wished sight;
Sorrow chang'd to solace, solace mix'd with sorrow;
For why, she sigh'd and bade me come to-morrow.
Were I with her, the night would post too soon;
But now are minutes added to the hours;
To spite me now, each minute seems a moon;
Yet not for me, shine sun to succour flowers!
Pack night, peep day; good day, of night now borrow:
Short, night, to-night, and length thyself to-morrow.

SONNETS TO SUNDRY NOTES OF MUSIC

I.
It was a lording's daughter, the fairest one of three,
That liked of her master as well as well might be,
Till looking on an Englishman, the fair'st that eye could see,
Her fancy fell a-turning.
Long was the combat doubtful that love with love did fight,
To leave the master loveless, or kill the gallant knight:
To put in practice either, alas! it was a spite
Unto the silly damsel.

But one must be refused; more mickle was the pain
That nothing could be used to turn them both to gain;
For of the two the trusty knight was wounded with disdain;
Alas! she could not help it.
Thus art with arms contending was victor of the day,
Which by a gift of learning did bear the maid away;
Then lullaby, the learned man hath got the lady gay;
For now my song is ended.
SONNETS TO SUNDARY NOTES OF MUSIC

II.
On a day, alack the day!
Love, whose month was ever May,
Spied a blossom passing fair,
Playing in the wanton air:
Through the velvet leaves the wind,
All unseen, 'gan passage find;
That the lover, sick to death,
Wish'd himself the heaven's breath.
'Air, quoth he, 'thy cheeks may blow;
But, alas! my hand hath sworn
Ne'er to pluck thee from thy thorn:
Vow, alack! for youth unmeet:
Youth, so apt to pluck a sweet.
Thou for whom Jove would swear
Juno but an Ethiop were;
And deny himself for Jove,
Turning mortal for thy love.'

III.
My flocks feed not,
My ewes breed not,
My rams speed not,
All is amiss:
Love's denying,
Faith's defying,
Heart's renying,
Causer of this.
All my merry jigs are quite forgot,
All my lady's love is lost, God wot:
Where her faith was firmly fix'd in love,
There a nay is plac'd without remove.
One silly cross
Wrought all my loss;
O! frowning Fortune, cursed, fickle dame;
For now I see
Inconstancy
More in women than in men remain.

In black mourn I,
All fears scorn I,
Love hath forlorn me,
Living in thrall:
Heart is bleeding,
All help-needing,
O! cruel speeding,
Fraughted with gail.
My shepherd's pipe can sound no deal,
My wether's bell rings doleful knell;
My curial dog, that wont to have play'd,
Plays not at all, but seems afraid;
My sighs so deep
Procure to weep,
In howling wise, to see my doleful plight.

How sighs resound
Through heartless ground,
Like a thousand vanquish'd men in bloody fight!
Clear well spring not,
Sweet birds sing not,
Green plants bring not
Forth their dye;
Hers stand weeping,
Flocks all sleeping,
Nymphs sacc peeping
Fearfully:
All our pleasure known to us poor swains,
All our merry meetings on the plains,
All our evening sport from us is fled,
All our love is lost, for Love is dead.
Farewell, sweet lass,
Thy like ne'er was
For a sweet content, the cause of all my moan:
Poor Corydon
Must live alone;
Other help for him I see that there is none.

IV.
Whenas thine eye hath chose the dame,
And stall'd the deer that thou'st strike,
Let reason rule things worthy blame,
As well as fancy, partial wight:
Take counsel of some wiser head,
Neither too young nor yet unwed.
And when thou com'st thy tale to tell,
Smooth not thy tongue with filed talk,
Lest she some subtle practice smell;
A cripple soon can find a halt:
But plainly say thou lov'st her well,
And set thy person forth to sell.
What though her frowning brows be bent,
Her cloudy looks will clear ere night;
And then too late she will repent
That thus dissembled her delight;
And twice desire, ere it be day,
That which with scorn she put away.
What though she strive to try her strength,
And ban and brawl, and say thee nay,
Her feeble force will yield at length,
When craft hath taught her thus to say,
'Had women been so strong as men,
In faith, you had not had it then.'
And to her will frame all thy ways;
Spare not to spend, and chiefly there
Where thy desert may merit praise,
By ringing in thy lady's ear:
The strongest castles, towers, and town,
The golden bullet beats it down.
SONNETS TO SUNDRY NOTES OF MUSIC

Serve always with assured trust,
And in thy suit be humble true;
Unless thy lady prove unjust,
Seek never thou to choose anew.
When time shall serve, be thou not slack
To proffer, though she put thee back.

The wiles and guiles that women work,
Dissembled with an outward show,
The tricks and toys that in them lurk,
The cock that treads them shall not know.
Have you not heard it said full oft,
A woman's may doth stand for nought?

Think, women love to match with men
And not to live so like a saint:
Here is no heaven; they holy then
Begin when age doth them attain.
Were kisses all the joys in bed,
One woman would another wed.

But, soft! enough! too much, I fear;
For if my mistress hear my song,
She will not stick to ring my ear,
To teach my tongue to be so long:
Yet will she blush, here be it said,
To hear her secrets so bewray'd.

VI.

Live with me, and be my love,
And we will all the pleasures prove
That hills and valleys, dales and fields,
And all the craggy mountains yields.

There will we sit upon the rocks,
And see the shepherds feed their flocks,
By shallow rivers, by whose falls
Melodious birds sing madrigals.

There will I make thee a bed of roses,
With a thousand fragrant posies,
A cap of flowers, and a kirtle
Embroider'd all with leaves of myrtle.

A belt of straw and ivy buds,
With coral clasps and amber studs;
And if these pleasures may thee move,
Then live with me and be my love.

LOVE'S ANSWER.

If that the world and love were young,
And truth in every shepherd's tongue,
These pretty pleasures might me move,
To live with thee and be thy love.

VI.

As it fell upon a day
In the merry month of May,
Sitting in a pleasant shade
Which a grove of myrtles made,
THE PHOENIX AND THE TURTLE

Let the bird of loudest lay,
On the sole Arabian tree,
Herald sad and trumpet be,
To whose sound chaste wings obey.

But thou shrieking harbinger,
Foul precurser of the fiend,
Augur of the fever's end,
To this troop come thou not near.

From this session interdict
Every fowl of tyrant wing,
Save the eagle, feather'd king:
Keep the obsequy so strict.

Let the priest in surplice white
That defunctive music can,
Be the death-divining swan,
Lest the requiem lack his right.

And thou treble-dated crow,
That thy sable gender mak'st
With the breath thou giv'st and tak'st,
'Mongst our mourners shall thou go.

Here the anthem doth commence:
Love and constancy is dead;
Phoenix and the turtle fled
In a mutual flame from hence.

So they lov'd, as love in twain
Had the essence but in one;
Two distinct, division none:
Number there in love was slain.

Hearts remote, yet not asunder;
Distance, and no space was seen
'Twixt the turtle and his queen:
But in them it was a wonder.

So between them love did shine,
That the turtle saw his right
Flaming in the phoenix' sight;
Either was the other's mine.

Property was thus appall'd,
That the self was not the same;
Single nature's double name
Neither two nor one was call'd.

Reason, in itself confounded,
Saw division grow together;
To themselves yet either neither,
Simple were so well compounded,

That it cried, 'How true a twain
Seemeth this concordant one!
Love hath reason, reason none,
If what parts can so remain.'

Whereupon it made this threne
To the phoenix and the dove,
Co-supremes and stars of love,
As chorus to their tragic scene.

THRENO

Beauty, truth, and rarity
Grace in all simplicity,
Here enclos'd in cinders lie.

Death is now the phoenix' nest;
And the turtle's loyal breast
To eternity doth rest,

Leaving no posterity:
'Twas not their infirmity,
It was married chastity.

Truth may seem, but cannot be;
Beauty brag, but 'tis not she;
Truth and beauty buried be.

To this urn let those repair
That are either true or fair;
For these dead birds sigh a prayer.
# INDEX OF CHARACTERS

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Character</th>
<th>Appearance</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Aaron, Tit. Andr.</td>
<td>Ephesus, Com. of Etr.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abercavenny, Lord, Hen. VIII</td>
<td>Syracuse, Com. of Etr.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Anthon, Mes. for Mes.</td>
<td>Anthenius, Troilus</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Achilles, Troilus</td>
<td>Antioch, Much Ado.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Adam, As You Like It.</td>
<td>Antony, Tempest.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Adryan, Coriolanus</td>
<td>Antony, Twelfth Night.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Adriana, Com. of Etr.</td>
<td>Ant. &amp; Cleop.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Aegemon, Com. of Etr.</td>
<td>Apemantus, Timon.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Aemilius, Tit. Andr.</td>
<td>Archibald, Earl of Douglas, 1 Hen. IV.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Aemilius Lepidus, Jul. Cesar</td>
<td>Archibaldus, Winter's T.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Aeneas, Troilus</td>
<td>Ariel, Tempest.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Agamemnon, Troilus</td>
<td>Armado, Don Adriano De, Love's L. L.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Agrippa, Ant. &amp; Cleop.</td>
<td>Arragon, Prince of M. of Ven.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Azax, Troilus.</td>
<td>As You Like It.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Alarbus, Tit. Andr.</td>
<td>Aufidius, Tullus, Coriol.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Alcibiades, Timon.</td>
<td>Autolycus, Winter's T.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Alencon, Duke of, 1 Hen. VI.</td>
<td>Avenger, Countess of, 1 Hen. VI.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Alexander, Troilus.</td>
<td>Bagot, Rich. II.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Alice, Hen. V.</td>
<td>Balbazar, Com. of Etr.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Amiens, As You Like It.</td>
<td>Banquo, Macbeth.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Andromache, Troilus</td>
<td>Baptista, Tam. of Shrew.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Andronicus, Marcus, Tit. Andr.</td>
<td>Bardolph, 1 &amp; 2 Hen. IV.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Angelo, Com. of Etr.</td>
<td>Bassanio, M. of Ven.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Angelo, Mass. for Mass.</td>
<td>Bassett, 1 Hen. VI.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Anguis, Macbeth.</td>
<td>Bassianus, Tit. Andr.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Anjou, Reignier, Duke of, 1 Hen. VI.</td>
<td>Bates, Hen. V.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Antieuos</td>
<td>Beatrice, Much Ado.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Antiochus, Winter's T.</td>
<td>Beaumont, Henry, Bishop of Winchester, 1 &amp; 2 Hen. VI.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Antiochus, King of Antioch, Pericles.</td>
<td>Beaumont, John, Earl of Somerset, 1 Hen. VI.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Arbalus, Cymbeline.</td>
<td>Belch, Sir Toby, Twelve Night.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Benwick, Sir Toby, Twelve Night.</td>
<td>Benwick, Much Ado.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Berenstane, Love's L. L.</td>
<td>Bertram, Count of Roussillon, All's Well.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bevis, George, 2 Hen. VI.</td>
<td>Bigot, Lord, K. John.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Blame, Cymbeline.</td>
<td>Blazon, Tam. of Shrew.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Blynt, Sir Walter, 1 &amp; 2 Hen. IV.</td>
<td>Blouse, F. E.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bowsain, Tempest.</td>
<td>Bolingbroke, 2 Hen. VI.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bolingbroke (afterwards Henry IV), Rich. II.</td>
<td>Bon, 3 Hen. VI.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Borschio, Much Ado.</td>
<td>Bottom, Mids. N. Dr.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bottom, Mids. N. Dr.</td>
<td>Boulton, Pericles.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Boyet, Love's L. L.</td>
<td>Bourgogne, Duke of, Hen. V.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Brabans, Ohello.</td>
<td>Brabant, Much Ado.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Name</td>
<td>Character</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-----------------------</td>
<td>--------------------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Brandon, Hen. VIII</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Brandon, Sir William</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rich. III</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Britain, Queen of</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(wife to</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cymbeline, Cymbeline</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Brutus, Decius, Jul.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cæs.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Brutus, Junius, Coriolanus</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Brutus, Marcus, Jul.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cæs.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Buckingham, Dukes of</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2 Hen. VI</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rich. III</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>VII</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bulp calf, 2 Hen. IV</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bullen, Anne, Hen.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>VIII</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Burgundy, Duke of</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hen. V, 1</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hen. VI</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Burgundy, Duke of K.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lear</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bushy, Rich. II</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Butts, Doctor, Hen.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>VIII</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cade, Jack, 2 Hen. VI</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cadwal, Cymbeline</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Caesar, Julius, Jul.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cæs.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Caesar, Octavius, Jul.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cæs., Ant. &amp; Cleop.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Catrines, Macbeth</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Caius, Tit. Andr.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Caius, Doctor, Merry Wives</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Caius Licius, Cymbeline</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Calchas, Trojan</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Caliban, Tempest</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cambridge, Earl of,</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hen. V</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Camillo, Winter’s T.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Campion, Cardinal, Hen.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>VIII</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Candidius, Ant. &amp; Cleop.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Canterbury, Archbishop</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>of Hen. V</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Caphis, Timon</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Capucius, Hen. VIII</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Capulet, Rom. &amp; Jul.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Capulet, Lady, Rom. &amp; Jul.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Carlisle, Bishop of,</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rich. II</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Casca, Jul. Cæs.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cassandra, Trojan</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cassio, Othello</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Catesby, Sir William</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rich. III</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cato, Young, Jul. Cæs.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cells, As You Like It.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ceres, Tempest</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cerimon, Pericles</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Chamerlain, Lord, Hen.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>VIII</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Chancellor, Lord</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hen. VIII</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Charles, As You Like It</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Charles, The Dauphin, 1</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hen. VI</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Charles the Sixth, King of France, Hen. V.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Charmian, Ant. &amp; Cleop.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Chatham, Clerk of, 2 Hen. VI</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Chatillon, K. John</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Chiron, Tit. Andr.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cimber, Metellus, Jul.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cæs.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Clarence, George, Duke of, 3 Hen. VI, Rich. III</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Clarence, Thomas, Duke of, 2 Hen. IV</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Claudius, Meas. for Meas.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Claudius, Much Ado.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Claudius, King of Denmark, Hamlet</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cleomenes, Winter's T.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cleon, Pericles</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cleopatra, Queen of Egypt, Ant. &amp; Cleop.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Clifford, Lord, 2 &amp; 3 Hen. VI</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Clifford, Young, 2 Hen. VI</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Clooten, Cymbeline</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cobweb, Mids. N. Dr.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Coleville, Sir John, 2 Hen. IV</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cominius, Coriolanus</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Conrade, Much Ado</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Constable of France, The, Hen. V</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Constance, K. John</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cordelia, K. Lear.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Corin, As You Like It.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Coriolanus, Caesar, Marcius, Coriolanus</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cornelia, Cymbeline</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cornelius, Hamlet</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cornwall, Duke of K. Lear</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Costard, Love's L. L.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Court, Hen. V</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Courtisan, A, Com. of Etr.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cranmer, Archbishop of Canterbury, Hen. VIII</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cressida, Trojan</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cromwell, Hen. VIII</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cupid, Timon</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Curan, K. Lear.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Curtius, Tenth Night</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Curtis, Tim.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Davy, 2 Hen. IV</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>de Burgh, Hubert, K. John</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Decius Brutus, Jul. Cæs.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Deiphobus, Trojan</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Demetrius, Ant. &amp; Cleop.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Demetrius, Mids. N. Dr.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Demetrius, Tit. Andr.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dennis, As You Like It</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Denny, Sir Anthony, Hen. VIII</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Derby, Earl of, Rich. III</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Desdemona, Othello</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Diana, All's Well</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Diana, Pericles</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dick the Butcher, 2 Hen. VI</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Diomedes, Ant. &amp; Cleop.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Diomedes, Trojan</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dion, Winter's T.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dionysa, Pericles</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dogberry, Much Ado.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dolabella, Ant. &amp; Cleop.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Domitianus Enobarbus, Ant. &amp; Cleop.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Donalbain, Macbeth</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dobcass, Winter's T.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dorset, Marquis of, Rich. III</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Douglas, Earl of, 1 Hen. IV</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dromio of Ephesus, Com. of Etr.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dromio of Syracuse, Com. of Etr.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Duke, The, As You Like It</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dull, Love's L. L.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dumaine, Love's L. L.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Duncan, King of Scotland, Macbeth</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Edgar, K. Lear.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Edmund, K. Lear.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Edmund, Earl of Rutland</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3 Hen. VI</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Edmund of Langley, Duke of York, Rich. II</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Edward, Earl of March (afterwards Edward IV), 2 &amp; 3 Hen. VI, Rich. III</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Edward, Prince of Wales, 3 Hen. VI</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Character Name</td>
<td>Page References</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>---------------</td>
<td>----------------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Edward, Prince of Wales</td>
<td>V, III.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ejus, Mids. N. Dr.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Eglamour, Two G. of Ver.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Elbow, Mess. for Mess.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Eleanor, Duchess of Gloucester</td>
<td>VI, 2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Elinar, Queen, K. John.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Elizabeth, Queen to Edward IV</td>
<td>III.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ely, Bishop of, Hen. V.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Emilia, Othello.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Emilla, Winter's T.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Enobarbus, Domitian, Ant.</td>
<td>&amp; Cleop.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Eros, Ant. &amp; Cleop.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Eppingham, Sir Thomas, Hen. V.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Escalus, Mess. for Mess.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Escalus, Rom. &amp; Jul.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Escanors, Pericles.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Essex, Earl of, K. John.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Euphorion, Ant. &amp; Cleop.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Evans, Sir Hugh, Merry Wives.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Exeter, Duke of, Hen. V, 1 &amp; 3 Hen. VI.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fabian, Twelfth Night.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Falstaff, Sir John, 1 &amp; 2 Hen. IV, Merry Wives.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fang, 2 Hen. IV.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fastolfe, Sir John, 1 Hen. VI.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Faulconbridge, Lady, K. John.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Faulconbridge, Philip, K. John.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Faulconbridge, Robert, K. John.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Feste, 2 Hen. IV.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fenton, Merry Wives.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ferdinand, Tempest.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ferdinand, King of Navarre, Love's L. L.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Feste, Twelfth Night.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fitzwater, Lord, Rich. II.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Flaminius, Timon.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Flavius, Timon.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fluance, Macbeth.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Florence, Duke of, All's Well.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Florizel, Winter's T.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fluselle, Hen. V.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Flute, Mids. N. Dr.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fool, K. Lear.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ford, Merry Wives.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ford, Mistress, Merry Wives.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Forester, Love's L. L.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fortinbras, Hamlet.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>France, Constable of, Hen. V.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>France, King of, All's Well.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>France, King of, K. Lear.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>France, Princess of, L. L.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Francis, Friar, Much Ado.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Franciscus, Meas. for Meas.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Francisco, Hamlet.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Francisco, Tempest.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Frederick, As You Like It.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Froth, Meas. for Meas.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gadshill, 1 Hen. IV.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gallus, Ant. &amp; Cleop.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gardiner, Bishop of Winchester, Hen. VIII.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gargrave, Sir Thomas, 1 Hen. VI.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gaunt, John of, Duke of Lancaster, Rich. II.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>George, Duke of Clarence, 3 Hen. VI, Rich. III.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gertrude, Queen of Denmark, Hamlet.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ghost of Hamlet's Father, Hamlet.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Glendalough, Sir William, 1 Hen. VI.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Glendower, Owen, 1 Hen. IV.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gloucester, Duchess of, Rich. II.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gloucester, Eleanor, Duchess of, 2 Hen. VI.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gloucester, Earl of, K. Lear.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gombo, Launcelot, M. of Ven.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gombo, Old, M. of Ven.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Goffe, Matthew, 2 Hen. VI.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Goneril, K. Lear.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gonzalo, Tempest.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gower, 2 Hen. IV.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gower, Hen. V.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gower, Pericles.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Grandpré, Hen. V.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gratiano, M. of Ven.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gratiano, Othello.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gravediggers, Hamlet.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Green, Rich. II.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gregory, Rom. &amp; Jul.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gremio, Tam. of Shrew.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Grey, Lady, 3 Hen. VI.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Grey, Lord, Rich. III.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Grey, Sir Thomas, Hen. V.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Griffith, Hen. VIII.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Grumio, Tam. of Shrew.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Guiderius, Cymbeline.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Guilderstern, Hamlet.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Guildford, Sir Henry, Hen. VIII.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gurney, James, K. John.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Harcourt, Prince of Denmark, Hamlet.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Harfleur, Governor of, Hen. V.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hastings, Lord, 2 Hen. IV.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hastings, Lord, 3 Hen. VI, Rich. III.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hecate, Macbeth.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hector, Troilus.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Helen, Cymbeline.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Helen, Troilus.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Helena, All's Well.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Helene, Mids. N. Dr.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Helius, Troilus.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Helicanus, Pericles.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Henry Bolingbroke (afterwards Henry IV), Rich. II, 1 &amp; 2 Hen. IV.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Henry, Prince of Wales (afterwards Henry V), 1 &amp; 2 Hen. IV, Hen. V.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Henry VI, 1, 2, &amp; 3 Hen. VI.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Henry, Earl of Richmond (afterwards Henry VII), 3 Hen. VI, Rich. III.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Henry VIII, Hen. VIII.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Henry, Prince, K. John.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Herbert, Sir Walter, Rich. III.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hermia, Mids. N. Dr.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hermione, Winter's T.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hero, Much Ado.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hippolitta, Mids. N. Dr.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Holland, John, 2 Hen. VI.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Holopherne, Love's L. L.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Horatio, Hamlet.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Horner, Thomas, 2 Hen. VI.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Horsensio, Tam. of Shrew.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Characters</td>
<td>Plays/Acts</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-----------</td>
<td>------------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>HORTENSIUS</td>
<td>Timon.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>HOST, TWO G.</td>
<td>of Ver.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>HOST OF THE</td>
<td>GARDEN,</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>MARRY</td>
<td>WIVES.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>HOSTESS, TAM.</td>
<td>OF SHERWOOD.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>HORTSPUR</td>
<td>(HENRY PERCY),</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>RICH. II</td>
<td>1 HEN. IV.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>HUBERT DE BURGH</td>
<td>K. JOHN.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>HUME, JOHN</td>
<td>2 HEN. VI.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>HUMPHREY, DUKE OF</td>
<td>GLOUCESTER, 2 HEN. IV, HEN. V, 1 &amp; 2 HEN. VI.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>HUNTSMEN, TAM.</td>
<td>OF SHERWOOD.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>HYMEN, AS YOU LIKE IT.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>IACHIMO</td>
<td>CYMBELINE.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>IAGO</td>
<td>OTHELLO.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>IDEN, ALEXANDER</td>
<td>2 HEN. VI.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>IMAGON, CYMBELINE.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>IRAS, ANT.</td>
<td>&amp; CLEOPATRA.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>IRIS, TEMPEST.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ISABEL, QUEEN OF FRANCE</td>
<td>HEN. V.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ISABELLA</td>
<td>MEAS. FOR MEAS.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>JACK CADE</td>
<td>2 HEN. VI.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>JAMY</td>
<td>HEN. V.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>JAQUENETTA, LOVE'S L. L.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>JAQUES</td>
<td>AS YOU LIKE IT.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>JAKUES DE BOYS</td>
<td>AS YOU LIKE IT.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>JESSICA, M.</td>
<td>OF VER.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>JOAN LA PUCELLE</td>
<td>(JOAN OF ARC), 1 HEN. VI.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>JOHN, DON</td>
<td>MUCH ADO.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>JOHN, PRIEST</td>
<td>ROM. &amp; JUL.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>JOHN</td>
<td>KING</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>JOHN OF GAUNT</td>
<td>DUKE OF LANCASHIRE, RICH. II.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>JOHN OF LANCASHIRE</td>
<td>1 &amp; 2 HEN. IV.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>JOURDAIN, MARGERY</td>
<td>2 HEN. VI.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>JULIUS CæSAR</td>
<td>JULIUS CæSAR, ROM. &amp; JUL.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>JULIUS CAESAR</td>
<td>JULIUS CæSAR.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>JUNIUS BRUTUS</td>
<td>CORIOLANUS.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>JUNO</td>
<td>TEMPEST.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>KATHARINA</td>
<td>TAM. OF SHREW.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>KATHERINE</td>
<td>LOVE'S L. L.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>KATHERINE, PRINCESS</td>
<td>HEN. V.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>KATHERINE</td>
<td>QUEEN</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>KENT, EARL OF</td>
<td>KENT.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LAKES</td>
<td>HAMLET.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LAPEU</td>
<td>ALL'S WELL.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LANCESTER, DUKE OF</td>
<td>RICH. II.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LANCESTER, JOHN</td>
<td>OF</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LARTUS</td>
<td>TITUS, CORIOLANUS.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LAUNCELOT</td>
<td>GORBO</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LAURENCE</td>
<td>PRIEST</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LAVAL</td>
<td>ALL'S WELL.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LAVAL</td>
<td>TITUS, CORIOLANUS.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LEAR</td>
<td>KING</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LE BEAU</td>
<td>AS YOU LIKE IT.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LERAUD</td>
<td>POPILIUS</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LENNOX</td>
<td>MACBETH.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LEONARDO</td>
<td>M. OF SHREW.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LEONATO</td>
<td>MUCH ADO.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LEONETUS</td>
<td>POSTHUMUS, CYMBELINE.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LEONTES</td>
<td>WINTER'S T.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LEPIDUS</td>
<td>AMILUS, JUL. CæS., ANT. &amp; CLEOPATRA.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LEWIS, THE DAUPHIN</td>
<td>K. JOHN.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LEWIS, THE DAUPHIN</td>
<td>HEN. V.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LEWIS THE ELEVENTH, KING</td>
<td>OF FRANCE, 3 HEN. VI.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LIGARIUS</td>
<td>JUL. CæS.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LINCOLN</td>
<td>BISHOP</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LODOVICO</td>
<td>OTHELLO.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LONDON, LORD MAYOR</td>
<td>OF</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LONGAVAIL</td>
<td>LOVE'S L. L.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LORD, A. TAM.</td>
<td>OF</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LORD CHIEF JUSTICE</td>
<td>2 HEN. IV.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LORD MARSHAL</td>
<td>RICH. II.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LORENO</td>
<td>M. OF VER.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LOVE</td>
<td>LORD</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LOWELL</td>
<td>SIR THOMAS</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LUC</td>
<td>COM.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LUCENTO</td>
<td>TAM.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LUCENTO</td>
<td>TAM.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LUCENTO</td>
<td>TAM.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LUCIANA</td>
<td>COM.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LUCIEN</td>
<td>JUL. CæS.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LUCIUS, TIMON.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LUCIO</td>
<td>MEAS.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LUCIO</td>
<td>JUL. CæS.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LUCIUS</td>
<td>TIMON.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LUCIUS, TIMON.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LUCIUS, TIMON.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LUCIUS, CAIUS</td>
<td>CYMBELINE.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LUCIUS, YOUNG, TIT. ANDR.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LUCULLUS, TIMON.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LUCY, SIR WILLIAM</td>
<td>1 HEN. VI.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LYCHBRAIDA</td>
<td>PERICLES.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LYMOND</td>
<td>DUKE</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LYSENTER</td>
<td>MIDS.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LYSIMACHUS</td>
<td>PERICLES.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>MACBETH</td>
<td>MACBETH.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>MACBETH</td>
<td>LADY</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>MACDUFF</td>
<td>MACBETH.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>MACDUFF</td>
<td>LADY</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>MACMURRIS</td>
<td>HEN. V.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>MALCOLM, MACBETH.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>MALVOLIO, TWELFTH NIGHT.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>MAMILLIAN, WINTER'S T.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>MARCAIDE</td>
<td>LOVE'S L. L.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>MARC ANTONY</td>
<td>ANT.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>MARCELLUS</td>
<td>HAMLET.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>MARCHE</td>
<td>EDMUND MORTIMER</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>MARCHE</td>
<td>EDMUND MORTIMER</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>MARCUS</td>
<td>YOUNG</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>MARCUS ANDROMACHUS</td>
<td>TIT. ANDR.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>MARCUS ANTONIUS</td>
<td>JUL. CæS.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>MARCUS BRUTUS</td>
<td>JUL. CæS.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>MARDIAN</td>
<td>ANT.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>MARGARET, TERTIUS.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>MARGARET</td>
<td>MUCH ADO.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>MARGARET</td>
<td>QUEEN</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>MARGARET PLANTAGENET</td>
<td>LADY</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>MARIA</td>
<td>LOVE'S L. L.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>MARIA</td>
<td>TWELFTH NIGHT.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>MARIANA</td>
<td>ALL'S WELL.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>MARIANA, MEAS.</td>
<td>FOR</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>MARINA, PERICLES.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>MARK ANTONY</td>
<td>ANT.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>MARLURET</td>
<td>SIR OLIVER, AS YOU LIKE IT.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>MARIUS</td>
<td>TIM.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>MARULUS</td>
<td>JUL. CæS.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>MEDEA</td>
<td>ANT.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>MELIA</td>
<td>JOHN</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>MEDES</td>
<td>ANT.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>MEDEIROS</td>
<td>ANT.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>MENELAUS</td>
<td>TROILUS.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>MENOETIUS AGrippa</td>
<td>CORIOL.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>MENTHET</td>
<td>MACBETH.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Character</td>
<td>Play/Act</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-----------</td>
<td>---------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Oberon, Mids. N. Dr.</td>
<td>Octavius Caesar, Jul. Ccss., Ant. &amp; Cleop.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Octavius Caesar, Jul. Ccss., Ant. &amp; Cleop.</td>
<td>Oliver, As You Like It</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Olivia, Twelfth Night</td>
<td>Ophelia, Hamlet</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Orlando, As You Like It</td>
<td>Orleans, Bastard of, 1 Hen. VI</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Orleans, Duke of, Hen. V</td>
<td>Orleans, Master-Gunner of, 1 Hen. VI</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Osorio, Duke of Illyria, Twelfth Night</td>
<td>Osric, Hamlet</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Oswald, K. Lear</td>
<td>Othello, the Moor, Othello</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Page, A, All's Well</td>
<td>Page, A, Tam. of Shrew</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Page, Anne, Merry Wives</td>
<td>Page, Mr., Merry Wives</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Page, Mistress, Merry Wives</td>
<td>Page, William, Merry Wives</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pandar, A, Pericles</td>
<td>Pandarus, Troilus</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pandarus, Troilus</td>
<td>Pandulph, Cardinal, K. John</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Panthino, Two G. of Ver.</td>
<td>Paris, Rom. &amp; Jul</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Paris, Troilus</td>
<td>Paris, Governor of, 1 Hen. VI</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Parolles, All's Well</td>
<td>Patience, Hen. VIII</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Patroclus, Troilus</td>
<td>Paulina, Winter's T.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pease-Blossom, Mids. N. Dr.</td>
<td>Pedant, Tam. of Shrew.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pedro, Don, Much Ado</td>
<td>Pembroke, Earl of, K. John, 3 Hen. VI</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Percy, Lady, 1 &amp; 2 Hen. IV</td>
<td>Percy, Thomas, Earl of Worcester, 1 Hen. IV</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Perdita, Winter's T.</td>
<td>Pericles, Prince of Tyre, Pericles</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Peter, 2 Hen. VI</td>
<td>Peter, Rom. &amp; Jul</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Peter (a friar), Mess. for M.</td>
<td>Peter of Pompert, K. John</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Petrochio, Tam. of Shrew.</td>
<td>Phæbe, As You Like It</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Philemon, Pericles</td>
<td>Philip, King of France, K. John</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Philostrate, Mids. N. Dr.</td>
<td>Philotus, Timon</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Phrynia, Timon</td>
<td>Pioce of Exton, Sir, Rich. II</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pinch, Com. of Ext</td>
<td>Pindarus, Jul. Ccss</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pisario, Cymbeline</td>
<td>Pistol, 2 Hen. IV, Hen. V, Merry Wives</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Plantagenet, Lady Margaret, Rich. III</td>
<td>Plantagenet, Richard (afterwards Duke of York), 1, 2, &amp; 3 Hen. VI</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Players, Hamlet</td>
<td>Players, Tam. of Shrew.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Points, 1 &amp; 2 Hen. IV</td>
<td>Polixenes, Winter's T.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Polonius, Hamlet</td>
<td>Polydore, Cymbeline</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Popilius Lena, Jul. Ccss</td>
<td>Portia, Jul. Ccss</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Portia, M. of Ven</td>
<td>Posthumus Leonatus, Cymbeline</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Priam, King of Troy, Troilus</td>
<td>Proculeius, Ant. &amp; Cleop.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Prospero, Tempest</td>
<td>Proteus, Two G. of Ver.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Provoet, Meas. for Meas.</td>
<td>Publius, Jul. Ccss</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Publius, Tit. Andr</td>
<td>Puck, Mids. N. Dr</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Queen, Cymbeline</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Queen, Rich. II.</td>
<td>Scales, Lord, 2 Hen. VI.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-----------------</td>
<td>-------------------------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Quince, Mids. N. Dr.</td>
<td>Scoop, Lord, Hen. V.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Regan, K. Lear.</td>
<td>Sebastian, Tempest.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rivers, Lord, 3 Hen. VI, Rich. III.</td>
<td>Sextus Pompeius, Ant. &amp; Cleop.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Robin, Merry Wives.</td>
<td>Seyton, Macbeth.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Robin Goodfellow, Mids. N. Dr.</td>
<td>Shadow, 2 Hen. IV.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Romeo, Rom. &amp; Jul.</td>
<td>Shippmaster, Tempest.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rosalind, As You Like It.</td>
<td>Shylock, M. of Ven.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ross, Macbeth.</td>
<td>Silius, Ant. &amp; Cleop.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ross, Lord, Rich. II.</td>
<td>Silvia, Two G. of Ven.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rousillon, Countess of, All's Well.</td>
<td>Simonides, Pericles.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rumour, 2 Hen. IV.</td>
<td>Simple, Merry Wives.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rutland, Edmund, Earl of, 3 Hen. VI.</td>
<td>Sward, Earl of Northumberland, Macbeth.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>St. Alban's, Mayor of, 2 Hen. VI.</td>
<td>Sward, Young, Macbeth.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Salisbury, Earl of (Longsword), K. John.</td>
<td>Smith the Weaver, 2 Hen. VI.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sampson, Rom. &amp; Jul.</td>
<td>Snug, Mids. N. Dr.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sands, Lord, Hen. VIII.</td>
<td>Solinus, Com. of Ek.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Saturninus, Tit. Andr.</td>
<td>Somerset, John Beaumont, Earl of, 1 Hen. VI.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Say, Lord, 2 Hen. VI.</td>
<td>Somerset, Duke of, 2 &amp; 3 Hen. VI.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Stafford, Sir Humphrey, 2 Hen. VI.</td>
<td>Southwell, John, 2 Hen. VI.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Stafford, William, 2 Hen. VI.</td>
<td>Speed, Two G. of Ver.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
INDEX OF CHARACTERS

VALENTINE, Tit. Andr.
VALENTINE, Twelfth Night.
VALENTINE, Two G. of Ver.
VALERIA, Coriolanus.
VARRIUS, Ant. & Cleop.
VARRIUS, Meas. for Meas.
VARRO, Jul. Ces.
VAUGHAN, Sir Thomas, Rich. III.
VAUX, 2 Hen. VI.
VAUX, Sir Nicholas, Hen. VIII.
VELUTUS, Sicinius, Coriolanus.
VENICE, Duke of M. of Ven.
VENICE, Duke of Othello.
VENTIDIUSS, Ant. & Cleop.
VENTIDIIUS, Timon.
VERGES, Much Ado.
VERNON, 1 Hen. VI.
VERNON, Sir Richard, 1 Hen. IV.
VINCENTIO, Meas. for Meas.
VINCENTIO, Tam. of Shrew.
VIOLETTA, Twelfth Night.
VIOLENTA, All's Well.
VIRGINIA, Coriolanus.
VOLTIMAND, Hamlet.
VOLUMNIA, Coriolanus.

VOLUMNIUS, Jul. Ces.
WALES, Edward, Prince of, 3 Hen. VI.
WALES, Edward, Prince of (afterwards Edward V), Rich. III.
WALES, Henry, Prince of (afterwards Henry V), 1 & 2 Hen. IV.
WAST, 2 Hen. IV.
WARWICK, Earls of, 2 Hen. IV, Hen. V, 1, 2, & 3 Hen. VI.
WESTMINSTER, Abbot of, Rich. II.
WESTMORELAND, Earls of, 1 & 2 Hen. IV, Hen. V, 3 Hen. VI.
WHITMORE, Walter, 2 Hen. VI.
WIDOW, A, Tam. of Shrew.
WIDOW, Old, All's Well.
WILLIAM, As You Like It.
WILLIAMS, Hen. V.
WILLOUGHBY, Lord, Rich. II.
WILTSHIRE, Sheriff of, Rich. III.

WINCHESTER, Beaufort (Cardinal), Bishop of, 1 & 2 Hen. VI.
WOLSEY, Cardinal, Hen. VIII.
WOODVILLE, Lieutenant of the Tower, 1 Hen. VI.
WORCESTER, Earl of, 1 Hen. IV.
YORK, Richard Scroop, Archbishop of, 1 & 2 Hen. IV.
YORK, Thomas Rotherham, Archbishop of, Rich. III.
YORK, Duchess of, Rich. II.
YORK, Duchess of Rich. III.
YORK, Duke of, Rich. II.
YORK, Duke of, Hen. V.
YORK, Richard, Duke of, Rich. III.
YORK, Richard Plantage-net, Duke of, 2 & 3 Hen. VI.
YORK, Mayor of, 3 Hen. VI.
YOUNG CLIFFORD, 2 Hen. VI.
YOUNG SIWARD, Macbeth.

INDEX OF FIRST LINES OF SONGS, ETC.

A cup of wine that's brisk and fine .......... 2 Hen. IV . . . . 537
All that glisters is not gold .......... M. of Ven . . . . 231
An old hare hoar, and an old hare hoar .......... Rom. & Jul. . . . . 896
And let me the canakin clink, clink .......... Othello . . . . 1103
And will he not come again? .......... Hamlet . . . . 1039
Art thou god to shepherd turn'd .......... As You Like It . . . . 271
Be merry, be merry, my wife has all .......... 2 Hen. IV . . . . 537
Blow, blow, thou winter wind .......... As You Like It . . . . 261
But shall I go mourn for that, my dear? .......... Winter's T. . . . . 388
Come away, come away, death .......... Twelfth Night . . . . 353
Come, thou monarch of the vine .......... Ant. & Cleop. . . . . 1147
Come unto these yellow sands .......... Tempest . . . . 6
Did not the heavenly rhetoric of thine eye .......... Love's L. L . . . . 179
Do nothing but eat, and make good cheer .......... 2 Hen. IV . . . . 537
Done to death by slanderous tongues .......... Much Ado . . . . 162
Fear no more the heat o' the sun .......... Cymb. . . . . 1199
Fei on sinful fantasy .......... Merry Wives . . . . 79
Fill the cup, and let it come .......... 2 Hen. IV . . . . 537
Flout 'em, and scout 'em .......... Tempest . . . . 16
Fools had ne'er less grace in a year .......... K. Lear . . . . 1056
For I the ballad will repeat .......... All's Well . . . . 314
From the east to western Ind .......... As You Like It . . . . 262
Full fathom five thy father lies .......... Tempest . . . . 7
Full merrily the humble-bee doth sing .......... Troilus . . . . 806
Get you hence, for I must go .......... Winter's T. . . . . 303
Hark! hark! the lark at heaven's gate sings .......... Cymb. . . . . 1183
He that has a little tiny wit .......... K. Lear . . . . 1070

1821
INDEX OF FIRST LINES OF SONGS, ETC.

Honour, riches, marriage-blessing
How should I your true love know
I am gone, sir
I may command where I adore
If a hart do lack a hund
If it do come to pass
If love make me forsworn, how shall I swear to love?
Immortal gods, I crave no pelf
In youth, when I did love, did love
It was a lover and his lass
Jog on, jog on, the footpath way
Love knows I love
King Stephen was a worthy peer
Knocks go and come: God's vassals drop and die
Lawn as white as driven snow
Love, love, nothing but love, still more!
My thoughts do harbour with my Silvia nightly
No more dams I'll make for fish.
Now my charms are all o'erthrown
O heart, heavy heart
O mistress mine! where are you roaming?
O sweet Oliver
On a day, alack the day
Orpheus with his lute made trees
Over hill, over dale
Pardon, goddess of the night
Peace, ho! I bar confusion
Sigh no more, ladies, sigh no more
Sleepest or waketh thou, jolly shepherd?
So sweet a kiss the golden sun gives not
Swithold footed thrice the old
Take, O take those lips away
Tell me where is fancy bred
The fire seven times tried this
The god of love
The master, the swabber, the boatswain and I
The ouzel-cock, so black of hue
The poor soul sat sighing by a sycamore tree
The raging rocks
Then is there mirth in heaven
Then they for sudden joy did weep
They bore him baretac'd on the bier
Thine own true knight
To shallow rivers, to whose falls
To-morrow is Saint Valentine's day
Under the greenwood tree
Was this fair face the cause, quoth she
Wedding is great Juno's crown
What shall he have that kill'd the deer?
When daffodils begin to peer
When daisies pied and violets blue
When grieving grief the heart doth wound
When ivy hangs by the wall
When that I was a little tiny boy
Where the bee sucks, there suck I
While you here do mourning lie
Who doth ambition shun
Who is Silvia? what is she?
Why should this a desert be?
Will you buy any tape
You must sing, a-down a-down
You spotted snakes with double tongue
You that choose not by the view

Tempest
Hamlet
Twelfth Night
Twelfth Night
As You Like It
As You Like It
Love's L. L.
Timon
Hamlet
As You Like It
Winter's T.
Twelfth Night
Othello
Hen. V
Winter's T.
Troilus
Two G. of Ver.
Tempest
Tempest
Troilus
Twelfth Night
As You Like It
Love's L. L.
Hen. VIII
Mids. N. Dr.
Much Ado
As You Like It
Much Ado
K. Lear
Love's L. L.
K. Lear
M. for M.
M. of Ven.
M. of Ven.
Much Ado
Tempest
Mids. N. Dr.
Othello
Mids. N. Dr.
As You Like It
K. Lear
Hamlet
Merry Wives
Merry Wives
Hamlet
As You Like It
All's Well
As You Like It
As You Like It
Winter's T.
Love's L. L.
Rom. & Jul.
Love's L. L.
Twelfth Night
Tempest
Tempest
As You Like It
Two G. of Ver.
As You Like It
Winter's T.
Hamlet
Mids. N. Dr.
M. of Ven.
GLOSSARY.

ABATE, v.t. to deduct, except, L’s L’s L v. 2. 545; to blunt, take the edge off, Rich. III. v. 4. 48; to deprive, K. Lear, ll. 4. 161.

ABHOR, v.t. to reject, Hen. VIII. ll. 4. 79.

ABJUR, sub. servile person, Rich. III. l. 1. 166.

ABLE, v.t. to warrant, K. Lear, iv. 6. 178.

ABODE, v.t. to forebode, 3 Hen. VI. v. 6. 45.

ABDICATION, sub. evil omen, 3 Hen. VI. iv. 7. 13.

ABRAM, adj. suburb, Coriol. ll. 2. 21.

ABRIDGE, sub. a short entertainment, Mld. N. Dr. v. 1. 33; Ham. ll. 2. 448.

ABREY-BOOK, sub. a primer, K. John, l. 1. 196.

ABSOLUTE, adj. resolved, Meas. for Meas. III. 1. 5; perfect, Hen. V. iii. 7. 27; Ham. v. 2. 112; positive, Coriol. III. 2. 39.

ABY, v.t. to pay for, stone for, Mld. N. Dr. III. 2. 175.

ACRIT, v.t. to cite, summon, 2 Hen. IV. v. 2. 141; r. ll. 1. 27; to excite, 2 Hen. IV. II. 2. 67.

ACKNOWLEDGE, BE NOT, do not pretend to be cognizant of, Oth. ll. 8. 300.

ACT, sub. the plant aconite, or wolf’s bane, 2 Hen. IV. iv. 4. 48.

ACTUS, sub. performance, Lov. Comp. 185.

ADDITION, sub. inclination, Hen. V. i. 1. 54; Oth. ll. 2. 6.

ADDITION, sub. title, Merry Wives of W. II. 2. 316; Macb. Il. 3. 106.

ADDRESS, adj. ready, Mld. N. Dr. v. 1. 106; Jul. Cesa. III. 1. 29.

ADOPT, adj. given by adoption, not real, All’s Well, i. 1. 190.

AEGER, see AGERY.

AFAR OFF, adj. indirectly, remotely, Merry Wives of W. I. 1. 215; Wint. Tale, ll. 1. 103.

AFFECTION, sub. inclination, L’s L’s L. I. 1. 192; Oth. I. 8. 265; v.t. to love, Two Gent. of Ver. III. 1. 62.

AFFECTION, sub. affection, L’s L’s L. v. 1. 4.

AFFECTIONATE, adj. full of affection, Twelfth Night, ll. 8. 162.

AFFIRMED, pt. p. confirmed, a law term, Mach. IV. 3. 34.

AFFIRM, v.t. to confront, to face, Wint. Tale, v. 1. 75; Cymb. iv. 3. 29.

AFFRONT, v.t. to betroth, Tam. of Shrew, iv. 4. 49; 2 Hen. VI. Iv. 1. 86; v. to confide, Tit. Andr. i. 1. 47.

AFFRONT-SUPER, sub. sincere, Mld. N. Dr. v. 1. 34.

ASH-E-BAY, sub. the figure cut on the tag of a lace [Fr. aiguillette], Tam. of Shrew, i. 2. 79.

ASHEN, adj. to acknowledge, Oth. ll. 3. 223.

ASHOEN, adv. much, a great deal, Two Gent. of Ver. iv. 4. 172.

ASH-HELD, adv. to lay a ship’s held—to keep her up to wind, Timb. i. 1. 54.

AIERY, AIERY, sub. the brood of an eagle, K. John, v. 2. 149; Rich. Ill. I. 2. 264. 270. ‘An aery of children,’ alluding to a company of young actors, Ham. ll. 2. 365.

AIR, sub. a gale, Jul. Cesa. i. 2. 163.

AIR TO CRY, v.t. a phrase borrowed from archery, Merry Wives of W. III. 2. 45; to give encouragement to, K. John, ll. 1. 186.

ALDERLIEFEST, adj. dearest of all, 2 Hen. VI. i. 1. 28.

ALL AMORT, adj. quite deceased [Fr. All mort], Tam. of Shrew, Iv. 3. 36; 1 Hen. VI. III. 2. 124.

ALLAY, sub. mitigation, Wint. Tale, Iv. 1. 9.

ALL YD, sub. the game of hide and seek, L’s L’s L. Iv. 3. 78.

ALL-MELANCHOLY, adj. Two Gent. of Ver. Iv. 2. 28; sub. melancholy, Merry Wives of W. I. 4. 160.

ALLOW, v. to approve, 2 Hen. IV. II. 3. 25; K. Lear, ll. 4. 194.

ALL-THE-THING, adv. in every way, Macb. Ih. i. 13.

ALMS-DRINK, sub. liquor drunk to ease another, Ant. & Cleon. ll. 7. 5.

AMER-ACE, sub. the lowest throw of dice, All’s Well, II. 3. 85.

ANCHOR, sub. an anchorite, a hermit, Ham. III. 2. 231.

ANCIENT, sub. an officer next in rank to a lieutenant, 1 Hen. IV. Iv. 2. 26. Comp. Ancient Pistol.

ANNEXION, sub. addition, Lov. Comp. 208.

ANSWERABLE, adj. corresponding, Oth. I. 3. 351.

ANTICK, sub. the buffalo of the old plays, Rich. II. II. 2. 162.

ANTRE, sub. a cavern [Fr. antre], Oth. I. 3. 140.

APPROACH, v. t. to impeach, All’s Well, I. 3. 199; v. & Rich. II. v. 2. 79.

APPEAL, sub. impeachment, Rich. II. I. 1. 4; l. 3. 21.

APPLE-JOHN, sub. a shrivelled up winter apple, 1 Hen. IV. III. 5; 2 Hen. IV. II. 4. 3.

APPOINTMENT, sub. equipment, K. John, II. 1. 296.

APPROOF, sub. approval, proof, Meas. for Meas. II. 4. 175; All’s Well, II. 5. 2.

APRICK, sub. apricot, Mld. N. Dr. III. I. 173; Rich. II. III. 4. 92.

APRON-MAN, sub. a mechanic, Coriol. IV. 6. 97.

ARCH, sub. chief, master, K. Lear, II. 1. 62.

ARMS, sub. a large merchantman, from Rappau in Sicily, Mer. of Ven. I. 1. 9; Tam. of Shrew, II. l. 362, 370.

ARMS, sub. int. avants, stand off, begone, Mach. I. 3. 6; K. Lear, ll. 4. 127.

ARTHUR’S SHOW, sub. an archery exhibition by a society of London archers, who assumed the name of Prince Arthur’s knights, 2 Hen. IV. III. 2. 303.


ASKANCE, adv. awry, with sidelong glance, Ven. and Ad. 342; v. t. to make to turn aside, Lucr. 637.

AUSING, sub. an ass, Troll. & Cesa. II. 1. 49.

ATONE, v. t. to reconcile, set at one, Rich. II. I. 1. 202; Cymb. I. 4. 44.

ATTAIN, sub. stain, disgrace, Com. of Err. II. 2. 16; Troll. & Cesa. I. 2. 26; Lucr. 825.

AUGUR, sub. augury, Mach. III. 4. 124.

AUNT, sub. an old woman, Mld. N. Dr. II. 1. 51; a loose woman, Wint. Tale, Iv. 2. 13.

BABIN, adj. composed of dry waste brushwood, used in contempt, v. Hen. IV. 1. 35.
BAYNLING, adj. insignificant, Twelfth Night, v. 1. 58.
BAYSWATER, adj. a term of rude edendame [Fr. beau seigneur], Twelfth Night, ii. 4. 127; V. Hen. V. 2. 27.
BAY, the space between the main timbers of a roof in a building, Meas. for Meas. ii. 1. 261.
BRADMAN, sub. one paid to say prayers for others, Two Gent. of Ver. i. 1. 18; Rich. II. 3. 2. 116.
BEAR A BRAIN, to be intelligent, Rom. & Jul. 1. 8. 59.
BEAR HARD, to dislike, Jul. Cæs. i. 2. 318.
BRAING-CLOTH, sub. the cloth in which a child was to be christened, Wint. Tale, iii. 3. 119; Hen. VI. i. 3. 42.
BEAR IN HAND, to deceive, Macb. iii. 1. 81; Ham. ii. 2. 67.
BEAST, sub. an ox, K. Lear, iii. 4. 107.
BEAVES, sub. that part of a helmet which covers the face, v. Hen. IV. 1. 1. 304; Ham. i. 2. 229.
BEDLAM, sub. a lunatic, K. John, ii. 1. 83; adj. mad, v. Hen. VI. iii. 1. 31.
BEHINDS, sub. commands, Rom. & Jul. iv. 2. 20.
BEING, conj. seeing that, Much Ado, v. 1. 61.
BELED, pt. p. forced to lee of the wind, Oth. i. 1. 30.
BERGMASKE, sub. a dance after the manner of the peasants of Bergamasca, a country in Italy, belonging to the Venetians, Mid. N. Dr. v. 3. 361.
BESHREW, v. t. to curse (not used seriously), L’s L’s L. v. 2. 46; Rom & Jul. v. 2. 25.
BESLUBBER, v. t. to besmear, v. Hen. IV. ii. 4. 244.
BESMIRCH, v. t. to besmear, Hen. V. iv. 3. 110; Ham. i. 3. 15.
BESTRAUGHT, adj. mad, distracted, Tam. of Shrew, Ind. 2. 27.
BETHEM, v. t. to allow, grant, Ham. i. 2. 114; with a play on the meaning, to pour out, Mid. N. Dr. i. 1. 131.
BEWLY, v. t. to discover, to reveal, K. Lear, iii. 6. 190; Lucrece, 1668.
BESON, sub. a base fellow [Ital. bisognoso], v. Hen. iv. 8. 115; Hen. VI. iv. 1. 134.
BIDDY, a call to allure chickens, Twelfth Night, iii. 4. 132.
BIGIN, sub. a nightcap [Fr. bigin], v. Hen. IV. iv. 5. 26.
BILDO, sub. a sword-blade of great flexibility, manufactured at Biloos, Merry Wives of W. L. i. 107; ii. 6. 115.
BILBOS, sub. a species of fetters used at sea, Ham. v. 2. 6.
BIRD, sub. the young of any bird, v. Hen. IV. i. 6. 60; Tit. Andr. ii. 8. 12.
BIRD-BOLT, sub. a blunt-headed arrow, Much Ado, i. 1. 42; L’s L.’s L. iv. 3. 85; Twelfth Night, i. 5. 90.
BIRTH-CHILD, sub. a child adopted on account of being born in a certain domain, Pericles, iv. 4. 41.
BISON, adj. bear-eyed, dim-sighted, Coriol. ii. 1. 71.
BLACKE, adj. blazon rheum=blinding tears, Ham. ii. 2. 537.
BLACKS, sub. mourning clothes, suits of mourning, Wint. Tale, i. 2. 233.
BLASON, sub. (a) adorned with blades or (b) in the blade, Mach. iv. 1. 55.
GLOSSARY

BLANK, sub. the white mark in centre of a target [Fr. blanc, Ham. iv. 1. 45; the aim, Oth. iii. 4. 127; v. t. to blanch, to make pale, Ham. ii. 2. 332.

BLANKES, sub. blank charters sealed by the king, to be filled up at pleasure, Rich. ii. ii. 1. 257.

BLENCH, v. t. to start, flinch, Ham. ii. 2. 634; to be inconstant, Wint. Tale. i. 2. 333.

BLENCHES, sub. inconsistencies, Sonnets, ex. 7.

BLENT, pt. p. blended, mixed, Twelfth Night, i. 5. 259;

Mer. of Ven. iii. 2. 182.

BLISTERED, adj. garnished with puffs, Hen. VIII. i. 8. 31.

BLOCK, sub. the wood on which a hat is made, Much Ato, i. 1. 78; the fashion of a hat, K. Lear, iv. 6. 188.

BLOOD, sub. a spirited young man, K. John, ii. 1. 2.

BLOOD-BOLTED, adj. matted with blood, Mach. iv. 1. 123.

BLOOD, WORST IN, in worst condition, CortoI. i. 1. 141.

BLOWER, sub. a coarse beauty, Tit. Andr. iv. 2. 73.

BLUE-BOTTLE, adj. an allusion to the blue dress of a beadle, 2 Hen. IV. iv. 4. 22.

BLUE-SKIN, adj. with a dark circle round the eye, Temp. i. 2. 209. Comp. Blue, As You Like It, ii. 3. 398,

Lucece, 1587.

BLURRED AT, pt. p. muddled at, Pericles, iv. 3. 34.

BOL, v. t. to boat, to drug, Rich. III. v. 3. 353; to cheat, Troll. & Cre. iii. 1. 76; Oth. v. 1. 16; sub. cutting remark, As You Like It, ii. 7. 55.

BODKIN, sub. a dagger, Ham. iii. 1. 76.

BOGGLE, v. t. to hesitate, All's Well, v. 8. 234.

BOLINE, sub. bowline, Pericles, iii. i. 43.

BOLLEN, adj. swollen, Lucrece, 1417.

BOST, v. t. to sift, refine, Wint. Tale, iv. 3. 377; Troll. & Cre. i. 19. 21.

BOST, sub. a slave, 2 Hen. IV. iii. 8. 80.

BOMBARD, sub. a leathern drinking vessel, Temp. ii. 2. 27; 2 Hen. IV. iv. 4. 503.

BOMBAST, sub. cotton padding, 2 Hen. IV. ii. 4. 564; 'bombast circumstance' = inflated talk, Oth. i. 1. 13.

BOMBA-MRA, sub. a showily dressed woman of light character, 2 Hen. IV. iii. 2. 26.

BONKY, adj. woolly, Temp. i. 1. 81.

BOTTOM, sub. bail of thread, Tam. of Shrew, iv. 3. 137; v. t. to wind thread on, Two Gent. of Ver. iii. 2. 53.

BOUR, v. t. to make to leap, Hen. V. v. 2. 145.

BOZAN, sub. a limit or boundary, Temp. ii. 1. 199; Lucece, iii. 1. 79; a stream, K. Lear, iii. 6. 28.

BOW, sub. a yoke, As You Like It, iii. 3. 85.

BOWFRACT, sub. a leathern pouch, Wint. Tale, iv. 2.

BRABLE, sub. a quartel, Twelfth Night, i. 69.

BRACE, sub. armour for the arm, Per. ii. 1. 137; state of defence, Oth. i. 8. 24.

BRACH, sub. a female bond, 2 Hen. IV. iv. 3. 240; K. Lear, 1. 4. 123.

BRAIN, adj. deceitful, All's Well, iv. 2. 73; v. t. to upbraid, Pericles, i. 5. 99.

BRAINBARN, sub. the skull, 2 Hen. VI. iv. 10. 13.

BRAYE, sub. the air, Temp. i. 2. 50; v. t. to make ane, Tam. of Shrew, iv. 5. 125.

BRAYNER, sub. sherry, Meas. for Meas. i. 3. 10; Tam. of Shrew, iv. 5. 87; braver, Jul. Cnes. v. 1. 107; Ham. v. 2. 79.

BRAWL, sub. a French dance, L.'s L.'s L. iii. 1. 9.

BREAK, sub. 'breach of the sea' = the surf, Twelfth Night, ii. 1. 23.

BREAK, sub. voice in singing, Twelfth Night, ii. 8. 21.

BREAK, sub. voice in singing, Twelfth Night, ii. 3. 22.

BREEZE, sub. the gadfly, Troll. & Cre. i. 3. 48, Ant. & Creo. iii. 8. 24.

BROOK BUCK, perhaps stolen buck, perhaps buck given away in present, Merry Wives of W. v. 5. 27.

BRIEF, sub. a short summary, Midd. N. Dr. v. 1. 42;

a short account, All's Well, v. 3. 137; a letter, 1 Hen. IV. iv. 4. 1; a list, Ant. & Creo. v. 2. 137.

BROACH, v. t. to pierce through, or transfix, Hen. v. v. Chorus. 37; Tit. Andr. iv. 2. 86.

BROCK, sub. a badger (term of reproach), Twelfth Night, ii. 5. 115.

BROGUES, sub. shoes made of untanned hide, Cymb. iv. 2. 214.

BROCH, v. t. to adorn, Ant. & Creo. iv. 13. 25.

BUNKLES, sub. plumpness, Hen. V. iii. 6. 111.

BUCK, v. t. to wash linen with lye, and afterwards beat it, Merry Wives of W. iii. 8. 165.

BUCKLESBURY, sub. a street in London chiefly inhabited by druggists, Merry Wives of W. iii. 5. 79.

BUCK OF THE FIRST HEAD, one in its fifth year, L.'s L.'s L. iv. 2. 10.

BUG, sub. an object of terror, 3 Hen. VI. v. 2. 2.

BUJOLE, sub. a black bead, As You Like It, iv. 5. 47;

Wint. Tale, iv. 5. 224.

BULG, sub. projecting part of a building, CortoI. i. 2. 293;

Oth. v. 1. 1; the breast, the trunk, Ham. ii. 1. 95;

Lucece, 467.

BULLY-ROOK, sub. a swaggering cheater, Merry Wives of W. i. 3. 2.

BURG, sub. a pickpocket, 2 Hen. IV. ii. 4. 136.

BURGONET, sub. a close-fitting helmet, 2 Hen. VI. 200.

BUSH, sub. advertisement (a bush of ivy was usually the vintner's sign), As You Like It, Epil. 4.

BUST, sub. woolly, 2 Hen. IV. i. 2.

BUSS, sub. a kiss, 2 Hen. IV. ii. 4. 291; v. t. to kiss, K. John, iii. 4. 35.

BUTTON, sub. buds, Ham. i. 3. 49.

BUTTONS, in his, within his power to succeed in it, Merry Wives of W. iii. 2. 74.

BY-DRAWINGS, sub. occasional drinkings, 2 Hen. IV. iii. 3. 84.

CADE, sub. a gallon of worsted, Wint. Tale, iv. 3. 206.

CADDIS-GARTER, adj. worsted garter (in derision); garters of the time were worn in sight, and naturally were of costly material, 2 Hen. IV. iv. 2. 80.

CADE, sub. a cask, a barrel, 2 Hen. VI. iv. 2. 36.

CADE, sub. a prison, 2 Hen. VI. iv. 2. 59.

CAKE, sub. 'my cake is dough on both sides' = our plans are quite frustrated, Tam. of Shrew, i. 1. 109.

CAKE, pt. p. coagulated, inert, Tam. of Ath. ii. 2. 226.

CALM'en, sub. a kind of musket, 2 Hen. IV. iv. 2. 21; 3 Hen. IV. ii. 2. 293.

CALM, sub. a whistle to lure birds, Tam. of Shrew, iv. 1. 197; K. John, iii. 4. 174.
GLOSSARY

CALLAT, sub. a drab, Wint. Tale, ii. 3. 90; Oth. iv. 2. 121; 2 Hen. VI. i. 3. 86.
CANNARY, sub. a lively dance, All's Well, ii. 1. 77; v. i. to dance the above dance, L's L's L. iii. 1. 12.
CANDLE-MINE, sub. a magazine of tallow, 2 Hen. IV. ii. 4. 328.
CANDLE-WASTER, sub. one who sits up late to study, Much Ado, v. i. 18.
CANKE-Rose, sub. the rose of the sweet-brier, Much
CANKE-BLOOM, f. i. 3. 28; 1 Hen. IV. i. 3. 176; Sonnets, iv. 5.
CANKER-BLOSSOM, sub. a blossom eaten by the cankerworm, Mid. N. Dr. iii. 2. 282.
CANTILE, sub. a small piece, a slice, 1 Hen. IV. iii. i. 101; Ant. & Cleo. iii. 8. 16.
CANTON, sub. a song, Twelfth Night, i. 5. 291.
CANKESNYT, sub. a song, a ditty [Ital. canzone], L's L. L. iv. 2. 125.
CAPITULATE, v. i. to make an agreement, Coriol. v. 8. 82; to combine, 1 Hen. IV. iii. 2. 120.
CAPACHIA, sub. a fool,—fem. of capachio,—Troll. & Cres. iv. 2. 32. An Italian word.
CARAWAYS, sub. comfits made with caraway seeds, 2 Hen. IV. v. 3. 3.
CARBONADO, sub. meat scotched for broiling, Coriol. iv. 5. 199; v. i. to hack like a carbonado, Wint. Tale, iv. 8. 667; K. Lear, ii. 2. 47.
CARD, sub. "cooling card."—A stroke which suddenly turns the tables, 2 Hen. VI. v. 3. 84.
CARDIG, sub. [quart d'écru], quarter of a French crown, All's Well's, iv. 3. 314; v. i. 2. 35.
CARRANET, sub. a necklace [Fr carbain], Com. of Err. iii. i. 4. 14; Sonnets, iii. 8. 30, CARCSON.*
CARL, sub. a clown, peasant, Cymb. v. 2. 4.
CARLOT, sub. a peasant, As You Like It, iii. 5. 108.
CARPET, sub. table clothes, Tam. of Shrew, iv. 1. 52.
CARRACK, sub. a huge ship of burthen [Ital. carraccia], Oth. 1. 2. 50.
CASE, v. i. to strip off the skin, All's Well, iii. 6. 210.
CASQUE, sub. a helmet [Fr. casque], Rich. ii. 1. 3. 83; Coriol. iv. 7. 43.
CASCOCK, sub. a military cloak, All's Well, iv. 5. 193.
CAST, v. i. to dismiss, Oth. i. 1. 150; pl. p. emptied out, Meas. for Meas. iii. 1. 92; adj. second-hand, cast off, As You Like It, iii. 4. 15.
CATALAN, sub. a Chinaman, a native of Cathay, a cant term, Merry Wives of W. ii. 1. 147; Twelfth Night, ii. 3. 83.
CATOUGE, sub. small strings for musical instruments, made of cat-gut, Troll. & Cres. iii. 3. 309.
CAUTER, sub. craft, strategem, Ham. i. 8. 15; Lov. Comp. 392.
CAUTION, adji. crafty, cunning, deceitful, Coriol. iv. 1. 33; Jul. Cses. ii. 1. 129.
CEASE, sub. extinction, Ham. iii. 3. 15; Cymb. iv. 2. 378.
CENDRE [O. Ed. Cendre], sub. cinders, girdle, K. John, iv. 3. 385.
CÈREYS, sub. a man in 4, "a plate or dish, in which was insane, and at the bottom of which was usually represented in rude carving the figure of some saint" (Hammer), 2 Hen. IV. v. 4. 20.
CENSURE, sub. opinion, judgment, Wint. Tale, ii. 1. 36; Ham. iii. 2. 31; Judicial sentence, Oth. v. 2. 367.
CERMEN, sub. the wrappings of an embalmed body, Ham. i. 4. 48.
CENCH, v. i. to concern, Tam. of Shrew, v. 1. 76.
CESSE, v. i. to cease, All's Well, v. 8. 72.
CHACE, sub. a term at tennis [quibbling], Hen. V. i. 2. 266.
CHAMBER, sub. small cannons, 2 Hen. IV. ii. 4. 56.
CHANGEABLE, adj. varying in colour, Twelfth Night, i. 4. 75.
CHANSON, sub. a song, Ham. ii. 2. 447.
CHAPP, sub. the metal at the end of a scabbard, All's Well, iv. 3. 165.
CHARACTER, sub. handwriting, K. Lear, i. 2. 68.
CHARLIE, sub. a turn of work, Ant. & Cleo. v. 2. 293.
CHARGE-HOUSE, sub. a school-house, L's L's L. v. 1. 88.
CHARMÉDO, sub. a kind of wine, named from Charme in Portugal, 2 Hen. VI. ii. 5. 63.
CHAUDRON, sub. an eschetoire, Merry Wives of W. i. 3. 75.
CHERRY-PIT, sub. a children's game, Twelfth Night, iii. 4. 131.
CHEVEREL, sub. kui-leather, Rom. & Jul. ii. 4. 90, adj. yielding, flexible, Twelfth Night, iii. 1. 13; Ham. VIII. ii. 3. 32.
CHEW, sub. a chough [Fr. chouette], 1 Hen. IV. v. 1. 29. [There may be an allusion to another word, which means a sort of meat pie.]
CHILLING, adj. fruitful, Mid. N. Dr. ii. i. 112.
CHILDLESS, sub. childish disposition, Wint. Tale, i. 2. 170.
CIOFINE, sub. a high-soled shoe, Ham. ii. 2. 455.
CHOPPY, adj. chopped, Mach. i. 3. 44.
CHRISTOM Child, sub. a chrism child, one who died within a month of birth; the chrism was a white cloth put on the infant at baptism, Hen. V. ii. 3. 12.
CHUFF, sub. a churl, i. Hen. IV. ii. 2. 98.
CIDE, v. i. to decide, Sonnets, xiv. 9.
CINQUE-PACE, sub. a grave dance [Fr. cinque pas], Much
Ado. ii. 1. 78; Twelfth Night, i. 3. 141.
CIRCUMSTANCE, sub. circumstance, Ham. i. 5. 127.
CITAL, sub. a recital, 2 Hen. iv. v. 2. 65.
CITZR, sub. town-breed, effeminate, Cymb. iv. 2. 8.
CITTERN, sub. a guitar, L's L's L. v. 2. 619.
CLOAK-DISH, sub. a beggar's dish with a loose cover, by moving which he attracted the notice of passers by, Meas. for Meas. iii. 2. 139.
CLAPP, at a, at a blow, K. Lear, i. 4. 378.
CLAPP-CLOWN, sub. to beat soundly, Merry Wives of W. ii. 3. 67; Troll. & Cres. v. 4. 1.
CLAW, v. i. to flatter, Much Ado, i. 8. 19.
CLEEF, v. i. to call, Ham. i. 4. 15; Ven. & Ado. 995.
CLIMATES, sub. climate, region, Jul. Cses. i. 3. 52.
CLIMATURE, sub. fellow-countrymen, Ham. i. 1. 199.
Cline, v. i. to shrivel up, Mach. v. 5. 40.
CLAP, v. i. to embrace, Oth. iii. 3. 465; Ant. & Cleo. v. 2. 360.
CLIFFES, sub. a defacer of coin, Hen. V. iv. 1. 249.
CLOUD, sub. a spot, between the eyes of horses, regarded as a blight, Ant. & Cleo. ii. 2. 52.
CLONY, sub. piece of canvas in centre of target, L's L's L. iv. i. 129; 2 Hen. IV. iii. 2. 52.
GLOSSARY

CLOTHED, adj. hobbled; or according to some, patched, 2 Hen. VI. iv. 2. 199; Cymb. iv. 2. 214.

CLOV, v. t. to stroke with the claw, Cymb. v. 4. 118.

CLOOKE, sub. a misshapen loaf of bread, run out in the baking into lumps, Troll. & Cres. ii. 1. 41.

Cock, sub. a cock-broat, K. Lear. iv. 6. 20; a weathercock, K. Lear. iii. 2. 3.

Cock-a-hoot, to eat, to cast off all restraint, Rom. & Jul. i. 5. 85.

Cockel, sub. a weed in corn, the corn-cockle, Lycocine Githago, L's L's L's iv. 3. 332.

Cockney, sub. one bred and born in the city, and ignorant of all things out of it, Twelfth Night, iv. 1. 15; K. Lear. ii. 4. 123.

Cook-book time, twilight, Rich. III. iii. 3. 70.

Colding, sub. an unripe apple, Twelfth Night, i. 5. 168.

Coffin, the crust of a pie, Tit. Andv. ii. 2. 189.

Coo, v. i. to cheat, Much Ado, v. 1. 93; v. t. to fitch, Coriol. iii. 2. 133.

Coiun, sub. a corner-stone [Fr. coin], Coriol. v. 4. 1; Mach. i. 6. 7.

Colb, sub. bustling, tumult, Much Ado, iii. 3. 99; Ham. iii. 1. 67.

Collection, sub. inference, Cymb. v. 5. 433; Ham. iv. 5. 9.

Collyred, adj. roty, black, Mid. N. Dr. i. 1. 145; pt. p. Oth. ii. 3. 206.

Comma, the smallest break or stop, Ham. v. 2. 42.

Commodity, sub. profit, advantage, K. Lear, iv. 1. 21.

Compact, pt. p. made up of, composed, Mid. N. Dr. v. i. 8; As You Like It, ii. 7. 5.

Compassed, adj. round, archd, Tam. of Shrew iv. 3. 139; Ven. & Adon. 272.

Competitor, sub. partner, L's L's L. ii. 1. 82; Ant. & Cleo. v. 1. 42.

Compitible, adj. sensitive, Twelfth Night, i. 5. 182.

Con, v. t. to learn, to know, to understand, Twelfth Night, ii. 3. 153; to con thanks=to give thanks, All's Well, iii. 3. 175; Tim. of Ath. iv. 3. 431.

Conclusion, sub. an experiment, Ant. & Cleo. v. 2. 356; Cymb. i. 5. 18.

Conclusion, still, silent inference, or perhaps settled determination, Ant. & Cleo. iv. 3. 28.

Consul, sub. Venetian senator, Oth. i. 1. 25.

Convert, v. i. to be suitable, Twelfth Night, v. i. 394.

Converted, pt. p. defeated, K. John, iii. 4. 2.

Convinced, v. t. to overcome, Mach. i. 7. 64; iv. 3. 142; Cymb. i. 4. 109.

Convive, v. i. to feast together, Troll. & Cres. iv. 5. 271.

Cont-Catch, v. i. cheat, Merry Wives of W. i. 1. 189; i. 3. 34.

Copvdate, adj. high-crowned and pointed, Tam. of Shrew, v. 1. 69.

Cope, v. t. to encounter, As You Like It, ii. 1. 67; Ven. & Adon. 228; to requisite, Mer. of Ven. iv. 1. 413.

Coppamont, sub. a companion, Lucee, 925.

Copea, adj. round-topped, Per. i. 2. 101.

Copt, sub. lease, Mach. i. 2. 38.

Coranto, sub. a quick lively dance, All's Well, ii. 3. 49; Twelfth Night, i. 3. 182.


Counter, adj. shrivelled, K. Lear, iii. 7. 20.

Corollary, sub. a surplus [Fr. corollaire], Temp. iv. 1. 57.

Corrosive, and) sub. an irritant remedy, 2 Hen. VI. 423; adj. irritating, giving pain, 1 Hen. VI. ill. 3. 3.

Costard, sub. the head, properly an apple, Merry Wives of W. iv. 1. 14; K. Lear, iv. 6. 248.

Cost, v. t. to come up with, and pass on the way, Ham. ii. 2. 338.

Cor-queran, sub. a man busying himself with the business of women, Rom. & Jul. iv. 4. 6.

Counter, adv. to run or hunt counter is to follow the game backwards on the scent, Com. of Err. iv. 2. 39; 2 Hen. IV. i. 2. 102 (here a play is intended on the name of the well-known London debtors' prison, the Counter); Ham. iv. 5. 110.

Counter-caster, sub. a reakener, caster-up of accounts, Oth. i. 1. 31.

Counterfeit, sub. a portrait, Mer. of Ven. ill. 2. 115; Ham. iii. 4. 54; a piece of bad money, 1 Hen. IV. iv. 4. 248.

Counterpoint, sub. a counterpane, Tam of Shrew, ii. 1. 245.

Countervail, v. t. to outweigh, Rom. & Jul. ii. 6. 4.

Couplet, sub. a pair, Twelfth Night, iii. 4. 414; Ham. v. 1. 99.

Course, sub. a large sail, Temp. i. 1. 55; the onset of dogs in bear-baiting, Mach. v. 7. 2; K. Lear, iii. 7. 54.

Court-cupboard, sub. a sideboard used for the display of plate, Rom. & Jul. i. 5. 8.

Court-holy-water, sub. flattery [Fr. eau bénite de la cour], K. Lear, iii. 2. 10.

Cower, v. i. to sink or squat down, Per. iv. 2. 215.

Cowl-staff, sub. a pole on which a basket is borne by two persons, Merry Wives of W. iii. 3. 157.

Cot, v. t. to stroke, to caress, Mid. N. Dr. i. 2; v. i. to disdain, Cor. v. 1. 6.

Coy, sub. a mean fellow, originally a groomsman, Twelfth Night, i. 3. 44; Per. iv. 6. 181.

Cozier, sub. a countryman, Twelfth Night, iii. 3. 99.

Crack, v. i. to boast, L's L's L. iv. 3. 268; Cymb. v. 5. 178, 208; sub. a pert forward boy, 2 Hen. IV. ii. 1. 242; Coriol. iii. 7. 48.

Cracked within the ring, uncourteous, [quibbling], Ham. ii. 2. 457.

Cracker, sub. a blusterer, K. John, ii. 1. 147.

Crane, sub. a winding passage, Coriol. i. 1. 143.

Chambers, sub. garland, a chaplet, Ham. i. 2. 254.

Crab, sub. a small vessel, Cymb. iv. 2. 205.

Crahen, v. t. to make recreant or cowardly, Cymb. iii. 4. 80.

Creak, sub. a rivulet, a winding part of a rivulet, Cymb. iv. 2. 131.

Cresset, sub. an open lamp set on a beacon, or carried on a pole, 1 Hen. IV. iii. 1. 15.

Crib, sub. a novel, 2 Hen. IV. iii. i. 9.

Crise, adj. curled, Temp. iv. 1. 230; Mer. of Ven. iii. 2. 92.

Critick, sub. a cyme, a carple, Troll. & Cress. v. 2. 128.

Cross-row, sub. the Christ-cross Row, the alphabet, Rich. III. i. 1. 55.

Crow-keeper, sub. the boy, or stuffed figure, to keep away crows, Rom. & Jul. i. 4. 6; K. Lear, iv. 6. 89.

Cruel, adj. cruel, worsted [quibbling], K. Lear, ii. 1. 7.
Glossary

Crazado, sub. a Portuguese coin worth about six shilling, Oth. iii. 4. 27.

Cry, sub. a pack, Coriol. iii. 3. 113; a company, Ham. iii. 2. 204.

Cry aim, to encourage, K. John. ii. 1. 156.

Cry you mercy, I beg your pardon, Merry Wives of W. iii. 3. 27; Meas. for Meas. iv. 1. 12.

Cut-drawn, adj. sucked dry by cubs, made ravenous, K. Lear. ii. 2. 13.

Cullion, sub. mean fellow [Fr. cullion, Ital. coglione], Hen. v. iii. 2. 23; 2 Hen. VI. i. 3. 43.

Cullionly, adj. mean, contemptible, K. Lear. ii. 2. 36.

Culkiven, sub. a kind of cannon, 1 Hen. IV. ii. 3. 58.

Cure, v. t. to bend [Fr. courber], Ham. iii. 4. 155.

Curiosity, sub. scrupulosity, Tim. of Ath. iv. 3. 303; K. Lear. i. 1. 6.

Curious, adj. elegant, Cymb. v. 6. 362; careful, anxious, Cymb. i. 6. 191.

Currents, sub. occurrences, 1 Hen. IV. ii. 3. 60.

Curst, adj. ill-tempered, Much Ado. ii. 1. 22; K. Lear. i. 1. 67.

Cusheys, sub. cuisses, armour for the thighs, 1 Hen. IV. iv. 1. 105.

Custard-coffin, sub. the crust of a custard, Tarn. of Shrew. iv. 3. 82. Comp. Coffin.

Custom, sub. a loose woman, All’s Well, v. 3. 291; Oth. iv. 1. 190.

Cut, sub. a horse, Twelfth Night, ii. 3. 206.

Cut and long-tail, of every sort, Merry Wives of W iii. 4. 47.

Cuttle, sub. a bully, 2 Hen. IV. ii. 4. 138.

Daff, v. t. to take off, Lov. Comp. 297, to put by, to turn aside with slight and neglect, Much Ado. ii. 5. 187; 1 Hen. iv. iv. 1. 56.

Dagonet, sub. a foolish knight at the court of King Arthur, 2 Hen. IV. iv. 2. 303.

Dancing horse, a performing horse, belonging to one Banke, a Scotchman, L’s L’s L. i. 2. 58.

Danger, sub. power, control, according to some debt, Mer. of Ven. 1. 180.

Dare, v. t. to terrify, make to cough; larks were caught by small mirrors fastened on scarlet cloth, Hen. V. iv. 2. 36; Hen. VIII. iii. 2. 283.

Darragon, v. t. to arrange, or put in order of battle, 3 Hen. VI. ii. 2. 72.

Dashe, sub. a stigmas, Wint. Tale, v. 2. 127; Lucrece, 266.

Daubery, sub. false pretence, cheating, Merry Wives of W. iv. 2. 190.

Day-bed, sub. a sofa, Twelfth Night, ii. 4. 55; Rich. III. iii. 7. 71.

Day-woman, sub. a dairy woman, L’s L’s L. i. 2. 238.

Dear, adj. dear was used for anything powerfully though unpleasantly affecting the feelings, L’s L’s L. v. 2. 87; 2 Hen. IV. iv. 2. 153.

Death-tokens, sub. plague spots, Troll. & Crea. i. 3. 189.

Deceit, adj. becoming, Hen. VIII. iv. 2. 146.

Deck, sub. a pack of cards, 3 Hen. VI. vi. 1. 44; v. t. to cover, perhaps to sprinkle, Temp. i. 2. 153.

Deadless, adj. inactive, Troll. & Crea. iv. 5. 98.

Decr, sub. a surmise, opinion, Troll. & Crea. iv. 4. 59.

Degrat, v. t. to disguise, Oth. i. 8. 346.

Defend, v. t. to forbid, Much Ado. ii. 1. 99; Rich. II. i. 8. 15; Ant. & Cleo. iii. i. 43.

Delighted, adj. framed for delight, Meas. for Meas. iii. i. 119; delightful, Oth. i. 3. 297; Cymb. v. 4. 102.

Deheart, sub. desert, Coriol. i. 1. 278; Mach. iv. 3. 225; Oth i. 2. 22.

Demuiring, pr. p. looking demure, Ant. & Cleo. iv. 18. 29.

Dexterity, sub. a very small piece of (French) money, Tarn. of Shrew. Innoc. i. 9; Rich. III. i. 2. 255.

Dreicate, v. t. to eradicate, to root up [Fr. déraciner], Hen. V. v. 2. 47; Troll. & Crea. i. 3. 99.

Dear, adj. dreary, secret, K. Lear. iii. i. 7. 63; Per. iii. Proil. 15.

Descending, sub. lineage, Per. v. 1. 190.

Design, v. t. to point out, mention before, Rich. II. i. 1. 203; Ham. i. 1. 94.

Devast, v. t. to undress, Oth. ii. 8. 283.

Dewberries, sub. fruit of Rubus Caesaris, a large kind of blackberry, Mkt. N. Dr. ili. 1. 173.

Dich, v. t. do to, happen to, Tim. of Ath. ii. 1. 74.

Diet, sub. regimen, Two Gent. of Ver. ii. 1. 26; Tim. of Ath. iv. 3. 67.

Differt, pr. p. bound strictly, All’s Well, iv. 3. 35.

Diffire, v. t. to confuse, K. Lear. i. 4. 2.

Diffused, adj. wild, irregular Merry Wives of W. iv. 4. 56; Hen. V. v. 2. 61.

Disappointed, pr. p. unprepared, Ham. i. 5. 77.

Discandy, v. t. to dissolve, to melt, to thaw, Ant. & Cleo. iii. iii. 165.

Disclose, v. t. to hatch, Ham. v. 1. 309; sub. the coming forth of the chicken from the shell, Ham. iii. 1. 275.

Discover, sub. scout, 2 Hen. IV. iv. 1. 3.

Diets, v. i. to surfeit, Cymb. iii. 4. 96.

Dissemble, v. t. to efface, blot, Ant. & Cleo. iv. 12. 10.

Dissemble, sub. tenth [Old Fr. disme], Troll. & Crea. ii. 2. 19.


Disposo, sub. disposition, Troll. & Crea. ii. 3. 176; Oth. i. 3. 403.

Distance, sub. hostility, alienation, Mach. iii. 1. 116.

Disvouch, v. t. to contradict, M. for M. iv. 4. 1.

Div praise, sub. the dab-chick, Ven. & Ad. 86.

Division, sub. variation in music, modulation, 1 Hen. iv. ii. 1. 230; Rom. & Jul. iii. 5. 29.

Document, sub. instruction, Ham. iv. 5. 177.

Doxy, v. t. to put off, Tarn. of Shew. iii. 2. 103; Rom. & Jul. ii. 2. 47.

Dowlar, sub. coarse linen, 1 Hen. IV. iii. 3. 79.

Dowla, sub. down, the soft plumage of a feather, Temp. iii. 8. 65.

Down-gyved, adj. covering the ankles like fetters, Ham. iii. 1. 80.

Down-hoping, adj. hanging down in glutinous strings, Hen. V. iv. 2. 48.

Down sleeves, hanging sleeves, Much Ado. iii. 4. 8a.

Dux, sub. a mistress, a canting word [Comp. Decker's 'Bellman of London'] Whitt. Tale, iv. 2. 2.

Draft, sub. dress, refuse, Merry Wives of W. iv. 2. 172; 1 Hen. IV. iv. 2. 58.
Glossary

Fairy, sub. enchantress, Ant. & Ciclo. iv. 8. 12.
Fall, sub. a cadence in music, Twelfth Night, l. 1. 4.
Fallow, adj. yellowish brown, Merry Wives of W. i. l. 92.
Fare, v.t. to falsify, perjure, Cymb. ii. 3. 74.
Fame, v.t. to make famous, Sonnets, 1xxxi. iv. 11.
Fancies, sub. love-songs, or songs in general, 2 Hen. iv. ill. 3. 346.
Fancy, v.t. to love, Tam. of Shrew, ii. l. 12; Twelfth Night, ii. 5. 30; Lucrece, 200.
Fang, v.t. to seize, lay hold of, Tim. of Ath. iv. 3. 23.
Fangled, adj. fond of finery, Cymb. v. 4. 134.
Fantastic, sub. a dandy, Dram. Per. of Messe for Messe; fond of finery, Two Gent. of Ver. ii. 7. 47.
Fantastic, adj. imaginary, Macb. i. 3. 53; 139; Increditable, Oth. ii. 2. 227; Inimaginative, Twelfth Night, i. l. 25.

Fantasticoses, sub. coxcombs, Rom. & Jul. iv. 4. 31.
Fat, adj. drunk, Merry Wives of W. ii. l. 184.
Far, adj. further, Wint. Tale, iv. 3. 443.
Fardel, sub. a bundle, a pack [Ital. fardello], Wint. Tale, iv. 3. 783, 784, 785; Ham. iii. l. 76.
Farrow, sub. a litter of pigs, Mach. iv. l. 65.
Fathernshale, sub. a hooped petticoat, Two Gent. of Ver. ii. 7. 51; Merry Wives of W. iii. 3. 69.
Fashions, sub. a skin disease in horses, now called farcy, Tam. of Shrew, iii. 2. 54.
Fast, p.t. p. fasted, Cymb. iv. 2. 347.
Fast and Loose, a cheating game, Lc's Lc's Lc's i. l. 109.
Fat, v.t. a rat, Ant. & Ciclo. l. 7. 122.
Fat, adj. heavy, unpleasant, Twelfth Night, v. 1. 113.
Favour, sub. countenance, visage, Meas. for Messe iv. 2. 33; Jul. Cesa. i. 3. 129.

Favours, sub. features, As You Like It, ill. 2. 280; 1 Hen. iv. 3. 106; K. Lear, iii. l. 7. 40.
Fear, v.t. to frighten, Mer. of Ven. ii. l. 9; Tam. of Shrew. ii. l. 214.
Fearful, adj. timorous, frightened, Rom. & Jul. iii. 3. 1; Ven. & Ad. 67.
Featur, sub. form, shape, Two Gent. of Ver. ii. 4. 74; Cymb. v. 4. 164; perhaps thing composed, As You Like It, iii. 3. 3.
Federnary, sub. confederate, Wint. Tale, i. l. 83.
Fedders, sub. a shepherd, As You Like It, ii. 4. 100; a servant, Ant. & Ciclo. iii. l. 109; Tim. of Ath. i. l. 109 (according to some, a parasite).
Feeding, sub. pasturage, Wint. Tale, iv. 4. 169.
Fen-grief, sub. grief not shared by any, Mach. iv. 3. 165.
Fellowly, adj. companionable, sympathetic, Temp. v. l. 64.
Federnary, sub. confederate, Meas. for Messe ii. 4. 183; Cymb. iii. 2. 21.
Fear, sub. a spouse, Th. Andir. iv. l. 89; Per. Proli. 21.
Fenrit, v.t. to worry, Hen. v. iv. 3. 30.
Fenrinity, sub. eagerness, Ant. & Ciclo. ii. l. 18.
Fenrich, sub. a trick, a stratagem, Ham. l. 1. 38; K. Lear, ii. 4. 90.
Fenish off, v.t. to make away with, Wint. Tale, i. 2. 334.
Fenista, sub. to get into condition, prepare, Rom. & Jul. iii. 3. 154.

Fewness, sub. rarity, or brevity, Meas. for Messe l. 4. 39.
Fieldeer, sub. camp-bed, Rom. & Jul ii. 4. 10.
Fig, v.t. to insult by thrusting the thumb between two fingers, 2 Hen. iv. v. 3. 1.
Fights, sub. canvas hung up to screen the crew of a ship during action, Merry Wives of W. ii. 2. 144.
Fico, sub. [see Fig], Hen. v. iii. 6. 60.
Figurer, sub. a turn of rhetoric, Two Gent. of Ver. ii. l. 156; Lc's Lc's Lc's 2. 59; a method of fortune-telling, Merry Wives of W. iv. 2. 189.
Figurers, sub. disquieting fancies, Merry Wives of W. iv. 2. 234; Jul. Cesa. ii. l. 231.
File, sub. a flat, Macb. iii. 1. 95.
File, v.t. to decorate, Macb iii. l. 65.
Fill, sub. shafts, Troll. & Cesa. ill. 2. 46.
Filt, sub. term of contempt, Tim. of Ath. iv. l. 6; Oth. v. 2. 249.
Finkle, adj. without end, Oth. iii. 3. 173.
Fingal, adj. foppish, K. Lear, ii. 2. 19.
Fire-drake, sub. a meteor, fiery dragon, Hen. viii. v. 4. 46.
Fire, v.t. to beat, Hen. v. iv. 4. 29.
Fist, v.t. to grasp, Coriol. iv. 5. 131; Per. iv. 6. 282.
Fitchew, sub. a polecat, Troll. & Cesa. v. l. 67; Oth. iv. 1. 148.
Fitted, p.t. p. worked as if by fits, Sonnets, cxix. 7.
Fives, sub. inflammation of parotid glands in horses [French aivises], Tam. of Shrew, iii. 2. 56.
Flap-dragon, sub. a small burning body lighted and put afloat in a glass of liquor, to be swallowed burning, snapdragon, Lc's Lc's Lc's v. 1. 45; 2 Hen. iv. 2. 67; v.t. to swallow like a flap-dragon, Wint. Tale, iii. 3. 100.
Flap-hair, sub. broad hanging ears, Tam. of Shrew, iv. l. 160.
Flap-jack, sub. a pancake, Per. ii. 1. 88.
Flap-mouth, sub. a broad hanging lip, Ven. & Ad. 920.
Flat, sub. sandbank, Mer. of Ven. i. l. 26; Ill. l. 5.
Flat-longs, sub. flat, Temp. ii. l. 128.
Flaw, sub. a crack, K. Lear, ii. 4. 288; Ant. & Ciclo. iii. 10. 34; v.t. to break crack, Hen. VIII. i. l. 95.
Flaws, sub. sublimates of passion, Meas. for Messe ii. 8. 11; Mach. iii. 4. 63; sudden gusts of wind, Coriol. v. 3. 34; Ven. & Ad. 456; small bladders of ice, 2 Hen. IV. iv. 3. 35.
Flecken, adj. spotted, Rom. & Jul. ii. l. 3.
Flewed, adj. 'Flew.' are the large hanging chaps of a hound, Mid. N. De IX. l. 116.
Flecker, v.t. to twinkle, K. Lear, ii. 2. 114.
Flight, sub. a long light arrow, Much Ado, l. 1. 43.
Flighth, adj. swift, Mach. iv. l. 145.
Flink-chale, sub. light wenchers, Rom. & Jul. ii. l. 163.
Flock, sub. a look of wool, 2 Hen. IV. l. 17.
Flote, sub. wave, Temp. i. l. 224.
Flourish, sub. ornament, Rich. III. l. 2; Sonnet; irix; a sounding of trumpets, Meas. for Messe iv. l. 76; Meas. of Ven. III. 2. 99.
Fouren, p.t. p. chapleted, 1 Hen. iv. l. 2. 68.
Forn, sub. a thrust, K. Lear, iv. l. 235; v.t. to thrust in fencing, Merry Wives of W. ii. 3. 24; Much Ado, v. 1. 84.
GLOSSARY

FEROX, or FOROIN, sub. plenty [Fr. fôison]. Temp. ii. 1. 170; iv. 1. 110; Macb. iv. 3. 88.
FOOT, v. t. to kick, Mor. of Ven. i. 3. 119; to seize with the talon, Cymb. iv. 4. 116.
FOR, sub. a fool, K. Lear, i. 2. 14.
FORBID, p. t. accursed, Macb. i. 3. 46.
FOROIN, v. t. to lay violent hands upon, to destroy, K. Lear, v. 3. 93; Oth. v. l. 129.
FORDON, sub. a vessel, Md. N. Dr. v. 2. 4.
FORDON, p. t. exhausted, Md. N. Dr. v. 2. 4.
FORD, sub. the first part, Cymb. iii. 3. 73.
FORIHAND, sub. advantage, Hen. iv. 1. 360, the best part, the pick, Troll & Cress. i. 3. 143; adj. anticipated, Much Ado, iv. 1. 53.
FORIOD SHAW, an arrow for shooting point blank, 2 Hen. IV. iii. 2. 32.
FOREPND, v. t. to forbid, 3 Hen. VI. i. 1. 192; Oth. v. 2. 32.
FORGETIVG, adj. inventive, 2 Hen. iv. 1r. 3. 107.
FOREK, sub. the tongue of a snake, Meas. for Meas. iii. 1. 16; Macb. iv. 1. 16; the head of an arrow, K. Lear, i. 1. 146.
FORKLOW, v. t. to delay, 3 Hen. VI. ii. 3. 56.
FORET, adj. fortified, Meas. for Meas. v. 1. 12.
FOREIGHT, sub. a straight path, Temp. iii. 3. 3; Troll & Cress. iii. 3. 158.
FOSSETT-BURLES, sub. a seller of tape, Coriol. i. I. 58.
FOULT, sub. expression of contempt, 2 Hen. IV. v. 3. 116.
FOX; sub. a broadsword, Hen. V. iv. 4. 9.
FORESHIP, sub. cunning and selfishness, Coriol. iv. 2. 18.
FRACTID, p. t. broken, Tim. of Abh ii. 1. 22.
FRAMFOLD, adj. unequal, quarrelsome, Merry Wives of W. ii. 2. 95.
FRANK, sub. a sty, 2 Hen. IV. ii. 2. 160; v. t. to shut up in a sty, Rich. III. i. 3. 314; iv. 5. 3.
FRANKLIN, sub. a yeoman, Wint. Tale, v. 2. 181; Cymb. iii. 6. 73.
FRASING, part. adj. constituting the freight, Temp. i. 2. 13.
FRESH, adj. innocent, Wint. Tale, i. 2. 113; Ham. ii. 2. 593.
FRESHER, sub. springs of fresh water, Temp. iii. 2. 77.
FREST, v. t. to adorn, Jul. Cæs. ii. 1. 104; Cymb. ii. 4. 88.
FREST, sub. the stops of a guitar, Lucrece, 11. 40.
FRIPPERY, sub. an old clothes shop, Temp. iv. 1. 228.
FRONTIER, sub. an outwork, fortification, 1 Hen. IV. ii. 3. 57.
FRONTIER, sub. a band for the forehead, fig. K. Lear, i. 4. 210.
FRUST, v. t. to break, bruise, or crush [Fr. fôrder]. Troll & Cress. v. 6. 29.
FURROY, v. t. p. put off with excuses, 2 Hen. IV. ii. 1. 39.
FURLAM, sub. a kind of false dice, Merry Wives of W. 1. 2. 92.
FURRER and FURRERY, sub. the plant Furaria, Hen. V. ii. 2. 43; K. Lear, iv. 4. 3.
FURSTIAN, sub. a term of reproach, 2 Hen. IV. ii. 1. 68.
GABERDINE, sub. the coarse frock of a peasant [Ital. gavardina], Temp. ii. 2. 41; Mer. of Ven. i. 8. 173.
GAD, sub. a sharp-pointed instrument, a goad, Tit. And. iv. 1. 122; "upon the gad"—on the spur of the moment, K. Lear, i. 2. 26.
GAGE, v. t. to pledge, Ham. i. 1. 91; Lucrece, 144; sub. also a pledge pawned, Rich. II. 1. 1. 146.
GAIN-DIVING, sub. misgiving, Ham. v. 2. 227.
GAIN, sub. proceeding, Ham. i. 2. 31.
GALL, v. t. to scoff, to jest bitterly, Hen. V. v. 1. 78.
GALLERED, p. t. worn by the action of the waves, Hen. V. iii. 1. 13; Lucrece, 1440; irritated as the eyes are by tears, Rich. III. iv. 3. 53; Ham. i. 2. 155.
GALLIARD, sub. the name of a dance, Twelfth Night, 3. 139; Hen. V. i. 2. 252.
GALLIASS, sub. a large galley, Tam. of Shrew, ii. 1. 372.
GALLMAUNFRED, sub. a medley or jumble of things together, Merry Wives of W. ii. 1. 177, Wint. Tale, iv. 3. 337.
GALLOW, v. t. to frighten, K. Lear, iii. 2. 44.
GALLOWGASH, sub. heavy armed Irish foot-soldiers, 2 Hen. VI. iv. 9. 26; Macb. i. 2. 13.
GALLOW, sub. a knife, one fit for the gallows, L’s L’s L. v. 2. 12.
GALL, v. t. to cry out loudly, Hen. VIII. v. 4. 3. Comp. ‘a gaping pig’ (which however may mean a pig prepared for the table with a lemon in its mouth), Mer. of Ven. iv. 1. 47.
GARDEN, sub. disturbance, commotion, Ant. & Cleo. i. 6. 2.
GARDEN-HOUSE, sub. a summer-house, Meas. for Meas. v. 1. 223.
GARISH, adj. glittering, gaudy, Rich III. iv. 3. 89; Rom. & Jul. iii. 2. 25.
GARNER, v. t. lay up, store up, Oth. iv. 2. 56.
GARNISH DRAW, sub. equipment, Mer. of Ven. ii. 6. 45.
GASSIN, sub. loose breeches, Twelfth Night, i. 5. 27.
GASTED, p. t. frightened, K. Lear, ii. 1. 57.
GASTRIN, sub. gashalness, Oth. v. 1. 106.
GAUDY, adj. festive, Ant. & Cleo. iii. 11. 182.
GAUDE, sub. toys, nicknacks, Md. N. Dr. i. 1. 33; K. John, iii. 3. 36.
GREN, sub. a dupe, Twelfth Night, v. 1. 355; Cymb. v. 4. 67.
GERMIN, sub. a pair, Merry Wives of W. ii. 2. 9.
GENERATION, sub. offspring, Wint. Tale, ii. 1. 147; K. Lear, i. 1. 119.
GENROSITY, sub. nobility, Coriol. i. 1. 217.
GENEROUS, adj. of noble birth, Meas. for Meas. iv. 6. 13; Oth. iii. 3. 280.
GENTLE, v. t. to ennoble, Hen. v. iv. 3. 63.
GENTLY, sub. courtesy, Ham. ii. 2. 22; v. 2. 115.
GERMENS, sub. seeds, germs, Macb. iv. 1. 59; K. Lear, iii. 2. 8.
GERM, sub. a period of stopping in a place, originally the halting-place in a royal progress [Fr. gite, gite], Wint. Tale, 2. 41.
GERM, sub. acts, exploits, Ant. & Cleo. iv. 8. 2.
GHOST, v. t. to visit as a ghost, to haunt, Ant. & Cleo. ii. 6. 13.
GER, sub. an old cat, Ham. iii. 4. 190.
GER, sub. a name, 2 Hen. IV. i. 1. 83.
GERMAN, v. t. to speak familiarly, Ham. i. 1. 116.
GERM, v. t. to hang, 2 Hen. IV. iii. 2. 265.
GER, sub. a top, L’s L’s L. iv. 8. 167; v. 1. 71.
GERSW, sub. a light wrench, Meas. for Meas. v. 1. 367; sub. adj. Hen. VI. iv. 7. 45; Cymb. iii. 1. 31.
GLOSSARY

GUILT, sub. money, Hen. V. ii. Chor. 26; gilding, fair show, Twelfth Night, iii. 27; Coriol. i. 44.

GIMBAL, adj. double, or made with double rings, Hen. V. iv. 2. 49.

GIMMALS [Fol. GIMMORS], sub connecting parts in the mechanism of a clock, 1 Hen. VI. i. 2. 41.

GIN, sub. a gang, a pack, Merry Wives of W. iv. 2. 126.

Gin, sub. a scoff, sarcasm, Tam. of Shrew, v. 2. 58; 1 Hen. VI. iii. 1. 132; v. t. to give, taunt, 2 Hen. IV. i. 2. 6; Coriol. i. 1. 262.

GIVE OUT, to report, Coriol. i. 1. 199; to give over, 2 Hen. VI. iv. 3. 27.

GLASSES, sub. scoffs, 1 Hen. VI. iii. 2. 123.

GNARLING, adj. snarling, Rich. II. i. 3. 292; v. t. 2 Hen VI. iii. 1. 192.

GOD, v. t. to worship, Coriol. v. 3. 111.

GOD'S, v. t. You, God yield you (i.e. reward you), As You Like It, iii. 3. 81.

GOOD, adj. wealthy, Mer. of Ven. i. 3. 12; Coriol. i. 1. 115.

GOOD DEED, in very deed, Wint. Tale, i. 2. 42.

GORELLE, adj. big-bellied, 1 Hen. IV. ii. 2. 97.

GORSE, sub. the thorn, Wint. Tale, ii. 1. 43.

GOSPERT, sub. armour for the thorn, Trol. & Cres. i. 3. 174.

GOSPELLED, pt. p. Induced with precepts of the gospel, Macb. iii. 1. 88.

GOSSE, sub. gorse, Temp. iv. 1. 180.

GOSSIP, sub. a sponsor, Wint. Tale, ii. 3. 41; v. t. to christen, All’s Well, l. 1. 191.

GOVERSES, sub. the French disease, K. Lear, v. 3. 24.

GOVREE, sub. false dice, Merry Wives of W. i. 2. 92.

GOUL, v. t. to drop [Fr. goutte], Macb. i. 1. 46.

GRAIN, sub. the kernels of which the purple dye was made, a fast colour, Com. of Err. iii. 2. 169; Twelfth Night, l. 6. 257.

GRAINED, adj. dyed in grain, Ham. iii. 4. 90; furrowed, rough, Coriol. iv. 3. 114; Lov. Comp. 64.

GRANGE, sub. a farm, or lone house in the country, Oth. l. 1. 106.

GRATIFY, v. t. to reward, Mer. of Ven. iv. 1. 407; Coriol. ii. 2. 42.

GRATULATE, adj. gratifying, Meas. for Mens. v. 1. 53.

GREAT MORNING, broad daylight, Trol. & Cres. iv. 8. 14;

Cymb. iv. 2. 61.

GREEN, sub. a boon companion, a merry fellow, Twelfth Night, iv. 1. 19; Trol. & Cres. i. 2. 116; iv. 4. 56.

GREENISH, adj. sorrow-stricken, Coriol. v. 1. 45.

GREEN, v. t. to begrime, K. Lear, ii. 3. 9.

GREEN, sub. a griffin, Lucrece, 543.

GREEN, sub. a step, Twelfth Night, ill. 1. 138; Oth. i. 8. 300.

GREENLE, sub. a tinge of grey, Twelfth Night, v. 1. 169.

GROUND, sub. the original air, on which the variations are made, Rich. III. i. 4. 48.

GROUNDING, sub vulgar spectators, who stood in what is now the pit of the theatre, Ham. iii. 2. 72.

GROW TO, to have a strong flavour, Mer. of Ven. ii. 2. 18.

GROW TO A POINT, to come to the point, Mid. N. Dr. i. 2. 10.

GUARD, v. t. to trim, K. John, iv. 2. 10; pt. p. trimmed, ornamented, Mer. of Ven. ii. 2. 170.

GUARDS, sub. two stars of Ursa Minor were called guards of the pole, Oth. ii. 1. 15; trimmings, Meas. for Mens. iii. 1. 95.

GUILD, sub. a Dutch coin, Com. of Err. i. 1. 8.

GULB, adj. red, in heraldry, Tim. of Ath. iv. 3. 59;

Ham. ii. 2. 488.

GULP, sub. the gulpet, Mach. iv. 1. 23.

GULL, sub. a young unfledged bird, 1 Hen. IV. v. 1. 69;

Tim. of Ath. ii. 1. 31.

GUMMEL VELVET, sub. velvet stiffened with gum, 1 Hen. IV. ii. 2. 3.

GUST, v. t. to taste, Twelfth Night, i. 3. 34.

GUTTERED, part. adj. worn by the action of water, Oth. ii. 1. 69.

HABIT, sub. condition of body, Lov. Comp. 114.

HACK, v. t. to grow common, Merry Wives of W. ii. 1. 52.

HAGGARD, sub. a wild hawk, Mach. Ado, iii. 1. 36; adj. Oth. iii. 3. 260.

HAIR, sub. nature, texture, 1 Hen. IV. iv. 1. 61.

HALF-CHECKEDHF, mutilated, of which only one part remained, Tam. of Shrew, iii. 2. 58.

HALL, enterj. a hall! a cry to make room for dancers, Rom. & Jul. i. 5. 30.

HAND-FAST, sub. a contract, betrothal, Cymb. i. 6. 78;

custody, Wint. Tale, iv. 3. 798.

HANDY-DANDY, a game in which an object is passed from one to another, K. Lear, iv. 3. 198.

HANGMAN BOYS, young rascals, Two Gent. of Ven. iv. 4. 61.

HAPPLY, or ) adv. perchance, Meas. for Mens. iv. 2. 98;

HAPPILY, } Twelfth Night, iv. 2. 38.

HARDIMENTS, sub. feats of arms and valour, 1 Hen. IV.

l. 8. 107; Cymb. v. 4. 75.

HARLOT, adj. base, Wint. Tale, ii. 3. 4 (harlot king).

HARLOTLY, sub. a harlot, Oth. iv. 2. 399; a silly wench, Rom. & Jul. iv. 2. 14.

HARROW, v. t. to disquiet, to disturb, Ham. l. 1. 44; 1.

6. 15.

HARRY, v. t. to vex, to harry, Ant. & Cleo. iii. 3. 40.

HATCH, sub. a half door, K. John, l. 1. 171; K. Lear, iii.

6. 76.

HAUGHTY, or ) haughtily, Rich. II. iv. 1. 284; 3 Hen. VI. ii.

1. 159.

HAUNCH, sub. the rear, latter end, a Hen. IV. iv. 4. 92.

HAVOC, interj. to cry ‘havoc!’ signifies to give no quarter, Jul. Cesar. iii. 1. 737; Ham. v. 2. 378.

HAWKING, adj. hawk-like, All’s Well, l. 1. 150.

HAY, sub. a circular dance, L. & L. v. 1. 166; an exclamation used by a fencer when he hits his adversary [it has! ‘You have hit!’ Rom. & Jul. iv. 4. 58.

HEAD, sub. an armed force, 1 Hen. IV. iv. 4. 27; K. John, v. 2. 113; Ham. iv. 5. 202; source, All’s Well, l. 3. 186.

HEAD-LEGS, part. adj. dragged by the ears, savage, K. Lear, iv. 2. 42.

HEAD, sub. company of persons, Rich. III. ii. 1. 53.

HAIR, sub. placed or rooted in the heart, Oth. i. 3. 573; iii. 2. 449.

HAIR, v. t. to run over, traverse, Wint. Tale, i. 3. 96.

HAIRYS, sub. deep sighs, Wint. Tale, ii. 9. 33; Ham.

IV. 1. 2.
Glossary

Hebore [Fol. Hebron], sub. a word of doubtful meaning; the yew, ebony, and hondane have all been suggested. Ham. 1. 6. 62.
Hectic, sub. a fever. Ham. lv. 3. 68.
Hedor, v. t. to skulk. Merry Wives of W. H. 2. 27; Trol. & Cleo. iii. 1. 66.
Hedge-Priest, sub. clergyman of the lowest order, L's L's L 2. 542.
Held, v. t. to dance. Trol. & Cleo. iv. 6. 146.
Hefts, sub. hearings. Wint. Tale. ii. 1. 44.
Helem, v. t. to steer. Meas. for Meas. iii. 2. 155.
Heneman, sub. a page. Mid. N. Dr. ii. 1. 121.
Hent, v. t. to seize, take. Meas. for Meas. iv. 5. 14; Wint. Tale. iv. 2. 134; sub. hold, seize. Ham. ill. 3. 88.
Herbeters, sub. small herbs. Cymb. iv. 2. 287.
Here of Grace, rue. Rich. ii. ill. 4. 105; Ham. iv. 5. 181.
Hercules and his load. The Globe theatre, from its sign. Ham. ii. 2. 356.
Hermite, sub. a beadman. Macb. i. 6. 26.
Herets, sub. commands. Temp. i. 2. 274; iii. 1. 37.
Herwegk, sub. a sound representation of the whizzing of an arrow. K. Lear, iv. 6. 94.
Hind Fox, and all Affairs. the game of hide and seek. Ham. iv. 2. 92.
High and Low. kinds of false dice. Merry Wives of W. i. 8. 93.
High-Battled. adj. at the head of a victorious army. Ant. & Cleo. iii. 11. 29.
High-Day. adj. holiday. Mer. of Ven. ii. 9. 98.
High Love. adj. alone. on one's own feet. a term of the nursery. Rom. & Jul. i. 3. 36.
High, is called. L's L's L L. 1. 1. 169.
High-ticked. adj. astonishingly wicked. Tim of Ath. iv. 3. 110.
Holding, sub. a mental. All's Well. ili. 6. 4; Cymb. ii. 3. 128; adj. base. Hen. v. iv. 11. 29.
Hop, to catch or have in one's power; a wrestling or hunting phrase. Mer. of Ven. i. 3. 47; Oth. ii. 1. 317.
Hipped, pt. p. hurt in the hips. Tam. of Shrew. iii. 2. 59.
Hieren, sub. Irene. name of the heroine in a lost drama by Peele. A Hen. iv. 4. 172.
Hit together. v. agree or act together. K. Lear. i. 1. 308.
Hive, sub. a kind of bonnet. Lov. Comp. 8.
Hoo, v. t. to make white, as with leprosy. Tim of Ath. iv. 3. 156.
Horse-Horse, sub. a principal part in the morris-dance. Ham. iii. 2. 144; a light woman. Much Ado. ill. 2. 75; Oth. iv. iv. 1. 158.
Hoo'der-Pudding. sub. perhaps a haggis. Merry Wives of W. v. 3. 165.
Holding, sub. a burden of a song. Ant. & Cleo. ii. 7. 112; congruity, sense. All's Well. iv. 2. 27.
Host-Aims. sub. rural festivals. Per. i. Procl. 6.
Hounting, pr. p. fondling. Ham. iii. 4. 93.
Houst-Slares. sub. clever. Tit. Andr. iv. 4. 90.
Housman. sub. the person blinded in the game of blind man's buff. All's Well. iv. 2. 137.
Hoodman-Blind. sub. blind man's buff. Ham. iii. 4. 77.
Horn-Mad, adj. mad like a savage bull (quibbling). Com. of Err. ii. 1. 57; Merry Wives of W. i. 4. 51.
Horologe. sub. a clock. Oth. ii. 3. 136.
Host, v. t. to lodge. Com. of Err. 1. 2. 9; All's Well. iii. 6. 94.
Hot at Hand, not to be held in. Jul. Ces. iv. 2. 23.
Hox. v. t. to hough. Wint. Tale. l. 2. 244.
Hoy, sub. a small coasting vessel. Com. of Err. iv. 3. 39.
Huggur-Mugger, in. secretly, with hurried secrecy. Ham. iv. 5. 84.
Hull. v. t. to float. Twelfth Night. i. 3. 217; Bleth. III. iv. 4. 139.
Hulling, pr. p. floating at the mercy of the waves. Hen. VIII. ii. 4. 197.
Hunt, sub. game killed in the chase. Cymb. iii. 6. 69.
Hunts-ups. sub. tunes to arouse the huntsman. Rom. & Jul. iii. 5. 34.
Hurly, and Hurly-Burly, sub. tumult. uproar. K. John. iii 4. 169; Mach. i. 1. 3.
Hurricon. sub. waterspout. Trol. & Cleo. v. 2. 169; K. Lear. iii. 2. 2.
Hurtless. adj. harmless. K. Lear. iv. 6. 171.
Hurtling. sub. a clashing noise. As You Like It. iv. 3. 133.
Hurtle. v. t. to come together with noise. Jul. Ces. ii. 2. 22.
Husbandry. sub. management. Macb. ii. 1. 4; Tim of Ath. ii. 2. 165.
Hyen, sub. an hyena. As You Like It. iv. 1. 163.
Ice brooks. sub. supposed to be the river Salo, near Biblis. in Spain. Oth. ii. 2. 252.
Ignimity. sub. ignominy. Meas. for Meas. ii. 4. 112.
Illume. v. t. to illuminate. Ham. i. 1. 37.
Imbar. v. t. to secure, or perhaps to exclude. Hen. v. i. 2. 94.
Immunity. sub. fecocity. 1 Hen. VI. v. 1. 13.
Immediacy. sub. directness. K. Lear. v. 3. 66.
Immoment. adj. insignificant. Ant. & Cleo. v. 2. 165.
Imp, sub. child, used affectionately. L's L's L. 1. 2. 5; Hen. v. iv. 1. 45; v. t. to graft new feathers into a hawk's wing. Rich. ii. ii. 2. 252.
Impatient. sub. dull, undiscerning. Cymb. i. 3. 15.
Importance. sub. importance. Twelfth Night. v. 1. 375; Cymb. ii. 1. 47.
Impostor. sub. command. Two Gent. iv. 3. 8.
Impress. sub. a device with a motto. Rich. II. ill. 3. 25.
Incarnation. v. t. to dye red. Mach. ii. 2. 63.
Inch-Meal. sub. piecemeal. Temp. ii. 2. 3.
Incontinent. sub. immediately. As You Like It. v. 2. 44.
Inconspicuous. adj. the same. Oth. i. i. 397.
Inconspicuous. adj. delicate. pret. L's L's L. iii. 1. 142; iv. 1. 146.
GLOSSARY

**Kindle, v. t.** to bring forth young, *As You Like It*, III. 2. 56; s. t. to incline to a thing, K. John, I. 1. 33.

**Kindles, adj.** unnatural, Ham. ii. 2. 167.

**Kissing-comfits, sub.** sugar-plums perfumed for sweetening the breath, *Merry Wives of W.*, v. 5. 22.

**Kitchen, vt.** to entertain in the kitchen, Com. of Err. I. 1. 428.

**Knack, sub.** a toy, or pretty trifle, Mid. N. Dr. I. 3. 34; *Wint. Tale*, iv. 8. 361.

**Knap, v. t.** to snap, or break short; to hit or rap smartly, *Mer. of Ven.*, III. 1. 26; K. Lear, II. 4. 125.

**Knot-grass, sub.** a herb supposed to have the power of checking growth, Mid. N. Dr. li. 2. 359.

**Knot-fated, adj.** thick-headed, 1 Hen. IV. ii. 4. 79.

**Labour-some, adj.** elaborate, Ham. i. 2. 59; Cymb. iii. 4. 167.

**Laced, pt. p.** adorned, embellished, Macb. ii. 8. 119; Cymb. ii. 2. 22.

**Laced Mutton, sub.** a prostitute, Two Gent. I. 1. 102.

**Lad, v. t.** to empty, to drain, 3 Hen. VI. iii. 2. 139.

**Lad-y-smock, sub.** the plant *Cardamine pratensis*, L.’s L’s L. v. 2. 503.

**Lag, sub.** a fragment, thing left, Cymb. v. 3. 92; the lowest class, Tim. of Ath. iii. 6. 92.

**Lag End, the last part, the rag end, Hen. VIII. i. 8. 35.

**Laid, pt. p.** waylaid, ‘the country is laid’—set on its guard to arrest, 2 Hen. VI. iv. 10. 4.

**Lampass, sub.** a disease in a horse’s palate, Tim. of Shrew, III. 2. 53.

**Land, sub.** lawn, Temp. iv. 1. 130; L.’s L.’s L.’s L. v. 2. 310.

**LAND-DARK, v. t.** corrupt word in Wint. Tale, II. 1. 142.

**Lank, v. t.** to shrink, Ant. & Cleo. i. 4. 71.

**Lantern, or Lanthorn, sub.** a lourive, a window-turret, *Bom. & Jul.* v. 3. 24.

**Lap, v. t.** to wrap up, Macb. i. 2. 55; Cymb. v. 6. 364.

**Lapped, pt. p.** surprised, Twelfth Night, iii. 8. 36.

**Land, v. t.** to ornament, Ham. iv. 2. 36.

**Lavish, v. t.** to catch, lay hold of, Macb. iv. 8. 195; Son. exil. 6; to close, or perhaps, to smear over, Mid. N. Dr. iii. 2. 56.

**Latten, adj.** a mixed metal, Merry Wives of W. I. 1. 167.

**Laund, sub.** lawn, wood opening, 3 Hen. VI. iii. 1. 2.

**Comp. LAND.**

**Laundwr, v. t.** to wash, *Lov. Comp.* 17.

**Lavolt, sub.** a kind of walk, Trol. & Cres. iv. 4. 86.

**Leading, sub.** the power of leading, generalship, 1 Hen. IV. iv. 3. 17.

**Leaguer, sub.** a camp, All’s Well, iii. 6. 27.

**Leash, sub.** a set of three, from the string or thong for leading greyhounds, to which usually three dogs were coupled, 1 Hen. IV. ii. 4. 7.

**Leather-boot, sub.** a kind of apple, the golden rusticating, 2 Hen. IV. v. 3. 42.

**Leaves, sub.** complexion, colour, *As You Like It*, iv. 1. 69; Tit. Andr. iv. 2. 126.

**Leaves, v. t.** to lose, Sonnets, v. 14.

**Lear, sub.** a minor court, Tim. of Shrew, Ind. ii. 89; Oth. ii. 3.

**Lena, sub.** a bow, Coriol. i. 1. 78; Tim. of Ath. i. 2. 241.

**Lennerry, sub.** lightness, nimbleness, Hen. v. iv. 1. 23.

**Leures, sub.** a resident ambassador, Mean. for Mean. iii. 1. 57; Cymb. i. 5. 80.

**Lenten, adj.** sparing, meagre, Ham. ii. 2. 337; Twelfth Night, I. 5. 9.

**Liberal, adj.** licentious, Much Ado, iv. 1. 93; Ham. iv. 7. 171; Oth. ii. 1. 164.

**Liberty, sub.** licentiousness, Tim. of Ath. iv. 1. 85; Ham. ii. i. 3. 32.

**Litter, sub.** a thief, Troll. & Cres. i. 2. 127.

**Lover’s love, sub.** the name of a tune, Two Gent. i. 2. 80; Much Ado, iii. 4. 14.

**Lint, sub.** an alembic, Macb. v. 7. 67; Son. exil. 2.

**Lime-heel, adj.** limb by limb, Cymb. ii. 4. 147.

**Limo, sub.** the edge or border of hell, *All’s Well*, v. 3. 264; Tit. Andr. iii. 1. 150.


**Limit, v. t.** to appoint, Mean. for Mean. iv. 2. 175; Macb. ii. 3. 58.

**Linc, v. t.** to draw in colours, *As You Like It*, ii. 7. 197.

**Line, v. t.** to draw, delineate, *As You Like It*, iii. 2. 93; to strengthen, 1 Hen. IV. ii. 3. 83; Macb. i. 3. 112.

**Line-grove, sub.** probably a grove of lime trees, Temp. v. 1. 10.

**Link, sub.** a torch, Tim. of Shrew, iv. 1. 137.

**Linsay-woolesy, sub.** gibberish, jargon, All’s Well, iv. 1. 13.

**Linstock, sub.** the stick for holding a gunner’s match, Hen. V. iii. Chorus.

**Lip, v. t.** to kiss, Oth. iv. 1. 72; Ant. & Cleo. ii. 5. 30.

**Lipsey-pintfold, to have one in; a difficult expression, perhaps to have one between the teeth, K. Lear, ii. 2. 9.

**Liquor, v. t.** to moisten with oil, 1 Hen. IV. ii. 1. 94.

**List, sub.** wish, desire, Oth. ii. 1. 104; v. t. to desire, Ven. & Ad. 364; to attend to, Tim. of Shrew, ii. 1. 357.

**Lither, adj.** yielding, flexible, 1 Hen. VI. iv. 7. 21.

**Ligious, adj.** doubtful, precarious, Per. iii. 3. 3.

**Lives, in. in miniature, *As You Like It*, iii. 2. 149; Ham. ii. 2. 352.

**Los, sub.** a lubber, a heavy fellow, Mid. N. Dr. ii. 1. 16; v. t. to hang down, to droop, Hen. v. iv. 2. 47.

**Lockram, sub.** a cheap kind of linen, Coriol. ii. 1. 228.

**Lode-star, sub.** the pole-star, Min. N. Dr. i. 1. 183; Lucrece, 179.

**Lodged, pt. p.** laid flat as corn is, by wind and rain, Rich. ii. ii. 3. 162; Macb. iv. 1. 55.

**Loggia, sub.** a rustic game, something like bowls, Ham. v. i. 99.

**Long, of; on account of, Mid. N. Dr. ii. 2. 339; Cymb. v. 5. 272.

**Look, v. t.** to luff, bring close to the wind, Ant. & Cleo. iii. 3. 27.

**Loot, sub.** a base fellow, Macb. v. 8. 11.

**Look’d, adj.** full of holes, K. Lear, iii. 4. 31.

**Loose, sub.** the discharge of an arrow, L.”s L.”s L. v. 2. 750; v. t. to let loose, discharge as an arrow, Hen. VIII. v. 4. 69.

**Lord’s tokens, sub.** plague spots, L.”s L.”s L. v. 2. 424.

**Love to learn, any odds, Coriol. v. 2. 20.

**Loutred, pt. p.** made a fool of, 1 Hen. VI. iv. 3. 13.
GLOSSARY

LOVE-DAY, sub. a day for the amicable settlement of differences, Tit. And. i. 1. 491.

LOVES, OF ALL, for the sake of everything lovely, an adjuration, Merry Wives of W. ii. 2 119.

LOWN, sub. a base fellow, Oth. ii. 3. 56; Per. iv. 6. 19 [Comp. LOOT.]

LOYAL, sub. a worthless fellow, Wint. Tale, ii. 3. 106.

LUCE, sub. a pike, Merry Wives of W. i. 1. 17.

LUFPISH, adj. dull, heavy, Two Gent. iii. 2. 60.

LUKEN, sub. freaks of madness, Merry Wives of W. iv. 2. 33 [Fol. LINKS]; Wint. Tale, ii. 2. 30.

LURCH, v.t. to skulk, Merry Wives of W. ii. 2. 27, to win with great ease, a phrase used at cards, Coriol. ii. 2. 106.

LURRE, sub. the stuffed figure of a bird, used to amuse a hawk, Tam. of Shrew, iv. 1. 155; the whistle or call to allure the hawk, Ven. & Ad. 1027; v.t. to call, allure a hawk, Rom. & Jul. iii. 2. 159.

LUSH, adj. luxuriant, Temp. ii. 2. 55.

LUSTIG, adj. lustig is Dutch for merry or cheerful, All's Well, ii. 8. 47.

LUXURIOUS, adj. lascivious, Much Ado, iv. 1. 47; Hen. v. iv. 4. 20.

LUXURY, sub. lust, Merry Wives of W. v. 5 100; Troll. & Cres. v. 2. 53.

LYM, sub. a bloodhound, so called because he was held by a lyn or leash, K. Lear, iii. 6. 72.

MACULATE, adj. stained, impure, L's L's L. i. 2. 98.

MACULATION, sub. stain, the spot of guilt, Troll. & Cres. iv. 6. 64.

MAIDEN, adj. wild, untruthful, 1 Hen. VI. v. 8. 191.

MADE, pt. p. fastened, Com. of Err. iii. 1. 93.

MAGGOT-FISH, sub. a maggot, Much ili. 4. 125.

MAGNIFICIO, sub. the title of a Venetian grandee, Mer. of Ven. iii. 2. 284; Oth. i. 2. 72.

MAID MARIAN, a character in the morris-dance, x Hen. iv. iii. 3. 188.

MAILED UP, wrapped up, a hawking term, a Hen. VI. ii. 4. 31; to mail a hawk was to pluck her, or fasten her wings with a girdle.

MAIN, sub. a hand at dice, x Hen. IV. iv. 1. 47; the mainland, K. Lear, i. 6. 6.

MAIN-COURTED, sub. a mainsail, Temp. i. 1. 40.


MAKABLES, adj. maileable, widowed, Sonnets. iv. 4.

MALIKIN, sub. a kitchen slut, Coriol. ii. 1. 227.

MALL, sub. Mary, Temp. ii. 2. 51; 'Mistress Mall's picture,' improbably explained as referring to the picture of the notorious Mary Frith, or Mall Cut-purse, Twelfth Night, i. 8. 137.

MALLARD, sub. a wild drake, Ant. & Cleo. iii. 8. 29.

MALLECH, sub. mischievous (perhaps Span malhecho), Ham. ii. 2. 148.

MAIN-WORK, sub. a tippler of ale, x Hen. IV. iv. 1. 83; 2 Hen. IV. iv. 2. 366.

MAMMER, v.t. to hesitate, Oth. iii. 3. 70 (perhaps to mutter in hesitation).

MAMMET, sub. a doll, x Hen. IV. ii. 8. 97; Rom. & Jul. iii. 5. 186. Some have suggested breasts as its meaning in the first passage.

MAMMOKK, v.t. tear in fragments, Coriol. i. 3. 71.

MAN, v.t. to tame a hawk, Tam. of Shrew, iv. 1. 196; to direct, to aim, Oth. v. 2. 269.

MANAGE, sub. taming of a horse, Temp. i. 2. 70; As You Like It, i. 2. 13; Rich. II. iii. 8. 175; v.t. to train, break in a horse, Ven. & Ad. 598.

MANDRAGORA, sub. mandrake, Oth. iii. 3. 332; Ant. & Cleo. i. 5. 4.

MANDRAKE, sub. the plant Atropa Mandragora, the root of which was supposed to have human shape, and to shriek when pulled out of the ground, causing madness or death to the hearer, 2 Hen. IV. i. 2. 16; 2 Hen. VI. iii. 2. 310; Rom. & Jul. iv. 3. 48.

MANKIND, adj. masculine, applied to a woman, Wint. Tale, ii. 8. 67; Coriol. iv. 2. 16.

MANKIND, pt. p. furnished with a servant, 2 Hen. IV. i. 2. 18, 59.

MANNER, TO BE TAKEN WITH THIS, to be caught in the act, L's L's L. i. 1. 202; Wint. Tale, iv. 8. 775; 1 Hen. IV. ii. 4. 225.

MAN-QUELLER, sub. a murderer, 2 Hen. IV. ii. 1. 60.

MANURE, v.t. to cultivate, Oth. i. 3. 239.

MAPPET, sub. the study of maps, theory as opposed to real practice in warfare, Troll. & Cres. i. 3. 205.

MARBLE, adj. like marble, everlasting, Tim. of Ath. iv. 8. 192.

MARCHPANE, sub. confectionery made of a paste of pounded almonds formed into cakes, Rom. & Jul. i. 5. 9.

MARK, sub. the nightmare, 2 Hen. IV. ii. 1. 89; 'to ride the wild mare' = 'to play at see-saw,' 2 Hen. IV. ii. 4. 268.

MARK, sub. God bless or save the mark = saving your favour, 1 Hen. IV. i. 1. 356; Oth. i. 1. 33.

MARTIAL, adj. like Mars, Cymb. iv. 2. 330.

MARTLEMAS, sub. 11th of November, supposed to be a time of fair weather, applied to a halo old man, 2 Hen. IV. ii. 2. 112.

MARRY-BUGS, sub. flowers of the marigold, Cymb. ii. 3. 26.

MASHED, pt. p. mixed or beaten into a confused mass, Tit. Andr. iii. 2. 36.

MASH, v.t. to confound, to paralyze, Macb. v. 1. 85; Ven. & Ad. 997; 2 Hen. VI. iii. 1. 265; to cope with, to match, Hen. VIII. iii. 2. 275.

MAUSER, prep. in spite of, Twelfth Night, iii. 1. 165; K. Lear, v. 8. 133.

MAUD, sub. a basket, Lov. Comp. 36.

MAZARD, sub. a head, Ham. v. 1. 95; Oth. iii. 8. 157.

MEACOCK, adj. spiritless, henpecked, Tam. of Shrew, i. 1. 307.

MEALEAD, pt. p. mingled, Mes. for Mes. iv. 2. 86.

MEAN, sub. an intermediate part (alto or tenor) between the treble and bass, Two Gent. of Ver. i. 2. 92; L's L's L. v. 2. 393; Wint. Tale, iv. 2. 46; poor, humble, Com. of Err. i. 1. 54.

MECHANICAL, sub. a handicraftsman, Mid. N. Dr. ii. 2. 9; Jul. Cess. i. 1. 3.

MEDICINE, sub. a physician, All's Well, ii. 1. 75; Macb. v. 2. 97.

MEHTY, sub. household, attendants, K. Lear, ii. 4. 35.

MELL, v.t. to meddle, All's Well, iv. 3. 55.

MARCHANT, sub. a fellow, a chap [Ital. mercante],
GLOSSARY

1 Hen. VI. ii. 8. 57; Tam. of Shrew, iv. 2. 63; Rom. & Jul. i. 4. 154.

MERR, adj. entire, absolute, Oth. ii. 2. 3; Troll. & Cres. i. 3. 111; ade. All's Well, iii. 5. 55.

MERRIER, adj. only, entire, Ant. & Cleo. iii. 11. 10.

MERRILY, adv. entirely, Ham. i. 2. 137.

MERRIT, sub. a set of four, L.'s L.'s L. iv. 8. 207; v. 2. 362; 3 Hen. VI. i. 4. 73; a small quantity or fragment, 2 Hen. IV. i. 1. 106; Oth. iv. i. 210.

METAPHYSICAL, adj. supernatural, Mach. i. 5. 70.

Mew, n. t. to pen up, to imprison, Mid. N. Dr. i. 1. 71; Rom. & Jul. iii. 4. 11.

Mew an interjection of contempt, K. Lear, iv. 2. 68.

Micher, sub. a truant, 1 Hen. IV. ii. 4. 455.

Midche, adj. sneaking, lurking, Ham. iii. 2. 148.

Middle-earth, sub. the world, Merry Wives of W. v. 5. 56.

Midch, adj. moist, shedding tears, Ham. ii. 2. 548.

Milliners, sub. a man dealing in fancy articles, Wint. Tale, iv. 4. 192; 1 Hen. IV. i. 8. 36.

Millsix, sub. coin that first had milled edge [1551], Merry Wives of W. i. 1. 60.

Millsstones, to wren [proverbial], not to weep at all, Rich. iii. 1. 353; i. 4. 249.

Mind, sub. 'put in mind of' = informed, Oth. iii. 8. 138.

Mink, n. t. to undermine, to sap, As You Like It, i. 1. 22; Ham. iii. 4. 148.

Mineral, sub. a mine, Ham iv. 1. 26, a poisonous drug, Oth. i. 2. 74; Cymb. v. 6. 50.

Minkin, adj. small, pretty, K. Lear, iii. 6. 46.

Minus, sub. anything very small, Mid. N. Dr. iii. 2. 399.

Minute-Jacks, sub. time-servers, Tim. of Ath. iii. 6. 108.

Mire, n. i. to sink in the mud, Tim. of Ath. iv. 3. 148.

Miser, sub. a miserable wretch, 1 Hen. VI. v. 4. 7.

Misforso, adj. mistaken, Mid. N. Dr. iii. 2. 74.

Misgrevion, sub. contempt, mistaking, Much Ado, iv. 1. 187.

Miss, adv. misconduct, Ven. & Adon. 53.

Missingly, adv. with regret, Wint. Tale, iv. 1. 34.

Missive, sub. a messenger, Mach. i. 6. 7; Ant. & Cleo. ii. 2. 78.

Mist, n. t. to throw a mist upon anything, K. Lear, v. 8. 264.

Mistress, sub. the jack at the game of bowls, Troll. & Cres. iii. 2. 320.

Morbdr, pt. p. having the head closely wrapped up, Ham. ii. 2. 533.

Mortoir, adj. trifte, commonplace, Mach. iv. 3. 170; Oth. i. 2. 209.

Moulowdr, sub. a mole, 1 Hen. IV. iii. 1. 148.

Mors, sub. a blockhead, Com. of Err. iii. 1. 32.

Mournament, adj. momentary, instantaneous, Mid. N. Dr. i. 1. 143.

Monarch, sub. name of a crazy Italian, living in London about 1590, who professed to be monarch of the world, L.'s L. iv. 1. 102.

Montant, sub. a fencing term, Merry Wives of W. ii. 3. 27 [Cong. 'Montant' applied to Benedick 'Much Ado about Nothing,' i. 1. 50.]

Monument, sub. ancestral, memorial, All's Well, iv. 8. 20; Troll. & Cres. iii. 3. 153.

Mood, sub. state of passion, Two Gent. iv. 1. 57; Rom. & Jul. iii. 1. 13.

Moonish, adj. unconstant, As You Like It, iii. 2. 436.

Mor, sub. a grumose, Temp. iv. 1. 47.

Mopping, pr. p. making grumaces, K. Lear, iv. 1. 62.

Morisco, sub. a Morisco-dancer, 2 Hen. VI. ii. 1. 356.

Morris-pike, sub. a Moorish pike, Com. of Err. iv. 3. 27.

Mort, sub. a set of notes sounded at the death of the deer, Wint. Tale, i. 2. 119.

Mortal, adj. deadly, causing death, Com. of Err. i. 1. 11; 2 Hen. VI. ii. 2. 263; Lucrece, 364; perhaps = abounding, excessive; according to some, human, As You Like It, ii. 4. 55.

Mother, sub. the disease hysterica passio, K. Lear, ii. 4. 56.

Motion, sub. a puppet-show, Wint. Tale, iv. 2. 104; Lucrece, 136; a puppet, Meas. mea. iii. 2. 121.

Moving, sub. a mover, author, Tim. of Ath. v. 4. 27; Oth. iv. 2. 42.

Mourly, adj. the particoloured dress of a fool, As You Like It, ii. 7. 13; sub a fool, As You Like It, iii. 8. 84; Sonnets, ex. 2.

Mould, sub. 'men of mould' = earth-born men, Ham. V. ii. 3. 24.

Moulten, adj. without feathers, 1 Hen. IV. iii. 1. 151.

Mountant, adj. lifted up, Tim. of Ath. iv. 8. 136.

Mourne, sub. a term of endearment, Twelfth Night, i. 6. 68; L.'s L.'s L. v. 2. 19.

Mows, n. t. to tear in pieces, K. John, ii. 1. 354.

Mow, n. a grumace, Temp. iv. 1. 47.

Moy, sub. imaginary name of a coin, evolved from a misunderstanding of French moy, Hen. V. iv. 4. 14.

Mudler, adj. insipid, flat, Cortil. iv. 5. 240.

Mural [O. Ed. Moral], sub. perhaps wall, Mid. N. Dr. v. 2. 210 (read 'wall').

Murdering-piece, sub. a cannon loaded with chain shot, Ham. iv. 5. 95.

Mure, sub. a wall, 2 Hen. IV. iv. 4. 119.

Murison, adj. Infected with the murrain, Mid. N. Dr. ii. 1. 97.

Muscadelle, sub. a sweet wine, Tam. of Shrew, iii. 2. 175.

Muser, sub. a gap in a hedge or thicket through which a hare is accustomed to pass, Ven. & Adon. 683.

Mus, sub. a scramble, Ant. & Cleo. iii. 91.

Mutter, n. t. to mutiny, to rebel, Ham. iii. 4. 83.

Mutiny, sub. mutineers, K. John, ii. 1. 378; Ham. v. 2. 6.

Nayward, to this, in the negative direction, towards denial or disbelief, Wint. Tale, ii. 1. 63.

Nayword, sub. a byword, Twelfth Night, i. 2. 147; a watchword, word of intelligence, Merry Wives of W. ii. 2. 132; v. 2. 5.

Neb, sub. a fist, Mid. N. Dr. iv. 1. 20. Comp. Napp.

Nekt, adj. nearer, Mach. ii. 3. 147; Rich. ii. 3. 64; v. 1. 83.

Neb-lang, adj. knock-kneed, Tam. of Shrew, iii. 2. 58.

Neat, adj. foppish, 1 Hen. IV. i. 8. 33; K. Lear, ii. 2. 45.

Nem. sub. bill or beast, Wint. Tale, i. 2. 183.

Neastly, pt. p. so poor as to urgently need, All's Well, v. 8. 85.
GLOSSARY

NEEFUL, adj. wanting supplies, 3 Hen. VI. II. 1. 147.
NEEPLY, adj. absolutely, Rom. & Jul. II. 2. 117.
NEELED, sub. needle, Per. Prob. IV. 23.; Mid. N. Dr. II. 2. 204.
NEEZE, v. i. to sneeze, Mid. N. Dr. II. 1. 56.
NEER, sub. a frost, Hen. IV. II. 4. 199.
NEFHEW, sub. grandchild, Oth. I. 1. 112.
NEITHER-STOCKS, sub. stockings, I Hen. IV. IV. 4. 132.
NICKNESS, NICKETY, sub. coyness, Meas. for Meas. II. 4. 163.; Cymb. III. 4. 158.

Nicholas' clerks, St., highwaymen, I Hen. IV. II. 1. 67.
St. Nicholas was also patron of scholars, Two Gent. of Ver. III. 1. 303.
NIECE, sub. granddaughter, Rich. III. IV. 1. 1.
NIGHT-CROW, sub. the night-heron, Ardea nycticorax, or according to some, the owl; according to others, the night-jar, 3 Hen. VI. v. 6 45.
NIGHTED, adj. dark, K. Lear, iv. 5. 13.
NIGHT-RULE, sub. revelry, nightly diversion, Mid. N. Dr. III. 2. 5.
NILD will not, Tam. of Shrew, II. I. 265.; Ham. v. i. 28.
NINE-POLD, sub. explained 'nine foals,' or 'nine lambs,' K. Lear, III. 4. 124.
NINE MEN'S MORRIS, a sort of game played with stones on figures cut in the green turf, Mid. N. Dr. IV. i. 198.
'Morris' is a corruption of merelles [Fr. merelles].
'Le Jeu des merelles, the boyish game called melisses, or five-penny morris, played here most commonly with stones, but in France with pawns,... and termed merelles'—Cotgrave, Fr. Dic.

NINNY, sub. a fool, Temp. III. 2. 73.
NOD, give you the, a term in the game of cards called ' Nadody,' Troll. & Cress. I. 2. 200.
NODDY, sub. a simpleton, Two Gent. of Ver. I. 1. 120.
NOTE, sub. stigma, mark of reproach, Rich. II. II. 1. 49.
NOTED, v. t. marked with a stigma, disgraced, Jul. Ces. IV. 8. 2.
NOBLE, v. t. to nourish delicately, Per. I. 4. 42.
NOVUM, sub. a game of dice, L.'s L.'s L. v. 2. 545.
NOW, sub. the head, Mid. N. Dr. III. 2. 17.
NUMBERED, part. adj. having full numbers, richly stored with, Cymb. II. 6. 56.
NOTHOOK, sub. a catchpole, Merry Wives of W. L. I. 173.; 2 Hen. IV. 6. 8.
NUSSLING, pt. p. pushing with the nose, nosing, Ven. & Adon. 1115.
O, sub. anything round, Mid. N. Dr. III. 2. 188.; Ant. & Clesio. v. 2. 82.; perhaps pl., Hen. V. Chor. 12.
ONERQUOSO, adj. connected with obscenity, funeral, Tit. Andr. v. 3. 192.; Ham. I. 2. 9a.
ONERQUOSELY, adv. as becomes a funeral, Rich. III. I. 2. 3.

OBSRUCT, sub. an obstacle, Ant. & Clesio. III. 6. 62.
OCCULTED, adj. hidden, Ham. III. 2. 85.
ODDITY, sub. perhaps the interval between twelve at night and one in the morning, Oth. I. 1. 124.
OCCULAR, adj. amorous glances, Merry Wives of W. L. 3. 66.; K. Lear, iv. 5. 25.
O'ER-CROW, v. t. to overcome, Ham. v. 2. 267.
O'ER-LOOKED, pt. p. bewitched, Mer. of Ven. III. 2. 15.; Merry Wives of W. v. 6 89.
O'ER-PARTED, pt. p. having too difficult a part assigned to one, L.'s L.'s L. v. 2. 185.
O'ER-SIZED, pt. p. smeared over as with size, Ham. II. 2. 923.
OFF-CAP, v. t. to take the cap off, Oth. I. 1. 10.
OLD, sub. wold, K. Lear, III. 4. 123.
ON, prep. of, Mer. of Ven. II. 6. 67.; Wint. Tale, II. 2. 31.; Macb. v. 1. 74.; Ham. III. 1. 180.
ONERY, sub. unexplained, I Hen. IV. II. 1. 85.
OPEN, v. t. to give tongue, to bark on the scent, Merry Wives of W. IV. 2. 213.
OPFRANT, adj. active, Tim. of Ath. IV. 8. 25.; Ham. III. 2. 186.
OR, adj. before, Cymb. II. 4. 14.
ORGULOUS, adj. proud [Fr. orgueilleux], Troll. & Cress. I. 1. 200.
OUPHIS, sub. goblins, Merry Wives of W. iv. 2. 51.; v. 6. 69.
OUTFACE, v. t. to put out of countenance, Mer. of Ven. iv. 2. 17.
OUT-FERER, v. t. surpass, Cymb. III. 6. 66.
OUT-FURED, pt. p. beaten by a higher card, Tam. of Shrew, II. 1. 375.
OVERBUY, v. t. to pay too much for, Cymb. I. 1. 146.
OVER-SCUTCHED, part. adj. worn out, 2 Hen. IV. III. 2. 344.
OVERBURN, pt. p. bewitched, Lucrece, 1036.
OWCHERS, sub. ornaments, a Hen. IV. II. 4. 92.
OYES, int. 'hear ye!' the public officer's word [Fr. ayes], Merry Wives, v. 6. 47.; Troll. & Cress. iv. 2. 142.
PAUSE, v. t. to plot, to shuffle cards unfairly, Tit. Andr. iv. 2. 157.; Ant. & Clesio. iv. 12. 19.; sub. a condescension, Merry Wives of W. iv. 2. 126.
POMBRE, sub. plotting, K. Lear, III. 1.
GLOSSARY

PADDOCK, sub. a toad, Ham. iii. 4. 190; a familiar spirit like a toad, Macb. l. 1. 9.

PARD, pt. p. perhaps drunk, Cymb. v. 4. 165.

PAINFUL, adj. laborious, Temp. iii. 1. 15; Sonnets, xxxv. 9.

PAINTED CLOTH, cloth or canvas hangings, painted with figures and sentences, As You Like It, iii. 2. 291; Troll. & Cress. v. 10. 46.

PAPOCK, sub. some term of contempt, explained 'peacock,' which is doubtful, Ham. iii. 2. 300. 'Some in Leinster and Ulster are ... grown to be as very patchcocks as the wild Irish' (Spenser, 'A View of the State of Ireland.' Grosart, vol. ix. p. 104, ed. 1882).

PALABRAS, sub. words [Span.], Much Ado, iii. 5. 18; 'pocas palabras' (Sp.) = pocas palabras [Span.], few words, Tam. of Shrew. Ind. i. 5.

PALE, adj. pale, Lov. Comp. 188.

PALL, v.t. to wrap one's self up, Macb. l. 5. 52.

PALLIAMENT, sub. a robe, Tit. Andr. i. 1. 182.

PALMY, adj. victorious, Ham. i. 1. 113.

PANTALONE, sub. an old fool, taken from the Italian comedy, As You Like It, ii. 7. 138; Tam. of Shrew. iii. 1. 37.

PANTLER, sub. a servant in charge of the pantry, Wint. Tale, iv. 3. 56.

'PARTOR, sub. apparitor, an officer in the bishop's court. L's L's L's L. iii. 1. 156.

PARLOW, adj. a vulgar corruption of perilous - mischievous, alarming, As You Like It, iii. 2. 46.

PARNASCETTI, sub. spermascetti, 1 Hen. IV. i. 3. 58.

PARYT, v.t. to quit, to leave, Rich. ii. 3. 13; Fer. v. 3. 38.

PARTE, pt. p. gifted, Troll. & Cress. iii. 56.

PARTIAL, adj. a partial slander = the reproach of partiality, Rich. ii. 3. 241.

PARTI-COATED, adj. having a coat of various colours, L's L's L's L. iv. 2. 774.

PARTLET, sub. the name for the hen in Reynard the Fox, so called from her ruff, Wint. Tale, ii. 3. 75; 1 Hen. IV. iii. 8. 60.

PASHI, sub. the head, Wint. Tale, i. 2. 129; v.t. to beat, Troll. & Cress. ii. 3. 227; part. adj. v. 5. 10.

PASS, v.t. to die, K. Lear, v. 3. 315; 2 Hen. VI. iii. 8. 25; v.t. to care for, regard, 2 Hen. VI. v. 2. 142; to exceed bounds, Merry Wives of W. i. 1. 183; Troll. & Cress. i. 2. 180; to pass sentence on, Meas. for Meas. ii. 1. 19; sub. 'pass of pate' = sally of wit, Temp. iv. 1. 246.

PASSADO, sub. a term in fencing, L's L's L's L. i. 2. 128; Rom. & Jul. ii. 4. 27.

PASSE, sub. proceedings, Meas. for Meas. v. 1. 371.

PASSE-MARRE, sub. a corruption of the Italian passamezzo, a slow and stately dance, Twelfth Night, v. 1. 208.

PATCH, sub. a fool, Temp. iii. 2. 73; Mach. v. 8. 15.

PATCHERY, sub. rognerie, Troll. & Cress. ii. 3. 78; Tim. of Ath. l. 1. 102.

PATH, v.t. to walk, Jul. Cress. i. 1. 83.

PATHIES, sub. metal plates, Mer. of Ven. v. 1. 59.

PATHY, sub. tippity, Temp. iii. 2. 101.

PATH, sub. a stately dance, Twelfth Night, v. 1. 209.

PATH, sub. a small piece of metal offered to be kissed; 'but Pilate probably meant 'pix,' a box which held the Host,' Hen. V. iii. 6. 42.

PATH, v.t. to accuse, turn king's evidence, 1 Hen. IV. ii. 2. 50.


PATHY, v.t. to grow thin, Mach. l. 3. 23; to mope, Ham. ii. 2. 602.

PARKING, adj. sneaking, Merry W. of W. iii. 5. 73.

PARK, sub. a cataract in the eye, Two Gent. of Ver. v. 2. 13 [quibbling].

PARK, sub. 'kingdom's pearl' = fine youth, or perhaps choice nobility of the country, Mach. v. 7. 85.

PAET, sub. a pet, a darling, Tam. of Shrew. i. 1. 73.

PECULIAR, adj. preserved, guarded, Meas. for Meas. i. 2. 96.

PEBDANT, sub. a schoolmaster, L's L's L's L. iii. 1. 187; Tam. of Shrew. i. 1. 88.

PEELER, part. adj. shaven, 1 Hen. VI. l. 8. 50.

PEER, v.t. to appear, Wint. Tale, iv. 3. 3; Ven. & Adon. 86.

PEEVISH, adj. silly, foolish, Twelfth Night, i. 5. 321; Rich. III. iv. 2. 96.

PEER, v.t. to wedge, Temp. i. 2. 295.

PEER, sub. the plug of an instrument, Oth. l. 1. 203.

PEISE, v.t. to make heavy and so retard, Mer. of Ven. iii. 2. 22; to poised, balance, K. John, ii. 1. 575 [peised]; 'pelse down' = to weigh down, Rich. III. v. 8. 106.

PELT, v.t. to chase with anger, Lucrece, 1428.

PELTING, adj. peltry, Mld. N. Dr. ii. 1. 51; K. Lear, ii. s. 48.

PENDULOUS, adj. impending, K. Lear, iii. 4. 66.

PENDRATIVE, adj. affecting the heart, Ant. & Cleo. iv. 12. 75.

PENDONER, sub. gentleman pensioner, gentlemen in the personal service of the sovereign, Merry Wives of W. ii. 2. 81; Mld. N. Dr. i. 10.

PENSIONS, adj. penstive, Lov. Comp. 219.

PENT-HOUSE, sub. a shed standing aside from the main building, Much Ado, iii. 3. 109; fig. the eyelid, Mach. l. 3. 20.

PERDU, sub. a soldier sent on a forlorn hope, K. Lear, iv. 7. 35.

PERFECT, pt. p. fully satisfied, Mach. iii. 4. 21; adj. certain, Wint. Tale, iii. 8. 1; Cymb. iii. l. 73.

PERIAPTS, sub. amulets, 1 Hen. VI. v. 3. 2.

PERKED UP, dressed up, adorned, Hen VIII. ii. s. 21.

PERNICIOUSLY, adv. excessively, or else maliciously, Hen. VIII. ii. 1. 50.

PERPEND, v.t. to reflect, consider, Merry Wives of W. ii. 17; Hen. IV. iv. 4. 8.

PERSPECTIVELY, adv. as through a perspective, Hen. V. v. 2. 347.

PERSPECTIVES, sub. glasses cut so as to form an optical delusion, All's Well, v. 3. 48; Twelfth Night, v. 1. 227.

PERT, adj. lively, L's L's L's L. v. 2. 273; Mld. N. Dr. i. 1. 52.

PERTUNITY-LIKE, a word not yet explained, L's L's L. v. 2. 67.

PETAR, sub. an engine charged with powder to blow up gates, Ham. iii. 4. 207.

PETTISH, adj. capricious, Troll. & Cress. ii. 3. 140.

PETTITORS, sub. feet, properly, pigs' feet, Wint. Tale, iv. 8. 621.

Paw, sub. a seat, K. Lear, iii. 4. 53.

Paw-Fellow, sub. companion, Rich. III. iv. 4. 58.
GLOSSARY

PRACTICE, sub. treachery, artifice, Meas. for Meas. v. 1. 108; Hen. V. ii. 2. 90.

PRACTISANTS, sub. performers of a stratagem, 1 Hen. VI. ill. 2. 20.

PRACTISE, v. t. to plot, As You Like It, i. 1. 138.

PRAISE, v. t. to appraise, value, Twelfth Night, i. 5. 213; Oth. v. i. 66.

PRAC'DENT, sub. rough draft, K. John, v. 2. 3; Rich. ill. 6. 7.

PRESCHTPAL, adj. instructive, Much Ado, v. 1. 24.

PREGNANCY, sub. ready wit, 2 Hen. IV. i. 2. 154.

PREGNANT, adj. ready, clever, Ingenious, Ham. ii. 2. 216; ill. 2. 66; very probable, Wint. Tale, v. 2 34.

PRESENT, sub. the presence chamber, Rich. i. 1. 3. 289.

PRESIT, adj. ready, Mer. of Ven. i. 1. 161.

PRESTER JOHN, sub. a fabulous eastern monarch, Much Ado, i. 1. 278.

PRESURE, sub. design, Coriol. i. 2. 92.

PRETEND, v. t. to assert, 3 Hen. VI. iv. 7. 57.

PRICK, sub. point of a dial, Lucrece, 721; the bull's eye in a target, L. & L.'s L. iv. 1. 136.

PRICKET, sub. a buck of the second year, L. & L.'s L. iv. 2. 22.

PRICK-SONG, sub. music written down, in opposition to plain-song, Rom. & Jul. ii. 4. 22.

PRIOR, sub. a thief, Wint. Tale, iv. 2. 109.

PRIMAI, adj. first, Ham. iii. 8. 37.

PRIMA, adj. the spring, Lucrece, 322; Sonnets, xvii. 7.

PRIMO, sub. a game at cards, Hen. VIII. v. 1. 7.

Merry Wives, iv. 5. 109.

PRIME, adj. early, or perhaps flourishing, Ham. i. 3. 7.

PRINCIPALS, sub. the corner beams of a house, Per. iii. 2. 16.

PRINCOX, sub. a port, saucy fellow, Rom. & Jul. i. 5. 99.

PRINCE, sub. perhaps prize-fighter, As You Like It, ii. 8. 8.

PRISE, sub. value, estimation, Cymb. iii. 6. 76; Ant. & Cleo. v. 2. 182.

PRISED, pt. p. estimated, Much Ado, i. 1. 90.

PROBAL, adj. satisfactory, reasonable, Oth. ii. 3. 347.

PROBATION, sub. proof, Cymb. v. 5. 30; trial, Meas. for Meas. v. 1. 157; Twelfth Night, ii. 5. 144.

PRIDOR, sub. a traitor, 1 Hen. VI. iv. 3. 31.

PROFACE, interj. much good may it do you—an expression addressed to guests by their hosts, 2 Hen. IV. v. 2. 68.

PROFUSE, adj. tedious, causing delay, Meas. for Meas. ii. 4. 163.

PROPE, v. t. to incline, Troll. & Cress. ii. 2. 190.

PROPHESY, sub. inclination, Troll. & Cress. ii. 2. 133.

PROPHET, adj. handsome, Oth. iv. 3. 35; Ant. & Cleo. iii. 3. 38; peculiar to one's self, Meas. for Meas. i. 1. 30; own, Meas. for Meas. i. 2. 138; 'proper-false,' handsome, but deceitful, Twelfth Night, ii. 2. 30.

PROPERED, pt. p. endowed with qualities, Ant. & Cleo. v. 2. 83.

PROPERTIES, sub. stage requisites, Merry Wives, iv. 4. 80; Mid. N. Dr. i. 2. 209.

PROPERTY, v. t. to make a tool of, Twelfth Night, iv. 2. 102; K. John, v. 2. 70; sub. an instrument for one's designs, a tool, Merry Wives, iv. 4. 10; Jul. Cess. iv. 1. 90.

PROXEONS, v. t. to speak, to converse, Much Ado, ill. 1. 3.

PROLOGUE, sub. means of opposition, defence, Troll. & Cress. ii. 2. 136.

PROPUGNATION, sub. expression of contempt, Much Ado, v. 1. 38.

PUBESE, sub. a childish game, L. & L.'s L. iv. 8. 165.

PUT ON, to instigate, Oth. ii. 8. 360; K. Lear, i. 4. 232.

PUT OVER, to refer, K. John, i. 1. 62.

PUTTOCK, sub. a kite, 2 Hen. VI. iii. 2. 152; Cymb. i. 1. 140.

PUTZLE, sub. a foul drab, 1 Hen. VI. i. 4. 107.

PYRAMIDES, sub. pyramids, Ant. & Cleo. ii. 2. 61.

PYRAMIS, sub. a pyramid, i Hen. VI. i. 6. 21.

QUAIN, adj. fine, delicate, Temp. i. 2. 317; Mid. N. Dr. ii. 1. 99.

QUALIFIED, adj. excellent, well composed, Cymb. i. 4. 68.

QUALITY, v. t. to moderate, Meas. for Meas. i. 1. 65; Much Ado, v. 4. 67.

QUALITY, sub. profession, Ham. ii. 2. 462.

QUANTO, sub. value, Mid. N. Dr. i. 1. 232; Ham. iii. 2. 46.

QUARRELL, [C. Ed. QUARRY], sub. cause, Mach. i. 2. 14.

QUARRIEUS, adj. quarrelsome, Cymb. iii. 4. 162.

QUARRY, sub. heap of slaughtered game [Fr. curte], Mach. iv. 3. 206; Ham. v. 2. 376.

QUARTERED, pt. p. slaughtered, Coriol. i. 1. 205.

QUARY, sub. a pimple, applied contemptuously to a person, Oth. v. 1. 11.

QUATCH-BUDDOCK, sub. squat or flat buttock, All's Well, ii. 2. 19.

QUARTY, adj. disgusted, Ant. & Cleo. iii. 6. 20; ticklish, difficult, K. Lear, ii. 1. 19; fastidious, Much Ado, ii. 1. 402.

QUELL, sub. a murder, Mach. i. 7. 72.

QUERN, sub. a hand-mill, Mid. N. Dr. ii. 1. 36.

QUESTANT, sub. aspirant, All's Well, ii. 1. 66.

QUESTION, sub. conversation, As You Like It, iii. 4. 37; v. 4. 166; Me. of Ven. iv. 1. 73; v. t. to talk, converse, Lucrece, 122.

QUESTIONABLE, adj. inviting converse, Ham. i. 4. 43.

QUESTRIER, sub. searcher, K. Lear, iii. 7. 17.

QUESTS, sub. inquiries, Meas. for Meas. iv. 1. 63.

QUIET, adj. alive, Merry Wives of W. iii. 4. 90; fresh, Temp. iii. 2. 77; pregnant, L. & L.'s L. v. 2. 68a.

QUIETNESS, sub. subtilty, 1 Hen. IV. i. 2. 51; Ham. v. 2. 105.

QUIETER, sub. settlement of an account, Ham. iii. 1. 75.

QUILL, IN TEE, in a body, 2 Hen. VI. i. 3. 4.

QUILLIONS, sub. cavilling, chicanery, 1 Hen. VI. ii. 17.

Tying of Ath. iv. 5. 156.

QUINTAIN, sub. a post, block, or dummy figure set up for tilting at, As You Like It, i. 2. 209.
GLOSSARY

QUIT, sub. piece of repartee, Two Gent. of Ver. iv. 2. 12; 1 Hen. IV. i. 2. 57.

Quirk, sub. a sudden turn, an evasion. Per. iv. 6. 8; All's Well. iii. 2. 51; a shallow conceit, Much Ado. ii. 8. 295; Oth. ii. 1. 63.

Quiver, adj. nimble, 2 Hen. IV. iii. 2. 304.

Quot, sub. a cap, Wint. Tale, iv. 3. 226; 2 Hen. IV. i. 1. 147.

Quot, v. t. to throw, 2 Hen. IV. ii. 4. 405.

Quote, v. t. to note, examine, scrutinize, notice, Troll. & Cres. iv. 5. 232; Tit. Andr. iv. 1. 50.

Rabato, sub. a kind of ruff, Much Ado, iii. 4. 6.

Rabbit-sucker, sub. a sucking rabbit, 1 Hen. IV. iv. 4. 486.

Rack, sub. a root, Wint. Tale, iv. 2. 52.

Rack, v. t. to move about as the clouds do, 3 Hen VI. ii. 1. 27; sub. a mass, a cloud of floating clouds, Temp. iv. 1. 156; Ham. ii. 2. 514; Sonnets, xxxviii. 13.

Rag, sub. a beggarly person, Tam. of Shrew, iv. 3. 112; Tim. of Ath. iv. 8. 272.

Raged, pt. p. chafed, Rich. II. ii. 1. 70.

Raging-wood, adj. raging mad, 1 Hen. VI. iv. 7. 35.

Rake up, v. t. to bury, to cover up, K. Lear, iv. 6. 282.

Rampallian, sub. a term of low abuse, 2 Hen IV. ii. 1. 67.

Ramping, pt. p. rampant, 1 Hen. IV. iii. 1. 152; 3 Hen. VI v. 2. 13.

Ramp, sub. wanton wenches, Cymb. i. 6. 124.

Ranger, v. t. to dispose in order, Ant. & Cleo. i. 1. 34; sub. ranks of an army, Ant. & Cleo. iii. ii. 15.

Rank, sub. perhaps pace, As You Like It, i. 2. 114.

Rank, adj. swollen, Venc. & Adon 71.

Rap, v. t. to transport, Macb. i. 8. 374; Cymb. i. 6. 51.

Rapture, sub. violent motion, Coriol. ii. 1. 226; Troll. & Cres. iii. 2. 138; plundering, robbing, according to some violent toast, Per. ii. 1. 167.

Rascal, sub. a deer too lean to be hunted, As You Like It, iii. 3. 60; adj. 1 Hen. VI. iv. 2. 49.

Ravel, v. t. to unravel, Rich. II. iv. 1. 228; Ham. iii. 4. 286.

Raven, adj. ravishing, All's Well, iii. 2. 120; v. t. to devour greedily, Macb. ii. 4. 28.

Ravined, pt. p. gorged, Tam. of Shrew, iv. 1. 3; afflicted, or perhaps defiled, Tam. of Shrew, ii. 3. 55.

Rake, sub. root, 1 Hen. IV. ii. 1. 27; Comp. Rack.

Rake, part. adj. slashed, Ham. iii. 2. 993.

Razour, sub. erosion, Meas. for Meas. v. 1. 73.

Rerate, v. t. to blunt, Meas. for Meas. i. 4. 60.

Ratchet, sub. hunting term, a set of notes sounded to call the dogs off from a wrong scent, Much Ado, i. 1. 251.

Record, v. t. to sing, Two Gent. of Ver. v. 4. 6; v. i. Per. iv. Prov. 27.

Records, sub. a kind of flute, Mtk. N. Dr. v. 1. 124; Ham. iii. 2. 267.

Recourse, sub. frequent flowing, Troll. & Cres. v. 8. 35.

Recriver, v. t. to get the windward of the game, so as to drive it into a toll, Ham. iii. 2. 268.

Rend, sub. advice, counsel, Ham. i. 3. 51.

Red-letter, sub. the window of an ale-house, used adjectively, Merry Wives of W. ii. 2. 29.

Reduce, v. t. to bring back, Rich. III. v. 4. 49.

Reduce, adj. plumping, Mer. of Ven. III. i. 67.

Reeky, adj. filthy, Rom. & Jul. iv. 1. 83.

Refell, v. t. to refuse, Meas. for Meas. v. 1. 95.

Regiment, sub. rule, Ant. & Cleo. iii. 6. 95.

Region, sub. the sky, the upper air, Rom. & Jul. ii. 2. 21; Ham. ii. 2. 517; adj. Ham. ii. 2. 615; Sonnets, xxxviii. 15.

Rejoin, v. t. to adjourn, Coriol. ii. 1. 80.

Remediate, adj. medicinal, K. Lear, iv. 4. 17.

Remind, v. t. to remind, Temp. i. 2. 243.

Remorse, sub. pity, Meas. for Meas. ii. 2. 54; Merry Wives of W. iii. 5. 10.

Remorseful, adj. compassionate, Two Gent. of Ver iv. 3. 13.

Render, v. t. to account, Tim. of Ath. iv. 1. 9; v. i. to surrender, Macb. v. 7. 24; Ant. & Cleo iii. 8. 42.

Rendering, v. t. to surrender, Cymb. v. 4. 17; Sonnets, cxv. 12; account, statement, Tim. of Ath. v. 1. 154; Cymb. iv. 4. 11.

Renew, v. t. to deny, K. Lear, ii. 2. 83; Ant. & Cleo i. 1. 8.

Rent, v. t. to rend, to tear, Mid. N. Dr. iii. 2. 215.

Renting, pr. p. denying, Son Sun. Notes of Mus. iii. 7.

Refasture, sub. food [Armado's verses], L's. L's L iv. 1. 96.

Replenished, part. adj. consummated, Wint. Tale, ii. 1. 78; Rich. III. iv. 3. 18.

Replication, sub. echo, reverberation, Jul. Cesa. i. 1. 50; answer, Ham. iv. 2. 13.

Reprise, sub. price, 1 Hen. IV.iv. iv. 1. 218.

Reprobation, sub. perdition, Oth. v. 2. 207.

Reprisal, v. t. to oppose, 1 Hen. VI. iv. 1. 94.

Reprisancy, sub. opposition, Tim. of Ath. iii. 5. 46.

Reprize, sub. sort, Mid. N. Dr. i. 2. 4.

Resolve, v. t. to dissolve, Tim. of Ath. iv. 3. 445; Ham. i. 2. 130; to free from doubt, Meas. for Meas. iv. 2. 226; to answer, Tit. Andr. v. 3. 35.

Respect, sub. consideration, K. John, iii. 1. 58; Ham. III. i. 68.

Respective, adj. careful, Mer. of Ven. i. 1. 126; Rom. & Jul. iii. 1. 109.

Respectively, adv. particularly, Tim. of Ath. iii. 1. 8.

'Round, v. t. to arrest, Com. of Err. iv. 2. 48.

Rest, adj. to set up one's, a phrase in a game at cards, to venture one's final stakes held in reserve, fully make up one's mind, be resolved, Com. of Err. iv. 8. 26; All's Well. ii. 1. 126.

Renty, adj. lazy, slothful, Cymb. iii. 6. 34; Sonnets, c. 9.

Retime, sub. a rebel, Cymb. iv. 4. 6; K. John, v. 2. 157.

Rimbodice, adj. rippled, Ant. & Cleo. iii. 8. 90.

Rip, v. t. to make away with, Temp. i. 2. 356.

Riggen, adj. wanton, Ant. & Cleo. ii. 2. 44.

Ring, sub. a circle, 1 Hen. IV.iv. iv. 5. 35; Latrobe, 1745.

Ring [O. Ed. Rymer], sub. the abdomen, Hen. V. iv. 1. 15.


Rival, sub. partner, Ham. i. 1. 13.


Rivo, interj. of doubtful meaning, a 'mascallon' exclamation, 1 Hen. IV. ii. 1. 166.

Roan, sub. a prostitute, 1 Hen. IV. ii. 2. 283; a rural
GLOSSARY

stead, Mer. of Ven. l. 1. 19; a journey, Hen. VIII. iv. 2. 17; an incursion, Corol. iii. 1. 5.

Robustious, adj. rough, Ham. III. 2. 10.

Rocker, pl. p. trembled, shook, Lucrece, 262.

Roguing, adj. vagrant, roaming, Per. iv. 1. 96.

Roistong, adj. bold, bullying, defiant, Troll. & Cresl. ii. 2. 268.


Rondure, sub. circle, Sonnets, xxii. 8.

Ronyon, sub. scurry wretch, Mach. I. 3. 5; Merry Wives, iv. 2. 199.

Rook, n. t. to crower, 3 Hen. VI. v. 6. 45.

Roosy, adj. misty, gloomy, or else full of crows, Macb. III. 2. 51.

Rooted, pt. p. learned by heart, Corol. Ill. 3. 55.

Roper, sub. roguery, Rom. & Jul. II. 4. 155.

Rope-tricks, sub. knavish tricks, Tam. of Shrew, I. 2. 113.

Roping, pt. adj. dripping, Hen. VII. iv. 2. 43. [Comp. Down-roping.]

Rotten, sub. an ox, Tim. of Ath. iv. 3. 12.


Round with, vb. to speak freely with, Com. of Err. ii. 1. 84; Twelfth Night, ii. 3. 104.

Round I, n. t. to surround, Mid. N. Dr. iv. 1. 57; Rich. II. iii. 2. 164; to finish off, Temp. iv. 1. 158; n. t. to grow big, Wint. Tale, ii. 1. 16.

Round II, n. t. to whisper, Wint. Tale, ii. 2. 217; K. John, I. 1. 566.

Roundel, sub. a dance, Mid. N. Dr. ii. 2. 1, rung of a ladder, Jul. Ces. I. II. 1. 24.

Roundly, adj. plainly, directly, As You Like It, v. 3. 12.

Roundure, sub. circuit, K. John, II. 1. 259.

Royer, sub. a free and deep draught, Ham. I. 2. 127; I. 4. 5.

Rout, sub. the crowd, the mob, Com. of Err. III. I. 101; Jul. Ces. I. 2. 78; brawl, Oth. III. 3. 212.

Roynish, adj. scurrily, coarse, As You Like It, II. 2. 8.

Rus, sub. a term in the game of bowls, an impediment, Rich. II. iii. 4. 49; Hen. V. vi. 2. 188.

Rushy, adj. red, ruby-like, Twelfth Night, i. 4. 32.

Rude, sub. the red brooch, Cymb. IV. 2. 224.

Rudbeck, sub. rude fellow, Tam. of Shrew, III. 2. 10.

Twelfth Night, iv. 1. 55.

Rust, n. t. to be bolithously, K. Lear, II. 4. 304; stri, bustle, Lov. Comp. 58.


Rutate, n. t. to rut, 3 Hen. VI. v. 1. 83; Lucrece, 94.

Rut, sub. behaviour, Twelfth Night, ii. 3. 133.

Rump-fed, adj. pampered, or else fed on offal, Mach. I. 3. 6.


Running Banquet, a bawdy refreshment, &c. Hen. VIII. i. 4. 227; v. 4. 77.


Ruth, sub. pity, Rich. II. iii. 4. 106; Cordel. I. 1. 203.

Sable, sub. rich fur, Ham. IV. 7. 80.

Sackerson, sub. name of a famous bear at Paris Garden, see: The Bank side, Merry Wives of W. I. I. 310.

Sacking bell, a bell rung when the elements are conse- crated at Mass, Hen. VIII. III. 2. 266.

Saff, adj. sure, sound, Cymb. IV. 2. 131.

Sail, n. t. to droop, sink, Mach. v. 3. 10.

Sagittary, sub. a centaur aiding the Trojans against the Greeks, Troll. & Cresl. v. & 14.; residence of the commanding officers at Venice, with figure of an archer over the gates, Oth. I. 1. 159.

Sallet, sub. a close-fitting helmet, 2 Hen. VI. IV. 10. 13; a salad, 2 Hen. VI. IV. 10. 9.

Sallets, (i.e. salades), sub. stirring passages, perhaps ribaldries, Ham. II. 2. 471.

Samingo, sub. for Saint Domingo, the patron saint of drinkers, 2 Hen. IV. v. 8. 77.

Sand-blind, adj. half blind, purblind, Mer. of Hen. II. 2. 37.

Sand, adj. of a sandy colour, Mid. N. Dr. iv. 1. 256.

Sarcknet, sub. fine silk, Troll. & Cresl. v. 1. 36.

Saw, pt. p. sawn, or perhaps seen, Lov. Comp. 92.

Say, sub. a kind of serge, 2 Hen. VI. IV. 7. 27; n. t. to try, essay, Pericles, I. I. 99.

Scald, adj. scabby, manky, Hen. V. v. 1. 57; Ant. & Clea. v. 2. 214.

Scale, n. t. to scatter, make clear, make plain, Corol. I. 1. 97; to weigh, Mesa. for Mesa. III. I. 267; Corol. II. 3. 257.

Scamible, n. t. to scrumble, Much Ado, v. 1. 94; Hen. V. v. 2. 217.

Scamler, sub. some sort of birds, possibly seamela, seamerus, Temp. II. 2. 185.

Scandal, n. t. to bring into disgrace, desame, Jul. Ces. I. 2. 76; Cymb. III. 4. 62.

Scant, adj. scarcely, Rom. & Jul. I. 2. 104; n. t. to limit, shorten, K. Lear, ii. 4. 142.

Scotch, sub. a covering for the head, Com. of Err. ii. 2. 37; the head, Hamlet, v. 1. 108; a fort, Hen. V. iii. 3. 78.

Scour, sub. contribution, 1 Hen. IV. v. 4. 115.

Scorch, sub. a cut, wound, Ant. & Clea. iv. 7. 10; n. t. to notch, wretch, Corol. iv. 5. 196; Mach. III. 2. 23.

Scribers, sub. scribes, Ham. IV. 7. 100.

Scrub, sub. a written list, Mid. N. Dr. II. 2. 3.

Scowel, n. t. perhaps to scrawl, Tim. Andr. ii. 4. 5.

Scows, sub. many fellows, K. John, II. 1. 373.

Screwed, adj. stunted, Mer. of Ven. v. 1. 162.

Sheam, sub. yard, Troll. & Cresl. iii. 3. 197.

Shear, n. t. to brand, Wint. Tale, ii. 1. 72.

Sharred, adj. withered, blighted, Cymb. II. 4. 6.

Security, sub. carelessness, Jul. Ces. II. 2. 8; Mach. III. 5. 32.

Sherdess, sub. rowing of the seed, Mesa. for Mesa. I. 6. 42.

Sheel, n. t. to close up the eyes of a hawk, Oth. I. 3. 271; Mach. III. 2. 46.

Sial, sub. saloon, Troll. & Cresl. iv. 6. 149.

Sialshone, adj. rarely given to vulgar eyes, Corol. II. I. 232.

Sly, adj. same, Mer. of Ven. I. 1. 149.

Sime, sub. set of notes on a trumpet, frequent in stage directions, K. Lear, I. 1; Corol. II. 2. 246.

Skirroco, sub. a sort of skin eruption, Mesa. for Mesa. III. I. 31; Troll. & Cresl. II. 8. 82.
GLOSSARY

Sewer, sub. an officer whose original office was to taste the dishes placed on the royal table, Macb. i. 7, stage direction, and line.

Shale, sub. husks, shells, Hen. IV. iv. 2. 13.

Shard-borne, pt. adj. carried through the air on wing-cases, Macb. iii. 2. 42.

Shard, pt. adj. having wing-cases, Cymb. iii. 3. 20.

Share, sub. potsherd, Ham. v. 1. 253; wing-cases, Ant. & Cleo. iii. 2. 50.

Shkaram, sub. one who shears cloth, 2 Hen. VI. iv. 2. 145.


Sheer-biter, sub. a malicious and treacherous fellow, Twelfth Night, ii. 5. 6.

Sheen, pt. p. rated, reviled, Twelfth Night, iv. 2. 115; Coriol. v. 2. 104; Ham. iii. 2. 472.

Shin-tire, sub. a head-dress, Merry Wives, iii. 8. 60.

Sieve, sub. a sieve, Tit. Andr. ii. 1. 87.

Shoe, v. t. to move on, Hen. V. ii. 1. 47.

Shotten herring, sub. one that has shed its roe, 2 Hen. IV. ii. 145.

Shovous, sub. shaggy dogs, Macb. iii. 1. 94.

Shove-great shilling, one used in the game of shove-groat, 2 Hen. IV. ii. 4. 205.

Shove-board, sub. a shilling used in the game of that name, shove-groat, Merry Wives of W. 1. 1. 161.

Shrewd, adj. mischievous, Jul. Ces. ii. 1. 158; As You Like It, v. 4. 180.

Sickle, sub. shekels, Meas. for Meas. ii. 2. 149.

Side-sleeves, sub. long hanging sleeves, Much Ado, iii. 4. 21.

Sink, sub. a seat, Meas. for Meas. iv. 2. 101; rank, Ham. iv. 7. 76; Oth. i. 2. 22; excrement, Temp. ii. 2. 314.

Sightless, adj. blind, Lucrece, 1013; Invisible, Macb. i. 5. 90; ugly, K. John, iii. 1. 45.

Sign, v. t. to mark, stamp, to be a prognostic or omen, K. John, iv. 2. 237; Jul. Ces. iii. 1. 206; Ant. & Cleo. iv. 3. 14.

Simple, sub. a medicinal herb, Merry Wives of W. 1. 4. 65; Rom. & Jul. v. 1. 40.

Simular, adj. pretended, feigned, Cymb. v. 5. 201; sub. simulator, K. Lear, ii. 2. 54.


Sistering, past. adj. neighbouring, Lov. Comp. 2.

Slack, sub. proportions, allowances, K. Lear, ii. 4. 172.

Skinks-Mates, sub. a word of doubtful meaning perhaps messmates, or knavish companions, &c., Rom. & Jul. ii. 4. 163.

Slidery, sub. a little pot, Oth. i. 8. 274.

Skell-less, adj. ignorant, Temp. iii. 1. 53; Twelfth Night, iii. 8. 9.

Skill not, pr. It is of no importance, it matters not, Twelfth Night, v. 1. 298; 2 Hen. VI. iii. 1. 261.

Skimmer-skimmers, adj. wild, confused, 1 Hen. IV. iii. 1. 353.

Sniffer, sub. a thoughtless fellow, Tam. of Shrew, ii. 1. 333.

Skuir, v. t. to scoor or move rapidly, Macb. v. 3. 35.

Skir, adj. slimy, viscous, Macb. iv. 1. 29.

Slave, v. t. to make a slave of, or perhaps to treat as a slave would, K. Lear, iv. 2. 69.

Slave, and sub. floss silk, Troll. & Cres. v. 1. 35; Slave silk, Macb. ii. 2. 36.

Sledged, adj. on sledges, Ham. i. 1. 63.

Suker-hand, sub. a wristband, Wint. Tale, iv. 3. 212.

Skerlesness, adj. useless, unprofitable, Troll. & Cres. v. 4. 9.


Suf, sub. a counterfeit coin, Rom. & Jul. ii. 4. 53; Ven. & Ad. 215.

Sulier, sub. a branch torn off, Ham. iv. 7. 174; v. t. to tear off, to break off, Macb. iv. 1. 28; K. Lear, iv. 2. 34.

Slops, sub. large loose trousers, 2 Hen. IV. i. 2. 33.

Suckes, v. t. to slur over, Mer. of Ven. ii. 8. 39; to soil, Oth. i. 3. 227.

Snick, sub. a smattering, All’s Well, iv. 1. 18.

Small, adj. shrill-roated, Coriol. iii. 2. 114; Twelfth Night, i. 4. 32.

Smatch, sub. smack, taste, Jul. Ces. v. 5. 46.

Smatter, v. i. to prattle, to chatter, Rom. & Jul. iii. 1. 172.

Smooth, v. t. to flatten, Rich. III. i. 3. 48; Tit. Andr. iv. 4. 95.

Sneak, v. t. to check, to nip, L. L. L. i. 1. 100; Wint. Tale, i. 2. 133; sub. a sub, 2 Hen. IV. ii. 1. 137.

Sneak up! an expression of contempt, go and be hanged, Twelfth Night, ii. 3. 103.

Snuff, sub. the smouldering wick of a candle, Cymb. i. 6. 37; an object of loathing and contempt, All’s Well, i. 2. 59.

Snuffs, sub. quarrels, K. Lear, iii. 1. 26; to take or be in snuff—to take offence at, Mtd. N. Dr. v. 1. 256; i Hen. IV. i. 8. 41.

Souled, adj. luxuriously fed, high-blooded, K. Lear, iv. 6. 215.

Squab, sub. a small piece of money, Tim. of Ath. iii. 1. 47.

Sore, sub. a buck of the fourth year, L. L. L. i. 2. 59. Sore, sub. a buck of the third year, L. L. L. iv. 2. 60.

Sord, sub. company, in contempt, Mtd. N. Dr. iii. 2. 21; Rich. III. v. 3. 317; a lot, Troll. & Cres. i. 3. 376.

Sot, sub. a fool, Twelfth Night, i. 6. 128.

Souse, v. t. to swoop down on, as a bird of prey does, K. John, v. 2. 150.


Sowle, v. t. to pull, or drag, Coriol. iv. 5. 214.

Sware-counter, sub. a boyish game, a Hen. IV. iv. 2. 170.

Spaniel, v. t. to follow subseriently, Ant. & Cleo. iv. 10. 34.

Speed, pt. p. done for, provided for, Mer. of Ven. ii. 9. 72; Rom. & Jul. iii. 1. 96.

Sper, v. t. to bar, to enclose, Troll. & Cres. Pro. 19.

Spenner, sub. a spider, Rom. & Jul. i. 4. 60; Mtd. N. Dr. ii. 2. 21.

Spot, sub. a piece of embroidery, Coriol. i. 8. 57.

Srap, adj. quick, sharp, Merry Wives of W. 1v. 1. 85.

Springhall, sub. a hamens in horses, Hen. VIII. i. 8. 13.

Squashed, pt. p. scattered, Mer. of Ven. i. 2. 22.

Squandering, pr. p. going at random, As You Like It, ii. 7. 57.

Square, sub. ‘the most precious square’—most valuable
GLOSSARY

iv. 8. 115; v. t. to strike with disease, Merry Wives of W. iv. 4. 23; to take refuge in, Com. of Err. i. 2. 94; to jump over, K. John, v. 2. 138.

TALK, in. to conquer, Coriol. i. 2. 24.

TALK ME WITH YOU, make me understand you, Rom. & Jul. iii. 8. 149; 1 Ham. iv. ii. 4. 513.

TALK OUT, to copy, Oth. iii. 3. 266.

TALK, thought, to suffer grief, Jul. Cses. i. 1. 187.

TALK UP, to obtain on credit, 2 Hen. vi. iv. 7. 134; to reprove, Two Gent. of Ver. i. 2. 132; to reconcile, Twelfth Night, iv. 3. 332.

TALENTS, sub. lockets containing hair, Lov Comp. 264.

TALLOW KETCH, a vessel filled with tallow, according to some a tallow ketch, a round lump of tallow, 1 Hen. iv. ii. 4. 256.

Tarre, n. t. to set on dogs to fight, K. John, iv. 1. 117; to urge on, Ham. ii. 2. 379.

TARTAR, sub. Tartarus, hell, Hen. vi. ii. 2. 152.

TASURE-GENTLE, sub. tassel-gentle, the male goshawk, Rom. & Jul. ii. 2. 159.

TASTE, n. t. to act as sewer or server, K. John, v. 6. 28; v. t. to try, Twelfth Night, iii. l. 92.

TAWDRY LACE, sub. a necklace worn by country girls, Wint. Tale, iv. 2. 252.

Tax, n. t. to accuse, Ham. i. 4. 18; As You Like It, ii. 7. 86.

TAXATION, n. sub. satire, invective, As You Like It, i. 2. 92.

TEEN, n. t. neer, Temp. i. 2. 64; Rich. III. iv. 1. 56.

TENDER, sub. care, regard, 1 Hen. iv. iv. 4. 49; K. Lear, i. 4. 333; v. t. to regard with tender affection, Two Gent. of Ver. iv. 2. 447; Cor. of Err. v. i. 132.

TENDER-H EARTED, part. adj. set in a delicate handle, or perhaps moved by tender emotions, K. Lear, i. 4. 174.

Tent, n. sub. a roll of lint which was always put into a fresh wound, Troll. & Cses. i. 2. 16; v. i. 7.

TENT, v. t. to lodge, reside, fig. Coriol. iii. ii. 2. 116.

TENT, n. t. to search, probe, Ham. ii. 2. 634; Cymb. iii. 4. 318; to care, Coriol. i. 3. 32; iii. l. 235.

TREASURE, sub. the male goshawk, Troll. & Cses. iii. 2. 54.

TERMAGANT, sub. a supposed Mahomedian female deity, represented in our old plays as a most violent character, Ham. ii. 2. 16; sub. v. Hen. iv. v. 4. 114.

TERMLESS, adj. Indescribable, Lov. Comp. 94.

TENDER, v. sub. a sixpence, 2 Hen. iv. iii. 2. 299; money in general, Merry Wives of W. i. 3. 94 (Pistol).

TENDER, n. t. to present with a tender, Two Gent. of Ver. i. l. 255.

TENDER, n. sub. sixpence, Twelfth Night, ii. 8. 36.

TENT, adj. freightful, Mid. N. Dr. iii. 2. 258; Coriol. ii. 2. 48.

TENT, v. t. to pavish, touch, Rich. iii. iv. 4. 169.

TENT, n. t. to cut a dangerous disease, Ham. ii. l. 78; v. t. to affect with tetter, Coriol. iii. l. 78.

THARKBOROUGH, sub. a kind of constable, L's ii. ii. 1. 1153. Cf. THIRKBOURNE.

THIRK, cons. because, Two Gent. of Ver. iv. 1. 72.

THIRK, sub. a theory, Oth. i. 1. 24.

THIRK-ELFE, sub. according as, 2 Hen. iv. iii. 2. 56.

THIRK, adj. close, quick, Lucrece, 1784; 2 Hen. iv. ii. 8. 24; Troll. & Cses. iii. 2. 56.

THIRK-ENE, adj. dim-eyed, 1 Hen. iv. ii. 8. 51.

THICK-PELLED, pt. p. thickly intertwined, Much Ado, i. 2. 13.

THICK-SKIN, sub. blockhead, Merry Wives, iv. 5. 2.

THO-BRIDE, sub. shaft-horse, Mer. of Ven. ii. 2. 103.

THINK, n. t. to be full of sorrowful thoughts, Ant. & Cleo. iii. 11. 1.

THIRD-BOROUGH [O. Ed. HEAD-BOROUGH], sub. a kind of constable, Tam. of Shrew, Ind. i. 12.

THOUGHT, sub. melancholy, Ham. iii. 1. 85.

THOUGHT-KILLING, part. adj. executing with the quickness of thought, K. Lear, iii. 2. 4.

THURSOALIONAL, adj. boastful, As You Like It, ii. 2. 35.

THREE-MAN BATTLE, sub. a rammer managed by three men, 2 Hen. iv. i. 2. 259.

THREE-PLE, sub. the richest kind of velvet, Wint. Tale, iv. 2. 14.

THREE-PLED, adj. having a thick pile, Meas. for Meas. i. 2. 34; superfine [metaphorically], L's L's i. v. 2. 458.

THREE, sub. a dirge, Phm. & Turt. 49.

THREE-REPURED, adj. three times refined, Troll. & Cses. ii. 2. 21.

THRED, sub. thread, fibre, Temp. iv. i. 3.

THREMB, sub. the tufted end of a thread in weaving, Mid. N. Dr. v. i. 193.

THREMLED HAT, sub. a hat made of very coarse woollen cloth, Merry Wives of W. iv. 2. 82.

THUNDER-STONE, sub. a thunderbolt, Jul. Cses. i. 4. 49.

THUNW, adj. perverse, cross, K. Lear, i. 4. 307.

TICKLE-Brain, sub. strong drink, 1 Hen. iv. iv. 4. 443.

TICKY-TACK, sub. a sort of backgammon, Meas. for Meas. i. 2. 202.

TILLY-FALLY OF TILLY-VALLY, int. an expression of contempt, Twelfth Night, ii. 3. 86; 2 Hen. iv. iv. 8.

TIMELESS, adj. untimely, Rich. ii. iv. 1. 5.

TIMELY-PARTED, adj. recently dead, 2 Hen. vi. iii. 2. 151.

TINT, v. sub. the grand elixir sought by alchemists, All's Well, v. 3. 102; colour, Ham. iii. ii. 92.

TINT, sub. a headress, Merry Wives of W. iii. 3. 61; Much Ado, iii. 4. 13; furniture, Pericles, iii. 2. 22; v. t. to feed greedily, 3 Hen. vi. i. 1. 163; Ven. & Ad. 56.

TREG-HOUSE, sub. the dressing-room of a theatre, Mid. N. Dr. iii. 1. 5.

TRENCH, sub. perhaps terrors [Mistress Quickly], 2 Hen. iv. iv. 2. 219.

TRESC, sub. a coagh, Troll. & Cses. v. 3. 101.

TOAL, v. t. to drag out, Wint. Tale, iv. 3. 765.

TOAL, v. i. to yield a sod, Wint. Tale, iv. 2. 33; sub. 28 lbs. of wool, Wint. Tale, iv. 2. 34.

TOPOKR, sub. before, L's L's i. 2. 38; Till. Add. iii. l. 293.

TOUR, adj. gowned, robed, Oth. i. 1. 25.

TOURRED, sub. marked with plague-spots, Ant. & Cleo. iii. 8. 19.

TOUR-BOUR, sub. a dart, Cymb. i. 6. 122.

TOURONG, v. t. to denominate, Meas. for Meas. iv. 4. 25.

TOURN, adj. supreme, Troll. & Cses. i. v. 3. 172.

TOURCE, sub. a torch-bearer, All's Well, ii. 1. 125.

TOURV, adj. twisted; turned away, Troll. & Cses. i. 3. 45.

TOURRET, adj. hanging in tassels or rage, K. John, v. 6. 7.
Glossary

TOUCH, v.t. to wound, Tim. of Ath. iii. 5. 19; Cymb. i. 1. 10; sub. a touchstone, 1 Hen. IV. iv. 4. 10; of 'noble touch' = of proved excellence, Coriol. iv. 1. 49.

TOUCH NEAR, to concern deeply, Two Gent. of Ver. iii. 1. 60.

TOER, v.t. to pull, to tear, Meas. for Meas. i. 1. 199.

TOWARD, adj. tractable, Tam. of Shrew. v. 2. 183; bold, 3 Hen. VI. ii. 2. 66.

TOWARD, TOWARDS, adv. in preparation, Tim. of Ath ili. 6. 68; Ham. i. 1. 77; Rom. & Jul. i. 5. 126.

TOWER, n. to soar as a bird of prey, K. John. v. 2. 149.

TRACT, sub. trace, track, Hen. VIII. i. 1. 40; Tim. of Ath. i. 1. 5.

TRADING, v.t. to trade, resort, Rich. II. ili. 3. 136; v.t. to go in a particular direction, Mer. of Ven. ili. 4. 54.

TRAIN, sub. baut, allurement, Macb. iv. 3. 118; v.t. to entice, allure, Conj. of Err. ili. 2. 45; Tit. Andr. v. 1. 104.

TRAJET (O. Ed. Tranjet), sub. a ferry [lit. traghetto].

Mer. of Ven. ili. 4. 53.

TRAMMELL UP, to catch as in a net, Macb. i. 7. 3.

TRASH, v.t. to lap, to cut off high branches, Temp. i. 2. 81; to restrain a dog by a trash, or strap, Oth. ii. 3. 315.

TRAVERS, v.t. to make a thrust, Merry Wives of W. ii. 3. 25.

TRAVESTED, adj. crossed, folded, Tim. of Ath. v. 4. 7.

TRAY TRIP, sub. a game of dice, in which success depended on throwing a 'trols,' Twelfth Night, ii. 5. 209.

TRACING, sub. tractors, K. Lear. i. 2. 138.

TRIBLE DATE, adj. living for three ages, Fleen. & Turt. 17.

TRIBUNAL, sub. a good feeder, Much Ado. i. 1. 52.

TREY, sub. to three ars, L's L's L. v. 2. 232.

TROBULATION, sub. a name applied to Pultzans, either to the whole sect, or some particular congregation, Hen. VIII. v. 4. 67.

TRICK, v.t. to draw, paint [heraldic term], Ham. ii. 2. 488; sub. special peculiarity of look, verse, &c., Wint. Tale, ii. 3. 100; 1 Hen. IV. v. 2. 11; K. Lear. iv. 6. 109.

TRICKER, adj. sporting, Temp. v. 1. 226; Mer. of Ven. ili. 5. 75.

TRIGON, sub. a triangle, 2 Hen. IV. ii. 4. 288.

TRUIL, v.t. to trickle, K. Lear. iv. 3. 14.

TRIPLE, sub. triple-time in music, Twelfth Night, v. 1. 41.

TRIPLISH, adj. sorrowful, Ham. ili. 4. 50.

TRIUMPH, sub. a trump card, Ant. & Cleo. iv. 12. 20.

TROL, v.t. to sing in rotation, Temp. iii. 2. 199.

TROUBADOUR, sub. the French game of trouvadour, Wint. Tale, iv. 2. 92.

TROPICALLY, adv. figuratively, Ham. iii. 2. 250.

TROOP FLIGHT, adj. betrothal, Wint. Tale, i. 2. 278.

TURBULENCE, sub. a low bed, which runs on casters, and can be pushed under another, Merry Wives of W. iv. 6. 7; Rom. & Jul. ii. 1. 39.

TURBULENT, adj. an honest fellow, Ham. i. 5. 150.

TURBULENT TAIL, sub. a long-tailed dog, K. Lear. iii. 6. 73.

TRUNK ELBOW, sub. a fall asleep, Tam. of Shrew. iv. 3. 142.

TRY, BRING TO, to bring a ship as close to the wind as possible, Temp. i. 1. 40.

TURB, and turb. refers to a particular process of curing.

TURBAST, adj. venereal disease by sweating, Meas. for Meas. ii. 3. 61; Tim. of Ath. iv. 8. 86, 87.

TUCK, sub. a rapler, Twelfth Night, iii. 4. 247; 2 Hen. IV. ii. 4. 173.

TUCKET, adj. a flourish on a trumpet, Hen. IV. v. 2. 55.

TURF, sub. clump, As You Like It, iii. 3. 75; Rich. II. ii. 3. 53.

TURE, sub. accent, Cymb. v. 3. 239.

TURKETOOD, sub. apparently a name given to Bedlam beggars, K. Lear. ii. 3. 20.

TURKISH, to become wicked, Ham. III. ii. 2. 292; Much Ado. ili. 4. 56.

TWIGG, n. to make in wicker work, Oth. ii. 8. 253.

TWILL, sub. a piece of cloth with a figure, not woven, 2 Hen. IV. 1. 64.

TWIRE, v.t. to twinkle, Sonnets, xxviii. 12.

TWIST, sub. a string, Coriol. v. 5. 96.

UMBER, sub. red ochre, As You Like It, i. 3. 215.


UMBRELL, sub. shadow (Hamlet's Euphism), Ham. v. 2. 126.

UNRIGH'T, p.t. p. without extremeunction, Ham. i. 5. 77.

UNHARNED, p.t. adj. bare, without armour, Coriol. iii. 2. 99.

UNHARNET, p.t. p. without saluting, on equal terms, Oth. i. 2. 23.

UNHORNED, adj. skill-less, Oth. iv. i. 102.

UNHARNESS, sub. unballotted, Jul. Caes. i. 3. 48; Ham. ii. 1. 78.

UNHASTED, v.t. to uncouple, throw off the hounds, Merry Wives of W. iii. 3. 175.

UNHASTE, v.t. to undress, L's L's L. v. 2. 756; Tam. of Shrew. i. 2. 211.

UNHOLTED, sub. deprived of one's horse, 1 Hen. IV. ii. 2. 45.

UNHUNTED, p.t. p. not struck out, not cancelled (The tradesman's book was crossed when the account was paid), Cymb. iii. 3. 26.

UNHURT, sub. cure of deafness, Rich. II. ii. 1. 16.

UNHURLED, v.t. to face, trim, Much Ado, iii. 4. 21.

UNDERHUNG, v.t. to hang, under, Coriol. i. 9. 72.

UNDERSKINNER, sub. an underdrawer, tailor, i Hen. IV. ii. 4. 26.

UNRESTORE, p.t. a surety, or agent for others, Twelfth Night, iii. 4. 253.

UNRESTED, part. adj. unploughed, Sonnets, iii. 5. Comp. EAR, &c.

UNEXPressive, adj. inexpressible, As You Like It, iii. 2. 19.

UNFAIR, v.t. to deprive of beauty, Sonnets, v. 4.

UNFOLDING STAR, sub. a star on the crest, the shepherd unfolds, Meas. for Meas. iv. 2. 219.

UNHARRED, p.t. adj. beardless, foolish, K. John. v. 2. 133.

UNRATCHET, adj. which has not yet taken effect, Oth.
GLOSSARY

Utus, sub. bolsterous merriment, 2 Hen. IV. ii. 4. 22.
Utter, v.t. to pass from one to another, L.'s L.'s L. ii. 1.
Utterance, to this, to the last extremity [Fr. et
Uterate], Mach. iii. 1. 72.
Uxury, v.t. to fade, Rich. III. i. 2. 20; Pass. Pl. 131.
Vail, sub. a setting, a sinking, Troll. & Cres. v. 8. 7; to lower, let fall, Mer. of Ven. i. 1. 28; Ham. i. 2. 70.
Vails, sub. money given to servants, Per. i. 1. 163.
Valance, sub. a fringe of drapery, Tam. of Shrew. ii.
Value, pl. the list in which the good are distinguished from the worthless, Mach. iii. 1. 95.
Vaultbrace, sub. armour for the forearm, Troll. & Cres. i. 8. 297.
Vasty, sub. a dreary stretch of sea, Wint. Tale, i. 1. 33;
Pericles, iii. 1. 1.
Vast of night, the deep time of night, Temp. i. 2. 327;
Ham. i. 2. 198.
Vaulter, sub. vanguard, the first part (met.) Mid. N. Dr.
IV. i. 112; 2 Hen. IV. i. 2. 302.
Velure, sub. velvet, Tam. of Shrew. iii. 2. 63.
Velvet-guards, sub. those who wear velvet linings, 2 Hen. IV. iii. i. 260.
Venew, sub. a bout at fencing, L.'s L.'s L. v. 1. 63.
Venet, sub. the same, Merry Wives of W. i. 1. 296.
Vent, sub. discharge, Ant. & Cleo. v. 2. 350; 'full of vent,' (b) suffusion, or (c) full of the scent of game, or
(c) full of rumour, Coriol. iv. 5. 239.
Ventages, sub. apertures, spots in a stule, Ham. iii. 2.
280.
Ventricle, sub. a cavity, L.'s L.'s L. iv. 2. 70.
Verbary, adj. plain-spoken, or else verbose, perhaps playing with words, Cymb. ii. 8. 111.
Via, interj. a word of encouragement, go forward, away
with you, Merry Wives of W. ii. 2. 101; Mer. of Ven.
ii. 2. 11.
Vic, sub. the buffoon in the old Moral play, Twelfth
Night, iv. 2. 138; Rich. III. iii. i. 82; 2 Hen. IV. ii. 3.
347; v.t. to screw (met.) Wint. Tale, i. 2. 416.
Vice, v.t. to stake at cards, and so to contend with,
Ant. & Cleo. v. 2. 306; Tam. of Shrew. ii. 1. 303.
Villaggio, sub. base, coward [Ital. villaggio], 2 Hen. VII.
iv. 8. 49.
Vineker, adj. musty, mouldy, Troll. & Cres. ii. 1. 15.
Vool-de-gambots, sub. a vieloceneo, Twelfth Night,
ii. 8. 28.
Violent, v.t. to be violent, Troll. & Cres. iv. 4. 4.
Viroinabellers, pr. p. playing with the fingers, as upon
the virginal, Wint. Tale, i. 2. 226.
Visitors, pr. p. visiting, Mach. i. 6. 26.
Voice, v.t. to proclaim, Tim. of Abd. iv. 8. 82; sub. as
voice, Mid. X-Duc. i. 1. 24; Coriol. ii. 3. 89.
Voice-lobby, sub. ante-room, 2 Hen. VI. iv. 1. 62.
Glossary

Wart, n.t. to beckon, Com. of Err. ii. 2. 113.
Wartash, sub. passage by water, Troll. & Cres. iii. 2. 10.
Warture, sub. waving of the hand, Jul. Cres. ii. 1. 246.
Wash, n.t. to remunerate, Corol. v. 5. 40; to risk, K. Lear, i. 1. 158; waged equal were on an equality, Ant. & Cleo. i. 2. 31.
Waisy, sub. that part of the ship between the quarter-deck and the forecastle, Temp. i. 2. 197.
Waxs, sub. a late rEv, Wint. Tale, iv. 2. 110; n.t. to keep late revel, Ham. i. 4. 8.
Waxen-eyed, adj. fierce-eyed, with a large portion of the white visible, K. John, iv. 8. 49.
Waxen-newt, sub. a lizard, K. Lear, iii. 4. 133.
Wannard, n.t. turned pale, Ham. ii. 2. 538.
Wannion. In the phrase, 'with a wannion—'with a vengeance,' the form 'wanion' is not uncommon in writers of the period, Pericles, ii. 1. 17.
Wappen'd, pl. p. of doubtful meaning, perhaps overthrow, stale, Tim. of Atlh. iii. 3. 38.
Ward, sub. a guard in fencing, Temp. i. 2. 468; (metaphorically), Wint. Tale, i. 2. 33; a bolt, Lucrece, 303.
Warden, sub. a large baking pear, Wint. Tale, iv. 2. 49.
Warder, sub. a butchener, Rich. ii. 1. 218.
Wark, n.t. to summon to battle, Jul. Cres. v. 1. 5; Rom. & Jul. i. 3. 207.
Warren, sub. a gamekeeper, Merry Wives of W. i. 4. 28.
Warsall, sub. revelry, Macb. i. 7. 64.
Wart, sub. term for the hare, Ven. & Ad. 697.
Watch, sub. a watch candle, which marked the hours, Rich. iii. 8. 85; n.t. to tame by keeping awake, Tam. of Shrew, iv. 1. 129; Oth. iii. 3. 23.
Watch-case, sub. a scented box, 2 Hen. iv. 3. 17.
Water, sub. lustre of a diamond, Per. iii. 2. 157; n.t. to drink, i Hen. iv. 4. 27.
Water-colours, sub. weak follows, 1 Hen. iv. 1. 80.
Water-galls, secondary bowels, Lucrece, 1588.
Water-mil, adj. watery, Oth. iii. 2. 155; watery, or else weak, K. Lear, i. 3. 261.
Water-rugs, sub. rough water-dogs, Mach. iii. 1. 94.
Water, for all, hit for anything, Twelfth Night, iv. 2. 59.
Water, to raise, excite tears, Mer. of Ven. ii. 2. 52.
Water-work, sub. a painting in water-colour, 2 Hen. iv. 1. 152.
Waters, adj. eagerly drest, Troll. & Cres. iii. 2. 20.
Waul, n.t. to cry as an infant, K. Lear, iv. 6. 185.
Wave, n.t. to fluctuate, Corol. ii. 2. 29.
Waxen, n.t. to grow, to increase, Mld. N. Dr. ii. 1. 56.
Waxen-man, sub. statesmen, Corol. ii. 1. 60.
Wealth, sub. prosperity, Mer. of Ven. v. 1. 249.
Weather, sub. storm, K. John, iv. 2. 109.
Whey and the pin, sub. a disease of the eye, perhaps the cataract, K. Lear, iii. 4. 120.
-week, to be in by the, to be a close prisoner, L's L's L. v. 2. 61.
Weeping-ripe, ready to weep, 3 Hen. vi. 1. 4. 172.
Wept, n.t. to know, Ant. & Cleo. i. 3.
Weird, adj. fatal, Mach. i. 2. 32; iii. 1. 3.
Welkin, sub. blue, Temp. i. 2. 4; Twelfth Night, ii. 3. 61; adj. Wint. Tale, i. 2. 137.
Well-graced, adj. graceful or popular, Rich. ii. 2. 24.
Well-seen, adj. well-skilled, Tam. of Shrew, i. 2. 126.
Well-wishing, adj. popular, Meas. for Meas. v. 4. 28.
Weld book, sub. a sort of battle-axe, i Hen. iv. 2. 4. 377.
Westeidol the cry of watermen on the Thames, Twelfth Night, iii. 1. 148.
Weyand, sub. the windpipe, Temp. iii. 2. 102.
Whirl, sub. the burthen or refrain of a song, or else a spinning wheel at which it was sung, Ham. iv. 6. 172; n.t. to roam, Troll. & Cres. v. 7. 2; Oth. i. 1. 237.
Whirl, sub. a plume, Hen. v. iii. 6. 113.
Whirled, adj. covered with knobs, K. Lear, iv. 6. 72.
When, an examination of impatience, Temp. i. 2. 316; Jul. Cres. ii. 1. 5; 'when as,' conj. when, Sonnets, xliii. 3.
Where, adv. whether, Temp. v. i. 1. 112; Com. of Err. iv. 1. 60.
Where, adv. whereas, Corol. i. 1. 106.
Whew-face, adj. pale-faced, Macb. v. 3. 17; covered with youthful down, Merry Wives of W. i. 4. 22.
Whiffler, sub. one who cleared the way in a procession, Hen. v. v. Chor. 12.
While, adv. until, Macb. iii. 1. 44; Rich. ii. i. 8. 222; 'whiles,' Twelfth Night, iv. 3. 23.
While, as, conj. while, 2 Hen. vi. i. 1. 226.
While, the, adv. meanwhile, As You Like It, ii. 5. 31.
While-ere, adv. not long ago, Temp. iii. 2. 130.
While, adv. while, Temp. i. 2. 24; 'the whiles,'= meanwhile, Tam. of Shrew, iii. 1. 22.
While, the, while, Ham. ii. 3. 93; meanwhile, Rich. ii. v. 2. 22.
Whistler, sub. a term of contempt for a novice, Oth. v. 2. 247.
Whistle, sub. handle of a whip, Per. ii. 2. 51.
Whir, i. to hurry away, Per. iv. 1. 20.
Whist, adj. still, Temp. i. 2. 378.
Whistle, worth the, worth notice, regard, Comp. the proverb, 'It's a poor dog that is not worth the whistling,' K. Lear, iv. 2. 29.
Whistle her off dismisses the hawk from the fist, Oth. iii. 3. 363.
White, sub. the bull's-eye in a target, Tam. of Shrew, v. 2. 187.
Whitting-time, sub. bleaching-time, Merry Wives of W. iii. 3. 141.
Whistler, sub. a bleacher, Merry Wives of W. iii. 8. 15.
Whittle, sub. a clasp-knife, Tim. of Atlh. v. 1. 185.
Wide, adv. distracted, astray, Much Ado, iv. i. 62; K. Lear, iv. 7. 50.
Wightly [O. Ed. Wightly], adj. nimble, L's L's L. iii. 1. 206.
Wild, sub. wild, i Hen. iv. ii. 1. 63.
Wilderness, sub. wildness, Meas. for Meas. iii. i. 140.
Wild mark, to ride the, to play at see-saw, a Hen. iv. ii. 4. 268.
Wildness, sub. distraction, Ham. iii. 1. 40.
Wild-pulp-blame, wilfully incurring blame, i Hen. iv. iii. 1. 176.
Glossary

Wimples, pl. p. blindfolded, L’s L’s L. III. 1. 189. ('Wimple' was a kerchief, covering the head and neck.)

Wind, subj. 'have the wind of' = have the advantage of, Tit. Andr. iv. 2. 134; 'allow the wind', to give air, All's Well, v. 2. 10.

Wind, v. t. to scent, Tit. Andr. iv. 1. 97; to blow, Much Ado, i. 1. 251; to manage, 1 Hen. IV. iv. 1. 109.

Windgalls, sub. swellings in the legs of a horse, Tam. of Shrew, III. 2. 54.

Windlass, subj. a circuit, Ham. II. 1. 65.

Window, pl. p. seated in a window, Ant. & Cleo iv. 12. 72.

Window-pane, subj. lattice-like embroidery, worn by women across the breast, Tim. of Ath. iv. 8. 117.

Windowed, adj. full of holes, K. Lear, iii. 31.

Winding, pr. p. winding, Temp. iv. 1. 128.

Wine, subj. sleep, Temp. ii. 1. 250; to be blind, to be in the dark, Com. of Err. III. 2. 58.

Winking, pr. p. blind, Cymb. ii. 4. 89.

Winnowed, adj. wise, sensible, HAM. v. 2. 201.

Winter-ground, v. t. to protect a plant from the cold, by covering it up with straw, Cymb. iv. 2. 259.

Wife, subj. a brand, mark of disgrace, Lucrece, 537.

Wife-woman, subj. a witch, Merry Wives of W. iv. 59; Twelfth Night, III. 4. 116.

Wisp of straw, subj. the badge of a scoold, 3 Hen. VI. ii. 2. 144.

Wistfully, adj. wistfully, Rich. II. v. 4. 7; Ven. & Ad. 343.

Witch, subj. a wizard, Cymb. i. 6. 666.

Wit, prep. by, being greeted with, Mach. iii. 6. 40; Ant. & Cleo, v. 2. 170.

With himself, in possession of his faculties, Tit. Andr. i. 1. 368.

Within, i could not do = I could not help it, Mer. of Ven. iii. 1. 72.

Without, adj. except, Two Gent. of Ver. ii. 1. 38.

Witlool, subj. a contented cuckold, Merry Wives of W. ii. 2. 217.

Witlessly, adj. witollo-like, Merry Wives of W. ii. 2. 261.

Woman, subj. woman to it = make me show my woman’s weakness, All's Well, iii. 2. 53.

Woman’s, subj. accompanied by a woman, Oth. iii. 4. 194.

Woman-killer, subj. a murderer of a woman, 2 Hen. IV. ii. 1. 60.

Woman-tired, adj. benpecked, Wint. Tale, ii. 8. 74.

Comp. To tire.

Worn, v. t. to ocnnose, Wint. Tale, iv. 3. 503.

Wornout, adj. hollow, Hec. V. ii. 2. 124.


Woo, v. t. to solicit, Per. v. 1. 174.

Wood, subj. mad, Mid. N. Dr. i. 1. 192; 1 Hen. VI. iv. 7. 35; Ven. & Ad. 740.

Woodcock, subj. a scruptus, Tam. of Shrew, 1. 2. 164.

Wooden things, 'an awkward business, not likely to succeed' [Steevans], 1 Hen. VI. v. 2. 89.


Wooden, in the, between blankets, Much Ado, ii. 1. 33.

Woodward, to go, to wear wool instead of linen next the skin, as a penance, L’s L’s L. v. 2. 716.

Word, v. t. to represent, Cymb. I. 4. 17; to fool with words, Ant. & Cleo v. 2. 190.

Work, subj. a fortification, Hen. VIII. v. 4. 63; Oth. iii. 2. 3.

Work-day, adj. common, Ant. & Cleo i. 2. 57. Comp. Working-day, As You Like It, i. 8. 12.

World, subj. 'to go to the world' = to be married, Much Ado, ii. 1. 332; All's Well, I. 8. 37; 'woman of the world' = married woman, As You Like It, v. 3. 5; 'a world to see' = a wonder to see, Much Ado, iii. 5. 38; Tam. of Shrew, ii. 1. 305; the microcosm, Lov. Comp. 7; K. Lear, iii. 1. 10.

Worm, subj. a serpent, Meas. for Meas. iii. 1. 17; Mach. iii. 4. 29; a creature, Temp. iii. 1. 31; Cymb. iii. 4. 37 (the mole); Merry Wives of W. v. 5. 89.

Wrangler, subj. an adversary, a tennis term, Hen. v. 1. 2. 264.

Wreak, subj. vengeance, Coriol. iv. 6. 91; to revenge, Rom. & Jul. iii. 5. 102.

Wreakful, adj. revengeful, Tim. of Ath. iv. 3. 930.

Wrest, subj. a tuning key, Troll & Crec. iii. 3. 27.

Wretch, subj. a term of endearment, Rom. & Jul. i. 3. 44; Oth. iii. 3. 90; Ant. & Cleo. v. 2. 305.

Wring, v. t. to write, Much Ado, v. 1. 28.

Wringing, subj. torture, Hen. v. iv. 2. 95.

Writ = wrote, claimed, All’s Well, II. 8. 67.

Writhe, pr. p. wrinkled, 1 Hen. VI. ii. 3. 23.

Writ, v. t. to swerve, Cymb. v. 1. 5.

Year, adj. ready, nimble, active, Temp. v. 1. 224; Twelfth Night, iii. 4. 48.

Yearly, adj. readily, briskly, Temp. i. 1. 4; Ant. & Cleo. iii. 2. 249.

Yaw, v. t. to move unsteadily as a ship which does not answer the helm, Ham. v. 2. 121.

Year, subj. years, Meas. for Meas. ii. 1. 260.

Yarn, v. t. to grieve, vex, Mer. Merry Wives of W. iv. 5. 45;


Yellow, adj. emblem of jealousy, Wint. Tale, ii. 8. 106.

Yellowness, subj. jealousy, Merry Wives of W. i. 8. 109.

Yellows, subj. jaundice in horses, Tam. of Shrew, iii. 2. 55.

Yerk, v. t. to lash out, to strike quickly, Hen. V. iv. 7. 84; Oth. i. 2. 5.

Yeasty, adj. foaming, frothy, Mach. iv. 1. 53; Ham. v. 2. 199.

Young, adj. recent, Hen. VIII. iii. 2. 47.

Younger, subj. a stripping, 3 Hen. IV. iii. 3. 91; 3 Hen. VI. ii. 1. 84.

Zany, subj. a buffoon, L’s L’s L. v. 2. 454; Twelfth Night, i. 5. 95.